EAAE-ARCC INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE

2nd VALENCIA INTERNATIONAL BIENNIAL OF RESEARCH IN ARCHITECTURE

11-14 NOV 2020

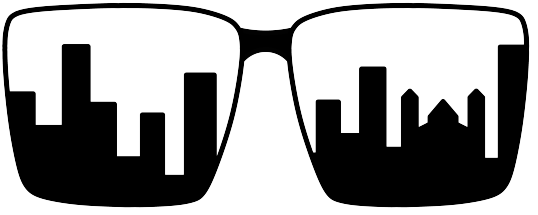
THE ARCHITECT AND THE CITY

VOLUME 1

EAAE-ARCC INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE

2nd VALENCIA INTERNATIONAL BIENNIAL OF RESEARCH IN ARCHITECTURE

11-14 NOV 2020



THE ARCHITECT AND THE CITY

VOLUME 1

UNIVERSITAT POLITÈCNICA DE VALÈNCIA

ESCOLA TÈCNICA SUPERIOR D'ARQUITECTURA

Publisher:

Editorial Universitat Politècnica de València, 2020
http://www.lalibreria.upv.es
ISBN 978-84-9048-842-3 (Set of two volumes)
978-84-9048-981-9 (Volume 1)
978-84-9048-982-6 (Volume 2)
DL: V-748-2021
DOI: https://doi.org/10.4995/EAAE-ARCC-IC.2020.13831
Ref. 6568_01_01_01

EAAE-ARCC International Conference & 2nd VIBRArch: The architect and the city. / Editorial Universitat Politècnica de València

Conference Chair:

Ivan Cabrera i Fausto

Steering Committee:

Oya Atalay Franck
Hazem Rashed-Ali
Ilaria Valente
Ivan Cabrera i Fausto

Organizing Committee:

Ernesto Fenollosa Forner
Ángeles Mas Tomás
José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers
Lluís Bosch Roig
José Luis Higón Calvet
Alicia Llorca Ponce
Maite Palomares Figueres
Ana Portalés Mañanós
Juan María Songel González
Mª Mercedes Cerdá Mengod

Design and Logistics:

Mariví Monfort Marí
Marcos Lizondo Chardí
Maria Piqueras Blasco

Scientific Committee:

Doreen Adengo
Adengo Architecture, Kampala

Fernando Agrasar Quiroga
Universidade da Coruña

Naime Esra Akin
Beykent University

Ajla Aksamija
University of Massachusetts Amherst

Ahmed K. Ali
Texas A&M University

Ana Almerich Chuliá
Universitat Politècnica de València

Miguel Alonso del Val
Universidad de Navarra

Adolfo Alonso Durá
Universitat Politècnica de València

Eva Álvarez Isidro
Universitat Politècnica de València

Cecilie Andersson
Bergen School of Architecture

Isabelle Anguelovski
Universitat Autònoma de Barcelona

Craig K. Anz
Southern Illinois University

César Aquino Insfrán
Universidad Autónoma de Encarnación

Eugenio Arbizzani
Sapienza Università di Roma

Maziar Asefi
Ryerson University

Izaskun Aseguinolaza Braga
Euskal Herriko Unibertsitatea

Oya Atalay Franck
Zurich University of Applied Sciences and Arts

Pnina Avidar
Fontys Hogescholen Tilburg

Rahman Azari
Illinois Institute of Technology

Marilda Azulay Tapiero
Universitat Politècnica de València

Ángela Baldellou Plaza
Observatorio del CSCAE

Berta Bardí i Milà
Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya

César Bargues Ballester
The Getty Conservation Institute

Michela Barosio
Politecnico di Torino

José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers
Universitat Politècnica de València

Luisa Basset Salom
Universitat Politècnica de València

Genevieve Baudoin
Kansas State University

Liliana O. Beltrán
Texas A&M University

Julio Bermúdez
The Catholic University of America

Henriette Bier
Technische Universiteit Delft

Manuel Blanco Lage
Universidad Politécnica de Madrid

INDEX

VOLUME 1

VOLUME 2

0

INTRODUCTION

THE ARCHITECT AND THE CITY

Ivan Cabrera i Fausto
Conference Chair
Higher Technical School of Architecure of the Polytecnnic University of Valencia, Spain

Contemporary thinking regarding architecture is nowadays rather dispersed. It is unquestionable that over the course of centuries, human life has become more and more complex. And, as its unmistakable reflection, architecture has also developed into a much more intricate discipline encompassing a vast range of specialized fields. However, most authors totally agree in the characteristics of the modern subject who inhabits the fascinating world of the art and science which designs and materializes the human habitat. This subject is nowadays rational, employs several logics and language resources, has articulated complex societies and organizational structures and has created cities to meet and grow. This anthropological relation between architecture and city has gone through different stages in recent times.

In the first half of the twentieth century, cities took the initiative by means of their experts as a direct extension of a society which was questioning many aspects of obedience. Architects played a fundamental role in these elites and had assumed a meaningful leadership and accepted the responsibilities which it entailed. The number of practitioners was reduced; the profession was prestigious; fees allowed offices with many employees and a comfortable life; the production rate make periods of reflection possible; and economic elites, with benefits as tremendous as nowadays, felt the civic obligation of reverting to society part of this welfare by means of patronage. These conditions, unconceivable currently, lie beneath many remarkable initiatives and projects showing the aforementioned leadership of architects in the design of cities and their future, such as the Plan of Chicago (fig. 1) co-authored by Daniel Burnham and Edward H. Benett in 1909.

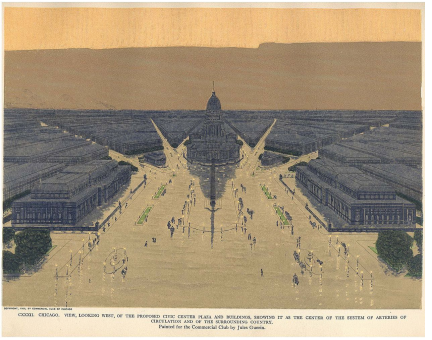


Figure 1. View looking west of the new Chicagoan civic center proposed by D. Burnham and E. Bennett in 1909

However, the second half of the twentieth century was marked by a more acquiescent temper, with profitability and productivity in the foreground. Many factors forged slowly this new scenario. The end of World War II and the need to reconstruct all countries affected, and the necessary and gradual popularization of university studies in order to provide the market with all the required practitioners, gradually weakened the previously extreme convenient boundary conditions of architectural practice. Architects faced an increasing amount of commissions, with decreasing fees and consequently waning office staff. Time for critical thinking on citizenry and its physical scenario started to vanish and other actors, mainly economists mostly focused on economic efficiency and continuous growing entered the scene. Events such as the 1973 oil crisis (fig. 2) accelerated this transition and the theoretical merit of its overcoming surprisingly legitimized the economic forces' position in the control bridge with no questioning if these forces themselves and their priorities had led to the crisis.

Figure 2. Board at a gas station in Oregon (USA) in 1973

As a result, the remarkable growing of cities often blurred them. Habitational products were not connected with social subjects and development initiative was still taken by productive sectors. While this the number of students graduated in architecture skyrocketed, the number of practitioners increased much faster than commissions did and consequently fees began reducing or even collapsed in many countries. The prestige of the profession was surprisingly still quite undamaged but glimpses of recovering tasks and roles previously undertaken by architects were scarce. But something was about to change. The excesses of a world ruled without architects in leading roles would give them back in a dramatic and unexpected manner.

The excessive risk-taking assumed by financial entities along with the breaking of the United States housing bubble wonderfully described by Adam McKay in his movie "The Big Short" (fig. 3), led to the drop of the values of securities tied to American real states with an increasing damage of financial institutions all over the world and producing what is nowadays known as the 2007-2008 global financial crisis. Once again magnificently narrated in another movie, in this case J.C. Chandor's "Margin Call" (fig. 4), the crash took the world by surprise. Financial markets deteriorated substantially and a huge crisis in the construction industry settled down almost globally with special affection in Southern European countries.

Figure 3. Theatrical release poster for "The Big Short", 2015

Figure 4. Theatrical release poster for "Margin Call", 2011

The scarcity of commissions at best, usually completely lack of them, propitiated an unexpected period of reflection for architects. Students and faculty at the schools of architecture, practitioners in their studios and officers in their departments began a slow but solid reconnection with the leadership which architects used to have during the first half of the twentieth century in the development of cities. A third revisionist generation was born and the growing world's population, the noticeable migration to urban areas and the questioning and flaws of capitalism provided the best ecosystem for its growing and establishment. This collective employs different cultural variables such as alterity, applied sociology or social activism. Debates on sustainability, landscape, environment, new documentary frameworks and mapping processes, have set the place for new reflections on: limits, borders, traces, surroundings-city interaction, compact or diffuse cities, and many more. Along with such a themed view new topics such as revisiting the rural, have emerged. This third way has collaterally connected with new parameters derived from committed activism such as cooperation, development, third world, urban overcrowdings, residual fabrics, refugee camps, and others which have incorporated new material and strategic discourses on recycling, crowdfunding or low-cost. The profusion of divisions of the problem has characterized a time of fragmented tests, with a noticeable loss of general perspective and where the architects' responsibility about the cities has again broken through but in a fairly hesitant and slow way.

But against this background an increasing architectural and theoretical production despite disperse has been achieved and an upcoming maturity is now able to draw a first set of general conclusions and to attempt a more global attempt to contemporary issues. A fourth and contemporary and critical generation is plowing its way through. It is characterized by the cohesion of speeches, positions and approaches. With an inclusive, transversal and revisionist nature, incorporates and revisits concepts such as feminism, gender, childhood, shelter, migration, wealth, transversality, glocality, interculturality, multiculturality and many more. Hence, we nowadays face the challenge of refounding the concept of city for the future generations, subjected to the duality of the inherited city and its expansion, to the duality of what is consigned and what is missing.

Within this extremely dynamic, changing and exciting context, the 2020 edition of the International Conference on Research in Architecture organized by the European Association for Architectural Education and the Architectural Research Centers Consortium was presented in June 2020 in Toronto, Canada. The topic chosen ambitioned to tackle simultaneously the changing architectural practice, the newly resumed leadership in the design and management of the cities and the growing importance of urban life: "The architect and the city" (fig. 5). Hosted at the Higher Technical School of Architecture of the Polytechnic University of Valencia, Spain, and originally scheduled on June 10-13, 2020, the event was merged with the second edition of the Valencia International Biennial of Research in Architecture. The logo for the event (fig. 5) included a retro pair of glasses as a tribute to the time when architects shouldn't have eluded their leadership and as an invitation to look to the city through architecture's eyes.

Figure 5. Logo of the 2020 EAAE-ARCC International Conference and 2nd VIBRArch designed by Marcos Lizondo before the postponement of the event to November 2020

The stirring committee agreed that the in order to warrant good living conditions for future generations around the planet and to safe the care of the planet itself, research in architecture had to release all its potential. Therefore, the aims of the 2020 EAAE-ARCC International Conference were:

- To focus on the city as the most relevant architectural issue of the twenty-first century.
- To deepen into the historical and modern specificities of the phenomenon of cities.
- To debate about the needs of current cities around the world and to envision an adequate future for them.
- To showcase the city as the scenario of new societal trends, technological advances and professional practices.
- To underline the incipiently recovered leadership of architects in the design and management of cities.
- To place in the spotlight research in architecture as the indispensable mechanism in order to warrant sustainable progress in human habitat.
- To become a meeting point for those who develop their research on the matter of cities, and a platform for presentation and debate about studies, findings, novelties and contributions, encouraging many more to come.
- To highlight architecture's multidisciplinarity as a melting pot of multiple approaches, points of view and expertise.
- To open new perspectives for architectural research on cities by promoting the development of multidisciplinary and inter-university networks and research groups.

For all that, the 2020 EAAE-ARCC International Conference and 2nd VIBRArch was open not only for architects, but also for any academic, practitioner, professional or student with a determination to develop research in architecture or neighboring fields. The event encouraged the submission of papers concerning up to eight thematic areas aiming to accommodate as many approaches as possible.

"Devising, representing and narrating the city" was the first thematic area or block. Graphic expression has always appeared as a stimulating field for architectural experimentation and research in synergy with many other disciplines within architecture. The way in which cities have been drawn along history and the techniques employed for depicting all their actors and activities play a fundamental role when it comes to understand and apprehend the underlying values that each society prioritized when designing and managing the locations where population would concentrate (fig. 6). Likewise, the actual graphical expression trends are reflections of our interests and inevitable have an influence on our architectural production in the city. This thematic area welcomed papers and posters from different fields of graphic expression which focus on new methods for conceiving and narrating the city, such as new graphic techniques, new modelling and representing methods, and even new ways for depicting urban flows and city dynamics.

Figure 6. Watercolor from the Canberra Design by Marion Mahony Griffin, between 1911 and 1912

The second thematic area or block was devoted to "Living in urban landscapes". It cannot be denied that people living in the city spend most of their time in anthropised environments. Urban landscape takes center stage and has an undoubted influence on the quality of life. The different scales of urban landscape along with its own internal and external dynamics offer interesting research scenarios to be tackled from multidisciplinary points of view. Among these contexts, urban fabrics and public space constitute a base for research from morphological, functional, social and environmental perspectives. This thematic area encompassed papers and posters on the landscape and urbanistic side of the city, also including those tools for its analysis and interpretation such as cartography. Among many others, topics to be addressed could include human scale, morphology and activity in the city, occupation, sustainability, permanence, transformation, mobility, and obviously landscape as cultural heritage and daily life stage.

"The new faces the old" was the name of the third block or thematic area, considered extremely necessary since cities are living organisms in constant renovation. With the exception of the less and less cases of new neighborhoods developments or occasional brand new cities, isolated replacement of buildings, the renewal of public spaces and their continuous updating and maintenance probably constitute the biggest percentage of any architect job. Therefore, it was considered to be very easy to find cases were a new intervention should meet previous or even historical elements. These encounters shall be designed carefully in order to warrant that the different physical and cultural layers that have built our cities can live together in harmony. This thematic area welcomed papers and posters on theories and examples about the coexistence of old and new actors in the urban context as well as the results of this cohabitation in the quality of the city. Topics might address not only current cases but also how this matter has been addressed during different periods of the history.

The fourth block or thematic area was booked for "Smart cities vs. tech cities". Data have an amazing and increasing importance in today's world. A correct collection and subsequent processing can guarantee a more efficient management of assets and resources. This smart use of the information is providing the inhabitants of smart cities a better and often more sustainable quality of life (fig. 7). But the necessary use of technology for the collecting and processing the data doesn't necessary mean that technology will also be used to implement improvements or that technology has a strong presence in daily life or the employment context. This second step that some cities have already taken, but there are others that might be rather reluctant since their concept or quality of life differs. This

thematic area encompassed papers and posters which are focused on smart cities, tech cities and the thrilling dichotomy of assuming naturally both roles or consciously and deliberately having chosen one option since some aspects of the refused one are understood as a loss of welfare. Big data influence on urban life as a topic will also be welcome.

Figure 7. Passing bikes meter in Vivers Gardens in Valencia, Spain

"A future based on technology" was the fifth thematic area or block. City life is increasingly synonym of technology. The quick development experienced by cities during the last centuries cannot be explained without a vast range of technology advances which enabled not only more population in less space but also better living conditions. The desire of accessing this technology benefits is one of the most relevant reasons for more population moving to the city. Innovative building systems and evolved materials are making possible to satisfy the ever more demanding comfort levels and social ambitions. It is absolutely undeniable that the city is being the stage of this continuous evolution and these advances are shaping it. This thematic area welcomed papers on innovative building materials, building techniques for a better building and better living, energy efficiency, renewable energy systems, continuous innovation and improvement in conditioning techniques, and new methods and building techniques in structures for architecture.

The sixth thematic area or block was devoted to "Restoration, conservation and renovation". The interpretation of history has traditionally opened new ways to build the future. That fact is especially undeniable in cities, having been the stage of most of the historical facts that constitute our cultural heritage. The geographical and timescale framework was vast enough to cover stages which comprise from ancient cultures to contemporary times. A transversal and multidisciplinary approach to these issues was undoubtedly an interesting endeavor. Likewise a meaningful percentage of contemporary cities do not expect a meaningful growing, and even those which do have a large number of neighborhoods which are already built but need to be fixed and updated. This thematic area encouraged papers and posters on restoration, conservation and renovation as a matter of research. Architectural heritage and conservation constitute an amazing window of opportunity in modern practice that has induced the development of many fascinating research lines.

"New professional practices and research practices" provided the subject for the seventh block or thematic area. As thoroughly and previously explained, despite this process had already begun much before for many practitioners, the long reflection imposed by the scarcity of commissions produced by the financial crisis of the beginning of the century in many countries led architects massively to look for new professional practices. Curriculums in schools of architecture endow their graduates with knowledge and skills that qualify them for developing much more than the traditional professional practice. Likewise, the importance of research nowadays across disciplines has revealed that most of architecture daily practice is an exercise of research itself since each project constitutes a unique result for solving needs in a specific after a thorough process. This awareness has propitiated the awakening of a new generation of architects which is exclusively focused on research for improving human built environment. Cities

have been the scenario of these trends and have been substantially influenced by them. This thematic area welcomed papers and posters on new professional practices, research practices and their influence on the city.

Finally, the eighth thematic area meaning the last block was kept for "Participation processes, diversity and inclusiveness". For some years we had been witnessing a process of reflection, reconsideration or even elimination of many traditional concepts and values such as hierarchical governance, adequacy or even normality. Once again having cities as main stage, people are claiming their rights to take command of whatever has a decisive influence on their lives and to be happy and accepted despite their characteristics and circumstances. Participation processes (fig. 8), diversity, inclusiveness and many other neighboring concepts have also arrived to daily architecture practice and are having an incipient but deciding influence on how many nowadays cities are being transformed. This thematic area encompasses papers and posters dealing with new societal dynamics, their irruption in architecture professional practice and their influence on the architectural output. Examples of previous pioneering examples and study cases of any period will also be welcome.

Despite not evenly, all eight thematic areas were successful. Up to one hundred and fifty-five papers, and even one poster despite the finally online presentations scheduled, made it through the Scientific Committee reviews and judgements. The conference proceedings

Figure 8. Architecture students and professors meet historic center neighbors in Teulada, Spain

compile all these works distributed in two volumes, with this brief introduction and the first four thematic areas in the first one, and the next four thematic areas and some brief conclusions in the second one. Therefore, this work constitutes a privileged outlook of the research done by some of the best academics in architecture and neighboring fields in the world. It provides a valuable picture of nowadays state of the art, a fertile source supply for further research and an unbeatable testimony for the future.

1

BLOCK 1: DEVISING, REPRESENTING AND NARRATING THE CITY

PAPER #1.01

THE CITY IN THE LANDSCAPE : ALFRED CALDWELL'S BROADER PERSPECTIVE ON URBAN DESIGN

Kristin Jones[a], Zaida Garcia-Requejo[b]
[a]Illinois Institute of Technology, Chicago, Illinois, USA
[b]University of A Coruña, A Coruña, Spain

ABSTRACT

Alfred Caldwell was among the first full- time American professors Mies van der Rohe hired at the Illinois Institute of Technology (IIT). Many have admired Mies's architecture since the 1920s, and know that his ideas were also transmitted as a professor, first at the Bauhaus in Europe and then as Director of the Department of Architecture at IIT. Caldwell, a practicing landscape architect and protégé of Jens Jensen, is perhaps less widely known, but was a major influence on IIT's program especially in the areas of construction, landscape, and architectural history. Caldwell completed a Master of Science in City Planning with a thesis entitled *The City in the Landscape: A Preface for Planning,* which can be considered a manifesto of both his professional ideas and IIT's planning pedagogy. In addition to his own works, Caldwell collaborated with Mies and architect Ludwig Hilberseimer, Director of City and Regional Planning at IIT and former Head of Building Theory at the Bauhaus, on the design of built works which left behind artifacts representing the ideal of "the city in the landscape." This communication examines the broader perspective on urban design influenced by the symbiotic disciplines of architecture, city-regional planning and landscape as manifested in the individual and collaborative built work and pedagogy of Caldwell, Hilberseimer, and Mies.

KEYWORDS

Alfred Caldwell; city planning; landscape; urban design; Illinois Institute of Technology.

Figure 1. "The City in the Landscape", drawing by Alfred Caldwell, MS thesis 1948. Source: University Archives and Special Collections, Illinois Institute of Technology.

Figure 2. Alfred Caldwell and IIT Students at Bristol Farm, circa 1958, photograph by Jong Soung Kimm.

INTRODUCTION

Alfred Caldwell came to IIT in 1944 an award-winning landscape architect. He had been in practice for 20 years, planning beautiful landscapes for several Chicago public parks and private gardens, and his ideas were beginning to be published (Domer 1997). While assisting Ludwig Hilberseimer, then Director of City and Regional Planning at IIT, with drawings for the book, *The New City*, Caldwell began to teach undergraduate courses in construction and architectural history. In 1945, Caldwell was awarded a Bachelor of Architecture and earned a Master of Science in City Planning in 1948 with his thesis entitled *The City in the Landscape: A Preface for Planning*. *The City in the Landscape* can be considered a manifesto of both Caldwell's professional ideas and IIT's planning pedagogy. After a 22-year hiatus associated with Mies's resignation from IIT, Caldwell returned to teach at IIT until his death in 1996, adding to his teaching repertoire a landscape course. His ideas about human settlement, which advocated a deeper understanding of the connection between humanity and nature, influenced hundreds of students across the U.S. through the end of the 20th century.

1. DEVELOPMENT OF THE THEORY

1.1. Caldwell's Education

Before establishing himself as a landscape architect working for the Dubuque and Chicago Park Districts, Alfred Caldwell had worked in Jens Jensen's office for five years and spent three weeks with Frank Lloyd Wright at Taliesin East, where in his own words he learnt enormously (Caldwell 1987). While working for the Chicago Park District, Caldwell decided to get his architectural license and enrolled in a refresher course at the Armour Institute of Technology (AIT) to prepare for the state board examination.

Caldwell had a mastery of drawing that opened the door for him to work closely with Hilberseimer helping him prepare the drawings for his book entitled, *The New City*. Caldwell's skill and collaboration with Hilberseimer preceded the opportunity to be hired as the first full-time American professor by Mies in 1944. Although Caldwell was never officially enrolled in the undergraduate course in Architecture at IIT, the administration accepted his experience related with the subjects, and awarded him a Bachelor's degree in 1945.

As a member of the faculty, Caldwell contributed significantly to the development of the undergraduate program. When Caldwell began teaching at IIT, the undergraduate degree program in Architecture was a four-year program with an optional fifth year to specialize in Architecture or City and Regional Planning. Mies's program gave students the opportunity to "acquire a basic architectural philosophy and fundamental creative principles which would guide them in their task of creating living architecture" (Achilles 1986, p. 167). The fundamental principles of Mies' architecture program at IIT were structure, space, proportion, materials, painting-and-sculpture, and their integration. In parallel, students were also instructed in general theory and professional training. Caldwell's teaching in the construction studio, with its focus on clear and authentic masonry and timber construction, as well as his special brand of architectural history and landscaping courses were a large part of the program's success.

While Caldwell was working with Hilberseimer on the book, the professor suggested he take a master's degree. Caldwell had been working around the same idea for years: how to have a good life in America, so Hilberseimer encouraged him to put his ideas together. "That is very easy to do. A few words, a few pages…" (Caldwell 1987).

Under Mies's directorship, a new Master of Science in City Planning was introduced in addition to the existing Master of Science degree in Architecture. To obtain the Master of Science in City Planning it was necessary to study the subjects Theory of Dwellings and Housing, Theory of City Planning, Theory of Regional Planning, Applied City Planning and Applied Regional Planning, all of which were taught by Hilberseimer. Additionally, students attended certain lectures on the history of city planning, art of city planning, social hygiene, national economy, statistics, real estate law and finance, and finally the preparation and acceptance of a thesis. Hilberseimer's ideas about city and regional planning naturally became part of Caldwell's thinking.

1.2. "The Hilberseimer Plan"

Hilberseimer's city planning theory represented a new chapter in urban planning that was not based on formal aesthetics and design, but on attempting to align human needs with social and technological conditions in a more sustainable and livable manner. In order to make cities better and healthier places to live, he believed that we first need to conceive of the city as part of a larger whole. Like Caldwell described:

> When we began by considering the city just by itself, a multitude of other inter-related maladjustments … soon revealed themselves. It became apparent that any valid solution of the city must be a whole solution. We must find not only a specific answer to the chaos of the city, but a general answer to the chaos of our time -- of which the city is but a part. (Caldwell 1948).

To discover what is wrong with our cities, Hilberseimer would ask "What is wrong with our world?" defining a broader point of view from which to look at the problem. He would open our eyes to contemporary cities being dominated by commercial industry and ruled by interest, rather than reason and man's needs, as in the Agrarian villages of old (Hilberseimer 1946, p.166). City and regional planning was for Hilberseimer a means to reclaim our individual freedom by rebuilding our cities.

He advocated for planned decentralization which, as opposed to unplanned sprawl, provided an opportunity to integrate modern commerce, industry and agriculture into a healthy and sustainable urban fabric (Hilberseimer 1949, p. 136). Technology of the time also played a significant role in Hilberseimer's specific planning proposals. Greater military defensibility against the atom bomb coupled with available modes of transportation, (i.e. ship, train and automobile), called for and enabled a decentralized model of development. With careful planning, vacant land could be used to adapt and move our cities toward a more sustainable development pattern.

Hilberseimer's plan, taught at IIT into the early 1990s, refers to a planning concept based on the idea of a human settlement "unit". The Settlement Unit (Hilberseimer 1963), as it was called, dealt with and resolved the relationships of contemporary community life (i.e. living, working, and recreation) while also planning for growth. The size of the unit was based on a comfortable walking distance from home to school with a commercial center and industry located a short drive's distance. Other essential features of the unit included houses with Southern exposure to maximize daylighting, a street pattern with cul-de-sacs separating car and pedestrian modes of travel, (eliminating crossing hazards for children walking to school), and plenty of green space in and around the residential areas and tying together the commercial and industrial areas. Interconnected landscaped areas would be used for gardens and farms, orchards and meadows, forests and parks.

The settlement unit was conceived as a flexible and responsive concept, adaptable to the unique requirements of any specific community or region over time. It was a theoretical construct. The population of a unit could vary, as individual buildings themselves were conceived to be varied, with apartment buildings and houses, large and small. To accommodate growth, plenty of space was planned around a commercial-industrial corridor and new settlement units could be added indefinitely along a linear traffic artery comprised of local and long-distance streets. Hilberseimer's plan would also be responsive to site, situating air-polluting industry with respect to housing, prevailing winds and topography. Many applications of this concept were developed by Hilberseimer and students at IIT for cities around the world, with many focused on the Midwest region.

1.3. The City in the Landscape

Caldwell's affinity for nature and landscape were supported and enriched by Hilberseimer's rational approach to planning. After producing drawings for the book, *The New City*, Caldwell published a paper collecting many of the ideas shared with Hilberseimer. "The City in the Landscape" published in 1945 in the journal Parks and Recreation, is a brief summary of what years later became his thesis of the same title. The thesis was published in January 1948 under the advisement of Hilberseimer, the year before his next book, *The New Regional Pattern* was published. A common thread of ideas is shared.

Caldwell's thesis captures the revolutionary spirit of an educational philosophy aimed at quality of life and sustainable practices against the hegemony of industrial capitalism. Of the fourteen chapters, the first twelve are dedicated to an analysis of the city. Chapter thirteen is dedicated to an explanation of Hilberseimer's plan. Chapter fourteen presents an application of the settlement unit concept in Chicago.

Caldwell's "Proposed Plan for Chicago" aimed to remedy five major, interconnected "maladjustments" typical of industrial cities: Smoke, a consequence of the arbitrary location of the industries in the city; Dangerous Streets, as the existing grid pattern of the city is unfit for automobiles; Traffic Congestion and Distance to Work, related to unplanned sprawl; Slums, where buildings have shut out nature and the loss of nature is a prison; and Lack of Parks, or rather, ineffectively located parks (Caldwell 1948, p. 91). To respond to all of these maladjustments at once, the proposal suggested major structural change:

> Obviously we must plan the city as a whole. The just and proper solution of parts to a whole we have called order, and it is order which the city lacks. This, it must be finally clear, is the sum and substance of all the defects. The diagram suggests how we might re-plan the city by bringing all the complex parts into some rational order. (Caldwell 1948, p. 92.)

Utilizing Hilberseimer's settlement unit concept, the proposal was to convert the existing constricted city plan to a decentralized, linear pattern which would allow for sustainable development and growth. The diagram of the city (Caldwell 1948, p. 95) shows: located east of a main traffic artery, toward the lake smokeless industries and a commercial strip parallel to the main traffic artery; away from the lake west of the artery, smoke-producing industries with the adjacent communities located such that prevailing wind directions minimize impact of smoke; and heavy industries located along the Des Plaines-Illinois River channel. An airport and central railroad are located close to the "center" of the city and minor railroad stations placed on the junction of the main traffic artery and

the lesser. Additional airports and railroad stations could be added easily in this decentralized city if needed.

> We could say it was like a vine, and the parts of the city projecting outward like branches - the residential communities like leaves. We might even say that the closed end streets of the residential areas were like the veins of a leaf. It is possible to point out such comparison, for all nature is the expression of order. So, indeed, our city might be. (Caldwell 1948)

Caldwell's drawing of "The City in the Landscape" (Caldwell 1948, p. 96) shows how planning and interconnecting green spaces into both urban and rural conditions in a decentralized city pattern can provide a way for housing, industry, and transportation to remain connected with nature.

2. CONNECTIONS BETWEEN THEORY AND BUILT WORK

2.1. Gardens and parks

In his early years as a landscape architect, the influence of the Prairie School comes through. Caldwell came to appreciate the park as a meadow, which symbolized to him the prairies of Illinois -- open spaces bounded by protective forests.
From his earliest works, Caldwell's landscaping palette included the open spaces as much as the rich and varied landforms, materials and plantings. The ground and plantings, the hardscape, water, sound and light all work together to create an environment touched by humans yet reverent of nature. An autodidact understudy of Frank Lloyd Wright, the landscape architecture at Eagle Point Park and Lincoln Park both capture the spirit of the Prairie School so well that they are often mistaken for the senior master's.
In 1933, as superintendent of Dubuque (Iowa) Parks, Caldwell designed the project in Eagle Point Park he named "The City in a Garden" inspired by the City of Chicago's motto, "Urbs in horto." The 164-acre park is located on a bluff overlooking the Mississippi River with panoramic views of the city. The project was part of an initiative to extend the use of the park into the winter months through the addition of shelters and fireplaces. Caldwell's plan introduced characteristic Prairie School ideas. Structures of split-faced Niagara limestone laid in irregular horizontal layers suggest the midwest prairie's natural geological stratification and were used alongside timber and stucco in the buildings. The distribution of the buildings in the landscape created a variety of interstitial spaces that were augmented with a variety of plantings, to create an aesthetic quality that was coherent while also rich and varied. The project earned a national W.P.A. design award in 1936, and in 2017 Eagle Point Park was added to the National Register of Historic Places.
During Caldwell's tenure with the Chicago Park District, he created landscape drawings for a number of parks including Montrose Park, Promontory Point at Burnham Park, and Jackson Park. The Lily Pool in Lincoln Park, Chicago is perhaps his best known, and one of his most treasured projects. It is said that he sold his life insurance policy to pay for flowers which he installed. The Lily Pool is a "Prairie garden" of approximately 2.5 acres with an unassuming entrance featuring a lagoon, waterfall, and council ring in stratified limestone. Stone walkways meander through plantings of crab apple, hawthorn, serviceberry, and sumac, underplanted with native viburnum and rose shrubs and woodland perennials. In 2002 the project was named a Chicago Landmark, and a National Historic Landmark in 2006.

> This garden is a biographical footnote on the meaning of the Chicago Plain... The trees, shrubs and flowers planted in this garden were native to the Chicago Plain. They

> represented scientifically the ecology of the region. They were those plants which, over thousands of years had achieved perfect adaptation to the environment of climate and soil. Consequently, they were at once the most beautiful and most vigorous and healthy. (Caldwell in Blaser 1984, p. 38)

2.2. Urban design and landscaping

The relationship established between Alfred Caldwell and his professors at IIT, Mies and Hilberseimer, extended beyond learning. Mies was engaged by IIT to draw up a plan for the new 30-acre campus whose final version was approved in 1941. The campus plan was based on a 24-foot, 12-foot-high floor module used not only for the planning of each building but also for their location. Mies saw in this decision the solution both for the buildings to harmonize with each other as a whole and in the course of a long construction period which would extend even beyond Mies's retirement from IIT (Blaser 2002, p. 21). The result is a system of pavilions surrounded by nature, a campus in a park. With the plan already approved, Mies invited Caldwell, still a student, to design the campus landscape.

Caldwell never fully developed a landscape master plan, however it is possible to identify in his contributions, the concepts he was working on in the forties and that, at the same time, were a result of his previous experiences. Firstly, as a Jens Jensen's protégé, he shared the idea of using native tree and plant species in order to demonstrate an appreciation of the site. All the trees are placed "naturally" around campus rather than in straight rows, maximizing the idea of freedom of space that can be also connected with Mies's spatial ideas.

> According to [Mies's colleague Peter] Carter, Caldwell had found a parallel between 'Jensen's insistence on the integrity of nature and Mies van der Rohe's insistence on the honest expression of a building's structure', so that the 'interaction between this free-flowing landscaping, with its diaphanous honey locusts and substantial hawthorn, and the pristine architecture, contributes a kind of poetry to both exterior and interior milieu'. (Haar 2002, quoting Carter, p. 73)

In the early fifties, after a substantial development of ideas in Caldwell's thesis and Hilbersimer's books, Caldwell and Hilberserimer had the opportunity to work together and with Mies on the urban renewal project, Lafayette Park, in Detroit. Trying to solve the "evils" associated with the industrial city, while bringing out its best, Hilberseimer, Caldwell and Mies approached the problem from different perspectives. Intended for middle class people, Hilberseimer planned Lafayette with three types of residential buildings, a high-rise apartment building, 2-story townhomes and 1-story rowhouses. These buildings, offering different amenities, were arranged on the edges of a clear space that Caldwell imagined as a meadow, or prairie. At one end of the clearing was a school, and on the other, a baseball diamond. Although the development was never completed, the plan comes close to being another application of Hilberseimer's Plan, where at least buildings of different scales are connected by green space and children walk to school in a park. In this project, Caldwell sought to evoke the specific spirit of the Midwestern landscape once again, using native species and integrating buildings and landscape. In the architecture of steel, glass and brick, can be seen Mies's respect for the local industrial materials.

> In the hands of Mies and Caldwell, this schema is transformed into a site of lived and sensed interweavings and interrelationships between buildings and landscapes, private and public domains, enclosed and open spaces. (Waldheim 2004, p. 12)

The Lafayette Park project represents the only built collaborative attempt to solve city problems of today that combines the ideas of Mies, Hilberseimer and Caldwell. Nevertheless, Lafayette Park does not deal with the city as a whole but only a portion of it, a defined site within the city.

2.3. Caldwell's farm

In 1948, Caldwell decided to purchase a forty-acre piece of land near Bristol, Wisconsin upon which he started to build his own farm. It was the same year he submitted his thesis and a year before the collaborative Lafayette Park project. Caldwell worked with his wife, family and students on this piece of land for the rest of his life. The project was never completely finished but it should be considered an experiment in living, an attempt to make his ideas come true.

> I wanted to buy a piece of land. From the experience I had before I concluded that I have to live on a farm. I have to get my living out of the soil (…) It was consistent with [decentralization], but even more with my experience. (Caldwell 1987)

According to some, the idea of Caldwell's farm traces its origins to Jefferson's idea of an agrarian democracy of land-owning farmers (Waldheim 2004). Caldwell's own actions certainly support the idea of small farms for every American family, though his theoretical ideas also provided space for industry and commerce

In Caldwell's farm, it is possible to identify some influence from each of his mentors. Caldwell had started to think about the city and its current "evils" in relation to nature since he began working with Jensen. Like Jensen, Caldwell used native species of plants and materials as well as materials in their natural state to merge architecture and landscape. The walls of his farmhouse are native stone, whose interior cores are poured with concrete making "solid" stone walls.

This idea of integrating architecture in the landscape could also be associated with Frank Lloyd Wright's conception of Prairie houses. It is necessary to highlight that Caldwell affirmed that he was not particularly influenced by Wright's proposal for Broadacre City, however, like many others Wright defended "a piece of land for everybody" (Caldwell 1987). Wright's impact on Caldwell can be seen more so in the horizontality of architecture and also in the use of materials from the nature that surrounds it. As Wright was known to adapt his buildings to their natural surroundings, making of the two a continuous whole, Caldwell's drawings for the farm too show buildings completely embedded in the landscape.

Mies' influence on Caldwell's architecture can be perceived in the farmhouse both in terms of its clarity of construction and proportion as well as upon closer inspection of the drawings. One of the architectural problems Mies's students at IIT worked on was the development of a Court House, as he had done during his years at Bauhaus. In this kind of plan, the spatial fluidity and connection between interior and exterior is key, and was reflected in many of his projects from the thirties including the German Pavilion in Barcelona. Caldwell's plans for the farmhouse also recall the plans for Mies' unbuilt brick house in the early twenties, with walls extended into the landscape on all sides.

Finally, Hilberseimer's ideas are present in the planning for his farm, from the shared idea of decentralization that Hilberseimer had defended since his European years, to bringing attention to the importance of farms in modern city life. While Hilberseimer is best known for his ideal planning proposals, Caldwell is perhaps better known for his built work and as an activist. Caldwell proudly said:

> When I made my plan for the city of Chicago, I put my farm on this plan—there's a whole series of them, a whole band of these things, so that I always say the city plans never come to anything. Thousands and thousands of city plans have been made in America and they just gather dust on the shelves and are entirely forgotten. Nobody ever initiates any of these plans. Only my city is under construction. (Caldwell 1987)

With his purchase of 40 acres of an 80-acre tract, Caldwell began to build the ideal city he proposed. Although the farm was never completed, and his Proposed Plan for Chicago was never fully realized as a whole, he said, "at least it was a try" (Caldwell in Blaser 1984, 50).

CONCLUSION

The City in the Landscape represented a broadening of the notion of Urbs in Horto at a time when urban planning was broadening from an inwardly looking, functional-aesthetic discipline to one that included social and environmental critique and advocacy, and in which transportation played an increasingly significant part. It was as much a critique of the Industrial Era itself as it was an action plan, a proposed sustainable development pattern for urban renewal. Caldwell's farm, the IIT Campus Masterplan and Lafayette Park each represent the ideal of "the city in the landscape" at different scales, and a greater role for natural landscape in the urban fabric. The landscape is an integral part of the experience of each of these places. Spaces to enjoy nature have been created within and among buildings in such proportions that the buildings inhabit the landscape rather than dominate. His adept and fervent use of native plantings demonstrates Caldwell's deep respect for the natural landscape. The historical status earned by the Mies Townhomes and Lafayette Park testify to the high level of quality that was achieved through the symbiotic relationship formed between disciplines of city planning, architecture and landscape.

The bold ideas and works point to a broadening perspective on urban design. Caldwell looked to the landscape not only for beauty and comfort, but also to secure social welfare and individual freedom against oppressive industrial-capitalistic interests which inhumanely hold profit above quality of life. The role that cities play in this human condition was captured by Hilberseimer in quoting Patrick Geddes:

> What we need is constructive peace and constructive peace simply means rebuilding this world, village by village, city by city, region by region, in terms of Geotechnic and of evolutionary ideals. We must go beyond the stone age of predatory economics and its accompaniment of mutual slaughter to the new age of co-operation, of tending our own garden and our nation's, with mutual aid as our ideal. (Hilberseimer 1949, p. 192).

The concept of a decentralized linear city embedded in the landscape emerged with respect to human, environmental and technological developments and in contrast to the practice of urban land clearing. Key to the decentralization concept was electricity, which extended previous limitations and promised a new era of great mobility:

> Electricity, more and more replacing steam power, has been an important force toward decentralization. It has made production possible anywhere. It has helped greatly to make it practical, as it is today, to concentrate or to decentralize at will, both in industry and in agriculture. (Hilberseimer 1949, p. 185)

The more recent discovery that "the great economic revolutions in history occur when new communication technologies converge with new energy systems" (Rifkin 2011, p.1)

puts Hilberseimer's and Caldwell's bold ideas into context today. Whereas in the first half of the last century, locomotion became a disruptive planning principle, in this one, Rifkin forecasted that "Internet technology and renewable energies were about to merge to create a powerful new infrastructure for a Third Industrial Revolution that would change the world." He predicted a new disruptor, a new hope, connected with technology, environment and humanity:

> In the coming era, hundreds of millions of people will produce their own green energy in their homes, offices, and factories and share it with each other in an "energy Internet,"... The democratization of energy will bring with it a fundamental reordering of human relationships, impacting the very way we conduct business, govern society, educate our children, and engage in civic life. (Rifkin 2011, p. 2.)

The confluence of developments in smart tech, shifting away from reliance on finite fossil fuels, enhanced availability of renewable energy seems to suggest that a new socio-economic order may be on the horizon. Revolutionary ideas from mid-century, like Caldwell's, invite us to ask, What does the growing green-industry ($4 trillion by some accounts) mean for the now global-industrial-capitalistic order? What of land use, of nature, of decentralization and what of farms and the mixing of agriculture and industry? What does today's city reflecting our new hopes look like?

Figure 3. Wandering the Caldwell Landscape, Bristol, Wisconsin, 2018, photograph by Ron Henderson.

Figure 4. Alfred Caldwell and IIT Students, circa 1958, photograph by Jong Soung Kimm.

REFERENCES

Achilles, R., Harrington, K. and Myhrum, Ch. *Mies van der Rohe: Architect as Educator.* Chicago: Illinois Institute of Technology, University of Chicago Press, 1986.

Blaser, W., ed. 1984. *Architecture and Nature: The Work of Alfred Caldwell.* Basel ; Boston: Birkhäuser Verlag.

Blaser, Werner. *Mies van der Rohe: IIT Campus Illinois Institute of Technology.* Chicago. Basel, Boston, Berlin: Birkhäuser, 2002.

Caldwell, A. 1948. *The City in the Landscape: A Preface for Planning.* Chicago: Illinois Institute of Technology.

Caldwell, A. 1987. "Oral history of Alfred Caldwell." Interviewed by Betty J. Blum, February 28, 1987. Compiled under the Chicago Architects Oral History Project, Art Institute of Chicago.

Domer, D. 1997. *Alfred Caldwell: The Life and Work of a Prairie School Landscape Architect.* U.S.A.: The Johns Hopkins University Press.

Hilberseimer, L. 1944. *The New City: Principles of Planning.* Chicago: P. Theobald.

Hilberseimer, Ludwig. 1946. "Review of New Architecture and City Planning." College Art Journal, Vol. VI, No. 2, p. 165.

Hilberseimer, L. 1949. *The New Regional Pattern: Industries and Gardens*, Workshops and Farms. Chicago : P. Theobald.

Rifkin, J. 2011. *Third Industrial Revolution: How Lateral Power Is Transforming Energy, the Economy, and the World.* New York: St. Martin's Press.

The Cultural Landscape Foundation. n.d. "Alfred Caldwell. Pioneer Information." Accessed February 23, 2020. https://tclf.org/pioneer/alfred-caldwell.

Waldheim, Ch., ed. 2004. *Hilberseimer/Mies van Der Rohe: Lafayette Park Detroit.* Prestel ; Harvard University Graduate School of Design.

PAPER #1.02

THE FACE OF THE CITY

Nuria Casais[a], Ferran Grau[b]
[a]Aarhus School of Architecture, Aarhus, Denmark
[b]UPC-ETSAB, Barcelona, Spain

ABSTRACT

The evolution of European cities continues to oscillate between the essence of the "emotional city", and the potential of *urbanal* scenarios. Historic, newly built and radically transformed urban fragments coexist within a city and seek to fit into an urban structure that tends to redefine itself integrating discontinuities and a changing urbanity. A current review of European transformed cities through specific urban scenes allows a reading of the urban space and the role of architectural languages.
The dialogue between the built environment (*ville*) and the character of urban life (*cité*) reveals how cities are inhabited, and how the architectural forms draw a *face of the city* defined by "cosmetic techniques". Due to architects' trust in the possibilities of architectural language, a display of a cosmetic refinement enhances the subjectivity on the urban readers. Architecture approaches again the old debate between poetry and rationality.
In the urban debate, the language and image of the architectural objects are key for the urban identity and centres the debate between cosmetic subjectivity and scientific objectivity. Exterior and interior appearances define the links with the city. Specifically from the outside, architectural objects can choose to be contextual, autonomous or indifferent, to their surroundings. The study of urban scenarios in the European city looking at new or transformed fragments, analysing the use of cosmetic techniques that sheds light on the potential and limitations of each specific context allows to assess the ability of architecture to collectively or individually build the identity of a city.

KEYWORDS

Urban space; city; identity; cosmetic techniques; architectural image.

INTRODUCTION

At the end of the 1990s, the political consolidation of the European Union ratified by the signing of the Maastrich Treaty (1992) gave a great boost to public architecture. The optimism of the new community alliances gave rise to new built architectures and others that, in the competition phase, yearned to anticipate the form and function of the architecture of the future. Some of the competitions developed by the Metropolitan Office of Architecture (OMA) acquired this utopian character and would become, without being built, reference architectures in the international debate, both professionally and academically. On the other hand, and within a framework of political and economic development, there were other practices more pragmatic and realistic that explored the limits of the tectonics. The most representative case was embodied by the Herzog & de Meuron, which in the development of their architecture, sought the "highest ontological state of matter" (Zaera Polo 1993). Their constructive and material refinement was defined by Jeffrey Kipnis as the application of "cosmetic techniques" in which they linked antagonistic terms such as ornament and minimalism (Kipnis 1997). The architecture of Herzog & de Meuron once again pointed out the role of the spectator's subjectivity and, in a way, bringing architecture closer to the category of art.

Almost thirty years later, the architectural discipline has had to admit, after a global economic and climatic crisis, other attitudes resulting from a *rappel à l'ordre*. In the European context, the awarding of the last two Mies van der Rohe Award to interventions in existing residential buildings in the Netherlands and France, has not only valued built architecture, but also the social character that the discipline must take into consideration (Jacobs 1961).[1]

These two reference works have represented many architects who, through projects of a much smaller scale, have approached the architectural pre-existence and the users with care and respect. In this sense, the use of cosmetic techniques has been definitive for managing the architectural language in a personal way. The link between ornament and order, intrinsic to the term cosmetic, has allowed architects to offer the users a personalized response. This personalization of cosmetic techniques has given rise to: ornate architectures, naked architectures (in a way ornamented), technological architectures, brutalist architectures or other almost technically vernacular. Nowadays architecture is defined by artifices, often with layers, and with much or less thickness. This situation reveals the cosmetic character of the construction and the extreme possibilities of the architectural language defining the new based on the syntactic domain of the old. In consequence, the European urban scenarios show more and more the aims of architects for objectifying buildings in a way that highlights the difference between the interior and the exteriors.

This paper studies urban scenarios in the European city looking at new or transformed fragments, analysing the use of cosmetic techniques that sheds light on the potential and limitations of each specific context. In consequence, it assesses the ability of architecture to collectively or individually build the identity of a city, the meaning of *homeyness* (Caruso 2001), memory, nostalgia, heterogeneity and mistakes and success of urban spaces designed to inhabit.

1. BARCELONA, ZURICH AND COPENHAGEN. THREE CASE STUDIES

Barcelona, Zurich and Copenhagen define a European axis (South - North) representative of the cultural, social, urban, geographical and climatic diversity in Mediterranean, Central European and Nordic cities. These three cities have undergone relevant transformations in areas with their own identity and with well-defined physical limits. The diversity of these fragments, situations and contexts, allows establishing conclusive relationships on the architectural and urban appearance, finding points of connection and differences. Barcelona, the compact city (Busquets 2005), has shown that it feels much more comfortable and recognizable in the transformations in the center (El Turó de la Rovira for instance) than, for example, in more "peripheral" ones such as the 22@ or the Forum in which the new identity is characterized by an autonomy with respect to the existing city. Zurich, identity of the central European city, presents growths close to each other, really diverse. The Europaallee operation is a central complex tangent to the train tracks and nearby the Hauptbanhoff. Completely new, it evokes Hans Kollhoff's master plan for Alexander Platz in Berlin (1933) defined by large blocks around a central courtyard and a crown built with volumes at different heights. Architectural tectonics is a clear heritage from Kollhoff's teachings and practice, especially in the mannerism of Caruso St. John's project (who, like Kollhoff, also teach at ETH). Not far away, Zurich West, similar to Barcelona's 22@, has built on the existing industrial fabric, but in this case it has been an excuse for the redefinition of Swiss architectural cosmetics and a truly successful urban atmosphere. Following the train tracks we arrive in Oerlikon,

[1] "The need for aged buildings" is the title of one of the chapters of Jane Jacobs' book The Death and Life of Great American Cities.

an almost new neighbourhood, in which a large number of residential buildings have been built and in which Zurich's urban identity really takes on a new, much more global physiognomy. Copenhagen, to the south of the North, is a dynamic city in which two very interesting transformation zones are worth studying: Nordhaven and Ørestad. The first, the result of the transformation of a port area into an urban fragment, has been subjected to a radical cosmetic process in which the new buildings are, in some cases, prostheses or actions in existing architectures, giving rise to a new urban environment that, by maintaining the original essence, invites its inhabitants to recognize an identity based on pre-existences. Ørestad shows a different situation where the embryo of his growth is not a port, but a metro line and a wetland plain. In this sense, the difficulty of building a new urbanity is greater; here cosmetic techniques are at the service of objects and not so much that of the construction of urban links.

2. BARCELONA, A BEFORE AND AN AFTER

At the end of 1985, the Barcelona City Council promoted a communication campaign entitle "Barcelona get pretty" with the aim of advertising the Measures for the Protection and Improvement of the Urban Landscape.[2] This anthropomorphic message invited citizens to pay more attention to the aspect that "the face of the city" presented. In 1985 the neglect of the architectural heritage in Barcelona was evident and the urban disorder drew an irregular skyline with party walls left exposed. This campaign referred directly to the architectural surfaces of the city, to the epidermis of the buildings, and set "the face of the city" as the starting point of an urban transformation that would end up going far beyond surface treatment. The rehabilitation of the facades was the action that would precede transcendental changes in the urban and infrastructural morphology of Barcelona. These deeper changes were evident globally during the celebration of the Olympic Games in Barcelona (1992), and a few years later, during the celebration of the Forum of Cultures (2004). Both historical milestones were fundamental at the time of internationally projecting a new, much more cosmopolitan, image that would eventually attract numerous global events. Olympic Barcelona was recognized worldwide for its opening to the sea, and last but not least, the optimization of the new infrastructures, as for example the beltway (*Les Rondes*), today still crucial for the city's mobility. The opening to the sea and the architectural nature of *Les Rondes,* were complemented with a third new urban proposal addressing the public space, the "hard squares". The so-called "hard squares" (built before the Olympic project) ordered the mobility and prioritized pedestrian rights. Plaza de Sants (1981-83) designed by Viaplana-Piñón with the collaboration of Enric Miralles, was a reference for the design of the Barcelona's public space that relied on geometric systems that created places with a remarkable degree of abstraction[3]. This new abstract public space presented a lack of green areas, especially due to budgetary and maintenance issues. The second public space reference was built ten years later on the occasion of the Olympic Games and it was projected by Eduard Bru in the Vall d'Hebrón. An ambitious Master Plan ordered an area of 37 hectares, attending to a complex topography and integrating sports facilities, green areas and paved areas with outdoor carpets that built a nature with artificial fragments. In Barcelona, in the 1980s and early 1990s, the language and the materiality of public space were more innovative than the building ones (Busquets 2019).[4]

[2] The technical director of the campaign was the architect Josep Emili Hernández-Cros, architect and professor of the Higher Technical School of Architecture of Barcelona, and author of the Architecture Guide of Barcelona, together with Gabriel Mora and Xavier Pouplana, in 1972

[3] Right now the square is expecting a renovation project that promises to be very polemical.

[4] After 1975, the end of Franco's dictatorship, the city looks to represent the freedom in urban planning through the creation of public space.

Figure 1. Forum 2004 area. Photographer Duccio Malagamba

Figure 2. Transformation of the anti-aircraft defence facilities. Turó de la Rovira. Photographer: Lourdes Jansana

"The face of the city" would not undergo a significant change until 2004 as a result of a global urban strategy that aimed to balance the city, both from an urban and economic point of view. The exhibition "Barcelona in progress", organized during the Forum 2004, decoded the meaning of the city's new growth. These new urban guidelines were based on three poles: the Plaza de las Glorias (Cerdà's Eixample centre), the area of the new intermodal station of La Sagrera, and the Forum area complex located at the end of Avenida Diagonal. In addition, the conversion of the former industrial district of Poblenou into an eminently technological district (22@) completed a series of actions in the east of Barcelona. These urban projects did not approach the public space (and the architecture) in an integrated way with the city as the Olympic project did. In this sense, the urban appearance gave rise to public spaces with a more fragmented and no-contextual character and a generic architecture and city (Koolhaas 2006), specially highlighted because of the construction of many hotel buildings very autonomous respect the existing urban identity.

Coinciding with the development of the Forum project (Fig. 1), the construction of new "skyscrapers", mostly concentrated in the final section of the Diagonal and the Forum area, underlined the global character of the city. This less familiar *face* was partly the result of the difficulty of projecting these buildings in height in contexts not yet consolidated, such as the Plaza de las Glorias or the new Diagonal (area that goes from Glorias to the Forum). The set built on the occasion of the Forum 2004 integrated large buildings in height and consolidated the architectures with a more global character within a fragment of city built in the blink of an eye. The new skyscrapers in Barcelona were not referenced in those first high-rise buildings built in the late 1970s with a contextual vocation, with textured and three-dimensional facades. These strategically placed buildings would occupy representative corners or islands, and would be designed with a contextual language that managed to integrate them into the existing city, although they would stand out in contrast to the compactness of the urban fabric of no more than six or seven stories. The Torre Colón (1966-1971) or the Torre Urquinaona (1970) are the best examples.

The real estate crisis of world scale suddenly slowed the growth of the city. Barcelona's plans to balance and equalise its growth by promoting actions in the east (Glorias, Sagrera, Forum and 22@) were blocked. The 22@ slowly followed its development based on action units that evidenced economic power through a more no-contextual language and with few points of connection with the city cultural background.

[5] Unfinished. Pabellón Español. Biennale Architettura 2016. Ministerio de Fomento y Fundación Arquia. 2016

Currently, the face of the city in Barcelona presents global architectural languages inherited from the era of the real estate boom; but also more *affable* ones, from the post-crises years, that are the result of the willingness to bring architecture closer to people. These languages were identified by the curators of the Spanish pavilion of the XV Venice Biennale held in 2016, which under the title of "Unfinished"[5] gathered a series of projects that evidenced an "unfinished" architecture, in some ways "without make-up", and with a more domestic and iconoclastic character that reacted to a generic architecture or an exuberant architecture that at the beginning of the 21st Century gave no concessions to the user. This attitude is having, even now, its translation in the design of the city's public space. Examples of public space that developed this attitude were also part of this exhibition. Among them, there was the Jansana, de la Villa, and Paauw's project in Turó de la Rovira (Fig.2). At the top of a promontory, the same place previously was an Iberian settlement, an agricultural settlement, an anti-aircraft defence facility, a barracks neighbourhood, and now a 360º viewpoint that respects the history that the place has lived and bets on a really unfinished project that seems to be a ruin. This emaciated *face of the city* contrasts with another project that exemplifies a new line in the treatment of public space. It is the Passeig de Sant Joan, designed by Lola Doménech (2014), which incorporates green areas almost as if they were urban oases offering a friendly and close image, referenced in the hard squares, but also in the nature that was before the existence of the city. This public space project exemplifies how to intervene in existing urban scenarios incorporating new attitudes and promoting alternative urbanities.

3. ZURICH, FROM THE CENTRE TO THE PERIPHERY

The urban identity of Zurich remains influenced by the local debate that confronts tradition and modernity. In 1955 the writer Max Frisch (Frisch 1955) openly criticized the conservative character by referring to "homesickness for the day before" while advocating an urbanism that assumed the demands of future evolution and growth. In this sense, the urban identity of the city centre has undergone few *apparent* changes. Perhaps the most notable ones are the great underground infrastructure performance in the basement of the central Hauptbahnhof railway station, imperceptible from the outside, and the large Europaallee complex, recently built just near the same station, occupying lots next to the train tracks. The two actions are, in regard to appearance, a faithful reflection of the debate that Max Frisch raised, although the dimensions of the underground world under the Hauptbahnhof bravely assume the demands of the future. The appearance of the Europaallee project, with its large blocks with public courtyards inside, picks up a collection of architectural languages that goes from the modern Swiss tradition, sober and of great rationality (E2A), through a more ornate architecture (Caruso St John) to a language of glazed curtain walls (Gigon Guyer) with a more *international* character.

In the redefinition of Zurich's urban identity, rail infrastructure and old industrial areas have a decisive influence. It is needed to highlight that the great Europaallee project is based on land owned by SBB (Swiss Federal Railways), and that Zurich-West project is based on the conversion of the industrial zone crossed by Hardbrücke Bridge. This old industrial district is now an area that mainly allocates office building and facilities with their own and cosmopolitan identity unknown so far in the city. The success of this operation is the result of having integrated the pre-existence into a new tertiary fabric without renouncing to a new identity. The Gigon Guyer's Prime Tower is

Figure 3. Zurich West. Photographer: Georg Aerni.

Figure 4. Oerlikon. Photographer: Michael Freisager

leading a modernity that is referenced in some of the downtown Zurich office buildings. The restaurants integrated between the arches of the Viadukt guarantee the life of the district beyond working hours. But the project that best reflects the new identity and a *friendly* city face is the conversion of the old milk factory (Toni) designed by EM2N studio. Toni Areal is a mixed-use building for education, culture and housing, in an operation that addresses the interior as an internal urbanism (Bideau 2015).

Apart from these spaces with an industrial history, there are other areas with a much more noticeable residential character and that also explain the redefinition of the city's urban identity. In this sense, it is necessary to differentiate between those that are the result of an urban re-densification and those that have been completely built from scratch. Among others, these are the metropolitan neighbourhoods of Affoltern, Altstetten, or Albisrieden. In these neighbourhoods, as dictated by Swiss tradition, existing residential projects are always linked to a landscape project. They respond to a desire to be part of the existing urban fabric with a generally austere architecture based on residential buildings with pitched roofs, also identifiable in the first ring of downtown Zurich. In terms of language, the private real state tends to have a global appearance in comparison to the public promotions, which have a more personalized and attentive one, in a way, closer to the internationally recognizable Swiss architectural language. Language in collective dwelling projects is especially careful, which, having a long local tradition, collect all the wisdom of local architecture from architects such as Werner Stücheli or Max Bill: a sober architecture, but at the same time very sensitive and full of nuances.

Among the complexes built completely from a *tabula rasa,* the Oerlikon area stands out. Located in between the centre and the airport, Oerlikon gathers in a single operation a set of residential and commercial blocks with a little referenced character to the Swiss tradition. In this case, architecture is not completely capable of creating an urban context with its own identity, and the public space does not integrate a landscape project able of establishing links with immediate neighbourhoods. In this sense, in this complex, one of the most representative green zones is a metal structure that supports vegetation growth (MFO Park) and can be understood, in a way, as an empty housing block, and as a version away from the Swiss landscape tradition which fulfills the objective of mediating between architecture and the city or the countryside, eliminating any type of physical barrier. The criticisms of the residential project of Oerlikon do not lie on the quality of the housing, which has it and is relevant, but in the urban conception and its link in the general plot of the city.

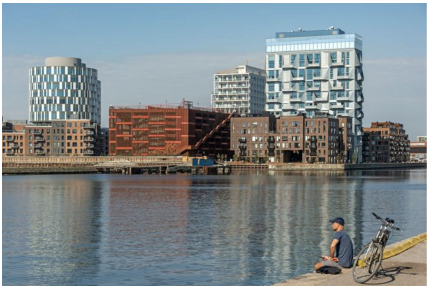


Figure 5. Nordhavn, Copenhagen. Photographer: anonymous

Figure 6. Ørestad, Copenhagen. Photographer: Adam Mørk

The analysis of the urban identity of Zurich shows that the "apparent disorder of the contemporary city" (Zardini 1997) and the heterogeneity that this disorder implies, is one of the specific characteristics that offers new possibilities for intervention. The commitment to heterogeneity, difference and the value of tradition as a starting point, builds in Zurich the most favourable conditions for the development of urban life.

4. COPENHAGEN, NEW AND TRANSFORMED COAST

The coastal border of Copenhagen, as in other cities of Denmark, is in a continuous transformation to allocate new urban fabric. Nordhavn (Fig. 5), the northern port, gives name to the largest metropolitan development in Scandinavia. Located 4 km from the centre of Copenhagen with exceptional connections by land and sea, its construction began at the end of the 19th Century. Nordhavn extends over the Øresund Strait on land reclaimed from the sea[6] to house a constructed area of 4,000,000 square meters, in which 40,000 inhabitants will live and in which 40,000 jobs will be created. With the aim of being a "sustainable city of the future",[7][2] the urban project, developed by COBE in 2008, integrates the debate between citizens and developers. The district of Aarhusgade, the first to be developed in Nordhavn, seeks to consolidate itself with the district of Østerbro going forward, despite the infrastructure barriers that separate them. Aarhusgade is the result of the transformation of an industrial sector into an urban residential space, with production and an economy typical of the tertiary sector.[8]

Strolling around Göteborg square we leave behind a stepped waterfront, a sign of a new urbanity, and looking towards the north, we can see an urban space that includes three of the most representative buildings of the old and the new Nordhavn: the Portland Towers (DesignGroup), The Silo (COBE), and Frihavns Tårnet (Praksis).[9]

Different cosmetic techniques define a new architectural identity in which only in the Portland Towers is possible to discern the

[6] According to the data provided by By & Havn, the area reclaimed from the sea in Nordhavn accounts for 1% of the total area of Copenhagen. The filler material used for the new growth comes from the island of Zealand itself, and approximately 16 percent comes from the excavation of the Copenhagen Circular Metro line.

[7] CPH City & Port Development participates in the EnergyLab Nordhavn strategic partnership, which focuses on the development of intelligent energy systems, providing the energy flexibility necessary for the efficient use of renewable energy. A sustainable urban development process is the backbone of a sustainable city with a high degree of habitability. For this reason, the new areas of the city in Nordhavn are certified according to DGNB sustainability standards. Sustainability in Nordhavn can be experienced and measured.

[8] The new container and cruise port moves to a new extension of the same port (northeast) occupying new land reclaimed from the sea (Ydre Nordhavn).

[9] The Portland towers are the result of the transformation of two concrete silos built by Aalborg Portland in 1979; The Silo and the Frihavns Tårnet are the result of the adaptation of two silos built by the DLG Company.

existence of a port industrial structure, covered with a volume of cantilevered offices fortified with industrial-style bracing, and finished with an enveloping curtain wall. In Nordhavn, what you do not see is important: in the Frihavns Tårnet building, for example, electricity, light, and heat are controlled by automatic sensors that measure CO2 levels and temperature. This means the temperature and the indoor climate are regulated automatically. On the other hand, what is evident (and visible) in Nordhavn is part of a new style that gives it an identity of its own.

A high-rise red car park (Lüders, JAJA) houses a recreational-public space on its roof covering an area of 2,400 square meters. At 24 meters high, and after climbing 135 steps lined with planters and the history of Nordhavn printed on the metal facade, we recover the view of the centre of Copenhagen, the sea and the dynamic and constantly transformed urban port context.

Approximately eight kilometres south of Nordhavn, the final section of the M1 subway line traces a dramatic straight line. Raised above ground level, it establishes the urban and territorial identity of the district of Ørestad (Fig. 6), located ten minutes from the centre of Copenhagen. The M1 Line circulates on an intermittent concrete bridge just after the Sundby station in the direction of Vestamager, the final stop; in this way, the M1 allows, in a transverse way, the urban connection and the crossing paths of other infrastructures.

Ørestad is an *artificial city* developed in a wetland area south of the island of Amager, and construction began thanks to the sale of publicly owned land to private interests[10]. Ørestad was conceived in the late 1980s as a strategy to alleviate the main problems of the city of Copenhagen: low growth, unemployment, and indebtedness. Near the two important infrastructures of the airport and the Øresund Bridge, which links Copenhagen and Malmö, it contrasted the tendency of the capital to grow towards the north.

The initial plan included mainly housing and offices, and currently includes educational facilities, a large shopping centre (Field's), an international convention centre (Bella Centre)[11], and a multipurpose venue (Royal Arena) with global ambitions.

Ørestad is, in itself, a new great axis that divides an urban fabric woven together from single-family homes with gardens, a golf course, and wetlands. The duality between large and small scale coexists in Ørestad, where the architectural organization resulting from the building lots and interests of private development, combines terraced houses with orchards and large housing blocks.

In Ørestad, water is another structural element that participates in a personal way of understanding the urban landscape that connects with the nature of the place. A canal parallels the route of the M1, and a pond defines the southern limit of this promised land that looks out towards the natural area of Vestamager, also known as Kalvebod Fælled[12]. On the southern edge, the architecture of Ørestad is abruptly interrupted by the presence of the horizon. 8 House (BIG), on the southern limit of Ørestad, reveres the landscape by tilting its architecture and inviting nature to be part of its dynamic courtyards defined with small mountains, this time, real ones.

[10] Together with Ørestad, it was decided to build the subway, which would significantly improve public transport in the capital.
[11] In Ørestad, signs have been installed to announce the identity of this district, and they provide different messages:
- "With roots in Copenhagen architecture and lifestyle, Bellakvarter shows how a local neighbourhood can co-exist beautifully with an international conference centre".
- "A new Copenhagen neighbourhood is in the making right here! The area around Bella Canter is transforming into Bellakvarter - with residents, shops, and visitors from all over the world."
- "Just around the corner, you will find Nordergarden - a new urban space that during the coming summers develops into a hotspot for urban gardens, play, good food, and events for all of Copenhagen. In the middle of Nordgarden the Bella Urban Garden community is growing. Here you will find radishes, apple trees, and flowers and everything in between. During the summer, there are free workshops on urban gardening. "
[12] Area reclaimed from the sea in the 1940s to house military manoeuvres, and which is currently structured as a natural marshland space.
[13] «La ciudad urbanal es una Ciudad con lugares "urbanales" que explican las consecuencias urbanas de la globalización» [The urbanal city is a city with "urbanal" places that explain the urban consequences of globalization].

CONCLUSION

With practically no exceptions, the evolution of European cities recognizes two types of contrasting scenarios that make up contemporary urban reality: the essence of the "emotional city" (Caruso 2001), and the confusion and potential of new *urbanal* (Muñoz 2008)[13] scenarios. Historic, newly built and radically transformed urban fragments coexist within a city. All of these fragments, succeeding or not, seek to fit into an urban structure that tends to redefine itself integrating discontinuities and an idea of a changing urbanity. The reaffirmation of the urban identity tries to balance local conditions versus global influences, and in some cases strong real estate and market pressures. The diverse socio-economic circumstances and situations experienced in the European context, with moments of prosperity and recession, influence the urban development and the way of *making city*. The review of the European transformed city through specific urban scenes allows a reading of the production of the urban space (Lefebvre 1974) in the last decades, and the role that the architectural language plays in creating a concrete urban appearance and a specific urbanity (Solà-Morales et al. 2008).

The dialogue between the *ville* and the *cité* (Sennett 2018) links the physical and built environment with the abstract nature of the character of urban life. This dialogue reveals how cities are inhabited today, and how architectural forms are designed full of meanings (in their composition and in their envelopes) showing a *face of the city* defined with different cosmetic techniques (Kipnis 1997) that conditions the perception of urban scenes. In consequence, European architects fully trust in the possibilities of architectural language, and therefore a display of a cosmetic refinement enhances the subjectivity on the urban readers. Architecture, again, approaches the old debate that faces poetry and rationality[14].

Poetry, today, in the architectural context linked to ornament and the desire to create a much *kinder* architecture, becomes a tool to bring discipline closer to the user. It could be affirmed that the cosmetic linked to the management of architectural language seeks to create an "initial domesticity"; that is, conditions of comfort and habitability that already exist even before the inhabitant comes to experience architecture. This iconoclastic will is a consequence of the exhaustion of iconic architecture and the demands caused by the real estate crisis.

The habitability of the city is associated with the face, meaning the appearance and the semblance of the city. In Barcelona, El Turó de la Rovira, despite being a deconstructed and naked space, is capable of showing the history of the city and becoming a social meeting place. It is exactly the opposite situation to which one can experience when wandering through the soulless spaces of the Forum area. In Zurich, despite the functional success of the Europaallee blocks and the urban pragmatism of Oerlikon, the essence of the city reappears under the infrastructural bridges or the different viewpoints (Swiss tower or Toni Areal) of Zurich West, and is there where the Swiss socio-cultural identity feels like home, that sense of *homeyness* that Caruso talks about. In Copenhagen, when strolling around Nordhavn, the marine environment, saltpetre and freedom can be seen in the superimposition of the new on the old without any renunciation of modernity. Meanwhile, in Ørestad the most effective cosmetics are those of each building, such as the 8 by BIG, since the sum of architectural cosmetic techniques dilutes the feeling of belonging to the place.

[14] The Triennial of Architecture of Lisbon, that takes place this year 2019 and is title "The poetics of the reason", reaffirms the validity of the debate that raises the application of different cosmetic techniques within the scope of the architectural discipline. «The poetics of reason states that, for all the subjective and non-scientific dimension, architecture does rest on reason, and our aim is to shed light onto he specificity of this reason».

In these urban debates, the language and image (Lynch 1960) of the architectural objects are key for the urban identity. In this sense, the architectural object centres the debate between cosmetic subjectivity and scientific objectivity, and it is confirmed as a meeting point for the meanings of the face of the city and the architectural fragments. In recent decades, the image (Ursprung 2008) and appearance have increasingly played a more important role in the production of urban space, both exterior and interior (Pimlott 2016). In this context, it is necessary to take into account that the order of the visual culture that now prevails, alters and conditions the design processes. The artifice, intrinsic to the architectural act, continues to draw interpretations that regulate the freedom of all those who experience architecture. Exterior and interior appearances define the links with the city and, specifically from the outside, taken into consideration that architectural objects can choose to be contextual, autonomous or indifferent, and therefore, to be friendly, distant or indifferent to their surroundings.

REFERENCES

Bideau, André. 2015. 'Two Economies and Myriad Worlds'. In *Import Zurich: Cooperative Housing: New Ways of Inhabiting*. Barcelona: Cities Connection Project.

Busquets, Joan. 2005. *Barcelona: The Urban Evolution of a Compact City.* Cambridge: Harvard University Graduate School of Design.

———. 2019. 'Power. Barcelona: Transforming the Compact City'. In *Real Urbanism. Decisive Interventions,* First, 257–96. Amsterdam: Architecture & Nature Publishers.

Caruso, Adam. 2001. 'La Ciudad Emocional = The Emotional City'. *Quaderns d'Arquitectura i Urbanisme*, 2001.

Frisch, Max. 1955. 'Der Laie Und Die Architektur'. *MERKUR* 9 (3): 261–278.

Jacobs, Jane. 1961. *The Death and Life of Great American Cities.* New York: Vintage Books.

Kipnis, Jeffrey. 1997. 'The Cunning of Cosmetics'. *El Croquis*, no. 84: 22–28.

Koolhaas, Rem. 2006. *La Ciudad Genérica.* Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Lefebvre, Henri. 1974. *The Production of Space.* Oxford: Wiley-Blackwell.

Lynch, Kevin. 1960. *The Image of the City*. 1st ed. Boston, MA: MIT Press.

Muñoz, Francesc. 2008. *Urbanalización. Paisajes Comunes, Lugares Globales.* Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Pimlott, Mark. 2016. *The Public Interior as Idea and Project.* Heijningen: Jap Sam Books.

Sennett, Richard. 2018. *Building and Dwelling: Ethics for the City.* UK: Allen Lane.

Solà-Morales, M., K. Frampton, A. Geuze, and H. Ibelings. 2008. *A Matter of Things.* NAi Publishers.

Ursprung, Philip. 2008. 'Imágenes'. In *Caruso St John.* Barcelona: Polígrafa.

Zaera Polo, Alejandro. 1993. 'Continuidades. entrevista con Herzog & de Meuron'. *El Croquis,* no. 60.

Zardini, Mirko. 1997. 'The Prevalence of the Landscape'. In *Nuevos Paisajes Nuevos Territorios,* 203–9. Barcelona: Macba - Actar.

PAPER #1.03

CO-DRAWING: COLLABORATIVE REPRESENTATIONS OF THE CITY

Antje Steinmuller[a], Christopher Falliers[a]
[a]California College of the Arts, San Francisco, California, USA

ABSTRACT

Designed as catalytic interventions as part of emerging protocols for public space production, *Co-drawing* discusses a series of collaborative drawing experiments as platforms for community exchange and dialogue. The *form* of public space as the domain of architects is increasingly replaced by structuring a *process of formation* – a *forum* – that positions architects as collaborators *with* the public, designing sites, artifacts, and protocols for citizen engagement. Activated in public, the authors' co-drawing artifacts depict latent urban spaces as prompts for citizens to collaborate through drawing, producing collective representations, and fostering dialogue about the city.

Discussing three spheres of design and art practice situate the project: *relational aesthetics artworks* described as 'catalysts of exchange' or 'producers of an encounter,' (Bourriaud 2002, 15) with outcomes taking the form of lived social environments; the designed engagements within Archigram's *Instant City* protocols and Raumlabor's temporary activations which position the architect as community advocate and collaborator; and multi-centered representations of cities, ranging from Pieter Bruegel the Elder's The Tower Babylon (commissioned to foster a 16th century convivium) to Atelier Bowwow's 'behaviorology' studies, which describe the multivalent activation of lived urban space.

Producing artifacts and actions *in public* to be played out *by the public*, the paper puts forward three design elements central to envisioning the city with the public: an *artifact* as a platform for public engagement (the drawing within a social form like a community table), a *protocol* as the structure of public involvement (a prompt to engage and discuss a specific public space issue), and an event, the choreography of public gatherings (an outdoor, communal dinner or public gallery opening). Tested in five cities, these experimental representations/ events have resulted in the production of collaborative urban representations, and, more significantly, initiated community engagement, dialogue, and debate.

KEYWORDS

Co-drawing; city representations; public space; community engagement; relational aesthetics.

INTRODUCTION

Within emerging trajectories of practice, the *form* of public space as the domain of architects is increasingly replaced by structuring a *process of formation* – a *forum* – that positions architects as collaborators *with* the public, designing sites, artifacts, and protocols for citizen engagement. Within this trajectory, traditional architectural and urban design expertise is expanded to include the design of public engagement. Beyond traditional community engagements, such as architect-led community meetings or reports to a community, this type of work stimulates a deeper involvement by the community and two-way interactions between designers and the affected public.

This paper discusses one avenue of this more reciprocal exchange between architectural expertise and community engagement, the exploration of collaborative representations of urban space. It presents a series of collaborative drawing experiments as

platforms for community exchange and dialogue. Activated in public, the authors' co-drawing artifacts depict latent urban spaces as prompts for citizens to collaborate through drawing, producing collective representations and fostering dialogue about the city. Each involves a three-part design methodology: an *artifact* as a platform for public engagement, a *protocol* as the structure of public involvement, and an *event*, the choreography of public gatherings.

Three lines of influence inform the project, the use of multi-focused, multi-authored urban representations, designing and drawing urban engagement, and the use of the object and event in so-called relational aesthetics art practice.

Multi-focused, multi-authored urban representations

Representations of a city, especially using multi-centered compositions, have initiated critical and/or utopian discussions, and/or to capture the dynamism of/within urban formation. Pieter Bruegel the Elder's "The Tower of Babel" [1563] represents both the aspirations and critique. As historian Barbara A. Kaminska observes, the painting was "originally displayed in the suburban villa of Antwerp entrepreneur Niclaes Jonghelinck as an image that fostered a convivium (a learned dinner conversation) about the well-being of the city" (Kaminska 2014, 2). The painting is based on the Christian Bible's value ascribed to society identifying itself through its cities, "Then they said, 'Come, let us build ourselves a city, and a tower with its top in the heavens, and let us make a name for ourselves; otherwise we shall be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.'" (Genesis 11:4). The urban representation acts here as the stimulant for the convivium's contemplation of 16th century urbanity.

City representations can be simultaneously idealistic and critical. Art historian Hans Belting interprets Hieronymus Bosch's "The Garden of Earthly Delights" [c. 1480-1505] as utopian and realistic. It reflects "remarkably modern freedom…", "normally guided by compositional structure, here we become lost in an overfilled panorama whose motifs appear like a compendium but cannot be read like one…, revealing the illusory aspect of the way things look in reality" (Belting 2016, 7). Bosch transforms the triptych format so that each panel holds multiple scenes, multiple painterly effects, all within a multi-centered composition. Is the artifact a representation of lived space?

Regarding Bosch, architect Jimenez Lai posits that "no single center of gravity to dominate the discourse" (Lai 2015, 10) offers potential for plural visions of constructed space — "an investment in anecdotes: the parts will be more than the sum" (Lai 2015, 10). In Lai's own work, the flattening of urban space is seen through the use of multi-centered compositions and the displacement of the 2D representation into immersive space. For "insideoutsidebetweenbeyond" [2014], Lai cites Bosch's examination of heterotopian space and a flattening of space and social relations. Lai's "Beachside Lonelyhearts" gallery installation, where an allover drawing on ceiling, floor, and wall surfaces create an immersive environment. This wallpaper effect conflates representational and actual space. Critic John McMorrough argues Lai's own multivalent work continues utopian dialogues addressing "questions of how architecture is represented - its social context, its possibility, and, finally, its continuing resonance - in pocket universes where possibility is unregulated" (McMorrough 2012, 9).

Lai's representational flattening is also disciplinary, as the merging of architectural representation, cartoons, and thought bubbles. This mixing of architectural expertise and popular formats continues the Pop sensibility of Archigram's magazines, a more 'approachable media' open to non-experts. The front cover of "Archigram Nine, Fruitiest yet.... FREE SEED OFFER" [1970], depicts everyday life in mode of representation akin to montage,

comics, and popular magazine illustrations. These recognizable everyday representations relate personal and common space to urban, social, and ecological topics.

Designing and drawing urban engagement

Archigram's sequential drawings for "Instant City" [1969] can be seen as precedent for the architect's temporary involvement with the co-production of urban space. Archigram's series depicts six steps ("Before IC: A Sleeping Town," "Decent," "Event," "Highest Intensification," "Infiltration," "Network Takes Over"). As the Instant City blimp symbolizes the new form of limited duration, event-based urbanism, it also leaves a lasting impact for the citizenry, the seeds of a new self-reliance, and a network to foster external connections. This process both highlights and shows the limits of the architect's role in the co-production of public or common space. Architecture and urban expertise still apply to very specific urban and community conditions, yet necessitates a more egalitarian, temporary engagement with a community, and the initiation of sustained community involvement. Co-drawing can take clues from this analogous approach. Design acts, events, and the input of architectural expertise through a temporary engagement/installation can act as stimuli for community dialogue, an early step in urban space formation and possibly initiate community self-organization.

Contemporary practices examine co-produced urban representations as part of this process. These range from a focus on the understanding of the problems of everyday urbanism to more utopian visions. Atelier Bow-Wow and Manuel Bailo Esteve examine the role of architectural and urban form and urban social behavior. Bow-Wow's quasi-anthropological work explores the behavior of the public in public, documenting social/spatial configurations within urban contexts. Drawings like Temple of Heaven (from Urban Forest) [2015], architect-designed artifacts, people, and ad-hoc spatial configurations (construct of groups using furniture and props) are rendered with graphic equivalence and precision. They involve students in the construction of large, field-like representations of public space, such as "The Making of a Public Drawing" [2011]. Their multiple eyes and hands lead to rich and multivalent understandings of the spatial configurations and behaviors of the public. Manuel Bailo Esteve's drawings, such as "Public Catalyst (Water Hydrant)" [2017], represent relationships between objects and social behavior of everyday urban life. The use of color highlights these interactions. A colored open hydrant and flowing water are in dialogue with the monochrome playing children documenting the social/spatial catalysts in public space and their use. Both Bow-wow and Estave recognize and reveal the catalytic potential for everyday urban space-definitions for citizens' productive use and misuse. This harnesses an understanding of spatial configurations and behaviors of the public as part of a larger ethos of citizens and designers coproducing the city. Atelier Bow-Wow relates these when they state, the "practice of architectural design in accordance with the theory of commonality [...] must adopt an abductive role" (Bow-Wow 2015, 106).

Designing a prompt for urban dialogue, or initiating a community to share messages is a central aspect of the work of urbanist/artist Candy Chang. To initiate the sharing of a citizen's voice, simple designs, well-positioned in public, reveal the unseen community and their unheard voices. In the "Before I Die..._____" series [2011-], a public surface is inscribed with a prompt for individual citizen participation. In this case, a vacant wall is transformed into a community chalkboard, populated with a grid of lines prompting "Before I Die..._____" and blank line for individual responses. The format results in a collective archive of individual communication, and reveals some of the identities and stories of a community. These become sites of collective dialogue, merging the graphic broadcasting

and scale of urban billboards with the kiosk's invitation for interaction.

Influenced by a discussion with Archigram's Dennis Crompton, Raumlaborberlin's "Architecture Beyond Building, Stick on City" (Venice Biennale) [2008] situated a co-drawing experiment as more of a utopian, aspirational exercise. An imagined, partially completed base drawing of a city sits within a gallery space. A workshop-like table prompts the public to add patches, thus producing a multivalent, multi-centered, multi-authored, and 'multi-storied' composition of idealized urban space. Co-producing a representation of the city, the project invited the architects' utopian vision to be overwritten by the public. Working well during the opening days, overriding graffiti-type markings overwhelmed the work near the end of its gallery run.
Representations depicting the potential of a city situated within that same city construct simultaneities of representational and lived urban space. The city and its representation can co-exist, allowing actors changing a part of the city to situate themselves within that context. As a criterion for drawing as community tool, curation and continued engagement become key points to maintain some control of the design act and enhance community/architect dialogue.

Relation to relational aesthetics, use of the object

In his book Relational Aesthetics [1998], Nicolas Bourriaud identifies art practices that position the artist as the 'catalyst of exchange' or 'production of an encounter', with outcomes that often take the form of lived social environments. Writing about artists working against a cultural situation where social relationships are increasingly predictable and commercialized (Author 2005, 22), Bourriaud highlights artistic production that takes the form of meetings, encounters, events, various types of collaboration between people and places of gathering. The aesthetic 'objects/subjects' on display are the human interactions engender (Author 2005, 22). Rikrit Tiravanja's 1992 Thai dinner inside 303 Gallery in New York imports a kitchen environment and the social protocols of cooking and dinner into the gallery to catalyze/display familial interactions between visitors. Futurefarmers' "Ethnobotanical Station" deploys a mobile cart, map, and information gathering equipment and workshops (joint information gathering and discussion) initiate interactions between people and ecological information to catalyze collective knowledge sharing regarding the relationships between humans and the environment. A mobile artifact allows for flexible engagement and accumulation of knowledge. The unfolded cart attracts, displays and catalyzes, moving beyond a typical gallery experience to situate the work as actor/catalyst for interaction.
In this type of work, artists are repositioning and transforming familiar artifacts or situations (a dinner, an information cart) within alternative contexts and with additional social content. The relationship between the familiar form and its associated familiar behaviors are the basis for alternative social interactions and form of exchange.

1. DESCRIPTION OF CASE STUDIES

1.1. Drawing Table / Zeichentisch, Berlin Hafenplatz

"Drawing Table / Zeichentisch", Berlin Hafenplatz (Fig. 1) is an experiment in leveraging architectural expertise to frame and moderate dialogue with citizens by drawing together. The resulting co-drawing builds on a developed base drawing describing Berlin's urban space as an instrument of/for capturing and curating citizen input, as well as the defining a method of participation. The project is produced within an academic travel studio by professors from California College of the Arts, in collaboration

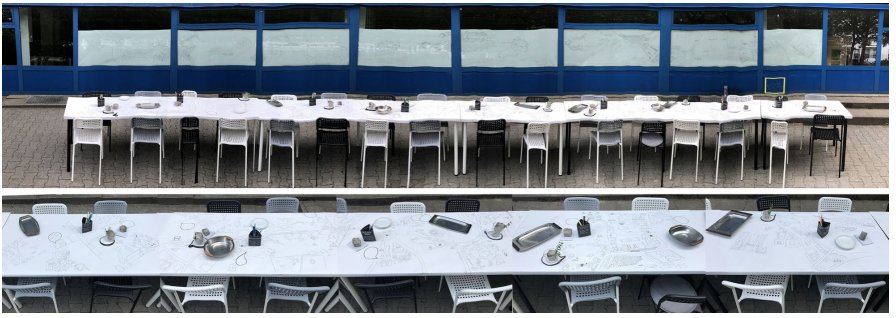


Figure 1. Berlin Drawing Table, Hafenplatz, by CCA Architecture students, Berlin, Germany. Image source: (Steinmuller, 2018)

with CCA students in architecture, industrial design and film, Raumlaborberlin, and the citizens of the Hafenplatz neighborhood in Berlin. Hefenplatz is a complex of 1970's era social housing blocks and series of open spaces. It's inhabitants are a broad range of working-class city dwellers, immigrant families, and students. It sits within a gentrifying district of Berlin.

For three weeks, the travel studio works out of a vacant grocery store within the housing complex. As a way to understand the needs and desires of the neighborhood, a design for engagement is produced by students. A long drawing/dining/meeting table is designed as the site of community engagement (Fig. 2). A base drawing depicts typical and archetypal urban spaces of Berlin (Fig. 1; Fig. 3). Students design a menu of prompts (Fig. 3), questions that play with the meal theme and organize how students engaged with citizens. Finally, students plan, advertise, and organize a 10-hour community event. They partner with two local businesspeople, both of whom use vacant storefronts within the complex for temporary uses, one a weekday lunch Thai restaurant and the other a once/week bar. The partnership brings food, clientele, and neighbors together.

During the event, students ask neighbors about their neighborhood, the life they come from, and the threats of gentrification. Then, they ask them to draw, or draw with them, on the table to visualize their hopes and visions for Hafenplatz. Students record these drawings and transcribe them on to the grocery storefront windows (Fig. 3, right image). This second drawing becomes an archive of the event in the days after, a form of kiosk allowing the community to see each other's thoughts.

Figure 2. Berlin Drawing Table, Hafenplatz, by CCA Architecture students, Berlin, Germany. Image source: (Zhongwei Wang, 2018)

Figure 3. Berlin Drawing Table, Hafenplatz, by CCA Architecture students, Berlin Germany. Image source: (Steinmuller, 2018)

1.2. All Covered with…

As part of the *Portmanteau Exhibit* (a traveling exhibition of suitcases engaging issues of architectural or urban space, social interaction, and/or critique, from 2018-current in multiple venues), *all covered with…* is a gallery installation which prompts city dwellers to interact with representations of their own city, then co-drawing their visions of, and for, the city. This project has moved cities and has been presented in the Milwaukee Museum of Art (Fig. 4), one of the University of Colorado, Denver's campus galleries, and the Priscilla Fowler Fine Art, a private art gallery in Las Vegas (Fig. 5). The work consists of a pairing of two drawing scrolls over a lightbox, sitting within a suitcase. Drawing instruments and a prompt invite participation. Visitors align, misalign and draw on the paired drawing scrolls, each depicting basic representations of urban places of social interaction, environmental amenities, and vacant sites with latent potential.

For each city (Milwaukee, Denver, Las Vegas, and scheduled for New Orleans, Los Angeles, and San Francisco), simple base drawings depict the authors' observation of one focused theme of a city's latent open spaces. For Milwaukee, the drawing forces on 'junctions', from typical intersections with a the city's grid to transitions between city and river, or city and lake. For Denver, the drawing brought forward the theme of 'linear gaps' or linear open spaces, from the typical neighborhood alley system to the open spaces of and along the creeks and small rivers. The Las Vegas drawing highlighted urban 'islands', ranging from geometric parking lots to beautified figured spaces along the Las Vegas Strip.

The drawing focuses on certain urban characteristics and the prompt asks citizens to envision their vision for these spaces. During gallery openings and normal public hours, the viewer engages the work alone or with companions. This is free of additional influence by the architect, yet conditioned by how other participants left the drawing. Participants drew, sent messages, and responded to each other within the scrolls. An archive of the co-drawing scrolls documents how citizens see and think about the present and future of their city.

Figure 4. All covered with.., by Ideal X at the Portmanteau Exhibit, Milwaukee Art Museum. Image source: (Steinmuller, 2018

Figure 5. All covered with.., by Ideal X at the Portmanteau Exhibit, Las Vegas. Image source: (Dafne Odette, 2019)

1.3. The Continuous Campus

As an experiment in the co-production and sharing of knowledge, *The Continuous Campus* (Fig. 6), is a drawing [game, engagement, discussion]. The project asks participants to consider the provocation of the title, roll two dice to consider alternative sites and tactics for knowledge exchange. Then participants are asked to draw, collaborate, discuss, and debate the potentials for the exchange of knowledge in alternative and/or more public spaces. In its initial trial, it situates within a conference for architects and urbanists at Stanford University, with a focus on alternative pedagogy. Quite simply, the project offers participants an alternative to a conference session. Instead of delivering a report within a hierarchical configuration of presenter (expert) and audience (learners), the project attempts to demonstrate a structure for an alternative form of knowledge sharing. Understanding the conference audience includes expertise of varying specializations, conference goers sit with each other at a drawing table.

Figure 6. The Continuous Campus, by Ideal X at Stanford University. Image source: (Steinmuller, 2019)

A base plan drawing including a portion of the historic Stanford quad, designed by Frederick Law Olmsted, Charles Allerton Coolidge and colleagues, and by Leland Stanford himself, merges with the plans of other archetypal examples of American education architecture (Fig. 6, left image). This ranges from Thomas Jefferson's plan for the University of Virginia, to one-room rural schoolhouses, to the University of California, Santa Cruz's Kresge College, designed by Charles Moore and William Turnbull of Moore Lyndon Turnbull Whitaker.
Instead of one presenter's broadcast of knowledge, participants share expertise and discuss alternatives for the future space of education and knowledge exchange. The act of drawing merges with dialogue, with the architects, urbanists, and educators taking turns to use drawing to make a compelling point or use one hand to document a consensus thought (Fig. 6, right image).

2. METHODOLOGY

Producing artifacts and actions in public to be played out by the public, *co-drawing* experiments put forward three design elements central to envisioning the city with the public: an *artifact* as a platform for public engagement (the drawing within a social form like a community table), a *protocol* as the structure of public involvement (a prompt to engage and discuss a specific public space issue), and an event, the choreography of public gatherings (an outdoor, communal dinner or public gallery opening). Tested in five cities, these experimental representations/events have resulted in the production of collaborative urban representations, and initiated community engagement, dialogue, and debate. Each project involved three aspects of design: an *artifact* as a platform for public engagement, a *protocol* as the structure of public involvement, and an *event*, the choreography of public gatherings.

2.1. Artifact: drawing artifact + spatial artifact

In each co-drawing experiment, a design artifact included the following.

- An incomplete base drawing, representing urban space for its latent potential and/or archetypal form.
- A drawing format representing multivalent information (a scroll, a tablecloth, or simply large scale)
- Re-appropriating a familiar form used within public or social engagement, and/or to provoke initial interest (a dinner table, a storefront window, an everyday suitcase as gallery object)
- The merging of the drawing format and familiar social form

2.2. Protocol: prompts to visualize spatial/ social potential

In each experiment, the design of a prompt included the following.

- An invitation to participate and share thought, geared to specific knowledge (a neighbor asked about her neighborhood, an architect asked about her expertise on a topic)
- A request to consider and respond to the visual information within the drawing (certain types of latent spaces within a specific city, the hierarchical form of a campus or classroom)
- A request to review, act on, and/ or expand the thoughts of fellow participants.
- The form of the prompt ranges from an invitation to engage in the project to a set of dice with which to play a drawing game (Fig. 6, center image).

2.3. Event: from gathering to dialogue

The design of, and/or participation in, an event is integral to each project, and ranges in the type of social interaction being leveraged.

- The use and transformation of a familiar social event to be a site of additional interaction (a dinner, a gallery opening, a conference).
- Constructing the event as both social and a time to share knowledge.
- Inviting key stakeholder where possible (affected neighbors, additional expertise).
- Constructing partnerships to promote and heighten participation (local food, supporting gallery or institutional format).
- Define the duration to concentrate the time for interaction (a meal, an opening, an meeting).

3. OUTCOMES

Although the co-drawing experiments have varied in content, topic, and audience, some initial conclusions can be made regarding co-drawing as a design tool to visualize the patent potential of public space and initiate community engagement and involvement.

3.1. Limited time, limited engagement

One of the dilemmas facing participatory design processes and community engagement, the architect's involvement remains temporary as with conventional practice. The depth of engagement that the experiments designed is commensurate with the depth of response. Most successful is exemplified with the Drawing Table, Berlin. As a student and two neighbors sat to discuss the neighborhood, they first talked and listened to each other over a beer and food. This comfort and relatability led to the student drawing with, and for, these particular neighbors for over an hour. This foregrounded the necessity for architectural expertise mixed with engaged listening.

3.2. Drawing to trigger the imagination

The base drawing balances a number of issues. It depicts specific characteristics of a city's urban space while remaining open to act upon. The nature of the drawing, whether axonometric, perspectival, or planimetric, and inherent legibility or abstraction must still have enough experiential triggers to spark people's imagination. Conceptually, the drawing must render an incomplete city, one with a future and open to change.

3.3. Leaving people to draw or build

Ceding control of a design or representation in these temporary experiments brings all of

the analogous dangers of unchoreographed urban formations. The experiments should not be understood as an analog for informal urban or architectural formation. The messiness and individual nature of a multi-handed representation is more effective as a collector of thoughts and place to see others' thoughts.

3.4. Drawing as talking

The majority of the drawing by others consists of visual or written messages. This is less a design or critique and more of a statement of need or desire. The design of the prompt is a key part of this. Asking people 'to envision or comment' leaves the responses fairly neutral at times. This is very different when the prompt asks 'what-if...?' as more of a provocation.

3.5. Tool for dialogue

The most pronounced outcome produced is the least visual. The dialogues heard, messages conveyed back to the authors, from conversations among people with very different perspectives, to the revealing of histories, desires, and hidden knowledge was the more significant outcome of the projects thus far. These dialogues and different stories seemed momentary free of the hierarchies of a typical community meeting and increased the authors awareness of how people see and inhabit their own space. The archiving and re-presentation of these messages, stories, and dialogues would be best recorded as an archive of and for the community.

3.6. Iterations

The limitation and potential most pertinent is the need for iteration. Tested in only minor ways across the 5 experiments, the time to iterate, curating an initial round of work, revise and re-issue a drawing and prompt, and creating a subsequent, follow-up event would be a next step in the work. This ability to learn from the community, re-interpret and retell the stories back, and have the community engage again is necessary for a deeper use of the tool. This brings expertise back to interpret and narrow the community's story and extends the duration of the engagement.

CONCLUSION

The use of drawing as an interface supporting the co-production of public space transforms conventional attributes and relationships. As part of the processes to initiate public space production, conventional architectural drawing requires the application of architectural expertise through visualizing latent forms of urban or typological potential. It communicates an analysis of a public space problem. The drawing also is a format to communicate within meetings to solicit and record community input. However, the co-drawing differs from this conventional practice. It necessitates all of the same levels of expertise, but experiments with deeper engagements between architect and community by ceding some of the authorship of an urban representation. This encourages and allows for the visualization of a community's own expertise, initiates community dialogue, and hopefully initiates a deeper involvement by the community. Co-drawing is imagined as a tool for the co-production of public space, where the architect's temporary role expands to design community engagement and deepens their understanding of and engagement with a community.

REFERENCES

Atelier Bow-Wow. 2015. *Urban Forest*. Berlin: Haus der Kulturen der Welt and Spector Books

Belting, Hans. Reprint edition, 2016. *Hieronymus Bosch: Garden of Earthly Delights*. New York: Prestel.

Bourriaud, Nicolas. 2002. *Relational Aesthetics.* Dijon: Les Presses de Réel.

Kaminska, Barbara A. Summer 2014. "Come, let us make a city and a tower: Pieter Bruegel the Elder's Tower of Babel and the Creation of a Harmonious Community in Antwerp," *Journal of Historians of Netherlandish Art 6:2.* Carleton College, Northfield, Minnesota: JHNA.

Lai, Jimenez. 2015. *The Politics of Flatness.* Chicago: Treatise Publication Series.

McMorrough, John. 2012. "The Architecture of No Place and Eutopia, Infinite Earths and Elsewheres," in Jimenez Lai's *Citizen of No Place: An Architectural Graphic Novel.* Princeton: Princeton Architectural Press.

PAPER #1.04

GRAPHIC NARRATIVES FOR READING INDIAN CITIES IN CONSTANT MOTION

Alisia Tognon[a], Mariana Felix Paisana[b]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milano, Italy
[b]CEPT University, Ahmedabad, India

ABSTRACT

This paper focuses on the definition of a methodological approach to map the territory through a perceptive/phenomenological investigation that represents time, space, and activities in urban space.
The primary research question of the paper is how to determine a methodology of analysis of urban settlement, by mapping spatial dynamics, temporal, and intangible characteristics of a place, and defining appropriate strategies to decode the sense of the "Kinetic City" (Mehrotra 2008) through urban narratives that depict in dialogue the temporality and fluidity of urban spaces.
Indian cities, like many in South Asia, are characterized by physical and visual contradictions, producing landscapes of extreme pluralism. Post-colonial urban spaces are the result of a continuous negotiation between elite and subaltern cultures, resulting in a temporal articulation and occupation of space.
Indian cities are in "constant flux" (Mehrotra et al. 2017), and therefore its mapping requires a study of the temporary occupations of space by people, animals, vehicles, and its different actions, such as vending, celebrating or resting. Mapping Indian territory has to include aspects of informality and temporality because these dynamic processes constitute the base for urbanization. According to Ananya Roy, "informality is inscribed in the ever-shifting relationship between what is legal and illegal, legitimate and illegitimate, authorized and unauthorized" (Roy 2009, 80).
The outcome of this paper is to focus on new methods for conceiving and narrating the dynamics of the city: firstly, pointing out methods to read and record the complex urban reality and secondly, elaborating guidelines and indicators to understand and explain the city and the constant motion of everyday life.

KEYWORDS

Graphic narratives; Indian city; temporality; informal activities.

INTRODUCTION

This paper focuses on decoding a methodological approach to mapping, through a 'perceptive/phenomenological' system that can represent not only tri-dimensionality but also the fourth dimension of urban space claimed by human activities or events. These mapping strategies have the potential to translate and represent the intrinsic meanings of the "Kinetic City" concept (Mehrotra 2008), with narratives that uncover the relation between temporal and spatial structures.
Pioneering studies about the interrelation of urban spaces and social interactions were developed when urban areas started to bring together many cultural strands. In particular, the accelerated processes of urbanization and the effects they had on social sentiments gave rise to studies of Urban sociology, since the beginning of the last century. Sociologists such as Max Weber and Georg Simmel (1903) laid the foundations of urban sociology. Moreover, urban theories of the Everyday Life (Certeau 1984) and Everyday

Urbanism (Chase, Crawford and Kaliski 2008) developed an understanding of urban design not focused on aesthetics or style but on social structures, user experience, and co-creation of culture. As well as methodological approaches to the study of urban life by William Whyte, Donald Appleyard and Jan Gehl.

The object of this investigation is the urban context in India, which is amid a fundamentally transformative urban awakening. The processes of urbanization and urban growth are embedded in and play constitutive roles in shaping the complex and interactive political, social, demographic and ethno-religious contexts. In 1991, just under 220 million people lived in the country's urban areas. Exponentially, this increased to 380 million in 2011 and is forecast to rise to over 600 million by 2030 (Ahluwalia, Kanbur, Mohanty 2014). As per United Nations estimates, an additional half a billion people will live in Indian cities in the next 35 years, becoming almost 900 million by 2050. The urban modes of living have been long debated in the Indian context, where urbanization comes with its peculiar set of challenges. These are further exacerbated by the phenomena of urban informality (Roy 2005, 147–158), particularly in peri urban expansion or in rapidly growing small and medium towns (Denis & Marius-Gnanou 2011). The complexities of Indian cities also intensify issues of social, economic and political exclusion: the post-liberalization India has seen an 'invisibilization' of marginalized groups (Fernandes 2004), linked with urban economic modernization.

In this complex environment, the aim is to understand how mapping can be useful for rising appropriate design strategies. Cartographical work can effectively communicate temporal appropriations and particular uses of urban space, and layout methods and strategies for its application. For this reason, it is crucial to understand mapping not as an objective outcome but as a construct and representational device, that is an integral part of the design process, as it is speculative and projective (Desimini & Waldheim et al. 2016).

This study is part of the ongoing research developed by the authors during the fellowship at CEPT University, Ahmedabad, India (2019). It also includes a comprehensive reflection about how it can be taught for the researchers, as a method for reading the Indian complexity and strategies for mapping urban spaces in constant motion.

1. THE INDIAN CONTEXT AND THE KINETIC CITY – THE CASE OF AHMEDABAD

The city of Ahmedabad has been taken as a case study for this research as it embodies all the main characteristics and contradictions of the Indian city. Today, Indian cities comprise two components that occupy the same physical space. The first, which could be called the Static City, is made up of more permanent materials - concrete, steel, and brick. This is the two-dimensional conception that appears on traditional maps, and its presence is monumental. The other is the Kinetic City. Incomprehensible as a two-dimensional entity, it is perceived as a moving city, a three-dimensional construct in progressive development. The Kinetic City has a temporary nature and is often built from recycled materials - plastic sheets, scrap metal, canvas, and scrap timber. It is continuously modified and reinvented. Kinetic City is not perceived in architectural terms, but rather in terms of spaces and occupation patterns. It is indigenous urbanization with its particular 'local' logic (Mehrotra 2008).

In the international world, Ahmedabad is commonly known as an architecture Mecca, where the masterpieces designed by Le Corbusier, Louis Kahn, Charles Correa and Balkrishna Doshi, as well the historical old city submerge in a vibrant kaleidoscope of everyday activities. Moreover, it has become

the seventh-largest metropolis in India and the largest in the state of Gujarat (Forbe's 2010). In 2017, the historic city of Ahmedabad (Walled City or Old City) became part of the UNESCO World Heritage list, according to criteria II, V (https://whc.unesco.org/en/list/1551). The motivation was the evident universal significance. The Walled City is not only a tangible testimony of a historical artefact that reflects the succession of eras, but also has a high intangible value of cultural tradition, transliterated in the urban landscape. In the light of these reasons, looking at the city today, Ahmedabad seems to reflect two distinctive souls, with the flow of the Sabarmati river dividing the city in two halves.

Ahmedabad was founded in 1411 AD as a walled city on the eastern bank of the river Sabarmati. It was established as the new capital of the Sultanate of Gujarat in western India by Ahmad Shah, the second sultan of the Muhammadan dynasty (Forrest 1977, 62-86). In those years, the Citadel was built (Bhadra Citadel) and the city was structured with significant trade fair routes in order to transform it into a manufacturing and trade center. Marbles and other precious materials had been imported from afar, to build magnificent mosques, tombs and palaces (Forrest 1977, 64). From this time until the arrival of the Marathas dynasty the city has grown and has consolidated its urban structure - the walls were built, in defense of the *pur*[1] (neighborhoods), administratively independent and controlled by the nobility named by the king (Gillion 1968, 26).

Still today, the wallet city has preserved a fairly semi-circular plan, with the core in the center and radiating streets connecting the center to the edge. The site chosen on the eastern banks of the river provided the ideal condition for the growth of the city, due to its location at the crossroads of important sub-continental trade routes and the proximity to water.

For this reason, historically, Ahmedabad has been one of the most important centers of trade and commerce in western India. The city's prosperous and eventful past and present is embodied in its vibrant kaleidoscope of history, art and culture. These conditions and character contributed to enrich the 'old city', which has a great architectural tradition reflected in many exquisite monuments, temples and even modern buildings (e.g. Premabhai Hall, 1976 or Central Bank Of India 1966 - 1967 designed by B.V. Doshi). This peculiar urban fabric is perfectly integrated into a multicultural palimpsest of different eras, in which the monumental landmarks emerge (http://asi.nic.in). In fact, within the walls, there are more than 30 mosques and *dargahs*, more than 30 Hindu temples, under one hundred Jain temples, and more *madrasas, jamaatkhaana, upaashray, dharmashaala*. Moreover, the rich domestic architecture in inlaid wood remains in several cases as precious testimony to the minute scale of the urban fabric.

The presence of these architectural landmarks - places and buildings - give a peculiar sense of belonging, continuity and identity. This area of the city is now packed with bazaars, *'pur'* with the clustered *'pol'* system of dwellings, and numerous places of worship. From a morphological and typological point of view, it is interesting to understand the structure of the urban space, where there is a hierarchization between public and private space still evident today. These are the result of centuries of growth over which newer elements are juxtaposed continuously with older ones. Old buildings

[1] Traditionally in the Old city, the *pur* are composed of *pol*, groups of houses, with one or two entrances, in which the social unit is based on the link of caste or trade (Vastu Shilpa Foundation, 2002). Therefore, the urban fabric reflects a hierarchical system of movements and social relations: from the level of the city to the settlement (*pol*), from that to the family or community spaces (*khancha, khadki*). The analysis of the fabric underlines that there are primary roads (*bazaars*), where traders arrived even from out of town. Secondary roads are linked to these and are characterized by a particular type of products such as jewelry, metal objects and tools and are accessible to residents of the pol. Finally, a third hidden level (*alleys*) is accessible by the workers for cleaning the streets. (Desai 2019, 39; Yagnik, Sheth 2016, 91-97)

and older areas of the city are assets, as they represent the history of the communities, embodying their tradition, heritage, and culture through architecture and urban form (http://www.intach.org).

Due to high industrial growth and its social and political history, Ahmedabad represents the dynamic two souls in its own physical body. In the eastern part, the original Walled City rooted in the tradition with the outside suburbia dotted with textile mills and *chaals,* constituted the working and industrial class. On the west bank of Sabarmati, there are new sprawls mainly inhabited by the middle class and characterized by cultural centers, universities and masterpieces of modern architecture (Yagnik, Sheth 2016, 257-258).

Since decades Ahmedabad has been undergoing major transformation in terms of use as well as built form. It is the city where new directions of a new urban future were tried out during the Twentieth Century. It was one of the first cities in India to be industrialized and the second largest manufacturer of textiles after Bombay. For this peculiarity Ahmedabad had earned the title of "Manchester of India" (Spodek 2011). Beyond the textile mills, Spodek has found similarity between Ahmedabad and Manchester. He applied the definition of "shock city" to Ahmedabad, a term coined one year before by British historian Asa Briggs in his book "Victorian Cities" for Manchester. "Every age has its shock city" and the shock cities are a "center of problems, particularly ethnic and social problems, and it provoked sharply differing reactions from visitors" (Briggs 1963, 56). Throughout the Twentieth Century, almost one third of the adult male population was working in the cloth mills (Spodek 2011, 6-7) and in 1920 the first *Textile Labour Association* was born. Ahmedabad became the headquarters of the freedom movement and also one of the first places where movement against 'untouchability' had been taken up. In 1915 on his return to India, Gandhi decided to establish his ashram in Ahmedabad, until 1930. Gandhi's activities made Ahmedabad a shock city, bringing a sense of unity to the city (Spodek 2011, 167). It had one of the first municipalities, one of the first to have established schools for western education, and the first girls' school came up here in 1849 (Yagnik, Sheth 2016, 119-128).

Today Ahmedabad is a major industrial and financial city, contributing about 14% of the total investments in all stock exchanges in India and 60% of the total productivity of the state. Several scientific and educational institutions of national, regional and global importance have been established in the city, attracting a large pool of highly skilled young professionals. At the same time, a significant advancement of the IT sector and a virtuous development of transport infrastructure has been taken up, and in 2016 Ahmedabad has been selected among the first 20 Smart Cities in India (http://www.smartcities.gov.in/).

Moreover, Ahmedabad has had and is having a rapid urbanization. In 1992, the population of its Urban Agglomeration was 12 times that of the Walled City area (AUDA, 1992), but, at the same time, it is registering depopulation phenomena especially in the Old City, where the residents prefer to abandon the traditional pols for moving in the new neighborhoods of the city[2] . The Walled City reveals heavy congested traffic, intricate roads, polluted air, lack of water, weak maintenance of the traditional houses and fragile society. The city has indeed seen several communal riots in the recent past, due mostly to religious conflicts[3], which created others fragile conditions.

[2] Analysis conducted by MCR18 students on Mandvi ni pol during the monsoon semester 2019, Urban regeneration Studio, Cept University. Tutors: Alisia Tognon, Ashna Patel, Jigna Desai.

[3] In 1969 Gujarat saw a riot between Hindus and Muslims during September–October. Unofficial reports claim 2000 deaths and over 48,000 people lost their property. (Gayer, Jaffrelot 2012, 53–60). In 2002 another Gujarat violence called Gujarat pogrom during February – March. Almost 2000 dead and 2,500 injured. (Jaffrelot 2003)

This general situation is creating pressure on the main level of the city, and the definition of public spaces as well. Rapid urbanization is creating an urban complexity and a real estate pressure, which is taking over the open spaces from the future planning of the city.
Reading and understanding these issues is a central question in the study of the Indian context. Urban open spaces (public and private) are the stage for a myriad of activities, such as vending, celebrating or resting, where simultaneously different actors as people, animals or vehicles are living together. At the same time, the sites have a mixture of uses throughout the daytime and the seasons, transformed with different activities. In Ahmedabad, a significant example of this condition is Manek Chowk, in the core of 'old city'. This square contains various events throughout the day, changing functions every day with a similar temporal-spatial succession. Early in the morning, the cows are grazing the leftovers of the night food market and the vegetable vendors. During the day the jewelry market comes up, and the shops extend their selling devices into the open public space, together with the vegetable stalls. In the evening, it is a lively and crowded food market. Many examples, such as this one is representative of a constant and current condition of the Indian city: a city in 'constant flux', where the interchangeable temporary occupation of urban open spaces is perpetual.

2. MAPPING EVERYDAY LIFE

When looking at the morphological and typological aspects, as in the western context, the act of mapping focuses on the representation of the more permanent physical conditions: streets, buildings, green areas, and other tangible elements. Differently, in Indian cities it is required to also study the temporary occupations of space. The study of everyday life through maps can be crucial in understanding aspects of temporality and informality, and in designing appropriate solutions that take into account these dynamic processes that constitute the base of urbanization in India.
Referring to the concept of "Everyday Urbanism", as "an approach to Urbanism that finds its meanings in everyday life" (Chase, Crawford and Kaliski 2008), spatial ethnography builds an empirical approach about the sensibility of looking at frequently unnoticed situations and experiences that occur in everyday life. This concept relocates the human body and its social networks in the center of space production. Based on Certeau studies, the physical environment is not deterministic of the humans action in space (Certeau 1984). The users of urban space contest and create new rituals, patterns, and flows that mold the existing territory.
Likewise, Jan Gehl advocates for a methodology to study the 'life between buildings' based on systematic

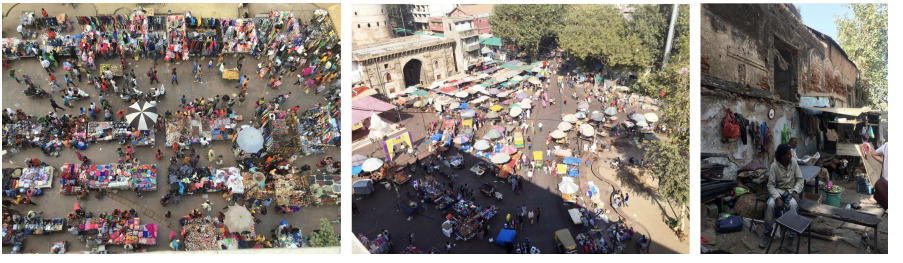


Figure 1. Market at Bhadra Fort, and informal settlements at Raikhad Gate, Ahmedabad (authors 2017-2019)

documentation, observation, and surveys, to understand how people behave in public open spaces. This is based on the premise that only by understanding how people interact with the physical environment, it is possible to design appropriate urban spaces. Understanding the agency of mapping as "neither reproduction nor imposition but rather in uncovering realities previously unseen or unimagined" (Cosgrove 1999, 213). Mapping is a precious method that can reveal and understand the logic and patterns of the everyday life of urban spaces.

Until the Renaissance, maps were a hybrid representation of spatial relations between objects (houses, people, animals) and fields (settlements, cultivated plots, oceans), and figurative elements, as monsters symbolizing dangerous areas. A map drawn in 1502 by Leonardo da Vinci changed the paradigm of cartography, it represented only streets and buildings (without any figuration) in a parallel projection seen from above (Bosselmann 1998, 13). This became the conventional system of mapping, used in representations such as the Nolli map (1736-38) or the Barcelona Ensanche (1866). This method represented accurately the physical conditions of the city in plan, but, by definition, neglecting many other aspects such as tri-dimensionality, experiential attributes, and social systems. These and other urban qualities were later addressed by urbanists such as Camilo Sitte (*The art of building cities*, 1889), Gordon Cullen (*Townscape*, 1961), Kevin Lynch (*The image of the city*, 1960) or Jan Gehl (*Life between buildings*, 1971).

Different methods of representation reveal different urban ideologies and distinct conceptualization of the role of the urbanist. Gordon Cullen and, in late 90s, Peter Bosselmann, represented the city through a sequence of images along a path, at a human-eye level, focusing on the experience of walking in the city. Kevin Lynch and Stanley Milgram studied how the city was perceived and remembered by its users, representing those perceptions in maps (mental maps). In the 1960s, Jan Gehl related urban form with social sciences and studied, through maps, the activities of people in public space. This method represented geographical data with parallel projections, along with social data, represented by symbols. A map of Copenhagen done in 1968 shows the plan of a street with human temporal activities - people sitting and standing, street vendors, musicians - and the everyday life.

An important aspect of spatial ethnography of 'everyday life' is also its agency to challenge existing power structures. Annette Miae Kim, in her work about the sidewalk life in Ho Chi Minh City, uses the term "critical cartography" to 'describe the subset of mapmaking that aims to bring to the fore issues of power' (Kim 2015, 64) This is particularly relevant in the Indian context, where 'everyday life' is intrinsically connected with the 'informal'. Mapping everyday life means to document the informal along with the formal, and to build the bases for a new understanding of this relationship. Also, mapping has the agency to represent informal and formal structures with the same graphical quality, and therefore partially omitting the aesthetics of informality. This can reveal a new imagination, not based on aesthetics or material attributes, but focused on other aspects of these events, such as their metrics or the complexity of their operationality on the use of open space.

With the complexity of temporary occupations of public open space in the Indian context, it becomes relevant to conceptualize mapping as a representation of four-dimensional situations, where time plays an important role. The production of appropriate maps and cartographical work that look at everyday life along with the physical and more permanent environment can be a way to uncover the relations between the static and kinetic city, and to understand them not as binaries but as nuanced and interrelated realities. This

conceptualization of the Indian city and the traditional use of space is present on the works of Architect B.V. Doshi, the founder of CEPT University, in 1962. In the words of Prof. Neelkanth Chhaya about his work: "not to clean up and isolate an architectural environment into simply an architectural art, but to connect it to life forms, is something which is peculiarly Indian. The weaving in of outdoor spaces and movements across this is something like the way an Indian house or street would work"[4].

3. DEFINITION OF A METHOD TO MAP THE KINETIC CITY

The first step forward in studying Ahmedabad, as any other Indian city, is to understand how to examine its urban spaces by integrating physical and social information. Therefore, it is important to be able to formulate a method of spatial ethnography that binds together social science and physical spatial analysis. It is crucial to uncover how places are actually used in everyday life, the social process behind them and the meaning of these uses. Only then, design approaches can be appropriate to the complex context of an Indian city, where space is fluid and in flux.
Mapping Indian territory means to combine formal and informal aspects. The concept of "informality" represents a state of deregulation, where nothing is fixed, as per ownership or land use, and mapped according to a prescribed set of regulations or laws. Informality is a dynamic process, which is the ground of Indian urbanization (Roy 2009). Comprehending the meaning of 'everyday life' and reading it allows the capacity to generate comprehensive and useful maps, which will include formal and informal, static, and kinetic aspects.
Looking at the European context, the informal components in the urban spaces are rare compared with the static ones. Rarely in Europe, something is left unregulated, and generally, there is no informal appropriation of public spaces by citizens. Every area is planned, and there is an explicit definition between public and private spaces. These established conditions clarify the modality for reading urban spaces. Commonly, mapping a city in Europe means to map the physical elements: the streets, the functions, the buildings, the water systems, the green area, and not the human activities. On the contrary, mapping the Indian city means to study the movement of humans and animals, the social fabric and the temporal events, as part of the formal and informal occupation of public space.
In the afterword of the book *Cartographic Grounds* (Desimini & Waldheim et al. 2016, 251), Antoine Picon states the need for an urgent study of the conventional signs used in maps, since digital tools challenge the 'traditional notions about cartography'. A study of the mapping work developed in the Indian context, where reality is transformed at a fast pace, can bring forward a new nature of signs, that is able to represent the movement of bodies in space and the 'everyday life' in the urban context.
In the research about Kumbh Mela, by Harvard University (Mehrotra, Vera, 2015), we can see the event being mapped by a series of drawings spaced in time. Each map is done on a specific day and it represents a still frame of the construction and organization of semi-permanent shelter structures. This series of maps represents the dynamic process of assembling and disassembling a temporary city. The succession of maps uncovered the logics and patterns of temporary 'urbanization', not visible on one single map, but on the collection of many.
In many of the recent academic classes at CEPT University[5] we can see the centrality of human activities in the process of mapping. When asked to survey a territory, most of the students mapped the physical

[4] https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2018-03-19/pritzker-winner-doshi-put-his-stamp-on-ahmedabad-india

and social environment, in dialogue. The maps revealed the temporary and informal uses of public space such as squatting, vending, or cow grazing, as well as the more permanent built environment such as dwellings or walls. For this, students created graphic codes for the 'events' happening in the territory, differentiating the temporal conditions of each one of them - mobile (walking, driving, cow grazing), stationary (seating, stadings, vending) or semi-permanent (squatting, vending, celebrating). Other studios experimented with a mapping process that examined the relation between everyday life activities and built form, through graphic narratives. These drawings narrated different events through perspectives or axonometries. Each of these frames presented a story about a place and its use by the movement of the bodies, expressing the activities performed and the relation with the physical environment. Just as a storyboard, these drawings mapped the use of space at a moment in time that is significant for the understanding of the territory. What determines the character of these places is the structure of relationships that materialize primarily on the ground: physical, cognitive, and symbolic connections. The drawings produced in this studio are synthesis, interposed between the tensions that bind permanence, erosions, and poetic resistances.

3.1. Method to study public spaces in Ahmedabad

For understanding the complexity of Ahmedabad's public spaces, the challenge is to identify a peculiar methodology for reading the flux and the constant motion of the city. To start, it is necessary to identify and compare different categories of public space that exist in the city of Ahmedabad. To be able to compare different open public spaces, it is essential to select a set of sites with comparable contexts and similar characteristics. The analysis conducted during the research field should be organized in three different steps: exploration (1), restitution of data (2) and interpretation (3).

1 - Referring to the eight principles established by Jan Gehl in his book "How to study public life" the exploration phase sets the indicators of: counting, mapping, tracing, tracking, looking for traces, photographing, keeping a diary, test walk. Each site must be studied at different times of the day, and at two distinct moments of the week (e.g. weekdays and weekend). Generally, the most appropriate time for site visit is: 8am to 10.00 am and 06.00 pm to 08.00 pm. This is necessary because some particular places change drastically during the weekend. The Riverfront Sunday Market is such an example (Fig.3). The market was redesigned in 2012, along with a large area of the Ahmedabad's riverfront, to protect the city from the floods of Sabarmati River. The intrinsic character of the Sunday Market suggested studying the site during the week, while there is no market, and the area is almost empty, and Sunday when the entire area becomes crowded with people, animals, vehicles and vending structures.

2 - The second phase is to develop a way for the restitution of data by synthesizing and analyzing the data collected. The results of this phase are maps - of actors, flows, sounds and lights – that show not only the static elements of the physical space but also the changeable actors of the 'human space'. The aim is to express the tangible and the intangible aspects of the city, as a pillar for the kinetic soul of the Indian city.

3 - In the end, the analysis of the selected spaces is translated into a strategic plan or framework, to be used as tools in the design project. The definition of this framework establishes strategic outcomes for transforming urban spaces.

[5] https://portfolio.cept.ac.in/

Figure 2. Mapping the Riverfront market Ahmedabad, during the week (left) and on Sunday (right), an Indian case study of everyday urbanism, Master thesis Politecnico di Milano (Sara Rossi, 2019)

Figure 3. Riverfront market Ahmedabad, during the week (left) and on Sunday (right), Sunday (Authors, 2019)

CONCLUSION

In a broad definition, we would like to recognize not only the importance of reading the urban spaces through maps but above all, the importance of understanding which types of maps are appropriate for each environment. This is particularly relevant if we acknowledge mapping as an initial component of the design process, where the framework established initially can condition the consequent design decisions.

Drawings that represent not just absolute conditions but fluid realities, have the chance to generate solutions that understand the territory as ephemeral and therefore propose solutions that are also transitory. This is particularly important in a context of rapid urbanization as India, where urban spaces are in constant mutation, and are shared and

produced by people from different economic, social and religious backgrounds.
As underlined by Kim, urban design has produced disastrous results when it has been informed by ideological ideas that have been generated without ethnographic studies (Kim 2015). Ahmedabad has seen a recent increase of urban development projects that lacked critical knowledge about the local communities and the overall situation. Spatial ethnography is therefore essential for sensible and adequate projects that can explore the relation between pattern and logics of use of space and its physical limitations.
In the work of a student of Politecnico di Milano and exchange at CEPT University (fig.3), we can observe the methodology for mapping the kinetic condition of the Indian city organized in three phases. The first phase is set to explore the location and to rigorously study the site and the events that occur on it. For that it is necessary to examine the territory at different moments of the day, on different days of the week, or the year if there are any festival celebrations on the site. It is common that vacant spaces, for example, have seasonal festivals and are, therefore, occupied during parts of the year with temporary structures and activities, such as wedding parties or other celebrations. The data acquired during the visits is then synthesized and analyzed, looking for patterns and logics of everyday use. The result is a series of maps that represent not just the physical space but the 'choreography' of the bodies in the territory. This series of maps must then be analyzed to recognize logics of relation between physical environment and everyday use, and create new frameworks of understanding, which will inform the design process.
Since temporal and informal conditions of the urban territory constitute the bases of Indian urbanizations, these research offers a perspective on how maps can explore and make visible these phenomena, by mapping the everyday life.

REFERENCES

Arnaud, P. 1991. "The History of Cartography", *Vol. I: Cartography in Prehistoric, Ancient, and Medieval Europe and the Mediterranean.* Edited by J. B. Harley and David Woodward, 1987.

Bosselmann, P. 1998. *Representation of Places: Reality and Realism in City Design.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Briggs, A. 1963. *Victorian cities.* Berkeley & Los Angeles: University of California Press.

Certeau, De M., Rendall, S. 1984. *The Practice of Everyday Life.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Chase, J., Crawford, M., and Kaliski, J. 2008. *Everyday Urbanism.* New York: Monacelli Press.

Corner J. 1999. "The agency of mapping: speculation, critique and invention" in Cosgrove, D. E. 1999. *Mappings. Critical Views*. London: Reaktion

Denis, E., Marius-Gnanou, K. 2010. "Toward a Better Appraisal of Urbanization in India." *Cybergeo: : European Journal of Geography*, Systèmes, Modélisation, Géostatistiques, n. 569, 28-11-2010, http://journals.openedition.org/cybergeo/24798; DOI : https://doi.org/10.4000/cybergeo.24798

Desai, J. 2019. *Equity in Heritage Conservation: The Case of Ahmedabad, India.* Abingdon & New York: Routledge.

Fernandes, L. 2004. *"The politics of forgetting: Class politics, state power and the restructuring of urban space in India". Urban Studies* 41(12): 2415–2430.

Forrest C.I.E., G.W. 1977 "Ahmedabad", in *Cities of India*. Delhi: Metropolitan Book.

Gayer, L.; Jaffrelot, C. (2012). *Muslims in Indian Cities: Trajectories of Marginalisation.* Columbia University Press. pp. 53–60

Gillion, K. 1968. *Ahmedabad: A study of Indian Urban history.* London: University of California Press

Gehl, J. 1971. *Life between Buildings: Using Public Space.* 6th ed. Copenhagen: Danish Architectural Press,

Hope, T., Biggs, T., & Fergusson, J. 1866. *Architecture at Ahmadabad, the Capital of Goozerat, photographed by Colonel Biggs, With an historical and descriptive sketch by T.C.H.*, Architectural notes by J. Fergusson. London. De.

Jaffrelot, C. (July 2003). *"Communal Riots in Gujarat: The State at Risk?"* Heidelberg Papers in South Asian and Comparative Politics.

Kim, A. M. 2015. *Sidewalk City: Remapping Public Space in Ho Chi Minh City.* Chicago-London: University of Chicago Press.

Kotkin, J. 2010. "In pictures The Next Decade's fastest growing cities". *Forbes*.

Mehrotra, R. 2008. "Negotiating the Static and Kinetic Cities: The Emergent Urbanism of Mumbai". in Huyssen, A. *Other Cities, Other Worlds: Urban Imaginaries*,. Durham – London: Duke University Press.

Mehrotra, R. Vera, F. 2015. *Kumbh Mela: Mapping the Ephemeral Megacity*, Harvard University South Asia Institute: Hatje Cantz.

Mehrotra, R., Vera, F., Mayoral, J., Sennett, R., Burdett, R. 2017. *Ephemeral Urbanism: Does Permanence Matter?*. Santiago: ARQ ediciones.

Mohanty, P. K., Ahluwalia, I.J., Ravi Kanbur, S. M. 2014 *Urbanisation in India : Challenges, Opportunities and the Way Forward.* New Delhi: SAGE

Waldheim, C., Desimini, J., Mostafavi, M., 2016, *Cartographic Grounds: Projecting the Landscape Imaginary.* New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Roy, A. 2005. "Urban Informality: Toward an Epistemology of Planning". *Journal of the American Planning Association* 71, no. 2

Roy, A. 2009, "Why India Cannot Plan Its Cities: Informality, Insurgence and the Idiom of Urbanization". *Planning Theory* 8, no. 1

Spodek, H. 2011. *Ahmedabad: Shock City of Twentieth-Century India*. New Delhi: Orient Blackswan.
Yagnik, A., Sheth, S. 2016, *Ahmedabad: From Royal City to Megacity*, Gurgaon: Penguin Books.

PAPER #1.05

THE CURRENT IMAGE OF THE CITY OF YEREVAN (ARMENIA) THROUGH THE STUDY OF URBAN SPACES

Anna Sanasaryan[a], María José Viñals[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, València, Spain

ABSTRACT

Yerevan is one of the most important administrative and economic centers of the Republic of Armenia. Carrying the title of the capital city, Yerevan is considered to be the business card of the country. Through the years of prosperity and hardships, the capital has undergone numerous urban changes that altered its image.
Therefore, the objective of this study is the illustration of overall changes in the image of the capital through the study of urban spaces of the central Kentron district of the city, focusing the analysis on the historical center, its evolution and development from the Soviet period. Current research is mainly focused on the spatial pattern related analysis of the city, in particular, on the physical environment.
The methodological approach of the present study was inspired by the analysis conducted by Kevin Lynch (1960). Focusing on the analysis of the image of the city, the author portrayed a comprehensive vision of urban identity in spatial planning and city designing. Following the method, official documents (including master plans, cartographic data, areal images, etc.) were reviewed. Then, combining them with the direct observation of the elements composing the city (paths, edges, nodes, districts, and landmarks) and its historical overview, the analysis of the current urban structure and urbanistic evolution shaping the capital was given.

KEYWORDS

Yerevan; image of the city; Kevin Lynch; urban layout.

INTRODUCTION

Being the capital city, Yerevan is by far one of the most analyzed cities of the Republic of Armenia. However, not many works are dedicated to the analysis of its urban layout and spatial environment. Some recent works include the re-imagining the city after the Soviet Rules (Ter-Ghazaryan 2010), evaluation of the urban transformation over the last century (Khatchadourian 2016), studies of its architectural characteristic, as well as the urban and spatial environment (Petrosyan 2017; Kirakosyan and Arshakyan 2019). However, these studies are mostly focused on specific elements within the city rather than on its general urban layout.
Undergoing constant changes, the image of the city and its perception change accordingly. Following questions arise; What are the most evident changes the city experienced? and How did those changes impact on its current-day image?
The current study addresses these questions focusing on the urban analysis of the city, particularly on the evolution of the central administrative district from the implementation of the first Master Plan, created by the chief architect Alexander Tamanian in 1924, to the present days. Therefore, the diachronic data are discussed to indicate major developments in the city center.

1. METHODOLOGY

The methodological approach for this paper aims to analyze the setting of urban spaces inspired by the work of Kevin Lynch (1960). Therefore, the study of the city was

approached by direct observational fieldwork, as well as literature review (including scientific bibliography, official documents, and cartographic data). Data collection was also carried out from official websites.

Lynch's method is based on the imageability and legibility of the city, i.e. the ease of understanding how the city is planned, which can be achieved with the help of two types of maps: physical and mental. The first one is usually drawn by professionals during the fieldwork, with the identification, designation, and localization of the five empirical categories or elements (paths, edges, nodes, districts, and landmarks) on the physical map. While the creation of the second one can be achieved by interviewing the citizens. A mental map is how the individual perceives the city; its image sketched from the perspective of a citizen.

First, it is important to deduce how imageable space is based on the five elements. A city with a high imageability is typically an organized one, containing the five elements in an orderly, coherent manner. Then, after combining mental maps of all interviewed individuals, the public image is created. The analysis of both maps should help with the further development of the city to make it a more sufficient and peaceful place for its citizens.

The present research paper is devoted to the analysis of the physical map. Following the method, first, the contents of the city were classified into the five elements, distinguishing major elements from minor ones. Then, cartographic files were created, and the aforementioned elements were identified and localized. Lastly, the spatial image of the present-day Yerevan was analyzed, as well as comparisons were made with the first urban Master Plan to identify major changes.

The advantage of this method lies in the numerous outcomes that follow. On the one hand, it displays the city as is, and on the other hand, uncovers the way it is perceived by the person living in it. Simplification of the map by categorizing its elements helps visualize the difference between the elements composing the city, detect the concentration of their certain types, identify patterns, detect planning features (that are otherwise not apparent) and provide ideas for future planning modifications.

2. HISTORICAL AND URBANISTIC OVERVIEW OF THE CITY OF YEREVAN

The Republic of Armenia is a country of Western Asia. Its capital and the biggest city is Yerevan (fig.1). Yerevan is located in the south of Armenia, in the north-eastern part of Ararat plain, on both banks of the Hrazdan River, at an altitude of 850-1370 m above sea level (The Cadastre Committee 2008), in a 7-8 magnitude earthquake zone.

The capital occupies 223 km2, which has a 0.7 % share in the territory of the Republic of Armenia (ARMSTAT 2019). The city stretches in a north-south direction for 19.7 km and 19.1 km from east to west. Its appearance is reminiscent of an amphitheater; the city center is located at the bottom, with the bordering districts rising over the surrounding hills (ALARIS 2016).

Yerevan is composed of the following 12 administrative districts (district communities): Achapnyak, Arabkir, Avan, Davtashen, Erebuni, Kanaker-Zeytun, Kentron, Malatia-Sebastia, Nor Nork, Nork-Marash, Nubarashen, Shengavit (fig.1).

It should be noted that administrative borders of some districts as well as the border of the capital itself differ from source to source. For instance, according to some sources the area containing Zvartnots International Airport, as well as the road leading to it, are also considered to be a part of the capital. In order to avoid confusion, the administrative distribution of Yerevan Municipality official website was taken as a basis for current research (https://www.yerevan.am/en/administrative-districts/).

As mentioned before, the capital is located on an unevenly elevated surface. The lowest points are registered in the southern districts of Shengavit and Malatia-Sebastia. The central part, more specifically, the area surrounding the Republic Square (Kentron administrative district), is located in an altitude of 1000 m

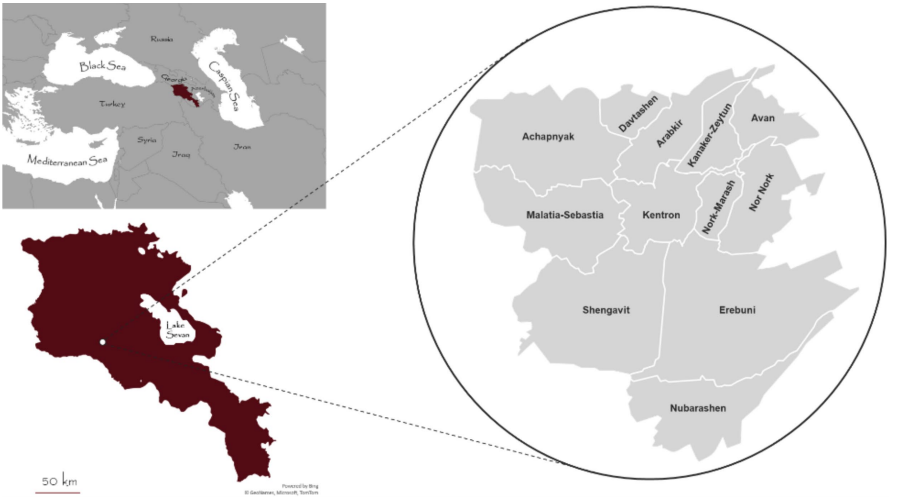


Figure 1. Location map of Armenia, the capital city of Yerevan and its 12 districts.

Figure 2. Aerial photo of Kentron administrative district facing south, Yerevan. Source: Skyball-Vardan Petrosyan (n.d.) https://twitter.com/armenia/status/1020570012761972736

above sea level (ALARIS 2016). While the highest point is registered on the hill adjacent to St Sargis Church of the 5th block of Nor Nork administrative district, with an altitude of more than 1300 m (ALARIS 2009).
The district communities occupying the most territorial share are Erebuni and Shengavit (4749 ha and 4060 ha consecutively); they compose most of the southern part of the capital, whereas the least territory belongs to the community of Nork-Marash (467 ha). The municipal center of the city is Kentron administrative district (fig.2) (in Armenian kentron *[կենտրոն]*, means *center*), which occupies 1335 ha of surface. Davtashen in the north and Nubarashen in the south are the only districts that do not have a direct border with Kentron.

Tamanian's Master Plan.

Yerevan became the capital city of Armenia in 1918. Several important historical events had a major influence on the development of the image of the city. The one with the most severe impact was the Armenian Genocide in 1915, which led not only to the death of 1.5 million people but also to the major migration of the Armenian nation. Therefore, by 1920s, when the Armenian Socialist Soviet Republic was founded, the overall population of the country decreased. Therefore, when it came to choosing a capital for Soviet Armenia, Yerevan appeared to be the perfect fit for the task, with an already established network of streets on the one hand, and a small number of buildings and small population on the other (Ter-Ghazaryan 2010).
Although Yerevan is considered to be a typical Soviet capital city due to the fact that it was given a more distinct definition during the Soviet period, the presence of some preserved historical and cultural monuments inherited from the past serve as a reminder of the origin and antiquity of the city. Before the Soviet rule, the city presented an image with not a clear definition of borders, and with a dispersion of buildings and streets (fig.3).

Figure 3. Comparison of urban development of Yerevan in 1907 and 2020. Source: https://www.ribaj.com/culture/roy-khatchadourian (1907) and Google Earth (2020)
Figure 4. The first Master Plan of Yerevan. (1924) Source: https://upload.wikimedia.org/wikipedia/commons/0/08 Yerevan_map_by_Tamanyan.jpg

And so, in 1924 with the leadership of the chief architect Alexander Tamanian, the first Master Plan of the city was created and was put to action. Before that, the total population of Yerevan had been around 60 000 people. Whereas Tamanian's Master Plan was designed to accommodate more than double: up to 150 000 people (Schröder 2017).

Adapting to the urban setting of the area, Tamanian's Master Plan (fig.4) was delimited by the bordering hills from the north and the east, as well as by the Hrazdan river from the west, leaving a room for expansion to the south. The core of the plan has a clearly distinguishable circular shape, which is followed by two rings, that surround it almost completely. The first ring is entirely composed of a green corridor, which had to serve as "lungs" for the city (Tamanian 1924). Starting from Kond in the west, the park surrounds the core until the south. Then heading to the south-east, it was planned to come to an end at Lake Vardavar.

Within the core, the road infrastructure is composed of clear, perpendicular lines. Owing to the harmony of the union of these paths, major nodes are instantly apparent on the map; mostly at the intersection of several roads (usually at squares).

Not only was Tamanian dealing with the planning of the city but he was also the author of the main iconic buildings including Opera and Government Houses. He blended architectural elements from Armenian (ecclesial) architecture to the general design of the façade of buildings, which resulted in a unifying combination of the old and the new. According to Ter-Ghazaryan (2010, 64), Tamanian's style is considered "an amalgam of Russian neoclassicism, the garden city movement and functional zonation". The buildings were constructed from basalt, granite, marble and especially from pink volcanic tufa, which gave a pink touch to the landscape of the city, as a result of which Yerevan is also commonly known as "Pink City".

Regarding the types, there were two types of structures planned to be built: residential buildings and community buildings. Residential buildings had to be two-story houses, whereas the number of floors of the community buildings should not have surpassed four (Tamanian 1924). Unfortunately, as time went by, some of those buildings were replaced with new ones, which, with the exceeding number of floors, act as skyscrapers. They are not concentrated in one area, if not constructed in random locations within the city center, which results in a partial loss of homogeneity (fig.2).

Current-day image of Yerevan

With the growth in population, the expansion of the city borders was inevitable. In addition to that, new districts were built surrounding the center. However, while the historical center was built on a plain surface, the elevation of its urban surroundings fluctuates considerably beyond its circular delimitation. As a result, instead of expanding in a circular form and keeping the ring-shape pattern, Yerevan mutated into a mixed layout, featuring a quadrangular and irregular area (Blasco 2015), so as adapting to the geographical circumstances. Compared to the first Master Plan, Kentron expanded primarily to the west, reducing its southern borders.

From the aerial perspective (fig.5), the core can still be delimited in a circular shape full of green and watershed areas. The first ring surrounding the core is the green corridor called Circular "Oghakadzev" park (in Armenian oghak *[օղակ]* means *circle*). Unlike the original intent of the Master Plan (fig.4), currently, the park composes only the eastern part of the core surrounding the historical center. And yet, it is still the longest pedestrian path (about 2.5 km) of the city.

Figure 5. Comparison of satellite views of the historical center in 2000 and 2020 with the current physical elements of Yerevan (paths, edges, green and water areas).

In the physical map of Yerevan presented in Figure 6, three elements were recognized as edges. Firstly, the administrative border of the district. It is designated as a minor element because it is not physically visible or distinguishable. Whereas the Hrazdan river in the west and the northern inclination are detectable from various viewpoints, therefore are considered to be major elements.

Regarding the major paths, the selection criteria were to accomplish one or more of the following points: are relatively wide (20–40 m) dual carriageways; have two or more lanes; are usual routs for vehicular traffic (public transportation); and, in general, are busy streets.

The minor paths are the ones that almost entirely complete the road map of the city. Similar to the major paths, they are carriers of the vehicular traffic. And yet, the minor paths are not so busy as the latter ones. They are usually two-lane, single (sometimes dual) carriageway streets that are mainly parallel to the primary streets.

In general, the complex observation of major paths brings to the conclusion that the "skeleton" of the city, inherited from the first Master Plan, appears to be a combination of simple shapes: circular forms and straight lines. The minor paths are mostly linear streets, that are perpendicular to one another. While the major streets tend to have a curvier structure, on most occasions they are straight lines linked to each other with flexible joints. Owing to their simple composition, the paths stimulate a strong sense of continuity as street channels, and still, are distinguishable due to the major and minor nodes along the way.

As for the differences in the nodes between the Master Plan and the current-day image, the biggest square-shaped node that is adjacent to the core from the south on the Master Plan (fig.4) does not currently exist.

Because of the urban layout, by vehicle, the city does not have direct access from the north, west, and east (fig.6). Coming from other districts the main roads leading to the city are Miasnikyan avenue and Saralanj street in North-East, Baghramyan avenue and Proshyan

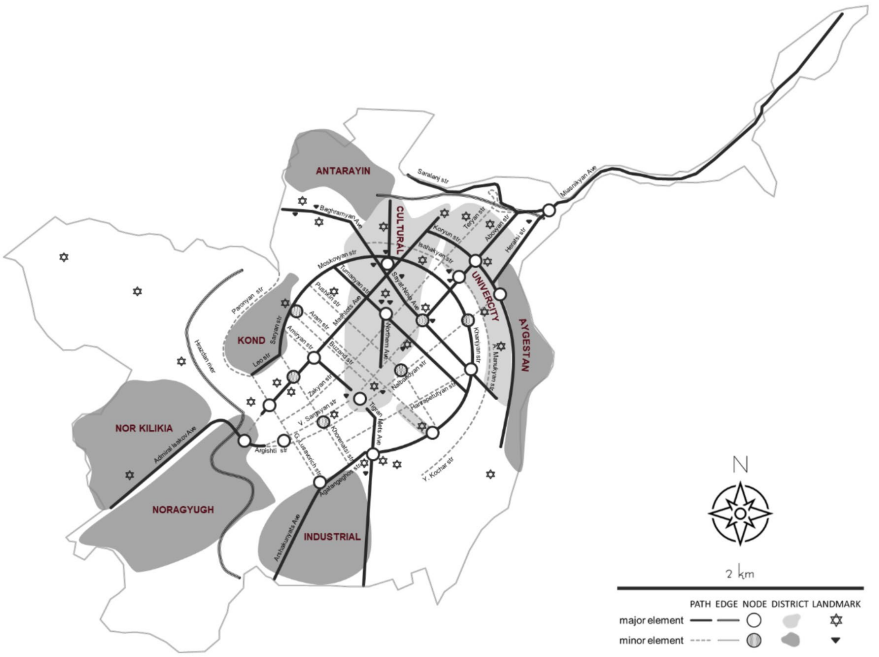


Figure 6. The visual setting of Yerevan (Kentron administrative district) derived from maps, including paths, edges, nodes, districts, and landmarks.

street in the north-west, and Admiral Isakov avenue in the south-west. From the south, the city can be accessed by Arshakunyats and Tigran Mets avenues directly.

One of the most important paths in Kentron district is the M4 interstate road, that is the main connector of the north to the south. It starts with Miasnikyan avenue in the North-East, continues in the Heratsi street. Merging with Khanjyan street it continues by Agatagheghos street and heads to the south by Arshakunyats avenue.

Concerning the road infrastructure within the core, with some alterations, the streets stretching from north-west to south-east remain as planned. While some streets of the opposite direction (from north-east to south-west) were not included in the present urban plan. The most evident example is a street that should have been located between Abovyan and Nalbandyan streets and intended to connect Heratsi street with the Sakharov square indirectly.

The latest and the most significant change in the road infrastructure was the construction of the Northern Avenue (fig.3, 5). Although schemed in the first Master Plan, the concept has come to life only in the last few years. Therefore, Northern Avenue can be considered the youngest segment of the historical center. The Avenue was not built when the Master Plan was being implemented because the area had already been occupied by residential houses, which is noticeable in Figure 5. As those buildings were a part of Armenian history, Tamanian did not want to demolish them. Instead, he suggested to disassemble them, numbering each stone, and assemble in

another part of the city. However, this project was turned down by the Soviet government due to high rate of expenses. Almost a century later, the Northern Avenue was built by the Yerevan City Council.

Several elements within the city, that have specific classification, can in fact equally be considered as a set of several elements. Four of them are worth mentioning: Cascade, Opera House, Northern Avenue, and Republic Square. Together on the map, they are composing a "J"-like path. On the one hand, they are collective elements, that individually are landmarks dominating over their surroundings. On the other hand, being on the intersection of several important roads, they serve as nodes. And finally, collectively they function as a north-to-south pedestrian path.

Due to its geographical singularity, Cascade is dominating over the rest, as it was built on inclination (on the northern hill). Looking to the horizon, it also has the privilege of having an extensive visual scope/panoramic experience. On the other hand, when looking down at the city, the aforementioned path, is identifiable until the Opera House, which is in this case, a visual barrier.

Out of all avenues, Northern Avenue is a pedestrian street. Even though in the initial plan the maximum number of floors was not to exceed four, current buildings composing the North Avenue are nine-story houses, that not only create a visual barrier from surroundings but also completely block the view for pedestrians walking down the Avenue. Once inside, the spectator can only see the start and the end of the Avenue, all the rest of the scenery is blocked by the buildings. On the positive side, the Avenue gives a sense of direction, which generally manages the pedestrian flow by guiding them either to the north (to the Opera House) or to the south (to the Republic Square).

Implementing the Master Plan, Tamanian segmented the city into several districts/areas; industrial area in the south, university district in the north-eastern area, as well as area devoted to museums in the west (Kond), and labor and commercial areas (Tamanian 1924; Zorian 1978). Some of these areas still serve their designated purpose (fig.6). In particular, the university district has been expended to the south. Concerning Kond, it is now a residential area. There is no specific area dedicated to museums, thus they are spread over the city. Their relatively high concentration is noticeable in the northern area of the city center.

Such segmentation of the city was reasonable at that time, because, for example, the university district was on the outskirts of the city. However, with the expansion of the city, it is now considered to be the area close to the city center, which leads to traffic congestion because of the heavy student flow, especially in the morning hours.

Regarding the landmarks (fig.6), their high concentration is noticeable, especially near the nodes. Considering the fact that the nodes are generally the intersections of roads, the landmarks that are located near play a tactically indicative role, making it accessible for citizens to reach them by transport. The fact that the landmarks are spread rather than concentrated on one area has a positive effect on the congestion of the areas; the landmarks are not too close to each other to create confusion and to be tiring for the eye, and at the same time not too far from one another for the citizens to be unable to navigate themselves.

CONCLUSION

Comparing the current historical center to the first Master Plan brings us to the conclusion that, having undergone several alterations, the urban layout of the core of the city (the city center) remains unchanged. Overall, the most evident/major change is the expansion of the borders of the capital through the formation of new districts.

The analysis of urban zoning concluded that, similar to the development and the evolution of capital cities of other countries, the further

urban development of Yerevan (construction and distribution of new districts) was carried out around the historical center. On the other hand, the road infrastructure distinctly differs from the usual 'circular' infrastructure of many capital cities because of the urban layout of the region.

Owing to the spatial sharpness of the paths, tactical zoning, and general homogeneity of the elements, the imageability of Kentron administrative district can be considered medium level. Nonetheless, there is a strong need for the improvement of the physical map (as it was defined by Lynch) by reviewing the transportation system, considering rebuilding some elements and enlarging green areas.

With the historical development of the country, the architectural style and borders of the districts have changed. Over time some older buildings were substituted with new ones, changing the layout of the city. To acquire the complete image of the city, further research must be focused on the mental image, i.e. analyzing how the changes in the main landmarks impacted the emotional perception of several generational groups of the citizens. Together with the spatial analysis, this will help find and define the new identity of the city and create a narrative for it. This can be achieved through the studies of changes in the main landmarks of the city along with the analysis of the emotional impact of the citizens through interviews. Here attention should be paid on the descriptive words the citizens use when referring to the city, more specifically to the status contrast, use contrast, relative age or comparisons of cleanliness or of landscaping as suggested in the book of Lynch (1960, 45).

Conclusions made after analyzing both aspects should help with the improvement of the National Planning Policy Framework of the capital city in order to consolidate the pillars of the identity of Yerevan.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The authors of this document want to express their gratitude to Yelena Manukyan for providing key information for the current paper, and to Marina Sanasaryan for kind assistance in proofreading.

REFERENCES

Armenian Legal Information System (ARLIS). 2009. *Երևանի զարգացման 2010-2013թթ. ծրագիր.* https://www.arlis.am/Annexes/3/erit-2_010.pdf

Armenian Legal Information System (ARLIS). 2016. *Երևան քաղաքի կայուն էներգետիկ զարգացման գործողությունների ծրագիր.* Yerevan. https://www.arlis.am/Annexes/4/eiatN5_2016N558hav.pdf

Blasco, J.A. 2015. *Aproximación al círculo como estructura urbana: Ciudades circulares y otros trazados (parte segunda).* https://urban-networks.blogspot.com/2015/04/aproximacion-al-circulo-como-estructura_25.html (retrieved June 2020)

Khatchadourian, R. 2016. *A Juxtaposition of Ideological Expressions: Evaluating the urban transformations of Yerevan (Armenia) during 1915-2015.* University of Liverpool UK http://www.presidentsmedals.com/Entry-14960

Kirakosyan, L. and Arshakyan, A. 2019. *Spatial environment and symbolic image of Yerevan "Cascade" complex. Bulletin of National University of Architectur and Construction of Armenia.* http://www.mathnet.ru/links/8d70a06f955cfdd62279a7c6bb843af5/nuaca222.pdf

Lynch, K. 1960. *The Image of the City.* England. The M.I.T. Press.

Petrosyan, H. 2017. *A study of the urban environment and architecture characteristics in the context of visual information inputs: case study of Yerevan city.* Bulletin of National University of Architectur and Construction of Armenia. www.mathnet.ru/links/dddd7b393edcff7c7fae8fef3d3043e4/nuaca25.pdf

Schröder, P. 2017. *Urban Spaces and Lifestyles in Central Asia and Beyond.* UK and USA: Routledge.

Statistical Committee of the Republic of Armenia (ARMSTAT) 2019. *Marzes and Yerevan city of the Republic of Armenia in figures,* 2019. https://www.armstat.am./file/article/marzer_2019_25.pdf

Tamanian, A. 1924. *Զեկուցում Երևանի հատակագծման մասին,* edited by Azatyan, V. 2014. Հանրային ոլորտի և հասարակայնության միջև. Utopiana. http://www.arteria.am/hy/1429464913

Ter-Ghazaryan, D. 2010. *Re-Imagining Yerevan in the Post-Soviet Era: Urban Symbolism and Narratives of the Nation in the Landscape of Armenia's Capital.* Florida International University: Electronic Theses and Dissertations. 261.

The Cadastre Committee of the Republic of Armenia. 2008. *Հայաստանի Հանրապետության բնակավայրերի բառարան.* Yerevan. https://www.cadastre.am/storage/files/pages/pg_8945925618_pg_907871769_HH_bnak._bar.pdf

Zorian, L. 1978. *Ալեքսանդր Թամանյան (Ծննդյան 100-ամյակի առթիվ).* Historical-Philological Journal. http://hpj.asj-oa.am/3013/

PAPER #1.06

TOWARD A SUSTAINABLE URBAN DEVELOPMENT (SUD): A CASE STUDY ON ANCIENT CITY OF KAZERUN, IRAN

Mohammad Akbari Riyabi[a], Farzaneh Soflaei[b]
[a]Salman Farsi University, Kazerun, Iran
[b]State University of New York, Oneonta, USA

ABSTRACT

Throughout history, cities have been the main centers of learning, culture and innovation. However, today's cities are facing with an ongoing rapid urbanization that causes many problems exacerbated by the increasing population density and demands of urban environments. This article focuses on the concept of sustainable urban development (SUD), which highlights the need for reform of market mechanisms to achieve environmental goals and the achievement of a balance with social and economic considerations. We selected the ancient city of Kazerun in Iran as a research case, where has always been so noteworthy to the kings and powerful politicians through the whole history of this Iranian city and now it's attracting many visitors counting on it's rare historical, cultural, natural and religious sites to be seen and explored. Our research illustrates how the spatial arrangement and the urban structure of Kazerun has been changed in the passage of time; because of rapid population growth, unorganized urban development, and how it negatively impacts on the connectivity and accessibility of urban facilities and services. We used two research methods: 1) through literature review to identify a research gap in existing strategies that deal with sustainable solutions for urban planning problems in medium-density cities like our case study; and 2) through the survey, we evaluated the existing planning of Kazerun and conducted guided-interviews with stakeholders to understand the urban problems, issues and policies. All data are summarized, integrated and presented in SWOT tables to analyze in a hierarchy process (AHP) via Expert Choice software. Our findings show that social justice, social welfare, economic prosperity, sustainable transportation methods and intelligent energy management will be the most effective terms to dealing with the future development challenges of Kazerun. As conclusion we propose some sustainable strategies and policies for future development of this beautiful ancient city.

KEYWORDS

Population growth; urban sprawl; medium dense cities; sustainable urban development (SUD); analytical hierarchy process; ancient Kazerun city.

INTRODUCTION

The city of Kazerun i*n southwestern of Iran,* is one of the cities of the Islamic East, which dates back to the era of the Sassanid Empire (226-641 AD), as it was its capital, and despite its ancient history that extends to ancient roots, this city remained without any integrated study in its political conditions, social, economic and religious. The Islamic conquests affected Persia in general and the city of Kazerun in particular, as it is from a social point of view that there were groups of society other than what they were before Islam, including Muslims as the local rulers of Persia, in addition to the local population of the Magi and Christians and the few Jews. Today, the city of Kazerun is one of the agricultural cities with fertility in its soil and cultivation

of various crops, and it has become widely known in the manufacture of linen clothing, and has a commercial significance for its location between the city of Shiraz, which is a base for Persia on the one hand and the Caspian Sea (Bahr al-Khazar) on the other in Islamic times. This city has been distinguished by the emergence of a number of scholars in the villages and its stores affiliated to the city of Kazerun, and they have contributed to enriching intellectual life in the city in particular and the Islamic world in general, such as: Al-Murejani, Kaskani and AlDawani. A number of Muslim scholars who left their impact on the city and from them. Shiraz Al-Alam, the gift of God bin Abd al-Warith alShirazi, and the city of Ruzbeh, the scholar Ibn Hasankwayh, the Persian Muhammad bin Muhammad bin Al-Hassan, and from the city of Nushanjan, the world, Talha bin Ahmed bin Ayoub Al-Muqri AlNushajani, and from Ahwaz Ahmed bin Aqeel bin Rajeh. In addition, the scientific titles obtained by Kazarun scholars have confirmed their diverse scientific product, and the evidence for this is what their scientists have classified in works in the religious, human, mobile, and mental sciences. The city has had a distant lake in its vicinity for several years. The Parishan Lake was the largest freshwater lake in Iran, hosts highly aquatic species, insects and birds, watered down the underground aquifer of the city and moderated the weather conditions of the area. The lake was completely dry since 10 years ago and the surface of aquifers went down by an average of 50 meters. In order to cope with this dehydration crisis, deep and semi-deep wells were drilled whether permissible or unauthorized. On the other hand, trying to make more profit, increasing use of pesticides and fertilizers, seems to be crazy about the environmental resources by. Due to the numerous villages in the strategic area, the influx of villagers from neighboring rural areas threatens the integrity of the social fabric in the city of Kazerun. Increasing water deficit, the agricultural economy has lost its justification, and today most of the city's capitalists are trying to transfer their investments into other neighboring cities such as Shiraz. This has caused the Kazerun's economy to face with serious challenges in recent years.

1. RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

This paper is an applied type with a mixed method research. We review theoretical bases in documentary method, and for collecting data in case study, field observation tools, referral to institutions, documentary review and deep interviewing have been used. The SWOT table technique has been used for analyzing and the research strategy has been extracted from this matrix; in order to access the priority list of developmental measures, the AHP technique was used by Expert Choice Version 2 software. The results of the cumulative weighting of each action completed by the Delphi method to compile a downline listing the importance and priority for sustainable urban development strategies.

2. THEORETICAL BASE (DISCUSSION)

2.1. Related concepts

There is no comprehensive definition universality, since it has been the subject of many definitions of development since its introduction (Elliott 2006). Development is a multidimensional concept that has economic, social, political, and cultural aspects, and if we consider each of these dimensions, we can make the impact both historically and theoretically clear on this concept (Betty and Wheeler 2007). Development is not the same as economic growth, because development is a complex process that involves in the reorganization and the different orientation of the whole socioeconomic system (Maleki 2011). In addition to increasing and improving

the level of production and income, it includes a fundamental transformation of institutional, social and administrative structures, as well as the public opinion; development in many cases even encompasses people's habits and customs. Some prominent experts, such as Procofield, define development as a basis of moving towards welfare goals such as poverty reduction, unemployment and inequality (Azkia 2005, 27). The origins of the SD approach were launched as part of a cumulative effort from the events of the 1970s and the Stockholm Convention and could be followed up by the World Summit on SD (WSSD) 2002 in Johannesburg (Gouza 2006). In summary, a series of sequential events led to the completion of this theory and the elaboration of its action modes.Peter Hall defines sustainable urban development as a form of continuous development of cities and towns that meet the needs of future generations (Hall 1993).But the most common definition of the SD expressed in Commission on the Environment and Development of the United States in 1987, known as the Bruntland[1] Commission, said SD is such a development that addresses the needs of the present without threaten the capabilities and potential of future generations (Henry 2001). The commission tried to communicate between the economic and environmental issues, albeit somewhat ambiguous, but the concept of SD contributes to economic prosperity progress (UNGA 1987, 43). So SD can be considered an important change in understanding the relationship between nature and humans. In general, the policies of SD can be divided into four axes:

- Minimizing the use of non-renewable natural resources, such as fossil fuels
- Sustainable use of renewable resources such as groundwater, soil and vegetation
- Keep waste limitations at the local and global absorption capacity, such as greenhouse gases and toxic waste
- Provide basic human and social needs such as access to livelihoods, social participation, and access to a healthy environment with basic services (Hardoy 1992, 4).

2.2. Objectives and areas of sustainable development:

Theoretical studies show that economic sustainability, environmental sustainability and social sustainability are three areas of SD. The main objective of SD is to provide basic needs, to improve the standard of living for all, to maintain and manage ecosystems and to have a safer and more prosperous future (Moslem 2006). So eradicate of poverty, eradicating hunger, health and well-being, quality education, gender equality, clean water and sanitation, clean and affordable energy, decent work and economic growth, industry and infrastructure innovation, reducing inequalities, Sustainable cities and communities, responsible production and consumption, climate action, life below water, terrestrial life, peace-justice, and powerful institutions, and ultimately participation in achieving goals are notable goals in the SD approach (UNDP 2000).

2.3. Sustainability Indicators

The strong point of the SD theory is the consideration of the relationship, or establishment of relationship between elements of development in a reasonable way that can sustain the development (Reid 1995). Peter Hall noted the foundations of SUD at the Berlin International Conference (2000) in seven Sustainable Urban Economies, Sustainable Urban Sites, Sustainable Urban

[1] It is often called the Bruntland report because of the chairperson of the commission: The Prime Minister of Norway, Mrs. Gro Harlem Bruntland

Shelter, Sustainable Ecosystems, mobile Resource Sharing, Living in the City, and empowering citizenship. (Ancient, G. 1998; Sarrafi 2001).

The World Commission on Environment and Development (WCED 1987) also mentions the following principles as essential features of a sustainable city:

- Increasing economic and social opportunities to cover the whole city population
- Reducing the share of energy in urban development
- Optimal use of water, land and other resources needed for urban development
- Minimizing waste and sewage production and maximize waste recycling
- Establishing a management system with the power and efficiency to achieve economic, social and environmental goals
- Driving technologies used by the city towards SUD goals
- Strengthening the capacity of various urban areas in order to prevent or respond to threats and economic, social and environmental objectives. In this regard, a sustainable city have improvement in social justice, diversity and the possibility of life with a desirable quality (Gharokhlu 2006, 160).

Table 1 summarizes some of the indicators considered for SD by different sources.

Expert	Year	Document name	Measures introduced
Sheikh-Al-Islami	2009	Article: evaluation Development stable Urban Macro	Growth, Justice, Efficiency, Integrity, Tolerance, Biodiversity, Planetary Issues
UNDP	2000	SD Goals	Poverty and hunger, Health, Quality of education, Justice, Clean energy, Employment, Economic growth, Industrial innovation, Sustainable communities, Production and consumption management, Climate action, Peace, Participation
Elliot	2006	An Introduction to SD	Child exploitation, gender inequality, racial segregation, poverty and hunger, local communities, land development management
Pitter Hall	2000	Berlin International Conference	Sustainable Urban Economics, Sustainable Urban Society, Urban Shelter, Sustainable Ecosystems, Resource Conservation, Urban Resilience, Empowering Citizens
Gharokhlu	2006	Article: Index Urban Stable Development	Economic-social opportunities, energy consumption, water consumption, sewage and waste, urban management, new technologies, urban neighborhoods, social justice, biodiversity, livelihoods

Table 1. Indicators on Sustainable Development

Later	Studied indices
social	Immigration; Population and Culture; Civil Partnership; Urban Management and Institutions; Settlement
Economical	Employment; basic economics; trade exchanges; product diversity; market economy; functional centers; poverty and income
environmental	Animal and plant life; climate; natural hazards; ecological zones; environmental pollution

Table 2. The selection criteria of this study on SUD

Obviously, only a few of these criteria, as shown in Table 2, have been investigated in the case study.
The status of the below indices tested by various interviewing techniques, field observations and documentary studies in the case study area and the collected data will be used to develop the research process.

3. DATA

Kazerun city has 4548 km2 total area. According to the global position, the city of Kazerun has located at 29° 35' to 29° 40' (N) and 51° 35' to 51° 41' (E), 154 km west of Shiraz in the western part of Fars province.

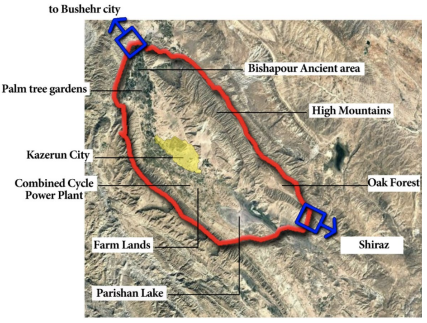


Figure 1. Research Area and Strategic Factors, Source: Author, Processed satellite picture from Land sat/ Copernicus, explored by Google Earth 2018

3.1. Social studies

According to this research we survey the present social situation and see several trends and events as you can see in the following sentences. **Social crimes** raised from 10,950 to 15,331 cases (2006-2016), which represents a 40% increase (Hosseini 2017).
Civic participation shows a decreasing trend up to 41.7% in these years.
The **level of literacy** show that the average level of educated people in the city has increased significantly and in general, the level of literacy gone higher (IAU & KSFU universities, Department of Education 2017) but many graduates leave the city because they do not find a suitable job or different purposes.
The study of **population movements** in Kazerun shows that in recent years the rate of migration has been limited to job seekers or villagers who are hoping to live in city and have access to more services. This group of newcomers to the city has not yet properly captured the citizenship culture and these citizens who still pursue their rural culture and are strangers to urban living patterns have much less citizenship accountability (Akbari et.al 2019).
The pressure from population compression in the central parts of the city, including the worn-out texture, along with the weakness of urban infrastructure and services, has caused much multidimensional problems.

3.2. Environmental studies

Kazerun city has been expanded to the end of the Zagros mountain range on the Kazerun-Qatar active fault. Statistical surveys show the people of the city every year feel an average of about 38 times the **earthquake** (>4). The old Zagros folds of the area have become so tired and susceptible to tensile that in the weekly period of 06 Feb. 2018 to 13 Feb. 2018, recorded 23 earthquakes with an intense of 3.1 magnitudes in this town (TUGC 2018).
Kazerun is one of the warmest cities in Iran with up to 302 sunny days per year and an average **temperature** of 22.4 degrees. The average annual relative **humidity** of the city is 54% (Ziari 2005). In such circumstances, when the air temperature reaches more than 50 °C in summer, about 63% of the city's buildings use a cooling water **cooler system.** Each water cooler consumes 70 liters of water per day, and if it's estimated that this water cooler will work only 30 days a year, 3241350 liters of water will be wasted!

The **energy consumption** in Kazerun has increased sharply in recent years. On the other hand, the vastness of the city and the centrality of Kazerun have increased the number of journeys that have led to increased fossil fuel consumption. The following can be said about the use of resources and energy in Kazerun. The consumption of electricity for cooling as well as domestic consumption over a wide period of time, consumption of fossil fuels for transportation, agriculture, and so on. Available statistics show that the average daily distribution of fossil fuels (petroleum, diesel, gasoline, etc.) reaches more than 60,000 liters at official fuel supply stations (Petroleum Refining and Distribution Company of Kazerun 2017).

The daily **waste production** increased from somewhat more than 9 tons (2006) to more than 16 tons of waste in 2016. And in the weakness of any facilities and culture of separation of waste, this is an issue with great concern (Kazerun Municipality 2018). Today, depo's waste sites are rapidly expanding on natural lands, and every day the extent of this destruction is increasing.

Due to the existence of an open surface water collection system, and in some places with a non-fired channel, the existence of multiple wells for each building to dispose of wastewater, the existence of small workshops which sewage enters into the seasonal rivers and the intensity use of pesticides and fertilizers in the agricultural sector, the **water and soil resources** are threatened with pollution, severely. Soil contamination is mainly related to the agricultural sector and the use of chemical pesticides. The traffic of heavy vehicles and the presence of a lot of workshops in the city that inflict pollution on the natural soil is a further risk of contamination of the region's soil (comprehensive plan and detailed plan approved in 2006). The single-core structure of Kazerun has caused every citizen to travel to the city center (martyrs square) several times daily for access to commercial services, health services, wholesale and etc. Also, the very poor public transport fleet does not service many regions inappropriately, so citizens are forced to use personal vehicles.

There are many villages around the city and many of the villagers every day have to do a village-urban journey, to buy, treat, office, train, and etc. which this volume of traffic will pollute the air. In recent years, that the Khuzestan and Bushehr provinces of Iran have been involved with dusty storms, are entering the area several times a year and Kazerun also is affected. Add to this the burning of garbage and burning of some intrusive plants in the agricultural sector. All of this has led to a serious crisis in the air pollution of Kazerun.

In recent decades, two strategic ecological zones in the city of Kazerun have been heavily challenged, in such a way that the tragic fate of one leads to destruction. According to the Environmental Protection Agency of Fars province (EPAF), in 1986, this basin accommodated more than 353 species of migratory and native bird species, and the biological ecosystem was a highly herbaceous plant (Hatami 2006, 45-52). The lake has been completely dry in recent decades due to the untapped use of groundwater, the unpredictable management of water resources and rivers into the lake, long droughts and etc. in recent decades lead to it was disappeared.

Part of the oak forests is located in our area study. This vast green area and vegetation diversity play an important role in the environmental performance of the region. The size of that part of the forest, which is within our scope, amounts to more than 400 hectares. In recent decades, with the expansion of urban lands and the commissioning of artificial settlements to natural lands, these forests always face the threat of destruction to prepare land for infrastructure. In parts of the jungle, the excessive grazing of livestock, the reduction of rainfall, the drop in groundwater aquifers, as well as the cutting of trees for the use of wood or agricultural land have become a crisis.

3.3. Economic studies

In the economy and trade market, achieving SD is often the ultimate goal of the international trade mechanism. Some articles of the international treaties recognize SD as a primary goal[2] and emphasizes that promoting SD is one of the developmental needs to the Clean Development Mechanism (CDM). Small-scale economic development at the local level will contribute to sustainable economic development at the national level (Schneider et al. 2016, 11; OECD, 2001, 9; Maleki 2011).

According to the 2001 census, the population of the city of Kazerun is 127,328 and the town's population is 254,704. Of the total number of employees in the city of Kazerun, 805 (4.2%) are employed in the agriculture and animal husbandry sector and 4467 (23.2%) in the industries and mines sector and 13.824 (71.3%) are employed in the service sector. This pattern of distribution clearly shows the dominant and unquestionable role of service activities in the city's economy. In other words, the economy of Kazerun can be regarded as a service economy with a dominant role in commercial activities.

Economic studies show that the purchasing power of the city has decreased by 12.7% (Namvar 2017). We can measure the power of purchasing in direct connection with the issue of urban poverty, and declare that the economic poverty of the city has increased.

In recent years, the amount of budget that allocated to urban management has increased, but given the inflation rate and some economic problems, this trend did not influence on the lives of citizens and the understanding of urban management services.

Employment surveys show that unemployment among young people has been rising in recent years, despite the emergence and development of urban services. The unemployment index, according to the Master Plan, is 6%, which in the year 2006 increased to 8% of the city's population (detailed plan of Kazerun 2006). Informal studies from interviews and some infield surveys show that despite population growth, the youth unemployment rate has risen to over 15% in the last five years.

According to this study, it seems that the development of Kazerun will be facing a serious challenge to sustainability, and in the near future, urban management should wait for a response to many problems. Of course, this is a worrying thing that there is no strategic plan for the future development of the city.

The purpose of this study is to achieve such a need for a SUD strategy and to seek a response to the current crisis. The SWOT table technique appears to be a useful tool for providing various inactive strategies, contingency strategies, proactive strategies and adaptive strategies. In the data analysis section, SWOT will identify, assess, and examine the strengths, weaknesses, opportunities and threats of SD of Kazerun. The effort is to have the strategies that are available from the comprehensive table to cover the issues and are so general that they can be interpreted in terms of several policies. By having such strategies, each developmental entity will be able to direct the strategy through several policies towards its intended goals, and then policy will be implemented through design codes.

4. DATA ANALYSIS

This article aims to balance the space organization, resource management and other developmental strategies in order to achieve its goals. We use SWOT matrix to have a rational structure for surveying the present conditions.

Now, we need to provide relevant strategies for problem management. It seems that the framework provided by Pierce & Robinson (Pierce & Robinson 2016) provides the right tool. Table 5 presents some of proposed strategic plans to strengthen SD of Kazerun.

[2] In this regard, paragraph 6 of the Paris Treaty and parts of the Kyoto Protocol can be noted.

	Strength	Weakness	Opportunity	Threat
social	- social interactions - cultural ethnics -Historical background -Statistical increase of urban services	-Weakness of civil participation -Increasing crime and delinquency - social instability -Citizenship Responsibility -Immigrant Village Entrance - Informal settlements	- promoting interactions - attracting the creative and educated class -Strengthening the collective identity	-The centralized identity -Access to services - distributive injustice -Security feeling - health care
Economical	- agricultural products - commercial highways - target markets and proximity to harbor towns	-Monoculture economy - lack of clarity in urban management -Loss of financial resources - Unemployment	-Population in active age -Mines and natural resources -Tourism -Handicraft and small businesses	-Immigration of investments - reducing the need for human resources
environmental	-Suitable climate - agricultural lands -Natural resources - Ancient city	- water resources exploitation - Energy consumption -Natural disasters -Relying on fossil fuels -Environmental Pollutions -Destruction of ecological organs	- Urban Green Spaces - solar and wind energy - modern irrigation -Resource consumption management	-Drought and water crisis -Infiltration of waste pollution to water and soil resources -Air pollution - natural disasters - chemical pesticides

Table 3. Analysis Matrix

		Strength	Weakness
Social dimension	Opportunity	*SSO1*. Enhancing Civil Participation *SSO2*. Integrated and Intelligent Management Development	*SWO1*. Empowering informal settlements *SWO2*. Strengthening Urban Infrastructure
	Threat	*SST1*. Observe social justice *SST2*. Healthy and inclusive city	*SWT1*. Establishing social interactions *SWT2*. Promoting Public Welfare
Economic dimension	Opportunity	*ESO1*. Creative economy and enjoying the elite class	*EWO1*. Multidisciplinary and Resource Economics *EWO2*. Emphasis on Urban Tourism
	Threat	*EST1*. Avoiding the passing of the city and strengthening the economic gateways	*EWT1*. Boosting and removing economic barriers
Environmental dimension	Opportunity	*EnSO1*. Utilizing new energies and reducing CO2 emission *EnSO2*. Encourage user interoperability and convertibility	*EnWO1*. Water management *EnWO2*. Encouraging the city and intensive development *EnWO3*. Sustainable transport practices *EnWO4*. Toward the electronic city
	Threat	*EnST1*. Conservation of ecological organs and historical centers *EnST2*. Facilitating access to service centers	*EnWT1*. Natural Disaster Management *EnWT2*. Intelligent energy leadership

Table 4. Proposed Strategies (Development Scenarios)

5. FINDINGS

The idea of SD requires a fundamental change in policy making. In the first place, groups may focus on the challenges of poverty- distributive injustice, but not only economic needs, but also a strong demolition of the environment; an issue that will require the participation of local communities, empowerment and localization of solutions will be required (Warburton 1998, 3).

Given the available data and their analysis in the SWOT table, several macro strategies are presented in SD approach. Each strategy can be pursued through one or more policies in further researches.

In the next step, we can test these strategies by considering the development goals with the help of the AHP technique under the Expert Choice software and have a good prioritization for adopting each one in each component.

The results have a desirable validity and reliability, and by verifying the data, now, based on the aggregate score of each of the development scenarios, a priority list of useful and strategic measures for SD of the city of Kazerun can be presented. . Table 7 shows the list of selected scenarios in descending order of importance.

	Major strategy	Development scenario	Action priority
social	Good urban governance	Observance of Social Justice (0.500)	1
		Integrated and Intelligent Development Manager (0.250)	2
		Enhancing Civil Participation (0.250)	3
	Citizens' Communities Resilience	Promoting Public Welfare (0.463)	1
		Strengthening Urban Infrastructure (0.190)	2
		Healthy and All Inclusive City (0.151)	3
		Establishment of social interactions (0.124)	4
		Empowerment of informal settlements (0.072)	5
Economical	Strengthening the urban economy	Economic Prosperity and Elimination of Economic Barriers (0.469)	1
		Multi-product and Resistant Economy (0.315)	2
		Creative economy and utilization of the elite class (0.137)	3
		Emphasis on Tourism (0.079)	4
environmental	Spatial organization and sustainable access	Sustainable transport practices (0.321)	1
		Encouraging User Interface and Conversion Improvement (0.253)	2
		Encouraging Compressed City and Intermediate Development (0.160)	3
		Facilitating Access to Service Centers (0.157)	4
		Move to Electronic City (0.109)	5
	Rely on the environment	Smart Energy Leadership (0.304)	1
		Water Resources Management (0.244)	2
		Management of natural and abnormal accidents and disasters (0.231)	3
		Preservation of ecological organs and historical centers (0.149)	4
		Utilizing modern energies and CO2 emission reduction (0.072)	5

Table 5. Prioritize SD strategies of the city of Kazerun

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION

The present study showed that although concepts related to SD can be categorized in three social, environmental and economic dimensions, but because of the multitude of proposed criteria and the inherent complexity of the concept, there are no comprehensive indexes for the indicators discussed in each comprehensive index. The present research, in each component, explains only some of the more elaborate and accessible indicators as an example of the circumstances of the situation under study in that component.

As Elliott believes, it is necessary to correctly identify the flow of change in the process and to improve it. Assessing the financial needs for SD in developing countries is a matter of urgency, despite the difficulty. There are many evidence that many SD patterns can be implemented without large financial costs and also there are many barriers and limitations that do not directly relate to income; in fact, there is no need for fundamental changes or massive costs for start-ups this intellectual trend, but simply by improving the way of looking at it, the attitude towards developmental issues and the responsible management of the budgets, we can run sustainability in development (Elliott 2006).

To wrap up, as we have seen, there is no sense in terms of SD as an intelligent and necessary approach to future development. If the current route is responsive, but there is no guarantee for the future, it is in conflict with the spirit of SD, and undoubtedly it needs to be reformed so that future generations will benefit from this accountability. The city of Kazerun, with its specific social, economic, environmental, cultural, climatic and etc. conditions, now has many qualities of a livable city, whose examination of these qualities was not the subject of this research, but as evidence suggests, If development continues in the same way, there will be concerns for the future and multiple threats in different sectors may reduce the city's viability for future generations, so if we want to face this, the SD approach an appropriate response will be that authorities and people involved in development can take on the future of this city. Many cases, although nowadays act as a strong point, but with limited resources available in the future, will become a weak point, and the need to respond to it is inevitable. As it is evident, the necessity of preparing and drafting City Development Strategy plans is binding.

Proper policy-making in partnering local communities as well as the exploitation of Non-Governmental Organizations will lead to microeconomic flows within the framework of the macroeconomic goals and will provide the necessary cost for the improvement of environmentally friendly programs. In fact, the relationship between the economy, the community and the environment is so tightly intertwined, that, despite the difficult appearance, they will easily interact in the course of sustainability for development, and the clever stimulation of development in each sector stimulates the development of other sectors and the overall system will move toward the goals. Therefore, as some scholars believe, we will achieve big successes with small beginnings (Reid 1995).

Citizens' Permanent Educational Programs to Promote and Strengthen Citizenship Culture, along with the development of life cycle assessment programs, efforts to branding and strengthening urban identity, transparency of information, management of urban marginalization issues and similar policies, provide an appropriate corrective role in improving the social development of the country.

According to the second priority of the economic sector, in the findings of this study, it seems that moving towards greenhouse crops, modern and high-yielding irrigation

practices, cultivating crops consistent with climate and organic, developing industries and small manufacturing workshops, Innovative businesses and knowledge base, taking advantage of the city's high education potential and doing so, will be a good policy for SD. In the present situation, considering the importance of tourism in the world economy and the place of cultural tourism in which the most important elements are the ancient works of each land, it is necessary to identify restoration and preserve the historical works of Kazerun. What is noteworthy is that most of the historical areas related to ancient Iran, are located outside its legal boundary of the detailed plan of Kazerun. The cases that are now seen in the city of Kazerun are related to Iran after Islam, which in their current condition is a total of 18 works. Of these, only three have been recorded, seven of the other recorded Kazerun's are outside the legal boundaries of the city. Historical works of the current city of Kazerun are more like the monuments and elders' homes. Thus, by adopting clever strategies or implementing separate plans, or incorporating historical monuments into an integrated range of detailed plans, and so on, efforts have been made to maintain and enhance the historic capital of the city and to pave the way for activating the potential of tourism development.

Planning for the management of wastewater and waste management, turning the structure of the city into a multi-core one, strengthening public transportation, Focusing on resource management to reduce fossil fuel consumption, and increasing the use of renewable fuels in a climate-friendly location and similar measures, Environmental policies will be reformed. Ultimately, the effort to maintain SD in the city of Kazerun is a continuous movement, and this vision necessarily overshadow the people's and people's worldviews in managing and using existing resources. SD will be a step that will require the cooperation of all development stakeholders, and the improvement of cultural, managerial, economic, environmental, developmental and political activities of each one will contribute to the achievement of the goal.

REFERENCES

Akbari, M., Eslami Afrooz A. and Amirazodi, H. "Measuring the status of residents' responsility in the old and new fabric of the Kazerun city." Not published.

Ancient, G. 1998. *Indicator of Sustainable Development: Economic Development and National Accounts in Green.* Commercial Publishing Company.

Azkia, M. 2005. *Sociology of Development.* Tehran: Kayhan Publishing House.

Betty, T. And Wheeler 2007. *Writings on Sustainable Urban Development.* Translator Kianoush Zakhooraghi, Ministry of Housing and Urban Development, Center for Urban and Architectural Studies.

Elliott A. Jennifer, 2006. *An Introduction to Sustainable Development*. Third Edition, Routledge.

Gouza, Jenifer S. 2006. *Sustainable Development, Assignment for Course Module: Introduction to Sustainable Development*. Lecturer: Prof. Mark Swilling. Available in https://www.sustainabilityinstitute.net/consulting

Gharlakh, M., Hosseini, S.H. "Indicators of Sustainable Urban Development." *Geography and Regional Development* 4, No. 8 (Spring and Summer 2007): 157-177.

Hall, P. 1993. *Toward sustainable livable and innvatitve cities for 21 century.* The third conference of the world capitals, Tokyo.

Hardoy, J., Mitlin, D. and Sattherthwaite, D., 1992, *'Sustainable development and cities'*, Environmental Problems in Third World Cities, London: Earthscan.

Hatami, H. 2006. *Natural Geography of Kazerun*. Shiraz: Nashr.

Henry, J. 2001. *Creativity and perception in management*. Walton Hall Publication.

Hosseini, A. 2017. *Interview with the Deputy Director of the Department for the Prevention of Crimes in the Provincial Police Command.* Kazerun.

Maleki, S. 2011. *Income on Sustainable Urban Development.* Ahvaz: Shahid Chamran University Press.

Mehrazan-Fars Consulting Engineers (2006), *Detailed Design of Kazerun City,* Housing and Urban Development Organization of Fars Province.

Moslem, A. "Sustainable Rural Development with Emphasis on the Human and Environment System." *Journal of Jihad,* No. 270 (2006) 149-126.

Namvar, M. 2017. *Investigating the dependence of purchasing power on household income in cities of Fars province.* Master's thesis, Islamic Azad University, Gonabad Branch.

Organization for Economic Co-operation and Development (OECD), 2001. *Sustainable Development. Policies to enhance Sustainable development.* www.oecd.org

Pierce and Robinson 2016. *Strategic Planning and Management.* Sohrab Khalili Shourini Translation, Tehran: Book Release Publisher.

Reid, D. 1995. *Sustainable Development: An Introductory Guide*, Earthscan, London.

Sarrafi, M. 2001. *Foundations of Sustainable Development of Tehran Metropolis.* Conference on Development and Anti-Social Development, Tehran.

Schneider Lambert, et.al. October 2016. *Market Mechanisms in the Paris Agreement-Differences and Commonalities with Kyoto Mechanisms.* Discussion Paper. German Emissions Trading Authority (DEHSt). Available in: www.dehst.de/EN

Sheikholeslami, A., Karimi, B. and Iqbali, R. "Evaluation of Sustainable Urban Development of Shiraz Municipality." *Zagros Landscape Geographic Quarterly Journal* 1, No. 2 (Winter 2009): 31-53.

Tehran University, Department of Geophysics (TUGC), 2018, website, available at http://irsc.ut.ac.ir

The Kazerun Municipality 2018. July, Interview with Deputy Director of Urban Services.

United Nations Development Program (UNDP), 2000. Sustainable Development Goals.

United Nations General Assembly (UNGA), 1987

Warburton, Diane, 1998. *Community and Sustainable Development Participation in the Future.* Earthscan. London.

World Commission for Environment and Development WCED, 'Our Common Future' ,Oxford: Oxford University Press ,1987

Ziyari, K. 2005. *Urbanization and Urban Planning in Kazerun.* Tehran: Arts Treasure Publishing.

PAPER #1.07

AND WITH A PINCH OF NOSTALGIA: TRACES OF THE PAST IN NICOSIA'S PRESENT AND FUTURE

Christakis Chatzjichristou[a], Kyriakos Miltiadous[a]
[a]University of Cyprus, Nicosia, Cyprus

ABSTRACT

With all the hype around the latest developments in technology and how these affect the way cities are experienced, lived and planned, any mention of nostalgia as an important ingredient in the making of a vibrant urban environment may seem anachronistic, useless if not outright dangerous. Such a reaction could perhaps be valid if nostalgia is understood as a fixation on an imaginary past with the purpose of reinstalling it as part of the present, what has been referred to as restorative nostalgia. There is yet another way the past is used in order to think of the present and the future, what has been described as reflective nostalgia. The paper examines the many and different forms of nostalgia found in the "making" of a contemporary city, taking the half of Nicosia administered by Greek Cypriots as its case study. The term "making" is here used to include any factor which contributes in or influences the way a city is lived. This includes planning strategies, built projects as well as any media through which aspects of the city are offered to its dwellers and visitors. Statues and memorials, museums and archives, historic centres and restored vernacular neighbourhoods are only the obvious and perhaps less powerful forms nostalgia may take. The analysis attempts to widen the spectrum by looking at how the latest technological developments on the one end, and the most basic conceptual apparatus used in the most pragmatic of planning on the other, may indeed both contain a pinch of nostalgia of one form or other.

KEYWORDS

Nostalgia; city; representation; city-making.

INTRODUCTION

Nostalgia and the city are terms characterized by an ambiguous yet intimate relationship that is discussed by researchers from different academic fields such as urban studies (Al-Ragam 2015), cultural geographies (Legg 2004) and social sciences (Boym 2001). Contested sites such as cities marked by crises or war but also post-war communities, provide a fertile terrain for the growth of nostalgic sentiments. Trauma, displacement and loss are frequently seen to play an important role in the emergence of the phenomenon we call nostalgia (Davis 1979, Boym 2001, Legg 2004). In the case of Nicosia, the capital of Cyprus (Fig. 1), the violent enforcement in 1974 of a de facto boundary known as the Green Line, becomes an important physical manifestation of a disturbed era between Turkish and Greek Cypriot communities, a spatial symbol of an unresolved socio-political conflict. As a result, thousands of Greek and Turkish Cypriots were forced to abandon their homes and move to the other side of this new boundary, becoming refugees in their own city. The population on the south half of Nicosia is now 341,700 (Statistical service of the Republic of Cyprus, 2019).

The imposition of the Green Line is recognized by many scholars as an event, which has triggered nostalgia (Papadakis 2006, Bryant 2008). In fact, the violent disruption of space and time caused by the enforcement of the

boundary has had a real emotional effect on people and has thereby left an indelible mark on their perspective and consciousness. Nostalgia may appear in the present but what it actually does is allow the victims of the situation to "mourn for the violent loss of a past place and time" (Zembylas 2014, 7).
Nostalgia over time appears as an uncanny term, as the word itself receives a wave of different and yet contradictory interpretations. In most recent studies, nostalgia is defined as,

> a backward glance to a place and time that no longer exists or has never existed (Boym 2001, 7).

For a long period of time, nostalgia was seen in a negative context: a notion opposite of progress, associated with sentimental or melancholic attachments with the past. Such *restorative nostalgia* as it is defined by scholar Svetlana Boym strives to fulfil an impossible desire for authenticity and overall return to an idealized past. This form of nostalgia puts emphasis on the word nostos and what it attempts is a historical reconstruction of the lost home through figurative and literal means. The word "restoration" has Latin roots; it derives from the word re-staure (re-establishment), meaning the complete return to an initial state. As many scholars argue, restorative nostalgia dwells at the core of nationalism which engages in

> the anti-modern myth-making of history by means of a return to national symbols and myths, and occasionally through swapping conspiracy theories (Boym 2001, 41).

Nationalists utilize nostalgia as a political instrument to achieve their ideological goals, such as appeals to a glorious monumental past. According to Boym, restorative nostalgia and the "imagined homeland" is the leading cause of a host of catastrophes that occurred during the 20th century, ranging from the Nazi Regime, the Soviet Terror, to more recent nationalist revivals such as the case of former Yugoslavia. Furthering this statement, Boym writes:

> Outbreaks of nostalgia often follow revolutions; the French Revolution of 1789, the Russian Revolution, and the "Velvet" revolutions in Eastern Europe were accompanied by political and cultural manifestations of longing. (Boym 2001, xvi)

Restorative nostalgia is clearly not what Michel Foucault proposes regarding the "historicization of memory". Foucault rejects the return to the origins and the existence of history as a "pretended continuity" (Foucault 1977). In respond to homogenous historical narratives he proposes the concept of "counter-memory": fragments of memories that challenge the monolithic tradition of heritage.
More recent literature and research on nostalgia shed light on an alternative meaning of the term, by paying attention to its complex, heterogeneous nature. Nostalgia is not necessarily seen as the expression of a conservative impulse, but rather as a vehicle for critical thought that is capable of approaching the past in productive ways. This *reflective nostalgia* as it is called by Boym, dwells on the word "algia" and addresses the past in a way that is "ironic, inclusive and fragmentary" (Boym 2001, 50). In reflective nostalgia, the past appears in the form of fragments of memories produced by individuals, not necessarily accepted in the officially written history of a place, event or period. Thereby, this type of nostalgia calls into question the hegemonic narratives of memory and loss. The word "reflection" has also Latin roots; it derives from the "re" meaning "back", and the word "flectere" meaning "to bend"; for Boym, "re-flection suggests a new flexibility, not the reestablishment of stasis" (Boym 2001, xiv).
In the context of Nicosia, despite some mentions of the word nostalgia in discussions about the intertwined relation between memory and the city (Bakshi 2012), and the

role of nostalgia in representations of the city (Hatay and Bryant 2008), little has been done towards an investigation into the role of nostalgia in the processes of making, representing and reconstructing the city of Nicosia. In the present piece of research we see Nicosia as a battlefield of different attitudes regarding the past, the present and their relationship to the future, thus rendering the city as an excellent case study to explore the dynamics of the phenomenon referred to as nostalgia. Our hypothesis is that nostalgia is a dynamic multi-layered force that can act at different scales and levels in the making of the contemporary city. Through our exploration of nostalgia we aim at capturing and revealing the different types of nostalgia embodied in the city, or half of the city to be more accurate, drawing material from three kinds of primary sources: textual, digital, and material sources. The word "making" refers not only to physical constructions such as museums, statues and memorials, but it also includes everyday practices of inhabiting the city, planning strategies and official policies, myths of urban identity and more hidden stories of everyday life. What follows could be seen as a collection of snapshots of what is happening in and with the city, starting with those related more with conflict and trauma and continuing with those that talk more about the city's culture.

Figure 1. The Venetian city of Nicosia. Source: (Authors 2020)

1. EMBODIMENTS OF NOSTALGIA

1.1. The Nicosia Master Plan

An increasing number of various bi-communal reconciliation projects strive to construct common visions for the future of the dwellers of Nicosia. Such practices aim to carve alternative trajectories to the oppressive official narratives. The main ancestor of such synergies can be traced back in 1977 when a joint project between the two communities has emerged, driven initially by the need to coordinate and establish a shared sewerage system for the whole city. The project was envisioned by the mayors of the two communities of Nicosia, Greek Cypriot Lellos Demetriades and Turkish Cypriot Mustafa Akinci (Demetriades 1998). The successful installation of the sewerage system set the foundations for the creation of a Nicosia Master Plan (NMP) in 1981, a project supported by the United Nations Development Programme and the United Nations Centre for Human Settlements as an attempt to revitalize the historic centre of Nicosia. The bi-communal urban planning team constituted of architects, planners, and sociologists collaborating with the aim of developing a holistic master planning strategy through a unified vision for the city. The project was divided into three phases. The first phase which lasted between 1981 and 1983 concentrated on the conduction of an analytical report for the condition the city was in at the time. The main objective of the second phase which lasted between 1984 and 1986 was the composition of an operational plan for the central city of Nicosia, focusing on both the Turkish and Greek Cypriot areas within the walls. The third phase which began in 1986 focused on the implementation of projects for specific urban quarters, such as the areas of Chrysalliniotissa within the Greek Cypriot side and the Arab Ahmet within the Turkish Cypriot side (Bakshi 2015).

Despite the fact that some of its attempts were successful, the NMP is considered with scepticism in some of the literature on the subject; the subdivision of the project into a "dual approach", which allowed for separate developments on each side is seen as a failure to embrace the possibility for a common vision for the city (Bakshi 2015).

A look at such political, administrative and planning strategies developed for Nicosia sets an interesting point of departure for discussing how nostalgia is engaged with city-making in both productive as well as counter-productive ways. To begin with, the existence of different, and in some occasions contradictory practices indicates the very fact that there are different constructions of the past, different future aspirations and thus different nostalgic recollections not necessarily only regarding traumatic past experiences or events but also about previous periods in the life of a community in general. If this is the case, then the concept of a masterplan may not be the most appropriate conceptual model to use when dealing with the multifaceted and multi-layered nature of nostalgic phenomena. The observed contradiction between these two terms may be spotted from the very birth of the project, the insistence to have a common sewage system for an already divided city. The effort of having a common infrastructure for practical and other reasons is not here criticized. What is seen as remarkable though is the strong doze of nostalgia in a project as pragmatic as the construction of a sewage system for a city that has long been functioning as two cities despite the sense of wholeness given to it by its circular Venetian walls.

1.2. Use of slogans (I do not forget)

In the aftermath of the 1974 Turkish invasion, the dominant ideology supported by the Greek Cypriot political discourse was not to forget the lost territories and thereby maintain the past as it was before the war, in its supposedly perfect and pure form. Within this framework the utilization of nostalgia became a highly political weapon. As Papadakis notes,

> The cultivation of nostalgia for their old homes and villages became a significant part of the official policy. These Greek Cypriots, and their children, should always feel like refugees (Papadakis 2006, 11).

The "Myth of Return", a concept developed by Roger Zetter seems to provide a useful framework when discussing the strategies and processes adopted by both communities after the 1974 war. Such a myth evokes "a familiar, idealized past and sustain[s] the memory of collective loss" by maintaining the "concreteness of a familiar home or point fixed in space" (Zetter 1999, 4).The goals of the state policy mentioned above are also found behind spatial practices with a more physical dimension within and around the walled city of Nicosia. The old core of the city provides the ground for the construction of monuments, statues, museums, street naming and other strategies in order to construct and celebrate a glorious, monolithic image of the past.

1.3. The statue of Liberty

Commemorative structures such as museums, monuments, statues and memorials hold a prominent position within the old city of Nicosia. One of the most indicative examples of such structures is the Liberty Monument that is sited at the Podocataro Bastion of the Venetian walls (Fig. 2). It consists of seventeen bronze human figures - men and women of different ages which are seen against a pyramidal base with a white marble veneer. The figures are shown as they come out of the dark prison and look up to the sky. At the top, a centralized statue symbolizing Liberty, stares at two fighters removing the chains that held the prison gate locked, allowing the Greek Cypriot prisoners walk out into freedom. And while the monument was erected in 1973 to pay tribute to the Greek-Cypriot guerrilla

fighters of the 1955-1959 EOKA struggle against the British, the Turkish invasion in 1974 resulted in a broadening of the initial narrative with the notion of freedom being transformed into a future vision "when [this land] is resurrected from the tomb of Cypriot slavery" (Loizidou 2010, 96). The monument thus simultaneously embodies two different aspirations through its post-1974 presence: first, it celebrates a glorious past with direct references to the armed struggle against the British Rule; second, it represents the longing for a future when the island is freed from Turkish occupation.

The Museum of National Struggle is another important place of memory within the walled city and close to the buffer zone. The Imprisoned Tombs (Filakismena Mnimata), the graves of some of the heroes of the guerrilla war against the British are found within the premises. Here, as before, what lies at the core of such projects is the longing for an "imagined community" of pure origins.

Figure 2. The statue of Liberty. Source: (Authors 2020)

1.4. Naming of streets

Street naming for commemorative purposes is recognized as a vital act contributing in a powerful manner to the transformation of the urban network into "a political social setting" (Azaryahu 1996, 311). The word "setting" is used here, to mention any active arrangement that seeks to evoke social interaction. Therefore, "the ability to control the meanings of such settings is an important expression of power" (Giddens 1979, 207). Moreover, as scholar Karaiskou argues, streets define "home" and in this way are bounded up with personal experiences and may thus have a strong sentimental impact (Karaiskou 2019).

In Nicosia the process of commemoration through the names of streets becomes an obvious political gesture. Key places of social interaction bear a name that develops direct connections to the officially acknowledged history of the ethnos or race. More than half of the existing roads as well as small squares bear names of historical events and heroic personalities, both real as well as mythological. In particular, three essential categories of names are identified (Karaiskou 2019). The first category consists of names from iconic figures from ancient Greek history such as Hippocrates, Pericles and Sophocles. The second category bears names that reflect on the ancient Greek mythology, such as Hermes and Athena. The third category bears names that echo the Byzantine Period such as Constantinos Palaiologos. Only a few cases diverge from references to the Greek homeland, thus misinterpreting the multicultural past as well as the present of the country. An example of such an exception is Ouzounian Street, dedicated to the Armenian family of Ntikran and Touma Ouzounian.

1.5. Ledra / Locmaci checkpoint

In April 2008 the passage through the buffer zone connecting Ledra Street in the south with Locmaci Street in the north opened again after 34 years, allowing people to cross to the other side. Panels depicting young children holding colourful balloons were positioned along the sides of the passage (Fig. 3). The purpose of the corridor thus formed was to obstruct any views of the buffer zone which looks like a jungle with ruins. The innocence associated with children and the playfulness and lightness associated with holding a balloon have been here combined to camouflage the grave

nature of the situation. The theme selected to accompany the people crossing to the other side takes a role similar to a chat about the weather that takes place between strangers or people feeling uncomfortable with each other. It is an attempt for neutrality through the avoidance, or better erasure in this case, of any reference to a heavily troubled common past.

Such spatial practices mentioned above could be characterized as anti-nostalgic as they challenge the blind rhetoric that argues for an absolute return to a glorified past. Here, the key words are normalization and erasure, not commemoration. Yet, in a paradoxical and ambiguous manner the discussed practices could also be characterized as nostalgic. They express an unspoken longing for a potentially different future, "a nostalgia for the future that expands the possibilities of what might be" (Stephanides 2007, 10). Even though nostalgia has traditionally been defined as yearning for a lost home, this does not imply that the "home" should be real. As Stewart argues, nostalgia is a longing for an object that does not exist, a utopian dwelling. After all, "nostalgia is the desire for desire" (Stewart 1984, 23). In fact, this form of nostalgia is dialectically linked with forgetting that is considered as necessary for the forging of a new identity. However, this form of longing problematic, as is the case with restorative nostalgia, in the sense that it displays only visions for a common future without directions, without any references to the past, and therefore without movement.

Figure 3. The Ledra/Locmaci street opening. Source: (Manoli 2008)

1.6. Archbishop Makarios III monument

One of the most striking examples that reveal the ways in which the two different nostalgic tendencies collide on the fabric of the city is illustrated by an incident involving the statue of the first president of the Republic of Cyprus, Archbishop Makarios III. It was located in a prominent spot within the courtyard of the Archbishop's Palace in the eastern part of the old city. On the morning of the second day of September 2008 the monument was found desecrated and vandalized by being splashed using balloons filled with yellow and red paint and by writing the following short yet strong phrase on its base: "For Sale: Down With Idols" (Fig. 4), (Leonidou 2008). At first glance, this event could be read as a resistance to the political discourse, an attempt that seeks to deconstruct the hegemonic narrative by using irony and disrespect. Yet, at the same time it becomes a battleground of clashing nostalgias and future aspirations. Such an act reveals the double edged nature of nostalgia since it can be "an emotional antidote to politics and… the best political tool" (Boym 2001, 58). After all, as scholars Hatay and Bryant claim, the words nostalgia and revolution are characterized by a shared desire to reinterpret the political condition as a decline or loss (Hatay and Bryant 2008).

Figure 4. Archbishop Makarios III monument. Source: (Manoli 2008)

1.7. The Home for Co-operation

Along one of the main crossings between the two sides of the divided city, one finds the "Home for Co-operation" (Fig. 5), a building that houses a bi-communal non-profit network that was envisioned by the Association for Historical Dialogue and Research back in 2008 (Akbil and Psaltis 2016). Its aim is "to transform what is currently referred to as the buffer zone…into a zone of cooperation" (Epaminondas 2011, 6). Following the guidelines provided by the authorities, the façade has been faithfully restored to its original state, while the interior was renovated in a way to encourage communication between the communities. Beyond the signs of natural decay, the building was marked by "bullet holes", by barbed wire scratches and by other traces left on it by the war it survived in 1974. An important element in the initial proposal of the design team, a concept referred to as the healing wounds process,

> suggested symbolically the passage from wound to scar, from concave to convex through the installation of crystal semi-spheres and tiny historic images in 3–4 bullet sign (Akbil and Psaltis 2016, 205).

This project could be seen as an interesting example of reflective nostalgia in the sense that it enters into a dialogue between different elements or entities at different levels: the location chosen is within the buffer zone that divides the two communities; the choice to have the exterior reveal the troubled past while using the interior to practically deal with the challenges of the present; and the choice not to erase the scars on the exterior but to use them as a reminder of what went wrong in the past.

Figure 5. The Home for Co-operation. Source: (Authors 2020)

1.8. The "Green Line Project"

The "Green Line Project" is a virtual platform that documents spaces in the buffer zone, which remain inaccessible to people, Greek and Turkish Cypriots alike, since 1964. According to the authors, their aim was "to turn the buffer zone into a memorial of the catastrophic consequences of divisive politics" (Bekiaris and Mavros n.d.). Demonstrated as a digital memorial, the project preserves traces of the buffer zone as they exist today through the effective medium of virtual reality. But these virtual constructs represent something more than literal reconstructions of the actual spatio-temporal condition within the buffer zone. The virtualized Green Line affects the way in which this traumatic space is perceived from an aesthetic and ethical perspective. As Warren-Crow puts it, the digital image is "full of endless morphological potential" (Warren-Crow 2014, 2). A sense of distance is developed between the subject (viewer) and the object (virtual image) allowing multiple layers of communication between the "now" and the "then", the "here" and the "there". The project thus offers the viewer the ability to virtually visit the Green Line and oscillate between the past and the future, the haptic and the optic, the dynamic and the static.

1.9. The traditional neighbourhood

A popular tourist destination within the walled city is an area referred to as the Laiki Geitonia or traditional neighbourhood. It is a restored area where buildings that used to be mainly houses have been converted into restaurants and souvenir shops. Apart from the shell of the buildings, nothing else informs the visitor on how life was in the days this area was indeed a neighbourhood. Such a project cannot comfortably be referred to as an example of restorative nor reflective nostalgia since it may be mainly catering to the need of the tourist visitor rather than the local, to get a glimpse of what used to be the authentically local, an identity gained not only by being different from the local contemporary but also by being different from the authentic local in the visitor's own culture. More of a theme park, it could be considered as satisfying a unique yet quite popular form of nostalgia; the desire to be safely exposed to a manageable doze and for a short time to something not necessarily old but different.

1.10. City heart transplant

As in many cities, the old city center of Nicosia is mainly inhabited by foreign workers who find apartments in old and badly maintained buildings affordable. And while a large percentage of the population employs a foreign worker as house-help or for taking care of the elderly, many are appalled by the predominance of non-Cypriots in the heart of the city, a phenomenon which is made even more noticeable by the tendency of the locals to use their car for even the shortest of trips and the fact that foreigners walk and make more use of the public spaces, not necessarily by choice. Could the xenophobia expressed by many locals related in any way to nostalgia? Could it be that nostalgia is actually a form of xenophobia if the term "xenos" is not taken to mean only strange people but strangeness in an expanded form?

1.11. Yesterday Years of Nicosia

"Yesterday Years of Nicosia" is a digital network that shares old photos of the district of Nicosia, taken in the 1980's and prior; it aims at celebrating and commemorating the past of the city through the creation and coordination of a digital archive composed of snapshots such as postcards, clipping from newspapers, pieces of magazines and maps. According to the creator of the platform:

> The ultimate goal of the team is for the Nicosians, through the nostalgia triggered by the old photos and through the strong sense of identity that is created by the study of the history of the city to believe in Nicosia one more time. (Xenou 2019)

These visual fragments are characterized by an intimate and bittersweet aura; they indicate a sense of nostalgia for a past which is seen as perfect compared to a troubled present. The inclusion of visual fragments from a specific chronological period aims at restoring a distinct vision of Nicosia. In this way history is fixed in its place and the perceived image of the city is not allowed to evolve.

1.12. Archaeological sites within the urban fabric

Archaeological remains have, in recent years created headaches, dilemmas and heated discussions, and caused costs to skyrocket, since they seem to appear every time the municipality starts a new major project within or around the walled city. The construction of the new Municipal Hall (Fig. 6), Eleftheria Square and the new House of Parliament have all been delayed considerably because the excavations for the foundations of these projects brought to the surface archaeologies that were considered by the Department of Antiquities to be worth preserving. The heated debates that followed reveal the existence of different views regarding the desired

relationship between the remains of the past with the present as well as the future of the city. Such a situation could be seen as a fight for space between the past and the present. The question that could here be posed is: is space unable to accommodate more than one era, ideology, or vision, making it necessary to fight over?
Looking at such situations through a different lens, it could be argued that, if, as it was the case in all three projects mentioned above, the findings were of some foundations and no more, why should they be part of our present day experience? Are they valuable and worthy of preservation because: they inform us of the way things used to be; because they add meaningfully to our experience of the place; or because, like any other relic, they deserve our respect? To what degree is our attitude influenced by curiosity, nostalgia or ethics?

Figure 6. The new Municipal Hall. Source: (Authors 2020)

1.13. Transfunctional buildings

The archbishop of Cyprus has recently announced that he is planning to convert some buildings owned by the church into museums of ecclesiastical history. Such a building is the house of Hadjigeorgakis Kornesios who was a dragoman, a local Christian who, during the Ottoman Rule, was appointed as the official interpreter for the Divan (Council) of the Sultan. Kornesios, envied by the local population because of the power and wealth he gathered, was finally beheaded in Istanbul.
The building currently functions as a museum for the period it was inhabited (late 18th century). As expected there was a strong protest regarding the archbishop's intentions who, feeling offended, finally published an announcement where he states that he, as well as his collaborators, are not lacking in sensitivity regarding the history of the city. What will happen remains to be seen but what is relevant to our topic is the interest the public is taking in such issues.
So, what is the main cause of the expressed disagreement with the Archbishop's intentions? The material currently exhibited in the museum indeed refers to the life in the house itself as well as the culture and politics of the period. The change proposed would shift the focus on the history of the church in that same period. Clearly the proposal seems like a mistake but is it such a big mistake to account for such a strong and widespread protest? Could the specific issue partly serve as the battlefield in which other issues are dealt with? In this specific case, the main protest may actually be about the archbishop's attitude and not about the intended change. It could therefore be that the protest is not caused by a respect for the authenticity of the old but by a disrespect of a present person, event or situation. As is perhaps the case in all exhibitions of nostalgia, what really matters is not in the past or even in the future but in the present. Transporting the issue into either the past or the future may make it easier to deal with in the present.

1.14. A bridge, not a square

One of the most controversial projects in Nicosia is clearly the redesigning of Eleftheria Square, the most centrally located public space in the city (Fig. 7). The project

was given to the office of Zaha Hadid after an international architectural competition that was carried out in 2005. The public expressed strong negative feelings after the competition drawings were publicized. Some felt that the aesthetic qualities of the proposal were not suited for the context while others focused on the absence of any measures to deal with the hot climate of Cyprus. Yet others were outraged because according to them, the proposal replaced the existing entity, which they saw as a bridge, with a square. As in the previous case discussed, the situation may involve more than the eye can see. Could the anger felt by many citizens who, other than such occasions are completely indifferent to public issues, be due to the fact that the strange aesthetic was, subconsciously or not, associated with another doubly strange element in the setup? Could it be that at least some of the protests were actually against the architect Zaha Hadid, an Arab and a woman? In many impromptu conversations this was clearly the case. The question is, what was the main trigger: the strangeness in the aesthetic expression of the project or the strangeness of the author? We would say it was the first that triggered the second.

Figure 7. Eleftheria Square. Source: (Authors 2020)

CONCLUSION

A number of points can now be made regarding the different shades nostalgia can take in the making, representing and reconstructing the city:

- Boym's distinction between restorative and reflective nostalgia is quite important and helpful. What the analysis above may suggest though is that, even though one type may predominate, there is always a doze of the other in most cases examined. This could be seen as the case with the Nicosia Master Plan for example where the effort is to work on pilot projects on each side of the divided city separately and yet keep a vision of a united city as well.
- Anti-nostalgic practices and attitudes express a special form of nostalgia where the longing is for a future free from a burdened past. The Ledra/Locmaci checkpoint is such an example. The lining of the sides of the crossing with neutral and totally irrelevant imagery could be paralleled to the kind of stitching where the thread used does not have any common elements with either of the sides it connects so that it will not be rejected as foreign by the other. Whether this move will indeed allow for a new common ground between the sides remains to be seen.
- Expressions of nostalgia about specific elements of the perceived past, say traditional architecture, may actually have more to do with a dissatisfaction with quite different elements in the perceived present. The displacement or rather transference of elements from one reference system to another may be seen as what Colin Rowe and Robert Slutzky have described as phenomenal transparency (Rowe and Slutzky 1963). This may be the case with the strong reaction of an otherwise disinterested public regarding the plan of the archbishop to create an ecclesiastical museum. The negative feelings were actually about what is perceived as an authoritarian church leader and not about the function to be accommodated in the specific building.

- Nostalgia may be a longing for a perceived past but it may also be about a fear for a strange present or an uncertain future. Its strong relationship to such concepts as identity, history, and time, may thus be influenced or even conditioned by a deeper connection to the concept of change and death. The xenophobic attitude of the Nicosians regarding the overwhelming presence of foreigners in the city center is probably such an example.

-In many nostalgic visions for a present or future, what already existed in the past may be given a privileged position over the new, a phenomenon similar to the one identified by Derrida and logocentrism where presence is privileged over absence. The freezing of large and important projects for the present life of the city due to archaeologies found during excavations is indeed a good example of this attitude. This is indeed a problem in a country like Cyprus where the chances of hitting on an ancient foundation or grave while digging are high. This competing of space between the old and the new is quite an interesting topic for further investigation due to what it implies.

In closing, a more general observation regarding the topics associated with nostalgia is that there seems to be a degree of fluidity and transparency between them. A hydraulic system in which the element traveling through it may not only change locations but, perhaps more importantly, change states as well may reflect the dynamics of the phenomenon of nostalgia and the many shades or versions it may take. Its sleepery nature may indeed be a source of problems but it may, at the same time, be a source of potential. The more we understand the processes and mechanisms through which nostalgia mutates from one form into another, the more we, as designers, will be able to contribute in using this strong and important ingredient of any community or society constructively rather than destructively.

REFERENCES

Al-Ragam, A. 2015. Critical nostalgia: Kuwait urban modernity and Alison and Peter Smithson's Kuwait urban study and mat-building. *The Journal of Architecture,* 20, 1, 1-20.

Azaryahu, M. 1996. The power of commemortive street names. *Environment and Planning D: Society and Space*,14, 311-330.

Bakshi, A. 2012. A shell of memory: The Cyprus conflict and Nicosia's walled city. *Memory Studies*, 5, 479-494.

Bakshi, A. 2015. Nicosia Master Plan. Planning across the divide. In: Björkdahl A. and Strömbom L. (Ed.), *Divided Cities: Governing Diversity,* 197-215. Lund: Nordic Academic Press.

Bekiaris, I. and Mavros, A. n.d. The Green Line. Available at: http://www.greenlineproject.com.cy/. Accessed on 28 January 2020.

Boym, S. 2001. *The Future of Nostalgia.* New York: City Press.

Bryant, R. 2008. Writing the catastrophe: Nostalgia and its histories in Cyprus. *Journal of Modern Greek Studies*, 26, 2, 399-422.

Davis, F. 1979. *Yearning for yesterday: A sociology of nostalgia.* New York: Free Press.

Demetriades, L. 1998. The Nicosia Master Plan. *Journal of Mediterranean Studies*, 8, 169-176.

Epaminondas, M. 2011. *Home for Cooperation.* Nicosia: K&L Lithofit Ltd.

Foucault, M. 1977. Nietzsche, genealogy, history. In D.F. Bouchard (Ed.), *Language, counter-memory, practice: Selected essays and interviews by Michel Foucault,* 139-164. Ithaca NY: Cornell University Press.

Giddens, A. 1979. *Central Problems in Social Theory.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Hatay, M. and Bryant, R. 2008. The jasmine scent of Nicosia: of returns, revolutions, and the longing for forbidden pasts. *Journal of Modern Greek Studies*, 26, 2, 423-449.

Karaiskou, V. 2019. Deep in Memory: Urban Space and Visuality in Cyprus. In Fouseki, K., Guttormsen, T. and Swensen, G. (Ed.), *Heritage and Sustainable Urban Transformations: Deep Cities,* 67-88. UK: Routledge.

Legg, S. 2004. Memory and nostalgia. *Cultural Geographies,* 11, 99–107.

Leonidou, L. 2008. The Ultimate Indignity: Vandals Deface Makarios Statue. Available at [http://www.cyprus-mail.com/news/main.php?id=41154&archive=1], accessed on 17 January 2020.

Loizidou, C. 2010. On the Liberty Monument of Nicosia. In Loizos, P., Philippou, N., Stylianou-Lambert, *Re-Envisioning Cyprus*, 89-101. Nicosia: University of Nicosia Press.

Papadakis, Y. 2006. Nicosia after 1960: A River, A Bridge and a Dead Zone. *GMJ: Mediterranean Edition*, 1, 1-16.

Psaltis, G. and Akbil, E. 2016. From Conflict to Reconciliation: Heritage Conservation in the Cyprus UN Buffer Zone. In Schneider P. (Ed.), *Catastrophe and challenge - Cultural heritage in post-conflict recovery. 199-208, Cottbus: Brandenburgische Technische Universität.*

Rowe, C. and Slutzky R. 1963. Transparency: Literal and Phenomenal. *Perspecta*, 8, 45-54.

Statistical Service of the Republic of Cyprus. 2019. Population: Summary data at the end of the year Available at: https://www.mof.gov.cy/mof/cystat/statistics.nsf/populationcondition_21main_en/populationcondition_21main_en?OpenForm&sub=1&sel=2, Accessed on 11 September 2020.

Stephanides, S. 2007. *Cultures of Memory, Memories of Culture*. Nicosia: University of Nicosia Press.
Stewart, S. 1984. *On longing: Narratives of the miniature, the gigantic, the souvenir, the collection*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.
Walder, D. 2009. Writing, representation and postcolonial nostalgia. *Textual Practice*, 23, 935-946.
Warren-Crow, H. 2014. Girlhood and the Plastic Image. Hanover: Dartmouth College Press.
Xenou, E. 2019. How to believe in our city? Available at https://www.kathimerini.com.cy/gr/apopseis/arthrografia/eleni-xenoy/pws-na-pistepsoyme-stin-poli-mas. Accessed on 23 January 2020.
Zembylas, M. 2014. Nostalgia, Postmemories, and the Lost Homeland: Exploring Different Modalities of Nostalgia in Teacher Narratives. *The Review of Education, Pedagogy,and Cultural Studies, 36*, 7-21.
Zetter, R. 1999. Reconceptualizing the Myth of Return: Continuity and Transition Amongstthe Greek-Cypriot Refugees of 1974. *Journal of Refugee Studies*, 12, 1-22.

PAPER #1.08

MANY CITIES IN ONE. ENCLAVES AND MICROCOSMS IN THE GENERAL STRUCTURE OF THE CITY: THE CASE OF PRAGUE'S GHETTO

Domenico Chizzoniti[a], Yuliia Batkova[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The design of autonomous urban areas concerning the urban environment that surrounds them is an increasingly widespread practice in urban transformation. The model promoted by this practice of recognizing autonomous microcosms in the city confirms the operational intent of defining portions of comprehensible and identifiable cities. The paper investigates the case of Prague as an urban phenomenon due to the fact of its urban complexity made by parts of different origins. Highlighting connections between the origins of the city development and its transformations is a crucial point in understanding the laws of its construction. It leads to a reasonable investigation of urban recovery processes within the context of the city. Firstly, the work is based on the analysis of the city and its essential facts, highlighting the principle of "autonomous settlements development" throughout the history of Prague presented as the primary settlements. This examination becomes operational as a tool of knowledge capable of enriching the potential of choices through accurate elements of judgment in the project options. Secondly, the opinion tries to experience the character of the Prague ghetto and the reasons for its formation and further transformation, the relationship between the Prague Ghetto and the city itself. Finally, the paper investigates the difference between the concept of an urban island, as presented by primary settlements distinguished in the urban tissue nowadays, and the enclave of the ghetto as a culturally distinct part. Nowadays the historical character and the identity of the transformed Jewish ghetto represents by singular architectural facts. Our intention is not to reproduce, but to transform the site into a living matter. The identification of the importance of the historical sites makes clear the role of preservation that holds the nature of the site with its structures, architecture and all of the components that belong to it.

KEYWORDS

Urban analysis; urban morphology; jewish culture; urban transformation; the city by parts.

INTRODUCTION

Architecture as an urban phenomenon should have been taken into a fundamental consideration of the study of the city. The city and its construction are the ultimate goals. In fact, research on architecture acquires relevance, as it is considered the most incisive tool in the construction and transformation of the city. One of the most important characters of the architecture is the urban quality of the city: the ability to dialogue with the context; ability to place itself in relation to other existing architectures, to a given landscape, to an infrastructure system, etc.; the ability to become a complete part of an on-going process. In this perspective, the identification of the relationships between figuration and urban form and their changes throughout history is a decisive element in understanding the formative and transformative laws of the physical (but also political and economic) constitution of cities.
This approach has two purposes:
1) knowledge (by comparison of individual urban phenomena) of cultural processes

and material conditions associated with the physical construction of cities in the various historical periods and, therefore, of a specific contribution by the architect to a more general history of the culture of cities in urban construction processes;
2) knowledge (for a diachronic reading of the historical events of a city) of the stratification and transformation processes of the urban structures of a single city and, therefore, of a contribution by the architect to an urban history related to specific contextual conditions.
Above mentioned ideas are fundamental for the design background of each operator involved in urban recovery or transformation processes. From these studies emerges the desire to become aware in each transformative process of the "conformative" results on the city that the architectural intervention produces. Also, to have a control over it. This paradigm is linked to the belief that architecture always has a profound role of impact on the urban form.
Further methodological acquisition of this research concerns the question of the formally completed part of the city, as an autonomous, physically recognizable element. *"The completed form is the achieved unity, in a given historical period, of the formalization process: it is therefore found both in a single building, as a refinement of its constituent elements (the Parthenon, compared to previous temples) and in a part of the city (the complex of the Vatican Palaces, S.Pietro, Borghi and Castel S.Angelo in Rome) and finally in an entire city "(Aymonino 1975).* The formally completed part of the city is therefore fully proposed as an urban fact. So, the architectural dimension tends in many cases to coincide with the part itself. This process gives the absolute unity achieved by the part itself, which effectively cancels the formative value in the city of its individual constituent elements, as in a kind of chemical process of irreversible composition of the elements towards the creation of complex particles with their own identity distinct from that of the individual component elements. This approach is thus applied to both new and existing parts. Therefore, it makes the possibility of breaking down the existing city into completed or to be completed parts in a critical-planning context.

1. THE CASE OF PRAGUE

The city of Prague saw many urban transformations. The urban tissue is fragmented; thus the relation of its parts represents the city. It is derived from the complexity of social, political, geographic and environmental issues affecting the city during its history. Therefore, shedding the light on the origin of a complex structure of Prague implies an interdisciplinary approach. The perception of the Prague transformation and development process implies the necessity to study the history of its parts. The complexity of such a study initially leads to understanding the reality of urban organism through geographic perception.
The Czech historic geography has a multidisciplinary character. It examines the causes and consequences of transformations, so it goes out of the rigid limits of environmental changes. It tends to highlight the essence of the environmental changes through the meaning of it to the individuals. The historiographic boundaries and composition of contradictive, at time, urban forms perceived through their ideological social meaning (*Semotanová, Eva and Chromý* 2012, 13).
The first information on the urban development on the banks of Vltava River imprinted on maps dating back to 1200. On the hill of Hradčany on the western bank of the river emerged the first fortified structure of Prague Castle. The natural conditions of narrow, stretched slope within the rock were compensated by its strategic location in the basin. The chrome terrain structure was a prerequisite for the fortified development. As a result, the architectural configuration of the establishment is subjugated to the natural

configuration of the environment. Later on, in 1257 the residential district of Malá Strana arose to the south of Hradčany.
In the middle 10th century another fortified castle Vyšehrad has emerged on the east bank. Based on the hill, the development was dedicated to being a fort.
Where the east bank's slope forms a natural amphitheater with terrains, emerged settlement dedicated to being the historic core of the future city (Staré Město). Grown-up along the river since the 10th century it was intensively developed in the 14th century.
Later on, New Town (Nove Mesto) district emerged on the southwest of the city core. It was established and settled in the 14th century and closed the medieval development of Prague.

Figure 1. Early settlements of Prague. Source: (Author 2020)

In the baroque period, new fortifications were built around Malá Strana and Nové Město. Until the industrial revolution of 19th-century city development was contained within the medieval pattern of the basic street layout. It was limited by the fortification system.
The year 1784 is remarkable by a new phase of development of Prague, as it is the year of the unification of its parts. At the turn of the century, the technological and social changes provided particular conditions for city growth. Urban fabric expanded behind the fortification walls and formed a neighborhood of new residential and manufacture buildings - Karlin. Later on, the external boundary of the city was demarcated by areas of high-rise residential districts (Chizzoniti et al 2017, 282–285).

2. MANY CITIES IN ONE

According to the study of topography and the history of urban evolution, the first developments on the Vltava river formed on the need for defense and commerce and the fundamental prerequisite for this was a geographic factor. They have qualities unlike those of the development types that were to come later. Each town was cut off from the surrounding countryside and compactly built within distinct limits, caused by security. It is typical for the European urban formations of medieval times *(Sert 1994, 394)*. The development itself was separated in its independence and local autonomy. Each part had its character determined by certain geographic location and organization of lifestyle. Hence, in contrast to the rural settlements, each part was dependent on a certain function.
Unlike castles that had a defensive character, the Staré Město transformed into the large trade center. Its diverse population was engaged in variable activities. This was fundamental for the formation of social groups affecting each other. This aspect reflected through the urban tissue and resulted in its transformations. On the other hand, Vyšehrad castle stopped on the face of the fortification fort as it was located in an unproductive area incapable of generating any significant trade.
Primary towns were closely spaced between each other, thus the unification of those after time seems logical. Their evolution generated further development that was already determined by social-political and economic issues.

3. NATURE OF ISLAND

The principle of "autonomous settlements development" is present throughout the history of Prague as the primary municipalities of the city are clearly distinguished in the texture of the city nowadays. Thus, here can be applied the concept of the urban islands (microcosms) and insularity. As claimed by the "geographers of insularity", it is not only the physical data that defines the structure of an insular territory, but rather human activities. Geographers insist on the notion of "insularity" understood as a "range of possibilities" of a territory, or a settlement to be constantly compared to something other than itself *(Chizzoniti et al 2017, 282–284)*.

> "It is no longer the island that is separated from the continent, it is humans who find themselves separated from the world when on an island. It is no longer the island that is created from the bowels of the earth through the liquid depths, it is humans who create the world anew from the island and on the waters...An island doesn't stop being deserted simply because it is inhabited. ... some people can occupy the island—it is still deserted, all the more so, provided they are sufficiently, that is, absolutely separate, and provided they are sufficient, absolute creators... we need only extrapolate in imagination the movement they bring with them to the island. Only in appearance does such a movement put an end to the island's desertedness." (Deleuze 2004, 10)

Figure 2. Districts of Prague in 18- century. Source: (Author 2020)

In the city context, the boundaries of metaphoric islands are less explicit, than in the case of a distinct division between the sea and the land of the material coastline. However, this meaning can be applied to the primary urban cores of Prague city, as they remain contextually isolated and well defined within the "sea" of surrounding territories. However, the concept of "island" improbably can be used to describe any part of a big entity, referring exclusively to its location within a wider spatial context. Conversely, this conclusion can derive from its internal spatial configuration itself and its particular characteristics.

4. GHETTO

It's difficult to say when Jews reached Bohemia and when did they settle in Prague. However, Spanish Jewish traveller Ibrahim Ibn Yakub proposes the story referred for the second half of the 10th century *(Kieval 1991, 23)*. Half of them were allowed to cross to the other bank of the river Vltava, where they occupied a large area in the core of Staré Město. During Medieval time the settlement grew in all directions until it was fenced and thus separated from its Christian surroundings. With this transformation, the area of the Jewish quarter was distinguished and fixed. The Medieval Ghetto was an area with its configuration composed of its main streets and its side routes.

At the end of the 16th century, city authorities started numerous attempts of forced evictions of Jews from Prague. The uncertainty surrounded the life of the community. Caused by those migrations the property in the ghetto was frequently purchased and sold, thus started to be owned both by Christian and Jewish inhabitants. Fragmented timber housing had insufficient hygienic conditions. It resulted in serious damage after conflagrations in 1561, 1567, 1603 and 1689 successively *(Vilimkova 1993, 31)*.

The middle of the eighteen-century was marked by radical measures towards the Jewish population in Prague. It is difficult to distinguish all reasons for upcoming in the 1745 year another expulsion of the Jewish population from Prague and the kingdom of Bohemia, but the effect of it on the further life in the ghetto was significant. For the first time, the decision meets the stability of the city authorities so for the first time Jews illuminated from the town and returned to Prague just by the year 1748 (Rybar, 1991, 58). Jewish community was ruined. In 1754 the Ghetto again went up in flames. More than two-thirds of the dwellings were burned down. Only buildings made from stone and brick survived around Old cemetery and by the river. In 1849 Jewish Town of Prague became one of the city quarters called Josefov and the surrounding rampart had to be destroyed.

Figure 3. Prague Ghetto in 18-th century. Source: (Author 2005)

Before the fenced zone of the ghetto provided an opportunity for the formation of a separate Jewish community. It supported and covered the necessary needs of its inhabitants. After its collapse and equating the Jewish population to the rest of the inhabitants of Prague, there was no hope for any help. This gradually created conditions when changes were demanding. In 1897 started clearance of the city that covered Josefov quarter and New Town. The Prague ghetto and its neighborhood were demolished, and a new residential quarter was built (Vilimkova 1993, 43).

5. ENCLAVE

Speaking globally, three types of ghetto can be distinguished. Firstly, open ghettos had no fences or walls around their perimeter. Despite this, there were still restrictions against who could enter or leave, when, and how often. Secondly, closed ghettos were separated from the surrounding by fences or walls. Leaving or entering the ghettos was prohibited. These circumstances made conditions inside extremely unsanitary, with huge shortages in food and water leading to high death rates. Then the last type is characterized as certain spaces in towns and cities that were sealed for short periods of time, typically around two weeks, before their inhabitants were deported to extermination camps and murdered.

Prague ghetto doesn't fully correspond to any of those types. Its inhabitants were isolated due to their beliefs and desire, need of isolation and protection. Moreover, that partially resulted from the wish of the surrounding Christian population, the will of which was translated by the city authorities. It is literally a city within the city with its own infrastructure, rules and regulations. There was no considerable amount of restrictions that were respected stably. Those were occurring rather from extreme to extreme according to political issues. In other ghettos there usually was no mixture between inhabitants. Dwellings in Prague ghetto, on the contrary, were hosting both Jewish and Christian inhabitants during long time. Therefore, the Prague ghetto is a unique one as it is perfectly integrated into the city.

The Josefov ghetto is clearly distinguished between other districts of Prague. It is caused by the conditions of its formation. While primary urban islands were determined by a geographic organization and dedicated the territorial geometric principles for the future development, political and social factors caused inner further division of the city. Thus, Josefov Ghetto was generated as an enclave within the city core.

The Oxford dictionary defines urban enclave as: "a portion of territory surrounded by a larger territory whose inhabitants are culturally or ethnically distinct" or "a place or group that is different in character from those surrounding it". Thus, it is characterized by forming the place within the city where the community can be part of a larger whole.
The city is a human creation. Moreover, it is deeply connected with the society and gives a unique form to it. This is the basis for an empirical study of the city as it was evolved from the earliest settlements *(Rossi 2007,20)*. Following this idea, enclaved Jewish quarter kept the characteristics of separated social group living there. Conversely, what we call island in Prague doesn't represent the specific characteristics of a place inhabited by differing social group. It rather keeps the idea of insularity and characterizing features of the time of its establishment. That is why those terms have to be clearly distinct.

Figure 4. Prague center after the transformation. Source: (Author 2019)

The character of Prague ghetto as an enclave and its relationship with the city can be studied through the essence of its boundary. The line of territorial division provides possibilities for relationship development. On the other hand, it is a critical zone where the different ideologies are distinguished at their most. Thus, the character of the border is determined by the nature of the dialectic relations of adjoined territories.

It's difficult to certainly define the character of the Ghettos boundary. Time to time it was translating the characterizing desire of the Jewish community - that to be separated. That comes from the traditional and religious perception of place in Jewish culture *(Loubser 2011, 227)*. Their use of space and way of living often provoked discontent and contention in the Christian neighborhoods. Thus, the enclave of the ghetto, having risen in the structure of the city, provoked critical manipulations from the side of city authorities. Spatial division can be taken both contextually and literally. This is due to political and economic factors and it happened also in metropolitan cities *(Low and Smith 2006, 5)*.
The approach towards the Prague ghetto covered the issue of territorial divisions and regulations to distinguish spatial areas, including coercive measures, the building of physical boundaries. Rules prescribing certain spatial principles were introduced. Thus, in this case, the fenced boundary of Prague ghetto constituted as the symbol of authority power on different faces of its history. Prague Ghetto always had characteristics of autonomy within the city even after becoming an official district. It kept its identity within its boundaries. The quarter's transformations were determined by events that had an influence exclusively on the territory inside the boundaries while they did not have a major influence on the outer city. Thus, it is perceived as an enclave within the wide urban formation.
Josefov was significantly transformed after the ghetto's demolition and further reorganization of the urban pattern to match the criteria of growing city of industrialization era. The story of events that took place within walls of the ghetto is defined now solely by the presence of singular architectural facts. They form a skeleton of pure elements of historic origin.

6. THE CITY BY PARTS

The urban analysis gives an idea of the relationships, potentially established between an area susceptible to intervention and its surroundings - between the project and the place - in the mutual interference between context and project. That would lead to the measure of effect within scientific practice or research, which is used to assess both positive and negative consequences of an urban intervention or treatment. Such measures can often be quantified using effect sizes. So that, the more parameters will be investigated in urban analysis, the more it will be possible to trace the relationships that intervene in the design even in conditions of partial or total disappearance of the surroundings. Here perhaps one of the contact points between the analysis and the intervention can be identified. The analysis of urban structures intervenes in the design. Through the analysis is generated a judgment, which consequently becomes a design parameter: not of the single building but of the surroundings that are directly involved in the transformation process. It is a position of disillusioned autonomy of judgment towards the history of the city, however based on a conscientious and documented acknowledgement of the values of history: this does not exclude the desire to give up making value judgments and expressing its own subjective contribution in an interpretative sense - therefore also innovative and transformative if necessary.
This approach potentially leads to two different types of outcomes: internal and external deliverables generated in the methodological relationship between the setting of urban analysis and the experimental architectural prototypes.
-The internal deliverables of the project that we can define as goals, focused on the object of the investigation. In this case it is concerning the specific solution given to the single problem of the relationship of the Prague Ghetto and its transformed surroundings.
-The external deliverables - we would like to highlight here - which are the potential results of the process which describe the methodological path that can be generalized starting from the project outcomes.
The assumption of the "architectural dimension" as a sort of reading tool that can be used not only for individual buildings but also and above all for urban forms with a wider range. As a result, rather than reading the city as the sum of buildings (aggregation of building types) such approach proposes a complex perception of unitary architectural systems, which, depending on the case, may have a building scale or an urban scale. Importantly, synthesis of "an architectural unity" opens a possibility to evaluate a specific role of complexity in the context of urban relations, while the identity of each element still can be grasped.
The critical evaluation applied to the case of Prague reveals and helps to systemize the complexity of its organization and underlying forces that shaped the city in this way. Further reading of the city as a system of separable bodies and organisms (with its autonomous physiognomy), on which design controls, helps to observe how the particular experience of each historic part finds its expression. Thus, it is possible to contextualize an architectural dimension (of autonomous designated monuments or further possible interventions) within the defined unity as parts of the contemporary reality of clear and legible meaning.
The project of the city (by parts) takes place through the project of identification and fulfilment of these parts and through their mutual relation. The specific design response, therefore, tends at first - having ascertained the complexity of the city - to make the architecture even complex, reaching the theorization of the cancellation of the relationship between building typology and urban morphology in a "city like all architecture". It is resolved entirely with basic typological tools as founding elements not

by volume or by summation of geometric elements, but through an experimental compositional way also extended to the urban scale.

7. THE CITY BY ABSENCES

In the event that the process relies on something that has disappeared, no longer exists, dispersed, as in the case of many Jewish settlements in the historic city, what approach to adopt? In identifying the construction of absence, we draw attention from one side what has been built and then demolished or transformed; from another side what is necessary to create new conditions according to the idea of enhancement of architecture, building or historical site. In this idea of vacancy, of "non-appearance", the problem of critical conservation, such as rehabilitation by reconstruction, is widely regarded as insoluble. This apparent insolubility is often taken as a sufficient reason for completely abandoning this critical approach to the conservation. To preserve the appearance, the history and project can represent a frame of reference of which one is more aware today than at any other historical time. In order to discover and to save the memory of historical architecture, site, context, is necessary to bring their teaching up to date and make them valid again. Although many factors have changed, and much is that is unknown, ineffable about the said architectures, we know that it is quite impossible to reproduce the initial conditions that give rise to them, but we can preserve their appearance. Following this idea, it is clear now that our aim is not to reproduce a copy of those historical aspects, elements or figures, rather our objective is to transform them into live matter, making them be of use by a new project, by drawing them to the present through what is still today the common heritage of architecture, coming down through the history. To identify the importance of historical sites the act of acknowledgment the cultural resources is linked to the prefiguration of the pretense of preservation, that carries the meaning of the site, the character of structure, the authenticity and the values of all the components of the architectural space and finally the significance of figuration (tangible like iconographic value and intangible like iconological value). In that case the role of architectural design is to preserve the appearance, through a project of conservation (see N.Goodman, The structure of Appearance, 1951) and pre-figure a conceiving of absence, so as to create new conditions for the building or site, working on new figures and new architectural structures.

CONCLUSION

The extensive control over all urban construction is desirable even if it consists of divided parts with a much more elastic and articulated notion of autonomous settlement. So that the architectural coherence of the parts is understood to be achieved through more gradual procedural operations, aimed at a result with its own recognizable unity, and where therefore the piece, the architectural unit, becomes a complementary tool to perform the part. However, from the point of conscientious and documented acknowledgment of the values of history, this judgment towards the history of the city is disenchanted. This excludes the renunciation of making value judgments and expressing one's own subjective contribution in sense of interpretation - therefore also innovative and transformative when necessary. What is more interesting than this approach is the assumption of the "architectural dimension" as a sort of reading tool? It can be used not only for individual buildings but also for urban forms with a wider range. This process made the reading of the city as the sum of buildings (aggregation of building types). The reading of the city considered as the sum of unitary architectural systems, which depending on

the scale (building scale or an urban scale). However, the identity of these systems should be recognizable, or should be an "architectural unity" and a specific factor in the context of urban relations. In conclusion, it is a matter of reading the city as a complex system of separable bodies and organisms (with their own autonomous physiognomy), on which a design control can be exercised, deriving from conceptualizations and tools that are exquisitely architectural. The project of the city, assumed by parts, takes place through the identification and transformation of these parts and with their mutual relation. Taking into consideration the complexity of the city, the specific design response emerged of making the architecture more complex by reaching the theorization of the cancellation of the relationship between building typology and urban morphology in the city. It is "fully resolved" with the basic typological tools as founding elements being not already a quantitative volumetric typology, but a compositional opportunity in urban function.

REFERENCES

Aymonino, Carlo. 1975. *Il Significato Delle Città.* Bari: Editori Laterza.

Chizzoniti, Domenico, Gaia Preta, Luca Preis, Letizia Cattani, and Monica Moscatelli. "The Ancient Josefov Jewish Quarter in Prague: An Example of Urban Island." *Journal of Civil Engineering and Architecture* 11, no. 3 (April): 282–294.

Deleuze, Gilles. 2004. "Desert Islands." In *Desert Islands and Other Texts: 1953-1974*, edited by David Lapoujade. Translated by Michael Taormina. 9-14. Los Angeles, CA: Semiotext(e).

Goodman, Nelson. 1977. *The Structure of Appearance.* Dordrecht: D.Reidel Publishing Company.

Hillel J. Kieval. 1990. "The Lands Between: The Jews of Bohemia, Moravia and Slovakia to 1918." In Where Cultures Meet: the Story of the Jews of Czechoslovakia, edited by Natalia Berger. 23-52. Tel Aviv: Beth Hatefutsoth.

Loubser, Johannes. 2011. "Jewish Topographies: Visions of Space, Traditions of Place." Review of *Jewish Topographies: Visions of Space, Traditions of Place*, by Julia Brauch, Anna Lipphardt, and Alexandra Nocke. T*ime and Mind: The Journal of Archeology, Conciseness and Culture* 4, no. 2 (July): 227–232.

Low, Setha and Smith, Neil. 2006. *The Politics of Public Space*. New York: Routledge.

Rossi, Aldo. 2007. *The Architecture of the City.* Cambridge, Mass: MIT Press.

Rybár, Ctibor. 1991. *Praga Ebraica: Glosse Ad Una Storia e Ad Una Cult: La Guida Attraverso i Monumenti.* Praha: TV Spektrum.

Semotanová, Eva and Pavel Chromý. 2012. "Development and current trends of the Czech historical geography." *Historical geography* 38(1): 9-34. The Institute of History, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, v. v. i., Prague.

Sert, Josep Lluis. 1944. "The Human Scale In The City Planning." In *New Architecture and City Planning: A Symposium,* edited by Paul Zucker, 394-412. Minneapolis: Graywolf Press.

Vilimkova, Milada. 1993. *The Prague Ghetto.* Prague: Aventinum.

PAPER #1.09

FROM THE GRID TO THE LAYER: POST-INDUSTRIAL CITY AS CITY IN (MORPHOLOGICAL) TRANSITION

Michela Barosio[a]
[a]DAD Department of Architecture and Design, Politecnico di Torino, Torino, Italy

ABSTRACT

Starting from the assumption that industrial settlements have different roles in urban fabric, depending on their location, on their typology, on their size and their age of settlement, as well as on the pattern and the structure of the city considered, the paper will examine productive areas through six methodologies of urban analysis methods, ranging from urban morphology approach to perceptive approach. The different methods are employed to understand a different formal role of productive plants and they are applied to several cases studies from all over the world illustrating historical productive settlements already regenerated or still waiting for reconversion and a contemporary productive sites.
The paper will analyze the way in which urban analysis methods can engender different visions of the city, and specifically different approaches in the regeneration design of industrial dismantled areas to tackle the common misconception that post-industrial cities are places where no clear urban form is recognizable anymore, suffering of a lack of global urban vision, looking for new city's identity and vocation. Depending on the capability of recognizing their urban role, industrial dismantled areas, can be either considered as brown fields that prevent urban renewal or as strategical elements to regenerate the city, providing new opportunities.
The final goal is to set a methodology of morphological analysis able to grasp the transitional character of urban phenomenon, reading the post-industrial city as a stage of a continuous transition in urban form and not as a final step. In this perspective urban regeneration processes of urban industrial dismantled areas can be conceived as impermanent configurations originating from the historical traces and types but also anticipating future morphologies.

KEYWORDS

Urban morphology; transition; industrial settlements; layers.

INTRODUCTION

Starting from the assumption that industrial settlements have different roles in urban fabric, depending on their location, on their typology, on their size and their age of settlement, as well as on the pattern and the structure of the city considered, the paper will examine productive areas through six methodologies of urban analysis methods, ranging from urban morphology approach to perceptive approach. The different methods are employed to understand a different formal role of productive plants and they are applied to several cases studies from all over the world illustrating historical productive settlements already regenerated or still waiting for reconversion and a contemporary productive sites.
The paper will analyze the way in which urban analysis methods can engender different visions of the city, and specifically different approaches in the regeneration design of industrial dismantled areas to tackle the common misconception that post-industrial cities are places where no clear urban form is recognizable anymore, suffering of a lack of global urban vision, looking for new city's identity and vocation. Depending on the capability

of recognizing their urban role, industrial dismantled areas, can be either considered as brown fields that prevent urban renewal or as strategical elements to regenerate the city, providing new opportunities.
The final goal is to set a methodology of morphological analysis able to grasp the transitional character of urban phenomenon, reading the post-industrial city as a stage of a continuous transition in urban form and not as a final step. In this perspective urban regeneration processes of urban industrial dismantled areas can be conceived as impermanent configuration originating from the historical traces and types but also anticipating future morphologies.

1. POST-INDUSTRIAL CITIES ARE CITIES IN TRANSITION

1.1. From the industry to the city

The concept of city itself is strongly related to industrial revolution as the real change in population distribution and urban living patterns occurred with the industrial revolution in the nineteenth century. The development of industrial capitalism has shifted the balance between urban and rural. The proportion of people living in urban areas fluctuated between 4 per cent and 7 per cent throughout history, until about 1850 (Lowry, 1991). After the industrial revolution this proportion raised up to 30% in the Fifties of the XX century, but still growing even after the industrial crisis and during the deindustrialization process in Europe. Today more than 55% of population is living in urban context and UN estimate the urbanized population to raise 70% of the overall population by 2051[1].
This continuous and endless urban growth might be one of the reasons why during the industrial age we thought that the industrial endless growing paradigm, and the urban endless development related to it, was the only possible paradigm. In the same perspective the deindustrialization process has often been perceived as a phenomenon to counteract, wishing an industrial come back, driven by a new type of industry free from pollution and workers exploitation, to bring back wealth and incomes to our cities. This paper proposes a reverse perspective, considering, from the morphological point of view, the industrial age as a transitional age between pre-industrial settlement, proto-industrial city and post-industrial urbanization. In a more general way, in any age city's morphology ought to be considered a transitional configuration always hosting simultaneously morphological elements heritage from the previous era and other formal characteristics already anticipating the future stage.
Trying to focus on the post-industrial city we can assume that the morphological characteristics of industrial city related with the productive functions and the connected urbanizing phenomenon, such as transportation and mass workers housing, are quite evident while the formal consequences of the post industrial age are not that clear. This is also due to the fact that the concept of post-industrial cities should not be understood as a mere chronological or functional definition.

1.2. Post-industrial City. Possible definitions

A first possible acceptation of post-industrial city is a city which has been **characterized by a strong presence of industry** which has then left the specific urban environment to move away. In this sense it is important to understand how and when the industry has left the city. Following Marcel Smet deindustrialization taxonomy (Smet 1990), it is evident that the shape and the transformation potential of the urban settlement is directly linked to the kind of production settlement that was there before and also to the elapsed time from the industrial dismantling. In this sense we can observe several different cities from the industrialization

[1] United Nations World Urbanization Prospects 2018 https://population.un.org/wup/

phase till nowadays. Considering that in the European context the deindustrialization process starts from the beginning of the XX century in some regions, while in some others areas production sites still active till the end of the XX century, western cities become post-industrial cities in very different periods of the last century. For the same reasons, we might observe that the cities that have faced the deindustrialization process in the early years of the XX century, have then been dealing with a variety of urban phenomena leaving a multitude of physical traces characterizing a long transition from the industrial city, through the non-industrial city, toward a not-better defined contemporary city. According to this perspective the post-industrial city could be considered more a transitional phase of the city artifact, than a specific and final configuration.
In a second, broader, acceptation, a post-industrial city is any urban agglomeration developing in a socio-economic context in which industry, industrial production, are no longer the main driver for economic development and social behavior. In this frame most of the European cities are post-industrial cities and it is difficult to envision a common urban morphology, for their historical cores as well as for their new developments.
A third possible, but restrictive acceptation, to address the post - Fordist city is to consider it as a city where industrial production is still settled but with a different spatial and social organization from the Fordist age. This case is still rare in Europe, but more and more firms are looking to relocate their productive site in urban context in western countries. As W. F. Lever explains very well in his text The post Fordist city (Lever 2011), if in urban terms, Fordism could be equated with the success of large cities and large urban systems, it's because the predominant modes of production required locations in large cities, not just as the homes of large industrial workforces but as the providers of the most advantageous sets of externalities. Nowadays, the growth of the small enterprises sector, requires less labor employed, more flexibly, and the transition from employment in manufacturing to employment in services. In this sense Lever observes the 'uncongeniality' of the standardized towns, whose spaces differentiated according to function are no more suitable for the flourishing of small enterprises looking for the benefits of urban livability.

1.3. Urban industrialization as cycling process

Looking at these three possible definitions of post-industrial city, we realize that most of the European and western cities can correspond, in different proportions and in different parts of the urban territory, to all of them. In fact, despite the generalized de-industrialization process in Europe and north America, the urbanization process is still growing (Champion 2011). Transition from Urbanization to Suburbanization to Disurbanization, to Reurbanization (not forgetting Counterurbanization) is still going on, that's why we might assume that this is a cycle, not a linear process. Noticing that different countries and regions are at different stages of the de-industrialization process in a given period (Champion 2011), as well as different cities in the same region and different parts of the same cities are in different stage of the cycle, it becomes interesting to identify the different stages of this cycling phenomenon considering the different kind of city we are facing: are they inner cities, fringe belts, touristic cities, successful cities, shrinking cities? The only evident thing is that they all are *cities in transition*.
Speaking about cities in transition in literature, often means to speak about cities that are living transition phenomenon in their social, political or economic dimension. The urban built environment is often perceived as the final outcome of transition process which mainly concern other dimensions than the urban form itself. The Handbook of urban studies (Paddison 2011), identifies four types of cities coexisting dimensions at the same time in

the same Urbis: the city as environment, the city as people, the city as economy and the city as organized polity. Those "cities" have different but simultaneous evolutions that engender physical outcomes on the urban form. Therefore the second part of the paper proposes to use different analytical tools in order to catch the several layers of physical outcomes related to the various dimensions of the city. Industrial settlements are here used as index fossils to establish the relationship between the urban morphogenesis and possible urban regeneration design approaches.

In this frame it might be possible, aiming to set up new tools for urban morphological regeneration, to define post-industrial city through the identification and analysis of formal elements, or morphological characteristics, able to distinguish it from other types of cities.

As a matter of fact the morphogenesis of the industrial cities has been broadly discussed and should now be considered as a departure point to investigate the post-industrial city in his multiple variations in order to trigger and to design regeneration processes. Its main characteristics are well known ranging from their growing size, to the territorial spread phenomenon related to the new ways of transport, the zooning technique separating housing from production areas and from social housing through multiple enclosures. Arguably the most important single topic to which geographical urban morphologists have devoted their attention is the process whereby urban areas have grown physically (Whitehand 2011). But if the paradigm in which industrial city has flourished was an endless growth paradigm, the post-industrial city is dealing with a de-growth, or sustainable growth, paradigm in the frame of which we have to look for new generative models able to implement multiple social instances but also able to reconnect heterogeneous part of the city as heritage from the Fordist city.

2. URBAN ANALYSIS AND CITIES' MORPHOGENESIS: POSSIBLE LINK

Attempting to propose a first step towards a systematic understanding of generative models of the urban form, at a large scale, Raimbault and Perret, define urban form as "geometrical properties of building layouts at the scale of a district" and they underline the lack of quantitative indicators to measure urban form, which is mostly analyzed only in relation to visual impression. The proposal of Raimbault an Perret is to focus on the coevolution of building layout and road network through a set of indicators considered relevant at a district scale. Those indicators are set on a square grid that allows to compare different generative models able to capture both bottom-up-self organizing processes and top-down-planning processes. The grid can be adapted to the scale of the analysis as well as to the specific thematic focus on urban analysis. This kind of approach highlights how much urban analysis is a pair of glasses through which different phenomena and different characteristics of the urban fabric can be highlighted depending on the lens that we choose.

Urban industrial settlements are taken as case study to understand the possible link between the urban analysis method and the morphogenesis of the city for several reasons. First they often have driven, in the last two centuries, important city's expansion becoming the main catalysators for entire new neighborhoods structured by the industrial patterns and landmarks. As those cities have grown, the originally peripheric industrial suburbs have become central parts of the city and are nowadays strategic locations close to core city's center. Besides, those settlements are frequently characterized by bigger plots than the average of the urban fabric, allowing strategical urban transformation facilitated by the concentration of the real estate ownership. For all these reasons, urban industrial areas, even more when they are already dismantled areas, represent strategical factor for

morphogenesis or morpho-regeneration process of the city's fabric. The contemporary challenge is to understand the specific role that industrial settlement have played in the original morphogenesis of the city as well as the role they can play in contemporary regeneration of urban fabric.

The methodology proposed in this paper consists in defining six types of morphological relationships between industrial settlements and the city. Those six possible role performed by the industry in the urban context are infer from a broader observation of European main – former or present - industrial cities. For each type of relationship, a couple of urban analysis methods are suggested to foreground the specific formal role of the productive settlement analyzed. The hypothesis is that each method enables the understanding of peculiar interactions between the elements that generate urban form that are directly related to the morphogenesis of the city. The six types of interactions, the six different roles, mentioned depend on the type of industry, on the stage of urban development and on the preexisting morphological structure of the city. In this frame, productive sites can be considered as a new pattern in the city, a landmark on the urban landscape, a focus for new directions of development, a rift in the urban fabric, an urban scenery or a real city into the city itself.

2.1. Industrial settlements as pattern matrix

Some industrial settlements have been able to generate new patterns of the city, and therefore to trigger a brand new urban fabric based on the industrial building typologies, on the logistic principles and on the specific needs of the production. Because those settlements are characterized by building types and the streets and plot network, the best way to analyze their pattern is to merge the two traditional urban morphology analysis. The Muratori approach (Muratori 1960) operates a systematic building survey specifically focusing on the ground floors survey to highlight the relationship between private and public space. Building a sequence of historical buildings survey of the settlements, Muratori's analysis reveals the "hidden structure" of urban phenomena, the morphogenesis process. Applied to the Michelin Area (fig. 1) developed in the second part of the XIX century in the northern part of Torino (Italy), this type of analysis unveils the original connection between the contemporary urban fabric and the pattern enclosure inside the dismantled factories' wall. The other school related to morphological approach, the Conzenian approach (Conzen 1960), can usefully complete the Muratori' s analysis. Actually Conzen focus more on the arrangement of street and plots and therefore allows to understand how the industrial needs, in term of movement and circulation, engender the urban pattern of street and how the plot's characteristics of the industry is able to deal and/or to influence residential surrounding patterns. The regeneration of the industrial Docks on the riverside of Marseille well illustrates urban design centered on the reconversion of the industrial pattern driven by the conzenian approach.

Figure 1. Industrial settlements as a pattern matrix (author 2020)

2.2. Industrial settlements as new expansion directions' drivers

Other productive sites don't properly structure new patterns, but determine the directions for urban expansions. The modern city has then grow in a fragmented and discontinuous way along those axes as shown in the early XX century by the south development of the city of Torino toward the new settled FIAT Factory of Lingotto (fig. 2) or as it is happening by now in Maranello with the brand new Ferrari's Factory designed by Jean Nouvel in the outskirt of the city. Therefore to analyze these heterogeneous new parts of the city we attempt to disassembly complexity, trying to break up the urban fabric into elementary urban entities as suggested by Paola Viganò (Viganò 1999). This helps in understanding the new characters of the contemporary city where buildings are no more space definers, like in the traditional compact city, but have become space occupiers. In this frame the definition of the contemporary urban elements and their relationships enable to read the city as an overlapping of layers no more ordinated through a general plan but generating an urban fabric apparently chaotic, characterized by the intersections and the conflicts of the multiple layers. In this context a non-built element of the city turns to be essential to better understand the morphogenesis of the city: the study of the flows. Pioneered in the Seventies by Bill Hillier (Hillier 1982,) together with his colleagues at UCL, Space syntax analysis aims to analyze and represents the spatial accessibility in the city at different scales. This type of analysis makes the invisible visible describing how urban morphology can have deep impact flows' circulation and attempting to design new urban masterplan able to ensure, through the location, the position and the spatial layout of building elements, a more accessible, and therefore livable, cities' expansions. The reconversion of the La Villette productive site in the far suburbs of Paris by Bernard Tschumi is completely based on a layer's rationale which is able to organize the people fluxes, as it is now a scientific public park, but also to keep memory of the industrial past traces.

Figure 2. Industrial settlements as new expansion directions' drivers (author 2020)

2.3. Industrial settlements as a city in the city

In some cases, the industrial settlements are so big and so complex that they can be considered as "city in the city" in the sense that they are made by several buildings, a network of internal streets and open collective spaces, together with representative buildings, just like a real, traditional city. Very often those kind of settlements, raised from a small nucleus far from the city, has grown so much that when they came close to the city, or the city has grown up around the industrial settlements, they begun to need a precinct, a wall, to preserve the safety both of the citizen and of the workers. To understand the mutual relationships between the enclose pattern of the industrial site and the urban pattern of the neighborhood surrounding the industry precinct, the reading of basic

buildings types set up by the Muratori's follower, Gianfranco Caniggia seems to be a very useful tool (Caniggia 1979). The three steps of this urban analysis methods - to understand the historical reasons for urban form, to overcome them and to recognize the continuity in the morphogenesis of the city – enable to highlight the aggregation systems of buildings types and how urban tissues are generated through time in mutual relationships. The observation of the evolution phases of the urban structure shows as cities are made by continuous aggregation of unitarian, often originally homogeneous, nucleus or settlements. To investigate not only the topographical dimension of urban fabric, but to inquire also the aesthetical dimension of urban settlements, another Italian scholar, Cavallari Murat (Cavallari 1968) employ a conjectural survey to describe successive stages of the development of baroque cities in Italy detecting window's position, roofs' protrusions, entrances, porches and courtyards to describe the aesthetic evolution of the urban form. These elements specifically enhance how industrial buildings, for their types and for their formal elements, are, depending on the different phases of the urban evolution, part of the whole city, as in the case of the "White meat city" in Copenhagen (fig. 3) or a totally separate settlement, as in the case of the Matadero in Madrid. This character fundamentally impacts on the regeneration physical outcomes: if in the first case the district of White meat has been slowly and gradually reconverted by private investments into a restauration and shopping district completely embedded in the urban fabric of Copenhagen, in the second case the Matadero complex still enclosed in its protective walls and its regeneration and transformation in cultural district has been financed mainly by the municipali.

Figure 3. Industrial settlements as a city in the city (author 2020)

2.4. Industrial settlements as landmarks

For their scale, and for their iconic and symbolic values, part of the industrial settlements often represent urban landmarks and strongly contribute to the "image of the city" as Kevin Lynch described it in his masterpiece in 1960 (Lynch 1960). Therefore it is fundamental, to understand in depth their role in generating urban form, to use perceptive approach to analyze those settlements comprising built elements with strong visual impact at the city scale. Industrial architectonic elements such as chimneys, monumental façades, entrance gates or wall strongly contribute in building the urban image and to improve its "imageability". The industrial sites that have contribute, from the beginning of their development, to build this strong and vivid urban image, able to give identity, structure and meaning to the city, are nowadays not preserved as whole. Only elements recognized as landmarks are kept and protect by law, completely forgetting that their contribute to the urban image was not only made from those preserved exceptional buildings, but even from the relationships

that all the different parts of the site have built with the surrounding city. To catch these complex visual relationship the Gestalt theory is much helpful. Considering that "the whole is other than the sum of the parts", the Gestalt scholar identify several "laws" able to explain how the human mind subjectively perceive the relation between the different part of an organism. Arnheim applies these laws to architecture (Arnheim 1977) explaining how urban space is made from interplaying forces generated by built objects and how the perception of the space become dynamic arising from couples of antithetic values such as verticality/horizontality, empty and forlorn and so on. The perceptive approach seems to be antithetical to morphological approach because it counterpoises subjective approach to objective approach, tridimensional point of view to bi-dimensional vision, and non-expert vision to expert analysis. But aiming to understand morphogenesis' process of the city, in order to set un design guideline to regenerate urban industrial dismantled areas, the two approaches seem to complete each other adding a democratic dimension to the historical established tradition, explicating collective feeling to foster cultural identity, and being, both, pre-operational tools for the transformation of the city. This integrated approach is the key factor of the successful masterplan for the regeneration of the Van Nelle plant in Rotterdam (fig. 4) designed by Wessel de Jonge. In this project the new masterplan recognize the plant as an organic complex, a city in the city, and the buildings to be kept are decided according to their role as landmark for the industrial settlement and for the city. For the same, as the continuous glazed façade constitutes a real landmark for the urban landscape, the glass envelope it rebuild to look exactly as the original despite to the energetic issues: this important value is recognizable only through a perceptive analysis.

Figure 4. Industrial settlements as landmarks (author 2020)

2.5. Industrial settlements as a scenery

A different case is when the industrial sites become, for their dimension and for their location, a sort of scenery, a background for entire neighborhoods or land pieces. The idea that a building, or a group of buildings, can constitute an urban scene in the frame of which other urban elements are located and perceived is not new. From the History of architecture of Auguste Choisy (Choisy 1877) to The art of building Cities (Sitte 1902) many scholars have lighted the role of perception in the urban design, but it is only with the *Handbook to design urban landscape* of Gordon Cullen (Cullen 1961), that the role of the movement is explicated. Analyzing the urban scene through the Serial visions tool, Cullen explains that when wandering through the city we perceive two different elements: the existing view and the emerging view. As human mind reacts to contrasts, the contrast between these two views generates the image of the city as a coherent drama that, in this perspective, can be designed. Being the starting point of several urban expansions from the end of the XVIIIth century on, industrial settlements often become a scenery for the successive developments growing all around them. In

this sense workers housing, public services and infrastructures but also new activities connected with the new suburb, organize their location and their pattern considering the industry as a given background dominating the urban landscape. This phenomenon is well illustrate by one of the more representative buildings of FIAT, the renown Italian car factory, the Mirafiori plant (fig. 5). The first building dates back to the thirties, when I was located in the countryside, but the site kept growing till the eighties. Around the industrial plant housing, commerce and a big planted boulevard axed on the offices' building were built using the productive complex as a foreground, as a monumental scenery.

Figure 5. Industrial settlements as scenery (author 2020)

2.6. Industrial settlements as a rift

The multiplicity of roles that Industrial settlements can assume in the city analyzed in the previous paragraphs are all based on a specific type of interrelation between the productive site and the urban organism. The last role that we can observe is when no relationship is established between the city and the industry because the industry constitutes a sort of rift, of scarf in the urban fabric. Considering the land, and the city as well, as a palimpsest, André Corboz (Corboz 2001) suggests to read them as layered structured where traces from the past have been erased but still recognizable here and there by emerging fragments. To recognize the meaning of those emerging elements they have to be read as a part of a same layer. The palimpsest metaphor allows to consider the urban fabric as a parchment sheet full of inscriptions and traces left behind by society and construction not always taken into consideration when a new layer, like the productive layer, is added to the city. Therefore, following specific functional and logistical needs, sometimes industries are built up without any consideration to the previous rural or urban traces. The result is that the layout of the built elements as well as their pattern and their boundaries cut the city without any consideration for the existing urban pattern or connections. This is the case of the Ebbinge industrial suburb of Groningen in the Netherlands (fig. 6), where the industrial development of the early XX century consists in a series of productive pavilions built regardless to the previous urban pattern or to the surrounding plots. The regeneration operation called open Lab Ebbinge, assumed the rationale of the industrial original settlements, and promote a temporary settlement made of contemporary pavilions deliberately in contrast with the surrounding urban fabric, belonging to the pavilion layer of the historical factories.

Figure 6. Industrial settlements as rift (author 2020)

3. CITIES' MORPHOGENESIS: TRANSITION AND HYBRIDIZATION

Attempting to set a methodology of morphological analysis able to grasp the transitional character of urban phenomenon, reading the post-industrial city as a stage of a continuous transition in urban form and not as a final step, this paper describes a possible classification of the role played by industrial settlements in the city. It essential to remark that this taxonomy does not aim to establish fixed urban types or unambiguous relationships between industrial settlements and urban context. This sort of Atlas of industrial settlements' roles is set up through the induction method, from the observation of a multiplicity of case studies, general types are defined. The final goal of this methodology is to analyze urban dismantled areas in order to improve the outcomes of their regeneration process and of the redesign of consist parts of the city. As the taxonomy is based on the observation of multiple cases studies, it can be considered as an abduction operation. The abduction process proceeds from a single case study, or an innovative proposal, to formulate a new hypothesis, which is not yet a law or a rule, but just a possible principle to be further investigated, validated or fine-tuned. In this sense the industrial settlements can be firstly considered as playing one of the six roles identified and therefore analyzed through the urban analysis methods associated to each urban role. This first analysis is likely to highlight the non-matching elements, suggesting that all urban context are complex system non reducible to a single type of relationship between productive sites and city's pattern. Therefore the methodology forecasts to apply successively more than one urban analysis method to reflect the complexity of the urban palimpsest. Following the more commonly accepted conception of complex system as a system which is linked to the unpredictability of its evolution in time, the contemporary complex city is evolving in a vertical way, by transition in time, and in an horizontal way, by hybridization in space. To look at the city assuming those two actions, transition and hybridization, as the two main morphogenetic processes, might be effective in overcoming the fixity of urban types and in unveiling the relationships between urban elements often considered as inconsistent or corrupted while there just evidences of a city in transition.

Assuming the industrial age as a transition phase means to conceive the urban regeneration techniques not aimed to design a definitive urban design configuration, but rather to outline a flexible grid able to give consistency and meaning to the next steps of urban development. Urban regeneration projects should then plan the different urban functions as temporary and organized by layers, conceived as overlappable with a certain autonomy towards the grid that ensure their assemblage with an internal consistency. The final goal of the whole urban regeneration process, from a morphological point of view, is to improve the sense of urbanity. But what is "urbanity"? Irrespective to ages and geographical context, the essence of the city deals with mixité instead of zoning, with walkability, flexibility of spaces and infrastructures, with gathering spaces. The combined approach proposed, mixing urban analysis methods and bridging urban analysis with design, envisions urban regeneration as the process of repairing the urban grid, reconnecting the existing fragments, not searching for urban growth, but adding temporary, consistent and meaningful layers to this grid.

REFERENCES

Arnheim, R. 1977. *The dynamic of architectural Form*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Batty, M. 2013. *The new science of Cities*. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Bertuglia, C.S., Vaio, F. 2019. *Il fenomeno urbano e la complessità*. Torino: Bollati Boringhieri.

Caniggia, G. 1979. *Lettura dell'edilizia di base*. Venezia: Marsilio.

Cavallari Murat, A. 1968. *Forma urbana e architettura nella Torino barocca. Dalle premesse classiche alle conclusioni neoclassiche*. Torino: UTET.

Champion, T. 2011. *Urbanization, Suburbanization, Counterurbanization and Reurbanization*. In Paddison, R. (ed) 2011. Handbook of urban studies. London: Sage publication.

Choisy, A. 1899, *Histoire de l'architecture*. Paris.

Conzen, M.R.G. 1970. *Alnwick, Northumberland: A Study in Town Plan Analysis*. London: Institute of British Geographers.

Corboz, A. 2001. *Le territoire comme palimpseste et autres essais*. Paris: Les éditions de l'Imprimeur.

Cullen, G. 1962. *Townscape*. London: Architectural Press.

Hillier, B. 1999. *Space is the machine: a configurational theory of Architecture*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Lever, W. F. 2011. *The Post-Fordist City*. In Paddison, R. (ed) 2011. Handbook of urban studies. London: Sage publication.

Lynch, K. 1960. *The image of the city*. Cambridge: MIT Press

Muratori, S. 1960. *Studi per una operante storia urbana di Venezia*. Roma: Istituto Poligrafico dello Stato.

Olmo, C. 1980. *La città industriale. Protagonisti e scenari*. Torino: Einaudi.

Paddison, R. (ed) 2011. *Handbook of urban studies*. London: Sage publication.

Raimbault, J., Perret, J. 2019. G*enerating urban morphologies at large scale*. ALIFE 2019: Proceedings of the Artificial Life Conference 2019. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Sitte, C. 1889. *Der Städtebau nach seinen künstlerischen Grundsätzen*. Wien.

Smet, M. 1990. A *Taxonomy of Deindustrialization* in 42 Rassegna – The abandoned Areas. Milan: CIPIA

Tang, M., Yang, D. 2008. *Urban paleontology, evolution of urban forms*. Irvine: Universal Publishers.

Viganò, P. 1999. *La città elementare*. Milano: Skira.

Whitehand, J.W.R. 2011, *The Physical Form of Cities: A Historico-Geographical Approach*. In Paddison, R. (ed) 2011. *Handbook of urban studies*. London: Sage publication.

PAPER #1.10

GRID GEOMETRY AND CORE STRUCTURE: SPACE SYNTAX ANALYSIS OF SMALL AND MEDIUM 'GRID-LIKE' US CITIES

Saif Haq[a]
[a]College of Architecture, Texas Tech University, Lubbock, TX, USA

ABSTRACT

The theory and techniques of Space Syntax - originally based on topological assumptions and tested on organic layouts have been developing since the 1970's. After countless publications, and software of different kinds, this is a well-established field - respected and used by design-researchers. Unfortunately, one aspect not entirely resolved is the paradox that seems to exist between the mathematical modelling and geometric conditions of grid or grid-like layouts (Ratti 2004b, 2004a). While this challenge was quickly responded to by Hillier and Penn (2004), we now have at our disposal much more sophisticated analytical technology, namely angular and metric analysis of segmented streets that allow fine grained explorations. Haq and Berhie (2018) have used them to investigate a grid-like medium sized American city, and has demonstrated that 'Angular Choice' and 'Metric Mean Depth' is a useful tool.

This paper extends the earlier study in four grid-like towns/cities in West Texas, USA and includes 'normalized angular choice (NACH)' to compare them. Results indicate that while some of the most recent theories apply equally to grid-like and organic conditions; some special aspects apply to grid-like cases. These are (1) a background structure derived from metric analysis and a foreground structure from 'angular choice' post-dict the functions of grid-like West Texas cities at both levels, (2) such cities cannot generate center to edge connections, but create periphery to periphery links, (3) city size is a factor in the formation of a center, but the rim is highlighted in all cities regardless of size and (4) in numerical calculations of mean and maximum NACH values the grid-like city samples used here produced comparable values of much larger world cities.

KEYWORDS

Space syntax; morphology; grid cities; urban design; US Cities.

INTRODUCTION

Space Syntax theory and application methods have always been a bit unresolved when it came to grid-like cities. As its theory sharpened and methods became sophisticated, it seemed that the more contemporary ideas might be equally applicable to both organic and grid-like cities. Granted, isotropic gridded cities are not found in real instances, yet some cities are more 'grid-like' than others. Such city types have developed west of the river Mississippi, in the Unites States of America, perhaps being influenced by the planning concepts of Thomas Jefferson that was adopted by congress in 1785 (Rayner and Schmidt 1955). Driven by top-down policies, these cities were designed as a grid layout of roads for vehicle friendliness to which functions were added later. They are opposite of the idea that "the process of aggregating buildings … create[s] the physical city" (Hillier 2012)

In West Texas we find such grid-like cities/ towns of various sizes. We have selected four of them as specimens to critically examine the most recent ideas of Space Syntax. This

paper starts with an abridged history of Space Syntax and suggests three distinct periods of development, and the most recent and significant one happened during the last decade of Prof Bill Hillier. Some of the recent ideas are tested in this paper by applying them to the selected grid-like cities of different sizes.

1. SPACE SYNTAX BASICS

Space Syntax is both a theory and a method for analyzing and understanding spaces in layouts through their configurational properties. Since beginning in the nineteen seventies, its theory and method advanced in tandem, and in the process, responded to new challenges with more robust ideas. In the early days, Space Syntax methodology considered simple topological 'connections' between spaces – not simply as immediate connections to adjacent spaces (understood as connections at level one), but also connections to other spaces 'through' the immediate neighbors (connections at level two), to others that were connected to those 'neighbor of the neighbors' (connections at level three) and so on, until connections *of all spaces to all other spaces* (through a set of direct or in-between spaces) had been taken into account. In this manner of considering each space's connections to *all other* spaces, Space Syntax calculated unit values for each space. Two of these values were called 'integration' and 'choice' (Hillier and Hanson 1984). Integration value of a unit area or space is a function of the mean number of spaces in the system and the changes needed in order to reach all other spaces in that system of spaces 'Choice' calculates how likely a unit space is to be passed through in shortest routes from all spaces to all other spaces in the system (Hillier et al. 1987).

Unit spaces were carefully defined. In urban analysis 'axial lines' were mostly used. This is the longest uninterrupted visibility line that can be drawn in a plan of a city or settlement. A collection of such lines covering the entire study area is called an 'axial map' (Hillier and Hanson 1984). This method called for identifying the fewest and longest number of possible lines through the open space system. One must also realize that computers were not advanced and not easily available during the beginning days. Their use in this field probably stated in the nineteen nineties. Perhaps that is why experimental investigations only considered axial lines as units and one variable - topological 'integration'. Computers also made it easy to visually represent the analyses by overlapping on the axial map a set of colored lines to represent their numerical values of 'integration'. Typically, they are displayed from warm to cool colors, with warmer colors indicating higher values. Occasionally, a map of the lines having the highest values (usually 5% or 10%) would be produced. This illustrated the syntactic structure of the analysis area and was called the 'core'.

A good number of observational studies in many cities across the world have found generally positive correlations between topological 'integration' and both pedestrian and vehicular movement patterns (Hillier et al. 1987; Hillier, Penn, Julienne Hanson, et al. 1993; Peponis et al. 1989; Penn et al. 1998; Read 1999). From these, it has been estimated that about 60 to 80% of movement could be predicted by the spatial configuration of the city layout itself (Stonor 2011).

Such discoveries led to proposals of a set of related theories such as 'natural movement' (Hillier, Penn, Hanson, et al. 1993; Hillier 1999b), 'movement economies' (Hillier 1996, 1999b) 'live centrality' (Hillier 1999a) and 'order-structure' (Hillier 1999c). Visual studies of 'core maps' of organic cities coupled with a general understanding of their functional distribution, and comparison to ideal cities led to a distinction between 'order' and 'structure' (Hillier 1999c). While 'order' is geometric and visible in a synchronic condition (like looking at a map or a diagram), 'structure' may be considered diachronic, and is revealed over time by locational aspects and cognitive developments

of its peripatetic visitors (Haq 1999; Penn 2001; Haq 2003; Haq and Zimring 2003). Space Syntax maps are special because they illustrate *diachronic experiences synchronically,* and in doing so reveal the underlying 'structure'. Hiller (1997) had argued that this 'structure' takes the shape of a 'deformed' wheel where a small central area is highlighted (hub of the wheel) with longer connections to peripheral areas (spokes). This paper will address the contemporary development of this idea with special relevance to 'grid-like' cities.

2. A SIGNIFICANT CHALLENGE

While topological considerations in Space Syntax seemed to work quite well for organic cities, Carlo Ratti (2004b) challenged that while a 'deformed wheel structure' was reported in many organic cities, it could not be the case for isotropic grids, because all the lines attained the same integration values. Thus, geometry or 'order' will prevail over underlying 'structure'. From this, one can infer that the thesis regarding a relationship between syntactic patterns to structure or movement and associated city functions in such cities would also be unrealistic. Later research on movement patterns and Space Syntax variables reflected this point. For example, Mora (2003) noted weak correlations between land use and syntactic values in the gridded center of Barcelona (a grid inclusive city). Later, he and a colleague (Mora and Dahany 2005) reported r2 values of 0.403 and 0.555 for correlations of global integration with pedestrians and vehicles respectively in a small semi-gridded part of Toronto (grid inclusive, but not isotropic). Previously, Peponis, Ross and Rashid (1997) had reported that in the colliding grid of downtown Atlanta, correlations between vehicular traffic and integration (r2) was 0.58. Another researcher (Paul 2013) studied 'grid-like' Lubbock and found very poor correlations (r2 =0.18)

The challenge posed by Ratti (2004b) was responded to in different ways. Making the case that real cities are far different than ideal grids, Hillier and Penn (2004) highlighted two aspects of reality. First, a few streets invariably connect to areas outside the city and so attain different relationships creating unequal distribution of values across the city roads. Second, realities of geology and function inside the city cause interruptions of the intended grid (Hillier 1996). Later, Major (1997) demonstrated that in many cases natural elements also influence edge conditions and contribute to the breakup of the grid creating a non-regular situation. He also demonstrated that, in some American cities, individual isotropic gridded sections were sometimes connected to one another in a non-geometrical manner (colliding grids). In sum, it was generally accepted that these 'deformations' of the grid layout was enough to produce a configurational 'structure' different from its geometric shape (order). As such, theories developed in organic cities were expected to be reproduced in grid-like ones too. Unfortunately, this matter remained at the level of discourse.

3. THE SECOND WAVE OF DEVELOPMENT IN SPACE SYNTAX

Meanwhile to produce evidence-based explanations of observed relationships between Syntax values and movement patterns, a subsequent set of Space Syntax studies in the late 1990's and early 2000's undertook experimental work. One set of such studies explored wayfinding behavior (Peponis, Zimring, and Choi 1990) and cognitive dimensions of axial lines (Haq 2003; Penn 2001). These demonstrated that highly Integrated axial lines were used more often by exploring and wayfinding adults and were also featured in their cognitive maps. On this basis both Peponis et. al. (1990) and Haq and Zimring (2003) identified intersections

of axial lines as places of decision making and therefore a natural spatial-unit for Space Syntax analyses. Haq (2003) went further and proposed segmenting the longer lines at their intersections to create nodes. At about the same time, another significant experiment studied path patterns of moving people and highlighted the role of angles between street connections by demonstrating that moving individuals preferred least angles while travelling (Dalton 2003).

These experiments led to substantial developments of Space Syntax theory and methodologies. First, segmented lines i.e. lines broken at their intersections, were accepted as new Space Syntax units, and second, two new concepts of 'distances' between unit spaces -- angles between lines and metric distances between their center points (Turner 2001; Dalton 2003) were added. Simultaneously, computational software became sophisticated -- the paramount one being 'DepthmapX'. This remarkable software can analyze both axial and segmented line maps and can calculate 'integration' and 'choice' values at various radii by considering either connections (topology), angles between them (geometry) or distances between their center points (metrics). Furthermore, it can restrict radii of calculation in distance metrics while doing angular analyses. Of special note is an enhanced understanding of the variables 'integration' and 'choice'. At this time 'integration' was re-considered as akin to 'closeness' and so was expected to have more destinations and indicate 'to-movements' within the spatial system. 'Choice' was associated with 'betweenness' and was expected to measure 'through-movements'. Table 1 indicates the many combinations of unit spaces, variables, and analytical techniques that are available today.

4. SHARPENED THEORIES – ADVANCED METHODS

The third and most recent development wave of Space Syntax was led by Professor Bill Hillier in a series of papers published from 2000 to the time of his passing in 2019. Through this final set of publications, he was successful in transforming his beginning ideas into a complete theory of spatial analysis and formal descriptions of settlements. These papers take into account segmented axial lines as units, angular and metric distance concepts, many radii of analyses, case studies of more than 50 cities across the globe (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012; Hillier 2019), cognitive concepts (Hillier and Iida 2005; Hillier 2009) and existing pedestrian and vehicular movement data from four areas of London collected many years ago (Hillier and Iida 2005). Working from all these – arguably with an inductive mindset, Professor Hillier and his colleagues put forth a series of developed theories and suggested specific analytical techniques and representation standards.

With regards to the challenge reported in section 3 of this paper about difficulties of dealing with grid like cities, this set of papers implied that the distinction had been bridged with the new concepts and theories. The fifty cases in his database included both 'organic' and 'geometric' cities. Although the authors did not make categorical distinctions between them, they have discussed some of them separately when appropriate (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012). In this paper we plan to investigate some ideas by looking at one medium and three very small American cities/towns located in West Texas, USA. These cities/towns are Lubbock, Slaton, Idalou and Abernathy. (See table 1 for their comparisons). However, before that, let us quickly review the new ideas that were proposed.

CONCEPTS FOR ANALYSIS			TYPICAL VARIABLES OF UNIT SPACES CALCULATED BY SPACE SYNTAX			
UNIT SPACES	DISTANCE BETWEEN UNIT SPACES: • *Topological* • *Angular* • *Metric*	RADIUS OF ANALYSIS. Also • *Turns* • *Angles* • *Distance*	CONNECTIVITY	INTEGRATION (CLOSENESS)	CHOICE (BETWEENNESS)	CONTROL
Axial Lines			√	√	√	
Segmented Lines			x	√	√	
Unit of a Grid			x	√	√	

Table 1. Different unit spaces, analytical techniques, radii of analysis and calculated variables that are used today.

CITY / TOWN	DISTANCE FROM LUBBOCK (km)	POPULATION	SIZE (km^2)	NUMBER OF SEGMENTED LINES	SEGMENTED LINES ABOVE 1.4 NACH VALUES	NACH average	NACH range	STRUCTURE STRENGTH
Lubbock		255885	319	14023	1050	0.945	0 – 1.59	13.36
Lubbock inside existing ring				7617	686	1.018	0-1.61	11.10
Lubbock 4 square blocks				994	95	1.139	0-1.57	10.46
Lubbock with speculative ring road				13946	1181	.956	0 – 1.58	11.81
Slaton	27.26	6121	14.2	942	62	1.101	0 – 1.57	15.21
Idalou	19.63	2250	2.59	227	15	0.943	0 – 1.5	15.2
Abernathy	30.58	2805	3.1	461	29	1.051	0 – 1.58	15.96

Table 2. Information about the four cities/towns and speculative conditions used

4.1. The generic city and its dual structure

After almost fifty years of contemplating cities, Professor Bill Hillier never lost his conviction that "…at a deep enough level cities seem to be the same kind of thing" (Hillier 2016, pp. 200). He believed that despite differences in 'order', all cities have a common 'structure'. He called this 'generic city' (Hillier 2012, 2014), which includes the 'order-structure' idea. In this newer version he proposed it at *two coexisting levels*. The first is a 'foreground structure' that reflects micro-economic activities of the city. Since these are more or less general to all cities and benefit from maximum movement, co-presence and reach, they tend to link public center with edges and interconnects smaller centers (Hillier 2001). The shape of this structure generally follows the 'deformed wheel' idea. As such, they are expected to have a 'rim', a 'hub' and some 'spokes'. In the new 'dual structure' proposal, Hillier also added internal 'lateral' structures to link sectors of the city to

each other and away from the center (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012, pp.181). The second is a 'background structure'. It is conservative because it restrains movement according to the culture and requirements of a locality. It is structured by distances and it identifies discontinuities of the urban grid, usually looking like a patchwork (Hillier 2016, 2014)
So how are these structures unveiled? Hillier and Vaughan (2007, pp. 01-02) says, "In terms of understanding structure function relations, urban space seems to be globally topo geometric but locally metric. Recall that 'choice' is a measure of 'betweenness' and so indicates the potential for through movements (Hillier et al. 1987). Also, cognitive science had indicated that urban network is generally understood in geometrical and topological terms rather than metric (Hillier and Iida 2005). Armed with these two ideas they proceeded to test four sub areas in London using existing movement datasets. These indicated that "…geometric, or least angle weighting yields the strongest movement prediction, with an average of around 0.7 for vehicular movement and 0.6 for pedestrian..". (Hillier and Iida 2005, pp. 23). As such, 'choice' values derived by angular analyses of segments restricted by maximum metric radius was proposed to model the 'foreground' structure of cities (T1024 choice radius-n in Depthmap terminology). This is reproduced in figures 1 and 2 as the 'foreground' structure (in color) of the four case studies. And what about the background structure? Again, going back to Space Syntax foundations and theoretical arguments over time, the residential processes are explained as culturally biased and restrictive. It can be modelled through 'metric-integration' analysis at an appropriately low metric radius. Figure 1 and 2 show the background structure in grey tones. They were calculated at a 1600-meter radius (about one mile).

4.2. Normalization and comparison between cities

A significant aspect of Space Syntax in the beginning years was the process of 'normalization' in 'integration' calculations. This was necessary to control for physical sizes and allow comparison between them. The process compared 'integration' values of individual spaces to an ideal 'diamond shaped' graph (Hillier and Hanson 1984). It was very successful. Unfortunately, no 'normalization' was available for 'choice' values.

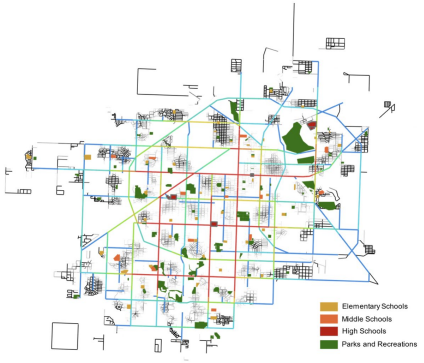


Figure 1. Dual structure of Lubbock showing the relationship to neighborhood amenities.

Figure 2. Dual structure of three towns showing the relationship to neighborhood amenities

As segmented lines became more useful and the importance of 'through-movement' were systematically understood, normalization of 'choice' became necessary for inter-layout comparisons and so the equation for 'normalized angular choice (NACH)' was developed (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012). Depthmap allows NACH to be calculated at any radii, with any concept of distance (see Table 1 for these). The most useful concept of distance to restrict radius in angular analysis was metric. Hillier and his colleagues systematically examined a data set of 50 cities (and some hypothetical layouts) and concluded that a range from 0.8 to 1.4 (blue to red) produced the most telling representation. Figures 3 and 4 show the NACH of our four case study towns/cities calculated at the maximum metric distance (n) and displayed in the color palette to match the .08 to 1.4 scheme.

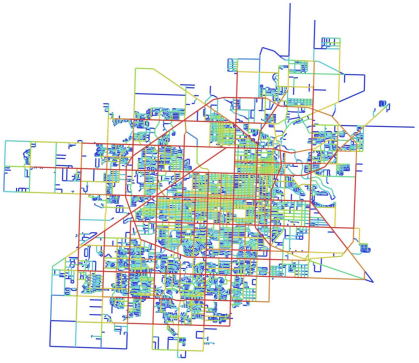


Figure 3. NACNn (0.8 - 1.4) structure of Lubbock

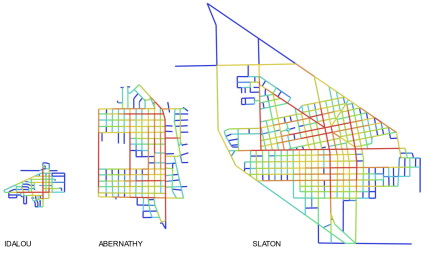


Figure 4. NACNn (0.8 - 1.4) structure of three towns

5. WHAT CAN WE LEARN FROM OUR CASE STUDIES?

It might be useful to reiterate here that metric analysis for background, and angular analysis (at a set metric distance) for foreground is a useful concept to study the functioning of individual cities, especially regarding their function at local and global levels. On the other hand, to compare cities of different sizes we should consider 'normalized angular choice values (NACH)'.

5.1. Local-global structure of grid like cities

Our four sample cities vary quite a bit in size but are similar in their general grid-like conditions. Among them Lubbock is the largest, at about 22.5 times the next town. The other three are quite small. Figure 1 shows the local and the global structures superimposed for Lubbock, and figure 2 shows the same for Idalou, Abernathy and Slaton. The global structure is given by the higher 'choice' values calculated at the maximum metric radius (n), and the local structure is indicated with the patchwork that was created with metric analysis at the radius of one mile. These diagrams unveil some interesting characteristics.

In Lubbock, the patches highlight a central area of *every* subdivision located somewhere inside its one-mile grid divisions. Second, in *all* the central areas identified (patches) there is a neighborhood amenity, either an elementary school or a park. Third, a colored line representing the global core is connected to the amenity of each center/patch. Taken together, they indicate that the identified central patches are not only the vibrant centers of neighborhoods (living centers), they are also well connected to the city's (global) structure. Thus, the patches seem to act as thresholds between the public and private domains of the city. The other three cities are too small to have clear neighborhoods defined, but the phenomenon

observed in Lubbock is also discerned. In small cities, where neighborhoods are few, the school buildings usually act as a public amenity. In all the cases shown here, the schools are located in the global structure, but also close to neighborhood patches.
This method of analysis, it seems, has post-dicted the planning of grid-like cities. This is an important finding and shows that even in grid like conditions the logic between local and global structures and the logic of placing local amenities endures.

5.2. Rims and edges

Since NACH values do not depend on the size of a system, we can use it to compare cities. A visual survey of the three small towns in our sample (figure 2 and 4) reveals that the edges or the 'rim' is highlighted as predicted by Hillier. In many of the cities that have been described through NACH in the literature, specifically those with an outer ring, the rim had become highlighted. For example, when London inside the circular M-25 is modelled, the rim becomes quite significant (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012) . It is the same case for Tokyo, Santiago, Barcelona, Beijing (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012), Apt (Hillier 2019), Nicosia (Hillier and Vaughan 2007) and other circular shaped cities. Lubbock does not have a well-defined edge (figure 1). It has a 'ring-road' but has grown out of this circular boundary. Even then, the analysis depicts this ring as significant (figure 1 and 3). Two interesting questions pop up: does the shape of the edge influence the 'rim' being highlighted, and do the city size matter? We investigated this question with three theoretical maps created by extending or reducing Lubbock. They are, Lubbock modelled inside the loop road only (figure 5a), a four-quarter section of Lubbock bound by its arterial roads (figure 5b), and Lubbock with a speculative larger loop around it with the gridded arterial roads extended to meet it (figure 5c). In all the cases we find that the exterior roads, either circular or not, *when continuous*, become highlighted. From this small experiment we can answer the two questions: (1) when exterior roads are continuous, an outer rim will be identified by NACH analysis, supporting Hillier's assertion, and (2) size of the city do not play a role in the formation of this highlighted edge (rim).

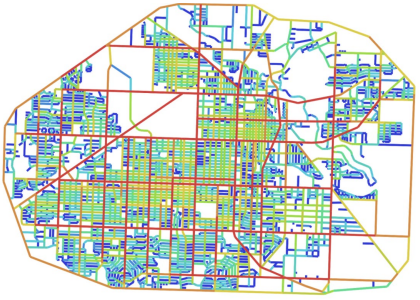


Figure 5a. NACH (0.8 - 1.4) Lubbock inside ring road

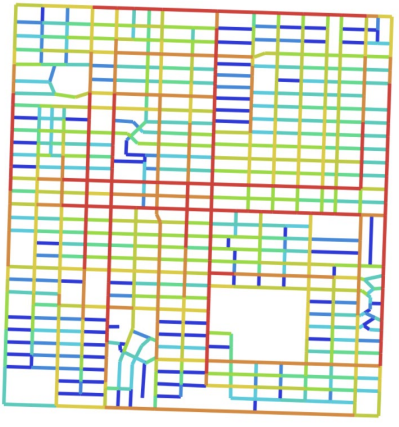


Figure 5b. NACH (0.8 - 1.4) Lubbock four arterial roads

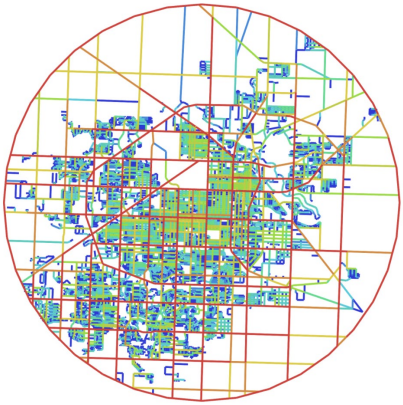


Figure 5c. NACH (0.8 - 1.4) Lubbock speculative ring road

5.3. Spokes or edge to edge connections?

In terms of creating the 'spokes' however, we do not see a clear pattern. Obviously, the grid-like layout does not provide opportunities for radial streets, but we do notice in the three small towns that some roads connecting edge to edge (of the rim) is highlighted. This is curious, because the streets seem to have connected one part of the edge to another without meeting at a significant center, since it may not exist. So, we may extend the original idea with this: in the case of a missing city center for very small grid-like towns, the foreground structure of the city will connect edge to edge, serving the global requirements of a 'bypass'. This becomes especially important for grid like conditions because, as mentioned by Ratti (2004b), the geometry also has a strong influence. Once identified, we also notice some 'edge-to-edge' roads in Lubbock,

5.4. Center formation

Theoretically, the geometry of a grid works against the creation of a center. As cities grow, settlement processes, economic factors, policy, legislation, natural terrain etc. interact and make changes to the ubiquitous grid. The smaller towns studied here has not been developed enough or are not large enough to attain a configurational center. We can discern the semblance of a center in Slaton, the largest of the three small towns (figure 3), and certainly in Lubbock where a clear central area can be identified. From these we can infer that, unlike the edge, city size has a role in the creation of a 'center'.

5.5. Numerical comparisons

Hillier, Yang, and Turner (2012) studied a data set of 50 cities, where the smallest city had less than 1000 line segments, and the largest one had more than 250,000. Among them, some are discussed as 'geometric' – perhaps the closest approximation of a grid-like city, although not clarified. They also studied hypothetical structures of three grid like layouts – (1) a 60 segment by 60 segment orthogonal grid, (2) the same grid with a single pair of crossed diagonals at the center grid, and (3) the same grid with two continuous diagonals. Their analysis revealed that mean NACHn values were higher in the grid-like conditions (1.25) than any actual city they studied. In our four towns and three theoretical layouts the mean NACHn value was not very high (0.93-1.139). From this we can say that our sample cities behave less like isotropic grids, and more like actual working cities. Second, in the Hillier et.al study above, hypothetical gridded conditions displayed lower values of maximum NACHn when compared to their sample cities (more than 1.36 as compared to 1.6+). In all our cases the maximum NACHn values were 1.5 -1.61, which is approximately the same range as the previous study. So, in this comparison also, the four grid-like cities of West Texas functions similarly to the other cities reported in the literature. Thus our studies support the statement "…Cities in effect seem to sacrifice

NACH to create the pattern of high values that we call the structure of the system." (Hillier, Yang, and Turner 2012, pp 163)

CONCLUDING REMARKS

Our sample had one medium and three quite small grid-like cities and three speculative conditions from a mid-sized city. They were investigated with the most advanced Space Syntax technology available – 'segmented angular analyses' for the foreground structure and 'segmented metric analyses' for the background structure. Additionally, 'normalized angular choice' was used to compare between them and to published values of world cities from literature.

This study demonstrated that in general, theories developed with predominant illustrations of organic layouts also work for grid like city conditions. For example, all the layouts explored here produced very comparable maximum and mean NACH values. Some specific findings are that city center formation in the foreground structure is a factor of city size, but the outer rim is a ubiquitous phenomenon. Also, in grid-like conditions instead of center to edge connections, we find edge to edge connections. Overall, this paper suggests that advanced theories and methodologies developed by Prof Bill Hillier (and his colleagues) in the last decade of his productivity is indeed applicable to both grid like and organic cities and the theory can be considered (almost) complete.

REFERENCES

Dalton, Ruth Conroy. 2003. "The Secret is to Follow Your Nose: Route Path Selection and Angularity." *Environment and Behavior* 35 (1): 107-131.

Haq, Saif. 1999. "Can Space Syntax Predict Environmental Cognition?" 2nd International Space Syntax Symposium, Brazilia.

---. 2003. "Investigating the Syntax Line: Configurational Properties and Cognitive Correlates." *Environment and Planning B: Planning and Design*, *Pion Publications, London* 30 (6): 841-863.

Haq, Saif, and Girmay Berhie. 2018. "Space syntax investigation of Lubbock, a grid-like American city and some insights into isotropic layouts." J*ournal of Urban Design* 23 (1): 5-22. https://doi.org/10.1080/13574809.2017.1369872.

Haq, Saif, and Craig Zimring. 2003. "Just down the road a piece: The development of topological knowledge of Building Layouts." *Environment and Behavior* 35 (1): 132-160.

Hillier, Bill. 1996. *Space is the Machine*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

---. 1997. "The Hidden Geometry of Deformed Grids or, why space syntax works when it looks as though it shouldn't." Space Syntax First International Symposium, London.

---. 1999a. "Centrality as a Process: accounting for attraction inequalities in deformed grids." Space Syntax Second Internationa Symposium, Brasilia, Brazil.

---. 1999b. "The Common Language of Space: a way of looking at the social, economic and environmental functioning of cities on a common basis." [web page]. http://urbandesign.ir/wp-content/uploads/2017/11/Urban_space-syntax-hillier.pdf.

---. 1999c. "The hidden geometry of deformed grids: or, why space syntax works, when it looks as though it should'nt." *Environment and Planning B* 26: 169-191.

---. 2001. "A Theory of the City as Object Or, how spatial laws mediate the social construction of urban space." 3rd International Space syntax Symposium, Atlanta.

---. 2009. "Spatial Sustainability in Cities Organic Patterns and Sustainable Forms." 7th International Space Syntax Symposium, Stockholm, Sweden.

---. 2012. "The City as a Socio-technical System: A Spatial Reformulation in the Light of the Levels Problem and the Parallel Problem." In *Digital Urban Planning and Modelling* edited by Stefan Müller Arisona, Gideon Aschwanden, Jan Halatsch and Peter Wonka, In Communications in Computer and Information Science, 24-48. Berlin Heidelberg Springer-Verlag.

---. 2014. "The Generic City and its Origins." *Architectural Design* 84 (5): 100-105.

---. 2016. "What are cities for? And how does this relate to their spatial form?" *Journal of Space Syntax* 6 (2): 199-212.

---. 2019. "Structure or: Does Space Syntax Need to Radically Extend Its Theory of Spatial Configuration?" 12th International Space Syntax Symposium, Beijing JiaoTong University: Beijing, China.

Hillier, Bill, Richard Burdett, John Peponis, and Alan Penn. 1987. "Creating life: Or, Does Architecture Determine Anything?" *Architecture and Behavior/Architecture et Comportment* 3, No 3: 233-250.

Hillier, Bill, and Julienne Hanson. 1984. *The Social Logic of Space*. Paperback Edition 1988 ed. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Hillier, Bill, and Shinichi Iida. 2005. "Network and Psychological effects: A Theory of Urban Movement." 5th International Space Syntax Symposium, Delft, The Netherlands.

Hillier, Bill, and Alan Penn. 2004. "Rejoinder to Carlo Ratti." *Environment and Planning B* 31: 501-511.

Hillier, Bill, Alan Penn, Julienne Hanson, T Grajewski, and J Xu. 1993. "Natural movement: or, configuration and attraction in urban pedestrian movement." *Environment and planning B* 20 (1): 29-66.

Hillier, Bill, Alan Penn, Julienne Hanson, T. Grajewski, and J. Xu. 1993. "Natural movement: or configuration and attraction in urban pedestrian movement." *Environment and Planning* 20 (B): 29-66.

Hillier, Bill, and Laura Vaughan. 2007. "The City as One thing." *Progress in Planning* 67 (3): 205-230.

Hillier, Bill, Tao Yang, and Alasdair Turner. 2012. "Normalising least angle choice in Depthmap and how it opens up new perspectives on the global and local analysis of city space." *The Journal of Space Syntax* 3 (2): 155-193.

Major, Mark. 1997. "Are American cities Different? If so how do they differ." Space Syntax First International Symposium, London.

Mora, Rodrigo. 2003. "Land uses in the context of a perfect grid: the case of Barcelona." 4th International Space Syntax Symposium.

Mora, Rodrigo, and John Dahany. 2005. "Mechanisms of differentiation in a regular grid: the case of Toronto." Fifth International Space Syntax Symposium, Delft.

Paul, Abhijit. 2013. "Reviewing the axial-line approach to capturing vehicular trip-makers' route-choice decisions with ground reality." *Transportation* 40 (3): 697-711.

Penn, Alan. 2001. "Space Syntax and Spatial Cognition Or, why the axial line." Space Syntax 3rd International Symposium, GeorgiaTech, Atlanta.

Penn, Alan, Bill Hillier, D Banister, and J Xu. 1998. "Configurational Modelling of Urban Movement Networks." *Environment and Planning* B 25: 59-84.

Peponis, John, E. Hadjinikolaou, C. Livieratos, and D.A. Fatouros. 1989. "The Spatial Core of Urban Culture." *Ekistics* 334, 335 Jan-Feb, Mar-Apr: 43-55.

Peponis, John, Catherine Ross, and Mahbub Rashid. 1997. "The Structure of Urban Space, Movement and Co-Presence: The Case of Atlanta." *Geoforum* 28 (3-4): 341-358.

Peponis, John, Craig Zimring, and Yoon Kyung Choi. 1990. "Finding the Building in Wayfinding." *Environment and Behavior* 22 (5): 555-590.

Ratti, Carlo. 2004a. "Rejoinder to Hillier and Penn." *Environment and Planning* B 31: 513-516.

---. 2004b. Space Syntax: Some Inconsistencies. In *Environment and Planning* B.31; 487-499

Rayner, Willam Horace, and Milton O Schmidt. 1955. *Elementary Surveying*. Philadelphia: D. Van Nostrand Co. .

Read, Stephan. 1999. "Space syntax and the Dutch city." *Environment and Planning B: Planning and Design* 26: 251-264.

Stonor, Tim. 2011. "Spatial Layout Efficiency" presentation made to National Capital Planning Commission, Washington DC, 15 June 2011. Washington DC.

Turner, Alasdair. 2001. "Angular analysis." Space Syntax 3rd International symposium, Altanta, GA, USA.

PAPER #1.11

THE POLITICS OF THE ILLUSION / THE IMAGE AS A REJECTION OF TYPOLOGICAL TYRANNY

Jonathan Scelsa[a]
[a]Pratt Institute, New York, NY USA

ABSTRACT

The architectural academy's new exploration between the complex relationship of image and geometry has come under scrutiny of late as a rejection of the multiplied interest in form wrought by the prowess of the digital generation. This burgeoning trope - wherein images, graphics and low depth decoration are implemented for their ability to overpower, undermine and push geometry into the realm of false or readings - has a rich history for its use in the political rejection of authority, despite its oft contemporary implementation as a neutral post-digital affect of ambiguity. Throughout several times in western history, the realm of the decorative architectural image illusion has been utilized as a sharp criticism of the totalizing and absolute authority of the architectural type that had been forcibly instituted by a larger regime, political force or faith. Through critical manipulation of the prevailing drawing practice of the time period, architects would be able to implement a criticism of the spatial practices insidiously inserted within an opulent construction of the stylistic whole. This essay will examine four situationally specific drawing practices, the Second-Style of Antiquity, Mannerist Quadratura, Post-Enlightenment Anamorphosis, the Super-graphic of Post-Modernity. This paper will use new representational methods of Point Cloud Photogrammetric scanning to reconstruct the image oriented space of illusionary wall situation drawings, establishing the political critique embedded in this practice as a means of contemporary critique.

KEYWORDS

Illusion; quadratura; anamorphosis; photogrammetry.

INTRODUCTION

The architectural academy's new exploration between the complex relationship of image and geometry has come under scrutiny as of late as a rejection of the multiplied interest in form wrought by the prowess of the digital generation. This burgeoning trope - wherein images, graphics and low depth decoration are implemented for their ability to overpower, undermine and push geometry into the realm of false or readings - has a rich history for its use in the political rejection of authority, despite its oft contemporary implementation as a neutral post-digital affect of ambiguity. Throughout several times in western history, the realm of the decorative architectural image illusion has been utilized as a sharp criticism of the totalizing and absolute authority of the architectural type that had been forcibly instituted by a larger regime, political force or faith. Through critical manipulation of the prevailing drawing practice of the time period, using precise optic strategies of Spherical Antique perspective, Quadratura, and Anamorphposis architects would be able to implement a criticism of the spatial practices insidiously inserted within an opulent construction of the stylistic whole.

While, the digital turn has seen a change in our visual studies syllabi to conflate projective drawing procedures in both digital and

analogous hand drawn procedures, image-oriented procedures continue to be shunned to a different time and place of the curricula invested in Photoshop filters or photo-realist rendering procedures. This peculiarity may be most linked to Giorgio Vasari's original separation of Disegno, meaning drawing or design, from *colore*, that which concerns decorative painting. The former taking root in design and perspective as a manipulation of points and lines in space as cut and cast through picture planes. While historically, this segregation was underscore by the division of labor for those who were technically constructing an architectural mural today's technology no longer creates such a differentiation. Contemporary means of photogrammetry, blends the two color and geometry into a singular piece of image data containing 6 numerical values, x, y, z, and r,g,b. (Figure 1).

Further when we examine the larger idea of the image-window, rather than the picture plane for merely geometry, it is apparent these are all a part of the same rigorous procedure and lineage of thinking.

> 'From the mid-fifteenth century writings of Leon Battista Alberti to the late twentieth-century computer software trademarked by Microsoft as Windows, the window has a deep cultural history as an architectural and figurative trope for the framing of the pictorial image. An opening in architectural space the window supplies a common metaphor for the various frames that form its virtual analogs – the frame of the painting or photograph, the screen of the movie, television and computers. Alberti's Renaissance metaphor drew upon the window as an analog for the perspectival frame of the painting; since then the window and its common metaphysical corollary perspective have remained central figures in theorization of the space of vision (Friedberg 2009).

In her book, *The Virtual Window*, Friedberg describes the evolution of the thinking of Albertian projective mechanics over time through a vast array of media, that arguably have been in effect far earlier than even the fifteenth century master himself in one form or another. When we consider a pixel to be a

Figure 1. An illustration of a scan of the Piano Nobile Prospettivo Room designed and painted by the architect Baldassari Peruzzi in the Villa Farnesina in Rome by the Author.

point of colored light rendering an infinitesimal moment, we can also understand its ability to travel in space towards the eye creating a set of colorful lines that are in turn capable of being protectively cut by the picture plane, the window or the screen as can be described in the authors (figure 2).
In this way image too is a projective procedure, and throughout history we can see its technique has been rigorously used for its ability to calculate and create distortions on the surfaces of architecture. It is also clear that image and geometry have a complex relationship, as often the internal high contrast within image can visually overpower the effects of shadow and light thereby undermining our ability to detect the folds and curves of the surface geometry on which the images are at play. While this fact may have just gained attention and traction within the contemporary community as a direct rejection of the import and digital turn's obsession with geometry and form, it has been a known practice throughout western and eastern architectural tradition as a means of utilizing projective mechanics to create a sense of false space, virtually constructed and over-riding the spatial typology whence it is deployed.

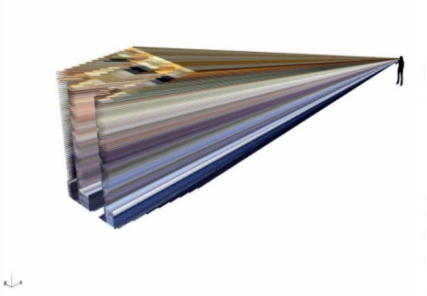


Figure 2. An illustration of the way that contemporary technology has the capability to move image data through the perspectival lens in the same manner as lineaments and projection of geometric lines by the Author.

Figure 3. The decomposed point cloud of the Prospetivo painted by Baldasarri Peruzzi projected onto its virtualized geometry by the Author.

Further, the contemporary presents several new technologies that are embedded in the historical techniques discussed above, including most notably photogrammetry. A system that relies on the camera as a perspectival machine de-coupling color and space into a form of architectural colored points, each embedded with spatial coordinates and an RGB value to aid in the production of a robust digital environment.

The Second Style in the Domus

One of the most analyzed and celebrated Architectural aspects of Roman Antiquity would be the Atrium House or Domus as described and illuminated by Vitruvius in his *Ten Books on Architecture*. While, it is most often discussed for its environmental merit or typological persistence, this essay will argue that the image oriented decorative principles of the Atrium, at the time of the Roman Republic, demonstrate a political act of subversion as rendered through spatial illusion. During the Roman Republic,

between the fourth and first century before the common era, atria existed as defined spaces, albeit often with gray borders at two scales of implementation, both at shared scale of the city as well as at the scale of the individual domestic within houses of state and mercantile leadership. Notably in both cases the atrium was formed as a quasi indoor - outdoor space with some overhead framed view of the sky, within a semi-enclosed environment that maintained open-access. The concept of access should be qualified in this case as both view-shed access and physical and tangible ability to move within and in between the various programs of the surrounding architecture. It is notable that in antiquity there was a radical different notion of public - private space (Russell 2016).

One of the natures of the roman republic was a scattered work-force where artisans, and senators each maintained their own practice within their homes. As a result, during republican rule, two centers, the atrium and the peristylium, were employed within the home. The atrium was an extension of the roman market and road, axially bleeding into the home as a space of connection and commerce (Sewell 2002). These atrium, elastically varying in size from domus to domus, would be employed in families of merchant class, senatorial class as well as in the smaller scale houses of the poor, albeit scaled down with similar planometric rules. These atria informed the center of the roman public life within the home and the space of *salutatio*, a practice wherein the merchant owner or governmental patrician would be available each morning by law to greet petitioners from the street. For the ancient world, it could be maintained that the atrium acted as an urban juridical device, both in its ability to bring individuals in, allowing them to become witness observers, but also in the way it endemically presents a symbolic space of the republic's principles of representation. Herein we see that many rooms of dining and the alae were directly accessible to the public as they moved into house during salutatio, extending the visual watch of political praxis. This spatial typology, regulated by the government.

The image frescoes of the domus, provide a further example of the efficacy of the spatial type for public oversight in their attempt to subvert that spatial typology by providing illusionistic privacy. It is notable that the atrium was written about as public, in the way it should be adorned; Cicero, Sallust and Pliny were notorious for attacking the use of high decoration except in places where all could enjoy, an example of which described in Cicero's *De Officiis* being the house of a public official as a space of salutation (Russell 2016). The Second-Style of the Ancient Roman republic, utilized what has now been described by authors such as Erwin Panofsky, as Antique Perspective, or spherical perspective, wherein the picture-plane described an understanding of the world based on our view through the ocular sphere. This technique deployed that understanding of perspective for the purposes of confusion and opulent camouflage de-materializing the physicality of the wall through references to exterior garden spaces of the peristylium. Though often dismissed by Roman Historians such as Andrew-Wallace Hadrill as an opulent parlor trick, an alternative argument can be constructed these frescoes were commissioned to present an illusionary affect to the solicitor entering the atrium during salutation, in order to create a sense of false-privacy spatial distortion of the legally mandated typology.

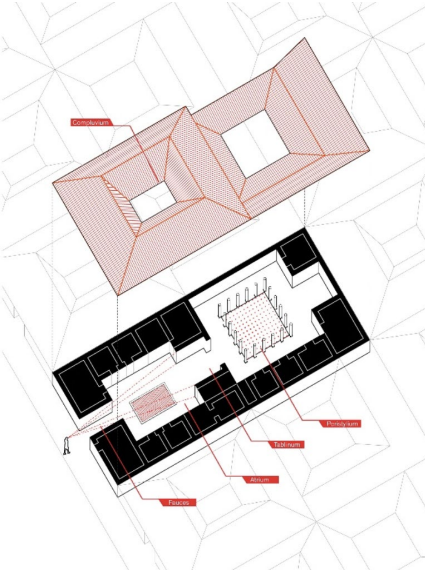


Figure 4. The space of illusion during the second style was encased within the quasi public open area of the house which provided a senses of false privacy for the public officials who lived in governmental regulated typology. Drawn by the Author.

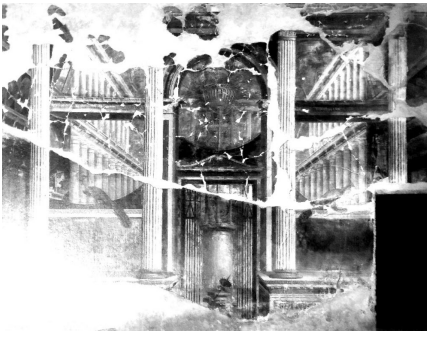


Figure 5. Photo taken by the author of the Villa Poppea visitation space which figured a false depth courtyard as a typological separation tool.

The Roman practice first stipulated the painting a plaster coat called the intonachino, in which the scheme of the planned spatial depiction was rapidly scratched as a series of Lineaments, we can see an example of this idea as depicted within the archaeological space of Villa Opplontis. The Pictor Parietarius, literally meaning of "painter of the walls," would enter the scene first drawing the columns, aediculae, bases, pediments, for the background and frame, employing equipment such as plumb-lines, leaving space for the Pictor Imaginarius, to paint the individual figural moments and scenes of landscape within and beyond. Beyond technique, several spatial ideas were also cemented in the Ancients. Firstly, choreographed station points as Scenografia, were used to impress visitors of the mercantile and political homes within the atria of the domus. The frescoes were placed in view corridors that would be coincident with the visitor, extending the space. Secondly, the frescoes did not operate alone, but rather their subject matter, such as fictional columns would correspond in plan to the ring of columns surrounding the adjacent courtyard.

Support for this might be witnessed within the subject matter of the actual canvas by example of the Villa Poppea of Opplontis. Herein the wall-image references the very room upon which it is painted though it is pushed backwards in space, and surrounded by a fictional garden. Thus the space of the meeting is objectified by creating a walled-privacy perimeter. Several art historians have noted the visual and cultural change to Rome following the Republic under the Imperial Rule of Augustus, whom pushed for "the moral turn-around" during which "the illusion of breaking through the wall is no longer sought – rather its integrity is emphasized – and the viewer is meant to focus on the meaning of just a few images that dominate

the room. (Zanker 2002)" This break from the interest in speculative unreal or hedonistic fantastic practice, could also be argued to an imperialistic return to the physical architecture of a surveilled reigning in the act of confusion. With the neutered power of the senate and the mercantile class under imperial regime there was decided less need for privacy, particularly within the change of state-hood.

Quadratura in the Villa

This new illusionary practice, was more formalized into painting and decorative practice within the Cinque Cento, known as the Quadraturista. The mannerist century brought forth several new inventions to the trompe - loiel practice while seeing it popularized, in noble houses. Within the last century, there has been intense architectural scholarship on the typology of the Italian villa during the mannerist era of the sixteenth century. Figures such as Rudolf Wittkower and Colin Rowe analyzed and pronounced the work of Andrea Palladio as an individual who developed formal and proportional rules, a game which was of high interest for the late Modernist academy, whom was currently under the its own tyranny of modernist technologic rules of construction. Even today the analysis of the Palladio's Magnum opus has retained an emphasis on architectural form and geometry over the embedded imagery that was often planned simultaneously with the architecture and painted coincident with construction. The suggestion has been always that the villa is one of the most radically ideological architecture's because it hides its economic dependency on the city by claiming self-sufficiency within the countryside (Aureli 2011). The time period of the sixteenth century would underscore this analysis due to a called switchover of regional economics in the Veneto from the mercantile Venetian dominance to an agrarian base and a call by such nobleman like Alvise Cornaro that the country-side economics should be of dominance politically. Later historians have called attention to their earlier colleague's omission of the situational elements of the Palladian architecture including the Barchese Barns. Interestingly, the imagery of the walls planned by architectural illustrator Paolo Veronese, whom often painted trompe' loiel architectural image alterations to the Palladian typology, with false doors and elongated passageways that would serve to link.

Baldassari Peruzzi at the turn of the sixteenth century introduced asymmetrical standpoint and thus proto- anamorphosis in his master-work for the Farnese family in the prospettivo room of the Villa Farnesina. This asymmetry began to make noticeable the prospect of the illusion. The prospettivo room is situated on the piano nobile of the Villa which at the time was on the outskirts of Rome on the south bank of the Tiber surrounded by agrarian fields of which the room in fact is only able to view to the south. Peruzzi creates false imagery of the room to depict an outer balcony wrapping around the piano nobile, a decisive typological anomaly within the villa that typologically always demonstrates a sidedness of front and back. Even more peculiar and perhaps subversive is the content of the horizon depicted in the omnidirectional balcony. The horizon depicts the full-relationship of the villa to both the country-side and the city of Rome itself, sprawling around it on multiple axes. Though the regional economics of Lazio were different from that of the Veneto, and the Farnese family may not have been as openly oppositional to the city, this can be seen as an open criticism of the prevailing ideology to separate the type into the nature of the countryside.

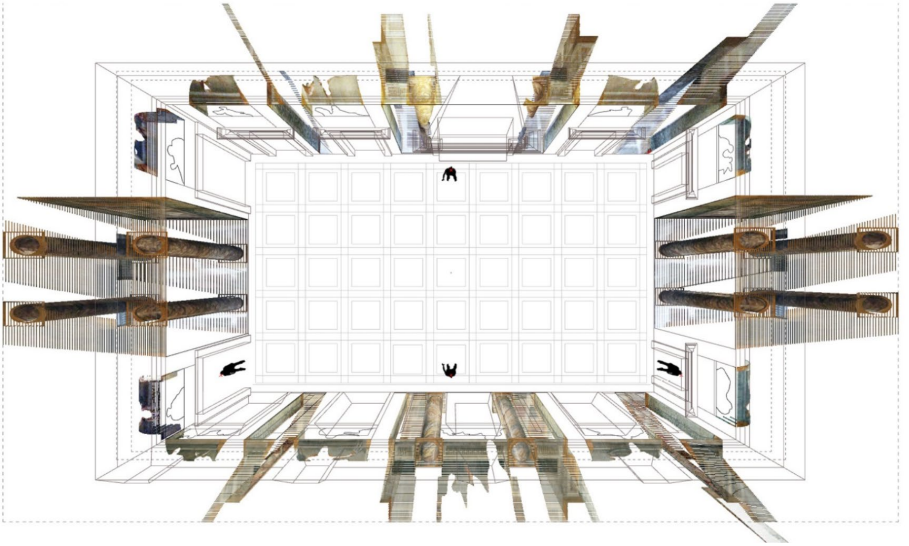


Figure 6. The overlay of the two typological spaces provide a form of contradictory critical collage, which was suggestive of a means of alteration against a prevailing structural, organization and typological configuration in the above case the Villa by the Author.

Anamorphosis and the Mother Church

The post-enlightenment period saw, another example of architectural illusion in the form of Anamorphosis Perspective, as a means of countering the propaganda of a specific sect of the Church. The period of the enlightenment within Italy, developed much specific research on the properties geometric distortion as developed through the optic capability of mirrors, lenses and warped picture planes. The Church of the Santissima Trinità dei Monti, became a sanctuary for exploration surrounding drawing, a place where later the Jesuits would commission Pozzo to create a room. Here two French monks Emmanuel Maignan and Francois Niceron in an academy like setting began exploring the principles of Anamorphosis, a little known technique that was minimally explored by Hans Holbein in his work of the Ambassadors a century earlier. The Monks developed this technique as the drawing an image through an oblique or non-perpendicular picture plane such that the individual would understand this from a specific angle. It is notable that one of the monks, Niceron began to explore this through processes of mirror reflectivity and the distortion of the image through conical reflection, while the other Emmanuel Maignan explored the ways the technique to be used to hide images from specific vantage points and expand space.

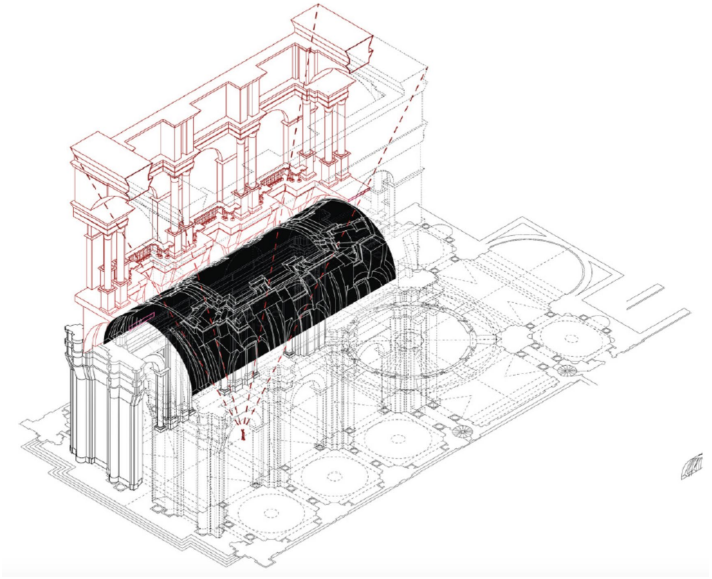


Figure 7. The Optical criticism of The Mother Church typology as rendered by Andrea Pozzo in St. Ignatius in Rome.

The society of the Jesuits was a newly formed sect of the Christian church during the 15th century, and one which was backed by the Farnese family during the Cinquecento in Rome and eager to gain a foot-hold. As written about retroactively "The Nineteenth-century notion of a Jesuit Style designated architecture as a system of persuasion, treating built forms as evidence of the manipulative methods of the Jesuits (Levy 2004)." Its home church, Il Gesu, earned its fame by for the first true Baroque Façade was built in Rome by the Farnese family Architect Giacomo Barozzi di Vignola. The plan-type is famous for a limited to non-existent narthex, the typical interior exterior transition zone, and a singular nave without aisles derived in a fashion to create full attention to the main altar. Very quickly the design of the church set forth a typological plan for Jesuit churches around the world that lasted into the twentieth century arguably as a form of propaganda in an aesthetic agenda.

The later instantiation of the Mother Church's plan at St. Ignazio also in Rome, provides a case-study in the use of Anamorphosis as a subversion of the type through the de-materialization of the ceiling. The decorative designers, architect and brother Andrea Pozzo, utilized the recently discovered new techniques such as Anamorphosis for spatial criticism of the unyielding type, through the activation of a vantage point in the central stage that removed the gaze from the central liturgy and focused on individuals ascending to a heaven above with signs and emblems of science, such as the mirror. Pozzo went on to use this technique in several other Jesuit churches through Italy and Austria, and more closely in the chambers of the original Il Gesu to convert the barrel vault of a room into a more classically minded enfilade picture gallery chamber, flattening the cylindrical ceiling and false situational geometry of the site into an elongated and flat cellularized room, for contemplation and change of speed.

The Super-graphic in Housing

The 1970's, gave birth to another counter-cultural image - space project. Sponsored by research at Yale under Charles Moore and C. Ray Smith the project began under the labels of Campo-pop, and the Super Mannerism the project combining the current practices of Camp, pop and op art. The Supergraphic was defined as giant - two dimensional graphics applied to architectural surfaces, with the forms being so large that "no design is to be held within a given architectural plane" (Mcmorrough 2007). The activation of the graphic over multiple planes de-stabilizes the optical perspective, due to the high contrast reading of flatness. This disfiguring of the geometric sensibility of the perspective was most often used as a point of specific cultural insertion into the white box of Modernism wherein the post-war generation found themselves. Otherwise the condition has been used as a method of Optical Dissociation from space and time, Op-Art as seen as a means of "breaking the rationalization of space we call scientific perspective (Gombrich 1985)." The image of the supergraphic both undermines the geometry through flattening but also serves to unify a disparate set of designed spaces under a singular whole, Norma Skurka and Oberto Gill go further to define the social capability of this where, 'In modern buildings there is none of the inherent charm of earlier times…The cost of decorating these boxes to give them some of the atmosphere that they can lack can be outrageous, but paint is cheap and colorful.(McMorrough 2007).' Herein the McMorrough underscore one of the inherent dichotomys of the image project and why it has been eschewed from the architectural realm, as a part of the lack of intrinsic, or tectonic, while establishing its power in changing and altering the perception of Geometry. Throughout the latter half of the twentieth century, architects such as Hugh Hardy and Barabra Stauffacher Solomon pushed for a new paradigm between image and geometry in their house and apartment projects establishing expansion and subtraction of the reality of the white box enclosure. Today perhaps a new order of gradient between image and geometry needs to be established rather than the initial dichotomy put forth by Vasari where the technology and criticality of the author can be established in a spectrum (Figure 8).

CONCLUSION

The schism of image and projective drawing in today's schools marks the continuation of thought that suggest the *colore* practice is not able to be complicit in the disgeno or formal generation. This hard-graphic line has maintained a separation between architect and his/her ability consider the realm of interior design and decoration as integral to the architectural practice. The irony is that these architect / painters of the past have demonstrated that colore or manipulation of image is also a procedure of projective geometry and truly a spatial practice. This is evident both in its procedure of pixels and paint being manipulated in a virtual projective model, but also in its ability to over-ride and subvert the spatial typology informed by the geometry of the architect. The second outcome is to demonstrate the possibility of illusion within the realm of architecture as a critical agent beyond its mere opulent effect. The work will be situated in narrative within its context and time-frame, to show the micro-political changes that the image - geometry relationship participated in. Further, the project will serve not to emphasize image overly in the generic, but architectural images which are spatially keyed to specific vantage points activating a spatial organizational problem. Our courses that fall under visual representation need to move beyond drawing as exclusively the province of disegno and into the all-encompassing ideology of the Architectural Image in both pixel and vector.

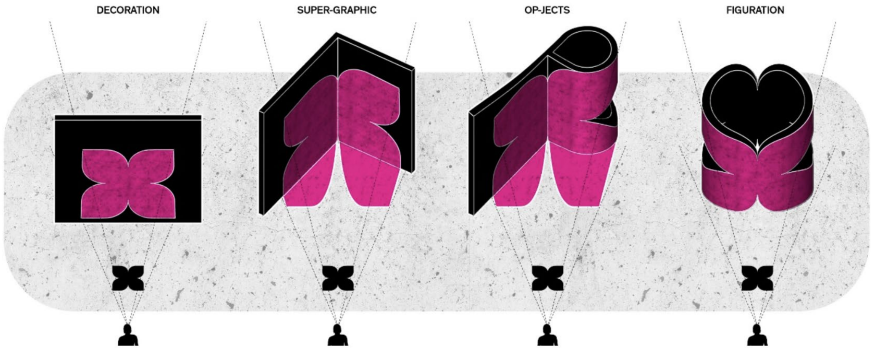


Figure 8. Rather than segregating pictorial image color content into two strands perhaps a more apropos spectrum allows for the understanding on whether these provide a critical redressing of the geometric typology as in the hybrid examples in the center. Drawn by the author.

REFERENCES

Aureli, Pier Vittorio. *The possibility of an Absolute Architecture:* Massachusetts Institute of Technology. 2011.

Friedberg, Anne. *The Virtual Window: from Alberti to Microsoft,* MIT Press, 2009, pp. 5

Russell, Amy. *The Politics of Public Space in Republican Rome*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2016, p8.

IBID. p 12

Sewell, Jamie. *The Formation of Roman Urbanism, 338-200 B.C.: Between Contemporary Foreign Influence and Roman Tradition.* Portsmouth, RI: Journal of Roman Archaeology, 2010.

Zanker, Paul. *The Power of Images in the Age of Augustus.* Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2002.

Levy, Evonne. *Propaganda and the Jesuit Baroque*. University of California Press; First edition, 2004.

MacMorrough, John. "Breaking the Lid off of Paint' in *Hunch: Rethinking Representation Vol 11*. The Berlage Institute. Episode Publishers. 2007

Gombrich, EH. *Meditations on a Hobby-Horse.* Phaidon Press; 1985

PAPER #1.12

THE ARCHITECTURE OF CHANDIGARH CAPITOL

Maite Palomares Figueres[a], Ivo Vidal Climent[a], Ciro Vidal Climent[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

From ancient Babylonian and Egyptian civilizations man has found in the architectural enclosure the response to a feeling of protection and presence that nature itself already offered in certain places. Its trail takes us from the funerary temple of Djoser, built by Imhotep, where a first mastaba defines a funeral enclosure which assumes, given the need for horizontal growth, the construction of a stepped pyramid that gives an answer to the visual call as a monument. Or the Athenian Acropolis itself, which dominates as an island on the Attic plain, in which architecture has emphasized the landscape of nature transforming the hill of the Acropolis in a sacred enclosure. This enclosed platform is called a Temenus and it establishes the relationship of unity amongst the gorgeous buildings that make up the sanctuary, allowing us to perceive the Parthenon as a great territorial monument.
This same system of spatial boundedness is behind the generation of the capitoline enclosure of the city of Chandigarh and gives the naturalness of its limits to the different buildings that are placed on it. That is why we understand the capitol complex as a unity in which every building, every monument, has a relationship with the others, despite its vast but neat extension of about four hundred meters. The importance of this work by Le Corbusier lies in its founding will to affirm the new impetus of Indian civilization, and it does so by accepting that both the enclosure and its content belong to a millenary architectural code. The architectural limits once again become the key that allow us to incorporate the abstract and emotional thought that nests hidden in a collective memory that connects the different civilizations with each other.

KEYWORDS

Civilization; landscape; territory; enclosure; monument; Chandigarh.

INTRODUCTION

The objective of this writing is to show the correspondence between the material reality that architecture produces as a human contribution and the physical reality of the site that the territory offers. In this sense, the choice of the enclave is essential to participate in the production of the material witnesses that every civilization bequeaths to the future as testimony of its existence.
Impressed by the Indian landscape of Punjab, Le Corbusier realizes that the feeling of perenniality that permeates the territory has to be maintained within the new city created from the political will of an emerging state in order to become an act of affirmation of Indian civilization.
Site awareness is a subjective experience that human beings perceive when stimulated by the surrounding landscape. What gets disturbing for an architect is not the fact of knowing that the landscape can become the threshold that calls us to a transcendental understanding of the earth as a human site, but knowing that other previous architectures have been able to convey that experience, because from the cultivation of its memory as consciousness, the enclosure is understood as a place, and therefore a negation of that non-place (Marc Augé's non-lieu) that envelops and engulfs a banal civilization.
When, at the end of December 1949, Le Corbusier was commissioned for the

Chandigarh project, he was already a mature architect, and, although his time on earth was shortening, he knew that each work generates an emotional threshold that permanently haunts strong architects. Le Corbusier, moved by the territorial beauty of the enclave where the Capitol was to be built, took note of the background landscape that the Siwalik mountain range offered to the Capitol settlement. Faced with an offering such as the plain with the open furrows and the bottom of the hills prior to the Siwalik mountain range, Le Corbusier's epiphanies transport him from the Athenian acropolis (Fig. 1), the Roman fields or the Algerian coasts to his immersion in the Mughal civilization. Everything is an unrepeatable reference that architecture assumes and adopts as a dialectical means to increase and complement the cultural value on which civilizations rely to stabilize.

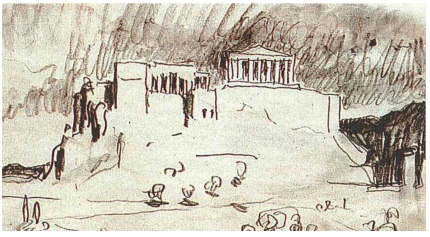


Figure 1. Le Corbusier's sketch of the Acropolis of Athens. (AV Monografías 2015)

Lansdcape

The term landscape has a multiplicity of meanings. It appears in the most diverse disciplines and is used both to designate a more or less humanized physical space or a metaphor. However, the notion of the landscape that we can use, from the architectural point of view, is more linked to the sensitive and emotional aspects and to the way of limiting the enclosure and accepting the place, rather than to the totally remote rational concepts typical of the disciplines of the geographer, ecologist or sociologist. We speak of landscape as an extension of land whose locus consciousness is defined by certain spatial stimuli.

Territory

The territory (from the Latin Territorium) is a portion of the earth's surface, a physical extension where the landscape is located. If we analyze the term territory, in some way, we discover that although the limits that define it are mentally very complex, they are three-dimensionally linked to the finite vision and the spatial continuum.

Enclosure

The enclosure (from Latin re and cinctus, enclosed, surrounded), is understood as the space comprised within certain limits, the enclosed, possessed, marked or limited space.
The immeasurable space takes, through the tangible object, the opposite notion of measurable space. In this way, both space and object become a tangible volume that has three-dimensional quality and is scientifically measurable. These two entities as duality are sufficient to form, through their almost unlimited possibilities of variation, the objects and space of common architecture. But not every object-space duality configures a place. Enclosure awareness has a subjective connotation that is linked to a deeper intuition of space, but whose measurability is linked to the limits that configure it. If we analyze these limits, we will discover the relationship between the territorial enclosure configured by natural elements and the enclosure constructed artificially by the human being. The similarity between the vertical wall or the horizontal platform, and the tangible elements that configure the measurable boundaries of the territory, render the enclosure a dimensionless architectural operator and,

occasionally, difficult to distinguish in the landscape in which it is territorially implanted.
Although enclosures can be different in scale and disposition, they are not dissimilar in primeval organization because they serve the same function of providing scale and measure to space in order to form the most precious and evanescent value of architecture, the consciousness of the formation of a place.
The architectonic operator of the enclosure, so common in the natural world, arises simultaneously in distant places and from different starting points, because its relationship with the environment can be authoritarian or subtly sensitive and therefore its attitude can vary between the domination of the territory and the simple differentiation. In Chandigarh Capitol Le Corbusier links the enclosure, as a spatial operator, with the monument, as destiny. The first is legitimated through its limits, however the second is only constituted as a corporeal element having the previous configuration of the enclosure.

Monument

The term monument (from Latin monumentum, moneo mentum), is an expression originally derived from the concept of memory. The meaning that interests us is that of a natural or artistic element which, due to its exceptional nature, is worthy of attention, of showing itself and even of being saved.
Territorially, the monument is linked to the theatrical figure of the protagonist and, due to its exceptional nature, it must be shown alone since its excessive repetition can transform it into a background. Thus, a small hill can be a large monument inserted in a plain, while an abrupt and irregular mountain range becomes an unquestionable territorial limit.
The search for visual domination of the territory is a characteristic of architectures that aspire to an impressive figuration and therefore are associated with the concept of monument. The predominant disposition of the monument must be subtly sensitive to the environment, since its formal expression, that aspires to impress, must occur as an event, as a special ingredient, in order not to generate confusion.
In this interaction with the environment, architecture grows gradually from a conceptual structure that sets the boundaries between the geometric and the natural world, organizing its level of relationship and overlap.

1. ENCLOSURE AND MONUMENT IN LE CORBUSIER

The study of nature does not imply imitating its appearance, since the existential laws of whose complexity we feed reside in its diversity, strength and unlimited subtlety. Visiting a place like Chandigarh, which hides a balanced harmony under an apparently random order, allows you to discover the relationship between the distant landscape and your own place. This natural dialogue implies equality and mutual subordination. This balanced dialectic is particularly sought after in Le Corbusier's projects, and it is in his later works such as Ronchamp or Chandigarh, that we can experience his architecture feeling the effect of the combination of visual patterns typical of the monument, together with the topographic patterns typical of the enclosure.

1.1. Voyage d'Orient

In his "Journey to the East" he uses six travel "cards", as a tool not to forget, in which he prints some 300 drawings that reveal, along with the writings he outlines on some pages, the inquiries that he would apply throughout his career using basic, simple principles. The way of working of some of his later projects is clearly expressed in these notebooks. Le Corbusier's urban proposals are characterized by accentuating the characteristics of the territory in which they are projected, in such a way that they seek to preserve, given the necessary urbanization, the landscape

sensation that the environment already housed.
On his early trip to Athens, Le Corbusier visits the Acropolis site and the monumental Parthenon, which is located in the highest area of the city's sacred temenus. The architecture that is located on the temenus fascinates him since it emphasizes the natural elevated enclosure, transforming the former hill into a founding enclosure.

1.2. The lesson of Rome

In the drawings in which he traces the profile of the Vatican with Bramante's Belvedere as the protagonist, we can recognize the importance for him to discover the magnitude of the horizontal line that marks the limits of the Renaissance enclosure, since he even added a note that clarifies the intention of the drawing "it never extends enough". This reflection, together with the imaginary views of Rome in which he draws horizontal lines and vertical volumes, are the printed expression of a most important inquiry, in which the historic city becomes the master teaching a promising young apprentice. How else to understand the chapel on Ronchamp hill where he evokes, in the east portico, the ancient pagan rite of the external sacrificial ara visually dominating the orderly Roman fields (champ romain) that give their name to the location.

2. CHANDIGARH

When India became independent from the British in 1947, the country was divided into two, with Muslim Pakistan to the northwest and Hindu India to the northeast. The most traumatic part of this division was the fracture of the Indian province of Punjab, whose capital Lahore, was ceded to Pakistani territory. This motivated the decision of Prime Minister Nehru in 1947, three years after the partition of the former English colony, to create a new capital for the provinces of Punjab and Haryana. This new city was called Chandigarh (चंडीगढ़), which means "Fort Chandi", in honor of a temple-fortress dedicated to the goddess Chandi located nearby.
The lack of Indian professionals with the ability to plan a new city made it necessary to call a Western professional. The first proposal, in the form of a fan based on the garden-city of Ebenezer Howard, was drawn by the American architects Matthew Nowicki and Albert Mayer but, after Nowicki's death in a plane crash, and given Mayer's resignation, the comission was given to the Swiss architect Le Corbusier.
Charles-Édouard Jeanneret-Gris (Le Corbusier) had not had the opportunity, despite the influential ideas on urban planning discussed mainly through the CIAM (International Congress of Modern Architecture), to develop on large-scale the architectural concepts already put into practice in various smaller projects. He did not hesitate to assume the role of "Spiritual Director" of the project and organized a team formed by his cousin Pierre Jeanneret, the English Maxwell Fry with his wife Jane Drew and a score of enthusiastic young Indian architects, to develop a new project and dismiss the one made by Mayer. Chandigarh was thus, the only urban project executed by Le Corbusier, in which he put all his efforts from 1951 until his death in 1965, generating a city of wide roads, gardens and parks, with a very different architectural value, away from the traditional intertwined labyrinth that the cities of the neighboring provinces had become.

2.1. Territotial location

Le Corbusier and Pierre Jeanneret took contact with the vast plain where Chandigarh would be located on February 23, 1951. The visual limit of the Siwalik mountain range to the northeast, the two tributaries of the Cho Sukhna river to the east and west, as well as a plain with a slight slope that descended towards the southwest and a wavy valley formed by the seasonal erosion of the monsoon rain in the

plain, established the natural conditions by which the urban project should be allowed to be promoted. The capture of the distant limits that make up the backdrop of the Siwalik mountain range (or External Himalayas), the last of the mountain ranges located south of the Himalayan mountain range, generated a natural setting that allowed to restore the quiet territorially inherited monumentality. The regular and orthogonal plot of the plowed fields, with its spontaneous linear organization justified revising the wavy lines of Mayer's previous project for Chandigarh.
About twenty years before he had given the solution to the urban problems of the American cities, after a systematic observation of all the variables. On February 23 Le Corbusier found, in the hollow that strategically crossed the agricultural plain and was oriented towards the mountains, the direct path to the new planning (Fig. 2), as it became the metaphorical axis of the new city: a linear park, crossed by winding roads and small forest areas that, following the course of the water, would link the city center with the Capitol complex. The moment in which the new capital establishes the natural conditions of the territory is when the grid of streets takes the territorial direction marked by this valley.

Figure 2. Model of Chandigarh (1951-65). (AV Monografías 2015)

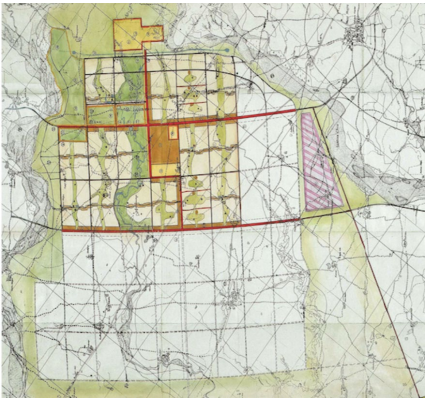


Figure 3. Urban plan of Chandigarh (AV Monografías 2015)

2.2. Communication grid

The response to the specific characteristics of the territory was an orthogonal grid unfolding on the plain, as previously the old roads that crossed the plowed fields had done. In this way the timeless country landscape merged with the urban design to offer a perfect combination between the awareness of the natural environment and the planning of the city.
The city of Chandigarh, with half a million inhabitants, is based on a geometry of a rectangular grid of streets called "Vs" that adapts to the topography of the land (Fig. 3). The basic unit of this orthogonal grid proposal is the "Sector", conceived as self-sufficient and introverted, subdivided into neighborhood units of around 150 families. Each sector, measuring 1200 x 800 m, is circumscribed by high-speed roads called V2 if they go to special public services or V3 if they are high-speed avenues that cross the city. Crossed in turn, from east to west, a commercial street V4 connects to other adjacent sectors and leads to local facilities, and a V5 neighborhood road from north to south allows it to connect with domestic access roads V6, while pedestrian roads V7 and V8 bikeways are linked to the fringes of parks and green areas.

Le Corbusier's ability to capture the significance of the eastern heritage allowed him to discover the immense possibilities of historical documents such as the Mansara Shilpa Sastras, a set of old architectural treaties over 3,000 years old, to solve the question of the relationship between contemporary and historical urbanism. The unprejudiced gaze of a master of architecture is able to see with yearning eyes beyond the line where others already lack clarity. With that mixture of intuition and historical rigor he found a new way of relating to an ancestral culture, although also very different from the historical treatise that gave account of that culture. Regarding city planning the Mansara Shilpa Sastras talks about the division of the city into "sectors", the basic units that Le Corbusier reinterprets in the twentieth century, in which the fast roads will end up giving them a new meaning.

> When a site is selected for constructing a village, town or building there on the ground is divided into different numbers of squares. Thirty-two kinds of such schemes are distinguished by as many different names according to the number of squares into which the whole area is partitioned out. The whole scheme has been arranged in such a manner that in each case the number of partitions, represents the square of the serial number. The eighth plot, for instance, which is called Chaudita, comprises a division into sixty-four squares, while by the ninth plot, which bears the technical name of Paramagadhika, the ground is divided into eighty-one squares. (Kumar Acharya, 1934, 37-38)

As happens with travel drawings, historical treaty research and descriptions of trips to the East such as those of François Bernier to Hindustan and Kashmir, memory suddenly comes out of its long hibernation to participate in an architectural reflection. In the planning process of Chandigarh, "memories" took an active part and, in the countless meetings and information exchange that are always behind a project, Le Corbusier clearly made use of his abundant collection of resources.

2.3. Chandigarh Capitol

The capitol is located under the protection of the Siwalik Range (or Outer Himalayas), which is the last mountain range south of the Himalayas, so that, in the plain where the new city grid is built, the view adresses naturally to the north.

On February 24, 1951[1] (Casciato, 2015), one day after he had his first contact with the plain where Chandigarh would be located, Le Corbusier had checked the suggestions of the territory, but he had not yet decided in which direction the grid of the new city should be positioned. The next day he crossed the mountains located to the north of the site and visited the garden of the Maharaja of Patiala, the garden of Pinjore (Fig. 4), and in the drawing that he makes we can first recognize these same mountains as a backdrop as well as a succession of horizontal planes at different levels arranged along an axis perpendicular to the mountain range. The timeless lesson of this garden allows him to connect the project of the city with the territory, since the main axis that provides the geometry to the garden coincides almost exactly with the direction of the axes of the new city of Chandigarh. Great Indian gardens were designed around a central axis that related them to landmarks in the landscape and to figures that stood out majestically over the geometric structure of gardens and terraces inherited from Mughal architecture. The Mughal civilization, which began in the early sixteenth century, provided refined spatial sequences of horizontal planes akin to eastern Indian expressiveness, and paths where volumetric figures were related through a unitary conception of the outdoor space.

[1] *Casciato, Maristella.* "Chandigarh: el paisaje de una nueva capital". *En AV Monografías.* "LE CORBUSIER An Atlas of Landscapes". *2015, Nº176, Madrid, Arquitectura Viva SL. Pp 86-93.*

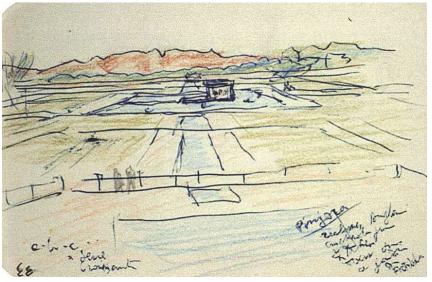


Figure 4. Sketch of Pinjore garden (1951) (AV Monografías 2015)

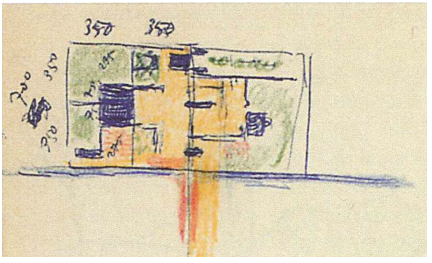


Figure 5. First sketches for the Capitol (AV Monografías 2015)

Two days after contact with the plain and the inheritance of the Mughal tradition, on February 26 Le Corbusier drew the first traces of the Capitol of the city of Chandigarh (Fig. 5) arranging its buildings on a large horizontal plane in the classic way used for the design of the sacred and foundational precincts both by the East and the West. In this scheme it is clear the intention of not understanding the Capitol as a set of fractions, but as a unit in which the space that is found bounded amongst the three main buildings will be the central area of the enclosure. Thus he aligns the building of the courts (judiciary) on one side of the symbolic axis, while on the opposite side he gathers the Assembly (legislative power) and the Secretariat (executive power). The long void between the Palace of Justice and the Assembly creates the central motif of the enclosure, which is the weight of space in the absence of a building. This great vacuum sustained by the tension between the two representative buildings is projected towards the city through the wide landscaped axis that forms the backbone of the urban grid and which is located perpendicular to the mountain range to offer it to the distant vision of the passersby who are heading towards northwest or to the Capitol.

Arranged at the northern end on the edge of Lake Sukhna, the Capitol is located in sector 1 separated from the rest of the city by parks and highways. In this enclosure Le Corbusier accentuates the mass of concrete buildings by relating them to the distant landscape, but where he shows his deep vision is by arranging the buildings, not as a dispersed series of volumes seated on the plain, but as a set of volumes related by a refined spatial sequence of horizontal planes that reaffirm its unitary conception as a governmental center of a region. This characteristic sense of unity transmitted by the Capitol relates it to the spatial development of Fathpur Sikri (Hoag, 1976) (Fig. 6), a palace complex built 42 km from Agra in 1573 with a massive red brick that has nothing to do with Chandigarh tectonics, but whose spatial sequence of gardens, ponds and terraces at different levels create a unity that provides the awareness of the enclosure (Bottero, 1966).

The Assembly (Fig. 7) is made up of three elements: the base formed by seven openings bounded by eight concrete walls, the lintel that crowns the openings and that reproduces again the horizontal line on which the third element appears, which is the emergence of two related silhouettes by a small void, an issue that is not strange to Indian sensibility because Mughal architecture already incorporated elements of distant silhouette, such as the iwan, the towers and domes in the Taj Mahal. The advantage of working with elements that have a familiar morphology is that modernity can deal with them without violence.

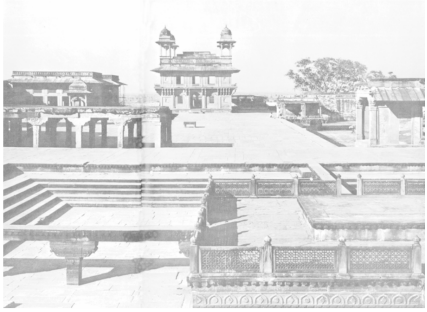


Figure 6. North view of Fathpur Sikri (Hoag, 1976)

In the Palace of Justice a similar decantation process occurs, since the first element that is perceived from the distance is the large roof that can be read supported by the transparency of the distant arcades, an architectural resource that is perceived by Le Corbusier as a defense against the heat through the shade and the breeze. However, in the short distance, this roof has been transformed, thanks to the geometric shape of the conoid, into a large horizontal line where, in addition, the location of the access has shifted to the left, renouncing to central symmetry (Fig. 8). The scale of this access reminds us of the iwan, the main access building of Mughal architecture, which is characterized by its axial position, the curved envelope of the arch, the depth of the opening and the generous height of three floors.

Le Corbusier uses those elements that are recognizable within Indian civilization, gives them dimension and depth, but displaces them in favor of a totally modern asymmetry. This condition of modernity also leads him to transform the upper openings visible as arches into a completely horizontal front or eave. In addition, just as the large horizontal roof unifies and gives modernity to the deep archway visible along the route to the building, also from a distance the brise soleil façade transforms into a fine openwork that filters the sun's rays as if it was a delicate filter or

Figure 7. Front view of the Assembly and Secretariat

brocade. That is, the elements of architecture are already elements that were in India and are collected to form a modern language that is legible, accepted and emotional.

The two confronted buildings dialogue as autonomous figures arranged on the horizontal plane and envelop us in a first range of plastic experiences that is enriched as we walk through the governmental platform, as we find a complete and built system of horizontal planes at different levels that preserve spatial continuity. This visual link between the different planes produces unity and allows extreme flexibility in the organization of the internal elements that characterize the governmental complex, which are the Geometric Hill, the Martyrs Memorial, the Tower of Shadows and the Open Hand.

The sculpture of the Open Hand (Fig. 9) occupies a lateral place about 150 meters away from the main platform. It is a depressed enclosure with approximate dimensions 25x40 meters. In this level four meters below

Figure 8. Palace of Justice. Main access.

the main platform, the sculpture's silhouette emerges weightless up to 25 meters in height and, by spinning on its axis, it once again claims our attention on its formal autonomy. Le Corbusier pays special attention to the dependence on shade as a way to overcome the high temperatures that the climate imposes regularly for more than half a year. This reason leads him to elaborate the Tower of Shadows (Fig 10) as an open construction whose shape is subject to obtaining shade, ventilation and volume. This enigmatic piece interspersed in the path of the Capitol platform invites visitors with the promise of a certain freshness and its strong visual presence. Next to it are the stairs that lead to the lower plane where the Geometric Hill is positioned, whose inclined front paved with local stone is characterized by having the drawing of a wave or sinusoidal curve, mathematical truth and clairvoyant allegory of the current era, dominated for the rights on frequency bands. In front of the massive presence of the Hill is the Martyrs' Memorial, an elevation perceived as a gentle ramp that provides the highest point of view from the main platform.

These three pieces act in a choral way, constituting a landmark in the central and narrower area of the platform. But they are not only perceived as figures, but the limits that configure the enclosure where they are installed, as well as the horizontal planes to which they obey, form a sequence that complements the great paved extension of the main platform. This integration of the various planes allows us to think of the governmental complex as a Greek initiatory temenus that offers a unifying order to the different constructions and which, in addition, is accompanied by smooth sheets of water that duplicate the presence of architecture and produce a reverberation that contributes to the perception of the unique atmosphere of this founding place.

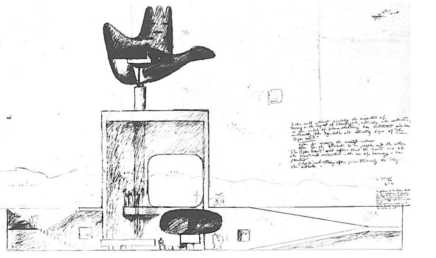


Figure 9. Sketch of the Open hand enclosure (AV Monografías 2015)

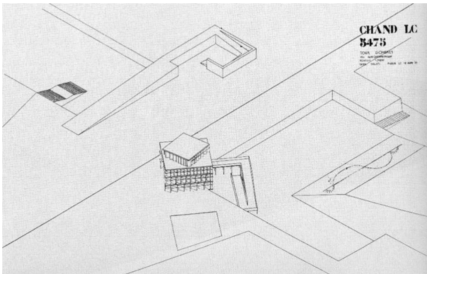


Figure 10. Axonometric of the Tower of Shadows Geometric hill and Martyrs' Memorial

CONCLUSIONS

The experience gathered by Le Corbusier regarding his reflections and drawings throughout his various journeys can be extrapolated to the historical investigation of the treatises and also to the descriptions of the travelers of the seventeenth century. In this sense, the memory hibernated for years emerges renewed to settle in the present and offer an updated interpretation of the limits between the natural environment and that manufactured by man. The hidden keys to the Capitoline precinct consist in recognizing the richness of the preceding civilization in a way that it is still readable by a population whose cultural roots are to be revitalized.

Le Corbusier uses extension as an isotropic principle without directional property that finds in the enclosure the key to maintaining its unity and its apparent immensity. The spatial complexity of the Capitoline complex implies working with opposites such as axiality-asymmetry, vertical-horizontal, empty-full, to be able to generate an identification with the place that is perceived distractedly when moving through the pedestrian bridges and paved surfaces, or when surrounding the artificial hill and water ponds or simply sharing on the platform of the Capitol an atmosphere that multiplies the value of the whole and makes it representative of our time.

The modernity of this work lies in accepting the site as an abstract operator that has its roots in the perceptual memory of every architect, and not in the tectonic imitation that leads to a shallow iconography. To understand the contributions of modern civilization it is necessary to recognize the codes of past times and to update their potential translating them with different means of production. By incorporating certain ancient architectural codes into a founding work like the Capitol Le Corbusier renewed their destiny in the Indian civilization.

Against the widespread belief that Le Corbusier is a mere inventor of forms, the appreciation of his great intellectual capacity must prevail as he was able to establish a link between the architecture of the past and contemporary architecture. In Chandigarh Le Corbusier produced a modern architecture conducting a multitude of dispersed voices that belonged to different fractions of a codified architectural material and he did so in a way that maintained a continuity with the territorial and cultural context of India.

REFERENCES

Bernier, François. Viaje al Gran Mogol, Indostán y Cachemira. Espasa Calpe S.A. Madrid 1940

Bottero, Maria. *Viaggio in India: da Le Corbusier a Kahn.* In Zodiac Nº 16. Le Corbusier. July 1966, Milano, Edizione de Comunità. Pp. 120-136.

Casciato, Maristella. *Chandigarh: el paisaje de una nueva capital*. In AV Monografías. "Le Corbusier. An Atlas of Landscapes". 2015, Nº176, Madrid, Arquitectura Viva SL. Pp. 86-93.

Hoag, John D. *Arquitectura Islámica.* Aguilar S.A. de ediciones. Madrid 1976. Pp. 371.

Kumar Acharya, Prasanna. *Indian Architecture according to Manasara-Silpasastra,* Oriental Books Reprint Corporation. New Delhi. Originally published by Oxford University Press, London 1934. Pp. 37-38

Martienssen, Rex D. *La Idea de Espacio en la Arquitectura Griega.* Ediciones Nueva Visión. Buenos Aires 1972.

Nitschke, Günter. *Ma, El sentido japonés del lugar*. Cuadernos Summa-nueva visión Nº 26/27. Japón una nueva perspectiva. Junio 1969, Buenos aires. Ediciones Nueva Visión SAIC. Pp. 14-15

IMAGES

Figures 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.- AV Monografías Nº176. Le Corbusier. An Atlas of Landscapes, Madrid 2015, Arquitectura Viva SL. Pp. 11. Pp. 15. Pp. 89. Pp. 93. Pp. 92.

Figure 6.- Hoag, John D. Arquitectura Islámica. Aguilar S.A. de ediciones. Madrid 1976. Pp 368-369.

Figures 7, 8. Google images.

Figures 9, 10 Le Corbusier Volume 8 des Euvres Completes, Les Dernieres Euvres, Zurich, Les Editions d Architecture Artemis, 1973, pp 67, pp 74.

PAPER #1.13

THE NEW CITIES OF THE THIRTEENTH CENTURY – A NEW URBAN PARADIGM IN THE IBERIAN PENINSULA

Filipe Brandão do Carmo[a]
[a]Lisbon School of Architecture, Universidade de Lisboa, Lisbon, Portugal

ABSTRACT

In the thirteenth century, in the wake of the Reconquista and the Hundred Years War, a need came to the reigning monarchs of the Iberian Peninsula and Southern France to consolidate newly conquered territory.
If the paradigm of the Iberian city is to be discussed, we must first trace its origin in history. When, in the thirteenth century, Alfonso X of Castile is urged with the need of consolidating his territory, he produces a new code of laws: *Las Siete Partidas,* a true instrument for the creation of new cities, much like its successor the Law of the Indies would be for the new territories of America. This necessity to consolidate territory was shared with other monarchs including Afonso III of Portugal and his son (Alfonso X grandson), Jaime I of Aragon and the Count of Toulouse and the English and French kings. Through this need several new cities came to existence in the region of the Iberian Peninsula and Southern France.
What was a need to expand claims of territory gave rise to a rethinking of the city and of its morphology. The new cities of the thirteenth century will bring forth a new urban paradigm, incorporating traditional street patterns but also establishing new urban elements.
The following paper will try to identify a common elements present in the Iberian city by the comparison and study of representative cities of the previously stated kingdoms. The underlying principles and urban morphologies of this period will set the tone not only for the continental cities but also for the new cities to be founded all over the world.

KEYWORDS

Iberoamerican history; city history; urban morphology; iberian cities.

1. PRELIMINARIES

1.1. Historical Premises

Following the occupation of the Iberian Peninsula by Moors in the eighth century, a military force of Asturians, having won a set of important battles led a military effort to reconquer the lost territory in what would become known as the Reconquista. If most of the peninsula was reconquered by the twelfth century, the progression was not steady and only in 1249 AD, for Portugal and 1492 AD for Spain was all the territory free from Moorish dominion. Although the conquering progressed quickly for the first centuries, most of the land was inhabited and a need for the consolidation and setting of urban networks was necessary. The effort to establish new towns was noteworthy in the thirteenth century following the expansion of territory within frontiers.
Spain did not start as a unified country and was composed of several smaller reigns. The military conflict between these powers also potentiated the establishment of new cities that better symbolized the power and administrative capacity of the rulers. Portugal, Navarra, Castile, Aragon and the islands of Majorca and Menorca were all competing for a strong centralized control where their power would be unchallenged internally and externally.

Near the northern border of the Peninsula, the kingdoms of England and France fought a dispute of territory that would lead to the progressive entrenchment in solid fortified cities on either side. This region also had a communitarian tendency avoidant of centralized powers. The phenomenon of free cities also led the ambitious rulers of this zone to repress several cities and the power that they started to amass. The Albigenses crusade was the epitome of this suppression, aided by the ever-centralizing power of the catholic church. After this incursion several cities were repopulated as others were built to increase the dominance of the ruling class.
After the cessation of the Mediterranean commerce in mid tenth century, a new surge arises from the victories of the maritime nations over the Moorish kingdoms. The development of the economy arose with the increased trust of merchants that would incentivize the growth of the cities, adding to their already defensive function an economical one.
Alfonso X, the Wise, finishes in 1265 AD the gathering of laws that would be called "Las Siete Partidas". This book inspired greatly by roman law, was not only a repository of laws but a means to the administration of the land. Much like the modern regional urbanistic instruments, these set of laws also established a procedure to resolve the management of territory. Set in the same tone as the Fueros, a set of laws applied locally, the code set by Alfonso X was more universal in its scope intending to encompass the whole kingdom under one centralized rule and law.
This set of laws established the precedent of centralized ordinances in what would become the state of Spain. In later years the Law of Indies established by Phillip II would resort to a similar will to institute a common law to the newfound lands.
A similar code of law, the *Ordinacions* is set by Jaime II, King of Majorca and Lord of Montpellier. More focused on the social economic development of the new cities conquered in the island of Majorca, this set of rules not only informed the urban fabric to be applied to existing or to be founded cities but set an ordinance instrument to the whole region.
All these codes of laws were not only a gathering of judicial procedures and laws to be enforced but, extending from the doctrinal scope, they were instruments of establishing power through the control of the land, boosting the dominance exerted by these rulers. Trade which was booming once again with the securing of land and sea, guaranteed the safe workings of the new merchants. Under the increasing power of the rulers, the relationship was two-directional benefiting both state and commerce.
Although most cities founded in the reign of Afonso III of Portugal (and later his son Dinis[1]) were based on the instrument of the Foral (same logic as the Spanish Fuero), a similar desire to centralize the power of the ruler against an increasing power of the aristocracy resulted in the Inquisições Gerais in 1258, an instrument to restrict economic corruption and to restrain the aristocratic power, equalizing the difference between the rising bourgeois class and the military and religious classes. Several new cities only under the King, with no Lord, were established under more universal laws that would thwart the domination of the aristocracy and incentivize commerce and its respective class. Special laws were applied to the city – a walled precinct, this construction built only under the order of the monarch – which favored those living inside the walls.[2]
The influence of the French thinking on Afonso III is well documented as well,

[1] The influence of Alfonso X in the reign of Portugal was ever present. It should be noticed that Dinis was grandson of the Castille and Leon ruler by his mother, Beatriz de Castella. The influence of his grandfather can be noted on the continuation of his father policies of city founding and rigorous state control and management.
[2] Luísa Trindade, "Urbanismo na Composição de Portugal", 146.

his aunt being the mother of Alphonse of Poitiers. The future king of Portugal spent a vast time on the French court, coincident with the foundation of several Bastides.
On the theoretical realm, Eiximenis, a Catalan writer gathered in his Lo Crestià, specifically in his Dotzè del Crestià, the knowledge that the rulers needed for the good governance of kingdoms. Dealing with government and politics in general, a part of this work is dedicated to the correct arrangement of the City. The idea that the City was the physical representation of the Spiritual City was not new having the Franciscan writer drawn inspiration from Saint Augustine's City of God, where the concept of a heavenly city had already been exposed. Still the divulgation of his work throughout the Iberian courts was decisive in the emergence of a new urban spirit.
One of the objectives of this theorization was also a religious one: the new urban landscape, now conquered back to Christianity needed to be set apart from the Islamic one. The Christian city needed to conform to rules prescribed by a Christian god, explained through ideal precepts, and imposed by Christian kings. Thusly, the new cities, based on Christian ideals, would not only inaugurate a new city, fully Christian, but also assert a new type of king with a power ever more centralized.

1.2. Methodology and Objectives

The adopted method for the following analysis is based on the morphological study of cities, in what concerns to its form. Through the urban design manifest in the city form, we will identify the main elements of the city, namely its buildings, axis and limit, and the relation existent between them. This analysis will enable the cross analysis of all cities proposed for this study, considered to represent the different urban universes in the Iberian Peninsula. We consider this analysis, that clears all other social aspects and restricts the analysis to the urban form, the only way to compare different cities, albeit a possible simplification.
The analysis will be limited to the following aspects: date of foundation – being that in some cities the date is either not set or the date given corresponds to a time in which the urban intervention was more conspicuous; Limit – divided into three types, the Limit is the physical ending of the City in the form of a wall or fence, or even the last road of the City; Axis – corresponding to the main streets linked to the main points of access to the city, which in turn connect to other cities; Top of Axis – stemming from the previous one, this element evinces the most important function of the given city; Main Square – the function assigned to the main square of the city is also indicative of the main concern in the foundation of the city; Blocks – the gathering of the masses of buildings, in this case we considered all the space that was not public, allowing for the identification of the morphological devices. The different plans have represented the Limit represented in dashed lines, the main axis in black lines, the blocks shaded in gray and the churches in yellow. The plans are oriented to North and are not represented in scale as this is not a factor for our analysis.
From this analysis we have as an objective to identify similar morphological elements and configurations, and to understand which ones prevail most and which will prevail for the following centuries in the kingdoms of Portugal and Spain. Thusly we will propose the main configurations and morphological devices in use when founding new settlements in the ending of the thirteenth century and beginning of fourteenth century in the Iberian Peninsula. For this we have chosen two groups of cities: defensive cities established along the border – the cases of Portugal are spread from North to South and in Spain, the region of Navarre gave two examples that are important not only for their function as defensive bastions but

also as entrepôts on the Santiago pilgrimage; and cities for the consolidation of the territory – with an interior and continental example and one insular example, showing how the logic applied is very similar in very different circumstances. Finally, the French Bastides will have a mentioning due to their importance as a model for defensive cities. Although small in number the examples here offered give a wide but discrete overview of what was a city in the thirteenth century and fourteenth century.

2. CASE STUDIES

2.1. Portugal

Of the three cities under analysis – Arronches, Monsaraz and Chaves – certain elements are common. The main street defined by a central axis is common between all. This axis connects the main gate and the castle for quick access to the defensive system of the city. This castle located in one extreme of the city was a defensive necessity and so is present in all cities

In Chaves is present a morphological pattern of "espinha-de-peixe" (fish bone)[3], that is, a main street crossed perpendicularly by less important roads, constituting thin elongated blocks.

In Monsaraz the axis is broken right in the beginning- This axis has adjacent to it the main square of the church, main gathering place of this city. The regular form of this square hints to a more geometrical urban planning.

In Arronches, a double axis leads from the main gate to the castle as well from the church to the castle. The blocks further to the North are part of an extension of the city. Although not strictly geometrical, these new blocks obey a rectangular outline and parallel streets, constituting an innovative urban design, that complemented the long blocks already existing in the city.

In all three cities the main streets finish in the castle. In the length of this main street, it is always present a church with an open space linked to it. In smaller or larger dimensions this space is the essence of all these cities.

The blocks are constituted by thin and long plots with short façades, creating a morphological device stretched and elongated, not favoring crossings and the division of blocks.

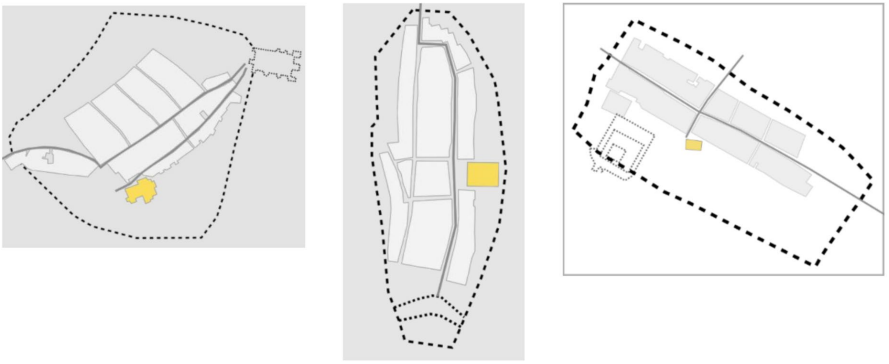


Figure 1. From left to right: Arronches, Monsaraz and Chaves.

[3] This pattern is quite recurrent in the Portuguese city normally appearing in association with a street called Rua Direita (Straight Street). Examples of this urban organization can be later seen in XV century Lisbon in several new interventions on the urban fabric.

2.2. Spain – Basque region

The origin of the two cities analyzed is different, being Huarte-Araquil a defensive city, planned to fortify the frontier and establishing a presence near the border; and Sanguesa a pilgrimage city.
Still the presence of a main axis crossing the city is common to both cities. In the case of Huarte-Araquil and Sanguesa this street crosses the whole city, being the main square or main buildings adjacent to it.
In Sanguesa the phenomenon identified in Chaves, "espinha-de-peixe" is evident again with long elongated blocks perpendicular to the main street.

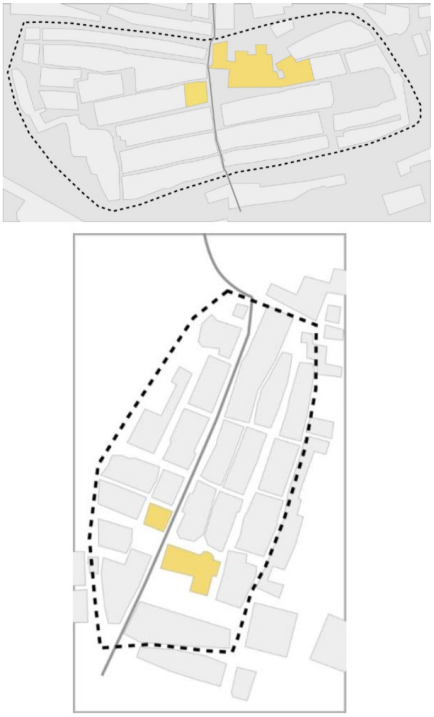


Figure 2. From left to right: Sanguesa and Huarte-Araquil.

In Huarte-Araquil the blocks align with the main axis and are parallel to it. As in Arronches a second street runs parallel to the main street finishing in the church.
The limit of both cities is irregular adapting to the terrain, a common feature in the cities established in the mountainous region of the Basque region. Common to both cities is the presence of a small yard next to the church. This yard is, in both cases, the main square of the city. Thus, it is possible to notice the strong connection between State and Church in the urban fabric of both cities.

2.3. Spain – Castile

Even though these cities are situated in a different kingdom – Castile – the same morphological patterns are manifest. The two cities in study – Briviesca and Foncea - as was the case with Sanguesa were set along the pilgrimage path of Santiago, explaining the motion of influence between the two kingdoms.
The Laws of Las Siete Partidas are clearly manifest in the design of both cities shown – Briviesca and Foncea – as they dictated a single road crossing the whole city in elongated cities.[4]
In Briviesca, a main axis runs adjacent to a main square. The church with its own yard, does not share the center of the city, being located near a gate.
The urban fabric is divided this time in a grid accusing more and more the pattern of the grid imposed in later years in the American possessions. The blocks, rectangular still (with some in square form), are not as long in this case being cut through in more occasions by perpendicular streets
In Foncea, the model is much closer to the previously analyzed cities, exhibiting elongated blocks. The urban fabric is much denser and the phenomenon of "espinha-de-peixe" is once again present.

[4] Alomar, Gabriel. Urbanismo Regional en la Edad Media: las «Ordinacions» de Jaime II (1300) en el Reino de Mallorca. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili, 1976.

Figure 3. From up to down: Briviesca and Foncea.

Only the main street holds a significant difference, since it gets cut by a perpendicular street, having the church at its end.
It is evident as in the thirteenth and beginnings of the fourteenth century the models are still diverging, being adopted different configurations for the cities to be founded.

2.4. Spain – Majorca

In a truly urbanistic fashion Jaime II of Mallorca regulated the territory of Maiorca, trough the Laws known as Ordinacions. After the peace made with his brother from Aragon, it was possible to establish the administration of the land inherited from his father. The establishment of zones to be served, the maximum of population by city, including concepts of self-sustainment and dynamics between industrial and commercial sectors were all applied by this monarch.[5]
Although the influence of the Bastides is clearly established[6], the pueblas of Mallorca were created to populate the islands and not for military purposes as the former. As such both cities were not walled. The influence of Las Siete Partidas is still observed as it established that in square cities two or more main streets should be built parallel and perpendicular to each other.[7]
In the case of Petra this relation exists, with a main axis being crossed by two others. In Sa Pobla there are two main streets, the one further south already existing before the implementation of the new city. A new axis parallel to this one is completely established with the expansion of the city to North.
Different from the Bastide's model is the removal of the Church from the main square reserved for secular purposes.
The urban model of Jaime II established square blocks in groups of 16 or 25 blocks. Surrounding these central blocks, rectangular blocks were set around them adjacent to the city perimeter. If in Petra the model was strictly followed, the pre-existing buildings in Sa Pobla forced the adaptation of the model. Still the northern half of the city still exhibits an adherence to the model.

[5] Alomar, Gabriel. Urbanismo Regional en la Edad Media: las «Ordinacions» de Jaime II (1300) en el Reino de Mallorca. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili, 1976.. p. 52.
[6] The geographical proximity of Montpeller, a city in the dominion of Jaime II, to Aigues Mortes is a very strong indicator of the influence of the Bastide's design in Jaime II. Goitia, Fernando Chueca. Breve História do Urbanismo. Translated by Emílio Campos Lima. Lisboa: Editorial Presença, 1996. Alomar, Gabriel. Urbanismo Regional en la Edad Media: las «Ordinacions» de Jaime II (1300) en el Reino de Mallorca. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili, 1976. p. 56.
[7] Alomar, Gabriel. Urbanismo Regional en la Edad Media: las «Ordinacions» de Jaime II (1300) en el Reino de Mallorca. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili, 1976. p. 60.

Figure 4. From up to down: Sa Pobla and Petra.

2.5. Bastides

Being much larger than similar fortified cities in the Iberian Peninsula, the Bastides – from the verb bastir, to build – these walled precincts were the main urban model for the South of France. In this region war between France and England potentiated the emergence of these walled cities. The symbolic representation of the power of the ruler dictated a strictly geometric shape of the walls, that is the limit, of some bastides.

In analysis we have two cases: Aigues-Mortes, founded in 1240 and Mirande in 1282.[8] Founded both with defensive walls the differences in the street configuration are notable. While the blocks in Mirande are square and a regular square is present, the two main axis form a cross. As in the case of Petra, the church of Mirande is not adjacent to the main city square, serving this space for secular functions.
Aigues-Mortes on the other hand has perfect geometric design regarding its walls, but the blocks are rectangular and elongated. The two mains axis of this city run parallel to each other and a main square is also present. The church in Aigues-Mortes is established on the main square and forms the main spot of one of the city's axis.

Figure 5. From up to down: Aigues-Mortes and Mirande.

[8] Goff, Jaques Le. La Ville Mediévale: des Carolingiens à la Renaissance. In Histoire de la France urbaine. edited by George Duby. Vol.2. Paris: Éditions du Seuil, 1980. p. 196.

The Bastides, although not always applying it, are based on a grid design. The walls normally follow a rectangular form and a central square is always present. This new design is very characteristic and would influence decisively the urban model to be applied by Spain in its colonies in America being the Law of Indies the culmination of this influence.[9]

Still, as is the case of all the previous cities, the main squares of both cities are adjacent to one of the main axis, being this a characteristic common to all the cities in study.

CONCLUSIONS

The cities analyzed previously all share one influence: Las Siete Partidas. This set of laws, almost a treaty of urbanism, through several ways found its way to the several kingdoms and leaders of the Iberian Peninsula. The Roman influence is also present in all cities ranging its influence from previous settlements in which the new cities were rebuilt upon, to the influence in theoretical urban design as is the case for the Bastides. These, along with the treaty of Eiximenis, were also the main influence for the cities founded by Jaime II in Mallorca.

As for the main conclusions to be taken from the previous analysis and to what refers to the Limit, the main factor of differentiation seems to be the terrain. Cities with a more elongated pattern are present in mountainous regions, like Sanguesa, Huarte-Araquil and Monsaraz, resting on the ridges. Flat regions allow for more geometrical limits, still considering that there are variations such as Arronches and Mirande. The main axes vary according to terrain and shape of the limit. The more mountainous regions again are constricted by the availability of space and thus have only one main axis. The other factor is the direct influence of Las Siete Partidas and its article that defined that in square cities the axes should cross perpendicular and in rectangular cities the axes if more than one should be in the same direction. The Bastides not sharing this influence do not have a clear alignment for its axes.

City	Date of Foundation	Limit	Axis	Top of Axis	Main Square	Church Yard	Blocks
Arronches	1235 (reconquered)	Irregular	2 (parallel)	Castle	Religious	x	Elongated
Monsaraz	1276 (foral)	Elongated	1	Castle	Religious	x	Elongated
Chaves	1258 (repopulated)	Rectangular	2 (Cross)	Castle/ Church	Religious	x	Espinha-de-Peixe
Huarte-Araquil	XIV century	Elongated	1	-	Religious	x	Elongated
Sanguesa	-	Elongated	1	-	Religious	x	Elongated
Briviesca	1305	Rectangular	1	-	Secular	x	Rectangular
Foncea	-	Rectangular	2 (Cross)	Church	-	x	Espinha-de-Peixe
Sa Pobla	1300	Square	2 (Parallel)	-	Secular	x	Square
Petra	1300	Square	3 (Cross)	-	Secular	x	Square
Aigues-Mortes	1240	Rectangular	2 (Parallel)	Church	Religious	x	Rectangular
Mirande	1282	Irregular	2 (Cross)	-	Secular	x	Square

Table 1. Comparison of the analyzed cities.

[9] Goff, Jaques Le. La Ville Mediévale: des Carolingiens à la Renaissance. In Histoire de la France urbaine. edited by George Duby. Vol.2. Paris: Éditions du Seuil, 1980. p. 196.

A common feature (we believe of every European Christian city) of all the analyzed cities is the yard adjacent to the church, in several cases being later expanded to form the city square. In tight urban fabrics, like Foncea, the yard was the only opening of a dense city. The main square might not always be adjacent to the church serving other functions in some of the cases studied. The more religious cities had the church in the main square such as Sanguesa, Huarte Araquil and the Portuguese cities. The Bastides vary too much, having, some, a more religious function such as Aigues-Mortes contrasting with Mirande and its commercial and administrative square. The top of the axis in more religious cities has the church present, being that in cities for defensive functions such as Monsaraz and Arronches the Castle occupies this place.

The main square is not always a presence in the Spanish cities, making its regular appearance with the cities of Jaime II. The Portuguese cities on the other hand already displayed squares and, in some cases, as in Monsaraz, the square is regular, albeit not being formed by the suppression of a block. Thus, we cannot consider that the square is an obligatory, much less characteristic, element of either Portuguese or Spanish cities.

It is curious to note that the Portuguese will, in the fifteenth century, continue the configuration of espinha- de-peixe in the expansions done to several cities and a common model for the foundation of cities in their colonies. Still the grid and blocks closer to the quadrangular proportion will be present. Perpendicular intersections of two main axis are as well present, even regular squares.

As for the Spanish, even though the elongated blocks will still be in use, the grid experimented firstly in the Bastides and in Majorca and Menorca by Jaime II, will be the prevalent model being widely applied. The main square of the size of a block will also be commonly present in the Spanish-American cities. There is an evolution from the elongated less planned block to a rectangular and then to square ones, the ones to be mainly used. Still we consider that the elongated block will still be observed in the Americas. From this analysis we put forth the hypothesis that the model devised by Jaime II would be the main influence of the plans for Americas in Spanish settlements. In the case of the Portuguese, the models even if not so strictly, would still be regular, but incorporating such devices as the Espinha-de-peixe.

What we propose is that both models and the different configurations have, since the foundation of the modern states of Portugal and Spain, been present in both states and are applied through its urban history. The ignorance, purposeful or not, of this fact leads to erroneous readings of the cities, their foundation and development, leading to a poor intervention in historic cities.

REFERENCES

Alomar, Gabriel. *Urbanismo Regional en la Edad Media: las «Ordinacions» de Jaime II (1300) en el Reino de Mallorca*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili, 1976.

Carita, Hélder. *Lisboa Manuelina e a formação de modelos urbanísticos da Época Moderna (1495-1521).*
Lisboa: Livros Horizonte, 1999.

Goff, Jaques Le. La Ville Mediévale: des Carolingiens à la Renaissance. In *Histoire de la France urbaine*. edited by George Duby. Vol.2. Paris: Éditions du Seuil, 1980.

Goitia, Fernando Chueca. Breve História do Urbanismo. Translated by Emílio Campos Lima. Lisboa: Editorial Presença, 1996.

Trindade, Luísa. "Urbanismo na Composição de Portugal". PhD diss., Coimbra University, 2009.

PAPER #1.14

THE PERFORMANCE OF GENDER AND ETHNIC IDENTITY IN THE DIASPORA MOSQUE

Irem Oz[a], Alexandra Staub[a]
[a]The Pennsylvania State University, University Park, Pennsylvania, USA

ABSTRACT

Judith Butler uses performativity to investigate the unconscious, unintentional and situational performances of gender through discourse. I argue that the built environment as a part of this discourse has the ability to transform and (re)produce identities. I focus on the diaspora mosque as the performative unit where ethno-religious identity is performed as an everyday, embodied practice.
Using a feminist lens to analyze how gender, religion and space intersect, I examine the Marxloh Merkez Mosque in Duisburg, Germany as a cultural case study. Informed by ethnographic fieldwork conducted over a period of nine months, I analyze how the performative character of the Marxloh mosque has come to shape Turkish-Muslim women's gender relations through separation and surveillance and question how relations translate to the greater sphere of neighborhood space, influencing Turkish-Muslim women's sense of identity and integration into current-day Germany.
Using Butler's performativity both as a theoretical lens and part of my methodology, I examine how gender relations are inscribed in the mosque space through processes of repetition and reiteration. Drawing from my interviews from 24 women that use the mosque regularly and are residents of the neighborhood, I argue that the normative standards in terms of gender relations are performed through acts of separation and surveillance. The discourse created in and around the mosque, which focuses on the reproduction of Turkish-Muslim identities and poses Turkish-Muslim women as the moral subjects.

KEYWORDS

Gender; performativity; space; mosque; diaspora.

INTRODUCTION

Turkish women in Germany are a group that holds particular place in public discourse and imagination of the 'others'. The topic Turkish-Muslim women is one of the main subjects that is used to create difference and justify the disparity between a German collectivity and the Turkish other. This can be seen from the number of social studies research on Turkish-Muslim women that far exceeds the number of studies on other immigrant nationalities (Lutz and Huth-Hildebrand 1998), transforming the debate on foreign women into a debate on Turkish-Muslim women. While mainstream research tends to cast the existence of Turkish-Muslim women as the main reason of their problematic integration (Raetzhel 1994), it also fails to consider the point of view of the women they categorize. The agency of Turkish-Muslim women is usually neglected by posing them vis-à-vis of German women and framing them as an oppressed group in a patriarchal setting – a group without a voice.
My motivation in this study was to understand the process of integration (or lack thereof) and the how it relates to the reproduction of gender from the perspective of Turkish-Muslim women. An approach that uses Butler's framework to examine gender and how it manifests individually and collectively is useful when researching women's experiences in largely patriarchal settings. An

appropriation of Butler's theory emphasizing the mosque in a diaspora setting allows for a dual examination of the performativity of female congregants of the mosque in terms of rules and norms defined by the dominant culture and gender conceptions that in turns shape the behavior and interaction of Turkish-German women.

This article begins with the introduction of the concept of performativity and explores the possibilities of its use within a spatial framework. In this research, Butler's performativity was used both as a theoretical lens and a tool for analysis. Addressing space as a part of the performative discourse allows me to analyze how spatial performances that take place in the architectural space of the mosque create gendered norms play out in the neighborhood by navigating between different scales. Using ethnographic interviews and participant observation, I analyze how performative acts of separation and surveillance are experienced by Turkish-Muslim women living in Marxloh and their accounts of resistance against those acts within the architectural space of the diaspora mosque and how does this translate to their performances of gender and identity in the neighborhood space.

1. THEORETCAL FRAMEWORK

1.1. Performativity

The term performativity has come a long way since J.L. Austin coined the term in the 1950s. Austin conceptualized the term in the field of linguistics to refer to the multiple functions of the spoken language. According to him, spoken language, is not only used to describe the world outside but it is in fact an active agent that shapes and transforms the world (Snickare 2012). He uses formal and ritual utterances as examples, such as 'I name the ship the Queen Elizabeth' or an everyday phrase like 'I bet you sixpence it will rain tomorrow'. However, he also emphasizes that the performativity of an utterance still highly depends on the context of the utterance. He illustrates this with the example of a judge, who is only able to utter performative speech in specific contexts and attire – the judge's bench and robe (Austin 1962). In other words, an utterance must be said under the right circumstances, by the right speakers with the right intentions would be able to transform the circumstance. Miller builds upon this and suggests that for the successful outcome of performative acts, the gestures, movements, dresses, precious objects and the architectural setting are essential (2001).

With the *performative turn*, the concept has moved away from the field of linguistics and has been taken up and developed further within the fields of deconstruction, aesthetic theory and gender theory (Burke 2005). Jacques Derrida builds upon the concept to include all kinds of language and cultural phenomena, from scholarly writing to utterance itself (1982). He also explains the relative relationship between the effect and the intention: an utterance which is performative produces meaning and continues to produce new meaning, even after the 'death of the author. In the 1990s, the concept became firmly established within the humanities with the writings of Judith Butler. She uses the concept to illustrate through repeated acts and gestures within specific cultural contexts, (gender) identities are produced and inscribed (Snickare 2012).

Butler argued that gender is not internal but in fact, a continuous, unstable and socially constructed process, which is enforced through a series of repetitive and performative acts. Performativity, simply, is the formation of the subjects, which creates what it tries to describe/categorize through embodied social practices (Cavanaugh 2015). For Butler, the 'script' of gender performance is passed on from generation to generation through socially established meanings. As humans are social beings, most actions are witnessed,

reproduced and internalized, eventually taking on a performative quality (1988). In the acts of convention through repetition, we end up making them 'real' to some extent – the enactment of gender norms has real consequences. Gender is instituted through the stylization of body; the enactment of the gender norms in the most mundane ways (our gestures, movements, the way we dress, with whom we socialize, how we talk, etc.) are accumulated, eventually becoming the normative standards and through their continuous repetition they maintain power and hegemony. According to her, as those actions become internalized, the concept of gender (binary) is legitimized and eventually is seen as natural (Butler 1993).

Following these discussions, if gender is instituted through internal acts, the appearances of the subjects are nothing more than their constructed identities – performative accomplishments which are accepted by the mundane social audience and even by the subjects themselves. If the gender identity is grounded on these stylized repetition of acts, this also brings the possibility of a different sort of repeating that breaks or troubles the established style (1988). These nonnormative performances are punished along with the identities that do not conform into the normative standards (heteronormativity in Butler's conceptual framework). On the other hand, these alternative performative acts bring the possibility of resistance against the normative standards as they do not have any claim to justice and are historical and rely on their continuous citation and repetition by subjects to preserve their status-quo (Butler 1990).

Butler anticipated the application of these concepts outside of reach of gender identity and their redeployment in "urgent and expanding political purposes" (1993, 228). Feldman discusses that Butler's explanation of gender being the "reiterative power of discourse to produce the phenomena that it regulates and constraints" (1993, 2) can also be used to analyze different power relations. He argues that essentialized subjects – nation, state, immigrant, minority, man, woman, etc. – is socially constructed through repetitive acts and by means of opposing positions in reference to each other. The viability of one identity requires the inscription of threat in its putative opposite. The narrative around the identity of Turkish women living in Germany can be given as an example of this opposing claims. Performativity then, does not only mean the construction of subjects through social practices, but rather it is about the construction of separation and boundaries between subjects through discursively-regulated practices (2005).

1.2. Performativity and space

But how does space operate in Butler's work? Butler uses a spatial rhetoric to describe how a subject is materialized and that the discourse has material effects in terms of boundaries and enclosures. Her argument is based on Foucault's model, where our actions and bodies are measured against the norms of architectural space but space is not articulated in her theorization of performativity. Smitheram argues that space is already inherent in Butler's theorization and proposes a "spatialized performativity" that it would expand the language and scope of performativity. Following Foucault's model, he frames the spatialized performativity as the "reiteration of pre-existing bodily norms that function to form the subject, which occurs in relation to architecture". His model suggests that when subjectivity is tied to the spatial axis, it in turn generates further performative utterances (2011, 59-60).

The concept of performativity has become a part of the vocabulary of architecture to explore the relationship between subjectivity and space/architecture; how space/architecture participates in the construction of norms through performativity (Smitheram 2011). Mark Wigley argues that women

are contained within architecture by a law that positions women in the emotional and personalized space of the home rather than the structured and impersonalized public sphere (1992). This act of positioning feminine within the home is inscribed through the citation of the law, where space is used to secure one's gender and the norms of space. Kuhlmann illustrates this with Adolf Loos's designs for his own house, in which it is easy to see which spaces are designed for men and women. While his wife's room was provided with a very light wool rug, in the libraries – or the 'gentlemen's rooms' – he used a lot of dark colors and hard material (2013).

Lisa Henry Benham draws from Butler's notion and suggests that "the enacting of identities/spaces in fact brings those identities/spaces into being, rather than expressing some predetermined essence" (2003, 91). In other words, gender and space are realized through their enactment, through the materialization of the body and space. She also mentions the repetition of these enactments consolidate the regulatory frames and norms that emphasize the social standing of different groups and establishing their identities (2003). Kuhlmann identifies two models of regulatory frames that form most prevalent and effective methods: separation and surveillance. While spatial separation of individuals and groups can be used to disrupt and prevent communication or any contact, surveillance – especially visual surveillance – can be used to control and change power relationships between individuals. With such strategies, architecture is used as a tool to create physical spaces that enforce social distinctions between the sexes, races, classes, etc. (2013).

Drawing from this argument, I argue that the diaspora mosque within the context of Marxloh, not only becomes the stage of the performance but also acts as an active agent during the performative acts. Gendered socio-spatial processes that repeatedly take place in architectural space of diaspora mosque define a set of norms and standards for the mosque going Turkish-Muslim women within the context of Marxloh. These norms define both the group and gender identities and present a set of rules to be performed for the mentioned identities in order to belong to the group. I theorize that these norms and standards that are defined in relation to the diaspora mosque translate to the greater sphere of the neighborhood and in turn have an effect on the integration of the Turkish-Muslim women living in Marxloh. In this paper, I examine how separation and surveillance are enacted and resisted in the mosque and in turn how they affect women's behavior in the neighborhood context.

2. CASE STUDY AND METHODOLOGY

This research takes the case of Turkish commissioned mosques in Marxloh, a northern neighborhood in the city of Duisburg. While Marxloh, with its high percentage of ethnic Turks, stands as an excellent example of an ethnic enclave, the area is also unique in that it hosts three mosques (one of which is the first and the largest purpose-built Turkish mosque in Germany) belonging to the three major Turkish-Islamic organizations. Another unique characteristic of the neighborhood is the fact that it hosts Marxloh Merkez Mosque, commissioned by DITIB organization, which is usually referred as "the miracle of Marxloh" due to the lack of controversies at the time of its construction and opening (Oz and Staub 2018). Although the DITIB religious association has active in the area since its establishment in 1984, using a make-shift prayer area found within an unused cafeteria space, they became much more visible with the construction and opening of the purpose-built mosque in 2008 (Oz and Staub 2019). My research focuses on this Marxloh Merkez Mosque and examines how mosque spaces in non-Islamic contexts contributes to the reproduction of Turkish-Muslim group identities and how Turkish-German women

interact with and appropriate this male-dominated space of the diaspora mosque.

As this study is concerned with an immigrant community which is socially and spatially segregated from the rest of the city and shaped around the religious field as a mechanism of negotiating identity and gender, I use a qualitative research design to access to the individuals' constructed reality and interpretation of their own experience. Interviews and participant observation are the major sources of data in this project and were conducted during an ethnographic fieldwork, over a 9-month period between October 2018 and June 2019. During this time, I lived in Marxloh and was able to both fully participate in the neighborhood life as a resident and became a member of the mosque congregation. The 24 interviews that were conducted with the Turkish-Muslim women that are among the congregants of the Marxloh Merkez Mosque, had a very biographical, narrative nature and were conducted in Turkish. The interviewees were also asked to draw sketches of their mental maps of the neighborhood and other spaces that they frequently visit. The interviews were supplemented by go-along outings and expert interviews with local administrations and representatives of the social service providers.

3. DISCUSSION OF THE RESULTS

3.1. Separation

Foucault provided a theoretical assumption that each society is based on exclusion and spatial practices are used to marginalize people who are different – the ones that remain in disadvantaged positions within the sphere of uneven power relations. He claims that groups that occupy more advantageous positions use the space to create and consolidate a distinction between the self and the other by inscribing a set of rules that are deemed appropriate and inappropriate (1977). While spatial separation can be used to control and limit communication between genders, this regulatory framework can also be applied to any two groups that are in an uneven power relationship. In the context of this paper, the groups that are effected by the uneven power relations are identified as: Turkish-Muslim women vs. Turkish-Muslim men, Turkish-Muslim women vs. German women.

Sex segregation in the mosque has been a controversial subject, remaining central in discussions of gender in Islam. This segregation is usually based on different interpretations of Islamic law however, the spatial organization of gender usually follows cultural and historical traditions (Aryanti 2012). Turkey, being a country caught up in tensions between its secular character and Muslim population, especially in the last decade with the rise of Islamism. In 2011, Kadriye Avcı Erdemli, Istanbul's deputy *müftü* (highest ranking religious officer) conducted a research reporting the conditions of the facilities used by women in Istanbul's mosques. The results were shocking as many of the mosques did not have facilities for women. Some mosques included spaces for women but most of those spaces were used as storage places and when they had appropriate spaces they were most of the time dirty/freezing cold in winter (Jones 2011).

The same conditions applied to the women's spaces in the Marxloh Merkez Mosque before the construction of the purpose-built mosque. One of my interviewees explains the old situation and how it improved with the construction of the mosque:

> We used to use this cafeteria space back in the day. The main cafeteria space was used by men. There was a structure, almost like a shed, that was given to the women. We did not even see the men, we were placed in a separate room. We would listen to the prayer from a speaker. Men would enter the mosque from the front street and we used to use the

back entrance. I don't even know what the men's section looks like. There was no contact – visual or physical – between men and women at the time. When the mosque was planned, there were a lot of meetings. I really liked that what we thought also mattered. When they [the planning committee] came up with the proposal that there would be no separate entrances for men and women, people – mostly men – didn't like it. They didn't even want a women's section to be constructed anyways. They thought it was not right, they had to bring the *müftü* of Istanbul to explain them. Even then they wanted to surround upstairs [women's section] with a curtain so that they would not see us. I like that we use the same entrance now, it gives a feeling that our congregation is more connected to each other. (Ayşe, 45)

The mosque in the context of Marxloh is not only used as a religious center but is also used as a community center. The mosque structure includes spaces to provide for these communal activities, such as conference rooms, cafeterias, libraries and classrooms. I observed that many of these spaces are used only by men, women can use these spaces under conditional circumstances – like when there are no men around or when they are accompanied by their husbands or fathers (Fig. 1). The only space that was defined for women's use is the kitchen area that is located in one of the apartments surrounding the mosque however; even this space occasionally is used by men when they need it. Although there is no formal assignment of spaces based on gender (except for the prayer hall), most of these communal activity spaces are used by men, a rule that was not enforced by anybody but enacted through many reiterative performances. Nazlı explains this as:

> There are so many places in the mosque men can use, I think the women were not considered that much when they were planning. I wish they included more spaces for us. Women have their kitchen area, they have a place there to sit all together, but that place is not always available. They meet there on Friday mornings to bake and sell goods after the Friday prayer. It is like a socialization activity. But I don't see them using that space in their free time – the mosque administration does not like us using there if no baking activity is taking place. After the Quran course or Friday prayers women like to chat a little bit, but they do not have a space to do so, like men do. (Nazlı, 33)

From Nazlı's comment, it can be understood that women can use the kitchen area conditionally, as long as they are preparing food, contributing to the mosque. On some occasions, men use this space to socialize, when they want to eat or grill together. Within the very limited social space that are defined for the women within the context of this mosque, women can only exist conditionally

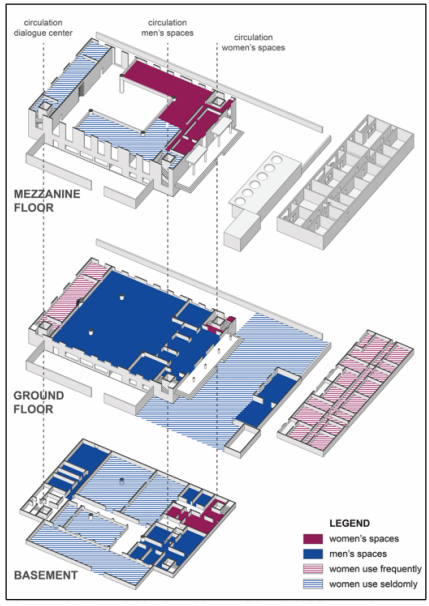


Figure 1. Men's (blue), women's (pink) and mixed spaces in the Marxloh Merkez Mosque. Source: Author

as long as they conform into the rules enforced by men that are more advantageous to them with respect to the power relations. Even then, this dominant group can invade women's very limited space when they deem necessary.

How does this conditional existence within the mosque transfer to neighborhood space? The rules established through gender relationships in the mosque creates and sustains performances of women in the neighborhood space: women ignore certain areas or women go to some areas only when accompanied by men. Nur and Elif's explanations of their use of neighborhood space shows this clearly:

> I think Marxloh is misrepresented in the media. We do socialize here with my friends. We like to go to the cafes and look at the shops. For the most part, I feel pretty safe and comfortable here. But yes, there are places that I ignore, I ignore coffee houses. Going into one of that coffee houses is out of question but I would even ignore the street that they are on. I change my route sometimes to ignore passing in front of those places. It makes my walk longer but I feel safer this way. I also would not dare to go out alone after 9 pm. I am scared to do so without my brother or my father. (Elif, 31)
>
> With my husband, we like to take long walks. As you know there are a lot of small parks surrounding this neighborhood, so we go for walks every day. I would not go to those parks alone though, I feel nervous going to those parks alone or with my daughter, there are all kinds of people. With my daughter, we prefer to stay in the main street, window shopping or going to a café. With other women, we usually visit each other in our home. (Nur, 48)

Despite her protective feelings towards her neighborhood, Elif expresses that she does not feel safe in some places. From both Elif's and Nur's accounts, it can clearly be seen that Turkish-Muslim women's existence in the neighborhood is conditional. While men have some established spaces that they can socialize, women's socialization always come along with a condition. They can only use the public space during the day, the nocturnal public space belongs to men. They either use certain spaces while ignoring others or use them only with the company of a male chaperone (Fig. 2).

As most women expressed feelings of conditional security and comfort socializing in the neighborhood, I asked them about their socialization outside of Marxloh. The influence of 'the appropriate way to socialize' that is enforced both in the mosque and in neighborhood space also effects their performances in the city:

> I don't go to the city center. My son tells me that there are some very nice cafes in the city center. But we have everything here, we have our shops where we can find appropriate [Islamic] clothing, we have our restaurants where we can find halal meat and our cafes where no alcohol is served. I think I would feel uncomfortable being in a place where they serve alcohol where women and men be inappropriately close. I also feel uncomfortable because there are a lot of Germans there who think I am weird because I wear a headscarf. I feel comfortable here where I can be who I am. (Rabia, 59)
>
> We actually like hanging out in the city center. The cafes are much nicer. As long as people mind their own business and do not harass me, I don't care who drinks/eats what or who socializes with who. I think as Turks we are being very close-minded. In my experience, if you are accepting of them, they [Germans] tend to accept you more. (Aslı, 21).

These conflicting accounts show different performances. Rabia, a first-generation immigrant, who came to Germany from a little town in Turkey when she was 24 after getting married, continues to conditionally exist in the city as well; her performance in the city is informed by her understanding of what is (in) appropriate, inscribed through the countless performative acts in the mosque. Reacting

to the treatment she receives from Germans, she unintentionally deems their performance inappropriate and choses to stay in the category she creates. On the other hand, her daughter Aslı, a second-generation immigrant born and raised in Germany, has a much different performance of the city center. While this can be explained through Aslı, having been socialized in German culture, therefore knows the cultural codes to conduct herself in a German context, this can also be interpreted as an act of resistance. As Butler explains, through repetitive acts, behaviors and desires that challenge the existing gender assumptions, subjects can reinforce new approaches on doing gender (1990). Among other younger women's accounts, Aslı's performance of socialization in the city center defines a new set of norms of gender performance. The spatial implications of these transformed performances can also be seen from the comparison of maps in which my interviewees marked the areas that they use within the city (Fig. 3).

Figure 2. Nur and Elif's neighborhoods. Source: Author

Figure 3. Aslı and Rabia's mobility in the city Source: Author

3.2. Surveillance

According to Butler, "gender is always doing" (1990, 34); gender identity is performed simultaneously by the expressions that it produces as a result, thereby concealing its origins and inscribing the fictitious categories of gender on space that appear as innate and static (1995). The mosque separated into binary gendered spaces produces the same fiction. Although space has no gender, dual categories of gender is inscribed to the space through the repeated stylization of the body within a highly regulatory frame. Kuhlmann identifies surveillance is one of the regulatory frames to control subjectivities that take place in space (2013). According to Foucault, power operates within a field of visibility; the subjects that are made visible can be observed and kept under surveillance (1977).

In Marxloh Merkez Mosque, women's prayer space is located on the second floor, in a mezzanine-like area overlooking men's prayer space. While women can see men's prayer area, women stay outside of men's field of visibility (Fig. 4). The quote from Ayşe's interview in the previous section mentioned that during the planning phase of the mosque men wanted to surround the area with curtains to prevent any possibility of women becoming visible in the mosque. While the architecture of the mosque prevents women's surveillance by men when they are in the prayer space, in this case the surveillance comes from within the group. From Büşra's account, it can be seen that surveillance that comes within the group, or self-surveillance regulates the gendered performativity. When women do not adhere to the rules, the punishment comes from within the group in terms of peer pressure.

> I sometimes get very frustrated with *teyzeler* [aunties – older women]. When there is a prayer or when we are trying to listen to the sermons, they talk so much. They use that time for socialization but it is not a time to do

Figure 4. Men's and women's prayer spaces (Source: Mosque in Duisburg Marxloh 2012)

> so. It is disrespectful. But even worse, men can hear them. What is the point of being segregated, if they can hear us? I try to warn them or give them dirty looks but to be honest they don't care that much. (Büşra, 27).

Outside of the women's prayer space, in the public space of the mosque, the surveillance comes from men. Marxloh Merkez Mosque has a sizeable courtyard bordered by a tea-house belonging to the mosque (Fig. 5). Woman leave the mosque from the doors opening to this courtyard, where there exists a constant male gaze. This constant surveillance (or fear of surveillance) prevents women from spending a lot of time in courtyard. Beyza explains this as:

> I spend a lot of time in the mosque, I come here 4-5 times a week. Sometimes when the weather is nice, I would like to sit outside. But *amcalar* [uncles – older men] are always there. They come here in the morning and stay there until evening. When I sit outside with my friends, if we laugh too loud or sit close to them, they warn us. When they don't I can feel their looks. They also gossip a lot. They report everything to each other. My father does not come to this mosque but if he did, I am sure he would know every single thing that I do here. Mosque administration says that the tea-house is for everybody but I feel pressured not to use it. I feel like no matter what I do I will never be a member of the mosque like a man is. (Beyza, 22).

Beyza's account makes it clear that she tries to resist the normative standards of the mosque. The normative standard, created and repeated over time until it becomes instinctive, is that the tea-house can be used by men. In this case, Beyza's subjectivity not confirming into the norms of the community, causes her to suffer anxiety and being punished for her transgression. Women end up existing in the mosque as long as they perform the rules administered by men causes temporary disassociations from the mosque. "I feel like a passerby, while men are there to stay" as put by Leman. On the other hand, this control of the docile body extends outside of the reach of the mosque. Burçin, who lives in one of the apartments surrounding the mosque, explains that she feels pressured to dress a certain way. Leman also explains how this constant surveillance translates to the neighborhood space and she resists against it.

Figure 5. The courtyard of the mosque (Source: Author)

> I would never go out wearing shorts here [in Marxloh]. My family does not really say anything about how I dress, but I never feel comfortable going out wearing a dress or shorts. I feel like everybody is looking at me and disapproving me. There is like a neighborhood pressure. Whenever we go to Turkey for our summer holidays, I dress however the way I want there. Nobody knows me there… (Burçin, 18).
>
> You know the coffee houses, right? At any given time, there are 15-20 men hanging in front of those places. They do nothing, they are no different than a pole. Just stand there all day and watch who goes where, who wears what. I usually change my direction so that I wouldn't have to pass in front of them. My father has a martial arts studio and I am one of the instructors there, so most of those guys know me. I usually keep my distance with them I heard from others that they started to gossip about me, because I passed by the coffee house twice. My friends told me that they defended me saying that I was not like other girls, that I am manlike. I am a masculine woman, you see, but you know what bothers me; the only thing that provided me protection was that I was behaving masculine and they stopped harassing me because I was like one of them. (Leman, 32).

Burçin experiences control by the advantageous group in the light of the idea of appropriate clothing and refrains from dressing however she wants to avoid the male gaze and pressure that comes with surveillance. While Leman also experiences the same pressure, and stays away from using certain streets in the neighborhood, her alternative performance of gender allows her to resist not only the norms defined for her gender but also the male gaze and surveillance that comes with it. She makes space for herself in the areas where most women avoid through her masculine mannerisms and martial arts skills, which in turn make her a non-normative and non-docile subjectivity.

CONCLUSION

In this paper, the aim was to present how incorporating space into Butler's notion of performativity would provide theoretical and methodological opportunities. By using Butler's performativity both as a theoretical lens and a methodology, I have discussed that the mechanism of power works through performative acts that enforce categories through definition of normative standards. Through repetition and reiterative performances, these stand^{ooo}rds are performed to the point that they are perceived as natural.

For the context of the diaspora mosque, Marxloh Merkez Mosque, the spatial techniques of separation and surveillance are enforced to reproduce gender(ed) identities. Separation of the women in the mosque from men, imposed the idea that women can only exist conditionally in the mosque. In the neighborhood level, this norm is reproduced again through acts of conditional existence. While some women adhere to the standard norms having limited mobility, the gender conflict comes into play and women among younger generation find alternative ways to perform their gendered identities, leading to greater exposure and mobility within the German sphere. On the other hand, surveillance of women (that comes either from in or out of the group) create a sense of control, preventing them from fully experiencing the mosque and the neighborhood like men do, which in turn causes feeling of not completely belonging. The resistance to the norms comes from subverting the gender roles in this case. To sum up, the normative standards that are defined in the mosque and translated to the neighborhood confirm women in such a small space in the city, limiting their mobility and preventing them from being exposed to the German context, effecting their integration.

REFERENCES

Aryanti, Tutin. 2012. "Women's Prayer Space: Body and Boundary." *The International Journal of the Constructed Environment* 2 (3): 177–90.

Austin, John L. 1962. *How to Do Things with Words*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Burke, Peter. 2005. "Performing History: The Importance of Occasions." *Rethinking History 9* (1): 35–52.

Butler, Judith. 1988a. "Performative Acts and Gender Constitution: An Essay in Phenomenology and Feminist Theory." *Theatre Journal* 40 (4): 519–31.

———. 1990. *Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity.* New York: Routledge.

———. 1993. *Bodies That Matter: On the Discursive Limits of "Sex."* London: Routledge.

Cavanaugh, Jillian, R. 2015. *Performativity*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Derrida, Jacques. 1962. *Magins of Philosophy.* Chicago: Chicago Press.

Feldman, Gregory. 2005. "Development in Theory: Essential Crises: A Performative Approach to Migrants, Minorities, and European Nation-State." *Anthropological Quarterly* 78 (1): 213–46.

Foucault, Michel. 1977. *Foucault, Michel, Discipline And Punish: The Birth of the Prison*. New York: Pantheon Books.

Henry Benham, Lisa. 2003. "Diversity in Architectural Process: Identity and Performance of Place." In *20 on 20/20 Vision*, Linda Kiisk, 90–97. Boston: AIA Diversity Committee.

Jones, Dorian. 2011. "Can Turkey Make Its Mosques Feminist." *The Atlantic*, 2011.

Kuhlmann, Dörte. 2013. *Gender Studies in Architecture.* New York: Routledge.

Lutz, Helma, and Christine Hutz-Hildebrandt. 1998. "Geschlecht Im Migrationsdiskurs: Neue Gedanken Über Altes Thema." *Das Arguement* 1 (2): 159–73.

Miller, Tim. 2000. "Suck, Spit, Chew, Swallow: A Performative Exploration of Men's Bodies." In *Masculinity: Bodies, Movies, Culture,* P. Lehman, 279–99. New York: Routledge.

Oz, Irem, and Alexandra Staub. 2018. "The Tale of Two Mosques." *ARCC Conference Repository 2018*.

———.2019. "Fieldwork In-between Architecture and Anthropology." *ARCC Conference Repository.*

Räthzel, Nora. "Harmonious 'Heimat' Disturbing 'Ausländer.'" *Feminism and Psychology* 4(1): 81–98.

Smitheram, 2011. "Spatial Performativity/ Spatial Performance." *Architectural Theory Revew* 16(1): 55-69.

Snickare, Mårten. 2012. "How to Do Things with the Piazza San Pietro: Performativity and Baroque Architecture." In *Performativity and Performance in Baroque Rome,* Gillgren and Snickare, 65–83. Surrey: Ashgate Publishing.

Wigley, Mark. 1992. "Untitled: The Housing of Gender." In *Sexuality and Space,* Colomina and Bloomer, 327–289. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

PAPER #1.15

ARCHITECTURAL AND GRAPHIC EXPRESSION OF THE ROUTE 66 FROM CHICAGO TO LOS ANGELES

Sigrun Prahl[a]
[a]University of Applied Science, Krefeld, Germany

ABSTRACT

At its inception in 1926, Route 66 was intended to include the main streets of rural America. It was an optimistic road, full of hope, that introduced an access to the west, and was known as "The Mother Road" and "The Main Street of America."
Food, gas, and lodging were the most important features on the route, but the added attractions made the adventure of the route feasible and also interesting and exciting.
Along Route 66 often the signs were visually more attractive and more important than the buildings. The characteristic style of large size, bright colors, and flashy lights of the signs along Route 66 responded directly to the moving automobile and nomadic lifestyle.
Now, Route 66 can no longer be traveled exclusively from beginning to end. It is intertwined with a series of interstate super highways, a system that has taken over the traffic, the gas, food and lodging services. Route 66 has become a fragmented road, yet remains complete in memories and paraphernalia preserved in museums and souvenir shops. Its legacy has been continued in pop-culture, television shows, music and iconography.
Today towns capitalize on the tourism industry that draws people to see the old sites of the route. Therefore traveling Route 66 in itself has become a destination, a place that has many aspects of a theme park.

KEYWORDS

Route 66; roadside architecture; main street; Americana; traveling.

INTRODUCTION

At its inception in 1926, Route 66 was intended to include the main streets of rural America. The paving began in late 1926 in Chicago, Illinois and by 1937 Route 66 had meandered across the United States ending in Santa Monica, California. When it was finally paved from end-to-end one would travel through eight states (Illinois, Missouri, Kansas, Oklahoma, Texas, New Mexico, Arizona, California) and three time zones.
In the beginning, it was an optimistic road, well traveled, well praised about and full of hope. It introduced an access to the west and was known as "The Mother Road" and "The Main Street of America." The appeal of Route 66 was first and foremost the experience of being on the open road. One was set free on Route 66 but there were just enough sights, diners, gas stations, and other assorted oddities to make one feel at home on the road. The song *Get Your Kicks on Route 66* popularized by Nat King Cole brought more interest to it.
Route 66 also symbolized the renewed spirit of optimism that went through the country after economic catastrophe and global war. "The Main Street of America" linked remote and under-populated regions, providing small towns with vehicular access to larger cities. An estimated 210,000 people migrated on it to California to escape the despair of the Dust Bowl to whom Route 66 symbolized the road to opportunity. It also grew popular through the trucking industry.
Route 66 was officially decommissioned in 1985 although its uses had long ago been replaced by the interstate system. Now, Route 66 can no longer be traveled solely throughout the long distance. In its span from Illinois to

California, Route 66 is intertwined by a series of interstates and super highways like US 40, a system that has also in large parts taken over the traffic, the gas, food and lodging services. Route 66 has become a fragmented road, yet remains complete in memories and paraphernalia preserved in museums and souvenir shops. Its legacy has been continued in pop-culture, television shows, music and iconography. Today towns capitalize on the tourism industry that draws people to see the old sites of the route.

1. SIGNS AND ROADSIDE ARCHITECTURE

The life manifested on the old route was seen visually along its path. The signs and architecture along the highway attracted the traveler to pull over to the businesses and the owners with their hospitality brought the people inside.

When Route 66 was at its prime it carried a certain feeling of romance along its path. People had used the highway to travel west in search of having a good time or sometimes a better life out west. The spirit possessed by the route was important to many people and showed the freedom and ability of people to just go. Moreover, for the residents along the path, it supported the American Dream of being self-employed and owning your own business, which the majority of motels, shops, and diners inhabiting it were.

Along Route 66 there are still signs and architecture that are as adventurous visually as the road was to travel. Signage was the most important aspect in leading perspective customers off Route 66 and into the trading posts, entertainment, gas, food, and lodging areas. These businesses that were encountered throughout the 'Mother Road' were small, and needed to use unique signs to make their business seem more desirable than the next. The Route is still infested with signs of various shape, size, and style, whether it is a huge painted board or a small neon sign.

Road signs often not only act as physical markers but also as cultural, political, economic or patriotic statements. They hold value in capturing ideas held by their creators and an understanding of the cultural climate in which they were built.

Main street signage traditionally has simple rectilinear compositions suspended outside a business in a downtown district. The automobile changed this downtown layout and size. Due to congestion and the lack of parking many businesses were forced to out-lying highway strips. This freed business owners from the spatial confines of the main street and allowed for free standing signs not attached to buildings. This type of signage tends to be large in scale, close to the roadside, and angled to be viewed by automotive traffic traveling at high speeds. The sign heralds to travelers from as far down the highway as possible, and signals the driver to slow down.

Buildings or paintings on them can also act as a form of signage. The signs along the Route 66 became an integral part of America's vernacular through their material, form, structure, typography, naming conventions, color, symbolism, and three-dimensional composition in space. The signs featured being on Route 66 as a trademark but always tried to be designed individually.

The original roadside architecture along Route 66 also remains the most visual reflection of each region's landscape, weather, and history. Building materials came from the resources of each state. Whether wood or clay or concrete, the buildings were built simply and usefully (a characteristic of the time) by local miners, farmers, and townspeople. These locals slowly emerged as small entrepreneurs taking pride in their small stores, gas stations, cafes, and motels. By maintaining the attitudes, customs, and history of their respective lands, they celebrated their local culture. Thus, Route 66, by winding through the deserts, the mountains, and small metropolises, brought people to the local architecture.

Figure 1. Neon sign.

On the contrary, the interstate is very impersonal, it seems to be a lonesome road that sets up non descript stations where you can stop when you are hungry, tired, or need to re-fuel. There is no special attraction drawn to these stops. The signs along the interstate system are generic. They want to be recognized as parts of a chain and unlike the various and expressive ones that had once been so common on Route 66 they are identical in all states. In addition, along interstates the buildings are set back from the road, making the driver leave the road totally to get there, therefore making the road and the building seem separated from each other. However, on Route 66 the businesses were located along side the road in parts, letting the road and the architecture be used together to create a common space and a personal feeling.

2. GAS

Another important factor of Route 66 was that the first simply constructed automobiles needed gasoline. On a road that stretched for a couple of thousand miles, gas stations became a necessity. New drivers first purchased gasoline at liveries, repair shops, or general stores. They arduously poured the gas in buckets and then funneled it into their gas tanks. This primitive method would soon become obsolete. By the 1920's with the growth of the automobile and the construction of roads, the now thriving oil industries began developing more consumer-friendly distribution systems. This move inevitably led to the modern gas station.

The gas station buildings originally told a lot about a region's climate and available materials. Where houses were mainly brick or wood, the gas stations of Illinois had a wooden or brick structure covered by clapboard or shingles. In Missouri, the material was sandstone. In the more Western regions of Route 66, the arid desert and sub humid plains catered to the large canopy design to protect customers from the sun. These canopies also had to be tall enough to let in light and allow for larger trucks. By the 1930's, Pure Oil, Phillip's Petroleum, and Texaco were all standardizing their gas station and designed a basic "Streamline Moderne" building. This design could be used all over the country with any materials available - porcelain-enameled steel, brick, concrete block, or frame and stucco. Moreover, Texaco's universal simplistic design (a white building with 3 green stripes) became a recognizable icon for gasoline.

Today, the filling stations that accentuated Route 66 are long gone. Their tanks below ground are rusted out and pumps are outdated, if not looking skeleton-like. The interstate provides gas stations with easy on and off access to it, making the traveler's journey faster and more efficient. Participants of the travel

Figure 2. Gas filling station.

way no longer purchase gasoline from liveries or general stores, but from big business oil companies who run a monopoly with stations set up along the freeway. By strategically setting up stations along a certain length, corporate companies took over the function of general stores and liveries.

3. FOOD

Along the historic Route 66 a wide variety of restaurants, cafes, diners, bars still tend to maintain their original look and their old style signs in front of their place from old days. Every state has its own top spots where people can enjoy the food and drink while traveling across the Route 66 and taste the original old recipes from the time when the Route 66 was the main road. They once served the people who traveled the long way from the state of Illinois to the state of California, and today they serve tourists who want to taste the old ways when Route 66 was celebrated as the main road and not as the historical path as it is today.
Moreover fast-food restaurants evolved from the eateries spawned by the car culture. Drive-Ins with food delivered to waiting cars, "Walk-Ups" where customers queued in multiple lines to speed food purchase and ultimately the Drive-Through, where food was handed to motorists in waiting cars, were introduced. Reflecting on the industrial age assembly lines, food preparation, and delivery were engineered to fully rationalize time and motion. With the widespread adoption of the automobile for personal transportation Americans took on automobile-convenient food as a logical extension of their mania for the on the go lifestyle. This also changed the use of public and private space. The boundary between inside and outside of a restaurant is not crossed when ordering from the car. Today this type is mainly represented by generic hamburger chains along the interstate.

Figure 3. Drive through food stop.

4. LODGING

Route 66 and traveling by car has diminished the role of the hotel. Hotels are often located in the urban core of a city or town. They are directly adjacent to the street, and they have no or limited parking because they were originally geared towards visitors arriving by train. They are usually designed as a destination, not a passage, that means to accommodate multi-night stays, and their guests are usually there for the purpose of business or vacation in the local area. They often include additional amenities like function rooms, dining facilities,

Figure 4. Motel lodging.

and a welcoming entry lobby. The motel, on the other hand, is well suited for one-night stays. The building is separated from the street to accommodate the cars. Easy parking drops guests off in front of their room, built with only one or two floors, room access is direct on the outside of the building, that is arranged around a parking lot or an open air swimming pool. The accessibility makes the motel the ideal system for transient travelers.

Many of the motels were built in the early 20th century and carried a local character. In Kellyville, OK, for example, the motel appears like an old farming village made of stone. This style of motel is unique to Oklahoma, and could not be seen anywhere else. In Flagstaff, Arizona, a great neon sign shows the Flamingo Motor Hotel, with its slate roofs to sustain the desert heat. This type of roof differs greatly from roofs elsewhere, and would stick out in a person's memory of their travel along Route 66. The Wigwam Motel in Rialto, California is also different in that the rooms are actually a series of tepees resembling a Native American tribe settling alongside the road. All of these motels can be seen right along the side of the street, and are not advertised on monotonous green, red or blue signs of a motel chain.

Therefore many motels along the road were attractions as well, and some old and historical motels still stand and are visited along the main road today. Often the signs of the motels are visually more attractive and more important that the building itself. The characteristic style of large size, bright colors, and flashy lights of the motel signs along Route 66 respond directly to the moving automobile and nomadic lifestyle.

Today the motels along the interstates are much different from the old motels on Route 66. The only way you know when to stop for a motel would be to look for a generic sign to tell you. When you do find a hotel, you notice that it looks the same as the one you have seen in the previous state. Motels have become a chain, and have lost their originality and specific qualities.

5. ROADSIDE ATTRACTIONS, ART AND MUSIC

The explorers of Route 66 originally followed a dream, their wheels brought them to new lands. Their path rolled, rose and fell, it pitched and heaved around every hairpin turn, what would they find around the next bend? Would it be something intriguing or scary? Would it be a giant boy carrying a hamburger, a big blue whale, a stretch of painted Cadillacs buried in the ground, a giant dinosaur in front of a cavern, a giant rabbit wearing a saddle, a spaceman carrying a rocket, a big neon pig dancing on a sign, or would it just be a stretch of Camelback Road, empty enough to travel along quickly and give one the sense of a roller coaster ride?

The Cadillac Ranch, for example, located on the outskirts of Amarillo, consists of ten Cadillac automobiles from 1949 to 1963 that are partially submerged head first in a wheat field. The art installation, created by installation artists and architects collectively known as Ant Farm, was a combination of commemorating the glory of Route 66 with the freedom it engendered allowing for the flow and movement of Americans westward. Though the actual vehicles are placed at the exact angel of the Pyramids of Giza, the designers want to commemorate a concept closer to the American people – that of the fascination with a sense of place, the concept of roadside attractions and the mobility and freedom of the automobile.

Other attractions were trading posts, racing on the road, natural wonders, and drive-in movie theaters. The purpose for the human-made attractions were to welcome, accommodate, and entertain travelers. Food, gas, and lodging were the most important, but by adding attractions, it made the adventure of the route not only feasible but also interesting and exciting. The tourist trade increased and a unique way of marketing one's product developed. Whatever was built or electrified was always large and often strange. Phrases

such as, world's largest, longest, tallest, and others may still be seen along Route 66 today. Bobby Troup's "(Get your Kicks On) Route 66" is, without question, the most recognized, and the most covered, ode to old 66. Written in 1946, it characterizes the legendary highway as the only way to truly travel west. There is no wonder over 76 artists, including The Cramps, Anita Bryant, Louis Jordan, The Rolling Stones, Sammy Davis Jr., the Replacements, Chuck Wagon and the Wheels, Nat King Cole, and Depeche Mode, have remade the tune. They all knew the real Route 66, and they had one message: "Get your kicks on Route 66!"

6. ROUTE 66 VERSUS INTERSTATE

When the interstate system came along and neighbored Route 66, travelers mainly used this instead. The interstate was a faster and a more efficient way of traveling if someone just needed to get from a to b. Along this path there aren't usually any exciting visual aspects incorporated, just a long, paved, and boring highway. The interstate took a lot of the life out of the old route and caused many businesses to shut down. In many respects, the physical remains of Route 66 mirror the evolution of highway development in the United States from primitive country roads to a federally subsidized complex of uniform interstate expressways.

Route 66 now has become more like a theme park or an attraction rather than a common traveling experience. It seems like the days of enjoying traveling across the country in the car are almost over, or they are a luxury, and getting to the destination as quickly as possible now becomes more essential. On the other hand one thing that makes Route 66 so unique is the way the road in itself has become a destination. This is almost ironic in that traveling a highway has become a vacation destination for some people rather than having a place as a final location with the journey being the destination.

Figure 5. Route 66 – not a through street.

Shops and antique stores are popular on Route 66 today. Most restaurants, motels, and other places along the way have memorabilia of Route 66. The cafes are old fashioned, the restaurants still serve the greasy hamburgers that travelers loved in the old days, and the attitudes are still friendly and inviting.

Looking a Route 66 also provides the opportunity to reflect on an early and mid-20th century urban and rural transportation system and its influence on urban development. Formerly the villages had mostly been self-sustained through agriculture or manufacturing. Getting connected through the main street of America changed that narrative - it actually got it started. Experiencing locally built environments, different landscapes, local food and drink and different climates

Figure 6. Route 66 – flag.

provided the travelers, who came by private car, public bus or commercial truck, with new experiences.

Chain stores and chain motels settling besides the road or next to the interstate can be called harbingers of globalization at a time, when the word was not really existing yet. This development can be transfered to many different areas, villages and cities in numerous countries. In that case the identity of a place is not rooted in the origin of a place anymore, it lacks individuality and looks almost the same in different countries, landscapes and settings. Along the Route 66, the old fashioned ways are being showcased rather than the chain stores. That is one reason why Route 66 is still deeply rooted in the collective memory, and its myth is still being celebrated. Therefore although it is rundown in some parts, Route 66 still retains that down home feel. So if you want a taste of a slower pace, get off the interstate, take the byway and see the country and its people. Find your own kicks on any route, but, just even for day, try a piece of Route 66!

REFERENCES

Bernard, J., Brown, P., 2003. *American Route 66 Home on the Road.* Santa Fe: Museum of New Mexico Press.

Clark, M., 1993. *The Route 66 Cookbook.* Tulsa: Council Oak Books.

Freedth, N., 2001. *Traveling Route 66.* London: Salamander Books Ltd.

Hess, A., 1985. *Googie: Fifties coffee shop architecture.* San Francisco.

Kaszynski, W., *Route 66: Images of America's Main Street.* Jefferson: McFarland &Company.

Kittel, G., *Route 66*. New York: Thames & Hudson.

Repp, T. A., 2002. *Route 66: The Romance of the West.* Lynwood: Mock Turtle Press.

Scott, Q., 2000. *Along Route 66.* Norman: University of Oklahoma Press.

Snyder, T., 2000. *Route 66 Traveler's Guide and Roadside Companion.* New York: St. Martin's Griffin.

Venturi R., Scott Brown D., and Izenour S., 1977. *Learning From Las Vegas: The Forgotten Symbolism of Architectural Form.* Cambridge: The MIT Press.

All pictures by Sigrun Prahl

PAPER #1.16

SEEING BEYOND CITIES

Ray Kinoshita Mann[a]
[a]University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, Massachusetts, USA

ABSTRACT

The notion of the "city as the most relevant architectural issue of the twenty-first century" is a problematic mode of thought. It implies that going forward, the city should monopolize our attention to the exclusion of the vast and complex systems, human and non-human, of which dense urban settlements are merely a part. Many current literatures have come to belie the alleged superiority of the city as more efficient, more innovative and productive, more livable, or more sustainable—some cities may be, others may not. In terms of per capita total resource (greenhouse gas) consumption, cities are coming out at best a break-even proposition relative to every sector—rural, ex-urban, suburban (with the wealthy consuming far more wherever they are). Urbanization has also been coupled with the increasing corporatization of agricultural land and natural resources—a troubling trend not necessarily more efficient, desirable or inevitable. Equally worrying are signs of cities' accelerating inequality and the acute vulnerability particularly of coastal cities to the impacts of Climate Change. Oddly enough, all this debunking is good news: By jettisoning the valorization of one form of human existence over others, we can take a serious look at how we can (and must) do better across the board in all aspects of habitation and production. We can discard antiquated notions of the city slicker versus the country rube, of sprawl as the ugly stepchild of the city, of cities as objects not systems—to harness the full gradient of possible sustainable productivities and resiliencies from the seas and hinterlands to the urban core. For this paper I propose a Literature Review drawn from a broad range of disciplines, and through logical argumentation articulate the critical importance of recasting our focus beyond the confines of the city, even when working on the city.

KEYWORDS

Urban; suburban; rural; consumption; sprawl.

INTRODUCTION

The city vs. the country as a subject of centuries-long debate has taken on new urgency in the last few decades as we face critical decisions about the future. The current near-obsessive focus on the city—particularly by designers and planners—may not be entirely well-grounded, and has troubling implications if left unchallenged. The literature is voluminous and complex, so this paper tries to frame the core arguments in a deliberately reductive way, bringing together findings of planners, economists, sociologists, environmental scientists and others. I propose to examine three different part-to-whole problems that are roughly analogous to successive delineations of the urban core, the metropolitan area, and the region.

1. THREE PART/WHOLE PROBLEMS

For at least a decade, two narratives have shaped the pro-city movement in both the minds of the public and the professions: The first narrative is most easily represented by

Harvard economist Edward Glaeser's 2011 book, *Triumph of the City* that declared cities as both "greener" and more productive than the hinterlands. His argument for "green" was rooted in the greater walkability, decreased automobile dependence and the reduced energy/resource and infrastructure costs of density, while productivity was evinced by the significantly higher average urban per capita GNP purportedly spawned by the greater "creative capital" of urban agglomerations (Glaeser 2011). Urban planner and pro-urban threorist Richard Florida also touted these ideas in *The Rise of The Creative Class* in 2014, and cities all over the world embraced his thinking. Almost concurrently, physicists/systems theorists Luis Bettencourt and Geoffrey West pioneered the idea of applying allometry to cities—a biological concept where larger animals are shown to be more efficient in terms of energy use than smaller animals, providing mathematical justification to the argument that density in settlements--much like volume in animals—provides the best from and for humans: On average, as city size increases, per capita socio-economic quantities such as wages, GDP, number of patents produced and number of educational and research institutions all increase by approximately 15% more than the expected linear growth (Bettencourt and West 2010). Based on this theory, the bigger and denser the city, the better at infinitum—seeming to point to megacities of populations of 20 millions-plus as the way of the future, with a correspondingly emptied countryside "left to nature" or farmed with minimal human involvement.

The second narrative is that "sprawl" and extensive infrastructures beyond a city's central boundaries is not only objectionable but unsustainable--a "growth Ponzi scheme" in the words of Strong Towns founder Charles Marohn, that was sold to post-WWII America (and ultimately around the world) and is headed for collapse as it ages out (Marohn 2011). These declarations had critics even at the time they were introduced—but they have had remarkable staying power, not least in the imagination of planners and designers who would love to realize dense built environments "done right." The most optimistic declare that cities can even feed themselves and process their waste via urban permaculture, making connections to the ex-urban and rural even less necessary. More recently, however, skeptics are making their voices heard, including that of Richard Florida himself. In *Urban Crisis* from 2017, Florida sounds the alarm on the extreme inequities and social tensions that are clearly on the rise from the pro-urban boom. Florida's copious arguments are worth analyzing because they embody many of the complexities, contradictions and dilemmas of the urban equation—though without ever conceding to any demerits in his original pro-density ideas.

2. CITY VS. CITY

Let's assume for a minute that a city can be defined as primarily its high-density core, the dense "walkable" commercial/residential/cultural urban fabric that most people picture in their minds as "city." The relationship of the core to what surrounds it will be discussed later in the paper, but here I focus on the first part-to-whole consideration of the urban core itself—in that the tendency to focus primarily on residential and vehicular fuel consumption or Greenhouse Gas Emissions (GHG) as the metric for establishing that urban living is more "green" is in itself an incomplete standard of measure.

Based on transportation alone, studies confirm that annual transportation fuel consumption can be a factor of two or more lower for urban core households than their suburban and rural counterparts (Newman and Kenworthy 1999).

Likewise, while less dramatic, the operational and embodied emissions of higher density housing types are found to be somewhat lower than their low-density counterparts (Fuller and Crawford 2011, Stephan et al 2013, Brown *et al* 2017). If all other consumption factors between household types were equal, the stark difference based primarily on the transportation difference would stand (at least until EV vehicles become the norm), but it turns out that when the total consumption of households are assessed, a different picture emerges. This is most clearly articulated by the concept of "parallel consumption" introduced in a series of Finnish studies that hypothesize that "lifestyle" and its associated energy consumption turns out to be shaped or "situated" by the settlement forms in which one lives (Heinonen *et al* 2013).

Heinonen *et al* explain that in higher-density urban areas, "the reduced living spaces… are actually a trade-off between living space possessed and high proximity to various service spaces that can be used to "extend" the living space." As such, urban dwellers avail themselves at a higher rate to restaurants, health clubs, and the like that provide "consumption opportunities…which lead their residents (to) having the highest carbon footprints" (Heinonen *et al* 2013). Each such facility contributes to the consumption of a household, often in redundant ways (food preparation, equipment space, etc.)—hence the "parallel" nature of the consumption. While recognizing that such facilities are neither exclusively used by their immediate urban residents nor are exclusive to urban areas, the study's data nonetheless indicate a distinctly elevated pattern of use among urban dwellers. In addition, even at similar income levels urban dwellers had higher expenditures on household goods and more frequent travel to second homes or cottages. Even daily transportation emission differences between non-urban and urban dwindle thanks to more time spent in stop-and-start traffic in spite of shorter distances traveled (Heinonen *et al* 2013). A similar though less exhaustive 2010 study from the U.S. context using overall consumption critieria finds that ex-urban "sprawl living" is only 17-19% more energy intensive than living in the core (Shammin et al, 2010). Ultimately, it should come as no surprise that the higher productivity of urban areas touted by proponents such as Edward Glaezer should result in higher household consumption, but it does somewhat pull the plug on the notion that dense settlements are achieving more with less than their less dense counterparts.

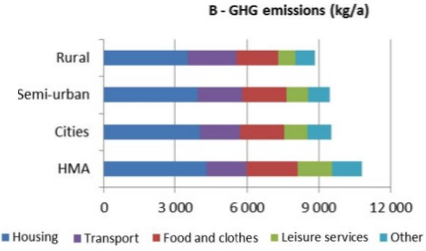


Figure 1. GHG emissions including consumption (HMA = Helsinki Metropolitan Area) (Heinonen at al 2013)

Infrastructure cost and material considerations remain outside the findings outlined above, but need to be addressed as a facet of the pro-density argument. Do substantial infrastructure efficiencies of emanate from a large number of users per area served? How to properly answer this question turns out to be very difficult; the best effort I could find was a working paper from the Brookings institute (Brooks and Liscow 2020). The authors seek to tease out which particular factors contribute to the high cost of infrastructure repair and construction, particularly in the U.S. where costs have multiplied well ahead of inflation, and which can be 2-3x that of comparable work elsewhere in the world. After due consideration of planning, land acquisition, material and labor

costs, project complexity, litgation, price-fixing, regulations and environmental factors just to name a few, the only consistent correlation the authors could pinpoint was affluence—the relative wealth of the populations directly impacted by a project. Affluence appears to serve as a proxy measure of the extent to which citizens feel empowered to litigate against projects, as well as demand higher quality infrastructure, particularly subsequent to the passing of the National Environmental Policy Act of 1969 (Brooks and Liscow 2020). The study evaluates costs on a per mile as opposed to a per capita basis. While greater density suggests lower costs per capita, the greater affluence of urban areas suggest the potential for elevated costs, particularly in cities that are wealthy but aging out of their infrastructure.

3. CITY VS. SPRAWL

> From the beginning, sprawl has been one of those words more useful in suggesting an attitude than in indicating any actual conditions. The attitude has almost always been negative. (Bruegmann 2006, 17)

An equally vehement issue for many, though not all pro-urbanists is a distaste for "sprawl," the ugly stepchild of the city that typically spreads every which-way around the periphery of the perceived boundaries of city-ness. While in the tradition of Glaeser, we can try to excise the suburbs and other "sprawl" from what we define as the city, it is clear historically that sprawl IS part of the city (Glaeser 2011). Of the 80-plus percent "urbanized" population of the continental U.S., 52% is in suburban zones (the census does not have a category of "suburban" so only identifies urban vs. rural) (Breugmann 2006). While each country has its characteristic version, "sprawl" is worldwide. Robert Breugmann, Joel Garreau, libertarian Joel Kotkin, and even Richard Florida have long made the argument that sprawl is a natural outgrowth of cities, as an "edge" condition where space is cheaper and less regulated that is as critical to urban vitality and productivity as is the core.

In terms of emissions, sprawl is the fly in the ointment for cities if one accepts them as an inherent part of the urban whole. Just as a more thorough tabulation of emissions in the urban core have increased its numbers, actual carbon emission measurement data via the Arizona State University's 2013 *Vulcan Project*, brought together with the population distribution data of the *Global Rural-Urban Mapping Project* (GRUMPv1) were able to demonstrate that metropolitan agglomerations tend towards higher per capita GHG, not lower (Oliveira *et al* 2014). The NASA/Doe-funded Vulcan Project was able to break out each energy sector such that transportation is separate from both residential and commercial activity—laying bare the contributions from each. Identifying super-linear behavior in allometric terms (as per Bettencourt and West), the research concluded that:

> Doubling the city population results in an average increment of 146% in CO2 emissions, rather than the expected isometric 100%. This …suggests that the high productivity found in larger cities is done at the expense of a disproportionately larger amount of emissions compared to smaller cities (Oliveira et al 2014).

That doubling population more than doubles emissions is cause for concern, particularly for mega-city advocates.

There is no doubt that sprawl can be "done" better, but rushing to densify it in the name of emission reduction can have its own perils, especially if by the time the full range of urban household consumption is taken into consideration, it is a wash: "As a

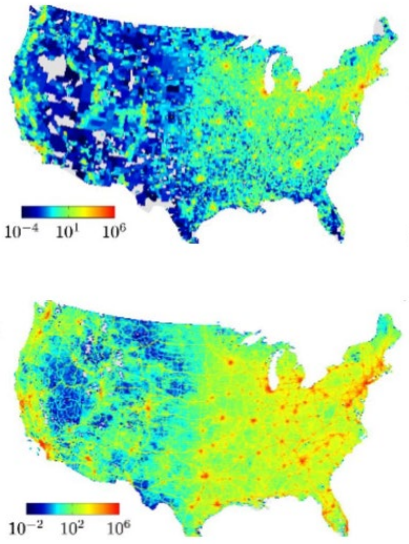


Figure 2. Carbon emissions for U.S. Residential and On-road CO2 mappings (Oliveira et al 2014)

policy measure to reduce GHG emissions, increasing population density appears to have severe limitations and unexpected trade-offs" (Oliveira *et al* 2014,1) And as Richard Breugmann reminds us:

> Strident efforts to reverse the course of urban history and push these places back into the mold of dense 19th c. cities heavily dependent on public transportation risk destroying the very things that have made them such magnets for population and economic growth in the first place (Breugmann 2005).

4. CITY VS. COUNTRY

A prevailing truism is that the urban condition is economically and culturally superior to the rural—that no country can substantively grow its GNP without big cities, and that traditionally ex-urban activities such as agricultural production and resource extraction are not the best use of human capital. Rural areas are assumed to be too dispersed to incentivize concentrated job creation or access to services and knowledge sharing, and so on. Many pro-urbanists furthermore promote the separation of the built environment from "nature," with each serving as an antidote to the other. Resource economists John Day and Charles Hall, however, have long argued that cities draw deeply from their regions, more than people generally recognize (Day and Hall 2016). Primary resources are often the actual source of a city's wealth even in the present day, both in terms of commodities and production. Pulling people off the land to place it into fewer and fewer (corporate) hands should also be concerning—farms are getting bought up throughout the Midwest by venture capital—often foreign in origin—that take little interest in local or regional affairs (Ashwood *et al* 2020). Statistics on agricultural land ownership indicate substantial corporatization—Non-operating landlords own 31 percent of farmland in the U.S. (USDA 2014).

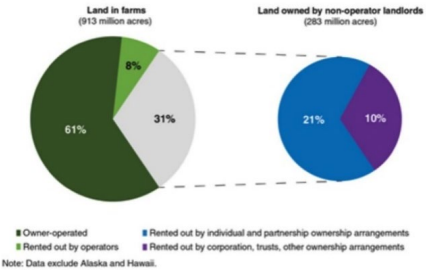


Figure 3. Acres owned by non-operator landlords (USDA 2014)

Moreover, agriculture is about to get more important, not less—especially if we want to get serious about greater urbanization, not to mention the production of things like biomaterials at an industrial scale. Advanced knowledge and skills, not only about agriculture but the environment more broadly are critical, and many of the jobs that are emerging require higher education. Agricultural innovation requires partnerships with institutions and research capital. Even Richard Florida has noted that innovation as measured by patents is surpassed by rural and ex-urban zones over urban (Florida 2018). In other words, "creative capital" isn't exclusively urban—and there is no reason that knowledge can't be flowing freely through the rural-suburban-urban space. "Smart Cities" tout IT infrastructure—but these technologies should equally be able to serve dispersed populations and activities. Digital technology makes it much more possible outside cities than before—communicating with markets, etc. so theoretically, people are not isolated by living outside the city. Energy researcher and author Oscar Serpell urges us not to base future drivers for urbanization/de-urbanization on past drivers: For example, if off-grid storage becomes cost-effective, or transportation becomes primarily electric and driverless—suddenly transportation CO2 drops and productive commuting time can enhance connectivity between multiple geographies and livelihoods.

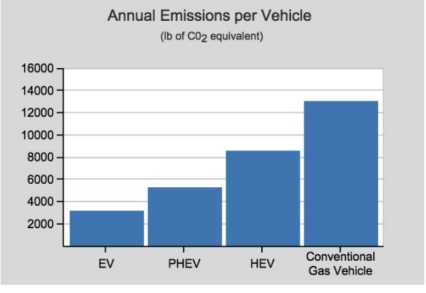


Figure 4. Annual Emissions per Vehicle, New York (Tesla 2015)

5. DISCUSSION

As a topic outside of my core area of expertise as an academic and practicing architect/developer, this preliminary Literature Review is more broad and less systematic than ideal. Piecing together findings from associated but distinct disciplines rife with unsettled debates, has its challenges. For every argument one can also find its opposite, making it critical to wade through the data and metrics with a grain of skepticism and common sense in equal measure. Ultimately I seek a straightforward but sufficiently nuanced framework that will bring greater clarity to how we make decisions as planners and designers. On the hunch that residential transportation and housing emissions are an inadequate metric, I sought out studies on additional measures of consumption. I sought out CO_2 measurement data to further reinforce or refute these findings. However, the source of emission in one study is doesn't entirely overlap with what is measured in the other, either in type of emission, place or time—and it assumes that typical behaviors observed in Finland are approximately similar to those in the United States on any given year in the last decade. Nonetheless I am cautiously satisfied that these findings can expand a common understanding.

CONCLUSION

Rather than rushing to density, by leveling the playing field between multiple scenarios of productive existence both in terms of societal and ecological impact, we can make more considered choices. The reason for caution is that while agglomeration offers clear economic growth advantages by amassing knowledge, labor and resources to create a competitive productivity, it also tends to exacerbate inequity. Researchers such as economist Jordan Rapaport have noted that, "density generates diseconomies like traffic

congestion or expensive housing costs, which limit growth," and that "Dis-amenities begin to outweigh advantages, managerial complexities become too vast, and happiness is found to be greater in less dense settlements (Rapaport 2018)." (Rapaport's sweet spot for city population is from just under 500,000 to 3 million). "Climate-friendly" higher-density housing, however, has been found to be an accelerating factor in neighborhood gentrification and displacement of existing residents (Rice *et al* 2019). Moreover, the heightened dependence of cities on man-made systems and centralized control are also likely to make cities—especially traditional coastal/trade more vulnerable than less to Climate Change. The arrival of the pandemic has further exposed the extent to which high settlement population and density can backfire on multiple levels.

So what is the free-market solution, assuming that is what we want? More choices, right? Putting all your eggs in the star-city baskets, where they become de-facto monopolies on job creation and real estate value is neither necessary or a given. Recognize that wealth creation can be more geographically diversified and focus on the infrastructures that can support them. John Day and Charles Hall urge us not to make the mistake of looking at urbanism as a setting (form) rather than the manifestation of a portion of a system (Day and Hall 2016). Human settlement objectives can be considered regionally, linking urban, exurban, country, with movement and knowledge-sharing back and forth to seek solutions for reducing GHG while improving life tailored to localities. Our data suggest that an entirely new approach of highly tailored, community-scale carbon management is urgently needed" (Day and Hall 2016).

REFERENCES

Editor's Pick 2015, #4: Non-Operating Landlords Own 31 Percent of U.S. Farmland.", accessed Sep 21, 2020

"How Tesla Will Change the World." Wait But Why., last modified -06-02T09:47:44+00:00, accessed Sep 22, 2020

"The Faster Growth of Larger, Less Crowded Locations.", accessed Sep 22, 2020

"The Growth Ponzi Scheme." Strong Towns., accessed Sep 21, 2020.

"Yes, there's a Rural Creative Class, Too." 2018. *Bloomberg.Com*.

Ashwood, Loka, John Canfield, Madeleine Fairbairn, and Kathryn De Master. 2020. "What Owns the Land: The Corporate Organization of Farmland Investment." *The Journal of Peasant Studies* 0 (0): 1-30.

Brooks, Leah and Zachary D. Liscow. 2019. *Infrastructure Costs.* Rochester, NY.

Brown, Marilyn A., Frank Southworth, and Andrea Sarzynski. 2009. "The Geography of Metropolitan Carbon Footprints." *Policy and Society* 27 (4): 285-304.

Bruegmann, Robert. 2005. *Sprawl : A Compact History* University of Chicago Press.

C40 Cities, University of Leeds, University of New South Wales, and Arup. 2018. *Consumption-Based GHG Emissions of C40 Cities:* C40 Cities.

Day, John W. and Charles Hall. 2016. *America's most Sustainable Cities and Regions. [Electronic Resource] : Surviving the 21st Century Megatrends*. 1st ed. 2016. ed. Springer New York.

Florida, Richard L. 2017. *The New Urban Crisis : How our Cities are Increasing Inequality, Deepening Segregation, and Failing the Middle Class-- and what we can do about It* Basic Books.

Glaeser, Edward L. 2011. *Triumph of the City : How our Greatest Invention Makes Us Richer, Smarter, Greener, Healthier, and Happier* Penguin Press.

Heinonen, Jukka, Mikko Jalas, Jouni K. Juntunen, Sanna Ala-Mantila, and Seppo Junnila. 2013a. "Situated Lifestyles: I. how Lifestyles Change Along with the Level of Urbanization and what the Greenhouse Gas Implications Are—a Study of Finland." *Environmental Research Letters* 8 (2): 25003.

"Situated Lifestyles: II. the Impacts of Urban Density, Housing Type and Motorization on the Greenhouse Gas Emissions of the Middle-Income Consumers in Finland." *Environmental Research Letters* 8 (3): 35050.

McDonogh, Gary, Cindy Isenhour, and Melissa Checker. 2011. "Introduction: Sustainability in the City: Ethnographic Approaches." City & Society 23 (2): 113-116.

Newman, Peter and Jeffrey Kenworthy. 1999. *Sustainability and Cities: Overcoming Automobile Dependence* Island Press.

Oliveira, Erneson A., Jr Andrade José S, and Hernán A. Makse. 2014. "Large Cities are Less Green." *Scientific Reports* 4 (1): 4235.

Pichler, Peter-Paul, Timm Zwickel, Abel Chavez, Tino Kretschmer, Jessica Seddon, and Helga Weisz. 2017. "Reducing Urban Greenhouse Gas Footprints." *Scientific Reports* 7 (1): 14659-11.

R. J. Fuller and R. H. Crawford. 2011. "Impact of Past and Future Residential Housing Development Patterns on Energy Demand and Related Emissions." *Journal of Housing and the Built Environment* 26 (2): 165-183.

Rice, Jennifer L., Daniel Aldana Cohen, Joshua Long, and Jason R. Jurjevich. 2019. "Contradictions of the Climate-Friendly City: New Perspectives on Eco-Gentrification and Housing Justice." *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 44 (1): 145-165.

Roberts, David. "Cities are Beginning to Own Up to the Climate Impacts of what they Consume." Vox., last modified -07-01T11:30:00-04:00, accessed Feb 23, 2020.

Shammin, Md R., Robert A. Herendeen, Michelle J. Hanson, and Eric J. H. Wilson. 2010. "A Multivariate Analysis of the Energy Intensity of Sprawl Versus Compact Living in the U.S. for 2003." *Ecological Economics* 69 (12): 2363-2373.

Stephan, André, Robert H. Crawford, and Kristel de Myttenaere. 2013. "Multi-Scale Life Cycle Energy Analysis of a Low-Density Suburban Neighbourhood in Melbourne, Australia." *Building and Environment* 68: 35-49.

West, Geoffrey and Luis Bettencourt. 2010. "A Unified Theory of Urban Living." *Nature* 467 (7318): 912-913.

PAPER #1.17

CORPOREAL POLIS

Paul Holmquist[a]
[a]Louisiana State University, USA

ABSTRACT

What relation do architects have to the political dimension of the city as polis? What is the relation between urban protest movements and the city spaces they take place within? How can architecture learn from protest, and particularly from what happens to spaces and places in protest in order to anticipate, support, and even sustain the possibility for the political dimension of the city to emerge in urban experience? In this essay I attempt to outline a response to these questions through a discussion of the differing roles of place in urban protests such as Occupy Wall Street in 2011 in New York, the 2011 Egyptian Revolution, the ongoing pro-democracy protests in Hong Kong, and the Gezi Park protest of 2013 in Istanbul. I examine the interrelation of place and the political in these cases with respect to the political philosophy of Hannah Arendt, and to her conception of action and appearance in relation to the irreducible corporeality of political actors and of the spaces produced in action. I argue that the bodily presence, acting and speaking of political actors implicate the shared corporeality of urban places as part of the common world, and opens a political and actionable sense of reality within the otherwise predominant instrumental and operative reality undergirding apparatuses of power. I conclude that in prioritizing this actionable reality and the corporeality of the acting body, architecture and urbanism as design practices can begin to articulate places that may potentially reinforce and resonate with the political dimension of human action and being-in-common, and in so doing, materially recollect and reconstitute the city as a corporeal polis.

KEYWORDS

Urban protest; public space; the political; corporeality; Hannah Arendt.

INTRODUCTION

In the last decade the question of the political nature and viability of public, urban space has been brought to the fore around the world by repeated protests and uprisings against the exclusion, inequality and injustice of oppressive structures of power. According to theorist and geographer Erik Swyngedouw, the protesters who take to urban spaces to reclaim them politically from the governmental apparatuses of neoliberal capitalism and authoritarian state regimes are "insurgent architects," whose actions remake cities as properly political sites of contest, dispute and dissensus where alternate forms of being-in-common can be envisioned, prefigured and enacted.(Swyngedouw 2018) In these insurgent "urban designs," wherein urban spaces are reappropriated and repoliticized in dissent, political actors and their intentions take priority over those of the professional designers of architecture and urbanism. In their actions, and through their bodies and voices, protesters themselves are responsible for opening spaces in which the political, as such, can appear and be experienced in the city. As urban spaces are taken back, if only momentarily, from their erstwhile designers and the regimes of power that structure, organize and police the city, the question arises of what relation architects have to the political dimension of the city as polis. What role do architects and other designers play, or can possibly play, in the emergence of the political

as such in protest? Can architects address the potentiality of urban places to become sites for the political? Can they cede priority to political actors while still enabling conditions for protest and other political action? How can architecture learn from protest, and particularly from what happens to spaces and places in protest? What lessons can be drawn from them so that architecture may be able to anticipate, support, and even sustain the possibility for the political dimension of urban experience to emerge out of action, wherever and whenever it may occur? I will attempt to outline a response to these questions through a discussion the interrelation of action, place and the political in protest events with respect to the political philosophy of Hannah Arendt, and to her conception of action and appearance in relation to the irreducible corporeality of political actors and how it directly implicates the 'corporeality' of spaces and places that are the sites of action. I argue that for Arendt, an objective, actionable sense of reality emerges out of the bodily co-presence of heterogenous actors that is integral to place and opens up within and as an exception to the predominantly instrumental and operative sense of reality that apparatuses of power are predicated upon. Drawing as well upon Judith Butler's work on the body and performative assembly and Jean-Luc Nancy's on community and the common, I furthermore argue that the bodily presence, acting and speaking of political actors potentially implicate the shared corporeality of urban places as the common world such that the political – the potentiality of being-in-common – manifests immanently within it. Through a discussion of protest movements such as Occupy Wall Street in New York and the Egyptian Revolution, both of 2011; the Gezi Park Protests of 2013 in Istanbul; and the ongoing Hong Kong pro-democracy protests; and how they effectively and communicatively 'corporealize' the urban spaces they take place within, I hope to further understand the potential capacity of urban places to materially undergird the emergence of the political, and point to ways that architectural and urban design practices may be able to reassert the priority of actionable reality to recover the city as a corporeal polis.

PROTEST AND POLITICS

While the scientific literature on urban protests is vast and multi-dimensional, including much critical work on the spatiality of urban protest, critical examination of their specifically architectural dimensions, broadly speaking, has not been widely undertaken. Architecture as practice and artifact is generally associated with the operation of power that protest movements struggle against, and it must collectively be reappropriated, reprogrammed, redeployed and recreated in order for it to enable more equitable, just and inclusive agendas. An exception to this view can be found in *Beyond Zuccotti Park: Freedom of Assembly and the Occupation of Public Space* (2012), edited by Ron Shiffman, et al, a multi-disciplinary collection of essays on the mutual implications of political protest, public space, the commons, architecture and urbanism that was compiled shortly after the 2011 Occupy Wall Street protests in New York.(Shiffman et al 2012) On the other hand, there is a burgeoning literature on the political agency of architecture and urbanism themselves as capable of empowering social and political actors and critically engaging spatial structures of oppression, exploitation and exclusion, including the appeal to so-called "spatial agency," "tactical urbanism," and "insurgent" and "guerilla urbanism."(Awan, Schneider, and Till 2011; Gadanho et al 2014; Hou et al 2010) Much of this work follows in some way from that of sociologist and philosopher Henri Lefebvre who, drawing upon Marx's reduction of human reality to the social conditions of production, extends it to the space and fabric of the city as a collective "work" whose potential to accommodate the

fulfillment of a properly authentic human life proceeds directly from the equitable, inclusive nature of those social conditions. In this view, the production of space and architectural artifacts likewise proceeds directly from the corporeality of labor production within the social relationships that entangle bodies, entraining them reciprocally within the spaces and artifacts they produce. Urban protest can thus be understood by theorists and commentators such as Erik Swyngedouw and Mustafa Dikeç in terms of reappropriating and reproducing urban space through spontaneously reconfiguring the relations of production through the collective action of equal and inclusive actors.(Swyngedouw 2018; Dikeç 2015) Drawing upon a wider range of thought from figures such as Hannah Arendt, Jean-Luc Nancy, Jacques Rancière, Slavoj Žižek and Chantal Mouffe, these and other theorists attempt to articulate how the properly political dimension of cities and space in general an arise through contesting the control and meaning of urban places, and staging prefigurations of alternative forms of being-in-common that are more equitable and inclusive in occupying them. Swyngedouw goes so far as to characterize these protesters are "insurgent architects" and urban "designers," who effectively reshape the city materially and symbolically to collaboratively envision and enact it as polis. (Swyngedouw 2018)

While this body of critical work on space and protest is powerful and incisive, the assumption of an operative reality of production common to both oppressive power and emancipatory resistance is highly problematic in that it renders political action as effective or not according largely to an instrumental framework of ends and means. Architecture and urban spaces become subject to an instrumental reality that renders them either as tools of repression or emancipation, and effectively subsumes them within the domain of force, even if only in principle. It is furthermore difficult to ascribe what freely and undeniably appears, or comes to light, in protest – the prefiguration of alternate modes of being-in-common and the appearance of dignity, beauty, equality, inclusivity – to the same processes of direct resistance and contest of authority and power. Many commentators, including those noted above, turn to Arendt and her performative theory of political action to account for this phenomenon of political appearance, even within agonistic contest, in order to recognize the priority of non-instrumental action taken solely out of a common concern for the just. Yet even a cursory reading of Arendt's work shows the fundamental incompatibility of her thought with any emancipatory politics, and especially with rendering the political realm subject to instrumentality in any way. For Arendt, the very freedom at stake in political action and appearance is destroyed by constraining it within the framework of ends and means, which entrains action within the necessity of causes and intended effects.(Arendt 1998) While much criticism of Arendt's thought centers on her distinction between work, labor and political action as interrelated but essentially different realms of human activity, her strict exemption of action – as exclusively political and concerning the possibility of human freedom – from all instrumentality is very often ignored. In this paper I attempt to outline how the political dimension of urban protest in relation to urban places can be rethought through Arendt's political theory, in such a way that the expressly political, non-instrumental dimension of protest action can be seen in the likewise non-instrumental reciprocity of bodies, spaces and places in the city.

CORPOREALITY, APPEARANCE AND PLACE

Arendt's political theory is, like that of Lefebvre, a powerful and incisive means of conceptualizing the interrelationship of protest action, space and urban places

so as to preserve the possibility of human freedom in political action. As with Lefebvre, the acting body is the originary site of the political, but only insofar as action is taken for the sake of manifesting the particularity of human freedom, and for establishing, sustaining and preserving a public realm of human affairs – the realm of our concern for being-in-common – wherein human freedom can be enacted in action and speech.(Arendt 1998; 2006) For Arendt, the public realm is a space of appearance in which actors disclose themselves as human in freely acting for the sake of common concern.(Arendt 1998) The public realm is a formalization of the space that arises between acting bodies, and as such depends on the co-presence of actors and their bodies in space, and the ability of all actors to see and hear everyone else.(Arendt 1998) The public realm as a sphere of appearance furthermore inheres in the tangible common world in which bodies coexist and, as Judith Butler writes, co-constitute location and place in permeating the physical world with their own spatiality.(Butler 2015) The co-constitution of the common world as a place is contingent on the unique bodily location and perspective of heterogeneous actors, by virtue of which both the objectivity and reality of the world are provisionally established among them. This reality, born out of the co-presence and irreducible difference of plural acting bodies, is an actionable, rather than operative, sense of reality. It is the sense of reality in which action in its fullest political sense gives rise to human appearance and freedom, which for Arendt is the very essence and meaning of the political.(Arendt 1998; 2006) Furthermore, it is only in this actionable and freeing reality that the political as the horizon of possibility for being-in-common, following Jean-Luc Nancy, can open, or be exposed. In this opening the very question of the common – of being-with-others – can come into light, be grasped, take orientation, and be engaged.(Nancy and Fynsk 1991)

The political dimension of protest action then, when seen through an Arendtian lens, arises first out of the gathering and co-presence of bodies in places wherein the corporeality of location and action constitute the world as a co-corporeal, actionable place. This corporealized sense of place is coincident with the opening and actualization of a sphere of common concern through bodily co-presence and co-action, and, as Butler argues, this place is thus materially transformed to manifest the corporeal qualities of plurality, difference and equality of the bodies that co-produced it.(Butler 2015) Here Butler follows more directly from Lefebvre, but her point recalls the fitness for appearance that Arendt requires of the common world – that it manifest the beauty and tragic dignity of the human that resonates with and orients the qualities of human action taking place within it.(Arendt 1998; Curtis 1999) As I have argued elsewhere, the fitness of the common world for human appearance can be understood as its capacity to manifest the common – to allow the common, as such, to appear within it.(Holmquist 2020) Whereas for Arendt the common in terms of human qualities and ideals was traditionally embodied in monuments as the traces of past action, nowadays we must look to the ephemeral and contingent qualities of place as it emerges in co-corporeality with acting bodies during the event of protest. Some of the ways that this co-appearance of the common takes place with actors in urban protests will be discussed below. For now, it is enough to recognize this potential capacity and how, in principle, it constitutes the proper political dimension of many urban protests through action for the sake of opening the common, and the possibility of orientation and engagement. This view is again in contrast to the instrumental contestation of control of action or places in order to achieve discrete ends, however principled, although the difference between these actions is not always clear. Following Arendt, protest action

appears ambivalent in that instrumental action is taken for the sake of opening a properly political space of free disclosure and orientation, and actionable reality must often arise within operative reality, and be subject to the force that can be implemented through it. Place likewise appears concretely as both an instrumental and expressively resonant extension of the body.

OCCUPY WALL STREET 2011

There is no doubt that the experience of urban protest is intensely corporeal, wherein action, bodies and places fuse within the space and time of the event, especially when bodies are subject to violence and endangered. Yet the co-corporeality of bodies and places in protest, and the actionable reality they constitute through their co-corporeality, may well be most clearly seen in cases such as the Occupy Wall Street protest in New York's Zuccotti Park in the fall of 2011, where protests were on the whole non-violent and the police response was generally not life-threatening. The Occupy Movement, of course, takes its name from the traditional tactic of contesting power through mass assembly in a prohibited or otherwise controlled place. Occupy Wall Street protesters, however, strategically chose Zuccotti Park for occupation because as a so-called 'privately-owned public space' it was not subject to municipal ordinances governing assembly and opening hours as were city-owned parks and was required to be accessible to the public twenty-four hours a day.(Kayden 2000) Zuccotti Park thus served the protesters' immediate objective to gather together as many people as possible proximate to Wall Street without breaking the law or contesting control of the space, and to maintain their constant presence and action through encampment. Within this suspension of place-time in the neoliberal capitalist governance of the city a radically plural, egalitarian and democratic space opened up wherein a new model of being-in-common was enacted through new forms of interaction and communication. As is well known, the Occupy Wall Street protest had no leaders, or specific goals or demands other than to register outrage at the injustice of neoliberal economic order, and to enact in the space of protest an alternative to it. The struggles with police were almost incidental to the intent and meaning of the protest even after the park was forcibly cleared of tents, signs and other belongings, as seen in the protesters' immediate return with only their own bodies and voices.

In refusing to tie their action to instrumental objectives, Occupy Wall Street protesters actualized the actionable reality of Arendt within the space of Zuccotti Park for the sake of appearance, out of a common concern for the just. Through their active bodily occupation, they re-corporealized the empty corporate plaza used primarily for access to the nearby subway station by enfolding it within their collective space of appearance as a material co-constituent. From participant accounts in media at the time and afterwards, the park appeared to be materially transformed by the action taking place within it, as Butler argues for, but in a way that could not be reified or iconicized in any form or image. This was the case in spite of large, prominent works of public sculpture within the park, including Mark di Suvero's monumental *Joie de Vivre*, which protesters referred to only as 'the big red thing.'(Schneider and Solnit 2013) Likewise, the aspects of the park that come through most strongly in writing and images are not the forms of the park itself or of the buildings surrounding it, but the colors and qualities of the materials they were made of: the grove of honey locust trees and the brilliant yellow glow of their canopies; the gray granite of the park paving and seating areas; the blue of the plastic tarps covering protesters' tents; the red of di Suvero's sculpture, and another by Isamu Noguchi.(Schneider and Solnit 2013) These qualities and facts of materiality come

forward in contemporary images as mutually imbricated within the assembly of actors and their bodies, not merely as their setting or accoutrements, but as resonant extensions of their corporeality. I have suggested elsewhere that Zuccotti Park can be understood as having been effectively compelled to become fit for the appearance of the political taking place within it, following Arendt, and to co-manifest the beauty and tragic dignity of human action.(Holmquist 2020) In so doing, I argue that the resonant corporeality of the park recollected an originary potential for being-with at the basis of human being-in-common that, according to Jean-Luc Nancy, is shared by all being, human and non-human. (Nancy 2000) It is therefore by virtue of this originary relation of human and non-human potentiality of being-in-common that urban places can be understood to embody something of the transcendence of mere corporeal facticity that is the essence of human political experience. It is furthermore this potentiality of being-in-common with the world that is at stake in the re-corporealization of place in urban protest, and that links action and place within an ambivalent operative-actionable reality.

TAHRIR SQUARE 2011

The re-corporealization of urban place to open an actionable political sense of reality seen in the Occupy Wall Street protest can be understood as a general phenomenon of urban protest, and particularly in how, as John Berger observed, protesters' bodies are implicitly and explicitly offered as targets for state violence.(Berger 2001) In the 2011 Egyptian Revolution, the corporeal interrelation between protest action, place and violence came to light most clearly in the epicenter of the uprising in Cairo's Tahrir Square. Modeled in form during the 19th century after Haussmann's depoliticizing of Parisian public squares, Tahrir Square had developed over time into an important public space identified with the nation, in spite of having been transformed into a major traffic circle. Flanked by important public buildings and including a monument to nationalist hero Umar Makram, the square evokes the sense of an Arendtian public space that is ostensibly common, invested in meaning, and clearly bounded. Yet as a place, the square implicitly embodied the repressive state apparatus in giving priority to the monumental urban form as object and icon, rather than the bodily space of potential assembly and action. The occupation of Tahrir Square in the first months of 2011 by up to 250,000 protesters represented the literal re-corporealization of the square by encompassing it wholly within the actionable political space of appearance in non-violent protest. As with the Occupy Wall Street protests later that year, the enduring bodily co-presence of protesters served to explicitly contest and deny the prevailing operative reality of signification and repression, and gave lived, corporeal presence, weight and urgency to the political question of the common at stake. Unlike Occupy Wall Street, however, this re-corporealization of the square was met with brutal and violent force directed against protester's lives and bodies, and their potential for co-presence and co-action, which was, following Arendt, the basis of the collective power that they possessed.(Arendt 1998) The persistence of the protesters to fully inhabit the square through encampment in the face of violent reprisal effectively identified their own bodily endangerment with that of the square as a public place, and of the nation in question and envisioned anew. The square in turn became the living, struggling figure, as it were, of the protest, and the corporeal frame and stage for the space of appearance opened within it in which the powerful demand for political change could become effective.

HONG KONG 2014

In the Occupy Wall Street protest and Egyptian Revolution, actionable reality opened up in spite of the predominant operative reality, and in exception to it, through the co-corporeality of protesters and places. In the Hong Kong pro-democracy protest movements of 2014 and 2019 which continue today, actionable reality has opened up through the transformation of operative reality itself through bodily performances of instrumentality that deny its apparent priority and hegemony. Similar to Occupy Wall Street and the Egyptian Revolution, the protests in Hong Kong began peacefully and utilized concerted bodily assembly and encampments, but quickly shifted to staging actions and events widely across the city and territory and directly confronting, even violently, repressive police action. In many instances, protesters countered aggressive police tactics with their own, throwing Molotov cocktails and bricks, breaking storefronts, setting fires and commandeering police equipment and implements. Yet perhaps more significantly, protesters also responded directly to police action by deploying and repurposing everyday objects such as umbrellas for shields; sports and industrial equipment such as hard hats, goggles, body pads and respirators for helmets, face shields, body armor and gas masks; phone lights for flares; and plywood panels for shields. Infused with a simultaneously functional, performative and communicative irony, the 'do-it-yourself' ethic of improvisation and the emphasis on the 'gearing-up' of protester's bodies parodically transforms the violent operative reality of repression by reappropriating it for the ends of protest on its own terms. Artists and curators Carlotta Werner and Johanna Sunder-Plassmann have framed these repurposed implements as "hacked protest objects" which are "designed" through crowd-sourcing in response to overwhelming police force, and whose practical and symbolic meaning can shift and change.(Werner and Sunder-Plassman 2014) Yet in diverting their determined intentionalities, these implements can be read in light of the Lettrist and Situationist tactic of *détournemen*t as hijacking operative, instrumental reality itself and folding it within a larger actionable reality of appearance. The effectiveness of these tactics stems first from their communicative performativity, and second from their actual effectiveness, as evident in the flood of media images showing masses of protesters and police advancing towards each other, respectively behind extended umbrellas and bullet-proof shields. In their gear, protesters' bodies are re-articulated as instrumental extensions capable of acting, in an Arendtian sense, within the operative reality that subsumes the space of the city. Their bricolage of gear allows protesters to become mutually imbricated within the physicality and objectness of the city, and to project performative, 'detourned' instrumentality into the controlled spaces of commerce, transportation, and public institutions. Here the spaces of the city as the common world are called upon to be perceived as the stages for performative action, and I would argue that like Zuccotti Park, they are compelled to 'appear' in a way that is fit for political appearance as spaces in which the hegemony of instrumental operative reality is not only suspended, but suspendable. The instrumentalized bodies of the protesters thus open up an actionable reality of communication and concern for being-in-common within an alternate sense of reality, and thus of possibility, in which the common as the horizon of potentiality can be discerned. While such protest action has no hope of overwhelming police action through force, it is imbued with the power that arises out of co-presence and co-action of bodies for Arendt and sustains the capacity of the question of just and equitable being-in-common to appear in the protests.(Arendt 1998)

GEZI PARK 2013

The Gezi Park protests in Istanbul of 2013 likewise featured the denial of the hegemony of the instrumental, operative reality that enables the ongoing capitalist transformation of the lived city, as well as the brutal police response to the protesters themselves. Similar to the protests in Tahrir Square, many thousands of protesters peaceably occupied Gezi Park and the adjacent Taksim Square out of similar political concerns, and in the face of violent reprisal. The park is one of the last public green spaces in Istanbul and had been threatened with redevelopment into a commercial and residential complex under President Erdogan's so-called 'crazy' program of nationalist, capital-driven transformation of the city. The protest occupation of the park was launched by activists out of ecological and environmental concerns and occasioned a proliferation of communal and collective practices in the space involving not only protest, but education, recreation and everyday activities that were given heightened visibility and significance within the protest space of appearance. As with Tahrir Square, the Erdogan regime responded by attempting to disrupt and disperse the concentration of acting bodies by force and expel protesters physically from the park. The formerly peaceful occupation turned into a fierce struggle between protesters and police in the park and in other areas of Istanbul and across Turkey, in which a number of people were killed. While the corporeality of protesters' acting bodies can here be understood similarly to the Egyptian protest as the basis of the properly political dimension of the protest, a particular tactic taken which garnered global attention was the celebrated inaction of a particular protester, the so-called 'Standing Man.' In the midst of the struggle to maintain the occupation of the park, protester and performance artist Erdem Gunduz prominently refused to act further, and began to stand still in Taksim Square facing the Ataturk cultural center.(Seymour 2013) He maintained his stillness and silence for eight hours and was joined by other protesters in the square and across Turkey. Gunduz's bodily performance of inaction has been interpreted widely in the tradition of passive resistance in the face of overwhelming physical repression, and as a poignant affront to the regime through aesthetic tactics. Yet Gunduz's 'inaction' can also be understood as a particular realization of actionable reality in performing the denial of the operative reality of the governmental regime that endangered protesters' lives and bodies, as well as the viability of Gezi Park as a natural, living place. By identifying his inactive body with the threat posed to natural life and actual lives within both the park and the city, Gunduz performed a corporeal solidarity with the essential non-instrumentality of living things, and the being-with-others that human being shares with the non-human world. In corporeally denying operativity, the park and square were effectively re-corporealized by invoking the shared being-with of all being as the origin of the human experience of the political, and implicitly calling for the non-human to be recognized, in its own sheer corporeality, as included within the city as polis. While the political dimension of the Gezi Park protests encompassed a much wider set of concerns for the question of being-in-common, the ecological concern highlights the expansive political dimension implicit in the interrelation of place and protest.

CONCLUSION

This essay is but a preliminary outline of an inquiry that requires much further research and reflection. Yet it has attempted to show how the corporeality of protesters becomes imbricated within the spatiality and materiality of urban spaces in ways that reveal the significance of the body to political action, and to the city as an inherently political

place. In each of the cases discussed, protest entailed the massive, bodily assembly of plural, diverse and in principle, equal actors united less by specific demands or objectives than a more universal demand for a just and equitable society. Within these protests, an actionable reality arose out of the co-action of corporeal actors to sustain a powerful space of appearance, simultaneously within, and subject to, the operative reality of repression and violent reprisal. Within this actionable reality, alternative modes of being-with and being-in-common emerge to prefigure and enact possibilities of the political, albeit ephemerally and contingently. In light of the acting body's fundamental role, in its essential corporeality, to materially co-constitute the space and place of the political with other bodies, what can architects and other designers learn from the "insurgent architects" who "re-design" urban spaces to reassert the political in protest? A key lesson, first and foremost, is the priority of the actors in their corporeality, and correspondingly that of the political, objective sense of actionable reality that actors co-constitute out of their plurality and heterogeneity. From protests such as Occupy Wall Street and the Egyptian Revolution we can discern our shared embodiment with places and their resonance and identity with our experience of the political. In particular, we can consider the capacity of the world to speak to perception of a common, pre-reflective potentiality of being-in-common, in some ways similar to the tacit resistance to techno-scientific hegemony that Kenneth Frampton recognized in the tactility and materiality of Alvaar Aalto's Säynätsalo Town Hall.(Frampton 2002) From the Hong Kong and Gezi Park protests, we can see how instrumental, operative reality can be performatively and corporeally 'detourned', co-opted and denied to open the question of the common within an exceptional, actionable reality. The question for architecture may perhaps first be how these priorities and realities can be recognized in design; how they can be articulated and structured within the fabric and texture of the common world; and how they may remain susceptible to being actualized by political action, whether extraordinary or in everyday life. Although design is necessarily predicated in part upon an operative and technical reality, Arendt writes that architecture, as a public art, depends on the political wisdom of *phronesis* in order to grasp and negotiate actionable human reality, so that architecture and the common world might be made fit for the public realm of human affairs, including protest. (Arendt 1998) In conclusion I would suggest that by prudently attending to the priority of corporeal actors and of actionable reality can architecture begin to articulate places that may potentially undergird, reinforce and resonate with the political dimension of human action and being-in-common, and in so doing, materially recollect and reconstitute the city as a corporeal polis.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The author hereby acknowledges the support of the School of Architecture at Louisiana State University for this research, and for its presentation at the 2020 EAAE-ARCC International Conference.

REFERENCES

Arendt, Hannah. 1998. *The Human Condition*. 2nd ed. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

———. 2006. "What Is Freedom?" In *Between Past and Future: Eight Exercises in Political Thought*, by Hannah Arendt, 142–69. New York: Penguin Books.

Awan, Nishat, Tatjana Schneider, and Jeremy Till. 2011. *Spatial Agency: Other Ways of Doing Architecture*. Abingdon, Oxon: Routledge.

Berger, John. 2001. "The Nature of Mass Demonstrations." In *Selected Essays*, Kindle edition. New York: Vintage Books.

Butler, Judith. 2015. *Notes Toward a Performative Theory of Assembly.* Kindle edition. Cambridge, M.A: Harvard University Press.

Curtis, Kimberley. 1999. *Our Sense of the Real: Aesthetic Experience and Arendtian Politics*. Ithaca, N.Y: Cornell University Press.

Dikeç, Mustafa. 2015. *Taking on the Political: Space, Politics and Aesthetics.* Kindle edition. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.

Frampton, Kenneth. 2002. "Towards a Critical Regionalism: Six Points for an Architecture of Resistance." In *Labour, Work and Architecture: Collected Essays on Architecture and Design,* 77–89. London: Phaidon Press.

Gadanho, Pedro, ed. 2014. *Uneven Growth: Tactical Urbanisms for Expanding Megacities.* New York: Museum of Modern Art.

Holmquist, Paul. 2020. "Designing Dissensus: Exposing the Common." *Contour* (6). http://contourjournal.org/index.php/contour/article/view/designing-dissensus."

Hou, Jeffrey, ed. 2010. *Insurgent Public Space: Guerilla Urbanism and the Remaking of Contemporary Cities*. Abingdon, Oxon: Routledge.

Kayden, Jerold S. 2000. *Privately Owned Public Space: The New York City Experience*. New York: John Wiley.

Nancy, Jean-Luc. 2000. *Being Singular Plural.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Nancy, Jean-Luc, and Christopher Fynsk. 1991. *The Inoperative Community*. Edited by Peter Connor. Minneapolis, M.N: University of Minnesota Press.

Schneider, Nathan, and Rebecca Solnit. 2013. *Thank You, Anarchy: Notes from the Occupy Apocalypse.* Ebook. Berkeley, C.A: University of California Press. www.jstor.org/stable/10.1525/j.ctt3fh39s.

Seymour, Richard. 2013. "Turkey's 'standing Man' Shows How Passive Resistance Can Shake a State." *The Guardian*, June 18, 2013, Online edition. https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2013/jun/18/turkey-standing-man.

Shiffman, Ron, ed. 2012. *Beyond Zuccotti Park: Freedom of Assembly and the Occupation of Public Space.* Oakland, CA: New Village Press.

Swyngedouw, Erik. 2018. *Promises of the Political: Insurgent Cities in a Post-Political Environment.* Cambridge, M.A: MIT Press.

Werner, Carlotta, and Johanna Sunder-Plassman. 2014. "Hacked Protest Objects (Anon)." *Design and Violence* (blog). May 28, 2014. https://www.moma.org/interactives/exhibitions/2013/designandviolence/hacked-protest-objects-anon/.

PAPER #1.18

THE DIFFUSE MUSEUM. TOWARD A NEW MODEL FOR INTERPRETING ARCHITECTURE

Queralt Garriga Gimeno[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya, Barcelona, Spain

ABSTRACT

Architecture, the most approachable artistic discipline, and yet paradoxically, the least known. If we want to communicate the values of architecture as a discipline and its qualities as an artform, we must offer a new model for interpreting built space. Not a model based on abstract or conceptual knowledge, but one that understands how architecture structures, orders and articulates individual, concrete and perceptible spatial experiences. The best way to acquire architectural knowledge is through direct experience in the building itself, helping the visitor to be more aware of what is happening directly before him. The diffuse museum is a new way of understanding what an architectural museum can be. It is a museum dispersed throughout the territory, not circumscribed within an enclosure. Its collection consists of the best spaces and buildings in our cities, waiting for someone to help them become visible, recognizable, interpretable and communicable.

KEYWORDS

Museum; architecture; communication; museology; interpretation; heritage.

1. ARCHITECTURE AND SOCIETY, AN ABSENT CONVERSATION

We all move through, inside and around architecture. Architecture is the backdrop to our everyday lives, and yet paradoxically, it is the least known artistic discipline. The commonplace landscape that surrounds us, the city and its most significant elements, are invisible to most of society. Despite the apparent architectural media fevers of recent decades and the proliferation of international architectural events, there persists a lack of knowledge among the general public concerning architectural fundamentals and values. This lack of familiarity translates into less empathy towards architecture as compared to other arts. In order to improve our cities, we must disseminate architectural knowledge among the general public. To achieve this, the following study proposes a new method for interpreting architecture.

Seventy years ago, Bruno Zevi (1951) stated that one reason for this situation was architects' own lack of interest in being understood. Traditionally architects have been more interested in the building of architecture than in its communication, and this task has been relegated to other disciplines.

Today, more than ever, citizens are directly involved in the process of defining the city. However, this empowerment in public debate has not been accompanied by the wide dissemination of necessary architectural and urban concepts.

In addition, institutions responsible for the diffusion of architectural culture use cryptic museological concepts and museographic tools that in general are far removed from the reality of the architectural discipline. Centres for the interpretation of architecture should stop merely exhibiting documentation -objects and elements-, and instead investigate forms of communication that are more didactic. Their main objective should be to transmit architectural values and concepts, so that architecture can be valued, enjoyed and respected. Because architecture is, like all artistic disciplines, meant to be communicated. The question is: what needs

to be explained and how. Citizens urgently need new interpretive instruments to learn to see and appreciate architecture. It Is urgent because the city is built by all of us, not just architects. We are all co-responsible of the city. Citizens must be supplied with methods and instruments so that together we can create a better debate and dialogue.

2. EDUCATING THE GAZE: TEACH LOOKING, IN ORDER TO SEE

Typically, architectural discourse, like that of other art forms, is distant and intimidating. This is because, in general, art education values the memorization of answers given by others more than the stimulus of spontaneous conversation spawned by direct interaction with the artistic reality. When looking at artworks, the intellectualization of what we see prevails over the conscious perception of what we apprehend -the experience of art-. And, as explained by Eulàlia Bosch (1998),

> In doing so, we convey the idea that understanding a work of art is knowing how to classify it, so that when a student stands before a work of art (...) he searches at top speed what terms are pertinent and begins to speak before starting to look.

Our gaze is the filter of our memory, that which is prior to the acquisition of knowledge. Learning to look is necessary to enable the construction of criteria and the formation of judgments. All visions are valid. All perceptions are genuine and unique.

Although expert knowledge is required to thoroughly analyse a building's characteristics, proportions and effects, anyone can grasp the sensations that are directly transmitted by a space, by taking note of their own reactions and trusting their own perceptions. However, for this to happen we must give the building an opportunity to present itself, we must be willing to linger and listen to the experience.

As John Berger stated, we only see what we *look* at (Berger, 2015). And looking requires time, curiosity and the careful, slow, sustained observation of reality. It requires a gaze capable of looking at recognizable objects as if it were seeing them for the first time, trying to discover their essence. A gaze that rests on its subject, but doesn't impose; that listens, but doesn't demand. A gaze that isn't trying to understand reality rationally, but to appreciate it perceptually.

Albert Viaplana claimed that *making architecture is simply recovering architectural experiences* (1994), assuming we have all experienced them. And so, it is. We have all observed the world while crouching under the protection of a table or hidden behind the half-open door of a cupboard; we've all built a space with four huge cushions or designed a castle with mountains of sand. However, for want of practice, we have forgotten. As adults we do not recognize the architecture in the diminutive and innumerable phenomena we experience every day.

Because architecture's reality lies beyond built architecture. Navarro Baldeweg (2009) claims that the built object is like a resonance chamber, the instrument that allows music to sound, and music -the phenomenon- is, of course, what really matters. This experience can be found in countless places and is produced by an infinite variety of instruments. The challenge is to know how to *listen*.

The interpretation of our built heritage has not traditionally been a task of architects and therefore seldom addresses the experience of space through movement and time. Architectural phenomena –that result from the conjunction of these variables- are not part of the script. Today, architecture still needs its own specific, comprehensible museographic interpretation, which speaks exclusively about the experience of space: an interpretation based on the assumption that architecture structures, orders and articulates individual, concrete and perceptible spatial experiences.

3. ARCHITECTURE AND EXPERIENCE, NARRATIVES OF SPACE

The direct experience of space is the best way of acquiring new architectural knowledge. Actual space has an emotional capacity that none of its representations possess -in the same way that it is not possible to substitute hearing a melody to the visualization of its musical score-. Knowledge is remembered when it is experienced in person. However, as pedagogy proved long ago, new knowledge is not acquired by receiving information, but through dialogue and interaction between the individual and reality (Dewey, 2008).

Space is not apprehended through intellect alone, but by all senses simultaneously, and therefore becomes irrevocably part of our memory. The most vivid architectural memories of childhood have to do with perceptible atmospheres rather than with data or concepts. We remember and appreciate the essence of the space, the aspects related to our sensory experience of them.

Our daily experience of architecture doesn't consist so much in geometries or measurable dimensions, but in what we might call architectural events[1]. Architecture is built up of phenomena linked to our inhabiting the world. Pallasmaa (2006) agrees with this position in his definition of what an authentic architectural experience consists of:

> for instance, of approaching or confronting a building, rather than (in) the formal apprehension of a façade; of the act of entering and not simply the visual design of the door; of looking in or out through a window, rather than the window itself as a material object; or of occupying the sphere of warmth, rather than the fireplace as an object of visual design.

The experience of a work of architecture is constituted by the sum, contrast and articulation (Pallasmaa, 2010) of the multiple architectural events of which it is configured, more than by the rational understanding of its form. Touring a building forms a sequence of partial perceptual experiences that, when added up, determine our narrative of the space. The events or episodes of this narrative are the relationships between the different elements perceived as we move: the openings frame, the light bathes, the space is prolonged, the wall turns and the sounds envelope. The perception of a static image from a fixed viewpoint disappears and becomes a kinetic, continuous and uninterrupted spatial experience. Displacement also suppresses the sharp and focused vision (Pallasmaa, 2006) that is transformed into the blurry and the diluted, broadening the peripheral vision and multiplying stimuli.

On the other hand, -as explained by Michel de Certeau (1990) - people describe space mostly by movements, actions and verbs. Which is to say, we understand architectural space as a place of human activity. The everyday experience of architecture consists of specific activities: working, eating, sleeping, etc. The remembered architectural experience is the one that is actively carried out: reading by the window, rocking in front of the fireplace or playing on the wooden floor. Space exists because it houses an activity that develops over time. For the individual, a space which has been appropriated is an engaged space, a space in which the events of life occur, from "the rooms so small in which you cannot do anything, to the forgotten loft that serves for everything" (Bachelard, 2010).

In ordinary language it is common to say that things 'take place' meaning that they happen, that they are done. In a work of architecture, we can say that a space becomes a place when it can be experienced. In this sense, the important thing about architecture is not its appearance, its conceptualization or its description but what it provokes. Architectural spaces are promises of action or they do

[1] Le Corbusier, quoted in: Colomina, B. 1994. Privacy and Publicity: Modern Architecture as Mass Media. Cambridge, Massachusetts: The MIT Press.

not exist. As the philosopher John Dewey said (2008), the real nature of the work –in this case an architectural space- and that which is characteristic of it, is not its physical manifestation; it cannot be found in the work, but it emerges from it, it is the experience it generates. And it is not something outside of us, but something which happens within us.
There is, therefore, no single way to experience a built space. There are as many ways as there are individuals, all unique and all valid. The architectural event is thus inseparable from the individual who experiences it. And there cannot be transmission of the architectural fact without this experimentation.

4. INTERPRETING ARCHITECTURE, A NEW MODEL

The experience of an architectural work is a singular phenomenon and has very little to do with stylistic or identifying classifications, which give us limited artistic interpretations that only refer to an aseptic and distanced vision of the architectural events that occur in space. It could be said that, until today, the interpretation of architecture has been based on the accumulation of many data, but very little actually looking. This often ends up making what we have before our eyes become invisible. One tends to think that the works need to be explained, when it is not so. We don't enter Mies van der Rohe's Barcelona Pavilion to receive information, we enter to live a spatial experience that will be untransferable and probably unrepeatable (depending as it does on the time of day, the day of the year, if we are accompanied, who accompanies us, how we feel, etc.). We must advocate for an interpretation of architecture focused on the visitor and their reception of its message.
In tours of buildings or monuments, it is not a question of transmitting descriptive information or abstract knowledge according to a unidirectional communicative scheme (from 'one who knows' to 'one who does not know'), but to provoke the acquisition of new knowledge from the existing reality and its direct relationship to the user.
The visitor must be placed at the centre of a pedagogical process based on a dialogue and informed by the direct experience of space. This approach relegates all other kinds of notions or information (relating to history, the rationale on which the work is based, the necessities it satisfies, the technical complexity, etc.) to a secondary, important but subsidiary role to the individual experience of space.
Interpretation should be encouraged above all through stimulus and questioning, in the spirit of provoking a more space-conscious experience. It should promote that the visitors experience directly, without previous data, that which is presented to them. So that they are called to initiate an intimate and genuine conversation with the artistic reality. The story is not unique, but it is individual. It is based on the architectural element (the object) and in its relation to a person (the subject). The bonds are built anew with each visitor, with every new perception.
In addition, this is an accessible interpretation, recognizable by the visitor because it refers to phenomena from his daily life or to his memory; it's about revealing architecture not as untouchable scenarios, but as lived-in places. This approach is about activating a new consciousness of place, revealing its architectural potential and making the space tangible by letting visitors use their perceptual capacities and exponentially increase their ability to see. It tries to create a new relationship between the subject and the object. The intention is not that people understand what architecture is, but that they experience it in a conscious way that leads them to reflect on it.

5. COMMUNICATE ARCHITECTURAL KNOWLEDGE, TOWARDS A DIDACTIC OF SPACE

In the architectural interpretation of a building, around what elements should the script revolve?
Rem Koolhaas, as curator of the 2014 Venice Architecture Biennial, organized the exhibition into 11 architectural elements. According to him, these elements were the "fundamentals" of architecture: stair, door, bathroom, wall, hallway, etc. According to the exhibition, what is essential to architecture are its components, used by different architects over time. The objects on display were not the works of architects, but elements of architecture, its history, evolution and case studies. The exemplified architectural elements were isolated, without any concession to the surrounding space or the people who use them. Is architecture really defined by the material elements of which it is composed or does the architectural experience reside in the relationships that we establish with the elements and with the environment, thanks to them? Is the shape, dimensions or materials of a window more characteristic of the architecture or –as Alison and Peter Smithson appreciated[2]- the world of experiential possibilities and the relation with the environment that the former does offer?

> to work or write at a creeper bordered window; to see the sunlight spread across the floor; to stand and look out without glare; to see the view/ vegetation/ trees/ the ground while sitting; to see out form the bathroom/ or perhaps be doubly enclosed; to have easy access to possessions without sensing their presence all the time; to sit comfortably and read or talk of an evening; to close wooden shutters in winter, etc. (Simthson, 1994)

What are the real components of a house? What does it mean to inhabit? Paradoxically, coming out of the Biennale you could pick up a brief booklet where the curator, who had just impressed us with historical and typological analysis of the elements, narrated in the first person his memories of the different spaces he inhabited during his childhood, through sensory experiences linked to the activities carried out in each space.
Like Dewey's interpretation of aesthetic experience, an appropriate interpretation of architecture would try to analyse the architectural experience and define its parts, what makes it, how it develops and what keeps it in our memory. According to Dewey, the individual becomes aware of art through physically experiencing it, and it is at that point when reflection can occur. Dewey understood that the artist basically deals with perceptual instead of conceptual material, and that, in perception, spatial and temporal experience go hand in hand. His approach always poses a parallel with the architectural experience.
The important thing then, for the transcription of the architectural experience, is to be able to configure the relationship between the body and the space, procure that an individual can sense the difference between being in a space and not being in it. Make explicit the characteristics of the architectural event and its time. That is, to proceed in a participative way, from the visitor and achieving a conscious experimentation. As the artist Olafur Eliasson (2009) explains with regards to his works, it is "to put in relation the thought and the action. (...) between thought and action, I would say that there is the experience".
It is a question of proposing an interpretation that recognizes the aesthetic events caused by the architecture. Not to explain it, but to demonstrate its qualities and make them present. The architectural interpretation of a building should be a tour constructed for the concrete and conscious experimentation of

[2] Alison and Peter Smithson, Small pleasure of life (from: Smithson, A. and P. 1994. Changing the Art of Inhabitation. London: Artemis.

certain spatial phenomena, those that occur in the space through which one is passing. It is to pave the way, to accompany the person, according to a sensory and sequential narrative that speaks exclusively of what you see and what happens in the spaces through which you are travelling.
Space is not a stage set that is seen passively, but a scene that is experienced, a place where the architectural event is lived in first person. Unlike the usual interpretations that tend to analyse, document, quantify or date the different elements that make up the building, it should be their effects on the space, as well as the relationships they establish among themselves, which are the main focus of attention. Rather than 'documenting' elements and spaces, the visitor can gain direct knowledge of their architectural value by physically moving through them and observing other people`s interactions with them.

6. THE DIFFUSE MUSEUM, A NEW CONCEPTION OF THE MUSEUM OF ARCHITECTURE

This research proposes a new understanding of the traditional architectural museum that we define as a diffuse museum[3]. This is not an alternative, but an essential complement to the traditional museum.
It is a museum of architecture that understands that the best possible collection –including its most outstanding pieces- already exists; the city itself and its best buildings are waiting for someone to help them become visible, recognizable, interpretable and transmissible. It is a museum which is not confined within the walls of a building –where the real museum objects, the works of architecture, can never reside-, but exists in the interpretation of the existing parts of the city, which are outdoors, permanently on display and not exclusively in the collection documents used to represent them.
A museum that, in addition to preserving, focuses on communicating knowledge in the street and in the city.
The diffuse museum is a museum scattered throughout the territory, a museum that understands that it is in real architecture where this new knowledge can best be acquired. The diffuse museum refers to the "originals" whose value compared to their reproductions is precisely their authenticity.
The diffuse museum is an opportunity to contribute to recovering architecture as one of a citizen's rights, understanding it as a common good. This implies a change of model: the communication of architecture should stop referring exclusively to architects and instead communicate with all citizens. Architecture is a public service for people, not for architects. And even though architectural knowledge is generally held by architects, architectural opinion corresponds equally to all citizens.
The point is not to turn citizens into architects, but to provide them with instruments that strengthen their position in the dialogue between architecture and society, facilitating conditions that permit citizens to shift from being consumers of architecture to being active and committed users. The goal is to create a critical society that contributes to a better built environment and a better landscape.
Implementation of these ideas in cities would mean that those responsible for local, national and regional cultural policy would have to take responsibility directly for the development, promotion and interpretation of that other collection, the original, which is outdoors. The means, methods and instruments -at least some of the possible ones- are proposed in this essay.

[3] Diffuse means 'disseminated through, not circumscribed'.

REFERENCES

Bachelard, G. 2010. *La poétique de l'espace*. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France.

Berger, J. 2015. *Modos de ver*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Bosch, E. 1998. *El plaer de mirar. El museu del visitant*. Barcelona: Actar.

Bloomer, K. and Moore, C. 1982: *Body, Memory and Architecture: Introduction to Architectural design.* Madrid: Blume.

Certeau M. 1990. *The invention of everyday life, V.I*., arts to do. Paris: Gallimard.

Dewey, J. 2008. *El arte como experiencia.* Barcelona: Paidós.

Eliasson, O. 2009. *Playing with space and light.* TED2009, http://www.ted.com/

Garriga, Q. 2015. *Arquitectura en exposición. Trascendiendo el paradigma clásico.* Barcelona: UPC.

Navarro Baldeweg, J. 2009. "La activación de los signos" in: Grigor, M. 2009. *Sir John Soane. Arquitecto inglés, legado americano.* Barcelona: Fundación Caja de Arquitectos.

Pallasmaa, J. 2010. *Una arquitectura de la humildad.* Barcelona, Fundación Caja de Arquitectos.

Pallasmaa, J. 2006. *Los ojos de la piel: la arquitectura y los sentidos.* Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Smithson, A. and Smithson, P. 1994, *Changing the Art of Inhabitation.* London: Artemis.

Viaplana, A., 1994, *ETSAB's inaugural design course speech,* unpublished. Barcelona.

Zevi, B. 1981 [1951]. *Saber ver la arquitectura.* Barcelona: Poseidón.

PAPER #1.19

URBAN META MUSEUM

Polyxeni Mantzou[a], Xenofon Bitsikas[b], Anastasis Floros[a]
[a]Democritus University of Thrace, Komotiní, Greece
[b] University of Ioannina, Ioannina, Greece

ABSTRACT

Urban public spaces are an ideal field for investigation on how digital and physical can coexist concur, interact, intermingle and co-generate a new hybrid and augmented reality. Digital spheres mixed with the physical, material surroundings, create association, amplification, multiplicity and diversification, alongside with the possibility of constant re-interpretation and meta-production.
The city historically has been an open laboratory of meta-production and overlapping layering that sometimes cover and perhaps erase previous layers, or in other cases leave them in a pending state constructing a palimpsest that reveals the vertical time organization of the city in different, successive layers.
PALIMPSEST is a program funded by GRIT INTERREG, Priority Axis 2 - Integrated Environmental Management that works on the concept of the city's palimpsest and the potential that digital technologies provide to recuperate lost or forgotten layers of the city. PALIMPSEST rethinks concepts such as the Archive and the Museum that are transformed by the post-alphabetic era and redesigns their novel, fluid, participatory and interconnected version. The main aim is to revitalize the city's palimpsest by incorporating forgotten events and stories that took place in the city's urban web. This way , PALIMPSEST will activate an open and editable archive in the form of an app and an open, immaterial museum that embeds art installations and organizes an extra stratification in the city.
Content for the PALIMPSEST museum is co-created by the public involved in the collection of narratives from the city's past and artists responsible for the mise en scène of the narratives in the public urban space. This interrelation of experts and public, of traditional emitters and receivers, of authors and audience for the co-creation and the common authorship of the content is an issue of great significance. Architects are re-positioned as mediators that inter-relate people, stories, art and the city.

KEYWORDS

Urban, museum, meta-production, palimpsest, art-installations

INTRODUCTION

The proliferation of digital technologies introduces the post-alphabetic era, an era of fusion and hybrids, where categories and typologies succumb to the fluidity and indefiniteness of a rapidly changing and uncertain world. Hybrids thrive in different aspects of contemporary life, while the digital and physical tend to merge and define augmented, mixed, hybrid realities. The post-alphabetic era, defined by the use of electronic media, comes after the alphabetic, defined by the predominance of the alphabet and vision and actually, doesn't seem to be closer to the pre-alphabetic, defined by orality and hearing, in contrast with what McLuhan had foreseen. The post-alphabetic era is a mixture of both the previous two phases and endorses hybrids. (Mantzou 2017)
In architecture the change is occurring in a rather vague and abstruse way, not as a result of a planned variation in prerequisites and criteria but rather as an intrinsic and bottom

up transformation. Traditional architectural typologies gradually become obsolete as digital media merge time and space use. Public and private spaces are mingled; working and home time is fused; commerce, entertainment, education and work are becoming impossible to distinguish.

Specifically, there are two typologies of interest for the present analysis. On one hand a concrete and regularized architectural typology, the museum, and on the other a rather fluid and difficult to capture but still distinct and clear category, the public space.

The museum typology is the ideal typology of the alphabetic world; a typology of taxonomy, hierarchy, surveillance and control. In the post-alphabetic word surveillance is traded for immersion and thus, the museum is being transformed by the urge to be appealing, all-encompassing and inclusive, to offer more and find new ways to engage the over-stimulated visitors. To do so the museum has to involve visitors and invite them to be more active and ideally to even post-produce and participate (Bourriaud 2006). Museums are adapting to change in a rather unsettled and spasmodic way by including commerce, entertainment and gaming in order to preserve and attract a more demanding and more saturated public. The past typology of the museum, a mechanism of surveillance, is now becoming an undetermined hybrid.

Public space is also under transformation; it is infiltrating previously considered private spheres and at the same time in its traditional form, that is as open, urban public space, it is being infiltrated by private spheres. Therefore, its borders are becoming indiscernible. Moreover, the public urban space of the city is compelled to offer more in order to compete with the digital public spheres and preserve its attractiveness in everyday life. In addition to its traditional fusion of uses, public space is now required to become more playful, engaging, interactive and interesting, in order to appeal to its digitally-awaken and maybe even spoiled users. The current public of public spaces demands an active role as central features and post-producers, constantly manipulating and interchanging information.

The case study presented is an ongoing GRIT Interreg EU program, PALIMPSEST, where Museum and Urban Public space are coalesced; where past and present coexist; where actors and public are interchangeable; where fiction and reality are fused. PALIMPSEST offers a test-bed for rethinking and reshaping from an architectural point of view previously distinct typologies, categories and organizations, such as the Museum and the Public space. At the same time, PALIMPSEST introduces practices where scientific, social, economic and marketing factors are integrated in order to create a holistic strategic approach. PALIMPSEST's midway results are presented as a temporary assessment of open-ended and inconclusive but yet indicative and suggestive outcomes that can be sufficient for further analysis and tactical suppositions.

1. DESCRIPTION

PALIMPSEST, is a program, funded by GRIT INTERREG, Priority Axis 2 - Integrated Environmental Management, which works upon cultural heritage and reshapes it for the digital age, by applying the concept and metaphor of the city as a palimpsest. Cultural Heritage constitutes one of the city's most valuable elements and assets, as it provides the subject with the opportunity to relate to the urban space and reactivate and reinforce its sense of historical, spatial and temporal continuity as well as the feeling of community and belonging. Digital technologies open a whole new field of actions for reintroducing cultural heritage into urban public space with their immense potential for archiving, processing, circulating and transforming /post-producing cultural heritage assets.

PALIMPSEST reconsiders concepts such as the Archive and the Museum with the intention of reconsidering them, by embracing their fluid,

participatory and bottom-up, contemporary version. The intention is to reactivate and revitalize the city's palimpsest by incorporating forgotten events, stories and legends that allegedly took place in the city's urban web.
The narratives are retrieved as part of an oral history and tradition and transformed into an open, common and editable archive and a public, interactive, multisensorial and immaterial museum. The Museum and its archive are both post-productions that constitute an extra stratification in the city's public space, augmenting and hybridizing it.
The project's first stage involves an initial archive, created with the participation of schools and trans-generational collaboration. Students seek stories and memories related to the urban fabric of the city, from elder people in their familiar environment. They transcribe them, guiding the narrators to points that interest them and they tag, categorize and archive them. Tags used related to content are partly defined freely by the students and partly by the selection from a given tank of tags; while at the same time chronological and locative tags are also requested. Media used to record the stories are chosen by the students but must include text.
Subsequently the collected material is uploaded on a digital application open for the public. The users can search for stories and events using filters; can add stories following a similar procedure; can add comments to stories that already exist; and can suggest links among stories. This archive has all the features of a post-alphabetic archive, that is, a hybrid archive, which combines top-down rules and pre-existing structure with bottom-up, unrestricted and unforeseen development.
On one hand, it is configured with predetermined tags and temporal periods that users apply in order to categorize the stories that they upload or search the archive; on the other hand the stories that are presented are interpreted by the users who may add relevant audiovisual material, tag and also connect stories to other stories. Moderators, whose role is to check the posted material and its relevance, are, at first, members of the PALIMPSEST team and will gradually be substituted by active groups of the community that are already organizing similar collections of digital material. PALIMPSEST expects to create a community of involved moderators through the active engagement and participation of the public with the project. This community will act as guardians and trustees guaranteeing the proper functioning of the APP and its content, taking into consideration the reports and suggestions from the APP's users.
During the next stage, PALIMPSEST focuses on the creation of art installations in the urban space of the city. At first, the artists will select stories from the archive and then they will reinsert them as art installations in the city's public space appending them to their original location. The art installations will not significantly affect the physical condition of the city at its present condition. These settings, activated by visitors, will be interactive and multi-sensory, with no visible footprint in the urban area.

2. INNOVATION

PALIMPSEST proposes an open-air, constantly changing, evanescent, dreamlike, and yet, personalized, museistic experience that questions and defies traditional organizations of museums. As a Museum, PALIMPSEST is quite different than traditional museums in various levels, because it changes 1) the way content is provided 2), the fixed ubication in a building 3) the passive experience of the exhibits 4) the traditional bisection between curators and spectators 5) the detachment between exhibit and context.
Content is a novelty in PALIMPSEST. The PALIMPSEST's museum is co-created by both, the public involved in the collection of narratives from the city's past and also, artists responsible for the mise-en-scène of the narratives in the public urban space. The

traditional, top-down, hierarchical structure of the conventional museum is reshaped as PALIMPSEST proposes a bottom up, participatory approximation through the interrelation of experts/actors and public, of traditional emitters and receivers, of authors and audience for the co-creation and common authorship of the content.

PALIMPSEST adopts the way information is produced in our current condition. In the post-alphabetic era receiving, producing, post-producing and emitting information becomes feasible for all those who use digital media. In our alphabetic past, information and knowledge were produced by certain centers and was distributed to the public that was usually a passive receiver. Authority was defined in advance and authorship remained indisputable. History, in the alphabetic world, was rendered as objective and could difficultly be perceived as an interpretative and biased understanding of the past. It claimed the right to be unique and impartial; the unbigoted and uncontestable knowledge of the past.

In this circumstance the museum enters a crisis as an authoritative and trustworthy institution for the objective and established representation of the world (Marotta 2012); as a hierarchical structure that separates authors and public. This is the theoretical context upon which PALIMPSEST aims to work. One of its main objectives is to re-engage the inhabitants of the city, who are asked to collect, organize and associate, and therefore interpret information and narratives about the city's past. It is centered in the non-institutional history of the city, which is gathered through individual implication in the form of particular descriptions and subjective storytelling. The representation of the city in the MAP and APP format recreates the layered representation of the actual palimpsest, which every city has as a base, although it is often ignored and forgotten. The Museum is not only dissolved as a top-down institution but also as an institution instituted in a separate, detached place. It becomes an open, overlapping and infiltrating structure that inhabits the context of its exhibits instead of isolating and disconnecting them from their milieu. The proposed model is one of a Museum without walls and limits; without predefined and fixed routes; without detachment, distance and disconnection. A hybrid condition of public urban space and museum that interact and infiltrate each other.

Consequently, the reactivation of the city's palimpsest changes the inhabitants' mental representation of the urban public space. Collected stories are elaborated and a number of them are selected by the artists as a basis for the construction of art installations in the city. The art installations take one-step further the interpretation of the collected stories. Their apparently random activation by visitors and the personalized perception of the museum that this creates, is an additional filter that distorts any possibility of an objective and hierarchical reading of the museum's content. PALIMPSEST rethinks the traditional classifications of authors and public without dissolving them. Oral history and collective cultural production which comes from our distant pre-alphabetic past coexist with the necessity of the artist as a distinct and established figure allowing both ends to explore and exploit the possibilities that arise from their interconnection.

PALIMPSEST regards the city's public open space as a canvas that is restored and recuperated and at the same time augmented and activated. It creates a hybrid approximation between the situationists' views for a city animated by its inhabitants and a more commercial, thematic approach, where the city is transformed in a spectacle structure (Debord 1967). Public space in this animated, augmented version offers possibilities for encounters and concurrences and engages passive and indifferent people to act and to experience vivid reinterpretations of past events instituted in their original place and transported in the present.

3. METHODOLOGY

PALIMPSEST, is a test-bed for theories and concepts with diverse origins, joined and blended together. It draws concepts and approaches from urban studies, museology, art and art theory, archiving, history cultural and media studies, informatics and digital cultural heritage, performance and staging and it is based on combinations and interactions. Methodologically PALIMPSEST is a hybrid; of different fields, of distinct categories, of diverse typologies. Therefore, although its methodology is constantly being elaborated and reconsidered it is arduous and impractical to present as is habitually done in predefined, hierarchical, controlled projects. The project is also a hybrid of top-down traditional organization and bottom-up, participatory approaches. Therefore, during its implementation and because of the genuine and profound interaction with agents and actors exterior to the project, the methodology is continuously reviewed and re-adapted.
Still, the PALIMPSEST stands for Post-Alphabetic, Interactive Museum using Participatory, Space-Embedded Story-Telling; these concepts are the principal basis for the PALIMPSEST's approach.

3.1. Post-Alphabetic

Post-alphabetic is the term McLuhan used to define the change that digital media would bring to our understanding, interrelation and mental construction of the world (McLuhan 1962). Decades after McLuhan's prophetic writings the post-alphabetic era is presented as an era where definitions, limits, categories, taxonomies, typologies and hierarchies succumb to the proliferation of mixtures, combinations, fluidity and hybrids. PALIMPSEST is post-alphabetic because it opts for mixing rather than separating, it prefers merging rather than detaching; it is post-alphabetic because it acknowledges subjective and multiple truths as more powerful and reasonable than a unique and objective truth; it is post-alphabetic because it engages experts from multiple fields with the general public in the co-creation of a common, shared construction.

3.2. Space-Embedded

PALIMPSEST will not be strictly limited within an exhibition space. On the contrary it's content will be scattered all over the involved cities' historical centers and embedded in public spaces. The artworks and installations will be inspired by urban legends and old stories, so each and every artwork's identity will be inseparable from its physical location and surroundings. PALIMPSEST aims to re-install local lore into real-world environments, and by that old stories reclaim their rightful spaces.
When the project is fully developed, the art installations will be embedded in public spaces and will only become visible if the user activates them. This will give the ability to the public to experience urban legends where they originally took place. The merging of past and present worlds will redefine the urban experience and have both visitors and inhabitants look at mundane and common places differently. These artworks and installations may be digital and intangible, but they are embedded in physical, material spaces. The stories may have happened in the distant past, but they are restored to their former glory in the present. This hybrid museum experience opens up new possibilities that are yet to be explored. Dull places are now transformed into immersive, interactive encounters.

3.3. Augmented

Augmenting the public urban space of the city with interactive art installations, allows many levels of augmentations to occur. Past is added to the present as past stories return to their original location without affecting or altering it. Multisensorial art installations augment the perception of public space

by creating a theatrical but still transient atmosphere that involves a holistic, somatic experience. The visitor is surrounded and not placed before the installations and becomes the center of the story told instead of a simple spectator. Everyday urban life is augmented by art installations that intensify and enhance our relation to it. The overwhelmed by digital media subject is satisfied by the multi-layering and the augmentation of the public space and becomes engaged and activated.

3.4. Participatory

PALIMPSEST introduces a groundbreaking, participatory museum experience, where the public can actively participate and shape the content exhibited. Users will be encouraged to download the app and upload forgotten tales, tag them and illustrate them with photos of family heirlooms, 3d models of historical objects, etc. Users will be able not just to share his/hers content, but also to shape the preexisting by creating connections and therefore, add another layer of history in the city's palimpsest. The tags that the user will select for each story will be based upon the repository of tags proposed by the students for the initial stories, used as a basis when launching the APP to the public. This repository of tags proposed by the students was further processed and analyzed by the PALIMPSEST Team in order to summarize and cover as much as possible of the vast range of the stories' thematics. The public's involvement is crucial for the project; the project is not about passive consumption, but active participation and the public, supported by experts, becomes the project's curator and trustee.
PALIMPSEST creates a spectacle that everyone can enjoy and, at the same time, it creates a situation where the visitor is not just a passive recipient but an inter-active participant. As a result, when it comes to our relationship with the city, the project's museum experience is a hybrid between spectacle/ theme entertainment practices and art-driven/ situationist approaches.

3.5. Interactive

Interaction is designed in different levels. On one hand, the APP that is being developed generates interactive content – an APP designed to involve the user and invite his/ hers input but also respond to his/hers actions, capturing attention right from the start. When PALIMPSEST is fully developed, everyone will be able to download the APP and immerse oneself in art installations that will be waiting in public areas. These installations will also be interactive. They will only be activated by active human agents that will engage with them, explore their content and they will respond to their presence accordingly. Users will not be able to activate the installations repeatedly because this would deconstruct the efforts to create an atmospheric dreamlike condition. Installations will interact intelligently with the public and will prioritize responses in different conditions following their programming.

3.6. Storytelling

PALIMPSEST is not concerned about historic truths – it is intrigued by orality and aims to preserve urban legends and stories. Local lore should be passed on and shared, because stories create a sense of community. PALIMPSEST helps people come together in a creative context while they delve into storytelling, a craft that is as old as time. The project aims to re-engage urban inhabitants and encourage them to collect and organize – or, in other words, interpret – information about the involved cities' past. At the same time, visitors can listen to other people's stories and uncover lost layers of the cities' past. This offers a possibility to strengthen the connection among past and future generations through sharing common experiences.

3.7. Museum

Museums are institutions that belong to the previous paradigm; the alphabetic, supervised, ordered and categorised world. In our days, the rapid information flows and the proliferation of channels that distribute it, leave no time to check it and assimilate it and therefore the reception becomes more passive. Supervision, classifications and categories soon became a thing of the past as we became accustomed to sometimes absurd, vivid collages and medleys with no hierarchical or taxonomical organization. Television ages gave the first stroke to the alphabetic hierarchical organization of facts that the printed book and the press had established (Debray 1992) and later on, the post-alphabetic media made each receiver a potential transmitter; leading us now to the point where information is produced and transmitted by all. This democratization process with the subsequent elimination of any truth-factor, previously idealized by the alphabetic, modern condition, is a deal-breaker for every authoritative and top-down construction. Instituted knowledge becomes disputed; sources are overwhelmingly multiplied and mostly uncontrollable; authorship is no longer a privileged condition of the few; selection, categorization, ordering and hierarchies appear in multiple versions, subjective and subjected to their transmitters.
The Museum is transformed in this post-alphabetical phase into an open basis, where each visitor can interact to create personal interpretations, interactions, narratives, in a digitally enhanced spatial context. The curator's authority as a specialist who oversees and controls the Museum cannot resist the pressure exerted by the digital sphere, as is the case with the creator's authority. The Museum becomes less hierarchical and rigorous, more anarchic and open but at the same time more spectacular and commercial. Digital reproduction as well as continuous post-production introduce new questions to the visitor-exhibit relationship that obviously affect the context of this relationship, namely the Museum. However, not everything is so transparent and clear. Similarly to what happens with the archive, in the museum too there are mechanisms that are often obscure and affect what is accessible and what remains missing. (Mantzou 2017)

OPEN CHALLENGES

PALIMPSEST as an ongoing project faces various open challenges that demand constant awareness and the ability to re-adjust and re-approach planning, without losing focus or lowering the quality of the final outcome.
First of all, one of the main challenges that PALIMPSEST has to deal with is the fruitful collaboration and effective cooperation of the project's multidisciplinary team, formed with members from different fields of study. Installation artists, architects, computer engineers and educators have to work closely together, go beyond their area of expertise and, at the same time, bring along their particular vision in the project. This multidisciplinary group has to combine those who have the know-how and those who know-what and have to apply this know-how in order to realize it, exchange methodologies and working procedures, thus giving the opportunity to re-think and re-invent processes, optimizing the final outcome. As a result, the configuration of an open-ended, authentically hybrid approach, where collaboration is not based neither in entirely discretizing tasks and responsibilities nor in totally mingling them, but rather in finding ways to create perversion without dissolution was of vital importance. Collaborating closely as a group and organizing weekly meetings and periodical workshops has enabled satisfactory communication and complementary work.
Another challenge is the bottom-up, participatory character of the project because open access in the APP may also present issues of content control, which cannot be tackled easily and may undermine the accessibility

and the openness of the database. The engagement of students and schools that have worked enthusiastically with the PALIMPSEST team has provided the project with many local agents willing to undertake a significant role as moderators of the APP.

At the same time, as the project is getting completed, maintenance issues arise and have to be tackled in order to assure the project's future. In order to address maintenance not just as repair and continuance of the project's function but also as a process of evolving and further developing, it is important to involve the local government but also other local public institutions and the local private sector. As a Museum PALIMPSEST aims to constantly renew its collection; and as a common, participatory project it intends to do so with the collaboration of different forms of local actors that share the same interest for the public urban common space of the city.

REFERENCES

Bourriaud, N. 2006 *Postproduction*. Berlin: Sternberg Press

Debord, G.1967. *La Société du Spectacle*. Paris: Buchet-Chastel

Debray, R.1992. *Vie et mort de l'image. Une histoire du regard en Occident*. Paris: Gallimard Education

Mantzou, P. 2017. *Aporia in Architecture: What now?* Athens: Epikentron Publishers

Marotta, A. 2012. *Typology: Museums in The Architectural Review*, December 2012

McLuhan, M. 1962. *The Gutenberg Galaxy:The Making of Typographic Man*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press

PAPER #1.20

THE SKYWAY AS AN INHABITABLE MODE OF URBAN REPRESENTATION

Mike Christenson[a], Erin Kindell[a]
[a]University of Minnesota, Minneapolis, Minnesota, USA

ABSTRACT

This paper sets out the possibility of treating the skyway as an inhabitable mode of urban representation. It reviews the historical context of the skyway, considering different critiques of the system, and proposes representational strategies for analyzing the skyway.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; representation; skyway.

INTRODUCTION

In the context of this work, the word *skyway* refers to a grade-separated, internalized system enabling pedestrian movement within an urban context, an "immense, labyrinthine building at the second story," as Minneapolis architect Bernard Jacob has described it (Jacob 1985). For people experiencing the city from its streets, the most visible manifestation of the skyway is the ubiquitous elevated, enclosed, pedestrian bridge (Fig. 1).
While grade-separated systems can be found globally, and examples drawn from throughout history, we are particularly interested in the systems of the kind found in cities throughout the United States and Canada, including Fort Worth, Cincinnati, Calgary, Atlanta, Des Moines, and others; they are designed to efficiently connect nodes within the city (e. g., parking ramps and department stores) while providing some protection from weather.

Figure 1. Skyway connecting Twin City Federal and American National Bank, Sixth Street, St. Paul (MN). Source: Minnesota Historical Society. 01243-15a (Negative Number); MR2.9 SP2.1 p168 (Copy Locator Number).

1. THE SKYWAY AS AN ARCHITECTURAL INTERFACE

The academic study of skyways exists ambiguously within conventional disciplinary fields, intersecting questions and methods from architecture, planning, sociology, ethnography, and anthropology. What makes the study of the skyway interesting architecturally is that it exemplifies the concept of *architectural interface* (Christenson 2019). Unlike a software interface, the architectural interface is a device that problematizes its own presence, operating through a kind of frictional resistance: the architectural interface is translucent rather than transparent, both affecting and being affected by what passes through it. Colomina's discussion of the *fenêtre en longueur* (i. e., the long or horizontal window) condenses an issue central to the definition of architectural interface, i. e., representation as

the reproduction of objective reality (Colomina 1992). De Certeau's invocation of the viewing platform at the World Trade Center similarly situates the architectural interface as a device able to distinguish between distinct patterns of human behavior and thought (De Certeau 1984). But while built works of architecture necessarily constitute architectural interfaces, so do drawings, models, and other modes of architectural representation, insofar as these modes include specific acts of omission and highlighting and are never fully transparent. Thus, architectural interfaces, whether built or drawn, embody Derridean *différance* to the extent that they make differences visible without permitting closure or settlement (Derrida 1982).

Supposing that the skyway is an architectural interface, what then is it capable of making visible? What are the ways in which it problematizes its own presence? What are the binary distinctions to which it gives rise, only to see their final settlement endlessly deferred? This work develops these questions with a focus on the skyway system in St. Paul, Minnesota.

2. CRITIQUES AS REFLECTIVE OF CONTEXT

The pitfalls of grade-separated systems such as skyways are amply addressed in the literature. A commonly addressed critique is that skyways adversely impact the vivacity of street activity since people are moving either above or below grade, in consequence creating downtown cores that appear desolate and idle. For Robertson, "[t]he moment that we abandon the street for an enclosed, controlled, second level, we have furthered ... privatization and have removed the citizen farther from his [sic] city" (Robertson 2004). Robertson's views coincide with a larger critique that the skyway removes economic activity from street-facing, ground-floor units to inside building cores, often invisible from street level.

2.1. Social critique: the analogous city

An essential critical position with respect to the skyway (and grade-separated systems generally) is that they operate to segregate occupants by race and class, and in particular that they cater heavily to mostly white, middle- and upper-class, commuting, suburbanites, just as they fail to serve people of color or those who walk, bike, or use transit. This critical position emerges from the development context of skyway systems within the United States and Canada in the 1950s and 1960s, a period characterized by the expansion of suburban areas and associated demographic changes involving movement either in or out of urban cores. Urban Renewal and associated struggles on the basis of class and race existed alongside the rise of retail shopping malls, and as cities considered as wholes became increasingly segregated, interventions like Detroit's Renaissance Center provided fortress-like enclaves for urban expatriates. Skyways, as envisioned by Gruen (1956) and others, fit within this approach: they result in a peculiar construct that Boddy has described as an "analogous city" simultaneously capable of filtering and substituting for what he considers to be a genuine urban experience (Boddy 1992). For Boddy, the "analogous city" is evidence of a contemporary preference for simulation over reality. In a similar vein, Willensky identifies the skyway as "a second city," one positioned to avoid the "first city"'s problems, even as it introduces its own problematic (Willensky 1985). Augé's well-known critique of "non-places" is relevant in the same context, as is Jameson's discussion of John Portman's Westin Bonaventure (it "ought not to have entrances at all") and Blauvelt's suggestion that the skyway "displaces street life to a world hovering just above the 'real city'" (Augé 1995; Jameson 1991, 40; Blauvelt 2016, 12).

Yet, the broad history of city-making is characterized by just the kind of insertions, impositions, and layering critiqued by Boddy,

Willensky, and others. In acknowledging that Parisian arcades, over time, evolved from exclusionary spaces into something more inclusive, Boddy implicitly holds out the possibility that the "analogous city" is not static; it may provoke change. The idea that the skyway segregates people on the basis of constructs such as race and social class, or that the skyway enables and enforces a kind of social homogeneity, or that the skyway accelerates the privatization of public space, are at once familiar and serious critiques with real impact on contemporary urbanity. But how, and in what ways, do we understand these critiques in ways that are disciplinarily specific to architecture?

We should ask, then, not does the insertion of an 'analogous city' create new problems, as it inevitably will, but rather how *does the 'analogous city' transform the way the 'real city' is understood?* And furthermore, how does the mechanism of transformation make new opportunities possible? Rather than analogize city and skyway to the skyway's detriment, a possibly more productive analogy is between the skyway and architectural representation. Architectural situations that emerge, for example, from the study of a floor plan, may not obviously succumb to resolution until we decide to draw a section. The act of drawing the section should, of course, be expected to introduce its own set of intractable issues, but in so doing it necessarily transforms the situation that emerged from the plan. Drawing sections is not guaranteed to result in resolution, but the act must necessarily transform the context in which issues are seen and understood.

So it is with the skyway. To introduce skyways within the city is not to assert that all extant problems will be solved, nor is it to ignore problems, any more than the act of drawing a section ignores problems that are specific to the plan. Instead, the value of inserting the skyway (or of drawing the section) is that it transforms the context in which questions can be framed and in which responses can be developed. In this way, the skyway exemplifies the concept of architectural interface.

2.2. Historicist critique

Another form of critique considers the skyway from the aesthetic and particularly the historicist viewpoint. A skyway bridge, especially one designed to adhere to a uniform set of guidelines (as is the case in St. Paul), seemingly ignores the buildings which it connects, creating an amalgam of materials and styles that don't necessarily coordinate. Andersen (1988) places the skyway somewhere between "bland modernist modules" and violent, headlong-smashing devices capable of obliterating historical facades (e. g., the Scandinavian Bank Building on Marquette Avenue in Minneapolis).

Consistent with this approach, Minneapolis architect Bernard Jacob posits skyways as a form of violence to which citizens have become desensitized (Jacob 1985). Jacob's critical approach reveals an understanding of the city as composed of integral, independent, and above all apprehensible object-buildings. For Jacob, buildings are objects and the street grid is responsible for "[holding] the buildings apart and in place." In this view, any skyway bridge which fails to architecturally "suggest a crossing [or] a leap from building to building" is necessarily suspect. Jacob's critique is broadly consistent with Burns's well-known distinction between *cleared sites* and *constructed sites,* two apparently opposed conceptions, with the cleared site representing a design approach that assumes pre-existing sites to be devoid of any meaningful content or significant prior construction, and the constructed site accounting for sites' multilayered and contingent pre-existing qualities (Burns 1991). What is important in the present context is the relationships between these critiques and the forms of architectural representation implicated in the skyway system. If we accept (following Burns) that the cleared site assumes the grid, the plan, and the map as

primary tools in the mathematicization of the site, then it may be productive to think of the skyway system as an ideal network of connectivity between nodes that follows and reinforces the city grid. If, again as Burns suggests, the constructed site privileges the section, then it may be productive to address the skyway as a "parallel city" lifted off of the ground plane but responsive to its topography. And while it seems that Jacob fails to acknowledge that skyway bridges are less like objects but something more like parasites or viruses, attaching onto and infiltrating existing context, it is essential to remember that the skyway is not reducible to bridges between object-building, but rather consists of an embedded system of which only certain parts are visible from the street. Jacob correctly acknowledges that "[d]owntown St. Paul appears as one immense, labyrinthine building at the second story, a building that is occasionally disguised to match the buildings above and below it." It is precisely this labyrinth that we seek to make visible in the discussion that follows.

3. UNIQUELY ENABLED ARTIFACTS

What the critiques of the skyway tend to miss is the serious consideration of how the skyway system uniquely operates as an architectural interface, which is to say, how the system enables and constrains perception of the city in unique ways; and related to this, how the tools of representation are mutually implicated in this question. In short, what is missing is the notion of the system as a device for *reading local particularities*.

Once we are able to identify the social, political, and topological contexts of the skyway, the question becomes how to address its ability to enable architectural representation in specific ways. This could acknowledge its unique vantage position deriving from being alternately suspended over the street and buried deep within buildings, or from the characteristic movement it enables through the facade. Such a pursuit is broadly consistent with Venturi, Scott Brown, and Izenour's approach in *Learning From Las Vegas*, in which the authors seek to develop and promote forms of architectural representation uniquely enabled by the analysis of the Las Vegas strip (Venturi, Scott Brown, & Izenour 1972). Their work resituates perception from its historically understood pedestrian perspective to that of the car. Similarly, Appleyard, Lynch, and Myer (1964) develop forms of representation firmly centered in the car within the context of the grade-separated roadway (i. e., freeways). Critical approaches of this kind are important not only because they respond uniquely to observed conditions, but because the representational artifacts they produce operate as architectural interfaces: they propose to overlap multiple and contingent forces. For Venturi, Scott Brown, and Izenour, these forces might include the casino economy and the advent of the automobile; for Appleyard, Lynch, and Myer, they might include the need to navigate the city via high-speed freeway and the need to minimize distraction.

4. AN INHABITABLE MODE OF URBAN REPRESENTATION

4.1. As a hypothesized iteration of an idealized form

Like the urban freeway, the skyway is designed to eliminate obstacles – for skyways, those include streets, but also private areas within buildings – and to promote something like a smooth flow of movement through a pre-existing, rough terrain. Also like the freeway, the skyway concretizes (or makes specific, in built form) the concatenation of forces and pre-existing obstacles within the city. One way in which this can be seen is to understand the city-skyway relation as capable of assuming an *idealized form*,

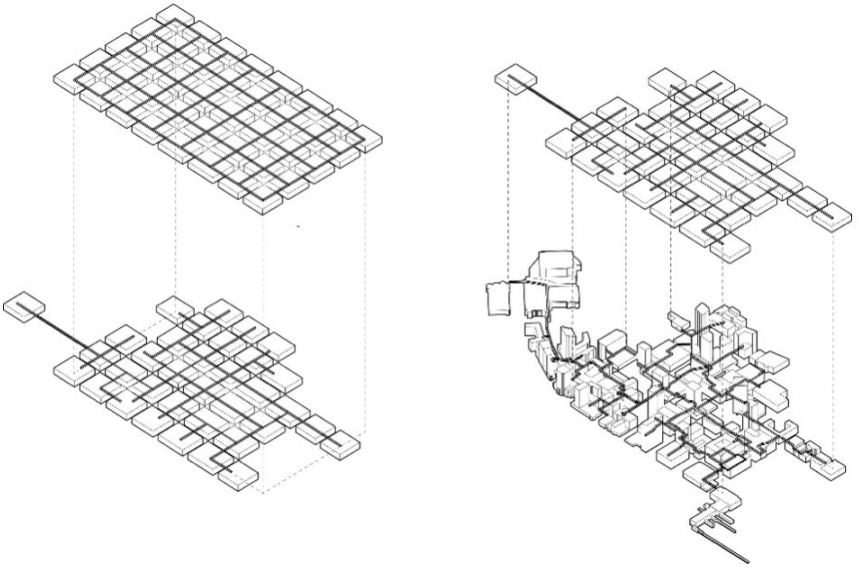


Figure 2. Transformation of the St. Paul skyway system from an idealized form (upper left) to the built condition (lower right). Source: By authors.

and then developing iterations as a series of coherent deformations of this initial condition aimed at arriving at a representation of the existing city. The approach is suited to St. Paul, a mid-sized American city with a central core consisting of a regular rectangular grid (rotated with respect to the cardinal directions). Moreover, the St. Paul skyway is characterized by skyway bridges designed to a consistent set of guidelines. Together, these observations suggest a hypothesized originating condition: a rectangular grid of city blocks, each block populated by a building mass, each building mass connected to its neighbor across the street by a mid-block skyway bridge (Fig. 2, upper left).

When the built form of the city is compared with the idealized form, and particularly if the skyway system is extracted from the context of streets and building masses, two questions arise. First, how does the skyway system register the forces compelling it to deform from its idealized condition? A second, related question is, if we are given the form of the skyway system – extracted from its context – can we infer the city's form? The two questions both assume that we can make a reasonable speculation about the forces that have deformed the skyway system from its idealized condition: acknowledging that this may be the case is to allow that the skyway system is, in effect, an inhabitable mode of urban representation. More particularly, it is an *indexical trace* that represents simply by responding to what it encounters.

4.2. As capable of revealing unique conditions

The skyway can be seen to result from a hypothesized act of extrusion, as if the system takes its form by means of extruding a rectangular cross-sectional shape through the city, along lines of travel. As it finds its way through the city, this extrusion twists and

turns subject to constraints embodied in the building code and in accessibility guidelines, as well in as the physical fabric of historic buildings. These conditions can surprisingly manifest themselves, forming a kind of especially resistant terrain which the system is obligated to address. If understood in this way, the skyway can be understood as a device for measuring or reading local particularities. To state this idea differently, the skyway operates as a disturbable, neutral form extruded through the environment; we might think of it as an inflectable probe inserted into a city, by means of which certain resistances can be measured and made visible – disturbances of the idealized form. The exceptions from the idealized form constitute a reading of local particularities. It is precisely through the skyway's capacity to admit exceptions to its idealized form that persistent local forces (e. g., topography, or the political will of a resistant entrenched population) become manifest, and it is when the system enters into buildings that this dimension is most obvious.

Speaking generally, the skyway encounters five different kinds of conditions on its journey through the city. The first of these is the condition where the system encounters pre-defined, pre-existing, public or quasi-public spaces, and appropriates these spaces within itself. The archetypal example in St. Paul occurs within the Railroad and Bank Building, designed by Charles S. Frost and built from 1914-1916 (Fig. 3).

Figure 3. Railroad and Bank Building. Source: City of Saint Paul and the Saint Paul Heritage Preservation Commission (1988).

The Railroad and Bank Building incorporates a multi-story interior light well, at the base of which is an ornate atrium currently operating as an event venue. An isometric drawing of the atrium within the context of the building's second floor indicates its appropriation by the skyway system (Fig. 4).

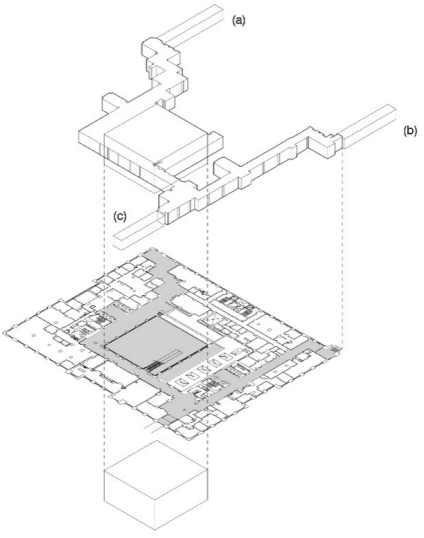


Figure 4. Skyway within the Railroad and Bank Building. Source: By authors.

Skyway bridges (marked a, b, and c) connect the Railroad and Bank Building to neighboring buildings. In the condition illustrated by the Railroad and Bank Building, the discovered condition of the historic atrium, a space originally designed as an internally focused, internally-lit core, is revealed through the possibility of a new approach, i. e., via the building's second floor: an approach not contemplated by the building's original designers. As the skyway system finds its way from the perimeter of the Railroad and Bank Building to the atrium's arcades, it appropriates original corridor spaces (e. g., the segment

between bridges b and c) as well as repurposed, previously marketable, office spaces (e. g., the segment near bridge a).
The second condition encountered by the skyway is the quasi-public internal space designed in anticipation of connection to the skyway system. An excellent example of this condition – directly connected to the Railroad and Bank Building by skyway – is the atrium inside Cray Plaza, designed by Miller, Hanson, Westerbeck & Bell, and built 1986 (Fig. 5).

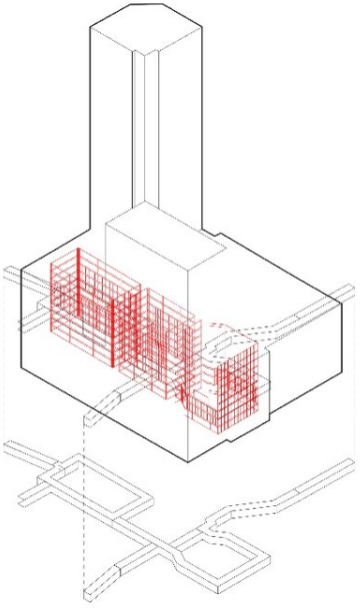


Figure 5. Atrium and skyway system within Cray Plaza. Source: By authors.

Anticipatory spaces of this kind are well-positioned to engage the skyway in a way closely approaching its original vision, i. e., as a system providing efficient connections between nodes such as parking ramps and retail. Although retail has largely disappeared from Cray Plaza since its construction, the atrium and its integration of the skyway system still reveal the commercially-driven priorities of its architectural design.
The third condition encountered by the skyway is the conversion of formerly private or quasi-private space deep within buildings into the system. The best example within the entire St. Paul skyway system is Park Square Court, a collection of nineteenth-century wholesale buildings adjacent to Mears Park, designed by J. Walter Stevens and built between 1886 and 1906 (Fig. 6).

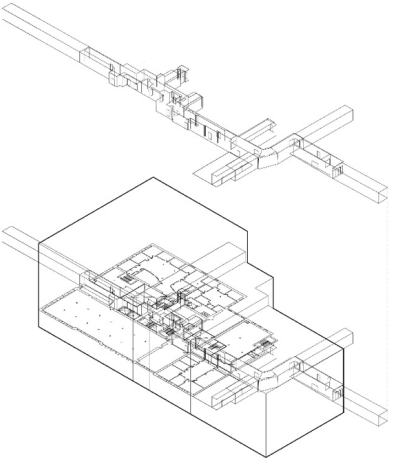


Figure 6. Atrium and skyway system within Park Square Court. Source: By authors.

This is a found condition of entirely different quality than that in the Railroad and Bank Building: at Park Square Court, the discovered spaces within the building result from a process akin to excavation: walls and floors being selectively removed so as to admit passage, light, and view. To occupy the discovered territory within Park Square Court is to experience these buildings in ways that were quite inconceivable until the arrival of the skyway system.
The fourth condition – the underground tunnel – exists rarely in St. Paul, although it

plays a prominent position in other grade-separated systems such as Toronto's PATH system. Finally, the only condition clearly visible and apprehensible to the broader public from the perspective of the street is the bridge, freely spanning from one building to the next. It is here, and here alone, that the skyway most closely approximates its idealized form.

CONCLUSION

As a system, the skyway structures experience in a way which encourages focus on distant goals rather than immediate detail, promoting a kind of "tunnel vision" unlike anything else in the contemporary North American city. In this sense it is a lens or prism, structuring perception, action, memory, and movement in unique ways, obscuring and enabling behaviors, views and perceptions, and ways of moving within the city. As an architectural interface, the skyway is a device for generating architectural and urban knowledge. More specifically, it generates knowledge of architecture and of the city – precisely by idiosyncratically limiting and structuring visibility and movement. It enables processes, exchanges, and negotiations, and in so doing makes local particularities visible in specific ways. In this essay, rather than emphasizing possible numbing effects of the skyway on perception, or critiquing its effects from a social or political perspective, we have proposed that its physical form – its departures from a hypothesized idealized form – record and make visible and memorable local particularities. Along the way, the skyway becomes something which isn't quite a built work of architecture, and isn't quite a drawn representation of architecture: it exists as an oscillation between building and drawing, an inhabitable mode of urban representation.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The authors acknowledge and thank the University of Minnesota School of Architecture for providing funding to support the graduate research making this work possible.

REFERENCES

Andersen, K. 1988. "Fast Life Along the Skywalks: By Going Indoors, City Dwellers Escape the City." *Time*, August 1, 1988.

Appleyard, D., K. Lynch, J. R. Myer. 1964. *The View from the Road.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Augé, M. 1995. *Non-places: Introduction to an Anthropology of Supermodernity.* London: Verso.

Blauvelt, A. 2016. "Preface." *In Parallel Cities: The Multilevel Metropolis*, Jennifer Yoos and Vincent James. Minneapolis: Walker Art Center.

Boddy, T. "Underground and Overhead: Building the Analogous City." In *Variations on a Theme Park: The New American City and the End of Public Space*, edited by Michael Sorkin, 123-125, 141-144. New York: Hill & Wang.

Burns, C. "On Site: Architectural Preoccupations." In *Drawing, Building, Text*, edited by Andrea Kahn, 146-167. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Christenson, M. 2019. *Theories and Practices of Architectural Representation.* New York: Routledge.

City of Saint Paul and the Saint Paul Heritage Preservation Commission. 1988. "Railroad and Bank Building." https://saintpaulhistorical.com/items/show/201.

Colomina, B. 1992. "The Split Wall: Domestic Voyeurism." In *Sexuality and Space*, edited by Beatriz Colomina. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

De Certeau, M. 1984. *The Practice of Everyday Life.* Los Angeles, CA: University of California Press.

Derrida, J. 1982. "Différance." In *Margins of Philosophy.* Translated by Alan Bass. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press.

Gruen, V. 1956. *A Greater Fort Worth Tomorrow.* Fort Worth, TX: Greater Fort Worth Planning Committee.

Jacob, B. 1985. "Architectural Form in the Urban Setting." *Design Quarterly* 129, 29-31.

Jameson, F. 1991. *Postmodernism, Or, The Cultural Logic of Late Capitalism.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Robertson, S. 2004. "Visions of Urban Mobility." In *Urban Infrastructure in Transition: What Can we Learn from History?* edited by Peter Wilding. Graz, Austria: IFF/IFZ.

Venturi, R., D. Scott Brown, and S. Izenour. 1972. *Learning from Las Vegas.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Willensky, E. 1985. [Untitled]. *Design Quarterly* 129, 14-15.

PAPER #1.21

FABRIC[ATED]:
FABRIC INNOVATION IN ARCHITECTURE + EDUCATION

Tolya Syril Stonorov[a]
[a]Norwich University School of Architecture + Art, Northfield, Vermont USA

ABSTRACT

Fabric has long been a catalyst for innovation, reflection, change and transformation in architecture. This paper explores how the research and testing of fabric innovation and material responsibility can influence architecture and design. Part of a larger future book, (expected publishing date 2023), this study will explore the ways in which fabric can and historically has revolutionized architecture, teaching and design. This analysis will uncover fabric's multidimensional and multifaceted role in architecture and design and its influence on social justice: architecture and design that aids humanity and the environment, creating an inclusive, diverse, and altruistic environment for all. This inquiry examines fabric in architecture through a multilayered approach and is divided into sections, beginning with an analysis of precedents, using both written and built work. The study then turns to an examination of educational case studies: community-driven projects that exemplify dynamic and groundbreaking models for national and international projects that make the connection between fabric and the built environment. The chosen case study projects focus on how these approaches are being incorporated into academic architectural and design studios. Finally, the paper examines one case study in depth, looking at the relationship of gender and garments to architecture and skin. The paper highlights how fabric, in its broad definition, continues to be an important and innovative material in the development of socially conscious architecture.

KEYWORDS

Fabric; innovation; tensile; pedagogy; gender.

INTRODUCTION

This paper examines Fabric as a catalyst for innovation, reflection, change and transformation in architecture, and how the research and testing of this thesis can influence architecture and design education. This study, which is part of a larger future book project, FABRIC[ated], (publication expected 2023), explores the ways in which fabric can and historically has revolutionized architecture, teaching and design. From the relationship of gendered vernacular garments to architectural space, to the sustainability of tensile structures,[1] this paper uncovers fabric's multidimensional and multifaceted role in architecture and design and its influence on social justice. Social justice is defined here under a broad definition of architecture and design as a force that aids humanity and the environment, while creating an inclusive, diverse, and altruistic environment for all. Through a multilayered approach, the paper will study this topic with sections on the use of fabric in tensile structures, concrete fabric, refugee tent structures, fabric as a gendered translation from the traditional female garment to buildings, smart/responsive fabrics, such as the innovative research conducted by Kennedy Violich Architecture, and the groundbreaking fabric-focused work of others. Through an examination of

[1]Tensile Structures: "A tensile structure is a construction of elements carrying only tension and no compression or bending... Tensile structures are the most common type of thin-shell structures." https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tensile_structure

Figure 1. Urban Water Body Studio, Stonorov, Norwich University

case study community-driven projects, the paper offers readers pedagogical models for national and international projects that illuminate various aspects of this issue. The chosen case study projects will focus on how these methods are being incorporated into academic architectural and design studios. Specifically, the paper documents 6 case study learning environments, that deal with the different aspects of the book's thesis.

FABRIC*[ATED]* brings current research about the relationship between fabric and architecture and design innovation and social justice together under the larger focus of academic learning and how academia can work to incorporate these ideas into the future of architecture. Radical designers like Hella Jongerius have pushed the relationship between the body and design and revolutionary engineers and architects like Frei Otto, Peter Rice and Herzog and De Meuron have explored how we can re-envision the skin of the built environment - architecture's relationship to structure and material. It is noteworthy that leading architects, such as Thom Mayne of Morphosis, have discussed the relationship of skin, (it too a tensile fabric), and the body to architecture and thus have established the context for this paper: "The space between the surface of the body and the surface of the skin -- the interstitial territory bounding interior and exterior -- allows each face of the building to alter as the light conditions change with the movements of the sun across the sky and of pedestrians along the street."[2] This paper will take an inclusive approach to these studies and weave these interrelated subjects together under the umbrella of the sustainability of social justice. I.e. each topic will be examined in a holistic way and evaluated in relation to its impact towards human and environmental good.

PRECEDENT: LITERATURE REVIEW

There is exciting and significant research published about fabric in relation to sustainability, garments and architecture; architecture for the underserved; tensile structures and innovation. Yet, existing publications tend to be highly focused in their approach, or have been published decades ago. This paper attempts to present this body of research in a broad, current and integrated fashion. In *Architecture in Fashion*, Singley and Fausch state, "This…cleavage between durable edifice and ephemeral textile motivates not only advertising's use of architecture as a sign for resistance to change, but also fashion's desire to acquire an aura of classic timelessness through a metonymical relationship with the edifice."[3] In this text, the editor and chapter authors

[2] Quote from Thom Mayne in Lupton, Ellen. Tobias, Jennifer. Imperiale, Alicial. Jeffers, Grace. 2002. Skin: Surface, Substance, and Design. New York, NY. Princeton Architectural Press.
[3] Fausch, Deborah, Paulette Singley. 1996. Architecture in Fashion. New York, NY. Princeton Architectural Press. (page 7).

examine the relationship between fashion and architecture, drawing conclusions and comparisons between the movements and trends in the two related industries. This work provides important context for the work in this book, in that it deals with the garment/ fashion/building relationship and speaks to appropriation and manipulation, both physical and in thoughts.

In Ellen Lupton's *Skin: Surface, Substance, and Design*, the study of skin in relation to the building envelope is eloquently written about: "Skin is a multilayered, multipurpose organ that shifts from thick to thin, tight to loose, lubricated to dry, across the landscape of the body."[4] In this text she knits complex responses to the idea of skin through an exploration of precedent projects. Lupton discusses the relationship between interior and exterior space relative to the body, "Skin, a knowledge-gathering device, responds to heat and cold, pleasure and pain. It lacks definitive boundaries, flowing continuously from the exposed surfaces of the body to its internal cavities."[5]

The study of the relationship between fabric and the built environment demands new approaches to the way we teach. In relation to the pedagogy of teaching methods, Hella Jongerius has been a leader in boundary pushing processes, working with fluid forms and fabric innovation, for decades. Her lab, currently located in Berlin, Germany, explores state-of-the-art weaving techniques and other textile innovations. Jongerious writes "The unfinished, the provisional, the possible – they hide in the attention for imperfections, traces of the creation process, and the revealed potential of materials and techniques…This working method…not only celebrates the value of the process, but also engages the viewer, the user, in her investigation."[6] Jongerius' highly experimental methods point to potential in the products of studio exploration. As ***FABRIC****[ATED]* explores pedagogy and how these concepts can affect student learning, work like Jongerius' with Droog Design is essential for pushing the idea of process and product.

Architecture is an art that exists in space. It encompasses the built world and requires experiential understanding. When examining the existing work in the field, precedents may be looked at using two methods. The first involves research and analysis of texts written on the topic, outlined above. The second, of equal importance, involves an investigation of built work precedents, and how the theories and practices of the relationships between fabric and design are incorporated into the built environment.

PRECEDENT: BUILT WORK

Frei Otto

Frei Otto is one of the leading architects on tensile and lightweight structures. Otto is widely considered to be one of the most important architects of the 21st century, and in 2018, Otto received the Pritzker Prize, a highly prestigious architecture award. Though his work was clearly pushing innovative boundaries in terms of materials and engineering, Otto was also deeply concerned with social justice. In an interview with the Pritzker Prize committee he stated "I've never done anything to gain this prize…Prizewinning is not the goal of my life. I try to help poor people…"[7] His work was a rooted in sustainability at its core, though it may not be immediately apparent. The choice to examine how structure might be envisioned as something light and minimalist, as opposed

[4] Lupton, Ellen. Tobias, Jennifer. Imperiale, Alicial. Jeffers, Grace. 2002. Skin: Surface, Substance, and Design. New York, NY. Princeton Architectural Press.
[5] Lupton, Ellen. Tobias, Jennifer. Imperiale, Alicial. Jeffers, Grace. 2002. Skin: Surface, Substance, and Design. New York, NY. Princeton Architectural Press.
[6] http://www.jongeriuslab.com/information
[7] https://www.nytimes.com/2015/03/11/arts/design/frei-otto-german-architect-wins-pritzker-prize-posthumously.html Last accessed 11.14.19

to the heavy, material abundant traditional forms of wood and steel framing methods, was a political statement as well as a design manifesto. Otto questioned need and excess in his work through rethinking how buildings could be made. "Otto's work was lightweight, democratic, low-cost and sometimes temporary."[8] Similar to Neri Oxman, Frei Otto was inspired and fascinated by examples of lightweight minimalist structures in nature. Otto was fundamentally committed to learning by doing and was known to construct complex physical models to test the tensile structures he envisioned. These examples of social justice, doing more with less, and physical making, are key themes that point to how fabric innovation has contributed to goals of social justice. "The advantage of cable net structures is that load transfer can be achieved with an enormous saving in material."[9] This material frugality represents a pressing issue in architecture fabrication today. In minimizing the sheer amount of material used in construction, the design embraces sustainability at its core, creating a greater focus on resource scarcity.

> The relevance of Frei Otto's empirical model aesthetic lies in identifying the enormous potential of object knowledge and its material-cultural dimension – on the one hand to continue to anchor the perception of the resource between nature and technology, and on the other to allow better investigation of the complex interrelations between digital and analog. So what does it mean for architects and engineers to design in a society that seeks a balance between growing digitalization and increasingly important resource awareness?[10]

Kennedy Violich Architects

Kennedy Violich Architects, KVA, has spearheaded research and implementation of innovative fabric and material studies for decades. KVA's work with the Soft House, in Hamburg Germany, explores how soft surfaces throughout the house may be used to absorb and provide solar energy. Exterior 'twisters', flexible photovoltaics, are used to capture energy throughout the day. The innovative use of flexible and moving structure results in a higher energy yield.

> Flexible photovoltaics in textile 'twisters' are attached to flexible fiber composite board on the roof, offering shape adaptation for daily and annual seasonal sun tracking – creating the first 2-axis soft solar tracking system.[11]

The Soft House further uses high tech fabric curtains embedded with lights to divide spaces within the dwelling. This highly customizable flexible infrastructure provides the user with enhanced agency to define their experience. Coupled with large expanses of glass, the curtains allow the user to meld and screen their public and private inhabitation of the space. The LED lit fabric divisions both veil the interior from bright sunlight and create a gentle and luminous wall in non-lit times of the day. KVA brings this research to their teaching at Harvard through architecture design studios.

Figure 2 Soft House, http://www.kvarch.net/projects/87

[8] https://www.pritzkerprize.com/laureates/frei-otto Last accessed 11.14.19
[9] Meissner, Irene; Moller, Eberhard. 2017. Frei Otto, A life of research construction and inspiration. Munich, Germany. Detail, Second Edition.
[10] Meissner, Irene; Moller, Eberhard. 2017. Frei Otto, A life of research construction and inspiration. Munich, Germany. Detail, Second Edition.
[11] http://www.kvarch.net/projects/87, last visited 1.22.2020

CASE STUDIES

The following Case Studies examine fabric, gender, material responsibility and inclusive sustainability. They were specifically chosen for their community-based attention to issues of holistic social justice and their innovative exploration of fabric.

KESWA: AN UNCOVERING

At a recent Design Build Xchange Conference in 2017, Emily Baker, architecture professor at Tulane School of Architecture discussed her project titled KESWA: AN UNCOVERING. Through working with Muslim female students at Tulane, Baker developed a project that examined the veil, the abaya, in Arabic culture today. Female students digitally fabricated a steel enclosure that abstracted the abaya and encouraged the community to inhabit this enclosure. "*Keswa* invites the public to enter the space of the abaya, simultaneously venerating the garment and subverting its power to subordinate."[12] This reinterpretation of the traditional female garment starts to dissolve gender-imposed boundaries and barriers and encourages users/viewers to question their own perception and preconceptions. This research points to the Gender Space Architecture essay by Beatriz Colominia:

> [Silverman] points to the role of the object in forming both its own image and that of the spectator. Moreover, by stressing the notion that seeing and being seen are reciprocal positions in the same operation, she returns us to the dual nature of representation: at once inscribing the image of the thing represented and revealing its own culturally constituted structure.[13]

Figure 3. KESWA, Copyright Emily Baker

Fabrik

At the University College of London Bartlett School of Architecture, Daniel Widrig, Stefan Bassing and Soomeen Hahm worked with students, I-Ting Tsai, Somdatta Majumdar, Xixi Zheng and Yiru Yun, to create a dynamic and fascinating body of research-based studio work: Fabrik. By using a single sheet of felt, students formed and stitched complex volumes that resulted in furniture designs. After an extensive period of experimentation, students discovered a workable resin mixture, which caused the felt to become rigid where needed and remain soft as required for comfort. Unlike the traditional use of fabric as a drape or vessel for cushioning, Fabrik relies entirely on the felt composite to create the form of the piece. The felt and resin combination creates a concrete like result, with a soft tactile quality.

Airdraft

Thomas Randall-Page and Benedetta Rogers', AirDraft, pushes the boundaries of definable space. With clear inspiration from the 1960's Antfarm, AirDraft is an inflatable cultural space that inverts the previous life of an industrial barge and transforms it into a mobile performance/gallery space. Airdraft

[12] Emily Baker, http://architecture.tulane.edu/news/2016/03/article-1909
[13] Rendell, Jane. Penner, Barbara. Borden, Iain. 2000. Gender Space Architecture. London. Routledge. Essay 34, Beatriz Colominia. 1992. Excerpts from 'The Split Wall: Domestic Voyeurism', from Beatriz Colomina (ed.) Sexuality and Space.
[14] http://superarchitects.world/portfolio/fabrik/
[15] http://thomasrandallpage.com/AirDraft

shines light on the shift that the canal system has undergone from that of industry and utilitarian meaning to conduits of leisure and pockets of cultural experimentation. The form itself references counter culture testing of decades earlier radical designers. Yet, the inflatable nature of Airdraft is born out of a necessity to create space with some permanence, while also being able to dissolve that same space based on the physical constraints of the canal system. The inflatable model provided a solution to this need, allowing the space to be constructed and deconstructed as needed. The use of fabric in this experimental form of cultural space, provided a flexible and innovative material answer to the issue and opportunity.

Figure 4. http://thomasrandallpage.com/AirDraft

Shade-Water Pavilion, New Orleans, Louisiana

The Tulane Small Center for Collaboration and Design + The Carrollton-Hollygrove Community Development Corporation (CHCDC) came together to produce Hollygrove Greenline Shade-Water Pavilion in New Orleans, Louisiana. This shade/water pavilion is an insertion of protest in a blighted area. The pavilion and the surrounding water gardens seek to transform a derelict area into an educational beacon that provides for the community. Founded on the simple idea of an inverted series of tents, the Shade-Water Pavilion gathers rainwater that would otherwise contribute to the city's storm water system, collects it and distributes the water to nearby urban farming gardens.

Figure 5. Shade-Water Pavilion

Spacer Fabric

Claudia Luling is a leading professor currently conducting research into fabric innovation in relation to the architectural envelope. Luling's architecture studios have researched how fabric can provide skin and structure through methods of folding and layering with a foam centered structure. Her work is questioning the typical wood or metal framed building system and suggesting that a digitally produced, 3D printed fabric and foam envelope can provide a streamlined product that will produce significantly less waste than traditional building processes.
Luling's SpacerFabric_HOME (ZeltHAUS) uses an innovative folding technique of a double layered fabric to provide temporary housing to refugees. These structures attempt to answer a very current need for provisional shelter in our growing refugee crisis.

> "Three dimensional, double layered textile structures are used as structural elements, which once foamed serve as lost formwork for the fabrication of stable and insulated

lightweight structural elements. Integrated into this system are hingeless folding mechanisms that enable fast building and dismantling."[16]

It is precisely this sort of innovation that is specifically allowed by fabric's material qualities. The lightweight, transportable design provides a bright and dynamic solution to a basic human need that it currently in crisis.

Figure 6. Copyright Frankfurt University, Claudia Luling

Urban Water Body Studio

In my own, Urban Water Body Studio, an upper level architecture studio at Norwich University, School of Architecture + Art, I taught a studio on the relationship of the garment to the body and the translation of the garment to the building. This work was born out of my thesis work at the University of California, Berkeley where I examined how the act of dressing or housing, the layered relationship between public and private space, can be reviewed by looking at the correlation between the female garment and architecture. Architecture may be envisioned as our third skin and the garment as our most immediate second skin. Like the garment, our edifices at once shield and expose. Building and garment share a parallel language, both affording refuge to the body. The focus of each is concurrently external and internal and what is divulged is selected by choices of spatial immediacy, permeability and layering. The passage towards private space in built form is analogous to the movement towards the body through the layers of a garment. In researching this topic, it is useful to examine this relationship through a historical analysis. This analogy can be examined through the relationship of the kimono and the veil to the traditional Japanese and Islamic house. From this study, lessons can be extracted, abstracted and applied to built form.

The construction of the kimono shares with its architectural counterpart a true economy of means. Both space and fabric are intricately thought out, rejecting wastefulness. The kimono is based on a bolt of cloth that is typically 14 inches by twelve and a half yards. Its construction follows this standard fabric size and uses a minimal amount of cutting to achieve the final garment. The main body of the garment is two lengths of the bolt sewn together in the back and left open in the front. An additional length is divided in two and sewn to each open length in the front, providing overlap. The entire pattern for the kimono is laid out on a single bolt, perfectly divided to ensure no wastage of material. The obi, a belt like attachment that keeps the kimono closed, is the one part of the kimono that is separate from this concise pattern; it is also the component of the kimono that most transforms over the centuries.

The garment is modified from person to person, but instead of excess material being cut and discarded, it is folded into the seams, allowing for change. The kimono is the antithesis of a pair of American jeans that are discarded yearly or with a change in weight; it is a garment for the life of the person and accordingly can transform to fit the current form of that person. This flexibility implies a certain generosity and lack of rigidity of the kimono that may be misleading. Different styles of the kimono throughout history have

[16] https://www.frankfurt-university.de/en/about-us/faculty-1-architecture-civil-engineering-geomatics/contact/professors/architecture/prof-dipl-ing-claudia-lueling/tab-designbuild-e/spacerfabric-home/ Last viewed 1.22.2020

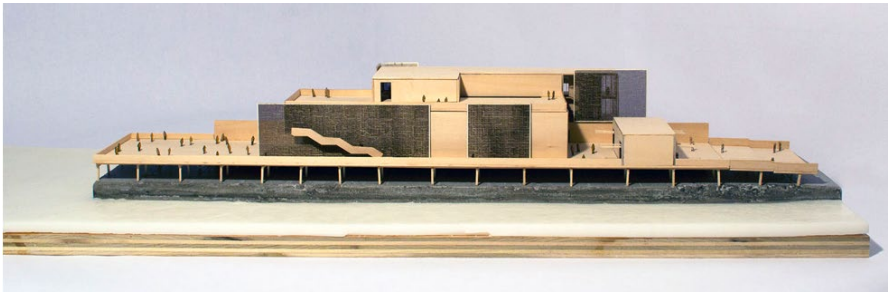


Figure 7. Urban Water Body Studio, Norwich University

inhibited women's movement. In the Edo period during the late 18th century, the length of the kimono was several inches longer than the height of the woman (a style that continues today) and the obi was widened to 12 inches; both made walking difficult. At this point the obi covered most of the midsection, from the pelvic bone to their chest. It transformed from a simple and functional rope meant to fasten the garment, to an elaborate and wide mechanism that could not be tied by the person wearing the garment. To get in or out of this kimono, a woman had to be assisted. This points to a built-in dependence that the garment itself imparted on women.

The Japanese house embodies the characteristics of the kimono. The house, as with the garment, has an economy of space and materiality. Corresponding to the kimono standard bolt of the fabric that is derived from the basic width of the human form, the Japanese house is based around the tatami mat whose dimensions stem from the shape of the human form, 90 centimeters wide and 180 centimeters long. The tatami was originally conceived of as a floor covering that could be used to sleep on, but was also used to cover the entire floor. "When the designer of a traditional Japanese house first begins drawing up plans for the building, she first determines how many tatami mats will be needed to cover the floor. By designing different layouts, the final configuration of the mats will determine the shape and size of the house. In this way the architecture employs a unit of measurement that is standardized and columns, street frontages and room sizes were made. The idea of the human scaled module translated to how spaces within the house could be used. Instead of delineating exact placement of walls and doors, the house is constructed around sliding screens that move in response to season or mood. The use of the shoji screen further emphasizes the subtlety of the space. Light is softened as is enters through the paper screens, creating complex shadows that bring a specific emotion to the room. The house responds to the changing conditions as the kimono responds to its changing user. The subtle complexity of the kimono and Japanese house, embodied in the concept of 'iki', creates a sensuous interaction between body and form. Shelter, in both garment and built form, is seen as something that can be opened or closed depending on the degree of privacy and warmth desired to respond to the exact needs and desires of the users.

In the Middle East, the relationship between the veil and the traditional Islamic house is highly complex. The veil by nature creates duality. It determines two things as different. A is made aware of B because of X, the veil. Depending on this X, A and B can be separated or united. X becomes the interface between A and B, the public and private spaces of house, and body. The degree of privacy required determines the nature of the veil. In Indonesia the veil is

a simple white cloth, *mandil,* that is draped over the head, leaving the face exposed. In Somalia the veil covers the entire body, but leaves an opening for the eyes, where in Saudi Arabia, even the eyes are covered by a dark mesh, hijab, that is impossible to penetrate. In 1999, I spent several months in Northern India, where, during my time in Pushkar, Rajasthan, I saw that women donned the veil only in certain occasions. I spent a day with an Indian man and his family, where I noticed his wife putting on and removing her veil (a thin piece of colorful cloth), depending on who was in the room. I was told that his wife only wore her veil around his older brothers and father. Around his younger brothers, she did not wear the veil, shedding light on the relationship of the veil to the hierarchy within a family and society.

The veil itself is donned for two main reasons, firstly it allows the woman to display her religious piety and secondly because of male assertion. The juxtaposition of these two reasons makes the veil so fascinating. From a Western view point, the veil echoes with ideas of subservience and chauvinism, a garment that forces women into confinement and prevents self-expression. Yet, to many women who wear them, the veil is a sign of solidarity with other women, religious piety and freedom. The role of the veil, to the women who chose to wear it, is not one of confinement, but rather a garment that allows them to exert their religious beliefs and frees them from voyeurism in the public world. Sherifa Zuhur notes in her book *Revealing, Reveiling*, that "the majority of the younger veiled women saw the hijab as a symbol of change. This change was not only a personal and moral, but represented a social sisterhood to them."[17] On this level, by taking the veil, the woman has the ultimate power over voyeurism, as she decides when and by whom she will be perceived.

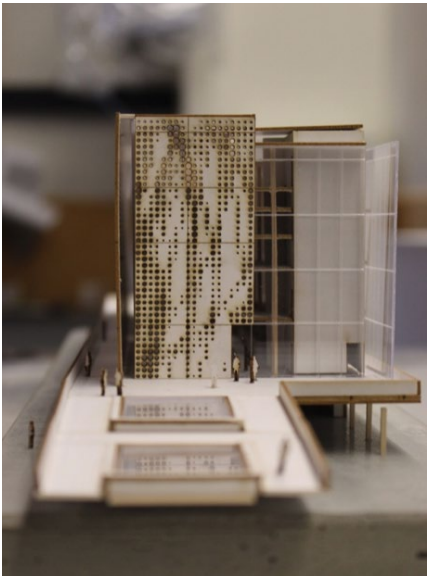


Figure 8 Urban Water Body Studio, Norwich University

[17] https://www.frankfurt-university.de/en/about-us/faculty-1-architecture-civil-engineering-geomatics/contact/professors/architecture/prof-dipl-ing-claudia-lueling/tab-designbuild-e/spacerfabric-home/ Last viewed 1.22.2020

Similarly, the traditional Middle Eastern house also provides an inward facing space. Like the mesh that covers women's eyes in Saudi Arabia, the intricately carved facades of the Islamic house create a screen through which the public street or courtyard is viewed. "The veil performs many of the functions of seclusion and introversion as expressed in Islamic domestic architecture…In house architecture, the screened balcony allows the female occupants to view the outside world without being seen."[18] The house then directly mirrors the garment, articulating the edge between public from private. Furthermore, it delineates the importance of this interface and highlights the need for controlling when and where women are seen. The veil is a topic so complex, that this investigation inevitably provides only a small glimpse into the political and social issues present. What the exploration does offer is a window into an intricacy of the veil that may serve to heighten curiosity and interest. This study then, is itself only a preview for a larger study of the complexities of the veil, one that provides a rich entry point into the design of built form.

This research into the relationship between female garments and architecture provides an entry point from which one can define a design proposal, a test case on which we can examine the ideas embedded within the investigation. Bringing this research into the studio setting allowed complex conversations around the ideas of layering, permeability, voyeurism and public and private space. After an initial examination of an organic skin, students extracted the lessons they had learned a fabricated a garment related to that skin. These garments were constructed at full scale and represented the first housing of the body. From this point, the studio moved into a secondary exploration by conceptually examining the third skin, the building. As a conceptual jumping off point, the students constructed a 'building' out of layers of mylar films, that when built up, can provide privacy and comfort to differing degrees, much like a garment. This study allowed the physical, although often metaphorical, garments to find a more traditional built form, while maintaining abstraction. The richness of ideas presented from the skin/garment/body/building research allowed for a more nuanced and complex development of a building. It further allowed students to examine their own cultural constructs and question how they clothe themselves may be related to a building's envelope. Further it highlighted how the female garment can be influenced and influence in return, the built environment.

OUTCOMES + CONCLUSION

From each of the case studies examined, we may glean exciting possibilities of how fabric has architecture material potentials. These innovative methods and case studies provide fresh ways of looking at architecture, culture and social justice. In each we see novel techniques for addressing space, culture and need. In Otto's dynamic and groundbreaking work, ideas of heavy structure are replaced by light and malleable forms that use dramatically less material, while also creating delight. In the work of KVA, fabric provides a more responsive and interactive solar collection system, while heightening the interior possibilities of the user experience. Like the traditional Japanese house, the user in the Soft House can adjust their interior space through the use of fabric walls, similar to the vernacular Japanese sliding screens. Through the qualities of these translucent materials, daily experience finds richness in the previously mundane. Similarly, the inverting of the veil experience by Baker's dynamic studio, turns the user experience into one of introspection and discovery. By inhabiting the veil, Baker subverts the typical power dynamic of the garment, highlighting the complex relationships. Airdraft's playful

[18] Edwards, Brian, Sibley, Magda. Land, Peter. Hakmi, Mohamad. 2006. Courtyard Housing: Past, Present and Future. Taylor and Francis.

and interactive cultural space emphasizes real social shifts in the London canal system. Its ethereal and temporal nature draws attention to the shifting landscape of cultural space on this everchanging waterway. Luling's work with fabric is pushing the boundaries of how we think about temporary refuge. Her studio's work is simultaneously acutely innovative and expressly political. Like Otto, Luling is rethinking structure and how it relates to the building envelope. This shift in material and intention provides a more socially minded outcome and a goal of architecture for all. Culturally, it is important to recognize how women have influenced and continue to influence the built environment. Through an examination of the traditional female garment in relation to vernacular architecture, we can garner a deeper understanding of a dynamic cultural relationship. Fabric, in its broad definition, continues to be an important and innovative material in the development of socially conscious architecture.

REFERENCES

Accad, Evelyne. 1978. *Veil of Shame: the role of women in the contemporary fiction of North Africa and the Arab world.* Quebec, Canada. Sherbrooke.

Lüling, Claudia; Richter, Iva. 2017. *Architecture Fully Fashioned - Exploration of foamed spacer fabrics for textile based building skins.* Journal of Façade Design and Engineering. Vol 5 No1. TU Delft Open

Black, Alexander. 2000. *The Japanese house.* Boston. Tuttle Publishing.

Balmond, Cecil. 2002. *Informal.* London, United Kingdom. Prestel.

Crawford, Matthew B. 2009. *Shop Class as Soulcraft, An Inquiry into the Value of Work.* London, England: Penguin Press.

Darabi, Parvin. 1999. *Rage Against the Veil: the courageous life and death of an Islamic dissident*; Amherst, New York. Prometheus Books.

Fathy, Hassan, 1986. *Natural Energy and Vernacular Architecture, Principles and Examples with Reference to Hot Arid Climates*. Chicago and London. The United Nations University by The University of Chicago Press.

Fausch, Deborah. 1996. *Architecture in Fashion.* New York, NY: Princeton Architectural Press.

Fletcher, Kate. 2008, 2014. *Sustainable Fashion and Textiles, Design Journeys.* Oxon. Earthscan. Routledge.

Goodwin, Jan, 1994. *Price of Honor: Muslim Women lift the veil of silence on the Islamic world.* Boston. Little Brown.

Hillenbrand, Robert, 1994. *Islamic architecture*. Columbia University Press. New York.

Hoag, John D., Nervi, Pier Luigi. General Editor; Abrams, Harry N. 1977. *Islamic Architecture,* Inc., New York. Publishers.

Iwamoto, Lisa. 2009. *Digital Fabrications, Architectural and Material Techniques.* New York, NY. Princeton Architectural Press.

Kinney, Leila. 1999. *Fashion and Fabrication in Modern Architecture.* Cambridge, Mas.: MIT press, Journal of the Society of Architectural Historians, Vol. 58 No. 3. (pp. 472-481).

Kinoshita, Masao. 1964. *Japanese Architecture;* Shokukusha Publishing Co. Tokyo, Japan.

Miodownik, Mark. 2013. *Stuff Matters, Exploring the Marvelous Materials that Shape Our Man-Made World*. United Kingdom. Penguin Books Ltd.

Michell, George. 1978. *Architecture of the Islamic World,* New York. William Morrow and Company, Inc.

Musterberg, Hugo, 1996. *The Japanese Kimono.* New York. Oxford University Press.

Pfeffer, Richard M. 1979. *Working for Capitalism.* New York. Columbia University Press.

Rice, Peter. 2017. *An Engineer Imagines.* England. Batsford, an Imprint of Pavilion Books Co.

Rudofsky, Bernard, 1965. *The Kimono Mind, An Informal Guide to Japan and the Japanese.* New York, NY. Van Nostrand Reinhold Company.

Schittich (Ed.), Christian. 2001. *Building Skins, Concepts, Layers, Materials.* Basel, Germany. Birkhauser Edition Detail.

Schouwenberg, Louise. 2003. *Hella Jongerius.* London, England. Phaidon Press.

Tsutoma, Ema. 1950. *Kimono: one hundred masterpieces of Japanese Costumes.* Tokyo, Japan. Meiji-Shobu.

PAPER #1.22

VISUAL SPACES OF CHANGE: THE USE OF IMAGE FOR RENDERING VISIBLE DYNAMICS OF URBAN CHANGE IN CONTEMPORARY CITIES

Pedro Leão Neto[a]
[a]Faculdade de Arquitectura da Universidade do Porto, Porto, Portugal

ABSTRACT

This paper presents the results of the first case study implemented within the research project Visual Spaces of Change. It particularly focuses on the use of Image for rendering visible dynamics of urban change in contemporary cities, exploring the potential of photography for suggesting different readings of past, present and future architectures and places. By discussing the main methodological aspects of implementation of this practical experiment, an innovative process of investigation is proposed for engaging researchers and authors in the fields of Architecture, Art and Image on the creation of visual narratives in public spaces. The use of different representation methods and approaches to photography as a research instrument, and different techniques for communicating different issues related with architecture and public space are discussed. Potentialities and shortcomings of different representation methods and imagery for communicating the identity and transformation of architectures and public spaces are analysed, pinpointing the challenges for a more comprehensive use of visual research and visual data for (i) linking the appearance of the built environment with its identity, meaning and history, (ii) positing interpretative, speculative, symbolic and artistic visual discourses about the city and its architecture, as important elements for reflecting about societal values and understanding different layers of meaning embedded in the built space. The paper concludes by drawing a number of preliminary findings of the ongoing research that is being developed within the project Visual Spaces of Change.

1. THEORETICAL ASPECTS OF PHOTOGRAPHY RELATED TO ARCHITECTURE, CITY AND TERRITORY

The use of photography as a research instrument is grounded in the idea that valid scientific insight into culture and society can be acquired by observing, analyzing and theorizing its visual manifestations (Luc Pauwels 2015, i). From this perspective, the use of visual research methods in the fields of architecture, city and territory can contribute to the creation of a knowledge-enabling environment that allows for a more specific study of architectural forms and urban realities, as well as its transformations and appropriations, thus rendering visible aspects of spaces where people socialize and interact, which are difficult to perceive without the use of image and photography – an idea sustained by the argument presented by Tim Davis on the article *Photography and Landscape Studies* that photography can:

> (...) shed new light, supply new metaphors, and suggest new directions for the notion of places and for ways in which they may be perceived and used (1989, 8).

In this sense, the universe of photography has been theoretically revised as a practice that translates into an approximation of culture, society, and politics, that uses different strategies to build a critical discourse of what surrounds us, helping to understand architecture and landscape also as cultural constructions and physical expressions which are encoded with

meanings that can be read and interpreted. An extensive overview of the state of the art on the distinct possibilities and photographic discourses about the fields of Architecture, City and Territory has already been made and published in book format. It can be found in *Um outro olhar sobre Obras de Álvaro Siza Vieira: Fotografia Documental e Artística: Um Olhar Contemporâneo sobre a Arquitectura Portuguesa* (Pedro Leão Neto 2018, 179-239) a publication released prior to the beginning of the VSC research project that contains its theoretical foundation, due to the extent of the scope of investigation, which includes an extensive and informed review of a significant number of authors and works that showcase contemporary and critical photographic vision of architecture based on a postmodern documentary approach towards public space transformations and how people live and appropriate these places. From the standpoint of art, David Campany (2014) makes a case in point for the idea that photographic essays produced in artistic contexts can be useful in providing us new readings about critical issues – and particularly in the fields of Architecture, City and Territory - in the article *Architecture as Photography: document, publicity, commentary* when he defends that critical and independent photographic discourse about architecture are vital, an observation that's also in line with the arguments presented by Pedro Gadanho in the article *Image-Making After Photoshop: Architecture, Public Space and their Visual Discontents*, where he defends the value of the independent photographic discourse:

> We should tackle the fictional and narrative approaches that have defined authorship within contemporary art, potentially as independent vehicles for critically observing architectural culture, and also the evolution of urban space representations (2019, 102).

Moreover, the use of visual methods such as photography, film and drawings as tools for research have proven to open the door to a deeper understanding and interpretation of social realities, which is important for our research that understands architecture in a comprehensive manner as a practice and discipline able to both give formal expression and integrate social - economics, politics, historical and technical - realities. This broad integrative notion also supports the idea of architecture as socially constructive idealization, close to what Gerard Bast wrote about the work and thoughts of Frederick Kiesler "(...) architecture has to be understood as an engagement with all facets of life (...)" (2015, 7-8). Further methodologies are also presented by Luc Pauwels:

> (...) visual social research ranges from the study of existing visual data of a variety of sources ('found' visual materials) to the production of visual data – often photographs and film/video records, but also drawings – by the research team ('researcher-produced materials') or by the field ('respondent-generated production,' photovoice), and to using visual materials in interview situations to trigger partly unanticipated factual information and projective comments (visual elicitation, photo elicitation) (2015, 3).

The use of photography as a visual research method can prove to be a valuable resource in terms of an investigation. However, as Marcus Banks (2007, 9-10) noted in the book *Using Visual Data in Qualitative Research,* the development of such a critical thinking requires the researcher to firstly formulate an intellectual problem, and then consider the most appropriate subject or empirical context to investigate, which in turn will inform decisions regarding the methods that are most likely to be effective in a particular context, including the data to be collected related to the problem being analyzed.

That is to say that every photograph that a researcher produces in the context of his investigation has to serve a higher purpose that to accomplish the fulfillment of his or her desire to take a picture and it cannot be merely illustrative. As Gillian Rose has argued in the article *Visual Culture, Photography and the Urban: An Interpretive Framework*:

> Simply saying 'our culture is visual now, so we need to take photographs' is not an adequate methodology (...) (2014, 7)

Important theoretical and methodical advancement in the field of visual analysis can also be ascribed to a related line of thought, on which photography is progressively combined with other materials and various forms of visual expressions, introducing and admittedly subjective view that uses the theme and subject matter of architecture and urban spaces to communicate something more than is common in architectural photographs. Through these interdisciplinary approaches, the articulation of photography with other analogue and digital image formats may be explored, sometimes incorporating texts, personal stories, drawings and other images in addition to photographic images. The combined use of these resources address aspects particularly useful in the study of Architectural objects and Urban Landscapes, providing the researcher with essential research tools and communication strategies. A significant example of this practice can be found in the work of Mies van der Rohe, who could produce drawings and photomontages in the context of the same architectural project, in order to further amplify the scope of architectural representation. To quote Martino Stierli on the practice of this particular architect from the book *Montage and the Metropolis: Architecture, Modernity, and the Representation of Space:*

> The large format, the forme tableau, the use of perspective, and the reality effect produced by photography all serve to simulate an urban experience within the gallery space, and the figures depicted in the foreground take on the role of identification figures for the viewer. The photomontages are more than a means to an end; they are themselves the bearers of a striking architectural idea (2018, 145-146).

Given all the above considerations, it is important to acknowledge that it is possible to find a great heterogeneity of perspectives and visual strategies with which the researcher must be familiar with in order to be capable to build a knowing photographic discourse. Within this context, it is important to be able to explore photography as an object of thought and production of meaning, creating fictional and symbolic worlds that act as autonomous territories, as is theoretically explained and can be seen in the work of many authors who present diverse critical and poetic perspectives about the real to explore architecture and city spaces with a special interest about the people who live and use those spaces. Jeff Wall's *Mimic* (1982), *Overpass* (2001) explore urbanity and the tensions of life in the city. By staging the space, other of Wall's *Morning Cleaning, Mies van der Rohe Foundation, Barcelona* (1999) deals with a very strong social component and can refer to our own experience of the spaces and city environments and to make us rethink the cultural values of those environments. In Paul Graham's work, we can see the tension among the apparently traditional documentary objectives - focused on the issue of the British presence in Northern Ireland or the social divide in America - and the questioning and exploration of the medium of photography itself, breaking his own rules, as was the case with his strategy of uniting at the time the practice of colour with the "documentary" style in *Troubled Land* (1984-1985) and with the over- exposed images in *American Night* (2003). Thomas

Ruff's critical re-interpretation of Mies van der Rohe´s work in the series *l.m.v.d.r* (1999-2004) makes the digital manipulation clear and reinterprets imaginatively the work of this land mark architect of modernity, and in doing so, questions architectural representation and makes possible the critical reinterpretation of Mies van der Rohe's work coming from the appropriation of archive material, rejecting the factual documental traditional of photography and embracing the idealization and making of new images from that important legacy of modernism.

The above discussion on the theoretical weight and intentionality contained in the act of photographing shows how photography can be an instrument of communication, representation and ideation (creatively processing, developing, and communicating new ideas – taking place inside the practice and discipline of architecture and urban thinking, demanding on the one hand a comprehensive understanding of visual culture capable of integrating and giving shape and meaning to various dimensions: technical, social, economic, historical, political and artistic. On the other hand, the capability it has of communicating the features considered relevant by the researcher in the process of cultural production. This means, among other things, to perceive the photographic image beyond a constructive or technical representation, as an instrument of thought, and therefore a medium of conceptualization in the universe of architecture, city and territory practice and theory.

2. METHODOLOGY ADOPTED WITHIN THE VISUAL SPACES OF CHANGE RESEARCH PROJECT

The first case study of the Visual Spaces of Change (VSC) research project promoted a series of open talks, public presentations and exhibitions of contemporary photography projects related to the subjects of Architecture, City and Territory during the 2019th edition of Ci.CLO Bienal Fotografia do Porto. These initiatives intended to broaden the discussion about how architecture transforms and is transformed by trends and ways of living, using as its subject of study Porto's Metropolitan Area.

The methodology developed in this pedagogical experiment builds up on previous research combining blended learning and e-learning (Neto, 2008) with visual research methods and photographic techniques (Neto e Neto, 2016a; 2016b) that enable students to manage the whole process of conception, development and implementation of photography projects in a collaborative learning environment. The use of these different components have been thought in order to enhance the articulation of activities between teaching staff, researchers and students, enabling the exchange of knowledge and explore scientific and technological capabilities of each of the participants. The learning activities of the VSC project have been structured in two main technical and artistic components which enable the researchers to develop individual photographic projects inserted in a collective pedagogical strategy containing various communication tools, representation methods, visualization techniques, and involving multiple interaction levels and new ways for the researcher to understand and relate with various aspects of the public space.

The methodological framework has been designed with special attention to the multidisciplinary character of this project, complementing each other and putting in relation the various aspects covered within this integrative approach regarding Architecture, City and Territory. Within this general approach, the researchers involved in the VSC project developed empirical investigations in concrete case studies of selected urban spaces, confronting the present reality of specific places with

documentary photographs and original photographs taken from chosen viewpoints of the study objects. Practical exercises of image manipulation and diachronic reconstitutions of certain landscapes organized in temporal layers, allowed to visualize changes in the configuration of public spaces – these diachronic reconstitutions were not only based in the research of historical records, but were also combined with other techniques of photo montage and the overlap of temporal sequences, among other techniques of image manipulation from existing urban spaces.

The identification of the VSC public spaces that in this first case study was restricted to a set of Metro Stations located not so far apart from each other – because of technical and administrative reasons – will in the following case study be enlarged with a selection of locations with different relational scales along the Metro do Porto infrastructure network, in order to maximize the experimental potential of this case study within the Porto Metropolitan Area (AMP). The collection and systematization of visual information about the selected places constitutes the working database of the research, which is an ongoing process organized in three main information blocks: cartography (maps and satellite images), photography (document and artistic registries of selected locations), and historiography (monographs and previous research). These elements have been used in order to characterize the main features of each photographic project, providing the means to create a comprehensive analysis of the territory under study. The contextualization of the collected material focused on the evolution of architecture and public spaces and the modes of appropriation of the cultural and symbolic meaning of particular places. Informed by the material collected for each architecture selected in the first stage of data collection within the VSC project, empirical investigations in the field have been held in order to compare the present reality of each specific place, producing original current records of the same viewpoints found in the data collection surveyed. In this context, a set of critical visual narratives have been constructed about architecture, public space and their experiences, through the art and technique of photography, it was necessary to adopt a photography teaching strategy that integrated, from the outset technical and aesthetic aspects. This meant, first, to convey the idea that photography is a unique form (art and technique) of visual language and as such is based on a specific visual grammar.

The visual narratives developed in each selected location have been designed in order to communicate an open, critical and profound reading of the architecture and territory, representing different public spaces in an interpretive, artistic, even fictional, aspect, seeking to give visibility to specific spatial and temporal aspects that are difficult to perceive without the purposeful use of image and photography. In the physical installation of each photographic project, contrasting views of architectures and places have been placed in relation to each other, in order to create a dynamic of interaction between various public and collective spaces, forming an urban network conceived as itineraries for experimental exhibition. The proximity between these visual narratives (VSC Public Spaces) connected by metro stations and urban pathways, have been intended to suggest an urban network, conceived as an "Open Museum" within the metropolitan area of Porto, in which pilot experimental curatorial and cultural actions involved a wide range of artistic and cultural institutions, extending their reach to a larger public audience for collectively transform imaginings of the city.

3. CONTEMPORARY PHOTOGRAPHY PROJECTS USED IN PILOT STUDY

The collaboration between VSC and Ci.CLO 2019 materialized through the operationalization of a curatorial project associated with a set of activities that cross the universes of photography and editorial in two complementary strands: (i) The exhibition of Contemporary Photography Projects in several public spaces of collective use located in Porto's Metropolitan Area and (ii) an Exhibition of alternative publications for the dissemination of authors and photographic works with a particular focus on Architecture, City and Territory. This program lasted from the 16th of May until the 2nd of July of 2019 and was implemented in various public spaces and collective use, seeking to generate a dynamic of interaction with exhibitions in cultural organizations, professional associations, universities and other alternative spaces of artistic production.

During Ci.CLO 2019, the highlights were the exhibitions at São Bento Metro and Aliados Metro Stations, as well as the exhibition at the Ordem dos Arquitectos Secção Regional Norte and Biblioteca Municipal Almeida Garrett. The material brought to the public through the contemporary photography projects exhibited in these spaces constitute 'visual narratives' that intentionally interfere with the territory, provoking real and virtual encounters between contrasting landscapes of Porto's Metropolitan Area, offering angles and perspectives on this territory that raise a new look at its cultural, environmental and architectural heritage. A total of seven photography projects were exhibited, plus one video project. The seven photographic projects are: *Fendas Intemporais* by Jiôn Kiim and Artur Leão; *Clareira* by Ana Miriam; *Ode* by Edu Silva; *Piscina das Marés* by Marta Ferreira; *Contínuo* by Sérgio Rolando; *Casa de Chá da Boa Nova* by Hélder Sousa; *Momento. Perceção – Representação* by Sofia F. Augusto. The exhibited video project is called *Déjà Vu – Uma Lembrança do Presente,* a work by Leonardo Motta Campos (AoLeo).

During the exhibitions, a series of public presentations of the projects with the presence of the authors was organized, in order to promote the debate about the multiple representations of the public space as well as its own process of change. The activities proposed under this partnership were oriented towards an understanding of the processes of interrelations between Architecture, Art and Image, identifying the points of articulation of the ethical and aesthetic dimensions of these universes. The photographic projects that were installed in several public and collective spaces for

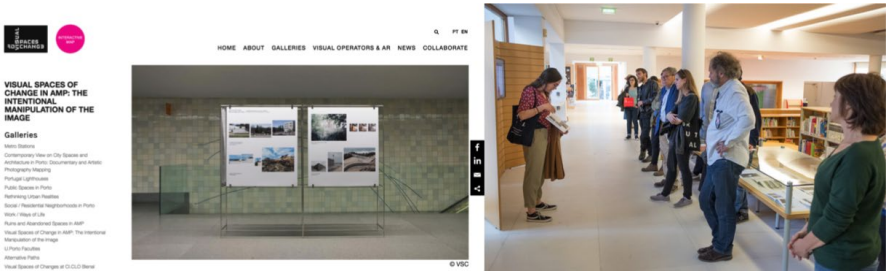


Figure 1. On the left, The Visual Spaces of Change online platform (Source: VSC); On the right, a presentation that occurred during Ci.CLO 2019 (Source: Edu Silva).

temporary exhibitions are the copyright objects through which the aim was to broaden the debate around the cross-cutting themes of the VSC and Ci.CLO 2019 themes. VSC aims to explore how photography is a medium that can align artistic practice and academic research, while at the same time positioning itself critically before these universes. The strategy proposed to promote this approach intends to explore the potential of the photographic image as a critical and inquisitive instrument used to reinforce and expand communication and interaction capacities among agents involved in creative, cultural and artistic processes.

4. THE QUESTIONNAIRES AND ITS METHODOLOGY

A questionnaire was created specifically for this first case study for which the author and the researchers that were at the time in VSC research, namely Eduardo Silva and José Barbed, collaborated actively along with its making, field implementation and the processing of the data collection that is here discussed.

The questionnaires applied in the context of each exhibition held within the VSC project adopted an on-site approach. It was explained to the respondents that the data provided would only serve for qualitative purposes in the specific context of the scope of the project Visual Spaces of Change, and subject privacy has been guaranteed. Surveys were made face-to-face and individually, and wherever possible the conversation has been recorded, making sure that the area where the surveys were conducted was sufficiently isolated from noises that would impede this recording. Two publicly announced exhibitions of contemporary photographic projects took place. In result of the interest in having the respondents' qualitative evaluation of the exhibition of photographic projects and the questionnaires, several open-ended questions were included in the questionnaires. To test both the exhibition of photographic projects and the content of the questionnaire before conducting the public presentations, some adjustments were made to the content of the questionnaire given to the public in order to facilitate the respondents' answers. For example, the respondents were asked to classify several aspects within a five-point scale, placing the corresponding number in a box. This was a way of collecting data more quickly, saving time to the respondents in answering to this questionnaire. Ordinal scales were also used in order to obtain the respondents' opinion on several aspects of the photographic projects.

5. RESULTS

At the time of this ongoing project, the main results of the research were obtained through interviews and questionnaires used for collecting quantitative and qualitative information about people's perceptions towards specific public spaces of Porto's Metropolitan Area. A broad set of issues have been addressed, directing the questions to aspects related with spatial experiences and subjective perceptions of urban transformation. The key aspect addressed in the questionnaires was the impact of each photographic project in individuals' perceptions regarding the transformations of the physical spaces selected as objects of study within the VSC project, reflecting questions about the processes of change that occurred over time, driving the conversation towards individual memories of these places by the respondents. A remarkable result of the questionnaires concerns the choice of place and/or theme suggested by the respondents to be integrated in the VSC project, and through our questionnaires, we found that the elder respondents were more

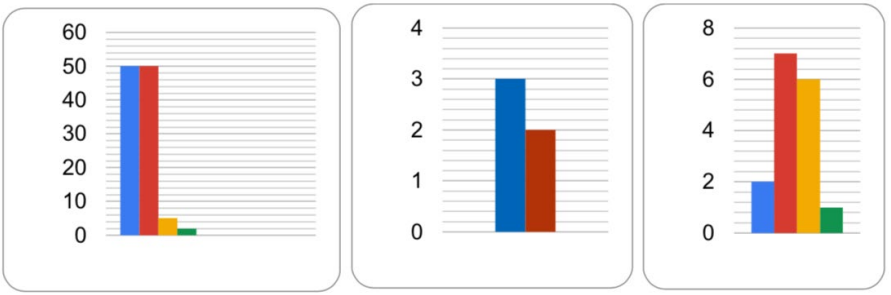


Figure 2. These charts display the data obtained from the following question: "What other theme or place would you like to see represented and discussed within this project?" (Source: VSC).

prone to relate specific places and themes of debate, choosing related themes and places in one third of these contributions. Below, we present three charts: The first chart from the left illustrates the global sample; The second chart, the number of respondents that were under twenty-two years old; The third chart, all respondents that were over sixty-fixe years old. A qualitative aspect we were able to retain from these questionnaires is related to the place and/or theme suggested by each respondent: The color blue relates to a suggested theme, the color red relates to a suggested place, the color yellow suggestes the combination of both, and the color green signifies that no suggestions were made.

While it is not possible within the limits of this paper to present a exhaustive list of the places and themes suggested, the contributions made by the respondents resulted in the incorporation of a wide range of topics that were not initially covered by the VSC project, as well as the inclusion of a number of places and architectures to be object of study in subsequent phases of development of the research process. We will, however, briefly mention the most voted place and issue. In total, out of one hundred and nine respondents, eleven of them positioned the issue of gentrification in Porto as a theme that most needed to be debated. In terms of places, Foz do Douro was the place that most respondents voted – seven out of one hundred and nine – as the one that they would like to see portrayed in the future. Given these results, we'll further focus on projects related not only specifically to the territory of Foz do Douro but also other coastal areas of Porto's Metropolitan Area, as well as investigate and discuss the process of gentrification and how it transforms the urban landscape – focusing specifically in the case of Porto. Another question we've posed to our respondents was: "To what extent your perception about the spaces portrayed has changed?". The answers we've obtained for this question clearly show that a large majority of the respondents recognized that the photographic projects had an impact on their perception about the architectures and places portrayed: 4,6 % responded that their perception about the spaces portrayed has totally changed (depicted with the color yellow in the charts below); 24,1% stated significant change in their perception (depicted with the color grey in the charts below); 44,4% recognized that their perception changed to some extent (depicted with the color red in the charts below); 26,9% of the respondents – approximately one quarter – said no change in their perception occurred (depicted with

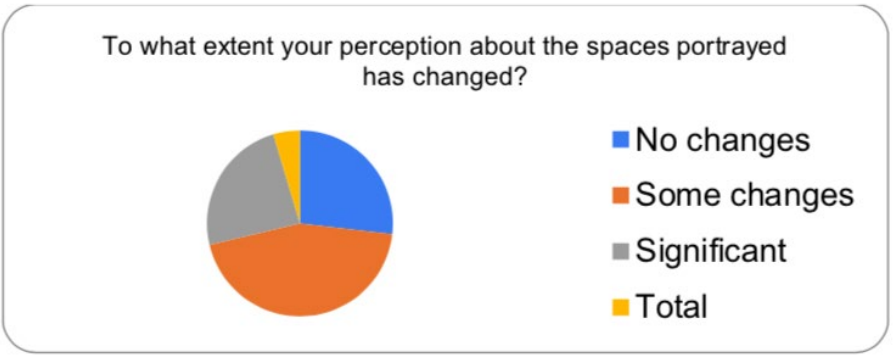


Figure 3. Global sample (Source: VSC).

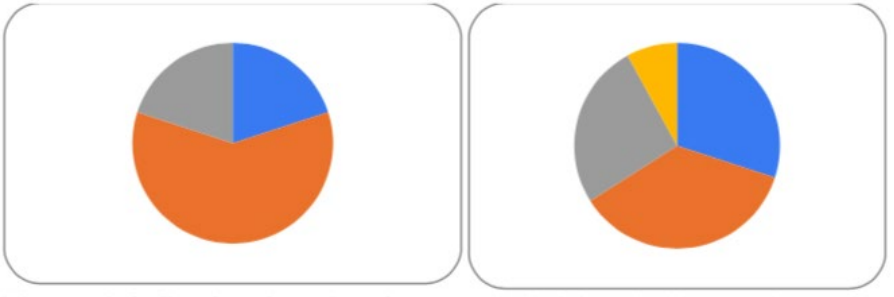


Figure 3.1. Depicted on the chart on the left hand side are the respondents with ages between fifteen and twenty-one years old; Depicted on the chart on the right hand side are the respondents with ages between twenty-two and forty nine years old (Source: VSC).

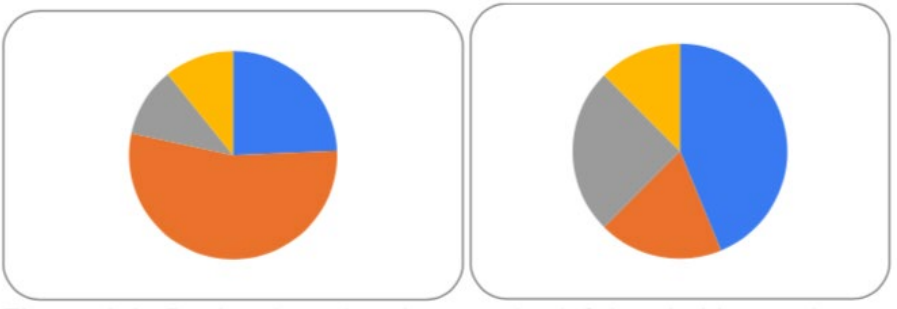


Figure 3.2. Depicted on the chart on the left hand side are the respondents with ages between fifty and sixty fixe years old; Depicted on the chart on the right hand side are the respondents with ages over sixty fixe years old (Source: VSC).

the color blue in the charts below). Based on the overall results of the queries, we can affirm that these initiatives were successful in promoting the debate on the current dynamics of use and appropriation of certain spaces in Porto's Metropolitan Area. Not only that, we were able to deduct pertinent issues and places to be further explored in future investigations, based on the responses of the questionnaires. In this sense, the results of the questionnaires not only validated our initial premise, but also brought to light possible paths for further investigation.

Looking at disaggregated data for each age segment, the respondents with twenty-one years or less were the group that recognized a major impact of the photographic projects exhibited in their perception about the places and architectures portrayed: 20% declared that their perception has changed very much and 60% reported considerable impact, against 20% that said little change occurred in their perception. In the group between twenty-two and forty nine years old, there was a more expressive number of respondents declaring little change in their perception and even no change at all (8%). However, two-thirds within this age group recognized considerable changes (36%) or significant changes (30%). Within the elder groups, more than half of the respondents between fifty and sixty fixe years old reported considerable change in their perception, (54,1%) and approximately one quarter (24,3%) said that their perception changed very much. 10,8% said little change occurred and the same value has been registered with no change in their perception. Finally, 43,8% of the respondents with more than sixty fixe years old said their perception changed very much and 18,8% recognized that considerable change occurred after looking at the contemporary photographic projects. It was within the elder that a larger number of respondents declared no change at all (12,5%) or little change (25%).

Observing the results to the question "To what extent do you think this exhibition enriches the debate about architecture, public space and urban transformation?", these also confirms the general impact of the photographic projects: 29,6 % of the

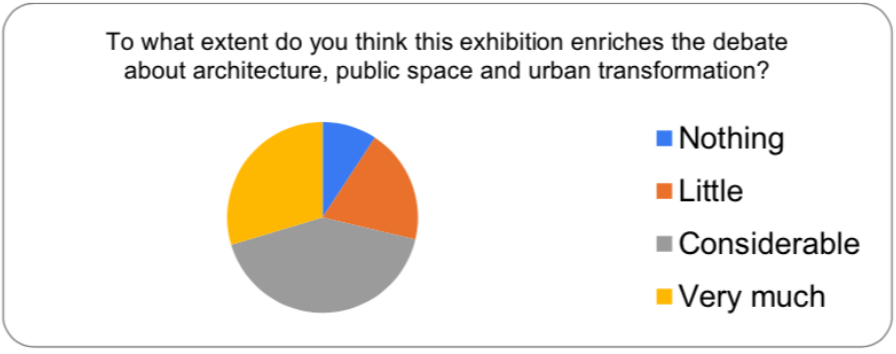


Figure 4. Global sample (Source: VSC).

Figure 4.1. Depicted on the chart on the left hand side are the respondents with ages between fifteen and twenty-one years old; Depicted on the chart on the right hand side are the respondents with ages between twenty-two and forty nine years old (Source: VSC).

Figure 4.2. Depicted on the chart on the left hand side are the respondents with ages between fifty and sixty fixe years old; Depicted on the chart on the right hand side are the respondents with ages over sixty fixe years old (Source: VSC).

respondents stated that the photographic projects contributed very much to related debates on architecture, public space and/or urban space transformation (depicted with the color yellow in the charts below); 41,7% recognized that the exhibition of these projects considerably enriched such debates (depicted with the color grey in the charts below); 19,4% stated that there was little impact (depicted with the color red in the charts below); 9.3% said these projects didn´t enrich the debate on these matters (depicted with the color blue in the charts below).

While it is still difficult at the present stage of the project development to clearly find a pattern regarding the opinions of the public about the impact of the VSC project in the debate on architecture, public space and urban transformation, since opinions vary widely among different age groups. However, it seems to be a tendency for a more positive opinion about the extent to which the exhibited photographic projects enrich related debates among the younger generations, especially within the respondents bellow twenty-two years old (20% total impact and 60% some impact against 20% reporting no impact). These results are in stark contrast with the age group over sixty five years old, where 62% of the respondents didn´t recognized any impact and 25% said little impact occurred, while just 12,5% recognized that the images

portrayed significantly enriched the debate on architecture, public space and urban transformation. Mixed results in this regard have also been found in the intermediary groups, but the referred tendency of better reception of the project by the younger groups is also confirmed, with 40% of the respondents between twenty-two and forty nine years old recognizing total (6%) or significant (32%) impact, and another 40% declaring some positive impact in the debate on architecture, public space and urban transformation.

CONCLUSION

The self-replicating potential of this open public and pedagogical experiment will allow to expand communication and interaction capacities between the public, students, researchers and institutions, namely opening academia to society and allowing the creation of synergies between them. It is expected that the VSC platform will potentiate interaction, feedback, and networking among the participants in a pedagogical process designed to structure, represent and expose individual and/or collective interpretations of their social reality, stimulating the capacity of the public and academic community to understand and to critically think and act over its transformation. If and when the capabilities of this case study are used in its fullness, these may prove the potential of image for broadening horizons both for academic teaching, learning and research, making citizens in general as well as the academic community more conducive to the construction of new spaces of political discussion and social intervention.

As a general conclusion, we have enough elements to confirm that the choice of the communication strategy adopted for each photographic project should depend on a number of variables to be taken into account, namely the possibility of the authors to be present in live sessions explaining their visual narratives to the public. The research conducted so far confirms that the photographic projects developed by the researchers and students involved in the VSC project made a useful contribution to make the general public more conscious and to participate in problems of common concern regarding the transformation of concrete public spaces, engaging to the general public in specific issues. The present study certainly confirms this potential while exposing some shortcomings regarding its impacts on urban change. However, it is remarkable that the potential of bringing about real change in urban matters is significantly potentiated by making the research products of the VSC project available online, which will be happening in the near future with more force, allowing a more dynamic interaction between the locations where photographic projects are being developed, and the general public, as well as enabling to communicate diverse aspects of these spaces from various perspectives and disciplinary backgrounds.

This research was funded by Fundação para a Ciência e Tecnologia and co-financed by the Operational Programme for Competitiveness and Internationalisation (POCI) through Portugal 2020 and the European Fund for Regional Development (FEDER).

REFERENCES

Banks, Marcus. Using Visual Data in Qualitative Research. London: SAGE Publications Ltd, 2007 Bast, Gerard. "The More Complexity, the More Kiesler: Foreword by Gerald Bast." In Endless Kiesler, edited by Klaus Bollinger, Florian Medicus and Kiesler Privatstiftung Wien, 7-8. Basel: Birkhäuser Verlag, 2015.

Campany, David. "'Architecture as Photography: document, publicity, commentary, art'. An essay written for the book accompanying the exhibition Constructing Worlds: Photography and Architecture in the Modern Age, Barbican Gallery London, 25 September 2014 – 11 January 2015; ArkDes Stockholm, 20. February – 17 May 2015; Museo ICO Madrid, 3 June – 6 September." *David Campany*, 2014. https://davidcampany.com/architecture-as-photography-document-publicity-commentary/.

Davis, Tim. "Photography and Landscape Studies." *Landscape Journal* 8, no. 1 (Spring 1989): 1–12. https://doi.org/10.3368/lj.8.1.1.

Gadanho, Pedro. "Image-Making After Photoshop: Architecture, Public Space and their Visual Discontents." *Sophia Journal* 4, no.1 (December 2019): 100-109.

Neto, Pedro, Andrea Vieira, Luís Pereira and Lígia Ribeiro. 2008. " CCRE digital platform for collaborative learning, public participation, architecture and arts." In *Proceedings of the 4th International Conference on Digital Arts Technology in Art Design and Communication, Porto, 2008,* 274-283. Porto: Escola das Artes, Universidade Católica Portuguesa.

Neto, Pedro and Maria Neto. "(Re)descobrir os espaços de cidade: a fotografia como um dispositivo mental que pode levar a uma nova percepção sobre o espaço e a sua arquitectura." Branca – Revista de Arquitectura da Universidade da Beira Interior 1, no. 1 (December 2016): 30–37.

Neto, Pedro and Maria Neto. 2016. "The Use of Photography and Media for idealising and exploring new Spatial Forms." In *Proceedings of the 17th International Conference of the Utopian Society Studies, Lisboa, 2016.* Lisboa: Universidade Nova de Lisboa, Faculdade de Ciências Sociais e Humanas Pauwels, Luc. Reframing Visual Social Science: Towards a More Visual Sociology and Anthropology. Cambridge: Cambridge University, 2015

Rose, Gillian. "Visual Culture, Photography and the Urban: An Interpretive Framework" *Space and Culture, India* 2, no. 3 (December 2014): 4–13. https://doi.org/10.20896/saci.v2i3.92.

Stierli, Martino. Montage and the Metropolis: Architecture, Modernity, and the Representation of Space.

PAPER #1.23

DRAWING WATER: THE MAKING OF FLUID GRAPHICS

Brook Muller[a], Matt Tierney[b]
[a]University of North Carolina, Charlotte, USA
[b]Snow Kreilich Architects, Minneapolis, MN, USA

ABSTRACT

Given pressing need to address the multiple water-related stressors confronting cities including climate change, scarcity, contamination, and downstream ecological impacts, among other challenges, architects are called upon to engage water as driver of sustainable regional, urban and architectural design processes. Given the 2020 EAAE/ARCC conference thematic area "Devising, Representing and Narrating the City" that makes mention of "devising, representing and narrating the city," and the benefits of "depicting actors and activities to understand underlying values," we examine water as a highly potent and yet tremendously underrepresented actant as reflected in graphic conventions architects and their collaborators deploy currently. To this end, we seek to augment emerging graphic approaches by speculating as to new and hybridized representational strategies revealing fluid relations along a scalar continuum. To begin to consider such strategies that bring water more centrally into the designer's creative ambit, we consider examples of effective "hydro-graphics" from a diverse range of sources. At one end, we look to graphic artifcats that frame broader landscape-scale, regional and urban water conditions and dynamics. At the other, we consider representations of micro-urban interventions within the context of the watershed. Between and with respect to these two scales, we consider how rendering visible water as an actant in urban and architectural design can prompt interventions that link the immediacy of civic experience with the larger hydrological reality and flows within which urban dwellers live. No matter the scale of attention, latent in a process of redrawing water is recognition of the incompleteness of any one artifact and therefore the value of indicating through representational devices the larger flows extending beyond any one design intervention. Such an expansive, water-centric design process and graphic procedure, it is hoped, becomes a means of anticipating architectural works that deliver net positive watershed impact.

KEYWORDS

Water; Cities; Hydro-social; Graphics; Hybridization.

1. FLUIDS IN FRAGMENTS

How might more effective graphic representations of water in design prompt more ecologically and culturally responsive and resourceful urban architectures and environments? What representational strategies might designers borrow from other sources in order to develop graphics that render visible a proactive stance toward the multiple water challenges confronting cities including climate change, scarcity, contaminants of emerging concern, and downstream ecological impacts? How might new representational devices, re-drawings of water that marry the technical and aesthetic, the spatial and temporal, anticipate architectural and urban design projects that positively enmesh with larger hydrological flows?

[1] Jessica Barnes. 2014. Cultivating the Nile: The Everyday Politics of Water in Egypt. Durham, NC: Duke University Press: 77

The geographer Jessica Barnes claims of water that "the fluidity of the resource confounds the process of forming a community around it."[1] Perhaps this offers one explanation for the fact that "water" never once appears in the National Architectural Accrediting Board 2014 Student Performance Criteria. Unlike space or tectonics, architects do not view water as a synergizing force helping set other systems in patterned alignment. Representative of its marginalization and fragmentation are the representations themselves. Graphic conventions focused on water and the built environment exhibit tremendous variety as a function of scales of attention, points of use, where water exists in a sequence of flows, and who assumes responsibility for its conveyance and quality. That architects and those in related disciplines draw and draw upon water differently thwarts synergies and dissolves water's potency to wield significant design influence.

This paper speculates as to graphic approaches that cast water as a design protagonist, with the conviction that such a hydrologically attuned process can lead to design interventions that are more holistic and integrative. We proceed from a perspective that a gap in effective representations of water might perhaps be best filled by culling and hybridizing various resources. To that end, we begin in Section 2 by using the case study method focused on representations of water across a range of scales and that reveal different dimensions of water. We interrogate charts, hydrographs, diagrams ("riser" and other), maps, and details typically overlooked by architects as a means to speculate hybrids where water's graphic variety is a driver of holistic design decision making. We ask in each instance: what actors and activities are given value through a particular manner of water's representation, and what does this suggest for a "hydro-logical" approach to design? We the use the lessons learned from the case studies to explore hybridizations and aggregates of water graphics in Section 3 that attempt to account for water's confounding fluidity and complexity (one great challenge with this undertaking, as will become clear, involves striking a balance between clarity and effectively contending with this very complexity). In this process, we endeavor to move across scales and emphasize the "inter-scaler" in acknowledging flows from city to building.

Embracing a more integrated, water-centric approach, designers might borrow productively from geographers' notion of the "hydro-social cycle," that is, "a socio-natural process by which water and society make and remake each other in space and time."[2] From this perspective, hardlines between natural processes and human constructs blur, water assumes the role of creative actant within the city, and new spaces of co-production surface.[3] Seeing design interventions as what Brent Bucknum, principal of Hyphae Design Laboratory, describes as "nodes along networks," a hydro-social architecture holds promise of design interventions becoming functional components of urban watersheds.[3] Such a goal, and a related aspiration of forming more intentional design communities around water, is advanced through an examination of and evolution in water-based graphics. In order to proceed, let us now examine sources from the continental to that of the fixture, representations that offer different framings of water's many natures.

2. DRAWING OUT REPRESENTATIONAL WATER SOURCES

Bioregional Thinking Before "Bioregionalism" Existed - In the aftermath of his storied explorations of the American West in the late 1800's, geologist and explorer John Wesley Powell produced his remarkable bio-

[2] Jamie Linton and Jessica Budds, 2014. "The Hydrosocial Cycle: Defining and Mobilizing a Relational-Dialectical Approach to Water," Geoforum, 57: 175

[3] Personal correspondence, July 19, 2019

regionalist 1869 map of the "Arid Region of the United States".[4] This map illustrates Powell's argument that insufficient precipitation west of the 100th Meridian calls for a different manner of water management, agriculture and settlement than what characterizes the relatively rain-plenty regions to the east. His arguments and speculations within these studies unfortunately did not lead to more hydrologically sensitive geographic boundaries (consider "The Four Corners" - the ultimate geographic indifference), and yet his cartographic observations hold great relevance to this day: *Powell's map suggests the value of aligning jurisdictions and watersheds. They give precedent to the logic of forming polities with respect to the more sinuous lines which define freshwater resources in a water-scarce region.*

Figure 1. Source: John W. Powell 1889-1891. Title: Map of Arid Region of the USA 11th Annual Report - U.S. Geological Survey

Figure 2. Source: Harold Fisk - 1944. Title: The Alluvial Valley of the Lower Mississippi River. Plate 22 - US Army Corps of Engineers

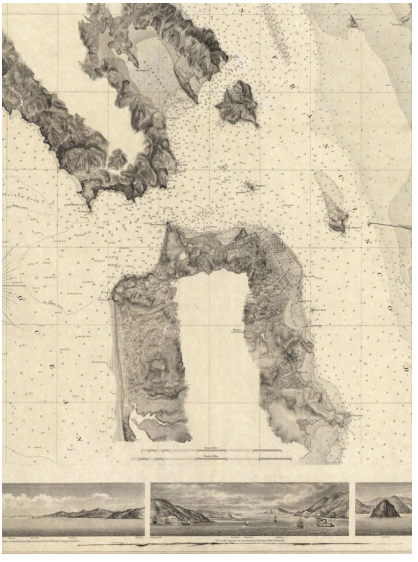


Figure 3. Bache, Cutts, Rodgers, Harrison.1859. Title: Entrance to San Francisco Bay, California. United States Coast Survey

4 John Wesley Powell, 1889-1891. Map of the Arid Region of the USA. US Geological Survey; 11th Annual Report

Painting Sinuosity – Produced alongside Army Corps of Engineers maps documenting the Mississippi River and its flood potential, Harold Fisk's stunning 1944 map of the river's historical meanders delights in its palimpsest-like visual complexity.[5] With its intense spatial specificity (documented using the Mississippi River Commissions Quadrangles as a basemap) and robust variety of coloration and hatchure (28 color/hatches), *Fisk's map offers value in its representation of the aesthetics of hydraulic patterning and the shaping of the landscape by water over time.*

Revealing What Water Hides - Humans develop conventions to comprehend what lies beneath or beyond our vision or immediate comprehension. Nautical sounding or bathymetric contour maps, such as Bach's chart of San Francisco Bay, are exemplar in this regard.[6] Both bathymetric and sounding maps use contour and spot elevation to reveal a veiled topography "visible" and therefore make more safely navigable a dangerous waterscape. Those plying waterways have relied on this convention for centuries, and before that, on less scientific, but evolving oral and written histories and rough documentation of underwater hazards testifying to the wildness of riverways. Bach's nautical chart offers value by indicating depths of features one cannot see and by marking the profile of a liquid body through delineation of edges.

Water as Catchment - Responding to the thirteen year "Millennium" drought in the 2000's, the City of Melbourne, Australia, embarked upon an ambitious plan to dramatically reduce water use.[7] "City as Catchment" allows a reconceptualization of water and the city by representing relationships in a manner understandable to all. Icons depicting factors impacting water management such as "over consumption" and "salinity" are superimposed on a catchment-scale systems diagram depicting flows from reservoirs upstream

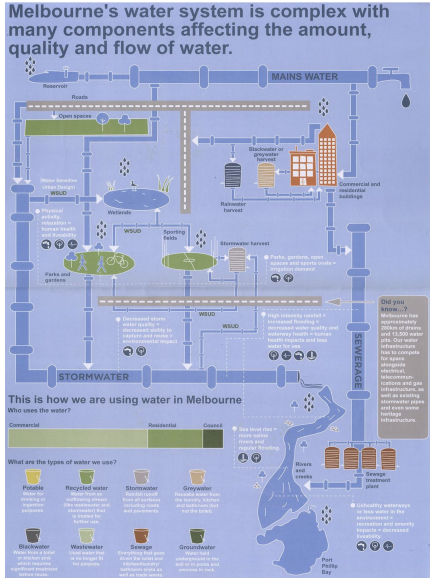


Figure 4. Source: City of Melbourne, Title: Total Watermark - City as a Catchment. Online Digital Image. Accessed: June, 2019.

through the city to Port Phillip Bay.[8] The diagram aligns the human, infrastructural, and ecological and identifies convergences and needed separations of sources in the journey of water through the urban landscape. Not unlike a subway map, the diagram acquires legibility by abstracting scales and distances. *By linking graphically systems, flows and physical features in the urban landscape, the diagram delivers value in allowing people to visualize localized hydrological events as interconnected.*

Peaks and Trickles - A hydrograph is an important tool for understanding the variety of flow conditions that a river exhibits before, during, and after a rain event.[9] Distinct points along a hydrograph's bell-like curve indicate dynamic instances like peak discharge, lag time, rising limb, falling limb, and base flow. The hydrograph depicts the dynamism of water

[5] Jason Kottke, Jun 20, 2019. The Marvelous Mississippi Meander Maps, Online Article, https://kottke.org
[6] Bache, Cutts, Rodgers, & Harrison. 1859. Entrance to San Francisco Bay, California. United States Coast Survey.
[7] Melbourne, City of. 2014. Total Watermark – City as Catchment: Creating a Healthy City in a Healthy Catchment: 2
[8] Melbourne, City of. 2014. Total Watermark – City as Catchment: Creating a Healthy City in a Healthy Catchment: 7
[9] BBC. Jun 2019. Intermediate Geography, Rivers. Website. http://www.bbc.co.uk/scotland/education/int/geog/rivers

over time and shows the aggregate effects of multiple water conditions (precipitation, transpiration/infiltration, transport, sewer outfalls, temperature/dew point, etc.) in a single view. By removing graphic references to shape, character and size of the urban environment that orchestrates peaks, limbs, and flows, *the hydrograph offers value by simplifying water's changing temporal flow so as to be useful to multiple disciplines both prospectively and retrospectively.*

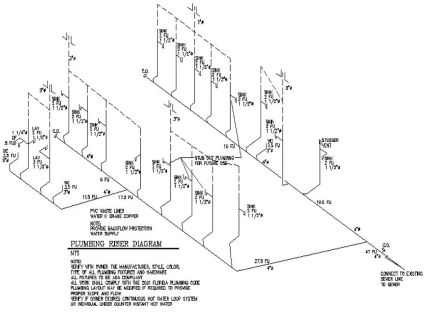


Figure 5. Source: CAD Offshore. Title: Plumbing Riser Diagram. Online Digital Image Accessed: June, 2019

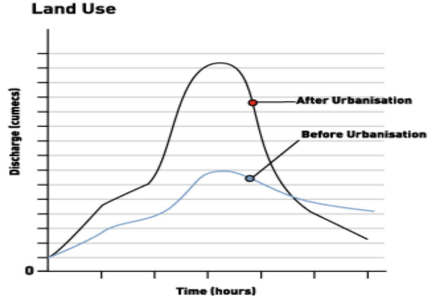


Figure 6. Source: BBC. Title: Hydrograph – Land Use Online Digital Image Accessed: June, 2019

Regulating the Flow of Urban Water Innovation - Recode, a Portland, Oregon nonprofit with a mission to "ensure access to and accelerate adoption of equitable and sustainable business practices," has created a diagram convention not dissimilar to a plumbing riser diagram (see the section on riser diagrams to follow) but extends it further in linking potential sources (condensate, rainwater, stormwater, surface water, shallow groundwater) to end uses (kitchen sink, fire-suppression, other).[10] A diagram for the city of Bellingham, Washington, indicates allowable connections between source and use, where permits are not required, and where pathways are blocked by current policies. While complex, the diagram uses convention and symbol to depict regulatory impediments to innovation in water systems design. *By linking use, reuse, disposal and transfer systems in the urban environment to the rules governing which systems are allowed to be implemented, the Recode diagram offers value in highlighting instances where policy change can foster new design opportunity in a context where higher levels of resourcefulness are demanded.*

Mapping Project-Environment Flows - A hydro-social architectural act makes visible flows well beyond the boundaries of any one site that impact its condition. The work of Hyphae Design Laboratory gives indication of the tremendous potential of harnessing these flows such as stormwater and rainwater for improved project performance. The "Sankey-style" diagram for the Harmony project in Louisville, Kentucky is a study in how sites and buildings can mesh with broader hydrological realities.[11] With this simple conflation of graphic types – section, isometric, and diagram – *Hyphae's diagram delivers value by situating any one project in a larger urban hydrological condition, a prerequisite to realizing a building that delivers benefits to the parent ecosystem* (in the case of Harmony, treated water is returned to the aquifer).

[10] Recode Now. Accessed November 2019. Recoding Solutions for Sustainability. Website. http://www.recodenow.org.
[11] Provided to authors by Brent Bucknum, founding principal of Hyphae Design Laboratory

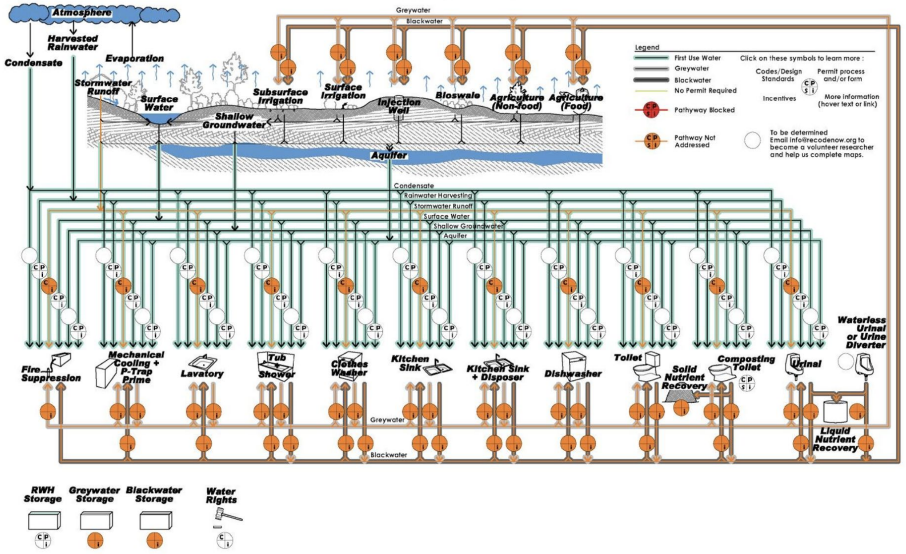


Figure 7. Source: Recode. Title: Onsite Water Reuse Permit Pathways for Bellingham/Whatcom Counties, WA Online Digital Image Accessed: June, 2019

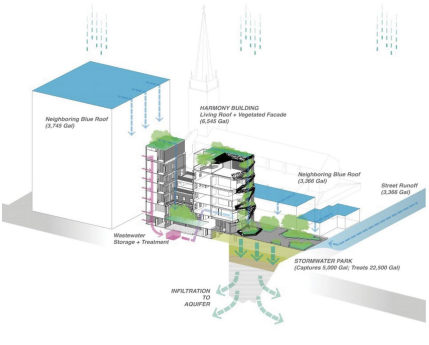


Figure 8. Source: Hyphae Design Laboratory Title: Harmony Building Water Section, Louisville, KY Online Digital Image 2016. Accessed June, 2019

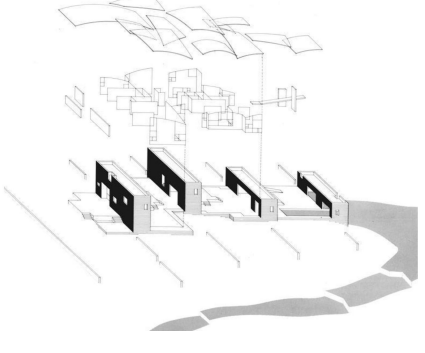


Figure 9. Source: Steven Holl Architect Title: Stretto House Axonometric Online Digital Image Accessed: June, 2019

Co-Constitutive Constructions - Steven Holl's isometric for the Stretto House in Dallas (1989-1991) illustrates a conceptual logic in which water directly influences the patterning of rectilinear site foundation elements and anticipates the location of pools that establish a rhythmic alternation of landscape rooms and interior spaces.[12] Sail-like roof elements and gauze-like interstitial façades hover in the top of the drawing, ready to collapse into place to complete the water-sensitive, architectural ordering. While Holl abstracted from another medium (the composition "Music for Strings, Percussion and Celeste" by Bela Bartok), *what offers value for our purposes is the manner in which the exploded axonometric indicates a design process that places emphasis on the co-constitution of water, architecture, landscape construction and sitework.*

Developing Conventions for Ease - A plumbing riser diagram maps water's transport, point-of-use, and waste streams through a building in either two-dimensional vertical position or planimetric view. The complex routing and configuration of pipes and fixtures of a system is depicted using a basic palette: solid lines, dashed lines and callouts. The abstraction and graphic neutralization that inheres in the convention allow for more efficient handling of the complex tangle of building water systems elements in acts of design, estimating and construction. Used in other engineering trades such as electrical and mechanical, *the riser diagram delivers value by isolating a subsystem out of a larger one*. That said, given contemporary water challenges and the necessary move by many cities to a "portfolio" (multiple source) approach to meeting demand - as well as the dramatic changes in water and wastewater technology including viable on-site treatment in dense urban settings - there would be value in evolving this convention and extending its reach.

3. SPECULATIONS ON INTER-SCALAR HYBRID WATER GRAPHICS

How might these diverse examples influence our thinking about representing the city, watershed, urban landscape, district and building and their relations? How might we actively reimagine through the act of drawing ways of more effectively programming and structuring urban water systems where multiple benefits are be derived in response to climatic, ecological and other contemporary pressures? How can we build from the many values of depiction described previously in developing suitably integrative graphics? What follows are descriptions and depictions of three hybrid "hydro-graphic" artifacts at a range of scales from the situating of projects and events within the urban sub-watershed to hydro-socially interconnected urban districts to the groundwork and sky-work of buildings and their interstitial landscape.

Situating Projects and Events within the Urban Sub-Watershed – An urban environment can be recognized a made up of urban sub-watersheds consisting of new hard surfaces and morphologies and relics of pre-development conditions. An evolving nomenclature corresponds to this understanding and anticipates new ways of drawing water and the city. Kevan Moffett, Ph.D., who runs the Moffett Research Lab with the Washington State University EcoHydrology Group, speaks of "streets as streams and street trees as BMP's" (best management practices): "Each urban street acts like an ephemeral headwater stream, and the street trees serve as that stream's riparian zone."[13] Roy Iwai calls the urban environment "the pipe-shed."[14] A rooftop constitutes a boundary and beginning of a tributary within the urban sub-watershed. How can we make these boundary states and catchments perform in a more ecologically

[12] Steven Holl, Juhani Pallasmaa, and Alberto Perez-Gomez. 1994. Questions of Perception: Phenomenology of Architecture. Architecture and Urbanism Special Issue: 146
[13] Excerpt from Oregon Association of Clean Water Agencies Annual Summit, May 9, 2018: "Streets as Streams and Street Trees as BMP's" was the title of Moffett's talk.
[14] Personal Correspondence, May 16, 2018; Iwai is Multnomah County (Oregon) Department of Community Services Water Resources Specialist

and functionally attuned manner, and what are the graphic consequences?

Proceeding from this conceptualization, it might be possible to borrow from Powell's delineation of watersheds and map the city as a series of water catchment districts based on topography, urban interventions, stormwater infrastructure, etc. To draw this is to help shape design inquiry for undertakings at a smaller (district or site) scale that is cognizant and anticipatory of the larger hydro-social condition. It would next be possible to overlay a current and a desired hydrograph as water courses its way through the city as a means of revealing problematic and potential flows that architectural and ecological elements deployed in the urban landscape govern. While the city has been configured to remove water quickly to reduce flooding, with consequent downstream peaks and ecological impacts, to draw a reduced peak condition is to anticipate the introduction of green infrastructure and a greatly reduced coefficient of friction.

A next step in an ascension of value involves borrowing the catchment notion from the City of Melbourne, diagramming urban water flows and showing links between human, infrastructural, and ecological systems and the various forces acting upon them. Hyphae Design Laboratory's work on the Waterman Gardens residential project, a response to the pressure to ensure higher levels of resilience and functionality in increasingly limited urban space, anticipates this. That downtown San Bernardino sits atop a floodplain has resulted in multiple hydrological problems. By drawing a section extending miles past the project site, from the foothills to the Santa Ana River, by representing an area much larger than the scope of the project, Hyphae demonstrates the advantages of an urban design strategy which aggregates effects of efficient water management of individual sites like Waterman Gardens as opposed to vastly more expensive, singular and "engineered" solutions.

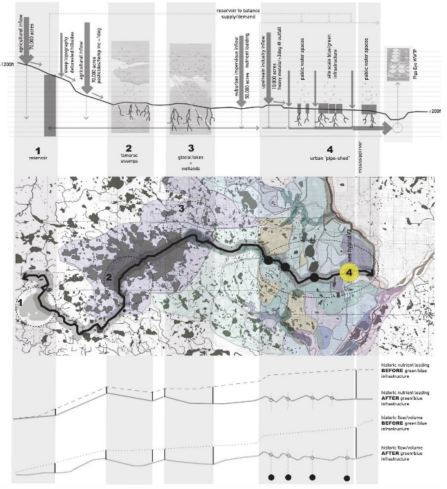


Figure 10. Situating Projects and Events within the Urban Sub-Watershed. M Tierney + B Muller. 2020

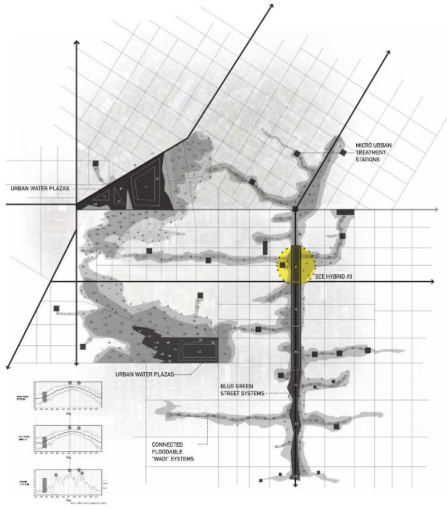


Figure 11. Hydro-Socially Interconnected Urban Districts
M Tierney + B Muller. 2020

Hydro-Socially Interconnected Urban Districts – Rotterdam-based De Urbanisten's water squares demonstrate the value of water infrastructure as not invisible and instead a forethought in the urban design imaginary, where both human experience and hydrological performance capturing water's changing moods across the day and seasons are elevated. Basketball courts and other sunken features in civic spaces double as places to gather water during major rain events. In a similar manner, GBD Architects' Hassalo on Eighth mixed-use development project in Portland, Oregon, introduces stormwater features integral to the formal expression of the urban design proposition (these elements shape spaces in what was a vehicular dominated street converted to one more favorable to pedestrians).

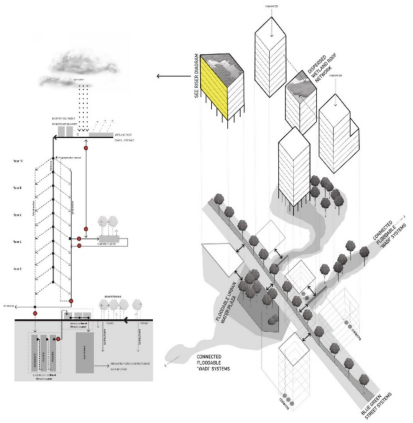


Figure 12. Groundwork and Sky-Work of Buildings and the Interstitial Landscape, M Tierney + B Muller. 2020

Could we imagine the drawing of urban squares that assume different identities and capacities during major rain events? That they swell, expand and assume new forms that combine the hard-edged and the sinuous, the latter akin to Fisk's illustration of the dynamic meanderings of the Mississippi? That this IS a contemporary urban spatial aesthetic, where identities change dramatically as a function of severity of event, and where human, ecological, and systematic "stocks" within a place are rendered visible? And as with plaques on buildings of Rome commemorating peak flood levels of historical events, might we develop graphic proposals that encourage the marking of depths of former floods akin to readings from nautical charts? A rendering that makes visible a past event that exists only in the recesses of our consciousness, one drawn from the flow of water across the specific peaks, valleys, eddys and confluences, might in turn prompt the making of urban spaces and architectures that accept, divert, filter, store, or slow water, that are markers enabling a higher level of awareness of the hydro-social forces we are immersed within.

Groundwork and Sky-Work of Buildings and their Interstitial Landscape – The Stretto House exploded isometric inspires graphics that convey the importance of groundwork as the organizational patterning of a hydro-social urban site. A drawing as a composition of interrelated wetland gardens, akin to the aforementioned Hassalo on 8th project, storage features, foundations of buildings, civic spaces and streets is treated as one aesthetic and technical act, a new form of expressive grounding akin to Holl's pools and cores. A simultaneous "sky-work," in the manner of Hyphae Design Laboratory, follows the journey of rainfall and intercepted stormwater from neighboring roofs, streets and landscapes. Such a graphic viewshed reveals the manner by which architecture, landscape structure, and highly visible and ecologically responsive water features are co-constitutive, where boundaries of constructed and natural systems blur into compelling new hydro-social urban ecotones. It speaks to the value of designing in systems, where what is designed and

built pairs and reacts with elemental forces and built constructs in the surrounding environment.
A riser diagram set adjacent to the isometric links building water systems to a larger systems, captures the movement of flows, describes differing pressures acting on the system, and also indicates, borrowing from Recode, the regulatory pathways and pinch points where regulatory innovation is required and where to deepen conversations across domains of design, policy and law. Lastly, by studying building occupancies and behaviors over time, not unlike a hydrograph with its peak flows, designers can represent usage, waste, space, and proximity and thereby program more effectively across buildings and within the landscape.

4. ATTENDING TO GRAPHIC FLOWS

Through design thinking we have pulled dimensions of water's many properties and manners of representation apart to understand their potentials; by design thinking we shall knit them back together. And designers would be well served to embrace graphic processes focused on water that attend to factors in addition to – and perhaps of far greater consequence than - proper flashing details, grading plans, and ensuring adequate space for plumbing and mechanical equipment in wall sections. Water holds potential to shape and interact with building and landscape systems if we can free it from the limitations that govern conventional representations and design procedures. Thrust into a protagonist's role and lent new graphic identities, water forms new design communities and serves as the designer's connective tissue at the scale of the room, building, city or region in a manner providing great value to ecological, economic, political, and hydrological metabolisms alike. A hydro-social process begins by attending to water and its representation as a pervasive actant on urban and regional stages and as a basis for synergistic design innovation. The process holds tremendous promise both within allied professions concerned with water and as part of innovative curricula integrated in seminar and studio formats. May the impacts ripple outward: by making water more explicit in our design consciousness, we can better represent and actualize hydro-social connections so critical at this moment in our profession's changing present.

REFERENCES

Jessica Barnes. 2014. *Cultivating the Nile: The Everyday Politics of Water in Egypt*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press: 77

Jamie Linton and Jessica Budds, 2014. *"The Hydrosocial Cycle: Defining and Mobilizing a Relational-Dialectical Approach to Water,"* Geoforum, 57: 175

John Wesley Powell, 1889-1891. *Map of the Arid Region of the USA*. US Geological Survey; 11th Annual Report

Jason Kottke, Jun 20, 2019. *The Marvelous Mississippi Meander Maps,* Online Article, https://kottke.org

Bache, Cutts, Rodgers, & Harrison. 1859. *Entrance to San Francisco Bay, California*. United States Coast Survey.

Melbourne, City of. 2014. *Total Watermark – City as Catchment: Creating a Healthy City in a Healthy Catchment:* 2

Melbourne, City of. 2014. *Total Watermark – City as Catchment: Creating a Healthy City in a Healthy Catchment:* 7

BBC. Jun 2019. *Intermediate Geography, Rivers. Website.* http://www.bbc.co.uk/scotland/education/int/geog/rivers

Recode Now. Accessed November 2019. *Recoding Solutions for Sustainability.* Website. http://www.recodenow.org.

Steven Holl, Juhani Pallasmaa, and Alberto Perez-Gomez. 1994. *Questions of Perception: Phenomenology of Architecture.* Architecture and Urbanism Special Issue: 146

Excerpt from Oregon Association of Clean Water Agencies Annual Summit, May 9, 2018: *"Streets as Streams and Street Trees as BMP's"* was the title of Moffett's talk.

PAPER #1.24

ENERGY VISUALIZATION IN THE ARCHITECTURAL DESIGN PROCESS

Giovanna Togo[a], Marina Maurin[a]
[a]*Efficacity,* Champs-sur-Marne, France

ABSTRACT

In the context of architectural design process, where environmental and energy questions are increasingly emerging, key data and parameters to be taken into account in all project phases are multiplying too. These new challenges and new design tools (such as BIM and parametric tools) have been reorganizing traditional construction's sequential steps by leaving room for non-linear sequences. This new complexity requires multidisciplinary methods and unprecedented collaborations between actors.
This increasingly complex nature of the design process (actors, parameters, data) requires decrypting. One way such clarification can be achieved is through new instruments and methods of visual representation. Graphic expression has always existed as a stimulating field for architectural experimentation. And within the current growing complexity, graphic expression proves an exciting opportunity for research and experimentation with the aim of developing a shared, visual culture on energy and environmental subjects. The proliferation of incoming and outgoing data, due to the digital environment, leads us to wonder how interacting with them and how creating new visuals are taking shape to organize information and to explore it in a new way. A visual representation can thus contribute to making fast, good decisions shared among all the actors involved in the processes.

KEYWORDS

Energy visualization; digital environment; technical data; energy performance; process.

INTRODUCTION

Awareness of the planetary environmental emergency has been spreading throughout the world. This implies noteworthy metamorphosis in procedures and policies affecting all fields. The construction industry is notably concerned in a massive way due to the magnitude of its impact on energy consumption and on its CO^2 emissions. According to France's Ministry of Accessible Ecological Transition [Ministère de la Transition écologique et solidaire], the field of construction is responsible for 44% of the final energy national consumption and 25% of its greenhouse gas emissions. It is possible to reduce these impacts through the choices of materials and/or construction processes. However, the approach to significantly reducing energy consumption and to aligning with environmentally-sensitive posturing, reveals a complexity that is inherent to urban and architectural projects, and which goes beyond reflection on just materials.
Indeed, as of the very first design phases, the initial decisions will already have an impact on the ultimate environmental report of a project. Twenty percent of the decisions made during the first steps of a project will influence eighty percent of the subsequent decisions (Attia, 2013). As, for example, the decisions made concerning the parameters linked to the shape and orientation of buildings; they will strongly affect their exposure to sunlight and, thus, both their energy requirements, and potential for energy production (Nault, 2016) (e.g. Figure 1). The early design stage is also the moment in the process when designers possess the greatest decisional freedom (Zeiler, et al., 2007). Decisions are made at each level, successively more detailed and specific than the previous, as we go from the early to the advanced design stages.

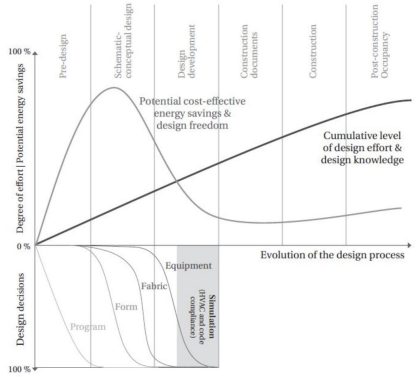


Figure 1. There is great freedom in early design decisions, which hold the most effective energy savings potential. BPS typically occurs at the advanced design stage. Source: (Quoted by Nault, 2016 : 8)

Such decisions are dependent on the data given in the project description. While if previously, such descriptions included mainly the program and building code constraints, today they now show new types of information and new needs regarding environmental demands (Attia, 2013). A new way of designing is being born. One that is more interactive, interdisciplinary that leads to tighter collaboration between professionals from different fields who all intervene in the project. According to Baraud-Sarfaty and Jacquot, we are being confronted with key shifts in the classic scenario of intervention, towards a broadening of the perimeter of intervention in the "urban factory" (I. Baraud-Sarfaty, C. Jacquot, 2016 : 1). This constitutes a less-fragmented, less-linear process and involves the interaction of various project actors during the same project phases.
In the context of a multiplication and heterogeneity of givens, coupled with a multiplication of available design tools, the question of finding a "common language" arises. As Nathan Brown and Caitilin Mueller affirm,

> despite advances in the speed and accuracy of predictive simulations, current technological and organizational barriers often prevent practitioners from fully integrating simulation data, which has traditionally come from engineers or other specialists, into their design workflows. In many cases, building-design projects have already moved into design development or are otherwise frozen in terms of massing or geometry before all relevant performance simulations have been conducted (Brown, Mueller, 2017 : 155).

The need to work more closely, and to work together in order to improve projects from an environmental point of view, becomes clear, as does the need to facilitate such exchange through the creation of a common language.
Thus, this study seeks to work towards the development of a new visual language dedicated to energy issues. This visual language becomes a simplifying tool that is accessible to a broad number of users. In addition, for designers, it plays a key role in design mechanisms. « visual tools are considered as more important than verbal ones. In other areas, like engineering, the use of verbal tools including numerical datasets, are prevalent. Therefore,

> the visualisation of numerical data is a powerful tool to communicate with and assist architects (Miyamoto, et al., 2015 : 3).

1. COMPLEXITY AND DECISION MAKING

The subject of energy today is still quite exclusive to fields in engineering, yet the first design decisions regarding energy efficiency are actually based on the experience or intuition of architects (Miyamoto, A, et al, 2015). Architects and urban designers are rarely experts on these issues and can often perceive energy consumption and greenhouse emission reduction objectives as yet further constraints to their designs. After reviewing the

design process through various case studies, Weytjens and Verbeeck noted that,

> energy related issues are often more seen as 'add-on' components, which can be fixed in a later stage of the design (Weytjens L., Verdonck E. and Verbeeck G., 2009).

What's more, in parallel, the number of simulation tools has also multiplied. This increase requires gathering and treating a large amount of input data and generating a large quantity of output data. The latter must be filtered for results that are pertinent to the initial design phases. According to Shadi Attia, the integration of BPS tools (Building Performance Simulation) can contribute to improving the way energy issues are taken into consideration in the initial design phases (Attia 2013). There are many tools available (e.g. Fig 2), but using them accurately and getting pertinent results turns out to be at times difficult due to the high volume of data which is often hard to interpret and put into use in an operational project. Attia also highlights the fact that a recent study has shown that « architects' most important selection criteria for BPS tools is its intelligence and ability of guidance to inform the decision-making tools » (Attia, 2013 : 1).

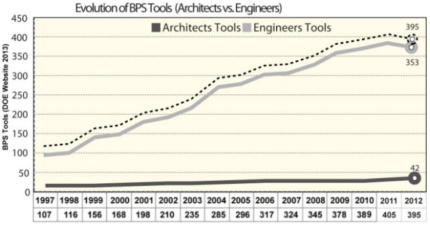


Figure 2: Evolution of BPS tools over the last 10 years. Source: (Attia, 2013 : 1)

Decision making, thus, appears to be a crucial point in the design process. S. Attia demonstrates, in the case of a study on the design of zero-energy residential buildings, the existing barriers to decision making, illustrated in the following figure (e.g. Fig. 3).

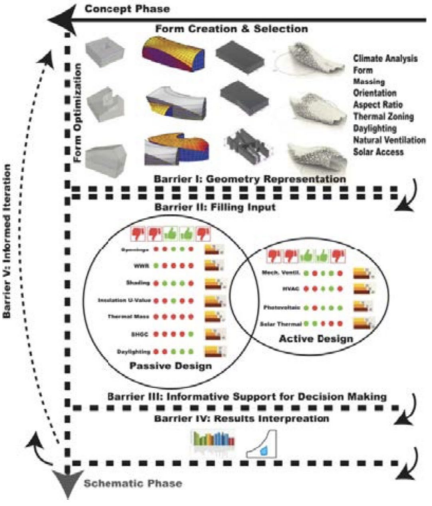


Figure 3. Barriers to decision making during early design stages. Source: (Attia, 2013 : 2)

Attia identifies the absence of aids in interpreting the results of simulations as an obstacle to their accurate usage. And yet I.T. tools could significantly guide choices and highlight key elements among a multitude of results. (Attia, 2013)

In addition to an overview of the state of the art on the science of visualization, a series of interviews were done at the *Efficacity Institute of R&D for Urban Energy Transitioning* in the framework of the development of the software tool xMUSE. These semi-structured interviews, given to architecture and urbanism design professionals, were mainly centered on digital tools and their usage in architecture, urban design, and environmental engineering firms.

The interviews allowed to go far beyond the initial questions and brought to light numerous points regarding the design process and the interaction among the different actors. The splits and conflicts among the participants became clear, but the

interviews also revealed potential solutions for overcoming them.

Two points seem very interesting from our point of view: on the one hand, the at times difficult relationship between architects and engineers with the recurring division between the two worlds, and on the other hand, the little consideration taken for environmental stakes in the early design stages, in part due to the cost of extensive studies, and the risk involved for the engineering offices. This latter point leads to just cursory studies being done at this stage with development of a strategy passed on simply orally with few or no specific studies being undertaken.

Our approach strives, notably, to position itself as one possible way to deal with the first aspect, the division, even if we are aware that the roots of this difficult collaboration go way beyond a mere question of dialogue. Other factors, such as economic or regulatory ones, play an important role. Concerning the second point, we feel a method of "translating" the technical data could contribute to greater agility in the transmission of information at all phases of the design, and consequently fulfill the need for a simplifying element, right from the start of the very initial design phases, to heighten the involvement of the engineering office.

This complexity which is inherent to the development of new practices, the proliferation of tools, and the access to huge volumes of heterogeneous data should not become obstacles to the design process. This complexity entails a source of potential innovation. It involves offering the keys to enable the full use of this treasure house of technical information to design better. We can identify two significant challenges. The first involves responding to the need for "decrypting" linked to the development of I.T. means, the available tools, and the multiplication and diversification of the data. The second corresponds more to a need to make the language more understandable to non-specialists, which could contribute to improving exchange among the actors intervening in the process. That is, the previously mentioned complexity and the vast amount of data that will nourish the operational process of the project, need to be usable by all the actors. This vulgarization of information aims to streamline exchanges among actors in order to enable to come to an informed decision and, ultimately, design better.

Our research offers a response to the second challenge. That is, our objective is to find methodological solutions to improve the exchanges among the operational professionals of the architectural and urbanism design worlds, concerning the themes of energy and the environment. It involves striving for the elaboration of a method and of a trans-disciplinary visualization tool for environmental questions applied to architectural and urban design projects.

The culture and usual practices of designers leads them to think about and conceive their projects graphically. Thus, developing a shared trans-disciplinary visual culture on energy and environmental questions seems an obvious contribution to improving the process.

Feedback in the scientific literature on the subject (Attia, 2013), allows to affirm that the representation of information and of data constitute an essential aid for dialogue and an important instrument in the decision-making process. Several researchers have demonstrated how the capacity to visualize a grouping of complex results can contribute to streamlining this decision-making process in an architectural project (e.g. Fig. 4).

For example, G. Halin (2007) refers to the construction of reasoning mechanisms « through images » that are the designer's own. Their specific visual approach is defined as "visual-spatial intelligence" (Gardner, 1992), the image is at the same time raw material for creation, but also a way of seeing and perceiving a problem.

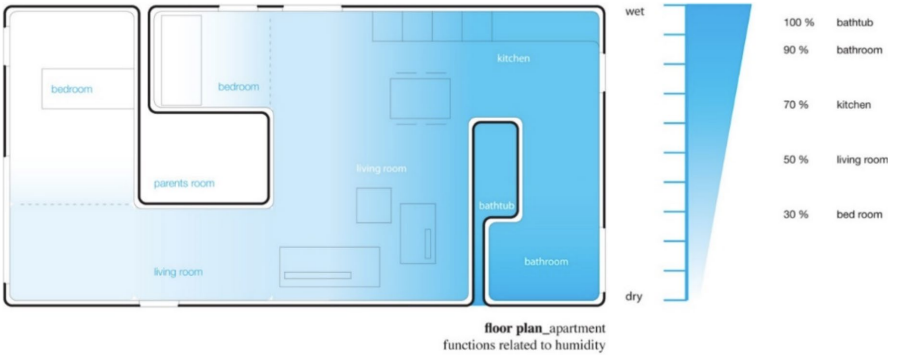


Figure 4. Plan of an apartment conveying the distribution of dampness. An example of how the constraint can turn into a project parameter and how the image portrays both the spatial information and technical data. Source: (P. Ram, vapor apartements, 2009)

Morpho 1_I02	Morpho 2_M	Morpho 3_I01	Morpho 4_P	Morpho ref	
1,764458	1,305668	1,853876	1.947894	1,67596173	Cooling (kWh/m²)
1,517734	1,069254	1,296043	1.643221	1,13215818	
1,794852	1,701493	1,88581	2.167103	1,86456844	
1,48381	1,054254	1,559005	1.664142	1,12256919	
1,85528	1,270392	1,72788	2.240065	1,70841805	
4,323983	4,291698	4,347957	4.426128	3,66862573	
14,38197	10,645651	15,128475	15.871854	13,7445859	Heating (kWh/m²)
12,370938	8,718072	10,576303	13.389316	9,28484812	
14,629702	13,872975	15,389066	17.658016	15,2913523	
12,094425	8,595769	12,722194	13.559784	9,20620894	
15,122253	10,358035	14,100292	18.252524	14,0107611	
35,244463	34,991998	35,481314	36.065025	30,0864525	
8,610293	6,321012	9,122788	9.747005	8,47894385	
7,406315	5,176484	6,377732	8.222463	5,72776111	Lighting (kWh/m²)
8,758607	8,237283	9,279929	10.843898	9,43313343	
7,24077	5,103865	7,67175	8.327149	5,67924927	
9,05349	6,150236	8,502771	11.208989	8,64314524	
21,100388	20,777015	21,395976	22.147758	18,560133	

Figure 5. Example of raw data, pertaining to energy consumption. Source: (G.Togo, 2019)

In the framework of new complexity, linked today to the integrated administration of new constraints, the development of a new visualization method adapted to new themes would enable to bring to light information that appears complex and at times hard to follow in a table of figures or a long written report (e.g.Fig.5).
Putting in place this methodology relies on tools developed at the *Efficacity* Institute of R&D for Urban Energy Transitioning. The approach is focused, firstly, on a tool allowing to modify the design parameters of a project to improve its energy and environmental performance. In this light, the idea is to put in place a tool to visualize in a simple and intuitive way, the results of cross simulations and the effects of the variation of certain input parameters on the energy demands and the well-being of the end-users at the very outset of design phases. Conceiving new graphic forms to visually organize and explore a large amount of incoming and outgoing data due to the digital environment is one of our aims and has been experimented through case studies.

2. ENERGIES VISUALIZATION

What do we mean by the visualization of energies? The meaning of the term "energy" deserves to be clarified. Of course, a precise definition of the word "energy" exists, yet here for this document we broaden its significance. In our research, this term includes, and identifies energy consumption, renewable and fossil-sourced resources, and also climate phenomena (wind, rain,...) or sunshine elements. We, thus, focus, in a very general way, on the graphic representation of energy and environmental matters concerning the city and buildings.
From a methodology point of view, we firstly relied on an overview of current usage and, secondly, followed with hands-on practical workshops. This work showed the existence of numerous graphic elements which enable to illustrate technical and energy data. These graphic elements stem from design professionals' know-how, however they have not been codified in France yet as they have been abroad. They involve an experimental language which has been tested in practice by designers and includes broadly recognized symbols and graphic representations, such as:

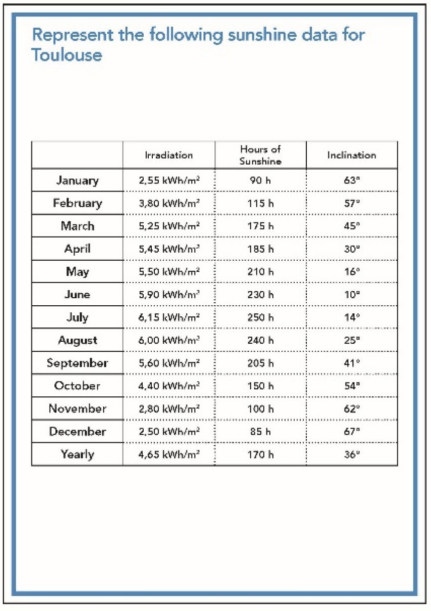
- The association of certain colors with states and sensations : red/heat/heating, blue/coolness/air-conditioning, yellow/light/electricity
- The association of symbols: an arrow indicates a direction, an orientation (airflow, for example) several arrows can indicate the movement of an entity in a given direction.
- Color gradients: variation in an item

Are the existing codes recognized and commonly used in all the concerned fields? Are they adapted to more and more complex design projects?
The existing elements revealed by the overview of the field, and already partially integrated into professional practice, constitute an initial starting point for further potential development. According to Deshayes,

> the act of architectural design, a communicated act where graphic and verbal conveyance is favored […] Graphic representation, the materialization of a mental space for creation, is considered as a system of manifestation allowing to catch part of the immanence of the creation and to reach possible meaning, a communicability (Deshayes, 2012).

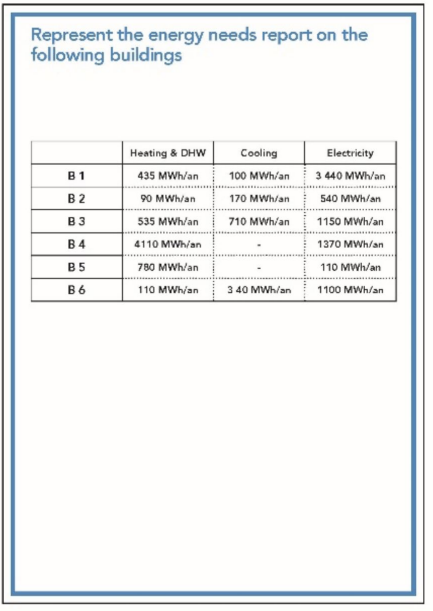
But how can we structure the existing into a grouping that is intelligible to a large number of people of different backgrounds and expertise so that they can work together better?
One way would be to put together a guide or catalogue of possible visualizations for design professionals which would certainly help simplify decision making processes. Developing such a guide would bring up more questions, for example:

What kind of impact on the energy and environmental performance of selected projects would there be?
How can visualizations focused on energy impact architectural and urban design, and, more concretely, the development of the projects and their impacts on the environment?
To continue our exploration of the issue, hands-on workshops were organized at *Efficacity.* They took place in two steps. Firstly, we dealt with an audience of design actors (architects, engineers, contractors, urban designers, sociologists) faced with the exercise of representation. Secondly, a similar workshop was done with the researchers of the *Efficacity Institute of R&D* making up the participants.
The aim of the workshops was to test the initial hypotheses of our research, and to work in an interdisciplinary way on the question of the visualization of energies by obtaining contributions from a variety of professional profiles. The workshops, within a short, one-hour format, were based on practical exercises. The participants played an active role: starting with a game using imposed data (Figure 6), along with given a receiver and representation objective they were asked to do a hand drawing of their own visualization.



Represent the following sunshine data for Toulouse

	Irradiation	Hours of Sunshine	Inclination
January	2,55 kWh/m²	90 h	63°
February	3,80 kWh/m²	115 h	57°
March	5,25 kWh/m²	175 h	45°
April	5,45 kWh/m²	185 h	30°
May	5,50 kWh/m²	210 h	16°
June	5,90 kWh/m²	230 h	10°
July	6,15 kWh/m²	250 h	14°
August	6,00 kWh/m²	240 h	25°
September	5,60 kWh/m²	205 h	41°
October	4,40 kWh/m²	150 h	54°
November	2,80 kWh/m²	100 h	62°
December	2,50 kWh/m²	85 h	67°
Yearly	4,65 kWh/m²	170 h	36°



Represent the energy needs report on the following buildings

	Heating & DHW	Cooling	Electricity
B 1	435 MWh/an	100 MWh/an	3 440 MWh/an
B 2	90 MWh/an	170 MWh/an	540 MWh/an
B 3	535 MWh/an	710 MWh/an	1150 MWh/an
B 4	4110 MWh/an	-	1370 MWh/an
B 5	780 MWh/an	-	110 MWh/an
B 6	110 MWh/an	3 40 MWh/an	1100 MWh/an

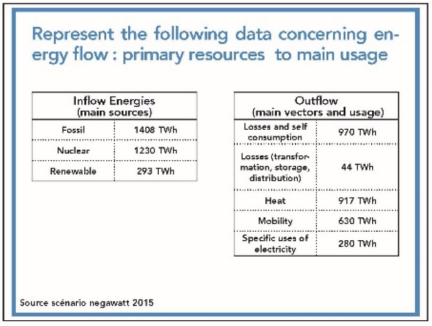
Figure 6. Example of exercise files used during the workshops to question the participants on potential visualization solutions. Source: (G. Togo, 2019).

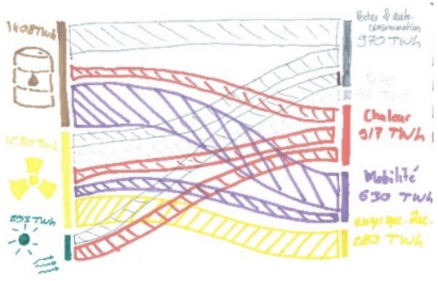
Several interesting configurations of workshop participant / data / receiver led to significant conclusions, for example:

- Participants of different professions chose the same set of data (whether for the same receiver or not)
- Participants having the same profession each created their own visualization of the same set of data, but with different receivers.

The reading of the ensuing visualizations revealed several interesting points, like, for example:

- The importance of clarity of the data as a starting point, that is, the need to pre-prepare a simplification and harmonization of the data to represent beforehand. This simplifies their conveyance through a visual language.
- The need to identify the receiver of the representation and his or her aim beforehand in order to offer a pertinent visual, as, for example in the following images. The two illustrations correspond to the same set of data (table detailing energy flow) (e.g. Fig. 7) intended for different receivers (decision makers on the top and the general public on the bottom). The two representations use the model of a flow diagram (Sankey diagram). The top right image reports the information in a factual and direct manner, while the second, on the bottom, superimposes the arrows on the image of a house. This type of representation is certainly more attractive to a general public as it links to the image of family, and on top of that, it adds information about expenses by providing an equivalent of energy expenditure in Euros.





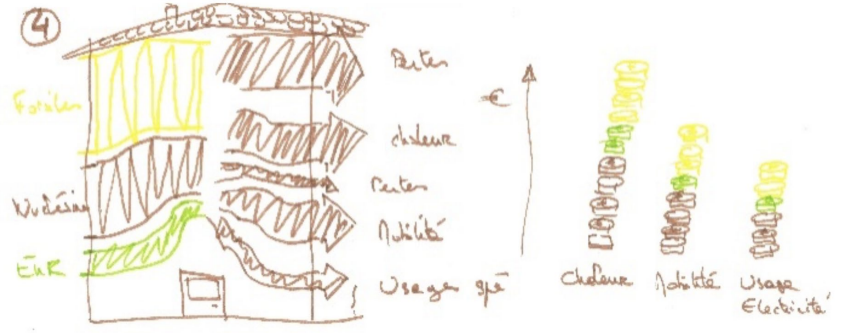
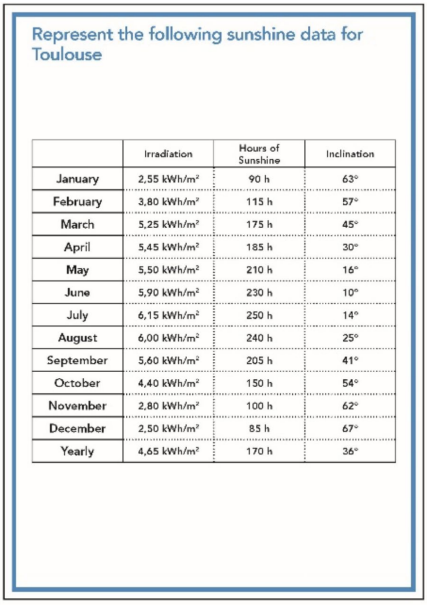


Figure 7. Project file et examples of representations done during the workshops. Source: (G. Togo, 2019).



Represent the following sunshine data for Toulouse

	Irradiation	Hours of Sunshine	Inclination
January	2,55 kWh/m²	90 h	63°
February	3,80 kWh/m²	115 h	57°
March	5,25 kWh/m²	175 h	45°
April	5,45 kWh/m²	185 h	30°
May	5,50 kWh/m²	210 h	16°
June	5,90 kWh/m²	230 h	10°
July	6,15 kWh/m²	250 h	14°
August	6,00 kWh/m²	240 h	25°
September	5,60 kWh/m²	205 h	41°
October	4,40 kWh/m²	150 h	54°
November	2,80 kWh/m²	100 h	62°
December	2,50 kWh/m²	85 h	67°
Yearly	4,65 kWh/m²	170 h	36°

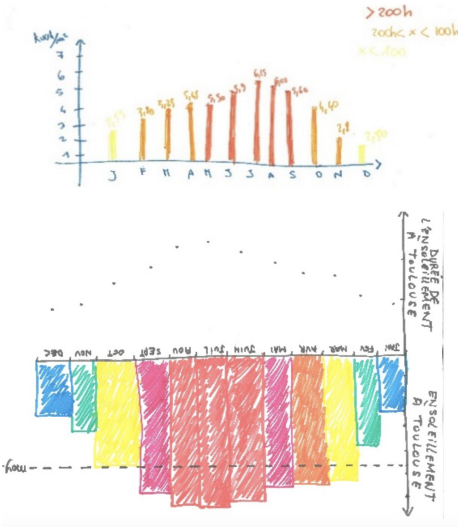


Figure 8. Project file et examples of representations done during the workshops. Source: (G. Togo, 2019).

• The profile of the author of the visualization had a reduced impact (if the other parameters were clear) on the intelligibility of the results. Here, the participants of the workshop had to create a graphic representation able to convey a set of data regarding the monthly and annual sunshine in the city of Toulouse. Both visualizations shown in the following image were done by the participants of the workshop coming from two very different fields (e.g.Fig.8). Both illustrations, while different, are pertinent and legible. This observation holds true more generally for all the representations done in these user workshops.

CONCLUSION

Research on the visualization of energies, the subject of this study, was at first developed within the framework of a specific project at Efficacity, in its application to the architectural and urbanism design processes. In this field, the changes in the processes are obvious at all scales and new practices rely more and more on a hybridization of roles and new professional profiles.

The hybridization of roles and the increasing need for an interdisciplinary approach is also interesting with respect to other contexts consequent to the growing complexity of the world in which we live. The Efficacity Institute of R&D rises to meet this complexity to further the energy transition for the city and its urban and architectural projects. Efficacity works with researchers from various fields to offer innovative options for the city of

tomorrow and to design tools and methods for sustainable design and management. Engineers, sociologists, economists, and energy specialists work together and collaborate on ambitious projects. Efficacity is, thus, a fertile ground for research on the visualization of technical data and the issues surrounding interdisciplinary exchange of information.

Visualizing energies appears to be a powerful communication aid in interdisciplinary work. Barriers linked to difficulties in communication can sometimes be simplified by pertinent visuals, as emerged during the previously cited workshops.

To achieve this, we plan to pursue the research through practical applications which enable bringing clear answers, and through contributing to the development of a library of solutions. In parallel, we will apply and adapt the first research results to other Efficacity projects. Doing so will contribute to broadening the reflections in this study to other project scales and to other themes which are currently only marginally addressed as, for example, lifecycle and waste management analysis.

REFERENCES

Attia, S., Gratia, E., De Herde, A. and al. 2013. *Simulation-based decision support tool for early stages of zero-energy building design.* Energy and buildings.

Brown, N. and Mueller, C., 2017. *Designing With Data: Moving Beyond The Design Space Catalog.* Acadia.

Deshayes, C. 2012. *Aspects dialogiques de la conception architecturale.* Espagne, in: Proceedings of the 10th World Congress of the International Association for Semiotic Study.

Halin, G., Chaabouni, S. and Bignon J. 2007. *Recherche de références par l'image dédiée à l'assistance à la conception architecturale.* Hal-00153849

Miyamoto, A., Nguyen Van, T., Trigaux, D. and al. 2015. *Visualisation tool to estimate the effect of design parameters on the heating energy demand in the early design phases,* In: PLEA2015 Architecture in (R) Evolution. Ass. Building Green Futures.

Nault, E., 2016. *Solar potential in early neighborhood design. A decision-support workflow based on predictive models.* Thèse n° 7058. Ecole Polytechnique fédérale de Lausanne.

Weytjens L., Verdonck E. and Verbeeck G., 2009. *Classification and use of design tools: the roles of tools in the architectural design process.* Design principles and practices: an international annual review 3.

PAPER #1.25

THIN ARCHITECTURE: ENERGY, ECONOMY AND THE ALL-GLASS ARCHETYPE

Elizabeth L McCormick[a], Waleed AlGhamdi[b]
[a]University of North Carolina at Charlotte, Charlotte, North Carolina, USA
[b]Eskew+Dumez+Ripple, APC, New Orleans, Louisiana, USA

ABSTRACT

Mechanical conditioning technologies have become a welcome luxury in tropical climates, though not without cultural and environmental implications. Early office towers used operable windows to provide for ventilation, lighting and passive solar gains. However, the adoption of air conditioning as the primary thermal strategy has given way to a ubiquitous placelessness among modern buildings, an overall detachment from nature and expansive ecological degradation well beyond their geopolitical boundaries. In fact, many regions have sacrificed their local identity and age-old construction techniques for the sake of Western building styles as symbols of power and prosperity. With modernism came a desire for *thin* building enclosure systems and thus the invention of the curtain wall and the all-glass archetype.
As developing regions struggle to keep up with rapid urbanization, they also seek to maintain modern expectations on the global stage. Meanwhile, numerous studies show that tropical economies lag behind cold or temperate regions in several categories: GDP, education, health, technological developments, among others. In this study, the authors compare the relationship between tropical underdevelopment and energy consumption using economic indicators and simple energy modeling. The universal adoption of air conditioning, tall buildings, and curtain wall technology all within the span of a single generation, has created incredible impacts on the urban skyline as well as on global energy consumption. Despite global efforts to mitigate climate change, rapid development of the tropics with northern-latitude building typologies will lead to deleterious environmental challenges as well as continued economic hardship.

KEYWORDS

Curtain wall; energy use;, glass buildings; tropical regions; EUI.

INTRODUCTION

Mechanical conditioning technologies have become a welcome luxury in tropical climates, though not without cultural, environmental and economic implications. The adoption of air conditioning as the primary thermal strategy has given way to a ubiquitous placelessness among modern buildings and expansive ecological degradation well beyond a city's geopolitical boundaries (Forman and Wu 2016). In fact, many regions have sacrificed their local identity and age-old construction techniques for the sake of *thin architecture* and the *all-glass archetype,* developed primarily in northern latitudes as symbols of power and economic prosperity. As development and urbanization trends move increasingly toward the Tropics[1] *(figure 1),* lower-latitude regions seek to maintain modern expectations on the global stage

[1] Geographically, 'the Tropics' represent the part of the globe located between the Tropic of Cancer (23.5°N latitude) and the Tropic of Capricorn (23.5°S). Though these regions have higher ambient temperatures closer to the equator, there is a significant difference between hot-humid and hot-arid climates in regard to building energy use. As the focus of this paper is on hot-humid climates, the authors use Köppen-Geiger's climate classification zones Af, Am and Aw to describe tropical (equatorial) climates. These climates are shown in figure 1.

while also promoting economic growth in regions that have historically lagged behind (Sachs 2001). Despite efforts to mitigate climate change, rapid development of the tropics using northern-latitude building styles will lead to both environmental and economic challenges in already underdeveloped regions. Using economic indicators and simple energy modeling of the all-glass archetype, this paper seeks to demonstrate that the *thin* architectural style established by modernism not only challenges the identity of the tropical vernacular, it furthers economic disparities between the tropics and upper-latitude regions.

1. BACKGROUND

1.1. Urbanization Trends

Within the span of only 100 years, the Earth's population has grown exponentially from 1.5 billion at the beginning of the 20th century to 6 billion in 2009 and is expected to grow to nearly 10 billion by 2050 (Gielen et. al. 2016) with the most significant growth rates occurring in developing nations in Asia and Africa (Hoekstra and Molnar 2010). As the Earth's population swells, people are also moving into cities at unprecedented rates as more people are choosing to live in cities than in rural areas for the first time in history. While there were only sixteen cities with populations beyond one million people at the beginning of the 20th century, there are now over four hundred cities that meet this mark, with over 70% of them found in the developing world (United Nations Department of Economic and Social Affairs 2016) (Cohen 2006). With land at a premium, more energy intensive, high-rise buildings are being constructed than ever before.

The United Nations has established the top ten urbanizing regions[2]. With the exception of Nepal, all of these economies are found within the geographic tropics – a portion of the world that has historically lagged in wealth and resources (Sachs 2001). In fact, only four major tropical economies – Hong Kong, Singapore, Saudi Arabia, and Venezuela – are classified as "high-income" economies as defined by the World Bank *(figure 2)*.

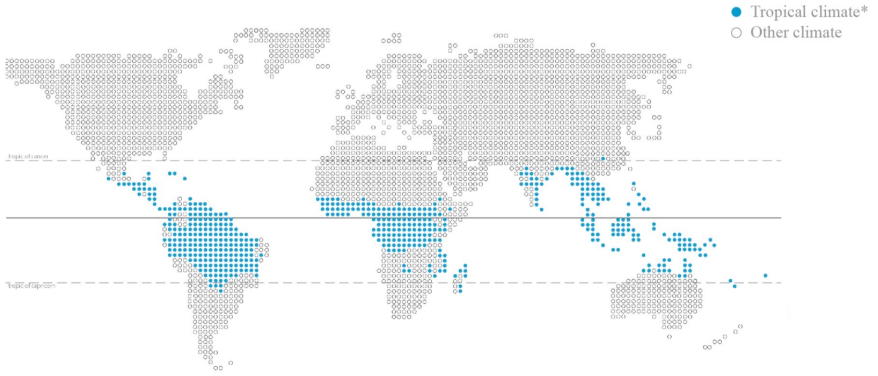


Figure 1. Summary of Tropical Climates. Data summarized from (Peel et. al. 2007)*
**defined by Köppen-Geiger's Climate Classification zones Af, Am and Aw.*

[2] The top ten urbanizing regions in descending order are: Burundi, Uganda, Ethiopia, Nepal, Niger, Eritrea, Rwanda, Malawi, South Sudan and Burkina Faso (United Nations 2015).

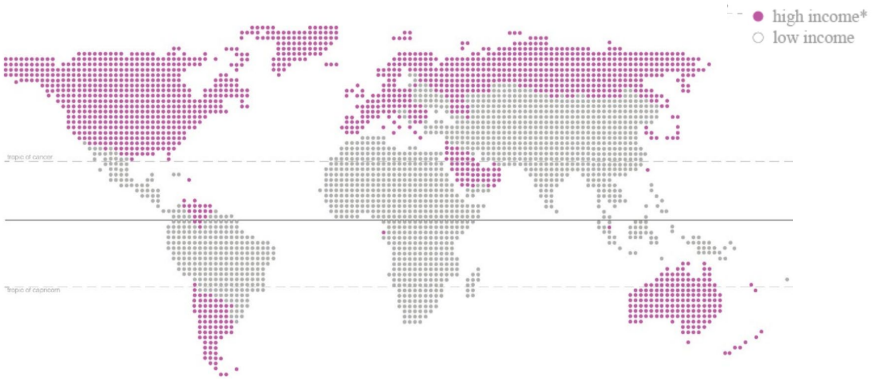


Figure 2. High-Income Economies (by GDP PPP). Data from the (The World Bank 2013)*
**defined as gross national income per capita above US$12,735*

1.2. Economic disparities across regions

An emerging body of research is exploring the correlations between geography, climate and economic factors. In fact, one study shows that over three quarters of the global population lives closer to the equator than Japan, but less than a third of the world's gross domestic product (GDP) is located there (Tanzer 2012). Another study shows that the average gross national product (GNP) per capita of the temperate zone is nearly five times higher than that of the tropical zone (Sachs 2001). Nobel Prize-winning economist William Nordhaus found that the optimal ambient temperature correlated with maximum economic output density is 12°C (54°F) (Nordhaus 2006). Tropical regions typically range from 23°C (73°F) to 45°C (113°F). Though it is not a perfectly linear correlation, *figure 3* demonstrates the average GDP per capita is higher at the upper latitudes.

Though economic principles assume that poorer countries will have higher economic growth rates, growth has stagnated in the Tropics (Sachs 2001). Even beyond economic indicators, the Tropics lag in health, education, energy, productivity and technology. The burden of disease is also higher in tropical climates, further contributing to economic challenges. Many of these regions still have limited access to reliable and affordable energy services, which is a critical indicator of "global development challenges, including poverty, inequality, climate change, food security, health and education", the major contributors to the creation of wealth and economic development" (Bazilian et al. 2012).

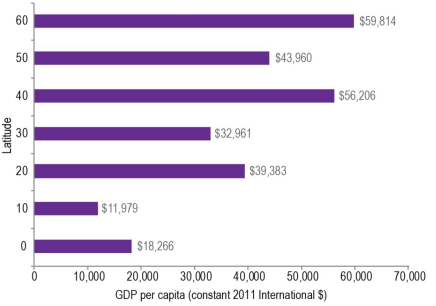


Figure 3. GDP per capita by latitude
data from World Bank, International Comparison Program database, world development indicators, 2019

1.3. Technological diffusion & globalization

Economist and public policy analyst Jeffrey Sachs defines technological diffusion as "the process by which new technologies are adopted for use across individual firms or households in a given market, and across different markets" (2001). Agricultural and health-related technologies, for example, are implicitly linked to climate and ecology (Lybbert and Sumner 2012) and do not diffuse easily across climate zones. In architecture and construction, diffusion is evident in the ubiquitous building styles and materials emerging in urban centers across the globe (Eldemery 2009). Hoping to replicate the *heroic* structures found in the West (Wong and Hassell 2009), the all-glass tower has emerged in India, the Middle East, Southeast Asia and many other regions, regardless of context and climatic conditions.

Globalization describes the "phenomenon by which the experience of everyday life, as influenced by the diffusion of commodities and ideas, reflects a standardization of cultural expressions around the world" ("Globalization" 2017). The history of the built environment is quite extensive, as building typologies have typically evolved slowly over time. However, the universal adoption of air conditioning, tall buildings, and curtain wall technology all within the span of a single generation, has created incredible impacts on the urban skyline as well as on global energy consumption. As these standards and styles evolve independently of climate, we look to mechanical systems to make up the difference. Compounding this issue, there is an ever-evolving relationship between thermal comfort standards and technological developments. Just as certain building materials and methods became associated with confidence and power, there became an association between climate control and social status, symbolic of man's *victory over nature* (Brager and de Dear 2008), an idea that was propagated by the modernist movement. "Architects of the 1950's had little concern for energy conservation. It was left to mechanical engineers to insure occupant comfort" (Kelley and Johnson 2013). The modern aesthetic developed concurrently with affordable air-conditioning and mechanical ventilation strategies as architects became increasingly interested in the general aesthetic as opposed to the intrinsic performative qualities of the building enclosure.

1.4.The all-glass archetype

Historically, civilizations have established vocabularies of vernacular styles based on cultural antecedents and climatic conditions, creating unique building styles around the world. Cold climate buildings, for example, were bulky and insular while tropical buildings were naturally ventilated and deeply connected to the environment (Fisher 1984). Instead, post-war modernism brought a departure from the regional aesthetic in order to embrace the *International Style - an* architectural response to industry, technology, mobility and sociopolitical orders (Eldemery 2009). As made famous by architects like Mies van der Rohe, Walter Gropius and others, the International Style emerged in the first half of the 20th century, which represented the "vast colonizing effort by the European nations" (Braham 2000). The styling of the modern archetype was largely influenced by the "machine-made aesthetic with which the early Modernists were captivated" (Kelley and Johnson 2013). Modern and quickly erected, the *all-glass archetype*, made possible by divorcing the façade from the function of structure (Hitchcock and Johnson 1997), emerged as a symbol of economic growth and prosperity in the West (Oldfield et. al. 2009). In fact, Ian McCallum, the executive editor of Architectural Review, described the curtain wall as "the new vernacular" in 1957 (Yeomans 1998). It was at this juncture in time that the façade became a thin, passive

recipient of differential conditions between inside and out.
Beyond its visual implications, this new system was appealing as it increased usable floor area, reduced lighting costs, reduced the weight of the wall and facilitated prefabrication. Glass is relatively durable and lightweight, but above all else – it is transparent and immaterial. "Questions of surface and materiality and the relative relationship between skin and structure… opaque or transparent… thick or thin" (Merwood 2001). Developed concurrently with reinforced concrete floors and relatively small, set-back steel columns, curtain wall buildings rejected any "overt expression of structure" (Yeomans 1998), climate or place.
The building and construction sector is responsible for 36% of final energy and 39% of global CO2 emissions from building operations and construction (Global Alliance for Buildings and Construction 2018). Additionally, the direct effects of climate change are expected to be most severe in rapidly developing regions, and regions currently supporting largely rural populations, such as the Tropics (Samson et al. 2011). Aside from the human impacts of climate change, a 2º-temperature rise would reduce world GDP by 1% globally (Stern 2007), but would cause a 4-5% decrease in developing tropical countries (Bierbaum and Zoellick 2009).

2. CASE STUDY – ENERGY USE INTENSITY

As with many other technologies, building systems and styles are difficult to diffuse across climates, regardless of cultural expectations, due to a wide variety of varying environmental conditions, not limited to solar gain, humidity and ambient temperature. As the modern aesthetic permeates across climate zones and ecological divides, all-glass buildings in tropical, lower-latitude regions are increasingly burdened by excessive energy usage, compared to their northern counterparts, particularly as it relates to cooling and dehumidification. In fact, there is an indirect correlation between energy use (EUI) and economic growth (GDP) across the various latitudes generalized by *figure 4*, further perpetuating tropical disparities. To explore this phenomenon, the authors conducted a small-scale energy analysis of a single all-glass building type across a number of cities in order to find an average energy usage by latitude to compare against published economic data.

2.1. Energy use intensity

Energy use intensity (EUI) is an energy-use indicator used to compare and manage energy consumption patterns across various building sizes and usage types (Chung et. al.2006). The metric normalizes energy usage by area, measuring consumption in energy-per-area-per-year, or kBTU/ft2/yr (IP) or kWh/m2/yr (SI). Its usefulness can be compared to the miles per gallon (MPG) rating which demonstrates how efficiently a vehicle uses fuel. Likewise, economists use gross domestic product (GDP), in a similar capacity to quantify the economic health and productivity of a region (Callen 2008). In the case of GDP, a higher number represents strong economic growth. However, a higher EUI represents high energy usage and thus a poorly performing building.

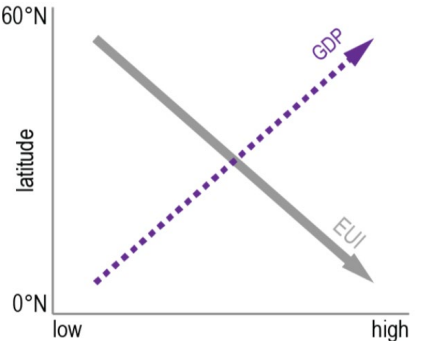


Figure 4. expected results (simplified)

2.2. Study parameters

One uniform building type was modeled across 18 different climates (3 per latitude) to show the resulting EUI. The envelope parameters[3] were roughly inspired by the material qualities during the boom of the International Style in the 1950's and mechanical inputs are simplified for the sake of this study[4]. In practice, buildings in heating-dominated climates typically rely on burning a carbon-based energy source - such as natural gas or oil- for space heating, whereas cooling-dominated climates rely primarily on electricity for cooling. Although the analysis was run using electricity as the single source of energy, utilizing heat pump technology for both heating and cooling to reduce simulation noise due to variation in HVAC system type across climate zones, it is unlikely to rely on a single energy type for space conditioning across all climate types.
The analysis was conducted by performing an annual hourly whole building energy simulation using DOE 2.2 eQUEST 3.65, a software developed by the US Department of Energy, and is among the widest used tools in the industry. The model was built with a simple square floor plan and a simple perimeter and core thermal zone layout. The "Floor Multiplier" feature in eQUEST was utilized to reduce the amount of time each run of simulation takes, which removes interior floors plates that are identical, simulating them once then multiplying them by the total number of identical floors. The thermal zone floor plan layout had one zone per solar exposure at a depth of 15 feet (4.57 m) from the exterior wall and one thermal zone in the core of the building, consistent with the energy modeling protocols laid out in the energy standard ASHRAE 90.1.

3. RESULTS & DISCUSSION

An identical model was simulated several times with only changing the weather file for the simulation. The following figures *(table 1 and figure 5)* plot the result of these simulations in terms of EUI against the latitude of each building, showing a correlation between weather, represented by latitude, and energy efficiency represented by EUI. Additionally, *figure 5* overlays the economic data previously discussed in *figure 3*.

[3] Modeled building parameters:

BUILDING PARAMETERS		
Floor Area	300,000	SF
Number of Floors	30	Floors
Floor to Floor Height	13	Feet
Wall Area	156,000	SF
Window Area	124,800	SF
Window-Wall Ratio	80	%
ENVELOPE		
Wall U-factor	0.082	
Roof U-factor	0.040	
Glazing U-factor	0.521	
Glazing SHGC	0.500	
INTERNAL LOADS		
Lighting Power Density	1.0	W/SF
Plug Loads	0.3	W/SF
Air Infiltration, Envelope	0.20	CFM/SF

[4] Modeled mechanical system parameters:

MECHANICAL SYSTEM	
HVAC System Type	Packaged Variable Volume Variable Temperature Heat Pump; Air Cooled
System Configuration	System per zone; Ducted to Space
Temperature Setpoints	Cooling 76° (82° unoccupied)
	Heating 70° (64° unoccupied)
Design Temperatures	Cooling 75° indoor; 55° supply
	Heating 72° indoor; 90° supply
Cooling Efficiency	8.2 EER
Heating Efficiency	2.9 COP
System Capacity	Auto sized heating/cooling
Humidity Control	Max RH 60%

Lat.	City	EUI	Average
50	Frankfurt	29	31
	Kiev	33	
	Adak	31	
40	NYC	33	33
	Tashkent	34	
	Tianjin	33	
30	San Antonio	37	39
	Kuwait City	47	
	Shanghai	33	
20	Honolulu	40	35
	Hanoi	41	
	Mexico City	24	
10	Addis Ababa	25	40
	Batticaloa	49	
	Managua	46	
0	Singapore	47	32
	Nairobi	28	
	Quito	21	

Table 1. EUI comparison of the same building by latitude[5]

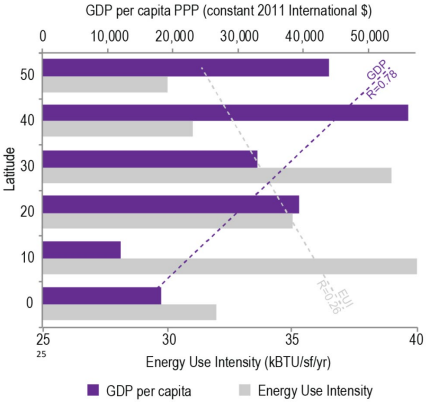


Figure 5. comparison of EUI and GDP by latitude

In this study, the authors sought to compare the relationship between economic indicators and energy consumption of the all-glass archetype to explore the contribution of energy to tropical underdevelopment. Though this limited data set generally trends in accordance with an inverse relationship between energy use and GDP the authors note that additional factors must be included in the study moving forward, due to the complexity of the issue. These factors include air temperature, relative humidity, solar access and elevation above sea level. Although latitude is a major factor in determining these climatic characteristics, other macro and micro climate phenomena will likely have a significant effect on energy consumption of the sample building. For example, where two cities have the same general latitude and air temperature, one city can have higher relative humidity due to its proximity to a large body of water, which results in considerably higher latent cooling loads than the other, which will affect the overall EUI of the building. This can be found when comparing the EUI of Singapore, on the southern end of the South China Sea, which has an annual average relative humidity (RH) of 84% with Nairobi, roughly 500 kilometers inland from the Indian Ocean coast, which has an annual average RH of 72%. Another avenue of inquiry might be to instead limit the conversation of energy to only cooling energy or building loads as opposed to total EUI, as cooling energy and cooling systems require more advanced technologies[6].

CONCLUSION

This research shows that energy usage and economic health are in direct opposition, provoked by the all- glass building and the International Style. The authors observed that as GDP decreases toward the equator,

[5] The EUIs in this study are generally lower than those expected of older buildings. This is mainly due to the use of mechanical systems following current energy code minimums. It is expected that the relative EUI relationship between these cities will hold regardless of the mechanical system used, and only the absolute EUI for each individual city will be affected.

and hypothesized that energy use of a model curtain wall building would increase, causing challenges for the rapidly urbanizing tropical climates hoping to maintain the modern aesthetic but with the burden of increased energy usage, particularly as it relates to cooling. Many scholarly works have been published about the impact of local cultures on thermal comfort and conditioning strategies, yet we are now seeing the impact of these technologies on local urban identity through redundant skylines of sealed glass towers. In no place is this phenomenon more evident (and environmentally harmful) than in the rapidly developing tropics.

Advances in mechanical technologies and air conditioning market penetration have supported global trends toward glazing-dominated, sealed buildings regardless of climate, culture or local identity. Paired with the rapid influx of people into cities and unsustainable development strategies, tropical regions experience developmental challenges well beyond the burdens of the extreme climatic conditions and economic vulnerability. Partnered with economy and ecology, tropical regions must develop their own modern aesthetic that competes with the all-glass archetype but also supports sustainable tropical development.

REFERENCES

Bazilian, Morgan, Patrick Nussbaumer, Hans-Holger Rogner, Abeeku Brew-Hammond, Vivien Foster, Shonali Pachauri, Eric Williams, et al. 2012. "Energy Access Scenarios to 2030 for the Power Sector in Sub-Saharan Africa." *Utilities Policy* 20 (1): 1–16. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jup.2011.11.002.

Bierbaum, Rosina M., and Robert B. Zoellick. 2009. "Development and Climate Change." *Science* 326 (5954): 771–771. https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1183876.

Brager, Gail S., and Richard J. de Dear. 2008. "Historical and Cultural Influences on Comfort Expectations." In *Buildings, Culture and Environment: Informing Local and Global Practices*, edited by Raymond J. Cole and Richard Lorch, 177–201. John Wiley & Sons.

Braham, William W. 2000. "Erasing the Face: Solar Control and Shading in Post-Colonial Architecture." *Interstices Journal of Architecture and Related Arts*.

Callen, Tim. 2008. "What Is Gross Domestic Product?" *Finance & Development,* 2.

Chung, William, Y. V. Hui, and Y. Miu Lam. 2006. "Benchmarking the Energy Efficiency of Commercial Buildings." *Applied Energy* 83 (1): 1–14. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.apenergy.2004.11.003.

Cohen, Barney. 2006. "Urbanization in Developing Countries: Current Trends, Future Projections, and Key Challenges for Sustainability." *Technology in Society,* Sustainable Cities, 28 (1–2): 63–80.

Eldemery, I.m. 2009. "Globalization Challenges in Architecture." *Journal of Architectural and Planning Research* 26 (4): 343–54.

Fisher, Thomas. 1984. "The Well-Tempered Tropics: Design for Hot, Humid Climates." *Progressive Architecture* 65 (4): 98–103.

Forman, Richard T. T., and Jianguo Wu. 2016. "Where to Put the Next Billion People." *Nature* 537 (September): 608–11.

Gielen, Dolf, Francisco Boshell, and Deger Saygin. 2016. "Climate and Energy Challenges for Materials Science." *Nature Materials* 15 (2): 117–20. https://doi.org/10.1038/nmat4545.

Global Alliance for Buildings and Construction. 2018. "2018 Global Status Report."

"Globalization." 2017. In *Encyclopedia Britannica*. https://www.britannica.com/topic-browse/History/Modern-World/Globalization.

Hitchcock, Henry Russell, and Philip Johnson. 1997. *The International Style*. W. W. Norton & Company.

Hoekstra, Jonathan M, and Jennifer L Molnar. 2010. *The Atlas of Global Conservation: Changes, Challenges, and Opportunities to Make a Difference*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Kelley, Stephen J., and Dennis K. Johnson. 2013. "The Metal and Glass Curtain Wall: The History and Diagnostics." In *Modern Movement Heritage*. Taylor & Francis.

Lybbert, Travis J., and Daniel A. Sumner. 2012. "Agricultural Technologies for Climate Change in Developing Countries: Policy Options for Innovation and Technology Diffusion." *Food Policy* 37 (1): 114–23. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.foodpol.2011.11.001.

Merwood, Joanna. 2001. "The Mechanization of Cladding: The Reliance Building and Narratives of Modern Architecture." *Grey Room,* no. 4: 53–69.

Nordhaus, William D. 2006. "Geography and Macroeconomics: New Data and New Findings." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America* 103 (10): 3510. https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.0509842103.

Oldfield, Philip, Dario Trabucco, and Antony Wood. 2009. "Five Energy Generations of Tall Buildings: An Historical Analysis of Energy Consumption in High-Rise Buildings." *The Journal of Architecture* 14 (5): 591–613.

Peel, M. C., B. L. Finlayson, and T. A. Mcmahon. 2007. "Updated World Map of the Köppen-Geiger Climate Classification." *Hydrology and Earth System Sciences Discussions* 4 (2): 439–73.

Sachs, Jeffrey D. 2001. "Tropical Underdevelopment." Working Paper 8119. National Bureau of Economic Research. http://www.nber.org/papers/w8119.

Samson, J., D. Berteaux, B. J. McGill, and M. M. Humphries. 2011. "Geographic Disparities and Moral Hazards in the Predicted Impacts of Climate Change on Human Populations." *Global Ecology and Biogeography* 20 (4): 532–44. https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1466-8238.2010.00632.x.

Stern, Nicholas Herbert. 2007. *The Economics of Climate Change: The Stern Review.* Cambridge University Press.

Tanzer, Sam. 2012. "Why Is There Such A Strong Correlation Between Geographic Distance From The Equator And Prosperity?" Forbes, 2012. https://www.forbes.com/sites/quora/2012/03/20/why- is-there-such-a-strong-correlation-between-geographic-distance-from-the-equator-and- prosperity/.

The World Bank. 2013. "Country and Lending Groups." October 22, 2013. http://data.worldbank.org/about/country-and-lending-groups#High_income.

United Nations. 2015. "World Urbanization Prospects, 2014." http://esa.un.org/unpd/wup/Publications/Files/WUP2014-Report.pdf.

United Nations Department of Economic and Social Affairs. 2016. *The World's Cities in 2016*. Statistical Papers - United Nations (Ser. A), Population and Vital Statistics Report. UN. https://doi.org/10.18356/8519891f-en.

Wong, Mun Summ, and Richard Hassell. 2009. "Tall Buildings in Southeast Asia - A Humanist Approach to Tropical High-Rise." *Council on Tall Buildings and Urban Habitat (CTBUH,* no. III. http://global.ctbuh.org/resources/papers/download/414-tall-buildings-in-southeast-asia-a-humanist-approach-to-tropical-high-rise.pdf.

Yeomans, David. 1998. "The Pre-History of the Curtain Wall." *Construction History* 14: 59–82.

PAPER #1.26

VR, PHOTOGRAMMETRY AND DRAWING OVER: ENVISIONING THE CITY OF THE FUTURE

Olivier Chamel[a] and Laurent Lescop[b]
[a]FAMU, Tallahassee, Floride, USA
[b]ENSA Nantes AAU-CRENAU, UMR-CNRS 1563 – Nantes, France

ABSTRACT

This article proposes to discuss a research/design methodology aimed at developing urban visions based on case study analysis of existing urban environments using Virtual Reality technology and Photogrammetry. In order to visualize possible scenarios for the city of the future the method described here is based on "drawing over" existing urban images whether in a 2D format or a 3D environment. As a preliminary to this creative urban design phase the urban context of a specific street is analyzed both in terms of its physical and material qualities as well as its experiential ones.

KEYWORDS

VR; photogrammetry; pedagogy.

INTRODUCTION

Technologies such as virtual reality, though they have been around for a while in various formats have only recently been identified and used as potential design tools in the field of architecture. The initial goal of these technologies was to develop an immersive representational system aimed at creating a realistic and convincing spatial 3D environment. The obvious benefits to architecture and its related fields lie in the ability for designers to create interactive 3D models of their designs in order to experience moving through spaces and therefore better understand a particular design solution. The first iterations of virtual reality technology presented promising opportunities mostly as an improved and enhanced spatial representation system because of its experiential qualities. The idea of using VR as a design tool in architecture is relatively new and follows recent software developments in that field. When the Cave system was invented at EVL (Electronic Visualization Lab) in 1991 it was designed for industrial needs and did not really make its way to the field of professional practice. For a long time VR tools were understood by architects more as rendering tools than design tools. Though in the naval industry for instance, this difference between designing and visualizing does not exist and VR tools have been embraced since their beginning. Paradoxically some schools of architecture still view 3D tools as "anti-creative" as opposed to other more "traditional" design tools. In the context of the design methodology discussed here, we are using 2D images, photogrammetry and VR both as analytical and design tools.

The ambitious goal of having students aim at developing urban visions stated at the beginning of this paper invites an interesting series of questions. First of them, teaching notions of urban design in architecture programs poses a number of challenges. Aside from the fact that students have to grasp the built environment at a different scale they also have to understand concepts such as phenomenology of perception, positive and negative space and think in terms of spatial sequences as well as how building forms are experienced in motion and context. And in order to understand the many concepts associated with urban design, it is crucial for students to physically experience such environments. That is to

physically visit urban centers and cities, which display successful examples of urban design solutions. Interestingly the current generation of students, and architecture students are no exception, have developed a significant number of meaningful interactions that are not physical in nature but rather digital and virtual. As the millennium generation uses screens in a widespread fashion (phones, tablets) in order to communicate with one another and access information these tools have played an important part in shaping or reshaping their perception and vision of the world. In fact in the past few years we have observed a generation of students who seem more engaged and seem to place more value at times on a digital world rather than on the physical one. As this current trend poses obvious challenges in education and when it comes to physically engaging students, it also provides new opportunities. Developing a design process based on 2D and 3D images as well as VR environments effectively draws students with tools they are familiar with and may serve as a re-introduction to the real world. Tools such as Google Street view, 3D scanners, photogrammetry and various VR applications have opened new realms of designs by providing large quantities of information about existing urban environments very quickly and accessible anywhere in the world. All that information can then be formatted and analyzed in order to provide valuable input and inform design decisions. For example Google maps and Google Street view can be used effectively to develop reliable 3D urban models most anywhere in the world. This type of access is especially useful for architecture schools where students are geographically isolated from major urban centers.

In addition to being tied two specific tools (i.e. 3D models, immersive technology) the methodology we are describing here is also defined by having teams of students from two different schools, one in Nantes, France and the other in Tallahassee, Florida US complete the work. Each team would develop a case study of an existing street in their urban location using a variety of digital tools and then create a design proposal for urban development and growth. Each school will then share the materials gathered during the case study with the other school so that ultimately each team of students at each school would develop a design proposal for their local site as well as for a remote site. Based on the information provided, i.e. Google Street views, photogrammetry and VR, on a specific environment they are not necessarily familiar with, each team of students would have to apply their own set of analytical tools specific to their pedagogical environment and cultural background. Ultimately the urban design proposal of the offsite teams when compared to the local teams may be influenced by a difference of cultural perspective but also by the fact that they did not have physical access to the site. In our attempt to try to identify the factors driving design decisions, each team would fill out an exhaustive questionnaire (in the form of a table) describing design goals and how they were translated in urban forms. This process would attempt to decipher which design decisions were driven by a particular pedagogical environment, cultural urban context, case study format or other unforeseen factor. Teams at each school would present their design proposals in a similar format composed of mostly graphic materials such as urban maps, street plans, street sections, diagrams, 2D perspectives, and VR immersive environments. Some of the anticipated outcomes would be to identify how trends in urban design proposal, both successful and less successful, are tied to specific curricula and cultural context. These two issues would be especially interesting to investigate as they touch on the place of urban design in architecture education and would provide clues of a European versus American perspective.

European cities have historically been very engaged with the notion of constantly

improving the urban environment and addressing growth as well as cultural and social issues. Faced with issues of high density, mobility and transportation, low economic growth, inequalities and sustainability, European urban centers have been under pressure to innovate and propose concrete solutions to these ongoing challenges. Current strategies include increases in urban density by means of adding stories to existing buildings, filling empty lots, developing zoning regulations discouraging sprawl and shared vehicles to name a few. On the other hand the US has only seen such ideas of controlled density an urban environment quality gain traction in the past 20 years with such movements as the new urbanism. Similarly to their European counterparts American cities are facing acute challenges. Urban sprawl alone is omnipresent and is responsible for the destruction of valuable natural environments, increased commute time, pollution, loss of productivity, stress and infrastructure cost increase. Structurally the making of most American cities was driven by short-term economical goals and by zoning laws associated with the development of the automobile. Therefore the suburban nature of the American urban landscape and our relationship to space in that context is very different from that of European citizens. Therefore it is interesting to evaluate to what extent urban and spatial environments affect the way we can conceive urban spaces especially for a generation of students immersed in digital media and an imagery full of global references. The identification of potential cultural driving factors for students' urban design would in turn shed some light on the place of education and of a particular curriculum in the urban design process. Aside from the quality of the urban design work itself the benefits of this approach would also inform us on the appropriateness of relatively new visual tools and determine the values of being placed in a drastically different cultural design environment.

METHODOLOGY

The design methodology of this urban design project is organized in 2 distinct phases. The first phase is analytical in nature and consists in gathering data on the project site, an existing street, using Google Street View as a 2D photographic tool. The second phase involves the use of 3D scanning and photogrammetry to bring streets in a 3D immersive environment for an experiential and phenomenological analysis. Flatten photos of the 3D photogrammetry models will be created to analyze content, typologies, surfaces and determine the level of complexity of the street. Following the information gathering phase, the second phase will consists in developing urban design proposals using the same techniques introduced in the initial phase. Therefore students will first draw over existing 2D street view images in perspective using the Procreate application on an iPad to represent their urban design ideas. They will then sketch in 3D in immersion (Gravity Sketch) and finally draw over on a projected 360° flatten image. This last step would allow a co-presence from students from both schools in a shared design experience.

1. CASE STUDY AND ANALYSIS

1.1. Google Street View

The first step of the analytical phase of the project consists in using Google Street View as a 2D photographic tool. This graphic media provides an introductory approach to the spaces and surfaces of an existing street. Students initially create a scaled map of the urban space to be studied in order to get a sense of the context and understand the nature of the urban fabric. The map will also be used to reference the locations of the different perspective views. Though the 2D perspective views extracted from Google Street View are not at eye level and the point of

view is located on a road, the overall format of the representation system presented is similar to that of a person walking along a Street. The analysis would be composed of two series of Street views in perspective, one in each direction. The photos would then be displayed adjacent to a street map referencing the point of view of all the photographs. This method is consistent with a traditional and sequential photographic analysis of a space. It provides a description of a space along a dynamic axis by means of still photographs to evoque a spatial experience through movement.

Figure 1. Sketch over Google Street View (Olivier Chamel)

This approach would inform students about the physical characteristics of an urban space, its scale proportions, materials and would also provide clues about the qualities of the overall spatial experience. This would also allow students to observe patterns in terms of building massing, surfaces and façade details and start to identify how these typologies may affect the human experience. Students will ultimately produce a graphic analysis of the street by means of annotated photographs and conceptual diagrams.

Based on the photographs collected during the initial phase of the analytical study, i.e., the Google Street View analysis, students will be given the opportunity to draw over or sketch over the street view photographs. The process is simple and consists in sketching in layers over the original image in order to create new building masses and possibly modify the existing urban fabric. A number of drawing Software or applications are currently adapted to this exercise and we have chosen the Procreate application with an iPad Pro and i-pencil. Typically students would use one layer to create a line drawing in order to delineated new urban patterns and massing while using two or more layers to apply color either as new built surfaces or to cover or modify existing buildings.

One purpose of this exercise is to provide a pre-existing environment, the street view photographs, as a way for students to be mindful of the existing urban context as they are exploring design ideas. This

process involves freehand sketching but because it is digital it allows students to continuously edit their work until they are satisfied. They can create new layers, delete existing one and move layers to the foreground or background of the drawing. We have found this method to be conducive to developing numerous an interesting urban design ideas as it is flexible and provides drawing guidelines, which the current generation of students appreciates as their freehand drawing skills may be limited.

1.2. Drawing on a 220 degree screen in co-presence

Immersive environments have now a long history if we consider panoramas as the first immersive devices. The first panorama was invented by Barker in 1787 and received many improvements associated with technological advances such as photography, electric light, automated machines and even movies. One can find examples of immersive images at a large scale in movies, an early example being the Napoleon feature film from Abel Gance in 1927. More recent applications include theme parks such as Disney World or Universal. Nowadays digital technology has made considerable improvements and it is relatively easy to create convincing immersive environments by using several video projectors (Lescop-2017-2019).
For three or four hundred dollars, it is now possible to buy a fairly good 360° camera. These types of camera are equipped with two 220° lens ,which instantly create a 360° image at a resolution of 4k for the most standard models. Controlled with a smartphone the camera creates an equirectangular image, meaning that the sphere is mapped on a 2.1 rectangle. It is then possible to redraw this image in two different ways. The first one consists in drawing directly on the flat image, though it typically inlvoves geometric deformations from the sphere being flattened on a flat rectangle. Software such as Panopainting , which involves a real 360 VR Painting constitute an improvement from the original set up. The equirectangular image is remapped on a spherified cube that eases the redrawing.
Since 2012 we use panoramic immersive devices to work in co-presence. It means that students together or students and professors can have a 360° drawing or photo projected around them and work on it. The first immersive device we had is the Naexus. The Neaxus was a 220° cylinder screen of 15m long and 2m height. Any software could run on this device and was so very easy to project an image around the student(s) and design with a regular tablet or even a mouse.
The Naexus screen is like a huge computer desktop. Sitting together, students and their

Figure 2. Drawing at 220° in the Naexus (photos Laurent Lescop)

tutors can experiment shapes and spaces drawn in 2D but projected on the curved screen with a huge feeling of immersion. The Neaxus is a straight forward device, which does not require extra software to work. Sketchup, AutoCad, Photoshop are naturally used and someone just needs to put a tablet, a mouse and a keyboard in the center of the device. For four years we have been using the Naexus as a very effective collaborative design tool, until we could have a better solution.

1.3. Photogrammetry: flattened 3D images

Drawing on a panoramic screen allows designers to create in a real-time interactive environment. The relationship between professor and student is modified because the design work is created side by side as opposed to a pin-up where the work is evaluated after completion. Pedagogical improvements are significant and have been measured by the John Gero research team at UNC Charlotte and by Julie Milovanovic in her PHD defended in 2019. (Milovanovic 2019)

After the Naexus experiments, two major improvement have been possible : on one hand the increasing power of graphic cards create a real "real-time" experience with a complex 3D model and on the other hand the possibility to survey any kind of environment at no cost. This has been made possible with photogrammetry. Photogrammetry consists in using the parallax between two images to retrieve the 3rd dimension. One of the first statement of the technique can be found in 1893 with the creation of "metric archives". Scheimpfiug (1865-1911) was the first to articulate the grounding rules of photogrammetry: "The identification of three points in a couple of photographs is enough to determine the absolute position of the couple". Photogrammetry has long belonged to the field of land planners and aerial cartography. The development of photogrammetry is strongly linked to advances in computer science and online calculation services brought about by the spread of the Internet. Nowadays photogrammetry is progressively getting integrated to BIM models. According

Figure 3. Drawing on a 3D photogrammetry with Tomas Dorta's Hive-3D in Nantes (photo Laurent Lescop)

to H.Marcher[1], further scanning systems will involve the fusion of photogrammetry and lasergrammetry. Cloudpoints will be made out of the correlation of thousands of photographs, or from several sensors or from Light Detection and Ranging (LIDARs), a surveying system that measures distance to a target by illuminating the target with laser light and measuring the reflected light with a sensor.

The acquisition process can be described in three steps. Initially the photo shoot is conducted with 60% overlay and as far as possible perpendicular to the target surface. When photographing a building, it is better to have a pole, as high as possible to take details that might be out of range. Secondly the collection of photographs is aligned in a 3D space, using a specific software such as MetaMesh or Autodesk Recap. The position of each shot is determined by the camera alignment. From these positions every single pixel is located on an xyz axis creating a dense colored cloud point. This cloud point is then transformed into a mesh thus creating a polygonal colored model. The final step consists in extracting the color information to create a texture map. It is then possible to work from this textured model. The mesh is imported into a 3D software like Blender or 3DsMax to be simplified and then to be reworked, transformed and augmented. It is then possible to add some geometries on the existing structure. It is easy to draw shapes and volumes on top of the mesh given by the photogrammetry. This 3D sketching allows to test the first raw ideas before diving in a more precise and complex design.

Drawing over a 3D environment built with photogrammetry requires a specific device to be fully effective. The best one we've been working with is the Hive-3D invented by Tomas Dorta at the Univerty of Montreal - Hybridlab (http://hybridlab.umontreal.ca). The Hive-3D is a 180° portable screen that allows to sketch in the 3 dimensions. With a single IPad using the tablet's gyroscope correctly oriented in space, the student can perform a freehand drawing, add objects, copy/paste. When finished, the sketch can be exported and reworked. The Hive-3D is able to display in real time very large or complex models such as those we can get from a laser or photogrammetric survey.

1.4. Immersive VR environment

The next step we are currently testing is the full immerged sketching experience. In that regards the recently released HTC Vive is offering impressive new capabilities. The HTC Vive is a headset for virtual reality which allows the user to move, walk and twitch. The device is sold with TiltBrush, a software that allows to paint and draw in a 3D space. With TiltBrush the user does not paint on a canvas anymore but literally in the air so it is then possible to walk through the painting. Following TiltBrush came Gravity Sketch which is more dedicated to platonic shapes, 3D models and lights. With Gravity Sketch it is now possible to import a 3D model, (our simplified photogrammetry for instance) and work at full scale to create virtual 3D spaces, additions, shapes and so on. Before Gravity Sketch, building in 3D was made possible with a special addition of the Unreal Engine. A virtual library of shapes and objects was available to create in real time. Gravity Sketch is only one of the softwares capable of doing this. Even Sketchup has a virtual component that can be manipulated in real time either at the scale of a model or by moving inside a building.

We started to experiment two things with our students. First sketching on a 3D model using TiltBrush. With this app it is literally possible to sketch in 3D on an imported model (which shall be light) and have the possibility to walk around, and freely draw details, additions, comments in real time. With Gravity Sketch, the user manipulates real geometry and is able to process a real technical design with shapes, curves, lines, imported models and much more. The very innovative way to work is given by the

[1]invented at EVL in 1991

Figure 4. VR design in a real built neutral environment, this neutral environment is than virtually augmented.

possibility to modify the model's scale on the fly and have a scaled model in the hand and then expend it and walk in a real scaled model. We know that we are at the very beginning of VR/AR work and we are just waiting to have more collaborative tools to be in a real process of sharing the design and knowledge.

CONCLUDING THOUGHTS

Project visualization at full scale and in real time can considerably impact the design process of an architectural project. It is widely accepted that sketching is a quick and efficient exploratory design method because of the direct hand/brain connection and has proven to facilitate creative thoughts. Though sketching does not necessarily have to involve paper as a medium. Some of the latest VR goggles offer sketching tools, which are at least as fast, flexible and accurate than traditional pencils. The paradigm change consists in the fact that sketching does not occur on a 2D surface anymore but rather directly in 3D. Therefore this implies that students have to familiarize themselves with a new form of perspective drawing at full or reduced scale in a real space. Because of our perceptual stereotypes associated with 2D representation, 3D sketching can produce distorted creations, which may take some learning and adapting.
One can wonder if we should go beyond the question of parametric design and start to include real world data in the design process. This is especially pertinent as architecture and design is viewed more and more as an integrated process including such notions as sustainability, spatial quality and systems along with the development of meaningful concepts. The ability to move around freely in the virtual space of a full-scale building or in a 3D model under construction should not be perceived as a limitation but rather as an opportunity to empower architects. This would equip them with powerful tools and ultimately help them make meaningful decisions in an increasingly complex design environment. We see value in the tools and processes discussed here because we believe they can positively contribute to the definition of a contemporary design process.

REFERENCES

Laurent Lescop. Sep 2017, 360° vision, from panoramas to VR. *ENVISIONING ARCHITECTURE: SPACE / TIME / MEANING*, Tom Maver, Paul Chapman, Christopher Platt, Victor Portela and David Eaton, Glasgow, United Kingdom. pp.226-232.

Laurent Lescop. 2019, Topologies de l'immersion - *Études digitales*. Etudes digitales, Classiques Garnier, pp.21-52. <10.15122/isbn.978-2-406-09288-9>

Julie Milovanovic. 2019, Exploration de la pédagogie du studio de projet d'architecture : Effet de l'écosystème de représentations du projet sur la situation de la session critique. Education. École centrale de Nantes,

Y. E. Kalay, 2004, Architecture's new media : principles, theories, and methods of computer-aided design. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT press.

R. Grover and A. Wright, 2020, "National Design Studio Survey: Initial Results."

D. Oprean, 2014, "Understanding the immersive experience: Examining the influence of visual immersiveness and interactivity on spatial experiences and understanding.,"
University of Missouri-Columbia.

S. Boudhraa, T. Dorta, J. Milovanovic, and D. Pierini, 2019, "Co-ideation critique unfolded: an exploratory study of a co-design studio 'crit' based on the students' experience," CoDesign, Feb.

T. Dorta, G. Kinayoglu, and S. Boudhraâ, 2016, "A new representational ecosystem for design teaching in the studio," Des. Stud., vol. 47, pp. 164–186.

L. Caldas and M. Keshavarzi, 2019, "Design Immersion and Virtual Presence," Technol. Archit. Des., vol. 3, no. 2, pp. 249–251,

J. Gero and J. Milovanovic, 2019, "The situated function-behavior-structure co-design model," CoDesign, no. August,

G. Goldschmidt, 2014, Linkography: unfolding the design process. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT press.

P. Pauwels, T. Strobbe, J. Derboven, and R. De Meyer, 2015, "Conversation and Critique within the Architectural Design Process: A Linkograph Analysis," in Design Computing and Cognition, pp. 135–152.

H. Sopher, D. Fisher-Gewirtzman, and Y. E. Kalay, Jul. 2019, "Going immersive in a community of learners? Assessment of design processes in a multi-setting architecture studio," Br. J. Educ. Technol., vol. 50, no. 5, pp. 2109–2128.

S. Buckingham Shum, R. Ferguson, and R. Martinez-Maldonado, 2019, "Human-Centred Learning Analytics," J. Learn. Anal., vol. 6, no. 2, pp. 1–9,

T. Dorta, G. Kinayoglu, and M. Hoffmann, 2016, "Hyve-3D and the 3D Cursor: Architectural co-design with freedom in virtual reality," Int. J. Archit. Comput., vol. 14, no. 2, pp. 87–102.

"AAU-CRENAU dévoile la maquette virtuelle de la plateforme CORAULIS au salon Innovatives SHS 2019 du CNRS," [Online], 2019, Available: https://aau.archi.fr/actualites/2646-le-salon-cnrs-innovatives-shs-a-lille-avec-la-participation-aau-crenau/.

A. Bouattour, 2019, "L'écrin de Coraulis, morphogenèse et conception de l'enveloppe d'un dispositif immersif Amin,"

2

BLOCK 2: LIVING IN URBAN LANDSCAPES

PAPER #2.01

GETTING A GRIP ON FICTION: GRAPHIC NARRATIVES AS STUDY SITES FOR URBAN DESIGN

Carmina Sánchez-del-Valle[a], V.M. Price[b]
[a]Hampton University, Hampton, Virginia, USA
[b]Independent Scholar, Missouri, USA

ABSTRACT

This essay argues for the value of examining graphic narratives – comics and graphic novels – in which city spaces have roles affecting the urban lives of the characters. In them, characters make evident how they consider and use urban spaces. Graphic novels point to meanings urban spaces have for a diversity of occupants. They offer wider insights into the public's views of what it means to live in urban spaces, and provide portrayals of its perceived functions and dysfunctions. Because they present perceptions of public attitudes and uses of urban space, graphic novels are a resource for designers on the impact of digital technologies on the non-use, evolving use, and usefulness, if any, of these spaces to satisfy the human need for face-to-face interaction. What do graphic novels indicate the new ways of communicating have done to repurpose that realm? Do they show urban spaces of a new kind or form, with greater purpose and more enabled by smartphones, the Internet of Things (IoT), and social media? And what directions could such views be suggesting the design professionals consider for the coming, or going city?
A selection of graphic novels, published in the last ten years, was searched for clues of urban space use, communication and sensibilities that may be emerging in a digital age. The graphic novels are named and their urban space concerns or criticisms are listed and summarized. These are themes that question whether or not 'urban spaces are designed for people'. Life as presented in these novels appears to counter with the notion that 'human action re-identifies and alters the urban space function(s)'. The themes are: 1) surveillance and freedom; 2) gathering and dispersal; 3) order and disorder; 4) solidarity and confrontation; 5) intersections and encounters; 6) strangers and acquaintances; 7) anonymity and celebrity 6) isolation and fellowship, 7) peace and violence; 8) sensibility conveyed with views in and out; 9) sensibility conveyed with views from above and from below; 10) sense of safety and of unease; 11) digital and remnant analog technologies. Artifacts, interactions, and events discerned are compared with images selected from Frans Masereel's seminal 1925 graphic novel The City.

KEYWORDS

Digital communication; Frans Masereel; graphic narratives; urban space.

INTRODUCTION

The graphic novel may seem, to some professionals, a too casual means through which to face criticisms of the urban spaces and urbanscapes designed by them, or created as a by-product of their enveloping structures. The graphic narrative may appear an unscholarly reference or source, anachronistic in its use of media, and superficial. But graphic narratives can be and do serve as the 'visual' mouthpiece of a public unhappy with the dysfunctional, threatening, or obsolete urban spaces they must traverse.

In these narratives urban space problems are typically highlighted by staging the stories' worst events within them. The images link desired or detested urban spaces to the event(s) that they attract.

Illustrating urban space issues in a fictional story-telling format is not unique to today, but became more widespread with the onset of mass media in the 20th century. Frans Masereel is one of its precursors. He studied in Paris, worked as a newspaper political cartoonist from 1917 to 1920 in Geneva, Switzerland. In this capacity he learned to work fast "creating a drawing related to a daily event." (Berona 2007) In 1925 Masereel published the 'wordless' graphic novel *The City*. It is not his first graphic novel, or his best known[1]. However, it is the one he dedicated explicitly to the city. In an interview he said, an artist "can also be a witness to the age in which he lives […] For me it cannot be otherwise." (Cohen 1977) Authors of today's graphic novels and comics that are set in the city appear to agree.

In *The City* the celebrations and criticisms of the urban spaces were visually glaring rendering words unnecessary. His work has been described as "dramas of class struggle, of the degradation and thrill of urban life" (Lanier, 2007) that "expressed his horror of war and capitalism."(Bernière 2018) The novel opens with a *veduta* of the city as seen from a hill by a man, and closes in the city with a view of a woman looking out of a window into a starry sky – one infers a desire of the novice to venture into urban space, and one expresses the yearning of one of the entrenched to escape it. The city is presented as a series of scenes moving the viewer back and forth from interior to exterior. Building façades delimit the action outside. Inside people concur with their own kind only. Late at night in a street the solitary wander, while somewhere from a tall building's windows, the city is alive with smoke flowing out of tall chimneys. Everyone moves hurriedly crisscrossing the path of the crowd, horses, vehicles, and trains. Masereel's visual commentaries are stark. His work is as insightful and precise as the muckraker journalists of his time, equally blasting the city for contempt-by-negligence of its own denizens. Its impact on urban space design considerations is worthy of further research.

1. STUDYING THE CITY THROUGH GRAPHIC NARRATIVES

It would benefit the work of design professionals to appraise and question their own work and agendas for a project in and of the city by considering the perceptions and sensibilities of urban spaces presented in graphic novels. In particular, designers should look at the following three public concerns raised by graphic novels. First, corrections to a designer's point-of-view are offered bringing it down to the users' level. For example, a very open urban plaza shown in a panoramic view from above may end up being rarely used for congregating or socializing, because the people experiencing it below feel way too exposed, vulnerable, and surveilled. Second, the designer sees building projections and columns providing shade to the pedestrian. Yet, the graphic narrative shows them concealing surveillance, or an attacker. Third, the design provides a rhythmic arrangement of benches and sculptures in and around a plaza. The graphic novel shows not a soul in the plaza, but people sitting outside surrounding coffee shops, or standing with their backs to buildings at the street surveilling the plaza. These sequences of images don't "point out the meaning of something", but rather "point in a certain direction that by itself requires interpretation." (Gadamer 1986, 68-69)

The five graphic novels selected for study present criticisms and concerns of urban spaces in today's cities. Most are in the

[1]Passionate Journey (1918-20) is Masereel's best known work. Germany banned his books in 1933. By this time he had published five. Joris van Parys notes that "up until twenty years ago, Masereel's work remained virtually unknown in the U.S. and U.K." Cohen writes that it inspired contemporary graphic novel artists such as Peter Kuper, Eric Drooker, and Art Spiegelmann.

Western hemisphere. The criteria for selection was based on the following: a) publication must have been within the last ten years to access the most contemporary views, and to coincide more or less with the introduction of mobile media and pervasive use of social media[2]; b) the story must be fictional to allow invention; c) urban spaces must play a significant role in the story; d) the places depicted must be recognizable as urban, and be presented in more than one frame; e) objects shown must be at the scale of the frame; f) there must be a direct correspondence between action and space credible in a city, no matter how exaggerated, or fantastic; g) they must be about the present and a near future.

While the graphic novel selection limits this discussion on urban spaces, there remains a growing scholarship on the subject, with work disseminated across national boundaries. Markers[3] of the start of this expanding body of work are: a) the 2010 exhibition "Archi & BD, La Ville Desinée" presented in Paris; b) the 2010 collection of essays edited by Ahrens and Meteling *Comics and the City: Urban Space in Print, Picture and Sequence*; c) Mélanie van der Hoorn 2012 *Bricks and Balloons: Architecture in Comic-strip Form*; and, d) Enrique Bordes 2017 *Cómic, Arquitectura Narrativa*.

1.1. Building common ground

This exploration assumed graphic novels by the 'others' would regard general city terms the same as design professionals - the city is a dense human settlement where many forces are at play, where exchange, collaboration, and sharing are required in some form for it to exist. A large city that stretches out into the territory surrounding it is a metropolis. Urban is not only used to refer to city, but also to life in town and village. These are all places where there are congregations of people not necessarily related by blood ties, but who live together and share spaces and services. Public space is a type of urban space. In the historicist language of New Urbanism, streets are corridors connecting urban rooms, plazas and squares. Here we use cityspace and urbanspace to refer to amalgams of scenes, activities, buildings, spaces, things, people, and other living beings. Cityscape usually refers to a veduta, a painting or sketch of a scene or panoramic view of a city mostly from a distance.

Ahrens and Meteling contend that from a historical perspective "comics are inseparably tied to the notion of city." (2010, 4) It was for the widely read newspapers of the early 20th century that comics came into being. Sociologist James Donald discussing the impact of mass media on the representation of the city of that time, calls newspapers a "pedagogic medium that compensated for the impersonality and overstimulation [of the metropolis]." (2008, 50) Donald reminds us that "mass newspapers packaged a view of the world," and "encouraged and managed the urban state of mind." (49-50) Brian Longhurst offers a contemporary perspective with a quote from Nick Couldry: "the media frame our views of reality, they sustain the frame in which our experiences of the social occur." (2000, 115) Henri Lefebvre argued space is a product of social practices where social space is "a diversity or multiplicity of spaces irreducible to a 'form' imposed upon phenomena, upon things, upon materiality." (1992, 27) Comics and graphic novels can offer accurate and rich visual narratives for the study of the concept of the city, both in terms of form and way of life. Because of the multiple formats and perspectives, graphic novels can present multidimensional views with which to construct, or reconstruct life in an urban landscape.

[2] The World Wide Web was established in 1991, Skype beta version launched in 2003, Facebook started in 2004, iPhone was presented in 2007, and in 2010 the iPad was introduced.
[3] Also of note are the articles that have appeared in Domus, and Abitare. In particular those by Caterina Grimaldi reviewing work from Africa to the Middle East, to Europe and Asia.

1.2. The city in graphic novels and comics

The cities in graphic novels[4] are products of the imagination placed in an invented past, present, or future. Yet, they are contexts for discussing the city as it resides in the very real social imagination, or collective consciousness. Graphic narratives make active participants out of place details and urban spaces that are more subtly portrayed in text.

Berger and Mohr call images arranged to tell a story a montage. Their ordering is not sequential, or necessarily chronological, because "all stories are discontinuous."(1995, 285) However, they can be understood because "the narrator, the audience, and the protagonists of the story have a tacit agreement about what is not said" (285), and can "enter the narration becoming part of its reflecting self."(286) Berger and Mohr look at the story told as a mirror, where the viewer not only sees the characters, the places, and the narrator, but also sees themselves.

The graphic novel combines sensorial and social experience within a visual construction. Its frames act as 'mirrors' on which to observe the city. Henri Lefebvre comments on the concept of the mirror:

> In and through the mirror, the traits of other objects in relationship to their spatial environment are brought together [...] Into that space which is produced first by natural and later by social life the mirror introduces a truly dual spatiality: a space which is imaginary with respect to origin and separation, but also concrete and practical with respect to coexistence and differentiation. (1992, 186)

The graphic novel's ability is to communicate an imagined place in an assembly of images that are not necessarily in sequence. The graphic novel brings to the viewer-reader's attention the larger points by the number of frames provided and images rendered, and by the pivotal spaces detailed therein. It gets the reader/viewer closer to the provisional aspects of a place by showing it has been occupied and recently used; for example, with a frame focused on the cigarette butts or gum marks left on sidewalks, or at block corners[5]. The reflected image requires interpretation, and may raise issues not heretofore considered by the reader/viewer.

Graphic novels are a mapping of their imagined city. The map highlights places of value for the story, be it a location or historical marker that serves as an orientation device, or the setting for an event. The city is shown as skyline, as a perspectival view of a street defined by a variety of objects and people depending on the setting or an elevation, a bird's eye view of the city or vector, a map of the city, a view from a window, or from a roof. Objects presented indicate how the city is perceived. Some graphic novels use the panoramic view, or 'veduta' to quickly express the city's perceived character, then take the reader/viewer to the street to carry that character into the story. Neuroscientist Colin Ellard argues that we don't understand our world geometrically, but rather connect "images of places with stories that link one image to another, [...] as a series of connected nodes."(2009, 11) Graphic novels exploit this form of navigation to allow us - the viewer/reader- to occupy the space of reality perceived and imagined.

For example, in the seminal graphic novel *City of Glass*[6] set in New York City, walking always has a physical destination. We see the character walking from W 107th Street to E 69th Street and Madison Avenue, and we know this because the street signs are shown. The same kind of sign identification is provided where we see the main character exit a subway station with the numbers 1, 2 or 3 subway shown; and

[4] The term comics is used to refer to stories usually published as a series, recounted using graphics and text in a mutually supporting format. The narratives can be short stories, novellas, and novels. The comic strip and the cartoon (single frame/single plate) have not been included in this discussion.
[5] This is one of William H. Whyte's techniques.
[6] City of Glass was authored by Paul Auster as a written novel published in 2005. It was transposed into graphic form by Paul Karasik and David Mazzucchelli.

the narrator has indicated he is going to W 96th Street. In the next scenes the character follows a person around the neighborhood to go to Riverside Park and back for several days. We see the character's walking drawn in a map to explain where he has been. In these sequences the viewer/reader not only maps the area with the protagonist, but experiences it in different conditions (day or night, rain or sunshine) and from various perspectives. Taken together they give us the image of the district through the eyes of the protagonist. The character wanders through the city stopping at the United Nations' park to write on his notebook about the people he has seen that day. The viewer/reader can recognize the UN Assembly and tower buildings. In this New York there are wide boulevards with trees in the middle, and treeless narrower streets where buildings face the sidewalk with few interruptions, except for stoops marking the entrance to urban villas, and awnings for hotels and other establishments. The protagonist demonstrates that at W 69th Street one can sit in a service entrance for days, and nobody will bother him. The urban furniture are sign and light posts, traffic posts, mail boxes and fire hydrant, phone booths and wire trash cans. Water tanks can be seen on the roofs of some buildings. Buildings are densely packed in blocks, and their façades of different styles and heights. While sitting on a bench in a boulevard park one can see people as they come and go, undisturbed by any of them. The park located within the neighborhood offers a view of a river, has a thick tree canopy and a rocky landscape. Most people move through the park, some on bikes, a few sit on long benches. The park is open to all, and one can feed the pigeons. This is the material that provides a physical impression of the city. The reader/viewer comes to understand they themselves are the surveillance character of the story; seemingly innocuous actions and places are being watched from somewhere by someone in a 'city of glass'.

1.3. Discussing urban concerns and criticism of the contemporary

The five graphic novels and comic series selected for discussion are in the order in which they were published: *Supermarket: Cash Money Edition* (Wood and Donaldson 2009), *Iron Man: Ultimate Wars* (Ellis and Kurth 2010), *Strange Attractors* (Soule and Scott 2013), *War of Streets and Houses* (Yanow 2014), and *Estamos Todas Bien* (Penyas 2017). All are graphic novels except for *Iron Man: Ultimate Wars*, a collected comic series. Three are set in New York City, one takes place in a city in Canada, and another in Spain.

These are the urban space concerns and criticisms raised in these novels:
1) Surveillance and freedom;
2) Gathering and dispersal;
3) Order and disorder;
4) Solidarity and confrontation;
5) Intersections and encounters;
6) Strangers and acquaintances;
7) Anonymity and celebrity;
6) Isolation and fellowship;
7) Peace and violence;
8) Sensibility conveyed with views in and out;
9) Sensibility conveyed with views from above and from below,
10) Sense of safety and sense of unease;
11) Digital and remnant analog technologies.

In *Supermarket: Cash Money Edition* all of the urban space/use concerns listed are raised. The setting is an alternative near future in New York City, or in a place quite akin to it. Two families control all the money in the city, and therefore access into every space. The main character explains: "Everyone calls [the city] the supermarket. It's quite a shock if you aren't used to it" – "Cash rules everything around here." This character is the key to free the city from this tyranny. She lives in an expensive gated neighborhood in a suburb from where the city's skyline can be seen. But the story takes place in the city, which

is divided into sectors. The tallest buildings and all luxuries are in the city-center district. Somewhat like Times Square, it is framed by skyscrapers and immense lighted signs and billboards. It is crammed with people all dressed in dark gray. Only the wealthiest can go up to the tallest building to view the city. People of different economic strata don't mix. Buses and underground metro connect the lesser districts. Those with means use their own cars, or take taxis. Supermarket is a highly monitored city, where everything has its place. The street is for driving.

In *Iron Man: Ultimate Wars* the urban space/use concerns raised are, again, all of the items listed. Manhattan has been flooded "but Iron Man remains vigilant". The dystopic city is a well established character in superhero comics. The first plate is a wide street level view showing the devastation: flooded cars, a twisted light post and looming above a tall building with intact commercial signs and broken windows. There is no life in the streets of Manhattan. The way to check on the damage is through an electronic map and cameras. However, in London demonstrators are out around Trafalgar Square. The viewer/reader knows it is London because one of the first frames in the sequence is an iconic panoramic view of the Thames framed by the Millennium Wheel. In the center, the Westminster Bridge, and on the edge the Big Ben Clock Tower. The protesters are shown in the screen of a large TV display carrying signs; and, later from above and at close range street level as they are attacked by robots. The city is the stage where Iron Man destroys the robots. Compared to Masereel's city, this one has an invisible and pervasive system for monitoring action on the street.

In *Strange Attractors* all items noted in the list of urban space/use concerns are also raised. This novel appears to be a reaction to superhero stories. One of the main characters is a mathematician that has spent his life mapping by hand the connection between apparently insignificant events. He recruits another mathematician to help avoid a major disaster that he has predicted will destroy the city. In this novel the main characters move in the city from neighborhood to neighborhood, using the subway or walking. They sit to talk in parks where there are others playing chess, talking, watching. Landmark views are used to locate the action. They produce maps of the city that have no regular grid. In fact, for the story the authors created two maps. One was formed by combining the patterns of "tangled clumps of hair, images of skin diseases, and rat kings." They overlaid "lightning storms, the movement of electricity across nodes, and what that might look like when out of control." For the other map they used patterns of lines as if they were "highways, robot parts, connected nodes, and wiggly lines as if a loose weaving." In this visual narrative there are smartphones and computers but digital media do not provide for the "interface" between social spheres that Martijn de Waal refers to in *City as Interface*. The more significant exchanges between people happen indoors. Outdoor spaces are mainly transitional, except for parks. Large crowds out and about are absent. Surveillance of the spaces through which they move may be happening, but because the characters' actions are so ordinary, no red flags are shown raised. And apparently, any surveillance is visual only. Listening is not inferred.

War of Streets and Houses is partly autobiographical, and a very brief treatise about the city. It raises all urban space/use concerns. It contemporizes Thomas Robert Bugeaud's work of the same title, and discusses it in contraposition to David Harvey's *Right to the City*. It uses line drawings with zones of gray and black. The story is about a student that decides to protest against an increase in tuition costs. In the beginning the main character tells the viewer/reader that in their childhood there were no Google maps, which now give directions to paths that at that time "they knew were impassable." Views move to the character in the street, to

a demonstration where many have masks on their faces, and *hoodies*. The public space where the demonstration takes place is surrounded by austere blocks of buildings. In one frame a traffic light, in another a sign on a post. Next the main character reminisces about living in Paris, "the first real city I ever lived in." There is no background for Paris as the character stands alone in the frames that form the sequence. The visual narration continues the exploration of the meaning of city, and of its form commenting on Foucault's 'disciplinary space,' followed by a sequence where demonstrators are confronted by the police. In the next frames the police barricade the demonstrators using chain-linked fences. Later, the character watches the films *La Haine* and *The Battle of Algiers* to muse about knowing "so few of the names of the streets where I grew up." The novel closes with side-by-side plates of windows showing views to the outside. In one, the reader/viewer can see wires hanging from an electric pole. In the other the branches of a tree are shown. The narrator explains they had expected to return to the place of their childhood – to the woods – but they probably would not.

In *Estamos Todas Bien* all urban space/use concerns are raised except for surveillance and freedom, order and disorder, peace and violence, and safety and unease. Two grandmothers from two different villages move to the cities closest to them. One moves to Madrid, the other to Valencia. Ana Penyas celebrates the lives of her grandmothers from the time of their youth, to their journeys from village to the city, and then finally to when their apartments empty as the children move away to other places. Land and mobile phones are the link to their progeny, who visit on special occasions. Doors leading outdoors play more of a role than windows. The rhythm of life is dictated by the time to go outside and the TV shows. In this narrative the city is occupied by the elderly. Only they stroll the streets of their neighborhood, buy in the shops, eat in the cafes, and sit in the plazas. Looking from the outside one can see in the balconies a person, a bicycle, a potted plant, and an empty chair. Old friends meet outside their apartments. TV personalities become virtual neighbors to gossip, and to worry about. If there is surveillance, surely it is the elders doing the watching. The scenes imply the city environment has become so static, there is nothing of interest to a growing age, so why bother.

CONCLUSION: WHAT EMERGES?

As noted at the outset, this was an exploration into graphic narratives of urban spaces imagined by others who are not architects or urban design professionals; about how had they presented their views, concerns and attitudes towards inhabiting the public realm through their characters' interactions in city spaces. Masereel showed early on the eyes of others can reflect views on the problems of urban spaces that those who design them should not be ignorant of, nor should they ignore. The intent was to uncover in their articulation of their views of the urban spatial experience, what may be emerging from this digital interfacing age. One expectation was people would be shown continuing their social civic exchanges and meetings in the public realm. Another was that graphic novels would show more action and interaction on the streets that now included characters using social and surveillance devices. Instead, those U.S. graphic novels investigated, including the ones discussed in this writing, envision an abandonment of public life, and rare reference to surveillance or drones. A sense of unease is implied when characters have limited exchange with the strangers they encounter in urban public spaces. Often the interaction shown among strangers is a fight, particularly in graphic novels with superheroes.

Those more insightful graphic novels flagged as exceptions to the sense of public realm abandonment are *Supermarket* and *Strange*

Attractors. However, they infer or openly speculate on other threats waiting for people who venture into a city's future public spaces. Novels examined published by authors from countries other than the U.S. were *Metro* (El Shafee 2012), *Estamos Todas Bien*, *War of Streets and Houses*, *The Spectators* (Hussenot 2015), and *PTSD* (Singelin 2019). They imagined other issues of the coming alteration to public life in urban spaces and their consequent different uses. For example, they consider veteran's homelessness, space for children and for young adults, the silver city, opportunities for fellowship, and the privatization of the public realm among others.

What to make out of this? A disconcerting condition raised by many of the graphic novels and comics examined is how increasingly segregated people are in the digital-age urban. This 'fiction' is confirmed in recent studies showing the growth of the socio-economic differences coinciding with increased segregation of the population in the U.S. Does this signal the end of an 'urban public' that used to be forged by the open interaction among dwellers and users in the city's public spaces?[7] Other questions posed to design professionals in these graphic novels are: Is there anything design can do to counter the 'zombieness' of urban spaces, so devoid of human face-to-face interaction? Should we continue designing to bring back and maintain the active and safe, friendly 'use' of urban spaces that, in today's digital world, no longer attract? Or, should design professionals 'let go' of those 'old' lines and spaces of communication for human use, and leave them to the efficient private and public transport of people and goods. Who walks anymore in most cities anyway? Just service workers? Do they matter?

These are the more unambiguous issues of design raised by the 'others' in graphic novels and comics. T. F. Tierney wondered "how architects can meaningfully engage with change and shape this new world toward humanistic objectives." As we know, before a design problem can be addressed, it must be recognized, examined, and articulated. Do design professionals wait for 'others' to begin new uses of the remnant urban spaces of the city, to jump in with great ideas? The novels are flags waving from the fallow fields of whatever urban is left on the street now. How do we approach them ourselves, and with our clients?

[7] In his book De Waal makes reference to Paul Goldberger, who argued that digital modes of communication adversely impact the life of the street.

REFERENCES

Ahrens, Jörn, and Meteling, Arno. 2010. *Comics and the city: urban space in print, picture and sequence*. New York: Continuum

Berger, John, and Mohr, Jean. 1982. *Another Way of Telling*. New York: Vintage Books. (1995 edition).

Bernière, Vincent. "Frans Masereel, le Dürer du roman graphique" *Beaux Arts Magazine.* Issue 42 (October 2018): 34-35.

Berona, David. 2007. Introduction. In Masereel, Frans. *Passionate Journey: A Vision in Woodcuts*. Mineola, New York: Dover Publications, Inc.

Cohen, Martin S. 1977. "The Novel in Woodcuts: A Handbook." *Journal of Modern Literature* 6, no.2 (April): 171-195.

De Waal, Martijn. 2014 *The city as Interface: How digital media are changing the city.* Rotterdam: Nai010 Publishers.

Donald, James. 2008. "The Immaterial City: Representation, Imagination and Media Technologies." In *A Companion to the City.* New York: Gary Bridge, Sophie Watson, eds. John Wiley & Sons.

Ellard, Colin. 2009. *You are Here: Why We Can Find Our Way to the Moon, but Get Lost in the Mall.* New York: Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group.

Ellis, Warren, and Kurth, Steve. 2010. *Ultimate Comics Iron Man: Armor Wars.* New York: Marvel.

El Shafee, Magdy. 2012. *Metro: A story of Cairo.* New York: Metropolitan Books, Henry Holt and Company.

Gadamer, Hans-Georg. 1986. *The relevance of the beautiful and other essays*. Robert Bernasconi, ed. Cambridge, New York: Cambridge University Press. (1988 reprint)

Hussenot, Victor. 2015. *The Spectators.* London: Nobrow.

Karasik, Paul, Mazzucchelli, David, and Auster, Paul. 2004. *City of Glass*. New York: Picador/Henry Holt.

Lanier, Chris. 2007. "The 'Woodcut Novel': A Forerunner to the Graphic Novel." *World Literature Today*. Vol. 81 Issue 2 (March-April): 14-15.

Lefebvre, Henri. 1991. *The Production of Space.* Oxford: Blackwell.

Longhurst, Brian. 2007. *Cultural Change and Ordinary Life.* Maidenhead, Berkshire; New York: Open University Press, McGraw-Hill.

Masereel, Frans. 2012. *La ciudad.* Madrid: Nørdica Libros.

Penyas, Ana. 2017. *Estamos Todas Bien.* Barcelona: Ediciones Salamandra.

Singelin, Guillaume. 2019. *PTSD*. New York: 1 First Second.

Soule, Charles, and Scott, Greg. 2013. *Strange Attractors*. California: Arcaia.

Tierney, T. F. 2017. "Public Space Rewired." *Architectural Review.* Vol. 241 no.1439 (March): 5-12.

van Parys, Joris. 2019. "The 'Silent Novels' of Frans Masereel: Godfather of the American Graphic Novel," *The Low Countries: Arts,* April 7, 2019. http://www.the-low-countries.com.

Yanow, Sophie. 2014. *War of Streets and Houses*. Minneapolis: Uncivilized Books.

Wood, Brian, Donaldson, Kristian, and Robbins, Robbie. 2009. *Supermarket: Cash Money Edition*. San Diego, California: IDW.

PAPER #2.02

TRANSESCALARITY, AN INSTRUMENT FOR THE SUSTAINABLE TERRITORIAL DEVELOPMENT

Celia Izamar Vidal-Elguera[a], Claudia Bengoa-Alvarez[a], Cinthya Butron-Revilla[b]
[a]Politecnico di Torino, Turin, Italy
[b]Universidad Nacional de San Agustín, Arequipa, Peru

ABSTRACT

Territorial planning is a component of the government's territory, which is in charge for its management according to political, economic, demographic, social, cultural and ecological criteria of society, (Council of Europe 1983) in this context, planning instruments are established where these criteria are determined from an integral process of activities projection. However, to address this topic widely and therefore understand and represent more accurately the character of the different phenomena that are linked to the interior of a given territory, we see ourselves in the need to consider scales of analysis different to the established geographical scales; therefore the principle of *transescalarity* is born, which allows to integrate systemically two or more geographical scales as well as the analysis of the relations between them, for example the local/global relationship. (Bonavero 2005) Consequently, this article presents a reflection on the theoretical and methodological approach that implies building common strategies with transescalar contributions from regional planning to urban-architectural planning in order to improve the territory control from its valuation, management and transformation from a sustainable perspective; evidencing its importance as it provides quality of life for this and future generations, as well as a coherent, equitable and geographically balanced social-economic development. As an example of this approach, we presented the case study of the regional planning of Piedmont (Italy), as well as an overview of the situation in territories that lack sustainable planning such as the region of Arequipa (Peru).

KEYWORDS

Transescalarity; urban-regional planning; sustainability.

INTRODUCTION

Territorial planning is a field that articulates and mediates the complex system of relations and interests that are established between the various disciplines and multiple factors that influence the development of itself, it is here where planning instruments that allow to manage the territory at different scales are available; also, over the years, territorial planning has been seen in the need to consider a development that protects the environment and guarantees the life quality of the citizens, emerging, in this way, sustainable planning. According to Carmona, the literature states that a fundamentally good design is sustainable, but this involves much more than simply reducing energy use and carbon emissions, instead it implies a much deeper basis where by linking theory with practice, considers how the sustainability principles impact in the range of different spatial scales and their links. Therefore, research has focused its search on the implementation of innovative instruments that allow to effectively relate territorial planning with sustainable design.

Currently, in many cases the planning instruments are very limited and not very efficient, therefore, in order to understand and represent more accurately the character of the different phenomena that are linked to the interior of a given territory, we see ourselves in the need to consider scales of analysis different to the established geographical scales, since talking about scale it is not just give measure to things. As Folch says, changing scale is much more than enlarging or reducing, when we increase the scale, we don't see the same things to a larger size, but we see different things. This is how the principle of "transescalarity" arises, which allows to integrate systemically two or more geographical scales and the analysis of the relations between them.

Consequently, this article presents a reflection on the theoretical and methodological approach that implies building common strategies with transescalar contributions from regional planning to urban-architectural planning, in order to improve the territory control from its valuation, management and transformation from a sustainable perspective. To develop this approach, we have studied two examples oriented towards sustainability, such as the instruments of regional planning in Piedmont (Italy), and the approach of innovative urban-architectural tools; contrasted with the situational panorama in territories that lack sustainable planning as is the case of the Arequipa region (Peru).

1. INSTRUMENT FOR THE ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATION OF SUSTAINABLE TERRITORIAL DEVELOPMENT

1.1. Transescalarity

Geography moves on several scales at once, from a smaller dimension such as a neighborhood, town or city to a larger dimension such as a region, country, continent or planet. To talk about scale, then, is not only to give measure to things, but also to understand and represent more accurately the character of the different phenomena (economic, social, cultural, political, psychological, etc.) that are linked within a given territory. As Folch states, changing scale is much more than enlarging or reducing; when we increase the scale, we do not see the same things at a larger size, but we see different things. (Folch 2003)

The specific contribution that geography can make to social research in a context of interaction and disciplinary integration is achieved by adopting a transescalar research perspective. (Bonavero 2005, 5) Transescalarity can be understood in two ways, the first is in a *weak sense* or also known as *multiescalarity,* which refers to the application of concepts and analysis tools at different geographical scales, going from one territorial scale to another; the second is in a *strong sense*, understood as a joint consideration of two or more geographical scales and the analysis of the relationships between them. (*Ibidem*)

To understand these two modalities, we presented some examples of conceptual tools that reflect the content of each type of transescalarity. An example of a transescalar tool in the *weak sense* would be:

> The description and interpretation of spaces through the centre-periphery conceptual scheme: in this case a concept defined from a physical space is used [...] referring it to different analytical dimensions such as economic development, political power, cultural influence, etc. (Ivi., 6)

This conceptual scheme then, is an example of a concept of a *multiescala*r nature since it lends itself to being applied at different geographical scales. (*Ibidem*)

The notion of transescalarity in the *strong sense* can have two meanings: the first understood as:

> *The network metaphor,* [...] in other words, the joint consideration of different geographical scales, [...] this is generally used to represent a set of physical connections (road network, telecommunications network, electricity network, etc.), (Ivi, 6–7)

In this case it is meant as a set of nodes of different types (depending on the geographical scale that is considered) joined by groups of relations of different types; (Ivi., 7) for example, if we analyze the dynamics of a city, it can be understood as:

> A *network of nodes*, since it is made up of various elements that make up the complex economic and social system (the companies that operate in the different economic sectors, the local entities, the training institutes, the health system, [...] etc.) connected to each other by articulated systems of relations; on the other hand, if we change the scale of analysis and consider, for example, the national or continental or global urban system, the same city can be seen as a *node of networks*, i.e. as an element of the national/continental/global urban system, made up of the different cities of a country (of a continent, of the world), linked together by a set of relations of various types (between companies, between universities, between research centers, between local entities and national/supranational organizations, etc. (Ivi., 7)

The second meaning refers to the analysis of the existing relations between different geographical scales, (*Ibidem*) for example, in the analysis of the *local/global relation*, this is understood as the study of the existing relations between the phenomena (economic, social, cultural, etc.) that occur at a local scale and those that occur at a global scale. (*Ibidem*) These relations can be of *determination*, if the phenomena that occur at a global scale determine those that occur at a local scale, in this case the relations between the two scales take a unidirectional form, (Ivi., 9) or they can be of *interaction*, with impulses and tensions that go not only from the global to the local, but also in the opposite direction, configuring, like this, a bidirectional relation; (Ivi.,10) for this last type of relation to exists it is necessary that *innovations* take place in the local systems in which the global system is articulated. (*Ibidem*) As an example of a relationship of interaction, we can quote Fiat:

> This presents, on one hand, a dense network of relations within the local system of Turin (with other industrial companies, [...] with tertiary companies, with higher education institutes, with local entities, etc.), and on the other hand, an articulated system of supra-local relations at different geographical scales, from the national level (with the production units located in southern Italy), the continental level (with the production units in Eastern Europe) to the global level (with the production units in South America and the agreements with General Motors. (Ivi.,11)

Having analyzed the theory and examples of transescalarity, we can determine that the most appropriate transescalar tool to achieve sustainable development at various scales is transescalarity in the strongest sense with regard to interaction. If we enter with this concept in the field of planning, we can determine that it is important the existence of a greater *innovation* through the sustainable urban-architectural design that allows local development and that in turn has an impact at greater scales; in the same way, it is important that planning at a greater scale as that of the region, uses an innovation in terms of better instrumentation in a way that allows regional development and influences at smaller scales. Consequently, the complementarity of innovations at both scales will allow a convergence of actions that are favourable to the territory. (Fig.1)

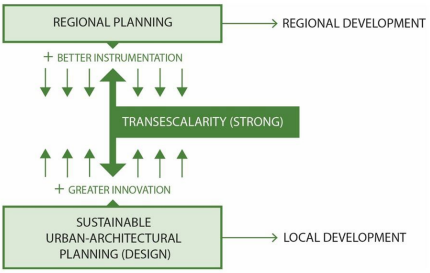


Figure 1. Strong transescalarity scheme in planning. Source: Own elaboration.

1.2. European and Latin American regional planning

In order to address the issue of regional planning and understand the importance of sustainable development from the best instrumentation and innovation from a *strong transescale* perspective, we must first understand the concept of *territorial government*. This is defined as:

> A complex decision-making process of policies through which public authorities regulate – according to the distribution of competences provided in the Constitution – the multiple uses of the territory, combining among them the various relevant interests. (Chiti 2003, 93)

The system of territorial government of European countries is very diverse among them, for this reason, in order to illustrate the similarities and differences of their approach, the European Commission in 1997, carried out a *compendium* where 4 types of spatial planning systems were identified, which are shown below: regional economic planning approach (e.g. France), general integrated approach (e.g. Germany), land use management (e.g. United Kingdom) and urbanism (e.g. Italy). (CEC 1997, 36–37)
Regional development planning in Latin America is defined as the strategic stochastic procedure, (Boisier 1979) in other words, of non-deterministic behavior, in which the evaluation of alternatives and the relations of the environment play a determining role. Furthermore, in the span of 20 years of explaining attempts, systematization of theories and plans for the development of the delayed peripheral or underdeveloped regions of Latin America have been dominated by a theoretical body consisting of three main elements: spatial economic theory, regional macroeconomics, and the development hubs theory. (Coraggio 1980) This is the origin of Latin American planning decisions based on the concept of development hubs (Malinowski 1978) with respect to border areas and intraregional territories. In addition to this diversification of theories, the countries of Latin America follow a planning system based on Latin American urbanism, with foreign urbanistic influences through: the contribution of the academic context, the visits of *foreign luminaries,* the training of Latin American planners in European and North American schools, and the participation in international events. (Cfr. Almandoz 2002; 2007) All this has led to an apparent structuring of the theory and practice of urbanism in Latin America, with a variety of theoretical approaches, giving immediate solutions to social, economic and urbanistic problems, as well as facing a regional problem from a technical and not a theoretical point of view. (Coraggio 1980; Boisier et.al., 1981)
Regional planning, then, is a component of territorial government, understood as the management of *spatial planning* at the regional level according to political, economic, demographic, social, cultural, and ecological criteria of society. It is:

> The most appropriate framework for the implementation of spatial planning policy: coordination between the same regional authorities, local and national authorities and between regions in neighbouring countries. (Council of Europe 1983)

As Petroncelli (2005) states – connecting to Fuccella's (1995) analysis – the purpose of planning is:

> Mainly social, since it must be defined in relation to the needs of the community and aim to achieve development. Development can take place only when man has the possibility of carrying out all the physical and intellectual faculties in a coordinated autonomy; this implies that, on one hand, rules are defined, in order to appease conflicts between individual and collective instances and actions, and, on the other hand, he moves in accordance with the environment, in harmony, that is, with the heritage of the resources available in time and space. (Petroncelli 2005, 37)

Regional planning can therefore achieve this aim with the following objectives:

> Balanced socio-economic development, improvement of the quality of life, responsible management of natural resources and protection of the environment and rational use of the territory. (Council of Europe 1983)

In this context, it is important to mention that in order to obtain a better control of the territory, regional planning must act in a transescale manner, which will happen if it has better instrumentation. We will mention some examples of this instrumentation later on materials and methods section.

1.3. Sustainable urban-architectural planning

The process of planning and modelling of buildings, public spaces, transport systems and services, that does not degrade the environment and provides life quality to citizens, comes from the sustainable urban-architectural design approach, which favours a development that allows to satisfy the needs of the present without endangering the capacity of future generations to satisfy their own needs, (WCED 1987) achieving also a coherent, equitable and geographically balanced social-economic development. Likewise, its importance lies in several aspects, such as mitigating pollution and climate change, promoting land conservation and recovery, properly managing resources and waste, as well as planning and improving efficient environmental and transport systems, as well as promoting a well-developed green structure, and encouraging the construction of high-quality infrastructure that uses environmentally friendly techniques and systems, all while respecting and building on the basis of heritage and cultural legacy.

Currently the orientation of urban-architectural design towards sustainability is crucial, however in many cities we do not see effective results in practice, this is partly because sustainable development requires a greater vision; for this reason it is important to apply the transescalar view on this approach of urban-architectural planning as it allows a more effective sustainable development; in other words, it is fundamental to apply the strong transescalarity with relation of interaction in sustainable urban-architectural design, since the innovation of the interventions proposed at this scale, will be relevant to improve the effectiveness of this type of development at other scales, for example at regional level; and although most urban design interventions are relatively minor, the transescalar interaction of minor strategies can add up to important modifications at the regional, national, continental and global levels, (Carmona 2009) the city in this sense is a complex interconnected system in which any intervention impacts on the sustainability of the whole and vice versa. Sustainable transescalar urban-architectural design is applicable to any place that seeks to adopt effective and synergistic forms of sustainable development.

According to Huang et al., (2015, 10–57) there are twelve strategies that act in a transescalar manner, aimed at cities with unplanned urbanization processes that seek to obtain effective sustainable development. (i) To establish a limit of urban growth, obtaining

compact cities that allow the conservation of more green areas and the reduction of air pollution and road congestion. (ii) The city should be structured around its public transport system. (iii) Combine land uses, getting more dynamic sectors. (iv) The blocks should be small, establishing a network of streets with less flow of vehicles. (v) The public green space accessible must occupy between 20 and 40% of the urbanized surface. (vi) Emphasize the pedestrian environment on a human scale by creating dense networks of footpaths and bike paths. (vii) To work on the consolidation of an efficient public transport system integrated with non-motorized traffic. (viii) Generate strategies to reduce car use. (ix) Restructure or construct buildings that seek to minimize environmental impact by applying various guidelines, such as efficient use of climatic and geographic factors, use of recyclable or low energy content materials, implementation of strategies to reduce and optimize energy and water consumption, also promoting their reuse, as well as the use of green spaces and vegetation as control elements. (x) Analyze and promote district generation of renewable energy. (xi) Achieving sustainable waste management by implementing waste classification systems that must be composted, recycled and reused. (xii) Manage water efficiently.

2. MATERIALS AND METHODOLOGY

2.1. Study case: regional planning instruments in Piedmont (Italy)

Piedmont region obtained its first regional law *Tutela ed uso del suolo – 56/77* in the 70s with the passage of the *territorial government* of the state to the regions. It is here that the subjects and instruments of planning at different scales are established. This law has been modified in 2013, with the aim of achieving *governance*, a modality of territorial government where there is a coordination of social, economic and institutional factors in order to achieve sustainable development of the territory. This is achieved through *strategic planning,* i.e. planning where both short and long term objectives and actions are established and where citizen participation and cooperation of public and private sectors is fundamental. (Font and Rivero 1999) Similarly through the principles of *environmental sustainability* and *energy efficiency*, defined as the result of a dynamic balance between the components: environmental (preventing and minimizing environmental impact through environmental prevention or compensation measures), economic (making the benefits produced greater than the costs in the short and long term) and social (determining a positive impact on the entire population involved). (Regione Piemonte n.d. a, art. 30)

These principles of environmental sustainability and energy efficiency are part of the common strategies of the *Piano Territoriale Regionale* (PTR) and *Piano Paesaggistico Regionale* (PPR) instruments. The PTR, in this sector, offers an overview of the regional territory, possible development scenarios, as well as the definition of sustainability objectives and guidelines for territorial and sectoral planning/programming at each level, (*Ibidem*) with particular reference to the elements that constitute essential limits to safeguard the environmental sustainability and the socio-economic development of the territory. (*Ibidem*) One of the most important novelties that can be found in the Regional law is the *adoption of the PPR*, a very significant instrument, since it raises awareness of the landscape potential of the region, this plan has the function of:

> Defining procedures and rules to ensure that the landscape is adequately known, protected, valued and regulated; in order to promote the safeguarding, management and recovery of the landscape assets and the realization of new coherent and integrated landscape values. (Regione Piemonte n.d. b, art. 1)

The plan considers the following four components: natural-environmental (mountains, forests, rivers, etc.), historical-cultural (historical centers, areas of archaeological interest, etc.), perceptual-identity (viewpoints, visual relationship between settlements and their context, places and elements of identity, etc.) and morphological-settlements (consolidated urban areas, discontinued suburban fabrics, rural settlements, etc.) (Ivi., part IV)
Another novelty used is the *Strategic Environmental Assessment* (SEA), which is an:

> Instrument to evaluate, a priori, the environmental effects induced by the implementation of a plan or program, thus ensuring the integration of the principle of environmental, social and economic sustainability in the decision-making process from the preparation of these instruments. (Ídem 2011, art. 15)

Finally, among other relevant innovations, we have *copianificazione* understood as an activity of integrated consultation between the institutional subjects that are in charge of the planning of the territory at regional, provincial and district level. (Regione Piemonte 2013, Tit, I) From this we have the *principle of subsidiarity* in the formation and approval of district and provincial plans, with this principle a certain degree of independence is guaranteed to a lower authority with respect to a higher one, thus distributing the competences among the different levels of power; (Pavy 2020) also this principle establishes that the decisions are taken by the power closest to the citizens, and only in case this one acts in an inefficient way, the higher power will be able to intervene. (Infoleges.it n.d.) Lastly, we have the introduction of *territorial agreements* and *planning conventions*, in order to share and coordinate territorial policies, as well as to develop an associated form of urban planning.

2.2. Overview of Regional Planning in Arequipa

The Arequipa region is located in southern Peru and is controlled by the instrument *Plan de Desarrollo Concertado* (PDC), which has been institutionalized from the local economic planning reform system and aim to establish a culture of planning within municipalities and to improve efficiency in the allocation of public funds; (Pineda-Zumarán 2015, 66–67) for this reasons, the PDC not only links the economics of planning processes with financing mechanisms, but also institutionalizes participatory planning in order to present to the population the list of infrastructure projects that are managed in a given period. In this context it is clear that, traditionally, there is a disconnection between theory and planning practice not only in regional areas but also throughout all Peru.
The limited planning practice is evident for various reasons. First of all, most regional and municipal governments have few resources and, therefore, they lack the professional and economic capacity to prepare and implement the various instruments required by law for the effective operation of urban planning and management. (Remy 2005, 134) Secondly, public administrators who manage urban planning deal almost only with short-term urban affairs, which are the most urgent requirements that are institutionalized in the PDC. Thirdly, given the limited municipal information systems, according to the *Ministerio de Vivienda* planning does not adequately incorporate urban dynamics: even if local governments have cadastre systems, they are only used for tax collection purposes; in addition, there is almost no evaluation or monitoring of planning processes and interventions. (Pineda-Zumarán 2015,17–18)
In the fourth place, it is relevant to keep in mind that planning in Peru lacks specialized technicians, since there are no planning schools: planning studies are only included

in educational and specialized courses in architecture. Although the Peruvian national government has started a reform in the educational system, it is still necessary to take into account that this reform does not deal with incorporating specialized disciplines that are lacking in the country. (Pineda-Zumarán 2017, 2–3) Finally, the weakness of urban planning is also related to its low financial independence since local governments have limited resources to execute projects and intervene in urban development: this last limitation is evident in the management of the PDC. (Remy 2005, 112)

In this context, the Regional PDC of Arequipa in 2021 incorporates four strategic axes to reach its planned vision; however, for the management of these axes, work structures have been established from the central government which, through national ministries, exercises national policies in regional territories. Although the incorporation of the Municipalities Act of 1984 delegates to the local governments the planning of powers and competences to administer their territories, it gives the governments freedom in decision making but it does not allow them to fully manage their financial resources. Then, Arequipa's regional planning uses a single instrument which, despite having laws that seek to substantially boost and reorient the planning framework, still uses the traditional top-down procedure in its technical management instruments, evidencing inefficient urban management. (Pineda-Zumarán 2016)

2.3. Urban-architectural examples of sustainable innovation

There are several examples of sustainable innovation at the urban-architectural scale, however, we will mention only two that will later serve to explain how, when interacting in a strong transescalar way, they generate better instrumentation at the regional level.

- Bioclimatic site matrix: useful tool to determine the vocation of use of internal and external spaces according to the thermal comfort of users. It consists of shadow projections superimposition and the projections of areas without wind currents in the place to be built, determining four possible combinations of the relationship between site, sun and wind; such superimpositions should take as a sample one summer day and a winter day at three specific times; the result will be the projection in situ of a numerical matrix that according to a scale of priorities will define the most appropriate use of each area. This tool can be used at different scales. (Grosso 2011)

- District Renewable Energy: tool that allows reusing of wind, solar and geothermal energy in public and private spaces, through private agents or in consensus between public authorities and private companies; in each project the energy required by the district must be analysed, combining the needs of heat and electricity, its losses and possibilities of reuse. An innovative example that impacts on different scales is the construction of a municipal power plant that captures the waste heat produced by a nearby steel plant, and then uses it for the benefit of the district. (Huang et al. 2015, 46)

3. DISCUSSION AND RESULTS

In order to obtain a better control of the territory through its valorization, management and transformation under a sustainable view, a better instrumentation at a Regional Planning level and a greater innovation in the strategies of Urban-Architectural Planning must be achieved. This will be achieved by applying the principle of strong transescaling that works by systematically and cyclically integrating two or more geographical scales and the analysis of the relations between them, thus generating a synergy. (Fig.2)

To demonstrate this from a sustainable perspective, we propose two Regional Planning instruments: the *regional landscape plan* and the *strategic planning*, taken under

the European approaches of the study case, and two innovation strategies for Urban-Architectural Design: the *bioclimatic site matrix* and the *district renewable energy generation*, considering them useful elements for territories with absence or deficiency of sustainable planning as is the case of the Arequipa Region. These proposals are related in a transescalar way (at urban-architectural/regional level) since the *bioclimatic site matrix* allows the development of a more precise *regional landscape plan* in its morphological and environmental dimension, and the *district renewable energy generation* allows a strengthening of the *strategic planning* by generating a true cooperation of public and private agents, allowing the proposals not to work in an isolated way but rather synergistically as a whole. Given that transescaling occurs in a cyclical manner, these proposals also function in the inverse manner (regional/urban-architectural) and in a parallel manner (urban-architectural/urban-architectural and regional/regional), producing as a result a better control of the territory based on optimal sustainable instruments and guidelines.

CONCLUSION

A strong transescalarity in relation to interaction is the most appropriate instrument for achieving sustainable development in planning, where innovation between the different scales generates a complementarity and convergence of actions that are favourable to the territory.

The conceptual theoretical framework of this research allows to support that the efficient instrumentation in the regional planning can create a transescalarity development from the territory to smaller scales, in a constant round-trip improvement phase where: (i) the deep study of the territory, (ii) the incorporation of improvement strategies in the cooperation between citizens and public/private entities, added to (iii) the search for environmental, economic and social sustainability, would allow to value, manage and transform the territory. In addition, this new perspective can begin to challenge the evident limitations in the regional planning – such as the one in Arequipa's region – which lacks appropriate instruments. However, more research with

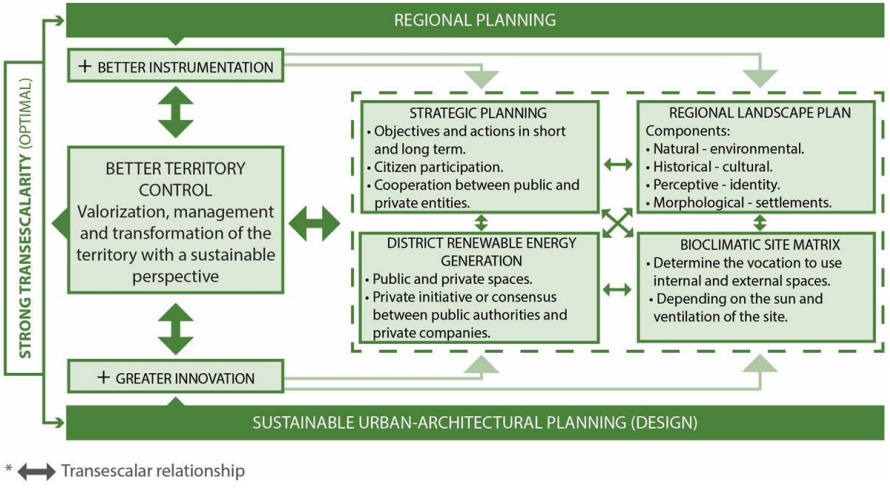


Figure 2. Transescalarity functional system based on some strategies. Source: Own elaboration.

qualitative and quantitative methods is needed on these issues, both in Latin American and European regional areas, to further validate these initial conclusions.

The implementation of cross-cutting strategic guidelines will make it possible to manage development plans in an integrated manner, with the main objective of achieving a consensus view in the regional territory. Likewise, the establishment of cyclical guidelines – which, through a policy network where all agents intervene, will allow to diminish the problems of corruption and judicial crisis – are elementary to solve the problems of regional planning policies in our country. In this way, all the provinces that integrate the region will develop together.

REFERENCES

Almandoz, Arturo. 2002. "Urbanization and Urbanism in Latin America: from Haussmann to CIAM." In *Planning Latin America's Capital Cities, 1850-1950*, edited by Arturo Almandoz, 13–44. London: Routledge.

Almandoz, Arturo. 2007. "Modernización urbanística en América Latina. Luminarias extranjeras y cambios disciplinares, 1900-1960." *Revista Iberoamericana* 7, no. 27 (September): 59–78.

Banini, Tiziana. 2011. "Introduzione alle identità territoriali." In *Mosaici identitari. Dagli italiani a Vancouver alla kreppa islandese*, edited by Tiziana Banini. Rome: Edizione Nuova Cultura.

Bonavero, Piero. 2005. *L'approccio transcalare come prospettiva di analisi. Il contributo della geografia alla ricerca economica e sociale.* Milan: EDUCatt Università Cattolica.

Boisier, Sergio. 1979. *Seminario Internacional sobre Estrategias Nacionales de Desarrollo Regional en América Latina*. Bogota: ILBIS y UNIADES.

Boisier, Sergio, Fernando Cepeda, José Hilhorst, Sohel Riffka and Francisco Uribe. 1981. *Experiencias de Planificación Regional en América Latina. Una teoría en Busca de una Práctica.* Chile: Comisión Económica para América Latina de las Naciones Unidas.

Carmona, Matthew. 2009. "Sustainable urban design: principles to practice." *International Journal of Sustainable Development* 12, no.1 (July): 48–77.

Chiti, Mario P. 2003. "Il ruolo della Comunità europea nel governo del territorio." *Rivista Giuridica dell'Edilizia* 3, 91–107.

CEC–Commission of the European Communities. 1997. *The EU Compendium of Spatial Planning Systems and Policies, Regional Development Studies*, no. 28. Luxembourg: European Communities.

Coraggio, Jose l. 1980. *Las Bases Teóricas de la Planificación Regional en América Latina (Un Enfoque Crítico)*. Mexico: El colegio de México.

Council of Europe. 1983. *Carta Europea de Ordenación del territorio*. Spain: Torremolinos.

Folch, Ramon. 2003. *El territorio como sistema. Conceptos y herramientas de ordenación.* Barcelona: Diputació de Barcelona.

Font, Javier, and Cristina Rivero. 1999. "Participación de la sociedad civil en el desarrollo estratégico urbano y territorial." In *¿Existe sociedad civil en España?: Responsabilidades colectivas y valores públicos*, edited by Joan Subirats. Madrid: Estudios de la Fundación Encuentro.

Fuccella, Renato. 1995. *Elementi di urbanistica.* Florence: Alinea.

Grosso, Mario. 2011. *Il raffrescamento passivo degli edifici in zone a clima temperato.* Rimini: Maggioli editore.

Huang, CC, Chris Busch, Dongquan He and Hal Harvey. 2015. *12 Green Guidelines, CDBC'S Green and Smart Urban Development Guidelines.* China: China Development Bank Capital.

Infoleges.it. n.d. "Glosario." Accessed February 5, 2020. http://www.infoleges.it/NewsLetter/Content/?shortName=Glossario

Malinowski, Andrzej. 1978. "Los Problemas de Planificación Regional en la América Latina." *Boletín de la sociedad geográfica de Colombia-revista de la Academia de Ciencias Geográficas* 31, no.112.

Pavy, Eeva. 2020. "The principle of subsidiarity." Accessed February 8, 2020. https://www.europarl.europa.eu/factsheets/en/sheet/7/the-principle-of-subsidiarity

Petroncelli, Elvira. 2005. *Pianificazione territoriale, principi e fondamenti.* Naples: Liguori editore.

Pineda-Zumarán, Jessica. 2017. "Exploring practitioners' perception of ethical issues in planning: The Peruvian case". *Environment and Planning Politics Space* 36, no.6 (December): 1109–1132.

———. 2016. “Spatial Data Usage, Spatial Thinking and Spatial Knowledge Generation: The Case of Planning Practitioners in Arequipa, Peru.” *Planning Practice & Research* 31, no.3 (March): 270–291.

———.2015. “Learning and Knowledge Generation in Local Decision Making in the South. The Case of Urban Infrastructure Provision in Arequipa, Peru.” *Journal of Planning Education and Research* 36, no.1 (September): 60–75.

Regione Piemonte. 2013. *Elementi per un “Codice dell’urbanistica in Piemonte.”* Turin: Regione Piemonte. Accessed February 7, 2020. https://carteinregola.files.wordpress.com/2013/10/codiceurbanistica-piemonte.pdf

———.n.d. a. “Piano Territoriale Regionale (PTR-2011).” Accessed February 8, 2020. https://www.regione.piemonte.it/web/temi/ambiente-territorio/territorio/piano-territoriale-regionale-ptr

———.n.d. b. “Piano Paesaggistico Regionale (PPR-2017).” Accessed February 8, 2020. https://www.regione.piemonte.it/web/temi/ambiente-territorio/paesaggio/piano-paesaggistico-regionale-ppr

Remy, María Isabel. 2005. “Los gobiernos locales en el Perú: entre el entusiasmo democrático y el deterioro de la representación política.” In *El Estado está de vuelta: desigualdad, diversidad y democracia*, edited by Victor Vich, 111–136. Lima: Instituto de Estudios Peruanos.

WCED–World Commission on Environment and Development. 1987. *Our Common Future.* London: Oxford University Press.

PAPER #2.03

TOP DOWN PLANNING APPROACHES AND URBAN REALITY: THE CASE OF DELHI, INDIA

Sana Ahrar[a], Alexandra Staub[a]
[a]Penn State University, University Park, Pennsylvania

ABSTRACT

In India, a considerable share of the urban population lives in informal developments, while the rate of urbanization in megacities is one of the highest in the world. Indian society is defined by extreme economic disparity, diverse religious practices, and class and caste stratifications, all of which have contributed to spatial segregation. Challenged by widespread informal development, urban planners' response has been to force a "global city" planning model. This model, which focuses on upscale infrastructure, is in stark contrast with the urban poor's idea of an ideal and inclusive city. Through the use of archival data, site observations, and interviews, this paper examines an urban village in Delhi as a case study. This paper analyzes how community members have created their utilitarian environment which, while it does not conform to global city ideals, serves as a well-functioning urban microcosm.

The ingrowth of urban villages is a byproduct of Delhi's rapid urbanization, absence of affordable housing and Delhi's Masterplans. In the absence of affordable housing and employment opportunities, urban villages provide domestic shelter to their residents while offering a low-scale cottage industry market for rural migrants. In the Indian context, where decision-makers and urban planners conflate the "needs of the urban poor" with their own political aspirations for a progressive "global city", this paper puts forth that India's approach toward informally developed settlements must change.

KEYWORDS

Urbanization; informal development; urban village; planning approach; urban informality.

INTRODUCTION

The unprecedented growth and expansion in Indian cities cannot be understood from the generalized theorizations of the global urbanization process (Roy 2005, Sassen 2005); rather patterns of urbanization remain contingent on local conditions and their dependency on and interlinkages with the larger regional scale. One consequence of the fast-paced urbanization of India's capital Delhi are the scattered and heterogeneous housing developments that have cropped up in response to housing needs of various sections of Indian society. These often informal developments call for a more comprehensive view into the urbanizing processes taking place in Indian cities.

Urban villages in Delhi are often agrarian-based settlements that have transformed amidst rapid urbanization. Many have grown organically in close proximity to agricultural fields. As the State Development Authority and other developers acquired the agricultural lands surrounding such settlements in order to build further residential developments and infrastructure, these settlements were caught in the development process of a post-colonial city (Chattopadhay et al. 2014). The changes that occurred in these settlements and their increasing density can thus be understood as a byproduct of Delhi's rapid growth, deficiency of affordable housing, and as a consequence of Delhi planners' attitudes towards these settlement types.

Planning authorities in present-day Delhi recognize 135 urban villages, morphologically divided into seven "not-formal settlement types" (Center for Policy Research 2015). Considering that the 1961 master plan recognized only 47 urban villages, this presents a drastic increase in settlements recognized as transitioned from rural villages. The estimated population residing in this settlement type has increased exponentially in the last two decades.

In order to understand the complexities of Delhi's urbanization process and similar processes of growth and transformation in Asian cities, it is important to investigate smaller developments such as urban villages. This paper examines an urban village in Delhi as a case study, using archival data, site observations, and unstructured interviews conducted during an initial site visit in 2017.

The terms "formal" and "informal" are used here in alignment with nomenclature in official planning documents such as Delhi's master plan. The terms define land zoning, controls and regulations. While settlements planned by the state or developed privately with state approval are described as formally planned settlements, developments in violation of the master plan or developed without official approval are understood as "informal developments".

This paper first discusses organically grown urban villages in Delhi. The second part of the paper examines Chirag Dilli, an urban village in present-day South Delhi. We analyze how these urban villages grew during the pre-1947 colonial period and how they have densified to accommodate a post-colonial population influx. The paper concludes by discussing what we can learn from how India's urban villages function and why it is necessary to rethink India's urban village planning approach.

1. CASE DESCRIPTION

Delhi was not developed from a single node or planning form; it has been built and rebuilt from different cores and using different planning ideologies over the years. The problems and needs of the city's diverse demographics vary based on class and caste divides, social and cultural practices, and other constraints and parameters. With the city's increasing population density and the existing formal-informal relationship between planned and informally developed communities, it is essential to focus not only on solving present-day density problems, but also on recognizing and preparing for anticipated growth. In the following section, we examine the conditions, exemptions and planning legislatures that led to the formation of these complex settlement types in the heart of the capital city.

The current "Master Plan 2021" identifies 362 villages in Delhi, of which 135 are considered urban and 227 rural villages. The urban villages in this setting are defined as formerly agrarian villages that were engulfed as Delhi rapidly urbanized in the post-colonial period after 1947. The rapid growth resulted in Delhi's shift from having an agrarian-based economy to one employing the residents of these villages in the tertiary sector. Rapid growth also led to physical changes in the built environment to accommodate the higher non-agricultural population. These spatial and demographic changes were followed by socio-cultural changes due to the influx of migrant populations (from India's rural areas) in the ensuing decades.

Today, urban villages have emerged within and in close proximity to the original seven cities of Delhi: historic cores such as tombs, shrines, and *Sarai's* (resting place for travelers). Under British governance in 1908, the administration demarcated such settlement areas as *Abadi,* or habitation areas (Pati 2015; Fernandes 2016) and exempted them from land revenue collection (Sheth 2017). The intention behind this nomenclature was to catalog revenue estates, rather than to develop or plan the city. In the post-colonial period, these villages were not integrated into the planning process; instead they were demarcated and received little attention from planning authorities. The

Delhi master plans have acknowledged these villages and the need to integrate them in the planning process but have never detailed the process (Expert Committee on Lal Dora and Extended Lal Dora, 2007). As the Committee report states:

> "Building control regulations were neither prescribed in the Master Plan nor made effective in urban villages (Lal Dora or Extended Lal Dora) under the erroneous but convenient assumption that since such regulations were not applicable in the village 'abadis', the same would also not apply to urbanized villages as well."

2. CHIRAG DILLI: THE URBAN VILLAGE

Chirag Dilli dates back to the 14th Century. The settlement emerged to circumscribe the tomb of a venerated Sufi saint during the Delhi Sultanate period (Rewal 2014). The built form of the village is delimited by fortification walls that were constructed around the tomb site during the Mughal period, alongside the *'Barapullah nallah'* (drain) which runs along the edge of the settlement (Rewal 2014; Mitchell 2010). Unlike other urban villages in Delhi, Chirag Dilli presents a unique case since the village developed as a walled settlement (Mitchell 2010). Delhi's present master plan identifies it as a heritage complex, alongside five other such zones in Delhi (Delhi Development Authority 2007). Many historic structures were erected during the Delhi Sultanate and Mughal period in this village. The settlement has grown both horizontally and vertically within the village boundaries to accommodate the overlaying demands of affordable housing for the urban poor and migrant populations, as well as associated services and employment opportunities in the form of small-scale cottage industries (Narayanan and Veron 2018).

Urban villages similar to the city's other informally developed settlements have a symbiotic relationship with adjacent formally planned developments (Narayanan and Veron 2018). Chirag Dilli is located next to a planned and plotted development, which explains why migrant populations have chosen to reside in this settlement. The initial agrarian-based communities that

Figure 1. Chirag Dilli. (Source: Google map Accessed 2020)

settled in these villages lost their primary economic means as farmers when the agricultural fields were acquired by the State Development Authority for development. Paired with market forces and the need for economic sustenance, the property owners in the urban villages rented out portions of their houses to incoming migrants, while the village's periphery became lined with shops catering to the village residents as well as the neighboring, formally planned settlements (Narayanan and Veron 2018). Since land use and settlement morphology changes were impromptu and not based on building codes and regulations, the present-day urban village is a densely packed settlement with a labyrinthine form that includes crumbling historic structures.

The social changes in this formerly agrarian-based community and the influx of migrants with diverse backgrounds are spatially evident in the caste-based segregated settlement (Mitchell 2010). Chirag Dilli still retains many rural characteristics, yet has become "urban" due to its high population density and expected amenities. The settlement's perimeter is lined with shops selling items and services for everyday life, such as hardware, timber, electronics, automobile repair, and fast food. Alleys lead to smaller stores such as beauty salons and other services that cater to the residents and the community's small-scale industries.

3. THE INFORMAL INDUSTRY AND THE LIVE-WORK RELATIONSHIPS IN THE VILLAGE

In Chirag Dilli, small-scale cottage industries such as the *Momos* (Tibetan dumplings) industry became a major economic source for both property owners and tenants (Narayanan and Veron 2018). Tibetan dumplings are a popular street food in Delhi. Migrant laborers from north-eastern states such as West Bengal and Manipur as well as international migrants from Tibet and Nepal have found informal employment in this small-scale cottage industry run by local entrepreneurs in Chirag Dilli. The dumpling's basic ingredients include chicken and vegetables that are procured from the village itself, providing economic benefits to other small-scale establishments in the settlement as well (Narayanan and Veron 2018).

Housing within Chirag Dilli has changed over the years. Traditional housing was built for extended families and had a courtyard layout. New housing is made up of mixed-use buildings with smaller residential units for the owners, rental units for workers, commercial spaces, and spaces for the production of dumplings. This has changed the density of the built fabric and the morphology of the urban village. Furthermore, since the workplace and rental housing are within the settlement, the public squares, or *chowks*, serve as social network nodes, with ethnic clustering for the workers. (Narayanan and Veron 2018),

Figure 2. Vegetable and meat vendors within the Chirag Dilli settlement (Source: Author, 2020)

Informal spaces created to sustain this small-scale industry within the settlement, as well as the informal market practices which are dependent on these productions, are spread across South Delhi. The central location of Chirag Dilli and the lack of control over the developments and changes within the village have allowed Chirag Dilli to become a major supplier of these dumplings to South Delhi neighborhoods and markets. In this case, the means needed for the functioning of this small-scale industry, i.e. the migrant workers and the ingredients, are both available in the settlement itself. Produce supply has been arranged informally through vendors and market stall owners. Some of these merchants live in the settlement itself, while others live in nearby areas where the dumplings are transported for consumption. The absence of rigid land-use guidelines for informal settlements such as Chirag Dilli has allowed alternative use of spaces based on supply and demand. Migrant populations and urban poor have tapped into the spatial flexibility of the informal village, and we argue that the functional nature of this flexibility can serve as a model for neighborhood planning. The temporality of spaces in the settlement can also be understood as serving the residents' social and economic needs and can be seen as a well-functioning Geddesian (live-work-play) triad. Low-cost housing (live), joins with informal employment opportunities and microeconomies (work) and dynamic social spaces (play) in the village to promote socio-cultural bonds between the residents. Since the streets in the village are not designed for vehicles, the compact setting allows for walkable spaces, and cultural activity spills into all available spaces, leading to need-based adaptations.

Figure 3. Momo/dumpling shops in Chirag Dilli (Source: Author, 2020)

Figure 4. Mixed-use streets within Chirag Dilli (Source: Author, 2020)

CONCLUSION

Advantages of mixed-use development have long been promoted by urbanists. Such thinking has made its way into Indian cities through mixed-use settlements that are built as formally planned, gated communities, and complexes that bring certain attributes of village life into fast-growing cities. Global scholars' interest in the urbanization process in quickly urbanizing cities, as well as the informal approaches adopted by residents to deal with population growth and the inadequacies of affordable housing, present an intriguing case for studying informal settlement in the Indian context.

The "urban-rural blend" transforming villages in Delhi presents examples of walkable, mixed-use, compact, and organically developed settlements where the urban poor reside in close proximity to their workplaces. The spaces in and around these villages have changed due to informal economic activities and ever-growing demands for housing and employment resulting from increases in Delhi's migrant population. Over the years, informal economic activity has allowed landlords to improve their economic status. It has also allowed for business expansions, where entrepreneurs have created beneficial relationships within the urban village. The informal economy has benefited the village by improving housing conditions and village developments in a bottom-up manner (Narayanan and Veron 2018).

This brings forth the argument that functionality is not confined to formal planning. Noticeably, an informally created microcosm such as can be found in urban villages appears to function well for the urban poor. Informality goes hand-in-hand with economic benefits to the resident community, as well as more affordable shelter and employment opportunities within and in close proximity to the settlement. Moreover, in such settlements the relationship between informal systems of informal economies, space creation and the flexibility of space and function is undeniable. Community members have created their utilitarian environment while retaining some of the village's rural characteristics. At the same time, accelerating urban population densities help illustrate the urban processes taking place in informal settlements in India's capital.

Roy (2009) notes that the differentiation between "legal" and "paralegal" by planning authorities in India is a "fundamental axis of inequality" (Roy 2009, 80). The inadequacy of the state to provide an affordable housing supply, employment opportunities, and

infrastructure have led to an uptick in privatized developments. Officials' attitudes towards the "not so formal" developments in the city have led to mismanaged developments and misguided initiatives that tackle problems in ways that are not sustainable. At the same time, state-sanctioned developments for the city seem to focus on infrastructure development and can be perceived as urban aesthetic enhancements (Ghertner, 2015), or as "image-building" exercises (Dupont 2011, 533).

Since the liberalization of economic policies in the early 1990s, the Delhi capital region has surfaced as a major center for foreign investment. The decision to set up Special Economic Zones, with economic reforms for foreign investments and the provision of cheap skilled and unskilled labor, set a precedent for the vision of Delhi as a "world-class city" (Baviskar, 2014; Ghertner, 2015). The world-class city model has been promoted as a political ambition towards capital city planning that runs counter to the existing order suggested by informal communities.

The scenario of privatized infrastructural development to meet the demands of growing cities suggests a problem-fixing exercise rather than a long-term plan. Informal settlements that have come about in Delhi, while in no way ideal creations, are nevertheless functional entities. While one might claim that informal developments are haphazard and that they don't have the physical resources and infrastructure of formally planned communities, they present examples of functioning live-work relationships. For those interested in how urban systems work, they can broaden our understanding of how the urban poor in India can more effectively meet their needs.

REFERENCES

Baviskar, Amita. 2014. "Dreaming Big: Spectacular Events and the 'World-Class' City: The Commonwealth Games in Delhi." In *Leveraging Legacies from Sports Mega-Events: Concepts and Cases*, edited by Jonathan Grix, 130–41. London: Palgrave Macmillan UK. https://doi.org/10.1057/9781137371188_12.

Center for Policy Research. 2015. "Categorization of Settlement in Delhi." New Delhi, India: Center for Policy Research. https://www.cprindia.org/sites/default/files/policy-briefs/Categorisation-of-Settlement-in-Delhi.pdf.

Chattopadhay, Subrata, Priyanka Dey, and Joel Michael. 2014. "Dynamics and Growth Dichotomy of Urban Villages: Case Study Delhi." *Int. Journal for Housing Science* 38 (2): 81–94.

Ghertner, D. Asher. 2015. Rule By Aesthetics: World-Class City Making in Delhi. Oxford, New York: Oxford University Press.

Delhi Development Authority. 2007. "Masterplan for Delhi 2021." Delhi Development Authority. https://dda.org.in/planning/mpd-2021.htm.

Dupont, Véronique D. N. 2011. "The Dream of Delhi as a Global City." *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 35 (3): 533–54. https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1468-2427.2010.01027.x.

Fernandes, Boniface G. 2016. *Fixing Flawed Urban Planning: The Case of Delhi.* Copal Publishing Group.

Mitchell, Maurice. 2010. *Learning from Delhi: Dispersed Initiatives in Changing Urban Landscapes.* edited by Shamoon Patwari and Bo Tang. Routledge.

Narayanan, Nipesh Palat, and René Véron. 2018. "Informal Production of the City: Momos, Migrants, and an Urban Village in Delhi." Environment and Planning D: Society and Space 36 (6): 1026–44. https://doi.org/10.1177/0263775818771695.

Shrivastav, P P. 2007. "Report of the Expert Committee on Lal Dora and Extended Lal Dora in Delhi." Union Ministry of Urban Development. http://delhi-masterplan.com/wp-content/uploads/2009/09/Expert-comittee-report-on-lal-dora.pdf.

Pati, Sushmita. 2015. "The Regime of Registers: Land Ownership and State Planning in the Urban Villages of Delhi" 1: 15.

Rewal, Raj. 2014. "City Level Project Report: Chirag Delhi and Its Precincts." Delhi Urban Art Commission.

Roy, Ananya. 2005. "Urban Informality: Toward an Epistemology of Planning." *Journal of the American Planning Association* 71 (2): 147–58. https://doi.org/10.1080/01944360508976689.

Roy, Ananya. 2009. "Why India Cannot Plan Its Cities: Informality, Insurgence and the Idiom of Urbanization." *Planning Theory* 8 (1): 76–87. https://doi.org/10.1177/1473095208099299.

Sassen, Saskia. 2005. "The Global City: Introducing a Concept." *The Global City* XI (2): 18.

Sheth, Sudev. 2017. "Historical Transformations in Boundary and Land Use in New Delhi's Urban Villages." *Economic and Political Weekly* 52 (5): 1–11.

PAPER #2.04

AN INQUIRY ON THE ARCHITECTURE OF THE OPEN CITIES IN THE AGE OF PLANETARY URBANIZATION

Esin Komez Daglioglu[a]
[a]Middle East Technical University, Ankara, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Urban sociologist Richard Sennett (2017, 2019) has recently introduced the notion of "open city" as a place, which enriches the experience and in which people are more and more skilled in managing complex conditions of life. In this context, Sennett defines complexity as the ability to live and work with people who are different from us and interacting with them without abolishing the boundaries between self and other. This fundamental public dimension and its underlying politics differentiate cities from local communities: individuals have the freedom to remain apart as strangers yet being mutually aware and interactive. Historically, the phenomenon of the city was a political construct - as can be found in the concept of the polis - where different encounters, social conflicts, and their resolution were made possible in its public spaces (Arendt 1958, Aureli 2011). However, the spreading urbanization practices, which have increased enormously since the 19th century in many parts of the world and now reached the planetary scale, have triggered the production of endlessly growing and homogeneous urban spaces by diminishing the distinction between the public and the private, and have become a tool for rationalizing the networks that meet the expectations of globalism and capitalism. Likewise, the urbanization practices in Turkey, which have been effective since the beginning of the 20th century and accelerated in the 21st century, could not succeed in producing sufficient urban form and public life. The most current and clear example of this can be observed in the new peripheral urban developments in Ankara. This paper argues that in order to achieve open cities, architects should reclaim form as a means to cultivate the social and political conditions of urban life. In this regard, based on the typological, morphological and programmatic analysis of the current peripheral urban landscapes in Ankara, this paper aims to speculate on the possible architecture(s) of the open city.

KEYWORDS

Open city; planetary urbanization; urban sprawl; architectural form; Ankara.

INTRODUCTION

Cities evolve and constantly transform in relation to their social, economic and cultural contexts (Geddes 1915). However, the speed of this transformation has increased enormously since the 19th century due to the spreading urbanization practices in many parts of the world. Urbanization has triggered the production of endlessly growing and homogeneous urban spaces by diminishing the distinction between the public and the private, and have become a tool for rationalizing the networks that meet the expectations of globalism and capitalism. Today, urbanization is so expansionist that the concepts of edgeless city, metacity, megalopolis, city-region, etc. were introduced to define the current state of many large

cities (Lang 2003, MVRDV 1999, McGrath and Shane 2012, Neuman and Hull 2014). Urban theorist Neil Brenner (2014, 185-186) even argues that now we are facing with planetary urbanization by stating:

> The emergent process of extended urbanization is producing a variegated urban fabric which, rather than being simply concentrated within nodal points or confined within bounded regions, is now woven unevenly and yet ever more densely across vast stretches of the entire world.

More than half of the world's population lives in cities today and a discussion on the political, social, and formal definition of cities gains outmost significance in the current state of planetary urbanization.

Our contemporary world is immensely urbanized, but do these urbanized areas have the features and potentials of what the idea of the city originally intended? In the light of this question, this paper first discusses the notion of open city, which is recently popularized by urban sociologist Richard Sennett. Following Sennett's depiction of the open cities, this paper dwells on architectural theorist and educator Pier Vittorio Aureli's city versus urbanization distinction to identify the roots and characteristics of these two concepts and relates it with Sennett's comparison of *cité* and *ville*. Then, as its methodology, the paper adopts case study analysis by studying the urban sprawl in the city of Ankara with specific reference to the Kanuni Sultan Süleyman Boulevard located at the south-west part of the city. Afterwards, the paper discusses how architects could contribute to the making of cities against the pervasive character of contemporary urbanization by reclaiming form. Finally, the paper concludes with a call for architects to take positions in imagining the contemporary city by giving examples from the discipline's own history.

1. LITERATURE REVIEW

The concept of "open city" has become a hot topic in contemporary urban sociology and planning studies (Ash 1969, Friedmann 2002, Ipsen 2005, Rieniets et al. 2009, Porqueddu 2018). Among the multiplicity of the discussions, this paper mainly dwells on Richard Sennett's elaboration of the term. Sennett (2017) defines open city as a place, which enriches the experience and in which people are more and more skilled in managing complex conditions of life. In this context, Sennett (2017) frames complexity as the ability to live and work with people who are different from us and interacting with them without abolishing the boundaries between self and other. This fundamental public dimension and its underlying politics differentiate cities from local communities since in cities individuals have the freedom to remain apart as strangers yet being mutually aware and interactive. Therefore, cities are significant political constructs, which cannot simply be reduced to its economic functioning, and as Sennett (2017) argues, we need to "open the city physically up, so that people's experience in it could be more complex and their ability to manage difficulty and complexity could expand." However, in order to discuss open cities, it is necessary first to differentiate the origins, characteristics and the mechanisms of the two related but distinct concepts: city and urbanization.

In his book *The Possibility of an Absolute Architecture*, Pier Vittorio Aureli (2011) compares the notions of city with urbanization by tracing their roots in Greek *polis* and the Roman *urbs*. *Polis* was consisted of separate and well-defined public and private realms and politics was possible in its public spaces since the things related with individuals are non-political as argued by Hannah Arendt (1958) in her seminal book *The Human Condition*. Similar to Arendt, Aureli states

that historically, the phenomenon of the city was a political construct - as can be found in the concept of the *polis* - where different encounters, social conflicts, and their resolution were made possible in its public spaces. On the other hand, as Aureli (2011) argues, *urbs* are organized on the basis of economic efficiency without embodying any political qualification. Aureli (2011) identifies that *polis* has a distinguished and well-defined boundary while *urbs* intends to expand endlessly and homogenously to organize its entire territory based on economic functioning. "While the Greek polis was a strictly framed by its walled perimeter, the Roman *urbs* was not intended to be restricted, and in fact it expanded in the form of a territorial organization, in which roads played a crucial role" (Aureli 2011, 4) Therefore, the concept of urbanization, which was first introduced by the Spanish planner Ildefons Cerdà and theorized in his book *Teoría General de la Urbanización* in 1867, embodies the character of *urbs* as its origin.

Similar to Aureli's comparison of *polis* and *urbs*, Sennett makes a distinction between the French words *cité* and *ville*. In his book *Building and Dwelling: Ethics for the City,* Sennett (2018) argues that there is a great difference between the lived and the built, place and space, *cité* and *ville.* Sennett claims that the great urbanists of the 19th century such as Haussmann, Cerdà and Olmsted aimed to shape the *ville* without considering the lived experience of the *cité* and he (Sennett 2018, 62) states that in the twentieth century "urbanism became less ambitious about connecting the lived and the built". Therefore, there is a growing gap between the *cité* and *ville*, and Sennett introduces here again the concept of open city to bring these two together. There are great resemblances between Aureli's distinction of city versus urbanization and Sennett's differentiation of *cité* and *ville*. However, while Aureli aims to resist urbanization in favor of the city, Sennett tries to engage them. In this regard, these two figures offer completely different and even contrasting design strategies to reclaim the idea of the city. Before commenting on these strategies, this paper will first analyze the current state of cities with particular reference to the urban sprawl of the city of Ankara.

2. METHODOLOGY

Contemporary trends of urban sprawl in cities can be understood from the perspective of Roman *urbs*, which lies at the heart of the idea of urbanization as discussed above. Among many cities, the case of Ankara can be given as an example to discuss the distinction between cities versus urbanization. Ankara is the capital and the second largest city of Turkey. Currently it has more than 5,5 million inhabitants, which have increased by 1,5 million after 2000. Therefore, the city has shown a rapid urban development by expanding its periphery. Originally, the city was designed based on two urban plans developed successively by the German planners Lörcher and Jansen in the 1920s. However, the city has started to expand outside the boundaries of these plans in a very short time due to the unexpected population growth. The control over the overall form of the city and its expansion has started to diminish since the city became uncapable to manage the speed of in-migration. As Batuman (2013, 588) states "the urban history of Ankara throughout the 20th century displays a gradual move away from planned and controlled development."

This paper will briefly discuss the character of the urbanized periphery by particularly referring to the area located at the south-west part of the city, around the Kanuni Sultan Süleyman Boulevard. This area is selected since it is one of the most recent

examples of rapid urban expansion in the city and has many shared properties with the newly emerging urbanized territories in the other parts of the city. This area was hosting some small village settlements and a few numbers of low-density gated housing estates prior to the opening of the Kanuni Sultan Süleyman Boulevard in 2006. Two high-rise housing developments were built in the south of the boulevard in 2012; one by a private investor and the other by the Housing Development Administration of Turkey (TOKİ), which has become Turkey's major mass-housing developer during the last two decades. Since then many new buildings were constructed around the boulevard and urbanized its vicinity.

Various maps are developed in the scope of this paper to show the speed of the urban expansion the relation of the solids and voids, the type of the housing units, greenery, programmatic and transportation analysis of the site and the visual experience of and around the boulevard. The urban sprawl of the city of Ankara during the last two decades shows that the city has majorly expanded through its west and south-west axis. (Fig. 1) The solid and void relation of the urban texture shows that buildings are detached and freestanding and they do not compose well-defined open spaces along the boulevard. (Fig. 2) The study area has many low and high-rise housing settlements and the high-rises are located mostly along the boulevard while the low rises, most of which are gated communities, are located on the inner parts. (Fig. 3) These houses are mostly very luxurious and address the upper middle class. Parks and public spaces are mostly privatized and there is a lack of programmatic diversity and public facilities (i.e. health and education). (Fig. 4) Public transportation is limited as well since there are only few busses, all of which connects the area to the nearby metro stations only. Therefore, there is no direct access to the city center via public transportation and using private cars is encouraged. (Fig.5) The area has no identifiable texture and density but embodies just an agglomeration of distinct object-buildings. (Fig.6)

The selected example from the city of Ankara illustrates how the newly urbanized periphery of the city do not have a clear form. The area utilizes the high-rise urban block for its territorial expansion without offering any public spaces, mix-use activities, and social integrity and multiplicity. The speed of urbanization was intensified with the addition of the basic infrastructure (i.e. roads and boulevards) without any control on its urban form and texture. Buildings are isolated and self-standing; they do not offer well-defined borders. Open spaces are vast and undefined and they are mostly privatized. The entire land is homogenous, neither the built form nor the open areas have a distinct identity. There is neither clearly defined public spaces nor social diversity. By referring to Louis Wirth's seminal article "Urbanism as a Way of Life" dating 1938, Lévy (2008, 66) argues "density and diversity represent a good measure of urbanness, which can be defined as what makes a city a city." Then, the mentioned analyses of the urban sprawl in Ankara brings the question of do we live in cities or in merely urbanized territories? Could architecture have any agency in the making of cities rather than acting merely as a tool serving the pervasive urbanization of the entire territory?

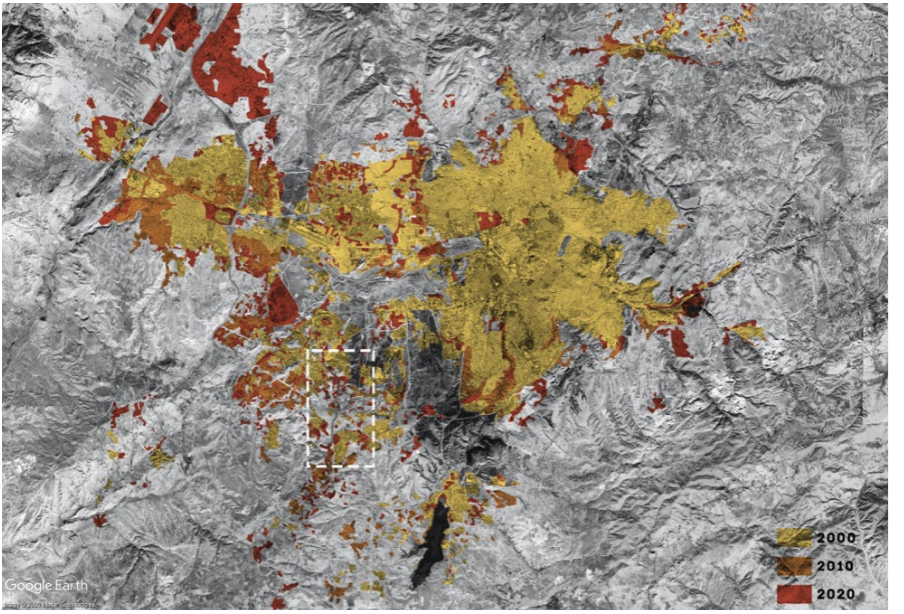


Figure 1. Urban sprawl in Ankara during the last two decades. White dash line indicates the study area. Source: (Komez Daglioglu, Guler and Sahin 2020)

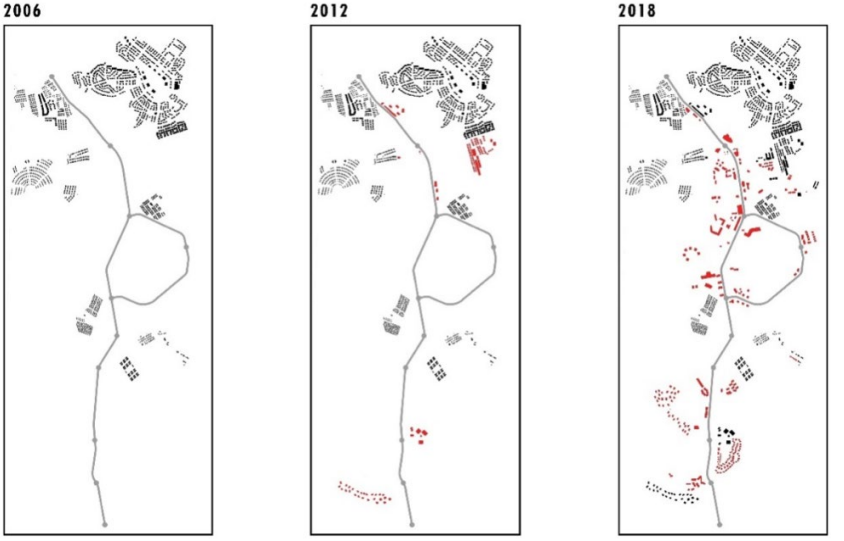


Figure 2. Urban texture and the process of the urbanization around the boulevard since 2006. (Komez Daglioglu, Guler and Sahin 2020)

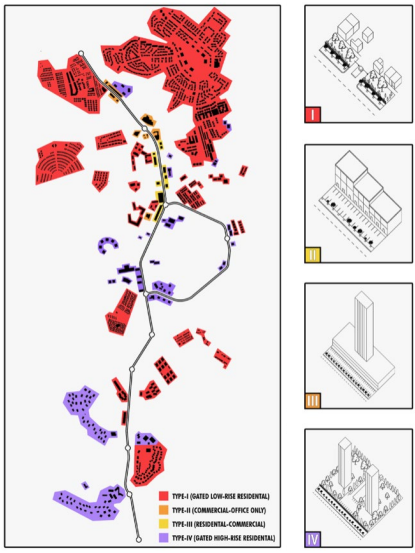


Figure 3. Distribution of the different building typologies around the boulevard. Source: (Komez Daglioglu, Guler and Sahin 2020)

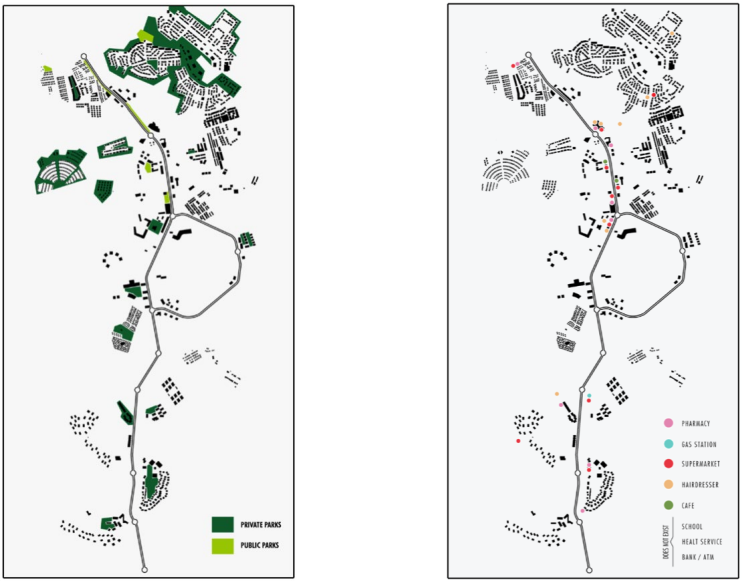


Figure 4. Left: Distribution of the public and private parks around the boulevard. Right: Commercial and public programs around the boulevard. Source: (Komez Daglioglu, Guler and Sahin 2020)

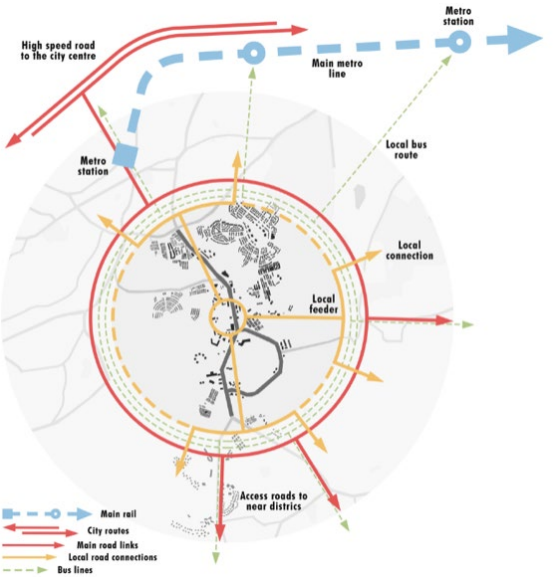


Figure 5. Analysis of the transportation systems in the study area. (Komez Daglioglu, Guler and Sahin 2020)

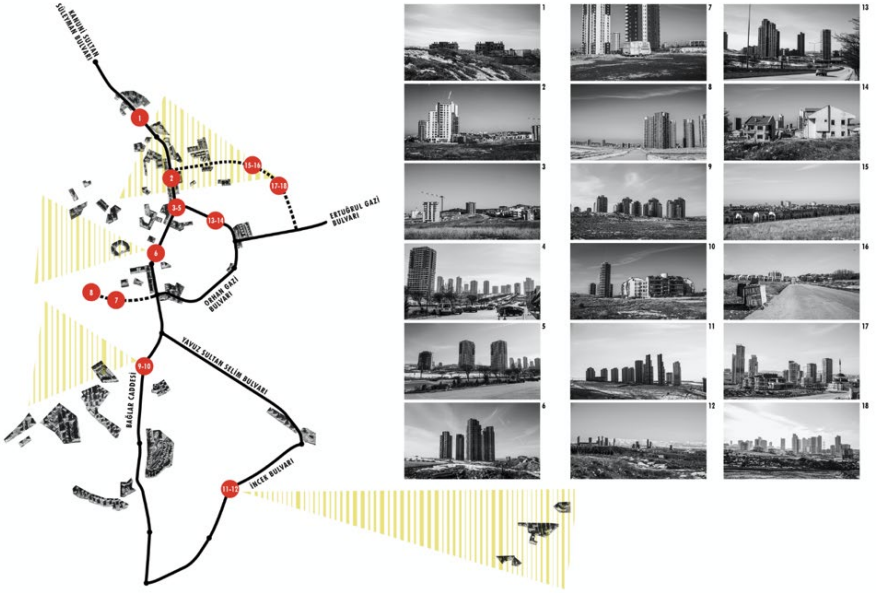


Figure 6. The character and the experience of the built form around the boulevard. (Komez Daglioglu, Guler and Sahin 2020)

3. DISCUSSION

How should we design open cities when the speed of urban sprawl is enormous and reached the planetary scale? If we return back to Sennett, he claims that open cities can be designed through ambiguous edges, incomplete form and unresolved narrative. Firstly, in defining ambiguous edges, Sennett (2019, 127) refers to the distinction between boundaries and borders by stating that "the boundary is an edge where things end; the border is an edge where different groups interact." Thus, Sennett (2019) argues, we should design porous borders, which could enable more interaction among different communities, against strictly defined boundaries. In other words, edges of the cities should not be designed as a well-defined boundary but as a permeable border. Secondly, Sennett (2019, 128) proposed incomplete form so that a building "can be added to, or more importantly, revised internally in the course of time as the needs of habitation change." Therefore, flexibility and participation are significant aspects of architectural and urban design in achieving open cities. Thirdly, Sennett (2019, 128) states that design starts with a narration but this narrative does not need to be linear and completely clear but it could rather be a discovery of exploring the unforeseen. Therefore, the design should aim for exploration rather than over determination.

Sennett's discussion on open cities is crucial for reminding architects and planners the fundamental aspects of cities. However, the three strategies he proposed for the design of open cities - namely ambiguous edges, incomplete form and unresolved narrative - underestimates the potentials of architectural form in enabling the spaces of the public and the political in cities. The analysis of Ankara's urbanized periphery shows that urban sprawl provides closed cities even though there is no total design, clear narrative or the over determination of the urban form. It is clear that open city does not truly mean open form and a well-defined form can truly lead to open cities if "a sharpened formal consciousness in architecture is [understood as] a precondition for political, cultural, and social engagement with the city" (Aureli 2011, back cover). As Sennett (2019, 126) argues, "an open city can well be designed". Perhaps not through porosity, incompleteness and ambiguity but through rigorous experimentation on defined, limited and bounded architectural form. Therefore, against Sennett's emphasis on porous borders, incomplete form and lack of clear narratives in design, this paper suggests Aureli's "absolute architecture" as a means to achieve the architecture of the open city.

In defining absolute architecture, Pier Vittorio Aureli (2011, xiii) emphasizes "the autonomy of the project, for the possibility of architectural thought to propose an alternative idea of the city rather than simply confirming its existing conditions." He proposes absolute architecture as a finite form that resists violent urbanization. In other words, Aureli (2011) introduces form as a precondition for both the autonomy and engagement of works of architecture. In this regard, architecture's critical position towards the city could be achieved through its separation of itself from its other - the space of the city - and in this way separation turns into a political action (Aureli 2011). Aureli's (2011) examples of absolute architecture are various such as Andrea Palladio's ideal villas, Piranesi's map *Campo Marzio*, Étienne-Louis Boullée's visionary projects, and Oswald Mathias Ungers and Rem Koolhaas' The City within the City – Belin as a Green Archipelago proposal. All these examples are from different periods and in different scales, but what they share in common is their deliberate elaboration of architectural form, the underlying concern of which is the city at large and its transformation. In short, "architectural form" has to be reclaimed if we wish to reclaim the idea of the (open) city.

CONCLUSION

Today, architects, architectural theorists and educators are rather ineffective in discussing the problems of contemporary urbanization and in projecting an alternative idea of the city. In fact, various visions towards the making of cities have been developed throughout the history of the discipline. On the one hand, many architects offered utopian projects in the 1960s and 1970s to criticize the existing conditions of cities and societies and to imagine an alternative future such as Archigram's Walking City and Plug-in City, Superstudio's The Continuous Monument, and Archizoom's No-Stop City. On the other hand, Colin Rowe's (1978) *Collage City* and Aldo Rossi's (1976) "The Analogous City" could exemplify how architects could offer real or hypothetical models to bring solutions to the problems of the existing urban questions. Today, we need more than examining and analyzing the conditions of the contemporary cities as offered by "learning from" studies, which were epitomized by Robert Venturi and Denise Scott Brown's (1977) *Learning from Las Vegas* and later reutilized by Rem Koolhaas in his Harvard Design Studio's "Project on the City" series. What architects could offer is to envision alternative images for the city against the fading of cities under the threat of unlimited urbanization. This is not a call for total design or social engineering utopia but rather a proposal for searching the potentials of architectural form, which takes into consideration the city at large. As Aureli (2011, 46) argues, "architecture must address the city even when the city has no goal for architecture."

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This work is supported by Research Fund of the Middle East Technical University. Project Number: 10276. I am thankful to the researchers of the project Ilayda Guler and Umut Bora Sahin for the analysis and their visualization.

REFERENCES

Arendt, Hannah. 1958. *The Human Condition.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Ash, M. 1969. *Regions of Tomorrow, Towards the Open City*. London: Evelyn, Adams and Mackay.

Aureli, P. V. 2011. *The Possibility of an Absolute Architecture*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Batuman, B. 2013. "City Profile: Ankara." Cities 31: 578-590.

Brenner, N. 2014. "13 Theses on Urbanization." In *Implosions/Explosions: Towards a Study of Planetary Urbanization*, edited by Neil Brenner, 181-202. Berlin: Jovis.

Friedmann, J. 2002. "City of Fear or Open City?" *Journal of the American Planning Association* 68: 237-243.

Geddes, P. 1915. *Cities in Evolution: An Introduction to the Town Planning Movement and to the Study of Civics.* London: Williams & Norgate.

Ipsen, D. 2005. "The Socio-spatial Conditions of the Open City: A Theoretical Sketch." *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 29: 644-653.

Lang, R. 2003. *Edgeless Cities: Exploring the Elusive Metropolis.* Washington DC: Brookings Institution Press.

Lévy, J. 2008. "Measuring Urbanness." In *The City: Critical Essays in Human Geography,* edited by J. Lévy, 65-75. London: Routledge.

McGrath, B. and Shane, G. 2012. "Metropolis, Megalopolis and Metacity." In *The SAGE Handbook of Architectural Theory*, edited by C. Greig Crysler, Stephen Cairns and Hilde Heynen, 641-655. London: SAGE.

MVRDV. 1999. MetaCity / Datatown. Rotterdam: 010 Publishers.

Neuman, M.and Hull, A. 2014. *The Futures of the City Region*. London: Routledge.

Porqueddu, E. 2018. "Toward the Open City: Design and Research for Emergent Urban Systems." *Urban Design International* 23:236-248.

Rieniets, T., Sigler, J. and Christiaanse, K. 2009. *Open City: Designing Coexistence.* Amsterdam: SUN Publishers.

Rossi, A. 1976. "The Analogous City: Panel." *Lotus International* 13: 4-9.

Rowe, C. and Koetter, F. 1978. *Collage City.* Cambridge, MA and London: MIT Press.

Sennett, R. 2019. "The Open City." *Lotus International* 168 (January): 117-129.

Sennett, R. 2018. *Building and Dwelling: Ethics for the City*. London: Penguin Books.

Sennett, R. 2017. "The Open City." Filmed October 2017 at Harvard GSD Talks, Cambridge, Massachusetts. Video, 1:33:48. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7PoRrVqJ-FQ

Venturi, R., Scott Brown, D. and Izenour, S. 1977. *Learning from Las Vegas*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

PAPER #2.05

GREEN INFRASTRUCTURE AS URBAN PLANNING REGULATION OF PUBLIC RESIDENTIAL NEIGHBORHOODS

Andrea Iacomoni[a]
[a]University La Sapienza, Rome, Italy

ABSTRACT

The construction of public city, intended as the set of public components related to public spaces, green areas, equipment, mobility, social residences, invents the structural objective to be placed at the base of any planning strategy, as well as regeneration of the city. Hence the need for new cognitive and design strategies, as well as a rethinking of the reference models, typical of the traditional urban society, starting from an integrated, intercalary approach that recovers significant relationships between theory, practice, physical dimensions, economic and social change.
The objective is to set a reflection on the role of the green axes for the redevelopment of popular neighborhoods in the broader theme of green infrastructure as urban planning. Residential districts, potential green lungs, can constitute a "green network".
It is part of the broader disciplinary sector that involves "resilient cities and green infrastructures" as a natural aspect, but also as a response to the anthropization of mobility. This highlights, within the public space, a decisive role of landscape and infrastructures which, when combined, contribute to the broader regeneration, through a design method in which the contextual analysis is the element on which the hypotheses of metamorphosis, as Grassi (1999) reminds us, of

> conformation with respect to the place itself of the intervention, wherein this meeting the place, which takes on a new form, is modified as well.

The contribution will reflect on the sustainable development of the city, highlighting useful elements to be disseminated to civil society, valid not only for understanding the places in which we live but for the changes taking place, knowing that

> building means collaborating with the earth, impressing the sign of a man on a landscape that will remain forever changed, contributing to that slow transformation that is the very life of cities (Yourcenar, 1951).

KEYWORDS

Neighborhoods; public space; green infrastructure; urban regeneration; urban project.

INTRODUCTION

The contribution is part of the debate on the theme of the quality of open spaces in public housing developments (Cicalò, 2009) which has produced over the years in a vast literature, with particular reference to the French experience[1] (Garano, 1990) In this context, the contribution explores. The theme of the project of collective spaces in

[1] His saw a first phase of interventions carried out in the 70s with the HVS program (Habitat et vie Sociale, 1977-1981) on settlements of the large ensembles of HLM (Habitation à Loyer Modèrè); a second phase of interventions carried out with the Social Urban Développement Program of the 1990s which produced interesting results, as in the case of the États-Unis neighborhoods, Lyon VIII in Lyon (Mariano, 2011); and finally the most recent Nouveau Program National de Rènovation Urbaine (2014) which involves around 500 public housing districts throughout France.

the neighborhoods of the public city (Di Biagi, 1986), characterized by a general condition of physical, social and economic marginality, as a privileged field of action on which it intervenes through the implementation field of integrated urban regeneration strategies (De Matteis, Marin, 2013), in addition to conferring a renewed identity and quality to components of the spatial relationship systems and guaranteed the possibility of building places of interaction, social cohesion and sharing (Rykwert, 2003).

Starting from the suburbs means recovering a portion of the existing city, linked to modern expansion, because the suburbs have particular identity thicknesses that are linked to the political and economic history of our nations, which in the last century saw a flourishing period of expansion, in detail linked to the residence. For example, in Italy, they arouse a lot of interest in public residential building districts born after the war following various national laws[2] which led to the construction of significant architectural works, but which did not have the "urban weight". Because the relationship with the other parts of the city was grafted, above all due to the lack of definition of the public space. Thus, following the evolutionary processes of contemporary cities, the problems of public neighborhoods are increasingly accentuated, highlighting a lack of services, connections and general quality of public spaces.

As already mentioned, many studies and projects have highlighted the potential of public residential neighborhoods as complex organisms of the city. Today, however, the condition of recovery must necessarily link to the environmental and natural component of the project, highlighting the potential of "green lungs" in these neighborhoods, where, very often, green standards are very high, but do not have a spatial definition. It is, therefore, necessary to look at the regeneration of these neighborhoods through sustainable models, aware of the values involved such as social equity and respect for local populations, the protection of natural resources and the agricultural use of soils, attention to real performance capabilities of existing territorial systems and their ecological fragility, the uniqueness and unrepeatability of historical, architectural, archaeological and landscape permanences.

The presented work focuses on the issue of building public green networks as a strategy for urban regeneration of residential neighborhoods, which starts from the search for thematic and perspective convergence between the disciplines of Urban Planning and Spatial Planning, of the landscape, environmental technological and design, by making theoretical and methodological approaches interact with the experimental and intervention dimension in the city and in the territory (Iacomoni, Mariano 2019). Urban regeneration interventions require the coordinations of numerous technical, administrative and social cohesion skills, to act in sharing, participating spaces and transformations actions are not only ideas but also by now practices of architecture and urban planning; practices that underlie a different planning as well as a new role of the territory project.

The contribution is divided into three parts: the first linked to the theme of green infrastructure, the second gives an account of the methodological structure adopted for the research and project phases, the third focuses on the results of the experimentation activities conducted on three areas of the city of Pisa, outlining future research prospects in the conclusions.

1. RESILIENT CITIES AND GREEN INFRASTRUCTURES.

For the relationship between human beings and the surrounding environment, it is important to have an overview of everything

[2] Law 1150/42, Law "Piano Casa", Law 167/62 etc.

that can be considered territory and, at the same time, to have an organized view of the various structural and semantic changes that we indicate with the term "anthropization". It is evident that the main function within the complex man-nature system is carried out by the infrastructures and the most important for their functional value are the green ones, a network of green spaces that provides ecosystem services, at the basis of human well-being and the quality of the life.
The European Commission (2019) describes green infrastructure as

> a tool intended to provide ecological, environmental, economic and social benefits through solutions in harmony with nature, to help understand the benefits it offers to human society and to mobilize the investments they support and they enhance these benefits,

acquiring a nuance that strongly connotes them with meanings linked to the ecosystem. Green areas also contribute to the cultural and historical landscape, giving identity to the places and scenery of urban and peri-urban areas, where people live and work. They can make a significant contribution to achieving the objectives of the European Union's regional and rural development policy, climate change, disaster risk management, agriculture, forestry, and the environment.[3]
The goal of an urban strategy that guides redevelopment through green infrastructures is to direct cities towards resilience to changes that are, the ownership of complex systems to react to stress phenomena, activating response strategies and adaptation to in order to restore the functioning mechanisms therefore able to contrast and mitigate climate change and its consequences.[4]
The "resilient city" is modified by designing innovative social, economic and environmental responses that allow it to resist (changing) in the long term, the stresses of the environment and history. Hence the need for the implementation of new cognitive and design strategies, as well as a rethinking on the reference models, typical of the city and traditional urban society, starting from an interscalar and integrated approach, which recovers significant relationships between theory and practice, understanding and proposal, between physical and economic and social dimensions of change.

1.1. The role of urban green as a material for the redevelopment of the city.

Some of the most recent studies[5] highlight how, due to the strong climate changes, the "geographical" characteristics of the environments in which we live are increasingly changing. To go against the trend, green infrastructures can be an effective planning tool capable of contrasting and mitigating climate change and its consequences in the short and medium-term. In particular, Greenery in the city is considered fundamental not only from an aesthetic point of view but also from an environmental one, because it combats air and noise pollution; and from the social one, because it is an occasion for conviviality and meeting. In this sense, various cities have developed strategic planning in which political regulation prevails over constructive privatization. It is thus evident that

> the main function within the complex man-nature system is carried out by the infrastructures and the most important for the functional value are the green ones,

[3] Member States are invited to carry out a mapping and assessment exercise on the state of ecosystems and related services in their national territories: this will contribute to the assessment of the economic value of ecosystem services and promote the integration of these values into accounting systems and reporting at EU and national level by 2020.
[4] Resilience does not imply the restoration of an initial state, but the acquisition of a new balance and the maintenance of functionality.
[5] A 2016 Guardian analysis showed that CO2 concentration has reached levels never seen in 3-5 million years. A recent study, published in the Corriere has highlighted an increase in temperatures in the coming years, which will lead to a "degeographisation" of many cities: that is that climate change will make, by 2050, hundreds of cities that will resemble meteorological, to places that today are closer to the equator.

that is, a network of green spaces that provides ecosystem services, which are the basis of human wellbeing and quality of life[6] (Iacomoni, 2019) which determine action against climate change and to stimulate the development of a "green urban movement".

A strategic planning that has brought interesting results towards the goal of a "Green urbanism", as happened for the Strategic Plan of Barcelona, with the recovery of 200 hectares of urban areas destined for a park; Munich, where urban green and sustainable mobility are the basic axes,[7] but also demonstrated in the "Urban forestry" strategies of Melbourne or Barcelona, and more generally by the systemic approach to the role of green applied by European green capitals.[8] In Italy, many strategic plans have green in the center: Turin, a city in which urban quality and public green have grown a lot, in all neighborhoods; Florence, which aims to expand the offer of urban parks, by connecting a large green areas already structured as a park, located along the Arno; Pisa, with the aim of doubling the greenery in the city, plans to re-naturalize the urban environment. Precisely on this city research was carried out for a deepening of the green networks of public residential neighborhoods, in a wider urban system of public green. Research, of a design type, which led to the redevelopment of some public residential neighborhoods located "circularly" in the historic center of the city.

The reflection is supported by the explanation of emblematic projects that have regenerated and revitalized green spaces through "Regreening". Here, the spaces are reinterpreted thanks to the use of "green" as urban planning of the city, focusing on the quality of the cities and on complex strategies to be pursued and implemented continuously over time and respecting the specifics of the contexts.

The goal of an urban strategy that guides redevelopment through green infrastructures is to design social, economic and environmental responses, in which one of the objectives is to bring nature back to the city within a reasonable time interval to make cities resilient and give citizens quality of life.

Therefore, it is also worth dwelling on the green as one of the "good sustainability practices" adopted by Green Capital. This is the case of Lisbon, with the enhancement of its huge natural area just outside the historic center - Parque Forestal De Monsanto, about 1.000 hectares - sectored into equipped areas and internal ecosystems; Ljubljana covered for three quarters by green areas, where the recovery of the ancient barbed wire barrier erected during the Second World War becomes a green path of memory that connects the new large parks around the city built by recovering abandoned areas (a former landfill, a cemetery area, etc.). Still, on disused landscapes we know the interventions in the Ruhr and the most recent the Zollverein in Essen where the project has taken on an important role in managing the balance between conservation and transformation, combining the recovery of the buildings with that of the landscape in its naturalness, seeking to modify the existing green as little as possible. Unlike in Copenhagen, the green project acquires a strong environmental connotation, with the aim of combating the effects of ongoing climate change; so in the large urban park of Norrebro – 85.000 square meters -the hydrological, biological and social circuits are strengthened by creating a basin[9] in which water will be collected and reused and will also become a place of biodiversity. (Iacomoni, 2019).

[6] It is therefore a network of green spaces that provides ecosystem services, which are the basis of human well-being and the quality of life. The green system has an aesthetic, ecological and social function, but it is also the link between the different areas of the city.
[7] The green system has an aesthetic, ecological and social function, but it is also the link between the different areas of the city.
[8] Melbourne - Urban Forest Strategy: Making a great city greener 2012-2032, Barcelona (Plan Estratègic d'Espais Lliure de Barcelona. Defined dels corredors verde urbans), Nantes, Stockholm and in particular the examples of the "Green Capital", cities that have presented a pioneering call to action, to underline the importance of cities in the fight against climate change and other environmental
challenges and to stimulate the development of a green urban movement. (Iacomoni 2019)
[9] The concept is that of Rain Gardens, parks with portions at altitudes lower than the context, where
water can be conveyed during important weather events.

2. METHODOLOGICAL APPROACH

The methodological approach used is based on the notions of the Urbanisme des modes de vie
(Masboungi, Bourdin, 2004), and in particular on the ability to "look" at the place through the lens of the daily use of spaces, bringing back lifestyles "Premises" at the center of the urban project, for the achievement of an objective of urban quality and renewed use of public spaces, essential elements to relaunch a new urban welfare.
In all three projects drawn up, the methodological structure followed saw a first "analytical-evaluation phase", consisting of an in-depth knowledge of the components of the territory that play a structuring role, with particular reference to the landscape-environmental system and values historical and cultural, to the settlement and territorial context of belonging, and concerning the principles and elements characterizing the urban morphology of the settlements, the accessibility system and the system of offer of services of collective interest. A phase that is not a mere descriptive collection of analytical data, but an interpretation of the dynamics of the stratification and construction process of the territory and, as such, a fundamental moment in the subsequent organization of the rules that underlie the design choices.
The analysis phase is associated with a subsequent phase of "interpretation and critical evaluation of the territory", explained in diagrams and formulated according to criteria of a functional, ecological, formal, aesthetic-perceptive, economic and social nature, which allows identifying the values and the existing qualities on which to base the project; the potential recognizable in some components and/or the aggregations of components that can represent significant opportunities to "exploit" in the project; the risks and negative situations recognized in some portions of the territory for which the project is called upon to find suitable and adequate solutions. The implementation of territorial actions open to the participation of institutional subjects and inhabitants has prompted some questions on the meanings and forms that the places of interaction between people today can take inside the neighborhoods. Prolonged dialogue with those who daily face the conditions of often difficult living, immersing themselves in the public city to take on the gaze of those who normally live and frequent it, has allowed us to reflect on the role that physical space can play in the activation of new urban regeneration strategies, in which public action is confronted with the needs of its recipients, taking as a priority the reconstruction of a notion of the common good.
The second phase of "Design strategies and explicit objectives" allows to define the design strategies, the general and specific objectives and the degree of transformability of the systemic components, also in relation to the congruence between the forecasts of the urban tools and the design hypotheses, obtaining thus the first indications to guide the actions and the punctual interventions, graphed in the proposal of the Preliminary Structure Scheme.
The third phase is represented by the "Project proposal", with particular reference to some themes, such as integration with the surrounding area, functional mixitè, integration between private and public spaces and the consequent morphological-typological choice of the parts built, attention to the construction of connective public spaces of social aggregation, attention to the hierarchical system of mobility and accessibility and the integration of the green design with the settlement system and mobility ensuring the continuity of the components of the ecological network.
Regenerating the city and contemporary territories, giving a renewed centrality to the

public space project, therefore represents a strategic perspective, a way of taking care of the city, starting from what it is currently and restoring it to its original sense of aggregation center social, because as Grumbach wrote (2003):

> The shape of the city is difficult to fix. It escapes. It is precisely for this reason that we must build the base, the evidence, the permanence: the public space.

3. THE GREEN SYSTEM OF PISA PUBLIC RESIDENTIAL QUARTERS

The territory can be seen as a "landscape network" or as a flexible structure of "networked landscapes", therefore we face the notion of landscape as a characterized space, but also as a possible infrastructural sub-system "in" and "starting from" Territory. This has a new aggregating function, welcoming spaces of calendared activities that attract the inhabitants, identifying new hierarchies and "urban topographies". Topography originates from tópos, "place", and graphía, "handwriting", it represents the discipline that studies the procedures and systems necessary for the representation in a planimetric and altimetric scale of the terrain. In the configuration of a city, it is determined in relation to the distribution of streets, squares, monuments and the like, that is, from those elements that characterize its use and accessibility. In these topographies, we can identify a new common area in geographical and territorial terms, in which to produce original research on the theme of the intercalar project: from the city to the landscape, to architecture; where infrastructures represent the trait d'union.

Consequently, one of the future objectives may be to increase the role of nature in the city, "making cities more resilient and able to host populations with adequate quality of life levels" (Ghezzi, Daole, and Ottaviani, 2017).
We previously highlighted the decisive role of green infrastructures among the strategies of the capitals characterized by very large green areas[10] and by a network of public parks more than 300 meters away from each other. Starting from 2006, the city of Pisa has undertaken design strategies to increase the well-being of its citizens in the urban area, with a global vision of the ecological infrastructure project that has provided for the interaction of three main actions developed with a finalized landscape vision. to qualitatively increase the pedestrian and cycle connections of the widespread green network of the city in its entirety (Fig. 1).
The in-depth analysis dealt with on the city of Pisa highlighted how the 2018[11] Strategic Plan places green infrastructure as the basis on which to organize the territory with a desire

> to indicate the stages for the sustainable and lasting development of the territory by facing changes climatic.

If it is true that green infrastructure is realized at different scales (national, regional, metropolitan, local)

> Pisa has built its green infrastructure from a local scale with an over-municipal perspective, where the pillars are vegetation, the water, culture, and sweet transport;

constituting the identity of the place as the city and the architecture.

[10] Above all the green network of Hamburg, the Parque Florestal de Monsanto in Lisbon, the Path of Memories and Comradeship in Ljubljana, but also the green spaces of Nijmegen.
[11] The Masterplan, combined with the Strategic Plan approved in 2018, places the green infrastructure as the basis on which to organize the territory (Fig. 15). However, the parks and gardens of the Municipality of Pisa, with the exception of the historical ones, appear as many small particles scattered throughout the territory without connections, a typical expression of the zoning urban culture.

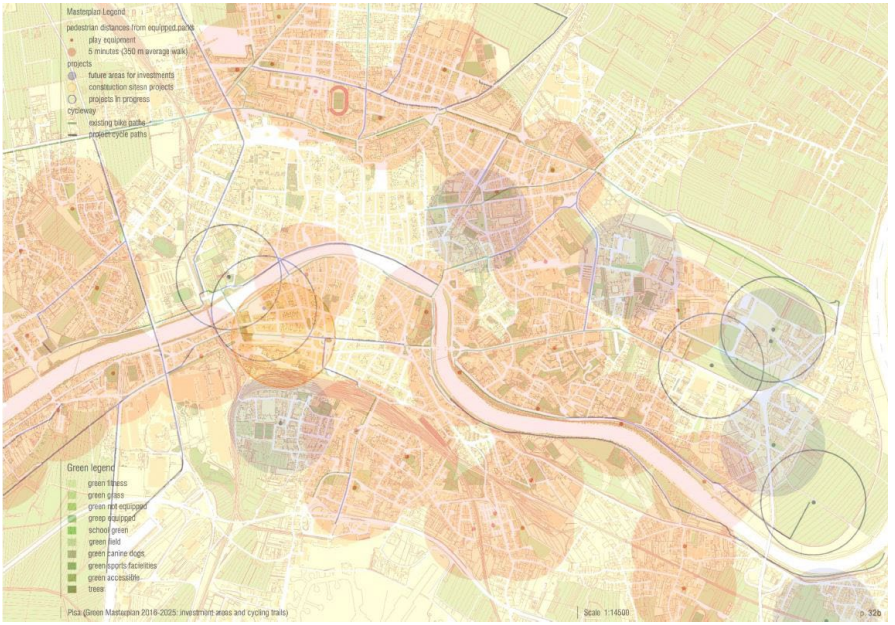


Figure 1. Reworking of the Green Masterplan in Pisa. Source: (Semprepiovi 2019)

The project research activity reported here was intended to provide the theoretical-methodological and operational tools necessary for the experimentation, according to an integrated and interscaling approach, of a planning and design process, aimed at implementing a regeneration strategy and urban and metropolitan rebalancing, with particular reference to the design of the system of green spaces.[12]

The neighborhoods of public residential buildings, which historically have a good supply of greenery, are part of this green system around the capital. Therefore, it may be useful to investigate the potential of green infrastructure as a city planning regulation, in particular, the role of natural axes for the redevelopment of popular neighborhoods, potentially green lungs in a "green network".

In fact, the reconstruction of the public city (understood as the set of public or public use components relating to public spaces, green areas, equipment, mobility, social housing) is the structural and indispensable objective to be set at the basis of any regeneration strategy of the contemporary city. With this objective,

in recent years, the Municipality of Pisa has undertaken a strategy for the redevelopment of public residential neighborhoods, in particular here we mention some interesting examples, partially created, but with different design approaches, such as the INACasa of Gagno neighborhoods (Fig. 2,3), the Passi and San Giusto which through the redesign of public spaces, with a decisive role of interstitial greenery (but also of the larger parks) constitute a "network" within the wider context of "Pisa is a resilient city and its green infrastructures".

[12] The richness offer of green spread in the city of Pisa is evidenced by the system of connections, current and planned, since over 50% of the parks can be reached on foot in 5 minutes, while the entire offer of public green areas can be reached in 10 minutes.

The cases, which we are not going to describe in detail, highlight the fundamental importance of the green design, as an ornamental element, but above all as an object of environmental redevelopment and implementation of spaces for socializing and relaxing.
These projects are designed as part of a larger project to naturalized the capital, in which rural, urban, public and private areas coexist, with the intention of participating in the wider strategy of "Pisa green and the resilient city".

Figure 2,3. Green regeneration project of the Gagno district in Pisa. Source: (Workshop Student Iacomoni 2017)

The city and the territory, in their entirety, can no longer be understood as a purely geometric physical space that must be organized and modified to satisfy the needy of the community but must be conceived as relational spaces. The real change is a new way of thinking, planning and managing the fragmentation of green areas as the only large park, through an 'urban mending' operation aimed at improving the quality of life, from primary physical needs to different recreational and social expectations; in essence, it will be necessary to radically rethink the space of the city as a whole. (Fig.4)

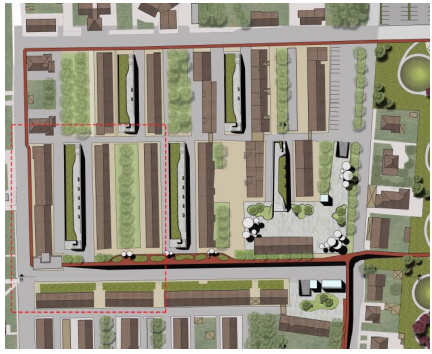


Figure 4. Redevelopment of the I Passi district in Pisa. (Student Urban Laboratory Iacomoni 2016)

CONCLUSION

The public city can play a role in the activation of regeneration processes in larger areas of the contemporary city. This is due to the frequent proximity of the districts to landscape resources, infrastructural networks and nodes, centrality at urban level; the "porosity" and, consequently, the high transformation margins of their spatial structure; of the increasingly pressing demand for social housing that invests them

today. The contribution aims to highlight a fundamental aspect for the sustainable future of cities: that of the importance of a complex and overall green strategy, both in the preparation of plans and in the individual project; approaching the goal of a green city: building a network of green, natural, man-made, agricultural or urban spaces, which is a small radius, and combined with mobility, determine an increase in the quality of the city and users. Thus, the Pisan context examined, due to its location on the edge, can easily interact with the major infrastructures in the north and south of the city by creating a network system of public housing districts. Here we can highlight the determining role of the landscape and infrastructures which, put in a system, contribute to the wider regeneration, through a design method in which contextual analysis is the element on which the metamorphosis hypotheses are defined. (Fig. 5,6)

Figure 5,6. Project for the redevelopment of public, mobility and green spaces in San Giusto district in Pisa. Source: (Giraldi Iacomoni Architects 2018)

In fact, through the use of a methodology that focuses directly on the knowledge of the context, the structuring systems and the figures of the spaces present in areas under study have been outlined, being able to verify how, between place and project, a relationship of change, but also and above all, as Grassi recalls, of

> conformation with respect to the place of the intervention itself, wherein this meeting the place is changed as well, which takes on a new form (Grassi, 1999).

Thus, the products obtained can represent a useful document to be disclosed to civil society, valid not only for understanding the places in which we live but above all for the changes taking place in these territories, with the awareness that

> "building means collaborating with the land, imprinting the sign of a man on a landscape that will remain forever modified, contributing to that slow transformation that is the life of cities" (Yourcenar, 1951).

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The projects are developed by the author (figure 5,6) and in courses and workshops held by the author (figure 1,2,3,4).

REFERENCES

Cicalò E. 2009. Spazi pubblici. Progettare la dimensione pubblica della città contemporanea, Milano, FrancoAngeli

De Matteis M. e Marin A. 2013. Nuove qualità del vivere in periferia. Percorsi di rigenerazione nei quartieri residenziali pubblici, Gorizia, Edicom Edizioni

Di Biagi P. 1986. "La costruzione della città pubblica", Urbanistica n. 85

Commissione Europea. 2019. Relazione della Commissione al Parlamento Europeo, al Consiglio, al Comitato Economico e Sociale e al Comitato delle Regioni – Riesame dei progressi compiuti nell'attuazione della strategia dell'UE per le infrastrutture verdi, 184 final

Garano S.. 1990. a cura di, La riqualificazione delle periferie nella città europea, Roma, Edizioni Kappa

Ghezzi, P., Daole, F., Ottaviani, G. 2017. Pisa. Piantare alberi per mettere radici. Città Resilienti, Infrastrutture Verdi, Milano, Paysage

Grassi G. 1999. "Progetti per la città antica. La mediocrità come obbligata", Casabella n. 666.

Grumbach A. 2003. "La città, processo e linguaggio", Rassegna di Architettura e Urbanistica n.110-111.

Iacomoni A. 2019. "European Green Capital. Best practive for sustainable urban development", Agathòn n. 6

Iacomoni A., Mariano C. 2019. "An experience of public space regeneration in the social housing district of Gagno in Pisa", Territorio n. 89

Masboungi A., Bourdin A. 2004. Un urbanisme des modes de vie, Parigi, Le Moniteur

Rykwert J. 2003. La seduzione del luogo, Storia e futuro della città, Torino, Biblioteca Einaudi

Yourcenar M. 1951. Mémories d'Hadrien, Parigi, Librairie Plon

PAPER #2.06

ARTIFICIALLY UNNATURAL: NATURE 2.0

Gayatri Tawari, Alka Tawari[a]
[a]University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan / CTES College of Architecture, Mumbai, Maharashtra

ABSTRACT

It is no secret that humans are biophilic species. Environment, climate and geography all play a crucial role in creating our landscape; and as shapers of the built world, we predominantly orchestrate access to it. "Connection to nature" is arguably an overused phrase in our field – in education as well as profession. Yet, it is also one of the most under designed aspects of most designs, for lack of function. We equate artificially curated "green space" or a "cluster of trees" in an otherwise non-functional space as a celebration of nature *fitting into* our designs; and that is where we have gone terribly wrong. We have brought the superficial openness of nature into our urban fabric, without giving it any underlying purpose or intention. Nature is function, in its entirety. John Muir has said, "In every walk with nature, one receives far more than they seek". As our cities continue growing, we need to respond with innovative and functional places of respite that offer more than just a vista to look at. From beekeeping on rooftops in New York City, USA, to repurposing a warehouse rooftop for greenhouse farming in Montreal, Canada or Prinzessinnengärten in Berlin, Germany where wasteland was converted to a thriving urban farm; there are several precedents for alternate ways of accessing, engaging, and coexisting with nature. At the rate of urbanization, density is an asset to help maximize infrastructure in the most efficient method for most people, but landscape could be our strongest tool to combat and attempt at reversing the damage we cause because of it. It cannot be solely about ornamentation or planting native shrubs anymore; it has to be our way of giving back some of what we take.

KEYWORDS

Urban landscape; city scape; city design.

INTRODUCTION

Cities have always been the center of innovation, creativity and ingenuity, ever since the concept of city dwelling came into existence. When people are put together, opportunities, ideas, wealth grow at a more influential and exponential curve, unhindered by our base number. This model has worked time and again, led to the rise, as well as fall of many cities over time. Simply put, cities are nothing but a complex network of information exchange over several different physical as well as metaphysical platforms. The bigger the city, the wider the network and thus a much larger appeal that makes people migrate to that city.
The current rate of shift in residence of rural population to urban areas is expected to increase to 68% by 2050 based on a population projection study conducted by the UN. This, combined with a growing global population, needs a thorough evaluation of the spatial and utilitarian demands placed on these urban areas and the socio-political, environmental and overall wellbeing of its residents. The industrial revolution of 18th – 19th century resulted in cities becoming the center of not only innovation, but also disease and miserable living conditions for its city dwellers. This then led to adoption of landscape architecture as a

profession to help bring livability back to cities. What started out as expansion of garden designing skills, now helps create thriving and vibrant communities, while helping preserve and protect our natural environment.
An excellent historic example of this would be the ancient Aztec city of Tenochtitlan. Because the city was set at the bottom of a valley, the city would constantly flood during rains. Instead of trying to go against nature, the ancient civilization developed a very unique method of co-existing with nature and the issues that arose because of it. Along with allowing for water canals to become a source of transportation, they also developed the ingenious method of developing *chinampas*, or arable land created over fresh water to allow for agricultural use even in a region that was constantly flooded.

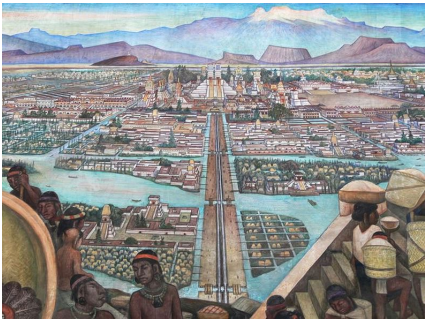


Figure 1. A mural of a market in Tlatelolco in ancient Tenochtitlan, where modern day Mexico City sits. It is currently on display at the Palacio Nacional in Mexico City. Source: (Jen Wilton 2012)

Modernization and development in modern day Mexico City later forgot these ingenious methods, and the chinampas only exist in a small region in Xochimilco at the southern end of the city.
Unfortunately, this field has yet to undergo its final transformation of adding utility to this man-made landform design. Central Park, Manhattan for instance, is one of the largest urban parks in the world, yet on any given day, it is primarily the formal and curated spaces that have the most people, while a majority of the parkland stays underutilized, because people don't know what to do there. As one of the more densely packed metropolises that is fighting for every square inch of space, does Manhattan truly need acres of sculpted and ornamental nature, with vistas of rolling meadows and curated forest patches? Would it not be more prudent to find purposeful use of this limited and invaluable resource?
With all these factors tying into the increasing scarcity of spatial and natural resources, as designers it is imperative that we look past mere ornamentation and take every opportunity to design for a landscape that offers much more than its users can imagine – because that will lead to more innovation. New Yorkers have already innovated the use of their rooftops for beekeeping all across the city. So, isn't it our duty as city designers to offer them even more access an opportunity to find ways to innovate and revolutionize our coexistence *with* nature?
This paper attempts to answer that question and provide support for the hypothesis that multifunction landscape design is the need of the hour to create an environment where nature is function. Regardless of any calamity in the past, nature has sustained and survived for the future. Nature finds a way, because it has a purpose. Cities will need a first line of defense against several of the effects of global warming, and our built world cannot afford functionless ornamentation any more. Our landscapes will define not only livability but also resiliency against the impending climate change repercussions.

1. CRITIQUE OF MODERN DAY URBAN LANDSCAPES

1.1. Origin of Landscape Architecture

Historically, landscape architecture originated from the garden design skills of transforming

landforms with the use of water and vegetation and applying it to man-made spaces. It created an ornamental vista to look at and is comparable to a work of art. These spaces provided a much needed respite from the industrial world and added a certain softness to the cities. These oasis pockets are vital in the social fabric of a city as they offer opportunity for interactions and cultural engagement with the rest of a community.

Figure 2. Undefined function in parks often go unused or are underused because people don't know what to do with the space. Up: Ann Arbor, Michigan; Right: Birmingham, Alabama. Source: (Gayatri Tawari 2019)

1.2. Influence of Landscape Architecture on Cityscapes

The result of landscape design are beautifully sculpted gardens with minutely curated experiences ranging from a forest trail to a tranquil pond or a bustling fountain in the middle of a plaza and rolling meadows around. Any and all leftover space is then turfed over with grass and adds yet another useless greenspace to our cities. Huge areas of land are just carpeted in green, with wasted potential for resiliency opportunities. Apart from possible urban farming opportunities, these could be used for storm water capturing, or by planting naturally purifying plants these could be used as sites for purifying greywater that could then be distributed for other landscape functions.

Figure 3. Giant fields of unused and purposeless green space is blocked off from the surrounding neighborhoods in Baltimore, Maryland. Source: (Gayatri Tawari 2020)

1.3. Influence of Landscape Architecture on Streetscapes

The modern day street landscape is limited to ornately lined trees, potted shrubs if any, and medians on street covered with turf. That's a lot of real estate in the public domain that has

absolutely no inherent value – ornamental or resilient. The trees are restricted because of surrounding buildings, and people can barely even use the medians because there's no function associated to it. Just because it is leftover, doesn't mean it should be ignored or left purposeless. The fact that we're not asking questions like, "What could be a more efficient and optimum use of this space?" serves as a reminder, that we treat nature as a leftover entity in our city planning. Anything that is too random a shape, or is a no man's island is converted into a green lawn.

2. PRECEDENTS

Humans are very creative and given the right framework find opportunities in the unlikeliest of scenarios. Israel as a country is an excellent example of resiliency and transforming public lifestyle to work towards the collective aspiration of conserving water. Their water usage efficiency, including agriculture and everyday usage, is at 92%. So today, a landlocked nation with no source of fresh water is not only self-sufficient, but is also exporting high quality potable water to its surrounding nations. Is anything truly impossible if we lay the groundwork out for the unknown innovations from the onset? This is the type of ingenuity we need to allow for in our city planning from the onset. How do we create the optimal policies and spaces for our city dwellers to flourish and innovate unhindered? Following are some example of radical land and space usage that outline the benefits of alternative methodologies.

2.1. Beekeeping in New York City, USA

Urban beekeeping exploded in the city in around 2010s as more and more residents started maintaining bee farms on the rooftops of their buildings. Once they realized the functionality and ease with which they could adapt their interest to their geographic location, it has caught on more interest. There is an official beekeeping society as well as several certificate programs for amateurs who are interested in pursuing it as well. From setting up local honey farms, to creating a lot of awareness for environmental benefits for the beekeepers as well as the other residents of the building, it has ended up bringing together a community and setting up the situation for creating other creative outlets as well.

In recent times, the bee farms are doing so well that the bees are running out of forage and have to go a further distance for flowers. This creates an interesting opportunity for city planners to come up with a solution to this unforeseen issue and leads to question how the planning laws and regulations need to be written to account for the unknown.

2.2. Rooftop farming over industrial warehouses in Montreal, Canada

Lufa Farms is a local company in Montreal that is making tremendous progress in making urban agriculture hyper local and sustainable. Rooftops are a grossly underutilized building surface, especially in large industrial complexes where there can be no other use added on to the structures. By converting that space to introduce vertical farming, hydroponics and other innovative urban agriculture methodologies, they will be able to feed 2% of the local population with very sustainable, local and fresh produce. This solution does not require more intervention than setting up greenhouses over existing rooftops. Imagine, with the right resources and tools if every community could set up a smaller version for themselves, while relying on these larger farms for a bigger proportion for distribution, it would bring resiliency to every household. If we think if this as a kit of parts, this solution reads as a hyper-adaptable one, because in other climate zones, it could be modified to be conducive to the microclimate of any area and only use the

technology and infrastructure necessary for that particular area.
While their largest farm will be about 15,200 square meters, this could also be accommodated on the smallest of roofs for the basic necessities. The trans-scale applicability of the solution is yet another perk, that will make it relatively easy to plan for it from city design and city planning point of view. From creating jobs to boosting the local market, this method also promotes a healthy lifestyle with very little carbon footprint by reducing transportation, and thus long distance storage requirements.

2.3. Urban gardening in a decrepit land in Berlin, Germany

Prinzessinnengärten is a 6,000 square meters site, is an example of a community and neighborhood coming together to create and urban oasis which continues to add on to the city's eco-friendly drive in every aspect. By encouraging the drive to go hyper local and instill a sense of well being, the community came together to turn a desolate area into a lush oasis that provides plentiful produce every season. Staying local also helps appreciate the seasonality of farming, because to grow out of season crops requires that many more resources or it increases transportation costs to have the produce shipped in. Instead of just an urban garden, this space has become the center of the social fabric where residents across multiple groups come together to learn and change their lifestyle.
This, in tandem with social initiatives could serve as a wonderful opportunity to push for urban renewal and revival efforts for a city struggling to do so.

3. OPPORTUNITIES

Modern day cities are practically built out, any new construction is a series of negotiations between what is existing and how we can accommodate more. This opens up a lot of scope of innovation, creativity and strategic planning for ensuring we enable our cities to be able to deal with any challenge, instead of disable them to respond to their own needs. Like the electronics industry, this is the perfect opportunity to focus on compact, smaller scale interventions that then go on to create a much larger impact on the built environment. No space can be wasted and if anything, the smaller the space the bigger the challenge to repurpose it with efficiency way beyond its means.

3.1. Copenhagen's response to climate change

Copenhagen created a plan to tackle climate change and flooding caused due to rains in the city along with rising sea levels by developing a network of blue-green infrastructure throughout the major arteries with the hope of providing ample functional green space during the dry season while transforming into lakes and areas for the storm water courses to capture large amounts of storm water. This helps create responses for several key parameters that get affected due to flooding on streets, from traffic congestion, to lack of space for pedestrians to safely navigate the area. This blue green infrastructure is also very functional in the sense that it is relatively low tech. By employing highly permeable substructure and vegetation it reduces the need to build complex underground drainage tunnels that take up a lot of cost for maintenance and are unused in the dry season. But this solution is usable at all times and has tremendous storage capacity without heavy infrastructural intervention.
Compare this with the functionless green medians found throughout US streetscapes, which offer absolutely no resiliency to the street network and end up creating danger road conditions for automobiles. The blue-green infrastructure also allows for park space to be broken down and distributed throughout the city instead of as just one localized point. By creating this blue-green networks in major activity areas also creates an 'eye on the street'

situation which helps add security and the peace of mind for people to engage with and enjoy this beautiful yet functional amenity.

Figure 4. Ramboll Studio's vision for streetscape transformation by building resilient landscape to accommodate flooding situations in Copenhagen. Source: (Atelier Dreiseitl 2015)

3.2. Mexico City's response to growing urban farming needs

Mexico City has an ancient tradition of collective farming called ejido lands. In ancient times, a community would develop around a farmland and cultivate crops together by sharing ownership of the land. In 2017, I explored one possibility of bring that tradition to modern times and applying it to the present day space crunch and growing population demand the city faces. Already there is a major initiative underway to transform all the major bridges and public infrastructures like flyovers into a green belt using vertical landscape and other methodologies to help offset the ecological damage and pollution in the city. Continuing that effort further, vertical farming solutions can help solve the issue of the farmlands that no longer exist in a city running out of space. If the shared walls and roofs of buildings are treated as the surface for farming, the collective ownership can instead be found on the perimeter of buildings instead of on flat land along it.

This collective ownership could result in various groups coming together and forming a tighter community when one group runs out of space or ends up having a much higher demand that they can sustain. Mexico City also has a very strong informal economy set up, and this system could aid in the development of processes to formalize some of that system into mainstream economy. Exterior walls and roof tops are highly underutilized blank canvases that present a prime potential to push for hyper local farming and investments in local economy.

Figure 5. An exploration of using the present day shared ownership surfaces of exterior building walls and roof tops as the ejido land for urban agriculture. Source: (Gayatri Tawari 2017)

3.3. Mexico City's response to growing flooding and land sinking crisis

Mexico City is a city of paradox, in that it has simultaneous land sinking crisis due to underground water table depletion as well as seasonal flooding and severe damage to existing infrastructure in the city. A lot of it has to do with the fact that the city actually sits at the basin of an ancient lake, drained out by the Spanish invaders to establish modern day Mexico City. Due to this, water naturally pools into the streets as it has no where else to go, but none of this water is captured for later use. At the same time, population explosion has resulted in overuse and of the underground aquifer system which has resulted in the overall land sinking by several inches since the depleted water is not replenished.

Figure 6. Modern day neighborhood of Nezahualcoyotl, Mexico City. Source: (Johnny Miller, 2016)

As the international airport in Mexico City is going to move to a different area, the current airport site presents a tremendous opportunity to deploy forward thinking urban planning policies as well as for researching some solutions to develop resilient planning in the city. I researched the design implications of integrating a blue-green infrastructure into the neighborhood level breakdown to help capture seasonal flood water, and through naturally permeating and filtering processes help replenish the underground water supply as an effort to stabilize the land sinking – thereby targeting and solving both problems with one relatively low tech solution. Neighborhood level bioswales would transform into small ponds and the bioswales along the major arteries would work as rivers carrying the water away and retaining any surplus water. This water would naturally filter through the permeable streets and pavements, soil and other vegetation, and make its way into the underground water system. Throughout the exploration, conscious effort was made to keep the fundamental ideology of existing social fabric as is, while providing strategic planning at critical points to have the maximum benefit with minimum intervention.

Figure 7. An exploration of blue-green infrastructure broken down by neighborhood level to help offset the seasonal flooding in Mexico City and to help alleviate land sinking issues as a result of underground water depletion. Source: (Gayatri Tawari 2016)

CONCLUSION

The reason landscape architecture is so important now and for our future, is because it is not absolute. The public domain that we develop through it is permeable, and fills in the spaces between the heavy infrastructure and building that are crucial to creating a dense urban footprint. Landscape design is our tool not only to provide for immediate needs but to also be prepared for what awaits our fragile environment due to global warming. Our urban landscape will be the one major force that holds the entire fabric of our social construct. Imagine losing access to farm lands that are flooded with water, and having warehouses ready start producing our food through aeroponics or hydroponic farming systems that are built throughout the city. Imagine having entire waterfronts and street networks be prepared to stop and accommodate floods from rising sea water levels, that life doesn't need to come to a standstill.

Urban landscape needs to be ready for rapid transformation because there's only so much space and even that is endangered. We as urban dwellers, need access to nature, but can no longer afford it to be just a visual or sensory experience. Instead of just seeking an experience, we need to learn how to coexist with nature because it will require a lifestyle change from us, and that cannot be an overnight change. The nature around is in constant flux, to expect it to stay the same despite all the damage that over consumption has caused it, is going to be a big disadvantage for the pursuit of solutions. The sooner we realize the problem, the sooner we can start finding better and more meaningful solutions to remedy it. The sooner we remedy it, the better our future generations can flourish and not be left to deal with the mess that our inaction will have created.

Nature is function, in its entirety. Nature is not superficial and nature does not serve one sensory experience alone. Nature doesn't need preservation, because nature is resilient, she will survive. What we need is to learn adaptability, learn to transform. Until we do that, it is a disservice to claim that we emulate nature in our designs.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to thank my professors – Maria Arquero De Alarcon and McLain Clutter at University of Michigan, Ann Arbor for always making me to push the boundaries of research and pursuit of solutions for the many problems plaguing our world today. I would also like to thank Prof. Alka Tawari for always providing the most meaningful encouragement and to never stop seeking new problems to solve. Seth Seigel's book "Let There be Water" has played a tremendous role in increasing my curiosity and interest in the State of Israel for developing top down policies that create for some of the most innovative problem solvers and what governments and nations need to do to sustain ingenuity. I hope to further my research and studies into public policy because of it.

REFERENCES

Cichanowicz, Lily. "Urban Gardening: A Look at Berlin's Prinzessinnengärten." Culture Trip. The Culture Trip, October 17, 2016. Accessed March 2, 2020. https://theculturetrip.com/europe/germany/articles/urban-gardening-a-look-at-berlins-prinzessinnengarten/.

Wilton, Jen. "Diego River mural in the National Palace, Mexico City" Flickr. Yahoo!, November 14, 2012. Accessed August 28, 2020. https://www.flickr.com/photos/guerillagrrl/8185829539.

Kimmelman, Michael. "Mexico City, Parched and Sinking, Faces a Water Crisis." The New York Times. The New York Times, February 17, 2017. Accessed March 2, 2020. https://www.nytimes.com/interactive/2017/02/17/world/americas/mexico-city-sinking.html.

Kunstler, James Howard. *The City in Mind: Notes on the Urban Condition*. London: Simon & Schuster, 2003.

Lau, Rachel. "Montreal Company Says New Greenhouse Will Be Largest Rooftop Farm in the World." Montreal, CTV News, November 21, 2019. Accessed March 2, 2020. https://montreal.ctvnews.ca/montreal-company-says-new-greenhouse-will-be-largest-rooftop-farm-in-the-world-1.4695825?cache-.

Mehta, Samira. Menon, Palliavi. "Mexico City: A City That is Flooding, But is Still Running Out of Water." Water Center. Accessed March 2, 2020. https://watercenter.sas.upenn.edu/mexico-city-a-city-that-is-flooding-but-is-still-running-out-of-water/.

Seigel, Seth M. *Let There be Water: Israels Solution for a Water-Starved World*. New York: Thomas Dunne Books, an imprint of St. Martins Press, 2017.

"Two Years After Legalized Beekeeping, City May Be Running Short on Forage: WNYC: New York Public Radio, Podcasts, Live Streaming Radio, New." WNYC. Accessed March 2, 2020. https://www.wync.org/story/218358-urban-bees-may-be-running-out-foraging-ground/.

29.06.2016 Climate Change: Copenhagen Declares War on Floods." Drees & Sommer, February 1, 2019. Accessed March 2, 2020. https:/www.dreso.com/en/press/press-releases/2016/Copenhagen-declares-war-om-floods/

PAPER #2.07

MAPPING THE PASSIVE NATURAL SURVEILLANCE THE BILBAO METROPOLITAN AREA

Iñigo Galdeano Pérez[a]
[a]University of the Basque Country, Santurtzi, Basque Country

ABSTRACT

This research focuses on the parameterization of a generative algorithm that allows the comparative, valid and reliable analysis of the different urban morphologies in terms of security. Specifically, this algorithm is programmed to qualify and map the degree of the passive natural surveillance, a glocal principle of the Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design methodology. Thus, although exclusively architectural and morphological, this study is based on a theoretical framework and on a dialectics formed by the material feminism and the environmental criminology. The analysis, the approach and the scope of application seek the actuality, the suitability and the social relevance in the autonomous community of the Basque Country, because the last revision of its Land Planning Guidelines included for the first time the terms *security* and *gender*. In short, the algorithm has been applied on the left bank (Santurtzi, Portugalete, Sestao and Barakaldo) and on the right bank (Getxo, Leioa and Erandio) of the Bilbao Metropolitan Area, mapping the natural surveillance of 8.000 hectares (861.100.000 ft2) by a grid of 40.000 sectors. One grid where each sector represents the number of doors, windows, showcases, etc., (passive or panoptic natural surveillance) which focus on that portion of public space. In conclusion, a new urban and criminological reading of the city, that allows the analysis of the different morphologies. A new urban information source, a new support and help for the participatory detection of the so-called *hot spots of fear*.

KEYWORDS

Criminology; security; architecture; urbanism; algorithm.

INTRODUCTION

This research introduces a new review and parametrization of the *eyes on the street* of Jane Jacobs (Jacobs, 1961). An investigation from a thesis, in development stage, of the University of the Basque Country within the framework of the SCAHL doctoral programme; the doctoral programme in Scientific Cross Disciplinary Approaches to Heritage and Landscape.

Specifically, the article focuses on the development and results of the parameterization of a generative algorithm programmed to qualify and map the passive natural surveillance; a glocal principle of the Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design methodology, the CPTED methodology. In short, this generative algorithm has been parametrized to allow the comparative, valid and reliable analysis of the different urban morphologies in terms of security. It has been parametrized to create a new urban and criminological reading of the city, a new urban information source, support and help for the participatory detection of the so-called *hot spots of fear*.

Then, it should be noted that the analysis, the approach and the scope of application seek the actuality, the suitability and the social relevance in the autonomous community of the Basque Country, because the last revision of its Land Planning Guidelines has

also included for the first time the terms *security* and *gender*. They are included in a brief manner, but at least they are included for the first time in the Basque urbanism.
Therefore, although, trial and error, the algorithm was parameterized using the municipality of Bermeo (Biscay) as reference, due to its small size and due to an agreement with the council. It should be noted that the definitive scope of application of this SCAHL thesis has been the left and the right banks of the Bilbao Metropolitan Area (Biscay); the fifth most populated metropolitan area in Spain, almost the 80% of the population of Biscay, and the 43% of the Basque Country

1. SCOPE OF APPLICATION

Summarizing the scope of application; on the one hand, the left bank of the estuary of Bilbao, the Nervión estuary, is popularly known as the *Working Bank*, which hereinafter will be called by its official Basque place name Ezkerraldea (Ezker-Left, Aldea-Zone). An estuary bank composed by the municipalities of Santurtzi, Portugalete, Sestao and Barakaldo. Altogether, 4.053 hectares (436.260.000 ft^2). And, on the other hand, the right bank of the Nervión estuary is popularly known as the *Bourgeois Bank,* which hereinafter will be called Eskuinaldea (Eskuin-Right, Aldea-Zone). An estuary bank composed by the municipalities of Getxo, Leioa and Erandio. Altogether, 3.898 hectares (419.577.000 ft2). In total, left and right, 7.951 hectares (855.838.000 ft2) that have been mapped by the generative algorithm.
Ezkerraldea, the Working Bank, and Eskuinaldea, the Bourgeois Bank, territorialize the worker and bourgeois class struggle; a struggle that has been extended from the Basque industrialization directly to the present day. If in the heart of the intense Basque industrialization the greater presence of the iron and steel heavy industry, such as the Blast Furnaces, was located at Ezkerraldea, turning it into one of the most important birth places of the state of the labour movement, socialism and communism, at the other bank, at Eskuinaldea, were located the industrialists and the bourgeois-class. And, even today, if the municipalities of Eskuinaldea, such as Getxo, are listed amongst the cities with the highest per capita income levels (23.589€) and with the lowest unemployment rate (10,6%) of the Basque Country, the municipalities of Ezkerraldea, such as Santurtzi, are listed amongst the cities whit the lowest per capita income levels (15.117€) and the highest unemployment rate (16,1%) (EUSTAT, 2020).
But although that differences are important and should be observed, the main reason why this region conforms the scope of application of the thesis, is that there is not only a political and economical counter position between the banks, but also a morphological and architectonical one. There are two different city model; one on the left workers bank and other one on the right industrialists and bourgeoises bank.
In this way, morphologically, Ezkerraldea is an industrial estuary bank full of working-class residences and high-density buildings, while Eskuinaldea is a bourgeois estuary bank full of single-family homes, mansions and low-density buildings; a territorial area for the secondary residence of the Biscayan rich bourgeois-class.
Ezkerraldea, apart from host the greater presence of the iron and steel heavy industry, is an area completely linked to the Exterior Port of Santurtzi, to the shipbuilding industry of Bilbao and to the Mining Area (Mehatzaldea); a region composed by the municipalities of Abanto-Zierbana, Muskiz, Ortuella, Trapagaran and Zierbana. So, it can be said that the iron and steel heavy industry cycle was closed at the left bank of the Nervión estuary, because the ore

was extracted, processed and exported on site. First of all, the ore was extracted in the mining towns of Mehatzaldea; then, it was transported by train to the heavy industry of Ezkerraldea, a region in which the ore was processed; and finally, the shipbuilding industry of Bilbao was responsible for the construction and reparation of the ships which exported the processed ore from the exterior port of Santurtzi to the international markets.

In contrast, if historically Ezkerraldea was a proletarian area, whose inhabitants depended on the port, the mining and the industrial activity, Eskuinaldea was a capitalist area, whose inhabitants depended on the labour exploitation of their neighbours and on the perpetual extraction of their surplus value. At first, in the 19th century, on the right bank there were not an iron, steel or shipbuilding heavy industry, mining activity or a big exterior port; Eskuinaldea was an urban development based on the elite tourism such as the Sands neighbourhood (Areeta) whose urbanism references were searched from the nearby spa cities, such as Donostia or Santander.

But at the beginning of the 20th century, they began to build new residential complexes of immense and luxurious mansions; a new urban development focused on overcome the tourism to generate a not only seasonal stay. So much so that, the Basque bourgeois-class gave advertising names to their new neighbourhoods such as the Winter City (Neguri); "a city for the winter, not only for the summer (not only for the seasonal stay)".

An historical dynamic, that finally generated the greater demographic explosion of Eskuinaldea in the seventies when the middle-class families ditched Ezkerraldea joining the bourgeoisie, in the search of a more comfortable place to live rather than the left bank of the Nervión estuary.

Thus, while the Basque bourgeois-class was creating word games for their luxurious new residential complexes, the working-class chanted "Alirón, Alirón" in the sports fields, as a victory cry, in reference to the exclaimed cry in the mines when the new high iron content veins were found; All-Iron. An economic, social, political, morphological and architectonical heterogeneity interesting to be studied from an urbanistic and criminological perspective. Furthermore, it is a heterogeneity particularly relevant in view of the industrial navigability of the estuary and the subsequent lack of bridges and communication between the banks; 100 meters (328 feet) of estuary wide and 10 kilometres (32.800 feet) of estuary length that become an insurmountable natural barrier that separates banks, social classes, political ideologies and urban morphologies; a continuous line that separates two different models of city. (Fig. 01)

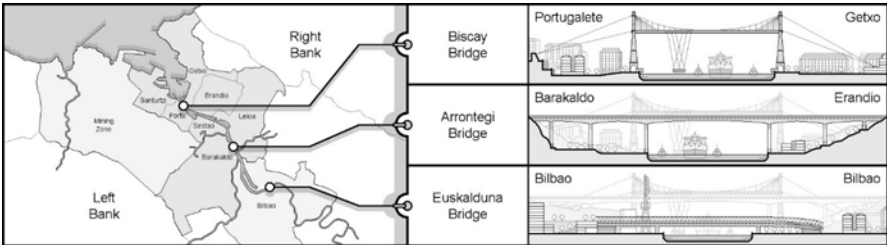


Figure 1. Metropolitan Bilbao bridges. Source: (Own production 2020)

It was not until 1893 that the banks were connected for first time, when the Biscay Bridge was built at the mouth of the estuary, connecting Portugalete and Getxo; a bridge of 45 metres (147 feet) above the high tide live and 164 meters (538 feet) long, whose pay gondola only has capacity for 6 cars and 200 passengers every 10 minutes.

90 years after and 6 kilometres (20.000 feet) far away from the Biscay Bridge, in 1983, the second bridge, the Arrontegi Bridge, was built connecting Barakaldo and Erandio; a conventional and free of payment bridge only whit traffic access, not pedestrian. That is, abovementioned, nowadays, in 10 kilometres (32.800 feet) there is not a pedestrian communication free of payment between Ezkerraldea and Eskuinaldea, between the *Working* and *Bourgeois Bank*. The nearest one is the Euskalduna Bridge of Bilbao; a conventional and pedestrian communication between the left and the right banks; outside the scope of application; 10 kilometres (32.800 feet) far away from the Biscay Bridge and 4 kilometres (13.125 feet) from Arrontegi. A bridge built in 1997 upon the ancient shipyard of Bilbao, which was closed in the late eighties, removing the navigability of the estuary and closuring definitively the steel and iron industrialisation; note that the Guggenheim Museum of Bilbao was inaugurated on the same year, 1997.

Definitively, this scope of application is a curious and small territory that offers a wide range of morphologies in which test the programmed algorithm.

2. THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

Before proceeding with the details and results of the parametric algorithm, it is also appropriate to approach, superficially, the theoretical framework and context of this study; only superficially, because it is not the goal of this article, and because it has already been explained and discussed in other international congresses:

Congresses, where the feminist and materialist perspectives of the thesis have been explained, such as the *MoMoWo Symposium; Women´s Creativity since the Modern Movement from 1918 to 2018 Toward a New Perception and Reception* (Torino, June 2018); the *Karl Marx from 1818 to 2018 an International Conference on the 200th Anniversary of His Birth; A Critique of Political Economy* (Bilbao, March 2018); and the *3rd MoMoWo International Conference Workshop; Women Designers, Architects and Civil Engineers between 1969 and 1989* (Oviedo, October 2017).

Other congresses, where the architectonical and criminological perspectives of the thesis have been explained, such as the *4th ISUF-H* (*International Seminar on Urban Form - Hispanic*) *International Congress; Urban Form and Metropolitan Territories* (Barcelona, September 2020); the *4th Research and Doctoral Days of the International Doctoral School of the Catholic University of Murcia* (Murcia, June 2020); the *1st Congress of Criminology of the European University of Madrid; The Criminology as a Transforming Agent* (Madrid, October 2019); the *Arcadia 5; International Conference of Architecture and Cooperation, Architecture and Habitat, and Sovereignty of the People* (Donostia, October 2018); and one collective book about quotidian criminology whit Wolters Kluwer editorial *Great Criminological Challenges of the XXI Century* (Madrid, July 2020).

And congresses for internal promotion of the University of the Basque Country, where the academic research in Basque language is encouraged, such as the *2nd Doctoral Days of the UPV/EHU; Our Research* (Bilbao, July 2019); the *3rd IkerGazte Research in Basque; International Conference for Basque Researchers* (Baiona, May 2019).

Furthermore, currently they are in process others congresses, such as the organized one by the International CPTED Association in 2021 and the *8th Doctoral Sessions of the G9* (Zaragoza, March 2020) where the doctoral student, representing the field of architecture

and engineering of the University of the Basque Country, will defend this investigation against the universities of Cantabria, Castile-La Mancha, Extremadura, Balearic Islands, La Rioja, Oviedo, Navarre and Zaragoza.

Consequently, although exclusively architectural and morphological, this study is based on a theoretical framework and on a dialectics formed by the material feminism and the environmental criminology; thus, on the scientific materialism and on a dialectical contrast between the Marxist usage and exchange values of the city; a dialectical contrast studied by Henri Lefebvre in *The Right to the City* (1968), reviewed by David Harvey in *Rebel Cities: From the Right to the City to the Urban Revolution* (2012).

A revolutionary school of thought, theoretical and practical, in continuous evolution from *The Communist Manifesto* (1848) to the last Marxist-Leninist studies; in continuous revolution from *The Urban Question* (1974) of Manuel Castells to *The New Urban Question* (2014) of Andy Merrifield; from the French poems of *The Flowers of Evil* of Charles Baudelaire (1857) to the anonymous nom de plume of The Invisible Committee (2017); and a long et cetera, because in accordance with Hannes Meyer: the more one is aware of the systematic oppressions, the more one is required to report them, architecturally too (Meyer, 1972). In other words, this is a scientific and materialist study, for the class struggle, based on the concrete analysis of a concrete situation. A thesis based on the architectonical material feminism (Hayden, 1981) where the capitalism and the patriarchy are the key aspects to take into account for the urban and criminological study, analysis and project of the city.

Specifically, abovementioned, the investigation is focused on a materialist and feminist review of the eyes on the street of Jane Jacobs, because as she described in *The Death and Life of Great American Cities: There must be eyes upon the street, eyes belonging to those we might call the natural proprietors of the street* (Jacobs, 1961). That is, according to Jane Jacobs, more eyes upon the street, more people on the street means safer neighbourhoods. As she said: *When there are people present in a public space such as city streets, it strengthens the space and inspires social cohesion* (Jacobs, 1961).

So, against the growing postwelfarist culture of control described by David Garland in *The Culture of Control: Crime and Social Order in Contemporary Society* (2001), this study seeks the urban safety, through the culture of care, reviewing the conditions provided by Jane Jacobs for the city diversity, contact and safety: (1) *the generators of diversity*, (2) *the need for primary mixed uses*, (3) *the need for small blocks*, (4) *the need for aged buildings,* and (5) *the need for concentration* (Jacobs, 1961).

2.1. CPTED Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design methodology

In this case, *the eyes on the street* match exactly with *natural surveillance* of the CPTED methodology; a simple and structured methodology adaptable to the Marxist-Leninist perspective in order to gain a revolutionary character that claims the necessary supremacy of the city usage value, theoretically and practically.

In short, the *Crime Prevention Through Environmental* Design (CPTED) methodology is defined as a multi-disciplinary approach of crime prevention that uses the urban and architectural designs and the management of builds and natural environments not only for reduce the crime, or minimize the fear of it, but also for increase the social cohesion and the sense of community among the inhabitants; the culture of care; the usage value.

Based on *the eyes on the street* of Jacobs and on the *defensible* space of Oscar Newman (Newman, 1973) its five glocal principles are: (1) *the natural surveillance,* (2) t*he legibility or accessibility*, (3) *the image or maintenance,* (4) *the territoriality or ownership*, and (5) *the community participation* (Abbotsford, 2013). (Fig. 02)

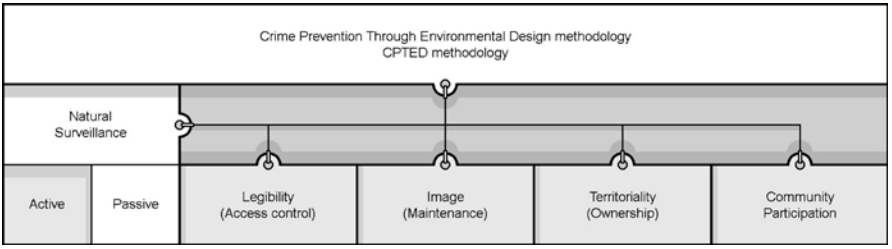


Figure 2. Glocal principles of the CPTED methodology. Source: (Own production 2020)

2.2. Natural surveillance

Within this general framework, the *natural surveillance* is the bidirectional surveillance practiced by the members of the own community at their everyday lives; *the eyes on the street; the people present in the public space*. A bidirectional surveillance (care) because when you see (care) a neighbour, the neighbour sees (cares) you; you are seeing (caring) and being seen (cared) in a natural way.

A natural *surveillance* completely different form the *artificial,* bourgeois, capitalist and unidirectional surveillance practiced by the security guards, public or private police officers, video cameras, algorithms, sensors or any other human or technological systems of control. A unidirectional surveillance (control) because when a police officer sees (care) you, you don't see (care) the police officer; you are being seen (controlled) in an artificial way.

So, unlike this unidirectional and artificial surveillance, the skill and felling of seeing and being seen (*natural surveillance*) implies the bidirectional co-responsibility for care, and the socialization and redistribution of the reproductive works, turning *the neighbours not into mere passive beneficiaries of a security system or into helpless victims of the danger, but into active participants in the drama of the civilization versus the barbarism in the cities* (Jacobs, 1961).

Thus, architectonically, the main objective of the natural surveillance is the generation of auditory and visually permeable morphologies that allow the skill and the feeling of seeing and being seen, of hearing and being heard; morphologies that allow neighbours to casually observe activities in their environment; that allow people to create community; morphologies that grant *the eyes on the street*; the city *diversity*, *contact* and *safety* through the supremacy of the city usage value and the decommercialization of the city.

2.3. Active and passive surveillances

Further, there are two different ways or surveillance: *active* and *passive surveillances.* To sump up, *the active natural surveillance* may be represented by a neighbour; *the active artificial surveillance* by a police officer; t*he passive natural surveillance* by a window; and the passive artificial one by a video camera.

That is, when you are seeing a neighbour (bidirectional care) or a police officer (unidirectional control), you are directly (actively) observing them; you have the skill of seeing and being seen. But when you are in front of a window (bidirectional care) or in front of a video camera (unidirectional control), they provide you a feeling of permanent visual and auditory contact without effective awareness of the presence of another observer; you only have the feeling (passive) of seeing and being seen.

In that way, *the artificial passive surveillance,* the one provided by video cameras, algorithms, sensors, ID cards, bank cards, privacy restrictions, and other technological systems (unidirectional control), is the surveillance provides at the non-places of Marc Auge (1992); at the non-cities focused on the perpetual generation of surplus value; the supremacy of the city exchange value.

In contrast, one door, one window, balcony or viewpoint focused on the street provides a *natural passive surveillance* (bidirectional care); provides *eyes on the street*. Returning to the quote by jane Jacobs: *There must eyes upon the street, eyes belonging to those we might call the natural proprietors of the street. (the quote continues) The buildings on a street equipped to handle strangers and to ensure the safety of both residents and strangers, must be oriented to the street. They cannot turn their backs or blank sides on it and leave it blind* (Jacobs, 1961). That is, there must eyes upon the street, eyes belonging to the people (*active natural surveillance*) and to the buildings (*passive natural surveillance*); altogether represent the eyes of the city; the heart of the city; the community.

The building façade holes encourage an invisible, mutual and perpetual care (bidirectional care) which increases the tranquillity on both sides of the glass, in the public space and at home; although there is not another observer behind the door, behind the second story window, balcony or viewpoint, the idea of the presence is as effective as the presence; it is a *panoptic* surveillance, an apparent omnipresence that confers the continuous illusion of observing and being observed.

To conclude, on the other side of all those video cameras, RFID chips and algorithms there is a capitalist state that controls you to get your surplus value (exchange value). But, on the other side of all those windows and doors there is a community that cares you; that you care (usage value).

3. THE GENERATIVE ALGORITHM

Abovementioned, this research focuses on the parameterization of a generative algorithm programmed to qualify and map the degree of the passive *natural surveillance* of different urban morphologies, allowing the comparative, valid and reliable analysis of them in terms of security.

In short, the algorithm draws a colourful grid on the embedded urban morphology; a kind of semaphore (easy to read and understand for any neighbour whatever its age or social condition) which represents the number of building façade holes, doors, windows, balconies and viewpoints that focus on that square of the grid mapping the *passive natural surveillance.* (Fig. 03)

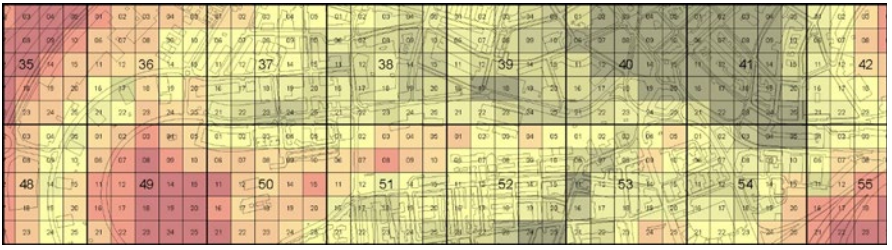


Figure 3. Barakaldo. Passive natural surveillance map. Scale 1:10.000. Source: (Own production 2020)

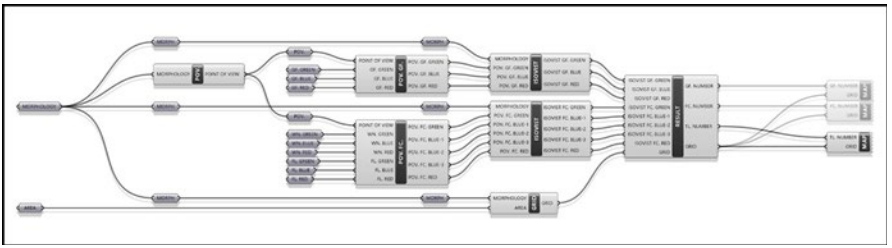


Figure 4. Grasshopper 3D, Generative Algorithm. Source: (Own production 2020)

Regarding to the software, the generative algorithm has been parametrized using *Grasshopper 3D*; a visual programming plugging of Rhinoceros 3D created by David Rutten in 2007 and normally used to build generative algorithms such as the one of this investigation. And the added urban planes have been drawn in 2D dwg format using *AutoCAD* from *Autodesk*.

In this case, the algorithm has been parametrized connecting the outputs and inputs of different and subsequent components which contain mathematical operations and logical propositions; a visual programming, that is properly sorted and grouped into 10 different folders, allowing the easily and intuitively change of the scale of the planes, the dimensions of the grids, the colours or contrast of the semaphore or any other features of this surveillance mapping. (Fig. 04)

Step by step, first, after embedding the urban plane in dwg format, the algorithm generates a grid according to the stipulated dimensions (*Grid folder*) and a set of points of view located above the facade holes (*POV folder*); differentiating between the ground floor facade holes (*POV. GF folder*) and the holes of the rest of the façade (*POV. FC folder*).

Second, depending on the percentage, situation, dimensions and height of the facade holes, the algorithm generates a set of isovists simulating the visual field observed from each window (*Isovist folders*).

And finally, the algorithm crosses mathematically the data of the public space area of each grid square and the total number of isovist hosted in them (*Result folder*) transforming the numerical results of each square into a colour scale; from red to green. A last step that becomes the mathematical results graphically and quickly readables by anyone, whatever its age or social condition (*Map folders*). (Fig. 05)

The algorithm generates three different maps: (1) the first one corresponding to the *passive natural surveillance* of the city ground floor, a map that allows the analysis of the small commerce along the city; (2) the second one corresponding to the *passive natural surveillance* of rest of the facade, a map that allows the analysis of the urban density and concentration; (3) and a third one that is the weighted average of the first and the second one.

Above mentioned, the algorithm was parameterized using the municipality of Bermeo (Biscay) as reference, and then it has been applied on the left bank (Santurtzi, Portugalete, Sestao and Barakaldo) and on the right bank (Getxo, Leioa and Erandio) of the Bilbao Metropolitan Area (Biscay), mapping the natural surveillance of 8.000 hectares (861.100.000 ft2) on a 1:10.000 scale, by a grid of 40.000 sectors. (Fig. 06,07)

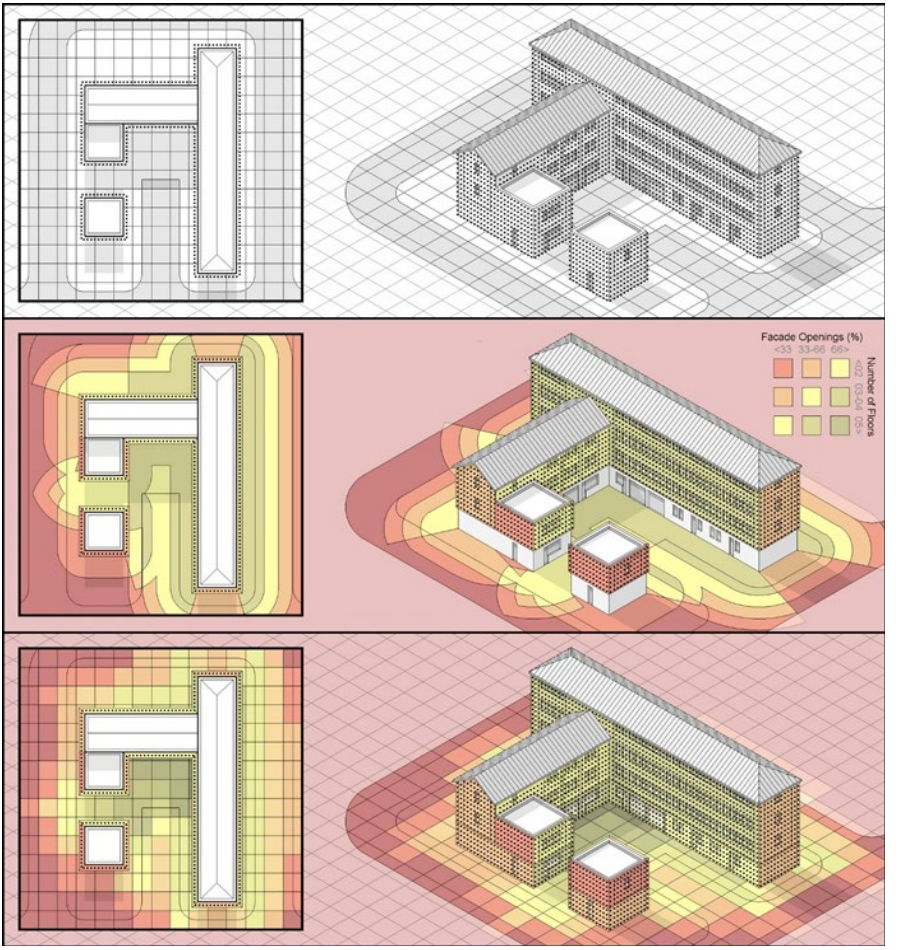


Figure 5. Passive natural surveillance map. Process. Source: (Own production 2020)

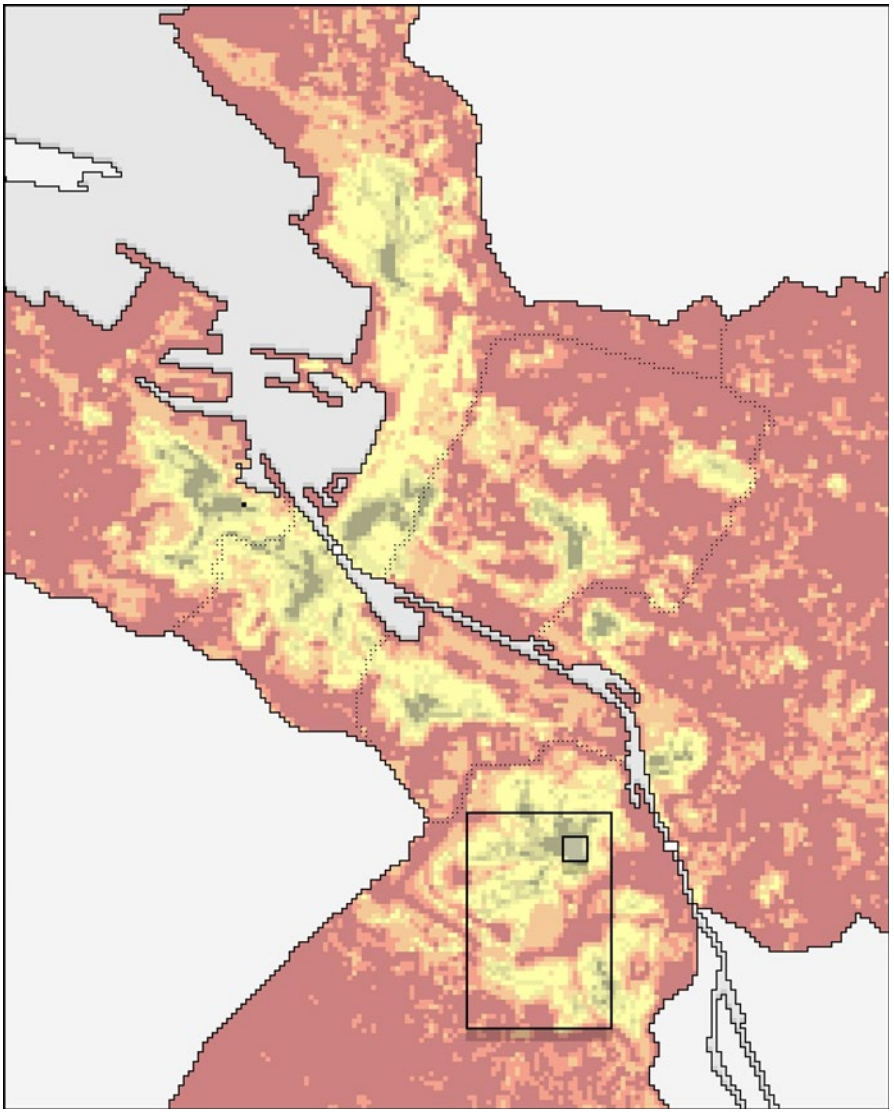


Figure 6. Passive natural surveillance map. Scale 1:50.000. Source: (Own production 2020)

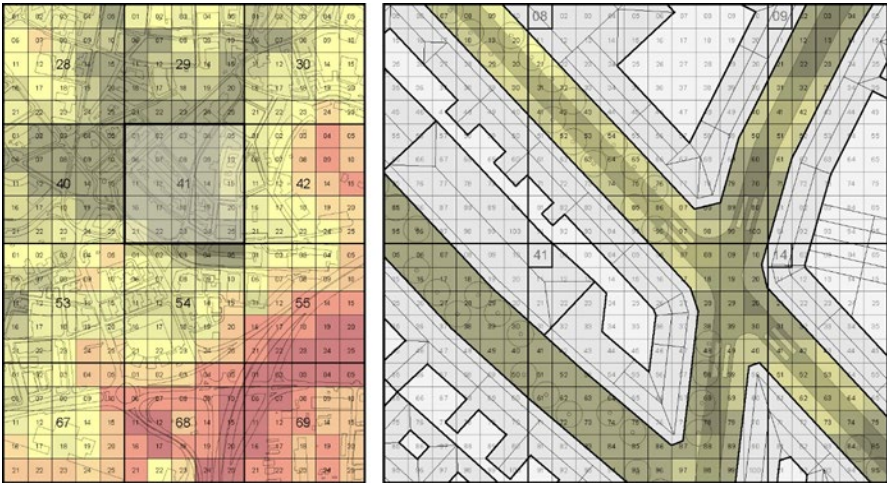


Figure 7. Passive natural surveillance map. Scale 1:10.000 and 1 :1.000. Source: (Own production 2020)

Today the generated maps (Fig. 06,07) are being exposed and discussed in the different municipalities; it is being discussed the influence of the different urban infrastructures, services and equipments: the new large supermarkets, the tourism industry, the transport infrastructures, schools or sport centres, etc. It is being analysing the potential for the natural surveillance of the working-class neighbourhoods and of the bourgeois suburbs taking into account their density, concentration, cohesion and commercial network.

In conclusion, without pre-empting the outcome of the stakeholder's discussions (which are under way), such as the *noise maps* where the decibels are mapped, this is a new urban and criminological reading of the city that allows the analysis of the different morphologies; a new urban information source, a new support and help for the participatory detection of the so-called *hot spots of fear.*

A tool (not an answer) for the participatory creation of the city, of the community. A step to start rethinking our security system, our care system; a step to vindicate de usage value of the city, the decommercialization of our territories.

REFERENCES

Abbotsford, 2013. *City of Abbotsford Crime Prevention Through Urban Design (CPTED)*. Abbotsford: Planning and Development Services.

EUSTAT, 2020. *https://www.eustat.eus/municipal/datos_estadisticos/info_territorial_c.asp*. Accessed, February 2, 2020.

Garland, D. 2001. *The Culture of Control: Crime and Social Order in Contemporary Society*. New York: Oxford University Press Inc.

Hayden, D. 1981. *The Grand Domestic Revolution: A History of Feminist Designs for American Homes, Neighbourhoods and Cities*. Massachusetts, Massachusetts Institute of Technology Press.

Jacobs, J. 1961.*The Death and Life of Great American Cities*. New York: Random House.

Meyer, H. 1972. *El arquitecto en la lucha de clases y otros escritos*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Newman, O. 1973. *Defensible Space; Crime Prevention Through Urban Design*. New York: Macmillan Publishing.

PAPER #2.08

RECONNECTING WITH NATURE: IDENTIFYING NEW MODELS OF URBANISATION

Steffen Lehmann[a]
[a]University of Nevada Las Vegas, Las Vegas, Nevada, USA

ABSTRACT

Climate change is occurring around us and influencing our daily lives, meaning that we have to plan our cities in a different way. There is increasing awareness of the need for daily contact with green spaces and the natural environment in order to live a happy, productive and meaningful life.
This paper tells the narrative of how our urbanisation models have been disconnecting humans from nature. Living in contact with nature improves a large number of aspects of our life. However, non-sustainable, non-resilient patterns of urbanisation, along with the neglect of inner-city areas, have resulted in fragmentation and urban decline, led to a loss of biodiversity, causing deterioration of ecosystems and their services. Urban regeneration projects allow us to 'repair' and restore some of this damage whilst enhancing urban resilience. Connecting existing and enhanced ecosystems, and re-establishing ecosystems both within cities and at the peri-urban fringe is vital for strengthening ecosystem resilience and building adaptive capacity for coping with the effects of climate change.
Cities worldwide need to look for suitable solutions to increase the resilience of their urban spaces in the face of climate change. The paper addresses this timely question by giving an overview how this could be achieved through the integration of nature-based solutions, re-greening of neighbourhoods and by correctly attributing value to natural capital. Transforming existing neighbourhoods in this way will enable ecosystems to contribute their services towards healthier and more liveable cities (urban metabolism analytical frameworks might support effective management of natural capital contributing towards more "circular" urban resource flows). Revisiting the "wisdom of nature" will inform less resource-intensive and more climate-resilient organisational structures.
From Descartes, to Fairchild, to Howard, to McHarg, the author identifies the linkages that exist between a rich palette of seminal literature and different schools of thought about nature within the city.

KEYWORDS

Overview paper; urbanisation models; resilience; ecosystem deterioration; nature-based solutions; adaptive capacity; living in urban landscapes.

INTRODUCTION

Every city is unique. Cities not only differ in their size, density and population distribution, but also in their climatic and cultural context, location and in the ways in which they are vulnerable to climate change. When it comes to strategies to increase urban resilience, what works in one city may not work in another. However, urban regeneration projects usually allow to 'repair' and restore some of the damage caused to ecosystems whilst enhancing urban resilience. Even when change is acknowledged as necessary, it can be a daunting prospect.
Facing the need for change on a large scale, it can be helpful to remember that cities are never finished; cities are constantly undergoing transformation. What is needed now is to nudge that transformation in the direction of sustainable and resilient solutions, making the most of opportunities for re-greening and

re-naturing of cities, using resources efficiently and acknowledging the value of natural capital. Over the centuries, man has become a force that changes the planet. Now it has become so strong that it could finally overturn the Earth system. Our current disconnect from *Nature* has evolved over the last 300 years with the emergence of science and the subsequent industrial revolution. Within a very short time, humans have experienced transition from a life predominantly spent outside towards a very different life mostly inside buildings. We have changed how we live, and a fundamental change in our relationship with nature has been the result. Over 80% of the U.S. population currently live in urban areas and a large portion are estranged from nature (Office for National Statistics, 2016). Today 90% of our lives is spent indoors, in controlled interior environments (ASHRAE, 2010); with increasing 'screen-time' spent alone online.

1. THE EVOLUTION OF HUMANS DOMINATING THE EARTH

Everything about how we define our technologies, and ourselves today, our cities, industries have only been on Earth for a relatively short period. The earth began to develop around 4.5 billion years ago. Although *Homo sapiens* emerged some 200,000 years ago, the human impact only really began with the impact of agriculture; for instance, the Australian aborigines used fire to assist hunting before that (they also avoided burning certain areas to retain food sources in drought years). We are a comparatively young species on this planet, and all the while, we have been constantly pulling back from nature. Although we have seen ourselves increasingly as separate from, and superior to nature, our impact upon nature has been immense. Biodiversity evolves as different species share the same ecosystem where relationships between the species develop. In this balanced system, the planet's biodiversity has grown to include 30 million different species. Each species is necessary for keeping something in balance in the natural world, yet we have not respected or maintained this delicate balance.

Since the time of the dinosaurs 65 million years ago, there has not been this level of sustained destruction on our planet. The current rapid loss of biodiversity is quite possibly the biggest disaster ever. The average abundance of native species in most major land-based habitats has fallen by at least 20%, mostly since 1900 (a recent UN Report sates; 2019). Although extinction is a natural phenomenon, it occurs at a natural "background" *rate* of about one to five species per year. Scientists in the UN Report estimate we are now losing species at up to 1,000 times the background *rate*, with literally dozens going extinct every day (IPCC, 2018).

In the big picture of Earth's evolution, *Homo sapiens* has only been around for a very short time, and it is likely that the Earth will still be around for a long time even after we have destroyed ourselves as a species (the reason why Martin Seligman argues that we have been misnamed as *Homo sapiens*, since we are not a 'wise' species at all).

'Touching the earth lightly' means that one only takes from nature what one really needs at that particular moment. Over the last 10,000 years, we have gradually changed our relationship with nature, shifting to agriculture and drawing on an awareness of the cycles and seasons of nature. This has been a process of empowering ourselves, taming the natural world and taking control of our own lives and our own destiny: we are not at the mercy of nature; we can farm the land, build dwellings that resist nature's forces, and we can harness what agriculture offers.

Everything changed with scientific discovery, technology and the Industrial Revolution. Over the last 300 years, we saw that humans could manipulate nature through the emergence of science. Humankind started to believe that it had dominion over the Earth; and that the Earth and nature have to serve us in our own evolution. Just think of the discoveries of philosophers

and scientists like Copernicus, Galileo, Descartes and Newton. Their understanding was that nature was meaningless and purposeless, and its only function was to "serve humans in their evolution". Descartes for instance, in "Discourse on the method" (1637) believed that animals had no feelings. His belief was: *Man is at the top and Earth is here for us to use, to exploit.* (See: Figure 1) It took many years to correct our relationship with the Earth. The seminal book "The limits to growth" (Meadows *et al.,* 1972) displayed the limits of finite resources and noted that the whole Industrial Revolution was about taking and extracting minerals and resources, and disposing of waste, with a complete disregard for the environment and natural ecosystems (See: Figure 2).

However, today, a new awareness is emerging that is driving the regeneration and re-greening of our cities aiming to recreate "a place for nature" in our cities. With this new awareness, humans are able to and have a desire to participate in the community of life and in nature, interacting with all of the species on this planet, without necessarily destroying any of it, let alone destroying all of it. This requires new models of urbanization (Lehmann, 2010; Woo et al, 2014; Afanador et al, 2015; UN Habitat, 2016).

For some time now, humankind has been out of touch with nature and has lost its connection to the natural world. There is a need for us to renew our connection with nature since this is key to both good health and resilience. Related to this is the importance of re-greening cities and introducing nature-based solutions through urban regeneration projects (such as the examples shown at Figure 3).

The purpose of this paper is to first analyse our disconnect from nature and the subsequent loss of biodiversity, how we got into the thinking mode that nature could be less relevant than the economy, and the questions addressed by the paper: Could the concept of *Biophilia* be a valid approach to make our cities more healthy and resilient? (Grinde et al, 2009) How would this alternative urbanization model look like, and what could urban designers do to counteract the degradation of our ecosystem?

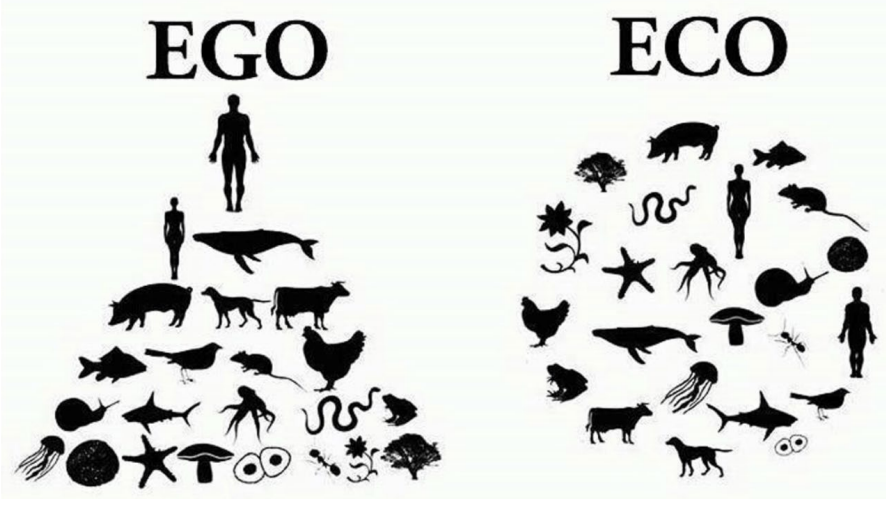


Figure 1. Diagram 'Ego-Eco' – Humankind is part of the ecosystem, not apart from or above it. The left part illustrates Descartes thinking of exploiting the Earth.

Figure 2. Diagram: The linear extraction process of resources is unsustainable (S. Lehmann, 2012)

Figure 3. There are numerous ways vegetation can be integrated into the city's structure (S. Lehmann, 2010)

2. LITERATURE REVIEW ON THE NEED FOR A RE-APPRECIATION OF NATURE WITHIN CITIES

The study of ecology allows for an understanding of the Earth as a single living system that is in balance with nature. Within this system, cities evolve as the greatest creation of humankind and yet cities are a source of overload and environmental stress. Cities can possess degrading conditions - just think of windowless work environments, over-crowded housing, air pollution and noise. They are not obvious places to connect with the natural environment.Cronon (1995) asserts that urban inhabitants have created a wholly artificial view of what nature and wilderness are, based on ideas of open space and grandeur that rarely correspond to the lived reality of the people who inhabit rural spaces. The view of nature as a pristine and uninhabited space makes it difficult to see nature on a smaller, less imposing scale, and to appreciate for instance that a tree in an urban back garden can equate to a tree growing in a forest; that the two trees are identical despite the different setting. In our mind, the forest tree somehow has a greater

perceived natural value, and nature is seen as being something that does not belong within the city (Cronon, 1995).Rautio and colleagues (2017) argue that this does not have to be the case. In working with children in Finland they have found that urban inhabitants are not necessarily disconnected from nature; there is plenty of nature present in urban environments for them to explore. To imply that urban children are disconnected is to disregard the ways in which nature is present in and encroaches on their lives. Their focus is on how children's relationships with nature emerge and change based upon the setting, which they are in. The children's understanding of nature in the urban environment is an assemblage. The author argues that nature should not be viewed as something that exists beyond the city, but instead, *"environmental education research and practice could and should intensely focus on the everyday materialisations of complex historical, societal, political and cultural conditions that give rise to environmental phenomena, human attitudes and relations included."*

Hand and colleagues (2017) explored how children living in urban environments respond to different natural environments. They noted that urban back gardens represented the main source of interaction with biodiversity for these children, and that children were not spending less time in nature due to the lack of natural environments in urban areas; but rather that lifestyle factors, including parental limits and the attraction of electronic media over natural play spaces, were the cause of the children's increasing disconnect with nature. A behavioural shift is needed to reattribute value to the protection of nature within cities and importance to time that is spent outdoors in a biodiverse environment. Although Rautio et *al.* (2017) argue that the urban population is not necessarily disconnected from nature; it is fair to say that the time spent connecting with nature is decreasing for certain groups within society. The penetration of technology into our everyday lives has led to the development of a 'heads-down' generation who spend more 'screen-time' indoors and less time on outdoor activities, and who do not necessarily place the same value on natural encounters.

However, it has been well established that connecting with nature makes people come alive and nourishes the senses. The author argues that today, we are at a turning point how we think about nature within cities. We understand that cities need to be built on regenerative principles, as we start to grasp how everything in life and the environment is connected (Girardet, 2008). We are revisiting the wisdom of nature to inform our organisational structures (e.g. local food production) and realize that nature has a profound positive influence on our health and well-being. We have arrived at a new understanding, that we are merely participants in the natural world. We rediscover indigenous traditions and the interdependence of all things in nature, things that coexist together. The inter-connectedness of systems - it means that we are not in a privileged position to exploit or destroy the ecosystem. In fact, the opposite is true. We have a position of stewardship, where we must lead in a respectful and responsible relationship to the natural world. We are not 'above' nature.

The quality of our social, professional and ecological relationships is at the core of what makes us feel alive, happy and safe. Part of this are walkable neighbourhoods on a human scale and the ability to enjoy nature within the city in a short distance from our home or workplace. Urban designers' worldwide aim to bring nature back into the city, to compensate for a frequent lack of parks, gardens and green spaces. The concept of 'Urban Metabolism' understands cities as a living organism. Urban metabolism analyses the flows of energy, resources, food, people and materials in cities (as if the city were an ecosystem) and provides a framework for the study of the interactions of natural and human systems, using the metaphor of the city as a living organism. Ecologist Arthur

George Tansley (1871–1955) expanded the term in 1935 to encompass the material and energetic streams (Tansley, 1935). Seminal texts by different authors offer further ecological wisdom on the architect's relationship with landscapes and their ecosystems (Carson, 1962; Girardet, 2008; McDonough & Braungart, 2002; McHarg, 1969; Register, 1987).

A new deep understanding of nature has emerged that sees the commonality of all of life as part of the same ecosystem, and it influences our thinking of cities as living organisms (one of these approaches is urban metabolism). The concept that the Earth is a self-correcting organism, the so-called *Gaia hypothesis*, was developed by James E. Lovelock in 1975 and published in 1979 (Lovelock, 1979). It states that the Earth is a vulnerable system in balance, and that the temperature of the planet and its atmosphere are produced and maintained by the sum of living organisms. The Gaia hypothesis is based on the idea that all life on earth functions as a single system. This system both defines and maintains the conditions necessary for its survival. Lovelock argues that the earth's living matter – including the atmosphere, oceans and land areas – combine to create a complex system with the ability to keep our planet a place fit for life.

The Gaia hypothesis has fundamentally altered the way scientists view evolution and the environment, but not all agree. Contrary to the Gaia hypothesis, which suggests the Earth has a self-righting tendency, Johan Rockstroem, Director of the Stockholm Resilience Centre (2018) and numerous other leading scientists say that the feedbacks of global warming could push the planet to an extreme state. In the face of this scenario what we need are strategies to mitigate the effects of climate change. Greening up cities alone will not make a difference unless there is a sharp reduction in the use of fossil fuels (Steffen et al, 2018).

3. DISCUSSION: FROM GARDEN CITIES TO BIOMIMICRY AND BIOPHILIA — A WAY TO HEALTHY AND RESILIENT CITIES?

The 19th century *Garden City* movement based on the ideas of Ebenezer Howard (expressed in the seminal book "Garden Cities of To-morrow" (1902) was the search for an escape from the polluted cramped conditions of the City of London at this time. Still today, this relatively simple theory of new circular cities in *Arcadia* have a significant impact on urban theories on urban systems and how to possibly develop new cities from scratch.

One important characteristic of complex urban systems is their resilience. Urban resilience of cities means the ability to maintain human and ecosystem functions simultaneously over the long-term (Alberti & Marzluff, 2004). Urban resilience, also called *adaptive capacity*, refers to a city's ability to cope with and recover quickly from hardship or crisis. A resilient city is typically one that is prepared and well equipped to contend with and mitigate the multiple effects of climate change, such as urban heat islands, heatwaves, urban flooding, energy blackouts, and other potential disasters. A resilient city has a robust infrastructural system and can even turn a crisis into a positive development (Meerow *et al.*, 2016; Mitchell & Harris, 2012).

Redefining cities and identifying a sustainable and healthy model of urbanization in the age of global warming goes right to the core of the ability to adapt, and underpins our complicated relationship with nature, technology and place. A *healthy city* is conscious of health of its residents and striving to improve it. Thus, a healthy city has a strong commitment to health and wellbeing, and a process to achieve it. The WHO report (2014) refers to the need for sufficient green spaces in all cities and defines what a Healthy City is: *"A healthy city is one that continually creates and improves its physical and social environments and expands the community resources that enable people to mutually support each other in performing all the functions of life and developing to their*

maximum potential." This approach puts health high on the political and social agenda of cities and builds a strong movement for public health at the local level, and as driver of all urban design. It strongly emphasizes equity, participatory governance and solidarity, intersectoral collaboration and action to address the determinants of urban health. The concept of Healthy Cities was inspired, supported by the *WHO European Health for All* strategy and the Health21 targets, and is aligned with the UN's 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development.

In a similar way, the concept of *Biophilia* introduced by Edward O. Wilson (1984) suggests that humans possess an innate tendency to seek connections with nature and other forms of life (Kellert, 2011). As predicted by Rachel Carson in 'Silent Spring' in 1962, we are now in the process of redefining our relationship with nature, and how our lives and health depend upon it. This growing understanding is not about giving up technology, but rather developing the most advanced technologies to date, for instance through the biological revolution, digital engineering and nanotechnology. We have to use that rich and available knowledge to find innovative and better solutions, employing ideas of *Biomimicry* – innovation inspired by natural systems (Benyus, 2002; Neves & Francke, 2012).

The emulation of nature's genius is a promising path for our urban systems, processing and neighbourhood designs. It goes beyond just emulating natural form, involving systems' thinking and asking: how does it fit into the wider ecosystem? Nature has 3.8 billion years of "R&D" behind it, which we can learn from. Learning from nature also means that the principles of a *Circular Economy* have become part of this learning process. The Ellen McArthur Foundation (EMF) argues "a circular economy is one that is restorative and regenerative by design" (Ellen MacArthur Foundation, 2017). Part of the circular economy includes designing out waste and rebuilding natural capital and resilience.

4. URBAN DESIGN STRATEGIES TO REDUCE THE BIODIVERSITY LOSS, URBAN HEAT ISLAND EFFECT AND ECOSYSTEM DEGRADATION

It is widely accepted that our cities are facing a wide range of challenges, with unsustainable urbanization (built frequently at too low density) in turn being linked to human health problems, the degradation and loss of natural capital and its corresponding ecosystem services (clean air, soil and water), climate change and a worrying increase in the risk of natural disasters. Urban expansion is always leading to changes in land cover in the countryside, shifting green space to 'artificial surfaces'. An aerial survey of the UK in 2015, for instance, revealed that over 22,000 hectares of green space was converted to artificial built surfaces between 2006 and 2012. Over 7,000 hectares of this land were previously forest, and over 14,000 hectares were previously agricultural areas and farmland. Over 1,000 hectares were changed from wetlands to artificial built surfaces in order to provide more suburban homes. Completion of urban construction sites comprised nearly 3,000 hectares and completed new industrial and commercial developments slightly over 1,000 hectares (University of Leicester, 2015).

More research is needed to clearly define the factors in our current urbanization models that hinder the reconnection with nature in the urban system. These factors are economic, social, technical and environmental. Governments are increasingly trying to quickly fix the issue of housing affordability by boosting supply and approving inacceptable low-density car-dependent housing developments on precious greenfield land. However, far too many homes are being planned and built on greenfield sites that were formerly protected green-belt land (Lehmann, 2019). At the same time, sufficient land for urban infill and regeneration is available. For instance, there

are sufficient brownfield sites for an extra million homes in England alone, and there is no excuse for further encroaching into precious greenfield land that is necessary for recreation, biodiversity, forestry and food supply (CPRE, 2018). The government, developers and policy makers do still not prioritise the redevelopment of brownfield land and infill densification enough.

As far back as his 1722 book "The City Gardener", the English botanist Thomas Fairchild (1667–1729) noted that city residents feel more relaxed and healthy when they can enjoy gardens and greenery (Fairchild, 1722). He suggested improving air pollution and improving the urban microclimate in London by creating parks and gardens, and he realized that numerous small gardens with trees and bushes are more effective rather than just a large park with a lawn. Almost three hundred years later, the research on the urban heat island (UHI) effect confirms Fairchild's observation (Bowler *et al.*, 2010; Doick *et al.,* 2014).

Obviously, trees and their canopies are a critical piece of the life support system on this planet and are vital for any future project. Urban forest projects, constructed wetlands, and the urban farming movement are all good ways to re-integrate nature into an urban setting (see: Figure 4). Natural elements such as street trees, gardens and planting have been a feature of cities for hundreds of years. The most effective urban green space is not a lawn, but a garden with tree coverage from different types of trees and bushes with large leafs.

The dangerous UHI effect leads to significantly warmer urban areas compared to surrounding rural areas, and this temperature difference is usually larger at night than during the day. The UHI effect occurs because the dense, dark surfaces (such as bitumen on roads or concrete on building roofs) absorb and store heat during the day and then release it at night. Urban greenery can help reduce this heat gain and the impact on human health (Lehmann, 2015; Sailor, 2014). The main cause of the UHI effect is from the modification of land surfaces and material, for instance concrete roofs that store and trap solar heat during the day. It can best be counteracted by green roofs (and facades) with planting and vegetation, white or light-coloured surfaces (using the *Albedo Effect* to reflect solar radiation) and the use of materials that absorb less heat (Note: from 2012 to 2014, the author was principal investigator of 'Urban Climate Research', the largest study of the UHI effect in Australian cities). It is only a question of time until green roofs will become mandatory for new buildings in the U.S. and other countries.

Understanding the many benefits of urban greening, municipalities are now looking at how urban areas can adapt their landscapes to better cope with increasing heat stress and the UHI effect. There is growing understanding and appreciation that re-naturing cities can help provide viable solutions for urban engineering, using and exploiting the properties of natural ecosystems and the services that they provide. "Ecosystem services" that city vegetation delivers, through avenues, gardens, parks, wetlands, urban forests, green roofs and living walls are now becoming more appreciated.

The term *nature-based solutions* (NBS) refers to the use of nature for tackling environmental and societal challenges while increasing biodiversity. A definition offered by the European Union Commission, which has been funding critical research in NBS over the last ten years, states: These solutions are "inspired and supported by nature, which are cost-effective, simultaneously provide environmental, social and economic benefits and help build resilience (…) and bring more, and more diverse, nature and natural features and processes into cities, landscapes and seascapes, through locally adapted, resource-efficient and systemic

interventions" (Rizvi, 2015; Shanahan, 2015; EU-Commission, 2015 and EU-Commission, 2017; Fields in Trust, 2018).

These NBS provide practical, sustainable, cost-effective and adaptive alternatives for various urban planning objectives; by working with nature, rather than against it, it is possible to take further steps towards a more competitive, resource efficient and greener economy (which is often termed 'green growth'). It can also help to enhance natural capital rather than depleting it. For instance, green roofs or walls can be used to reduce the impact of high temperatures, collect storm water, reduce pollution and fine dust, and act as carbon sinks, all whilst simultaneously enhancing biodiversity. Similarly, the collection and storage of rainwater in constructed wetlands, or the protection of mangrove forests along coastlines utilise a nature-based solution to achieve several objectives, including disaster risk reduction. Urban flood control is regulated in a natural way, with mangroves alleviating the impact of wind and waves on coastal settlements or cities whilst also capturing CO2. Additionally, the mangrove forests can provide safe nurseries for marine life and help control coastal erosion resulting from a rise in sea-levels, mitigating potentially harmful effects on the environment and on human health and society (Kabisch *et al*., 2016; Lennon & Scott, 2014; Maes & Jacobs, 2017; Rich, 2018; World Forum on Natural Capital, 2018).

New urban design concepts should form an urbanisation model for incorporating and re-introducing greenery and biodiversity into the urban built environment. Maintaining biodiversity in the face of urbanization, habitat loss, environmental deterioration and climate change is one of the extreme challenges of the present day. The inclusion of trees, shrubs and other plant matter into green spaces and gardens within the city is of paramount importance in helping to keep the urban landscape cool, mitigating against buildings and pavements which increase heat absorption and heat storage, leading to the UHI effect (Hawken, 1999; Watts, 2018).

Numerous studies have been conducted on the role of green canopies in urban life, with the result that tree coverage differs widely between cities (Pauleit et al., 2005; Schwarz et al., 2015). One of these, the 2018 MIT Senseable City Lab study, established the *Green View Index* (GVI) that represents the total percentage of a city covered by trees. The study found that Paris has a very high population density but only a GVI of 8.7 percent, compared to London (12.7 percent), Amsterdam (20.6) or Oslo (28.8 percent) (MIT Senseable City Lab, 2018). (See: Figures 4 and 5)

These strategies introducing nature in urban regeneration projects improve numerous aspects of our lives and can be measured by the increasing live expectancy and reduced time residents take sick leave from their workplaces.

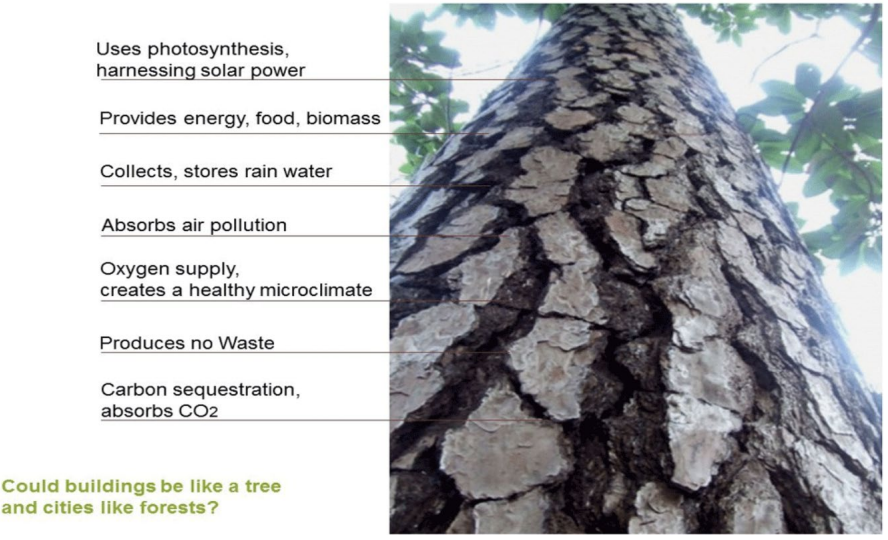


Figure 4. A tree stores carbon and provides a large range of ecosystem services (S. Lehmann, 2010)

Figure 5. Ecosystem services include essential services provided by nature, such as water management, biomass energy, food, oxygen supply, humidity and flood control, carbon storage and sequestration (S. Lehmann, 2017)

CONCLUSION

The urban neighbourhoods of the future will have to offer new forms of green space. These will serve a dual purpose, existing both as areas for recreation whilst acting at the same time to mitigate the warmer urban microclimate. Tomorrow's neighbourhoods will also need to generate at least 50 percent of their own power themselves (Lehmann, 2015). Integrated development, which concentrates on energy and water management, green infrastructure and the urban microclimate, will take a leading role in urban regeneration.

Every city is unique. Cities differ in the ways in which they are vulnerable to climate change. When it comes to strategies to increase resilience, what works in one city may not work in another. Urban regeneration projects allow 'repairing' and restoring some of the damage caused to ecosystems whilst enhancing urban resilience. What is needed now is to nudge that transformation in the direction of sustainable and resilient solutions, making the most of opportunities for re-greening, using resources efficiently and acknowledging the value of natural capital (Lehmann, 2017; Nature Editorial, 2018; Lehmann and Melis, 2021).

A good example for such linkages is the author's international research project "Crunch – the Food-Water-Energy Nexus", which explores these issues in greater depth using integrated methods (see: www.fwe-nexus.eu).

By beginning to place a value on natural capital, and assessing our vital systems as whole and not as separate parts, we can begin to make efficiency savings that previously would not have been apparent. In doing so, we not only benefit financially through saving valuable resources and mitigating against environmental risks resulting from climate change, but also contribute towards the repair and renewal of our ecosystem, conserving resources that are finite and helping to prevent further global temperature rise. Hence, a final question the paper might raise among its readers is: How can we all set the conditions for the change to happen and reasonably "quickly"? In other words, how can effective local to planetary stewardship strategies for urban ecosystems and the biosphere be "co-designed" within and across communities (of knowledge, practice, and citizenship)?

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The author would like to thank his colleagues at the University of Portsmouth (UK) and the University of Nevada Las Vegas (USA) Urban Futures Lab for providing discussion and input.

REFERENCES

Afanador A, Begemann E, Bourgault C, *et al*. 2015. The potential of scaling up proven low-carbon solutions.

Alberti M, Marzluff J. 2004. Ecological resilience in urban ecosystems: linking urban patterns to human and ecological functions. *Urban Ecosyst*. 2004; 7(3): 241–265.

ASHRAE 2010. Guideline 10P, Interactions Affecting the Achievement of Acceptable Indoor Environments, Second Public Review. ASHRAE, Atlanta, USA.

Benyus J. 2002. Biomimicry-Innovation inspired by Nature.

Bowler DE, Buyung-Ali L, Knight TM, *et al*. 2010. Urban greening to cool towns and cities: A systematic review of the empirical evidence. Landsc Urban Plan. 2010; 97(3): 147–155.

Carson R. 1962. Silent Spring. Penguin Modern Classic, London and New York.

CPRE 2018. State of Brownfield: An analysis demonstrating the potential of brownfield land for housing. Campaign to Protect Rural England; London, UK.

Cronon W. 1995. The Trouble with Wilderness; or, Getting Back to the Wrong Nature. In William Cronon, ed., *Uncommon Ground: Rethinking the Human Place in Nature,* New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1995; 69–90.

Descartes, R. 1637. Discourse on Method (original title: Discours de la méthode pour bien conduire sa raison et chercher la verité dans les sciences), Paris.

Doick KJ, Peace A, Hutchings TR. 2014. The role of one large greenspace in mitigating London's nocturnal urban heat island. *Sci Total Environ*. 2014; 493: 662–671.

Ellen MacArthur Foundation 2017. The Circular Economy. A Wealth of Flows (2nd edn), accessed 10 July 2019.

European Union Commission, DG Research and Innovation 2015. Towards an EU research and innovate policy agenda for nature-based solutions and re-naturing cities. Final report of the Horizon 2020 expert group on 'Nature-based solutions and re-naturing cities', European Commission, Brussels, 2015; 70.

European Union Commission 2017. Nature-based Solutions: Innovating with Nature. European Commission, Brussels, accessed 10 July 2019.

Fairchild T. 1722. The City Gardener. T. Woodward, London.

Fields in Trust 2018. Revaluing Parks and Green Spaces. Study UK; 2018; accessed 10 July 2019.

Girardet H. 2008. Cities, People, Planet: Urban Development and Climate Change (2nd edn). John Wiley & Sons, London.

Grinde B, Patil GG, 2009. Biophilia: does visual contact with nature impact on health and well-being? *Int J Environ Res Public Health.* 2009; 6(9): 2332–2343.

Hand KL, Freeman C, Seddon PJ, et al. 2017. The importance of urban gardens in supporting children's biophilia. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A.* 2017; 114(2): 274–279.

Hawken P, Lovins A, Lovins H. 1999. Natural Capitalism. Creating the Next Industrial Revolution. Little Brown and Company, New York.

Howard, E. 1902. *Garden Cities of To-morrow: A Peaceful Path to Real Reform,* London.

IPCC, 2018. Global warming of 1.5°C. An IPCC Special Report on the impacts of global warming of 1.5°C above pre-industrial levels and related global greenhouse gas emission pathways, in the context of strengthening the global response to the threat of climate change, sustainable development, and efforts to eradicate poverty.

Kabisch N, Frantzeskaki N, Pauleit S, et al. 2016. Nature-based solutions to climate change mitigation and adaptation in urban areas: perspectives on indicators, knowledge gaps, barriers, and opportunities for action. *Ecol Soc*. 2016; 21(2): 39.

Kellert SR, 2011. Biophilic Design. The Architecture of Life. Tamarack Media, USA. Movie.

Lehmann S. 2010. The Principles of Green Urbanism. Transforming the City for Sustainability. Earthscan, London (Chinese Edition, 2014).

Lehmann S. 2015. Urban microclimates: mitigating urban heat stress. Lehmann, S. (ed.) *Low Carbon Cities: Transforming Urban Systems*, Routledge, London, 251.

Lehmann S. 2017. The challenge of transforming a low-density city into a compact city. Bay JHP. and Lehmann, S. (eds) *Growing Compact. Urban Form, Density and Sustainability*, Routledge, London, 69–93.

Lehmann S. 2019. Urban Regeneration: A manifesto for transforming UK cities in the age of climate change. Palgrave Macmillan, London.

Lehmann, S. and Melis, A. 2021. *Resilient Communities*. D-Editore and the Venice International Biennale of Architecture, Italy, forthcoming, May 2021.

Lennon M, Scott M. 2014. Delivering ecosystems services via spatial planning: reviewing the possibilities and implications of a green infrastructure approach. *Town Plan Rev*. 2014; 85(5): 563–587.

Lovelock JE. 1979. Gaia, a new look at life on Earth. Oxford University Press, UK.

Maes J, Jacobs S. 2017. Nature-Based Solutions for Europe's Sustainable Development. *Conserv Lett.* 2017; 10(1): 121–124.

McDonough W, Braungart M. 2002. Cradle to Cradle: Remaking the Way We Make Things. North Point Press, New York, NY.

McHarg I. 1969. Design with Nature. Doubleday/Natural History Press, New York; Falcon Press, Philadelphia.

Meadows D, Meadows DL, Randers J, et al. 1972. The Limits to Growth: a report for the Club of Rome's Project on the Predicament of Mankind. Universe Books, New York, NY (1971 Report/1972 Book).

Meerow S, Newell JP, Stults M. 2016. Defining urban resilience. A review. *Landscape Urban Plan*. 2016; 147: 38–49.

MIT Senseable City Lab, Carlo Ratti et al. 2018. *Treepedia*, developed in collaboration with WEF. Cambridge MA, USA; accessed 5 Aug 2018. 2019.

Mitchell T, Harris K. 2012. Resilience: a risk management approach. *Background Note ODI,* Overseas Development Institute, UK.

Nature Editorial, 2018. Climate talks are not enough. *Nature*. 2018; 556: 407–408.

Neves J, Francke I. 2012. Creative product design using biomimetics. *Design and Nature VI: Comparing Design in Nature with Science and Engineering,* 2012; 4: 149.

Office for National Statistics, 2016. Small Area Population Estimates 2013. Office for National Statistics, London.

Pauleit S, Jones N, Nyhuus S, et al. 2005. Urban Forest Resources in European Cities. In *Urban Forests and Trees*. ed Cecil Konijnendijk, Kjell Nilsson, Thomas Randrup, Jasper Schipperijn. Springer Verlag; Berlin.

Rautio P, Hohti R, Leinonen RM, et al. 2017. Reconfiguring urban environmental education with 'shitgull' and a 'shop'. *Environ Educ Res*. 2017; 23(10): 1379–1390.

Register R. 1987. Eco-City Berkeley: Building Cities for a Healthy Future. North Atlantic Books, Boston.

Rich N. 2018. Losing Earth: The Decade we almost stopped Climate Change. *New York Times*, New York; accessed 10 Aug. 2019.

Rizvi AR, Baig S, Verdone M, 2015. Ecosystems Based Adaptation: Knowledge Gaps in Making an Economic Case for Investing in Nature Based Solutions for Climate Change. *Gland,* Switzerland: IUCN 48.

Sailor DJ. 2014. A Holistic View of the Effects of Urban Heat Island Mitigation. In *Low Carbon Cities: Transforming Urban Systems*. Routledge, London, Ed. S. Lehmann, 2014; 270–281.

Schwarz K, Fragkias M, Boone CG, et al. 2015. Trees grow on money: urban tree canopy cover and environmental justice. *PLoS One*. 2015; 10(4): e0122051.

Shanahan DF, Lin BB, Bush R, et al. 2015. Toward improved public health outcomes from urban nature. *Am J Public Health*. 2015; 105(3): 470–477.

Steffen W, Rockström J, Richardson K, Lenton T, Folke C, Liverman D, Summerhayes C, Barnosky A, Cornell S, Crucifix M, Donges J, Fetzer I, Lade S, Scheffer M, Winkelmann R, Schellnhuber H. 2018. Trajectories of the Earth System in the Anthropocene. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*. 2018; 115(33): 8252-8259.

Tansley AG. 1935. The Use and Abuse of Vegetational Concepts and Terms. *Ecology*. 1935; 16(3): 284–307.

The World Forum on Natural Capital, 2018. What is Natural Capital? Accessed 10 July 2019.

UN-Habitat, 2016. The City We Need 2.0. United Nations Human Settlements Programme (UN-Habitat). Nairobi.

University of Leicester, 2015. State of our countryside: Land-use map of the UK. Accessed 10 Aug. 2019.

Watts J. 2018. Domino-effect of climate events could move Earth into a 'hothouse' state. *The Guardian*, London; accessed 10 Aug. 2019.

Wilson EO. 1984. The Biophilia Hypothesis. Island Press, New York.

Woo F, Wortmann J, Schurig S, et al. 2014. Regenerative Urban Development: A Roadmap to the City We Need. Hamburg: World Future Council.

World Health Organization (WHO), 2014. Healthy Cities. Promoting Health and Equity. Copenhagen; accessed 10 July 2019.

PAPER #2.09

CONSIDERING LADAKHI SELF-SUFFICIENCY UNDER CLIMATE CHANGE, COVID-19 AND BEYOND

Carey Clouse[a]
[a]University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, MA

ABSTRACT

The long-term self-sufficiency of high-altitude subsistence farmers in Ladakh, north India, is noteworthy, particularly in the context of the pressures of globalization. This paper identifies design attributes that contribute to this extraordinary autonomy, in part due to the architecture, landscape architecture and infrastructural adaptations that have occured under recent climate change challenges. However, the impact of the COVID-19 virus has also tested these measures of Ladakhi independence, and in telling ways. In comparing resilience measures from climate change adaptation and the earliest waves of the outbreak in Ladakh, this paper charts the limitations of planned self-sufficiency, and makes connections between these problem areas and broader planning goals for resilience.

KEYWORDS

Ladakh; COVID-19; climate change; resilience; adaptation.

INTRODUCTION

Over time and throughout history, the remote region of Ladakh, in north India, has proven itself to be extraordinarily self-sufficient. This is the ethos that has underscored hundreds of years of ongoing life in high-altitude farming villages, has helped to characterize the strong cultural and social ties of residents, and has enabled the relative autonomy of the area relative to state formation in other parts of India and South Asia. In recent years, climate change has caused extreme environmental changes in the region, and adaptive responses have continually reinforced ideas of self-sufficiency and autonomy. In 2020, however, the COVID-19 pandemic emerged in Ladakh, severely testing Ladakhi resilience. This paper offers a brief overview of the topic of self-sufficiency in Ladakh, charts examples of climate change adaptation in the area, and then offers initial thoughts on the impact of a global virus through the lens of early, initial reports from Ladakh. The goal of this ongoing research is to begin to understand potential correlations between climate change adaptation, notions of resilience and state autonomy, and the early stages of a global pandemic.

1. BACKGROUND

The Union Territory of Ladakh is a relatively new designation, as until 2019 the region was a part of the state of Jammu and Kashmir, India's northernmost state. Today Ladakh is made up of two districts, one in Leh and one in Kargil, located in a relatively remote and isolated high-altitude mountain environment. Leh District is the portion of Ladakh considered for this paper, although the two areas of Ladakh have relatively similar attributes. Throughout this paper the term Ladakh is used to designate the portion of land that is officially known as Leh District. Located between the Himalayan and Karakoram mountain ranges, the region of

Ladakh is characterized by high-altitude mountains, scarce rainfall, and relative isolation from the Indian subcontinent. The region's barren landscapes and extreme seasonal weather patterns have given rise to village lifestyles that exhibit specialized traits for collective survival. Under the pressures of climate change, methods for subsistence farming have been revisited through a wide array of adaptive design interventions. Together, these ancient skills and newfound techniques can be understood as a series of old and new forms of architectural, infrastructural and landscape adaptations for survival in a difficult climate and context.
Despite the long history of Ladakhi stability, each new environmental shift can have an extraordinary impact upon social, cultural, religious, economic and environmental foundations in the region. Scholars Marcus Nüsser and Ravi Baghel note that, "Regardless of the specific point of departure, research aims, theoretical foundations, and methodological designs of case studies, it is widely accepted that the livelihoods of most of the Himalayan population are under stress and adversely affected by continuous degradation or depletion of the natural resource base."(Fewkes 2011) This paper briefly discusses some of the adaptive design approaches explored under current climate change challenges, and the broader landscape of self-sufficiency in Ladakhi society.

1.1. Self-sufficiency

Ladakhi self-sufficiency has been well-documented by visitors and scholars, and it is a prized trait that emerges in the stories and daily interactions of residents (Norberg-Hodge 1991). Notions of independence pervade the majority of basic needs, from food production, to land tenure, to education, religion and healthcare. Ladakhi villages have historically produced most, if not all of the food and material products needed for their own consumption, emerging as self-reliant units within a broader landscape of Ladakhi space (Crook and Osmaston 1994). Indeed, Ladakh was never entirely isolated from the rest of the world, as individuals within these groups also engaged in trans-national trade for additional products such as tea, oil and salt, and animals that provided material, labor or food products (Fewkes 2011). However, even today, Ladakhi villages tend to be agrarian in nature, with fields planted with crops for household consumption and animal fodder.
Self-sufficiency, as a practice and an ethos, is deeply embedded into village space and cultural practices (Norberg-Hodge 1991). The disciplines of architecture, landscape architecture and spatial planning are not widely practiced in this region, and yet these disciplinary domains feature prominently in both historic and current adaptive measures. For instance, the design and planning of water management structures enables high-altitude village agriculture, and so the topic of infrastructure features prominently in the Ladakhi conception of territorial independence. Similarly, sustainable design is a part of agricultural systems and the shape and functions of vernacular and contemporary buildings in this landscape (Prakash 1991).

1.2. Tourism

Ladakh has long occupied a geophysical position of international importance, as an outpost on major trade routes such as the Silk Road (Devers 2017; Fewkes 2009), and more recently as a contested borderlands region. But Ladakh still remains somewhat isolated, by some combination of political mandate, geography or weather, in uneven ways, even today. In 1974, the region was opened to outsiders and since then has supported a growing population of visitors who have helped to sustain a growing economy based on tourism. Today tourism accounts

for a major share of the local economy, affording individuals and households earning opportunities away from family villages (Akhtar and Gondhalekar 2013).

1.3. State Control

Today, it is possible to chart the extraordinary resilience of several hundred Ladkahi subsistence farming villages that have been continuously operating for nearly a thousand years, enduring raids, changing political structures, and even efforts at state formation (Moorcroft 1841). Political scientist and anthropologist James C. Scott has written extensively about the autonomy of groups who live at some remove from the working aparatus of the state. Stateless people benefit, according to Scott, by living beyond the jurisdiction of a governing authority, avoiding taxation or conscription, for instance (Scott 2009). In recent years, the physical remove that Ladakhi villages have had from the Indian subcontinent has given the region and its people a special status, as a borderlands region. In this capacity, Ladakh receives financial and infrastructural support, while retaining relative autonomy from the state through self-governing agreements and, for better or worse, narratives of isolation (Demenge 2013).

Scott identifies a number of groups in Southeast Asia who have evaded state control over time, and while north India is not explicitly included in his study, it falls into a similar category based on traits and characteristics. The region of Ladakh is isolated geographically, but also in terms of trade and supervision. While on several major trade routes, including the historic Silk Road, Ladakh is at an elevation that effectively shuts down road access from October through June each year. Even today, this area must be accessed by walking on frozen rivers for days, or by flying – using a helicopter to reach the most extreme outposts. This seasonal separation requires Ladakhis to maintain a practiced regime of self-sufficiency, because although assistance and support is provided by the government of India, it may be literally out of reach (Daultrey and Gergen 2010).

2. CLIMATE CHANGE ADAPTATION

Ladakh can be considered a useful region for the study of self-sufficiency and resilience not only because of its uniquely autonomous experience over time, but also because it has made changes to adapt to recent climate change challenges. In both sustained methods for survival over time, and new techniques for physical adaptation, Ladakh offers an example of what it means to make do with fewer resources, and to change behavior to support radical communitarian living (Nüsser et al. 2019). Ladakh is exposed to a variety of challenges, all of which have shaped, in some way or another, its enduring legacy. The region is located in a contested border zone known for its inhospitable climate. It has a landscape defined by high altitude, impassable roads, and steep, rugged terrain. It has been shaped by tourism and recent struggles for sustainable economic development. All of these conditions create the challenging context of contemporary Ladakh, in which adaptive design responses must shore up older notions of self-sufficiency.

2.1. Characteristics of Adaptive Projects

Ladakhi villages harbor a variety of types of climate adaptive design projects, typically small in scale, with site-specific, dispersed footprints. These projects range in type from infrastructure interventions to energy systems and development projects. Many have physical, cultural, social, religious, and economic ties to the region. Indeed, the small-scale adaptive projects in Leh District are contextually responsive, using local materials, labor and resources.

Figure 1. Ice Stupas create freestanding caches of water for irrigation, held in the winter as ice. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 2. Snow Barrier Bands are built on mountain passes to catch and divert wind-blown snow for irrigation use. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 3. Artificial Glaciers are built to trap and hold meltwater, as ice, for the following agricultural season. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 4. Water reservoirs are built into the landscapes above village farms and below glaciers, to hold irrigation water for equitable shared use, as a form of the commons. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 5. Passive solar architecture strategies have improved energy efficiency and year-round livability in Ladakh. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 6. The interior conditions of an improved greenhouse in Ladakh enables a year-round growing season. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 7. Tree armor helps a newly planted sapling to thrive; as a design strategy it produces local tree resources and all of the benefits trees provide for ecosystem functioning. Source: Carey Clouse

Figure 8. A hole (foreground) dug to store food underground helps to manage food security. Source: Carey Clouse

Four major themes guide current climate adaptive work in Ladakh. Energy efficiency, food security, water stewardship and resource management appear again and again as the driving forces behind individual projects. Climate adaptive strategies include the production of ice stupas, snow barrier bands, artificial glaciers and water reservoirs; the development of solar architecture and greenhouses; the use of tree armor; and food stockpiling and sharing. In each of these examples, extant practices were augmented using new materials, techniques, or design hacks. For instance, the implementation of an artificial glacier simply enhances the functioning of existing meltwater irrigation systems in the area, rather than replacing proven systems of water self-sufficiency.

2.2. Examples of Climate Change Adaptation in the Region

The following images of climate adaptive projects help to illustrate the range and type of designs currently implemented in Ladakh. These projects typically operate outside of governmental support or engagement, instead having a local ethos, production effort and system of management. Each of these systems or designs has helped to solidify the region's autonomy, even as various systems have been eroded by destructive forces of climate change. (Figures 1-8).

3. COVID-19

When the global pandemic caused by COVID-19 struck travelers in January and February of 2020, Ladakh appeared to be a region that was well-insulated from global tourism, largely because very few travelers typically venture to the region during the winter months. Moreover, Ladakhi people also perform reduced service roles in the winter months, instead working on farms, retreating to ancestral homes and often

limiting contact with others because movement is hampered by extreme winter weather.

The first COVID-19 cases were identified in March, 2020, affecting a dozen residents who had returned from pilgrimages abroad. These travelers acquired the illness while abroad, thus bringing it into the region. The individuals were hospitalized while the rest of the region moved into a quarantine lockdown. It appeared that this strategy worked: in late-March, Ladakh was declared COVID-free (Sharma 2020).

However, in the ensuing weeks, many hundreds of students returned from schools in other cities and states to shelter in Ladakh with their families. This caused an additional influx of travelers into the region, along with other residents returning home from across India and beyond. In April, additional cases were announced in local and national news sources, and Ladakh again appeared to have active cases. In the weeks up to this writing, government agencies have continuously reported additional COVID-19 cases in both Leh and Kargil districts. Together, the two districts had a combined total of more than 1,000 cases by July 1st, 2020 (*Tribune News Service* 2020).

3.1. Impacts from Tourism

In addition to the essential concerns about human health and wefare, Ladakh has also suffered a major economic loss, in the form of tourism, from the COVID-19 virus in 2020. The region has witnessed explosive growth in recent years, with the number of annual tourists rising steadily since 1974, when the government opened the region to visitors. In the past decade alone, Ladakh has seen an enormous uptick in tourists, who come for a variety of reasons: to trek in the mountains, to see ancient Buddhist relics and spaces, or to witness the special cultural products of Ladakhi society (India 2019).

Tourism is the central driver for Ladakh's contemporary economy, and it has permeated almost all parts of the Ladakhi economy, from the jobs of hotel staff, drivers and tour operators to food produced and prepared for visitors and even the wide array of materials bought and sold in marketplaces. Farming families rely on visitors for homestays or as customers for dried aprocots and knitted hats. Businesses sell gear and experiences to tourists, and the associated travel industry is completely reliant on the influx of summer tourists each year.

With the summer of 2020 appearing to be a lost year for tourism, many hotel, guesthouse and restaurant businesses are projecting a loss of profits. Without an influx of visitors, the enormous structure of Ladakhi tourism falls apart, leaving many individuals without jobs. This is an environment where nearly every Ladakhi has an ancestral home or farm to return to, and the idea of homelessness or destitution is still unprecedented. But several concerns have already emerged, and as the ripple effect from a lost season of tourism plays out, there will undoubtedly be others as well.

Additionally, many individuals have taken out loans in order to build guest living quarters on their land, or to purchase vehicles or other business assets. These small-scale entrepreneurs could be in danger of losing their land, assets, and ultimately their means of employment if they cannot make payments to the banks on their loans this year.

The second major impact will be seen in educational attainment. Ladakhi students pay tuition to attend many secondary schools and colleges, both regionally and nationally. Initally, students will not be able to physically attend classes due to distancing measures, and they will likely struggle with distance learning because of a lack of internet access. In the following years, students whose families can't afford the high cost of tuition may need to remove their students from

these high schools and colleges. This ongoing loss of education, professional preparation and the overall advancement of the Ladakhi workforce will likely have a lasting imprint on Ladakhi opportunities in the future.

3.2. Highlighting Gaps in Self-sufficiency

Across the globe, the areas of impact of the virus on the economy, the environment, and society are far-reaching. But in Ladakh, the pandemic is also illustrative of gaps in the relative independence of a region that is both lauded for radical autonomy and extraordinarily vulnerable to change. It is then perhaps useful to consider how climate adaptive design interventions have fallen short of assisting in ameliorating the problems of the pandemic, and also to acknowledge the region's capacity to pivot to greater resilience, even given current COVID-19 challenges. Climate-adaptive design projects tend to impact and improve environmental, rather than human systems. Increasingly, the concerns of human, social, cultural, religious, political and economic realms may be understood as embedded within, and central to, environmental functioning.

Two striking areas where self-sufficiency is lacking in contemporary Ladakh is in tourism and education. Healthcare access is uneven, as many Ladakhis integrate care from traditional healers and Western medicine, and these two alternatives have varying degrees of access throughout the region. These three weak points might be addressed in future planning efforts, as they could be bolstered with strategic design interventions aimed at increasing self-sufficiency. Just as climate change and environmental health has moved to the forefront of planning efforts in recent years, healthcare, education and tourism might also benefit from new design solutions.

4. DISCUSSION

The position that many Ladakhis are in today, under a COVID-19 quarantine, is perhaps no different than the situation that is faced by individuals the world over. The future economic health of the region appears to be in a dire condition, pushed perhaps in one direction or another by the duration of this virus and its long-term impact on tourism. As in many other places, Ladakh has been split- between the individuals who have little to lose- having no prior reliance on tourism for economic benefit or education, and those whose lives will be forever altered by the loss of income, or opportunity, that this pandemic produces.

But this great divide is difficult to accept, given the Ladakhi ethic of self-sufficiency and the sheer number of generations that have successfully operated outside of the state's control. If the economic and intellectual promis of Ladakh is crushed by a single virus, then one must reckon with the awareness that this region is now inextricably linked to global phenomenons, and that it is, no longer, an autonomous and utterly resilient place.

Geographer Neil Brenner's articulation of planetary urbanization is perhaps useful here, as it appears that COVID-19 has only highlighted the ways in which Ladakh is now tethered to the rest of the world (Brenner 2014). This connection is a double-edged sword- one that brings economic prosperity, an influx of ideas and support, cross-cultural awareness and sharing, and then, on the other hand, also risk, in increased vulnerability to physical, economic, political and social change. For Ladakhis to remain independent and autonomous they will need to self-isolate, with all of the intertwined opportunities and obstacles that such a measure would represent.

CONCLUSION

Ladakh is a high mountain landscape populated by tiny, thousand-year-old villages. Here villagers might be considered to be living on the front lines of climate change, where melting glaciers predominate, and GLOFs, cloudbursts, mudslides, and a decoupling of precipitation from agricultural norms have become commonplace events. Here too are the farmers and engineers who have effectively countered these landscape shifts with their own climate-adaptive design responses.

This paper outlines a few of the climate-adaptive design responses found today in Ladakh, and acknowledges the region's deep-rooted self-sufficiency. These examples of resilience stand in stark contrast to the impact of the COVID-19 pandemic, which has been, to many in the region, devastating. In comparing Ladakhi notions of autonomy and climate change adaptation with COVID-19 challenges, it is possible to highlight the gaps in overall system resilience. While climate-adaptive design interventions have remained viable during the current pandemic, a loss in the spheres of education and tourism represents severe limitations to the functioning of Ladakhi society.

If there is something to be learned from the case of Ladakh, remoteness, and the self-sufficiency that accompanies this geographic remove can be a considerable benefit in the context of a global pandemic. Individual village households, as subsistence farming units, function well without many external inputs. Climate-adaptive design interventions all contribute to the functioning of households and farms, enabling ongoing agricultural production during quarantine.

But what good is it to operate at a remove? What if you desire education for your children, economic opportunity for your family, or perhaps access to the very healthcare needed in such a pandemic? At this very early stage in the global COVID-19 pandemic, Ladakhi self-sufficiency and austerity, is very much on stage. Ladakhi society, and norms, have shifted in the five decades since the region opened in 1974, and during that time the expectations, hopes, and interests of its residents have also evolved. Perhaps what is best for limiting virus transmission is also antithetical to these human desires-and the very things that support our ongoing connection to each other.

REFERENCES

Akhtar, Adris, and Daphne Gondhalekar. 2013. "Impacts of Tourism on Water Resources in Leh Town." In . Vol. 30. leh-ladakh: International Association for Ladakh Studies.

Brenner, Neil J., ed. 2014. *Implosions/ Explosions: Towards a Study of Planetary Urbanization.* Berlin: Jovis.

Crook, John, and Henry Osmaston. 1994. *Himalayan Buddhist Villages: Environment, Resources, Society and Religious Life in Zangskar, Ladakh.* Bristol: University of Bristol.

Daultrey, Sally. 2010. "Adaptation on the Roof of the World." *The Center for Design and Geopolitics (blog).* December 30, 2010. http://designgeopolitics.org/blog/2010/12/adapatation-on-the-roof-of-the-world/.

Demenge, Jonathan. 2013. "The Road to Lingshed: Manufactured Isolation and Experienced Mobility in Ladakh." *HIMALAYA, the Journal of the Association for Nepal and Himalayan Studies* 32 (1): 51–60.

Devers, Quentin. 2017. "Charting Ancient Routes in Ladakh: An Archaeological Documentation." In *Interaction in the Himalayas and Central Asia: Processes of Transfer, Translation and Transformation in Art, Archaeology, Religion and Polity,* edited by Eva Allinger, Frantz Grenet, Christian Jahoda, Maria-Katharina Lang, and Anne Vergati, 321–38. Vienna: Austrian Academy of Sciences Press. https://www.academia.edu/39101653/Charting_Ancient_Routes_in_Ladakh_An_Archaeological_Documentation.

Fewkes, Jacqueline. 2009. *Trade and Contemporary Society along the Silk Road: An Ethno-History of Ladakh*. New York: Routledge. https://academic.oup.com/ahr/article/115/2/513/11286.

2011. "Living in the Material World: Cosmopolitanism and Trade in Early Twentieth Century Ladakh." *Modern Asian Studies.* https://doi.org/10.017/S0026479X07002058.

India, Press Trust of. 2019. "Leh Emerging Favourite Destination for Foreign Tourists, Nearly 50k Visited in 2018." *Business Standard India*, January 19, 2019. https://www.business-standard.com/article/pti-stories/leh-emerging-favourite-destination-for-foreign-tourists-nearly-50k-visited-in-2018-119011900373_1.html.

Moorcroft, William. 1841. *Travels in the Himalayan Provinces of Hindustan and the Panjab; in Ladakh and Kashmir; in Peshawar, Kabul, Kunduz, and Bokhara.* Vol. 2. London: John Murray. https://www.wdl.org/en/item/17537/.

Norberg-Hodge, Helena. 1991. *Ancient Futures : Learning from Ladakh.* Sierra Club Books.

Nüsser, Marcus, and Ravi Baghel. 2016. "Local Knowledge and Global Concerns: Artificial Glaciers as a Focus of Environmental Knowledge and Development Interventions." In *Ethnic and Cultural Dimensions of Knowledge*, edited by Peter Meusburger, Tim Freytag, and Laura Suarsana, 8:191–209. Cham: Springer International Publishing. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-21900-4_9.

Nüsser, Marcus, Juliane Dame, Benjamin Kraus, Ravi Baghel, and Susanne Schmidt. 2019. "Socio-Hydrology of 'Artificial Glaciers' in Ladakh, India: Assessing Adaptive Strategies in a Changing Cryosphere." *Regional Environmental Change* 19 (5): 1327–37. https://doi.org/10.1007/s10113-018-1372-0.

Prakash, Sanjay, ed. 1991. *Solar Architecture and Earth Construction in the Northwest Himalaya*. Sustainable Development Series 5. New Delhi: Har-Anand Publications in association with Vikas Pub. House.

Scott, James C. 2009. *The Art of Not Being Governed: An Anarchist History of Upland Southeast Asia.* Yale University Press.
Sharma, Arun. 2020. "Covid-Free Not Long Ago, Ladakh Sees 198 New Cases." *The Indian Express,* June 14, 2020. https://indianexpress.com/article/india/covid-free-not-long-ago-ladakh-sees-198-new-cases-6457813/.
Tribune News Service. 2020. "With 11 New Patients, Ladakh's Tally 1,002," July 4, 2020. https://www.tribuneindia.com/news/j-k/with-11-new-patients-ladakhs-tally-1-002-108196.

PAPER #2.10

SENSE OF ABSENCE: PLACE KEEPING OF THE INTANGIBLE

Elena Rocchi[a]
[a]Arizona State University, Tempe, USA

ABSTRACT

There are episodes in which the built form of a city can not be discerned. For instance, while driving on freeways. In those moments, a city turns absent in the sense of being receptive to any change of meaning. It becomes a *espace propre*[1] as the effect of what it is imagined. This multiple-case design research generally tests how to grasp what is "perceived but not apperceived" (Leibnitz) in architectural education, using a methodological approach that involves an in-depth exploration of perceptions of a city using videos as data collection. The procedure is sequential. Two instrumental bounded case studies follow each other: the outcome of looking at a part of a historical movie informs the selection of the second case study — a design studio.The first case study — the prelude to more extensive research — is the content of the first fourteen minutes of *Psycho* (1960) as Hitchcock's image of Phoenix. It is an exploratory case study conducted in 2015 before a research question was identified, done following film analysis in terms of *mise en scene* to investigate a place. The second one is the analysis of a six-year studio's design phases. It involves extensive data collection, including a combination of film analysis and students' observation of situations using movie clips, the method used to look critically at the environment. The research purpose is to develop a more in-depth understanding of how movies shape how cities are seen by observing ways the interaction between students and films infers design narrative. Considering the issue across the studio's processes and outcomes not only extends across the intuition the Hitchcock movie but provides a test of a theory. It informs on ways architectural students can actively perceive a continually changing environment and capture moving images of the city to inform preliminary projects using transmediation introducing programs as situations.

KEYWORDS

Image; Phoenix; Hitchcock: *psycho; espace propre*; transmediation.

INTRODUCTION — FADE IN

The scope of the architectural research's analysis is to observe ways the nature and the function of experiences — the mental image of a city — can inform architectural projects. The knowledge of the mental picture of the city builds upon Kevin Lynch's book, *The Image of the City* (1960,) and on a premise: if Lynch investigates the city image as the look of its form built "on foot," this study investigates the one made by cameras, not experienced. In the scope of analyzing it, Phoenix is chosen as the context in which the research problem grows. As the built representation of many American metropolia, Phoenix is the epitome of cities "plastic to the perceptual habits of thousands of citizens: open-ended to change of function and meaning, receptive to the formation of new imagery," and representative of environments "well organized but poetic and symbolic as well." Phoenix speaks of cities of complex societies, and generally, "of the complicated functions and movements of the city world." [2] The transitional and transformative space of

[1] According to De Certeau, a subject defines a city in three phases, being the first one the act in which a subject produces a space propre — in a physical, mental, and political sense.
[2] Lynch, K. 1960. The image of the city. The Mit Press: 119

its freeways, constructed to be unoccupied, is a vast area of absence. As the blank area in Piranesi's *Pianta di Roma* (Plan of Rome, 1756), is the palimpsest of one's interpretive memory fragments as the private visions built while driving, suspended in between the visible and perceived reality, fragmented images as incomplete ruins. Cars not only distort the relations humans have with the city but conform their minds and, in turn, the city becomes their product. | The multiple-case design research procedure is sequential: two instrumental bounded case studies follow each other. The subject of the first case study is the film analysis of the first fourteen minutes of one movie: *Psycho* (1960). In the film, Phoenix's urban desert is not seen as a built form but as an absent one. The second case study uses fifteen projects of a performance-oriented/ city-theatre studio done in 2017. Students began their projects following positions of speculative realism as a methodology. They used a phenomenological visual study to grasp Phoenix's urban reality as a location architecturally. The design process's steps saw students initially shooting movies using cameras at rest, analyzing them to determine potential narratives, and finally, creating both two-dimensional images and three-dimensional projects as Phoenix's duplicate products. | The purpose of the multiple-case design research is to reveal the construction of the city's mental image as the espace propre — the relationship between reality and representation of a city. In examining the beginning of Hitchcock's movie, the cinematic image of Phoenix is revealed not in terms of "imitation" but of Marion's lived experiences (*espace propre.*) | Results infer that the use of mental images in architectural projects is essential to investigate and crucial in a project setting. Thus, that imagination has a role in architectural design and urban reconstruction. This study advances, on the one hand, new ways for students to understand how to produce projects as their own space, using vivid and memorable images as visual experiences — moving images. On the other hand, it reconsiders the value of "edges" of interrupted cities generally experienced as disturbing: more than representations, cities are theaters of absence as shared visions that highlight what is universally and fundamentally human.

1. DESCRIPTION OF THE CASE STUDIES

1.1. Cut to case study 1: *Psycho* — the absence of Phoenix

For quite a long time, cinema critics have been reflecting on one of Hitchcock's most popular and successful movies —*Psycho*— focusing on its contributions to modern horror films, on Norman Bates' psychosis, on the manipulation of audience's fear and so on. But the fact the secretary who steals, runs away and dies is from Phoenix goes unseen. In the opening credits, the text "Phoenix — Arizona" appears superimposed on a city. Immediately after, for fourteen minutes, an unprecedented Phoenix is shown not as a city but as a location. From Phoenix, Hitchcock takes only the name — not the setting. *Psycho* is not "a super production," as he says, but "a very strange film in every sense."[3] Except for the opening scene, Hitchcock shoots the whole picture in Hollywood's interiors, portraying the city on Marion's car front and rear windows with the same look of his television films *Alfred Hitchcock Presents* shot in the Revue Studios. | The beginning of *Psycho* is a visual experience of forty-five seconds. From the helicopter, Hitchcock shows a city at the end of the 50s already widespread. Then, the camera movement goes from the panoramic view of Phoenix down to an interior. Moving from the city surface to its deep interiority, Hitchcock transitions space to void following the "farthest to the nearest" principle (Truffaut, 1985), announcing not only the film as a whole but the image of Phoenix according to

[3] Naremore, J. 1973. Filmguide to Psycho, London: Indiana University Press Filmguide Series, Harry Geduld and Ronald Gottesmann, General Editors: 19.

Hitchcock: absent. Psycho happens in Phoenix, wholly invisible and absent. | One year after Frank Lloyd Wright's death, Hitchcock flies a camera lower and above a sun-bleached white midtown section of Phoenix. He is seeking out a specific location of an old hotel with large painted letters advertising "Transients-Low Weekly Rates-Radio in Every Room." In the 70s, the film theorist James Naremore's quickly summarized and described the deliberateness, rhythm, and logic of this opening sequence:

> Like nearly everything else in the film, bear testimony to careful preplanning. (…) After the credits, there is a dissolve to a view of city rooftops: the sun is bright, and in the distance, we can see a desert landscape half-obscured by haze. The camera is panning slowly, pointed first at a prosperous part of town, where a new building is under construction. As the camera eye roves across a thoroughfare, an almost imperceptible dissolve tales up to a slightly closer view. At the same time, works in small block capitals appear at either side of the screen and converge: PHOENIX, ARIZONA. The camera is still panning slowly to the right, and we begin to see a rather drab clock of buildings on the other side of the town; another set of titles converges at the center — FRIDAY, DECEMBER ELEVENTH — and another dissolve takes us a bit closer. The panning movement continues, but now the camera begins a slow zoom down toward one of the buildings, and a last title appears: TWO FORTY-THREE P.M. Still another dissolve, and the camera stops before an ugly-looking wall, peering at a bank of windows. Slowly, it moves toward the single opening, where a set of closed and lowered Venetian blinds has left about sin inches of space. Cut to a closer view of the window (a stage set); the camera slides toward the murky opening under the blinds and enters a room.[4]

After the initial sequence, dissolve after dissolve, Hitchcock depicts a climate of nefariousness, back-door-ness, darkness, shadow, and secrets. Before reaching the shower at the Bates Motel, where she will be murdered, Marion is involved in a drama of precise perception occurring in Phoenix as a transient city. Episodes of three interiors are connected by a car she uses to get away. They are the cheap hotel room where she meets her lover, the interiors without the air-conditioning of the Lowrey Real Estate offices, and the bedroom of a modest conventional home she shares with her sister. While driving on the way between here and there, Marion ignores Phoenix. From "inside" the car, she stares past it to a distant point, with her mouth set. Hitchcock then drives her away from Phoenix, building for ten more minutes a threshold as the evaporated limit of the sprawl, accounting on Marion's flight transitioning between two worlds.

1.2. Cut to case study 2: assuming Marion's viewpoint

Inspired by Marion's viewpoint from the interior of the car as well as Hitchcock's depiction of Phoenix as absent, a performance-oriented/city-theatre studio was conducted in 2017, Spring semester. The studio was part of "The Phoenix Challenge: Desirable Urban Futures research," a collective design initiative that focused on outlining desirable futures for American Cities in the 21st century. It was developed as a research method to study perception using movies to grasp Phoenix as a location. Students were requested to wander in the city as Marion — by car — and to make movies while moving between the school and their home's interiors. While driving on the way between here and there, they were requested to ignore Phoenix by using cameras at rest. The goal was to use the narrative extracted from these clips to design non-anthropomorphic machines as ecological objects to foster enhanced scenarios and renew urban experiences in the metropolitan condition of Phoenix.

[4] Naremore, J. 1973. Filmguide to Psycho, London: Indiana University Press Filmguide Series, Harry Geduld and Ronald Gottesmann, General Editors: 25.

2. METHODOLOGY

2.1. Cut to case study 1

Film analysis, as a form of rhetorical analysis, provided a strategy for critically analyzing and evaluating the frames' sequence of the beginning of Hitchcock's movie, explained in terms of the mise-en-scene approach. These questions were used to begin the analysis: What effects are created in the fourteen minutes sequence through the alternation of interiors and car? How many times does Hitchcock show Phoenix as the exterior context? How does the cinematic Phoenix look like? How does it change from its reality? What does the Hitchcock setting say about Phoenix? The continuous fourteen-minutes sequence was analyzed in terms of the script's arrangement and watched several times to extract representative still images: two cuts, three dissolves, "from Marion's viewpoint," Marion's car, and the final dissolve. They were listed as the script does -- Ext. Phoenix, Arizona - (Day) - Helicopter Shot; Cut to: Int. The hotel room - (Day); Cut to: Ext. Downtown street - (Day); Dissolve to: Ext. Lowery Real Estate Office - (Day); Dissolve: Int. Mary's bedroom - (Day); Dissolve to: Ext. Main street in midtown Phoenix - (Day); From Mary's viewpoint - (Day); Mary's car - (Day). Ext. Main street in midtown Phoenix - (Day); Mary's car - (Day); Dissolve to: Ext. Highway - (Day). Then, the still images as the compositional elements of the film were distinctly separated to explain the significance behind this sequence critically. The resulted script's sequence analysis as the graphic representation of deliberate choices on the part of the director and the screenwriter showed Phoenix's image in three ways: from a distant point, in the front windshield, and the rear window.

2.2. Cut to case study 2

The design process of the six-year studio started following positions of speculative realism. The projects did not begin with a program but a narrative. Practices involved the use of short-clips as codes. In the preliminary phase of their projects, students acted like archaeologists indexing a temple from the collection of ruins: they post rationalized the video material collected during one week to reconstruct an imaginary part of a city from the fragmentary evidence of the clips. As Marion in *Psycho*, students glued fragmented interiors of different neighborhoods by driving, creating an *espace propre* of Phoenix through personal stories. A series of short movie clips served as in-depth interviews without words and as a database to increase the reliability of the research. The group of students designed projects in this way: 1) they shot three clips of fourteen-minutes each as the initial ideas they had of their city, understanding the improvement of their ability to analyze Phoenix's urban reality; 2) they analyzed their movies as extracted on-site experiences; 3) they interpreted them through coding; 4) they translated them into two-dimensional images; 5) they transformed these images into scenographic artifacts.

As conceived between the visible and perceived reality, projects contained the narratives students extracted in the form of movies and reinserted into a context with a need for reactivation. In a sense, the videos

Figure 1. A. Hitchcock, Psycho, still frames

— not the students — discovered spaces as urban theatrical sets. They were shot to detect the presence of situations during the mental-absence state of driving that interrupts the city's form. Students individually recorded three fourteen-minutes movies from the car's interior space using the cameras at rest intended as both ideal fix parts of the body (eyes staring off into space) as well as moving parts of the city (moving centers.) The series of videos were watched in class for one day, uninterruptedly, to connect disconnected students' experiences simultaneously. Using qualitative methods, students then analyzed patterns and meanings of content to produce images and projects, post-producing the material according to a contraction of time that reduced the movies from fourteen to five minutes. The edited clips revealed parts of Phoenix plenty of nothingness. As to measure absence in their phenomenological observations, students coded their movies according to a classification of exceptions, degrees of stability, and kind of space. They controlled these elements' positions in the time and the space of the movie. To make valid inferences from the viewing activity, they set up a list of conditions, coding the same categories and in the same way — presence and absence. They transformed these observations of founded types into iconic texts such as two-dimensional drawings.

At the end of the process, some students re-edited the extracted situation as the artifact's narrative. One student, for example, post-produced his first clip with an existing soundtrack. A dialogue between cars in the foreground is the main protagonist. In the background, the desolation of a widespread neighborhood at night where his project was reinserted. The presence of voices takes on an exact symbolic meaning: the rhetorical use of cars prefigures much of how the city is understood, therefore, architecture. It expresses the sense of alienation, and the uncertain status of Phoenix as a model of a contemporary city architecture must address. In another project, a student combined a video showing the car he just parked with another shot previously taken looking oppositely from the vehicle looking at him moving towards the entrance of the supermarket — an empty view of his idealized metaphysical landscape. These two movies are the example of how the succession of individual scenes virtually collided together — like the succession of acts in a theatre — to build a project as the *espace propre.* As the particular aspects of the students' city and their life, situations were noticed and extracted to inform unique physical locations. A personal itinerary as the own vision recreated from the controlled space of the car revealed them a city in all its dimensions.

Figure 2. Student's work, 14-minutes video

Student's work, process

3. DISCUSSION

3.1. Marion's car: Post-production of a city

To discuss how architects extract visual imagery of places that are absent to the senses and Lynch's criterion of imageability[5] of Phoenix — an interrupted city — I have concentrated on a movie to investigate a place — *Psycho,* one of Hitchcock representative films — and on a studio's processes and outcomes. The multiple-case design research and its sequence revealed that generalizability (case study 2) enhances a single argument (case study 1) to provide a test of a theory. Why is the beginning of Hitchcock's movie so unique to be taken as a reference for starting a project? In the movie, the omission of Phoenix is so explicitly notable that it is hardly seen. In not showing Phoenix, Hitchcock shows the "matter" of the possibility of contemplating cities through the form of cinema as a realm of absence — the crisis of the physical sprawl within American cities one perceives driving. In moving from the farthest to the nearest, he trespasses it, and in reaching the other side, he essentially explores the infra-ordinary of Phoenix as the personal sense of Phoenix. Hitchcock recalls our attention on a fact: if cities are built in terms of the direct presence of figures and bodies in space and time, images as movies are not. If architecture moves through the creation of buildings, images as cinema do it through the nature of perceptions. Shots and frames of a city take on a different significance: they are units that ultimately help to investigate thoughts on a city — architecture. Architecture does not provide the thought-material inherent in cinema. Cinema, in this sense, must be intended not as a medium to reflect on architecture, but the emerging medium of thoughts. By understanding this, we can grasp the significance of *Psycho*'s representation of Phoenix. As an art-form, Phoenix reveals its nature through a movie. Hitchcock's strategy of using separations in between scenes using Marion's car and his omission of reality during fourteen minutes interrupts Phoenix. If Phoenix's relationship with a vast space makes the number of possible Hitchcock's shots of the city almost unlimited, he chooses to obscure it completely. *Psycho* is, therefore, Hitchcock's montage of Phoenix, disjointed, done using the circumstances of a performance — a movie. It is the post-production of a city with a moving center — Marion's car — shown interacting with its ghosts as its diffuse boundaries. If the machine of a city is scenographic one — in the sense that its scenery starts with a center as the optical mechanism and the stage of the representation — Phoenix is not. In its boundary-less environment, both center and stage are no longer found. In *Psycho*, Marion wanders endlessly in between disconnected fragments of her life using her car as a "moving bridge" (Ballard, J.G.: 1971.) in Phoenix, she is always inside interiors, and inside the car where all her reflections are gathered. Seated, her gaze is fixed. In her routinely trips in between here and there, Marion shoots stories as fragments of a city that best reveals itself along highways — episodic narrations of images without continuity, time, or space, tales of a city as a cut through. If pedestrians are drawn to some sites of the "scenic" aspects of Florence, Marion, as the driver, builds scenographic experiences in terms of speed as pacing, distance, and time — new mythology of interactions with the supernatural and existential takes place. The car is, therefore, her moving stage as the spectator and the actor of a drama as well as the subject and a symbol in the film. Capable of feeding her fantasies of personal imagination, the car is the metaphor of Marion' s existence as the concrete container for her abstract vision, delusional, and irrational. In Hitchcock's movie, the car serves only to explain this change in the perception of reality, not the reality of the environment of Phoenix, since the environment and the vehicle are separated.

[5] Image ability: that quality in a physical object which gives it a high probability of evoking a strong image in any given observer." Lynch, Kevin, Idem: 9.

Marion's car is, in fact, a static set design, with no projection forward other than that of thoughts. She is sitting inside, placed between window screens where Hitchcock displays exterior shots of Phoenix. She is trapped in the car as in a *camera obscura* or as Jeffrey in his apartment in *Rear Window* (1954). With a courtyard window named as the glass opposite to the vehicle's windshield — rear window — Jeffrey's apartment is like Marion's psychotic space of her car. He sits all the time with his left leg up as if his foot in on the clutch. Marion and Jeffrey both face windows that are rear windows with no view except the one of the *espace propre,* the support where the internal visual horizon meets with the external environmental one. Rear windows are as cameras at rest — the empty support for random figurations "spaced-out" from a distance in absent state. Taken indiscriminately and without commentaries, the series of fourteen-minutes movies shown how the world looks like without people. As Hitchcock's rear windows, they show how a movie looks like in a movie. They are the tools necessary to obtain graphically suitable material to observe without sentimentalism to measure it. In watching their movies, students saw them for what they were: a world of things as things in a world — rather than their world with things in it — studies of absence in spaces in which emotion, imagination, and reflection naturally dwell.

Phoenix, as the American city, can only be found from a personal point of view, in the car — differently than a city like Rome, founded by the relation between people. In the same year when *Psycho* was released, Federico Fellini portrayed *La Dolce Vita* (1960) as his feeling for Rome: the space for people — not for cars. He represented a Rome of narrow corridors with a baroque waterfall as the center of an architectural jungle where Marcello wants to hide. "Rome is like a jungle - it's easy to hide..," as it says, Marcello. *La Dolce Vita* is not a psychotic movie. It is a movie of two people wandering from the center to the edges of its limits, from the nearest to farthest, a theatrical space. Cities are quickly revealed at the moment they turn into theatrical spaces. In this moment, not only light, color, sound, and movement take place, but someone perceives the intuitional space (J. Gurazky, 1980)[6] as the built space mediated by the presence of someone else in the front. In these cities, citizens are co-creators of the performance of the city by occupying a place defined by the stage and the backstage surrounding them as the audience. In these ideal theaters, there are no edges, no division between the audience and the performance. In these cities, citizens and the city become one.

In immersing Sylvia and Marcello on the central stage of Rome, Fellini shows the image of these cities as ideal theaters,

Figure 3. A. Hitchcock. Psycho, still frames of windshield and rear view mirror.

[6] in the eighties the architect Jerzy Gurazky worked out a theory of dependency that influences the spectator. In his theory, space becomes a theater when it is influenced by a kind of space he calls "of intuition" — the one that is being perceived. The intuitional space surrounds a person beyond his/her field of sight. It is what can be seen and heard from someone in front of this person.

explaining with the movie why the correspondence between architecture and people is extraordinary here. Any sense of individuality is lost as Fellini identifies architecture as the giver and Marcello and Sylvia as the receivers of sensations. But psychotic Phoenix is a whole other thing, more difficult to grasp as a city. If Marcello's reactions are in response to the intuitional space as what is in front of Sylvia as well as it is invisible to her — Rome — Marion's reactions are all introverted since Hitchcock isolates in the car's interior space — a center in movement on an absent theater and with no audience. If Fellini's *La Dolce Vita* takes place in the presence of Rome, Hitchcock's *Psycho* unfolds in the absence of Phoenix. Phoenix is, in this sense, a private foundation. Happening indefinitely at each time and virtually, it is a separated, and synchronous city as the assemblage of heterogeneous, fragmented narratives and subjectivities — a giant collage of disconnected segments as the paradigm of modern urban planning in American cities Hitchcock portrays majestically.

CONCLUSION — DISSOLVE TO: EXT. HIGHWAY

This study has sought to explore ways to build new knowledge about how the mental image of a city informs architectural projects. It focused first on visual mental imagery with the analysis of Alfred Hitchcock's movie as the construction of the mental image of a city as the *espace propre*, and then analyzing a method of teaching architectural students the delineation of what is intuited. In the scope of analyzing it, Phoenix has been chosen as the context in which the research problem grew, the example of cities of a complex society "open-ended to change of function and meaning, receptive to the formation of new imagery." It provided not only a framework to address the research question but allowed the possibility to explore in detail how people experience the city they live in. The research questions were refined during the process. They are: How do we extract mental images as experiences? How do we move them from a non-representational to a representational way? How do movies shape how cities are seen? How can the interaction between students and films shape the design narrative? What I consider to be the most important findings is A) transmediation between reality, movies, and images is the method for images' extraction students can use for analyzing city; B) the reconsideration of the imageability of interrupted American cities as Phoenix. A) Most of the time, the point of view of users is not taken into consideration in architectural production. In learning about their city through the making of clip movie sequences, students understood how production and reception of architecture cannot be separated and how their reciprocal effects as relationships can inform environments. The assumption of transmediation between reality, movies, and images as the method students can use for analyzing city — from the space of the car — opens up the possibility of using "editing" in architectural education for post-producing moving images of reality as narrative. Editing is not quite making because it is still invisible. While during this process, one is not still aware of the visibility of the design, editing is a little more physical as the assemblage of shots cut off the stage of reality into a sequence effectively "re-imagined." "Editing" crafts the first cohesive whole of an idea as narrative. B) By starting this research from Kevin Lynch's criterion of imageability as visual experiences on foot, we found the image of a metropolis founded from the personal point of view of cars, adopting Kevin Lynch as the theoretical framework for this particular study helped to deepen on explanatory power's levels. Giving

relevance to the imageability of interrupted cities takes into consideration what the city's form means to the people who live there as drivers, as well as to elevate the transitional and transformative space of edges and freeways to one of the visions suspended in between the visible and perceived reality. Revealing and place keeping the intangible as what is essentially human of a place can help understand how to foster renewed urban experiences through alterity, detecting in the specific what the city's form means to the people who live and drive there. The knowledge of the mental image of the city, built upon Kevin Lynch's book The Image of the City, has permitted to transition observed phenomena to projects. To better grasp various aspects, I have built a comparison between Federico Fellini's portrait of Rome and Hitchcock's Phoenix, using Jerzy Gurazky's theory of intuitional space. Although my case study may offer important insights about the research problem, there is likely an additional finding that unexpectedly reveals as the result of my in-depth analysis of the case. The absence of Phoenix from Hitchcock's movies speak of something more, of how we can use movies not as a medium to analyze projects, but as the emerging medium of thought. If cities are built in terms of the direct presence of figures and bodies in space and time, metacities (McGrath, Pickett: 2011) — like movies — are not. As a heterogeneous intricate spatial mosaics of multiple centers, metacities can only be experienced as personal montages of pieces connected by absences, an espace propre in movement, according to circumstances that dynamically turn their built form into absence. Like all art-forms, cities can reveal their nature through movies as a new medium of architectural thought, showing the fundamental difference between a city and the image of a city, between Phoenix and the image of Phoenix, where *Psycho* stands. If the built environment of highways shapes a city as interrupted, cars shape citizens as the centers in movement on an interrupted map. Architecture should not use movies as recordings but reverse engineering their process to duplicate the structure of their content, to create a design by visually inspecting them. A movie object can be deconstructed to reveal the architecture of the natural phenomenon re-imagined. In 2007, the Hamlet Shakespeare's classic tragedy was re-imagined by The Wooster Group's by repurposing a Richard Burton's 1964 Broadway production. Simultaneous performance of "Theatrofilm" via a precursor to high-definition television, Electronovision, confronted actors on stage with those in the movie. The Wooster Group extracted the architecture of the theatrical performance from the film's evidence. At the moment the actors appeared on the stage, the movie started and became their companions, while the physical theatrical set mirrored the virtual film shot. The audience realized that the narrative was not a neutral background. On the contrary, the movie was connected with what was happening on the stage. It made it three-dimensional as a kind of reflection and introduced programs as situations. As those actors spent the play placed acting against the sequence of the movie, following the film, continually adjusting to fill those positions as the narrative, students can capture dramatic actions and unforeseeable presences to significantly reveal an architecture, using transmediation of moving images, drawing, music, text. The results illustrated in this paper inform paths to quantitively measure in the future how transmediation informs preliminary designs for urban landscapes while exploring the leading role students have in the design of the future of cities.

Figure 4. The Wooster Group. Hamlet, still frames.

REFERENCES

Augé, M. 1992. *Introduction à une anthropologie de la surmodernité*, Paris, Seuil; trad. it. Nonluoghi. Introduzione a una antropologia della surmodernità, Milano, Elèuthera, 1993.

Ballard, J. G.1996. *A User's Guide to the Millenium*. Essays and Reviews, London: Flamingo.

Crash, Cronenberg, D. 1996 Canada/UK.

De Certau, M. 1984. "Walking in the City", in *The Practice Of Everyday Life,* Translated by Steven Rendall, University Of California Press. Part III Spatial Practices, Chapter VII.

Goebbels, H. 2010. *Aesthetics of Absence: Questioning Basic Assumptions in Performing Arts*, Cornell Lecture on Contemporary Aesthetics.

Baugh, C. 2016. *Play within space: the scenography of Jerzy Gurawski*. Journal Theatre and Performance Design, Volume 1, 2015 - Issue 4: 281-297 | Published online.

Lynch, K. 1960. *The image of the city.* The Mit Press.

Naremore, J. 1973. *Filmguide to Psycho*, London: Indiana University Press Filmguide Series, Harry Geduld and Ronald Gottesmann, General Editors.

Pernigo, Carolina, "L'uomo e la macchina. La proposta di J.G. Ballard per la contemporaneità", *Tecnologia, immaginazione e forme del narrare,* Ed. L. Esposito, E. Piga, A. Ruggiero, Between, IV.8 (2014), http://www.betweenjournal.it/ 29

Pernigo, C. 2014. *L'uomo e la macchina. La proposta di J.G. Ballard per la contemporaneità.* Ed. L. Esposito, E. Piga, A. Ruggiero, Between, IV.8.

Stefano, J. 1959. *Psycho*'s script, based on the novel by Robert Bloch, Retrieved at https://sfy.ru/?script=psycho

PAPER #2.11

CONTACT AND IMPACT (INFLUENCE). TIMELESS EVENTS IN THE CONTEMPORARY CITY LANDSCAPE

Salvatore Rugino[a]
[a]Department of Architecture. University of Palermo, Palermo, Italy

ABSTRACT

The places, narrated by the poets of the past, seem to increasingly fade from the collective imagination, replaced by others where new social behaviors and new subjects are expressed. The feeling that one has within these places is of extraneousness from everyday life. From an architectural point of view, these spaces are a copy and simulacrum of the structures of the past. Existential aspects prevail over morphology, in fact, it does not depend only on how space is occupied, but above all on how one lives it.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; city; influence; shopping; below.

INTRODUCTION

The contemporary city, today, takes on a different role than in the past, it is a complex landscape formed by different superstructures that make it somewhat fascinating.
The places, narrated by the poets of the past, seem increasingly to vanish from the collective imagination, replaced by others where new social behaviors and new subjects are expressed such as, for example, the citizen of shopping centers and the metropolitan museum, both spaces where it perpetuates itself the ritual of the consumption of goods. In these places everything is simulated to seem real, thus creating contact areas where it is possible to find hybridization phenomena. The events created within this new vision of space can be considered as traumas that refer to anxiety for the rational and for the real, introducing a new era that can be defined as simulation. A new culture of fascination takes shape, a labyrinth of meaningless signs, where the "historical sense" is transformed into an event. The distant, the experience of the past, becomes hazy, leaving room for new flows. History is only a myth, a lost referent that finds refuge in a new collective imagination that generates new places, whether they are real or brilliant simulacra that lack, however, a new gaze, a new vision (Baudrillard 2008, 23). And it is for these reasons that today we feel the need to expand our horizons, exploring and experimenting through the differences and incongruities of cultural systems.
In dealing with these phenomena, we will avoid seeing them as rapid changes, therefore we will not use the term rapid oscillation to describe them, but instead we will use the simpler and more easily understood terms impact (influence), and contact.
The impact occurs, in a previously unknown area, as a recognition of an environment of something else that has become sensitive. Contact takes place when the one who has foreseen its direct and conscious presence has envisaged its theoretical possibility in an influence that conditions the space in an unconscious way. It is more than a simple registration, it develops in a conscious reciprocal action; provides new information; it is of a revealing nature and it can be said that in its initial stages it guarantees, to those who respond to it, the existence of a new field of exploration and adventure (Bailey 1977, 98).
To these phenomena perceived as rapid oscillations, but we have seen not to be, as continuous changes imposed by today's society, all register a response to the

impressions they cause on people and things. For example, if we make a pendulum swing, and put sand under it, the pendulum will leave traces of its swing, describing clear and precise traces. In this case the response to changes, to transformations is automatic. Today, we feel the need to go beyond the simple response recorded by the fluctuations. There is a need to get in touch with further knowledge that will open up a field of intercommunication.
These transformations, or needs to look beyond, imply conditions that are dictated by the two terms: contact and impact (influence). The experience we live, through this new way of looking and living in space, inexplicably projects us into a world similar to the original, things seem to double compared to their scenario. Thus new places are born, where the game of illusions and daily ghosts becomes an imaginary world: perfect order that simulates a new society.

1. THE NEW PLACES

The feeling you get inside these places is one of alienation from everyday life. What happens inside the temples of myth, of consumption, has something emic and phage.
Ultimately, the public space, delimited by fortress buildings without elements of aggregation, almost a desert, is an architectural interpretation of the "emic" strategy, while the spaces of consumption interpret the "phage" one. Bauman identifies as an "emic" space a space of interdiction (for example the outlets outside the cities) where one tries to save the reality principle through a false representation of the same, and as a "phage" space any shopping center (Bauman 2000, 102) place, as we have mentioned, where the illusions and ghosts of the already happened are staged.
From the architectural point of view, these spaces of consumption are a copy and simulacrum of the structures of the past. Copy as a formula that respects a basic architectural structure, simulacrum as a simulation of security, where many aspects of the urban community are found.
We have described the city not through urban morphology but through existential aspects. In fact, it does not depend only on how the space is occupied, but above all on how it is lived.
In this regard, taking a leap into the past, in 1951 Ronald Lampitt, who designed landscapes and urban landscapes as real places for real people, tried to draw a map of the ideal city described in the British magazine *Illustrated*, in the same year, by the journalist and writer John Sleigh Pudney.
The city described, through the brushstrokes, by Lampitt is a paradise located on an undulating terrain built from vaguely familiar monuments. An urban landscape rich in memory, but sterile; there is no shop, no shack, no garbage heap, no advertising billboard, there is no space-time loss, everything is measured.

Figure 1. The Ideal City. Illustrated: (Lampitt 1951)

The city described by Pudney and interpreted by Lampitt, through his map, does not have all those elements that instead characterize the contemporary landscape today.
Pudney, in the aforementioned article, does not prefer the ideal humanist city, but his description is that of a controversial city. Because its reality must not be built only for those who thought it up, but for all of humanity. Here the biblical metaphor of the Tower of Babel falls, where the structure of the living space takes on a utopian and ideal charge. According to this

allegory, the whole of humanity must be united, even in utopian intentions, so that it does not get lost. This ideal has had a catastrophic failure, because the common man no longer recognizes himself in "prison cages", to put it in Pudney's style, consequently there is a strong loss of recognition of the "ideal space".
Throughout its history, man has had the ambition to be able to live in a city that fully reflects socio-political ideals. It is precisely these that structure an ideal city. In the absence of elements that characterize the city, one can end up simply reflecting, reproducing, or perpetuating the relations of power and social assets expressed by society.
This type of structure does not reflect the expectations of the ideal Renaissance city, the place par excellence of representation. Serlio's tragic scene is concentrated on the pedestrian street, the pre-industrial city is concentrated on the side scene of the streets, on the facades of the buildings that characterize it, almost a theatrical scene, all in perspective flight. Space and time are determined by the codes of the Renaissance perspective, by an ordered space measured in time. Everything goes back to the proportions of the human body. The urban street becomes the theater of life, a place for the representation of daily actions.

Figure 2. The tragic scene. Second perspective book: (Serlio 1545)

It is symbolic, measured and ordered in space where, however, the presence of man does not exist in the various representations of the city. It is a city that represents itself, the power of ideals.
The city enters a crisis when machines and infrastructures invade the spaces of representation, space is disrupted, in some cases the car does not enter the street, it breaks its harmonic proportions and so does the infrastructure in the territory. The theatrical space, representative of the city, is fragmented, broken by speed everything becomes elusive, dissolves in space. It no longer assumes a role of monumentality but of fading.

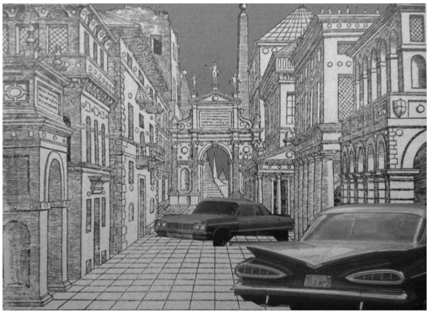


Figure 3. The tragic scene with cars. Sprawltown: Looking for the City on its Edges: (Inghersoll 2006)

In this regard, Wim Wenders, in the film Lisbon story, makes the leading actor walk with a video camera tied to his shoulders to be able to see what all of us, walking, cannot see. This experiment has a main objective: to increase and develop sensitivity to those unexplored areas, where the relationships between phenomena take on new forms within the contemporary landscape. A vision of space that reaches a certain height excluding that part of the genius loci which is the relationship with the sky but favoring the one with the earth.

2. THE CITY FROM BELOW

The adventure begins from the bottom, from the places where phenomena generate dynamics that radically modify the community, in this transition of civilization and above all in this transformation of society that opens up a new possibility for architecture on an urban scale, new architectural typologies, new spatial and formal inventions. This, if the programming takes a right turn, not idealistic, not dominated by rules, not from above, but on the contrary relational, experimental, from below (Costanzo, Ricci 2007).

The city from below, a place where the potential of an open dialogue, between the community and the space, of communication and common action through friction is experienced.

The cities of our time have become so complex that to understand this complexity it is now necessary to resort to new ways of observing. They require new approaches to transformation processes. Within the context of cities in rapid change and scenarios of contraction that are increasingly difficult to govern, the phenomena in progress take on particular importance.

Italo Calvino (*Palomar* 1983) comes to our aid on how to observe phenomena, where the main character of the text makes philosophical considerations on the world around him, showing us a man on a mission to quantify complex phenomena, in a search for fundamental truths about nature of being. The first section of the book deals mainly with the visual experience, the second with anthropological and cultural themes, the third with speculations on more general issues, such as the cosmos, time and infinity. Calvino points out, but above all he asks himself how an event can be observed without taking into account the complex aspects that contribute to formulating it, and the equally complex ones to which it gives rise. First of all, aspects vary and that is why one phenomenon is always different from another. However, there are forms and sequences that are repeated, albeit irregularly distributed in space and time. We could speak of divergence or convergence but the main difficulties arise in fixing the boundaries of the field of observation, because, by changing the boundaries, the space under consideration is overturned and at the same time compressed.

In this frame of reference, we could build a model or complex system of reading the contemporary project and city, through the search for a balance between the principles and the experience of the phenomena in progress. Secondly, check whether the model, produced by the sum of actions and experiences, which do not resort to fixed models and predictable solutions but, simultaneous and sometimes contradictory, fits the practical cases observable in the experience of completed and unrealized projects. Finally, make the necessary corrections for model and reality to coincide. And it is precisely from reality, from the real city, that we must start. Made in Tokyo, a research project later published by Tsukamoto and Momoyo Kaijima (2001), exalts the virtues of what they call the "real city". They start by describing the current phenomena that involve all the great metropolises. Cities where you get stuck in traffic because they are full of construction sites that modify them and make them attractive to a wider audience: we could say that they are turning into a consumer product. If we look at history anyway, one of the most interesting things about the city is its constant reconstruction of itself.

On the one hand we have the city as a consumer product, made up of skyscrapers, large buildings for consumption (food and cultural) and on the other the real city, built up of small low buildings: we could define it as a low place. The real city continues to fill the empty spaces, continues to prioritize a stubborn architectural honesty in response

to the environment and programming needs, without insisting on aesthetics and form.
Large projects are quite controversial, says Oshima, a professor at Columbia University, noting that most people are entranced by skyscrapers because they completely change the character of their neighborhoods. Cities are reversing their natural dimension from horizontal, made up of buildings of three or at most four floors, to a vertical one, but whether the land and infrastructure are able to support this density is another question. And whether they make a better city is up for debate. Everything is linked to consumption phenomena. It is precisely these that are determining the complete transformation of the city from below. To understand how this type of development breaks with the typological tradition of the city, we need to look at history.
Our cities, especially the buildings that shape it, derive from the Roman *insula*, where the *tabernae*, that is the shops, were located on the ground floor. This typology has been configured, with the necessary modifications, until today as the result of the direct transformation in the site of the type.
Clarifying example of this concept of transformation, it is a singular square with an elliptical shape, closed by medieval houses which is located in the city of Lucca, today called Piazza del Mercato.
This was created for shows and was the amphitheater of Lucca, an imposing structure. In the Middle Ages, this place became a square, where popular assemblies were held.
Over the centuries it was transformed, first into a fortress. Then it became a fundamental space for the layout of the city, until it became the city market.
This example clarifies how the type has undergone transformations: from an amphitheater to a city market. It should be noted that the transformation undergone has changed the function within the city, but has not transformed its type, its shape in the city.

Figure 4. Market square of Lucca. (www.dovealucca.it)

Today, an important fact happens, due to the opening of large shopping centers and shopping villages, these places dedicated to commerce, such as the city market of Lucca, no longer have the function of relational places for sale. This phenomenon tends to move the sale of consumer goods from the city, from its historic sites, to the new centers for commerce in the outskirts of the city.
What was previously separated by functions today is concentrated in a single space, or rather what was scattered in private plots, the *insule* within the public space, now group together in a new environment that is neither public nor private in the classic way .
It is the ground floors, the *tabernae* that are losing their social and commercial function. It would seem a little obvious, but the continuous lowering of the shutter is causing the total closure of most of the shops, whether they are in the center or in the suburbs. All this involves phenomena that determine a complete transformation of the city. The security of our cities no longer exists. The city is going through a profound crisis. From neighborhood to neighborhood, from the main arteries to the villages, sealed doors, shop windows with the words "for sale" and "for rent" clearly visible. And the most worrying thing is that many of those signs have been there for months because nobody bets on the small shop anymore.
Because, if it is now an outdated phenomenon that sees the small suburban trade supplanted

in favor of shopping centers, few would have bet that the crisis would have crept into the most elegant streets of the city. Instead something has changed. In places where years ago there was a competition to open a shop, now there are places with closed shutters. The closure of historic shops often takes over from clothing stores or pizza by the slice and distributors of other fast foods for lunch breaks or even temporary activities of non-EU citizens.

CONCLUSION

In reality, ours is an era, a culture, which requires constant change; the city cannot be deprived of its liveliest space, more direct to the user. We cannot continue to think about changing the city with large-scale interventions or restyling. Situations of deprivation need to be reinterpreted by recognizing public space as potential, seeking new or lost connections at special and social levels. Rejected spaces are brought back into the field of vision in relation to the user. This is not a need for uniformity of style but something much deeper. It is a question of understanding according to which principles to orient the transformation of something (our space), which is a common good no longer representative, as in the Renaissance but relational.

Ultimately, what we propose is a real and projective frame of reference, which will reveal combinations, configurations and new organizations, which do not come from habits, but from that area of confluence of experiences.

Today, we must free ourselves from patterns and conventions in order to understand the "new", what diverges from what has already happened. It is nothing more than the result of the creative instability and materials, real and virtual, of architecture. We do nothing but describe the new as something "outside" our competences, as something foreign to our way of operating. We must, however, recognize that this "outside" is everywhere, we are surrounded by it, and it is within us, within our imagination. The secret lies in freeing "the view from objects and habits that derive from a vision that is too concentrated on the object" (Kwinter 2002, 38).

We stop describing to clarify. One question, one possible answer. We try to occupy the space, so that the dynamic action dominates the continuity of the predictable paths. In this way, space is generated, and not ordered by movement. A space that is the instant sign of use.

Today, we must focus our attention, not on familiar images, but on those structures that represent a dismembered reality, taking advantage of and at the same time enhancing its fragmentation through the culture of differences.

REFERENCES

Bailey, A. 1977. *Telepatia e il veicolo eterico*. Roma: Editrice Nuova Era.

Baudrillard J. 2008. *Simulacri e impostura*. Milano: Pgreco edizioni.

Bauman, Z. 2002. *Liquid Modernity*. Oxford: Blackwell Publishers Ltd.

Calvino, I. 1983. *Palomar*. Milano: Mondadori.

Costanzo, M. 2007. *Leonardo Ricci e il Villaggio Monte degli Ulivi a Riesi,* "Metamorfosi n. 64".

Kwinter, S. (edited by). 1996. *Rem Koolhaas: Conversations with Students*, New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Inghersoll, R. 2006. *Sprawltown: Looking for the City on its Edges*. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

PAPER #2.12

ARCHITECTURE BEYOND PERMANENCE: TEMPORARINESS IN 21ST CENTURY URBAN ARCHITECTURE

Marco Enia[a], Flavio Martella[b]
[a]U.D.L.A.P., Puebla, Mexico
[b]E.T.S.A.M., Madrid, Spain

ABSTRACT

Architecture has always had an obsession with time. Architects from different places and generations have struggled to make buildings able to last for decades, or even centuries; permanence has traditionally been considered the most desirable architectural quality. Even if, throughout history, temporary interventions have played a key role in defining urban spaces, architects have often considered them a minority practice not deserving much attention. Things have changed in recent years. Increasingly, architects understand temporariness as a potential answer to some of the most pressing problems of contemporary cities. Being adaptive and quick to build, temporary interventions can help architecture bring life back to vacant lots; or provide vitality and dynamism to the most distinct urban situations; or restore a sense of home and urbanity in post-disaster camps. In 21st century architecture, temporary buildings have a special place, for their flexibility and for the formal / spatial possibilities they offer to architects: because of their characteristics, temporary buildings are often pure space, free from the constraints of function and time-fighting. The paper aims to analyze strategies and objectives of temporary interventions in the context of 21st century urban architecture, through case studies from the last two decades.

KEYWORDS

Pop-up architecture; temporary interventions; city-making.

INTRODUCTION

Architecture has always had an obsession with time. Architects of different places and generations have struggled to make buildings able to last for decades or even centuries. In a discipline full of different views on virtually every aspect of its theoretical and practical nature, there is instead a general consensus on the idea that time is the enemy. Permanence, that is, the ability to endure over the years, has traditionally been considered the most desirable architectural quality (Ford, 1997). In a way, architecture's relationship with time reflects the way societies deal with the very idea of death: buildings have often been understood as an instrument to make something survive over the years. Where humans cannot go, and neither do civilizations, buildings sometimes can: they thus become a sort of time-capsule, able to transmit to distant futures the intimacy of private events - as is the case with the Taj Majal - or the complexity of an entire cosmovision– such as the Greek temple. It is therefore not surprising that the history books of architecture mainly tell the story of the buildings that stand still. This is something that makes sense in many respects. Only buildings still physically present can provide direct information about the architectural ideas of a civilization and, more generally, about how a society related to the territory and tried to give tangible form to abstract and immaterial concepts. Architecture gives a knowledge that cannot be transmitted with words, images or anything else but architecture. The spaces that societies produce are their most faithful mirror, as Lefebvre commented (Lefebvre, 2009).

Nonetheless, the idea that permanence should always be the ultimate goal of architecture presents some remarkable problems. The first is that the very notion of permanence is an illusion: every building is temporary (Cairns, Jacobs 2014). Some last less, others more, but in the end, each one of them will have to surrender to time. It is temporariness, not permanence, the truth about architecture. Permanence is a somewhat reassuring concept, which makes us believe that we have real control over time and its effects, over the devastation produced by history and societies. It is a tale we tell ourselves to imagine that our buildings, and with them our civilization, are safe from unpredictable circumstances or simply bad luck: from those unexpected events that can destroy even the most solid and well-built constructions - like the fire that burned down the library of Alexandria, or the earthquake that devastated the Colossus of Rhodes, for example. The other problem is that the paradigm of permanence does not seem capable of effectively addressing some of the most urgent problems of the inhabited landscape. All over the world, societies are undergoing profound transformations that are occurring very quickly. Some challenges are emerging that require quick, short-term responses from architecture and the sciences of the territory. One of these challenges is the increasing flow of people migrating from their homes, whether because of war or the consequences of climate change. In 2018, there were more than 70 million forcibly displaced persons worldwide, increasing at a rate of 25 units per minute (UNHCR, 2018). Displaced persons do not usually settle in a specific place for a long time; they rather often move. In cases like this, permanent , traditional architecture cannot be an adequate response; other solutions must be found , if we are to successfully deal with one of the most dramatic problems of our time. Nor can permanent architecture be the solution to all the pressing problems of contemporary cities. Some of them demand flexible solutions that the usual approach – top-down, permanent interventions – cannot provide. This is even more true in a situation where the economic and financial crisis has taken a lot of resources away from the construction sector, so that the traditional operational model is often no longer practicable.

The question of whether permanence should still be understood as the prominent architectural paradigm becomes even more relevant when one considers that there is an alternative approach, active since the origins of the discipline: that is, ephemeral, temporary architecture. Throughout history, temporary architecture has played a key role in defining the relationship between humans and places. The invention of a temporary typology , such as tents , was one of the oldest architectural gestures, and made possible the transitory way of life of nomadic societies. It is through ephemeral constructions that so many cities have, historically and still today, renewed their image on special occasions, such as festivals or celebrations. Temporary interventions have sometimes also facilitated the construction of permanent buildings: it is well known the case of the Basilica Palladiana in Vicenza, for which the architect had previously had to create a 1:1 scale model of one of the arcades. Despite this, architects have generally regarded temporary interventions as a minority practice , not deserving much attention. Things have changed in recent years. Increasingly, architects understand that some problems that cannot be addressed through permanence, can be more effectively dealt with through temporary interventions; their adaptability and flexibility, in fact, enables them to be useful both in consolidated urban environments and transitional ones, such as camps. Also, they can be developed either as bottom-up, extitutional practices of communities autonomously caring for a place, or as top-down approaches to address complex situations.

1. POP-UP NEIGHBORHOODS

In the last century, cities around the world have undergone profound transformations. As the world's population grew, and the number of people living in urban environments constantly increased, cities began to expand in ways never seen before. In just a few decades, they became something very different from what they had been in the past. Only fifty years ago, cities could be understood, studied and designed as if they were a single piece of architecture, as Aldo Rossi commented (Rossi, 2018). With this, Rossi intended to point out the objectual qualities of cities, which, however large, had a formal, material and spatial coherence that allowed to understand them as unitary and quite homogeneous organisms: exactly as if they were a piece of architecture, designed not by a specific person or firm, but by society over different generations. Nowadays, however, it seems difficult to share this view. Many cities have grown to such dimensions that they cannot be perceived as a giant architectural object, but rather as a territory, where each neighborhood usually has its own formal, socio-cultural and economic characteristics that make it different from the others. The largest cities in the world have expanded to a degree impossible to imagine only a few years ago. The urban area of New York today is approximately 11 thousands km2, which is more than the entire extension of a country like Lebanon; the Greater Tokyo Area is more than 14 thousands km2 (Demographia 2019).

All of this has already changed the way people relate to their cities. Having become territories impossible to know in their entirety, big cities have lost the human scale. As a result, it is increasing the role of neighborhoods in providing citizens with spaces suited to their needs. This is not only a matter of size, or of the facilities available in a specific context. This is also about whether a neighborhood offers the possibility to strengthen those social bonds without which a city is only a lifeless set of buildings. Neighborhoods have always been the privileged settings in which to cultivate relationships. But today their function of community builder is becoming even more important, precisely to counteract the loss of human scale in the urban environment. In recent years, cities have implemented multiple strategies to strengthen the capacity of neighborhoods to build communities; one of these is urban acupuncture (Solá Morales, 2008). This expression, coined in the context of the Barcelona Olympics but adopted later by planners around the world, refers to those punctual, one-off interventions that have the potential to produce benefits on a larger scale. Architectural interventions are one of the possible instruments of urban acupuncture, but there are others, such as the celebration of events of all kinds taking place in the street. Everything that makes a city pleasant, vibrant, full of life, can be considered as urban acupuncture (Lerner, 2003). In this sense, one instrument of urban acupuncture that is becoming increasingly relevant is temporary, pop-up architecture (St.Hill, 2016). When the objective is to revitalize a neighborhood and its community, temporary interventions have some distinctive qualities that can help reach the goal. While permanent interventions take some time to be carried out, pop up architecture is very quick to build. Permanent interventions remain in place for a long time and therefore block the ability of a lot to change according to the evolving needs of communities. Temporary architecture is instead very flexible: it occupies a site for a short period of time, and disappears after a while leaving the site open to new modifications. While permanent architecture, by its very nature, is static, temporary architecture is very easy to disassemble and assemble in different locations: in fact, it can also be mobile. Flexibility, quick construction and mobility are key factors in the use of pop-up architecture to revitalize neighborhoods, since they provide spaces with a dynamism and adaptability to the transformations that permanent intervention cannot give.

In the last years, pop-up architecture has become one of the preferred instruments of tactical urbanism, an approach to the city that aims to improve neighborhoods through small-scale, low-key interventions (García, Lydon 2015). The work carried out in the Central District of Rotterdam by ZUS - Zones Urbaines Sensibles provides a good example of this approach (Koreman, van Boxel 2015). In 2011, after the financial crisis, a planned development in the central district was cancelled. This led to vacancies in many existing office spaces and to a general lack of activity in the neighborhood. Over the years, ZUS revitalized the district through a series of strategic interventions at its most sensitive points. Their first action was to transform an empty office block, the Schieblock, into a civic laboratory housing different collective services - such as stores, bars, workshop spaces and an urban farming roof. They then started to perform tactical operations in outer space, mainly through ephemeral interventions. One of such operations, probably the most relevant, was the construction of a crowdfunded temporary bridge 400m long, to provide proper pedestrian access to the area. The other interventions varied in scale and function, ranging from community gardens, to spaces for culture and debate, to a nightclub meant to give vitality to the space 24 hours a day and a series of pop-up shops to give people a reason to stick around. In 2018, as a result of the new vitality and improved connection of the district, ZUS could also build public garden on the roof of the former Hofplein station. The Decorators applied a similar approach in the regeneration of different neighborhoods in London. In 2011, together with Atelier Chan Chan, they built a pop-up restaurant in east London´s Ridley Road market, with the intention of helping local economy and, at the same time, providing the community with a meeting place (The Decorators, 2011). The architects prepared the brief together with the community, listening to their needs and concerns. Following this interchange of views, they decided to build the temporary restaurant, designed as a place where people could trade raw ingredients bought at the market for cooked meals (Fig.1). In 2013, in a similar situation, they promoted at Poplar´s Chrisp Street Market a programme of events to highlight the importance of the market as a civic space. In this case, their intervention relied more on the actions undertaken , than on the construction of buildings. They set up a radio station in an empty unit, where people could share views about the importance of the market and its future. Starting from this feedback, they installed new temporary market stalls to host activities such as boxing, music and cinema, while also providing an infrastructure for outdoor eating.v

Figure 1, 2. On the left, Ridley's temporary restaurant. Source: (The Decorators, 2001)
On the right, Campo de la Cebada. Source: (El Campo de la Cebada, 2011)

2. MEANWHILE URBANISM

Temporary interventions are also an effective strategy in the reclamation of urban voids. Throughout the 20th century, urban voids were mainly seen as spaces to be filled with new buildings, so that the city could keep growing. Today, however, the way in which they are understood has changed; so has their role within the urban environment. Large cities have become hypertrophic organisms where it is more likely to feel the necessity to subtract elements, than to add new ones. Urban voids, previously considered mainly as places where new buildings could emerge, are increasingly understood as structural elements of the city: their relevance lies precisely in being empty (Gunwoo, 2016). In a context where some parts of cities may be perceived as too dense, urban voids become important because they appear as an interval, a pause from an over-built fabric. They help the city not to feel too claustrophobic, providing spaces where the air can flow and the gaze is free to move without being interrupted by the walls. Also, they are places where the most diverse activities can be performed, thus fostering social relationships and public life. In this sense, temporary interventions are becoming increasingly important for various reasons. First of all, they make urban voids suitable for collective use through minimal modifications, without changing their nature as empty spaces, which is the very reason for their relevance. A good example of this approach is provided by a project by Cedric Price. In 1999, participating in an architectural competition to reclaim a vacant lot in Manhattan near the Hudson River, Price proposed keeping it empty and implementing only small, temporary modifications (Muschamp, 1999). He was the only participant in the competition who did not propose to fill the void with large-scale buildings. As he explained, the reason to do so was that the lot was an important green lung for the whole neighborhood, for its nature of empty space, but also because it allowed the air coming from the river to pass through and enter the city. Another reason for the relevance of temporary interventions is their own flexibility. Being in a lot only for a short time, they allow for future modifications more suited to the changing demands of the city. This approach has been called "meanwhile urbanism", and consists of short-term actions intended to occupy a lot with events and activities until a more lasting intervention can be carried out. In this way, lots are prevented from becoming neglected and forgotten, and can continue to play an active role in the city. Meanwhile urbanism is not an approach of new invention. Aldo van Eyck, for example, employed a similar strategy when working for Amsterdam City Council. From 1946 to 1975 he designed more than 700 urban playgrounds, mostly made of few elements and light structures (De Roode and Lefaivre, 2002). Some of them occupied vacant lots, and aimed to reclaim them while waiting for a permanent intervention. By doing so, he intended to make the city a pleasant place for children, and at the same time ensure that all of its lots could participate in urban life.

Even if meanwhile urbanism is not a new approach, today its importance is increasing. Economical crisis had a huge impact on cities, which do not always have the necessary resources to build some planned development. Sometimes, permanent interventions cannot be carried out simply because of a lack of money, both in the public and private sectors. It is in such circumstances that meanwhile urbanism, whether extitutional or promoted by city councils, becomes a major strategy: for its ability to bring abandoned lots back to life, for being cheap, and for its short-term nature that allows for its replacement after some time. In many European cities, meanwhile urbanism was the instrument that prevented different areas from becoming derelict. The work of ZUS in the Central District of Rotterdam is a valid example of such a strategy. But in the last years similar approaches can be recognized in a number of

Figure 3, 4. On the left, Estonoesunsolar, Calle San Blas 94. Source: (Di Monte, Grávalos 2009)
On the right, Cardboard Cathedral in Christchurch. Source: (Ban, 2013)

cities. This is the case, for example, with the experience of Campo de la Cebada, in Madrid (El Campo de la Cebada, 2011). In 2006, on a lot in the city center, a building was demolished to make way for a new sport complex. After the demolition, however, the planned development had to be stopped due to the financial crisis. As a result, a large, vacant and useless lot was opened in the very heart of the city. Since then, and for many years thereafter, the neighbors autonomously reclaimed the lot through low-key, short-term operations. They filled it with temporary furniture and plants, invited street artist to paint its walls, and, most important of all, constantly organized events that would invite people in (Fig.2). In a few years, the neglected lot became one of the most vibrant and lively places of Madrid. A similar example is provided by Estonoesunsolar, a series of interventions carried out in Zaragoza by Grávalos Di Monte arquitectos from 2009 onwards (Di Monte, Grávalos 2009). Following the same logic of ZUS interventions, but within a program promoted by the city council, Grávalos Di Monte built temporary interventions in several lots in the city. The intention was to occupy the lots while the city council developed a plan for permanent interventions, but also to foster the relationship between the neighbors. For this reason, all interventions were carried out through a participatory process, in which communities were able to share their views and observations. Over the years, *estonoesunsolar* allowed the rehabilitation of 29 vacant lots. Two of them were located in the San Pablo neighborhood, in the historical center of the city, one on Calle San Blas and the other on Calle de Las Armas. In Calle San Blas, Grávalos Di Monte transformed the lot into an urban garden, mainly through the placement of some wooden pallets full of different botanical species (Fig.3). Similarly, the lot in Calle de Las Armas was turned into a garden by filling it up with plants and placing two pop-up structures formed by containers, intended to serve as rooms where activities related to gardening could take place.

3. TEMPORARY SETTLEMENTS

Temporary interventions are not only useful when recovering public spaces in consolidated urban environments. They can also help to reclaim transitional ones, such as refugee or post-disaster camps. Architecture has culpably ignored the situation of these camps for too many years, for the same reasons it overlooked ephemeral interventions in general. This was mainly due to the idea that only through the paradigm

of permanence can architecture positively contribute to the inhabited landscape, and that only buildings that last can leave a strong mark on a community and a site. For a long time , temporary camps have not been the main interest of architects, since they are necessarily the place of transience and short-term. They are cities built to disappear - in fact, in the very idea of community, the sooner they disappear, the better. Traditionally, architecture has contributed to post-earthquake recovery mainly through the design of new towns, or the reconstruction of damaged ones. This, of course, is a highly desirable approach, which architecture must continue to pursue even more, finding ways to properly build or rebuild cities that can be as solid and beautiful as ever. Still, it is also crucial that architects do not forget the importance of working in the transitional settlements that people inhabit right after the earthquake. Communities can end up living for months, sometimes even years, in these camps; it is too long to think that architecture should not be concerned. In such cases, the paradigm of temporary architecture is the only one capable of providing an effective solution. Furthermore, developing strategies to intervene in post-disaster settlements could help architecture understand how to deal with similar situations, such as refugee camps, where architects have been almost totally absent so far. In recent years, the commitment of architects to temporary settlements has been increasing (Charlesworth, 2014). Japanese architect Shigeru Ban, for instance, has been working his entire career in post-disaster camps, designing a number of projects aimed at improving the lives of communities facing such a challenging situation (Bruderlain, 2014). Sometimes he designed temporary houses, like the prefabricated wooden complex for the 2016 earthquake in Kumamoto, or the paper log shelters he built in camps around the world. Sometimes he designed instead entire camps, always with the objective of providing communities with an environment as welcoming and pleasant as possible. This is the case, for example, with the temporary settlement of Onagawa, created in response to the 2011 earthquake and tsunami (Ban, 2011). The camp was built using shipping containers, assembled to form multi-storey houses similar in size and typology to a traditional domestic space. Such a settlement, however low-key it may appear, is a real attempt to reproduce the atmosphere of home in a situation where all domesticity seems to be denied. Ban considered that, even if post-disaster camps are temporary, it is important to build a sense of normality and routine as soon as possible, to prevent communities from falling apart. Domestic space, in this sense, plays a key role. A distinctive feature of

Figure 5, 6. On the left, Paper church in Kobe Source: (Ban, 2005)
On the right, Home for all in Rikuzentakata. Source: https://www.metalocus.es/en/news/home-all-rikuzentakata

many of Ban's temporary interventions is the use of paper as main material. Paper is cheap, easy to find and, if properly processed, allows for the construction of very solid structures. But it would be a mistake to think that Ban's only concern, in his disaster relief projects, is to build quickly and economically. In fact, in his interventions, especially those made with paper, a clear intention can be recognized to show that post-disaster buildings do not have to be trivial or unattractive. Many of his projects prove him right, such as the paper church in Kobe, built in 1995, or the cardboard cathedral in Christchurch, New Zealand, built in 2013 (Fig. 4). The first project is especially interesting since it shows the intrinsic flexibility of the concepts of temporality and permanence (Fig.5). Designed to be a short-term intervention, the church actually lasted ten years in its place (Ban, 2005). Later, it was disassembled and sent to the village of Taomi in Taiwan, which had suffered a major earthquake a few years earlier. Rebuilt there, the paper church is now one of the main attractions in the area. The relationship between permanence and temporality is therefore quite ambiguous: no architecture is permanent, as time will eventually prevail. But a temporary intervention, in certain circumstances, can last for a period of time comparable to that of so-called permanent architecture.

A similar example of disaster relief project is provided by the experience of *Home for All*, a programme started by Toyo Ito as a response to Tōhoku 2011 earthquake and tsunami (Ito, 2013). The objective of *Home for all* was to address the lack of public facilities in post-disaster camps through the realization of small temporary civic centers. Ito considered that in such camps public life is not a luxury, but a necessity, and that therefore the construction of buildings acting as social condensers could really improve the condition of the communities. Several architects participated in the program - among them Sou Fujimoto, Ryue Nishizawa, and Kazujo Sejima - which eventually led to the construction of fourteen temporary pavilions in camps all over Tōhoku region. The interventions, however different, followed a similar approach, involving communities in a participatory process. All the pavilions were quite simple and unpretentious, partly because deadlines and resources did not permit otherwise, partly because everything in such situations seems to call for sobriety. In Rikuzentakata, Inui, Fujimoto and Harata, along with Toyo Ito, built an urban kitchen, that is, a place where people could go to cook, share a meal and spend some time together. Their intention was to build a pavilion that, although temporary, would become a landmark for the camp, acquiring social and symbolic values. For this reason, they built it using trunks swept away by the tsunami, as a metaphor for the possibility of not surrendering to the disaster and starting all over again.

CONCLUSION

Temporary architecture always played a significant role in shaping cities and the territory. From the tents of ancient nomadic societies, to the ephemeral constructions changing the image of cities on special days, to contemporary pop-up interventions, temporary architecture has been around since the beginnings of the discipline. However, for too long architects have overlooked this approach, considering it a minor practice unable to adequately address the problems of the inhabited landscape. This is due to the misconception that temporary interventions cannot present remarkable architectural qualities, due to their quick construction, their relative cheapness and their short-term nature. But this is not true. The reason why temporary interventions have always been present in the history of architecture, in all places and times, is because they provide something that permanent interventions simply cannot. They are adaptable, flexible

and can be easily replaced and relocated, thus giving communities the chance to shape their place as they see fit. Permanence and temporality are not opposite paradigms, but complementary: each gives architecture something that the other can not give. Both must be taken into consideration when shaping the territory, to see on a case-by-case basis which is the most useful. It seems that recent events, such as the real estate bubble and the resulting crisis in the construction sector, have led architects to rediscover the qualities and potential of temporary interventions. However, it would be a big mistake to assume that such an approach can only be useful in a situation of scarcity. As contemporary experience shows, temporary interventions can be useful in the most diverse circumstances. Cities and territory are facing problems that need urgent and out-of-the-box responses. Sometimes thinking out-the-box can mean inventing something totally new; sometimes it can mean rediscovering something very old that is strangely suited to the present time. This seems to be the case with temporary interventions, a tool architecture must not do without if it is to properly address contemporary and future challenges.

REFERENCES

Ban, S. 2005. "Paper Church" Accessed August 24, 2020 http://www.shigerubanarchitects.com/works/1995_paper-church/index.html

Ban, S. 211. "Container temporary housing" Accessed August 24, 2020 http://www.shigerubanarchitects.com/works/2011_onagawa-container-temporary-housing/index.html

Bruderlain, C. 2014. *Shigeru Ban: Humanitarian architecture.* New York: Distributed Art Publishers Demographia. "Demographia world urban areas: 15th annual edition". Accessed August 24, 2020. http://www.demographia.com/db-worldua.pdf

Cairns, S. & Jacobs, J. M.,2014. *Buildings must die. A perverse view of architecture.* Cambridge: Mit Press

Charlesworth E., 2014. *Humanitarian architecture. 15 stories of architects working after disasters.* Abingdon: Routledge.

De Roode I., Lefaivre L. 2002. *Aldo van Eyck: the Playgrounds and the City*. Rotterdam: Nai Publishers

Di Monte P., Grávalos, I., 2009. "La alfombra verde de San Blas 94-100". Accessed August 24, 2020. https://estonoesunsolar.wordpress.com/2009/09/10/la-alfombra-verde-de-san-blas-94-100/

El Campo de la Cebada, 2011. "El Campo de la Cebada". *A+T*, 38, 162–167.

Ford E. 1997. "The theory and practice of impermanence", Harvard Design Magazine, 3. Accessed August 24, 2020. http://www.harvarddesignmagazine.org/issues/3/the-theory-and-practice-of-impermanence

García, A., Lydon, M. 2015. *Tactical urbanism short-term action for long-term change.* Washington: Island Press

Gunwoo, K. 2016. "The public value of urban vacant land: social responses and ecological value", *Sustainability,* 8 (5), 486

Ito, T. 2013. "Architecture. possible here? Home for all" *Lotus,* 152, 10-13

Koreman, K., van Bogel, E. 2015. *City of permanent temporality.* Rotterdam: Nai publishers

Lefebvre, H. 2009. *The production of space (1974).* Malden: Blackwell

Lerner, J. 2003. *Acupuntura urbana*. Rio de Janeiro: Editora record

Muschamp, H. 1999. *Critic's notebook; design fantasies for a strip of the West Side.* New York Times, October 18, 1999. Accessed August 24, 2020. https://www.nytimes.com/1999/10/18/arts/critic-s-notebook-design-fantasies-for-a-strip-of-the-west-side.html

Rossi, A. 2018. *L'architettura della città* (1966). Milano: Il Saggiatore

Solá Morales, M. 2008. *De cosas urbanas.* Barcelona: Gustavo Gili

St.Hill, C. 2016. *This is temporary: how transient projects are redefining architecture.* Riba: Newcastle

The Decorators. "Ridley's temporary restaurant". Accessed August 24, 2020. http://www.the-decorators.net/Ridley-s-Temporary-Restaurant

UNHCR. "Global trends-forced displacement in 2018". Accessed August 24, 2020. https://www.unhcr.org/globaltrends2018/

PAPER #2.13

PUBLIC SQUARES, SOCIAL INTERACTIONS, AND URBAN SUSTAINABILITY: LESSONS LEARNED FROM MIDDLE EASTERN MAIDANS

Shima Molavi Sanzighi[a], Farzaneh Soflaei[b]
[a]Islamic Azad University, Gonbad Kavoos, Iran
[b]State University of New York, Oneonta, USA

ABSTRACT

This article highlights the social function of public squares that has been transformed after modernism. Before that, public squares were places for stop, watch, and integrate, while entering modern components like roundabout and junction to the urban structure, have resulted separation of people and public spaces. In fact, the historical pattern of public squares has been also transformed to the traffic nodes to facilitate the traffic flow, where have no longer functions for social interaction as the key issue of the urban social sustainability. This paper focuses on historic public squares in the Middle East, in order to identify their socio- spatial design characteristics that successfully have contributed to the social sustainability of cities. We selected three valuable public squares in Iran from Safavid era (1502-1736) including Naghsh-e-Jahan square (Isfahan), Amir Chakhmaq square (Yazd), and Ganjalikhan square (Kerman) as case studies. While Iran as a Middle Eastern country where these cities are located may not be considered model democratic states, the social interactions these open spaces accommodate has lessons for advancing the 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development of making "safe, inclusive and accessible, green and public spaces". Our research will show how, despite major urban transformations in the passage of time, these three cases have persisted as historic cultural landscapes. Through a mixed-method analysis of selected Maidans, we 1) Identify socio-spatial features of case Maidans; 2) decode the role of design in encouraging social interactions. As conclusion, a socio-spatial framework will be presented for the design and revitalization of public squares to improve social sustainability in future development. Our goal is to shed fresh light on future research in the field of urban design and can be used to evaluate proposals for new and regeneration of existing public squares in cities for a sustainable future.

KEYWORDS

Social sustainability; urban social sustainability; social interactions; public squares; socio- spatial framework .

INTRODUCTION

Sustainability is a holistic approach that integrates various components of coupled human and natural systems across all dimensions to address complex interconnections and identify effective solutions to urban challenges (Liu, et al., 2015).It embraces three equally important aspects (environmental, economic and social) that need to be balance (Soflaei, 2017).although social aspect is the least studied and only has been seriously considered after the year 2000 as an integral part of the sustainability that should be distinctively debated (Figure 1).

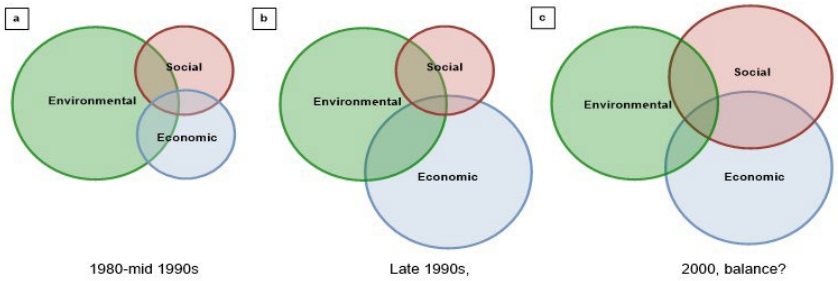


Figure 1. Various dimensions of sustainability and their relative importance: a) 1980-mid 1990s, b) Late 1990s, and c) 2000, balance (Colantino, 2010)

This research focuses on the social pillar of sustainability and postulates that future generations should have the same or greater access to shared urban resources for social interaction as inherited by the current generation. The main attention is paid to the impact of public squares, as potential venues for social interaction, on urban social sustainability. Public square is defined as an open space exists among buildings in urban area that place is for urban residents to meet and talk with others also is a multi- functional space it could be a center for political, economic, cultural activities.

Today, Iranian cities are suffering from the dominance of vehicles in their public spaces, and the social function of public squares has been neglected in modern urban development. This study is aimed to analyze the historical public squares in Iran as successful social places, to identify the socio-spatial design characteristics that have contributed to the social sustainability of Iranian cities. To achieve this purpose, a comprehensive literature review was conducted on two key ideas of urban social sustainability, urban transition and evolution process of public squares in Iran. Furthermore, a survey study was also carried out to locally evaluate the socio-spatial features of historical public squares in Safavid era. (Soflaei & Zhu, 2013). Three valuable historical public squares from three ancient cities of Iran, namely Naghsh-e-Jahan square in Isfahan, Amir Chakhmaq square in Yazd, and Ganjalikhan square in Kerman, were selected as research cases. As conclusion, all data were integrated to offer a socio-spatial framework for designing, developing, and revitalizing of public squares in Iran, in order to enhance social interaction and urban sustainability in future communities.

2. LITERATURE REVIEW

In this research, literature review is characterized by a logical flow of two key ideas including: 1) The concept of urban social sustainability, and 2) Urban transition and evolution process of public squares in Iran.

2.1. The Concept of Urban Social Sustainability

Colantino (2010) argued that environmental and economic pillars dominated the sustainability debates since its beginning whilst it is only in the late 1990s that social issues were taken into account within the sustainability agenda (Colantino, 2010).. However, there are few practical resources that directly address the question of "How to create places that are socially sustainable?"

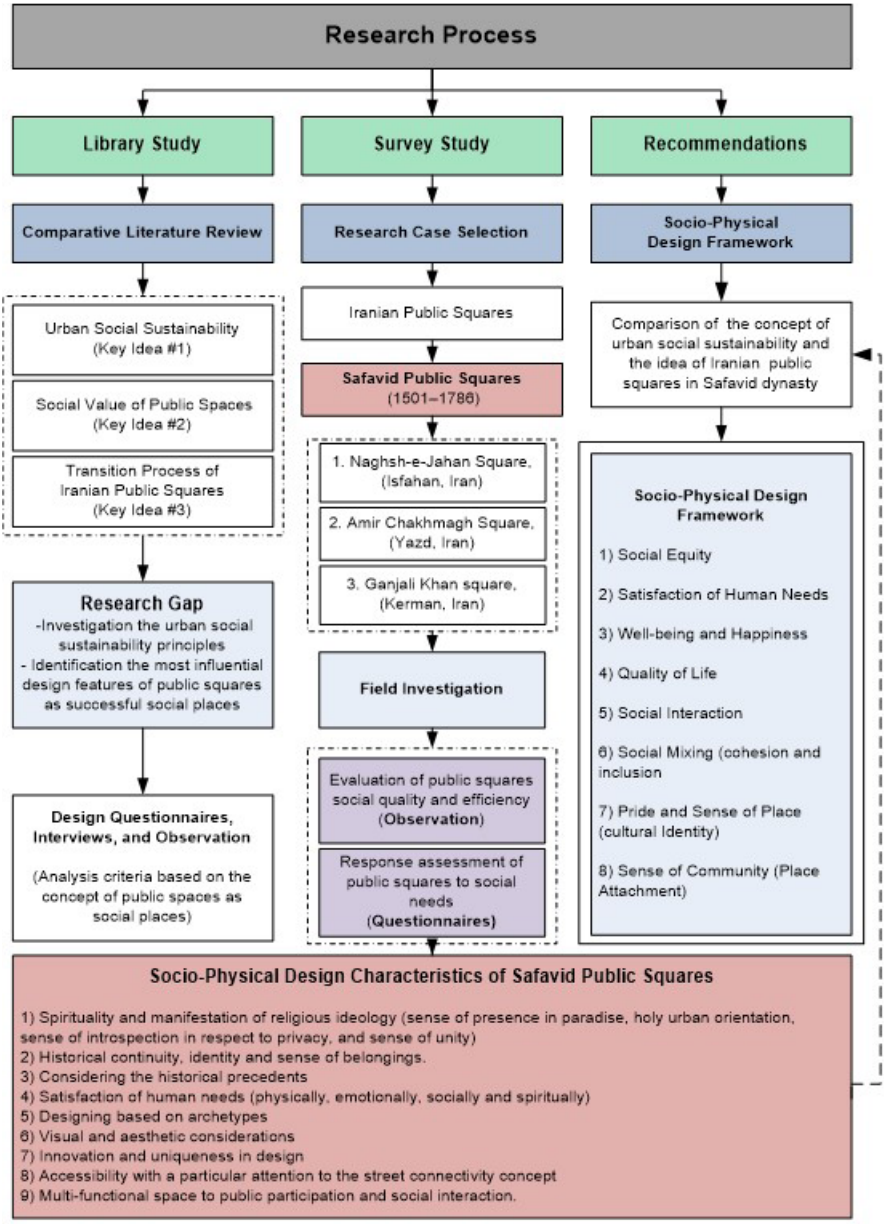


Figure 2. Research process

(Woodcraft, 2011). Literature review reveals that definitions of social sustainability in urban context are offered under four theoretical frameworks: 1) Theories that pay more attention to the existing positive conditions of urban life. For instance, Segerstedf and Abrahamsson (2019) mentioned that urban sustainability goals are directly related to social acceptability around shared concerns. 2) The main focus in the second framework is on the "measurement (Segerstedt & Abrahamsson, 2019)". According Colantino (2010) to social sustainability themes such as employment and poverty alleviation are increasingly being complemented or replaced by the less measurable concepts like "happiness", social interactions and "sense of place" (Colantino, 2010). 3) Scholars have also maintained a "future focus" on the continued improvement of individual "well-being" from the current to the future generations. 4) Theories in the fourth framework offer a functionalist understanding of social sustainability as a process of generating cohesion. According to Mckenzie (2004), social sustainability is a life-enhancing condition within communities arrived through a process (McKenzie, 2004). Examples cited under each of the theoretical frameworks reveal six common characteristics of communities deemed socially sustainable including Social equity 2)Satisfaction of human needs, Well-being and happiness, Social interaction and social mixing (cohesion and inclusion), Sense of place (cultural identity), Sense of community (place attachment), Future focus (Mehan & Soflaei, 2017)

According to fourth charter, Studies have shown that positive social interaction is an important element of sustainability that can improve and alter people's behavior and attitude (Soflaei & Aghajani, 2013). This paper therefore explores the impact of public squares as potential venues for democratic participation and interactions, on social sustainability in Iranian cities.

2.2. Urban Transition and Evolution Process of Public Squares in Iran

Square is considered as one of the essential features in urban planning that is often adjacent to bazaars, large mosques and other public buildings (Pakzad, 2003).According to Soltanzade(1991), Maidans are basically divided into three main types based on function, urban scale, and form. In addition, they may be subdivided into five categories based on urban scale consisting of suburb, city, region, district, and neighborhood squares (Soltanzade, 1991). In terms of form, they have been identified in the history and subdivided into five types such as irregular organic forms before Islam, regular geometrical forms in Safavid era (rectangular and square), regular geometrical forms in Qajar era (rectangular ellipsoid and circular), regular geometrical forms in Pahlavi era (circular), and irregular forms after Islamic revolution to present (Soflaei, 2012).

The main concept of square was first made in the Persian- Hellenic cites, from 9 BC to 3 AC. Meidan in Sassanid cities that was called Shahr-e-Parti from 3 AC to 7 AC, was multifunctional place.. Gradually, public squares were designed based on regular geometric forms; mostly rectangular and square that were surrounded by urban spaces such as governmental buildings, mosque, religious school, bazaar, and public bath. The most remarkable public squares in the history of Iranian urbanism were built after Islam in Safavid dynasty (17th century), as the concern of this research.

The bazaar and square were the urban-backbone of the city and other urban spaces were arranged around that. Social interactions still took place mainly in bazaar as the focal point of public life, and a center for social, cultural, recreational, religious and political activities. In the process of urban transition, most of the Iranian public squares lost their identity and were changed to urban nodes

	Dynasty	Time Period	Function
Before Islam	Soluki Dynasty (Persian-Hellenic city)	9 BC to 3 AC	Multi-functional center for cultural, official and commercial purposes like Greek Agora.
	Sassanid Dynasty (Shahr-e-Parti)	3 AC to 7 AC	Symbol of the government's power like Roman Forum.
After Islam	Safavid Era (Isfahani Style)	1501-1736	Multi-functional center and surrounded by various urban spaces such as governmental buildings, great mosque, religious school, bazaar, and public bath.
	Qajar Dynasty (Tehrani Style)	1785-1921	Bazaar and square as the city's backbone, and other urban spaces were arranged around.
	Pahlavi Dynasty (Industrial Revolution Period)	1921-1978	Inspired by western style and ignorant of historical architectural elements, unity through continuity in the form, advent of automobiles, paying attention to details in façades.
	Contemporary Dynasty (After Islamic Revolution)	1978-present	The number of cars has been increased, public squares lost their original concept and converted to nodes or roundabouts to facilitate the traffic flow.

Table 1. Urban transition and evolution process of public squares in Iran

to facilitate the traffic flow that were neither multi-functional open spaces as they were traditionally, nor an urban place for social interactions. In Pahlavi rule in 1925, these roundabouts had some greeneries, water fountains, statues or memorial symbol, which could be mainly watched by driver from the streets, contrary to squares as an open urban space that the people could enjoy the safety and serenity of it for resting, sitting and social communications (Habibi, 2013).(Table1)

Today, contemporary Iranian public squares are transformed to urban nodes, as an unknown territory, where people pass their time without any enthusiasm. Even some of old public squares with rich history and imposing monuments also changed to traffic intersections or boring parking lots (Bolouki, 2008; Soflaei, 2014). Nowadays, Iranian citizens live next to each other, but they do not live together because of lack of proper public spaces to stop, discover each other, find freedom, interact, and have a normal social life, although people became more interested in using the public space for entertainment along with their family in cultural non-religious venues, and social interactions (Bahraini, 1998) (Figure 3)

A comprehensive literature review revealed that most of the research describes the Iranian public squares in a historical context, and have left the social aspect as the focus of this article. Therefore, this study goes further to analyze the historical public squares in Safavid era (1502-1736), as research cases, to identify their socio-spatial design characteristics that have contributed to the social sustainability of Iranian cities. The ultimate goal is to present a socio-spatial design framework, as lessons learned from the past, for designing, developing, and revitalizing public squares as a promising approach to enhance the urban social sustainability in future cities.

2.3. Filed Investigation: Socio-Spatial Analysis of Iranian Public Squares in Safavid Era (1501-1736 AC)

The concept of Iranian urbanism in Safavid era was formed based on three main factors including power, religious beliefs, and symbolism. These three factors that were influenced by people, were manifested in public squares (Sanianiani, 2013). The goal of this paper is to highlight the morphological, functional, social, and spatial properties of

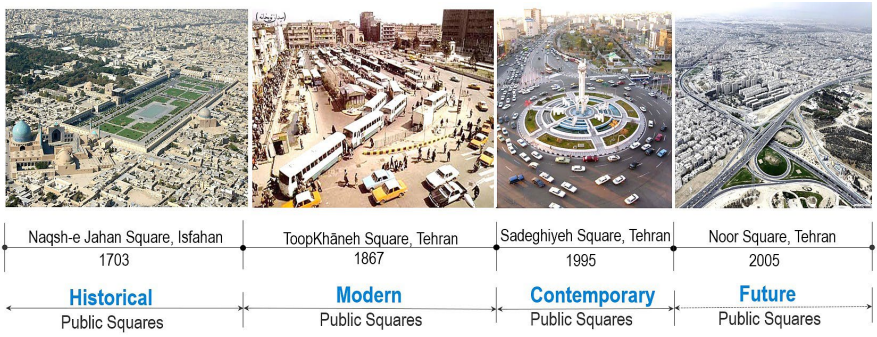


Figure 3. Urban transition and evolution process of Iranian public squares in the passage of time

public squares in Safavid period that provided a dynamic connection between the royal palace (government), city (public square), and society (people). The Safavid squares not only were the ceremonial places for government, but they also served as multi-purpose spaces for commerce, civic, religious, and political activities. They were designed with regular geometrical forms, based on a careful attention to cultural context to provide a safe and welcoming social place to encourage people for public participation, activities and interactions (Figure 3).

This research is aimed to study the historical public squares as successful social places, to identify their socio-spatial design patterns that have contributed to the social sustainability of Iranian. To that end, a comprehensive survey is carried out to analyze different design characteristics in three valuable historical public squares from Safavid era (1502-1736), as research cases including:

Naqsh-e-Jahan Square is situated at the center of Isfahan. It was constructed between 1598 and 1629, and is one of UNESCO's world heritage sites. It is 160 meters wide by 560 meters long, and is surrounded by the Shah Mosque on the south side, the Ali Qapu Palace on the west side, Sheikh Lotf Allah Mosque on the eastern side, and at the northern side Keisaria gate opens into the Isfahan grand bazaar (figure4).

Figure 4. Naghsh-e-Jahan square as successful social place (before and after): a): Naghsh-e-Jahan Square in 1839, a painting by Xavier Pascal Coste (Safavid era), b) Naghshejahan square, Isfahan in 2003 (contemporary era)

Amir Chakhmaq square is a prominent structure in Yazd heritage city, and was built in the 15th century on the north side. A bazaar and caravanserai were constructed on the other sides of the square in the same year. Many parts of the complex including caravanserai, public bath, caravanserai, confectionary, and water reservoir, were reconstructed in the Safavid period. 3) Ganjali Khan square is located in the historical urban texture of Kerman, with length of 99 meters and width of 54 meters, which is aligned with Vakil Bazaar. It is composed of a school, square, caravanserai, bathhouse, water reservoir, mint, mosque and bazaar.

Naghsh-e-Jahan square was designed in Isfahani style, by two famous traditional architects namely, Mohammadreza Esfahani and Ali Akbar Esfahani that both were the best in that time (Taylor, 1995). The common socio-spatial design patterns in these three cases were identified, and the results are presented as follows:

- Spirituality and manifestation of religious ideology: One of the most distinguished features of Iranian public squares in Safavid era is the consideration of religious spaces such as great mosque and religious schools around the square, to provide a social place for Muslim people to gather for different religious rituals. Manifestation of this religious ideology has affected the following design qualities:
- Sense of introspection: This concept originated from Islamic ideology and has affected Iranian social life in respect to privacy. It has been used in architectural and urban spaces with different functions from traditional courtyard houses, mosques, schools, to public squares. The concept implies that all enclosed spaces are located around a void space, and all are opened to it.
- Sense of presence in paradise: The concept of green city was outlined in Safavid era for the first time in the history of Iranian urbanism and was inspired by the idea of paradise in the Islamic culture. This concept has been considered by Iranian Muslim planners as one of the most important basic design patterns of Safavid public squares. The goal is to create a beautiful landscape through natural elements such as water, plant, light and sky, based on Persian garden concept.
- Sense of unity: Surrounding urban spaces in Safavid public squares, have used various functions to meet different needs of citizens. The goal is to provide opportunity for people to actively participate in the urban spaces and interact with each other, during their daily life. This spatial continuity has caused three dynamic relationship between nature (square), human (main bazaar) and God (mosque) as a philosophical issue.
- Holy urban orientation: According to Islamic beliefs, the most valuable spatial element is Kaaba in Mecca. One of the most notable features of Safavid public squares is the great mosque building that has been built toward the Kaaba, as the manifestation of religious beliefs in this era. The master architects have designed two passageways being different in length on both sides of the square to assimilate the axis of the mosque to the direction of Kaaba which has an angle of 45 degrees, to cover the change of direction without losing the proportions (Figure 5).
- Historical continuity, identity and sense of belongings: Studying the evolutionary process of Iranian public squares in Safavid era has shown that they have experienced many changes in the passage of time. However, the continuity of their use through the time in respect to the socio-cultural values and user satisfaction has led to enhance sense of belongings for citizens.
- Satisfaction of human needs (physically, emotionally, socially and spiritually): Architects and urban designers in Safavid period, focused on the society and citizens' needs regardless of gender, race, ethnicity, age or socio-economic level.

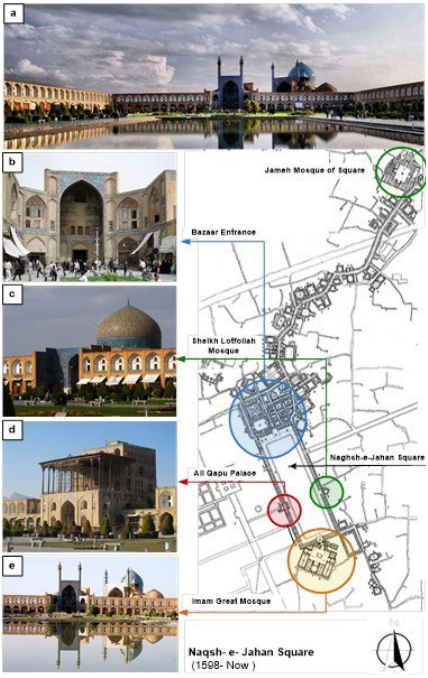


Figure 5. Naghsh-e-Jahan square in Isfahan, as a sample of successful public squares in Savaid dynasty of Iran era, a) Square as multi-functional urban space to encourage people for various social activities, b) Bazaar entrance in the northern side of square, b) Sheikh Lotfollah mosque in the eastern side, c) Royal Ali Qapu palace in western side, and d) Imam great mosque in the southern side of square

They considered five significant principles for Iranian Islamic architecture including, humanism and proportionality, abstinence from inanity, structural consideration, self-sufficiency, introversion, purity in the shapes and volumes introspection, and symmetry to fulfill human needs (Hosseini, 2012).

- Considering the historical precedents: The idea of combination of old and new textures in urban development through the great bazaar as an urban backbone, was outlined in Safavid era for the first time in the history of Iranian urbanism. For instance, the main bazaar connects the Naghsh-e-Jahan square as a new urban square in Safavid period to the Atiq square as the oldest urban square in Isfahan city.
- Visual and Aesthetic considerations: Some design patterns like symmetry, rhythm, geometrical proportions, the low-rise surrounding bodies in human scale in respect to the monumental scale of square, visual richness, location of important buildings along the symmetrical axes, all can be considered as aesthetic features of the public squares in Safavid dynasty (Figure 6).

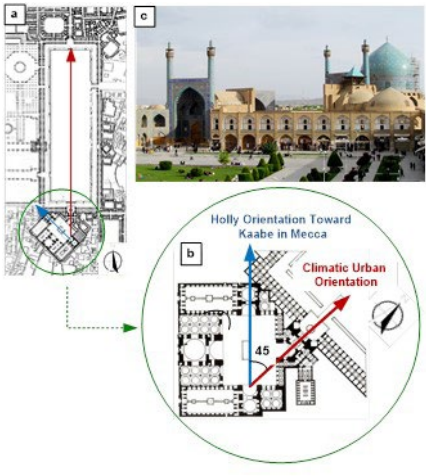


Figure 6. Imam great mosque in the southern side of Naghsh-e-Jahan square, was oriented to the direction of Kaaba which has an angle of 45 degrees with the climatic urban orientation of Isfahan city and Naghsh-e-Jahan square

- Designing based on archetypes: Based on old archetypes, broken cross or Chalipa has a special place in the Iranian architecture and urban design. It is the symbol of the connection between the sun and the moon and four fundamental forces of water, wind, fire and soul which keeps the existence and creation of the world and the human beings. Since the Chalipa has four directions and four apexes, the number 4 to be reviewed as the view-point of secret-discovering as dealt with structure and content issues (Ashrafi & Habib, 2013). This symbol was used in concept designing of public spaces in Safavid era. For instance four urban spaces including Imam great mosque square, bazaar entrance, royal Ali Qapu palace, and Sheikh Lotfollah mosque, were considered as the members of this broken cross in Naghshe-e-Jahan square.
- Innovation and uniqueness in design: The historical origins of the basic concept of public squares in Safavid era, could be traced back to the ancient Saheb Abad Square in Tabriz, Shah Square in Qazvin, and even Atiq square in Isfahan city. However, Safavid public squares are innovative and unique examples in the history of Iranian urbanism regarding their dimension, scale, proportions, visual richness, location in the focal point of city to provide easy accessibility, and multi-functional spaces to meet various social needs.
- Accessibility: Safavid public squares were designed as social places to stop, integrate and watch. They were adopted to this transition by considering the concept of street connectivity. This concept suggested a system of streets with multiple routes and connections serving the same origins

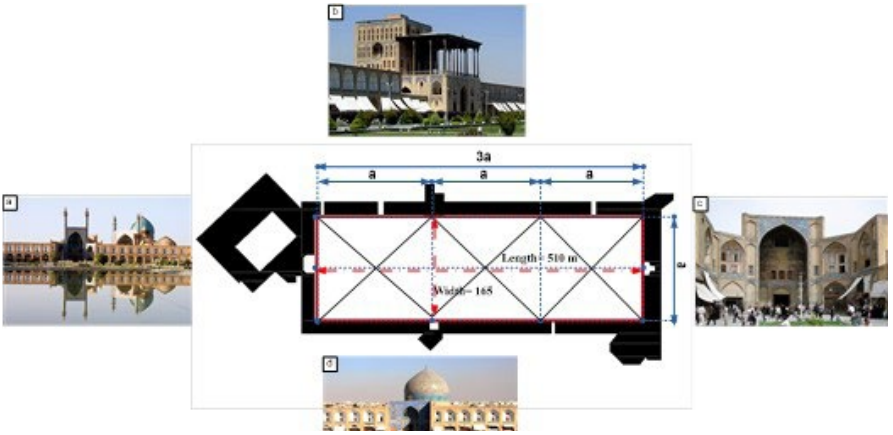


Figure 7. Visual and mathematical aesthetics considerations (geometrical properties and proportion, symmetrical axis, and low-rise surrounding bodies in human scale in respect to the monumental scale of square in Naghsh-e-Jahan square in Isfahan, as a sample of successful public squares in Savaid dynasty of Iran, a) Imam great mosque in the southern side of square, b) Royal Ali Qapu palace in western side, c) Bazaar entrance in the northern side of square, and d) Sheikh Lotfollah mosque in the eastern side.

and destinations. Connectivity not only relates to the number of intersections along a segment of street, but how an entire area is connected by the transportation system. This concept by providing a strong connected network of roads and pedestrian facilities can help distribute traffic, reduce travel distances and times, improve routing for transit and reduce walking distances. Good connectivity also provides better routing opportunities for emergency and delivery (solid waste, recycling, mail) vehicles. The concept of street connectivity has been considered for development of Naghsh-e-Jahan square, and the car accessibility has been restricted in only two main streets and the other 15 streets has been designed just for pedestrians.

- Social interactions: Safavid public squares were designed as multi-functional urban spaces in order to invite people for different events and activities (actively and passively) and have never lost their social function in the passage of time. For instance, social function of Naghsh-e-Jahan square in the process of history, from the beginning of Safavid era until present time, is investigated by (Shahabinejad, et al., 2014) and the result is presented in Table 1.

The results of field investigation illustrate that public squares in Safavid era were designed based on a careful attention to the socio-spatial factors. Among these factors, political power that was constructed by the king and the royal family, had the most impact on the formation of Safavid public squares. It should be noted that, political power and religious beliefs were both manifested in the concept of public squares in this period of time. As conclusion, a comparative study was conducted between the concept of urban social sustainability, and the idea of Safavid public squares as successful social places (Table 2).

The result of this comparative study shows that there are 8 common features between these two perspectives including 1) Social equity, 2) Satisfaction of human needs, 3) Well-being, happiness, 4) Quality of Life, 5) Social interaction, 6) Social mixing (cohesion and inclusion), 7) Pride, sense of place and culture (identity), 8) Sense of community (place attachment). These common features, as a socio- spatial physical framework can be considered for designing, developing, and revitalizing of contemporary public squares in order to enhance the urban social sustainability in Iranian cities.

Historical Period	Social Activities
Safavid Era	Political activities, religious ceremonies, commercial activities, traditional gatherings, military marches, polo matches, horse riding competitions, national festivals, religious festivals, fireworks, puppetry, acting, storytelling
Qajar Era	Permanent commercial center, temporary Fridays commercial center, military training, barrack, demolishing the green space in the middle of square
Pahlavi Era	Revitalization of square, easing accessibilities by foot and by car, creating fountain and planting in middle of the square, creating green space for recreational activities, civic activities
Contemporary Era	Restricting the entrance of cars in to square, paving the square, decreasing the air pollution and visual barriers like traffic lights, bus station, bars and etc.

Table 2. Urban development and social transition in Naghsh-e Jahan square through the time (Shahabinejad, et al., 2014)

No	Social Sustainability Concept In Urban Context	Social Sustainability Concept in Iranian Public Squares in Safavid Era
1	Social equity	Accessibility (easy and direct accessibility)
2	Satisfaction of human needs	Respect for human needs (physically, emotionally, socially and spiritually), Aesthetic Considerations, Sense of Introspection, Holy urban orientation, Climatic urban orientation to provide human comfort for citizens.
3	Well-being, Happiness	Sense of presence in paradise, Sense of introspection and respect for privacy, Sense of unity, Sense of belonging, Social interactions,
4	Quality of Life	Innovative and uniqueness, Meet different of social physical, emotional and spiritual needs, Respect for urban social life: citizens' gathering and participation in various events and social interactions.
5	Social interaction, social mixing (Cohesion and Inclusion)	Multi-functional spaces in order to social engagements, public activities and social interaction
6	Pride, Sense of place and culture (Identity)	Historical continuity, identity and sense of belongings, Considering the historical precedents, Designing based on archetypes
7	Sense of community	Historical continuity, identity and sense of belongings, Multi-functional spaces for public participation and social interaction.
8	Future focus	Combination with the historical precedents, Accessibility based on the concept of street connectivity in revitalization, Innovative and uniqueness in design.

Table 3. Comparison of the concept of social sustainability in the Iranian public squares of Safavid era

CONCLUSION

Public spaces by offering opportunities for equal participation irrespective of gender, age, nationality or social-economic status, have a great potential to raise the quality of life and social sustainability in contemporary cities. This paper emphasized on the impact of public squares on urban social sustainability of Iranian cities to investigate urban transition and evolution process of public squares, from before Islam until present time, to identify the most successful public squares. Safavid public squares, as research cases, were selected to identify their socio- spatial design characteristics.

The research findings are listed as below: Different definitions of the concept of social sustainability in urban context were reviewed and seven common key ideas are extracted including: 1) Social equity, 2) Satisfaction of human needs, 3) Well-being and happiness, 4) Social interaction and social mixing (cohesion and inclusion), 5) Sense of place (cultural identity), 6) Sense of community (place attachment), and 7) Future focus. These seven ideas were considered as analysis criteria for social assessment of Safavid public squares.

It is identified that the social function of public spaces has been ignored after modernism in Iran, and transformed to roundabouts or urban nodes to facilitate the traffic flow. Consequently they have no longer any function for social interaction. In contrast with the fast urban transition, the contemporary Iranian society has also faced a great social transition. Today, Iranian people like other people in the world have a tendency to visit public squares especially after the current social transition in social values and attitudes which used to limit some characteristics of people's presence and their activities (especially for females) in public squares.

The social concept of three valuable historical public squares in Safavid dynasty as research cases, was investigated, and their common

socio- spatial design patterns were identified as: 1) Spirituality and manifestation of religious ideology (sense of presence in paradise, holy urban orientation, sense of introspection in respect to privacy, and sense of unity), 2) Historical continuity, identity and sense of belongings, 3) Considering the historical precedents, 4) Satisfaction of human needs (physically, emotionally, socially and spiritually), 5) Designing based on archetypes, 6) Visual and aesthetic considerations, 7) Innovation and uniqueness in design, 8) Accessibility with a particular attention to the street connectivity concept, and 9) Multi-functional space for public participation and social interaction.

A comparative analysis between the concept of urban social sustainability and the idea of Safavid public squares, as successful social places, was conducted and the common features between these two perspectives were presented as socio- spatial framework as following: 1) Social equity, 2) Satisfaction of human needs, 3) Well-being, happiness, 4) Quality of Life, 5) Social interaction, 6) Social mixing (cohesion and inclusion), 7) Pride, sense of place and culture (identity) 8) Sense of community (place attachment). With respect to the current social needs and considering the presented common features as a socio- spatial framework, in designing, developing, and revitalizing of public squares, it is anticipated that social interaction and urban sustainability can be tremendously enhanced in Iranian cities.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The authors would like to express their thanks to Cultural Heritage, Handcrafts and Tourism Organization in Iran, and Tsinghua University of Beijing in China, for their support of the present research.

REFERENCES

Abbasi-Shahvazi, M. J., McDonald, P. & Hosseini-Chavoshi, M., 2009. *The fertility Transition in Iran.* Netherlands: Springer.

Arjmand, R., 2017. *Public Urban Space, Gender and Segregation (Women-only parks in Iran)*. Florence: Routledge..

Ashrafı, N. & Habib, F., 2013. Difference of Iranian mosques with other Islamic countries mosques. *middle-East Journal of Scientific Research*, Volume 17, pp. 260-269.

Bahraini, S. H., 1998. *Urban space analysis in related to user's behavior pattern: policies for urban design*. Tehran: Tehran University Press (in Persian).

Blair, S. & Bloom, J., 1995. *The Art and Architecture of Islam*. s.l.: Yale University Press.

Bolouki, B., 2008. *The Rational Relationship between Vehicle and Human: Case Study in Iran. Master dissertation of Urban Design.* Tehran: University of Tehran (in Persian).

Bramley, G. et al., 2009. Social Sustainability and urban form: evidence from five British cities. *Environment and Planning*, 41(9).

Colantino, A., 2010. Urban Social Sustainability Themes and Assessment Methods. Proceeding of the institution of civil engineers: *Urban Design and planning*, 163(2), pp. 79-88.

Colantino, A., 2010. Urban Social sustainability thems and assessment methods. Proceeding of the institution of civil engineers: *Urban Design and planning,* 163(2), pp. 79-88.

Fallahfar, S., 2010. *The Dictionary of Iranian Traditional Architectural Terms*. Tehran: Kamyab Publications (in Persian).

Habibi, M., 2013. *From Shar to Shahr.* Tehran: Tehran University Press.

Harun, N. Z., Zakariya, K., Mansor, M. & Zakaria, K., 2014. *Determining Attributes of Urban Plaza for Social Sustainability*. s.l., AMER International Conference on Quality of Life.

Holden, M., 2012. Urban Policy Engagement with social sustainability in Metro Vancouver. *Urban Studies*, 49(3), pp. 527-542.

Hosseini, Z. K., 2012. *A Brief Survey on the Principles of Iranian Islamic Architecture.* Nishinomiya, s.n.

L.H.Chiu, R., 2003. *Sustainable Development: A New Perspective for Housing Development.* Adelaide, South Australia, http://www.nhc.edu.au/past-conferences/adelaide2003/.

Laguna, J. M., 2014. *Institutional Politics, power constellations, and urban social sustainability*, Florida: Florida State University.

Liu, J. et al., 2015. *Systems Integration for Global sustainability.*. s.l.:Urban Planet | Science 347 .

Magis, K. & Shinn, C., 2009. *Emergent Themes of Social Sustainability*, New York: Routledge.

McKenzie, S., 2004. *Social Sustainability: Towards some definitions*, Magill, South Australia: University of South Australia.

Mehan, A. & Soflaei, F., 2017. *Social Sustainability in Urban Context: Concepts, Definitions and Principles*. Florida: CRC Press.

Pakzad, J., 2003. *Guideline urban space design.* Tehran: Housing and urban planning ministry of Iran publisher. (in Persian).

Polese, M. & Stren, R., 2000. *The social sustainability of cities: Diversity and the management of change.* s.l.:University of Toronto press.

Sanianiani, R., 2013. The Symbolic Expression of Power and Religion in the Public Buildings in Safavid Iran: A Conceptual Interpretation. *Journal of Shi'a Islamic Studies,* 6(2), pp. 199-218.

Shahabinejad, A., Abuei, R., Ghalehnoei, M. & Emami, M., 2014. Formation and historic revolution of Isfahans Naghsh-e-Jahan Square. *Bi - Annual Electronic Journal Of Restoration Science & Culture Heritage,* 2(3), pp. 45-64.

Soflaei, F., 2012. *Public Squares and Social Sustainability in Iranian Cities(past,peresent,future)*. New Jersey, s.n.

Soflaei, F., 2014. *A Study on Revitalization of Baharestan Square in Tehran, Iran: Redesigning with the goal of changing from an insufficient traffic node to a sufficient social place*. s.l.:Scholars' Press.

Soflaei, F., 2017. *Engaging lost Open Spaces in Urban identity: Mount Auburn Cemetery in Baltimore*. Cleveland, s.n.

Soflaei, F. & Aghajani, S., 2013. *Manifestation of Socio-Cultural Identity in Iranian Public Squares: Case Study: Safavid Era. Spaces and Flows*. Amesterdam, An International Journal of Urban and Extra Urban Studies..

Soflaei, F. & Zhu, W., 2013. *Manifestation of Socio-Cultural Identity in Iranian Public Squares: Case Study: Safavid Era. Amesterdam, s.n.*

Soltanzade, H., 1991. Urban Spaces in the Historical Texture of Iran:Culture research in municipality of Tehran. tehran: Publications office of cultural studies.

Taylor, A., 1995. *Book Arts of Isfahan: Diversity and Identity in Seventeenth-Century Persia*. Oxford: Oxford University press.

Woodcraft, S., 2011. Social Sustainability and New Communities: Moving from Concept to Practice in the UK. *Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences*, pp. 29-42.

PAPER #2.14

URBAN LANDSCAPE LIVING LAB. BASE CAMP : VADOZNER HUUS (BC : VH), LIECHTENSTEIN

Anne Brandl[a], Johannes Herburger[a], Luis Hilti[a] , Clarissa Rhomberg[a]
[a]Institute of Architecture and Planning, University of Liechtenstein, Vaduz, Liechtenstein

ABSTRACT

Like many European regions, the Alpine Rhine Valley, at the intersection of Switzerland, Austria, and Liechtenstein, is characterised by a heterogeneous mix of settlement areas, transport infrastructure, settlement-related open spaces, agricultural areas, and open landscape structures. Planning science tries to describe this phenomenon of urbanization through different terms: agglomeration, urban landscape, urban area, in-between city, sprawl town, etc. The research parameter is an unremarkable but publicly accessible "in-between" space within the urban landscape of Liechtenstein. The underlying hypothesis of this paper is that there is little aesthetic attention given to these in-between spaces in science, planning policy, and practice in the case of Liechtenstein. The research project investigates the question of how the perception-oriented perspective of everyday landscapes can be implemented into the institutionalised processes of conceptual landscapes on two levels: (1) Everyday landscapes: in-between spaces are examined from the perspective of perception in the case of Vaduz, Liechtenstein. (2) Conceptual landscapes: in-between spaces are viewed from the rational perspective of planning, systematisation, and control. In this paper, we specifically examine the potentials and challenges of Urban Living Labs (ULL) as an applied and participatory research method to integrate the perspectives of the everyday and conceptual landscapes through temporary revitalisation and activation of the "Parkhaus Marktplatz" in Vaduz. Hence, the focus is not on the impact on the built environment but rather on the learnings of this participatory process for future planning on three perspectives: (i) actors, (ii) process, and (iii) programme.

KEYWORDS

Town centre planning; landscape; perception; stakeholder analysis; involvement and participation; urban living labs.

INTRODUCTION

In spatial planning and science, it is becoming increasingly relevant to think of compact settlement development in relation to the landscape. The landscape is understood as a process – a dynamic system of human-made spaces (Prominski 2004) – and as a quality of perception and experience (Burckhardt 2015). Landscape requires not only a rational-planning approach but a perception-oriented approach as well. There is need for research for planning of settlement development related to landscape and for a perception-oriented perspective, but above all, the linkage of both perspectives is crucial. This approach to landscape gained in significance in the last few years through various important publications like "Zwischenstadt" (Sieverts 2013) and its subsequent publications (Hauser and Kamleithner 2006; Sieverts et al. 2005). Furthermore, the German Academy for Spatial Research and Planning (ARL) published a research report on conceiving suburban spaces as cultural landscapes (Schenk 2012).

We follow this argumentation and choose a multi- story parking garage "Parkhaus Marktplatz" in the centre of Vaduz, the capital of Liechtenstein, as the investigation perimeter of this paper. The parking garage, completed in 1974, is part of the suburban landscape of the Alpine Rhine Valley and illustrates numerous planning challenges — in particular, car-dominated spaces in an increasingly anonymous urban context.

The parking garage is used on a daily basis by commuters, shoppers, and the local population of Vaduz and is perceived more or less as a transit place. This is the everyday landscape level that stands in contrast to the conceptual landscapes shaped by institutionalised spatial planning using plans or strategies. The usual way to get rid of a "planning problem" like the parking garage is to demolish it and build something new. This would involve a longer process, neglecting the inherent qualities of a typical suburban space. Hence, we use the temporary revitalisation and activation of the "Parkhaus Marktplatz" through the "Base Camp: Vadozner Huus" (BC : VH) project as a case study to answer the following research question: How can the perception-oriented perspective of everyday landscapes be implemented into the institutionalised processes of conceptual landscapes in Liechtenstein? We will do this by focusing on three perspectives: (1) actors, (2) process, and (3) programme items. We follow the Urban Living Labs (ULL) approach as an applied research method through which the everyday landscapes of the population can be integrated into a standardised planning process. We conceive that ULLs can complement institutionalised processes and instruments of spatial planning (conceptual landscapes) with an experimental and collaborative approach to solve planning challenges such as the one we will describe in the following section

1. CASE STUDY "PARKHAUS MARKTPLATZ" VADUZ

Vaduz is the capital of the Principality of Liechtenstein with around 5,600 inhabitants (Amt für Statistik 2020) and is one of the central places in the polycentric region of the Alpine Rhine Valley. Liechtenstein is a centre of the finance industry, where this sector has developed very dynamically since the 1960s. In Vaduz in particular numerous banks and fiduciary offices have been established and with the public service sector also mainly situated in Vaduz, the number of employees is twice as high as the number of residents (Agglomeration Werdenberg-Liechtenstein 2016). The numerous structural and economic changes in the centre of Vaduz have led the municipality to start a development process for the town centre in 2017 and in spring 2018 the Vaduz municipal council agreed on the strategy paper.

Two starting projects were defined to implement the strategy, which should provide new stimuli for Vaduz. On the one hand, the strategy identifies that there is a lack of lively meeting places for the community in the centre of Vaduz. The idea of a multifunctional building—the so-called "Vadozner Huus (VH)" – was established to function as a meeting point for various user groups in the future, but it is unclear what it is supposed to be. On the other hand, the originally multi- but now mono-functional parking garage "Parkhaus Marktplatz" was defined as a new experimental development ground – called Raum.Lab – to become the "hub of the centre development" (Gemeinde Vaduz 2018), since it connects the centre of Vaduz with the event hall and the elementary school. The municipality of Vaduz approached the University of Liechtenstein looking for a cooperation to establish a new and unconventional planning approach to integrate the two starting projects, the "Raum.Lab Parkhaus Marktplatz" and the

"Vadzoner Huus", in one temporary project called "Basecamp : Vadozner Huus" (BC : VH). With the "Basecamp (BC)", a mobile shipping container upcycled by students which is suitable as a temporary setting for an Urban Living Lab, the university provided the hardware for this cooperation. With the Basecamp as hardware, the multi-story parking garage was re-interpreted as a temporary meeting point for the population of Vaduz, through which ideas about the future future shape and functionalities of a "Vadozner Huus" could be gained.

The process of the BC : VH was designed as an "Urban Living Lab" by a transdisciplinary team (the project group) from the University of Liechtenstein and the municipality of Vaduz, together with the private spatial planning office "stadtland" and the start-up platform "Ideenkanal". The cooperation began in spring 2019, and the BC : VH was installed from September 12 to 28, 2019, on the deck of the parking garage featuring 40 programme items, all of which were developed by the project group together with institutions and individuals situated in Vaduz. For answering the research question, the conceptual landscape is represented by the procedure of how the BC : VH was derived from the town centre development process, corresponding as it does to the usual planning logic of analysis-strategy-implementation of measures. The perspective of the everyday landscape is represented by the experimental and participatory process, which tests the requirements a future Vadozner Huus or a future development of the marketplace, should have to fulfil for the community. Before the results of the BC : VH are presented, the method of the Urban Living Labs is discussed.

Figure 1. Basecamp : Vadozner Huus situated on the Parkhaus Marktplatz (Photocredit: Hanno Mackowitz)

2. URBAN LIVING LABS AS AN APPLIED RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

Urban living labs (ULL) have emerged from the concept of living labs, which have been established primarily in the IT sector since the beginning of the 1990s (Leminen 2013). The focus of these early Living Labs was on how users experience products and services in their daily life context (Puerari et al. 2018, 3).

From this, living labs were ultimately developed by computer scientists to increasingly orient the design process of new products towards the user perspective instead of the product itself (Puerari et al. 2018). Other living labs, such as the University of Chicago Urban Labs or the Philips Homelab, as well as the Frauenhofer inHaus, have been dealing with questions of sustainability in urban spaces for several years with a technical focus (Franz 2015).

In the last few years, apart from the focus on ecological and economic sustainability challenges and technical solutions, ULLs have increasingly been pursuing questions of social sustainability (Buhr, Federley and Karlsson 2016). Hence, ULLs are complementing a paradigm shift in spatial and urban planning towards a more experimental, incremental, and communicative planning and governance approach (Bulkeley et al. 2016). Despite a general ULL euphoria (Franz 2015), Bulkeley et. al. are critical of their success: "Viewing ULL as part of the shifting governance landscape, a means through which interventions are increasingly pursued in order to realize urban objectives, does not mean that they are all equally successful in realising their aims" (Bulkeley et al. 2016, 15).

Another line of criticism occurs as to whether there is a clear ULL definition and the components of which a ULLs consists (Chronéer, Ståhlbröst and Habibipour 2019). Puerari et al. (2018) refer to sources who see ULLs not only as a methodology but also as an "organization, an environment, a system in itself". ULLs are also sometimes used synonymously with other terms such as "city laboratory", "field lab", or "testing ground" (Steen and van Bueren 2017). Due to this fact, it seems that more studies are dealing with the definition and the components of ULLs than with the results of the labs themselves (Chronéer, Ståhlbröst and Habibipour 2019; Steen and van Bueren 2017; Voytenko et al. 2016).

Despite these inconsistencies, we conceive of ULLs as a research methodology to work on socio-spatial issues, which gained considerable importance since the communicative turn in planning science and practice (Franz 2015).

Many urban living labs do not serve as company- driven technological research environments, but rather as a platform for citizens to participate in city planning (Buhr, Federley and Karlsson 2016).

Due to this change ULLs are increasingly used for participatory processes by cities to deal with urban policy challenges. In this sense, ULLs are defined as follows: "An urban living lab is a local place for innovative solutions that aims to solve urban challenges and contribute to long-term sustainability by actively and openly co-constructing solutions with citizens and other stakeholders" (Chronéer, Ståhlbröst and Habibipour 2019).

With respect to the actor-networks of an ULL, (Leminen, Westerlund and Nyström 2012) state that anyone designing, participating in, or intending to participate in a living lab will benefit from understanding the overall purpose of the living lab and which party drives the network; this understanding helps them to comprehend the characteristics of the living lab and adopt a feasible role within the network (Leminen, Westerlund and Nyström 2012).

For the implementation of ULLs, Leminen, Westerlund and Nyström (2012), Leminen (2013) and Nyström et al. (2014) propose a classification of four driving actors based on different actor-related starting points and motivations: (1) enabler-driven, (2) user-driven, (3) utilizer-driven and (4) provider-driven. Such a differentiation is particularly useful since actors from different societal domains and sectors

still do not necessarily meet, understand each other, or corporate immediately (Puerari et al. 2018). With respect to this paper, and indeed many other spatial development topics, we see enabler and provider driven ULLs as the relevant ones for the research agenda.

According to Leminen et al. (2012) "enablers" are public actors such as municipalities or regional development organizations as well as NGOs. These actors pursue the goal of achieving social improvements within their field of action. Therefore, the enabler has the biggest interest in promoting the ULL. An enabler-driven ULL is usually dominated by local issues, topics, and challenges, which have been collected and selected by the municipality as part of a development process (Leminen 2013). Universities and other educational institutions as well as private actors can be part of an enabler-driven ULL network.

Provider-driven ULLs are primarily initiated by developer organizations such as universities (Leminen, Westerlund and Nyström 2012). However, it is often difficult for providers to find enablers who support them in implementing the ULL. The primary goal of the provider is to foster progress in research and theory and to identify specific solutions. Here, universities use ULLs to develop new research and teaching methods and generate useful knowledge for the wider network. Therefore, provider-driven ULLs can be built around a single project, while others "have succeeded in establishing themselves as longer-lived innovation platforms" (Leminen, Westerlund and Nyström 2012). Leminen et al. (2016) argue that provider-driven ULLs have the potential to create innovations as they can scale up the activities from an ULL for future strategies based on the defined goals (which go beyond the everyday life experience of users).

One of the foundational principles of ULLs is the concept of co-creation, meaning the collective action of different actors to solve spatial development challenges together with the population. Puerari et al. (2018) differentiate between three different groups that are formally or informally involved in co-creation processes: (1) the core group, which are mainly the initiators of an ULL as well as actors that have a contractual arrangement with the initiators, (2) the inner circle consists of people who are personally connected to someone from the core group and take part in an ULL in a semi-formalised form, (3) the outer circle is the broader public which is either entirely not or at least not directly involved in the ULL process. Even though they are the most relevant group for the success of an ULL, they are mostly challenging to reach (Buhr, Federley and Karlsson 2016).

3. FINDINGS

An Urban Living Lab (ULL) approach is used in this study because it provides a theoretical and methodological framework to operationalize the starting projects of the town centre development process of Vaduz and to analyse the findings of the BC : VH project. The following results of the BC : VH are based on observations and workshops during the project process, participant observations, conducted interviews, and informal conversations during the events in September 2019. They are organised as follows: (1) actors, (2) process, and (3) formats and program.

3.1. Actors

Figure 1 is based on the actor model of Steen and van Bueren (2017) with the differentiation of the municipality and its subcontractors as "public actors", the University of Liechtenstein as "knowledge institution", local companies and associations as "private actors", and "users". In the case of the BC : VH, the main drivers are the municipality of Vaduz—defined as a public actor—and the University of Liechtenstein as a knowledge institution. Therefore, the BC : VH is a mixture of an enabler and a provider-driven living lab. The other important actors in the core group of the project are the spatial

planning consultancy bureau "stadtland" and the start-up platform "Ideenkanal" which are subcontractors of the municipality. These four institutions are regarded as the «core group» (following the definition by Puerari et. al. 2018) and «project group» of the BC : VH.
Figure 2 uses the colour scheme to illustrate which actors had which role. In general, the roles were defined as follows:

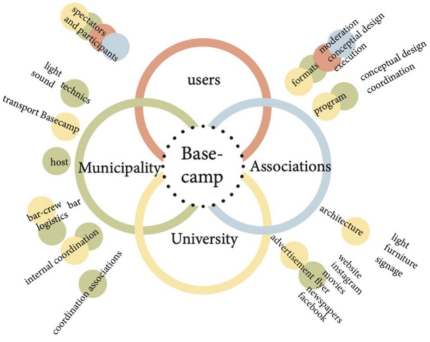


Figure 2. Actors of the Base Camp : Vadozner Huus. Source: (own illustration based on Steen and van Bueren 2017)

• Municipality of Vaduz: impulses and insights for the further planning of a "Vadozner Huus"; reach as many people from Vaduz as possible;
• University of Liechtenstein: gaining insights for a research project; greater visibility of the university among the local population in Liechtenstein;
• Stadtland, spatial planning consultancy bureau: collect feedback from the participants in the form of idea cards and set up discussion events about the future center development Vaduz;
• Ideenkanal, entertainment & host: reach as many visitors as possible.
Despite the seemingly clear division, there were occasional conflicts and disagreements within the project team during the implementation phase of the BC : VH due to the implicit and only partially directly expressed difference in interests and motivations. Buhr et al. (2016) and Leminen et al. (2013) defined challenges regarding communication and coordination as well as role definitions. It became obvious during the BC : VH project phase, which has shown that the actors who had a closer relation to the municipality identified more with the project.

3.2. Process

The aim of the process-oriented framework initiated by the project group was a collaborative and participatory implementation of the BC : VH together with the associations and population of Vaduz. The project group structured the main programme, but it had to be flexible enough to integrate ideas and initiatives from the local population. The implicit aim was to incorporate them and change their role from consumers to participants and, in the best case, co-organisers during the event. In the definition of Puerari et al. (2018), the goal is to get the population from the outer circle (= target group) into the inner circle (= co-organisation of individual events), which is presented in Figure 3. Here, the core group and inner circle are combined within the "organisation" frame.
In the context of the Alpine Rhine region and in Vaduz in particular, ULL is an innovative approach. Hence, the BC : VH was initially viewed with scepticism by the local population. Only one feedback arrived

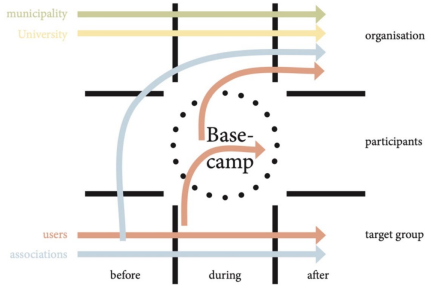


Figure 3. Role of different actors during the process. Source: (Author 2019)

from the first reach-out to around 50 clubs and associations via e-mail with a request for participation in the BC : VH three months before the start. It required personal contacts and networks of project team members to mobilise individuals, associations and institutions to participate. Thanks to the contacts and existing networks, it was possible to get fourteen civil society actors to contribute to BC : VH beforehand, thereby turning them into co-organizers. The BC : VH thus confirmed the observation by Puerari et al. that the motivation to participate in a ULL depends primarily on personal, intangible goals and wishes (Puerari et al. 2018) and that the engagement of the target group cannot be assumed, even though it is about improving their everyday life (Buhr, Federley and Karlsson 2016). The sceptical view of the population was also represented by the fact that only one individual came up with an idea for a discussion during the three weeks in September, even though the project group would have wished for more of these spontaneous initiatives.

Feedback collected towards the end of the events and the completion of the project suggests that more communication and active participation is necessary, should there be a replication of the project. It took some time for the local community to understand the BC : VH concept, which eventually led to the reduction of mistrust and misinterpretation of the concept. This makes it evident that the success of an ULL like the BC : VH requires a long-term framework with a long-term commitment of the project team (Juujärvi and Pesso 2013). Due to the dependency of ULL projects on funding and political backing, long-term set-ups and thus the stability of ULLs are rarely achieved (Franz 2015; Voytenko et al. 2016). This insecurity can be observed in Vaduz as well, since the municipal council finally discussed the future of the BC : VH in its December 2020 meeting.

3.3. Programme items and participatory events

The BC : VH took place during 17 days in September 2019 in Vaduz with more than 40 programme items. There was only one day without a programme item during these three weeks. The broad spectrum of events ranged from pure entertainment such as music gigs, frontal lectures and talks to discussions that questioned the spatial planning status quo in Vaduz and Liechtenstein. In total, there were 16 events that had a spatial planning or spatial development focus, whereas 24 events had an entertainment focus.

In the context of this research, the events are further distinguished between vertical, participative and horizontal events. Vertical events are characterised by a one-sided communication by one or two people with a largely passive audience. Participatory events were moderated but invited the visitors to participate and discuss.

Examples included meeting of the location marketing agency of Vaduz and the jam session by the local youth organization. Horizontal events were moderated but everyone at the event had the possibility to join in. The emphasis of the horizontal events was on celebrating and exchanging ideas. The kick-off and closing events were content-oriented ones (see Figure 4).

The fact that eight horizontal events had a content focus, meaning spatial development topics were on the agenda, represents the idea of the BC : VH, which allows to discuss the spatial development of Vaduz in a collaborative but also joyful manner. The six vertical content programme items were mostly lectures of the University of Liechtenstein, which took place in the BC : VH and were free for the public to join. Naturally, most of the entertainment events were vertically organised, such as concerts or readings. The number of people who visited the events ranged quite broadly.

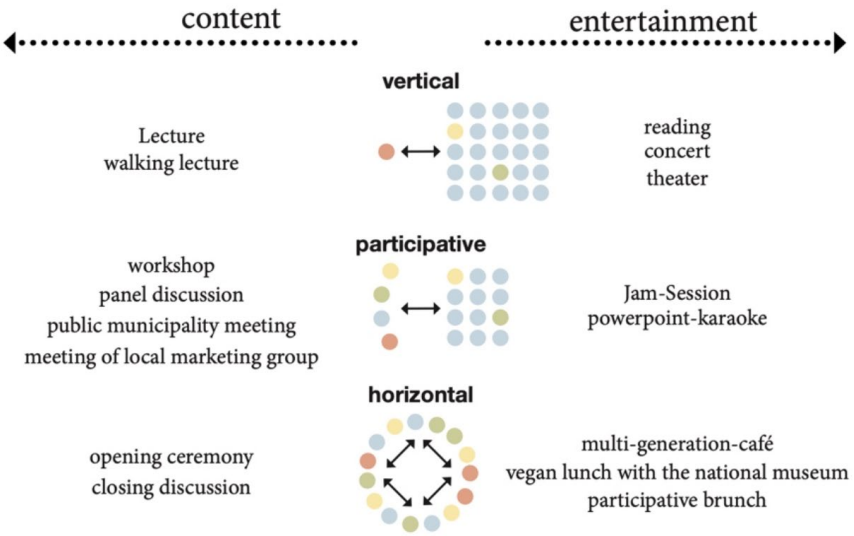


Figure 4. Description of the quality of the programme items. Source: (Author 2019)

One lecture was visited by no one, whereas the (free) concerts drew an audience of around 50 to 200 people. Even some of the spatial development programme items drew audiences of around 30 to 50 people, mainly depending on the weekday and how much the topic is in discussion in the municipality in general.

During the process, it became obvious that such a colourful mix of events was necessary. The strategy was to make the space more attractive to as broad of a section of the population as possible and involve them in other formats and contents. The combination of content and entertainment created a friendly and stimulating atmosphere, but at the same time, it was possible to discuss very complex planning related issues of Vaduz and Liechtenstein. Therefore, people who, according to their statements, do not typically get involved in such spatial development processes took part in the discussion on the future of the Vadozner Huus and Vaduz.

	VERTICAL	PARTICIPATIVE	HORIZONTAL	TOTAL
CONTENT	6	2	8	16
ENTERTAINMENT	14	3	7	24
TOTAL	**20**	**5**	**15**	**40**

Table 1. Amount and quality of the programme items. Source: (Author 2019)

LEARNINGS AND CONCLUSION

To sum up, various insights were gained during the entire BC : VH process starting from the first meeting of the project group until the final discussion of the results in the municipal council. Since the planning and building laws in Liechtenstein do not oblige municipalities to include participatory processes during the development of their planning instruments, the inclusion of the everyday landscape of the population into the conceptual landscapes of institutionalized spatial planning depends mainly on the goodwill of the municipal councils. The experimental and collaborative approach of the Basecamp : Vadozner Huus is new in Liechtenstein since usually the measures that are defined in spatial planning strategies involve the building of new infrastructures or the demolition of obsolete structures. The integration of the everyday life perspective and use of the landscape by the local population into the conceptual landscapes is new in Liechtenstein.

Our goal therefore was to use the BC : VH as a case study and to analyse the three levels of (1) actors, (2) process, and (3) programme items. From this we were able to derive learnings for the future implementation of such experimental projects.

(1) Actors: The definition of clear roles with resources and duties is as fundamental as the participation of all actors in the meetings of the core group. Also we experienced the difficulty in explaining what the BC : VH was supposed to be to various individuals. The target group therefore needs to be informed very early and very clearly. It is necessary to have a clear concept with a clear communication strategy. Clearly "just" the reinterpretation of an in-between space through an upcycled shipping container isn't sufficient to generate a response from the target group

Especially challenging for us as university was the double act of conduction research and helping with the organization and realization of the programme points. It is important not to lose focus of the research question as the results and lesson-learned of ULLs are often difficult to scale or institutionalize (Puerari et al. 2018).

(2) Process: In Liechtenstein it requires an increased commitment and political will to initiate these participatory development processes due to the more relaxed planning regulations. The results of BC : VH has shown that transparent communication along the process and beyond is necessary. This is the only way to draw citizens' attention to the project and to commit citizens for long-term engagement. While architectural interventions such as the BC : VH are useful hardwares, it needs to be integrated into a long term strategy with specific funding and personal resources. This long term orientation is indispensable for a successful translation of ULLs from individual projects to long-term governance structures (Puerari et al. 2018; Voytenko et al. 2016).

(3) Programme items-wise, it can be emphasised that an appropriate programme mix is essential for the success of an ULL, and our differentiation between content-entertainment and vertical-participatory-horizontal can provide a framework for future ULLs. Ultimately, the exact programme definition always depends on the local stakeholders and their opportunities and interests. This requires architectural flexibility that could be certainly be obtained through the upcycled unprogrammed shipping container. About the long-term implementation of ULLs, it should be indicated that the effort and the actual result of co-creation processes with a broad public are often disproportionate to one another (Puerari et al. 2018, 10) Therefore, they are often linked with too high expectations, and this has to be taken into consideration for political actors (ibid. p.13).

To conclude, the results of the BC : VH intend to represent scalable learnings that can be used and applied for further projects within the region. Besides, a reinterpretation of the unused space that is parking garage

"Parkhaus Marktplatz" by activating it through the BC : VH showed the lack of a consumption-free, discursive space with urban qualities in Vaduz. The intermediate use of the "Parkhaus Marktplatz" has created a sharp contrast to the centre of Vaduz, which is overloaded with design and commerce. We can therefore identify and conclude with Puerari et. al. (2018), who observe that spatially fixed ULLs can create a narrative about certain places that help reaching the target group.

REFERENCES

Agglomeration Werdenberg-Liechtenstein. *"Agglomerationsprogramm Siedlung Und Verkehr: Synthesebericht 3. Generation."* Buchs, 2016.

Amt für Statistik. *"Liechtenstein in Zahlen 2020."* Vaduz, 2020.

Buhr, Katarina, Maija Federley, and Anja Karlsson. *"Urban Living Labs for Sustainability in Suburbs in Need of Modernization and Social Uplift."* Technology Innovation Management Review 6, no. 1 (2016): 27–34.

Bulkeley, Harriet, Lars Coenen, Niki Frantzeskaki, Christian Hartmann, Annica Kronsell, Lindsay Mai, Simon Marvin, Kes McCormick, Frank van Steenbergen, and Yuliya Voytenko Palgan. *"Urban Living Labs: Governing Urban Sustainability Transitions."* Current Opinion in Environmental Sustainability 22 (2016): 13–17. doi:10.1016/j.cosust.2017.02.003.

Burckhardt, Lucius. *Warum Ist Landschaft Schön? Die Spaziergangswissenschaft*. 4. Auflage. Edited by Martin Schmitz and Markus Ritter. Berlin: Martin Schmitz Verlag, 2015.

Chronéer, Diana, Anna Ståhlbröst, and Abdolrasoul Habibipour. *"Urban Living Labs: Towards an Integrated Understanding of Their Key Components."* Technology Innovation Management Review 9, no. 3 (2019): 50–62. doi:10.22215/timreview/1224.

Franz, Yvonne. *"Designing Social Living Labs in Urban Research."* info 17, no. 4 (2015): 53–66. doi:10.1108/info-01-2015-0008.

Gemeinde Vaduz. *"Zentrumsentwicklung Vaduz: Strategie."* Vaduz, 2018.

Hauser, Susanne, and Christa Kamleithner. *Ästhetik der Agglomeration*. Zwischenstadt 8. Wuppertal: Müller + Busmann, 2006.

Leminen, Seppo. *"Coordination and Participation in Living Lab Networks."* Technology Innovation Management Review, 2013, 5–14.

Leminen, Seppo, Anna-Greta Nyström, Mika Westerlund, and Mika J. Kortelainen. *"The Effect of Network Structure on Radical Innovation in Living Labs."* Journal of Business & Industrial Marketing 31, no. 6 (2016): 743–57. doi:10.1108/JBIM-10-2012-0179.

Leminen, Seppo, Mika Westerlund, and Anna-Greta Nyström. *"Living Labs as Open-Innovation Networks."* Technology Innovation Management Review, 2012, 6–11.

Nyström, Anna-Greta, Seppo Leminen, Mika Westerlund, and Mika Kortelainen. *"Actor Roles and Role Patterns Influencing Innovation in Living Labs."* Industrial Marketing Management 43, no. 3 (2014): 483–95. doi:10.1016/j.indmarman.2013.12.016.

Prominski, Martin. *Landschaft Entwerfen: Zur Theorie Aktueller Landschaftsarchitektur*. Dietrich Reimer Verlag, 2004.

Puerari, Emma, Jotte de Koning, Timo von Wirth, Philip Karré, Ingrid Mulder, and Derk Loorbach. *"Co-Creation Dynamics in Urban Living Labs."* Sustainability 10, no. 6 (2018): 1893. doi:10.3390/su10061893.

Schenk, Winfried, ed. Suburbane *Räume Als Kulturlandschaften*. Forschungs- und Sitzungsberichte der ARL Bd. 236. Hannover: Akademie für Raumforschung und Landesplanung, 2012.

Sieverts, Thomas. *Zwischenstadt: Zwischen Ort Und Welt, Raum Und Zeit, Stadt Und Land*. 1997. 3., verb. und um ein Nachw. erg. Aufl., 4., unveränd. Nachdr. Bauwelt-Fundamente Stadtplanung/Urbanistik 118. Gütersloh, Basel: Bauverl; Birkhäuser, 2013.

Sieverts, Thomas, Bernhard Koch, Ursula Stein, and Michael Steinbusch. *Zwischenstadt - Inzwischen Stadt? Entdecken, Begreifen, Verändern; Eine Collage Auf Der Basis Von Texten Aus Dem Forschungsprojekt*

"Mitten Am Rand - Zwischenstadt. Zur Qualifizierung Der Verstädterten Landschaft". Edited by Thomas Sieverts. Zwischenstadt Querschnittsband. Wuppertal: Müller + Busmann, 2005.

Steen, Kris, and Ellen van Bueren. *"The Defining Characteristics of Urban Living Labs."* Technology Innovation Management Review 7, no. 7 (2017): 21–33.

Steen, Kris, and Ellen van Bueren. *"Urban Living Labs: A Living Lab Way of Working."* Amsterdam, 2017.

Voytenko, Yuliya, Kes McCormick, James Evans, and Gabriele Schliwa. *"Urban Living Labs for Sustainability and Low Carbon Cities in Europe: Towards a Research Agenda."* Journal of Cleaner Production 123 (2016): 45–54. doi:10.1016/j.jclepro.2015.08.053.

PAPER #2.15

SEVILLA 1910, THE MOTION OF CENSURE AGAINST THE ARCHITECTURAL STYLE ART NOVEAU. PERPETUATING AND CONTROLLING THE NARRATIVE OF THE SYMBOLIC CITY IN THE MODERN ERA

Reyes Abad Flores[a]
[a]Universidad de Sevilla, Sevilla, España

ABSTRACT

In the early years of the 20th century, Seville is still stuck in an economic, social and urban crisis. The idea of celebrating an international exhibition (EIA 1929) was then perceived as an impulse for a needed urban renovation. In despite of the real necessities (new infrastructures, architectural restoration, public sanitation system,...) the intellectual elite would raise the question of the identity and the rehabilitation of the memory, a motor for the city image transformation but also an effort to recapture the greatness of past eras.
In those days, the art nouveau was a reality in Seville and a few private buildings were built following the rules of this new style, the taste of European modernity. In 1910, a conservative municipal councilor, Francisco Javier de Lepe y Quesada, filed a no-confidence motion against the new architecture that could be considered a threat to the local identity. The approval of this motion can be considered the beginning of a permanent conflict between modernity and tradition in the urban landscape of Seville as well as a popular subject of discussion along the years.

KEYWORDS

Urban design; architecture; modern era; symbolic city; Sevilla; motion of censure.

INTRODUCTION

Kevin Lynch (1918-1984) spearheaded the approach of the different elements that comprise the city image, highlighting the perception of space as a result of the symbolic interaction between individuals from certain physical-structural features, a broadly developed concept in his work *The Image of the City* (Lynch 1966).
We draw on the premise that every city is the result of a first settlement and the collective and progressive need to formalise a project, these strident efforts, in the words of Edward Ludwing Glaeser make the city human beings' greatest achievements (Ludwing Glaeser 2011). The materialisation of this flattering habitat transcends the architectural and urban structure to develop a system of values, attitudes, relationships and behaviour, in short, a culture. Thereafter, our "major success" story shall take on different nuances.
Concurrently to the formal consolidation of every city, social, economic and cultural objectives begin to be designed and therefore, to draw a real yet similarly ideal image of what it aspires to be. This is expressed through architecture, art and other practices that shape and swell the collective imagination, namely identity. The creation, consolidation and destruction of the urban landscape is the result of this process of correspondence between an environment and social identification. The image of the city as aesthetic production is the result the entire scope, advances and desires that drive said urban project[1].

[1] The word aesthetic derives from the greek word aísthesis, which means "perception, knowledge", as well as from the verb aío, aisthánomai, which is translated as "to hear", "to appreciate"

The symbol, such as urban brand, monument, clothing, building or urban party, fulfils that dual function of expressing (our desires) and representing (what we are). The aesthetic intent is simultaneous to the collective definition, colours the city as a human creation from certain semantic elements that remain over time and outlive its syntactic transformations (Aldo Rossi 2015).

It can be affirmed that marking symbolically is simultaneous to the act of occupying, an especially complex phenomenon in the case of the cities of Christian re-foundation, as is the case of Seville, from the thirteenth century onwards. Formal *recycling* is the basis of this model of symbolic urban development, the semanticsation of what has been bequeathed as a supply of identity, a period *of* abhorrence of that image and the new unit of power. The prevalence of symbols and meanings over the centuries embodies the need for memory and awareness beyond formal development and transformation. The motion of censure passed in 1910 against the modernist style is nothing other than the result of a construction of the image of Seville over time, of the importance of preserving / recovering certain foundational values and controlling the narrative in an attempt to forge an urban renaissance.

1. HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

1.1. Construction of the symbolic city. From the Christian Reconquest to the Renaissance: enshrinement, utopia and power

In 1248, *Isbiliya* is a walled and inhospitable city with striking contrasts between the compactness of the monumental area, port and administrative centre in the face of large urban intramural and suburban voids. The two main aims following the process of the Christian Reconquest would be on the one hand, the distribution and occupation of that vast area and on the other, the enshrinement of a space marked by everyday life forms and the preceding religion through the suppression and superposition of labels and meanings.

The theophanisation or enshrinement of space would consist of the systematic mixing of *the everyday* and *the extraordinary*, a priority and synchronous act to the rebirth of the city. The great gaps would be the catalyst element of the convent city, extraordinary architectures that, together with other urban brands, embody strategies for qualification or symbolic control of space (López Lloret 2004, 83).

The innovation carried out in the design and narrative control of the city during the thirteenth to fifteenth centuries was effective and steadfast, though the definitive symbolic consolidation would arise in the sixteenth century thanks to the status acquired as the main port and institutional headquarters of Trade with the Indies. The enshrinement of space, based on a pedagogical iconography will be exported to America, a key strategy in the shaping of the Hispanic-Baroque identity. While Seville wins in terms of monumentality, milestones such as the body of bells of the Giralda, universal symbol of Seville, the House of Contracting (*Casa de la Contratación*) (1503), the Mint (*la Casa de la Moneda*), the Merchant's Market (1572) and Customs' Office (*Aduana*) (1587) are built in this period to create a capital, while the city lacked sound infrastructure, sewerage, water systems. Together with the monumentality, the development of the urban festivals will be a fundamental tool of semanticisation. Acting as social binders, symbolism and artificiality comprise a complex machinery that activates the urban scene.

1.2. Consolidation of the city of virtue. Economic downturn, urban planning and spirit during the Baroque period

After the heyday of the sixteenth century, in the seventeenth there is a decrease in traffic with the Indies, a commercial decline

brought about by the corruption of a system that did not create sturdy economic pillars. The urban layout unveils few changes, but the city evolves significantly in aesthetic issues, with the development of a more narrative and ornamental architecture, the façades experience an innovation towards the embellishment that is consolidated in the Baroque. Precisely, the Baroque artifice finds its maximum expression with the urban festival. The ephemeral transmutation of public space equals total control over the city, a domain of its space and time. In this new established order of celebration, art and architecture, the city is an indispensable support of *the symbolic*. At the end of the 17th century, Seville is two cities in symbiosis, the real and the ideal. The shortfall of, or almost fleeing from, modernisation of infrastructure is compensated by the progress towards realism and plasticity. Architecture, decorative arts and festivities place the onus on the concept of city-*objet d'art.* Baroque masquerades constitute the culmination of the urban festivals, merging allegories, classical culture and baroque essence. Arranged and consumed by all groups and social groups the masquerade was a practice of total art: public space, ephemeral architecture, theatre, poetry, painting, spectators... Society representing itself, its weaknesses and ideals. The grandeur of a collective spirit through urbanism and architecture represents the evolution and permanence of its own natural order, an invention.

> "It does not seem that he has wanted to reduce these kingdoms to a republic of enchanted men who live outside a natural order" (Bonet Correa, 1990, 14)

Finally, with the transfer of the *Casa de la Contratación* to Cadiz in 1717 and the Free Trade Agreement of 1765, Seville became bereft of its position and privilege. In spite of everything, the city maintained an aura, and an incomparable, decadent beauty. At that time, the city's grandeur was measured by its good order and operation above size or census, the ideal model was clearly the medium-sized city (Fortea Pérez, 2009, 115). The medium-sized city was easier to control and order politically, socially and aesthetically. This model was known in Europe as a *city of virtue* that symbolised moralising and exemplary values, urban planning measures whose rituals were continually updated.

Unable to combine tradition and modernity, Seville shifts within the European context and throws itself into its role as a city of virtue. The chosen destination of the nobility, self-fulfilment would come with the brief transfer of the royal court of Felipe V and Isabel de Farnesio to the city of Seville between 1729 and 1733. This perpetuation of the symbolic function of Seville repeated the same patterns of the process of urban enshrinement although with a semantic turn towards the courtly playfulness.

> "Like all devotion, monarchical fervour is an acquired essence, the result of education and a carefully preserved tradition and transmitted generation after generation" (Aguilar Piñal 1989, 17)

1.3. From the Enlightenment to Romanticism. Progress, functionality and idealisation

Despite the consolidation of symbolic urbanism, Seville would not remain impervious to European influences and at the end of the 18th century a plan of interior reform was designed adapting the illustrated ideals of functionality, namely through Municipal Assistant Pablo de Olavide (1767-1778)[2]. At the same time, Seville adopts the municipal ordinances of Madrid that allowed for the academic world to participate in urban issues (Ollero Lobato 2005, 113-124). From 1780

[2] The Court of the Inquisition condemned Pablo de Olavide for heresy in 1778, for demonstrating against certain doctrines and being in possession of prohibited books

onwards, the Royal Academy of San Fernando assumes control over the professional organisation and imposes the classic taste against the backdrop of artisan baroque. In the façades the new principles of rationality, proportion and order are applied, equivalent to greater regularity and symmetry of the urban layout (Pérez Gálvez 2004, 20-23).

Within this context, the ideal of the common good arises, also applied to urban design. As a symbolic capital, it becomes a strategic aim of the Napoleonic army. In this very short period of occupation (1810-1812) the urban image breaks down considerably. Demolitions and selective usurpations of residential and religious buildings occur. The appropriation and transformation of these landmarks of the old political-religious order is that of those most significant symbols of society and its culture.

This process of modernisation through the desecration of symbolic spaces parallels the plundering of artworks. The contemporary perception of the past will hinge upon this desecration, the ransacking of the baroque landscape will leave an important void in the memory whose reaction will be displayed in the subsequent development of romantic picturesqueness and *costumbrismo*.

In the mid-nineteenth century, the modernisation of Seville continues in terms of sanitation, opening and communications system following the industrialising dream. *"The fragmentation of the apple"* in the words of Juan Luis Trillo de Leyva would lead to the reorganisation of the social space and the reconceptualisation of the urban image (Trillo de Leyva 1991). The aims: the demolition of doors and walls, interior refurbishments to improve the conditions of habitability and communications within the walls, as well as the implementation of the railway system. Under Isabel II (1833-1868), Seville once again positions itself within the national context and benefits from the historical link with the monarchy. In these years, and fleeing from the 1848 revolution in France, the Dukes of Monstpensier, Prince Antonio de Orleans and María Luisa Fernanda de Borbón settle in Seville.

The disintegration of the symbolic city continues in this period, the purpose of a forceful physical transformation, aggressive and without clear planning. The need to protect memory leads to the Monuments Commission coming into being in 1844. On the other hand, in 1876 the Law of Expansion prevented growth outside the walls, thus prioritising internal problems and advocating internal enlargements, at the cost of further demolition. To compensate for this physical lack of memory, abstract references and picturesqueness are consolidated through new festivities and artistic displays. Seville becomes increasing comparable to the city Maurilia (Calvino 2007, 18), almost a fiction.

> "The festivities recreate in the symbolic field the characteristics of a society, while bolstering them, given their emotional effects on the participants" (Núñez Roldán 2007, 237)

The integration of the new ideals of bourgeois urbanism is accompanied by the recovery of the symbols and landmarks of the past. The Dukes of Montpensier had enjoyed a significant impact on the image of nineteenth-century Seville beyond the architectural and urban legacy. Faced with the modernisation under Isabel II, the patronage of the Montpensier involves recovery of traditions after a long period of secularisation, fostering the reconstruction of a city image based on clichés.

Seville, destination de *rigueur* for European romantic travellers, abuses that picturesque and idealised reduction of itself. The traumatic redevelopment strategies throughout the nineteenth century finally undermined the society that adopted the values of regional traditions, easily digestible, compatible with the collective spirit. Stereotyped reduction as post-traumatic therapy is strongly linked to the origin of this contemporary struggle between progress and tradition, architecture

and urbanism, and therefore, to the image of the city.

1.4. Regionalist thinking and the image of the city. Seville in the twentieth century, the Ibero-American Exhibition

In this first third of the twentieth century, during the Bourbon Restoration the project and holding of the Ibero-American Exhibition of Seville in 1929 appears, the first major attempt at urban expansion and renewal of Seville's image. The Spanish socioeconomic map shows a polarisation between industrialised regions and those with an economy based on large farmsteads governed by the nobility and the new bourgeoisie. In a general sense, the south-southwest half predominates the old landowner aristocracy and the burgeoning wealthy middle-class.

In this polarised context, various ideological movements arise that find their aesthetic correspondence in the form of avant-garde, regionalism, customs, etc. The different struggles between traditionalist and regenerationist factions will accentuate political and ideological polarisation, fragmenting the identity issue. This identity debate will directly influence architecture and urban design. In Seville, the regionalist movement will prevail as an ideological current, as the official style of the future Ibero-American Exhibition (hereinafter, IAE) and urban renewal.

While the north is attracted to Europeanism, in the south, folklore roots that give rise to a particular region reign triumphant (Villar Movellán 2010, 20-21); a folklore that seeks to distance itself from picturesqueness. The regionalist movement promotes awareness of historical wealth to address the future. This injection of self-confidence will boost the project of the future IAE. It was about renewing the alliance between utopia and reality using architecture as a vehicle, through symbols that condense the Sevillian identity and its essence. The city of virtue journey is now the city of grace, primed for the great exhibition.

While the city suffers from poor political management, regionalist architecture emerges reminiscent of a glorious past, using a language of eclecticism; the architectural expressiveness boosts the imagination, the conscience and the reinforcement of the identity in the same way as the Baroque, in the semantic unity in the *marvellous reality.* The façades condense this symbolic enthusiasm; architecture and urban planning champion the challenge of recovering the collective spirit and therefore, greatness as a city.

Paragraphs immediately following their headings must be justified on both sides with no indents for first lines. The document should use single-line spacing throughout.

2. THE 1910 CENSURE OF THE MODERNIST STYLE

Seville had been preparing for the IAE from 1910 onwards when the Executive Committee announced the tender of projects for the site. If during the embryonic stage the local architects had experimented simultaneously with regionalism and other styles of European influence, as of July 1910 there is a fact that will limit the integration of elements outside the Sevillian spirit, considered as a threat, as a desecration of collective memory.

Following European trends, young graduates in Madrid and Barcelona would import the modernist style. In Spain, this trend prospered mainly in the industrialised areas, Levante and Catalonia, where it reached high levels of sophistication. In Seville, a group of architects such as Aníbal González, José Gómez Millán, Simón Barris and José Espiau and Muñoz integrated this current into housing devised for the upper bourgeoisie, in the case of the celebrated and well-preserved Juan de Haro's family house in Tomás de Ibarra St. (S. Barris,1904-1905), the house of Simón Barris y Bes in Luis Montoto St. (S. Barris 1906) or Laureano Montoto's family house in Alfonso XIII St. (A. González 1905-1906), as well as

shops and entertainment venues of great popularity, in the case of the disappeared Café de Paris in La Campana (Villar Movellán 1973, 159). Despite the foregoing, the traditionalist ideological support of Regionalism would develop its control tools; the invention of this regionalist compact image clashed with modernism despite its similarities in formal experimentation and use of artisanal resources.

The proposal to reject modernism arises in the municipal administration itself, materializing and consolidating an political idelogy through architecture and art, a pillar of an urban identity and image policy. On July 22, 1910, at the Plenary Session of the City Council, the conservative councillor Francisco Javier de Lepe y Quesada submitted a motion of censorship on the modernist style. The following newspaper *El Liberal* echoed, stressing the "well-written" motion of the councillor urging the City Council to foster reforms and improvements of residential façades according to the beautification and arrangement of the peculiar and classic model[3]. In his statement, De Lepe y Quesada proposes to agree on a series of measures:

> First. To grant municipal rights to the different concepts covered by these reforms, to those who carry them out, by request accompanied by plans deemed admissible.
> Second: Distribute cash prizes amongst those homeowners who have made these reforms, deserving special distinction.
> For the distribution of these awards the Honourable City Council will issue a detailed Regulation, endorsing the conditions and appointing the examining Jury.
> Third: In the offices of the Honourable City Hall a special department will be enabled to process and report the applications submitted for the abovementioned purpose.
> Fourth: In said department, the owner who so wishes will be furnished with instructions regarding the nature of the reforms, drawings, models and background necessary to form a judgment of the style in which the decoration elements and façades which must be applied to the houses.
> Fifth: The Honourable City Council will ensure that said department is intervened by people who have distinguished themselves in Seville for their artistic knowledge necessary for this purpose and for those architects who can guarantee the success of the endeavours.
> Sixth: No application will be processed accompanied by plans that display modernist reforms.
> Seventh: This exception regime shall conclude three months before the day the Hispanic-American Exhibition is inaugurated, since the main aim sought is to ensure the general beautification of the population on the occasion of said Contest[4]

The city council hall was chaired by the Liberal Party. De Lepe followed the theories of Vicente Lampérez, placing the moralising values of architecture above the creative freedom of architects. The censure motion was passed without further debate. The proposed measures would take shape as *the regulations of the Contest for the Construction and Refurbishment of a Sevillian Style Dwelling* of February 23, 1912, marking the guidelines of the peculiar aesthetic renovation in full contemporaneity.

In this document, the stylistic question and the justification has been reiterated.

> Article 4. "Façade" shall be understood for the purposes of this contest, alongside the exterior walls of each farm, the hallway, gate and patio, since these are wholly or partially visible from the street, all of this is what has to serve as a base for beautification and decoration of Sevillian houses from the outside.

[3] Diario El Liberal 23/07/1910, morning edition. Servicio de Hemeroteca, A.H.M.S.
[4] The text has been extracted from the Plenary Sessions 22/07/1910, dossier H-2040, pp 186-188. A.H.M.S.

> Article 5. The reconstruction, beautification or embellishment of the properties must obey the architectural or decorative orders sanctioned throughout history and in a highly singular manner those characteristic styles of our city during its different epochs.
> Article 6. The so-called modernist style is excluded from the contest, and, therefore, applications whose plans and technical reports display such reforms or constructions would be automatically rejected[5].
> ArtIcle 17. […] Requests for reforms in the facades of shops, establishments or factories and B) requests that, even referring to reforms of a general nature in the facades of houses, are not considered admissible by the Jury or in view of the plans and reports presented.

This instrument of aesthetic control of facades based on a historicist and self-referential architecture so that regionalism spreads throughout the city, triumphantly homogenizing the image of Seville

The impact of the censure motion highlights the enormous influence of the E.I.A. in the consolidation of the symbolic image of Seville beyond the exhibition project itself, that is, the aesthetic consequences and the urban traces left by this period of enormous expectation at the beginning of the contemporary era.

2.1. Consequences of the censure motion of the modernist style in design and perception of contemporary architecture in Seville

The events between 1910 and 1912 certified that the question of urban image transcended the strictly political. The rejection of the integration of new architectural formulas would become increasingly evident and legitimate, moving from urban planning to social and everyday conflict. Society would endorse the issue of the suitability of the contemporary in the public space of Seville, making it a recurring topic until today.

After the censorship of modernism, the rejection would also reach the architecture of the Modern Movement. A paradigmatic case of this future is the project presented in 1925 to erect an American-type skyscraper in the Prado de San Sebastián by the German company Saxen & Jochem. In the report, the City Council requested a plot of public ownership for the construction of a monumental building (Figure 1) that would become the first skyscraper in Spain[6]. The company insists that the building solved a dual issue, on the one hand, the shortage of middle-class housing, and on the other hand, the lack of accommodation during the IAE. In summary, it offered a functional and adaptive architectural model in a nearby outside walls area to the exhibition grounds (Abad Flores 2017, 179-180).

The president of the Public Works' Commission dismisses the project but does not rule out a change of location. Then begins an administrative journey and a public debate that lasts three years on the suitability of integrating a skyscraper into the landscape. The press would play a decisive role in this debate, giving visibility and disclosure to a topic reveals numerous conflicts, reaffirms certain principles and leads to an examination of municipal conscience.

The design of the skyscraper *Mira el Betis* dabbled with modern architectural utopia. The Academy of Fine Arts publicly transmits its rejection considering it an affront to the Sevillian style, arguing that it dwarfed the Giralda, seemed vulgar and failed to adapt to local weather conditions. In turn, the newspaper *La Unión* was in favour and found no drawback to the integration between new city and old city, criticising the obsessive use of a decadent aesthetic, the continuous falsification of architectures and façades and defending renewal in accordance with the times.

[5] Diario El Liberal 27/02/1912, morning edition. Servicio de Hemeroteca, A.H.M.S.
[6] It must be borne in mind that the Telefónica Building designed by Ignacio de Cárdenas and considered the first Spanish skyscraper, it would not begin to be built in Madrid until September 1926

Figura 1. Architectural recreation of project Mira el Betis (Saxen & Jochem,1925) Image by: Schlomo Goldberg

> A skyscraper neighbourhood may be a heresy for the council meeting at the Academy of Fine Arts; but it would have the characteristic of a fool proof measure for the solution of the housing problem (Diario La Unión, 07/05/1925)[7].

The imposition of regionalist aesthetics thus develops chronologically between the censorship of modernism and the denial of rationalism. Shortly after, having overcome the major social debate of the skyscraper, the City of Seville would appropriate the rationale of Saxen & Jochem, publicly auctioning the land at the Prado de San Sebastián and developing *the Housing Development Plan* for the IAE that allowed for several convertible hotels to be built in households. The America Palace hotel stands on those requested grounds, once one of the tallest residential buildings in Seville, with a functional interior design and a regionalist style façade. For the rest of the hotels, freedom of style is granted, as the adaptability and familiarity of the tourist is deemed fundamental. Somehow, it was clear that the ideal city had to surrender in certain matters to the actual city and the present state-of-play.

Yet, in the evolution of cities the determining factors vary and although the rejection of certain architectural forms continues to occur, the chances of survival of regionalism are reduced due to high production and maintenance costs resulting from the ornamental profusion and the diversity of artisanal materials and resources. Its essence would remain as a reinvention symbol of a city at a time of great aspirations. The resounding failure of the IAE would drag, in later decades, dreams and much of the monumental footprint. At the same time, minor disputes arose around the integration of certain architectural designs, as happens in 1938 with the rationalist building *Cabo Persianas* by Gabriel Lupiáñez in the Plaza de la Magdalena, which the City Council accused of breaking the harmony of the environment, subsequently avoiding the construction of a similar building in the environs of the *Archivo de Indias* (Fernández Salinas 1992, 265-267). During the previous and contemporary years of Developmentalism, the aesthetic debate is blurred. The city, which continues to show a centripetal dynamic, succumbs to speculation, demolitions of historic buildings

[7] Diario La Unión, 07/05/1925, morning edition. La ciudad vieja y la ciudad nueva, p.2. Servicio de Hemeroteca, A.H.M.S.

and the lifting of functional architectures. The adaptation of the *General Urban Planning Plan of 1946* (hereinafter, PGOU) had as its direct reference the first *General Urban Planning Plan of Madrid,* written by Pedro Bidagor Lasarte (1939-1946), adapted by Alfonso Toro Buiza and Juan Delgado (ibídem 69), focused on urban reorganisation by areas of specialist use. The housing block is standardised, and Seville is compacted even further. The language of styles and the defence of an idealised image of the first half files of the 20th century disappears.

The advance of contemporaneity will not prevent the social debate from being reactivated from time to time as part of the necessary permanence of the rite, the values and uses of a city and its collective throughout the centuries. Already in the 21st century, the raising the Seville Tower (Torre Sevilla) (2007-2015) by the architect César Pelli, hoists the conflict to hitherto unsuspected limits. The political opposition even requested that Unesco review the declaration of World Heritage should the project come into being. The Metropol Parasol by Jürgen Mayer (2005-2011) in the heart of the city also generates a sound political and social debate both in terms of dimensions and avant-garde design. However, the most conflicting case will be the Library of the University of Seville designed by Zaha Hadid in the Prado de San Sebastián park. Since its approval in 2006, the project receives criticism from a sector of the population and revives the debate about aesthetic appropriateness. With the works halted by judicial order, the building was definitively dismantled in 2012 following the ruling of the Superior Court of Justice of Andalusia for considering that the project went against what was established in the PGOU of 2006 that declared the Prado de San Sebastián a green zone, thus ascertaining the perfect argument.

CONCLUSION

The 1910 Censure Motion of the modernist style, the 1912 *Casa Sevillanas* Façade Contest and the *Mira el Betis* project in 1925 is an extraordinary case of control in the configuration of the city image and guarantees the continuity of the traditional symbolic function, the aesthetic will over any other urban issue. The level of sophistication in semanticisation strategies contrasts with the poor development of urban infrastructure and domestic architecture within the context of the city of virtue. The regionalist-modernist conflict is the product of an ideological construction that uses political instruments and the support of a determinant sector of society. The legitimisation of the tradition-modernity conflict and the rejection of the integration of architectural movements of international influence would not prevent regionalist architecture from behaving as an experimental and temporary movement. Solely in a symbolically representative city of identity values does the aesthetic issue acquire a social dimension, on the other hand, said reduction of the urban environment leads to deficiencies such as the innovation of constructive models, derived from architectural design issues adapted to new usage needs and the influence on social perception of architecture and contemporary urban planning.

REFERENCES

Abad Flores, R.: *Integración y desintegración del patrimonio contemporáneo en Sevilla.* Tesis doctoral Universidad de Sevilla, 2017

Aguilar Piñal, F. 1989: *Historia de Sevilla, siglo XVIII.* Sevilla: Servicio de Publicaciones Universidad de Sevilla

Bonet Correa, J.M. 1990. *Fiesta, poder y arquitectura*. Madrid: Ed. Akal.

Calvino, I. 2007: *Las ciudades invisibles.* Madrid: Ed. Siruela.

Fernández Salinas, V., 1992, La reforma interior de Sevilla 1940-1959. Sevilla: Secretariado de Publicaciones de la Universidad de Sevilla.

Fortea Pérez, J.I.: *La ciudad y el fenómeno urbano en el mundo moderno: España en su entorno europeo,* Anuario IEHS 24 (2009), pp. 111-142.

López Lloret, J., 2004. *La ciudad construida.* Sevilla, Servicio de Archivo y Publicaciones de la Diputación de Sevilla.

Luswing Glaeser, E. 2011. *El triunfo de las ciudades.* Madrid: Ed. Taurus.

Lynch, K., 1966. La imagen de la ciudad. Buenos Aires, Ed. Infinito.

Núñez Roldán, F. 2007: *Ocio y vida cotidiana en el mundo hispánico en la Edad Moderna. Sevilla: Ollero Lobato, F.: Arquitectura doméstica en Sevilla durante la segunda mitad del Siglo XVIII,* Revista de Historia del Arte Atrio 10/11 (2005), pp. 113-124

Secretariado de Publicaciones de la Universidad de Sevilla.

Pérez Gálvez, F.: *Las obras de fábrica en la arquitectura doméstica sevillana de los siglos XVIII y XIX. Características constructivas y parámetros resistentes.* Tesis doctoral, Universidad de Sevilla, 2004.

Rossi, A., 2010. *La arquitectura de la ciudad.* Barcelona: Ed. Gustavo Gili.

Trillo de Leyva, J.L. 1991. *Sevilla, la fragmentación de la manzana.* Sevilla: Ed. Universidad de Sevilla.

Vicens Vives, J. 1972: *Una aproximación a la historia de España*. Madrid: Ed. Vicens Vives

Villar Movellán, A. 2010: *La arquitectura del Regionalismo en Sevilla 1900-1935,* 2a edición revisada. Sevilla: Diputación de Sevilla, Área de Cultura e Identidad. Servicio de Archivo y Publicaciones.

Villar Movellán, A. 1973: *Arquitectura del Modernismo en Sevilla.* Sevilla: Diputación de Sevilla.

PAPER #2.16

URBAN LANDSCAPES IN BERLIN SHAPED THROUGH CULTURAL DIVERSITY

Sigrun Prahl[a]
[a]University of Applied Science, Krefeld, Germany

ABSTRACT

Since decades immigrants from Arabic countries have come to Germany and they have changed the appearance, culture and urban experience in cities and neighbourhoods in a significant way. There are certain neighbourhoods like Kreuzberg, Wedding and Neukölln in Berlin that have gained a new identity through the mix and interchange of people with different backgrounds intermixed with the local population.
This is visible in the context of urban space. There are three main topics that will be analysed within this context: Small family businesses and their impact on their surrounding space; form and use of public space; and significant architecture types like mosques and their role for urban space.
Small scale family businesses shape many streets, they convey a certain array of goods and services within their neighbourhood. Arabic migrants have changed the face and the cultural characteristics of roads and places in the living environment; green areas and parks now experience a certain type of use. The public space also serves as a place for small and informal trade. Mosques as centres of the religious, cultural and social life have first been accommodated in backyards or cellars of the quarters with a high number of Muslim inhabitants. In recent years several mosques have been built along the streets, they are visible and they have a significant impact on the streets and on the surrounding neighbourhood. The local culture and the heritage of the immigrants, indications and traces found in the public area, their affiliation and memory shapes and changes urban space, public life and everyday culture in Berlin.

KEYWORDS

Berlin; informal use; local memory; public space; everyday culture.

INTRODUCTION

Islamic culture is present in everyday life in Germany, especially in its capital, Berlin. The Islamic everyday culture and how it shapes and changes urban space and public life in Berlin is the focal point of this paper. It is based on empiric data collection and critical observation in three distinct neighbourhoods, that have a big Islamic population: Kreuzberg, Neukölln and Wedding. Everyday culture ("Alltagskultur") presents a contemporary and highly respected viewpoint in nowadays German research. Our lives, chances, aspirations, our culture are at least as much influenced by our everyday lives as by our historic sites if not more.
This paper investigates the three main streets of three distinct neighbourhoods, shows how the Islamic culture shapes the street life, the small businesses, a new type of architecture in Germany, the mosque and its presence on the street. An additional focus is the life in the public parks and public spaces in the warmer seasons.
Therefore this topic of Islamic life and heritage in Berlin can show a very important contemporary aspect. This bottom-up method also presents a new and contemporary approach to the research of Islamic culture and public space.

1. ARCHITECTURAL APPEARANCE OF BERLIN AND ITS THREE "IMMIGRANT" NEIGHBOURHOODS

Berlin is the capital of Germany and at the same time one of the sixteen German states. Geographically it is embedded in the European glacier plains and influenced by a temperate seasonal climate. Generally speaking the city is recognised for its contemporary art, diverse architecture, scientific research and for a high quality of living due to a multicultural atmosphere and to moderate cost of living.

With a population of 3.4 million people, Berlin also is Germany's largest city located in the centre of the Berlin-Brandenburg metropolitan area, which is comprised of 5 million people. 13,9 % are from over 190 nations. The largest group of foreign nationals are from Turkey (111,285). Large numbers of Turks, but also Greeks and Italians originally came as "guest workers" in the 1960s. Today many citizens with foreign roots are second or third generation "migrants", a large number of them have adopted the German nationality or have double citizenship.

Most ethnic groups in Berlin live in the three neighbourhoods called Kreuzberg, Neukölln and Wedding, located in the former western part of Berlin. All three neighbourhoods basically have the same urban history. They date back to the Industrial Revolution, which transformed Berlin during the 19th century. The city's economy and population expanded dramatically during that time, and it became the economic centre of Germany. Additional suburbs soon developed and increased the area and population of Berlin. In 1861, outlying suburbs were incorporated into Berlin. In 1871, Berlin became the capital of the newly founded German Empire. Most of the three neighbourhoods investigated here were built during the industrial revolution. This period dates from the end of the German-French war in 1871 to the beginning of the second world war in 1914. During that time, numerous industrial plants and manufacturing businesses were founded in German cities. Berlin grew extensively during this time. Hundreds of thousands of factory workers came from all over the country and from neighbouring European countries to find work. They all had to find housing. New neighbourhoods relatively close to the centre were developed in a grid system during the second half of the 19th century based on an urban planning design from 1862 by James Hobrecht, the so-called Hobrecht Plan for Berlin.

Figure 1. Typical street (Oranienstraße in Kreuzberg)

With regard to urban planning, the districts form a relatively uniform picture. They are predominantly characterized by five-story, multiple dwelling units in closed blocks, the majority of which date from the turn of the century (1889 to 1905). Due to the long property lots, the blocks are very large and have backyards. Today, they form a nearly homogeneous historic building area. Envisioned as working-class districts, building blocks were composed of tenement houses ("Mietskasernen") with front houses containing larger apartments, and one or more rear buildings with small apartments or industrial lofts in the backyards. The streets were 22 m wide, the height of the buildings was 22m. These measurements were designed this way due to fire regulations. If a facade collapsed due to fire it would not destroy the building across the street.
The old buildings still give an impression of the days when the boroughs were part of so-called Steinernes Berlin (Rocky Berlin) as described by author Werner Hegemann in 1930.

1.1. Kreuzberg

Kreuzberg has emerged from its history as one of the poorest quarters in Berlin, located south of the centre of Berlin. The borough is known for its very large percentage of immigrants and second-generation immigrants, many of whom are of Turkish ancestry. As of 2006, 31.6% of Kreuzberg's inhabitants did not have German citizenship. While Kreuzberg thrives on its diverse culture and is still an attractive area for migrants and students, the district is also characterized by high levels of unemployment and some of the lowest average incomes in Berlin.
Far into the 20th century, Kreuzberg was the most populous of Berlin's boroughs even in absolute numbers, with more than 400,000 people, although it was and still is geographically the smallest. As a result, with more than 60,000 people per square kilometre, Kreuzberg had the highest population density in Berlin.
In addition to housing, Kreuzberg was also one centre of Berlin's industry. The so-called export quarter along Ritter Street consisted of many small businesses, and the "press quarter" along Kochstraße was the home of most of Germany's large newspapers.
After World War II, Kreuzberg's housing rents were regulated by law which made investments unattractive. As a result, housing was of low quality, but cheap. Starting in the late 1960s, increasing numbers of students, artists, and immigrants began moving to Kreuzberg. In the eighties, the International Building Exhibition (IBA) was located in Kreuzberg, called "gentle urban renewal" ("Behutsame Stadterneuerung"). Many buildings were renovated and subsidized by the government, so that the rents remained affordable.
Since the fall of the Berlin Wall in 1989, Kreuzberg suddenly found itself in the middle of the city again. The initially cheap rents and many 19th century houses made some parts of the neighbourhood more attractive as a residential area for a richer variety of people. This lead to gentrification in parts of the neighbourhood. But immigrants and many students are still living there. Today, Kreuzberg has one of the youngest populations of all European city boroughs.

1.1.1. Kreuzberg, Oranienstraße

Oranienstraße is the main street of the neighbourhood Kreuzberg. Its one-kilometre-stretch from Moritzplatz to Wiener Straße forms a mixed neighbourhood centre with many family businesses, clubs, restaurants and bars. Festivals and also demonstrations take place here on a regular basis.

1.2. Neukölln

Neukölln is an inner-city neighbourhood at the southern border of Kreuzberg. The district is

densely settled with a population of 150,756 inhabitants (2008). It is characterized by a high percentage of immigrants, especially of Turkish and Arab descent.
In the past few years, northern Neukölln, frequently known as Kreuzkölln (Kreuzberg + Neukölln), has undergone a transformation and has seen a huge influx of students and artists as the area becomes increasingly popular. Gentrification has not really taken place here (yet), rents are still very affordable.

1.2.1. Neukölln, Sonnenallee

Sonnenallee is a long street starting a Hermannplatz, at the border of Kreuzberg and continuing into the eastern part of the city, the neighbourhood of Treptow. The most central part at a length of one kilometre from Hermannplatz to Elbestraße is a busy street with many Turkish and Arabian businesses like restaurants, bakeries, driving schools, shisha lounges. In recent years an originally African population found their new home here as well and opened a variety of shops.

1.3. Wedding

Wedding is located north-west of the inner city. In a way it is the northern counterpart to Kreuzberg and Neukölln. The constant migration of country-dwellers into the city at the end of the 19th century converted Wedding into a working-class district. The labourers lived in similar cramped tenement blocks as described above. Today, Wedding is one of the poorest areas of Berlin, with a high unemployment rate (almost 26%). Almost 17% of the population live on social welfare; 27% live below the poverty line. Foreigners make up almost 30% of the population.
Wedding has so far not experienced the boom and gentrification of the 1990s that then happened in many parts in Berlin. Unlike many other 19th century working class districts like Kreuzberg and the northern part of Neukölln, the original character of Wedding and its population has been preserved, but there are currently artists and students moving there. Rents still remain cheap.

1.3.1. Wedding, Badstraße

Badstraße is one main shopping street of the district of Wedding. It starts at the transportation hub "Gesundbrunnen" where there also is a big shopping mall. On the one kilometre to Koloniestraße this street has numerous textile and fashion shops, mostly run by people of Turkish origin.

2. SMALL FAMILY BUSINESSES

Ethnic economies - and especially the Turkish economy - already have become and are predicted to become even more important for the German national economy in the near future. These family businesses have developed a successful structure in a foreign country that is highly accepted and used not only by their compatriots but also by German people. This implies that the entrepreneurs, who live and work in a culturally mixed context, have the necessary skills and cultural competencies to handle this complexity. The multicultural atmosphere is often visible in bilingual shop signs (predominantly German and Turkish or German and Arabic).

2.1. Shops

Shops for bridal wear, evening dresses, shoes, gift articles or furniture are geared towards the immigrant population. The fashion, culture and taste are too different to have customers from both populations.
Another important branch of the family businesses are the food shops, that sell fresh fruits, vegetables, bread, pastry, meat and other original food items. Like newsstands they are frequented by large numbers of all kinds of population.

Figure 2. Gift shops

Figure 3. Food shops: bakery, pastry, fruit

Figure 4. Barbers

Figure 5. Wedding shop and services: bridal wear, wedding car, photo studio

Figure 6. Internet café, travel agency, copy shop

2.2. Services

The services cater to the immigrant population as well. They are mainly comprised of phone shops, copy shops, photo studios, barbers, taxi and driving schools, religious schools and travel agencies.

2.3. Food

Berlin is a Döner/Falafel/Shawarma capital. It is not known who opened the first Döner Kebab snack bar in Germany. Legend says that it took place at the beginning of the 1970s in Berlin-Kreuzberg. First in Berlin, then all over Germany Döner became a popular lunch or evening snack or meal. There are more than 15.000 Döner/Sharwarma snack bars in Germany. 200 to 300 tons are being produced daily. The yearly turnover is around 1,5 Billion Euro. The Döner Kebab served in Germany is different from the one in the Arabic countries. It adds green salad, sliced tomatoes, cucumbers, cabbage and certain sauces. These snack bars are popular by Germans and immigrants. They are mostly integrated in the ground floor of the buildings. The German building code allows this mixed use in apartment buildings. There are some detached kiosk style snack bars as well, predominantly at street corners to attract more customers.

Figure 7. Snack bars: at street corner or in the ground floor of apartment building

Figure 8. Snack bar advertisement in two languages

2.4. Culture

There are many oriental culture associations. Dance, wellness and music are among the creative industries that sprung up during the last twenty years. Kreuzberg-based Turkish/German rapper Killa Hakan mentions Kreuzberg in most of his songs, most notably in his 2007 single "Kreuzberg City". There is a very vibrant rap, hip hop and saz scene in Berlin. A Turkish film festival has been established in Berlin and took place five years in a row. Turkish-German filmmaker Neco Celik who portrays the American influence over the youth culture in Kreuzberg in his first film "Alltag" (Daily Life) notes, "Kreuzberg is a kind of biotope where different nationalities live, but the environment determines their lives, not their nationalities."

3. FORM AND USE OF PUBLIC SPACE

While urban space is the most commonly experienced feature of the city, it possesses different meanings and serves various purposes for the individuals engaging with it. The urban landscape is thus a space changing all the time according to the habits of its inhabitants. As a dynamic space, it carries the narratives and symbolic meanings of the past, present, and future. The economic, social, and cultural uses of space showcase the everyday culture.

3.1. Streets

Shop owners display their goods in front of their shops. This changes the appearance of the

Figure 9. Music and DVD shops

Figure 10. Use of sidewalk

sidewalk in a very animated and colourful way during the day and in warm summer nights. You can observe a similar effect in front of the snack bars and restaurants. Chairs and tables are put out in front, guests are invited to stay, and this animates the street life. The sidewalks in Berlin are wide enough to accommodate this additional use.

Many immigrants are also active business people on several markets, that take place once or twice a week in the neighbourhoods. In Neukölln at the border to Kreuzberg a so-called "Türkenmarkt" (Turkish market) has been established and successfully organized for decades. It is very popular by all kinds of shoppers and visitors, even by tourists because it is written up in several guide books. Streets and plazas are in some areas also being used for informal trade.

3.2. Parks

In the summer the central park of Berlin, the "Tiergarten" is known for being used for barbecues. Large Turkish and Arabian families gather here on weekends, they bring food like salad and meat to be barbecued, tea, chairs, tables, blankets and children's game and spend the day. The Berlin city council changed the regulation, since several years it is only allowed to put up a barbecue in certain areas of the park to prevent bush fires but also because some people complained about the fume all over the park.

Also the small neighbourhood parks (Görlitzer Park in Kreuzberg, Hasenheide in Neukölln and Humboldthain in Wedding) are being used for family picnics the minute the weather permits it.

Figure 11. Market on Hermannplatz (border between Kreuzberg and Neukölln)

4. SIGNIFICANT ARCHITECTURE TYPES LIKE MOSQUES AND THEIR ROLE FOR URBAN SPACE

Mosques as centres of the religious, cultural and social life have first been accommodated in backyards or cellars of the quarters with a high number of Muslim inhabitants. There are currently about 2,600 Islamic centres of worship in Germany along with 200 structures that can be classified as mosques. According to current plans, this last figure is now expected to double.

In recent years several mosques have been constructed in Berlin. This also represents the evolution of Islamic heritage from the private to the public sphere. It has become part of the cityscape. German building code allows the building of mosques and minarets, the buildings have to comply with the German regulations (e.g. height of buildings, fire regulations). Some resistance by the German population could be observed, conservative citizens did not want the presence on the street, and they were afraid that the mosques would attract too much street traffic.

Whereas some mosques are typically neighbourhood mosques where members live close by, other mosques attract Muslims from all over Berlin. Many mosques are combined with cultural centres. Mosques and businesses serve the particular needs of the Muslim community. They are examples of spaces in which minority groups feel accepted while not necessarily segregating themselves from the rest of the city. In this sense members can move between minority (city) and majority (mosque) communities.

There are eighty mosques in Berlin, 56 of them Turkish. In Kreuzberg the big Umar Ibn Al-Khattab mosque has been completed in 2008, it can house 700 people. Located at a street corner, it forms part of the typical Berlin block of 22 m height, a necessity to get a building permit in this urban location. The mosque has four minarets. The Sehitliwwk mosque was constructed in 1983 in Neukölln, it was expanded in 2005. It is located on a former Turkish cemetery, next to a Christian cemetery, it is a singular building, not part of an urban block structure. It has its own bus stop and traffic light regulated pedestrian crossing in front.

The visualisation of a religious minority through mosques is a cultural diversification of urban space.

CONCLUSION: PRESENCE OF ISLAMIC HERITAGE IN THE EVERYDAY LIFE OF BERLIN

The built environment provides perhaps the most immediate visual impression of a city. However, it is not only the physical structures, monuments, residential areas and public spaces which shape a city, but also its inhabitants. City residents imprint their own mark on urban spaces through everyday interaction with the environment in which they live.

Migration is changing the cityscape. Migrants bring with them own cultures, experiences and histories through which they shape the new environment in which they settle. This is how Islamic heritage is present in everyday life in Berlin every day, making it a more multicultural and diverse place to live.

Figure 12. Religious centres in backyards in Kreuzberg

Figure 13. Umar Ibn Al-Khattab Mosque in Kreuzberg

Figure 14. Sehitlik Mosque in Neukölln

Figure 15. Imprint on urban fabric

REFERENCES

Angeles, Vivienne; Bonifacio, Glenda Tibe (Ed.) (2009) *Gender, Religion, and Migration: Pathways of Integration*. New York: Lexington Books.

Beinhauer-Köhler, B.; Leggewie, C., 2009. *Moscheen in Deutschland*. Munich: Ch. Beck.

Bendixsen, S., 2009. *Islam as a New Urban Identity? Young Female Muslims Creating a Religious Youth Culture in Berlin.* New York, London, Budapest: Open Society Institute.

Geist, J., 1980. *Das Berliner Mietshaus*. Munich: Prestel.

Hegemann, W., 1930. *Das steinerne Berlin. Geschichte der größten Mietkasernenstadt der Welt.* Berlin: Birkhäuser

Jonker, Gerdian; Kapphahn, Andreas (Ed.) (1999) *Moscheen und Islamisches Leben in Berlin.* Erlangen: Zentrum für Islam und Recht.

Knöfel, Ulrike, 10/15/2008. *Confrontational Architecture. Europe's Mosques Move from Back Alleys to Boulevards.* Hamburg: Spiegel.

All pictures by Sigrun Prahl.

PAPER #2.17

WAS LE CORBUSIER A UTOPIAN THINKER OR A REALISTIC VISIONARY? AN ANALYSIS OF TWO DIVERGING VIEWS

Cihan Yusufoglu[a], Alexandra Staub[b]
[a]Penn State University, University Park, Pennsylvania / Washington-Alexandria Architecture Center of Virginia Tech University, Alexandria, Virginia.
[b]Penn State University, University Park, Pennsylvania

ABSTRACT

Le Corbusier is considered a pioneer of modern architecture and urban planning. His projects are frequently cited as portraying a utopian vision of urbanity. Yet, scholars are divided on his utopian vision. On the one hand, scholars such as Stanislaus von Moos, urban historians such as Robert Fishman and neo-Marxist authors such as geographer David Harvey see Le Corbusier's urban work as an exercise in utopia. On the other hand, urban historians such as Kenneth Frampton or Peter Hall see Le Corbusier as a realistic visionary, rather than as a utopian. Although both of these viewpoints give Le Corbusier credit for the remarkable architectural and urban visions that he presented, the former view focuses on the insularity and homogeneity of his projects as evidence of his utopian vision, while the latter view gives weight to Le Corbusier's projects as a precedent for twentieth-century urban planning. Through the analysis of key texts on Le Corbusier's urban projects, this paper explores why two bodies of literature diverge so greatly in their evaluation of Le Corbusier's urban visions.

KEYWORDS

Le Corbusier; utopia; visionary; architecture; urban planning.

INTRODUCTION

> [U]rban planning and architecture appear not as concrete objectives but as crucial mediations that enabled the utopian message to gain momentum. Conversely, the very idea of calling any architecture "utopian" begins to be problematized when we reconsider the link between the legacy of nineteenth-century utopian thought and the projects of twentieth century modernist urbanism and architecture. In the case of Le Corbusier and others, where "visionary" might be a more appropriate qualifier, we may no longer be able to call any architecture "utopian" at all. (Picon 2017)

As one of the most influential representatives of architecture and urban planning in the twentieth century, Le Corbusier's architectural and urban designs as well as his theoretical writings have been widely studied by scholars. Although Le Corbusier's legacy as one of the most influential figures in modern architecture and urban planning is undisputed, scholars are divided on how his work should be defined. Two characterizations of his work and thinking stand out in the literature: Le Corbusier has been called both a utopian thinker and conversely, a visionary realist.

Although the dictionary definitions of "utopian" as "a person who imagines or proposes a utopia" or "an advocate of social reform" and "visionary" as "capable of receiving impressions, or obtaining knowledge, by means of visions" are similar (Oxford English Dictionary, n.d.), architectural

scholars tend to draw a firm line between the two terms. In this context, two divergent views of Le Corbusier's work have appeared in the literature. One view describes Le Corbusier's work as propagating an illusory social reform; the other sees his work as that of a prescient realist.

The first school of thought, represented by scholars such as Lewis Mumford, Stanislaus von Moos, and Robert Fishman, pegs Le Corbusier as an unambiguous utopian. This line of reasoning argues that to fully understand Le Corbusier one must analyze his works within the utopian tradition and thus qualify him as a successor of early utopian thinkers:

> …there has been a steady connection between the practical city of everyday life and the projection of utopias: from Alberti to Robert Owen, and from Owen to Howard and Le Corbusier, the ideal plans of one generation have become the practical realizations of the next. (Mumford 1970, 504)

Le Corbusier is not only accepted as a utopian thinker within the historical literature, he is often cited as such in neo-Marxist writings (Berman 1983; Harvey 2000):

> All the great urban planners, engineers, and architects of the twentieth century set about their tasks by combining an intense imaginary of some alternative world (both physical and social) with a practical concern for engineering and re-engineering urban and regional spaces according to radically new designs. While some, such as Ebenezer Howard, Le Corbusier, and Frank Lloyd Wright set up the imaginative context, a host of practitioners set about realizing those dreams in bricks and concrete, highways and tower blocks, cities and suburbs, building versions of the Villes Radieuse or Broadacre City, whole new towns, intimate scale communities, urban villages, or whatever. Even when critics of the authoritarianism and blandness of these realized utopian dreams attacked them, they usually did so by contrasting their preferred version of spatial play with the spatial orderings that others had achieved. (Harvey 2000, 104)

Le Corbusier's ideas are thus widely described as "utopian" and his work compared with other utopian thinkers throughout history, more specifically those who appeared after the industrial revolution.

Yet not all historians frame Le Corbusier as a utopian thinker. Kenneth Frampton and Peter Hall, for example, abstain from using "utopia" or similar terms when referring to Le Corbusier or his works. Scholars arguing this line of thinking have focused on Le Corbusier's built projects and their proven feasibility. Regarding Le Corbusier's works as a whole, they emphasize that he was more productive in the architectural field than "utopian" thinkers, who are mostly known for one utopian design or "ideal city" in their lifetime (Hall 2014).

This paper examines the two divergent definitions of Le Corbusier's work in the literature and explores why Le Corbusier is in some cases considered "utopian" and in others a "visionary realist".

1. LE CORBUSIER AS A UTOPIAN THINKER

Scholars who associate Le Corbusier with utopianism largely regard his utopian adventure as having started with his didactic travels as a young man to locations throughout Europe (Serenyi 1967; Moos 1979; Rabaca 2016). A frequent claim is that Le Corbusier's utopian thoughts began with his drawings of housings when he visited the Charterhouse of Ema in Tuscany, Italy also known as "Ema Monastery", at the beginning of his "voyage d'Orient" (Journey to the East) in 1907. Serenyi interprets the monastery as an admirable example of cell and landscape that impressed the young Le Corbusier as an architectural ideal:

> It is revealing that his sermon on architecture begins a reference to monastic life and ends with a note on the home. It must be remembered that Le Corbusier likes to consider the home as a monastic cell, created, ideally at least, for the single individual; for the family, as a small, intricate social group, has no place in Le Corbusier's art or mind. (Serenyi 1967, 277–78)

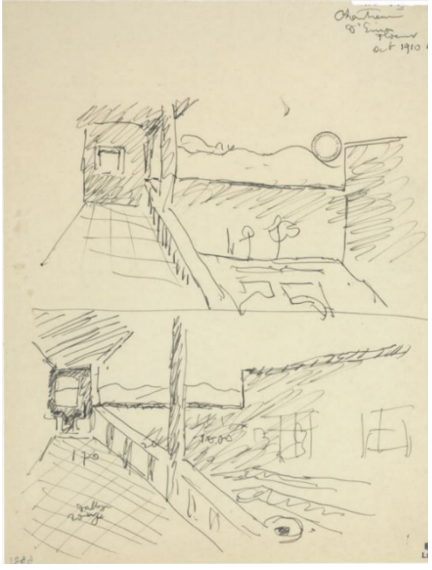


Figure 1. Charterhouse of Ema, Florence, 1911. Source: © FLC/ADAGP

Stanislaus von Moos also concentrates on Le Corbusier's gradual change through his early travels, outlining the utopian aspect of Le Corbusier's work in his book *Le Corbusier: Elements of a Synthesis*, in a chapter titled "Variations on a Utopian Theme" (Moos 1979). Moos's main argument is that Le Corbusier was progressively inspired by the real-life architecture he encountered on his voyages, and that inspiration eventually shaped his utopian vision. Moos argues that Le Corbusier's characteristic approach to housing models shows parallels to utopianism, which are not designed for the "man on the street", they are designed for the man of ideal societies:

> The lifestyle suggested by this new urban form was that of the elegant apartment block or condominium where hardly anyone ever gets to know his neighbor: a nomadic way of life within the cosmopolitan anonymity of the metropolis. This is what separates Le Corbusier's reform model from most of the contemporary Anglo-Saxon and German attempts at a 'regeneration' of the city via a return to popular and pre-industrial forms of small town, or village, communities. In short, the "homme poli-vivant en ce temps-ci" [well-educated man who lives in our times], this classless Mr. X, envisaged by Le Corbusier as the standard inhabitant of his immeubles-villa, was not identical with the "man on the street". (Moos 1979, 148)

After bridging the gap between Le Corbusier and utopia in this manner, Moos places Le Corbusier within the utopian tradition and compares his work with that of other utopian thinkers such as Ebenezer Howard with his Garden City ideals, and Tony Garnier with his Cité Industrielle as well as architects such as Walter Gropius with his modular system for standardized housing. Moreover, Moos mentions the potential influence of the Russian avant-garde communal housing projects through Fourier's French utopianism on Le Corbusier's utopian thoughts. Even though Moos strongly believes that Le Corbusier was largely influenced by nineteenth- and early twentieth-century utopianism, most especially French and Soviet utopian traditions, he points out that Le Corbusier's work was different from that of nineteenth-century utopian thinkers (e.g. Charles Fourier's) since he based his work on "first-hand experience" with existing buildings (Moos 1979, 146).

Moos considers Le Corbusier's early housing attempts, in which he tried to illustrate his

early collective utopian ideas, as prototypes for Le Corbusier's urban plans. For example, Le Corbusier's well known Unité d'Habitation housing project is described as a combination of many themes, such as Soviet avant-garde designs and, in particular, a Fourierist legacy, in order to "serve a reform of the modern city as a whole" (Moos 1979, 157). The Unité is not Le Corbusier's only housing project that reflects the legacy of utopianism. Le Corbusier's other two housing projects, designed for sites in Zurich, were inspired by Soviet avant-garde architects, namely the Vesnin brothers and Moisei Ginzburg: "So it was after all through Ginsburg [sic] and the Vesnin brothers that Le Corbusier came in contact with the reality of a Fourierist tradition of utopian socialism…" (Moos 1979, 154).

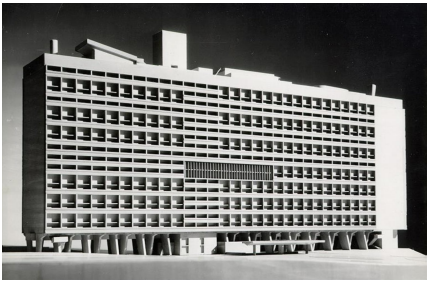


Figure 2. Unité d'Habitation, Meaux, France, 1957. Source: © FLC/ADAGP

Robert Fishman comes to similar conclusions as Moos in his analysis of Le Corbusier's work. Unlike Moos, who studied Le Corbusier within the context of a whole lifetime, Fishman focuses on Le Corbusier's utopianism in his book *Urban Utopias in the Twentieth Century: Ebenezer Howard, Frank Lloyd Wright, Le Corbusier.* Fishman purposely juxtaposes the three architects. He proposes that Le Corbusier has more in common with Ebenezer Howard and Frank Lloyd Wright than with nineteenth-century utopian thinkers such as Charles Fourier or Robert Owen. Pointing out that Ebenezer Howard and Frank Lloyd Wright principally proposed nostalgic and pastoral utopias in contrast to Le Corbusier's "mechanized" techno utopias, Fishman (1982) states that the work of Howard, Wright, and Le Corbusier is nevertheless distinguished from that of other utopian thinkers since they acknowledged and allowed the industrial and technological advances of the twentieth century in their plans. Howard, for example, included factories and connected them to the Garden City with railway networks. Le Corbusier drew wide highways for automobile traffic, while Frank Lloyd Wright went a step further, illustrating flying, helicopter-like vehicles. Fishman clarifies why he separates Le Corbusier and others from nineteenth-century socialist utopian thinkers:

> They worked at the dawn of the twentieth-century industrial era, but before the coming of twentieth-century disillusionment. Their imaginations were wholly modern; yet the coming era of cooperation was as real to them as it had been for Robert Owen. Their ideal cities thus stand at the intersection of nineteenth-century hopes and twentieth-century technology. (Fishman 1982, 15)

Figure 3. Plan Obus, Algiers, Algeria, 1930. Source: © FLC/ADAGP

Moreover, Fishman separates out Le Corbusier from other twentieth-century architects and intellectuals. He states that Le Corbusier and others are isolated from "almost all the social movements and institutions of their time", and explains:

> [The three ideal cities] separated them from the members of two groups who might have been their natural allies, the Marxian socialists and the professional planners. The three ideal cities were at once too technical for the Marxist and too revolutionary for the growing corps of professional planners. The latter was especially intent on discouraging any suggestion that urban planning might serve the cause of social change. These architect-administrators confined themselves to 'technical' problems, which meant, in practice, serving the needs of society—as society's rulers defined them. (Fishman 1982)

With this passage, Fishman also makes clear that he saw Le Corbusier not as a professional planner, but as the utopian architect of the twentieth century. Consequently, Fishman determines that Le Corbusier followed a unique path that defines a built environment by using utopian ideas as a key element.

2. LE CORBUSIER AS A VISIONARY REALIST

While one group of scholars has called Le Corbusier a utopian thinker, another group sees him as a visionary realist. This group emphasizes Le Corbusier's social and political views, that are rarely seen in the utopian tradition. In analyzing Le Corbusier's divergence from the road taken by most utopian theorists, they point out that during the course of his life, Le Corbusier's thinking took several turns. For instance, after a worldwide depression in the early 1930s tarnished the capitalist order's image, Le Corbusier sharply shifted his economic and political views from centralist capitalism to non-anarchist syndicalism: "…an ordered, hierarchical system, having some close affinities to the left-wing variety of Italian fascism" (Hall 2014, 244). As a result of this shift, Le Corbusier modified and reproduced his ideal city plans, tailoring them to his new point of view. *The Plan Voisin for Paris, the Plan Obus* for Algiers, and Chandigarh's Master Plan resulted from this era. Le Corbusier's flexible and adaptative architectural production gave cause for academics to describe Le Corbusier as being a prescient visionary rather than belonging to the utopian tradition, as other utopian thinkers, such as Charles Fourier, Robert Owen, and even twentieth-century architects such as Ebenezer Howard and Frank Lloyd Wright, stuck to their ideal city plans throughout their lifetimes.

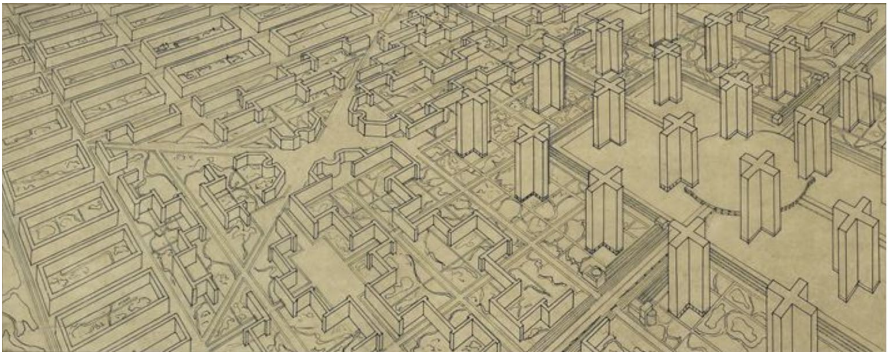


Figure 4. Ville Contemporaine, not located, 1922. Source: © FLC/ADAGP

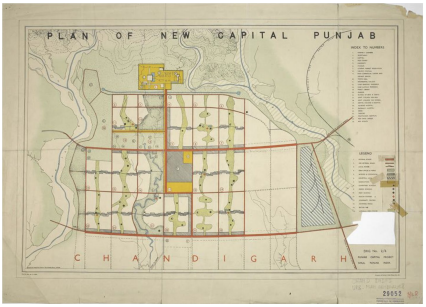


Figure 5. Chandigarh, India, 1950 – 1965. Source: © FLC/ADAGP

Even though some utopian schemes were occasionally constructed in an attempt to make their ideas come to life, utopias are by definition considered unattainable. The other main reason why this group of scholars considered Le Corbusier a visionary rather than a utopian thinker is his executed and well-grounded works, also rare within the realm of utopianism. Le Corbusier's extensive architectural production, considered together with his urban plans and their direct influence on the next generation of architects and planners, led this group of scholars to set Le Corbusier's work apart from that contained in the utopian literature, instead placing him in a category of "realistic" thinkers (Frampton 2001; Hall 2014).

As a prominent Le Corbusier biographer, Kenneth Frampton has examined the architect's life phase by phase, based on the substantial changes of direction that Le Corbusier experienced (Frampton 2001). The author portrays Le Corbusier as a visionary architect by evaluating his work, though also acknowledging that Le Corbusier was affiliated with utopianism and major figures of the movement for a short period of his life. Frampton makes the argument that Le Corbusier's works were more influenced by architects, urban planners, and engineers who are not known as utopian thinkers – professionals such as Raymond Unwin, Baron (Georges-Eugène) Haussmann, and Henry-Jules Borie – than by actual utopians, such as Charles Fourier and Henri de Saint-Simon. Ultimately, Frampton comes to the conclusion that when one looks at Le Corbusier's life as a whole, one regards the fluctuant life of a visionary.

Even though Frampton univocally presents Le Corbusier as a visionary architect, he does refer to Le Corbusier's relationship with utopian figures. In doing so, Frampton digresses from his main argument to mention Henri de Saint-Simon, one of the most influential French philosophers of socialism in the nineteenth century, stating that "Le Corbusier remained a Saint-Simonian at heart" (Frampton 2001, 117). Along with Charles Fourier, Saint-Simon was a significant figure of utopian socialism, and he became a figure Le Corbusier admired greatly. Although Frampton argues that Le Corbusier was impressed by Henri Simon's revolutionary theories, he nevertheless does not consider Le Corbusier to be a utopian himself, as he proposed architectural solutions to problems rather than social or economic revolution. In this, Frampton sees Le Corbusier's focus as diverging from that of recognized utopian thinkers, who proposed utopia as a whole social revolution that incorporated architecture as well. As Le Corbusier succinctly framed it: "Architecture or Revolution. Revolution can be avoided" (Corbusier 1986, 289).

Figure 6. Plan Voisin, Paris, France, 1925. Source: © FLC/ADAGP

Urban historian Peter Hall interprets Le Corbusier as a visionary architect as well and analyzes his work in the context of other significant planners of modern cities, including architects, utopian philosophers, and urban theorists. As does Frampton, Hall recognizes Le Corbusier's early affiliation with utopian thinking; nevertheless, the author claims that the utopian aspect was an integral part of Le Corbusier's visionary characteristic, not an ideal he used and abandoned:

> The central argument can be succinctly summarized: most of them [architects under discussion, including Le Corbusier] were visionaries, but for many of them their visions long lay fallow, because the time was not ripe. The visions themselves were often utopian, even charismatic: they resembled nothing so much as secular versions of the seventeenth-century Puritans' Celestial City set on Mount Zion, now brought down to earth and made ready for an age that demanded rewards there also. (Hall 2014, 2)

Despite this broadly painted view, Hall draws an exclusive framework around Le Corbusier's work, describing him as belonging to a set of "…authoritarian centralist [individuals] … faithful servants of finance capitalism or totalitarian dictators" (Hall 2014, 3). To Hall, this set Le Corbusier apart from the members of anarchist planning movements:

> The vision of these anarchist pioneers was not merely of an alternative built form, but of an alternative society, neither capitalistic nor bureaucratic-socialistic: a society based on voluntary cooperation among men and women, working and living in small self-governing commonwealths. Not merely in physical form, but also in spirit, they were thus secular versions of Winthrop's Puritan colony of Massachusetts: the city upon a hill [….. F] or me, however unrealistic or incoherent, the anarchist fathers had a magnificent vision of the possibilities of urban civilization, which deserves to be remembered and celebrated; Corbusier, the Rasputin of this tale, in contrast represents the countertradition of authoritarian planning, the evil consequences of which are ever with us. (Hall 2014, 3–5)

It is quite clear that Hall approaches Le Corbusier from a different standpoint from that of Moos or Fishman; namely, that Le Corbusier's ideology sets him apart from generally accepted utopian thinkers. According to Hall, Le Corbusier was not a socialist thinker, in contrast to eminent nineteenth-century utopian socialists. On the contrary, he had faith in royal figures, "grands seigneurs" such as Louis XIV and Napoleon (Fishman 1982, 210). In addition, the high density of ideal city plans that he designed differs from the decentralized plans of twentieth-century utopians, such as Ebenezer Howard with his "Garden City" and Frank Lloyd Wright with his "Broadacre City" plan. Hall reminds us that envisioning – and demanding ¬¬– more density for cities of the future separates Le Corbusier from many of his contemporaries. Hall presents these aspects of Le Corbusier's work as reinforcing his assessment of Le Corbusier as a visionary realist, rather than as a utopian.

CONCLUSION

Le Corbusier was clearly more than just an influential architect. He was arguably a more complex figure than any former or contemporary associates. He entered into relations with a great variety of individuals and organizations, working within and espousing systems connected to centralist capitalism and hierarchical syndicalism. He worked with big companies (the name of the *Plan Voisin* comes from the "Voisin Aircraft Manufacturing Company" that demonstrates Le Corbusier's "capitalist" orientation) and governments that are at opposite ends of the political spectrum (for example the Vichy Government of France,

a right-wing puppet regime of the Nazis, and the Soviet Union as a left-wing autocracy).

Despite their varying assessments of Le Corbusier's influence as a utopian thinker, scholars agree that he made an indelible impression on the architectural field through the versatility of his works. Even though some of these works had a resemblance to utopian thoughts and plans, his architectural production, taken as a whole, lies beyond utopianism. This fact is reflected in the literature and in the interpretations of his work. Taken together with the inherent ambiguity of the word "utopian", it is not surprising that scholars differ in their assessments of Le Corbusier as either as a utopian, or a visionary, or both.

REFERENCES

Oxford English Dictionary [online resource]. https://www.oed.com. Accessed February 7, 2020.

Berman, Marshall. 1983. *All That Is Solid Melts Into Air: The Experience of Modernity*. [First Published in 1982]. New York: Verso.

Corbusier, Le. 1986. *Towards a New Architecture*. Translated by Frederick Etchells. [First Published in 1923]. New York: Dover Publications.

Fishman, Robert. 1982. *Urban Utopias in the 20th Century: Ebenezer Howard, Frank Lloyd Wright, and Le Corbusier.* [First Published in 1978]. Cambridge: The MIT press.

Frampton, Kenneth. 2001. *Le Corbusier.* New York: Thames & Hudson.

Hall, Peter Geoffrey. 2014. C*ities of Tomorrow: An Intellectual History of Urban Planning and Design in the Twentieth Century*. 4th ed. [First Published in 1988]. Pondicherry: Wiley-Blackwell.

Harvey, David. 2000. *Spaces of Hope.* Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.

Moos, Stanislaus von. 1979. *Le Corbusier: Elements of a Synthesis*. Cambridge: The MIT press.

Mumford, Lewis. 1970. *The Culture of Cities.* [First Published in 1938]. New York: Harvest Books.

Picon, Antoine. 2017. "Notes on Utopia, the City, and Architecture." *Grey Room* 68: 94–105.

Rabaca, Armando. 2016. "Le Corbusier, the City, and the Modern Utopia of Dwelling." *Journal of Architecture and Urbanism* 40 (2): 110–20.

Serenyi, Peter. 1967. "Le Corbusier, Fourier, and the Monastery of Ema." *The Art Bulletin* 49 (4): 277–86.

PAPER #2.18

UNIVERSITY IS CITY. THE INFRASTRUCTURE OF EDUCATION AND RESEARCH AS AN ENGINE OF URBAN REGENERATION

Emilio Faroldi[a], Maria Pilar Vettori[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The aim of the work is to reaffirm the strategic correspondence between the university settlements and the city, in a logic of absolute complementarity. The University has always been the institution dedicated to education in its highest and most noble form: likewise, the relationship between universities and the urban context has characterized the debate on the management and development policies of the city. The first universities arose far from the cities according to a concept that saw advanced training and research as distinct from the progress and life of the urban context. The isolation of the university settlement from the vital center of a constantly growing city, while on the one hand guaranteed, with its physical autonomy, a more marked dedication to study and research, on the other decentralized the flows of students and staff university, in an attempt to limit integration with the urban context. Today the city and the university have profoundly changed: the progressive physical development of the anthropized contexts has gradually reached and definitively incorporated the most ancient university buildings originally built outside the urban boundaries. The city, in the new current phase of economic development, increasingly needs the University as the driving force for innovation and the revival of the economic-entrepreneurial fabric through culture. The universities, from structures specifically dedicated to the teaching and training of young people, have witnessed the constant growth of research and experimentation activities, by means of development models that find their effectiveness the closer the relationship with the system is. companies, institutions, other universities. The university institution represents one of the most important strategic nodes of the territory, through which the city can open and expand its borders to tend towards a global knowledge market. This paper intends to provide a contribution on the role of fundamental activator of relations that the University has had, provides and will be able to guarantee in the construction of the future city.

KEYWORDS

University; city; urban regeneration; architecture; future.

1. THE UNIVERSITY BETWEEN MEANINGS AND CONTEXT

The significance of the University and the places connected to it interprets, in the history of civilisations, a fundamental element of intellectual manifestation and representation, capable of conveying the importance that culture and education have acquired in defining the identity of peoples. History tells us that there was no era during which entire communities did not root their own growth in the transmission of knowledge and expertise, in the search for an identity of their own. Indeed, the university has always had a reputation as the institution dedicated to education and learning in its most lofty and elevated form: likewise, the

relationship between a university and its urban context has often informed the debate on the city's management and development policies. The first universities in Italy were founded far from the cities, with a belief in a concept that involved advanced education and research as distinct functions, separable from the progress and life of the urban context. Whilst on the one hand, the isolation of the university campus from the vital centre of a city undergoing constant growth guaranteed, due to its physical autonomy, a greater degree of dedication to both study and research, on the other, it decentralised the flow of university students and staff in its attempt to limit the interactions and possible short circuits with the city-based setting and everyday life.

Nowadays, the city and the university have changed a great deal: the progressive physical development of the anthropised contexts has gradually reached and definitively incorporated even the oldest university sites, originally built outside the city limits.

The urban reality, in its new, current stage of economic development, has a growing need of the University as a driving force for innovation and the relaunch of the economic and entrepreneurial fabric: a push, an energy that are generated by the strength of culture. The Universities, as structures dedicated specifically to teaching and training young people, have witnessed the constant growth of research and experimentation activities, by way of development models whose effectiveness lies in their relationship with the system of companies, institutions, and other universities.

The role of the Universities within the city can be traced back to that of a crucially important urban actor, a nerve centre capable of generating and developing both urban and social regeneration and renewal strategies. Specularly, the university exhibits an osmotic dependence upon the city and the services that it can offer: the modern-day tendency for academic structures to open up to an ever-widening and international user base is reliant upon the full range of infrastructural, environmental, commercial, social, service and leisure facilities which the city is best equipped to provide.

The university institution represents, on this front, one of the most important strategic hubs for its local area, by way of which the city can open up and widen its boundaries to cater to a global knowledge market: it is the place formally dedicated to the production and circulation of knowledge and cultural and technical information; it is the catalyst of human capital; it is an active participant in technology transfer policies; it is a point of connection with the global research, innovation and development networks.

The University is an integral and fundamental part of the city, just as the city is a constituent part of the fabrics that take the form of university campuses: two realities which merge together and mutually integrate without a distinction of value between one and the other.

The relationship between the university sphere and the definition of the spaces dedicated to it - within the anthropised contexts - represents the barometer for the cultural expression and soul of a community. Spaces that are structured using the soul of the place as a starting point, interpreters of the memorial values of the communities they are a part of, capable of identifying these contexts as eloquent areas which are evocative of the anthropological experience: representations of material and identity culture which leave a symbolic footprint on the territory that they make their home.

The university can now, in its own right, be associated with the deeper concept of university infrastructure thanks to its ability to position itself as the interactive hub of an area, of which it becomes the driving force and dynamic expression. In this sense, the term "infrastructure", traditionally associated with the concept of the university, should be

considered - in its material meaning - as an element which links urban functions with one another and its being an element capable of acting as a mouthpiece for the relationships established between them.
University infrastructures, through their spaces, represent one of the most effective social, functional and morphological adhesives of the many and complex relationships that are established in the urban organism, representing a dynamic system that is constantly evolving. As such, university infrastructure cannot be said to have a meaning which refers to an exclusive typology of buildings, but instead wholly to the role that these architectures have taken on in the evolutionary and structuring dynamics of the contemporary city, within which knowledge, information and education represent the qualitative hallmark of attractiveness of the physical and social fabric of a situation.
To consider buildings and architectures for education and research to be on a par with infrastructural networks in the traditional sense means positioning them within the complex articulation of the contemporary space which is the stage for our most noble activities. Indeed, this terminological scenario recalls the dynamic concept of "integrating" (or integrated), which, from the Latin, means to complete, to add something in order to make a system whole and functional.
When we pair the word infrastructure with the word university, from the semantic and operational point of view, we are attempting to define a new approach capable of including an overall rethinking of the role of educational facilities in society, the city, and the local area. In other word, it means integrating and connecting spaces and places which do not dialogue with one another, defining new settlement systems, rearranging scattered fragments of cities, creating new levels of experience.
University architecture identifies a model, a city system, which is also highly recognisable due to its high architectural quality: an overall vision in which design and process, form and function, construction and familiarity of places meld into a single structure marked by hierarchies and, consequently, by actions of organisation of the local area. These spaces are also intended to be occupied by a specific type of user/inhabitant, one who makes an effort to learn and to modify their behavioural approach in part according to the environment in which they spend their time: educational spaces as a stimulating opportunity for experimentation and integration between the articulated functional, morphological and technological components that has characterised the production of architecture and its urbanity in recent years.
It must be considered that the university, more than other functions, when engaging with a user base of a constantly fixed age range, changes with the changing requirements of the student population, bringing with it the feelings and concerns of a cultural renewal that involves instruments, forms and, therefore, also spaces. Architectures which simultaneously incorporate consolidated spatialities together with forms which evolve according to the educational models which stimulate and support them.
In recent architectural history, in line with the developments of university complexes and campuses within urban centres, the main tangible features draw their energy from the desire to constitute parts of the city that are integrated and in continuity with the places they belong to, becoming significant points of reference.
Research on these spaces blends their status as places with an international user base together with more local themes in relation to the productive sphere and the place they belong to, expressing their potential to "be part of the system" through large-scale networks and relationships in search of new centralities. The requirement for flexibility, connected to the rapid changeability of the

logics which accompany the presence of a multicultural and international population, opens a view to the optimisation of the use of structures characterised by an increased size and, as such, potentially capable of addressing multiple needs, possibly planned, though also with the ability to accommodate one-off requirements which are often unplanned, including and especially of a public nature.
The architecture of the university and its nature as an urban place par excellence represents, for the discipline of urban planning and architecture, a real opportunity to engage with complex issues which are part of the tradition of the evolution of the city, with the aim of reclaiming the meaning of architecture and bringing it back to the centre of collective needs for transformation, shielding the architect from the danger of playing the role of "cultural organiser" rather than that of an intellectual dedicated to developing methods and tools within their discipline.

2. MILAN AS A WORKSHOP WHERE "THE UNIVERSITY IS THE CITY"

The paradigm of Milan authoritatively highlights these dynamics: the universities have gradually become one of the main figures within the strategies for the regeneration and innovation of the city, the central areas, the outskirts and the territorial sectors which have gone unaddressed for decades.
The city of higher education has slowly taken the place of the industrial city, replacing it - including physically - in its historical sites: the Politecnico in the large abandoned industrial areas of Bovisa, the Università Bicocca on the sites once occupied by Pirelli, the IULM in Barona, and many more besides. In this scenario, the Universities have become major players in the urban transformation process.
To an even greater extent than in the past, teaching and research institutions have now established themselves as key urban protagonists: a condition which is able to stimulate processes for development and territorial, economic and social growth, capable of having an effect and taking actions of urban transformation in strategic locations by structuring new production and research centralities. Such phenomena are still undergoing change, not crystallising into a stable and concluded balance but rather remaining in constant evolution within an extremely dynamic framework which is receptive to new stimuli deriving from the onset of changing conditions of an economic, social, productive or relational nature.
As far as the recent history of the Politecnico di Milano is concerned, think of how its structures have evolved in the area known as Bovisa: from the second half of the 1990s onwards, the large factories which were abandoned at the time and the defunct warehouses used for the purposes of industrial production underwent a profound transformation aimed at a specific functional reutilisation of the buildings which gave them a new identity connected to higher education, culture and research. An operation of urban renewal, thought up and promoted by a cutting-edge university which was able to perceive the district's full potential, generating and triggering policies of social, economic and productive change for an entire portion of the city, promoting new synergies and relationships within the territory capable of reaching and involving the entire metropolitan area.
Referring specifically to the promotion of regeneration, enhancement and redesign that the Politecnico di Milano is currently implementing within its two campuses in Milan, it should be noted how this underpins its reasons for transformation with two profoundly different evolutionary histories and spirits.

Figure 1. Masterplan for Campus Leonardo, Politecnico di Milano (VIVI.POLIMI, 2018)

The facility located in the Città Studi area, known as Campus Leonardo, is the historical Campus of the Politecnico di Milano, built in the early decades of last century and organised, distributively and morphologically speaking, after the model of hospital architecture with pavilions, from which it drew its inspiration. A strong setup with its own expressive quality, now fully integrated into the fabric of the city which, over the decades, has grown out of its origins as open countryside by way of additions that have enveloped and accommodated the university's spaces, raising them to the status of locations that are barycentric to the entire system of Città Studi.

With the development of the degree programmes and the increase in enrolments that followed World War II, the original nucleus expanded through the construction of new buildings in the surrounding areas, including the premises of the Architecture Faculty (established in 1934), whose current configuration is the result of a series of building operations: the original nucleus opened at the start of the 1950s under the presidency of Piero Portaluppi and work continued under the Plan for the Expansion of the Politecnico di Milano (1958-59), which involved, amongst others, Gio Ponti. Later on came the addition of a further extension, headed up by Vittoriano Viganò (1982-86).

The logic of birth, evolution and settlement of the Campuses in the area known as Bovisa - namely Campus La Masa and Campus Durando - was quite the opposite. Bisected by the railway line that connects Milan with the north of Lombardy, the two campuses insisted on abandoned areas that the Politecnico, as of the 1980s, has managed to restore by settling there.

At the end of the 1980s, with the start of the process that saw the university's extension into the wider area (with branches in Como, Lecco, Cremona, Mantua and Piacenza set up over the course of a decade) and the establishment of the Politecnico Rete, work began on the construction of buildings for teaching and research in the Bovisa area, a neighbourhood to the north of the city which was once one of the most important hubs in Milan's industrial history. The via Durando campus, intended for the Faculty of Civil Architecture and Design, was opened in 1994 and involved the restoration, alongside new building projects, of some historical buildings of industrial archaeology. A few years later, the La Masa area saw the start of a long process of converting the many warehouses in the area into facilities suitable for the laboratory and teaching activities involved in certain Engineering courses.

Starting in 2017, the Politecnico announced an investment policy with a view to bringing its buildings up to the international quality standards now necessary in order to be able to compete with the finest universities across Europe and beyond. In particular, 2020 will see the inauguration of the new Architecture Campus in the Leonardo area: a revitalisation project aimed at fixing up the existing structures belonging to a portion of the Campus which evolved mainly between the 1940s and the 1950s, along with making enhancements to the teaching buildings, with particular reference to model-making and innovative teaching.

The "Bonardi project", as it has been dubbed, focuses on creating the necessary infrastructure and connections for the most important architectural elements of the School of Architecture through a new system of green, public spaces as a replacement for

Figure 2. Masterplan for Campus La Masa, Politecnico di Milano (VIVI.POLIMI, 2019)

the areas previously used as car parks, as well as constructing some new buildings and renovating other existing ones, including the Trifoglio and Nave buildings which are part of the scheme of works which took place in the 1950s under the auspices of Gio Ponti.
All the works are merely branches of a larger redevelopment plan, made possible by an idea from and with the collaboration of Renzo Piano, and drawn up by Ottavio di Blasi & Partners, which tends to favour open space as the primary connective element of the entire system.
There are currently 15 active construction sites across the two Campuses, all related to works which will see the Politecnico equipped with new world-class structures for the purposes of research, teaching, sport, social inclusion and relationships of those within the University.
In the same vein, a complex and multidirectional strategic project entitled VIVI.POLIMI has been launched, involving the rectorate, teaching staff, research fellows and architects in the design of the Campuses of the future, with particular attention to the quality of the users' social lives, relationships and study in their everyday actions. A quality that involves confined spaces, open spaces, gardens, avenues, squares, meeting places and study places in a spatial continuum between full and empty spaces, different categories of user base, the positives and negatives of the urban fabric.
As such, it is a strategic project aimed at updating the quality of the spaces dedicated to work, research and teaching in the Politecnico di Milano with an international outlook that is increasingly open to a dialogue between the university and the city. Improving the quality of the spaces on the various Campuses means increasing the quality of life for the neighbourhood that has been home to the Politecnico for over 100 years. After years of one-off building works, the project aims to give a unified design to the Campuses, their history and their future.

3. VIVI.POLIMI PROJECTS

3.1. The "Agorà degli studenti"

One of the first construction jobs planned by the VIVIPOLIMI project - the creation of a space equipped especially for students (dubbed the 'Agorà degli studenti') on the first floor of the School of Architecture on the Campus Leonardo in Milan - involved the redevelopment and enhancement of the

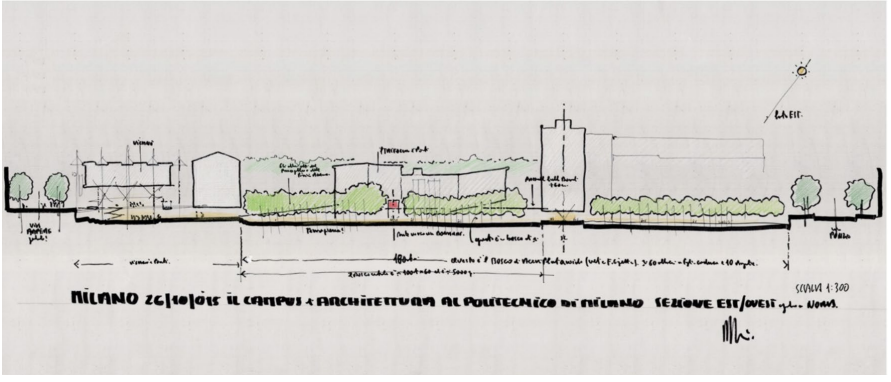


Figure 3. Idea for the new Campus of Architecture (Renzo Piano, 2015)

interior spaces of the building, obtained by moving some of the secretarial offices to another location, thus creating a space for students capable of meeting the requirements for places to meet and study, which are currently in short supply in relation to the high number of students who attend the School, which is at the very top of global international rankings.

Two elements strongly characterised the intervention guiding the design choices, starting from those on the largest scale and working down to those regarding materials and detail: the historical and cultural importance of the architectural building and its positioning, which is barycentric and strategic with respect to its surrounding buildings.

The area being repurposed is located within a complex of buildings designed by architects/masters who are universally acknowledged by critics and architectural history to be of considerable cultural importance. Built between 1953 and 1961 based on a design by Giordano Forti, Gio Ponti and Piero Portaluppi, the building was conceived as a "teaching building" within which a sort of sample collection of modern construction was installed, featuring all the existing types of structures, materials, finishes, doors, windows, furnishings and installations for students to get to grips with in a hands-on learning environment.

Only two wings of the initial design actually came to fruition, resulting in an L-shaped building and leaving the courtyard and via Ampère façade unfinished. The building was then later completed by a body, designed by Vittoriano Viganò and constructed between 1970 and 1983, which has since come to represent the School's truly iconic building.

The design of the new "Agorà degli studenti", whose execution was marked by the timings linked to the delivery of the lessons conducted within the classrooms which overlooked the construction area, involved demolition of the partitions that separated the Secretary offices, to create a large open space housing over 120 new wired study stations for working alone or in a group around a table, also using computerised tools. The demolition of the secretarial offices, with the consequent removal of the false ceilings, brought the original floorplan of the building to light, characterised by a single slanted roof with the upper extremity coinciding with the window-covered opening towards the inner court.

The extreme uniqueness of the building and specific conditions surrounding it guided the selection of building materials, finishes and furnishings, all custom designed for this project: from the doors closing the apertures towards the classrooms, created to ensure adequate noise insulation during lectures, with handles geometrically reminiscent of

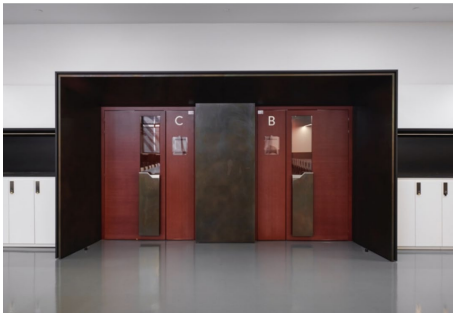


Figure 4. Agorà degli studenti (VIVI.POLIMI, 2019)

the shaped profile of a handle designed by Ponti for this same building, to the finishes on the ribbed base of the walls, similar to the parapet finish on the entrance staircase.
A new "student plaza" was immediately baptised "Agorà", symbolising the new meeting place for individual or collective studies, working around a table or on three-dimensional models, equipped with new storage areas for personal items, as well as for exhibiting three-dimensional models or graphic projects. The Presidency of the AUIC School was transferred to this new space, re-establishing a historic precedent.

3.2. Giardino di Leonardo

As for the open spaces, in line with the strategy of the works as a whole, the priority was to commence the redevelopment of the spaces behind the historic building of the Rectorate: a new space, the "Giardino di Leonardo", bordering the historic and recently-renovated Piazza Leonardo da Vinci, now occupies the existing area through an effective pairing of contemporary flavour with early 20th century style.
The project focuses on restoring and enhancing the campus' historical heritage, creating formal order and enhancing architectural and environmental quality, specifically as regards the central natural green area adjacent to the Rectory and its tree-lined avenues.
In the original design of the Campus Leonardo, the "Giardino di Leonardo" was the heart of the Campus itself, overlooked by the main buildings in accordance with a symmetrical settlement code.
The primary objective is to guarantee the best use and maximum pedestrian viability in the space, making it easier to use by eliminating approximately 130 car parking spaces, which over time have invaded the area: in the scope of sustainability and regeneration, the project is designed to structure the open spaces on the campus to respond to how the space is actually used daily by the people who inhabit it.
The starting point for the design stemmed from the overall conditions of the open spaces on the Campus, which had significantly deteriorated over the decades. Intense use, new functional and technological needs, and the opening of the auto park altered both the spaces and paving materials. The elimination of the trafficable passage inside of the open spaces in the Campus, a source of noise, pollution and hazard, the true transformational element in the context, was the incipient idea driving the project.
The sustainability of the project was then interpreted by prioritising continuous natural green areas, expanding their size and rendering them useable both informally and in several detached equipped islands. These spaces are equipped with wired break tables and seats, with Santafiora stone bases and corten steel support frames. The two islands to the northeast and south of the Rectory are fitted with roofing for use during the sunniest seasons and rain; the equipped area in the garden without any roofing, is dedicated to use during the milder seasons. The project includes renovation of the tree-lined avenues in Luserna stone, creating a more harmonious environment in the historical context in respect to the previous cement pavement, in order to reach a complete pedestrian use, improving accessibility for cyclists, and marking out specific areas for bicycle parking. In terms of trees, the landscape remains largely unchanged, except for the replacement of the trees that had been compromised: the planting of new shrubbery with colourful blooms providing a diversified display over the course of the seasons, with the aim of enhancing the "Giardino di Leonardo" as a green space, is the extent of the garden's new endowment of plant life.

Figure 5. Giardino di Leonardo (VIVI.POLIMI, 2019)

3.3. Continuity: the internal-external non-limit

The underpinning idea of the project is to standardise, in terms of form and materials, the many and varied "Gates" dotted around the perimeter of the Campuses, both in Milan and in the university's centres across the region and beyond. Crossing the threshold of a university Campus is not just a physical step, but also a symbolic action. An architectural element made of concrete and corten steel marks the main entrance to the Campus La Masa, welcoming and greeting those who tread its ground day after day. A passageway with an iconic, institutional and monumental value: the Politecnico logo, carved into the material, is symbolic of the University's presence in Milan and the Bovisa neighbourhood.

3.4. Lights at Polimi

The recognisability of the Politecnico and its history is also sustained through the enhancement and restoration of its iconic buildings: the renovation and new lighting projects which involved the buildings of the Rectorate, on the historic Campus Leonardo, were conceived in this vein, generating a domino effect of a progressive willingness to also restore the neighbouring ex-factory buildings.

3.5. Collina degli studenti

At the Campus La Masa, the absence of significant plant life and the poorly-identified connection space gave rise to the design of an renaturalised area, achieved through the insertion of a green hill, home to a building capable of holding over a hundred study workstations, on the mezzanine floor, and a faculty space dedicated to the social lives of the teaching staff. Located in a seldom-used area, this "Collina degli studenti" will give an injection of life into an anonymous space by transforming it into the beating heart of the entire Campus: In conclusion: the University represents a city of education and culture to which all advanced civilizations should strive in order to create a generation capable of facing the important challenges of the future.

The projects listed here have been developed within the structures of the Politecnico di Milano and with the help of the figures related to it: contributions to their preparation of various kinds have been provided by professors, PhDs, research fellows and professionals, assisted by technicians from the Technical Construction Area of the Politecnico itself. In particular, contributions to the aforementioned projects in different roles and for different lengths of time have come from: Prof. Emilio Faroldi, Vice Rector and coordinator of the VIVIPOLIMI project; Prof. Stefano Capolongo, Prof. Francesco Infussi, Prof. Lorenzo Jurina, Prof. Camillo Magni, Prof. Laura Elisabetta Malighetti, Prof. Tomaso Monestiroli, Prof. Eugenio Morello, Prof. Filippo Orsini, Prof. Alessandro Perego, Prof. Gianfranco Petrot, Prof. Tiziana Poli, Prof. Maurizio Rossi, Prof. Michele Ugolini, Prof. Ilaria Valente, Prof. Maria Pilar Vettori; Eng. Arch. Andrea A. Bassoli, Eng. Fulvio Bernabei, Arch. Matteo Cervini, Ind. Eng. Alessandro Corti, Arch. Andrea Cremonesi, Arch. Andrea Gianni, Arch. Giuseppe Mondini, Arch. Giacomo Penco, Dr. Virgilio Piatti, Eng. Edoardo Poletì, Arch. Paolo Raffaglio, Eng. Bruno Sala, Arch. Alessia Sarno, Eng. Gianluigi Sevini, Arch. Manuela Strada, Eng. Michele Terreni.

PAPER #2.19

THE MEDITERRANEAN PERI-URBAN HISTORICAL *HUERTAS* (MURCIA-ALICANTE-VALENCIA-ZARAGOZA). TRANSVERSAL RESEARCH

Juan José Tuset[a], Rafael Temes[a], Ana Ruiz-Varona[b], Fernando García-Martín[c], Clara García-Mayor[d], Marcos Ros-Sempere[c]

[a]Universidad Politécnica de Valencia, Valencia, Spain
[b]Universidad San Jorge, Zaragoza, Spain
[c]Universidad Politécnica de Cartagena, Cartagena, Spain
[d]Universidad de Alicante, Alicante, Spain

ABSTRACT

The Peri-urban Historical *Huertas* (PHH) have been a keystone of the landscape, economy and culture identity of some Mediterranean cities. The change in the economic model, especially the agricultural and urban ones, has subjected these gardens to urban pressures that have induced significant spatial alterations. However, the understanding of these is not simple due to the scarcity of PHH, the diversity of the changes and their variability over time, and the small scale at which the alterations operate over large territories. This paper includes the first steps in the consolidation of a research group focused on the better understanding of these changes, necessary to the conservation of their environmental, social and economic values. The text presents a classification of these alterations obtained through the transversal analysis of the orchards of Murcia, Alicante, Valencia and Zaragoza, distinguishing between those caused by replacement, dispersion, fragmentation and transformation. In addition, it collects observations on the study methodologies of each of these alterations adjusted to PHH characteristics.

KEYWORDS

Urban transformations; periurbanization; irrigated areas; methodologies.

INTRODUCTION

The Peri-urban Historical *Huertas* (PHH) are strategic in food production (Beltrán, 2012), provision of ecosystem services (Elmqvist, et al., 2015) and preservation of historical heritage, due to their complex traditional irrigation systems (Glick, 1970; Burriel, 1971; Courtot, 1986). In addition, its position in the edge of the urban areas makes this PPH especially vulnerable, undergoing processes of occupation and continuous transformations (Temes & Moya, 2016; Ros & García Martín, 2016; García-Mayor & Canales, 2018a). As Romero (2016) comments, the (un)protection of the large PHH and the absence of coordination initiatives at the metropolitan level synthesize very well the risk of lacking effective coherent management and management mechanisms in the second decade of the 21st century. Mediterranean PHH represent a type of landscape of great singularity for its typological singularity in Europe, as recognized by the Dobris Report of the European Environment Agency (1998), which only identifies six of such landscapes in Europe. As defined by UNESCO, the cultural landscape, denomination in which the landscapes of the garden are inscribed, are a complex reality, composed of natural and cultural components, tangible and intangible, whose combination configures the character that identifies them.

With the purpose of research about the changes and transformations that have been experiencing the PHH that still exist in Spain, we have set up a Researchers Network in the Mediterranean region committed to the analysis and study of these PPH, focused specifically in the understanding of the changes this landscapes have undergone from the perspective of environmental and social sustainability.

The spatial alterations of these PPH have been analysed in recent years from local perspectives, developing methodologies adjusted to the particularities of the predominant changes in each of them. This paper includes a classification of the types of alterations based on the comparative analysis between the different PHH and a summary of the analysis methods used for each of them.

1. SPATIAL TRANSFORMATIONS OF THE AGRICULTURAL LANDSCAPES

1.1. On the agricultural landscapes

The morphology and dimension of the PHH that have been studied are very different, and this is also recognized in the nature and intensity of changes that have characterized each of them. Firstly, the area that constitutes Valencia's historical orchards includes 40 municipalities and covers about 23,000 hectares, half of them, 11,393 hectares, are irrigated orchards classified as undeveloped area by the urban planning. Secondly, Segura's historical orchards constitutes an agricultural continuum and it includes both Vega Media and Murcia's areas. If we focus on Murcia's, the area of *huerta* includes 13 municipalities and covers 21,169 hectares, which is similar to the Valencia's one. If we focus on the Vega Media's historical orchard, it reaches 21 municipalities that are included and it covers 710, 398 hectares, with traditional irrigated orchard land covering 21,000 hectares out of the total administrative area. Finally, Zaragoza's historical orchards includes 20 municipalities and the relation between irrigated orchard land with respect to total area is remarkably different that the others. Indeed, it covers 38,060 hectares and irrigated orchard land covers 24,850 hectares.

Once the abovementioned description and contextualization of the different orchard's, it is important to clarify what kind of spatial transformations have been identified in those areas. To be specific, we have identified four different types of spatial transformation as a result of having applied a specific methodology, that will be explained later.

- Firstly, the replacement of the historical agricultural fabric by the expansion of urban areas. Some of the references that evaluate and quantify these changes are found in the study of Valencia's PHH (Temes & Moya, 2015; 2016), and their methodology reveals an example on how to describe these processes.

- Secondly, the dispersion of buildings over the initial agricultural plots involve a great intensity of transformation, especially in Segura's historical orchards. In this case of study Ros & García Martín (2016a; 2016b; 2017) have defined a preliminary methodology to quantify, classify and supervise this transformation process.

- Thirdly, the transformation of land use into the initial agricultural fabric, from the traditional orchards to new activities. The "micro" scale of this kind of transformations, performed over small plots, reveals a difficulty to apply usual research techniques, with land cover databases, and it requires a methodological revision, as it is described below.

- Fourthly and finally, the fragmentation of the historical agricultural fabric by the definition and construction of new infrastructures highlights an important

issue: the interaction between the urban development and the landscape conservation of these territories. The analysis of the invariant elements that define this agricultural landscape applied to Segura's historical orchards of Alicante (García-Mayor, 2017; García Mayor & Canales Martínez, 2015, 2018-a; 2018-b) establishes some key points to study the impact and role of these infrastructures over the PHH.

The following sections describe the main characteristics of the research methods of each of these spatial transformations. The analysis of the results is also explored.

1.2. Replacement

New urban development areas occupation processes over HHPM area correspond with urban growth analysis tools, at least initially. However, it reveals specific particularities. Indeed, urban growth is explained as a consequence of the extension of the urban built environment towards the orchard area. Its transformation has been represented as a vector dataset based on the 1:50,000 cartographies from the National Geographic Institute (NGI – IGN in Spanish), using urban blocks as minimal unit. This methodology and the data source guarantee a homogeneous coverage for all the HHPM area. Moreover, the analysis is complemented, for each period, with the raster information provided by the aerial photo coverage (Figure 1).

The analysis of this replacement is studied in detail in Valencia's orchard from 1957 to 2015. Results reveal a great transformation. Data information treatment shows an increase of more than three times of the urban growth area, from 3,414 to 9,730 hectares. This magnitude reaches a high importance if we compare it with regard to the population growth, which increased from 781,113 inhabitants in 1957 to 1,547,479 in 2015, almost double.

The comparison of urban area in 1957 and 2015 (Figure 2) and its growths, reveal the change in the urban structure and the patterns of the agricultural lands replacement. In the first scenario, 1957, in addition to the historical core, it can be distinguished the first extensions of the city, the Grao and Poblados Marítimos areas next to the port and some linear growths along the main paths. The orchards area is occupied by several polarized settlements, linked to the agricultural economy.

Figure 1. Aerial photography as a reference, vector dataset 1: 50,000 cartography superposition. Source: the authors

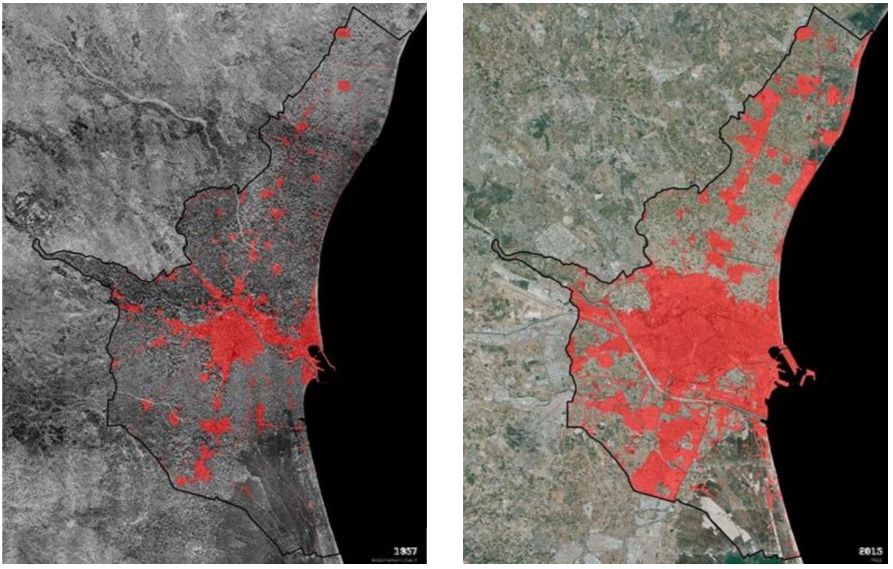


Figure 2. Comparison of the urban growth area transformation in Valencia. 1957-2015. Source: the authors.

In the second scenario, 2015, the shape has a completely different patter, which is clearly characterized by the absorption of all the coastal settlements and the predominance of the urban growth extension. Only two orchard's specific locations last to be replaced: Horta de Campanar, to the northwest area, and Horta de Rovella I Francs, Marjals I Extremals, to the southeast area. Moreover, this transformation reveals multiple urban morphologies that define a new edge between the built environment (the city) and the orchard. Other municipalities located in this area have also assessed some important transformations. Indeed, some conurbations are identified as a new urban patter, which has generated, therefore, not only the division and spatial discontinuity of the orchard, but also its functionality. As an example, a linear pattern of urban continuity can be identified in the north area of the orchard, linked to the roadway that connects Valencia to Barcelona. There is another important pattern of urban continuity in the south, covering Sedaví, Alfafar, Benetússer, Massanassa and Catarroja municipalities. This second area is also characterized by the high use of the land by the industrial sector. This comparison exposes a clear interruption of the continuity that previously defined the agricultural use of the land and the built and non-built environment. This balance has been shattered and it affects mainly the southern area of the orchard. While north area still reveals some continuity of these areas, remaining orchard in the south is currently characterized by residual minor areas.

1.3. Dispersion

The construction of dispersed buildings on the original agricultural fabric requires analysis techniques that are no longer based on the urban block but on the plot and its constructions, usually isolated houses. In the case of various orchards in the Region of Murcia, the main source has been cadastral cartography, which also guarantees coverage of all cases, as well as the series of aerial photographs available that allows identifying the period of appearance of existing buildings nowadays.

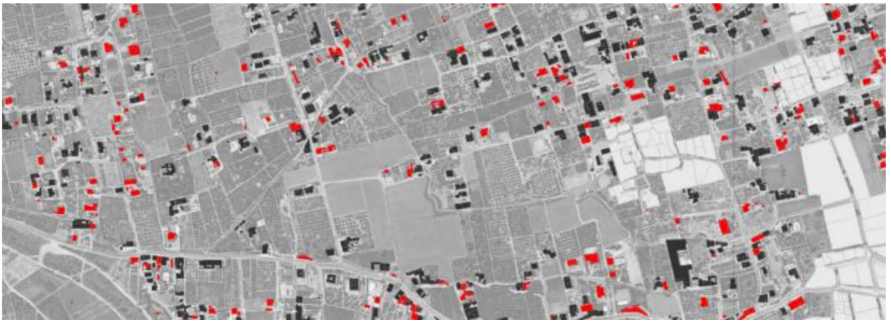


Figure 3. Differential study of the constructions in the West fragment of the Huerta de Murcia, due to the difference of orthophotos (2001-2015). Source: own elaboration by authors based on orthophotographies (SITMurcia) and cadastral cartography.

In the Huerta de Murcia, this method has allowed quantifying the growth of the total constructed area, which has gone from 929,207 m2 from 1956 to 4,665,395 m2, which is almost five times what was built in 1956. The rate of increase from one year to another, it suffered a gradual increase until 2007, when it fell sharply. The annual rate reached 1,231 houses per year during the period 2002-2007, decreasing to 69 units since 2007.

In addition, the identification of the period of appearance of the constructions has also allowed to identify the occupation patterns. In the period 1956-1981 the increase of houses into the PHH is very important, and it is mainly located in areas of homogeneous dispersion in the *Huerta* Oeste and *Huerta* Sur, as well as in a network of secondary roads, perpendicular to the main ones, in the *Huerta* Este. In the period 1981-2002 there are homes on the second line of main roads, on secondary roads and even on a third grade of paths. Wide areas of the *Huerta* Sur are also occupied by homogeneous dispersion. Finally, in the period 2002-2017 there is a very strong combination of all the patterns described above, in almost all of the Huerta sectors analysed.

The effects of the changes caused by this dispersion of housing have been evaluated in areas of smaller scale in the Vega Baja del Segura with two fundamental objectives: first, correlate the phenomena detected at territorial scale with the dynamics of local scale through of cartographic analysis; and secondly, to parameterize the changes in the territory from the application of a 400x400 m grid as an optimized measure of the habitat in the huertas. This methodological proposal is an adaptation with the same approaches that are used in the parameterization of indicators for urban contexts (AEU, 2008) (Rueda, 2008) since the generic model is based on the parameterization of the complexity of the physical reality of a surface (García-Mayor, 2017).

In the Vega Baja, the detailed analysis of these patterns reflects that the land occupation remains stable until the 80s of the last century, having as main change the transformation of arable crops to arboreal up to 75% of the surface in some tiles studied. It will be during the last 30 years when there is a radical change of scenery: the traditional building, isolated and aligned only to one side of the path, is densified to form alignments on both sides of the road that represent a physical and visual barrier with the orchards adjacent. The typology of modest agricultural housing changes to a villa with urban standards, tripling the land occupation. Regarding the uses, the new constructions include, together with the residential, the activity of warehouses and commercial. To

adapt the road network to the needs and intensity of traffic, the irrigation pipes are piped and the asphalted surface is increased, which increases the unproductive land due to abandonment of agricultural activity, in addition to the area destined to infrastructure corridors and esplanades Despite all these changes, it has been detected that the basic networks of water channels and roads together represent between 13% and 17.5% invariably over time in the metrics of the tiles under study.

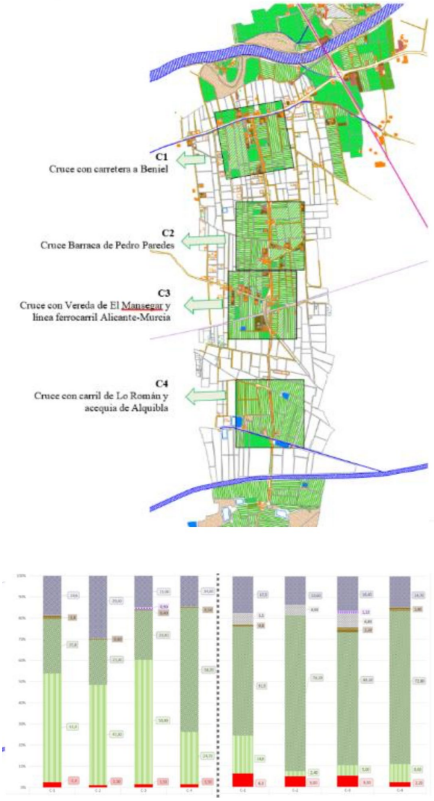


Figure 4. Study of the evolution of the components of the orchard pattern in relation to the growth of a traditional settlement from the analysis of the flights. Source: own elaboration by authors based on the images of Ruiz de Alda flight (1929) and PNOA orthophotographies.

1.4. Transformation

The main methodological challenge is related to changes driven in the use of land affecting the agricultural plots. In this regard, different techniques are considered in order to conduct a coherent analytical approach between all four case studies, following the same criteria as previous sections. For this propose, the analysis is based on both the agricultural allotment as a minimum unit and a specific cluster of several agricultural plots, considering that they are applicable to all the cases.

In order to deal with the measurement of changes in the use of land among the PHH, the NGI provides a database on land occupation that has been the main source for identifying the land cover, namely the Spanish Information System on Land Occupation —SIOSE— (Instituto Geográfico Nacional n.d.). Specifically, the database used is referred to three specific reference years: 2005, 2011 and 2014. Initially, the real usefulness of the information gathered through these databases has been contrasted by defining the map keys shown in Figure 5: Map 1, level 1; Map 2, level 2 artificial and crops; Map 3: level 4 artificial unbundled data; and, Map 4: level 4 crops unbundled data.

These maps' analysis has permitted to detect the following issues and difficulties resulting from the use of the SIOSE data:

1. Considering all four PHH cases of study, it was detected that the representativeness of SIOSE database is not equally coherent mainly in relationship with "level 4 crops unbundled data; notwithstanding that in all the cases it is the same methodology applied for the identification of the use of land,
2. The land occupation by scattered houses produces distortions in the analysis results of the SIOSE among the cases of study. For instance, areas such as urban discontinuous or mix-urban lands with the greatest dispersion are identified as artificial land cover in some of the cases.
3. Moreover, it is highlighted that it doesn't exist a simple methodology for assessing changes in the land use using the ten-year temporal series of the SIOSE.

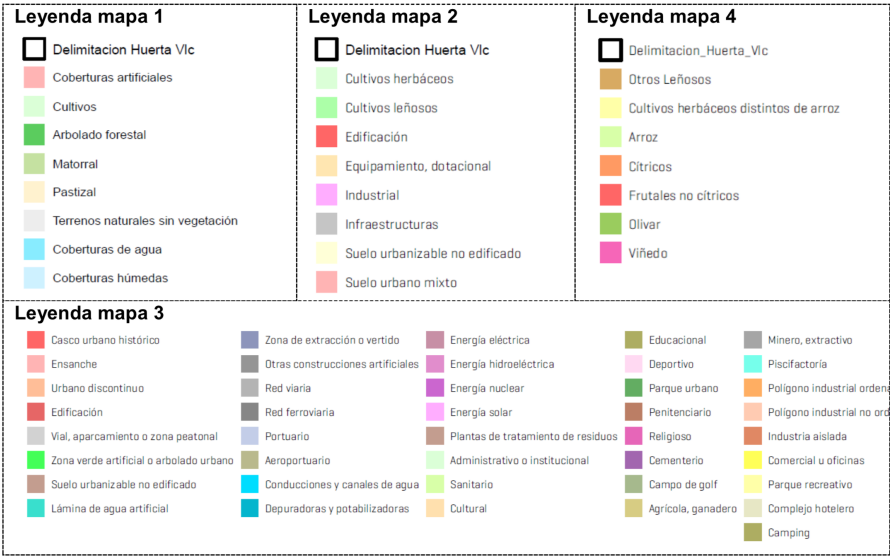


Figure 5. SIOSE 2011 – Key map levels used for the analysis of the Periurban Historical Huertas project.

In order to address the above difficulties, the following actions are proposed combining different databased that complement SIOSE information.

1. The development of a new classification which could be representative for the set of PHH taking advantage of use of land percentages from the SIOSE database.

2. Introducing complementary sources of information such as the Geographical Information System for Agricultural Plots —SIGPAC— (Ministerio de Agricultura 2015), which makes it possible to identify geographically the plots declared by farmers and stockbreeders under any aid scheme relating to the area cultivated or used by the livestock. In relation with SIGPAC database information, this system provides detailed information at the scale of the agricultural plot. Furthermore, intertwining SIGPAC and SIOSE provides accuracy and allows to make a double check of the land information.

1.5. Fragmentation

The landscape patterns and agricultural structures of the PHH are also affected by fragmentation, mainly due to the implementation of infrastructure routes: roads, trainlines, electricity grids, etc. The identification of these elements, which appear as clear cuts in the productive tissue, has been possible using the Spanish national-level topographic and cartographic bases (Instituto Geográfico Nacional 2015), combined with the graphic information from the aerial photography series which are accessible from the Spanish National Plan for Aerial Orthophotography —PNOA— (Instituto Geográfico Nacional 2016). It is important to highlight that the main methodological difficulty related to this issue has been to perform a correct interpretation of each element's role considering both, the effects on the landscape pattern tissue fragmentation, in contrast with the improvement of connectivity

derive from each infrastructural element scale and connection with other landscape elements. For providing a more thorough insight to the territorial analysis, the historical series of structuring landscape elements of the PHH selected are being considered in order to better understand these territorial areas as follows:

1. The specific landform: using the terrain model with the contour lines map in combination with the territorial shadow model.

2. The irrigation network system that involves irrigation and drainage canals. These follow a hierarchical canal distribution, first carrying the water from the river to the agricultural plots (river – major canals – minor canals), and the drainage of exceeding water (runoff waters and drainage canals). The water system has been fundamental to determine the final land organization and plot distribution, as well as the first stages of the scattered land occupation process.

3. The pathway network is also a hierarchical system which not only provides accessibility to the territory, but also permits the access to the water canal tracks for maintenance and for addressing the water distribution management.

4. The settlements original location in these territories followed a clearly searched for occupy slightly elevated topographical levels, trying to preserve as much fertile land as possible. Later, these settlement patterns resulted in the growth of villages and hamlets situated in relevant crossroads.

The accurate identification of all these elements is possible through the analysis of the Spanish National Geographic Institute documents MTN50 (Instituto Geográfico Nacional 2018), over the period from 1916 to 1950 in the case of the Huerta de Valencia. For the cases of the floodplains and Huertas del Segura there are aerial photographic materials available from 1927, which constitutes a fantastic graphic information for the study of the evolution of these territories.

Figure 6. Representation of pathways, irrigation canals and riverbed over the historical cartographies

CONCLUSION

The best understanding and parameterization of the characteristics and changes of agricultural tissues seeks to allow a better strategy of integration and safeguarding of these spaces. The cross-sectional analysis of the different PHH is allowing to complete the local analyses, incorporating phenomena of alterations from a wider context. One of the first results is the conceptualization of the alterations in four main types: substitution, dispersion, transformation and fragmentation. Each of them present in all cases, but with different intensity. The variety of alterations, and their scale and intensity, shows the flexibility to the changes of these tissues, because many are derived from 'micro' transformations, at the level of small agricultural plots. This permissiveness causes a constant phenomenon of transformation (Calvo, 1982), which paradoxically implies a greater resilience of the territory, modifying its structure and appearing new elements proper of the urban or suburban areas (Antrop, 2004). The necessary adaptation of the methods of analysis of the spatial transformations to this type of tissues, adapting the techniques and resources, has been another of the most outstanding results in this phase of the investigation. In this sense, the search for sources that have a homogeneous coverage in the four PHH analysed has been especially relevant, assessing their representativeness for each of them, and the determination of the scale of the minimum unit of study in each alteration phenomenon (plot, block or area). In this comparative approach, methods have been experimented to solve the disparities in the cartographic databases of land uses of the different spaces, showing the lack of efficient criteria for the classification of this type of peri-urban agricultural spaces.

REFERENCES

Antrop, M. 2004. *Landscape Change and the Urbanization Process in Europe*. Landscape and Urban Planning 67 (1–4): 9–26.

Beltrán, J. P. 2012. *El desafío global de la producción de alimentos y l'Horta de Valencia*. En: J. Romero & M. Francés (Eds) La Huerta de Valencia. Un Paisaje Cultural con Futuro Incierto, pp. 173-196 (Valencia: PUV).

Burriel, E. 1971. *La Huerta de Valencia, Zona Sur.* Estudio de Geografía Agraria. Valencia: Institución Alfonso el Magnánimo.

Calvo, F. 1982. *Continuidad y cambio en la Huerta de Murcia.* Murcia: Academia Alfonso X el Sabio.

Courtot, R. 1986. *Agriculture irriguée et organisation ou l'espace dans les huertas de Valencia et de Castellon*. Paris: Université Paris VII.

EEA, 1995. *Europe's Environment: The Dobris Assessment*, Copenhagen.

Elmqvist, T., Setälä, H., Handel, S., Van Der Ploeg, S., Aronson, J., Blignaut, J., Gómez-Baggethun, E., Nowak, D., Kronenberg, J. Y De Groot, R., 2015. *Benefits of restoring ecosystem services in urban areas*. Current Opinion in Environmental Sustainability, vol. 14, pp. 101-108.

García-Mayor, C. 2017. I*nvariants in the evolution and territorial identity of the traditional Huerta landscape of the Vega Baja of the Segura River: 1929-2010.* Boletin de La Asociacion de Geografos Espanoles, 2017(73), 369–388. https://doi.org/10.21138/bage.2422

García Mayor, C., & Canales, G. 2015. *La huerta de Orihuela en el Bajo Segura: elementos funcionales en la configuración del paisaje.* (Universidad de Alicante, Ed.). Alicante: Universidad de Alicante. http://rua.ua.es/dspace/handle/10045/52734

Garcia-Mayor, C., & Canales, G. 2018a. *Polynuclear urban system, landscape identity and economic development: The Vega Baja of the Segura River (Alicante) case study.* In D. Urios, J. Colomer, & A. Portalés (Eds.), 24th ISUF International Conference. City and territory in the Globalización (pp. 47–53). Valencia: Editorial Universitat Politècnica de València. https://rua.ua.es/dspace/handle/10045/75990

García-Mayor, C., & Canales, G. 2018b. *La Vega Baja del Segura, una huerta sitiada: la transformación del territorio.* Cátedra Arzobispo Loazes, Universidad de Alicante. https://rua.ua.es/dspace/handle/10045/88415

Glick, T.F. 1970. *Irrigation and Society in Medieval Valencia.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Instituto Geográfico Nacional. n.d. *Geoportal SIOSE*. https://www.siose.es/.

2015. *Base Topográfica Nacional de España.* 2015. https://www.ign.es/web/cbg-area-cartografia.

2016. *Plan Nacional de Ortofotografía Aérea (PNOA)*. 2016. https://pnoa.ign.es/.

2018. *Mapa Topográfico Nacional MTN50 (IGN)* 2018. http://centrodedescargas.cnig.es/CentroDescargas/catalogo.do?Serie=Mapas.

Ministerio de Agricultura, Pesca y Alimentación. 2015. *Aplicación SIGPAC | Fega.Es.* 2015. https://www.fega.es/es/PwfGcp/es/ayudas_dir_desa_rural/aplicacion_sigpac/index.jsp.

Romero, J., & Melo, C. 2016) *La ordenación y gestión de las huertas mediterráneas españolas. El tiempo de la (s) política (s)*. En: Vera, J. Fernando; Olcina, Jorge; Hernández, María (eds.). Paisaje, cultura territorial y vivencia de la Geografía. Libro homenaje al profesor Alfredo Morales Gil. San Vicente del Raspeig: Publicaciones de la Universidad de Alicante, 2016.

Ros, M. & García Martín, F.M. 2016a. *Cinco palmos 1929-2015. Transformación de usos del suelo en la Huerta de Murcia.* Murcia: CRAI Biblioteca - Universidad Politécnica de Cartagena.

Ros, M. & García Martín, F.M. 2016b. *Patterns of non-planned occupation of the peri-urban territory of the Huerta de Murcia, 1929-2015.* En: Centre De Política De Sòl I Valoracions (ed.), Back to the Sense of the City: International Monograph Book [en línea]. Krakow: s.n., pp. 826-837.

Ros, M. & García Martín, F.M. 2017. *Stages of territorial configuration in the non-planned occupation of the Huerta de Murcia, 1929-2015.* 24th ISUF International Conference, City and territory in the globalization age. Conference proceedings [en línea]. Valencia: Universidad Politécnica de Valencia, pp. 97-106.

Rueda, S., Cormenzana, B. 2008. *Plan Especial de Indicadores de Sostenibilidad Ambiental de la Actividad Urbanística de Sevilla.*

Temes, R.R. & Moya, A. 2015. *Dynamics of change in the peri-urban landscape of Huerta de Valencia: the case of La Punta (Valencia).* WIT Transactions on Ecology and the Environment. 192:123-131.

Temes, R.R. & Moya, A. 2016. *Typology of the Transformations Occurred in the Peri-Urban Space of Huerta de Valencia. Evidence from North Arch of Valencia (Spain).* International Journal of Sustainable Development and Planning 11 (6): 996–1003.

PAPER #2.20

EMPLOYING THE INDUSTRIAL LANDSCAPE. INSIGHTS ON THE USE OF COLLECTIVE SPACES OF INDUSTRIALIZATION IN ETHIOPIA

Arnout De Schryver[a]
[a]KU Leuven, Ghent, Belgium

ABSTRACT

After the end of the civil war in 1991 Ethiopia became a relatively solid country. Today it is going through what it looks like a turbulent coming of age. In the last two decades, the country has experienced a frantic and exponential wave of urban development, bolstered by the so-called "Ethiopian Renaissance", an optimistic narrative of economic, cultural and social blossoming. New housing ensembles, real estate investments, infrastructures and industrial villages are changing the urban structure of Ethiopia and its cities to an extent never reached before. This process is going with intriguing insights and constraints.
This contribution will look at the industrial landscapes emerged from this optimistic narrative of industrialization and globalization and uses three carefully selected case studies. These case studies are all financed and constructed by the local government through the IPDC "Industrial Parks Development Corporation" program and rented for competitive rates to global firms mostly in clothing industry such as H&M, Calvin Klein, etc. . The development plan is an impressive display of faith in the ability of infrastructure and architecture to embody development.
However, its side effects - the creation of urban enclaves, extreme rationalization of space and clear social concerns – coupled with the constant threat that global firms can simply abandon those urban landscapes moving their production to cheaper environments are at the end undermining a sustainable development,
the spatial and social structures of a city, a neighborhood or a community. At the same time, an answer to these shortcomings cannot simply pass through an uncritical celebration of resilient, inclusive industrialization processes, ignoring the economic and political realities of these processes. This contribution questions the use of collective spaces of those industrial landscapes to integrate into the social and spatial patterns of a city, neighborhood or community.

KEYWORDS

Ethiopia; industrialization; urbanization; infrastructure; collective spaces.

INTRODUCTION

Ethiopia's history reads as an intriguing voluminous book. Ethiopia in its political and structural form as we know now is relatively new but an undeniable result of its past experiences. A brief knowledge of these past experiences from ambitious modernization programs to civil wars and famine crisis's is necessary to understand the optimistic narrative of social, cultural, political and economic bloom we are witnessing now.
This introduction will briefly introduce you into Ethiopia's history to bring you later to the actual state of the research question and its rationale.

A brief history

A first age of modernization and preliminary kind of industrialization (export of coffee) in Ethiopia took place in the beginning of the 20th century under emperor Menelik II and Haile Selassie. After the Italian occupation which

took place from 1936 till 1941 Haile Selassie continued his ambitious programmes of modernization and centralization of policies. Right after WW II, Ethiopia became a charter member of the United Nations.

However, in this post-world war II period, the nobility, students and military officers began to see Haile Selassie more and more an "agent of US imperialism" ignoring the actual cultural strengths of the country. Peaceful protests where violently responded by the state. In 1974, after days of social unrests and protests in the capital city Addis Abeba, Haile Selassie was deposed. This unstable political and social period made the way for a communist regime, known as the Derg.

A civil war followed by droughts and a serious famine crisis which affected 8 million people and left 1 million dead hastened the collapse of the regime in 1991. This smoothened the path for another drastic change in the Ethiopian political system after a dark period of war and famine.

This political system, which we still know today, is an optimistic narrative that leans on the strengths of Ethiopia, being their national heterogeneity. This federal system (one of the few federal states of the African continent except for Nigeria, North and South Sudan and Somalia) wants to embrace the immense diversity of Ethiopia instead of one group suppressing the other. Since the collapse of the regime, Ethiopia is a relatively solid country experiencing an exponential wave of urban development, economic, social and cultural blossoming.

Recent endeavors to further decentralize the federal state puts new social and political pressure. The country is going through what it looks like a turbulent coming of age.

Urbanization and industrialization

With a current urbanization rate of 4.63%, Ethiopia is the 7th fastest urbanizing country of the world. With an urban population of only 20,8%, Ethiopia has, on the contrary, one of the lowest urban populations (Central Intelligence Agency, World Factbook, 2018). Urban areas such as the capital of Ethiopia, Addis Abeba and secondary cities such as Bahir Dar and Dire Dawa are changing to an extend never reached before. An increase in urbanization of the population leads to growing challenges on how to sustainably accommodate this rapidly growing immigration into the larger metropolitan areas.

As a consequence, larger metropolitan areas are forced to produce easily accessible labor productive jobs beyond their own possible capacities. The local government's answer is to kick start industrialization by the construction of the so-called *industrial villages*. This development program is an incredible display of faith in infrastructure and architecture to embrace this extreme urbanization. This process goes with intriguing insights and constraints and is directly related to the mentioned population and immigration growth numbers and the multiple challenges they bring by for local sustainable development.

The construction of these industrial landscapes goes often with little of less spatial characteristics for human interaction and qualitative working spaces. They create urban enclaves with an extreme rationalization of space that brings clear social concerns with them. Simultaneously, the constant thread that global firms can simply abandon those industrial landscapes moving their production to cheaper environments are at the end undermining a sustainable and inclusive development for the spatial and social structures of a city, neighborhood or a community.

At the same time, an answer to these shortcomings cannot simply pass through an uncritical celebration of resilient, inclusive industrialization processes, ignoring the economic and political realities of these processes.

This research paper seeks to provide insights in the actual use and/or potentials

of the collective spaces of those industrial landscapes to better understand how these spaces can integrate into the existing social and spatial patterns of a city, neighborhood or community. In a second phase (which will not be handled in this paper) those research findings will lead to insights on the transformation of the urban fabric through studying the role and impact of architectural and landscape interventions that operates at the intermediate scale (the scale between the architectural intervention and the urbanistic strategies). This paper is part of a long-term research engagement on how architectural interventions, open spaces, the property structure and its inherent accessibility and permeability models can configure collective spaces of social and productive encounter and how the local community can give meaning to them by engagement and appropriation.

This paper will first frame the research question by introducing conceptual notes on industrial landscapes and the collective space within them, followed by a specific reading of three carefully selected case studies of industrial villages in Ethiopia (Addis Abeba, Bahir Dar and Dire Dawa). These case studies have all one thing in common and are all financed and constructed by the local government through the IPDC "Industrial Parks Development Corporation" program and rented for competitive rates to global firms mostly in clothing industry such as H&M, Calvin Klein, etc. . They are part of a larger program of 22 industrial villages giving a total size of approximately 17.735 hectares.

1. NOTES ON THE INDUSTRIAL LANDSCAPE AND COLLECTIVE SPACES WITHIN THEM

In literature on processes of industrialization in an African context, formalization of (collective) space and urbanization are mostly discussed together. As Doug Sanders mentions in his book Arrival Cities:

> what will be remembered about the twenty-first century more than anything else except perhaps the change of climate is the great, and final shift of human population out of rural agricultural life into cities, (Sanders 2011)

Sanders demonstrates the importance of a good understanding of processes of industrialization as a result of this worldwide urbanization trend. The subject is therefore widely discussed in the discipline of economy, anthropology, sociology, architecture, urban

Figure 1. Image of the streetscape (Source; Own picture, 2018)

planning and art. Can architecture alone solve the social challenges and concerns? No, nor can a journalist, economist, sociologist or anthropologist, but it can give concrete impulses and effective instruments or strategies; a different direction for these challenges and concerns to the ongoing discourse.

1.1. Policy thinking

In policy thinking there is a general consensus across different disciplines about the importance of sustainable and inclusive industrial landscapes and the important role of collective spaces within them.
Specifically in the field of Architecture Kastani, J., Polach, T., Sewnet, H., and Van Der Westhuizen, A., (Angélil and Hebel 2009) defined (based on various case studies in Ethiopia) the making of, what the authors call, social infrastructure based on public participation from different local actors one of the essential strategies for the making of sustainable and inclusive industrial landscapes.
These conclusions are in line with Jan Gehl's city planning and development strategy: "life, space, building", and to prioritize them in that order. One of Gehl's "toolbox" of planning principles is public participation.
Also equivalent to Gehl's planning and development conclusions is the current redevelopment of mostly Western post-industrial landscapes in which the people and the collective spaces within the industrial landscape are the protagonists. Post-industrial landscapes are emerging as a product of industrialization i.e. as a byproduct of the deindustrialization of a society (Cho, Shin, 2014; Garaca, et al., 2014; Jahic, et al., 2014). One of the common expressions used to describe this kinds of landscapes is "landscapes of nostalgia" (Halewood, Hannam, 2001; Xie, 2006).
Despite mostly all those industrial landscapes became "landscapes of nostalgia" and lost their initial function and by this are somewhat outside the scope of this research, most of those landscapes are intriguing examples of how the collective space can be or become the framework for the industrial landscape and by this more integrated in the existing social and spatial structures of their city. They are able to strengthen the local identity and to create new urban centres (Trettin, et al., 2011). The concept of restructuring the landscapes of nostalgia has shown significant potential. The positive experiences of Western countries can be used as a pattern for developing countries that have similar issues (e.g. Jahic, et al., 2014; Petrovic, 2013; Dukicin, et al., 2011, 2014).
Also in the discipline of economy there is a similar consensus. For example, the conclusions and policy recommendations in the ERA 2016 report of the United Nations Economic Commission for Africa (UNECA 2016) states that:

> Africa's industrialization has the potential to create green jobs, … , and exposing women to green skills and technologies on the way to achieving inclusive, equitable and sustainable green industrialization.

The ERA 2016 report in general is a celebration and encouragement for all African countries and cities to foster inclusive, sustainable and "green" industrialization processes in order to strengthen their role into the world economy which will then boost the local economy.
The role of collective spaces within the industrial landscapes are, in contrary with other disciplines, rather forgotten.

1.2. Actual implementation

Edgar Pieterse on the contrary witnesses a remarkable discrepancy of the earlier mentioned participatory and inclusive policy thinking and the actual implementation of

industrial landscapes (Burdett, R., Rode, P. et al. 2018).
A first point which may explain this discrepancy is the political sphere in which most of these ambitious projects are happening. As Pieterse remarks "there is a gulf between the formal democratic prescripts and the everyday dynamics of governance and control in contexts of limited sources and various lines of social stratification". According the author, many local governments in African cities more likely opt for chauvinistic populist policies of clientelism and patronage which at the end undermines local participatory and inclusive development strategies.
This brings us to the second reason: the public administrations capacities and capabilities. The implementation of sustainable and inclusive industrial landscapes based on public participation might go beyond a local government's ability to handle the detail and complexity of a city's "small scale" development strategy. The implementation of inclusive industrial landscapes may work in small scale
cities, however, governments in smaller cities often lack the staff, and or in-house expertise to do so.
A third point that challenges the sustainable and inclusive implementation of industrial landscapes is the market. Land speculations, real estate investments and demand driven space developments have for ages increasingly characterized how cities look like. Project budgets, investment interests (beyond a building's role in a particular space) and client- service provider relationships may at the end result in buildings that do not contribute to a quality of urban (collective) space.

1.3. Embrace the reality

As briefly mentioned in the introduction, it is this discrepancy that is used as starting point for this research project without falling in an easy dichotomy of "the one is good and the other is bad". This research starts from the actual (large scale) implementation and looks for, sometimes invisible (small scale) collective spaces.
An example from the discipline of art in which this discrepancy is used as a starting point is the work of the Chinese artist Cao Fei. The artist starts from the actual (collective) space within the industrial landscape and is able to reflect this positive policy thinking about industrial landscapes (as earlier discussed) onto the rather negative reality (noted by Pieterse).
The film "Whose Utopia" for example (Cao Fei, 2006) explores the life of emigrant factory workers in which the factory workers share their aspirations and hopes for the future. The artist filmed them acting out their dreams within the factory space, interrupting the usual rhythms of factory life. The film is a rather optimistic approach in the discourse where the actual industrial landscape is more than a rationalization of space and pure economic production. The (collective) space within the factory is given a social dimension in which the industrial landscape acts as a framework for the integration of social patterns.
The selected case studies, subject of the research, indeed includes these discrepancies between policy thinking and actual implementation. This research aims to understand the actual use and/or potentials of
the collective spaces within the implemented industrial landscapes to give these existing collective spaces the same meaning as Cao Fei's insights and to include these insights in further development strategies.
The aim is to include the industrial landscapes more into the existing social and spatial patterns of the city, community of neighborhood.

2. CASE STUDIES

The following selection of case studies have one thing in common and are all financed through the Ethiopian IPDC program from the local government and rented to global firms. In total, 22 similar industrial parks are planned or currently under construction, giving a total size of approximately 17 735 ha. . The selection of the case studies is based on the following criteria and is a clear representation of the other 19 industrial parks in the IPDC program.

- The size: All the selected case studies have a considerable, non-neglectable size to the city they belong. As a consequence, all industrial villages do have a substantial impact on their city they belong to. Nonetheless there is a difference in scale between the different case studies. Bahir Dar is a rather smallscale industrial village compared to the others but is however in scale with the size of the Bahir Dar secondary city. Bole Lemi is a rather medium- sized industrial village compared to the scale of Addis Abeba. Dire Dawa on the other hand is the largest industrial city currently under construction and compared to the scale of Dire Dawa city the industrial village is absolutely out of scale. This range of different scales is representable for the whole development of industrial villages in Ethiopia.

The financial entry: As mentioned before, most of the industrial villages are financed by the government through the IPDC program. In our selected case studies this is not different.

- Industry type: In all industrial villages, the textile industry is largely present in which the ginned cotton is spun, meshed, coloured, sewn together as textiles, and packaged. The presence of this textile industry in the industrial villages is not by coincidence. Ethiopia has a rich tradition of cotton production and weaving

which is still widely exercised in rural households as a source of income. This textile production on an industrial scale slightly replaces the tradition and craftsmanship but, however uses the existing traditional skills of mostly rural women for their production. The industrial villages can be seen as arrival points for (mostly female) rural migrants using their tradition and skills to allow a fluid integration in the urban society.

- Urban/ rural link: All cases are located in the periphery of the city, strongly isolated from the city centre which makes the integration of the industrial city in the existing spatial and social urban network more difficult. In all cases there is a strong infrastructural link with the city they belong to. The scale of the city they belong differences in rages from approximately 5 mln. inhabitants (Addis Abeba) to 300 000 inhabitants (Dire Dawa) which provides different social and spatial dynamics. Due to there location in the periphery all cases do have on the contrary also a very strong rural link. In all cases, rural inhabitants, villages and agricultural land needed to make space for the construction of the industrial village providing both tensions and opportunities for the former rural inhabitants.
- Infrastructure: In case study 1 and 3 (Bole Lemi and Dire Dawa) there is a strong infrastructural link with either Bole international airport in Addis Abeba or the Ethio-Djibouti railway in Dire Dawa. In Bahir Dar on the other hand we do witness a lack of an infrastructural link. Having both types of case studies will provide insights on the role and importance of having a strong infrastructural link or not.
- Conditions: All cases do not meet the minimum living and working conditions. All cases has been subject to a discourse on labour productivity, working conditions and minimum wages with various strikes in several factories as a result.

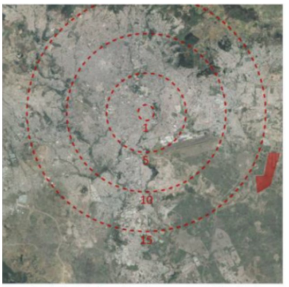
2.1. Bole Lemi industrial village – Addis Abeba

This first case study contains two industrial villages (Bole Lemi I and II) merged together into one of the largest industrial village located

in the periphery of Addis Abeba, the capital city of Ethiopia and the African Union. Due to the presence of the capital city, the scale, social and spatial dynamics are different compared to other industrial villages located near secondary cities such as Bahir Dar or Dire Dawa. The planned size of the industrial village is approximately 342 ha. and aims to provide jobs to approximately 75 000 citizens, mostly female workers in the textile and garment industry.

Every day, a certain type of formal bus system is bringing all the factory workers back and forth to their homes and/or neighbourhoods. Every morning and evening hundreds of busses, all coloured in blue so they are easy recognisable in the streets of Addis Abeba, are bringing or collecting thousands and thousands of people more or less at the same time.

This daily phenomenon is a fantastic display of collectivity in space and should be seen as an absolute strength for the collective spaces in the industrial villages. This massive displacement of people at the same time at the same place is giving meaning to the collective space in which this displacement is happening. Additionally, the recognisable blue colour of the commuting buses is another excellent example of how the presence of the industrial villages in the periphery of the city become part of the daily life and daily collective space even in the centre of Addis Abeba.



Case Study 1: Bole Lemi I - Distance to Addis Abeba city centre


Case Study 1: Bole Lemi I - Morphology
Google Earth Image: 28/09/2018


Case Study 1: Bole Lemi I - Streetscape

Google Earth Image: 28/09/2018

Figure 2. Plans and image Bole Lemi industrial village (Source: Own picture and plans 2018)

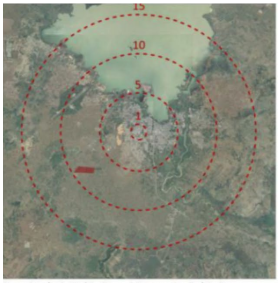
Figure 3. (right) Blue transport buses (Source: Own picture, 2016)
Figure 4. (left) Everyday arrival to the industrial village (Source: movie still CGTN, 2017)

2.2. Bahir Dar industrial village – Bahir Dar

The "Bahir Dar industrial village" is located near the secondary city: Bahir Dar (approximately 580 km North of the capital, Addis Abeba). The planned size of this industrial village is 1000 ha. from which the first phase of 75 ha. is currently finished. The village aims to create labour productive job opportunities for 20 000 people in the garment and textile industry. Global firms such as Calvin Klein and Tommy Hilfiger already subscribed their intention to partly move their production to this industrial village.
The city of Bahir Dar is due to its location near Lake Tana and the source of the Blue Nile an assured overnight stop for all tourist tours in Ethiopia and by extend even tourist tours through The Horn of Africa.
In a global trend where tourism is largely directed by social media and a search for the most unique Instagram-worthy picture on unique settings (i.e. abandoned, out of scale spaces are always a big hit), this phenomenon could be used as one of the potential ingredients to give the collective spaces in the industrial village a different meaning. Tourism itself will not help to integrate those industrial villages into the existing social and spatial patterns of the city. The whole setting around it, mostly based on local entrepreneurship and local networks, and the fact the collective space gains a certain importance and meaning will indeed bolster the relation of those industrial landscapes with the city and may evolve towards an inclusive, sustainable landscape.

2.3. Dire Dawa industrial village – Dire Dawa

The last case study is the Dire Dawa industrial village near the city of Dire Dawa. Dire Dawa is a city of approximately 300 000 inhabitants, East of Addis Abeba and close to the border of Djibouti. Unique is that this industrial village is located next to the Ethio-Djibouti railway. As Ethiopia is landlocked and the port of Djibouti, via the Ethio-Djibouti railway is currently the fastest over ground route to the sea, Dire Dawa is the first and thus fastest productive connection between Ethiopia and the sea (port of Djibouti). The industrial village with a planned size of 4 000 ha. is to date the largest industrial village of Ethiopia. The first phase (150 ha.) is currently build and active. Phase two is under construction.
Dire Dawa industrial village is more than 15 km located outside the city centre and has compared to the others one of the strongest links with the rural setting.

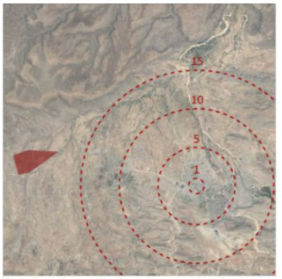


Case Study 2: Bahir Dar - Distance to Bahir Dar
ity centre Google Earth Image: 12/11/2018


Case Study 2: Bahir Dar - Morphology
Google Earth Image: 12/11/2018


Case Study 2: Bahir Dar - Streetscape

Figure 5. Plans and image Bahir Dar industrial village (Source: Own picture and plans 2018)



Case Study 3: Dire Dawa - Distance to Dire Dawa city centre Google Earth Image: 26/03/2018


Case Study 3: Dire Dawa - Morphology Google Earth Image: 26/03/2018


Case Study 3: Dire Dawa - Streetscape

Figure 6. Plans and image Dire Dawa industrial village (Source: Own picture and plans 2018)

Also here, the main activity within the industrial village is situated within the textile and garment industry. As earlier mentioned, Ethiopia has a strong rural tradition in the production of textiles in which raw cotton is weaved until textiles and further assembled in what the Ethiopians call now "traditional clothing". This traditional work is very often practiced by the girls and women of the family.

In today's reality where women empowerment is very often top priority of NGO's and local governments for development strategies and rural-urban migration, the factory spaces do have serious potencies. The collective space within the factory is more than only a rationalised space but does provide a space where skills developed by women in a rural setting can immediately be used in a globalised, urban setting. The collective spaces in the factory should be developed as a bridge between rural-urban traditions and by this be more integrated into the existing rural and urban social and spatial structures.

CONCLUSION

As mentioned in the introduction, this paper is part of a long-term research engagement between KU Leuven and several local partners such as the EiABC University in Addis Abeba and the Bahir Dar university. This paper should therefore be read as a teaser, a state of the art and first insights in the opportunities of the use of collective spaces in industrial landscapes in Ethiopia but is far from a finished product yet.

Giving meaning to those collective spaces in the industrial landscapes, transcending the purely economic rationalized space is one of the essential keys to let those spaces better integrate in the existing social and spatial structures of the city. We witness a general consensus among different disciplines that this process of industrialization should go in a sustainable and inclusive way. In policy thinking and purely urbanistic approaches

Figure 7. (left) Textiles in traditional context (Own picture, 2018)
Figure 8. (righ): Textiles in industrial context (Source: Movie still CGTN, 2017)

the meaning of collective spaces within the industrial landscapes is on the other hand rather forgotten. Starting from multiple on-site observations at the level of the streetscape, more than strictly urbanistic or architectural approaches, this research proposal seeks to embrace a profound inclusive and sustainable implementation and development of the industrial landscapes (villages) in Ethiopia.

In a next phase, more fieldwork and on-site observations will be conducted to better understand the actual use of the collective spaces both inside and outside the factory space to further document the potencies of it. Later, strategies and small-scale interventions that will transcend the purely descriptive approach will be developed.

REFERENCES

Angelil, M.; Hebel, D. (2010). Cities of change: Addis Ababa, Transformation strategies for urban territories in the 21st century. Basel: Birkhäuser.

Chang, Leslie T. Factory Girls: From Village to City in a Changing China. New York: Spiegel & Grau, 2008.

Cao Fei - Whose Utopia, 2006. Consulted on february 8 2020. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OB0qJC2sp_0.

Cherenet, Z.; Sewnet, H. (2012). Building Ethiopia: Sustainability and innovation in architecture and design. Addis Abeba: Digital Impressions.

F. E. Ian Hamilton. Industrialization in Developing and Peripheral Regions. 1st edition. London: Routledge, 1986.https://www.crcpress.com/Industrialization-in-Developing-and-Peripheral-Regions/Hamilton/p/book/9781138102354.

Fielding, A. J. (1994). Industrial Change and Regional Development in Western Europe. Urban Studies, 31(4–5), 679–704.

Gehl, J. (1994). Places for people. Melbourne: City of Melbourne.

Lip, Evelyn. Feng shui: environments of power: a study of Chinese architecture. London: Academy Editions, 1995.

Saunders, D. (2010). Arrival city: How the largest migration in history is reshaping our world. New York: Pantheon Books.

Wu, Fulong, Fangzhu Zhang, en Christopher J. Webster, red. Rural migrants in urban China: enclaves and transient urbanism. Routledge contemporary China series 104. London ; New York: Routledge, 2014.

Wang, Fang, en Martin Prominski, red. Urbanization and Locality: Strengthening Identity and Sustainability by Site-Specific Planning and Design. Heidelberg New York Dordrecht London: Springer, 2016.

PAPER #2.21

THE "SECOND LIFE" OF A BUILDING. HIDDEN FLEXIBILITY POSSIBILITIES ON APPROPRIATION OF ARCHITECTURAL SPACE

Caio R. Castro[a], Amílcar Gil Pires[a], João Mascarenhas Mateus[a]
[a]Lisbon School of Architecture, Lisbon, Portugal

ABSTRACT

An apartment building built in 1960 in a neighbourhood 5 km away from downtown Lisbon is the basis of this article. This, with a structural configuration composed of pillars located almost exclusively on the perimeter of the apartments, allowed some units to have spatial metamorphoses where once were spaces segmented by walls.
In this article, we analyze the modifications that interfered in the original spaces adjacent to the façade, therefore, the dining room, kitchen and bedroom, and also in small spaces located between them and the exterior, namely the balconies and the laundry room.
In this case, flexibility has the potential to be almost total, approaching the open-plan proposal. However, since this potential is surrounded by the original walls, these played a decisive role in interfering in some spaces, staying at the same place, but referring to a different spatial use. In others, on the contrary, their suppression was total, joining spaces once completely separated, and consequently suppressing some predetermined spaces.
A similar phenomenon, and in some completely attached to the spatial changes stated above, has also occurred in the skin of the building which serves as a membrane between the interior and exterior.
The original elements and configuration had in themselves a possibility of modification, and although not planned by the architect, it was glimpsed by the residents, when modifying elements such as hollow blocks and the possibility of merging the kitchen with the dinning room and also trasnforming the balcony into interior space. The intention with which each inhabitant realized this possibility generated the heterogeneity of solutions seen, where it is explicit a desire for personalization of their own home.
In this article, we sought to analyze the initial space as projected, and the resulting metamorphosis, in a confrontation between the morphological observation made by the author and the result of interviews with the residents who performed the "second life" of the building. Thus, obtaining conclusions that decipher the variety of solutions seen in both the modified interior space and the skin elements of the building.

KEYWORDS

Evolutive architecture; building metamorphosis; floorplan flexibility; vernacular architecture; architecture without architects.

INTRODUCTION

As time goes by, buildings are subjected to changes. These may be due to climatic and atmospheric actions, such as the effect of rain on the materials that make up the object's surface. Processes that we call patina when it refers to the relationship between metals and the environment, and calcification when it involves stone, ceramics or products derived from artificial cement. There is also the effect of the infiltration of water on the porous surfaces of the skin of a building,

the appearance of cracks and chinks due to movements of the soil under the foundations, among other possible phenomena that may occur as a result of the action of the environment on the building.

However, there are other types of transformations, which are intrinsically linked to the basic nature of buildings and which differs from other constructions not inhabited by humans. These, in turn, create a relationship with their morphology and spatiality.

According to the concept of Claire and Michael Duplay (1982, 26), this relationship is divided into two. It is characterized as being passive, when the user is only influenced by the environment, and thus "the way the inhabitant uses and appropriates the domestic space is related to the housing available to him, constituting itself as an adaptation, as a circumstantial fact. " (Cruz 2006, 240, author's translation). In this relation, the space is highly imposing, since the creator decides for the user and projects how the future experience of the user will be in the space, aiming that this space, "(...) conceived from the program, will provide (from the architect's point of view) a more interesting and easier everyday life, and is built as an alternative to the current situation. " (Idem 2006, author's translation).

In the active relationship, the dynamics are different, of two vectors, because it allows the user to interfere in the built space that he enjoys and surrounds him. That is, the initial conformation foreseen by the design of the architect or engineer is a base that undergoes mutations. This necessarily involves a physical transformation of the building, which leads to a "second life", no longer dependent on the intentions of its creator, just as it does when a person reaches the capacity and maturity to be independent of their parents. As in human physiology, the change in physical space necessarily requires a chronological advance under the initial provision:

> Change is as endemic to a city's ageing process as it is to that of human beings: in the case of the physiognomy of residential areas, that change can range in scale from complete redevelopment at one extreme to the addition of a room to an existing house or, at the micro scale, the replacement of a window frame. (Whitehand, J.W.R., and M. H. Carr, Christine 1999, 1661-1662)

1. APPROPRIATION OF ARCHITECTURAL SPACE

The motivation that leads to the process of user intervention in their space can have an endogenous root to the building, in situations where the spatial conformation and / or its formal elements are so incompatible with the desires of its users that it makes their enjoyment involved in friction. The main reason that leads to this situation is related to a mismatch between what the user expects to find in the space in which he interacts and what he finds out. In other words, for the average user, space is first of all an ideal construction, based on more or less similar examples found in other buildings in the city, or on typologies and elements that go through history and remain unchanged.

When user's find, in real space, configurations foreign to their stereotypical ideals of space, there is a desire to mold space to their measurements.

Some housing developments made during the Modernist period demonstrate this, from the larger scale, that of the neighborhood and the public space design, to the private scale, that of the house. With projectual premises that abandoned several concepts based on the history of what would be the user relationship with space and its elements, they ended up creating spatialities that caused strangeness in what is typically considered home. Thus, the only way this identification with the home occurs is

through the spatial metamorphosis carried out by its inhabitants.
A paradigmatic example is what happened with the building complex of the Israeli settlement of Ramot Polin, designed by the architect Zvi Hecker, and located close to Jerusalem. In these, the membrane between interior and exterior is based on three-dimensional connections of several pentagons conjugated to form spaces. The transformations carried out by its inhabitants denied this geometry, and after their removal and construction of new geometries, forms with cubic bases, more traditional compared to the original ones, were used.
The Quartiers Modernes Frugès in the suburb of Bordeaux also demonstrates the strangeness of the inhabitants with unusual shapes and configurations. An example is visible in the horizontal windows, which in many cases were filled in half to form two common windows at each end, this being one among other changes made by the inhabitants of the houses:

> Over the years they have transformed Pessac's abstracted imagery into a much more familiar domestic vernacular. The inhabitants, it seems, were especially concerned about the absence of two features characteristic of conventional houses in the region. Many felt they could not live in houses with front doors opening directly into the living rooms, which Le Corbusier had provided in order to make the most of the available space. Consequently a number of houses have had corridors carved out of the living rooms to accommodate the traditional pattern. The most persistent difficulty in understanding the houses was, however, the absence of a visible roof. The provision of roof gardens and terraces on top of the flat roof was seen by some to be a benefit, but for many it simply did not match their expectations of what a house should look like. (Moore, Gerald Allen and Lyndon 2000, 140)

On the other hand, the origin of the spatial change can be due to factors exogenous to the building itself, which occur when the user starts to have, from a certain moment in time, different requirements from those he previously had. In this case, if the construction responded adequately in the past, it no longer has the same efficiency, a situation that occurs, for example, when the number of households increases and there is an immediate demand for new room space.
In a historical approach, this spatial inadequacy to certain demands of a certain moment after the initial construction of the building is also evident in the conversion of old Roman buildings after the fall of the empire. Due to the political change, structures such as the amphitheatres of Lucca and Arles were transformed from a venue place into housing, on the upper levels where the access corridors to the grandstands used to be, and in shops at street level.
Syracuse's cathedral is another notable example. The building was originally founded by the Greeks around 500BC as a pagan temple, fell into disuse during the period of Roman domination, and later, in the 7th century AD, was transformed into an orthodox church, an undertaking that resulted, among other changes, in the closure of the gaps between the Doric columns to create the internal nave. Over time, other changes took place, which transformed the building "in an architectural palimpsest". (Van Ooijen 2019, 5)
Regardless of the origin of the motivation for the transformation of the building, this is primarily linked to the judgment of the user of the initial space that surrounds it, in order to understand it and propose changes, which leads to the "second life" of the building. This, unlike the monodimensional view that characterizes the phenomenon as mischaracterization, brings to the building greater vitality, by allowing the natural adaptation of its spatial forms to circumstances that arise over time:

> In fact, buildings are not static. If they were, their longevity would imply an immutability that would place them at risk of becoming obsolete. On the contrary, when buildings are allowed to stay 'in sync' with the changes in the world around them, their durability is reinforced, contributing to their resilience. In this view, resilience is an essential characteristic of individual buildings, and their capacity to adjust to changing circumstances is the key to achieving resilience. (Van Ooijen 2019, 4)

2. METODOLOGY AND CASE STUDY

After presenting the phenomenon of space appropriation, it is clear that there are two important mutual and complementary vectors that dominate architectural transformation. One relates to the expectations that a particular user has about the function and / or aesthetics of the building, and another, is directly related to the configuration of architectural materiality in its state before being modified.

The case study of this article allows these two vectors to be verified in practice. Thus, the first step was to carry out a historical study to find out what the building looked like in its initial state. The next step was to catalogue the changes and choose two that are predominant (the closing of the balcony and the removal of the concrete bricks), which were grouped in Results 1 and Results 2. The analysis made in these two topics considered the morphology of the modifications made, as well as the intentions of who made them. This latter was obtained using interviews with residents and, seen together with the contextualization of changes in the living habits of Portuguese families.

This methodology was applied in a building located in the parish of Alcântara in Lisbon and built in 1960, an example that represents a sample (both of spatial typology and façade elements) of the predominant multifamily residential architecture produced in Lisbon in the mid-20th century.

This building, located between two squares and raised on pilotis, has six floors and consists of two independent blocks, which we will call Alcântara 1 and Alcântara 2 (Fig. 1). Structurally, the pillars are concentrated in the core of stairs and elevators, and in the perimeter of each block, so that interference with the floorplan design of each unit is minimal.

Each block has two apartments per floor (Fig. 2), and each apartment, whose total floor area is about 72 m², has three bedrooms, all with a balcony. The two largest rooms are grouped on one of the façades, and on the opposite (where the kitchen and dining room are also located) the smallest, originally the maid's room, which is directly connected to the kitchen. Between this and the exterior façade is the laundry room, which has the same width as the balconies, but was originally covered by a reinforced concrete membrane to serve as a grid (Fig. 3), which will be subject to intense modifications after the building's inauguration.

Figure 1. Alcântara 1 on the right and Alcântara 2 on the left, on its current state. Source: (Author 2019)

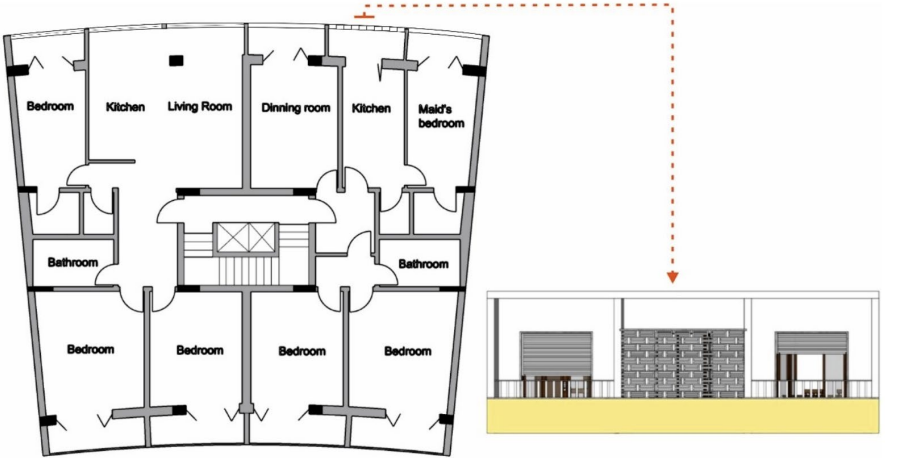


Figure 2. Typical floorplan,on the right,with arrow indicating part of the apartment's original elevation, and an example showing the modified layout on the left. Source: (Author 2019)

3. RESULTS 1

The use of reinforced concrete grids in Portuguese architecture began in the 1950s when the Modern Movement took on a greater presence in Portugal in the face of the hitherto dominant traditional style called "Português Suave". The architects of that time, who were fascinated by the vitality of what was produced in Brazil, widely disseminated by the publication Brazil Builds, did not hesitate to use this membrane in their projects, among other elements they saw reproduced in that publication.

In the multifamily residential architecture made in Portugal, this grid is associated with the laundry room, where the garments were washed in the laundry tub and hang out to dry. The washing and drying machine was not common in Portuguese homes in the 1960s. The kitchen was directly connected to this area, generally occupying the same dimension as the facade, but located behind it. With this, the natural light into the kitchen was dependent on the treatment given to the laundry room. This typology is present in the Alcântara 1 and 2 building and is repeated by countless examples in Lisbon buildings constructed at the same time. The reinforced concrete grids, in this case, made of hollow bricks, had the function of hiding the unpredictable arrangement of the hanging clothes, an attempt very pertinent to the Modern Movement, that is, to endow the world with order, which would be broken with the addition of impurities to the formal composition of the facade. However, paradoxically to another dogma of Modern Architecture, they also hide the real function of the space where they fit.

The grid was not well accepted by the inhabitants of the Alcântara 1 and 2 building, basically for two reasons: climatic inadequacy and psychological factors related to the sensation of claustrophobia.

Developed for the tropical climate, where the winters are mild and of short duration and the summer with high temperatures and moist air, the grid adequately works to the function of ventilating in their country of origin. In Portugal, the act of washing clothes by hand with virtually no protection against the harsh winter climate dictated the need for measures to modify the membrane, in order to provide better thermal comfort.

That said, the least invasive solution to the preexistent shape that the inhabitants found was the placement of glass frames located immediately behind the grid, which allows it to be opened and closed through the lateral slide of two window panes, depending on the weather conditions.

Externally, this new skin overlaid on the original is only denounced by the small gap between the top end of the grid and the ceiling of the laundry room, which was previously empty, and no longer is, since it is filled by the window frames. In the two examples where this occurs in the Alcântara 1 building, on the fourth and fifth floors, this filling is independent of the frame behind the grid, that is, the closing part that fills the void fits into the perimeter composed by it, within the dimension corresponding to the thickness of the grid, and the rest of the frames are in a recessed vertical plane, behind the grid. This procedure demonstrates a process distant of a pragmatic solution of appropriation, which would be the total closure of both the span and the grid with a single frame. Instead, it's noticeable by the inhabitant's solution that they've had a comprehension of the two architectural elements as separate parts.

The morphology of grid modification described until now was present in a large number of apartments in the Alcântara 1 building, and correspond to the first moment of transformation of the grids, which begins to occur, according to residents' reports, at the end of the 1960s.

The aforementioned fourth and fifth floors are the only ones to still use the grid, except for a unit on the second floor, where it remains original. However, these two floors

already have a second modification made on the first, which we described earlier. In order to solve the reported problem of claustrophobia, the inhabitants of these two floors tore part of the grid to place a window that would provide them with a relationship with the outside, not only visual, something that was blocked by the grid, but also enable the act of starring at the window, leaning at the sill while enjoying the view that allows for a landscape view up to the Tagus River. In addition, in a total subversion of the original function of the grid, they allow access to the clothesline located outside, hanging on a console supported on the facade, which is also a change made by the inhabitants.

Morphologically, the relationship between pre-existence and the new element is different on each floor. On the fifth floor, the window is located almost in the centre, while on the floor below it hangs to the left.

In both cases, the added window rests perfectly on the second layer of hollow bricks, and on the fourth floor, the top of the window is also inserted according to the modular design of the layers, different from the fifth floor, where the window cuts part of the bricks. However, on the sides of the windows on both floors there is no relation to the original layers, and the hollow bricks were all cut for the placement of the windows.

The placement of the fifth-floor window is recent, after 2015, and for the fourth floor, it was not possible to obtain a precise date with the interviewees, who, however, said that it was something done a long time ago. This information leads to another analysis of the two elements. The oldest modification has a marble finish on the edges, just as it exists in the original openings of the building, such as the access doors to the balconies. The most recent one does not have such a finish, and cement mass was used on the edges. It is possible to raise the hypothesis that the greatest care with the old intervention is because, overall, the modifications in the building at the time when it was made were few, and hence the concern of the builder to correlate the new window to the existing ones, aiming for aesthetic integration. In the most recent window, this no longer exists, since the heterogeneity of solutions on the facade is such that this concern is not justified.

The last type of transformation of the grid element is its total removal, to solve the aforementioned problem of claustrophobia, and also to provide more natural light to the kitchen environment. The search for more natural light was, indeed, the dominant factor in the interviewees who opted to remove the grid.

With the removal of the original membrane, the one that replaces it is composed of aluminum profiles (the oldest), or PVC (the most recent), and filled with glass.

The new skin is divided into three parts: the lower one, corresponds to the sill, just above the intermediate one is composed of movable parts that slide, and above this a transom.

It is important to mention the intention of the inhabitants to remove any remnants of the original grid, which explains the inexistence of cases where there could be use of the two layers of hollow bricks (properly filled to cover the holes) to serve as a parapet, with the new skin to be built above it. This eventual choice would consist of a more economical solution, since it would use less material by eliminating the need for the lower element of the new skin.

As for the existence of transom at the top of the new skin, there is no evidence of a compositional relationship between it and the previous shape of the void above the concrete grid. The use of the transom is present in countless other examples of modified buildings in Lisbon, and most of these have never presented the original grid. However, it cannot be excluded that the choice of the position of the base of the transom has some link with the position of the void. As it is visible from the outside,

in fact, several examples of the new glass skin's transom of the laundry room have the dimension of the original void above the grid. This possibility was not answered through the interviews, and its confirmation is problematic because within the internal space of the laundry room, behind the grid, the door that allows access from this to the kitchen has its top exactly aligned to the top of the grid. That is, the void at the top of the grid is equal to the space between the top of the door and the ceiling. With this, it is concluded that if the similarity of shape between the transom and the void is not a coincidence, it may be the result of another geometry used as a reference.

As for the type of glass used in the new skin, the choice for textured ones prevails over transparent ones, which allow privacy without the use of curtains. It is noted that there is no concern with repeating types already used in neighboring apartments, which results in a huge diversity of light effects and reflections when the look from the outside turns to the facade. This diversity is not by chance, but the result of an attitude of personalization according to the resident's taste in the type of glass.

However, although not so common, textured glass is also used in balcony enclosing (the so-called "marquises" in Portuguese language), another type of modification, which although typologically is similar to the new skin of the laundry room, has a complexity and origin totally different from this, and it doesn't fit in this article.

4. RESULTS 2

The structure of pillars located on the perimeter walls of the apartments has allowed that the appropriation and new internal distribution of the layout could be done with great freedom, with little friction between the pillars and the new design of the floorplans as decided by the residents.

In the Alcântara 2 block, at least five apartments have made changes to the internal layout, always focusing on the redesign of the kitchen-living room connection. At the time Alcantara's building was erected, segmentation between the various areas that make up the layout of the residential building was a common practice in Lisbon's multi-family houses, intending to create autonomous routes between the intimate area of the rooms and the noble space of the living room, the place where the family interacted and also used to welcome guests.

The kitchen, in the case of this building, originally dedicated to the upper-middle class, has a direct link to the maid's room and respective bathroom, to isolate the functioning of this wing with the rest of the apartment:

> The areas where the servants move are preferably away from the eyes of the head of the family and visitors of the house. Their actions are intended to be spread throughout the house in tidying and cleaning or preparing meals, but the crossing of their movements with the other lives that inhabit the house are unnecessary. (Pedrosa 2010, 113, author's translation)

A combination of new roles for family members, the relationship between cooking and leisure, and above all, new labour relations where the maid, being less and less requested, performs the tasks of cleaning particular houses per hours, dictated the obsolescence of the internal compartmentalized layout of the apartment's floorplan.

Consequently, the union between kitchen and living room in a single space, made possible by the removal of the wall that previously separated the two environments, allows gaining more visual amplitude and views to the outside, in addition to fostering new social interactions (Fig. 3). The space of the

laundry room becomes useless with the use of the washing machine, combined with the help of the clothesline attached to the outer perimeter of the apartment, installed by the residents themselves, as already mentioned.
The pragmatic attitude of increasing gross floor area also appears in the suppression of the balcony as an intermediary between exterior and interior - something already rehearsed as an attitude in the enclosing of these elements and their transformation into "marquises". However, the removal process is much more radical and involves the original door to access the balcony to be discarded, in addition to the destruction of one of the sidewalls. Also, the unevenness between the balcony floor and the living room is suppressed, and the membrane role is now played by the new glass panels and white PVC profiles installed on the facade perimeter.
If spatially the suppression of the pre-existent is total, without leaving traces of the previous layout, the same does not happen with the element corresponding to the facade. When installing this new panel, which occupies the modules where the balcony and the laundry room once stood, the residents chose to keep a remnant of the wall that served as a boundary between the two modules, which, visually speaking, translates into the permanence on the facade of the thickness of this wall.
The maintenance of such an element, which has no structural function, is mainly due to a decision linked to aesthetic factors in maintaining the external vertical modulation of the facade.
With the removal of the original façade and its consequent stripping from the pillar, this it is now exposed. In the apartment visited by the authors, located on the sixth floor, the design of the open kitchen furniture, made by the resident himself, has no direct relationship with this pillar, so that the support bench and cabinet, although close, does not touch the element.
The visit to this apartment allowed the authors to notice other changes to the original plan. While the union of the kitchen and the living room is common to the five modified apartments - information obtained through reports and confirmed by nighttime analyzes of the facade when the lights are on - other more discreet changes could be observed in this example.
In this example, the old maid's room no longer has that specific function, and the small size of the area is circumvented with the suppression of the balcony, which ends up adding more floor area. This suppression occurs in all but the second floor, where the original balcony was maintained.
Access to this room is no longer directly connected to the kitchen - now joined to the living room - instead, is linked to the entrance hall through the creation of a small corridor.
The previously private bathroom now opens onto this corridor and is for collective use by the inhabitants. This change led to the removal of the old pantry, which was no longer needed as a large number of kitchen cabinets allowed for the storage of food and other utensils.
As for the hall, this one becomes wider with the demolition of the walls that isolated the formerly two main bedrooms and the main bathroom from the rest of the apartment, and there is now a spatial fluidity between the living room and kitchen integrated with the entrance hall.
The opposite façade, as well as the corresponding spaces where two rooms are located, has not undergone the same type of metamorphosis, maintaining itself intact since the construction of the building until today. Except for one unit, next to the one visited by the author on the sixth floor, where the two balconies were recently enclosed with the placement of "marquises", without, however, undergoing any change in the floorplan.

Figure 3. Views inside an apartment after the removal of the walls and creation the new skin, as seen on the floorplan on the floorplan at Fig. 1. Source: (Booking.com)

CONCLUSION

Through the analysis of the Alcântara building, it's noticeable that the organic metamorphosis of its architectural elements enabled its updating, from a project made for the 1960s to the demands of the residents as time went by.

The interaction of the inhabitants with the pre-existing elements, in the specifically case of the reinforced concrete grid, is reflected almost unanimously with its inadequacy and the need to change the element. This translates into its total removal and replacement by glass and metal panels, or, when maintained, in the perforation of the grid to insert a conventional opening. These two solutions, among others possible, but not verified in this building, demonstrate a certain repetition of procedures, where one resident ends up influencing the other with the form used for their intervention on the original. Still, the two solutions have variations, so that the design of the grid when torn to fit a window is not the same in the two examples. In the same way, the glass and metal panels vary from one another, including the color of the material, the type of glass used, the number of metallic profiles of the panel and the blinds placed in front of it, in cases where these exist.

When the reason for the modification arises from internal spatial demands, the balconies function as an expansion space, being suppressed. The reflection of this procedure on the outside, however, tries to keep a certain unity in relation to other apartments, as it occurs with the grid.

The perimeter location of the building's pillars works as a facilitator in the transformation of the apartment's plan, and has allowed it to undergo a change to be in accordance with the designs of the inhabitants in contemporary times.

REFERENCES

Whitehand, J.W.R., and M. H. Carr, Christine. 1999. *The Changing Fabrics of Ordinary Residential Areas*, Urban Studies 36, no. 10, 1661-1667.

Cruz, M. 2006. *Construir a casa: Elementos exploratórios para a compreensão dos conteúdos, do contexto e do processo de concepção arquitectónica da habitação unifamiliar,* Revista da Faculdade de Letras: Sociologia 16, 231– 250.

Van Ooijen, J., 2019. *Resilient Matters: The Cathedral of Syracuse as an Architectural Palimpsest*. Architectural Histories, 7(1): 26, 1-12.

Duplay, C., Duplay, M. 1982. *Méthode illustrée de création architecturale*. Paris: Editions du Moniteur.

Moore, Charles W., Gerald Allen, and Donlyn Lyndon. 2000. *The place of houses*. Berkeley, Calif: University of California Press.

PEDROSA, Patrícia Santos. *Habitar em Portugal nos anos 1960*. (PhD thesis. Escola Tècnica Superior d'Arquitectura de Barcelona, 2010)

PAPER #2.22

SHOPPING CENTER AND CONTEMPORARY CITY: DISCUSSION OF APPROPRIATION FORMS

Pedro Bento[a]
[a]CIAUD, Lisbon School of Architecture, Universidade de Lisboa, Lisboa, Portugal

ABSTRACT

One of the most controversial and outstanding pieces of the contemporary urban landscape is undoubtedly the shopping center. Loved by ones and hated by others, it has been one of the most polemic topics in the architectural and urban discussion throughout the last decades, whose role in the construction of the urban, did not yet find a sufficiently clear answer. On this occasion, when the importance of architecture in defining the city is under discussion, it seemed especially pertinent to approach this theme, thus, contributing to its clarification. Our purpose is to approach with particular detail, the forms of appropriation that take place in these collective spaces, assuming that the movements performed by users are not limited to consumption, but they encompass much broader and diverse experiences, from cultural, gastronomic or children's leisure, to the access to a wide range of services, by the way, similar to the forms of appropriation that occurred in the traditional public spaces of the canonical city. To carry out this research, an in-depth analysis of the distribution of uses and activities, found in six case studies, was carried out. Their choice (three in Lisbon and three in Barcelona) was based on two assumptions: the representativeness of the diversity of their physical characteristics (mainly, size and model); their position in the city (more central or more peripheral). To conclude, the identified uses correspond to the existing offer in the places that constitute the artifact, and the activities correspond to all those actions that may take place in the collective spaces. Through the reading and comparative interpretation of the building plans, the "in loco" observation and the photographic records, the current work analyzes in detail the forms of appropriation of each artifact and its collective spaces and ends with brief conclusions.

KEYWORDS

Forms of appropriation; shopping centre; collective spaces; public space; contemporary city.

INTRODUCTION

The discussion of the role played by shopping centres in the contemporary city is still a controversial topic. Criticized by some and appreciated by others, these spaces are today one of the most outstanding pieces of the contemporary urban landscape. With this study *it's intended to demonstrate that the movements that can be carried out in shopping centres are not limited to consumerist actions, but that they cover much richer experiences, such as cultural, gastronomic, children's leisure, or access to a certain service, similarly, precisely, of what happened in traditional public spaces.* The analysis of the distribution of uses and activities gives us the possibility of drawing concrete conclusions about the diversity of forms of appropriation offered by the collective spaces generated by shopping centres. In that sense, the uses correspond

to those founded on the stores / commercial spaces that constitute the shopping centre and the activities correspond to all those actions / movements that can take place in the collective spaces of the mall. The uses are classified in - anchor tenants, restoration, services, retail and facilities - and activities in - gastronomic leisure (terraces), children's leisure (playgrounds), cultural leisure (multipurpose space), rest (rest spaces) and information. Through the reading and interpretation of the floor plans, the observation "in loco" and the photographic record, the present work analyses in detail the forms of appropriation of each artefact and its collective spaces and ends with a few brief conclusions.

1.LITERATURE REVIEW

It has been widely argued that shopping centers lead to a substitution, segregation and privatization of public space, generating uniform and ageographical spaces, monitored and controlled spaces, and thematic and simulated spaces, which eliminate diversity and freedom. Moreover, some authors such as Michael Sorkin, Mike Davis, Kenneth Jackson, Nan Ellin, William Whyte or Diane Ghirardo have accused shopping centers of weakening the public sphere and of inferring in the very notion of contemporary public space, considering them anti-democratic (Sorkin1992, 9-14), militarized (Davis1992, 178-179), artificialized (Jackson 1985, 260), panoptic (Ellin 1997, 73), who reject the activities of a true center (Whyte 1988, 208), and oriented exclusively to consumption (Ghirardo 1996, 66).

However, others, such as Rem Koolhaas, Sze Tsung Leong, Giandomenico Amendola, Witold Rybczynski, Margaret Crawford or Miguel S. Graça, find themselves at the opposite end of the cited positions. Some emphasize the inevitability of their hegemony in the actual "generic city" (Koolhaas 1997, 3-12), where consumption is the last stronghold of public activity (Leong 2001, 128-155), some say shopping centres offer new centralities and sociability (Améndola 1997, 259) safe urbanities (Rybczynski 1995, 210), constitute one of the most important architectural paradigms of the century. XXI in a world that is itself already a shopping centre (Crawford 1992, 15) and some explain that the shopping centres are today (...) one of the most visible manifestations of today's consumer society (Graça 2010, 12).

Nuno Portas (2011: 187), for instance, said that "the basis of the structure of the urbanized territory is its Collective Space System." He recalled precisely the teachings of Kevin Lynch (1981), Bollnow (1963) and Balmond (2003) on the importance of structure in the ordering of occupation and functioning of the territory, by promoting the creation of a mental map that allows understanding of the territory, its position with respect to it, as well as its appropriation. Then he explained that this system is the network that connects the various elements of the urban agglomeration and that it was constituted by the set of spaces that the subject travels and from which he reads and perceives the city. While in the canonical city, public spaces tend to concentrate a set of meanings - since they simultaneously respond to questions of form, function and symbolic value (sign) - in the vast urban area, the coincidence of these meanings is difficult to find. Thus, he adds that "shopping centers, for example, began to associate diversified uses related to leisure and culture, and this brought with them socialization practices. They have become meeting places, urban references and even poles generating new centralities (Wall, 2008: 22, 27), such as Norteshopping in Matosinhos or Arrábida Shopping in V.N. Gaia."

In short, loved by some and hated by others (Cautela and Ostidich 2009, 7) the shopping

center is one of the most controversial and prominent pieces of the contemporary urban landscape and has been one of the most controversial issues in the architectural and urban discussion of recent decades. However, it still does not find a clear enough answer about its role in the construction of the urban.

2. METHODOLOGY

2.1. Object of Study

The object of the study is the urban shopping centers and other leisure and consumption collective artifacts that, since around two decades ago, were deployed in the compact cities of Lisbon and Barcelona. Once the object of study is defined, it is important to determine the case studies that are representative of all collective areas to be studied. Rather than analyzing an extensive list of case studies, in a more or less superficially way, I decided to focus on only six case studies, yet, in an incisive and profound way. To select the case studies, I relied on two criteria – the size and location. According to the typological criterion, the selected spaces should be representative of the different types of shopping and leisure centres that can be found in the city, mainly in relation to its size and format. The size can vary from a small or medium size, to a large and very large dimension. According to the standards fixed by the International Council of Shopping Centers (ICSC), the commercial centers of very large size, are those with more than 80,000 m2 of gross leasable area, the large-scale shopping centers rank between 80,000 and 40.000m2 of gross leasable area, while medium or small size shopping centers are those of less than 40.000m2 of gross leasable area. As per their size, three case studies were selected in Lisbon and three in Barcelona. According to this criterion (very large, large, medium or small size), I chose, respectively, Colombo Shopping Centre, Vasco da Gama Shopping Centre and shopping and leisure complex of Campo Pequeno; In Barcelona, La Maquinista Shopping Centre, L'Illa Diagonal Shopping Centre and shopping and entertainment centre Maremagnum. Furthermore, these objects also correspond to different formats: La Maquinista corresponds to an opened shopping center, Maremágnum, to a closed shopping center and L'Illa, to a simultaneously opened and closed shopping center. In Lisbon no opened shopping center was identified, therefore, we picked up two: Colombo and Campo Pequeno, closed shopping centers and Vasco da Gama, opened and closed. According to the location criteria, sites selected are representative of different areas in the city. Maremágnum and Vasco da Gama are located at fun and festive areas of the city, in both context, marked by the presence of water: in Lisbon, the Tagus River; in Barcelona, the sea. L'Illa and Campo Pequeno are located in consolidated areas of the compact city; La Maquinista or Colombo Shopping Center, in vacant or obsolete areas of the city, under renovation.

2.2. Research Hypothesis

The approach put forward in this research aims at demonstrating that some of the newer shopping and leisure centers, emerged in the inner city, are playing a very important role in the construction of the contemporary compact city - producing new collective spaces of gathering and stay, expanding the public sphere and generating new urbanities.

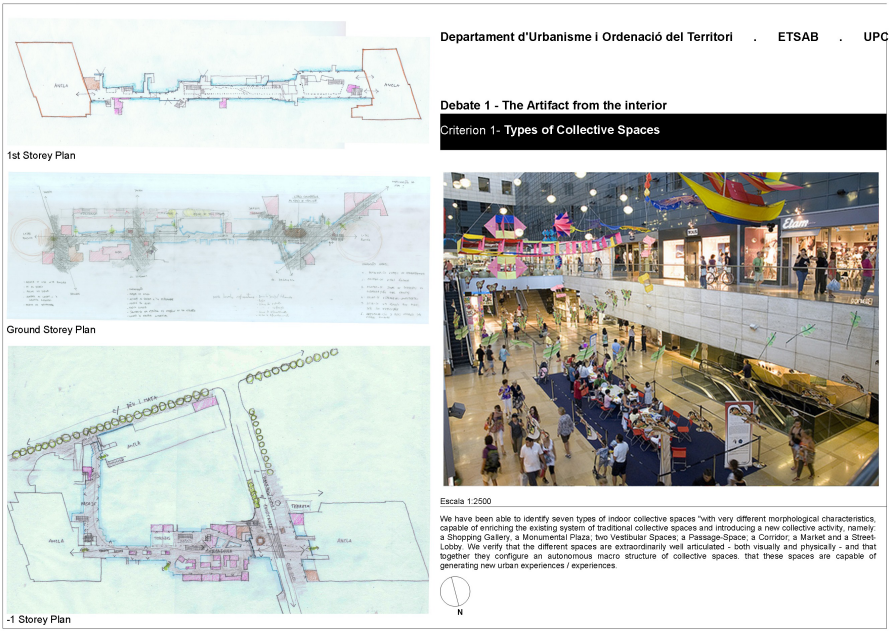


Figure 1. Case Study example. L'Illa Diagonal, Barcelona. Source: (Author 2015)

3. DISCUSSION

The collective spaces generated by shopping centers constitute new urban spaces that have arisen in the compact city that complete the traditional public spaces, extending or expanding them. Thus, the work begins by analyzing in detail each of those artifacts (Fig.1) and ends up with an analysis of the forms of appropriation of them, discussing their mono or multi-functionality (Fig.2).

3.1. La Maquinista

In La Maquinista we identified ten units of collective spaces in a total of five types of spaces: les Naus Street, dels Trens Street, dels Ponts Street, a Passage, an Interior Corridor, the North Entrance Square with Potosí Street, the South Entrance Square with Sao Paulo Street, the Clock Square, the Central Square and a large leisure and restaurant terrace on the second floor. Of the advertised spaces, only one is presented as an interior space - the commercial corridor that functions as a transitional space between some of the most important collective spaces of the shopping centre and the hypermarket.

Les Naus Street, for example, is a street that connects the Ciutat d'Asunción street with the Dominican Republic street and in which the cinema and South entrance squares are developed just when they cross the streets dels Ponts and dels Trens respectively. It is of the three streets generated by the artifact the widest with about 21m or 31m if we consider the 5m arcades on both sides. And it has a length of about 220m. It is flanked by high facades, three commercial floors, and equipped with urban furniture (medium-sized

trees, lampposts, benches, wastebaskets, kiosks, etc.). This space can be accessed from the outside directly at street level from Ciutat d'Assunción street, and down stairs from the South entrance plaza or from the Dominican Republic street. It can also be accessed from the interior through dels Trens Street or dels Ponts Street. The longitudinal profile of this street is quite interesting to the extent that different sections of the same axis can be identified, with a singular spatiality. In the first section, we find the one that starts from Ciutat d'Asunción street until it meets the facility, it has a character like an announcement. That is to say, the user perceives the extension of an urban axis that starts from a public space towards a different collective space or the opposite that extends from the collective to the public space outside the facility. The second section would be the one in which the street becomes a corridor with a single floor height and where it communicates vertically with the other levels of the shopping centre, either through mechanical belts or through elevators. Immediately, a third section is generated, which is the one in which the cinema square emerges, a diaphanous space totally open for all kinds of events. And, later, a fourth section that would be the one that goes from the square to meet the Trens Street, which would be perhaps the highest point of this urban element, the street in all its splendour, flanked by triple-height commercial facades and imposing trees that are generating a movement of light and shadow and a feeling of freshness, only comparable to some of the most representative and traditional spaces in Barcelona such as the Rambla of Catalunya. And, the fifth and last section that would be the space that gives continuity to this axis and that through a vertical communication system in stairs communicates with the exterior street named Republica Dominican Street.

In *La Maquinista shopping centre, the forms of appropriation change according to uses and activities existing in each space and depending on the time in which those spaces are used. In general, we would say that they are quite varied. The mix of uses is quite well projected, there are no mono-functional spaces or areas where we find exclusively retail*. The uses founded are distributed as follows: tenant anchors are located on the periphery of the artefact, mainly occupying the ground floor and first floor of the building bodies that face the streets *Ciutat d'Asunción* and *Sao Paulo*; Cafes, bars and other catering services are distributed throughout the ground floor and first floor of the mall in a homogeneous manner, occupying key points of the building, such as the meeting areas between different urban elements, squares and passage areas; restaurants are concentrated in two zones, a food court on the first floor of the street of *les Naus*, which opens in the form of a balcony on the east entrance and a new gastronomic space on the second floor, known as the terraces of La Maquinista, where It`s added a great variety of restaurants and bars. Similar to other cases, we will find more services and commodities on the ground and first floors, mainly due to the continuity that was established with the surrounding public spaces. Retail is concentrated in the first two floors (ground floor and first floor), there are no stores on the second floor. What should be noted about the stores is that the type of retail founded on the ground floor, such as videogame stores, perfumeries, bookstores, etc., differ a lot from that of the first floor most related to clothing and footwear. Facilities, such as cinemas or playgrounds are located exclusively on the second floor together with gastronomic areas, thus contributing to create a large day and night leisure zone. *Also, in the case of La Maquinista, all kinds of activities were found, that in one way or another are generating different behaviors among its users.*

3.2. L'Illa Diagonal

In l'Illa Diagonal shopping centre (Figs 1 y 2) we identified eight units of meeting and living spaces, in a total of seven types, with different morphological characteristics, namely: a Shopping Gallery; a Monumental Plaza; two Vestibular Spaces; a Space-Passage; a hallway; a Market and a Street-Lobby. The Shopping Gallery is one of the two most representative spaces in the shopping center. It is developed on two floors: on the ground floor it is interrupted by three vestibular spaces and on the upper floor it is continuous. The gallery is asymmetrical also relatively to its height. On the side facing the inner park of the block, it is two stories high and on the side facing Av. Diagonal it has three. The interior is uneven, complex, and lively, drawing visitors across it. The ground floor and the first floor are connected via escalators and elevators. The lighting is natural and artificial.

In l'Illa Diagonal there is no monofunctional space. All activities and uses were distributed so as to ensure the multifunctionality of the building in its entirety. The forms of appropriation are diverse and vary from space to space. According to the analyses carried out, we have been able to identify all types of use and activity. The uses are distributed as follows: Anchor tenants are located at the ends of the building, functioning as magnetic poles, which take people from one end to another; interestingly, the restoration uses appear on the ground floor at the ends of the building, in the basement they appear mostly scattered in the market and on the top floor promptly in the middle of the gallery and square spaces; the services appear essentially located on the ground floor, next to the vestibular spaces and passage and, in some cases, inside the square and the gallery. The various shops of commerce appear distributed in all the spaces of the commercial centre. Finally, the activities that take place in the shopping centre are scattered throughout the artefact.

3.3. Maremagnum

In the Maremagnum we identified five types of collective spaces, in a total of eight units: a Plaza; a shopping gallery; a Main Hall; two Secondary Halls; some corridors; and a terrace. In the same way as in the previous case, La Plaza del Maremagnum is the most significant collective space of stay and encounter of the artifact. It is a large space that is developed on three floors and is covered by a large asymmetric skylight, with a height that varies between 13 and 25m. It is a space of horizontal and vertical crossings, which introduces an interesting dynamism of movements inside, but it is at the same time a resting space and a place equipped with a cafeteria, ice cream parlor and terraces where one can refresh and hydrate. Due to its extremely central and touristic position in the city, it ends up being one of the most visited leisure and consumption centers. Access can be made from all four sides of the facility, either through the main and secondary lobbies, through corridors or even from the underground parking, going up stairs or elevator located in a central position. The diversity of uses and activities found generates different forms of appropriation and increases the plurality of the public. The Maremagnum is one of the most interesting cases in the corpus of study due precisely to the forms of appropriation it generates, much more related to leisure experiences than to consumer activities. Although it is still a place where you can go shopping, it is increasingly aimed at being a place where you can go to eat with friends or where you can go to entertain yourself in one of its musical, artistic or other events, which usually take place in the central interior square or on the terraces on the second floor. Also, in summer and for several years now, a part of the car park has been converted into a cinema space and spectacular horror and suspense films are screened throughout the night.

The mixture of uses is well designed and less segmented than in other cases. That is, restoration activities arise on all floors and not just one or two. The shops also work on all floors although with a higher incidence on the ground floor and first floor. However, with less weight than in other cases, there are also services on the ground floor and inside the building. On the first floor we can even find a maritime checkpoint of the Port of Barcelona. The only use that could not be found was a large anchor tenant that in this case can be justified due to the small size of the artefact. Regarding the existing activities, it is important to highlight the important role of the terraces that open both inside and outside the building and in each of the floors. As it has been pointed out, at least two multipurpose spaces that host all kinds of events are generated. The rest spaces are distributed throughout the building, through the insertion of own urban furniture, and increasing on the terraces of the second floor. The stairs function as informal places of rest and the terraces of the second floor as elevated viewpoints over the port and the city. The playgrounds or children spaces do not exist, probably, because all the outer space, where the Maremagnnum is located, is a great leisure area, and that right next to it is the BublePark, a dynamic outdoor amusement park for the little ones.

3.4. Colombo

As is evident, in large shopping centers such as Colombo, with about 475,000m2 of gross built area, numerous collective spaces can be found. We identified 33 spaces, which we could classify into six or seven types - squares, corridors, lobbies, gallery, garden and amusement park - or 15 subtypes, taking into account the different existing squares, corridors and lobbies. But before detailing each of them we need to talk about the structure of collective spaces that hides behind this shopping center - a system composed of a virtual South North backbone of first level, two symmetrical curved axes of second level and other two cross shafts of third level. On the first, which is marked from the geometric center of the road junction generated by the 2nd Circular Road and Lusíada Av. infrastructures, the Fountain, Entry, Tropic of Cancer and the Continent or North Entry squares are drawn. The second element of this macro structure is a curved axis where the Commercial Gallery, the nominated Entrance squares of the Navigators and the New World, and the Eastern and Western entrance halls rest. Turning the aforementioned curved axis until it is inverted, the third element of the system is generated on which the corridors that connect the squares of the Navigators and the New World with the South entrance square are established. Finally, third degree axes are drawn that come out of the central circular Tropic of Cancer Square and extend to the aforementioned curved axes.

Colombo, due to the large size and the way it is organized, creates a multitude of forms of appropriation in its interior, condenses existing uses and activities and, in a similar way to previous cases, it hierarchizes them floor by floor. On the ground floor and -1 we find mainly services - such as bank branches, post offices, insurance companies, travel agencies, pharmacies, the Portuguese club car, etc. - general trade stores - such as music stores, bookstores, stationery stores, gourmet stores, etc. - leisure facilities such as a chiquipark and solar club, and even a worship facility. We highlight a small church, with daily service of masses, located in one of the entrances, on the -1 floor. On the 1st floor, with the exception of a large anchor tenant specialized in culture and some bank branches, clothing and footwear stores are basically offered. On floor 2, two important restoration spaces and a significant leisure area are offered. A more informal dining space with fast-food restaurants supported by a large terrace-dining room and a more formal one where the user is invited to enter and eat inside the restaurant itself. The leisure

offer is quite diversified and includes, among others, amusement park, bowling, outdoor terrace, gym with health club and cinemas. The hypermarket and large stores mainly occupy the periphery of the shopping center. Finally, the activities are organized according to the uses.

3.5. Vasco da Gama

In Vasco da Gama, five types of spaces have been found, totaling nine spatial units: Commercial gallery; entrance lobbies (east, west and Station, on floor -1); Corridors (curved, on Floor -1 and orthogonal, on Floor 0); Foodcourt and Terrace "Lounge". The commercial gallery, for example, is a space that establishes the connection between the Intermodal Transport Station designed by Santiago Calatrava and the recreational space of the Parque das Nações, the former site of Expo 98. It is a gallery that is developed on four floors, being that in the latter, there is hardly any collective space at the eastern end, a place where the Foodcourt restaurants on the lower floor extend. It is a large space, with a height of about 20m, it has a depth of about 112m on the first floor and above and extends on the -1 floor through a 73m long corridor. It has a pleasant width that increases plant by plant, starting with 8m on -1 floor; 20m on the ground floor and 28m on the first and second floors. On the other hand, the roof and the glass entrance facades also extend the collective interior space to the outside. Entries in the Gallery can be made from different levels. At the level of floor -1, it can be accessed through the corridor that connects with the station or, through the opposite façade, down a small staircase or ramp. At ground floor level, it can be accessed through the Occidental entrance hall (Station) at street level or by going up an escalator or other fixed stairs located in the eastern entrance hall (Río and Parque das Nações).

In Vasco da Gama the appropriation of space is intense and the forms of appropriation are diverse. The organizational logic of the previous artifacts is followed, with a particular way of separating uses and activities by floors. On the -1 floor, anchor tenants mainly occupy the extremities of the building, next to the center entrances. Small shops and services form the basis of the fabric of uses and promptly we find small cafes, ice cream parlors and kiosks. The ground floor has less diversity of uses and is formed by large areas on one side of the commercial gallery and small shops on the opposite side and in the other collective spaces of the building. On floor 1 you can find all the uses of this type of artifacts - two leisure facilities and two large anchor tenants on both sides of the gallery, small and medium-sized stores and an important restoration space at the eastern end of the shopping center. On the 2nd floor, the restoration uses are basically elevated, once the existing leisure facility and the anchor tenant do not have direct communication with the same floor. In Vasco da Gama, activities are more divided than in other cases. Fundamentally the terraces are produced at the eastern end of the artifact, both on the ground floor and in the food court of the upper floors, inside and outside the artifact. There is no specific playground for children, although an important part of the decoration of the building points to a children's imagination inspired by the oceans. In a way we could choose the curved corridor on the ground floor as the most specialized for children, with decorated carpets, walls lined with materials alluding to the oceans and ceilings animated by mobile decorative elements, such as fish, a diver, etc. Next to the eastern entrance of the shopping center there is an information kiosk for customer service, to make inquiries or request services, such as mobility, collection, etc.

3.6.Campo Pequeno

Because it is a small shopping centre, integrated into an existing facility (the Lisbon Bullring, where bullfights continue to be held

today), the collective spaces that we can find in Campo Pequeno are not of big dimensions. However, we have found a set of five types of spaces, in a total of thirteen units, which we highlight: a shopping arcade; a Lobby Ramp; four helical lobbies, a Foodcourt or fast food hall and three types of hallways. The commercial gallery, except for the arena itself, forms the most important collective space of the present commercial and leisure artefact. It is an underground space that is developed by circular segments around the bullring. With the exception of the segment that touches the lobby ramp, which is 7.7m wide, the other segments are only 6.2m wide. The height is constant, about 4.5m and the length, about 190m, which can be extended to 230m if we extend through the lobby of the cinemas. The gallery does not get to complete a complete loop around the bullring, occupying practically half, since the other half is occupied by the main engines of the shopping centre - the supermarket and the cinemas. In short, we have a gallery that is limited by a major supermarket on one side and some cinemas on the other, a hall staircase in the middle that opens the gallery to the outside, and articulated helical lobbies with connecting corridors with the central Foodcourt that they intercept and illuminate. In the key points of the gallery, restoration and service activities are developed, generating spatial multifunctionality.

Although Campo Pequeno is a small artefact, you can identify exactly the same forms of appropriation that have been found in the shopping centres presented above. On floor -1, all existing uses in this type of artefacts are present – an anchor tenant, small and medium-sized stores, services, restaurants and an eight-room cinema. On the ground floor an important set of restaurants and bars and the arena of the bullring - a multipurpose space that frequently becomes the stage for all kinds of musical, artistic, etc. shows. The activities vary between the indoor and outdoor terraces (located, respectively in the food court on the -1 floor and outside the bullring), between the playground areas (which are distributed through the gallery and hallways) and between some rest spaces (distributed through the corridors and the gallery of the mall). Of the five types of collective spaces founded in Campo Pequeno shopping centre - Commercial Gallery; Hall Ramp; Helicoidal Lobbies, Food court and Hallways - we would like to place special emphasis on the first one (the commercial gallery), among other things, for being the one that brings together most uses and activities. Indeed, this semi-circular shopping arcade, flanked by small and medium-sized businesses, services of different types - banks, pharmacies, photography stores, stationery stores, etc. - punctuated by small cafes and other uses of restoration and at the ends crowned by a significant anchor tenant, favour other forms of appropriation than those of consumerism itself. The possibility of sitting observing and contemplating the present events for example enriches the appropriation of surrounding spaces. Also the connection with the food court and with the respective terrace space diversifies the environment and the type of movements in this new place. The escalators located next to the cinemas establish the connection between this space and the other collective spaces such as: the multipurpose arena, the circular corridor and the entire restaurant and terrace area, existing on the ground floor.

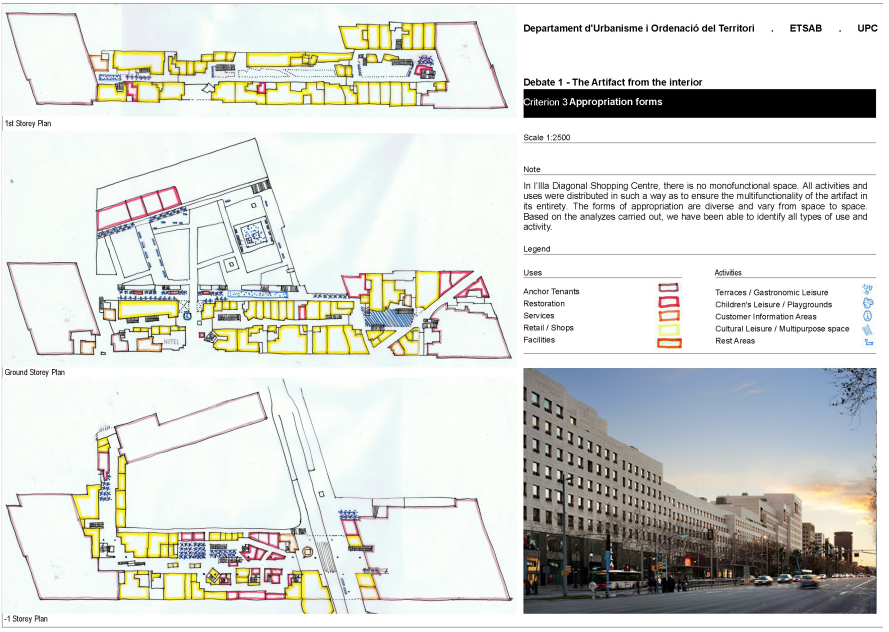


Figure 2. Analysis of the forms of appropriation of L'Illa Diagonal. Source: (Author 2015)

CONCLUSION

After a detailed analysis of the case studies, we can draw three findings that, on the one hand, question the rhetorical position of the first authors - those who attributed the origin of all urban ills to the shopping center - and which, on the other hand, bring us closer the positioning of the seconds - those who considered that these artefacts, if carefully designed, may come to play a very important role in the construction of the contemporary compact city, even generating synergies with public spaces in their surroundings. There is no doubt that in all case studies the forms of appropriation are multiple, thus confirming the initial suspicion that shopping centers and other leisure artifacts cannot be reduced to simple consumption spaces. The presence of different uses and activities in the same space generates multifunctional spaces where, apart from consuming, a set of other movements similar to those practiced in the public space can be made. After the analysis of the case studies it is quite evident that neither size, shape, or location (inside the compact city) seem to condition the forms of appropriation. In all cases, the forms of appropriation are multiple, because in all we can find a mixture of uses and activities. It is true that within each artifact there are spaces where the forms of appropriation are more diverse than others, but in general, all comply with the proposition of the multifunctionality of uses and activities. In some cases, these shopping and leisure centers diversify not

only the forms of appropriation of collective spaces belonging to the artifact but also the forms of appropriation of adjoining outdoor public spaces. In the specific cases of Maremagnum and Campo Pequeno it can be clearly seen how the adjoining public space undergoes substantial modifications. With the new artifact, hallways appear, atracting people closer to the facility, so do the terraces inviting people passing by to stay and leisure, which, among other things, immediately enhances greater surveillance and social control of public space. In the case of l'Illa Diagonal, this aspect is even more exploited. Not only lobbies and terraces are opened in a space where they did not exist before, but a park is generated, with numerous playgrounds for children and their respective families and rest spaces for older people, providing new experiences of public space and ultimately new forms of appropriation of it.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to thank all the colleagues with whom I have been discussing this topic and in particular the teachers who have guided this work. So, to Professor Joaquin Sabaté (Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya) as supervisor and Professors Estanislao Roca (Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya) and Margarida Louro (University of Lisbon) as co-advisors, my greatest thanks. Finally, it is important to mention that this article is part of a research underway at the Center for Research in Architecture Urbanism and Design - CIAUD at the Faculty of Architecture of the University of Lisbon, and that it has been financed by the Fundação para a Ciência e a Tecnologia - MCTES.

REFERENCES

Amendola, Giandomenico. 1997. *La ciudad postmoderna: Magia y Miedo de la Metrópolis Contemporânea*. Madrid: Celeste Ediciones. (trasl. *La Città Postmoderna: magie e paure della metrópoli contemporánea,* 1997)

Bollnow, O. Friedrich. 1963. *Hombre y Espacio*. Barcelona: Editorial Labor.

Cautela, Cabirio; Ostidich, Daniela (ed.). 2009. *Hell Paradise Shopping: L'Inferno e il Paradiso degli acqusti e del consumo*. Milan: FrancoAngeli.

Crawford, Margaret. 2004. "El mundo en un centro comercial". In Sorkin, Michael (ed.). *Variaciones sobre un parque temático: la nueva ciudad americana y el fin del espacio público*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.p. 177-203. (trasl. of "The World in a Shopping Mall". In Sorkin, Michael (ed.). 1992. Variations on a Theme Park: The New American City and the End of Public Space).

Davis, Mike. 2004. "Fuerte Los Angeles: la militarización del espacio urbano". In Sorkin, Michael (ed.). *Variaciones sobre un parque temático: la nueva ciudad americana y el fin del espacio público*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.p. 177-203. (orig. 1992)

Ellin, Nan. 1997. *Architecture of Fear*. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Ghirardo, Diane. 1996. *Architecture After Modernism*. Singapore: Thames and Hudson.

Graça, Miguel S. 2010. *SHOPPING & CENTER: sobre o consumo, a cidade e os centros comerciais em Portugal e na Europa*. (Tese de Doutoramento). Valladolid: Instituto Universitario de Urbanística – Universidad de Valladolid.

Jackson, Kenneth. 1985. *Cabgrass Frontier: The Urbanization of the United States*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Koolhaas, Rem. 1997. "La cittá generic = The generic city". Milan: Domus, nº 791.

Leong, Sze Tsung. 2001. "…And Then There Was Shopping". In Chung, Chuihua Judy; Inaba, Jeffrey; Koolhaas, Rem; Leong, Sze Tsung (coord.) *Project on the City 2: Harvard Design School Guide to Shopping*. Köln-London-Madrid-New York-Paris-Tokyo: Taschen.

Lynch, Kevin. 1981. *A Theory of Good City Form*. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Portas, N., Domingues, A. e Cabral, J. (coord.). 2011. *Políticas Urbanas II – Transformações, Regulação e Projectos*. Lisboa: Fundação Calouste Gulbenkian e CEFA da Universidade do Porto.

Sorkin, Michael. 2004. "Introducción: variaciones sobre un parque temático." In Sorkin, Michael (ed.). *Variaciones sobre un parque temático: la nueva ciudad americana y el fin del espacio público*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili. p. 9-14. (orig.1992).

Ribczynski, Witold. 1995. *City Life: Urban Expectations in a New World*. New York: Scribner.

Wall, Alex. 2005. *Victor Gruen. From Urban Shop to New City*. Barcelona: Actar.

White, William. 1988. *City: Rediscovering the Center*. New York: Anchor Books.

PAPER #2.23

INTERSECTIONS WITH THE GROUND IN THE CONTEMPORARY CITY

Luigi Savio Margagliotta[a]
[a]"Sapienza" University of Rome, Rome, Italy

ABSTRACT

The economic growth and the technological advancement that have touched several countries for some time now, can be considered, in contemporary times, as the main engines that guide the transformation of the cities, which represent, today more than ever, the fruit of social, political and economic processes. Consequently the architectural design undergoes a weakening, since it no longer operates following its own intrinsic laws but finds itself complying with external speculative thrusts and the productivist criteria typical of our time; while the contemporary building is often self-referential and neutral to the context in which it is inserted.
In this scenario, the tall building takes on a leading role, as the emblem of the city's economic and technological progress. The tall building, moreover, in the search for verticality eludes every relationship with the ground, losing that link with the morphology of the places from which the urban artifact originates instead. Moving the point of view on the ground attachment of the building has the aim to turn the focus on the founding aspect of architecture and the need to re-establish a sense of belonging to the place, as well as re-signifying the space. Therefore, we intend to investigate the tension that is generated between the horizontality of the urban dimension and the verticality of the building through the study of its basement, understood as that symbolic-practical part of the construction, different in shape, function, matter or just for compositional treatment, which defines its mediation with the land.
Starting from the analysis of some emblematic examples, we finally identify different types through which the ground attachment is resolved, as a result of the relationship between form and *construction* that finds its concretization by the *collision* between the generalities of the *type* and the morphology of the places.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; contemporary city; tall building; basement; urban space.

INTRODUCTION

This essay fits transversally between the typological studies of the tall building and those concerning the urban dimension; and starting from them it intends to analyze the relationship, sometimes interrupted in the contemporaneity, between architecture and ground on which the former is based, starting from an analysis of the contemporary project and the building in the contemporary world, in its double but analogous configuration of architectural subject and urban object. Often *neutral to the place*, it rejects any relationship from and to the outside, aiming for self-reference and, consequently, fragmenting the urban space into disordered and undetermined facts. Our attention will then shift to the tall building, since, more than the others, as well as for mass and power, it constitutes the building emblem of the modern city.
Here, by tall building we will mean both the tower type and the skyscraper, as both, although differing in proportional and dimensional aspects (often in relation to the context of insertion), act with the same

intentions and generally have similar urban characteristics and therefore the same problems of integration to the relative pre-existing building fabric. Although one term is sometimes used rather than another (sometimes by convention, sometimes due to the specificity of the example), the aim will still be to identify the effects produced on the urban space starting from the qualitative study of the tall building and its ground attachment solutions, regardless of whether it is a tower or skyscraper.

This typology is usually examined in its static and structural aspects, due to its functional role and innovative character in the transformation of the modern city, in its vertical relationship with the sky. Moving the point of view to the foot of the skyscraper, studying its horizontality instead, represents a different but necessary perspective to conceive and interpret the urban role of the tall building, bringing attention back to the foundational aspect of the architecture, to its ability to investigate the ground as the first place of the design and, starting from it, to re-establish a sense of belonging to the place and re-meaning of space.

About the tall building we intend to analyze the often lost relationships that it establishes with the physical place and with the symbolic space of the city, investigating the tension that is generated between the verticality of the building and the horizontality of the urban dimension. Starting from the *founding* act that manifests itself in the first footprint of the building with the ground, we will therefore focus on the study of the ground attachment, in the belief that it is starting from it that relationships with the context are determined or not, with the surrounding, with the built, with man. The different basement solutions will be analyzed in detail, intended as the first expression of the relationship between *form* and *construction* that occurs in the soil of the city, from which in turn derive the physical and qualitative characteristics of the urban space.

1. BETWEEN GROUND AND VOLUME

Before getting into the heart of the argument, it is necessary to clarify some concepts. Although the theme of the basement in a broad sense, in this essay, is investigated with the second aim of studying the relationships of the building with the morphology of the places through the analysis of the ground attachment, we will proceed with a rapid clarification of terms to better explain the interpretation used.

With the term *basement* we will consider the lower part of the building that stands out for its formal or compositional treatment or that differs in function or material compared to the remaining volume in elevation. It can therefore assume the configuration of a portico, of an ashlar surface; it can correspond to one or more floors with different functional characterization; or simply be a low end that raises the entire building from the ground level or levels the support surface.

By *ground attachmen*t we can therefore mean both the basement just described, that is to say that part of the building near the ground, or an artificial element interposed between the ground and the building and clearly distinct from it that can take on the forms and functions of podium, platform, plinth, substructure, terracing, etc.; or even an organism other than the volume in elevation which is entrusted with the task of solving the attachment on the ground.

We could therefore say that by attachment to the ground, regardless of the formal typology, we mean that element or part of the building that is different in shape, function, material or composition that mediates its relationship with the ground, therefore with the place. It involves the set of relationships that bind an architecture to a place: it is both a *founding act,* a representation of the *firmitas,* a representation of the archetypal principle of settling; manifestation, by contrast, of the characteristics of a place, urban or natural.

Ground attachment and *basement* are two terms that can therefore be equivalent in the event that the building rests on the ground without the interposition of an element that can be considered foreign to its volumetric configuration. However, it should be noted that the term basement will sometimes be used in a generic way, for simplification reasons and for a fact of a conceptual nature, even if in a rather improper way since the considerations expressed must be referred to the broader issue of ground attachment, of which the basement represents, in reality, only one of the cases, even if, perhaps, the most conceptually and conventionally recognizable.

1.1. Some considerations about the basement

From the thematic decomposition into three parts of the building in the basement, envelope and crowning, which corresponds to the composition of the classical order synthetically reproduced in the column's parts of the plinth, shaft and capital, we can read an elementary architectural form consisting of a support surface, a vertical support system, a vertical and a horizontal closure. This tripartite division, which represents one of the foundations of classicism, remains one of the permanent principles of architectural composition (Cao 1995, 128-130). In this reasoning, "basement and crowning are the places of confrontation of a building with its material growth and with the definitive structure of its construction, with its way of being born from the earth and rising to the sky. They are therefore the most obvious places where an architecture determines and gives meaning to its relationship with the pre-existing landscape, be it city or countryside. […] The foundation of a house on the ground must therefore not be considered only as a static fact, but also and above all, as a compositional fact" (Angeletti, Bordini, Terranova 1989, 260). In light of these considerations, the foundation is therefore not the starting point of building, "but the product of a process of will, of form, of a search for compatibility and dialogue; it is a form of questioning about the possibilities of an existing to welcome and support by changing" (Gregotti 1995, 2).

Protection, support, decorum (representativeness) and relationships are therefore "the reasons for the identity of a physical and figurative component of the architectural design which in history has been variously interpreted with different architectural solutions and adjectives, but always inevitably recognizable in the general composition" (Cao 1995, 130-131).

For a better understanding of the concepts dealt with, it is also useful to introduce another point of view, that of Gottfried Semper whose theory is always of extraordinary relevance. In 1851 *Die vier Elemente der Baukunst (The four elements of architecture)* was published, in which one of the main points was represented by the reflection on the Caribbean hut. This is the tectonic archetype consisting of a hearth, a basement, a framework/ roof, a space boundary membrane, which can be summarized as the four elements of architecture. Semper always attributed the supremacy of the framework subjected to tension and its filling, as opposed to the basement, stressed by compression, on which "[…] stereotomic and topographical mass literally found its foundation the most ephemeral form of the tectonic framework" (Frampton 1999, 107). Although he theorized an archetypal model based on the analogical connection of the elements of the structure, the German architect gives the basement a particular emphasis: it has the role of accentuating by contrast the hierarchical assembly that dominates it, and at the same time of fixing its shape and mediating it. the clash with the *topos*.

"The basement is configured according to the destination and shape of the superstructure, and, from this point of view, the general shape is independent of the structure; only the actual object, the one to be placed on the

base, could and should have been influenced by the structural needs of the basement and modeled accordingly; even more directly, the same influence had to condition the form of the latter. The inorganic compositional principle, contained in the stone structure, alone led to regular elementary shapes, that is, composed according to crystalline and eurythmic criteria, the circle, the polygon and the rectangle" (Burelli, Cresti, Gravagnuolo, Tentori 1992, 279-280).

According to the German, the basement, since it refers to the stereometric category, can be made using a single material, stone, on whose superposition of the blocks the realization of this element depends. However, this is true if we refer to historical examples, from the most remote and archaic to the most recent, in which the construction technique was that of load-bearing masonry; in fact, the basement assumed very specific aesthetic standards, linked to the wall texture or in any case to the expressiveness of the stone material, from which, most likely, the subsequent and sometimes contemporary characteristics of solidity, massiveness and static sense derive. However, as clarified above, we know that different elements can participate in the basement *typology* in its practical configuration, such as parts of the building distinguished by shape, character or function and not necessarily by material.

Finally, we need to take a step back to understand and summarize the reasoning, returning to the architectural principle that anticipates the technique and the idea of space. "Before transforming a support into a column, a roof into a tympanum, before putting stone on stone one must put stone on the ground […]" (Gregotti 1983, 8). In that way Gregotti brings us back to the idea of settlement, of which the basement represents the physical and conceptual foundation in architecture, able to investigate the site and then modify it; and although architecture represents an act of modification of reality, it concerns as much the technique as the site.

2. THE CITY, THE TYPE AND THE PLACE

The contemporary city seems to be the updated expression of what Ludwig Hilberseimer defined *big city,* an artificial entity that does not represent the largest-scale variation of the urban type that has become historical but the product of economic development (Hilberseimer 1981, 1). In fact, it differs from the city of the past not only in size but also in characteristics, ceasing to be an artifact that is generated by the interaction between the rational design of architecture and the values of the locus (Rossi 1995, 10); this is the reason why the forms of historical architecture cannot be separated from the context in which they were born (Hilberseimer 1981, 98). "Typicality and uniqueness, type and place, represent [in fact] the terms of a dialectical process through which architecture takes shape. […] And it is precisely in that fixation of architecture, in its being rooted in a place, […] that Rossi finds the profound reason for what he calls the *individuality of urban facts*" (Martí Arís 1990, 88), in whose reiteration the construction of the city consists. The metropolis is instead governed by external factors, which accelerate its modification but disorientate its growth, with the consequent loss of that identity deriving from the uninterrupted relationship between architecture, form and place.

The economic progress and technological advancement are established today as the main engines of transformation of cities. Even the architectural project undergoes a weakening, since it no longer operates following its own intrinsic laws but finds itself following external speculative forces. Often neutral to the place, the contemporary building therefore appears self-referential, consequently fragmenting the urban space into disordered and undetermined facts. As Vittorio Gregotti says, in fact, in the oscillation between the expansion of the productive dimension of technology, conditioned by an increasingly driving technological innovation,

and the aestheticizing of deconstruction processes (Gregotti 1999, 9), the architectural project has produced architectural objects that tend more to spectacularization than consolidation of an urban identity as a result of a formal research that has its roots in the nature of places.
In this scenario, the tall building takes on a first-rate role. The skyscraper, in addition to being a symbol of the big city, represents the "building type which, due to its constructive audacity, bears the germ of a new architecture" (Hilberseimer 1981, 62): it becomes, in fact, inextricably, the symbol also of the contemporary city, of which it interprets the shining sign of social and economic development. Its birth is actually closely linked to technological progress itself and to speculative factors, which are perhaps also the main reasons for its current and increasingly high typological diffusion.
However, there is a difficult relationship between the tall building and the city, as the criticisms of Wright and Lewis Mumford testify that the skyscraper is an *anti-urban* element. It often fails to integrate organically into the building fabric, remaining an isolated object, where among the causes there is certainly an excessive desire for individualism (Purini 2008, 90). The tall building, moreover, in the search for verticality eludes any relationship with the ground, no longer understood as term of comparison between place and artifact, but as an abstract surface of an economic value or infrastructural function, abandoning that relationship with the morphology of places from which the urban fact originates.
In addition to the intrinsic quality of becoming a landmark itself, marking a place chosen to highlight its character or establish a polarity, the skyscraper establishes a powerful figure-background relationship with the city, based on the image as it intervenes on the skyline, therefore on the urbanscape. But what are its formal relations with the urban space? How can it be organically integrated into the building fabric? How to *found* the tall building in the city soil?

2.1. Birth and diffusion of the skyscraper

The skyscraper was born in the 1880s in a small coastal district of Chicago. Given the ever stronger concentration in the center of the cities of the tertiary services, the mass of business acquired ever more impressive dimensions; in order not to give up the economic benefits deriving from such a concentration, in order to obviate the urgent need for space, the existing buildings were initially raised, then skyscrapers were built. The advantages of the new building type were immediately clear, so it was used even where, although there was no real lack of space, the technical and economic advantages were still decisive. Soon skyscrapers sprouted in large numbers in almost all major American cities and their physiognomy changed rapidly (Hilberseimer 1981, 62).
In a short time, the skyscraper became the symbol of the big city and was at the center of the development of some proposals concerning the ideation of the new modern city. This is the case of Le Corbusier and Hilberseimer, who set their theories on the possibilities opened up by the new typology. Le Corbusier designed a city for 3 million inhabitants in 1925, basing the planning on the principles of decongestion of the urban center and the contemporary increase in its population density, increase of transport and of green spaces; all advantages offered by the use of the skyscraper. In contrast, Hilberseimer conceives a city for 1 million inhabitants based on a greater concentration and aggregation. Thus, instead of organizing the city horizontally, he tries to give his metropolis a more vertical structure: it resulted in two overlapping cities, under the business city with vehicular traffic, above the residential one with pedestrian traffic; underground railway and underground lines (Hilberseimer 1981, 17).

Beyond the characteristics of the two plans, which are more part of the theoretical ideas than in actual planning programs, the skyscraper is assumed as the possible key capable of countering the wild growth of the city and, therefore, the birth suburbs that would have erased the urban limits; to solve the problem of decongestion in the center, further favoring the creation of more useful space with less use of soil.
But after the impetus of the Modern Movement, some fundamental questions are brought to light, including the skyscraper-urban space relationship and the typological reflection on the characters of the skyscraper. It is precisely the comparison with urban congestion that led to the identification of two ways of assuming the project: "the skyscraper as a simple volume that describes the building type, or the skyscraper that manifests, in the diversity of the parts, the complexity of the relationship with the urban space" (Maffioletti 1990, 41). Particular attention is therefore attributed to the ground attachment of the building: "from the decoration affixed to the basement in the Sullivan skyscrapers, to the public gallery open in the Flatiron between Broadway and Fifth Avenue, to the large lobbies of the deco skyscrapers, the ground floor of the tall American building is not only the link between the city and the building, but it is also the place where the urban space is returned to the public, thus made user" (Maffioletti 1990, 40).
However, in parallel, the American city and the European city take two different research ways: on the one hand the skyscraper represents a repeated typological unit, on the other an exceptional symbolic element, often used to accentuate the dynamics of a road or a square, a path or a destination.

2.2. The tall building in America

In America, the characterization of the irongrid inevitably makes the skyscraper the most suitable type for the characteristics of the city, being able to take advantage of the construction in height to obtain a greater built surface against the small portion of building land. However, in the constancy and regularity of the grid, every relationship with the urban space is often reduced to the positioning of the building within the lot, and the attachment on the ground only in the interpretation of the functional level. It is in this situation that American research enters, in which one of the most virtuous and well-known cases is represented by the Seagram Building (New York, 1954-58). Mies van der Rohe, obtaining two adjacent lots for the construction of the skyscraper, withdraws the building on the side opposite the road. This generates a large square-podium which is returned to the city of New York; together space of architecture and space of the city and its inhabitants. The importance of this element lies not only in the spatial scope and in the mediation capacity of the building-city relationship: Mies redesigns the ground of the lot by inserting trees, flower beds, pools of water and seats, transfiguring the anonymous spatiality of the place. Furthermore, no less important, the stone slab flooring and the few steps, useful for reaching a slightly raised floor, differentiate the condition of being and, above all, elevate the character of the building placed on a crepidoma that clarifies its ground attachment.
An analogous example in urban intentions but different in actions is the unrealized Federal Reserve Building project (New York, 1969) by Kevin Roche. The architect pushes the limits of the building type by raising the entire volume on high pillars: in this way he moves the building away from urban congestion which finds a break in the apparently unedited free lot. The design expedient shows a stronger urban intentionality than the typological variation operation: the soil definitively returns to a collective place; its being *empty*, which in these cases coincides with *public*, is attributed by the presence of the tall building above it, which ensures its persistence and retains

its character. The research conducted by Roche on urban space, although it expresses the complexity of the relationship between city and skyscraper, studies the potential of the building within the irongrid. In the Ford Foundation (New York, 1963-68), in fact, the architect transformed the lobby into a covered square, which became the heart of the city within the city. Here, unlike the Seagram or the Federal Reserve, it is the building that absorbs the urban functions, so the public space of the city is transformed into an internal collective space (Maffioletti 1990, 40).

2.3. The tall building in Europe

In Europe, however, or more properly in historic cities, the tall building is charged with many and complex meanings. It is configured as an exceptional and polarizing element, called to collaborate with the hierarchical principles of the built environment and its sedimented forms. The ground attachment therefore assumes different characteristics and functions: it represents the expression of the inseparable *typos-topos* relationship that characterizes urban morphology; that part of the building that most manifests the specificity of the place (urban, morphological and topographical), which return first as elements of the investigation and comparison which are then returned in the formal configuration of the building. The attachment on the ground ultimately represents the topographical substance of the skyscraper.
In the case of DaimlerChrysler Gebäude am Potsdamer Platz (Berlin, 2000), simply known as s Potsdamer Platz Tower by Hans Kollhoff, the ground attachment is solved in a granite basement corresponding to the first two levels of the skyscraper. In addition to tracing the pointed shape of the lot that lights up towards the square, it is made up of full parts and large colonnades, which indicate access and reinforce the urban character. The choice of material and the differentiation from that of the elevated volume underlines the foundational aspect, reaffirming the stereotomic and topographical character of the basement; its shape reverberates in the horizontality of the string courses which instead mark the tectonic structure. In addition, the entire configuration of the building highlights its growth starting from the ground and developing from this, exhibiting a stepped shape that tapers upwards and converts, rising, the horizontality into verticality. In this way it is the form itself that reveals the compositional process, which first investigates the relationship with the urban space and then, rising, the volumetric articulation; while the basement is able to reveal and, more importantly, respect the interrelation between built and urban form. (Fig. 1)
In the project for New Orleans (Rotterdam, 2007-10), a residential skyscraper built by Álvaro Siza, various factors enter the game. The nature of the space surrounding the building is different on all fronts and the architect solves the complexities of a place that is made up of the Nieuwe Maas river on one side and buildings, high and low, on the other side, through the insertion of an almost independent element, but able to dialogue equivalently in every direction. Thus the skyscraper expands its base, which extends longitudinally along the entire extension of the lot. Siza himself declares in an interview that the greatest difficulty, the initial one, was precisely to put together a tower and a low building (Siza 2010). The result is a typological combination in which, however, the low building becomes the key to the entire project: it becomes a representative front, low and urban, on the internal side, capable of dealing with the built, with the vehicles, with man; on the other, by stretching out, it follows the slow movement of water and boats.
The same procedure was used fifty years earlier by Arne Jacobsen for the Radisson SAS Royal Hotel in Copenhagen, who designed a low building on which he places the vertical volume. Despite its moderate height (the building does not exceed 70 m),

the juxtaposition of the low building allows Jacobsen to recover the road surface and mitigate the introduction of a vertical element within a rather low and measured context, just outside the historic center.

A third example is the Burgo Tower (Porto, 2017) by Souto de Moura. It is located inside a typologically heterogeneous fabric, just in the west of the city center. The project is configured as the set of two buildings side by side, one vertical and one horizontal, resting on a common platform. While the office tower has the task of establishing a new urban polarity, the basement that organizes the ground connection has a triple function: topographical-structural, to level the slightly sloping ground and support the artefacts; the urban one, to integrate the tower into the diluted surrounding spatiality and strengthen the overall planimetric layout through an extremely rational and orderly form. From the architectural point of view, however, it has a conformation of a sort of small acropolis designed ad hoc. In this sense, in addition to welcoming the artifacts, it has the task of putting them in dialogue with each other, isolating them on a neutral plane (which is why the architect chooses the incorruptible shape of the square) which is substantiated by the positioning of the buildings themselves, by the tension that it is generated between them and from the projection of their shadows that materialize their space. Also in this case, the absolute stereometry of the podium, in stark contrast to the accentuated tectonic structure of the metal profiles of the volumes above, expresses through its massiveness an aspiration to stability and a reference to that archetypal settlement principle.

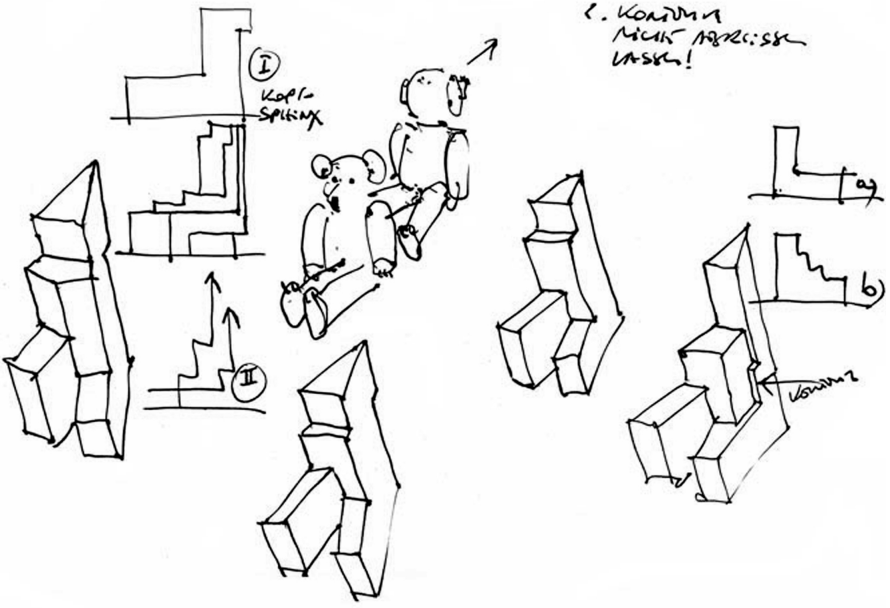


Figure 1. Sketch by Hans Kollhoff. DaimlerChrysler Gebäude am Potsdamer Platz. Source: http://www.kollhoff.de/en/ index.html

2.4. The tall building in isolated contexts

Finally, a further modus operandi, generalizable to any geographical-cultural context, but to urban situations, as we will see, not very compact or in which the natural component predominates over the artificial one, is that in which the skyscraper presents itself as the only architectural emergency or even as an isolated building. In these circumstances, the building is also entrusted with the task of defining the surrounding spatiality, providing itself with the few elements of dialogue present in the area; in these cases the place and the soil, the topographical and geomorphological aspects represent the main terms of reference. The complexity of operating within a well-defined urban context highlights the anti-urban tendency of the skyscraper, which tries in every way to disguise its belonging by exasperating its singularity. From this derives the difficulty in integrating into the building fabric, remaining, in most cases, contradictorily, an isolated object. In these conditions, however, in a place whose architectural presence is reduced, the complexities change: the challenge concerns first of all the primary relationship with the foundation soil and the ground line, however operating with a type that in itself leads to the limit the relationship between nature and artifice. However, the congenital aggressiveness of the skyscraper diminishes, missing the *competition between neighbors* in which each tower participates; on the other hand, his attitude to become a landscape reference to the city increases, a territorial pole that can expand its roots by creating a rich and articulated situation in its support on the ground (Purini 2008, 90).

In the Price Tower (Bartlesville, 1952-56), for example, Wright solves the contingencies of the place by performing two consecutive operations in the same project. The first one is the creation of a low organism, a real root system that expands by investigating the surrounding space; on it, then, rises the multifunctional tower that the architect himself renames *the tree that escaped the crowded forest*. The structure of the building is a real reference to that of a tree, with nineteen jutting planes that stretch like branches starting from a single central trunk that sinks into the ground like a pole well planted in the ground. Wright employs a ploy already tried in the Johnson Wax Building (Racine, Wisconsin, 1936-39). The sections of the two complexes in fact have the same solutions that immediately clarify the design intentions; however, what the architect accomplishes in Bartlesville in a single design act, he previously does in two temporally distinct phases: at first the low system is created; about ten years later the Johnson Wax Research Tower (1944-1950) was built, which sinks firmly into the deep ground and rises with its fourteen floors absolutely dependent on its base. The latter develops horizontally like a plastic organism and, welcoming the tower inside in a closed courtyard, it transforms into an urban mechanism with the function of grading the process towards the outside and creating a spatial continuity between the vertical volume and what happens outside. Thus in Wright the tall building is not an autonomous element of the city but an element that is part of an urban system that finds its verticality in it.

Leaving the urban context and returning to the old continent, this time we find ourselves in the midst of an entirely natural environment. This is the project presented by Jørn Utzon for the competition of a high school in Højstrup, Denmark. The project (1958, unrealized) is characterized by the composition of a housing tower that rises on a functional basement intended to host the center's activities. The whole school is developed above the platform that emerges from the woods and which opens in the center with a patio-garden, bringing the natural element inside. Inside the basement volume the service spaces, while above the various activities of the program.

For the Danish architect, the platform is the archetype that best interprets the condition of inhabiting: it represents the clearing that makes the ground habitable, an element by definition planar that here acquires thickness and becomes inhabited; while planimetrically assumes the function of an elevated enclosure, in which all the artifacts are collected within the limits of the large basement. Everything is subordinated to the platform that organizes the space and houses the artifacts: on it the various environments are delimited by independently articulated walls that in turn circumscribe individual functional environments.

Utzon himself, in order to describe the project, uses a few useful words to just illustrate the gesture of the platform, which "stands on a slightly undulating landscape and underlines, thanks to its quadrangular and linear character, the gentle movements of the landscape" (Utzon 1962, 140). The entire project operation is resolved on the platform; becoming itself a topographical element to which the dormitory tower simply acts as a counterpoint, marking the place of the settlement. The tower becomes just one of the many and different artifacts that gathers the platform on it (Fig. 2).The latter represents for Utzon an element of constant formal experimentation and from which he draws repeatedly for his projects. The Mayan platforms that he visits in Mexico in 1949 become one of the most important architectural experiences of his life; so in 1962 he published an article in the magazine Zodiac in which he described the sensation that he produced passing from the dense vegetation of the jungle to the open horizon that is revealed by climbing on the platform, comparing this suggestion with what one feels in Scandinavia to see the sun come out after several interminable weeks of rain and darkness (Utzon 1962, 114).

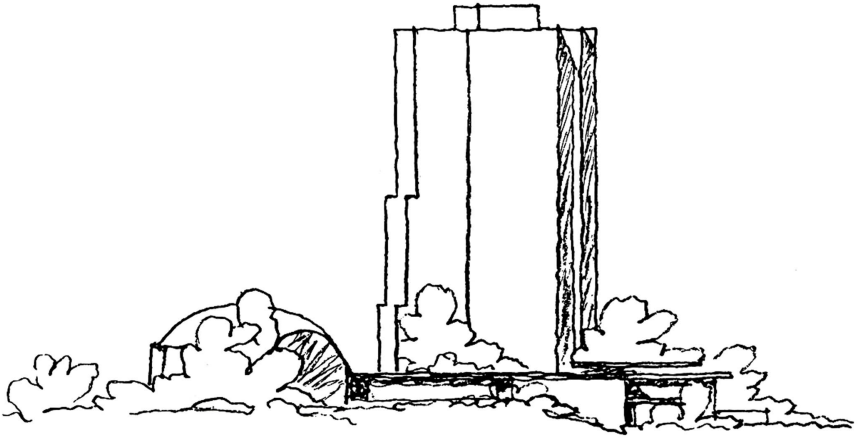


Figure 2 . Sketch by Jørn Utzon. High school in Højstrup.

FROM THE FORM TO THE SPACE

Through the analysis of some projects, we wanted to highlight the interaction between the tall building and urban space, or in detail the effects made by the interaction between the different forms of the constructed and the morphology of the places. The city is an artifact that has been built slowly and, in most cases, with its own but rational rules. The territorial homologation produced by the globalization is instead increasingly rapidly canceling its growth processes and the stratified identity of places.

The study of the ground attachment becomes today an opportunity to investigate together various aspects of the building, such as those more strictly technical and functional, as well as those of a compositional nature, and those concerning the founding aspect of architecture, full of urban intentions and sense of rooting in places (Fig. 3).

Reflecting also on the horizontality of the tall building therefore means searching in its intersection with the ground for renewed relationships, able to re-signify the urban space. It means to positioning oneself within a process of will, of reflection on the *meaning of doing*, of searching for a possible interpretative key for the architecture design, in an attempt to rediscover that relationship between *topos* and *typos* whose interaction, reciprocal and dialogical, since ever gives shape to the city.

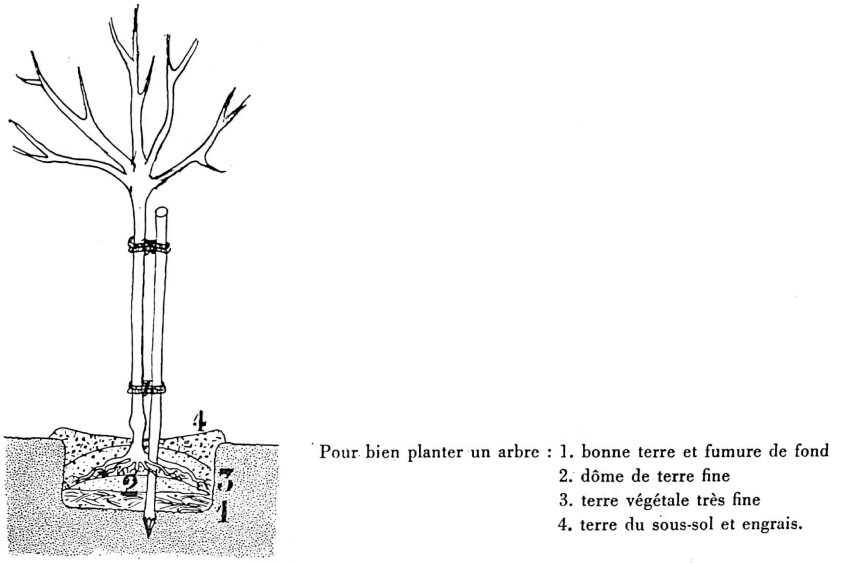


Figure 3. To plant well a tree. Source: Le Corbusier 1933. La ville radieuse. Paris: Éditions Vincent, Fréal & Cie.

REFERENCES

Angeletti, P., Bordini, V. and Terranova, A. 1989. *Fondamenti di composizione architettonica*. Urbino: La Nuova Italia Scientifica.

Burelli, A.R., Cresti, C., Gravagnuolo B. and Tentori, F. (ed.) 1992. *Lo stile nelle arti tecniche e tettoniche, o Estetica pratica: manuale per tecnici, artisti e amatori*. Roma-Bari: Editori Laterza.

Cao, U. 1995. *Elementi di progettazione architettonica*. Roma-Bari: Università Laterza Architettura.

Frampton, K. 1999. *Tettonica e Architettura, poetica della forma architettonica nel XIX e XX secolo*. Milano: Skira.

Gregotti, V. 1983. "Address to the Architectural League", in *Section A*, n. 1, vol. 1.

Gregotti, V. 1995. "Fondazioni", in *Casabell*a, n. 628.

Gregotti, V. 1999. "Introduzione", in Frampton, K. *Tettonica e Architettura. Poetica della forma architettonica nel XIX e XX secolo*. Milano: Skira.

Hilberseimer, L. 1981. *L'architettura della grande città*, Napoli: Clean.

Maffioletti, S. 1990. *La città verticale. Il grattacielo: ruolo urbano e composizione*. Trento: CLUVA.

Martí Arís, C. 1990. *Le variazioni dell'identità. Il tipo in architettura*. Torino: CittàStudiEdizioni.

Purini, F. 2008. "Grattacieli italiani", in Agnoletto, M. and Trentin, A. (eds.) *Architettura 28. Il progetto dell'edifico alto*. Bologna: CLUEB.

Rossi, A. 1995. *L'architettura della città*. Milano: CittàStudiEdizioni.

Siza, A. 2010. "Interview Álvaro Siza New Orleans Rotterdam", interview by Huub Smeets, YouTube, March 11, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EvjNq7Fao6k.

Utzon, J. 1962. "Platforms and Plateaus. Ideas of a Danish Architect", in *Zodiac*, n. 10.

PAPER #2.24

THE DOMESTIC CITY: EXPANSION OF THE DOMESTICITY IN THE CONTEMPORARY CITY

Flavio Martella[a], Marco Enia[b]
[a]Universidad Politécnica de Madrid, Madrid, Spain
[b]Universidad de las Américas Puebla, Puebla, Mexico

ABSTRACT

Ongoing social, cultural and economic changes in western societies are affecting the way people experience both urban and domestic environments. Contemporary technologies, the gender revolution and the evolution of habits are among the factors that are leading to the emergence of new forms of urban life, where the very ideas of home and city blur, and the dualities traditionally used to understand the cultural landscape are dissolving (man/woman, interior/exterior, public/private, work/leisure, sedentary/nomadic, inside/outside). Domestic and urban life are slowly but inexorably merging. Home is increasingly understood, rather than as a fixed place enclosed within four walls, as a mental territory that extends into the broader context of the city. The domestic environment is opening up to the city, adapting many of its uses and spaces to new forms of nomadic, post-human and digital life; its identity is changing, evolving into a hybrid environment difficult to define. At the same time, the urban environment is being domesticated: many of the activities normally associated with domestic life, such as resting, eating, finding some intimacy, watching movies or talking to relatives, increasingly take place in the spaces of the city. This blurring of boundaries between home and city is radically changing the way of thinking and designing private and public spaces, to make them able to respond to emerging and future lifestyles. The paper aims at introducing the main facts about the contemporary blurring of the boundaries of domestic and urban space, explaining how this is currently affecting the architecture of both the house and the city.

KEYWORDS

Domesticity; nomadism; home; urban environment; domestic environment.

INTRODUCTION

Domestic and urban environments are apparently very different domains separated by spatial limits. House walls seem to draw a clear line of demarcation between them, unequivocally indicating where one realm begins and the other ends. However, this is true only when focusing on their physical boundaries: things get more complicated when attention is paid to their conceptual boundaries, that is, to those actions, events and situations that are usually associated with the urban or the domestic. Until the contemporary era, with its digital and gender revolution, the house was mostly perceived as a quite autonomous microcosm and the city as its receptacle, but today the distinction is not so sharp. Recent social, economic, political, technological and cultural changes have led to the emergence of new individuals (Echeverría, 2018) and of new forms of living, that are rapidly transforming both domestic and urban life. Nowadays, many activities commonly related to domestic spaces often take place outside. At the same time, houses increasingly accommodate typically urban functions, giving rise to hybrid situations that modify the very idea of city and home. Domesticity is more and more understood as a field, or as a mental territory that goes beyond the material, concrete, spatial and bodily limits of the house (Chávez Giraldo, 2010): it is a multidimensional domain, related to the intimate condition of human beings and their need for protection, care, rest,

recovery and pleasure (Bachelard, 1957; see also Mallett, 2004). The identity of the space/home is constantly being redefined; it expands and contracts, and increasingly depends not only on a specific physical interior, but also on a network of urban places.

The gender revolution started in the 60s has significantly contributed to begin a radical change the concept of domesticity established mainly during the Modern Movement (and still ongoing). A concept that was based on the clear functional separation between home and context, between public and private, between man and woman, between work and leisure, between inside and outside (Sennett, 1977). A condition that created an idealization of the house that was easily recognizable, and therefore easily desirable, even if it was based on a much less recognizable spatial and functional isolation that hid an enormous effort to maintain it.

In fact, from the 1960s onwards, many voices have denounced the traditional domestic environment as a space that did not allow the emancipation of women; an environment in which a great deal of unpaid work was required to maintain the suitability for restoring the productive capacities of workers (usually men) (Federici 2009). The unmasking of this "reproductive" function of the house (in the sense that it reproduces, regenerates, productive capacities) allows the woman to emancipate herself from the role of housewife, making possible the emergence of new forms of urban life that differ from the traditional family model (Brubaker, 1993; Reigot and Spina, 1996; Beck-Gernsheim, 2003). In this radical transformation, the body acquires a new prominence. Freed from pre-constructed concepts, the body is identified as the starting point for constructing new social behaviours and a new meaning of domesticity, from new lifestyles based on a more heterogeneous and diversified structure (Madigan and Munro, 1990; Darke, 1994; Gilroy and Woods, 1994; Attfield and Kirkham, 1989; Heynen and Baydar, 2005; Taylor and Preston, 2006).

While the gender revolution highlighted some critical points and started a radical rethinking of the meaning of domesticity, the contemporary digital revolution is creating new kind of individuals that interact with the environment in a very different way (Castells, 1996), capable of superimposing an individualized virtual context on the material one. There is no epic image that symbolizes this change. It is a change without bank roars, without oil wars or physical deaths. It is a subliminal transformation, parallel to epic changes, inadvertent, such as the erosion of the clink of a drop on the stone (Zafra, 2016).

1. DIGITAL REVOLUTION

Contemporary digital media have already created new habits, which depend on patterns of life linked to speed of action, the possibilities of individual devices and the expanded urban relationships (Giaccardi & Magatti, 2001). These habits are also changing the way we relate to ourselves. Individuals increasingly have an existence that goes beyond their physical body; they also exist as bits of information (Sheller and Urry, 2003). This paradigm shift is materialized through most of the contemporary urban daily routines: routines such as get in contact with people, socialize, get general and specific information, buy groceries and objects, study, see locations, but also work, leisure, play, have sex, etc. They create a digital self who experiments an augmented environment and that can exist and shape different realities. The perceived urban experience is now twisted through the mediation of devices, often digital ones, and their ability to project the person into a personal microcosm, where to comfort its daily needs. The superimposition of the digital layer over the material one creates new feelings of domesticity, of society, of production, of leisure and of commerce that influence the way of interaction with the urban material sphere. The diffusion of Internet, and with it of the new forms of instantaneous communication,

has led to a kind of fragmentation of selves into different pieces scattered in virtual space. Nowadays, people can exist at the same time in the physical space, as moving bodies, and in the communicational space, wherever they left some of their information and identity: for example, in social networks, online gaming websites, or cross-platform messaging services (Echeverria & Almendros, 2020). An important effect of this revolution is that the separation between house and the external world is becoming more and more thin. Today one can access the public world from his/her house, or communicate with people who live far way, or participate in real time of events happening in the farthest corners of the planet, or enabling the domestic environment from a public place.

The digital revolution not only transforms the individuals, but it relates them with a broader context that often extends to the urban scale. All these phenomena have given rise to a different use of spaces, both urban and domestic; people actively interact with the environment through a digital layer, and this results in a totally new form of relationship with the city (La Cecla, 1995). In fact, this new being lives in a different urban environment. No longer only rooted in materiality and in its form, this new environment enables new ways of living and understanding the city, that foster a radical change in the way of conceiving its architecture, the domestic environment and the workspace, i.e. the traditional pillars of the modern society.

As a consequence, homes are then potentially deterritorialized since they are losing their physical boundaries and facing a structural modification in one of their main values: the family (Roig, 2014). Nowadays, an individualistic and materialistic way of living is predominant over the familiar. Today there are many more lifestyles than in the recent past, such as co-living and solo living; however, even when living in a family context, the new urban digital inhabitants tend to individually enter the virtual world, to create trans-urban relationships that transcend the traditional ties, and that often are strong enough to be compared to the material ones.

This behavior, even though appears to happen only in the digital sphere, is radically affecting the architectural environment, by introducing a need for diversity instead of homogeneity, flexibility, the sense of occupation and the possibility of identification against the imposed abstractions.

It seems clear that today's western society, is the protagonist of a historical revolution in terms of both forms of socialization and individualization. This process corresponds to "a new way of organizing behaviors, characterized by the minimum of constraints and the maximum possible choices" (Amann, 2005), relying on individual possibilities of interacting with the (familiar, urban, global) community. The boundaries are lost and the internal/external, public/private, man/woman, work/leisure dualities become less clear (Bauman, 2000. Matsuda, 2010).

In contrast to the classical rationalist paradigm, the digital identity replaces the modernist ideals of harmony, purity, perfection and nature with those of network organization, decentralization, interchangeability and continuous transformation. Its architecture is then produced by networks of affinity groups; it is made of semi-autonomous components interconnected in networks similar to those of information and communications. From a political point of view, this architecture replaces the ideas of identity, hegemony, hierarchy and spectacle, with those of hybridization, plurality, horizontality and performance (De Lama, 2020).

2. EXPANDED DOMESTICITY

The sense of domesticity of individuals, once closed on itself, now opens the way for a new identity that lies in the overlap between the material and virtual world. Such domesticity no longer finds in the city its antagonist, but

an ally. It is, in fact, where the spatial offer is potentially greater and where therefore it can allow a greater expression of individual personalities hovering between the public and the private sector. The digital revolution, among many other social, political, economic and cultural events that led to a progressive reduction of domestic spaces and a rediscovery of the semi-public context, helps to turn every room in the house into something different than before. The bedroom is thus converting into a new multimedia/office living room; the kitchen into an urban extension, because of home delivery services of all kinds; the living room in a space no longer uniquely defined, both public and privately; the bathroom in a place that rediscovers its own sensuality and relationship with the body, as well as a new extension of the office.

As has been noted, the bed and the sofa are slowly converging: in 2014 the bed overcame the sofa for the first time as the most used furniture in British homes (Bose, Self & Williams, 2016). Bedroom culture (Livingstone, 2007) represents an increasingly generalized perception of the bed as a center of cinematic entertainment and an individualized leisure culture. For most of the new users the kitchen is losing its original use (Steegman, 2017) to become mostly a place to store small foods and to socialize. The entire city is now substituting the kitchen through the presence of daily menus, pre-cooked food, street food activities, food offer apps such as The Fork, or the increase of the food delivery companies such as Deliveroo, Just Eat and Uber eats. This is completely reconfiguring the urban environment to satisfy the alimentary necessities of an increasing part of the population that prefers to live the city and uses the kitchen just for small tasks (Puigjaner, 2014).

The living room is now an integrated part of most of public and semi-public places, such as coffee shops, restaurants, pubs, offices, stations, airports and plazas. It is the place that most enables a physical domestic condition outside the house, and due to its deterritorialized condition, it is the symbolic place where to augment the individual environment (Martella, 2018). The change in the meaning of home is fundamental for the emergence of new forms of living, as the house has always been the pillar around which personal, everyday life was structured. Traditional routines are now broken; new ones are created which are completely dependent on new life patterns linked to the speed of action, to the possibilities of the individual devices and on the expanded urban relationships. All these phenomena have led to a different use of space, both in the city and domestic environments. Space can now change constantly, through the continuous passage of people who establish relationships that are always different with the surrounding environment (La Cecla, 1995).

The people actively and continuously interact with the others and the surrounding through the digital layer, enabling a new symbiosis of the people with the city through a technological omnipresence; a new "augmentation" of the physical environment, that goes beyond the material skin and that brings to a complete rediscovery of the urban as the scenery of daily life. A symbiosis like never before is then created between the inhabitant, the place, and personal devices that leads to a continuous re-modelling of the architectural program according to the needs of its users. Spaces that cannot be singular but plural, and can rely on many more factors than just themselves; they are part of an hyperconnected hybrid whole enabled by trans-urban devices; a condition that must be taken in consideration while designing and thinking the contemporary city. Every subject with a digital device can augment the material environment to redefine its main uses, changing the perception of the space.

This individual augmentation of the physical environment allows a new type of 'soft' occupation, in which the power to define program in a space is partially returned to

the user. This 'soft' occupation of space empowers the electronomad (Mitchell, 2004) to individually impose program on to a space, leading to urban hybrid, mixed-use spaces. Coffee shops (like Starbucks and many others) for example, may simultaneously accommodate multiple programs by providing a flexible environment with seating, toilets, refreshments and network connectivity. They then enable new possible uses that moves from office works to streaming movies, from romantic dates to job interviews.

3. TIME

All of this would not have been possible without a change in the notion of time. Time, in contemporary era, is in fact increasingly perceived as something that compresses or even annihilates space (Rosa, 2015). Personal life is now continuously invaded by distant events, relationship and experiences: through their electronic devices, individuals are constantly confronted with symbolic and cultural worlds that are completely outside their range of action, and that relate them to other domains even when these are not physically present; a timeless time (Castells, 1996). This abstraction goes both in the direction of a dematerialization of experience, and of its delocalization (Tomlison, 1999), in the sense that the physical context of the subject is no longer a constraint and can be easily bypassed. With the advent of broader, multi-level global connections and of virtual communities, the external world enters and permeates the domestic sphere, questioning the bourgeois meaning of home as a purely private place.

The once so clear boundary between inside and outside is fading. According to a marketing research conducted by IKEA in 2016, only 7% of respondents (250 families) identify a specific place as home. On the other hand, 37% believe that home extends outside the domestic walls; 38% identify it with the neighborhood, while 18% with the city itself (Ikea, 2016). These data are a good example of the contemporary tendency to displace in the urban many activities, habits and affections traditionally linked to the domestic space, merging it with the city. Also, according to the same research, most people of the new generations - Millennials, Generation Z - feel more comfortable outside their houses, even for activities such as watching TV, relaxing or sleeping. Home, in the era of globalization, can be interpreted as an open and porous place, an intersection of social relations and emotions; its contemporary identity should be built on communication, movement, and interactions, able to enrich the daily life of individuals, more than on separation (Blunt and Dowling, 2006).

Another important aspect in the current evolution of the idea of home is the mobility of many urban inhabitants. People now are constantly in motion, from home to work (and backward), from one house to another, from one city to another, often from one country to another. The 21st century individual increasingly resembles the "the Derridian parasite" (Derrida, 1988), the nomads of Deleuze and Guattari (1986), or Lyotard's hobo (Lyotard, 1993). The prototype of the contemporary individual is a *mestizo* with many identities and multiple belongings, who chooses certain life patterns according to his/her values and beliefs; he/she is flexible, and able to adapt to the changing circumstances. More and more people today live in the condition that Verschaffel (2012) has defined "a-topia", that is, as nomadic subject freed from the concept of belonging and in a state of perennial transit. With this new type of urban dweller, the perception of both domestic and urban space changes from permanent to temporary. Home, more than being associated to a stable and fixed place, may exist in many different locations and times, depending on where and when the body and the mind are in a specific moment (Chávez Giraldo, 2010).

The concept of home is increasingly merging with domains that were previously regarded as clearly separate, such as the working sphere. The possibility of being continuously connected, and the dissolution of the physical frontiers between interior and exterior, facilitate immaterial labour (Aureli & Giudici, 2018). Today, from any place it is possible to contribute to the production system; the domestic space is already one of its main cores. This is happening not only because new technologies make production ubiquitous, thus diminishing the importance of traditional workplaces (the office, for example); but also because immaterial production relies on aspects more typical of the domestic domain, such as sociability, affectivity, and care (Dogma, 2015). This releases at the same time the latent productivity of the domestic space and the domesticity of the traditional workplace. Home is now considered, for the first time in its recent history, a productive place, and the same goes for every place with an Internet connection: bars, trains, airplanes, banks, lawns, restaurants, cars, etc. (Mitchell, 2004). The separation between workplace and home is being erased, questioning the identity of the latter as a refuge from external worries and stress.

CONCLUSION

This evolution of contemporary domesticity goes hand in hand with the changing notion of interior. Today, the domestic interior is often no longer understood as a finished product, but as a process in continuous evolution, which depends from the relationship between the house and the physical and emotional well-being of its inhabitants. Such relationship is able to generate an incredible variety of ways to inhabit domestic space (Attiwill, 2012), and is supported and constantly remodeled on the basis of the flow of information produced by the current social system. Precisely because one of its main influences comes from the outside, the domestic interior extends beyond the limits of the house and expands into the urban. The house tends to the city, and the city turns into a home; they share rooms, spaces, times and atmospheres.

But changes in domesticity also arise from the evolution of the relationship between public and private domain, whose boundaries are increasingly mobile and fluid (Bauman, 2000). Throughout the 20th century, social sciences used to understand "public" and "private" as static and antithetical concepts: according to Sheller and Urry (2003) each "public" presuppose a certain contrasting "private". Nevertheless, nowadays the distinction does not seem to be so clear. In many respects, "public" and "private" have already become complementary rather than antithetical moments of contemporary social life, overlapping and hybridizing their conceptual and physical boundaries (Sheller and Urry, 2003; see also Kumar and Makarova, 2008). They now point to a multiplicity of different meanings, although often their semantic complexity is not fully recognized (Weintraub, 1997).

The blurring of traditional dualities (public/private, man/woman, work/leisure, inside/outside, digital/material, nomad/sedentary) is giving rise to a new concept of domesticity, replacing the idea of the home as a closed space with fixed uses and a static identity: a concept that allows multiple meanings and that exists in a context that transcends physical boundaries, spreading around the global urban environment. A concept that, as Braidotti (2006) suggested, requires a reconfiguration of our being in the world, in the framework of a global and nomadic conception of the subject, that exists in a networked environment.

REFERENCES

Amann Alcocer, A., 2005. "El espacio doméstico: La mujer y la casa". PhD diss., Universidad Politécnica de Madrid.

Attfield, J. & Kirkham, P. (eds), 1989. *A Wiew from the Interior: women and design.* London: Women's Press.

Attiwill, S., 2012. "Interior, practices of interiorization, interior design". PhD diss., RMIT University

Aureli, P. V. & Giudici, M. S., 2018. "The forum of otium: labour and leisure in ancient Greek and roman domestic space". In *Work Body Leisure,* edited by Verzier, M. O. & Axel, N., 154-162. Rotterdam: Hatie Cantz.

Bachelard, G. 2014. *Poetics of space (1957).* Translated by Maria Jolas. New York: Penguin books

Bauman, Z., 2000. *Liquid Modernity*. Cambridge: Polity Press.

Beck-Gernsheim, E., 2003. *La reinvención de la familia. En busca de nuevas formas de convivencia.* Barcelona: Paidós

Bhabha, H. K. (2004). *The Location of Culture*. Abingdon: Routledge.

Blunt, A. & Dowling, R., 2006. *Home*. Milton Park, UK and New York: Routledge.

Bose, S., Self, J., Williams, F., 2016. *Home Economics: Five New Models for Domestic Life.* London: The Spaces

Braidotti, R., 2006. *Transpositions: On Nomadic Ethics.* Cambridge: Polity Press

Brubaker, T. H. (ed), 1993. *Family Relations: Challenges for the Future.* Newbury Park, Cal.: Sage.

Castells, M., 1996. *The information Age: Economy, Society and Culture. Volume 1: The Rise of the Network Society*. Cambridge: Blackwell! Publishers Inc.

Chávez Giraldo, J. D. (2010). *El espacio domestico tras el soporte arquitectónico: Claves para entender el sentido multidimensional de lo íntimo en el dominio del hogar.* Dearq 07.

Darke, J., 1994. "Women and the Meaning of Home". In *Housing Women*, edited by Gilroy, R. & Woods, R., 11-30. London: Routledge.

Deleuze, G. & Guattari, F. (1986). *Nomadology: The War Machine.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Derrida, J. (1988). *Limited Inc.* Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.

Dogma, 2015. "Living and Working: How to Live Together". Retrieved from: https://architecture.mit.edu/sites/architecture.mit.edu/files/attachments/lecture/Tattara_living%20and%2 0working_intro.pdf (accessed April 17, 2019).

Echeverría, J. & Almendros, L. S. (2020), *Tecnopersonas: cómo nos cambian las tecnologías.* Gijón: Trea.

Echeverria, J. (2018), "Philosophy of Technoworlds and Technopersons", in B. Laspra and J.A. López Cerezo (eds.) (2018). *Spanish Philosophy of Technology – Contemporary Work from the Spanish Speaking Community.* Berlin: Springer, pp. 153-164.

Federici, S., 2009. "The reproduction of Labour-Power in the Global Economy, Marxist Theory and the Unfinished Feminist Revolution". Paper presented at the Seminar on the Crisis of Social Reproduction and Feminist Struggle, Santa Cruz, UC.

Giaccardi, C & Magatti, M. (2001) *La globalizzazione non è un destino. Momenti strutturali ed esperienze soggettive nell'età contemporanea*. Bari: Laterza.

Gilroy, R. & Woods, R., 1994. eds. *Housing Women.* London: Routledge.

Heynen, H. & Baydar, G., eds., 2005. *Negotiating Domesticity: Spatial Productions of Gender in Modern Architecture.* London: Routledge.

IKEA, 2016. "Life at Home: What Makes a Home. Report 3". Retrieved from: https://ikeamuseum.com/media/filer_public/9a/94/9a94647a-d356-4a6b-9803- 3fc6a4ca0034/ikea_life_at_home_report_3.pdf (accessed April 23, 2019)

Kumar, K., & Ekaterina, M., 2008. The Portable Home: The Domestication of Public Space". *Sociological Theory* 26 (4): 324-343. doi: 10.1111/j.1467-9558.2008.00332.x

La Cecla, F., 1995. *Mente locale. Per un'antropologia dell'abitare*. Milano: Elèuthera

Livingstone, S., 2007. "From family television to bedroom culture: Young people's media at home." In *Media Studies: Key Issues and Debates*, edited by Devereux, E., 302-321. London: Sage Publications Ltd.

Lyotard, J. F. (1993). *Libidinal Economy.* Bloomington, IN: Indiana University press.

Madigan, R., Munro, M. & Smith, S. J., 1990. "Gender and the Meaning of the Home". *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research,* 14 (4): 625–647. doi: 10.1111/j.1468-2427.1990.tb00160.x 10.1111/j.1467-954X.2004.00442.x

Martella, F., 2018. "Hacia una nueva transformación de la sala de estar. Expansión del papel de la sala de estar a través de la sociedad contemporánea". *Reia* 13: 103-122.

Matsuda, K. (2010) *Domesti/city. The dislocated home in the augmented space.* Master's thesis, Bartlett School of Architecture, UCL.

Mitchell, W. J. (2004). *Me++; the cyborg self and the networked city.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Pérez de Lama, J. (2020). *Geografías de una multitud (conectada): entre la espacialidad de los flujos y la ciencia ficción.* http://hackitectura.net/osfavelados/txts/sci_fi_geographies.html Puigjaner, A., 2014. "The kitchenless city". PhD diss. Universidad Politécnica de Catalunya

Reigot, B. P. & Spina, R. K., 1996. *Beyond the traditional family: voices of diversity.* New york: Springer Verlag

Roig, E. (2014). *El entorno aumentado: Imperativo informacional para una ecología digital de lo arquitectónico*. UPM. PhD tesis.

Rosa, H. (2015). *Accelerazione e alienazione. Per una teoria critica del tempo nella tarda modernità.* Torino: Einaudi.

Sennett, R., 1977. *The Fall of Public Man*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf

Sheller, M. & Urry, J., 2003. "Mobile transformations of "Public" and "Private" life." Theory Culture and Society 20 (3): 107-125. doi: 10.1177/02632764030203007

Steegmann, D., 2017. "Ciudad, Casa, Comida. Una aproximación poliédrica a los limites entro lo público y lo privado". PhD diss., Universidad Politécnica de Catalunya.

Taylor, M. and Preston, J. (eds), 2006. *Intimus: Interior Design Theory Reader.* New York: John Wiley Tomlinson, J., 1999. Globalization and culture. Cambridge: Polity Press

Verschaffel, B. (2012). *"The Meaning of Domesticity"*, in Briganti, C. & Mezei, K. (eds.), The Domestic Space Reader. Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Weintraub, J., 1997. "The Theory and Politics of the Public/Private Distinction". In *Public and Private in Thought and Practice: Perspectives on a Grand Dichotomy*, edited by Weintraub J. & Kumar, K., 1-42. Chicago, IL and London: University of Chicago Press.

Zafra, R. (2016). *Los que miran*. Madrid: Fórcola.

PAPER #2.25

THE SUSTAINABLE HOUSE: PSYCHOLOGY VS TECHNOLOGY

Olivia Longo[a]
[a]University of Brescia, Brescia, Italy

ABSTRACT

In this Digital Era (Industry 4.0) characterised by a great number of IT innovations, the questions are: which changes will there be in our future daily home life? Which kind of house will be appropriate to help us to find a balanced relationship between virtual spaces and physical ones? That is, between our mind (more and more supported by information technology) and our body (that ancestrally needs to feel well in contact with Nature)?
This contribution aims to underline the natural and human characteristics that can inspire architects during their composition processes of a sustainable house.
We are often used to thinking about a sustainable house only as a passive house. We care about the technological components and we rarely care about the psychological ones, that have to be connected with the context where the house will be built, so in a city we have to find the correct network of relationships between domestic spaces and urban ones.
Only a progressive transition from public spaces to private ones can offer the inhabitants a sense of urban well-being and identity. The concepts of "in-between" and "thresholds" have been abundantly studied in the past by famous authors of architectural theories but today those concepts are rarely used during the design process of a house in an urban context.

KEYWORDS

sustainability; house; threshold; psychology; uncanny.

INTRODUCTION

> "We are on the threshold of a revolution that is drastically changing the way we live… work and relate to others... Let's consider, for example, the almost limitless possibilities of connecting billions of people through mobile devices, generating unprecedented processing, storage and access to information..."[1]. (Schwab, 2016, 13)

Schwab underlines the incredible convergence of technological inventions such as artificial intelligence, robotics, the Internet of things, the manufacture of autonomous vehicles, 3D printing, nanotechnology, biotechnology, materials science, energy storage, quantum computing.
We think that all these phenomena will change our way to inhabit a house and that designers, architects and engineers will have to learn new methods to study and design the house of the future, a future 4.0.
Thinking about the Internet of things (IoT), Schwab affirms that "it is estimated that by 2020 more than 50 billion devices will be connected to the Internet"[2] (Schwab, 2016, 169). IoT is a system of related computer devices, mechanical and digital machines, objects, animals or people with unique identifiers and the ability to transfer data over a network without requiring human-human or human-computer interaction.
The definition of the Internet of things has evolved thanks to the convergence of multiple technologies, real-time analysis, machine learning, raw material sensors and integrated systems, traditional fields of integrated

[1] Schwab K., 2016. La quarta rivoluzione industriale. Milano: FrancoAngeli, p. 13.
[2] Ibid., p. 169.

systems, wireless sensor networks, control systems, automation (including home and building automation).[3]
At the same time, we know that an Artificial Intelligence is growing as a child does because, for example:

> "ConceptNet4, a system based on artificial intelligence in languages, recently passed an IQ test with a higher score than a 4-year-old child... The next version should be able to achieve the same results as a 5 or 6-year-old child... in 2025 the central processing units could achieve the same reasoning capacity as the human brain"[4]. (Schwab, 2016, 181)

Another important technological innovation is Quantum Computing. A quantum computer is a machine that processes information and performs logical operations according to the laws of quantum mechanics. That is, it operates according to a quantum logic, profoundly different from the classical one according to which current calculators work… The principle of superimposition of quantum mechanics gives the quantum computer an enormous advantage, which consists in the possibility to process a considerable amount of data simultaneously… These properties make possible, in principle, an extraordinary computing power, not comparable with that of classical calculators.[5]

1. ARCHITECTURE 4.0

In the field of Architecture, a fundamental innovation has been the application of nanotechnologies. The first was in 1986 in the Almaden Research Center of San José in California: Dan Eigler laid 36 xenon atoms on a nickel layer to form the IBM inscription.[6]

> "One of the first definitions of "advanced materials" is given by Michael Bever in his Encyclopedia of Advanced Materials10, in which he defines "advanced materials" as those materials where the main characteristic is the ability to synthesize and control the structure of the material in order to obtain a precise set of tailor-made properties aimed at applications on demand." [7] (Leone, 2010, 13)

We can observe many examples where architects used advanced technologies but, in this paper, we can analyze only three examples of architectures where we can find different materials and building methods. They are united by their reference to nature as a model, despite being equipped with very advanced materials and construction techniques. Both of them use their skin to communicate these concepts:

- the breath of man;
- the shadows of the leaves;
- the ground as protection.

The Herzog & de Meuron's Allianz Arena, built in Monaco in 2005, consists of a dynamic and changeable wrapping created for the 2006 football world cup. Merging together the functional and well-being aspects with the communicative and representative charge of architecture, it takes full advantage of the potential offered by innovative technologies.[8] (See Leone, 2010, 11). Its recyclable 2.816 cushions consist of two sheets of Tetra Fluor Ethylene that create an atmospheric building, made by 'air', deliberately detached from the ground with a slit of almost 4 metres that simulate the lightness of its titanic structure.

[3] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Internet_of_things 10/2/20.
[4] Schwab K., 2016. Cit. p. 181.
[5] English translation of http://www.treccani.it/enciclopedia/computazione-quantistica_%28Enciclopedia-della-Scienza-e-della-Tecnica%29/ 12/02/2020.
[6] English translation: Leone M. F., 2010. Innovazione tecnologica e materiali avanzati alte prestazioni ed eco-efficienza: nanotecnologie per l'evoluzione dei materiali cementizi, Dottorato di ricerca in Tecnologia dell'Architettura, XXI ciclo, Università degli Studi di Napoli "Federico II", Scuola di Dottorato in Architettura, Dipartimento di Configurazione e Attuazione dell'Architettura, Dipartimento di Progettazione Urbana e di Urbanistica, Tutor: Mario Losasso, Coordinatore: Augusto Vitale, p. 36.
[7] Ibid., p. 13.
[8] Ibid., p. 11.

The concept of an atmospheric architecture reaches the apex when it works as a reactive apparatus creating a symbiosis between container, event and spectator, because it can change colours of his front during the soccer match, simulating the emotions of the audience. [9] (See Cornaro, 2005)

Another type of architectural advanced skin is that of the Airspace Tokyo, Studio M, Thom Faulders Architecture, Proces2, built in Tokyo in 2007.

Composed of successive layers of perforated panels, the skin of the building is designed and created by the computer that has taken up, for each layer, cellular parametric geometries that were subsequently "flattened" on a plane to make the panels in rigid composite material made of aluminium and plastic materials.[10]

In this example, the design concept aims to create a new atmospheric space of protection simulating the demolished the layer of dense vegetation that wrapped the owner's family residence before the entire site was razed for the new development.[11] (Faulders Studio, 2013)

Also, in this example, the artificial blends with Nature through an interstitial transitional space between public and private, where the view changes every time you move, and the rain does not reach the road by capillary action.[12]

The last example uses an advanced building system to create houses as they are shelters. I find this evident contrast the synthesis of our Era: futuristic hight building technology to get spaces that evoke ancient ancestral places. After the two architectural references to nature elements, like air and plants, we can find the ground as principal element that communicates the concept: get Architecture trough Nature. It is the TECLA house, designed by Mario Cucinella Architects and WASP, and built in Massa Lombarda (RA) in 2019.

As Mario Cucinella explains, Tecla is:

> "an innovative 3D printed habitat prototype that responds to the increasingly urgent climate revolution and the needs of changes dictated by the needs of communities ... a combination of empathic architecture and the application of new technologies".[13] (Cucinella, 2019)
>
> "Mario Cucinella Architects and WASP have launched an innovative 3D printed habitat model. In a historical period of exponential increase in population and consequent lack of housing, TECLA was born from the idea of giving everyone the possibility of having a home and is a new circular model of housing entirely created with reusable and recyclable materials, collected from the construction site."[14] (MC A & WASP, 2019)

Initially, this technique was only used for small objects, today, 3D printers are able to extrude concrete and allow the construction of different structures of varying complexity, from houses to bridges to skyscrapers.[15] (Selva, 2019)

2. INHABITING TEMPORARINESS IN SMART CITIES: POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE CONSEQUENCES

After the previous introduction on the relationship between innovative technologies and architectural design concepts coming from the Nature, in order to explore the actual world of the dwelling architecture, we can highlight about another phenomena that regards people's habits.

[9] English translation of Cornaro A., http://architettura.it/architetture/20050209/ 12/02/2020.
[10] See Leone, 2010. Cit. p. 33.
[11] See Faulders Studio, https://faulders-studio.com/AIRSPACE-TOKYO 12/02/2020.
[12] English translation of https://www.archilovers.com/projects/5397/airspace-tokyo.html#info 12/02/2020.
[13] English translation of De Rosa L., 2019, https://www.greenme.it/abitare/bioedilizia-e-bioarchitettura/casa-argilla-stampata-3d/ 12/02/2020.
[14] See English translation of MC A & Wasp, 2019. TECLA un habitat eco-sostenibile stampato in 3D in terra, https://www.mcarchitects.it/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/Cartella-Stampa-191022.pdf 12/02/2020.
[15] English translation of Selva V., 2019, https://www.idealista.it/news/immobiliare/costruzioni/2019/10/23/137015-questa-casa-prefabbricata-e-stata-costruita-con-una-stampante-3d 12/02/2020.

Today, for work and study reasons, people change their homes very often and already a few decades ago, in America, families moved for work at most every 10 years. These movements have led to the habit of temporarily living in the house.
But what does it mean to "temporarily live in a house"?
The idea of "Temporary Home" seems to be in stark contrast with the theme of the Human Home, conceived as a system of domestic spaces. Starting from the consideration that the idea of home evokes that of a place of shelter, refuge and regeneration, inhabiting or observing it, people "do not always seek the repetition of an identical meaning, but always expect their home to contain an interpretation of the immutable essentials of their existence" (Rykwert, 1974). What happens when these immutable essentials become mutable due to profound transformations of habits and the way man lives in the home?[16]
Freud approached the definition of *Unheimlich* using his apparent opposite *Heimlich* and found that while *Heimlich* is associated with the intimate and "friendly, comfortable," it also alluded to things that are concealed, hidden from view, so that others cannot know them.
During his research, Freud discovered that *Heimlich*'s meaning developed in the direction of ambivalence, to coincide with its opposite *Unheimlich*. The latter seems to emerge from the *Heimlich* and suddenly return when it seems to be dormant. "*Unheimlich* is the name of all things that should have remained secret and hidden, but which have come to light".
Charles Nodier in his Piranèse (1836) distinguished the general space of the sublime (height, depth, extension) from that of the uncanny (silence, solitude, inner reclusion). The passage from welcoming to unfamiliar, operating totally in the mind, reinforces the ambiguity between the real world and the dream, the real world and the spirit world.
A condition of modern anxiety, the uncanny also becomes public, overcoming domestic boundaries, turning into metropolitan uncanny, or metropolitan illness, from which all the inhabitants of the big cities suffered at the end of the 19th century: phobias associated with spatiality such as agoraphobia and claustrophobia were part of it.
As Freud demonstrated, in any case the uncanny emerged from the transformation of something that once seemed familiar and domestic into something different, from *Heimlich* to unhomely. In 1915 Europe, the cradle and seemingly safe home of Western civilization, "was going through a period of barbaric regression; a time when the territorial security that had promoted the notion of a unitary culture had been shattered".[17]
"In his reflection "Building Dwelling Thinking", Martin Heidegger reverses sign and directrix to the hierarchical sequence constructing-dwelling that came about in the technical era. "Only if we are capable of dwelling, – and here lies the reversal – only then can we build." These words probe those listening to them primarily because of the explosion, in our recent turbulent years, of the city suburbs where the issue at stake in the now viral, social contest is, indeed, the remaining within the protection, the search for what is similar and delivers us from evil. Whether it be the preserved memory of places or the possibility of dwelling in them as a home, of taming them or, conversely, of subtracting them from their non-animation and disguise as non-places, what feels at risk is one's ability to dwell. The loss of the sense of dwelling, in city centres and suburbs alike, is most powerful driver behind the explosion of political and social chaos: the city ceases to be a place of identification and becomes the space where 'All that is solid melts into air.'... It is a deeper ontological collapse, the clouding over of the thought that grasps the essence of things. Dwelling – as Heidegger reminds us – is the stay of mortals on the earth: "But 'on

[16] See Longo O., 2004. Abitare la contemporaneità. Forma e identità nell'architettura, Ila Palma, Palermo.
[17] See Vidler A., 1992. The Architectural Uncanny. Essays in the Modern Unhomely, MIT, Cambridge, London16 See Longo O., 2004.

the earth' – the German philosopher clarifies – already means 'under the sky.' Both of these also mean 'remaining before the divinities' (*die Göttlichen)* and include a 'belonging to men's being with one another'." There is an original unity within which the Four – earth and sky, divinities and mortals – are just one thing. The mortals are in the Fourfold because they dwell. If the fundamental character of dwelling is looking after, it is a quadruple care that comprises saving the earth, receiving the sky, awaiting the divinities and escorting the mortals. It is a staying with things while letting them keep their essence. Dwelling is looking after your own space, being in a relation with space, filling the artificial gap between designing, constructing and eventually dwelling. 'However hard and bitter, however hampering and threatening the lack of houses remains – writes Heidegger – the real plight of dwelling does not lie merely in a lack of houses. The real plight of dwelling is indeed older than the world wars with their destruction, also older than the increase of the earth's population and the condition of the industrial workers. The real dwelling plight lies in this, that mortals ever search anew for the nature of dwelling, that they must ever learn to dwell.' Our distress today speaks of this which is, after all, the symptom and voice of our nostalgia. It will never find comfort in past contexts or regressive utopias but in a possible other present, in a thought capable of looking, listening and caring."[18]

In the 90s of the 20th century, Hertzberger defines the concept of threshold as the key of transition and connection between areas with different territorial vocations. Place in itself which essentially constitutes the spatial condition for the meeting and dialogue between areas of different order. The threshold par excellence is the entrance to the house. In it the street, on the one hand, and the private domain, on the other, meet and reconcile. For example, the child sitting on a step-in front of his house feels at home and at the same time part of the outside world. This duality exists thanks to the spatial quality of the threshold, a platform in its own right, a place where, instead of separating, two worlds overlap.

In the 1960s, Chermayeff and Alexander defined a number of differently characterized areas that articulated the hierarchy of spaces between public and private. In order from most accessible to least accessible:

- individual private
- family private: spaces common to a group of accommodations
- group private: meeting spaces between public space and private property
- urban semi-public, controlled by government bodies or other institutions, such as schools, offices, etc.
- urban public, totally public property.

The question of the public-private partnership could, however, become a distant memory if we think about the possibility, still remote but achievable, that in the XXV century a large part of the population could go around with bionic limbs implanted in the body, governed with a smartphone, in particular with Mems (Micro Electro-Mechanical-System), i.e. microsystems with an average size of a few microns.

The distance between an external world and a private environment could be cancelled by the invention of some researchers at the University of Tel Aviv who have devised a way to integrate Mems no longer on a silicon substrate but on a particular type of organic polymer, more suitable to be implanted in the human body.[19] (See Rubei, 2013)

What does the house in the digital age look like? How does it interact with augmented (or computer-mediated) reality? The automated home gives the possibility to connect and manage all the systems of the house in a

[18] See Freud S., 1991. Il perturbante, in S. Freud, Saggi sull'arte, la letteratura e il linguaggio (trad.it. a cura di S. Daniele, Einaudi, Torino 1991).
[19] English translation of Rubei A., 2013, https://www.nextme.it/tecnologia/biotecnologie/6266-smartphone-cervello-sensori-mems 12/02/2020.

centralized way through a single control element. The so-called intelligent house regulates the lighting, shading, climate, etc. according to the individual wishes of the inhabitant. Simple interfaces allow you to adapt processes and functions independently according to your needs.
For example, we can find on the market an "Augmented House" as a solution that puts people at the center of an unprecedented project: an ecosystem that integrates the best solutions in terms of comfort, safety and energy efficiency, to improve everyday life. It can be modular because the basic functionalities can be complemented by others according to the inhabitant's future needs. It can be integrated because it allows to remotely manage all internal and external devices, creating a unique and integrated ecosystem. It is flexible because it is customizable to meet all the needs of comfort, energy and safety.
As Schwab wrote, these possibilities create some consequences.
The positive ones are:

- "resource efficiency;
- comfort;
- detection of possible intruders;
- access control;
- ability to live independently (young people, elderly people, people with disabilities);
- increase in targeted forms of advertising;
- reduction of costs for the health care system (fewer admissions and medical visits, possibility to monitor the intake of medicines);
- real-time monitoring and video recording;
- remote management of your home."

The negative concern:

- "privacy;
- surveillance;
- cyber-attacks, crime, vulnerabilities;
- impact on the workforce;
- change of workplace;
- data ownership."[20]

2.1. Sustainable House in the Anthropocene Liquid Era

Expanding all these innovations to the scale of the city, Schwab writes that there are these

"unknown consequences:

- impact on the cultural dimension and lifestyle of the city;
- changes in citizens' individual habits."[21]

In 2016, at the Festival of generations in Florence, during his presentation: (PRE) VISIONS FOR THE FUTURE, Society and fears, Zygmunt Bauman affirms that in this era the phrase *cogito ergo sum* has been replaced by: "they see me on the screen and therefore I exist". Thinking about his words: "change is the only permanent thing and uncertainty is the only certainty, our fears move between forces we are unable to tame", is it possible to at least keep them at a distance? To deny them access to our homes and workplaces? So, if we think about what the previous industrial revolution (the third one) provoked, we can have an idea (albeit vague) of how much this last one, the 4.0, will affect us.
Recently, many researchers are studying the connection between spaces and neuroscience trying to define a new kind of space where man can feel good.
In 2020 Ruzzon wrote that we don't know why in some places we feel good, right away

[20] Schwab K., 2016. Cit. pp. 170-171.
[21] Ibid., p. 174.
[22] See English translation of Ruzzon D., 2020. "Immaginario e paesaggio incarnato", in AAVV, Boundary Landscapes, TAB Edizioni, Roma.

in the blink of an eye. He asked if the mystery of this magnetism will remain impenetrable forever. He said that

> "for some decades now, the humanities, anthropology and neuroscience have been investigating the chemistry of this link between the experience of places, the urban form, the landscape and the implicit emotional reactions of people... For more than twenty years now, it has been using the methods of neuroscience and environmental psychology to understand how the evolutionary perspective of man, and therefore his biological dimension, can influence the perception of the landscape and the urban context in which we are immersed every day".[22] (Ruzzon, 2020)

Since 1993, the Heerwagen's and Gordon's studies told us that there is a widespread preference for a natural landscape composed of particular types of trees, with bushes arranged in a fairly precise order: the landscape of the East African Savannah. Through a long study in the different continents, they showed that this preference was well-founded, particularly among the younger generation. As it is now widely shared, the reasons for this reality were evidently to be found in the fact that mankind is the result of a diaspora that has its centre in that African area, which began about seventy thousand years ago, by a group of Sapiens perhaps composed of a few thousand individuals. (*Idem*)

This research demonstrates that there is some specific information inside the human precognitive dimension. In the field of the architectural design, these studies show how the shape of a space and the urban landscape that we design could speak to our body, at a level that precedes our cerebral reflection.

For this reason, I think that a house designed for man of this epoch, has to be sustainable also for these psychological aspects and not only on the front of energy saving and recycling of materials.

CONCLUSION: A PSYCHOLOGICAL SUSTAINABILITY

In both architectural and urban contexts, key concepts such as "threshold space", "in-between" and "uncanny" are therefore, still today, the indispensable traces for an investigation into the potential and role of experiential phenomena in the design process of an urban home.

Today many people live every day between the real world and the virtual world through the use of the internet and social networks. Perhaps the phenomenon of Freud's ambiguity is often felt by people who live online family experiences that turn into unexpected and unknown sensations.

Probably the relationship between our body and reality should be taken care of every day to find a new, more balanced connection with our urban places. So, thinking about the famous book *The image of the city* (1960), we could recreate our mental maps by adding new elements to Lynch's five (Paths, Edges, Districts, Nodes, Landmarks).

The design of our house could be conceived using thresholds and filters that from the bedroom connect private and public spaces, avoiding traumatic or too fast passages.

To realize this gradual passage, we can use every part of the city that can become a great patchwork of urban memories, thus creating a more comfortable city as if it were a 'house without limits'.

REFERENCES

Freud S., 1991. *Il perturbante*, in S. Freud, Saggi sull'arte, la letteratura e il linguaggio (trad.it. a cura di S. Daniele, Einaudi, Torino 1991).

Leone M. F., 2010. *Innovazione tecnologica e materiali avanzati alte prestazioni ed eco-efficienza: nanotecnologie per l'evoluzione dei materiali cementizi,* Dottorato di ricerca in Tecnologia dell'Architettura, XXI ciclo, Università degli Studi di Napoli "Federico II", Scuola di Dottorato in Architettura, Dipartimento di Configurazione e Attuazione dell'Architettura, Dipartimento di Progettazione Urbana e di Urbanistica, Tutor: Mario Losasso, Coordinatore: Augusto Vitale, p. 36.

Longo O., 2004. Abitare la contemporaneità. Forma e identità nell'architettura, Ila Palma, Palermo.

MC A & Wasp, 2019. *TECLA un habitat eco-sostenibile stampato in 3D in terra*,https://www.mcarchitects.it/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/Cartella-Stampa-191022.pdf 12/02/2020.

Ruzzon D., 2020. "Immaginario e paesaggio incarnato", in AAVV, *Boundary Landscapes*, TAB Edizioni, Roma.

Schwab K., 2016. *La quarta rivoluzione industriale.* Milano: FrancoAngeli, p. 13.

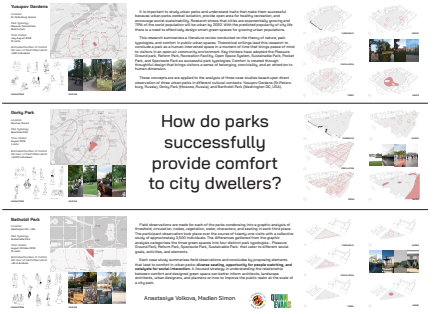
Vidler A., 1992. *The Architectural Uncanny. Essays in the Modern Unhomely*, MIT, Cambridge, London.

POSTER #2.26

CO-DRAWING: COLLABORATIVE REPRESENTATIONS OF THE CITY

Anastasiya Volkpva[a], Madlen Simon[a]
[a]University of Maryland, Maryland, USA

How do parks successfully provide comfort to city dwellers?



It is important to study urban parks and understand traits that make them successful because urban parks combat isolation, provide open area for healthy recreation, and encourage social sustainability. Research shows that cities are exponentially growing and 75% of the world population will be urban by 2050. With the predicted popularity of city life there is a need to effectively design smart green spaces for growing urban populations.

This research summarizes a literature review conducted on the theory of nature, park typologies, and comfort in public urban spaces. Theoretical writings lead this research to conclude a park as a human-intervened space in a moment of time that brings peace of mind to visitors in an open-air community environment. Key thinkers have adopted the Pleasure Ground park, Reform Park, Recreation Facility, Open Space System, Sustainable Park, Pocket Park, and Spectacle Park as successful park typologies. Comfort is created through thoughtful design that brings visitors a sense of belonging, conviviality, and an attention to human dimension.

These concepts are are applied to the analysis of three case studies based upon direct observation of three urban parks in different cultural contexts: Yusupov Gardens (St.Petersburg, Russia), Gorky Park (Moscow, Russia), and Bartholdi Park (Washington DC, USA).

Field observations are made for each of the parks condensing into a graphic analysis of threshold, circulation, nodes, vegetation, water, characters, and seating in each third place. The participant observation took place over the course of twenty-one visits with a collective study of approximately 3,500 individuals. The differences gathered from the graphic analysis categorizes the three green spaces into four distinct park typologies - Pleasure Ground Park, Reform Park, Spectacle Park, Sustainable Park- that cater to different social goals, activities, and elements.

Each case study summarizes field observations and concludes by proposing elements that lead to comfort in urban parks: diverse seating, opportunity for people watching, and catalysts for social interaction. A focused strategy in understanding the relationship between comfort and designed green space can better inform architects, landscape architects, urban designers, and planners on how to improve the public realm at the scale of a city park.

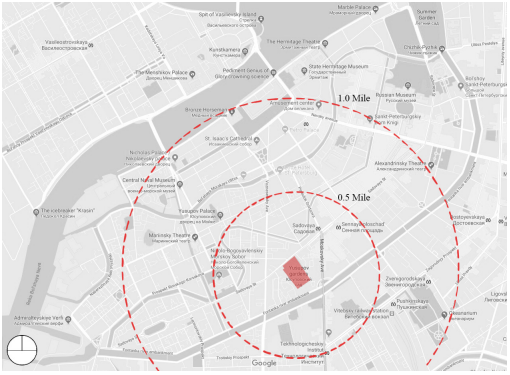
Yusupov Gardens

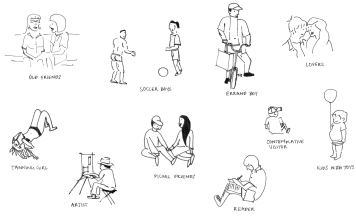
Location
St. Petersburg, Russia

Park Typology
Pleasure Ground Park
Reform Park

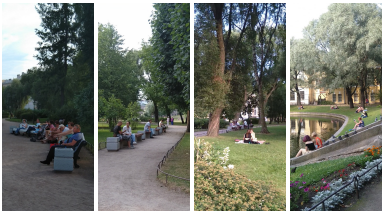
Time Visited
July-August 2018
10 visits

Estimated Number of Visitors Per Hour of Field Observation
~500 individuals

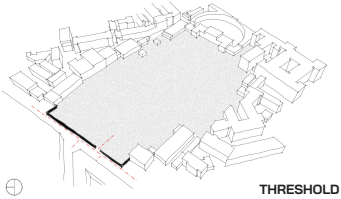




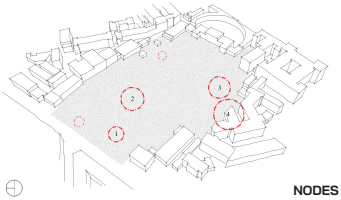
CHARACTERS



SEATING

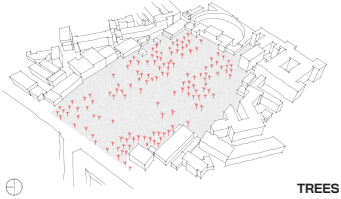


THRESHOLD

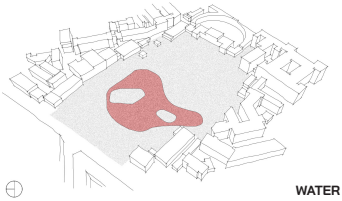


NODES

CIRCULATION



TREES



WATER

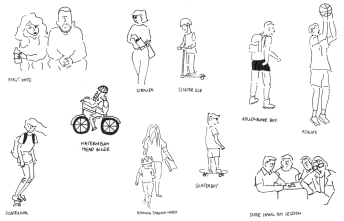
Gorky Park

Location
Moscow, Russia

Park Typology
Spectacle Park

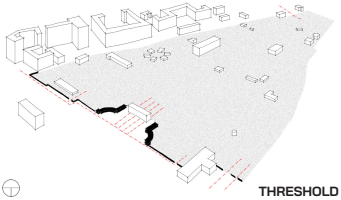
Time Visited
August 2018
1 visits

Estimated Number of Visitors Per Hour of Field Observation
~3,000 individuals

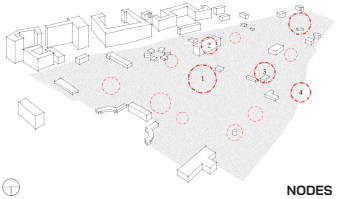


CHARACTERS

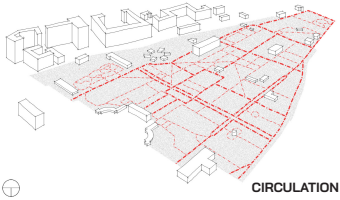
SEATING



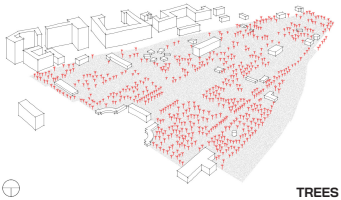
THRESHOLD



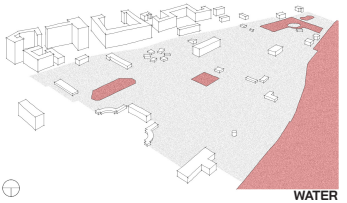
NODES



CIRCULATION



TREES



WATER

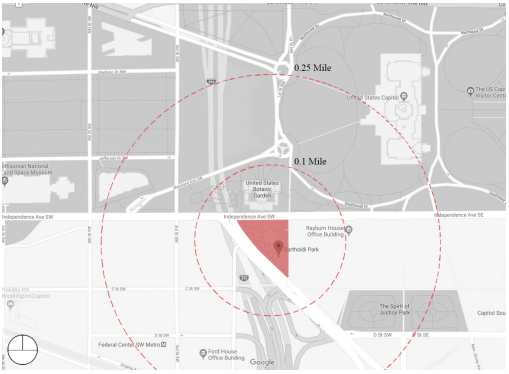
Batholdi Park

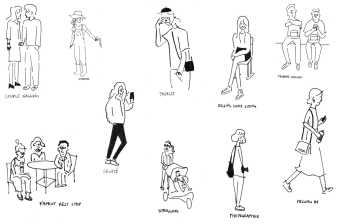
Location
Washington D.C., USA

Park Typology
Sustainable Park

Time Visited
August-October 2018
10 visits

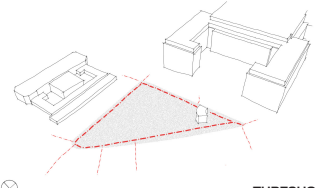
Estimated Number of Visitors Per Hour of Field Observation
~40 individuals



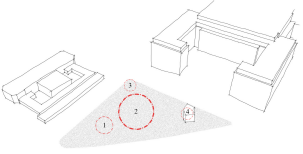


CHARACTERS

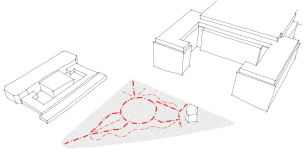
SEATING



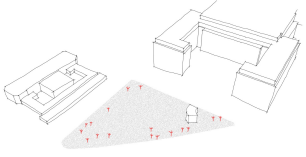
THRESHOLD



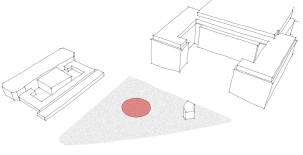
NODES



CIRCULATION



TREES



WATER

3

BLOCK 3: THE NEW FACES THE OLD

PAPER #3.01

FROM DISMISSAL TO DEVELOPMENT: THE CHALLENGE OF ARCHITECTURE

Roberta Ingaramo[a]
[a] DAD, Politecnico di Torino, Turin, Italy

ABSTRACT

The re-use of dismissed buildings has been discussed on an international level. Model interventions, such as the successful re-design of the Tate Modern (which is housed in a former power station, Herzog & de Meuron, 2016) or the ionic High Line (Diller Scofidio + Renfro & James Corner Field Operations and planting designer Piet Oudolf, 2009, 2011, 2014, 2018), have revealed the approach of re-using abandoned buildings to the broader public. Starting from the state of the art, this paper will highlight the efficacy of the urban regeneration approach and its implications on a socio-economic level. What kind of projects can architects carry out, but more importantly, is it possible to classify the different projects based on the tangible results of the transformations? This paper will discuss the results of case studies based on research conducted in two post-industrial U.S. cities over the past few years. These case studies identify specific design strategies as tools for selecting and classifying project output. When it comes to the abandonment and decay of industrialized cities, Detroit is the poster city and it represents an exceptional site for experimentation and reflection, both in its present state, but also for imagining future transformation scenarios and identifying intermediate paths between conservation and demolition. Is adaptive re-use the only approach or are there different declinations of re-use which are influencing international research in architecture? The urban renewal project can be a resource for identifying new uses of different buildings or building complexes, even recent ones with uncertain or even non-existent restraint systems, in order to reinsert the buildings into today's urban metabolism, while preparing them for possible future transformations, which is to be kept in mind given how rapidly intended uses change in this day and age.

KEYWORDS

Dismissal; development; re-use; urban metabolism.

Figure 1. Urban image at the Tate Modern, Herzog & de Meuron, 2016. Source: (Ingaramo R. 2019)

INTRODUCTION

Dismissal is a topic which is becoming more and more relevant considering the rate at which changes take place; it leads to transversal reflections and requires multiple disciplinary intersections. If the architect is responsible for the project, trying to make up for a progressive loss of what Françoise

Choay once called *compétence d'édifier*[1], then architectural research is responsible for identifying and clarifying approaches and processes supported by scientific value. Sometimes, construction is not the only possible effect/result of project research; the project can also result in the negation of formal action, considering the "ruins" as carriers of symbolic values. Is "dismissed" architecture something that can be reshaped and reinserted in the urban landscape or should it be "disposed of", like outdated residue? Significant research has been conducted on an international level in an attempt to give an answer to one of the most frequently-asked questions posed by those involved in these kinds of projects. The Roman arenas used as pits from which to gather construction materials remind us that the entity of renewal and transformation are intrinsically correlated to the size of the project. *"To project" – i.e. project designing* – as defined in the Treccani dictionary means *making the project design of something, that is to conceive something and study the possibilities and ways to perform it, or more in general to conceive something, to have the intention to do something*. This term originates from the late Latin word *proiectare*, which mean to cast forward, and highlights the sense of foreshadowing that characterizes its use as a tool to construct scenarios of transformation. It is within the intrinsic etymological meaning of the word "project" that the architect positions himself, as he strives to cast forward towards a transformation which takes shape through the project, which in turn is the tool used to identify possible uses of the space available. However, some examples of infrastructure and building re-appropriation over the past few years, such as the Palais de Tokyo in Paris, site of contemporary creation as defined by the architects (Lacaton &Vassal, 2014), have reignited the discussion on the role of the architect as a guide who can navigate through complex processes which have less to do with substantial structural modification and are increasingly affected by politics, society and economics.

1. THE LEGACY OF INDUSTRIAL ASSETS

1.1. A Case Study of Two American Cities

Detroit, known for its once bustling car industry, is the poster city for abandonment. It is universally recognized as an empty nest where more than 85% of the remaining inhabitants are Afro-American (Mcdonald 2014). Sprawl began to change the physical structure of the city in the mid-50s, leading to the displacement of a large, predominantly white, part of the population. The other city chosen for this research is Pittsburgh, the city of steel, which after a sharp decline, has begun to experience regrowth in the Eds and Meds industry, with the financial support of its native Foundations and the cooperation of private and public sectors. These two American cities have been selected as representatives of a larger phenomenon which also exists in far-away countries, and they present the opportunity for us to reflect on the "rebirth" of cities which have been heavily hit by abandonment and dismissal. The two cities share a common destiny: they are in a phase of partial post-industrialisation, or better, they are in a moment where the outdated industrial paradigm is shifting. This paradigm, however, transformed the actual layout of the cities, leaving behind significant industrial infrastructure in a state of disrepair; in the specific case of Detroit, its condition is comparable to that of post-war debris. Some of the so-called American "Rust Belt" cities (Thomas 2013), where abandoned buildings and *brownfields* bear witness to the recent past, are attempting to re-ignite interest and re-inject appeal into their cities. This has been partially achieved

[1] Choay, F. 2009. Le patrimoine en question: anthologie pour un combat. Paris: Édition Du Seuil.

in Pittsburgh over the past few years, so much so that new innovative production lines have chosen to open their offices here (for example, Google, the East Coast film industry and Uber - the latter first tested self-driven cars here in 2016), while in Detroit, the first steps towards recovery began in 2014. Overall, Detroit is still in a state of disrepair and the empty plots attest to the astronomical number of people who fled the city; however, there has been some positive change over the past few years. In 2014, Maurice Cox became Director of City Planning, bringing skills and knowledge also steeped in Italian urban design and architecture. In both Detroit and Pittsburgh, industrial infrastructure is a fundamental structural element of their industrial legacy. Compared to Detroit, Pittsburgh is lightyears ahead in its transformation process and its quest for and creation of a new identity, as Don Carter highlighted several times in his book published in 2016[2]. This is visible in the increasing demand for corporate spaces – mainly light manufacturing – and new types of housing in the city, most of which is requested by young workers, mostly graduates and postgraduates. The market evolution and the demand for housing reflect the desire on behalf of the new American generations to re-appropriate this city: they wish to live near where they work and find leisure opportunities. This is a widespread counter-trend in the U.S. which is leading to the need to differentiate the uses of the new properties being built, but also those of existing ones which can be converted, transformed, and renewed today, but also again in the future. In Detroit, significant new urban interventions, such as Brush Park, mark a break from the residential trend which was based on the widespread front garden-family house-back garden-car space suburban model. The model in Brush Park[3] is the result of a long process negotiated between public administration, developers and local inhabitants. Its aim is to shift the focus from the individual to the shared, the singular to the plural, the isolated to the included, in the attempt to create a new city blueprint. This project, which saw the completion of 39 town homes and carriage houses south of Alfred Street in December 2019, foresees only one car space per house (slightly more space for larger houses), thus giving far more importance to public or semi-public spaces. Even the desire to distinguish the architectural models transforms this project into something new. This project also involved non-local architects; to an extent, it imported a successful European model - the German IBA - and updated it by adhering to the principles of the *20-minute neighbourhood* and the new urbanism *form based code*. Thus, the city is renewed and focuses on re-using individual buildings, but also empty spaces such as Brush Park – an early 20th century Victorian upper-class neighbourhood – or real brownfields which attest to this city's heavy industrial legacy.

1.2. Re-use as an Architectural Tool

After an initial period where the attitude was mainly to demolish industrial sites and huge brownfields predominantly located on the riverside, a shift occurred in Pittsburgh, whereby the industrial legacy of the city was acknowledged as material value (Lubove 1996). Projects such as the Perkins Eastman's

Figure 2. Foxway Commons, Pittsburgh. Town houses and apartments re-using an old warehouse. Source: (Ingaramo R. 2017)

[2] Carter, D.K., editor, 2016. Remaking Post-industrial cities. Lessons from North America and Europe. New York: Routledge.
[3] https://www.citymoderndetroit.com

Foxway Commons in the city's South Side contributed to reversing the trend, offering housing solutions which re-used even anonymous-looking buildings such as local warehouses disseminated in many production neighbourhoods of the city, thus creating opportunities to intensify the connection with the industrial identity to which mainly negative connotations are normally attributed. The new integration uses recognisable materials, such as lacquered metallic sheets which perfectly match the solid brick walls of the warehouses. Re-use in many cases is a tool used to highlight the local identity of places and cities and is universally recognized as a sustainable action to save embodied energies; it is a response to the need "to reconstruct" a disjointed and strongly-diluted urbanized area – as evident in the case of Detroit – and this becomes an opportunity to radically re-think abandoned buildings, brownfields and spaces awaiting transformation. Already in the 1970s, the practice of re-use in the U.S. was considered an operational tool for recycling a property estate (often post-industrial, abandoned, underused, XL or L) of significant impact in the urban or peri-urban structure. For example, Lee Harris Pomeroy won the Progressive Architecture Award in 1963 for the reconversion of a former can¬dy factory – Peaks Mason Mints – into apartments and studios for artists in Brook¬lyn Heights (N.Y.). The term re-use takes on many different meanings which aren't fully synonymous. These include *recuperation, modernization, transformation, conversion and rehabilitation*[4]. Corboz used the term "recycling" which, in international literature finds little traction, given that the term is used to describe the re-use of materials rather than the re-use of buildings and spaces; however, it has been adopted to tag one of the most important research projects carried out by the Italian public university system in the last few years, through ministerial funding, called ReCycle Italy (Ciorra and Marini 2011). This research uses the term recycle as different from re-use, recovery, requalification and regeneration, extending the meaning to an action which is carried out through an architectural city and landscape project that takes on a decisive role in re-moulding the existing infrastructure so as to reinsert the buildings, spaces and urban fabrics into the city's ecosystem. In 2017, Robiglio offered a definition in line with the international literature, and specifically with the approach suggested in 2011 by Bullen and Love[5], highlighting the complex system of implications which adaptive re-use carries and indicating a toolkit of actions and strategies to adopt in the process connected to the adaptive re-use of a space/building. The size of the problem on an urban scale, in the remake framework, is analysed in a book published by Routledge and edited by Don Carter, former Director of the Remaking Cities Institute at the Carnegie Mellon University di Pittsburgh (Carter D.K., editor, 2016), which compares the U.S. and Europe. The policies and actions undertaken to restore cities which have been strongly affected by industrialisation rather than push for a real post-industrialisation, as highlighted in the above-mentioned literature, offer scenarios of experimentation for architectural and urban projects whose restoration and re-insertion in renewed urban metabolisms, constitute an important field. But wich project are we talking about? Are there actually operational tools that can guide this transformation? What is clear is that projects that focus on ordinary heritage today - which do not correspond to industrial heritage - often are not subject to any restrictions (tutela in Italy) or do not belong to any local or state list, and need to take into account extreme variability

[4] As previously highlighted at the end of the 70s by André Corboz in the article Old Buildings and Modern Functions, published in Lotus on 13th December 1976
[5] Bullen, P.A., Love, P.E. 2011, Factors influencing the adaptive re-use of buildings, in: Journal of Engineering, Design and Technology, Vol. 9, n. 1, pp. 32-46.

of uses over time; this includes a condition of temporariness which will unlikely adapt to the permanent nature of architecture. Moneo, in his famous piece on the durability of construction (Moneo 2004) in the collection *La solitudine degli edifici e altri scritti*, highlighted the importance of the duration of a construction in relation to the durability of the construction materials; the construction tends to outlive and break away from the architect; its durability today seems to be re-configured, especially in specific environments such as workspaces and service spaces which, more so than housing spaces, suffer the effects of the ever-changing conditions of "uses and customs". Already back in 1988, Moneo opposes this (The Idea of Lasting, A Conversation with R. Moneo, Perspecta no.24 1988, then published in: *La solitudine degli edifici e altri scritti*), highlighting the importance of lasting, stable materiality in opposition to the trend which was already evident at the time, that is the de-materialisation of architecture, which tends to become "fleeting art", because it is ever-changing[6]. Taking into account the fact that architecture needs to face different needs that are in continuous evolution, re-use presents itself as an operational tool which reconciles the need to not disperse the embodied energy and to attributed value in terms of durability, sustainability and adaptability to what is underused, dismissed or abandoned: a value – a legacy – becomes an opportunity for development and innovation, even with scarce financial resources. So, on the one hand, there's the idea of re-use and the durability of the construction materials; on the other, there is the acceptance of the fact that simple structures or disused areas have a life cycle that comes to an end; these reflections allows for the creation of new founding principles with design outcomes which will enable the identification of new forms and spatial features. From this perspective, the re-use of what already exists could become endemic. It could be the architect who may combine competences on new constructions, preservation and potentially restoration, without limiting his practice to specific realities but spreading the use even in countries undergoing significant development and ones which are constantly evolving, where new constructions become obsolete in shorter and shorter amounts of time. Catherine Slessor[7] made a provocative comment in relation to this: she said "the responsible architect might never build a new building" on the occasion of the AR New into Old Awards shortlist, which celebrates the most interesting adaptive re-use projects all over the world and where re-use is an "innovative topic", despite the fact that it has long been a construction technique. Today, re-use is identified as a highly sustainable intervention, a practice which can cross borders and obtain consensus. But the project which falls within this framework cannot be defined univocally; it is clear that we are lacking a classification system and a definition which can convey the variability of the approaches and founding principles.

2. THE RESEARCH

My research was carried out in different stages: the first stage was field research which lasted several months and took me to the cities of Pittsburgh and Detroit. There I conducted interviews, site visits, and photographic enquiries which allowed me to identify the cases to study. As a matter of fact, my research uses case studies as a research tool. 22 projects were selected in the two cities. These fell under three different design approaches: preservationist, additive, and brownfield remix. Each one applies a different definition of reuse and has specific and identifiable design features. As often occurs in field research, case studies tend

[6] Moneo, R. 1999. L'idea di Durata e i materiali della costruzione. In: Moneo, R. La solitudine degli edifici e altri scritti. Vol. I. Torino: Allemandi. p.203.
[7] In: AR New into Old Awards 2019 shortlist revealed.
https://www.architectural-review.com/awards/new-into-old/ar-new-into-old-awards-2019-shortlist-revealed/10045244.article

to generate highly relevant international literature, where the project and its analysis, decomposition and interpretation play a relevant role, offering a significant iconography which new generation research can also refer to. This was the case of the book *City as a Loft* by Baum and Christiaanse (2012), where the many examples selected and compared to one another provided access to real knowledge that *must* be highly relevant and significant *simply* because it exists in the world and was built. Case study as a research tool is not simply a theoretical construct; it is the result of a specific selection deemed important based on a series of parameters which represent the foundations of the research itself. A second stage of the research allowed me to collect the results in publications which constituted the scientific basis supporting the project experimentation carried out in a thesis seminar I tutored and which dozens of students took part in. These students conducted their specialist thesis (for a Masters' degree) on the topic of re-using buildings of ordinary industrial heritage, mainly warehouses. Further experiments on industrial buildings which are no longer used have been carried out by a group of professors of the Polytechnic Universities of Turin and Milan and interdisciplinary teams of students (Architecture, Engineering, Landscape Design, Urban Design, Planning, and Management Engineering). The projects selected in the first step of the research allowed to establish gradients of transformation which are distinguishable based on the intensity of the transformation of the given site/building. The context is always re-use, but the approaches to re-use differ; these approaches, which have different operational impacts, have been distinguished and analysed. Most of these case studies are usually defined as adaptive re-use interventions, extending the meaning of the term to

Figure 3. The Brew House. Pittsburgh. Source: (Ingaramo R. 2016)

cases of consistent transformation of original buildings. But the classification proposed in this research tries to base the distinction of the project outputs[8]. The *Preservationist* approach (Ingaramo 2017) is known as the antagonist to the conservative approach, which is based on the complete conservation of the building with only minimal reversible interventions. This approach could be applied to *Listed* buildings such as the Brew House in Pittsburgh, now an Art Gallery with artists' workshops and apartments, or the ongoing transformation of Michigan Station in Detroit, today a Ford Motors hub. Modifications are mostly made through blueprint changes, which do not drastically transform the original layout of the building. Volumes and façades are preserved and, for the most part, are only subject to ordinary maintenance. In some cases, the intervention is adaptive in the strictest sense: almost nothing is changed but the space is occupied for other uses with adaptations

[8] Ingaramo, R. 2017. Rust Remix. Siracusa: LetteraVentidue.

and safety structures put in place. It is only in rare cases that the spaces are used for new purposes without appropriate adaptation to the regulations which, in a short time, leads to the building being abandoned once again; this was the case of the Russell Plant in Detroit. The building kept all its structural and spatial features, enhancing the original design by exploiting its potential, such as open spaces, modular articulations, great heights and big glass surfaces. The *Additive* approach (Ingaramo 2017) foresees significant changes through a process that creates stratifications, reinventing roles and forms to reinsert the building into the urban system. This approach manifests itself on different levels: from the simple addition of small functional parts (distribution systems, covering and insulation systems, openings…) which allow for new uses, to a significant formal redefinition which reinterprets the compositional roles of individual elements or portions of a building; a basement, the thickness of a wall, the wall texture, the size of the apertures. And this is how a simple warehouse becomes a reference model for extensive urban regeneration like in the above-mentioned case of the Keystone residential block in Pittsburgh or the Ascend climbing gym, created in a section of a production warehouse devoid of any architectural value. On an urban scale, the *Brownfield Remix* approach (Ingaramo 2017) can be carried out both in permeable spaces such as parks, pedestrian walkways, bike trails or semi-public squares, such as Dequindre Cut in Detroit or in areas where obsolete buildings have been demolished and which can be re-built with buildings capable of reconstructing a new identity and amalgamating a past industrial legacy and modern vocations. After providing an analytical and interpretative grid, the case studies and the acknowledgement of the different gradients of intervention become an operational tool.

3. DESIGN AS A TOOL TO TRANSFORM WHAT ALREADY EXISTS

The cases of the two American cities highlight the intrinsic potential of spaces which have suffered severe abandonment. The deep crisis which affected Pittsburgh and which is still affecting Detroit in its urban fabric and local economy have led to structural synergies between not-for-profit organisations (e.g. the Mellon Foundation, the Kresge Foundation) and public and private administrations supported by the world of scientific research (in Pittsburgh, Carnegie Mellon University has created start-ups and has entered agreements with businesses to incentivise development). This synergy has allowed to carry out regeneration projects, which vary in size and relevance, with important repercussions on the perception of cities on behalf of the local inhabitants and the people who frequent them either for work or leisure.

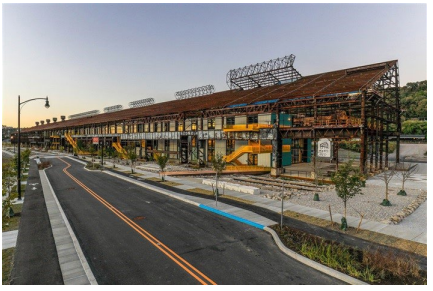


Figure 4. Hazelwood Green, Mill 19. Pittsburgh. Source: (Turner construction services. 2019)

In 2019, Pittsburgh was named one of the most liveable cities in the US (the 4th) and the 34th in the world according to an annual report published by the Economist Intelligence Unit. From the City of Steel to the City of Eds and Meds, Pittsburgh has undergone a transformation

which is reflected in the city itself, specifically in the vitality of the Strip District and the new neighbourhoods being built on the banks of the Monongahela and on the brownfield of Mill 19, the only building of the imposing LTV Steel Company complex[9] to have been preserved. It is not just the big projects of the *Brownfield Remix* such as Hazelwood Green (which includes the transformation of Mill 19) that are undergoing a transformation, but even small projects such as 7800 Susquehanna Street, where a small-sized abandoned factory today represents a beacon of opportunity for the Homewood neighbourhood with 24 tenants and over 100 people employees, offering business accelerator services which involve people from the neighbourhood. This building counted on scarce financial resources; the *additive* approach allowed for the introduction of vertical connecting elements which highlighted the fantastic lighting of the establishment.

This project is a resource which aims to support the transformation of dismissed architecture and enable its insertion in the urban metabolism. In broader terms, architectural design aims to identify ways of remodelling space and buildings with different gradients of intervention on what already exists, while *infilling* what is new. This is the opportunity for detail-oriented architecture which gleans from innovative technology, interprets industrial legacy, guide transformation processes, and offers visions that can project us into a dimension of semi-permanent transformation, where architecture is the interpretative key of a variable reality, which seeks solid references capable of adapting to its uncertainty.

Figure 5. 7800 Susquehanna Street. Pittsburgh. Source: (Ingaramo R. 2018)

Figure 6. Industrial plant re-use. Vision. Source: (Negrello M. Ingaramo R. 2018)

[9] formerly J&L, Jones and Laughlin Steel Company.

REFERENCES

Baum, M., Christiaanse, K., editors, 2012. *City as Loft: Adaptive Reuse as a Resource for Sustainable Urban Development.* Zurich: gta Verlag.

Bullen, P.A., Love, P.E. 2011. Factors influencing the adaptive re-use of buildings, in: *Journal of Engineering, Design and Technology,* Vol. 9, n. 1, pp. 32-46.

Carter, D.K. editor. 2016. *Remaking Post-industrial cities. Lessons from North America and Europe.* New York: Routledge.

Ciorra, P., Marini, S., editors, 2011. *Re-cycle: strategie per l'architettura, la città e il pianeta.* Milano: Electa.

Corboz, A. 1985. Il territorio come palinsesto. In: Casabella n. 516. Settembre 1985.

Ingaramo, R. 2017. *Rust Remix*. Siracusa: LetteraVentidue Editore.

Lubove, R. 1996. *Twentieth Century Pittsburgh: The Post-Steel Era*. vol. 2. Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press.

Mcdonald, J.F. 2014. *What happened to and in Detroit?* in: Urban Studies Journal, Vol. 51(16) 3309–3329.

Moneo, R. 1999. *La solitudine degli edifici e altri scritti*. Vol. I and II. Torino: Allemandi.

Thomas, J., editor, 2013. The City After Abandonment. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

PAPER #3.02

THE HIDDEN DESIGNER: RETHINKING URBAN RULES IN CITY MAKING

Caterina Barioglio[a], Daniele Campobenedetto[a], Marianna Nigra[a], Lucia Baima[a1]
[a]Politecnico di Torino, Torino, Italy

ABSTRACT

Urban rules have been used for centuries to control the interaction between actors involved in city-making and its translation into the built environment (Lehnerer, 2009). They are a stratified legacy that, especially from the Industrial Revolution, were overshadowed by the need for urban planning.
On the counter stream, we are witnessing new tendencies: in a time in which European cities have to deal with progressive modifications rather than massive expansions is arising the role of design tools meant to transform the existing city.
This paper builds on the analysis of the making of the ordinary urban fabric – the city intended as the combined result of spatial planning, market forces, swinging frames of reasoning, conformity to norms and individual expectations and aspirations. On this basis, this paper focuses on the role of urban codes in shaping the structure of our cities. Specifically, it aims at exploring the intertwined connection between urban codes and city morphology. Commonly urban codes are intended as a set of rules that regard singled out 'elemental types' (such as height, roofing, windows, and the like) and their relations within the built environment with no correspondence to a predetermined and unique location. In that, urban codes profoundly differ from plans, even if they both impact on the urban configuration.
Urban codes are usually associated with different scales, from building elements to street layouts intended to promote desired urban forms.
Rethinking urban codes, shifting from a post evaluation perspective to a design-oriented one, calls for the intervention of architects. This paper explores this approach through the case study of Turin, Italy, within the on-going revision of the urban regulatory system promoted by their City Council.

KEYWORDS

Urban design; urban rules; urban codes; urban morphology.

INTRODUCTION[2]

The development of the set of rules that has determined the forms and uses of the European city, from the modern age to today, reflects the succession of priorities and paradigms: industrial expansion, reconstruction and urban growth, environmental protection and emergencies, functional and physical transformation of buildings. While the Italian debate has focused on planning tools and their effectiveness in responding to the socio-economic challenges of cities (Secchi, 2000; Mazza, 2002), accessory regulations seem of less importance. For example

[1] The autorship of this article is equally shared by Caterina Barioglio, Daniele Campobenedetto and Marianna Nigra. Lucia Baima collaborated to the analysis and proposals concerning the "roof" element.
[2] This article is an aoutcome of the Re-coding Research project, developed as part of the collaboration agreement between the City of Turin and the Polytechnic of Turin for studies and research related to the preliminary investigation activities for the general revision of the PRG This document is the result of the research work of the Department of Architecture and Design (DAD) carried out at the Future Urban Legacy Lab (FULL) interdepartmental center. Principal Investigator: Matteo Robiglio. Coordination: Caterina Barioglio; Daniele Campobenedetto; Marianna Nigra. Research Group: Lucia Baima; Michele Barale; Caterina Barioglio; Daniele Campobenedetto; Francesca Frassoldati; Valerio Roberto Maria Lo Verso; Maddalena Martina; Guglielmina Mutani; Marianna Nigra; Anna Pellegrino; Matteo Robiglio; Riccardo Ronzani; Valeria Todeschi.

building regulations which, according to a hierarchical order specific to zoning, often had the task of intervening after the definition of the use of land was set. This division of roles, understandable in a condition of urban expansion and city development guided and accompanied by public investment, has been gradually put into crisis by the transformation processes in the existing city.
This dimension is generically defined by the term coding, and is considered as a specific and complementary dimension to the intended use of land, mainly based on a system of laws and rules of conduct in a designated context, written by specialists but intended to be transmitted and communicated without interpretative doubts, with a sufficiently general and repeatable character. Without entering into the architectural choices, confronting the coding tools means confronting the set of rules concerning identified elements (height of the buildings, roofing, openings, relations between elements of the same or of different buildings and the like) and their relations with the built environment, but which do not refer to specific areas of the city.
Seaside's example shows how coding can operate as a set of complementary tools, not just under-ordered to planning. Taylor (1998) states that, in the course of spatial planning theory (in the conception of physical design of the city), a clear distinction has never been codified with respect to the architectural and urban design. It was only after the 1960s that this conception questioned. Coding for these reasons, which is articulated between plans and regulations (as often happens) or which is clearly identified by specific tools (as in the case of Seaside), is the preferred tool for the management of ordinary transformations, in practice and as potential field of elaboration and innovation.
It is Eran Ben-Joseph (2005) who emphasizes the role of coding urban rules, in particular through the definition of standards as a specific element that establishes the minimum characteristics of the built environment, both in terms of quantity and in terms of quality. Coding therefore constitutes a liminal field between ordinary transformation of the city and formation / redefinition of the urban layout (a necessarily extraordinary operation given the exceptional nature with which it presents itself with respect to the history of a city).
The codes are in this field because they allow the coexistence of different instances within the urban fabric and at the same time have effects on the shape of the city.

1. CODING MATTERS

In an era in which cities in Italy, as well as in the Western world, face progressive transformations rather than large expansions, the design tools aimed at transforming the existing city are becoming increasingly important. Over the past thirty years in Italy, some laws have been promulgated at national and regional level to encourage reuse practices in the city, in particular by facilitating changes of intended use, volumetric additions to existing buildings and use of unused spaces.[3]
Over the past ten years, the value of urban codes has been highlighted as an important tool for controlling the shape and transformation processes of the urban fabric (Talen, 2012; Ben-joseph, 2005; Marshall, 2011).
A significant example is the renewed interest in form-based codes, which act on types, standards, elements of architecture and more generally on physical form - rather than the separation of uses - as an organizational principle of urban space. The form-based

[3] The law No. 106 of 12 July 2011 has as its objective the rationalization of this heritage - through incentives in volume and simplification of the procedures for changing the intended use - acting in fact directly on the settlements, independently from the Regulatory Plan. The regional law (Piedmont) n. 16 of 4 October 2018 establishes the morphological characteristics for the recovery of spaces for residential purposes, in particular of attic rooms, admitting functions already established in the PRG.

codes are not guidelines but constitute real regulatory tools, which are integrated into the local regulatory system. In order to make the prescriptions, rules and standards of these codes accessible and communicable, they are presented both in textual language and in graphic form. A significant case is the code that The City of Cincinnati approved in 2013, awarded the title of Grand Prize for Best Planning Tool or Process at the thirteenth Congress for the New Urbanism in Buffalo in 2014. The code applied to the entire city attributes for each type of building fabric a series of specific morphological rules, with the aim of strengthening the character of a place and regulating the uses in relation to the shape of the built space. these codes are presented both in textual language and in graphic form.

Other initiatives are evidence of a growing attention towards coding which translates into experiences of various kinds. One of these concerns the drafting of illustrated manuals of urban rules, among which the New York case stands out. Since 1961 the city of New York has developed a practical manual that describes the rules contained in the pages of the zoning resolution. In the latest editions (2011-2018), the manual is also intended for a wide audience of non-experts and has the aim of spreading the understanding of urban rules. The simplified description of a part of the rules that act on the morphology of the built in New York allows citizens to become more aware of the regulatory system, promoting democratic debate around the transformation of the city and free initiative.

A second group of experiences concerns the development of new laws to encourage the reuse of existing spaces. The work from the cityLAB of the University College of Los Angeles, for example, led to drafting laws to encourage the construction of additional housing units (backyard homes, secondary units, garage apartments) within already partially occupied lots. To these experiences promoted by public subjects, systems are added that allow to automatically calculate the morphology made possible by the standard, while offering an automatic verification of compliance with the urban rules of preliminary projects[4]. These are mainly services developed by private entities and included in the market, especially in contexts characterized by an intense activity of transformation of buildings.

2. TURIN AS A CASE STUDY

Coding, applied to the Turin case, has some peculiarities that need to be retraced.

The first concern with the transformation models on which the Turin regulatory plan was conceived. Approved in 1995 and developed over the previous decade, the PRG was conceived in a period of profound change in the economy and geographies of the city (Bagnasco 1986, 1990).

The regulatory plan of Gregotti and Cagnardi is the result of an interpretation of this framework: it is a plan of reuse of the city, based on transformation rather than expansion, and which looks at the potential of the areas that were going to be disposed of, thus like the spaces occupied by the great infrastructures of the twentieth century.

By relying on the possibility of large public and private investments, still available despite the industrial crisis, the reuse of the city presupposes an intervention for large sectors of transformation.

However, some questions emerge from the study of the set of urban codes of the City of Turin.

The regulations are born above all as a response to specific problems: even more than plans, they are built for successive stratifications of technical requests, successive additions, replacements and progressive integrations.

[4]Tools such as Xkool in Shenzhen, or even Envelope in New York enter the market to provide designers with automatic tools with preliminary assessments of compliance with urban rules, especially morphological ones.

Just as in the second half of the nineteenth century the health problems created by mass urbanization gave rise to hygiene regulations, so in the fifties of the twentieth century following the immigration from the regions of Southern Italy to Turin control tools were needed for the illegal sale of canned products; or again, with the spread of analog and then satellite television, it is necessary to check the installation of the antennas.

In recent decades in Turin, some international events and socio-economic changes (including the winter Olympic games, the rediscovery of the historic center, the temporary reuse of spaces) have contributed to the further - not always coherent - stratification of the regulatory schedule.

The complexity of the regulatory system (Moroni 2015) thus structured makes it difficult to understand a priori its possible effects on the built space. This difficulty is not limited to reading the relationship between rules and cities, but is also an obstacle to the use of the regulatory system as a design tool.

In parallel to these issues, the current form of the regulatory system is questioned with the emergence of some global emergent issues.

The environmental emerging issues need to be addressed, not only through specific rules, for example regarding energy performance, but in an integrated way. Acoustics, water treatment, energy performance are increasingly considered by international urban regulations as interdependent aspects and intertwined with other urban standards, rather than as separate regulatory objects.

The change in housing demand, the expansion of e-commerce services and logistics platforms, the digital revolution, among others, have changed the ways of using the spaces of the city and the values - not only economic - that are attributed to these spaces .

The transformation of production systems and emerging forms of work contributes to a process, change tendencies compared to the recent past of reintegration and fragmentation of production activities within the urban fabric. Although these issues are subject to regional and national laws, they can no longer be addressed only through implementation in the plans that govern large sectors of transformation.

3. A METHOD TO EXPLORE URBAN RULES: FROM BUILDING ELEMENTS TO REGULATIONS AND VICEVERSA

Within this context, both on a European scale and on a local scale in Turin, the research project *Re-coding*, reconsiders the codes not only concerning their design, but above all as a way of rethinking the principles that have made the fortune of zoning: a city of incompatible industries and uses whose critical contiguities should be regulated, regulated by specific sectoral regulations aimed at listing in detail prescriptions and exclude undesirable occurrences. The unwanted results that derive from it, the sum of single uncoordinated objectives, entails new difficulties when it comes mainly to regulating the transformation of existing cities.

Such work is organized in two ways:

- from control tools (litigation, image, hygiene conditions) to project tools;
- from tools for city management to tools designed for the transformation of the city.

If the paradigm shift of the 1960s went from a morphological conception of the city to the idea of ever-changing flows and activities (Taylor 1998: 159), the Re-coding project wants to reiterate the link between urban transformations and the codification of the morphological dimension of the city.

The Re-coding project therefore investigates the ordinary transformations of the urban fabric, the combined result of spatial planning, market forces, as well as the compliance with standards and individual expectations

and aspirations. Re-Coding explores the role of urban codes in shaping the structure of cities, through the relationship between rules, morphology and uses of buildings, and aims to provide tools for restructuring the system of rules in support of a paradigm shift from "city of the new" to the "city of reuse".

The aim of the Re-coding project is to explore the concepts of simplicity, clarity and ease of use of the system of rules that regulate space (Moroni 2018), not only to facilitate accessibility and the democratic debate around the rules, but also to stimulate the activities of urban transformation and activating widespread projects. Furthermore, by analyzing the forms and by relying on data spatialization and dynamic visualization tools, the project aim is to foresee the spatial effects of the rules on the built environment.

By working on urban codes, the Re-coding project aims is to strengthen its potential as a design tool, and to read ordinary transformations in a systematic way on a city scale.

Specifically, the main objective of the project in relation to the regulatory system is to seek simplicity. The project aims is also to respond to the growing complexification of the city - reuse of spaces, fragmentation of the use of resources - not through the complexification of the regulatory system, rather through its simplification. Such simplicity could be achieved as follow:

- Accessibility of the regulatory system by citizens, investors and professionals, even outside the national system, through legible and understandable rules. The intelligibility of regulatory tools makes the rules questionable by a wide range of social actors.
- Clarity of the regulatory system, i.e. promoting understanding of the effects of a rule in all cases where it can be applied.

To carry out this integration, the Re-coding project relies on three actions:

- Reorganization: the city of Turin uses different types of regulations, with different areas of application, different degrees of updating and overlapping. The Re-Coding project proposes the reorganization and rationalization of the regulations, starting from the rules that act on the urban space, and the graphic representation of the morphological rules.
- Disambiguation: in order to provide the city with a tool for managing ordinary transformations, the Re-Coding project proposes to collect and reorganize the morphological rules currently present in plans and regulations. In particular, it is proposed to eliminate ambiguities in fields where the morphological rules contained in plans and regulations overlap.
- Revision of the rules by "elements": The revision of the rules regarding identified elements of the city (height of the fronts, window, roof, envelope) aims to modify a control instrument into a project instrument, to unlock the potential of ordinary transformations .

The actions on the regulations thus described are carried out through a method that moves on a double track.

the first track instead starts from the containers of the rules (the regulations), to explore the environments in which they act and the objects they regulate.

The incremental growth of the city's regulatory systems (not only with regard to the management of the urban space) and the difficulty of continuously maintaining the regulatory system can generate overlaps and conflicts. This consequently not only results in a regulatory system that is difficult for citizens to use, but can also generate disputes in which the responsible public entity is called upon to respond in the legal seat.

To address such problem, this study proposes an investigation of the regulatory instruments according to four categories with the aim of eliminating ambiguities and reorganizing and the set of regulations:

1. The area of application of the regulation, which describes the spatial field in which the

rule operates. The regulations can refer to an urban area or to a specific building, or concern the entire municipal area.
2. The relationship with the physical space of the city, which describes the action of the space regulation or its dependence on spatial parameters.
3. The functions regulated, in spatial, managerial, or procedural terms by the regulation.
4. The elements regulated by the individual regulations.
The second track consists of an analysis of identified "elements" and the rules that, regardless of the regulation in which they are contained, act on them. By "elements" we mean both the components of the building system - for example the roof or the openings of the enclosure - and the parameters that define the characteristics of the internal space - such as the size of the rooms, the minimum heights, the surface of the minimum real estate unit - and urban form - for example the land index, the coverage ratio, the settlement density (Talen, 2012; Alfasi, 2018; Marshall, 2011). For each element we have identified the rules that act on it, the level (municipal, regional, national) to which these rules refer and some internationally comparable case studies. In this study, the elements are divided into progressive scales (the city and the building, the building - internal spaces, construction systems, environmental control systems) and can be repeated at different scales. This ontology of the elements of the urban space has the aim of forming a tool for the public administration that can be useful to guide the analysis, the reorganization, the disambiguation and the revision of the urban rules, as well as the evaluation of the social, economic and of these possible actions. Furthermore, the division into elements constitutes a possible interface of the urban space regulation system to facilitate its consultation by the subjects involved in the transformation processes (citizens in the first place). A classification of rules built on the basis of elements can thus provide not only a structure for analysis, but also a tool that puts them in hierarchy and communicates them clearly to the actors of transformations.

4. CODING RULES AS TOOLS TO FACE THE TRANSFORMATION OF THE EXISTING CITY

As part of the revision of the City Masterplan of the city of Turin, three issues were addressed regarding the transformation of the built environment, for which urban rules and in particular the rules of Coding seem to be critical. Studies were carried out on topics identified as relevant and actions were proposed for each issue, according to the objectives described in paragraph 4, on the regulatory system of the City of Turin.

4.1. The relation between Coding e Zoning

Following the first of the methodological rails described in the previous paragraph, the first issue addressed is the relationship between Coding and Zoning, which, if not clearly identified in the city's regulatory system, can constitute an obstacle to the application and clarity of communication of the rules.
In this context, a first study was carried out regarding the organization of urban regulations. The city of Turin has 176 regulations. As a result of a regulatory stratification and subsequent revisions over time, these regulations are very different from each other in terms of scope, specificity, purposes and degree of updating. Despite this, due to their legal nature, they are presented by municipal communication systems in a non-hierarchical and non-themed way.
This analysis was subsequently translated into a proposal for the reorganization of the rules within the regulatory objects that contain them, in particular through the hierarchy of the

regulations by merging them according to the functions or regulated elements.
A second particular study concerned the overlapping of the rules in the Coding and Zoning tools.
The Turin PRG assigns specific areas of the city of the quantities (in particular the land index) and the permitted interventions. Zones contain further subdivisions for admitted functions to which morphological rules are assigned: this involves a direct link between the admitted function and the morphology foreseen by the plan. With this structure, the PRG establishes a direct dependence of the morphological rules on the admitted functions. This entails an overabundance of different morphological rules in areas of the city where numerous functions are allowed, even if the typology of urban fabric is uniform and recognizable. In such situations the morphological rules are not consistent with the type of urban fabric.
From this study a disambiguation proposal was envisioned, which suggests the absorption of the regulations referring to a specific area of the city within the City Masterplan and the transfer of the morphological rules for the whole city within the building regulation, leaving the Plan the identification of particular rules for specific areas.

4.2. The environmental issue

The second issue addressed concerns the effects of the rules relating to the urban dimension of buildings (their public dimension, their envelope and their shape) and is explored through the analysis of the elements of the built environment.
The Energy Regulation Annex of the City of Turin regarding is being revised in order to update it and to include wider environmental aspects: the adaptation of the city to climate change, the mitigation of heat islands, the improvement of thermo-hygrometric well-being and air quality, the improvement of the usability of public spaces and the incentive for sustainable behaviors.
In this context, two particular studies were addressed that deal with the environmental issue through the analysis of the rules that act on two elements of the building envelope: the "window" and the "roof".

4.3. The living space

Lastly, the third issue addressed concerns with the effects of the rules relating to the interior spaces of buildings, which affect the ways in which spaces are inhabited.
The diffusion of new social and economic dynamics ways of living the urban space questions the usability of the residential heritage existing in contemporary cities, and call for reconsidering the relationship between emerging needs and built space.
Part of the current population living in Turin today expresses a demand for housing for social gatherings other than the traditional family (such as students or young workers, temporary or away workers, tourists). At the same time the Savoy city, like other European cities whose urban fabric is the result of a progressive stratification and densification hosts a real estate heritage produced by necessities, now outdated, expressed in past historical moments.
This translates into a poor response to the demand from the existing real estate, which results into a high number of vacant housing (over one in ten according to a 2018 study by the Observatory of the Housing Condition) which, however, could be adapted to respond to new needs.
To these are added unused or underutilized spaces that could be transformed for residential purposes. Attics, basements, garages, low buildings inside the courtyard, storage or work warehouses, solariums or other structures positioned on the roofs, illuminated stairways, caretakers' stations are some examples of "potential" living spaces.

There are also other "accessory" spaces - such as disused technical volumes, interstitial spaces or resulting areas - which, although they are not easily convertible into living spaces, can be rethought to increase the intensity of use of urban spaces; they can host, for example, temporary uses, domestic laboratories, vegetable gardens and gardens, activities for collective use indoors or outdoors.
To address these issues, an analysis of the rules is underway - in particular with regard to the minimum unit, the spaces that are rarely used and the accessory spaces - to stimulate the debate on the theme of living in institutional offices and to suggest tools both for returning to the market for stranded goods, both for the activation of the potential of spaces that are still little considered in the real estate market today.

CONCLUSION

European cities are the product of a stratification of norms and rules. As contemporary interventions have to deal with pre-existing buildings and urban layouts created for ceased purposes, they have to deal with pre-existing systems of rules too. Rethinking urban codes have been proved to be a key element for a strategic approach to the transformation of the contemporary European urban environment.
Within this frame, the role of the architect becomes as relevant as the one of urban planner in the conception of urban rules that can be a design tool for the city. Thus, urban rules can be considered as a "hidden designer" acting together with architects and planners.
Through the reorganization of the regulations – which are very stratified and complex in the case of Turin - efforts are made to increase their accessibility and usability, as well as to allow a large number of actors to act on urban transformations.
In addition to the reorganization of the containers of the rules (i.e. the regulations), the disambiguation actions and the revision of the rules by elements also allow to act on the contents of the individual rules favoring their real time verification during the design process.
The inclusion of environmental issues within urban and non-segregated regulations in dedicated and thematic documents allows full integration with those urban rules that guide the design and transformation processes at the scale of the building and the city.
Moreover, the role of the architect in revising urban rules can also both stimulate the debate and encourage best practices for adaptive reuse (Robiglio, 2017) of urban space.
Consequentially, studies on contemporary living allow us to suggest tools both for the return to the market of "stranded" goods, and for the activation of the potential of underused spaces that are still under played in the real estate market today.
Finally, besides considering the transformative power of the regulation system, we can interpret the regulative potential of architectural projects, and thus of the role of the architectural designer. Designers agency can challenge and stress the regulatory system, eventually resulting in a change of rules.

REFERENCES

Alfasi, N. 2018. *The coding turn in urban planning: Could it remedy the essential drawbacks of planning?,* in «Planning Theory», n. 17, pp. 375-395.

Bagnasco, A. 1986. *Torino: un profilo sociologico,* Torino: Einaudi.

Bagnasco, A. (Ed.), 1990. *La città dopo Ford: il caso di Torino,* Torino: Bollati Boringhieri.

Ben-Joseph, E. 2005. *The Code of the City,* Cambridge - London: MIT Press.

Lehnerer, A. 2009. *Grand Urban Rules*. Rotterdam: 010 Publishers.

Marshall, S. (Ed.) 2011. *Urban Coding and Planning,* London-New York: Routledge.

Mazza, L. 2002 *Technical Knowledge and Planning Actions*, in «Planning Theory», Vol. 1, pp. 11-26.

Moroni, S. 2015. *Complexity and the inherent limits of explanation and prediction: Urban codes for self-organising cities*, in «Planning Theory», n. 14, pp. 248-267.

Moroni, S., Buitelaar, E., Sorel, N., Cozzolino, S. 2018. *Simple Planning Rules for Complex Urban Problems: Toward Legal Certainty for Spatial Flexibility,* in «Journal of Planning Education and Research».

Robiglio, M. 2017. *Old is the new new. Architecture and the adaptive reuse of industrial legacy, in Id. RE–USA. 20 american stories of adaptive reuse.* Berlin: Jovis.

Secchi, B. 2000. *Prima lezione di urbanistica*, Roma, Bari: GLF Laterza.

Talen, E. 2012. *City Rules: How Regulations Affect Urban Form*. Washington - Covelo - Londra: Island Press.

Taylor, N. 1998. *Urban Planning Theory since 1945.* Londra - Thousand Oaks - New Delhi: Sage.

New york zoning handbook
https://www1.nyc.gov/site/planning/zoning/zh-2016.page
(Last access 20/02/2020)

Accessory Dwelling Unit Guidebook
https://citylab.ucla.edu/ab2299
(Last access 20/02/2020)

Plan Local d'Urbanisme
http://pluenligne.paris.fr/plu/sites-plu/site_statique_43/index_plu.html
(Last access 20/02/2020)

Cincinnati Form Based Code
https://www.cincinnati-oh.gov/planning/assets/File/CFBC%20Full%20Document%20Amended%202-10-14.pdf
(Last access 20/02/2020)

PAPER #3.03

DESIGNED TO CHANGE: THE FUTURE OF ARCHITECTURE IS AGILE

Salah Imam[a], Brian R. Sinclair[b]
[a] School of Architecture, Planning and Landscape, University of Calgary + Entuitive Consulting Engineers, Canada
[b] School of Architecture, Planning and Landscape, University of Calgary + sinclairstudio inc., Canada

ABSTRACT

We live in increasingly unpredictable and turbulent times. The physical form of cities is radically changing. Societies confront unprecedented and accelerating trends in urbanization, political instability, climate change and technological transformation. While we can identify aspects of existing structures that have enhanced aptitude to adapt, it is not guaranteed that mutable features will function effectively in the future. Predicting social, technological or climate change proves impossible. Designing for future cities cannot be about foreseeing tomorrow, rather it must be about creating capacity now given uncertainty later. The present research pursues strategies that are both responsive and holistic—integrating aspects of durability, flexibility and responsibility while introducing social, environmental and economic factors via a framework for dynamic design. Agile architecture demands a frame driven by an attitude that connects lessons from the past, necessities of the present and indeterminacies of the future.

The research first critically assesses the status quo, then pursues concepts of greater agility in contemporary building design—using case study and survey methods to illuminate best practices and identify potential. The work synthesizes an approach for Agility + sustainability that is relevant worldwide. The authors delineate a theoretical foundation needed to inform and inspire the frame. Seminal cases of Agile residential projects are strategically drawn from geographic regions with the highest current and projected floor area in the 21st century, aiming to illustrate progressive concepts within design, construction, legislative and/or financial ethos. Key deficiencies in the marketplace are illuminated as well as contextual barriers against formulating/implementing such an innovative approach. Advancing Gordon's 3L principle, Open Building (OB) and Sinclair's Holistic Framework for Design + Planning, the forthcoming integrative model aims at realizing potent Agile solutions—in essence migrating away from static modern architecture. When buildings are designed to readily cope with change, our cities can approach meaningful sustainability.

KEYWORDS

Agility; sustainability; future cities; climate change; integration; innovation; design.

INTRODUCTION

> "Architecture in the 21st Century, a period already understood through its dramatic movement and intense change, must be far more responsive, resonant and resilient than designs for days long past. Rather than requiring users to twist and surrender to fit into static environments, a new architecture reacts, adjusts and accommodates." (Sinclair, Mousazadeh and Safarzadeh, 2012, P. 42)

The physical form of our cities is radically changing. It is now commonplace to anticipate

that a building will outlive the purpose for which it is built in a matter of a few years. Buildings must become flexible containers for use by a dynamic society. The challenge is to design buildings that can incessantly accommodate new technologies and allow for changes in the living patterns of occupants. Only when buildings are designed to meet both present and future challenges, will real estate decisions indeed characterize the holistic approach of worthwhile investments and transcend as sustainable communities. Our society confronts unprecedented and accelerating trends in urbanization, political instability, climate change and technological transformation. While it is possible to identify features of existing buildings that have enhanced their capacity to adapt, it is in no way guaranteed that such features will function similarly in the future. Thus, designing for Agility cannot be about predicting the future, it must be about how to create the capacity to allow change to happen.

As our communities continue to expand, relocate or merge, the need for Agility is growing. The globalized living and working patterns of our cities necessitate novel architectural concepts that can sustain such contemporary societies (Henket and Heynen, 2002; Kronenburg, 2007). Therefore, a holistic design approach that is transformable, movable, adaptable and Agile could more efficiently allow for multiple uses of space, could better sustain the economic factors and could more adequately manage the over-use of energy resources. There is evidence that the demand side of the built environment equation will be significantly changing (Kincaid, 2000, p. 160). Such changes in demand are clearly apparent in, for example, the increasing need for residential buildings in the developed world, leaving many non-residential developments prone to functional obsolesce. In any event, by not examining and responding to the demand side of the equation today, we may be putting ourselves in the position tomorrow of mere spectators who see the output of the economic activity while having no real understanding of necessary inputs. This is indeed an inferior position from which to make policy and a near-impossible position from which to identify the particulars of optimal physical and conceptual configurations of the built environment. Hence, the present research critically contemplates the condition of contemporary building design, examines emerging trends, explores the role of Agility in facilitating a realistic response to the sustainability agenda in order to propose an integrative framework for realizing a more responsive, responsible and fitting architecture.

1. BACKGROUND

> "Flexible architecture is intended to respond to changing situations in buildings' use, operation or location. It adapts, rather than stagnates; transforms, rather than restricts; is motive, rather than static; interacts with its users, rather than inhibits." (Kronenburg, 2007)

1.1. Flexibility, adaptability and agility

Flexibility and adaptability have overlapping meanings and includes different approaches. Usually, researchers and architects use the term "flexible" for physical changes and "adaptable" for non-physical changes (Estaji, 2017, p. 37). According to Rabeneck, Sheppard and Town (1974), "flexibility is proposed against tight-fit functionalism." They argue that the inefficient design attempts at flexibility might lead to "a fallacy of freedom through control," while adaptability relates to units and spaces "that can be easily altered adjusting to changing circumstances." In 1991, Herman Herzberger claimed that "in a flexible design, no single solution is preferable to all others." He continues to criticize the flexibility approach uttering that the belief that neutral designs that make buildings

adapt to changing situations results in a lack of identity. Consequently, he introduced a new concept, "polyvalence," which supports minimal flexibility so that the design could adapt to different uses without undergoing any changes. Steven Groak (1992) in his book 'The Idea of Building' referred to buildings as "unstable systems in dynamic environments." He defined a fine line between flexibility and adaptability, where flexible design is "capable of different physical arrangements," while the adaptable design is "capable of different social uses." Gerard Maccreanor (1998) viewed flexibility as a "design idea that leads to the collapse of traditional layout," while adaptability, in his words, is a "different way of interpreting flexibility and it refers to multifunctionality." Maccreanor further notes that "most adaptable buildings were those not originally planned for flexibility." Till and Schneider (2007) characterizes flexibility—in the context of housing—to be attained by "altering the physical fabric of the building," while adaptability is achieved "through designing units or spaces so that they can be used for various purposes."

While there are many ways one might define flexibility and adaptability with respect to building design, the present research pursues a measure which is more independent, responsive and holistic; a measure that integrates aspects of durability, flexibility and sustainability; a measure that unifies the scattered facets of contemporary sustainable designs; a measure that introduces all layers of physical, social, environmental and financial factors in the form of continuously evolving and dynamic framework; a measure better interlacing design phases to construction, operation, occupancy, disassembly and reuse; a measure that we define as "Agile". In 1972, Sir Alex Gordon—former president of the Royal Institute of British Architects (RIBA)—argued that "good architecture" should be designed for loose fit, long life and low energy (3L principle). The idea of integrating flexibility to accommodate future needs as well as minimizing energy footprint throughout the physical life of the building is undoubtedly the ultimate holistic objective for architecture in our modern society (Langston, 2014). Today, Gordon's objectives can be interpreted as flexible, durable and responsible. A thorough consideration of these parameters' objectives and how they have so far been addressed in the literature is essential to help clarify how future potentials could be achieved.

1.2. The new faces the old

Cities are living organisms in constant renovation. Yet, sustainable development means evading premature obsolesce of structures. For example, many buildings that were constructed since the 1920s—relying on the functionalist design approach—are now obsolete. These buildings were statically designed to meet the standards and functions of their time. Hence, they were not destined for occupants' evolving uses and require costly refurbishment due to their tight value-engineered specifications and incapability of being adjusted to meet shifting needs (Kendall, 1999). Similarly, a study in Minnesota, USA in 2004 identified that out of 227 demolished buildings, 30% of which were demolished due to the buildings' substantial physical condition, while 70% were demolished due to obsolescence as buildings could not shift to fit the functional needs at that time (Horst, 2004, p. 15). These findings suggest that the current way that we design communities—to perform to narrowly prescribed functions—is inadequate and is leaving our buildings prone to obsolescence, abandonment, and destruction.

David Pearce (2005) contends that the construction industry "can be forgiven if it struggles to take sustainable development, or Agility, onboard since there is a shortage of sound guidance on what the concept means—for construction—for the long-term and what the industry would have to do to achieve it." Within this context, Ursula Hartenberger (2008) argues that the knowledge and technologies

needed to produce sustainable buildings are present in our modern communities. In addition, the economic benefits of sustainable design and construction are well-documented in the literature. However, what is standing in the way of progress is the misalignment of incentives between the stakeholders. This has become known as the "Circle of Blame" (Figure 1). The interplay between the different actors in the Architecture, Engineering and Construction (AEC) industry needs to be organized in such a way that knowledge of the benefits of sustainable and Agile buildings pervades all areas and is accounted for within the processes of design, construction, operation and reuse.

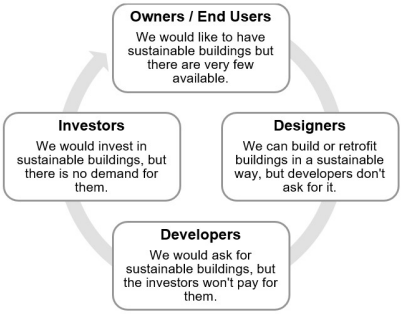


Figure 1. The AEC industry circle of blame (Hartenberger, 2008)

1.3. Past limitations and future potential

Beginning in the mid-twentieth century architects began to more seriously question narrow design approaches and in response explored more open, mutable and responsive ways of building. Visionary architects like Kisho Kurokawa and Cedric Price realized the urgency and need for more resilient and robust concepts for our future. They encouraged designing for greater user control over the built environment as a whole. Opposing traditional static designs where users had to adapt to the surrounding environmental restraints, Kurokawa and Price envisioned dynamic spaces that can adapt to user needs over the years (Sinclair et al., 2012). However, such progressive ideas were faced with significant limitations in available technologies, tools and design methods. In other words, such bold thinking ran ahead of technology's ability to keep pace. But today holds potential and promise—with cutting-edge technologies, more social awareness and the arguably aggressive push towards sustainability—we are now able to couple past and present visionary concepts with robust technological realities to develop a more Agile and sustainable architecture for the 21st century.

Brian Sinclair (2009) had previously delineated a Holistic Integrated Framework for Agile Design + Planning. His theory considers the symbiotic interplay of Agility, Fitness, Diversity and Delight, understanding all hold equal value and significance. It considers energy and low carbon as components of a much greater system. The diverse action areas underlying these four core qualities are seen as having high flexibility, and subject to change and modification as conditions suggest and context dictates (Figure 2). This approach

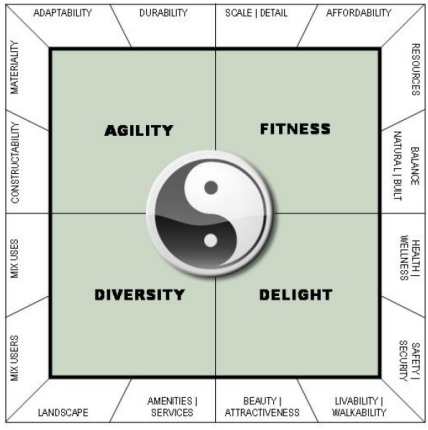


Figure 2. Sinclair's Holistic Integrated Framework for Design + Planning (Sinclair, 2009)

complements Gordon's 3L principle in our present context. Looking at the suggested quadrant of agility, we can link into long life (recycling, design for disassembly and reassembly), loose fit (open building, user-controlled design, skeleton infill) and low energy (reduced embodied energy, lowered life-cycle cost).

2. SUSTAINABILITY: THE BIGGER PICTURE

The current state of worldwide population growth, scarcity of resources and climate change explain the popularity and profile of the low carbon agenda in developed countries. Such circumstances led to a surge in research and development, making the technical and operational facets of low carbon buildings well understood (Loms, 2010). However, outlining Agility concepts as an agenda solely in the frame of the energy/carbon reduction, results in an overly-narrow focus of the Agile agenda and prevents consideration of the broader benefits Agile design could present (e.g., the economic sustainability of continuously adaptable developments). Despite progress, energy efficiency improvements (e.g., envelope improvements, systems efficiency, etc.) have not been enough to offset strong growth in energy demand from rising population, floor area demand and pace of social change (IEA, 2017). Therefore, the pursuit of synergies between Agility and sustainability concepts demands us to look much more intensely at the big picture—looking from above through an integrative lens is a necessary precursor to more detailed evidence-based intervention. Evidently, the Agile agenda has interfaces with other pursuits beyond low carbon. In the view of the researchers, durability, flexibility and responsibility are interesting concepts for exploring Agility's collision with sustainability.

- Durability

Obsolescence can be defined as "the inability to satisfy increasing requirements or expectations" (Iselin and Lemer, 1993; Horst, 2004). This is an area that poses considerable stress due to varying social demands (Kintrea, 2007). Obsolescence does not mean poor performance. Most available resources on building durability are more applicable to building components and systems rather than entire buildings. Factors affecting component durability can be a) quality of components, b) execution level, c) indoor and outdoor environment, d) usage settings and e) maintenance level (Kincaid, 2000; Langston, 2014). While a building is a sum of its parts, such parts can be replaced and hence renewed, leaving the primary structure to determine overall life expectancy. Other literature on service life discusses the effect of external and internal actions on building durability and identifies location, usage and design as the main parameters.

- Flexibility

For an array of reasons, buildings can become functionally obsolete long before their physical life has come to an end. Developing long-standing structures may be inefficient if their useful-life ends prior to their physical-life. Future designs need to be flexible enough to support alternative functional uses. The development of an integrative holistic framework for agility enables building designers to understand the long-term impacts of their decisions early in the design stage. As a flexibility approach already embodies financial, social and environmental criteria, the framework would extend traditional operational considerations such as energy performance to include refurbishment, disassembly and reuse.

- Responsability

Architecture has always played a major role in climate change. Many policies and actions are being implemented by governments with the aim of reducing greenhouse gas emissions. Buildings contribute to nearly 40% of such emissions (Perez-Lombard, Ortiz and Pout), which is a huge part of the problem, but also the solution. Thus, architects and the industry as a whole need to assume responsibility for actions. Evidently, there are many comprehensive environmental rating systems for buildings worldwide (e.g., LEED, BREAM, Green Star, etc.), all of which are established for evaluating the environmental design and green attributes of projects. Most rating schemes are organized into a set of impact categories which usually cover issues of indoor environmental quality, energy, transport, water, materials, land use and emissions. Fundamentally carbon reduction can be framed as a problem of energy reduction, which is further decomposable into separate issues of operational and embodied (or process) energy reduction. The low carbon agenda indeed provides powerful leverage through the provision of ancillary benefits (beyond emissions reduction) such as reductions in energy bills and a reduced dependency on external energy sources. The resonance that flexibility has with ideas on the minimization of embodied energy (through a reduction in material wastage resulting from demolition and rebuilding) is also apparent (Gorgolewski, 2005). In the context of this research, responsibility refers to invoking ethical obligation to balance aspects of durability and flexibility—while introducing social, environmental and economic factors via a framework for dynamic design.

3. AGILE IS THE NEW SUSTAINABLE

Maladaptive buildings result in early obsolescence (Gorgolewski, 2005) and associated increases in resource utilization through the demolition and construction processes required to replace them. Fixed building services on otherwise useable buildings will increasingly drive obsolescence as energy performance regulations are tightened, and the costs of operation render them unsustainable. If we continue to choose to invest significant resources (and thus embodied carbon) in our built environment, it becomes imperative in a low carbon society that these resources are conserved through the provision for their continued utility. Evidently, the Agile agenda has interfaces with other factors beyond that of low carbon. Thus, a more profound knowledge of the intricacies and interactions between established agendas of low carbon goals and other industry/society goals is critical to understand the consequential effect such interactions might have, and the desirability of these effects in a broader context. The position suggested here is that the agendas supporting both low carbon and Agile design form facets of the wider sustainability agenda, and that in order to achieve the goals of sustainability overall, it is crucial to evaluate the goals within each agenda and to explore potential alignments.

Nonetheless, the current state of environmental quantifications worldwide is characterized in what is promoted as comprehensive environmental rating systems. Although criticisms have been leveled concerning the use of such rating systems, for example, “point shopping” (designing for points or credits rather than for the good of the building), clearly, such rating schemes have achieved its goals of raising awareness and transforming the market. However, there has only been limited attention granted to the flexible design approach in such rating systems. In 2014, LEED-v4 was one of the first rating systems to recognize “design for flexibility” as an optional credit category. In this category, the designer is given a set of requirements—mostly related to physical flexibility (e.g., modular spaces and the use of

demountable partitions) —which s/he needs to employ to be awarded the credit points (LEED-v4, 2014). Nonetheless, as per Croxton (2003), "If a building doesn't support change (in all its forms), you have only an illusion of sustainability." Therefore, the pursuit of Agility has to identify and consider all layers of social, environmental and economic factors in the form of a continuously evolving frame. Here, the question presents itself: should Agility have its own rating system?

Consequently, the present research aims to craft a new model that creatively and potently links agility and sustainability by exploring a spectrum of modern developments and emergent concepts. Figure 3 illustrates how Agility perspectives can manifest through a holistic design process to enable a cohesive transition of a building's behavior over time. Our knowledge, resources and constraints towards Agility come from a variety of sources and categories that can either hinder or accommodate change. These categories should not be perceived in isolation as they can ensue simultaneously depending on the uniqueness of the design and the voracity of the designer.

4. CASE STUDIES

The on-going research investigates the unifying principles of Agile architecture throughout both early (historic) and contemporary applications in an attempt to understand the unique factors required to develop much more sustainable environments. Case studies introduced in the present paper can be seen as pragmatic and strategic examples with which to explore modern Agile concepts. New construction projects present the best opportunities to achieve flexible, durable and sustainable buildings for future generations. At the same time, most existing buildings will still be in operation over the next few decades. For example, Canada Green Building Council (CaGBC) expects that over 80% of existing buildings will still be in operation by 2030 and 50% in 2050. Therefore, existing buildings must also be addressed (e.g., retrofit, rehabilitation, repurpose, etc.) in order to meet increasingly strict sustainability requirements (CaGBC, 2017). Case studies across a diversity of geographic regions were strategically selected in accordance with

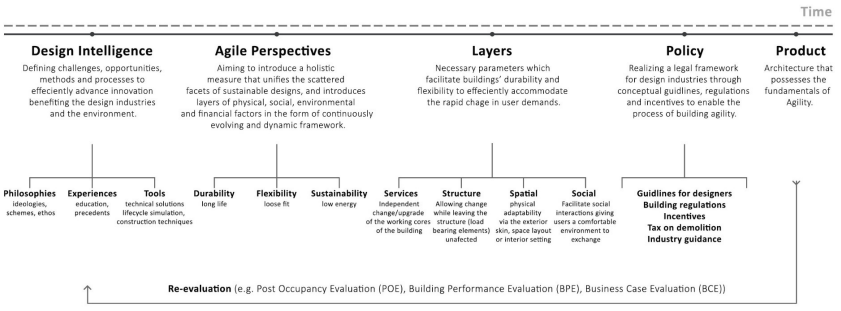


Figure 3. Design categories for which agility can manifest itself through. Categories are integrative and can vary depending on the uniqueness of each project

data from the International Energy Agency (IEA) with respect to the highest current and projected floor areas in the 21st century—namely, China, North America, Europe, Africa and India. Additionally, according to the IEA (2017), residential buildings account for two-thirds (2/3) of the global energy consumption and CO2 emissions. Therefore, the present research focuses its efforts on studying Agility in residential buildings. We direct attention to eight contemporary designs drawn from the flexible/adaptable building movement (Figure 4). Blundell-Jones—in his book 'Modern Architecture Through Case Studies'—views the case studies approach as a unique dialogue and considers investigating the cultural and physical context of each case to be "a better way to disclose general set of principles and laws rather than bending the work to fit the rules" (Blundell-Jones, 2002, p. 5).

In order to draw generalizable theories and conclusions to the residential building design industry, the selected case studies—which are vital components of this ongoing research—include different building scales and typologies while showcasing various responses to an array of contexts and conditions. Since a significant part of the industry is engaged with refurbishment, retrofitting and reuse, a total of three retrofit projects are studied in regions with the highest reported current floor area (China, USA and Europe). All cases were constructed or retrofitted during the 21st century and had been recognized for national, state or regional architectural distinction. The present paper introduces these intriguing projects as subjects for the next—in-situ analysis—phase of the study. Our qualitative method evaluates each project objectively in the context of durability, flexibility and sustainability. Case studies data, in tandem with the strategic literature review, aim to highlight leading themes, ideas and practices of Agile architecture. The ongoing research connects the analysis of these contemporary projects with historical precedents deliberated in Imam and Sinclair (2018) and via a rigorous understanding of the literature. The next stage of the research synthesizes a framework that connects Agility and sustainability—equipping architects and builders with the theory, tools and techniques needed to develop and realize more mutable, adaptable, responsive and responsible buildings.

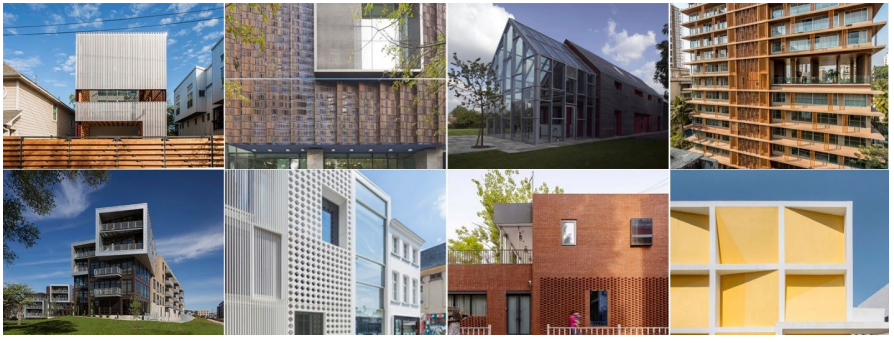


Figure 4. Selected contemporary case studies. Subject to change as the research progresses. From left (top) to the right (bottom): Shotgun Chameleon (USA), Yingjia Club Apartments (China), Sliding House (UK), Pali Palms (India), Seven 27 (USA), House of Lorraine (Belgium), Marina Residence (China), Yantai Chunhui (China)

CONCLUSION

> "Change must be the new constant." (Imam and Sinclair, 2018)

Architecture of the 21st century should possess the fundamentals of durability, flexibility and responsibility. Meaningful sustainability resides at the nexus of these three aspects. Such principles are not mutually exclusive, nor incompatible with values of delight and performance, but rather hold equal significance. A zero-carbon structure with no robust functional flexibility will still become obsolete long before its physical life has come to an end. While such design demonstrates technological advancement, it is merely a prototype for concepts that need integration into a more balanced and broader framework that should be more commonly practiced. However, a standard theoretical framework for setting such Agile concepts is not yet established, rather only generalized methods and guidelines are found in the existing literature. Hence, the long-term objectives of the present research are to: a) identify seminal layers, agents, facets and forces affecting the integrative design process, b) understand the failure and success of past attempts (technological, social, political, environmental and economic), and c) develop a novel framework and associated methods of analysis to provoke and provide the requisite levels of Agility. The authors understand that whether our designs are partially or entirely adaptable—or even somewhere in between—there can be no one-size-fits-all approach to pursuing Agility in our modern society. Complexity demands diversity and responsiveness. Appreciating that, —listening and truly responding to users' needs—is in the end, the optimal way to achieve strategic, successful and necessary outcomes.

The present paper delineates progress along a multifaceted journey that aspires to dramatically reconsider the way we design buildings. It critically explores prevailing thinking, observes emerging trends, and points to contemporary building designs (to be studied) in an effort to bring Agility into the spotlight. The ongoing research aims to synthesize a conceptual framework for heightened Agility and sustainability, thereby realizing more responsible architecture for the 21st Century. Advancing from the established foundation of Gordon's 3L principle, Open Building (OB) practices and drawing upon Sinclair's recent Holistic Framework for Design + Planning, the aspired integrative model aims to imagine and introduce continuously evolving and dynamic solutions that must be able to shift and morph as circumstances warrant—in essence migrating away from the static architectural practices and staid architectural outcomes that have defined modern architecture. The authors are pursuing clarity and applicability of factors, facets and concepts of Agility in contemporary building design—using case study methods to illuminate best practices and identify future potential. Given the growth of population, scarcity of resources and the emerging society expectations due to the modern world's technological advancements, our research pursuits into Agile Architecture is significant, timely and necessary. In our proposition for reconsidered and more appropriate architecture, people must reside centrally, and the dynamic, responsive and meaningful must eclipse the static, staid and stale. Ingenuity, creativity and imagination prove valuable and vital.

REFERENCES

Blundell-Jones, P., 2002. *Modern Architecture Through Case Studies*. s.l.:Gulf Professional Publishing.

Canada Green Building Council (CaGBC), 2017. *Zero Carbon Building Standard*, s.l.: CaGBC.

Croxton, W., 2003. *Disassembly and Deconstruction*. s.l.:Architectural Record.

Estaji, H., 2017. A Review of Flexibility and Adaptability in Housing Design. *International Journal of Contemporary Architecture "The New ARCH"*, 4(2), pp. 37-49.

Gordon, A., 1972. Designing for survival: the President introduces his long life/loose fit/ low energy study. *Royal Institute of British Architects Journal*, 79(9), pp. 374-376.

Gorgolewski, M., 2005. *Understanding how buildings evolve*. Tokyo, Japan, s.n., pp. 2811-2818.

Groak, S., 1992. *The Idea of Building: Thought and Action in the Design and Production of Buildings*. London: Taylor & Francis.

Hartenberger, U., 2008. *Breaking the Vicious Circle of Blame – Making the Business Case for Sustainable Buildings*. London, UK, The Royal Institution of Chartered Surveyors.

Henket, H.J. and Heynen, H., 2002. *Back from Utopia: The challenge of the modern movement*. Rotterdam: 010 publishers.

Hertzberger, H., 2005. *Lessons for Students in Architecture*. (First published in 1991, as an elaborated version of lectures given since 1973 at Delft University of Technology) ed. s.l.:010 Publishers.

Horst, S., 2004. *Minnesota Demolition Survey: Phase Two Report, Prepared for: Forintek Canada Corp*, Minnisota, USA: The Athena Institute.

Imam, S. and Sinclair, B., 2018. *Dysfunctional Design + Construction: A Cohesive Frame To Advance Agility + Sustainability.* Philadelphia, ARCC-EAAE International Conference, pp. 415-423.

Iselin, D. and Lemer, A., 1993. *The fourth dimension in building: strategies for minimizing obsolescence, Committee on Facility Design to Minimize Premature Obsolescence.* Washington DC: Building Research Board, Washington DC: National Academy Press.

Kendall, S., 1999. Open Building: An Approach to Sustainable Architecture. *Journal of Urban Technology,* 6(3), pp. 1-16.

Kincaid, D., 2000. Adaptability potentials for buildings and infrastructure in sustainable cities. *Facilities*, 18(3/4), pp. 155-161.

Kintrea, K., 2007. Housing aspirations and obsolescence: understanding the relationship. *Journal of Housing and the Built Environment*, 22(4), pp. 321-338.

Kronenburg, R., 2007. *Flexible: Architecture that Responds to Change*. 1st edition ed. London: Lawrence King Publishing.

Langston, C., 2014. Measuring Good Architecture: Long life, loose fit, low energy. *European Journal of Sustainable Development*, 3(4), pp. 163-174.

Langston, C., 2014. Measuring Good Architecture: Long life, loose fit, low energy. *European Journal of Sustainable Development*, 3(4), pp. 163-174.

LEED-v4, 2014. *USGBC*. [Online] Available at: https://www.usgbc.org/credits/healthcare/v4-draft/mrcx-1[Accessed 12 April 2018].

Loms, K., 2010. Carbon reduction in existing buildings: a transdisciplinary approach. *Building Research & Information*, 38(1), pp. 1-11.

Maccreanor, G., 1998. On nostalgia. *Convention, OASE*, Issue 49-50, p. 172–173.

Pearce, D., 2005. Do we understand sustainable development?. *Building Research & Information*, 33(5), pp. 481-483.

Perez-Lombard, L., Ortiz, J. and Pout, P., 2008. A review on buildings energy consumptioninformation. *Energy and Buildings*, Volume 40, pp. 394 - 398.

Rabeneck, A., Sheppard, D., and Town, P., 1974. Housing: Flexibility/Adaptability?. *Architectural Design*, Volume 44, pp. 76-90.
Sinclair, B., Mousazadeh, S., and Safarzadeh, Gh., 2012. Agility, Adaptability + Appropriateness: Conceiving, Crafting & Constructing an Architecture of the 21st Century. *Enquiry – The ARCC Journal of Architectural Research*, 9(1), pp. 35-43.
Sinclair, B., 2009. Culture, Context, and the Pursuit of Sustainability. *Planning for Higher Education (PHE)*, Issue 38, pp. 6-22.
Till, J. and Schneider, T., 2007. *Flexible Housing.* 1st edition ed. Burlington: Elsevier.
UN Environment and International Energy Agency (IEA), 2017. *Towards a zero-emission, efficient, and resilient buildings and construction sector. Global Status Report*, s.l.: s.n.

PAPER #3.04

PERFORMANCE: THE FANTASTICAL DICHOTOMIES OF CITY-MAKING

Shai Yeshayahu[a], Maria del C. Vera[b]
[a]Ryerson University, Toronto, Canada
[b]Independent Researcher

ABSTRACT

Nearing its first centennial, the ideas of Ville Contemporaine, aiming to house three million people under lavish greenery (Le Corbusier 1994), are once again manifested through the purview of city legislators seeking to accommodate hundreds of thousands of humans in newly built cities. The spur of these fantastical proposals marketed as eco-friendly phantoms and designed by award-winning firms deploy embellish storylines about better futures while the global scale of environmental damage increases (Sze 2009). Why? How did city planning get here? Are the culprits legislators, educators, or citizens?

In the absence of concrete truths, we examined city-making processes from the last one hundred years to identify city making ethos according to the reconditioning of their ecological scarcity or wealth. Two cities are outlined as case-studies, with a research emphasis on performance-based analysis. We describe their geodetic location, physical formations, and socio-economic outcomes in contrast to the age's urban parameters and strategies. Akin to referencing their urban successes and failures, our study indicates that the sum of environmental constraints and a human's quest for survival equates to a type of foundation, a resource if you will, underpinning community work and state-sponsored initiatives. Each approach highlights the current errors from Instagrammable eco-cities (City of Toronto 2018) that continue to offer visually appealing solutions that spotlight the aesthetics of city-planning. Readymade cities are obsolete in an era when we are learning to mine and identify future prerequisites for urban systems that seek to extend beyond the twentieth-century mindset.

KEYWORDS

Geodetic addresses; ready-made cities; instagrammable eco-cities.

1. REALITIES AND VIGILANCE

In the last one hundred years, bit by bit, earth's geological formation has rapidly eroded and morph into a human-made reality (Vera,Yeshayahu 2019). As Alphabet Inc., Facebook, Microsoft, Toyota, Amazon, and even Akon (rapper) spearhead toward the next mass production of breath-taking proposals, we decided to explore two one-hundred-year-old cities spurring from opposing modes of development. One of the rationales for this study stems from the realization that conglomerates, aforementioned, control most of the data used to develop artificial intelligence [AI]. Their rising power brought forth by surveillance is undeterred by the eco-city language they now apply to their emerging modes of gentrification. Planning proposals like Sidewalk, Woven City, Belmont, or O'Neill's echo the insurgence of technocratic cities. This new kind of urban sterilization is developing among incoming elite and developers, designers, and politicians willing to support their greed (Kitchen 2017). The second rationale of the paper is to ignite a brief account of city-building processes from the bottom up and to look at their extended

outcomes from the lens of cities that sustain colonizing protocols.
In so doing, we argue that the future prerequisites for urban planners in the twentieth-first century will be to search, mine, and rank how cities continuously evolve. In an ideal Instageammable future, cities will be based on the scientific surveillance of biological behavior from micro-macro content. City building would occur in ways that the ecology of an urbanized planet becomes visible per Gottmann (geographer), Castells (sociologist), and Sze(Doctor of Interdisciplinary Studies) initial unfoldings. How cities affect ecologies, and human behavior is yet to become the sum of planners or city-planning work. Cities are not linked to the nature of urbanization in a scientific way like Galileo advocated in linking the universe's behavior to pursue scientific studies that connect to reality.

1.1. In the Absence of Concrete Truths

Heresy was Galileo's false-reality __the idea that what we see differs from what we believe. The simultaneous affirmation and disaffirmation of a heliocentric solar system was Galileo's dooming parallax. His quandary remains among us. Humans often experience these types of confusion. In the age of multiple intelligences, surveying technologies hope to become the instruments that observe everything from micro to macro details. In doing so, the output will seemingly identify reality.
City-planning challenges this assertion as the processes of fabricated realities plague the 21st century. Theoretically and empirically, millennial cities will correspond to a real-world environment defined by geological and environmental pressures. Conversely, like the recently live-streamed video from the Consumer Electronics Show (CES) in Las Vegas, the parallax of reality is an exact instrument of a false reality. Akio Toyoda, president and CEO of Toyota Motor Corporation, and Bjarke Ingels, the Danish Architect from BIG, could barely contain their excitement while unveiling details of The Woven City by Toyota (Toyota 2020). In their speeches, there are no lessons learned from the extended journey humans undertook to avoid extinction. Instead, they retold the same kind of endless narrations about the realities and contingencies unfolding now that alter how, where, and why humans continue to survive. In contrast to the fauna and flora extinction, humans' fragile existence escaped the presenters' objective, embezzling their future city within established arrays of better air quality, greener streets, and prettier buildings.
In this kind of atmosphere, city-planning is one of the false-realities that CEOs promote. Lies dress as truth speaks of earth's crust without a black sticky liquid call asphalt that waterproofs life's resources and entombs the earth's fertility indiscriminately. Discovered in 3000BC (Bilkadi 1984), and spread across the planet, asphalt is the human's preferred material for survival. As master planners, builders, and government officials continue to speak of the urgency to build new eco-smart-sustainable cities; they are often talking about how additional tons of asphalt will be poured to make dams, roads, and homes. In 1824AD, when Champs Élysée became the first asphalted road in the modern world, no one imagined the next two hundred years' unfolding. From 1900 to 1999, the USA consumed 4,500 million tons of asphalt. Recently, in less than three years, from 2011 to 2013, China pour 6,500 million extra tons of asphalt into the planet's surface (Harvey 2016). The synchronization of human population growth and urban development parallels the consumption of asphalt. It mirrors an unrecognized reality emitting seventy percent of CO2 across earth's atmospheres that, according to Elizabeth Kolbert heralds, The Sixth Extinction (Kolbert 2014).
A hallmarked of eco-friendly- cities is often an Instagrammable blue-sky and a series of

animations showing streetscapes full of trees, clean water, and dog-friendly parks like the Alphabet Projectsby Google (Lindzon 2019)). They stand in contrast to the display of realities supplied by satellites, robots, and sensors depicting refugee camps, shantytowns, acid ecologies, and all of the horizontal-vertical sprawls made with asphalt. Before satellite data, the story of how a city's territorial expansion occurred was first illustrated by geographer Jean Gottmann, who examined how the USA's northeastern cities strengthen their urban growth. In his 1960s depiction, Gottmann saw the northeast seaboard of the United States as an interdependent system of rivers, oceans, roads, farmland, and many interconnected metropolises that formed a vast geographic settlement called megalopolis (Gottmann 1957).

In the next forty years, as the use of satellites and computational tools expanded, Manuel Castells foresaw these kinds of geographic zones not as the sprawling effect of humankind, but as a series of megalopolises spreading across the globe. He identified these megalopolises as economic-machines made from social-cultural-political systems forging a new order of humanmade-informational-networks (Castells 2013). Now, Julia Sze tells us that additional projects aiming to build more of these geographical formations will continue to distort the earth's ecological system. Her book Fantasy Islands discusses Dongtan Eco-City as the example of a collective misunderstanding brought forth by venture capitalist, starchitects, and politicians branding their master-plans as environmentally conscious platforms for new ways of living (Sze 2015) . Although the completion of these cities is not yet within our grasp, the 16-mile bridge connecting Chongming Island to Shanghai stands as physical evidence of Dongtan's failed proposal. The invisible coexistence of fauna, flora, and local inhabitants has already been displaced or lost, and the eco-city has not materialized.

Like most proposals for eco-cities, Dongtan's bridge signals a type of false-reality fabricated at the start of the 20th century when master planning came into view. It is a kind of storytelling that remains a singular act under the redress of new perceptions; it is the modern phenomenon architects and planners know well —born from the efforts of educators who institutionalized master-planning, the false-realities to divide and conquer earth's geology remains(Erickson 2012).

1.2. Eyes Beware

In 1986 the New York Times published "Photos for Spying on Soviet Military :

> In the past, photos from civilian satellites were used mainly for crop forecasting, mineral exploration and forestry management. Such uses require a distant view of the earth's surface. But civilian satellite cameras, although still less powerful than military spy satellites, are being built to take closer looks at small objects. This enables city planners, for instance, to locate and evaluate sites for streets, buildings and parks (Broad 1997).

Surveillance evidences human behavior. But, sometimes, the lenses from which these behaviors are evidenced produces partial truths or false-realities. This phenomenon has been the subject of fiction, cinema, and courtrooms where crimes not committed become guilty pleas. It is also the way everyone else has learned to craft selfies and photoshop images to tell embellished stories of lives never lived.

Google Earth is one of these lenses leading to perceptual misunderstandings for urban planning. In the video production *Timelapse: Las Vegas Nevada*, a short visual narrative demonstrates how from 1980 to 2016, Lake Mead rapidly shrinks as Las Vegas housing sprawl grows (LandSat 2016). This time-lapse is a partial-truth because it fails to note the deformations and transformations inflicted

on the Colorado River since the early 1900s and before urban sprawl became physical contexts extending beyond Las Vegas City. In the video, there is no articulation of how the built productions of the Hoover Dam or Lake Mead changed the Colorado River. It does not show when and how the rest of the Southwest suburbanized and sprawled. No mention of revisited water distribution agreements and management for Lake Mead per Colorado, California, Utah, Wyoming, Arizona, and Mexico negotiations. The latest of which was determined as follow:

1) 27% for the State of California
2) 24% for the State of Colorado
3) 17% for the State of Arizona
4) 10% for the State of Utah
5) 6% for the State of Wyoming
6) 9% for Mexico Central America

Beyond dams and sprawl acts like Parker Dam plus Lake Havasu add built-in islands that have nothing to do with support for electricity, agricultural, industrial, and residential developments and everything to do with future land use. Joseph Kerski, whose review of old maps and satellite images is featured in LANDSAT, tells that:

> This modification is nothing new—it began as the earliest humans began burning of local grasslands to encourage new growth, tilling the soil for the first agricultural experiments, and building small dams to ensure a water source. Yet today's changes are more frequent and also larger in area, from the construction of cities, reservoirs, and tunnels, to widespread land use change through the conversion of the natural land cover to cropland, grazing pastures, mining sites, and other uses (LandSat 1911).

Vela produces visual narratives (Gonzales 2020). One of his visual stories starts two hundred years ago and shows how population growth will increase to ten million by 2050. In looking at his algorithmic account side by side with urban analyses published by NASA, it is clear how humans survived beyond the 1800s. Historical accounts of colonization and the shift from rural to urban life, verify the rapid and massive geographic changes occurring in Africa, Asia, Australia, and the Americas. By the 1900s USA takes the lead rapidly urbanizing and ranking in third place among thousands of urban developments as the world 's population growth (Simon 2002).

2. ONE HUNDRED YEARS OF URBANITY

During the last one hundred years and as a result of the machine age, cities propagated the planet becoming urban thesauruses that evidence an urbanize earth. By the mid-1960s, satellite images, films, and scholarly work ignite new ways for designers to view this scale. Work like The Power of Ten from Charles and James Eames stars to deal with the proportion of perspective and the scale of things relative to the universe (Eames 1977) . Our mundane sight shifts according to the new magnitude for understanding reality from motion imagery and movies. Fictions like Alphaville 1965, Playtime 1967, and Brazil 1985 heralded the universalized city of *anywhere and everywhere.* In retrospect, our paper sees false-realities as the descriptions of most proposed and built environments. From this purview, we compare and contrast two cities from their:

1) Geodetic Location and Ecologic Wealth
2) Socio-Economic Interest and Outcomes
3) Physical Formations

2.1. Nātūra Nātūrans

Geodetic Location and Ecologic Wealth

At 0° 49'45.1 "S 91°08' 7.1 "W., from the depth of the ocean, around one hundred meters of profundity the Equatorial Undercurrent (EUC) collides with the Galapagos Islands. The clash causes an upwelling of nutrients that uniquely reconstructs and replenishes significant portions of the earth's biodiversity

(Rodgers 2018). It is the act that inspired The Origins of the Species (Darwin 2012), a force unexplained for millennia where nature does what nature wants, always on the move, autonomously amending, adapting, and acclimating to the tinkering processes of life. Field studies from Dr. H. M. Saville of the American Museum of Natural History and writings by Kanz and Curtis, dating back to the late 1800s early 1900s, concluded that this coastal region might have been a resource that fortified the wealth of the Inca Empire (Wade 1999).

Physical Formation

By the shoreline, at 0.9677° S, 80.7089°W, nature nurtured the inhabitants in the periphery. First passively identified by the simple communal ambitions of local fishers who selected to live off its bounty, the zone was under a spell of sunny days and breezy nights housing humans who lived in homes made from nature's caña gauda (structural bamboo). In oblivion of exploitation and expanding behaviors, indigenous people sought to live in symbiosis with their surroundings, nurturing their environmental wealth.

Socio-Economic Outcomes

By 1929, however, other kinds of settlers discovered the area, and the population grew. These new citizens needed a system of governance (Middleton 1988). La Ciudad de Manta and its municipality ensued from the industrialization of fishing. Gradually, additional immigrants from Germany, Spain, North America, and, most recently, Russia, and China colonized the oceanfront. The land is arbitrage and privatized (Bonilla 2013). The ocean currents were nationalized. In less than fifty decades, Manta became a shipyard fill with merchants, bankers, fishing crews, concrete buildings, asphalt, trucks, and private vehicles. Now a sea of sprawling homes dispersing like popcorn everywhere, decentralized human life. Populated by urban slums and countless gated communities, the automobile-dependent minority exacerbated the lack of adequate public transport, public parks, and open public spaces. Here, like in much of the Pacific Coast, Manta faces environmental challenges. Earthquakes, erosion, and lack of equity or opportunities for indigenous Mantencians plague the zone. The present unrest of Latin America is now inflicting a new type of migration in Manta. Migrants from Venezuela and Central America articulate a new and growing dystopia, forward by drugs and violence, with little knowledge or regard for its unique geographic milieu.

This story is old. Like countless of coastal towns where few humans once lived in solitude, without exposure to the modern world, Manta's habitat is no longer shaped by natural evolution. Explosive fabrications act as a counterforce to the Equatorial Undercurrent, endangering an environment in flux inundated by acts of exploitation. The narrative simulates MACONDO, Gabriel Garcia Marquez's fictional city, that starts as a paradise of environmental wealth and eventually gets swallowed by a gigantic but unforeseen windstorm in which readers are free to characterized as the speed of an urbanized inundation (de O. Martins 2016).

2.2. Behind Us and Ahead of Us

Geodetic Location and Ecologic Wealth

In contrast, at 32.0853° N, 34.7818° E, nature did not always nurture humans. Throughout its history, dating back to ancient times and biblical recordings, different narrations tell different stories of a region oscillating from tales about water depletion to times of green bounty and periods of rainfall. Consider a wasteland by some, a battleground for many, and an opportunity of survival by a few Tel Aviv urbanized anew. From its inception, the area has experienced multiple beginnings (Chyutin 1979), yet, in the early 1900s, the city was marked by a gradual migration of

scholars arriving from Germany, Austria, Italy, Britain, Bulgaria, and Yugoslavia. Over the years, and specifically, after WWII, near the 14th of May, 1948, migrants flocked the area with new arrivals of people from Poland, Romania, and Africa. Most recently, immigration from Spain, North and South America, Russia, and China continue to populate this city. It is a place marked by a socio-global awareness of its physical, biological, psychological, and social constraints. Human behavior is challenging.

Physical Formation

There, ideas are the means to observe, think, experiment, and validate life. There is a drive of perpetual surveillance where everyone is watching and watches the acts perpetrated in the city. Starting with an urban master plan proposed by biologist Patrick Geddes, Zionist collectively developed a community and a system of economic growth they called Kibbutz (Katz 1986). From the start, Israelis embarked on a soft socio-economic journey promoting social equity, educational rights, and health care for all. Urban growth was from the beginning, controlled by the Kibbutz planning system inspired by Bauhaus

Teachings (Welter 2009). Citizens undertook building tasks related to rest, cleansing, and nourishing. Together they form a society based on housing and shared governance. Public forums for idea creation, critical analysis, and education achievements became a type of production intertwined with comprehensive and reliable understandings of their environment. Agricultural research and novel techniques of irrigation spur, guaranteeing a steady and independent stream of food-supply. Collectively Israelis strategized a defense mechanism for survival, starting with their militarization system, medical research centers, and augmentation of scientific knowledge. Emerging water conservation programs and solar energy became the staple to promote self contain stability and security. Yet, in fifty years, by the late 1970s, the Kibbutzim system was reaching its peak, citizens steadily morphed their laws toward the privatization of economies forging a new era of labor and social revolution for Tel-Aviv.

Socio-Economic Outcomes

Growing away from their initial agro-socio-economic model, Tel Aviv enacted a new type of urbanization called *Irbutz* (Philps 2000). This new modality focuses less on an economy of means and more on urban wellbeing, forging a re-fresh concept of neighborhood strata. This approach is an evolving exploration that remains focused on social behavior and cultural traditions. The goal is to share common causes and improve and expand on their environmental surroundings. *Irbutzans* often demand action from their municipality forging walkability, greenery, improve public services, carshare technologies, quality of food, and water, plus the participation of city officials engaged in social media forums.

In some particular way, weaning out of Kibbutzim culture is an indefinite journey leading the Municipality of Tel Aviv to become a shareholder with its citizens. Social unrest from *Irbutz* is creeping in. Citizens are identifying a robust participatory system based on the inclusion of citizenship, coupled with the Internet of Things [IoT] as an urban tool for citizens to seek a continuum of community engagement and improve living environments. Beyond human-data collection, their mobile applications are actively used to analyze information according to location, energy use, water needs, and food distribution. The municipality has dedicated workers delivering educational services, recreational activities, emergency alerts, health support, and other pertinent content to its citizens.

CONCLUSION

Within one hundred years, earth has progressively urbanized, a move that exerts challenges to the coexistence between fauna and flora, as evidenced by shifting migrations and persistent planning errors caused by land arbitrage, ecological ignorance, and technological interference. This perspective matters because it is the basis to understand the earth's fabric further. It leads to an underlying and evolving paradigm about ecological and economic disruptions generated and detected through urban development. The eco-city language applied to Sidewalk, Woven City, Belmont, or O'Neill's is a century-old system that plays into false-realities. Even if the current state of technologies could materialize the promises of a new age center on advanced knowledge, city planning remains riffed with contradicting procedures that continue to tamper with the planet's motion. Thus, the socio-economic and environmental discussions driving humans to live, work, and co-habitat in urban settings requires readjustments at the educational and governmental level to lead humans away from existing praxis, which arbitrarily disenfranchises life.

From this perspective, we did not find new methods to build a lexicon for city planning, yet; we observed severe challenges to the ways we propagate across the planet. In the presence of warming environments, colonized by different types of urbanized spectrum, it is not enough to grasp the abuse of environmental wealth in the absence of planning ethos or imagine the aesthetics of urban planning and city-making through community engagement. Moving forward, how can we extract lessons from previous errors and look for ways to mine and identify the future prerequisites for urban systems seeking to extend beyond the twentieth-century mindset? From our study, we see these starting points:

- Pay attention to the earth's eco-system.
- Develop socio-economic strategies or systems of governance with scientific awareness.
- Aim to reconnected disenfranchise fauna and flora.
- Harness socio-economic labs based on a Galilean vision of the Universe.
- Ignore the asphalt centric movement of the 20th century.
- Escape the minds of city builders and leaders who engage in "smart" urban developments of recent years.

This list is not exhaustive, but it starts to render the challenges facing an urbanized world. It is also extending the perceptual scale of our existing stratum. Suppose we see Tel-Aviv as a city surviving under scarcity and directly benefiting from "a club-like" community; could we also envision community engagement at the scale of a planet facing scarcity? On the other hand, if we visualize Manta as a city imploding from its chaos, could that help humans reflect upon ensuing dangers at the scale of a depleting planet? Implicit within these two tales lies a meditative approach to infer additional or probable scenarios for survival under scarcity and depletion rather than uncheck city planning growth.

REFERENCES

Bilkadi, Z. (1984). *Bitumen: a history*. Aramco.

Bonilla, O. (2013). The Manta–Manaus project: nature, capital and plunder. In *Ecological Economics from the Ground Up* (pp. 111-131). Routledge.

Broad, W. (1997, December). *First Civilian Spy Satellite Soars Into Space, Launched in Russia by a U.S. Company*. Retrived from https://www.nytimes.com/1997/12/25/us/first-civilian-spy-satellite-soars-into-space-launched-in-russia-by-a-us-company.html.

Castells, M. (2013). *Communication power*. OUP Oxford.

Chyutin, M. (1979). Planning in a communal society: A comparison between physical planning in the kibbutz and in the city. *Socio-Economic Planning Sciences*, 13(6), 289-295.

City of Toronto. (2018). *Public Space Public Life Study*. Retrived from https://www.toronto.ca/ext/digital_comm/pdfs/city-planning/2018-10-15-downtown-parks-public-realm-plan-public-space-public-life-study.pdf

Corbusier, L. (1994). Ville contemporaine de 3 millions d'habitants. *Le Corbusier, Urbanisme, Paris, Champs Flammarion*, 157-168.

Darwin, C. (2012). *On the Origin of the Species and The Voyage of the Beagle*. Graphic Arts Books.

de O. Martins, L. P., & de Oliveira, P. J. V. (2016). Breaking the cycle of Macondo: design and decolonial futures. *XRDS: Crossroads, The ACM Magazine for Students,* 22(4), 28-32.

Eames, C., & Eames, R. (1977). Powers of ten [Motion picture]. *United States: IBM*.

Erickson, A. (2012). A brief history of the birth of urban planning. *The Atlantic Cities*. Retrived from http://www. theatlanticcities. com/jobs-andeconomy/2012/08/brief-history-birth-urban-planning/2365

Gonzales Vela, D. (2020). *World Population Between 1800-2020 & Projections 2050*. Retrived from https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fmTj7SOLDmU

Gottmann, J. (1957). Megalopolis or the urbanization of the northeastern seaboard. *Economic geography* 33, no. 3 (1957): 189-200.

Harvey, D. (2016). Abstract from the Concrete. Sternberg Press.

Katz, Y. (1986). Ideology and urban development: Zionism and the origins of Tel-Aviv, 1906–1914. *Journal of Historical Geography,* 12(4), 402-424.

Kitchin, R., Coletta, C., Evans, L., Heaphy, L., & Mac Donncha, D. (2017). Smart cities, urban technocrats, epistemic communities and advocacy coalitions: The Programmable City Working Paper 26.

Kolbert, E. (2014). *The sixth extinction: An unnatural history*. A&C Black.

LANDSAT. (2016). Time Lapse Las Vegas, Nevada. Retrived from https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OmNJAOM_6_A

LANDSAT. (2020). Creating an Oasis: Lake Havasu City, Arizona, 1911. Retrived from https://landsat.gsfc.nasa.gov/creating-an-oasis-in-the-desert-lake-havasu-city-arizona-1911/

Lindzon, J. (2019, September). How Toronto Locals Soured on Alphabet's Neighborhood of the Future. Retrived from https://www.fastcompany.com/90390377/alphabet-wants-to-turn-toronto-into-a-digital-city-locals-arent-so-sure

Middleton, D. R. (1988). Development and multiple use: conflict on an Ecuadorian beach. *Urban Anthropology and Studies of Cultural Systems and World Economic Development*, 351-364.

Philps, A. (2000). Cities Kibbutz' Helps Socialist Dream Live On. Retrived from https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/europe/1356509/City-kibbutz-helps-socialist-dream-live-on.html

Rodgers, L. (2018). Climate change: The massive CO2 emitter you may not know about. *BBC News*.

Simon, C. J., & Nardinelli, C. (2002). Human capital and the rise of American cities, 1900–1990. *Regional Science and Urban Economics*, 32(1), 59-96.

Sze, J., London, J., Shilling, F., Gambirazzio, G., Filan, T., & Cadenasso, M. (2009). Defining and contesting environmental justice: Socio-natures and the politics of scale in the Delta. *Antipode, 41*(4), 807-843.

Sze, J. (2015). *Fantasy islands: Chinese dreams and ecological fears in an age of climate crisis*. University of California Press.

Toyota. (2020, January). Toyota to Build Prototype City of the Future. Retrived from https://global.toyota/en/newsroom/corporate/31171023.html

Vera, M. D. C., & Yeshayahu, S. (2019, May). Designing Eden. In *ARCC Conference Repository*.

Wade, N. (1999, May). Finch DNA Shows Darwin Was Right. Retrived from https://www.nytimes.com/1999/05/11/science/finch-dna-shows-darwin-was-right.html?searchResultPosition=5

Welter, V. M. (2009). The 1925 Master Plan for Tel-Aviv by Patrick Geddes. *Israel Studies,* 94-119.

PAPER #3.05

INFRASTRUCTURE FOR COLLECTIVITY: BUILT HERITAGE AND SERVICE PLANNING IN THE CITY

Francesca Daprà[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The paper proposes a reflection on the potentialities of the existing ecclesiastical heritage in the urban context – with particular reference to the one related to the catholic "parish complexes" –. The research introduces a reading of such particular heritage, with the aim of valorizing and innovating its system – widespread and diffused in the Italian cities – which is passing through a phase of reconsideration and regeneration, due to the changing of cultural and social needs of the multicultural citizen. The objectives of the research lie in the elaboration of tools and methods for the analysis and the re-signification of the parish heritage, this one conceived as a potential actor in the "collective services" supply chain of the "public" city.
The research uses the city of Milan as a privileged area of study, by virtue of the diffusion and capillarity of the heritage, the consolidated social and cultural tradition linked to it, as well as the degrees of innovation and experimentation in progress regarding the "subsidiary" planning of services.
The results of the research consist, initially, in a "systematization" of the contribution of different disciplines on the specific topic; secondly, they represent an analytic study about the context of Milan, supported by a multiple-case study analysis, framing some hints of innovation related to users, services, spaces and management of the parish heritage.

KEYWORDS

Infrastructure; ecclesiastical heritage; service planning; social innovation; urban planning.

INTRODUCTION

This contribution proposes a reflection on the role of built heritage within urban planning of services in the contemporary city, with particular reference to the ecclesiastical one. The considered field of study presents great chances to reinterpret new spatialities and to meet the material and immaterial needs of contemporary society, offering spaces and opportunities for experimentation and innovation. The object of the research refers to the so-called "parish complexes"[1] – specifically developed and spread in the Italian context – which include the Catholic worship building and all the structures attached or aggregated to it, devoted to social, entertainment and educational activities – such as Christian initiation, hospitality, sports and games, charity and assistance initiatives – and several other functions, recently being re-defined[2]. Together with the rest of the ecclesiastical heritage of other natures, it constitutes a huge part of

[1] By "parish complex" it is meant a complex building organism, which belongs to a specific "parish": a "community of faithful that is established permanently within a particular Church" and which includes the faithful of a specific territory (can. 515, can. 518, Codice di Diritto Canonico,1983).
[2] The role of the parochial institution in the Italian society has been consolidated through centuries, flourishing under the inputs of priests and educators (San Filippo Neri in Rome in the XVI century, the great Lombardy bishops from Carlo Borromeo –XVI century– to Giovanni Battista Montini –XX century–, Don Bosco in Turim in the XIX century). After the Unity of Italy and especially during the XIX-XX century the parish consolidated as the social heart of the cities and districts, devoted to young people and their entertainment and education (Borzomati 1997, Tassani 1997).

the entire built heritage of Italian cities, it is deeply rooted in the urban fabric of the main cities, as well as in rural territories, and it traditionally constitutes an identity symbol for cities, neighborhoods, countries, and villages. From a social point of view, these complexes are involved – like many others with a "collective" vocation – in a process of transformation and reconsideration of their vocation and identity due, among other factors, to the changes in religious, social, and cultural trends and needs of the multiethnic city. From a "physical" point of view, the real consistency of the heritage and its potential is greatly under-considered, often under-maintained, under-valued, and partially under-used; moreover, it has different spaces which are not adequate to the needs of the contemporary Christian community and civil society, and which are awaiting for a necessary updating. This observation is linked to the increasingly urgent need to enhance and re-use the built heritage of existing "containers", avoiding the consumption of soil. Moving from these considerations, the research focused on the definition of the "role" and the "potential" of this huge heritage in the contemporary city, with particular reference to the system of "collective services" and "welfare".

1. METHODOLOGY AND OBJECTIVES OF THE RESEARCH

The general objective of the research is to provide strategies, indications, and perspectives for the enhancement and optimization of this heritage, with the purpose of its integration in the "collective services" planning. The specific objectives of this reflection lie, firstly, in the analysis of the relationship between the system of parish complexes and the contemporary city, and of the consistency and quality of the heritage itself – which is barely examined today –; moreover they consist in the definition of some scenarios that suggest an innovative articulation of spaces, services and management methods for such complexes.

1.1 Selection of a study area: the city of Milan

Moving from the assumption that the parish heritage has a particular impact and relevance within the Italian panorama, a specific territorial area has been selected, to link the "physical" and architectural analysis of the structures with the urban development and the social impact of parish complexes in a specific context. The city of Milan has been selected, because of the significant number of structures present and the development of the parochial institution which differentiates the identity of the Ambrosian system from the others; moreover, for the wealth of researches and reflections on the topic from an urban, sociological, educational, and religious point of view.

1.2 Phases, methods and tools of the research

The research is articulated into three main phases.
PHASE I | theoretical: the goal lies in the reconstruction of the interactions between the ecclesiastical heritage and the contemporary city. The composition of the theoretical framework (State of the Art) is based on a bibliographical survey related to two main areas: the enhancement of the ecclesiastical heritage and the planning of urban collective services.
PHASE II | analytical: the second phase looks for the qualities and characteristics of these complexes and their relationship with the territory, analyzing their distribution and their "location" within the current "tools" of urban planning, and taking a "photograph" of their status in the Ambrosian city. It consists of a reflection on the territorial organization of

the "public city" and the "ecclesiastical city", and of a multiple-case study analysis on 15 Milanese parishes. The research methods used range from bibliographic, cartographic, and archival one, direct analysis and statistics tools, supported by the use of geolocation and digital cartography tools, which act as a basis for the various reflections conducted.
PHASE III | strategic: the third phase synthetically elaborates some "profiles" of innovation for the "parishes of the future", based on the data collected in the previous part and a further bibliographic survey on some specific topics.

2. REFERENCE FRAMEWORK: ECCLESIASTICAL HERITAGE AND "COLLECTIVE SERVICES"

2.1. Welfare, urban service planning, and subsidiarity in the contemporary city

The relationship between welfare and urban structure is the subject of various innovations, conducted thorough research and design, and it is particularly lively in the Milan area (Pomilio 2009). The places and "containers" for "collective services" are slowly moving from a "standard" vision to a "horizontal subsidiarity" one; the "public city" is no longer defined by the application of abstract urban constraints, but by the definition of a daily and continuous project of the urban welfare system, in which social activation is possible, and alternative forms of services supply are implemented. Such a process involves not only the "public" actor but also other "subsidiary" entities, including private ones, volunteering, and the third sector (Vittadini 2007). In this sense, the concept of "public service" is extended to all which appears to be "of collective interest" and which responds to a general need: the actual "collective equipment" (Aymonino 2000, Valente 2009). Such principles are the basis of service planning in some recent Regulatory Plans – including the Milan one – where the municipality plays a supporting and coordinating role in soliciting the potential availability of the subjects active in urban transformations, and which are capable of directly generating services in the urban fabric (Vittadini 2007, Pomilio 2009, Comune di Milano 2019c). The subsidiary perspective, therefore, becomes a potential tool to respond to the multiple changing needs of contemporary living, due to a "cognitive advantage" of individuals and social realities that allows them to respond more appropriately to local needs, compared to public bodies (Garrone and Lauro 2012).

2.2 Built and cultural ecclesiastical heritage: conservation, enhancement, and digitisation

The ecclesiastical heritage – considered firstly as "cultural heritage" – represents a large part of the entire heritage of the territories and for this reason the reflections on it should be strictly connected to the panorama of researches and policies regarding conservation and enhancement of built heritage in Europe. Such frame passed from a concept of mere "conservation" of property to visions that include the development and enhancement of the "outstanding value" heritage of collective interest, involving socio-economic implications, values, and environmental factors (CHCfE 2015, Pontificium Consilium de Cultura 2018, Commissione Europea 2019). In this context, ecclesiastical and religious assets play a highly relevant role, since they represent a real "portion of culture" or "cultural identity" of a specific society and regions (Zetti 2010, 234, Cavana 2016, 46), elements of "cultural identification" and social aggregation (Pontifium Consilium de Cultura 2018, 4). Nonetheless, religious heritage is often subject to a lack of systemic attention and, consequently, of strategic planning for its conservation and enhancement (Stovel et al 2005, CEI & MIBACT 2014). In recent years,

particular attention has been paid to the issue of digitisation and online accessibility of cultural heritage in Europe and Italy (European Commission 2011, Presidenza del Consiglio dei Ministri 2015, Commissione Europea 2019). Also on the ecclesiastical side, several efforts have been carried out in this direction, to "census" and "catalogue" the heritage (D'Agnelli and Gavazzi 2007, Bartolomei 2016): the first step towards a generation of "common good", proposing the vision of a widespread and integrated heritage and new relationships between the Church and the territories (Hesse and Ostrom 2007, Rizzo and Rizzo 2015, Bartolomei 2016). In this panorama, the *Diocesi di Milano*[3] has recently undertaken the project of a management tool integrated with the geolocation of the parish buildings and their territorial boundaries (*Fascicolo Tecnico del Fabbricato* e *Piano di Manutenzione Programmata della Diocesi di Milano*). The geolocation process aims to anchor the management of the properties to the territorial specificities and local needs and it allows a "complete" and "territorial" reading of the properties, going towards a systemic and complementary conception of spaces, functions, and actions (Guzzetti et al. 2016).

3. ECCLESIASTICAL HERITAGE AND CONTEMPORARY CITY: THE AMBROSIAN SYSTEM

3.1 Public/ecclesiastical city

From an urban planning point of view, the heritage considered finds a precise "space" within the revision of the *Piano di Governo del Territorio* (Territory Government Plan) of 2012 "Milano 2030", approved in March 2019, within the *Piano per le Attrezzature Religiose* (Plan for Religious Equipment, hereinafter PAR), which maps the existing equipment and identifies the areas for those of new forecast. The PAR, created to respond to a legislative requirement (LR/2015) is part of a broader reflection on the urban service planning, where "religious equipment" is considered a real "service" for the multicultural citizen, to be included in the frame of "proximity services" (Comune di Milano 2019b, 19). Nowadays, the planning of the Milanese city and its services is closely linked to the definition of the 88 *Nuclei di Identità Locale* (hereinafter NIL): territorial, non-administrative entities, which arose as modalities of "planning at the local scale"(Pomilio 2009). On the other hand, the "ecclesiastical city" system is organized into 170 "parishes" and 10 Pastoral Units[4]: an organization resulting from historic stratifications and urbanization trends, which led the religious planning to follow the urban one, conceiving churches and parishes as hearts of the new urban districts[5]. The actual PAR shows that, in a certain sense, the development of the "ecclesiastical" city continues to follow urban planning, including the construction of new buildings for worship in the areas of future development. Nonetheless they follow different logics, recalling, on one side (the public), the identities of the NIL – which do not correspond, at a territorial level, to the historical division of the neighborhoods – and on the other side (the ecclesiastical) the unification of parishes – due to a lack of priests and resources –, which generates new territorial identities. An overlapped map of the two nets shows how much they are no longer coincident (Fig. 1, 2). The maps – processed through GIS tools – open up a reflection on the real meaning of the parochial borders and the NILs, and on the real "territorial incidence" of this secular institution – the

[3] The *Diocesi di Milano* represents the territorial extension of the Church of Milan and it includes the provinces of Milan, Varese and Lecco, Monza-Brianza, part of that of Como and some municipalities in the provinces of Bergamo and Pavia. It is composed of 1107 parishes, distributed in 73 deaneries, organized in 7 pastoral areas.
[4] By Pastoral Unit is meant a union of several previous parishes, with the creation of a new institutional figure, or a close coordination between parishes (Bressan 2007, 428).
[5] Outstanding, in this sense, are the XIX experiences of Bologna and Milan, where the Church worked in strict connection with the public administration to build modern parish complexes in the popular residential districts (Gresleri et al 2004, Lazzaroni 2014).

parish – concerning the development and planning of the contemporary city.
This consideration is fundamental to analyze the potential of the parish heritage as a "container" of services – whose "territoriality" defines its use and users – and its inclusion within the "Piano dei Servizi". The mentioned reflections about the interaction parish services-neighborhood act a relevant role in the strengthening of the local identities and in the plan of a "systemic" offer of collective-interest services, as well as in the renewal and reorganization of the ecclesiastical fabric.

or laypeople), the collection of technical drawings and urban indications regarding each complex, and the data analysis. The choice of the sample used[6] aimed at building a vision as articulated as possible, trying to intercept realities and experiences that could be representative of common trends.
The analysis focused, in particular, on the "spaces" and "services" offered by the parishes considered, to outline a comparative framework useful for subsequent analyses. A second objective lies in the will of studying the relationship between the parish and its neighborhood, to describe their

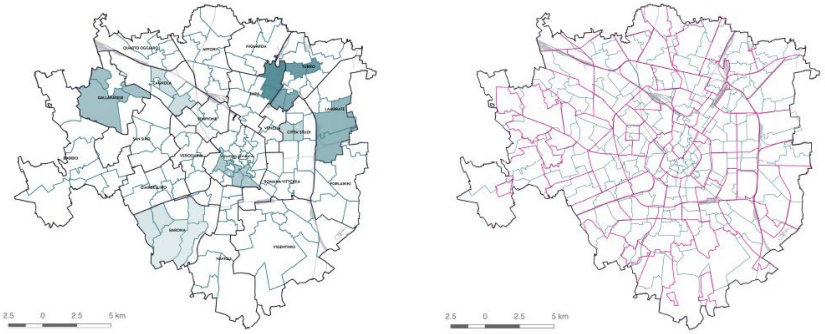


Figure 1, 2. From left: Map of the parishes and Pastoral Unities, City of Milan; Map of the overlapping of the parish network (green) and the NIL one (magenta), City of Milan. Edited by the author.

3.2 The ambrosian parish complexes: a sample analysis

The second part of the analytical phase aimed at taking a photograph of the current state of the analyzed system. A multiple-case study analysis has been conducted on 15 parish complexes, articulated into different phases: a direct observation – to collect qualitative and quantitative data – some interviews with parish interlocutors (priests

interconnections at a territorial ("consistency" of the parish area compared to the one of the related NIL), functional (analysis of services related to those present in the neighborhood) and social level (analysis of users involved in parish activities concerning the demographic composition of the neighborhood).
The data collection about uses and users has revealed that – in most cases – the juvenile users are predominant – regardless of the location of the parish – and that, consequently,

[6] The choice of the structures followed four selection criteria: I. Afference to non-homogeneous territorial portions; II. Pastoral and social interest; III. Availability of existing data or their direct collection; VI. Historical and "typological" variety of the analyzed complexes. To give a systematic order to the collection, the city of Milan was therefore divided into three areas: "fascia centrale" (central belt), "fascia intermedia" (intermediate belt), and "fascia periferica" (peripheral belt), selecting five parishes for each area. Here the list: San Simpliciano, San Lorenzo Maggiore, Santa Maria della Passione, Santa Maria al Paradiso, San Francesco d'Assisi al Fopponino (Fascia Centrale); Sant'Ildefonso, San Pio X, San Vincenzo de' Paoli, San Nicola in Dergano, Sant'Agostino (Fascia Intermedia); Santa Maria Rossa in Crescenzago, Santa Maria Liberatrice, Pentecoste, San Carlo alla Ca' Granda, Beata Vergine Assunta in Bruzzano (Fascia Periferica).

the services and activities addressed to young people are still predominant. Sports activity proves to be the main constant in the parish offer, following the activities of *oratorio* (traditional aggregative moments of play and free time entertainment) and Christian Initiation. The analyses also show that there is still a strong "celebratory" use of parishes as a "service" which, even today, is attended by several hundred people in each church. Further analyses showed the spatial and functional articulation of the complex, highlighting the differences between "historical" and "modern" heritage: the first, characterized by a spatial predominance of the church-building, which constitutes a strong artistic and cultural value; the second, defined by a balance of sacred and profane spaces. It has also been observed that the architectural and morph-typological attributes of the complexes act a relevant role in the definition of its uses and impact in the districts; this aspect deserves further investigations that have not been deeply conducted during the research.

The analyses deriving from the comparison between the parish and the local contexts revealed of particular interest. From a socio-demographic point of view it showed that considering the entire population living in the parish area, the participation in parish activities, in the majority of cases, involves no more than 20% of the inhabitants of the district; whereas the "incidence" of activities dedicated to young people is significantly higher: in most cases, parishes involve more than 30% of young people in the neighborhoods, reaching peaks of 60-70%. From a spatial point of view, the analysis showed a variety of different relations parish-NIL (i.e. parishes entirely covering the NIL area, and others whose area is not possible to relate with the NIL one).

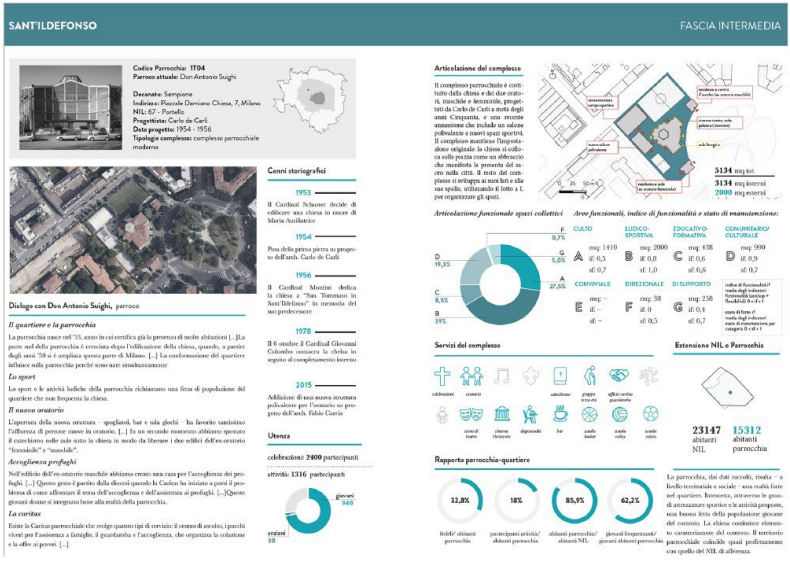


Figure 3. Example of the datasheet of one parish (Sant'Ildefonso), organized in: main information about the complex: aerial view of the complex; excerpts of the dialogues with the parochial interlocutors; brief historiography of the parish; users; functional articulation; index of functionality and state of maintenance for each functional area, services of the complex; overlapped map of NIL extension and parish area; indicators of parish - neighborhood relationship.

Those spatial relations could constitute a basis for a reflection regarding the parochial and public organization, to understand which are the most correct ways to foster a relationship between parishes and neighborhoods. For example, a brief reflection on the historic center situation could lead to the idea of stop concentrating on a resident-based and youth offer – because of its depopulation and inhabitants' ageing – and looking for new ways of "serving" the district and its users. In this sense, the constant social observation related to the NIL is a powerful tool to collect information about a specific area, moreover, participatory processes are recommended to involve the population in the possible transformations[7].

In conclusion, the analyses carried out give an image of the Milanese parish reality which, in general, constitutes an active "presence" in the neighborhoods in virtue of the spaces, the services offered and the users – with particular reference to the youth bracket –. Nonetheless, it is not always able to respond to the social need of the contexts of its competence, as well as to adapt the traditional services and activities to the changing demands and citizens' needs (i.e. consider the sports trends). Moreover, it is equipped with spaces that diverge from the current demand of contemporary users, who increasingly need and prefer flexible places and spaces for meeting and aggregation.

4. ECCLESIASTICAL HERITAGE, PUBLIC CITY, AND SOCIAL INNOVATION

Throughout history, the parish has been able to respond to the needs of the society it knew and supported, varying over time its "offer" of services and activities, and facing the different pastoral and social pressures. Regarding these issues, when related and integrated with the offer of public and social services in the city, it represents a relevant player in the city's welfare network in response to social needs still unresolved or poorly resolved, establishing what can be expressed as "creative subsidiarity" (Cottino and Zeppetella 2009). Parish spaces, moreover, offer themselves as truly significant potential spaces, given their intrinsic openness to the territory and their use – in most cases, partial, or at least concentrated in certain time slots and days of the week –. In terms of innovation, this heritage reveals to have spaces available to fight the "individualizing trend" of society (Bauman 2002).

In this sense, its enhancement as an under-used resource, linked to its potential of new actors, networks, and relationships involvement and activation, makes the parish a field of action of great interest in the development of Social Innovation actions.

Concerning its users, the parish should act towards a multi-generational and supra-territorial perspective

– thus expanding its catchment area –, designing its spaces and services to meet the needs of the context and not only of the traditional parochial "sphere".

For what concerns the services offered, the analysis showed a particular incidence of the sports services held in the parish complexes. Given their widespread presence (more than two thousand structures on the Lombard territory), and their physical structure (which includes, within a single complex, indoor and outdoor spaces for sports – e.g. fields, gyms – and semi-public spaces for meeting with the city – e.g courtyards and parvis –) the parishes constitute a real opportunity to respond to the increased demand for spaces and services intended for physical and sports activities, with particular reference to the lack of "widespread services" for the practice of emerging urban sports, which require an adaptation of traditional sports venues (Vettori 2019, Ghiretti 2019).

[7] During the last years, the Italian Bishops' Conference (CEI) started interesting experimentations about the participatory processes in the design and renewal of parish complexes, intending to guarantee a recognized role to the communities – both religious and civil – in the design process, including the record of the needs and expectations of people in the Preliminary Document for the Design of new churches (DPP). (Cavallini, Daprà and De Lucia 2019).

An example of such a transformation process could be given by the parish of San Pio X in Città Studi: a parish complex in strict relation with the university users and life which started, during the last years, to open its spaces to study in the morning. A community-based survey, conducted in 2019, demonstrated how the parish and its spaces are mainly used by district-users to study, to meet, and to socialize, a totally different asset from the resident-based frequentation of the majority of the parishes. Such inputs led the parish to start a process of reconsideration of its role, aiming to restore both the church building and the sports structures in an innovative way (Daprà 2020).
Finally, wide margins of innovation reside in the ways of providing services. The parochial services, when correctly inserted in the *Piano dei Servizi* (implementing, for example, an ad hoc voice to reflect the plurality and versatility of the types of services provided by these structures) and organized systemically – also through their digitisation – would constitute real "nodes" of a "subsidiary infrastructure" of services.

CONCLUSION

In conclusion, the research attempted to analyze the implications of the huge parish church heritage in the contemporary city. The analysis of the urban structure of the "public city" superimposed on the "ecclesiastical city" has shown how two "realities", which co-exist, could reveal the great potential for the territory and citizens if properly systematized. The systemic analysis of the physical consistency of the heritage, combined with that of its spaces and services concerning the neighborhoods of reference, constitutes an innovative vision of the topic, from which broad reflections on the role of the parish heritage as a "common good" to be revitalized can derive. As a matter of fact, some services provided by Christian communities have always been considered of public interest (such as amateur sports); whereas, today, it is necessary to reflect on the fact that the whole – by its widespread presence within the neighborhoods and its symbolic power (physical and cultural) in the urban landscape – represents a great potential as a "provider" of services to be enhanced and to be integrated into the public system.
The reflection on the parish's degrees of innovation in terms of users, services and methods, has shown that it is desirable an even greater interference and interpolation between the two institutions, to enhance and exploit both the physical heritage and the vocation of the parochial institution. The research led only a first small step towards considering the urban, social, and real estate potential of the heritage considered, waiting for further deepening on it.

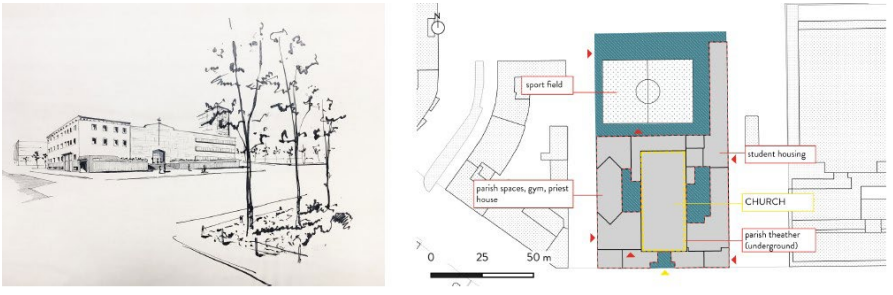


Figure 4, 5. The parish of San Pio X in Città Studi. From left: view from Piazza Leonardo da' Vinci, Giuseppe Chinigher architect, 1954. Source: Giuseppe Chinigher Archive, Politecnico di Milano; current planimetric configuration of the parish, edited by the author.

REFERENCES

Aymonino, C. 2000. *Il significato delle città*. Padua: Marsilio.

Bartolomei, L. 2016. "Le chiese abbandonate d'Italia. Cause, significato, prospettive di gestione". *In_bo Ricerche e progetti per il territorio, la città e l'architettura*, no.10: 6-26. Bologna: Università di Bologna. https://doi.org/10.6092/issn.2036-1602/7184.

Bauman, Z. 2002. *La società individualizzata. Come cambia la nostra esperienza*. Bologna: Il Mulino.

Borzomati, P. 1997. "La parrocchia". In *I luoghi della memoria. Strutture ed eventi dell'Italia unita,* edited by Isnenghi, M., 67-91. Rome-Bari: Laterza.

Bressan, L. 2007. "Unità pastorali, parrocchie, e presenza della Chiesa nella società". *La rivista del clero italiano*, no.6: 426-439. Milan.

Cavana, P. 2016. "Chiese dismesse: una risorsa per il futuro". *In_bo Ricerche e progetti per il territorio, la città e l'architettura*, no.10: 44-56. Bologna: Università di Bologna. https://doi.org/10.6092/issn. 2036-1602/6488.

CEI & MiBact. 2014. *Linee guida per la tutela dei beni culturali ecclesiastici.* https://www.beniculturali.it/ mibac/ multimedia/MiBAC/documents/feed/ pdf/ Linee%20Guida%20Tutela%20 Beni%20Culturali%20Ecclesiastici-imported-48392.pdf.

CHCfE Consortium. 2015. *Cultural Heritage Counts for Europe*, Krakow: International Cultural Centre. http://blogs.encatc.org/ culturalheritagecountsforeurope//wp-content/uploads/2015/06/ CHCfE_FULL-REPORT_v2.pdf.

Comune di Milano (ed). 2019a, *Piano per le attrezzature religiose, Relazione generale e norme di attuazione,* Milan. http:// allegati. comune. milano. it/ territorio/ PGT_ BURL/ 3_ PAR/ 1_PAR_Relazione_Norme_ Attuazione.pdf.

Comune di Milano (ed). 2019b. *Milano 2030 ,visione, costruzione, strategie, progetto di città*. Milano. http://allegati.comune.milano.it/territorio/PGT_BURL/1_DP/1_DP_Relazione_generale.pdf.

Comune di Milano (ed). 2019c. *Piano dei servizi, norme di attuazione*. Milan. http:// allegati.comune.milano.it/territorio/PGT_BURL/2_PS/1_PS_Norme_Attuazione_Catalogo.pdf.

Cottino, P. and Zeppetella, P. 2009. *Creatività, sfera pubblica e riuso sociale degli spazi. Forme di sussidiarietà orizzontale per la produzione di servizi non convenzionali.* Paper no.4/2009. Rome: Cittalia.

Daprà, F., Cavallini, E. and De Lucia, G. 2019. "Design for and by community. Participatory processes for the construction of Italian parish complexes." *Faith and Form*, no. 52, 2.

Daprà, F. 2020. "Infrastruttura Sussidiaria. Strategie per la valorizzazione del patrimonio ecclesiastico: il sistema dei complessi parrocchiali ambrosiani", Final PhD Dissertation, Politecnico di Milano, Department of Architecture, Built Environment and Construction Engineering, Milan.

D'Agnelli, F.M., and Gavazzi, L. 2007. "Catalogazione, riordino, inventariazione e censimento: strumenti informatici e nuove tecnologie al servizio dei beni culturali". *SICEInforma* (march) 15-17.

European Commission. 2011. *Commission recommendation of 27 October 2011 on the digitisation and online accessibility of cultural material and digital preservation* (2011/711/EU). Luxembourg. https:// eur-lex.europa.eu/LexUriServ/LexUriServ.do?uri=OJ:L:2011:283:0039:0045:EN:PDF.

European Commission. 2019. *European Framework for action on cultural heritage*. Luxembourg: Publications Office of the European Union. https://doi.org/10.2766/622226.

Garrone, P., and Lauro, C. (eds). 2012. *Sussidiarietà e città abitabile, Rapporto sulla sussidiarietà* 2011. Milan: Fondazione per la Sussidiarietà.

Ghiretti, R. 2019. "Il ruolo sociale nello sport. Evoluzione degli impianti sportivi tra marketing e comunicazione".In *Architettura dello sport. Progettazione costruzione gestione delle infrastrutture sportive*, edited by Faroldi, E. Santarcangelo di Romagna: Maggioli.

Gresleri, Gl., Bettazzi, M.B., Gresleri, G. and Apa, M. 2004. *Chiesa e Quartiere, storia di una rivista e di un movimento per l'architettura a Bologna,* Bologna: Editrice Compositori.

Guzzetti, Invernici, Privitera and Ronconi. 2016, "Geolocalizzazione delle Parrocchie e dei loro beni immobili nella Diocesi di Milano", *XX Conferenza Nazionale ASITA,* 8 – 10 november 2016, Cagliari. atti.asita.it/ASITA2016/Pdf/044.pdf.

Hesse, C., and Ostrom, E. (eds). 2007. *Understanding knowledge as a Commons,* Cambridge: The MIT Press.

Lazzaroni, L. (ed). 2016. *La diocesi di Milano e le nuove chiese 1954-2014*. Milano: Centro ambrosiano. Pomilio, F. (ed). 2009. Welfare e territorio. Florence: Alinea Editrice.

Pontifium Consilium de Cultura. 2018. *La dismissione e il riuso ecclesiale di chiese. Linee guida*, Rome. www.cultura.va/content/dam/cultura/docs/pdf/beniculturali/Lineeguidadismissione.pdf.

Presidenza Consiglio dei Ministri, 2015, *Strategia per la crescita digitale 2014-2020,* Roma. http:// www.governo.it/sites/governo.it/files/strategia_crescita_digitale.pdf.

Rizzo, R. G., and Rizzo, L. S. 2015. "Religious heritage in Italy: websites and geolocalization. A new appraisal". *Bollettino della Associazione Italiana di Cartografia,* no.154: 121-136. Trieste: Edizioni Università di Trieste. https://doi.org/10.13137/2282-472X/12493.

Stovel, H., Stanley-Price, N.,and Killick, R. (eds). 2005. *Conservation of Living Religious Heritage*, Papers form the ICCROM 2003 Forum on Living Religious Heritage: conserving the sacred. Rome: ICCROM. https://www.iccrom.org/it/publication/conservation-living-religious-heritage.

Tassani, G. 1997. "L'oratorio". In *I luoghi della memoria. Strutture ed eventi dell'Italia unita,* edited by Isnenghi, M., 136-172. Rome-Bari: Laterza.

Valente, I. 2009. "Servizi, attrezzature, infrastrutture: tre parole chiave per l'architettura degli spazi pubblici". In *Welfare e territorio,* edited by Pomilio, F., 111-115. Florence: Alinea Editrice.

Vettori, M.P. 2019. "Sport e spazio pubblico. Il ruolo delle infrastrutture sportive nell'evoluzione della città". In *Architettura dello sport. Progettazione costruzione gestione delle infrastrutture sportive*, edited by Faroldi, E. Santarcangelo di Romagna: Maggioli.

Vittadini, G. (ed). 2007. *Che cosa è la sussidiarietà. Un altro nome della libertà,* Milan: Guerini e Associati.

Zetti, I. 2010. "Built heritage, local communities and the production of territory. Citizen participation in heritage preservation and improvement". In *Integrating aims – built heritage in social economic development,* edited by Mälkki M. and Kaisa S., 231-250. Espoo: Centre for Urban and Regional Studies Publications. http://lib.tkk.fi/Reports/2010/isbn9789526032849.pdf.

PAPER #3.06

CIRCULAR ECONOMY AND REUSE OF ARCHITECTURAL HERITAGE IN FRAGILE TERRITORIES

Marco Bovati[a], Alisia Tognon[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milano, Italia

ABSTRACT

This paper aims to investigate how the architectural culture, and in particular the space design disciplines, can incorporate the paradigms of the Circular Economy in their principles and practices. The objective is to understand which theoretical postulates are valuable for defining disciplinary approaches applicable to abandoned historical contexts which need to be reactivated.
The object of the research is the Italian inland areas (SNAI – Strategia Nazionale Aree Interne - National Strategy of Inland Areas), which occupy about 60% of Italian territory.
These areas are characterised by the abandonment of architectural heritage and fragile cultural landscapes. However, these under-utilised places are an extraordinary resource and possess a historical-artistic heritage which offers various opportunities for territories and communities. Their significance is able to produce a cultural, economic, social and environmental impact which can be achieved through a sustainable development strategy. The political commitment is to create a common path for the enhancement of the local economy, but also to introduce innovations into public services such as schools, health and mobility. Among interdisciplinary theoretical speculations required for the creation of a strategic approach to sustainable architectural and urban regeneration projects, this ongoing research relies on the concept of Circular Economy as a theoretical reference (Ellen MacArthur Foundation), shaped into the notion of reuse defined in the cradle - to - cradle approach (McDonough, Braungart 2002) and extended to the model of the "3Rs" and "Design for Reuse".
The result of this work is to argue that in order to define new lifecycles, avoiding tactics of high energy cost recycling, down-cycle and linear economy, it is necessary to implement a "Design for Reuse" strategy. This is a design concept in which other possible uses for products, architectural artefacts and parts of the city can be planned. Therefore, the outcome is not to find conclusive answers but to open up questions and to hypothesise partial answers for the ongoing research.

KEYWORDS

Territorial fragilities; circular economy; reuse; cultural heritage.

It is well known that the construction of Venice took place literally by plundering (and then dismantling) the ancient Roman settlements and early Christian churches of the Venetian Lagoon.
It is also known that Filarete Hospital in Milan, over the centuries, has changed its use and is now the campus of Università Statale.
Referring to Aldo Rossi, he focused on the question of the reuse of architecture, something which depends more on the precise definition of its formal and identity characteristics than on a vague project of flexibility, only able to produce anonymous, ordinary and substantially unsuitable spaces for specific uses, precisely because they are without identity.

INTRODUCTION

In recent times, the concept of Circular Economy and its application to the architectural field has seen the evolution of several investigations related to construction techniques and materials. These concepts seem to be coherent with the idea of circular economy, even if its development is complex and is the result of detailed research that also requires the involvement of different disciplines. Indeed, the theme of separation between natural and technical flows, launched by the book *Cradle to Cradle: Remaking the Way We Make Things* (McDonough, Braungart 2002) allows us to imagine innovative construction technologies and materials designed to guarantee the independence of the two fields. Moreover, the well-known 3Rs (*Reduce-Reuse-Recycle*) establish the pertinence to the technical-constructive sphere of architecture, although it is not always easy to achieve. This approach is within the sphere of reducing the use of energy and materials, reusing the construction components and recycling waste and scrap.

Alongside this, the paper intends to take into consideration and propose a reflection on the relationship between the concept of Circular Economy - with its philosophical postulations - and the architectural field, which deals with compositional, typological and spatial issues of design. The translation into a more qualitative context opens to the challenge of determining building assessment systems capable of quantifying the efficiency and sustainability of the design processes. Setting up a theoretical background is a necessary prerequisite for creating a practical methodology for the reactivation of underused landscapes and will be developed in future steps of the research.

The scope of this reflection includes the architectural, urban and landscape heritage of fragile territories. It must be considered a theme of pressing interest; it tackles the design culture with the need to rethink principles, tools and practices in the light of new ethics and altered territorial conditions which now affect most of the world's geographical areas.

1. THE RESEARCH ON TERRITORIAL FRAGILITIES

The arguments studied in this paper are a fragment of broader ongoing research on territorial fragility[1] and, as a case study, the inland territories of the Italian Alps and Apennines. These areas (SNA[2]) constitute about three-fifths of the entire Italian territory and have extremely different characteristics. For the most part they are vast natural landscapes, away from large urban centre and services. For these reasons, these "neglected" rural regions become "fragile" and the conditions of marginalisation are further intensified by hydrogeological or seismic risks.

Nevertheless, they are places of great potential where development by combining innovation and tradition is possible. These are the places where communities have historically expressed themselves through a different relationship between urban dimension and territory, but today they are "hidden" spaces even if they hold a precious cultural heritage (Arcipelago Italia, Venice Biennale 2018). In these territories, it is possible to recognize numerous lines, natural or anthropic, which have determined in the past - and still today - the territorial morphology and development. In particular, the historical traces are a vibrant document able to recompose the complex framework of physical and cultural, commercial and artistic,

[1] The Department of Architecture and Urban Studies (DAStU) at Politecnico of Milan has been awarded 'excellence department' by the Italian Ministry of University and Research for the period 2018-2022. In these five years, the department has been exploring the complex and multiple phenomena that engendered processes of fragilisation of the relationship between space and society in the Italian inland territory. 16 post-doctoral fellows, 12 PhD students, groups of professors and scholars of international research centres, Italian administrative representatives are at work on the 'Territorial Fragility' project. The goal is to build methods and skills as a reference milestone on the fragility of inland areas in Italy and abroad.

[2] https://www.agenziacoesione.gov.it/strategia-nazionale-aree-interne/; https://www.miur.gov.it/documents/20182/890263/strategia_nazionale_aree_interne.pdf/d10fc111-65c0-4acd-b253-63efae626b19

political and economic connections of the places. Reading their historical watermark means understanding their material and immaterial physiognomy deposited in the territory with visible signs (Cucinella 2018). These marginal areas link environmental and productive territory with smaller urban centres. Inside, new dynamics have taken over, which have stratified and produced irreversible transformations. However, the acceleration and breakdown of the coevolution nexus between man and environment has in recent years increased profoundly the environmental crisis, exacerbated by a more marked abandonment of entire portions of the territory. On the one hand, the anthropic crises lead gradually to the creation of dense congested territories where the development centres are concentrated. On the other hand, increasingly empty territories are produced, where the negative effects of abandonment are concentrated (Teti 2017). Hence there is an irreconcilable double speed; man (and capitalism) consumes nature faster and faster resulting in a slower pace of regeneration. Capitalism, therefore, undermines the foundations of its own development (O'Connor 1991; Severino 2003).

Climate change, loss of biodiversity, hydrogeological instability, abandonment of territories and depopulation, become the protagonists of the Italian inner areas. To these, a population decrease and increasing consumption of soil in the marginal suburban area must be paradoxically added (Pileri 2017).

Considering the inevitable profound changes related to the modification of environmental, economic, socio-cultural and migratory flows for several decades, the issue of territorial fragility has taken on relevance within the academic debate. We underline that the size of the phenomenon is expanding within the European territory (the internal areas of Italy, or regions of Greece, Portugal or Spain), but also to "remote" territories such as India or Bangladesh, although characterised by a different scale of the place and other historical-cultural dynamics.

Commonly, all of these territories are the less strategic places, far from the most extensive urban agglomerations in which most of the world population is today concentrated, the polycentric areas of the provinces and the marginal lots of the urban peripheries where social contradictions are more radical.

Since the economic crisis of 2008, the urban agglomerations have been the main object of studies, analyses and proposals to get out of the critical conditions. The opposite point of view, instead, aims at focusing on those places which have such underlying dynamics within them and are able to activate new propulsive courses of development. In light of the current dependence between environment, economy and society, the marginal areas determine unique actions of resilience which can inspire new transformations (Tognon 2016). They are the privileged places of experimental freedom, where innovation leads to emancipation (Carrosio 2019). Even though the aspects of marginal territories have been investigated, in regard to their characteristics of transformative energy, since the 80s (Osti 1985, Gubert 1983), the inevitable interest in seeking new fertile land is now shifting from a concept of wealth based on income to one based on quality of life, where innovative fervours establish a new model of society.

In the words of Bell Hooks (1991) in order to stop the perception of the margin as a residual area, the intrinsic geometric dynamics must be overturned and considered as a sphere in which the maximum design potential is deployed. Metaphorically, it is necessary to activate an overturning process between scenery and core, to configure itself in hybrid implications.

Working on marginal territories becomes strategic also for those central places where acceleration is pervasive. This practice implies identifying new models of sustainable development. The reactivation of these places involves a rewriting of the urban and territorial

text where deletions and insertions of new writings have been made over time.
In a constantly changing reality, between concrete experience and collective vision, these places can activate virtuous processes of adaptation. In the following we will try to investigate how these processes can be increased by an overall rethinking of strategies in the light of Circular Economy principles.

2. CIRCULAR ECONOMY: MEANING AND ORIGINS

In the past decade, the concept of Circular Economy has become central in the future dynamics of new sustainable models for the economy. According to Ellen MacArthur Foundation, the Circular Economy is a restorative and regenerative model, relying on system-wide innovation. It aims to redefine products and services in order to design out waste and pollution and minimise negative impacts. The circular model builds economic, natural and social capital, keeping products and materials in use, and regenerating natural systems (Ellen MacArthur Foundation 2015).
The concept of Circular Economy came up when the professors David W. Pearce and R. Kerry Turner - pioneers of the environmental economics - asserted that the traditional economy was not opened to recycling and the world economy considered the environment as a waste reservoir (Pearce and Turner 1990).
In the light of these paradigms, the Circular Economy model answers as "restructuring the industrial systems to support ecosystems through the adoption of methods to maximise the efficient use of resources by recycling and minimising emissions and waste" (Preston 2012).
The industrial environment becomes conceptually regenerative and reproduces nature, actively improving and optimising the systems through which it operates (Rizos et al. 2015). The ambition of the model is to break with the current "linear" economic rationale of taking, making and arranging, which is creating business value only for its participants (Lacy and Rutqvist 2015). On the contrary, the creation of the 'circular' idea of economy is a radical and brilliant concept. As Hobson (2016) reports, the Circular Economy disjoints a schedule of consolidated systematic relationships that have produced the "unsustainability" that characterises the linear and contemporary forms of global capitalism.
According to the literature (Ellen MacArthur Foundation 2015; Rizos et al. 2015), four main principles related to Circular Economy can be summarised: to decrease waste by considering reuse from the design step, using renewable materials and energy, analysing feedback step by step to optimise the whole circuit of the production system, sharing the products among more users and prolonging their life through regular reuse, maintenance and repair.
Circularity has in fact been the master principle of nature since the beginning (Stahel 2019), when molecules have been used, dismantled and reused in several cycles. This capability permitted the environment to change the internal conditions by growing biodiversity and to develop new states. This idea has shaped the "cradle-to-cradle" design methodology (McDonough and Braungart 2002). In the book "Cradle to Cradle (...)" the authors claim that in the circular model, recycling is seen as downcycling, involving energy processes that still leads to a "slow death". Moreover, the new products made of recycled materials are smaller in volume and lower in terms of quality than the original ones.
The paradigms of C2C create fundamental principles for industrial design. Firstly "waste equals food" means that in nature, one organism's waste provides nutrients for other organisms. The second principle classifies several sources of natural energy (sun, wind, waves,) as renewable energy which can be genuinely refilled, as opposed

to "slowly" degraded sources or biomass commonly used for biofuel. In contrast, these sources of energy do not require the burning of biomass (Braungart 2013). The third principle involves understanding of natural biodiversity, addressing the knowledge of a healthy ecosystem. Drawing inspiration from ecological diversity, C2C underlines the importance of using local materials to create products congruent with the surrounding environment. Nature's diversity has become a model for increasing the positive effects on the local ecosystem (www.c2ccertified.org).
Consequently, the Circular Economy aims to create waste-free technical loops that resemble biological loops and make waste disappear at the same time as being restorative and regenerative by design. In these directions, the strategy adaptable by the UE to support the idea of sustainability is to improve the concept of repairability, durability and recyclability through product specifications. In this way, it is possible to control the potential planned obsolescence throughout the specific schedule, even created before the first existence of the object.

3. RECYCLE VS REUSE

In architectural and urban regeneration projects, multiple methodologies are required for the construction of strategic approaches. Defining *new lifecycles*, avoiding the tactic of recycling, down-cycle and linear economy, where the logic of programmatic obsolescence is fixed (Latouche 2012), means eliminating the "waste" – as a concept and physical element - during the design steps.
The concepts of "Circular", "Recycle", "Cycle of Life" are linked by common denominators. On one hand, the idea of circularity - the geometric circle - is assumed both as a process and a characteristic of what is - precisely – circular. On the other hand, the concept of cyclic nature is the character of what returns, that has no beginning and no end, escaping the idea of linearity and tending to the geometric circle.
However, these terms present significant differences when their use, in economic disciplines and social practices, takes shape and assumes the role of a paradigm capable of defining a sphere of actions animated by specific principles and purposes. In particular, between the "circular", proper to the economy, and the "recycling", proper to effective practices, it may perhaps be said that the two terms are, in substance, opposed. (Bovati, Cozza 2014)
As we already mentioned, the concept of Circular Economy is inspired by the observation of nature, which is based on closed cycles and can reintegrate waste into new processes, without using additional energy and eliminating junk production. Two seminal books set the theme: "The Closing Circle: Nature, Man, and Technology" (Barry Commoner 1971) defined the postulations, and the already mentioned "Cradle to Cradle: Remaking the Way We Make Things" (McDonough and Braungart 2002) figured out its application to the design field. These were followed - in addition to the definition of the principle - by a series of essays showing its possible applications to different fields of human action.
Conversely, "recycling" is a practice - even virtuous - which is based on the transformation of waste to reuse it for purposes even very different from the original. Recycling implies two aspects: the existence of waste - as a base material for the transformation action - and the wasting of significant amounts of energy to be used in transformation processes. Also, the result is the creation of objects planned for a fairly short life cycle, until their consequential return to the sphere of garbage (unless significant efforts of energy are invested for further recycling). This is considered a linear type of process, even though the "cycle" concept is contained in the word.

For this reason, we quote Circular Economy and Recycling as opposites and antithetic. The first is aimed at eliminating the precise idea of waste and, contrariwise, the second needs waste to build an admittedly linear process, rather consistent with the mechanism of planned obsolescence (Latouche 2012). Paradoxically, the more virtuous recycling is, the more it belongs to the economy of uncontrolled consumption, offering partial solutions to the waste problem.
Therefore, reuse is preferable to recycling, in other words it is the idea of being able to give new meaning and new use to objects, preserving them as much as possible in their original form, without great transformative efforts, if not minimal maintenance. In this context, the importance of design appears evident, a crucial moment to define their form and therefore, the actual possibility of reuse.

4. CIRCULAR ECONOMY, ARCHITECTURAL DESIGN AND URBAN REGENERATION

In the debate between the urban regeneration process and the principles of Circular Economy - as synergies for promoting resilience, creativity and sustainability – we move the concept from a sectoral approach (waste management, etc.) to the whole organisation of the city. Accordingly, the circular process invests the economy, social system and governance to improve the whole urban productivity (Fusco Girard 2013).
As specified in the "New Urban Agenda" (United Nations 2016), the Circular Economy model appears as a radical approach to control the existing resources such as land, water, energy, materials and food, and the key to solving the problems connected with greenhouse gases emission and air pollution.
In the architectural field, it is crucial to evaluate the environmental impact and sustainability of new architectures, and the common aims are the evolution to a Circular Economy facilitating ecosystem conservation, restoration, regeneration and resilience in the face of new challenges emerging. In particular, the Circular Economy paradigm can play a virtuous role according to urban heritage conservation principles (Ellen MacArthur Foundation. Cities in the Circular Economy: An Initial Exploration. 2017). Opening the circular model to the urban context, the paradigms of leasing, reusing, repairing and recycling, are switched from a precise heritage vision to an overall historic urban landscape evaluation (Bandarin, Pereira 2019). The Historic Urban Landscape (HUL) approach promoted by UNESCO (Unesco. Recommendation on the Historic Urban Landscape, including a Glossary of Definitions, 2011), emphasises the systemic interrelation between the economic, human natural and cultural capitals and the inherent complexity of any intervention aimed at transforming the urban setting.
In the light of the discussion about fragile territories, the historical layering of cultural and natural values, beyond the notion of an urban centre to include the broader context and natural surroundings, becomes crucial.
Looking at the Italian territory, since the 70's, some examples of regeneration projects can represent a new approach of reactivation for villages and their surrounding territories. A set of (re)enhancement actions carried out in contexts characterised by processes of territorial fragility (e.g. depopulation, hydrogeological risk, seismic, etc.), and by heritage landmarks - even minor - are taken as a reference framework. The context scale goes from the group of buildings to the largest settlement, not focusing on the single building but working on a medium scale, which allows rethinking the design of the built and open space in symbiosis.
From these starting conditions, some specific cases seem significant enough to be mentioned along with this paper, even if they are not considered best practice *tout court*, or may be implemented.
Some practical interventions for the spatial, economic, settlement recovery, requalification

and re-launching of minor towns in the Italian inland are significant examples to quote. An essential factor to be underlined is the upgrading modality for relaunching, which involved individual villages or landmarks ("points action"), creation of paths, which relaunch a territory ("lines action") and physical or thematic reticular relationships ("grid action") (Bonfantini 2016).
Following this classification, among the specific interventions, we can cite some of the several cases that since the 70s have seen tourism as a possible strategy to reactivate the territory, in particular abandoned historical centres known for their architectural beauty.
Through the practice called "Albergo Diffuso" villages such as Montegridolfo, Civita di Bagnoregio, Santo Stefano di Sessanio, have been involved in restoration and conservation project for hospitality purposes. This prototype has led to the dissemination of this practice in ever more numerous contexts.
The same example was followed by the "ecovillages", the artists' villages, which were created following the enthusiasm for new "communities of practice" and new lifestyles. This is the case of Craco (Calabria), which has been revitalised for cultural and creative purposes. The regeneration of the abandoned town of Colletta di Castelbianco (Liguria), started in the 90s by Giancarlo De Carlo, becomes even more emblematic for the creation of a community of remote workers thanks to the creation of an IT network. This case should be emphasised as a precursor for possible solutions for the health crisis.
There are also examples that have focused on **economic and social aspects**, such as Riace, which has seen an interesting relaunch through a significant process of social integration of foreign ethnic minorities, a problem of particular importance for the Italian territory.
A similar approach follows the linear regeneration strategies, which are based on the construction/recognition of cultural values through routes and itineraries, where the path is related to specific elements (e.g. the vineries' roads, the abandoned railways, ...)
It must be assumed that the issue of the abandonment of villages - till the final stage as a ghost town - and territories is the result of economic, social, and cultural reasons of a region in its complexity and is linked to large-scale political problems.
However, the above paradigmatic typologies represent a starting point from which to build new regenerative strategies, while not fully responding to the idea of intervention consistent with the CE paradigm.

5. OVERTURE: REUSE OF ABANDONMENT SITES

The fundamental difference between the examples of reuse observed above and the cases cited from the past is that the latter are not the result of an intentional reuse project, but an intrinsic and spontaneous practice. The challenge for the present and the future is to understand how to design a circular process of reuse today for tomorrow.
Therefore, in the scenario described up to this point, the theme of "Design for Reuse" seems to play a central role; the design phase should lay the grounds for possible reuse and for extending the life of the building. This idea is not close to the concept of generic flexibility, but should tend to come closer to an idea of resilience[3] and adaptivity[4] of the architectural form. Indeed, if designed with attention to the specific qualities of the very space that gives an identity to it, architecture makes it easier to reuse, and uses it better, even after having fulfilled what it was created for.

[3] Adaptive: capable of adaptation, which is able to adapt.
[4] In psychology, resilience is a concept that indicates the ability to cope positively with traumatic events, to reorganise one's life positively in the face of difficulties, to rebuild oneself by remaining sensitive to the positive opportunities that life offers, without alienating one's identity. (Cit. Wikipedia) In architecture, the translated sense of resilience could be understood as the ability of an architectural organism to be reorganised in the face of a sudden change of purpose and function, without alienating its own identity.

As already mentioned, recycling derives from the necessity to invest a great deal of energy to ensure a new lifecycle as a result of complex transformations. Reuse, on the other hand, is understood as the ability of things to satisfy different purposes, allowing for multiple uses during their life, without entailing high costs that would nullify the overall ecological balance of the process.
This justifies giving priority to the concept of reuse because it takes root in the principles of Circular Economy, which maximise the intensive use in the life of things. Moreover, it is suitable with two of the "3R" (Reduce-Reuse), and with the need for separation between biological and technical flows. A first practical indication should go to the proposal of creativity through scarcity or "Bounded design", in analogy with the concept of "Bounded rationality" (Simon 1957). Moreover, technological efficiency, building architectures and spaces characterised to identity, quality and a good capacity to settle in the collective consciousness has to be guaranteed. In this way, they can become an active part in the composition of the urban landscape, and be equally adaptive at the same time (i.e. able to lend themselves to different uses without massive transformation or refurbishment costs).
Faced with the objectives implied by the theme formulated, further development of research is represented by the idea that the principles of the Circular Economy can become an integral part of the design process, also and above all, in contexts characterised by phenomena of territorial fragility and architectural heritage, for which reuse processes will begin hopefully. In the end, the question of materials, construction techniques and restoration methods returns, but this is part of a larger scenario in the regeneration processes.

WAY FORWARD

Declination of the abovementioned principle in the architectural field, and in particular of the design approaches on heritage, must necessarily deal with the degree of transformability of the existing artefact, with its scope of reuse, with the conditions of the buildings, and with the level of obsolescence and the degrees of constraint.
The design of new buildings, as well as redevelopment of existing ones, should be grounded in a thinking form capable of forecasting successive life cycles. This can be achieved, considering the requirement of finding the technical and waste management responses side by side. Furthermore, it is required to translate the paradigms of the Circular Economy both technologically (from performance quantity to spatial quality) and on a scalar level (from the architectural artefact to the set of buildings).
Along with this thought, there is a significant theme linked to the typological and spatial redevelopment of buildings and open spaces. The ambition of this thesis is that the reuse tactics can preserve the heritage elements on which design strategies are being applied.
However, at the same time, it is necessary to establish transformative practices and design processes which define future scenarios at different scales of fragile contexts, opening the theme of sustainability to the paradigms of circularity.
First, a poor definition of spatial qualities and cultural identity creates low architectural value in the artifact as a consequence, and a weak capacity to take root in the community, resulting in its death as the first life cycle ends. Otherwise, a valuable architecture, designed with great observation to spatial qualities, can easily be "inhabited" for a long time, with uses similar or not to the original. Indeed, we are conscious that it will not be adaptable to all functions, but we must ask ourselves whether

generality, or even neutrality, is the necessary condition for a long-term architecture. Historical experience shows us something different. A house, well designed, can easily be converted to similar uses and for a very long time, adapting - as many architectures of the past - to the social and spatial changes that affect the theme of the residence, office space, the institution building and so on. The same could be considered for a public building, a museum, a school, a barracks or a hospital.

Secondly, materials and construction technologies can have expensive maintenance processes. The typological-spatial qualities, the value of the work and its role in the relationship with the city, will determine its conditions of survival. A low valuable building commonly imposes a maintenance process much more expensive than a simple demolition and reconstruction. On the other hand, a valuable architecture, designed for being reused, will incorporate the circular principles into the project solutions.

Therefore, we want to stress that we are not talking about material cycles, with their degradation, partial or integral substitutability, but we are underlining the functional cycles. This interpretation on conceiving a new life for abandoned places puts within the scope of Circular Economy the spatial, formal, and functional aspects of architecture, as part of a strategy that embraces the topics of temporality and durability of the building. Durability, linked to the architectural value and role, is the key that sets specific conditions for sustainability: lasting over time is a consequence of building quality, as well as the cost of its maintenance. The characteristics of typological and spatial design - linked to the value and urban role of a building - and technological and structure - conditions of costs and durability - are inextricably linked. They combine a scenario in which architecture is merged with the principles of circular economy, according to a complex system of factors.

REFERENCES

AAVV. 2017. *Aree Interne. Per una rinascita dei territori rurali e montani.* Soveria Mannelli: Rubbettino.

Bandarin, F., Pereira, A. 2019. *Reshaping Urban Conservation. The Historic Urban Landscape Approach in Action*. Berlin: Springer.

Bateson, G. 1972. *Steps to an Ecology of Mind,* New York: Chandler

Bonfantini, B. 2016. *Attivare risorse latenti. Metodi sperimentali per l'analisi, la mappatura e la gestione informativa integrata delle trasformazioni di territori e manufatti del patrimonio culturale diffuso.* Roma-Milano: Planum Publisher.

Borghi, E. 2017. *Piccole Italie. Le aree interne e la questione territoriale.* Roma: Donzelli Editore.

Bovati, M., Cozza, C. 2014, "Cycle vs Re-cycle", in: Marini, S., Rosselli, S. C., *Op-position I*, Quaderni Re-cycle 6, Roma: Aracne Editrice.

Braungart, M. 2013. *Waste to energy*. https://www.catalystreview.net/2010/02/cradle-to-cradle-transitioning-from-waste-incineration-to-beneficial-materials/ [accessed on 09.02.2020]

Carrosio, G. 2019, *I margini al centro. L'Italia delle aree interne tra fragilità e innovazione,* Roma: Donzelli Editore.

Cucinella, M. 2018. *Arcipelago Italia.* Macerata: Quodlibet.

Ellen MacArthur Foundation (2015), *Growth within: a circular economy vision for a competitive Europe*, www.ellenmacarthurfoundation.org [accessed on 17.02.2020]

Ellen MacArthur Foundation. *Cities in the Circular Economy: An Initial Exploration. 2017.* Available online: https://www.ellenmacarthurfoundation.org/publications/cities-in-the-circular-economy-an-initial-exploration [accessed on 28.02.2020

Ferracuti, A. 2016. *Addio. il romanzo della fine del lavoro.* Milano: Chiarelettere.

Fusco Girard, L. 2010. "Sustainability, creativity, resilience: toward new development strategies of port areas through evaluation processes". *International Journal of Sustainable Development*, vol. 13, n. 1-2, pp. 161-184.

Fusco Girard, L. 2013. "Toward a smart sustainable development of port cities/areas: The role of the "Historic Urban Landscape approach". *Sustainability,* vol. 5, n. 10, pp. 4329- 4348.

Gubert, R. 1983. *Ruralità e marginalità. Tre aree alpine a confronto*. Milano: Franco Angeli.

Hobson, K. 2016. "Closing the loop or squaring the circle? Locating generative spaces for the circular economy". *Progress in Human Geography* 40 (1): 88-104.

Hooks, B. 1991. *Elogio del margine.* Milano: Feltrinelli (1998).

ICOMOS 2011. *Guidance on Heritage Impact Assessments for Cultural World Heritage Properties*

Lacy, P. and Rutqvist, J. 2015. *Waste to wealth: The circular economy advantage.* Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan.

Latouche, S. 2012. *Bon pour la casse: Les déraisons de l'obsolescence programmée.* Paris: Les liens qui libèrent.

McDonough, W. and Braungart, M. 2002. *Cradle to Cradle: Remaking the Way We Make Things,* New York: North Point Press.

Meloni, B. (Edited by). 2016. *Aree interne e progetti d'area*. Torino: Rosenberg & Sellier.

O'Connor, J. 1991. "On the two Contradictions of Capitalism", in *Capitalism Nature Socialism*, II, 3, pp. 107-9.

Osti, G. 1985. "L'imprenditorialità marginale in un'area agricola alpina". in *Sociologia urbana e rurale*. 16. pp. 131-46

Pearce, D., Turner, R. K. 1990. *Economics of natural resources and the environment*. Baltimora: Johns Hopkins University Press.
Pearce, D.W., Turner, R. K. 1991, *Economics of natural resources and the environment*. American Journal of Agricultural Economics 73(1).
Pileri, P. 2017. "Persistente ed inefficiente: così è il consumo di suolo nel Paese". in Ispra. *Consumo di suolo, dinamiche territoriali e servizi ecosistemici*. Edizione 2017. Roma: Ispra. pp. 160-1.
Preston, F. 2012. "A Global Redesign? Shaping the Circular Economy". *Chatam House Briefing paper*, n. 2, pp. 1-20.
Rizos, V., Behrens, A., Kafyeke, T., Hirschnitz-Garbers M. and Ioannou A. 2015. "The Circular Economy: Barriers and Opportunities for SMEs". CEPS Working Document, n. 412, pp. 1-22. Rockström, J., Klum M. 2015. *Big World, Small Planet*. New Haven: Yale University Press.
Severino, E. 2003. *Tecnica e architettura*. Milano: Raffaello Cortina Editore.
Simon, H. 1957. "A Behavioral Model of Rational Choice", in: Simon, H. *Models of Man, Social and Rational: Mathematical Essays on Rational Human Behavior in a Social Setting*. New York: Wiley.
Stahel, W. I. 2019. *The Circular Economy: A User's Guide*. Abingdon: Routledge. Talamo, C., Migliore, M. 2017. *L'utilità dell'inutile*. Santarcangelo di Romagna: Maggioli.
Teti, V. 2017. *Quel che resta, L'italia dei paesi, tra abbandoni e ritorni*. Roma: Donzelli Editore.
Tognon, A. 2016. *Architetture attraverso il tempo. Progetto, memoria, trasformazione*. Phd Thesis in Architecture and Urban Design, XXVII cycle, Politecnico di Milano.
Unesco. *Recommendation on the Historic Urban Landscape, Including a Glossary of Definitions*, 2011.

PAPER #3.07

BINCKHORST: A PALIMPSEST OF ARCHITECTURAL LIVES

Angeliki Sioli[a], Willemijn Wilms Floet[a], Pierre Jennen[a]
[a]Delft University of Technology, Delft, Netherlands

ABSTRACT

Engaging the example of the course "Binckhorst: A Palimpsest of Architectural Lives"—a master level design studio—this paper addresses issues of cohabitation and coexistence between past and current actors, activities and programs in Binckhorst, The Hague. It discusses explorative methodologies of analysis and design, that aim to create innovative and anchored urban interventions for the transformation of post-industrial landscapes. Binckhorst is an exemplary case-study to this regard. Home to a 14th century Castle, a 1920s cemetery, 1950s-60s heavy industry buildings and empty offices, postmodern housing projects and contemporary refugee settlements, it currently witnesses an accelerated change. Small-scale creative industries, event venues and apartment buildings transform and redefine its architectural identity. Moreover, Binckhorst's strategic location next to the city's center and a major train station, has attracted the interest of local and international architects, planners and developers.

The course "Binckhorst: A Palimpsest of Architectural Lives" engages the students with this rich context and guides them to develop design methods where the old and the new can be actively part of the area's new blooming. Through innovative site analysis assignments, personal interactions with the area's actual actors, careful and in-depth study of the Binckhorst's heritage, a precise selection of The Hague housing typologies, and the employment of bottom-up design methodologies, the studio advocates for a pedagogical approach in which the knowledge acquired from the analysis informs every step in the design process. The studio follows a structured sequence of three phases: "Description," "Transcription," "Prescription" (Havik, 2014) ensuring the constant interweaving between analysis and design. It culminates in a big-scale housing project that needs to incorporate the area's past and present layers and suggest architectural propositions that envision a future for the co-existence between the old and the new.

A thorough presentation of the studio's theoretical context, the methodological framework, the topics and parameters of investigation along with selected student's examples, will unpack in detail the pedagogical topics addressed by this studio and suggest possible courses of action for architectural education.

KEYWORDS

Post-industrial landscape; typology; lived space; urban analysis; urban literacy.

INTRODUCTION

Scope of this paper is to discuss and analyze a pedagogical methodology for design in post-industrial urban areas. As an educational approach it partakes from the philosophical and architectural discourse that values place, the lived experience of this place, and the place's local characteristics both at the scale of the site and the city. It advocates that, although the globalization and digitalization of everyday life has led to

less place-bound architectural practices or human interactions, "getting back into place"[1] is a crucial position for a meaningful and long-term revitalization of urban landscapes. As a pedagogy it guides students to investigate the richness embedded in a given topos (place) and include in their work its actors, users, prevalent culture and underlying history in order to ensure that old and new spatial conditions can interact creatively and prosperously. This pedagogical methodology is implemented and examined in the case study of a studio course—taught during the fall semester of 2019—that challenged students to imagine the revitalization of Binckhorst. Binckhorst is a post-industrial and rapidly transforming area in the city of The Hague, Netherlands, where historical, cultural and social elements have impressed a strong mark on space. The studio consisted of twenty (20) international master level students, and was taught simultaneously by two architectural instructors and one building-technology instructor. We, as instructors, met the students for in-person education a whole day (eight hours) once a week, during the course of twenty (20) weeks. In these weekly meetings selective guests ran short workshops (on topics like narrative techniques, circular economy, comfort and discomfort in architecture) and offered constructive feedback as the students were developing their work. In between the weekly meetings the students were instructed to follow specific lectures in relation to the topics under examination, offered by the Faculty's Lecture Series, while also conduct site and bibliographical research. Through the specific case-study we wish to discuss explorative approaches of analysis and design, that aim to create site-specific and experience-anchored urban interventions for housing programs. Instead of advocating for the replacement of the industrial business—as often happens under the pressure of the housing market—we asked the students to develop projects that ensure the co-existence of new and existing programs in the place. Aligned with the conference's thematic, "The new faces the old," the studio led to design proposals where "the different physical and cultural layers that have built our cities can live together in harmony." In short, "Binckhorst: A palimpsest of architectural lives," invested in a close and multilayered reading of place, proceeded with imaginative and unconventional interpretations of this reading, and culminated in a housing design project that negotiated the creative interweaving between existing and new spatial relationships.

1. THE CASE STUDY

1.1. The intellectual context

In developing the studio, we took the freedom to explore and combine two main positions in relation to place: a typological (formal, artifact centered) and a phenomenological (linguistic, human centered) one. Both positions question the notion of place and place-making in developing meaningful, site specific projects, although starting from what appear to be two opposite ends. Following the Italian historian Giulio Argan, we believe that an exploratory and analytical study on typologies—designed and built according to a determined architectural position—could be an important step in the development of new types in relation to the characteristics of a given place. The emphasis is not on copying the past, but rather on finding ways to carefully maneuver between the richness of architectural historical knowledge and contemporary spatial questions (Argan 2007, 157). Based on a similar approach, architectural

[1] *Getting Back Into Place* is the title of the philosophical work by professor Edward E. Casey, a dominant voice in the discourse for the importance of place in architectural design. Published in 1999, *Getting Back Into Place: Toward a Renewed Understanding of the Place-World* marked a significant moment in the renewed (as the title clearly states) interest in place for architecture. With three chapters dedicated exclusively to architectural topics, the work discusses the significant role that local environments and place-specific design techniques can play in architectural practice. Given that for the vast majority of the 20th Century architects disregarded place, culture or even history, the book was a significant call for action at the turn of the 21st Century.

theoretician Antonio Monestiroli argues that a design project should combine communal and continuous general characteristics, with the specificities related to given site conditions (Monestiroli 2005, 32). Including in the analysis the notion of typology, offers the opportunity to organically anchor a new project in an existing city, which is another way to address the project's sustainability and longevity. Engaging further the discourse on place, our studio followed a phenomenological and experiential connection to place; an emphasis on how space is actually lived by its users and experienced by its inhabitants. Henry Lefebvre and his notion of "lived space," as unpacked in his seminal work The Production of Space, urges us to focus on the dimensions of space that can be heard, touched, seen and even smelled: to study spaces as they are lived. In other words, to question what role spaces play in the lives of their users and inhabitants, how space features in their thoughts, minds and memories (Lefebvre 1974, 84). Juhani Pallasmaa has expanded this philosophical thinking into architecture, through his homonymous essay "Lived Space: Embodied Experience and Sensory Thought." Pallasmaa discusses the importance of sensorial perception of place, the role of the body in space, and of course the fact that "lived space is structured on the basis of meanings and values reflected on it by the individual or groups" that inhabit it (Pallasmaa 2005, 129). Theoretician Alberto Pérez-Gómez, following this phenomenological tradition, furthermore warns us that architecture nowadays cannot be blindfolded by technological or engineering demands, without a careful connection of these demands to lived place. In his most recent work *Attunement: Architectural Meaning After the Crisis of Modern Science* he specifically argues that:

> Ecologically responsible buildings and sustainable cities do not in themselves connect us to a meaningful life; (…) The issue is cultural sustainability, our ever-sought ambition to peacefully co-exist with others on a shared living planet (Pérez-Gómez 2016, 232-233).

This observation is of particular value to our educational approach, as our architectural studio had a pedagogical particularity. It was taught simultaneously by both architectural and building technology professors, bringing into the conversation questions of construction, structure, environmental issues and environmental impact from the very beginning. The interest in sustainability and circularity, a big conversation in architecture nowadays, was an important element of the studio, but it was discussed within the theoretical context unpacked above and in which the studio was based.

1.2. The physical context

Binckhorst is a rough and non-curated palimpsest of distinctively different architectural buildings and identities. Its historic 14th Century Castle—the very first building of the area—functions currently as a plastic surgery clinic. A 19th Century gas factory, which heavily polluted the soil during its operation, is now transformed into a workshops-lab. Modern structures of glass and metal have been added to accommodate the growing needs of a 1920s cemetery. The 1950s-60s heavy industry buildings and offices are re-appropriated by small scale creative industries, often run by people with a special commitment to the area and its community. Postmodern office buildings converted in housing projects are adjusted (many times by the owners themselves) to accommodate a 21st Century lifestyle. The former landmark aircraft-production school is transformed into a social-events venue, without changes to its exterior façade. Printing industries and former government services have left the site and the buildings they used to occupy remain empty. Automobile businesses, with a long presence in the place, continue functioning, along with many building-construction firms. A garbage

collection center covering the needs of the city of the Hague—and emitting a strongly unpleasant smell around it—along with several recycling firms are fully functioning on a daily basis. Refugee settlements are added in between all the above programs, while at the same time many big vacant plots attract the interest of local and international architects, planners and developers. The area's strategic location close to the city's center and the country's national agenda for the addition of 1.000.000 homes until 2040, are the main reasons behind the strong renewed interest in the Binckhorst. This rich, almost surreal, conglomeration of architectural and cultural identities, is surrounded by water canals, as water in the area (and the country in general) is still used both for industrial and recreational purposes.

1.3. The educational context

Framed within the theoretical context already presented above, the aim of our studio was to develop new housing-typologies with interconnected social programs, so as to transform the post-industrial Binckhorst into a sustainable, high-density, mixed working-living environment. To this end, the studio asked the students to address four main questions:
1. What kind of housing typologies and which public programs are needed for the future of Binckhorst?
2. How could existing industrial buildings get incorporated into new design interventions?
3. How can the new Binckhorst transform into a sustainable (circular) and inclusive society, becoming also an integral part of the city of The Hague?
4. What would the new identity of the area be?
The intention of our studio was to work towards a culturally and environmentally sustainable future urban Binckhorst, through an educational frame that urged students to take a clear position in a pressing contemporary problem, encountered in many urban environments around the world.

2. METHODOLOGY

Given the focus on the local character of place, the interest in a phenomenological approach to architectural design and the urban nature of the area of study, we valued relevant to experiment with the pedagogical methodology proposed by architect and educator Klaske Havik in her book Urban Literacy: *Reading and Writing Architecture* (2014). Havik's work synthesizes creatively many of the theoretical positions that have formed the core of our pedagogical philosophy. Her ideas emerge from the notion of Lefebvre's "lived space," touch on phenomenology and prioritize place and local particularities, like typology, atmosphere and narratives. The book suggests a methodology based on three consecutive modes of action: "Description," "Transcription," and "Prescription". These were the modes we followed in structuring our studio.

2.1. Description

Emerging from the definition of the very verb *describe* (…), Havik reinforces the conviction that "to be able to describe, be it in text or in drawing (…), one has to be able to observe, and to perceive an object in all its complexity" (Havik 2014, 38). To understand spaces and places, "and to understand how we 'live' them, one should start by closely observing them, by identifying their spatial characteristics, as well as their atmosphere and the activities and trajectories of their inhabitants" (Havik 2014, 38). Our Binckhorst studio emerged indeed from a systematic and meticulous study of place.[2] Through dedicated weekly assignments the students explored the history of the area's

[2] The area was specifically chosen because it could be easily accessible by the students any time during the semester.

development, the history of its architecture, the place's physical elements and materiality, the immaterial characteristics and the prevalent atmospheres. The assignments were designed to cultivate the students' observational as well as creative skills. Observations and analysis about Binckhorst had to be synthesized in imaginative and creative ways to be communicated in class. Engaging the place's history for example and examining old habits and customs that influenced space and its appropriation, the students experimented with drawings that like palimpsests incorporated aspects from different time periods. Elements and activities from the past appeared in different and complementary directions on the same surface, literally layering on the same drawing many different temporalities (Fig. 1).

Figure 1. The different temporalities of Binckhorst. Source: (Aga Kús 2019)

Mapping activities captured physical and immaterial elements of Binckhorst, as they appear interwoven in the real experience of lived space. The students proceeded with hard and soft mapping pairings in order to communicate the atmospheres that some of the physical spatial elements impress on the area. How do specific programs create vibrant environments around them for example? How do social networks (that is a non-architectural element) appear and transform space? Examples on urban and architectural mapping and readings on the topic deepened students' comprehension on the nature of these assignments. Precedent studies both through drawings and *in-situ* visits led to a deep knowledge of apartment typologies with a long history in the city of The Hague. Conversations with the current inhabitants and recordings of their activities and social interactions further enabled a close reading of the Binckhorst. Building-technology exercises on circularity and sustainability pointed out the current difficulties of the area and the possibilities for improvement and change. Each week the findings of the different explorations on "Description" were discussed extensively in class and shared among all the course participants. At the end of the "Description" stage the group compiled a collective Binckhorst Atlas, to be used as a formative guide throughout the following stages.

2.2. Transcription

Following the mode of "Description," *Urban Literacy* focuses on the use and social parameters of a place. It introduces the mode of "Transcription". This methodological stage "departs from the observation that architecture is influenced by social practices, and that even so, architecture, by giving space to people's environment, has its influence on social behavior" (Havik 2014, 93). Based on" the commonly used meaning of transcription as 'to write a version of something,' or 'to write in different medium; transliterate,' (Havik 2014, 94) *Urban Literacy* discusses the necessity of literary strategies for architectural design. How can narratives for example help us feel what it means to be in the place. The importance of narratives for architecture has in recent decades been argued for by many architectural educators.[3] Professor Anca Matyiku in her article "Architecture Drawn Out of Bruno Schulz's Poetic Prose" for example, starts from the observation that architectural design is an act of fiction (exploring fictive possibilities that eventually condense into built environments)

[3] For more see: Sioli, A., Jung, Y., 2018. "Introduction," in Reading Architecture: Literary Imagination and Spatial Experience. New York; London: Routledge

and proves with her work how fiction, narrative, literary and poetic constructs can be valuable tools in the creative process that leads to architecture (Matyiku 2018, 114-115).

With these theoretical underpinnings guiding the stage of "Transcription," we proceeded with a three-week assignment titled "The Many Narratives of Binckhorst." We experimented with literary techniques to imagine people's interactions and inhabitants' activities in the area. We asked the students to write narratives that explore how it feels to inhabit one of the buildings in the area. We asked them to "inhabit" their precedent studies and produce architectural drawings that emphasize the elements they captured with their narratives. We encouraged them to work with graphic novels and story boards that investigated daily rituals and habits in space.

Concluding this stage, we asked the students to imagine and work with fictional characters. In groups of four, the students had to conceive of three characters at the figurative scales of 1:20, 1:200 and 1:2000. The first character (scale 1:20) had to be someone with limited social interactions in the area, an inhabitant knowing approximately twenty (20) neighbors. The second character (scale 1:200) had to interact with approximately two hundred (200) people in Binckhorst (being the owner of a small bar or a small industry for example), while the third character had to be someone who interacts with approximately two thousand (2000) people in the area (like a city counselor that works on the current transformation of Binckhorst or an artist with an active Instagram account for workshops and performances in Binckhorst for example). Departing from these characters and their individual stories—which the students imagined, wrote, revised and shared with their peers—the assignment culminated with the creation of a device that propagated random and unforeseen interactions among these characters—as is usually the case in real life. The example of "Binckhorst's Wundercamera" was one of these devices. The group of students, inspired by the idea of a wundercamera, a box of wonders, created a box with slides. The slides included information based on four categories: stories and habits of the characters, slides with historical moments of the area, slides capturing characteristic landmarks of Binckhorst, and slides with atmospheric aspects. Random and spontaneous arrangements of the various slides could lead to new interconnections and activities in place. The "Binckhorst Wundercamera" was an open-ended device, as the students' intention was to add new slides in the future (following the rapid transformation of Binckhorst) or remove existing slides if they were not capturing the identity of the place any more (Fig. 2). With the stage of "Transcription" completed, the studio moved to the third and last mode, that of "Prescription".

Figure 2. Binckhorst's Wundercamera. Source: (Rachel Mein, Chloë Oosterwoud, Sofia Pavlova, William Shaw 2019)

2.3. Prescription

"Prescription" was meant to lead to a design with a critical position for the future of Binckhorst. As Havik points out, "prescription can be translated as 'to write before', thus to outline the contours of a not yet existing spatial reality—this is, to imagine a future reality" (Havik 2004, 149). Though, an important point needs to be clarified here. "Prescription," as she says should "by no means be understood as a recipe of which the effect is already known—on the contrary, precisely the unknown character of a future

world is at stake here" (…) grounded on the delicate balance between reality and imagination, and the possibility of taking a critical position (Havik 2014, 149-150). Indeed, the studio asked for a critical position towards a project incorporating housing and social programs in the area. No more requirements were added, apart from the constant reminder to learn from and build on the knowledge acquired during the analysis stages. Students were required to combine living with programs and activities they thought appropriate for the place, necessary for its future, and related with its current condition and its inhabitants. They had to design apartments for life-styles connected to the revitalization of the area, while also inspired by the existing architectural housing typologies. The students had to select the location of their project in Binckhorst as no plot was specified by us, they had to decide on the number of apartments and houses they thought appropriate to add with their project, they had to advocate for the necessity of additional programs in the area, and they had to demonstrate how and why their proposal is appropriate for the existing character of the place and can lead to a sustainable future. The final proposals varied from apartment buildings with urban farms, educational programs, libraries, community centers and commercial activities.

3. OUTCOMES

3.1. Sitopia: A slow food commune

Student Sofia Pavlova studied in detail the distribution of food in Binckhorst during the mode of "Description." She discovered that many social and impromptu interactions happen during lunch time, in ways that influence the development of the area. Many urban furniture appears in Binckhorst to facilitate eating together (from benches to urban picnic tables) and many small and bigger restaurants start occupying former industrial buildings. The area's existing buildings also prioritize eating, and many new firms incorporate big open kitchens in their offices. During the "Description" mode, she also studied the communal living in the famous *hofjes* (courtyards surrounded by small private residences usually for older women) of the Hague. Moving to the "Transcription" mode she studied the movements of "Slow Eating" and the many emerging urban farms, around cities of the world. She created imaginative narratives anchored around the social aspect of eating. As she proceeded with the "Transcription" she advocated for the necessity to "gather more around the table, as a community, as neighbors, as citizens." She worked towards the creation of a *sitopia*, a word inspired by the Greek words *σίτος* (sitos), which means crop, and *τόπος* (topos), which means place. Her project touched on the many communal activities witnessed in the area, and the emergence of a group of young professionals who prioritize a healthy life style, value access to fresh ingredients and are committed to understand how food is produced and consumed. Her final design project, which emerged from the re-appropriation of an old industrial building, consisted of an apartment complex by the water front, combined with a program for fish farming, vegetable cultivation and poultry growing (Fig. 3). Her building was designed to provide fresh food for the immediate dwellers but also bring together the broader community of the Binckhorst and the Hague through seminars on food education and hands-on workshops on cooking. The emphasis on the social aspect of food, guided also the design of the apartments. The dwelling units were designed so that movable divisions could open up—according to the inhabitants will—the individual kitchens to the building's communal areas, allowing for neighbors to literally cook together while they inhabit their apartment. Moreover, two main atria—where the main vertical circulation takes place—were

designed to allow the sharing of food and "coming around the table" opportunities for the community of the building. Thus, the project suggested a new future for the area, based on the lively social network of the neighborhood it was located, the possibility for low energy fulfillment of many of our daily needs, the care for circularity and the interest in a lifestyle much more communal and social.

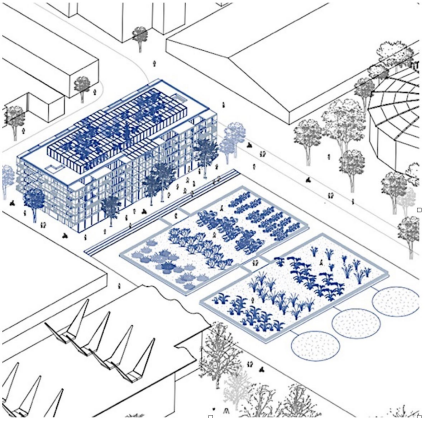


Figure 3. Sitopia in Binckhorst. Source: (Sofia Pavlova 2020)

3.2. Making the Living: Hybrid high-rise

Maarten van Blokland developed an unconventional proposal emerging from a critical and radical position on Binckhorst's current transitional phase. As he observed during the stage of "Description," the existing small and medium scale entrepreneurs and industries—which produce goods and offer services for the wider area of The Hague—run the risk to disappear from the area. Developers and investment companies seem to aim for high-rise apartment buildings for the future of the Binckhorst, as a way to cover the high demand for housing. While working on the "Transcription" phase, Maarten created characters based on interviews with many professionals in the area. That led him to suggest a radical co-habitation of living and working environments. His design proposal advocated for the absolute extinction of commute time and space, by creating high-rises that bring apartments and workshops next to each other (Fig. 4). He selected the three most prominent professions to be found in the area—heavy industry, delicate production, creative businesses—and designed for those a symbiotic living and working that eliminates the threshold between the two activities, interconnecting them in a dense and productive fashion that promotes the sharing of facilities. It was not a coincidence that during the typological studies, Maarten had explored in depth one of the first apartment buildings of the Hague with shared facilities rooms (laundry, garbage collection, etc.). Proceeding with his design, Maatren looked thoroughly into the functional needs of each selected profession and the social norms of the professionals involved. He created spatial conditions tailored to them specifically. His high-rise proposal was meant to invigorate the local character of the area and allow services and industries to better serve the whole city, thus becoming a vital part of the Hague.

Figure 4. Symbiotic working and living (detail). Source: (Maarten van Blokland 2020)

3.3. Street of Slow Embrace: The surreal in the everyday

The Street of Slow Embrace was another critical proposal for the development of post-industrial areas. During the stage of "Description" student William Shaw identified historical moments of slow speed in the area (streets designed to slow down cars prioritizing pedestrian movement). He noticed surreal collages of unexpected co-existences: free running chickens next to fast running trains; art installations in the middle of impossible to reach junctures, public playgrounds in between small factories. He also studied a communal living apartment building, where the inhabitants lived much of their daily activities in a public setting. His observations lead to the creation of the "Binckhorst Wundercamera"—during the "transcription" stage—which multiplied further the surreal, unexpected and magical interactions in space. He thus proceeded with the design of a housing complex and public spaces where the speed and haste of everyday urban living was questioned. Possibilities for surreal and magical moments in the everyday living became the driving force of his design: washing the dishes while becoming part of the public space and a spectacle in the city (Fig. 5), sleeping while looking at the stars and hearing the animals that inhabit the apartment's external walls. The materiality of his apartment building enhanced the slow embrace of the project. The walls, covered in fur-like thatching drawn from local resources, would grow over time as the inhabitants would water them. William advocated that the public space should be infiltrated by elements of private life, a possibility inspired by the Dutch culture itself—in order to get sustainably revitalized. He refused to design additional programs, making the public space his main emphasis in the project and showing how such an approach can connect the Binckhorst with the rest of the city.

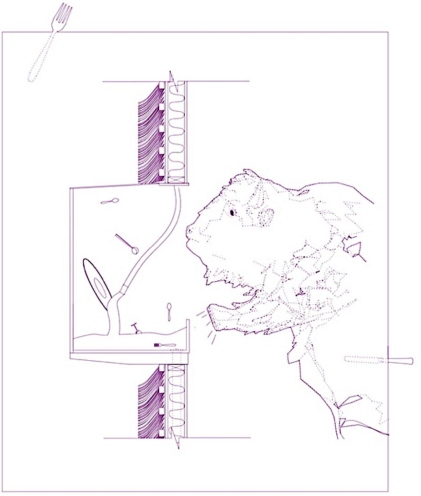


Figure 5. Surreal moments of everyday life. Source: (William Shaw 2020)

CONCLUSION

The studio "Binckhorst: A palimpsest of Architectural Lives" concluded with an exhibition of the students' proposals in the Binckhorst itself. The city of The Hague has recently re-appropriated an old building, transforming it into an information center for the future development of the neighborhood. It is in this building that the students' exhibition took place. Inhabitants of the immediate area and the city, municipal officers, and people from close-by cities like Delft came together to see the proposals and discuss with the young architects-to-be their visions for the transformation of the post-industrial area. The site-specific approach of our pedagogy, the interweaving of knowledge from the Hague building typologies with the lived space and its experiential richness, were communicated strongly to the audience, who engaged in asking questions and contributed to the general dialogue for

the area. The audience moreover cared to understand the proposals in depth and tried to imagine, along with the students, what the design interventions could offer to their life. Anchoring the projects in existing and tested typological precedents, molding the findings from these typological investigations to incorporate the changing needs of the area's younger population, and spending time in the area understanding the people's needs and aspirations, was what made the proposals convincing for the exhibition visitors. It is also what made the proposals exemplary paradigms of an educational approach towards design, that values place with its history and lived experience. Theoretician Pérez-Gómez reminds us that historically it was the architect's job to make "inhabitants feel at home in the city, to intensify their sense of purpose and belonging in public, through the institutions that framed daily life" (Perez-Gomez 2016, 3). The students with their work, felt that they could provide precisely such a sense of belonging to the future inhabitants of the fast shifting post-industrial and multi-cultural area of the Binckhorst.

REFERENCES

Argan, G. C. 2007. "Het concept van architectonische typologie," in *H.J. Engel. F. Claessens*, Wat is Architectuur?. (p. 151-161), Amsterdam: SUN Publishers.

Casey, E.S. 1999. Getting Back Into Place: Towards a Renewed Understanding of the Place-World. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Deplazes, A. 2005. Constructing Architecture: Materials, Processes, Structures. A Handbook. Basel: Birkhäuser,

Frampton, K.1995. Studies in Tectonic Culture: The Poetics of Construction in Nineteenth and Twentieth Century Architecture. Cambridge: the MIT Press.

Havik, K. 2014. Urban Literacy: Reading and Writing Architecture. Rotterdam: nai0l0 publishers.

Lefebvre, H. 1992. The Production of Space. New Jersey: Wiley-Blackwell Press

Monestiroli, A. 2005. The metope and the Triglyph: Nine Lectures in Architecture. Amsterdam: SUN Publishers.

Matiyku, A. 2018. "Architecture Drawn Out of Bruno Schulz's Poetic Prose," in Reading Architecture: Literary Imagination and Architectural Experience. London; New York: Routledge.

Pallasmaa, J. 2005. Encounters. Helsinki: Rakennustieto Publishing

Pérez-Gómez, A. 2016. Attunement: Architectural Meaning After the Crisis of Modern Science. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Wilms Floet, W, Havik, K., Mejija, J., Avermaete T. 2018. "Tools of the Architect," in: *Spool: Open Access Jopurnal for Design in Architecture and the Built Environment*. https://journals.open.tudelft.nl/index.php/spool/article/view/2093/2445, last accessed Februayr 2020.

PAPER #3.08

PURSUING POTENTIAL ARISING FROM COLLISION: THE ISLAMIC CITY CONSIDERING WESTERN HEGEMONY

Sabeen bin Zayyad[a], Brian Robert Sinclair[a]
[a]University of Calgary, Calgary, Alberta

ABSTRACT

City building is intensely complex – rich with identity, culture and place-making; it is uniquely manifest given context and culture. The industrial revolution, most notably over the last century, witnessed Western models of city life having demonstrable influences on built environments of the Islamic world. A clash between Islam's traditional formal structures and the West's modern perspectives has led to on-going discourse on development --notably its meaning, interpretation and implications. Western notions that technology defines economic and social progress have been viewed as misaligned with Islamic beliefs that "…the divine order was a commonly accepted reality and accordingly, the given system of daily rituals was capable of infusing meaning and consistency to every single human activity". This undeniably extends to the built environment. Dichotomies between old and new are evident in approaches to architectural and urban developments in Gulf countries. Islam's influence on the formation and fabric of cities and their inhabitants is not a unique phenomenon. The authors used an "Islamic" approach in understanding the challenges of building cities in the Gulf Region, providing insight into a more authentic approach to the built environment. Authentic in charting sensible paths around branding, consumerism, Starchitecture, globalization, etc. while introducing layers of historical complexity, contextual sensitivity and cultural richness that are not in contrast with Islam. Known as Little Sparta for its aggressiveness, rapid growth and significant transformation, the Emirate of Abu Dhabi has been transforming into an exemplar of modernity. What does this mean in an era where history and traditions should be considered to balance past and future? The authors posit a new framework -- one that's diverse yet inclusive, distinct yet connected, traditional yet innovative, and dramatic yet relevant.

KEYWORDS

Urbanism; islamic; design; planning; modernity; pluralism

INTRODUCTION

> As globalisation unfolds, the Islamic world will be there in myriad ways. Multitudinous encounters are inevitable. The Muslim world, once a remarkable bastion of scientific and humanistic knowledge, a rich and self-confident cradle of culture and art, has never forgotten its past. The abyss between this memory and the towering problems of tomorrow would cause disorientation even to the most secure societies. (His Highness the Aga Khan 1996)

In 1978, the Arab-American philosopher Edward Said wrote a seminal titled *Orientalism*. In it he stated that the Orient helped shape the West's perspective in how it viewed itself as a "…contrasting image, idea, personality, experience" (2) to the East. This gulf between the East and the West is nowhere better reflected than in the built environment, specifically the building of cities. Four decades later, the Islamic world in particular the Gulf region, faces an overwhelming range of questions confronting its cities' architectural and urban developments - how can these developments

embrace and wholly incorporate the values of cultural continuity; how can inherited traditions be honoured while simultaneously engaging with technological innovations and how can social challenges such as changing identities be addressed while meeting the needs of rapidly evolving societies in these nations? Rather than treating these questions frivolously, they must be addressed with compassion, understanding and commitment in an encompassing way that aligns with the Islamic tenets of honouring the diversity of people and cultures.

1. ISLAM AND THE CITY

In contemporary times, "Muslim cities have, to a large extent, become utter failures" (Kotkin 2003, 1). At a time of globalization and growing resurgence in Islamic beliefs, the question of the Islamic city has once again come to the fore. Urban planners across the world are rediscovering Islam's achievements in the realm of the built environment and are looking for "…ways to reproduce in today's cities some of the patterns of city building that have been identified as Islamic" (Abu-Lughod 1987, 1). According to Rabbat (n.d.), the idea of the Islamic city (*al-Medina*) and its various interpretations has been a contentious one in the study of Islamic history. While Islam did not have a 'prefabricated' model of what a city should look like, its impact on the social and economic relationships of its followers shaped the urban fabric of communities in which they lived. Over time, this historical fabric adapted in response to changing social, economic and political conditions. Since the early twentieth century there have been numerous approaches and interpretations of the variables used in defining an Islamic city. To gain a better understanding of these approaches and city transformations in the Islamic world, a brief review of some of the literature is important.

In her seminal article *The Islamic city – historic myth, Islamic essence and contemporary relevance (1987)*, Janet Abu-Lughod examined the history of scholarship on the Islamic city. Using the concept of *isnad* or "provenance", Abu-Lughod begins with William Marcais' 1928 article, *L'Islamisme et la vie urbaine* in which he states that Islam was an urban faith given that the Prophet Muhammad was a city resident, and thus the early converts were also city dwellers. Abu-Lughod then discusses George Marcais's work in 1940, that gave a specific form to the Islamic city by incorporating residential places and the physical organization of the markets. This was followed by an examination of Robert Brunschvig's (1947) article *Urbanisme médiéval et droit musulman* from which she concludes that the interpretation of the Islamic laws by different schools of thought had an impact on how cities (in particular North Africa) were spatially and physically structured. In her second provenance (*isnad*), Abu-Lughod discusses Jean Sauvaget's (1934, 1941) work on the Islamic cities of Aleppo and Damascus. Abu-Lughod then describes the work of Ira Lapidus (1969) as being very hesitant in his descriptions of the social structures of mainly Aleppo and Damascus, rendering them very abstract. Studies over what constitutes or defines an Islamic city, continue to this day. Many scholars have proposed different definitions using different perspectives. According to Abu-Lughod, Dale Eickelman's (1974) article *Is there an Islamic city?* tentatively answers the question by critiquing various approaches such as that of William Marcais. Eickelman also found that Muslim writers tended to 'gloss over' the issue rather than attempting to resolve it. In 1965, Albert Hourani and Samuel Stern organized a colloquium on the subject of Islamic cities and Hourani concluded that a definition of an Islamic city could not be reached because past work had focused mainly on cities in North Africa (Abu-Lughod, 1987), thus

ignoring a greater diaspora of cities within the Islamic world. Similar in approach like Abu-Lughod, Andre Raymond (1994) stated that the definitions of an Islam city by previous scholars were based entirely on the faith of Islam without taking into consideration the political, economic, or social contexts of those periods.

The turning point in how the Islamic city was viewed and perhaps defined was by the historian Marshall Hodgson (1974) in his three-volume magnum opus, *The venture of Islam: Conscience and history in a world civilization*. His work on Islamic history emphasized the difference between the religious and secular aspects of Islamic civilizations (Tamari, 2015). His insistence on studying Islamic history as a result of the diverse political and socio-economic cultures that Islam came into contact with during its expansion and not solely as being centered on its Arab origins, challenged how Islamic cities were also viewed (Mukhopadhyay, 2015). This insistence by Hodgson on a *pluralistic* approach to the way Islam was viewed also changed the way(s) in which scholars studied Islamic cities (Mukhopadhyay, 2015; Tamari, 2015).However, this does not mean that "Islamic" approaches to the study of the Islamic city do not exist. For example, Besim Hakim (1986), outlines some of his reasons as to why he chose to title his book, *Arabic-Islamic* cities as opposed to simply *Islamic cities*. First, Islam was founded in the Arabian Peninsula and many Arab traditions were incorporated into the design and development of cities and initially carried over to other parts of the world. Second, the main language for communicating and disseminating knowledge in the Islamic world was Arabic. As a result, "prime sources in various disciplines are in Arabic" (12). Bianca (2000) uses a slightly different approach to his study of the Islamic city by crediting Islam with having a huge influence on the form and function of cities in the Arab world. His "…strong interest in the traditional Muslim philosophy of life" (8) and how this philosophy influenced the structures that shaped the Islamic city environment, stemmed from living and working in the Arab world for over 35 years.

A new aspect has now been added to the discourse beyond the numerous approaches of Abu-Lughod and others in answering what is an Islamic city. How are architects applying selective elements of the 'Islamic city' to their designs?

Perspectives / Approaches	Proponents
Orientalist	William Marcais (1928) George Marcais (1940) Robert Brunschvig (1947)
Historical	Jean Sauvaget (1934, 1941) Ira M. Lapidus (1969)
Critical	Albert Hourani (1970) Samuel Stern (1970) Dale Eickelman (1974) Janet Abu-Lughod (1987) Andre Raymond (1994)
Islamic	Besim Hakim (1986) Stefano Bianca (2000)

Table 1. An overview of the perspectives / approaches to the study of the 'Islamic City'.

2. FROM ISLAMIC CITIES TO MEGA-BLING CITIES - THE NEW GULF URBAN

> In studying urbanization in newly or rapidly developing countries, it is important to divest oneself of the Western image of urbanization. This process is absolutely mandatory, though difficult. (Breese 1966, 4)

Wirth (1938) stated that modernity in Western civilization has been marked by the development of huge cities. These cities attract and influence the social fabric of its residents and evolve to become the centre of political, economic and social activities (Wirth, 1938). These activities further fuel the growth of the city and begin to take on a character of its own, one that attempts to but is not necessarily aligned with meeting the needs of its residents and those who come to seek new opportunities. With the growth of cities, new sets of socio-cultural values, symbols and attitudes develop that are sometimes in contradiction with what already exists.

> [This] rapid and profound transformations characterizing man's social condition in the world today are emergent of urban processes. (Meadows and Mizruchi 1976, 1).

The Western world has had a very strong influence on the cities of the Islamic world. The idea of progress echoed in terms such as secularization, capitalism, globalization, and technological innovation all reflect an ethos alien to the foundational creed of Islam. In order to better understand the effects the Western hemisphere has had on the architectural and urban developments of cities in the Islamic world, it is necessary to delve into the processes behind this influence.

According to Bianca (2000) the process of Westernization began with the Renaissance period, the Enlightenment period and the Industrial Revolution. This marked a new beginning for Europe in its revival of the arts, sciences and commerce. Search for new raw materials, led to the colonization of lands in Africa, Asia and the Middle East regions. As Europe began to emerge from the Dark Ages in the 14th century, the Ottoman Empire (also known for their achievements in the arts, science and medicine) began its gradual decline. This was due to economic and social unrest caused by various factors such as corruption, decline in state revenues and the ceding of lands to European military coalitions. It was also around this time that the Moorish civilization in Spain began to weaken in the face of the Christian reconquest of Andalusia by King Ferdinand V and Queen Isabella I. By the 17th century, not only were the Muslims expelled from Spain, but the Ottomans also began losing their economic dominance and several key areas of their empire. The expulsion and loss was due to secularization – separation of the Church and State. Bianca further elaborates that this division between the material and the spiritual accommodated the notion of progress and created a moral and ethical dilemma. The separation from the Church meant that confirming what was good and true and what was not, was lost.

> This explains the aggressive expansion of modern Western civilisation during this period, as well as the absence of shared higher standards and principles, which became manifest in the repeated social and political upheavals of modern Europe (162).

The sudden realization that man was able to determine what was good for him without the constraints imposed on him by the Church, was reinforced by the political processes also taking place simultaneously, notably the French Revolution in 1789. The absolution from both Church and the aristocracy, set the platform for major political, economic, social, scientific and technological changes in the 18th and the 19th centuries, leading to the birth of modern Western civilization. This "new" civilization was transmitted through colonization of the

rest of the world by Europe. However, the end of colonialism in its orthodox form did not stop the continuing transfer of political, economic and technological influences to the newly independent countries. These factors led to uncontrolled developments and an increase in the speculation of properties. To better understand the variables involved in these unplanned and often spontaneous developments, the following schematic illustrates how development is approached from both Western and Islamic perspectives. It is important to note that these approaches should not be viewed as direct opposites of each other but rather as differing in the manner in which developments are considered from a socio-cultural perspective.

'Iconic' structures (e.g. Burj Khalifa in Dubai) are cropping up in the Gulf Region as the Islamic world attempts to balance the modern and traditional. These urban forms and structures are considered soulless imitations that do not reflect the rich historical era and past traditions of the Islamic world but lead to an unbalanced built environment. Regardless of the rapid pace of growth "…the mental map of the Gulf city is still rooted in the Islamic imagery" (Katodrytis 2015, 122). How can a balance be reached in such cities where local and historical contexts are overwhelmingly rooted in the Islamic faith while the built environment in selectively trivializing historic architectural elements runs the risk of destroying that heritage?

3. LITTLE SPARTA

> In command of nearly 8 percent of global oil reserves…over $1 trillion in sovereign wealth funds…with innovative new economic sectors being established according to a thoughtful masterplan, Abu Dhabi…will soon yield enormous influence across both developing and developed worlds [and] will soon be poised to eclipse even Dubai – its ubiquitous UAE partner – as a household name. (Davidson 2009, 1)

In a letter to his mother in 1948, the British explorer Wilfred Thesiger (1910–2003) said that Abu Dhabi was a small but as yet unspoilt port, but he feared that once oil would be discovered, the natural beauty that was Abu Dhabi would be gone (Soussi 2019). His prediction of modernity having an influence on the development of Abu Dhabi would prove correct, for the oil revenues pouring in the country, had transformed the region forever, from a series of tiny settlements into the capital of the United Arab Emirates (UAE). Known as Little Sparta due to its rapid growth as a global city since 2004, Abu Dhabi has been ruled by the al-Nahyan family since the 19th century. The fast-paced transformation is attributed to its revenues derived from oil and "…by other factors, especially shifts in governance and planning paradigms" (Alawadi & Benkraouda 2017, 4). Literary sources differ in the delineation of phases that have marked Abu Dhabi's architectural and urban developments. Khalaf (2006) posits Abu Dhabi's urban

Western Perspective	Islamic Perspective
Rational	Culturally sensitive
Contemporary	Historical
Independent	Interdependent
Secular	Spiritual
Purposeful	Reflective
Abstract	Shared

Table 2. Paradigms of Architectural and Urban Development

development on the search and discovery of oil, terming them the traditional, initial, rapid urbanization and final gradual phases. Similar to Khalaf (2006), Salama (2014) frames Abu Dhabi's architectural evolution on the pre-oil era, impact of the discovery of oil and the forecasted decline in oil reserves. Elsheshtawy (2008) considers the divide of Abu Dhabi's urban development along these phases as "superficial". Using the Abu Dhabi Municipality 2003 report as a basis upon which to mark Abu Dhabi's development, Elsheshtawy states that Abu Dhabi has five phases of urban development and is grouped between two to approximately twenty-year periods. First, the historical period (1962-1965); second, the creation of a city (1966-1968); third, the establishment of a city (1969-1988); fourth, the development of the Emirate's Masterplan (1988-2004); and fifth and current phase (2004- present), its appearance on the world stage. However, the developments taking place in Abu Dhabi during the first four phases were still rooted in a conservative structure as state intervention was strong in ensuring a balance between modernity and tradition (Elsheshtawy 2008). Abu Dhabi remained cautious in its urban development, beginning with the goal of improving the living conditions of its people following the discovery and export of oil in the early-60s. By the late-1980s, the Emirate saw a huge surge in construction activity, most of which was focused on creating housing for its citizens, and other needed infrastructure such as schools, and hospitals.

Construction continued until the death in 2004 of Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan al-Nahyan, the ruler of Abu Dhabi and the driving force behind the facilitation of this balance. Post-2004, changing political climate and oil income allowed Abu Dhabi to diversify its economy into finance, logistics, manufacturing, tourism, cultural and real-estate development. This also influenced Abu Dhabi's architectural and urban developments, believing itself on par with other global cities such as London, Paris and New York. Incorporated as part of its initial Masterplan (1990-2010), the Abu Dhabi Town Planning department recommended the development of several islands surrounding the Emirate. Sa'adiyat Island is one such example. Located approximately 500 metres from the coastline of Abu Dhabi and encompassing an area of 27 square kilometres, the island has been described as

> undergoing a remarkable transformation into a world class leisure, residential, business and cultural hub of global proportions, housing the world's largest single concentration of premier cultural assets. These will include the Zayed National Museum, Louvre Abu Dhabi and Guggenheim Abu Dhabi – all designed by Pritzker prize winners (Department of Culture and Tourism 2020).

One of the most visible structures on the island is the Louvre Abu Dhabi designed by one of the Pritzker Prize winners, Jean Nouvel. Inspired by the idea of the Islamic *medina*, Nouvel built a double dome of 180 metres in diameter. Believing the dome to be a major symbol of Arab architecture, he described it as an "…evident shift from tradition…" and "…a modern proposal" (Nouvel 2017). Nouvel wanted a design that reflected the history of the UAE, "…by providing a direct echo in Arab architecture, but one that equally addresses universality." (Suri 2017). Following a trip to the Louvre Abu Dhabi in 2018, Rasem Badran a Palestinian-Jordanian architect and 2019 winner of the prestigious Tamayouz Lifetime Achievement Award for Architecture, stated that the Louvre Abu Dhabi did not reflect a traditional Arab city. In a Facebook post (December 22, 2017), he wrote

> [It is] an attractive outside space in midday [with the] projection of sun rays, while the interior is a boring failure and does not reflect Arabic streets. It is a typical misreading [by] the west [of] oriental civilisation. Even the

> exterior space does not reflect the dynamism of the open spaces in the traditional architectural texture of Arab cities. [it is] a contemporary space that has lost its soul (Alsammarae 2018).

Figure 1. Dome of the Abu Dhabi Louvre during the day. (Sean-Paul Doran 2018)

Figure 2. Dome of the Abu Dhabi Louvre at night. (Sabeen bin Zayyad 2018)

Ironically, this "misreading by the west of eastern civilizations" has also been reflected in the direction that the open foyer of the museum faces. The French military base located in Port Zayed is visible across the water from the foyer of the museum. According to Nouvel (2009), he

> designed the museum in a way that would allow the visitor disoriented by the glare of the relentless sun and the strong white colours of the desert sands to look toward the French naval base and to rest his eyes on the calm gray colours of the French warships! (Rabbat 2018)

Apart from the development of the land surrounding Abu Dhabi, the Emirate has also seen the construction of "neo-Islamic" structures in projects such as the Emirates Palace Hotel, located along the Emirate's Corniche, and noticeable by its "…assortment of domes and lavish 'Islamic' decorative patterns." (Elsheshtawy 2009, 273). Many view this as Abu Dhabi's attempt to distinguish itself from Dubai "… by constructing monuments that reflect some sort of Islamic renaissance." (273). The authors however believe that this is no different than many of the developments in Dubai that pay homage to such neo-Islamic designs like the Atlantis hotel located on Palm Jumeirah, an offshore palm-tree shaped island built from reclaimed sand. When asked to describe the hotel's building style, US-based architect Larry Ziebarth whose clients include Disney, Universal Studios and Sea World described it as being

> deeply rooted and borrows from regional Islamic traditions, but with a strong dash of fantasy – which will become synonymous with the entire project (as cited in Elsheshtawy 2004, 189).

A final example of the juxtaposition of developments taking place in Abu Dhabi is the Central *Souq* (marketplace). Built in the early-70s and situated in the midst of numerous skyscrapers, it housed more than 700 shops that sold everything from spices, household and consumer goods. In 2002, Abu Dhabi authorities decided to demolish the old *souq* and build a new one "…reflecting traditional Arab and Islamic design…" (Gulf News 2002). Although official sources at Abu Dhabi Municipality's architecture department stated that the *souq* was not expected

to last for much longer, assuming that it was structurally unsound, Elsheshtawy (2008) states that the old structure was not compatible with the new and modern image that Abu Dhabi was projecting. The initial architects tasked with designing the new *souq* confirmed that the old structure was part of Abu Dhabi's history and that every attempt would be made to recreate its history rather than working towards revitalizing and preserving the structure. In addition, the design of the new souq was to be similar to the old bazaars of Cairo and Damascus as they had "…Islamic and Arabian structural designs…" (281).

Although Abu Dhabi's attempts to be viewed as a global city should be lauded (by way of some of the aforementioned developments taking place), it does not negate the fact that it is using 'modern' models of development and 'paying lip service' to its cultural and religious contexts. It is with keeping this in mind, that the authors posit an alternative approach to how Abu Dhabi charts its development path.

Figure 3. A shopkeeper's memories of Abu Dhabi's old central souq before its demolition. (The National 2013)

Figure 4. Exterior of the new Abu Dhabi central market. (Nigel Young / Foster + Partners 2014)

Figure 5. Interior of the new Abu Dhabi central market. (Nigel Young / Foster + Partners 2014)

In 2011, the *souq* (now known as Aldar Central Market, Abu Dhabi) was completed. Rebuilt over a space of 600,000 square meters, it sits amidst a number of tall buildings containing apartments, offices, and a luxury hotel all built on the same site. The outside of the building itself is covered by lattice panelling also known as a *mashrabiy'ya*. According to Norman Foster (2007), the *souq* is a "…reinterpretation of the traditional marketplace and a new civic heart for Abu Dhabi" and is an alternative to the ubiquitous shopping mall as it "offers a distinctive modern interpretation of the regional vernacular." Gone was the community feeling, the sense of belonging, familiarity, continuity of traditions and culture that came with a space built on meeting the needs of its residents.

4. PLURALISM – AN ALTERNATIVE APPROACH

> At a time of rapid change in the Middle East, the enforcement of Western models of development has eroded traditional Islamic values…the Islamic idea of development cannot be reduced to any of the models prevailing in the West, which are based on concepts of progress and evolution alien to the Islamic worldview. (Said 1989, 619)

Roberto Unger (1991) a socio-political theorist stated in his published essay that architects had to change their ways of thinking in order to address the changes that society was undergoing. The changes that were taking place in the political, economic

and technological realms had to be reflected not just in the structures being created but that the architects themselves had to "uphold the commitment to express in physical vessels a shared vision of collective life." (1). In 1995, Unger further elaborated on the above idea and stated that "latter-day urban icons would work all the more if they became more pluralistic." (1). According to Begde (2000), the culture of economics and consumerism are taking over the ethics and values that guide society. This is reflected in the urban landscape of cities around the world such as unaffordable housing, increasing poverty and a dismantling of the social fabric.

There are many theories and perspectives on pluralism and Eck's (2001) view gives the broadest perspective, that it is not a political, economic or social ideology. It is a process where humans engage with each other through their most profound differences, on a continuous basis, building relationships that become the platforms for moving forward on issues affecting all mankind. Humans are not born with this outlook but are taught to understand and accept the existence of the different types of diversity, be it cultural, religious, gender or creed. Karen Armstrong (1988) notes that the faith of Islam incorporates the notion and practice of plurality in its teachings, traditions and approaches to living in the material world (*duniya*). This has been demonstrated in the various geographic regions of the world that Islam came into contact with during its expansion into Andalusia, Central Asia, India and China. The recognition of different cultures that contributed to the flourishing of these regions is testament to the fact that Islam is not just a religion but it also provides a set of ethics and values that guide the daily lives of its followers wherever they may be, exemplifying the connection between the divine and temporal worlds. Islam is not a passive faith. It does not believe that the spiritual (*din*) be isolated from the material (*duniya*).

> Inextricably linked to each other and strongly guided within the Islamic *tariqah* (path), this lack of separation also provides an accommodating environment (uncommon to other monotheistic faiths) to embrace foreign concepts that allow for spiritual interpretation as well as meaning and progress of not just Muslims but all of humanity in an arguably more ethical manner (bin Zayyad and Sinclair 2017, 227).

The authors believe that a balanced integration of the modern and traditional into expanding urban landscapes, is essential in the face of accelerating forces of social change in a globalized world. This pluralistic approach is important because it brings together diverse and competing interests and then redistributes them in a balanced manner, as the framework below demonstrates. What is even more relevant is that this approach reconciles what is unique in individual traditions with a deep awareness of what connects one to past, present and future of mankind. Our approach is critical in addressing the disconnect in disparate cities as it provides the foundation upon which to build connections and understanding across economic and social differences. In doing so, the objective of this approach is to engage, inspire, reappraise and share the challenges and successes of responsible urban development amongst different stakeholders. It is intended that over time, the processes forming this pluralistic approach become iterative where cities evolve into more balanced manifestations of rich traditions and contemporary narratives.

5. SINCLAIR + BIN ZAYYAD MULTIPLICITY MODEL

The goal of construction has commonly outpaced the ability of design to find arguably appropriate expression in many parts of the world. Often the need for space

and form eclipses the demand for human-centric, culturally suitable and place-specific solutions. The authors note that design professions tend to have limited research depth, translating into risks around making decisions based on instinct, feelings and trends. Often, this lack of evidence-based decision-making renders caricatures as viable inspiration for and influencers of design. Such stereotypes arise in part due to the duality of opposites where it is easier to fall on polarities than to dig deep to grasp authenticity. This over-simplification can translate into historicism and nostalgia rather than pursuing a more profound understanding – for example, how should Islam be most suitably expressed in today's buildings and cities?

The Sinclair + bin Zayyad Multiplicity Model for Islamic City Design is intended as a provocation – a way to challenge our comfort and convention when exploring Islamic architecture and urbanism. It intentionally sets up a polarity and opposition, such as secular versus spiritual or simple versus complex, with a goal to catalyze critical thinking within the design process. The model identifies 'pulls', modern and Islamic, which over-simplify the character of design, but which prompt us to question the validity, value and strategy of said duality. For example, Western design today is frequently fueled by bottom-line thinking – value-engineering and the mantra 'if you can't count it, it doesn't count'. On the opposite extreme is culture, which in most cases transcends the assignment of price tags. Under the proposed model, future developments should be aggressively examined and scrutinized along each of the dualities – with arguably a suitable posture lying in a more moderate range between the pairs of poles (the arrows illustrate such tolerance for and embrace of opposing forces). The model accepts over-simplification as a means to precipitate much needed dialogue. For example, Islam has historically been grounded in science as much as it has advanced artistic endeavour. That said, the uninitiated and ill-informed may intuitively claim Islam as more concerned with abstract and ethereal qualities. The model is not definite but a beginning. It is not conclusive as much as it is probative. In a world where comfort is found in exaggerated difference and solace sought in quick answers, the model aims to apply some checks and open a conversation around Islamic design in ways that honours the past, celebrates the present and anticipates the future.

The question of the 'best' way forward is, as the authors have delineated, open to debate. The point of the model is to ensure that debate transpires and that a path of robustness, resilience and responsibility is sought before hasty and mindless reactions to the design and construction of Islamic buildings, blocks and cities continue to populate the urban landscape.

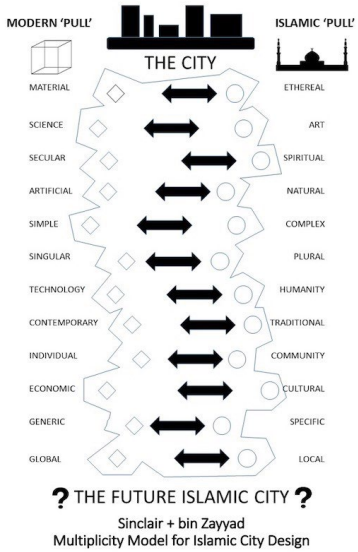


Figure 6. Sinclair + bin Zayyad Multiplicity Model for Islamic City Design

CONCLUSION

Modern does not always translate into progress. Progress does not necessarily mean building iconic structures but structures that encapsulate the characteristics and the spirit of the locale, its inhabitants, its traditions, culture and socio-economic ethos. It is apparent that Islamic cities in the current century are short of the sublime. They illustrate recurring Western influences in their architectural designs and urban structures, and lack convergence of the spirit of the local cultures and traditions. Islamic cities in the past centuries have been built in accordance to the Islamic traditions. These traditions have had far reaching influences throughout Europe particularly during the Andalusian and Ottoman periods. There are no concrete reasons as to why these traditions cannot be upheld as the authors' model has illustrated, except for the lack of will - of the governing stakeholders, of the architects to carry out research and submerge into the local contexts while upholding the traditions. Modern and tradition can engage and intertwine but traditions need to supersede so that the inhabitants are able to find comfort in their own culture, beliefs, ethics and values. After all cities are built to engage the inhabitants and surround them within contexts unique to themselves.

REFERENCES

Abu-Lughod, Janet. 1987."The Islamic City – Historic Myth, Islamic Essence and Contemporary Relevance." *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 19: 155-176.

Ahmad, B. 1995. "Urbanization and urban development in the Muslim World: From the Islamic City Model to megacities." *GeoJournal* 37 (1): 113-123. https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00814892.

Alsammarae, Rima. 2018. "The Louvre Abu Dhabi does not reflect a traditional Arab city, writes Palestinian architect Rasem Badran." *Middle East Architect*, January 2, 2018. https://www.middleeastarchitect.com/thoughts/the-louvre-abu-dhabi-does-not-reflect-a-traditional-arab-city-writes-palestinian-architect-rasem-badran.

Begde, P. 2000. "Architecture of pluralism." *Architecture Plus Design* 17 (6): 43-45. ProQuest Ebrary.

Bianca, Stefano. 2000. *Urban Form in the Arab World*. New York: Thames and Hudson.

bin Zayyad, S. & Sinclair, Brian R. 2017. "Culture, Context + Environmental Design: Reconsidering Vernacular in Modern Islamic Urbanism." In *Architectural Research Addressing Societal Challenges*, edited by da Costa, M.C., Roseta, F. et al., 223-229. London, UK: Taylor and Francis Group.

Breese, Gerald. 1966. *Urbanization in Newly Developing Countries*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.

Davidson, C.M. 2009. *Abu Dhabi: Oil and Beyond*. London, UK: Hurst and Company.

Eck, Diana. 2001. *A New Religious America: how a "Christian country" has now become the world's most religiously diverse nation.* San Francisco, CA: Harper San Francisco.

Elsheshtawy, Yasser. 2008. "Cities of Sand and Fog: Abu Dhabi's Global Ambitions." In *The Evolving Arab City: Tradition, Modernity and Urban Development*, edited by Yasser Elsheshtawy, 258-303. New York, US: Routledge.

Hakim, Besim. 1986. *Arabic-Islamic Cities: Building and Planning Principles*. London: KPI.

Katodrytis, George. 2015. "Performative Urbanism: An Emerging Model of the Gulf." *Architectural Design* 85 (1): 120-127.

Khalaf, Sulayman. 2006. "The Evolution of the Gulf City Type, Oil, and Globalization." In *Globalization and the Gulf*, edited by Fox, Mourtada-Sabbah and al-Mutawa, 244-287. Oxon, UK: Routledge.

Kotkin, Joel. 2003. "Islamic Cities – The Past as a Key to the Future: Could a revival of Islam's urban legacy transform modern Muslim society?" *Globalist Perspective,* June 1, 2003. https://www.theglobalist.com/islamic-cities-the-past-as-a-key-to-the-future/.

Meadows, Paul and Mizruchi, Ephraim H. 1976. *Urbanism, Urbanization, and Change: Comparative Perspectives*. Philippines: Addison-Wesley Publishing Company. Citations refer to the second edition.

Mukhopadhyay, Urvi. 2015. "Defining 'Islamic' Urbanity Through a Trans-Regional Frame." *Asian Review of World Histories* 3(1): 113-135.

Nouvel, Jean. Retrieved from http://www.jeannouvel.com/en/projects/louvre-abou-dhabi-3/.

Rabbat, Nasser. 2018. "France's Oriental Dream: The Louvre Abu Dhabi." *Artforum,* January 19, 2018. https://www.artforum.com/architecture/nasser-rabbat-on-the-louvre-abu-dhabi-73429.

Said, Edward. 1979. *Orientalism*. New York: Pantheon Books.

Salama, A.M. 2014. "A Century of Architecture in the Arabian Peninsula: Evolving Isms and Multiple Architectural Identities in a Growing Region." In *Architecture from the Arab world* (1914-2014): A Selection: Bahrain Catalogue in Biennale Venice, edited by G.G. Arbid, 137-143. Manama, Bahrain: Bahrain Ministry of Culture.

Soussi, Alasdair. 2019. "A line in the sand: The European explorers who battled to claim the Empty Quarter." *The National*, June 27, 2019. https://www.thenational.ae/arts-culture/books/a-line-in-the-sand-the-european-explorers-who-battled-to-claim-the-empty-quarter-1.879881.

Staff Reporter. 2002. "Designs underway to build new market in Abu Dhabi." *Gulf News*, December 29, 2002. https://gulfnews.com/uae/designs-underway-to-build-new-market-in-abu-dhabi-1.406734.

Suri, Chari. 2017. "Jean Nouvel Reveals His Singular Vision Behind the Louvre Abu Dhabi." *Architectural Digest*, November 7, 2017. https://www.architecturaldigest.com/story/jean-nouvel-louvre-abu-dhabi.

Tamari, Steve. 2015. "The Venture of Marshall Hodgson: Visionary Historian of Islam and the World." *New Global Studies* 9 (1): 73-87.

Unger, Roberto M. 1991. "The Better Futures of Architectures." *The Work of Roberto Mangibeira Unger*. California, Los Angeles: Harvard University.

Unger, Roberto M. 1995. "The Present of Architecture and Future of Democracy. *Harvard Law School*. Harvard University.

Wirth, Louis. 1938. "Urbanism as a Way of Life." *American Journal of Sociology* 44, no. 1 (July): 1-24.

PAPER #3.09

NEW VS OLD: UNDERSTANDING ARCHITECTURAL TENSIONS IN THE DESIGN OF PUBLIC SPACES

Giulia Setti[a]
[a]DAStU Department, Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The essay aims to reflect on the role of the design of public space in contemporary cities, starting from the emblematic case of Milan, to build a broader debate on the need of public spaces that European cities are increasingly showing and on the role that architectural design must assume in this instable scenario. In Milan, architectural tensions between new and fashion interventions and the background of the traditional city are alive, fertile and sometimes conflicting: it opens-up a space for design. The heart of the powerful urban transformations in Milan are public spaces, or rather their redefinition; observing Milan today means to put at the center of the debate the role of public spaces and a latent, but crucial, conflict between *new* and *old*.
Cities and architectures are changing faster, so the relationship between new and old is taking a central role in the architectural debate; what does it means to design the new and how this could necessarily integrate with what already exists, in a delicate and precious balance?
In this sense, Milan represents an *open-air laboratory*: it is a city that has strongly changed from its past. However, the change raises important questions about the relationship between new and old.
The essay proposes a reflection on architectural tensions that new interventions of Porta Nuova, City Life and Feltrinelli Foundation have generated in the city. The architectural design has redefined entire portions of the city, modifying strongly its identity; if, on one hand, the new has given back to Milan architectures and public spaces, on the other the integration between new and old appears to be an open issue.

KEYWORDS

Architectural tensions; public spaces; Milan; identity.

INTRODUCTION

The making of cities – today like yesterday – passes through the design of its public space, of a collective and shared (play)ground that becomes the background of architectures and phenomena. Cities and architectures are changing faster, so the relationship between *new* and *old* is taking a central role in the architectural debate; what does it means to design the new and how this could necessarily integrate with what already exists, in a delicate and precious balance?
Especially in contemporary context, the integration with the existing represents a complex and delicate design issue, because it highlights tensions that the juxtaposition between new buildings with the traditional city forms produces. A latent tension, which in some cases, could bring out difficult balances, necessary, however, to transform and to improve contemporary cities.
The essay reflects on the relationship between new and old by observing its effects on a city, like Milan, which has been radically transformed in the last ten years, highlighting a fervent capacity of modification, no longer related to the great urban design plans developed during the 1980s (Bianchetti 2016). It is a radical revolution that has revealed several significant issues that will be the subject of this text; starting from the role of public space in new projects to urban and architectural tensions related to its use and property to arrive to

understand how, and if, the new interventions have changed the perception of the traditional city and its identity.
In this sense, Milan represents an *open-air laboratory*: it is a city that has strongly changed from its past. However, the change raises important questions about the relationship between new and old.
The essay proposes a critical debate on *architectural tensions* that new interventions of Porta Nuova, City Life and Feltrinelli Foundation have generated in the city. The case study will be explored through a critical comparison of architectural elements applied in each project, highlighting similarities and differences, observing the shape of buildings and open spaces. A methodology that aims to describe both the contrast, often not solved, within the context, and to underline the different design choices made. The architectural design has redefined entire portions of the city, modifying strongly its identity; if, on one hand, the new has given back to Milan architectures and public spaces, on the other the integration between new and old appears to be an open issue (Colomina 1994; Gaventa 2006).

1. BETWEEN NEW AND OLD: A CRITICAL PREMISE

Architectural design has always reflected on the relationship with the existing, both with the aim of safeguarding memories and traces of the past, both to understand what could be removed or demolished downstream of processes of contraction or abandonment.
In this sense, the Italian context is paradigmatic: a stratified architectural and urban tradition has clashed with sudden events, economic crises and, also, the most recent climate changes that have highlighted the precariousness of an urban system that seemed unalterable. On the contrary, the city is, and remains, a laboratory of "urban facts" as Aldo Rossi claimed (Rossi 1981); it is the engine of continuous and deep transformations, in which the effects will be given in a longer time and not within few months. These changes are often slow, complex and difficult for urban contexts because changing parts of cities necessarily means to modify inherited and long-lasting balances.
In this perspective, the powerful transformation that has affected Milan brings out contradictions, conflicts and tensions in redesigning portions of the city; the new advances in the iconic buildings that dot Milan, in the definition of different architectural languages imported by international firms. Recent projects completed in Milan tell of a complex, and unresolved, relationship with the past, or rather with the tradition. Projects that are showing latent tensions between the actors involved in the design of the contemporary public space and its uses.
The pilot projects, carried out in Milan in the recent years, have given rise to powerful transformation processes. Private entities invest capital and resources to build a new image of themselves: they are large banks, prestigious qualified companies that have found possible opportunities to rebirth in the empty and abandoned areas of Milan.
In this sense, the essay aims to reflect on the role of the design of public space in contemporary cities, starting from the emblematic case of Milan, to build a broader debate on the need of public spaces that European cities are increasingly showing and on the role that architectural design must assume in this instable scenario.

Figure 1. The project of City Life (Milan) and its system of public spaces. (Giulia Setti 2017)

In Milan, architectural tensions between *new* and *fashion* interventions and the background of the traditional city are alive, fertile and sometimes conflicting: it opens-up a space for design. The heart of the powerful urban transformations in Milan are public spaces, or rather their redefinition; observing Milan today means to put at the center of the debate the role of public spaces and a latent, but crucial, conflict between new and old. A conflict that has distant roots: in the *critical reconstruction* of Berlin, after the Second World War, carried out, among others, by Josef Paul Kleihues emerges the need to re-establish a link with existing architectural shapes, establishing precise languages and parameters. A complex story that questioned again the relationship between history and project, between new and old indeed.

The essay will describe some major projects completed, or under construction, including the area of Porta Nuova and Piazza Gae Aulenti, Feltrinelli Foundation and the complex intervention of City Life, but not only, we will try to reflect on what it is still in process, in particular in the area of Porta Nuova and City Life which have become *contemporary laboratory* for the city. It will be a journey to (re)discover the contemporary soul of Milan, but above all, it will be a story about the rediscovery of a new role for public space in these new interventions and the architectural image they have produced in the city.

If the role of architecture is radically changing, it is also changing the nature of public space in these contexts; no longer just an expression of a past monumentality, crystallized in the fixity of the plaza, but a (public) space discussed, stratified and complex in its definition. A public space that is uncertain and necessary for the construction and image of this *new Milan*.

The essay questions these urban transformations and tries to read them critically by investigating the different *architectural tensions* that the new projects have activated in the city. A city, Milan, with a strong industrial past, which has been able to rise after numerous economic crises, the last one started in 2008. These projects tell about how architecture represented an incentive and a tool of action, albeit partial, to recover portions of cities previously in a state of decay. In particular, each project has been described through its history, its design genesis and architectural peculiarities, identifying the essential key aspects, such as the design of the ground floor, the definition of systems of open spaces and of a new urban and architectural verticality. The inquiry works through a detailed investigation of drawings, architectures and images that have been generated by these interventions; it is a story seen through the eyes and the critical gaze of an architect, who tries to grasp the latent design issues raised by contemporary projects in Milan.

2. THE TIME OF CONTEMPORARY PUBLIC SPACES

The design of public space has always crossed the development of cities and, in particular, the (public) void remains and it is shaped by the buildings' design that surrounds it. In the recent interventions, previously mentioned in Milan, the design of the contemporary public space is the result of daring but clear formal and architectural choices.

Buildings that we observe walking through Porta Nuova or City Life (Fig. 1) are iconic artifacts, powerful landmarks, which once again mark the city shape; the design of its public spaces could only be influenced by these choices but strongly highlights the necessity of public open spaces that citizens have showed. Interventions and projects described here mark an important moment for the city, also in relation to the world economic crisis that began in 2008 and, in fact, not yet concluded. It is thus a series of impressive urban and architectural transformations

that began before the advent of the crisis, therefore they had to redefine their ambitions and actual construction times.
The story, developed in this essay, also tries to understand the contradictions between the use and ownership of contemporary public spaces, result of complex negotiation and, in fact, financed by private investors. Observing Milan today means to discuss on *architectural and urban tensions* that led to a radical transformation of Milan.

3. PORTA NUOVA PROJECT: REDESIGN AN URBAN VOID

The image that emerges from this journey in a Milan that has changed, and is still changing, is that of a city tormented between past and future; a future that raises questions around the life of new projects, as well as on the architectural quality of spaces that has been determined. Piazza Gae Aulenti is an expression of this, walking in the large central void defined by Unicredit skyscraper and by a series of fragmented and disrupted *architectural objects* one captures an unexpected life (Molinari, Catella 2015).
The square, and the public space, appears as a residual component, surrounded by a dense border of massive buildings: it quickly assumed a key role in the public life of citizens. Raised up by the arterial roads that innervate the background of Porta Garibaldi railway station, it is a protected *enclave* and, therefore, perceived as a safe place by citizens.
Public and private strongly face each other: the square, built thanks to the funding of banks and private actors who have thus been able to move their offices in the heart of Milan, has become the stage of *public life*: it lives at different times and seasons, it is quickly crossed by those who go to workplaces, lived by young people, children and elderly people who could enjoy the *slow time* of contemporary life.
The transformation of Porta Nuova area, close to Porta Garibaldi railway station, began in 2005[1], it represented one of the major urban projects carried out in Milan in the last twenty years[2], compensating a large void, full of meanings, that it could not find a completed definition. Porta Nuova intervention denounces, on one hand, the need to intervene and, therefore, the desire of re-appropriation of abandoned places by citizens, at the same time it marks a complicated balance between glossy architectural objects, brought into this context, and the sensitivity of the place, as well as the relationship with its historical roots.
At the end of the works, the plaza has been able to accommodate different possible uses, becoming a social place, protected by the city and defined by new urban edges. No longer the nineteenth-century monumentality of Piazza Duomo, but a lively contrast of architectural styles and languages resulting from a non-unitary planning. Piazza Gae Aulenti's public spaces have been able to regenerate it, becoming a meeting place for young people and children who have transformed the anonymous square into a vital place. Therefore, piazza Gae Aulenti brings together various forces; it determines connections and unites self-referential and autonomous objects unwilling to open up, but on the contrary inclined to individuality. The tension is generated by the evident contrast between the productive and iconic ambition of Porta Nuova project and the need for public spaces, and it is also fueled by the various informal uses that citizens make of the square (Fig. 2).

[1] The redevelopment of Porta Nuova area has involved several architects both to realize the masterplan (Pelli Clarke Architects, Kohn Pederson Foz Associated, Stefano Boeri Architetti), and to design the buildings, including Cino Zucchi Architetti, Antonio Citterio and Partners, Piuarch, Michele de Lucchi e Mario Cuccinella: http://www.porta-nuova.com/.
[2] The construction sites of Porta Nuova Project were the largest in Europe in 2012-2013, see also: http://milano.repubblica.it/cronaca/2012/02/01/news/foresta_di_giorno_deserto_di_notte_ecco_il_rischio_della_milano_verticale-29109861/. The urban tradition of Milan is marked by major urban interventions, referring to the Vittorio Gregotti's project for Bicocca created during 1980s which has characterized an urban season that has now ended.

The new urban intervention has become a public material, populated in different ways; you could sit, dance, and enjoy the protection offered by an artificial ground, people felt inside a new part of Milan. Different actors inhabit the plaza: next to traditional urban users, there are also those who cross the square to go to work or to reach the railway station.

Figure 2. The pseudo-public space of piazza Gae Aulenti, Milan. (Ivan Ashkinadze 2017)

The development on different levels of Piazza Gae Aulenti and its sprawling and minute connections with the surrounding spaces show how different speeds and uses co-inhabit; the plaza hosts those who stop for a short time, those who use it for a longer time and, at the same time, welcome the dynamism of work, of the rapid and necessary movements. It is a place of discussion between the requests that made it possible, but at the same time, it is a harmonious claim for what could be considered public in the city; the tension does not show itself in a clear or disruptive conflict, but determines a dynamic balance between different actors involved.
Piazza Gae Aulenti, and its immediate surroundings, could be defined as a *pseudo-public* space, in which we have the perception of a public place, however regulated by private instances. Taking photographs in Piazza Gae Aulenti with a tripod is, for example, prohibited[3]: a common action in the squares such as stopping to take some images, it is not practicable in a place that shows itself as public but which, in fact, is not. Therefore, it is a *pseudo-public* space because it is a space that declares itself as public, in which the use of it is conditioned by private property, which nevertheless allows an impeccable care[4] (Kayden J. S. 2000; Cicalò E. 2009).
While there is the fear that forces to check, even more so when it is a central place for economic and productive activities; however, there is at the same time the necessity to show the sharing and sociability that also arises from informal practices. The special observatory of Piazza Gae Aulenti is a mirror of tensions and conflicts of our time, where being monitored is possible, more than ever necessary, after the intensification of terrorist acts in large public spaces[5]: control imposes a restriction of freedoms. If we observe the life of Piazza Gae Aulenti, we will be able to notice how it is an effective *urban and architectural condenser,* able to hold social classes and different uses together, adapting its spaces to an informal life.

4. PORTA VOLTA AND FELTRINELLI FOUNDATION: THE REDISCOVER OF AN URBAN VOID

The project for Porta Volta was born from the investment of Feltrinelli Group, which decided to entrust the construction of a building, intended to host its Foundation, to the architects Herzog&de Meuron. Completed in 2016, the building located along the axis

[3] During a workshop conducted with some students of Politecnico di Milano in June 2017, a student was invited to disassemble his tripod by a security guard, who invited him to ask for a permit to be able to take pictures of the plaza and its activities during the day.
[4] Milan, like London and New York, faces and discusses the issue of pseudo public spaces (POSP: Privately Owned Public Space), places at the center of tensions, precisely, between ownership, uses and management:
https://www.theguardian.com/cities/2017/sep/26/its-really-shocking-uk-cities-refusing-to-reveal-extent-of-pseudo-public-space
[5] Referring to the recent terrorist attacks in Barcelona (2017), Nice and Berlin (2016), which questioned the use, sharing and security of public spaces.

of via Pasubio, in correspondence with the former tollhouse of Porta Volta, represents an interesting real estate transaction carried out in Milan; the building of a private nature assumes a complex public role, in relation to its location in the consolidated city fabric. The large void that surrounds the Feltrinelli Foundation on the side of Via Pasubio was born as a public space, a place of aggregation and sharing; the proximity to both Corso Como axis and the development of Chinatown in via Paolo Sarpi gives centrality to this intervention which becomes an urban device able to aggregate people and activities.

Figure 3. Feltrinelli Foundation (Milan): a forgotten and to be completed public space. (Giulia Setti 2017)

If Piazza Gae Aulenti lives on mix between public and private activities, the Feltrinelli Foundation denounces a latent, and less resolved, tension between informal uses and urban practices; the building, design by Herzog&de Meuron, concentrates offices and private activities inside, while only a limited portion opens to the city with the presence of a library and a café, thus the surrounding space does not seem to have the strength to constitute itself as public space. It is an uncertain and transitional space between the monolithic and monumental interior of the Foundation and the austerity of the external ground floor: here tensions between actors and uses appear much more radical and less balanced.

Public space is determined beyond design negations; it finds the strength to become a lived-in urban space, not just a residual void. If it is true that we are witnessing to a *revival of public space*, to recapture and enhance the idea of sharing, a reflection should be opened on the characteristics that define these spaces. Piazza Gae Aulenti perhaps supported the growing need of squares and meeting places that rise around the Porta Nuova transformation and the lack of protected places to meet. At the same time, Feltrinelli Foundation denies the public space, leaving it on the borders, but witnessing a growing interest that leads to think of a future enhancement of what today appears to be an empty, albeit frequented, surface (Fig. 3).

The uncertainties that the public space project, close to Feltrinelli Foundation, opens up concern the role and power of the architecture itself, designed as an *urban catalyst*, able of fulfilling all these needs. The pure and measured beauty, monumental and massive at the same time, of the building designed by Herzog&de Meuron strikes and fascinates to the point to forget what does not happen around. Or the surrounding silence emphasizes the rigor of the project; the design of public space, around the Feltrinelli Foundation, appears too silent, too hidden and covered by the strength of the architectural intervention. However, it is the life surrounding the architecture that seems able, in certain circumstances, to cover this lack.

5. CITY LIFE: THE ICONIC ARCHITECTURE

As mentioned before, the economic crisis, which began in 2008, has eradicated and changed values and uses of public space, as well as diverting attention to the redesign of void; a void, however, which is the terrain of continuous struggles and claims, tensions and appropriations.

Based on this discussion, the description of the transformation and recovery of the former trade fair, now called City Life, take place. The City Life project strengthens some of the key questions raised before: an operation managed by private actors (Generali Assicurazioni, Allianz in particular) was born with the idea of giving back to the city an important portion of its urban fabric, densifying and concentrating the built up interventions into three skyscrapers, *The Straight One, The Twisted One and The Curved One*, as the expression of as many designer firms: Arata Isozaki, Zaha Hadid, Daniel Libeskind (Fig. 4).
An ambitious project that shows the integration of spaces for offices, tertiary and residential activities with a generous open space for public uses; the architectural objects should have been kept together by public space and by a partially covered square. The project has undergone numerous delays and slowdowns due to the economic and real estate crisis, as well as to uncertain fate of the three towers, launched in 2004, started in 2007, it has not yet been completed, the last tower by Daniel Libeskind is now under construction. In this context, the disconnection between the iconic and self-referential force of the three skyscrapers and the uncertainty of the open space is evident; the open space is not unable to unify the ground floor because it is not thought as an attractor or as a dense urban space

Figure 4. City Life project, the design of a new verticality (Mara Fraticelli 2019)

6. ARCHITECTURAL TENSIONS: THE FUTURE OF CONTEMPORARY PUBLIC SPACES

To read and to observe tensions between private property and *public use* of space leads to reflect on the meaning of the term public space today, as well as on the processes and methods with which it is possible to think and design contemporary spaces (de Solà-Morales 2009)
The cases shown, and the example of Milan, indicate the will and the need to regain possession of sharing places; it is possible to see these phenomena starting from the rediscovery generated by the interventions of City Life is (and perhaps will remain) a void in the city, a space not practiced because it is thought in an *extra urban scale*, according to the logic of homologation of many European cities. The tensions between public and private sectors will probably explode, giving to the city a space that will never be public, in the traditional sense of the term, but it could define a new paradigm of contemporary public surfaces. City Life denounces a tension between the unique forms and uses of the historical city compared to the homologation promoted and produced by the global market, where to grow seems to be a synonymous of good architecture.

Porta Nuova and Porta Volta. At the same time, it implies a redefinition of the concept of *public* associated with the term *space*.

Architectural and urban tensions challenge traditional definitions and place us facing *hybrid places*: conceived as public spaces, lived as such, but financed, built and regulated by private entities. Milan, as well as London and other European cities, presents similar cases, characterized by the presence of *pseudo-public spaces*; spaces poised between public wills and private instances, where tensions emerge in the use and appropriation of these places.

It is a tension that denounces a transition and a misunderstanding of uses and properties; generating spaces designed to compensate private real estate investments, the only ones able to have the necessary capital for these interventions. What will be the *duration* of these places and how they will age, is a question to which it is not possible to give answers now; however, a rapid aging of public pseudo-spaces could be imagined.

Places that could pass, like a current fashion language, therefore, undergo and quickly show the signs of the past. A fast time, the one of productivity and economy, that of the power of banks that made its life possible, a time that could escape and change. How much *public space* costs could be another topic able to show the implications of what has been described before. Within a changing scenario, such as the one of Milan, architectural and urban design must find strength and tools to become part of the building process of new parts of the city. Attention is increasingly focused on buildings, icon of modernity, therefore fragmented episodes that intensify the tensions between public and private. The project of public space needs integration and enhancement within the ongoing interventions. The recovery of large portions of city could not be separated from a calibrated and measured relationship between built-up space and open area.

Tension arises where this balance is lacking and where conflicting forces face each other in the use and appropriation of space. The cases described in this short journey in Milan tell about an evolving public space, result of mediation between private instances and public needs, where, however, an idea of how to design open spaces seems to be missed.

In the case of Porta Nuova, the new plaza invites because it is protected by the built edge and it is elevated above the roads, therefore able to consolidate and strengthen the idea of a new public space. In the case of Porta Volta, architecture is the catalyst of the entire intervention, leaving the role of emphasizing its power to the void.

The space surrounding the Feltrinelli Foundation has not yet had enough time to settle down and become part of everyday life and, perhaps, only time will help this integration. The context of City Life, on the other hand, leaves many doubts about the possible life of public space, financed by the Insurance Companies that will move here; it is a *space out of scale*, not public, still bare and unable to strengthen relations between different elements of the design.

Tensions observed in these places allows a redefinition of the concept of public space, a place of representation of the city's economic power (of banks, insurance companies, etc.), a showcase of recent transformations and a place to show urban and architectural contemporaneity.

The projects presented here described an articulated debate on the relationship between *new* and *old*, in a continuous process of design experimentation: new buildings are juxtaposed to the existing one redefining a new architectural language for Milan. In these years, Milan has represented a laboratory of constant mutation that shows forms and ways with which the architectural design and the design of public space could be defined. It is an open debate, still evolving, which however describes important changes in the construction, definition and use of contemporary public spaces.

REFERENCES

AA.VV. 2013. *Fight-Specific Isola. Art, Architecture, Activism and the Future of the City.* Berlin: Archive books.

Aymonino, A. and Mosco, V. P. 2006. *Contemporary public space: un-volumetric architecture.* Milano: Skira, 2006.

Bianchetti, C. 2016. *Spazi che contano. Il progetto urbanistico in epoca neoliberale.* Roma: Donzelli.

Carmona, M. et al. 2010. *Public places, urban spaces: the dimensions of urban design.* Oxford: Architectural Press.

Cerruti But, M., Kërçuku, A., Setti, G. and Vassallo, I. 2017. *Tensioni Urbane. Ricerche sulla città che cambia*. Siracusa: LetteraVentidue.

Cicalò, E. 2009. *Spazi pubblici. Progettare la dimensione pubblica della città contemporanea*. Milano: Franco Angeli.

Colomina, B. 1994. *Privacy and publicity: modern architecture as mass media.* Cambridge (MA): The MIT Press.

de Solà-Morales, M. 2009. Public Spaces, Collective Spaces. in AA.VV, *Architectural Positions. On Architecture, Modernity and Public Sphere.* Amsterdam: Sun.

Gaventa, S. 2006. *New public spaces*. London: Mitchell Beazley.

Gehl, J. and Gemzoe, L. 1996. *Public spaces, public life.* Copenagen: Danish Architectural press. The Royal Danish Academy of fine arts school of architecture publishers.

Kayden, J. S. 2000. *Privately owned public space: the New York city experience.* New York: The Municipality Art Society of New York.

Lotus. *Meteo Milano,* n. 161, 2017.

Lotus, *The New, Again*, n. 169, 2020.

Lynch, K. 1972. *What time is this place?* London:The MIT press.

Madanipour, A. 2003. *Public and private spaces of the city.* London-New York: Routledge.

Molinari, L. and Catella, K.R. 2015. *Milano Porta Nuova. L'Italia si alza, Italy rise.* Milano: Skira.

Rossi, A. 1981. *A scientific autobiography.* London: MIT Press.

PAPER #3.10

(SUB)URBAN; MERGING SUBURBAN HOME QUALITIES WITH URBAN HOUSING

Craig S. Griffen[a]
[a]Thomas Jefferson University, Philadelphia, PA, USA

ABSTRACT

For decades, the growth pattern for housing around American cities has been a continual, wasteful expansion outward onto greenfield land, leaving behind numerous vacant, urban blocks and brownfield sites. Recent rebuilding efforts on these vast lots by developers and government agencies has resulted in blocks of suburban-style homes where once stood row houses and factories. While suburban homes have certain desirable qualities missing in the city, the blocks of kitschy houses being built greatly conflict with the scale and patterns of the historic urban context. But these large, vacant tracts of lower-priced land outside the urban core present an opportunity to rethink how we can better rebuild housing in the city. Instead of just recreating the dark, cramped 16-foot-wide worker's row house of the past, can we appropriate the best aspects of suburban housing, as well as incorporating energy-efficient design? Can we design brighter, more spacious, sustainable homes with additional outdoor space, but do it in a culturally sensitive manner that is more respectful of the existing urban context than is currently being done? This project investigated ways to create hybrid *(sub)*Urban housing typologies that: 1. Utilize passive energy strategies to improve comfort, energy efficiency and minimize carbon load; 2. Reduce density to provide additional exterior and interior space while respecting and reinforcing existing urban patterns; and 3. Increase home affordability by using economy of scale prefabrication techniques. Proposals, from both my personal explorations and student work developed in a 5th-year design studio, demonstrate how concepts imported from suburban housing could coexist with, and if done thoughtfully, improve dwelling in the city.

KEYWORDS

Suburban development; urban housing; sustainable construction.

INTRODUCTION

> "Global urbanization is heading towards infinite suburbia. Around the world, the vast majority of people are moving to cities not to inhabit their centers, but to suburbanize their peripheries". Infinite Suburbia[1]

In the second half of the 20th century, the United States had a disgraceful record for abandoning its cities in favor of the new suburbs beyond, with Detroit being the best-known example. The post-war exodus from cities to the suburbs left extensive amounts of abandoned houses and factories that became deserted lots and blocks. By the end of the century, a 2001 study of 70 US cities found an average of 15% of urban land was vacant.[2] At the same time, the suburbs kept exploding outward, eating up virgin greenfield land (valuable for carbon sequestration) and stretching farther and farther from the urban core. But continued expansion outward beyond the Exurbs is not a sustainable planning strategy. Because of the typical, radial expansion from an urban center, roads, utilities and public services are spread

[1] Alan Berge, Joel Kotkin, Celina Balderas Guzman, Infinite Suburbia, (Princeton Architectural Press, New York, 2017)
[2] Brookings Institute, Vacant Land in Cities: An Urban Resource, (2001)

farther apart, stretching the infrastructure and reinforcing the reliance on the automobile for transportation. But abandoned urban land left over in the outer fringes of the city (and increasingly in older inner-ring suburbs) comes with an existing infrastructure of utilities, streets, and public services already in place, thereby providing prime opportunity for housing redevelopment. Thankfully, many US cities have seen a reversal in the movement of people outward, to a surplus of people moving back in. But this sector is mainly populating the urban core because of its cultural amenities, ease of transportation and relatively safer neighborhoods. In many cities, like my case study city of Philadelphia, there is a zone outside the city center but inside the inner-ring suburbs that is not experiencing this same degree of urban rebirth. This zone contains many former working-class neighborhoods with small row houses surrounding the factory where the residents worked. (e.g. Fig. 1) When industry left the city, many residents left with it, abandoning some neighborhoods to slowly degenerate over time. Vacant houses became vacant blocks as the homes were bulldozed and the lots sat empty for years. But the cheap land associated with these neighborhoods in less desirable parts of the city presented an opportunity for government agencies to build subsidized public housing. The well-documented failure of public housing towers has been replaced by another approach which, while more conscious of neighborhood scale, has had questionable outcomes. The recent trend for subsidized housing by agencies like the Philadelphia Housing Authority (PHA) is to construct multi-block neighborhoods of pseudo-suburban twin (duplex) houses that are nothing like the row homes they replaced.[3] Instead of multi-unit rows of attached row houses, the double homes are set back from the street and incorporate suburban elements like gable roofs, driveways, lawns and other suburban elements that feel out of place in the city fabric. (e.g. Fig. 2) In some cases, even the stereotypical white picket fence has appeared. While architects and planners may rightly criticize the manner in which suburban style homes are dropped into an urban pattern without much thought, the houses are all occupied, well-liked by the residents and have a multi-year waiting list. It appears the American Dream of the suburban house image is as powerful in the city as outside it.

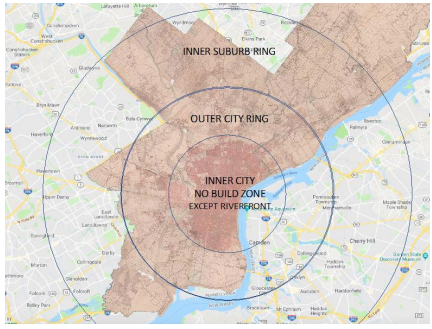


Figure 1. Philadelphia's Outer Ring. Source: Author

Figure 2. Suburban Style Houses in the City. Source: Author

[3] John Kromer, Fixing Broken Cities: The Implementation of Urban Development Strategies, (Routledge, 2010)

1. SUBURBS IN THE CITY

1.1. Smart Rebuilding

Often, a first response from architects and planners when confronted with an empty lot or block in a city is to restore the density and scale of the previous buildings, thereby reestablishing the urban room of the street. Yet as we rebuild our cities, we have an opportunity to reevaluate this strategy to seek ways to create healthier, happier and more sustainable ways of urban dwelling. The typical row houses surrounding the former factories were built to be cheap, basic, no-frills housing for blue-collar workers. Sixteen-foot-wide houses built right on the street with low ceilings, small windows on narrow front and back facades and tiny back "yards", created dark, cramped spaces with little access to air, light and space. In addition, most workers relied on public transportation trolleys and could not afford a car, so space for parking was never considered in the original planning and therefore is a problem today in these older neighborhoods. While we don't want to swing the pendulum to the opposite end by directly transplanting suburban housing models into the city, there is an opportunity to create a hybrid model that incorporates some of these suburban amenities while still preserving the best qualities of city living.

Since we are considering new types of housing, it is also ethically imperative to address the issues of climate change through passive energy-efficient house design that is also affordable to the middle-income buyer. There are a growing number of buyers who are concerned with the sustainability of our environment and would prefer an energy-efficient house, but they are often younger first-time buyers who cannot afford the price for their first purchase. However, the increasingly palpable effects of climate change are causing a corresponding increase in the public's acceptance of it as a tangible looming crisis. Sixty-two percent of the public now understands that global warming is caused mostly by human activities, an increase of 10 points since 2015.[4] As climate change worsens and affects more people, we may see an increasing demand for more efficient homes as well. Because the locations of these vacant sites are outside the city center, the price of land is lower. Therefore, houses do not necessarily need to be constructed to maximize every available square foot of space and so can be built at a lower density to allow in more sunlight and provide more interior and exterior space. Taking this all into consideration, can we incorporate ideas from suburban and sustainable design to create brighter, more open, sustainable and affordable urban homes with additional exterior space, but in a culturally sensitive manner than is being done now? This paper documents personal research that was tested as the subject of a 5th year studio project. The main objectives of the project were to investigate ways to create hybrid *(sub)Urban* housing typologies in the city's outer rings that:

1. Utilized passive energy means like the sun for daylight, heat and power and the wind for natural ventilation to improve energy efficiency and reduce carbon load.
2. Reduced density to provide space for larger, brighter living spaces, off-street parking and personal green space while respecting and reinforcing urban patterns.
3. Increased home affordability in the more expensive urban market by using the economies of scale of prefabrication techniques like highly-insulated, panelized skins and modular construction.

1.2. Passive Energy Efficient Homes

Many belive any new form of housing has an ethical responsibility to address the crisis of

[4] Yale Program on Climate Change Communication and the George Mason University Center for Climate Change Communication, Climate Change in the American Mind, (2018)

climate change to minimize energy use and carbon load. When looking at the the potential of solar energy in the city, orientation to the sun versus the orientation of the city grid are vital concerns. Suburban development houses face the street, regardless of the cardinal direction. But a typical passive solar house extends in the east-west direction with abundant glazing facing to the south. The grid form of urban streets can be favorable geometry for transferring passive solar strategies if oriented close to south. If a city's grid is oriented within 20º of south, (it is 11º in Philadelphia) it can serve as a prime planning layout for fitting passive solar houses into the urban fabric. In a previous research project looking at the potential for passive solar in suburban developer housing, I discovered the Charleston house typology worked well as a precedent to provide both sun access and privacy. Since this house type is itself an urban form that fronts on the street, the type has long ago proven itself viable in an urban setting, and Renee Chow has already demonstrated how the urban fabric pattern of the Charleston typology can be a sustainable solution for increasing density and reducing suburban sprawl.[5] This typology also works well when passive energy strategies are added. By placing a gallery and side yard to the south of the thin house, there is enough clearance for the sun to clear the roof and penetrate the neighboring house to the south. (e.g. Fig. 3) Since the glazed wall on the south looks across the lawn to the mostly opaque north wall next door, privacy is maintained. And when arranged in a checkerboard pattern on an urban block, each home gains personal off-street parking and a private green side yard. In this way, these hybrid homes incorporate qualities of suburban housing while maintaining the urban wall and the fabric of the previous neighborhood, just more loosely woven.

Figure 3. Passive Urban House Model. Souce: Author

Figure 4. "Suburban" Urban Homes. Source: Google Maps

[5] Renee y. Chow, Suburban Space: The Fabric of Dwelling, (University of California Press, 2002)

1.3. Reduced Density

Another myth of city living is that housing sales and rent prices are more expensive than in the suburbs. But in certain markets it is the opposite, and Philadelphia is one example. It is nearly twice as expensive to live in the suburbs of Philadelphia as the average rent takes up 18.7% of the area's median income versus 9.8% in the urban market and mortgage payments take up an average of 30.5% of the median income compared to 20.9% in the city.[6] As mentioned before, the prime sites for this type of investigation are located on land outside the expensive urban core but inside the first-ring suburbs, in the outer city ring. The land prices are lower in these areas for a very good reason; they are typically less desirable lower-income neighborhoods, so redevelopment of these sites would need to be incremental and grow out from more established neighborhoods. However, these areas provide the necessary amount of affordable open and affordable land for developing blocks of lower scale housing on the larger urban scale. The recently constructed PHA suburban-style twin homes on multiple blocks in the Poplar neighborhood of North Philadelphia, replaced a failed earlier attempt of public housing named the Richard Allen Homes.[7] The new homes have (small) front porches, off-street parking and surprisingly large back yards for the city. Even the cul-de-sac, typically exclusive to suburban planning, is used just blocks from the urban core. (e.g. Fig. 4) While this layout does provide more open green space, it is not well utilized and the spacing and setbacks of units conflicts greatly with the established rhythm and sense of enclosure of the surrounding older neighborhoods. But we can use the density of these developments to establish a baseline ratio for a reasonable number of units per acre in this part of the city. The proposed checkerboard model above would create an even higher density level while still providing room for substantial, secure side yards and personal off-street parking. And bringing the houses closer to the street would establish an urban wall more in tune with the surrounding neighborhoods than the current homes on the site. This concept is also scalable to accommodate a range of house sizes on different width blocks.

Figure 5. Panelized Wall Assembly. Source: Ecocor

Figure 6. Passive Prefab. Go Home. Source: Go Logic

1.4. Affordable Construction

All new homes should strive to achieve Passive House level energy-efficient envelopes, but the additional materials needed to create these high-performing wall and roof assemblies also drives up their initial cost. The developer housing industry has created successful methods for pre-packaging building elements

[6] Heather Senison, The Suburban Burden: Living In The City Is Less Expensive In These Areas, (Forbes Magazine, October 17, 2018)
[7] Kromer

to reduce labor and material costs. Because of the volume of houses produced using prefabricated assemblies, developers like Toll Brothers have surprisingly been able to keep their construction cost below $100 per square foot. This economy-of-scale strategy could be extended to urban passive houses when built at the volume of an entire block. To be economically feasible, these houses cannot be site-built, but should utilize modular or prefabricated construction techniques. One possible solution is the use of prefabricated panelized wall and roof panels such as those manufactured in the US by the Ecocor company, that are shipped to the site and erected by cranes to shorten construction time and save labor costs.[8] (e.g. Fig. 5) The long, thin design of the homes, intended initially to capture south light, is also a good proportion for modular units that could fit on the back of a flatbed truck. The firm Go Logic has been producing several models of prefabricated, passive Go Homes that are constructed in units and assembled on site.[9] (e.g. Fig. 6) The construction site assembly time cost-savings would help to balance out the additional material costs of the well-insulated envelope panels and increase home affordability.

1.5. Studio Results

These ideas were tested in a fifth-year architecture design studio that asked students to incorporate suburban style housing amenities into new housing prototypes at the periphery of the city. The semester was divided into 3 major phases consisting of 1. Research & analysis, 2. Site selection and programming and 3. Masterplan/house design. The charge was to reevaluate the potential of detached, semi-detached and attached low-rise housing incorporating suburban style amenities in both semi-urban and inner-ring suburban conditions. The proposed design solutions needed to address the realities of today's market and legal constraints but also present a forward-looking idea of what could be developed in the future.

In the first phase, students leaned about the history of several experimental suburbs,[10] and visited sites of less successful examples of suburban/urban style housing, including the PHA houing above. They conducted extensive research in small groups to investigate issues of Philadelphia suburban housing including history and precedents, land and zoning codes, affordable/sustainable home construction, and socio/economic demographics. In Phase 2, students evaluated and selected an underutilized site outside the urban core of Philadelphia and wrote a program that identified the target audience and proposed the percentage of detached, semi-detached and attached housing they felt was best suited for their chosen site. In the third and largest phase, groups refined their program and designed a detailed masterplan with building/lot sizes, street/sidewalk layouts, and green/open spaces. (e.g. Figs. 7-8) From this plan each student created a model home design that fit into their framework. One example of each different house typology used, detached, semi-detached or attached, was developed per group. As the house designs developed, adjustments were made to the masterplan in a non-linear design process. Collaboration among the team members was essential to ensure a cohesive collection of house types that maintained neighborhood identity. Students were given freedom with their chosen site to suggest a variety of housing typologies and many veered towards traditional urban infill housing as part of their group's masterplan. However, the two examples shown in this paper demonstrate projects that best integrated suburban home qualities into their part of the masterplan and home design.

[8] Hallie Busta, More PreFab Passive House Options for North America, (Architect Magazine Website, June 14, 2016)
[9] GO Logic Website, http://www.gologic.us/
[10] Amanda Kolson Hurley, Radical Suburbs: Experimental Living on the Fringes of the American City, (Belt Publishing, 2019)

Figure 7. Example 1 Site Plan; Turchi, Messner, Juliano

Figure 8. Example 2 Site Plan; Pratty, Etienne, Hughes

In Example 1, the group selected a site with many vacant buildings and lots at the intersection of several train, subway and bus lines where they proposed a new transit-oriented development (TOD). While other team members proposed double-lot infill housing and a Single Room Occupancy hotel, Alexandra Turchi focused on designing a neighborhood of low-income passive solar homes on an underused parking lot next to the train station. (e.g. Figs. 7, 9-11) Her goal was to discourage over-gentrification by creating small affordable homes that existing residents of the surrounding depressed neighborhood would be able to afford. The twin (double) homes have an abundance of windows and shading balconies on the south side, minimum fenestration on the north for privacy, and are arranged in a checkerboard pattern to maximize sun access. Each unit also provides a private parking spot and a green space to the south.

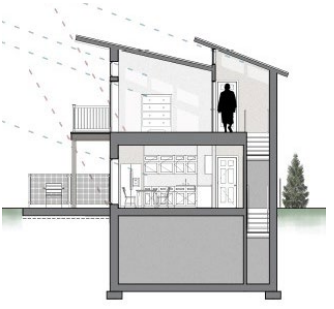


Figure 9. Example 1 Section: Turchi

Figure 10. Example 1 Housing, South Perspective: Turchi

Figure 11. Example 1 Isometric; Turchi

For Example 2, the group selected the site of a long-abandoned rail yard just a block away from beautiful Fairmount Park, one of the largest urban parks in the US. A new street grid was oriented towards the south to maximize solar exposure and two different types of passive attached housing were proposed on alternating blocks. Lauren Pratty's design (e.g. Figs. 8, 12-13) proposed two rows of 3-story rowhomes separated by an elevated common green space with a parking garage below. The elevated terrace provides a safe, enclosed place for kids to play while sheltering the cars below to reduce hard-paved surfaces and eliminate garage doors on the street. The plaza width is sized, and the southern rowhouses are massed, to ensure enough south sun reaches both the green space and the homes on the north side.

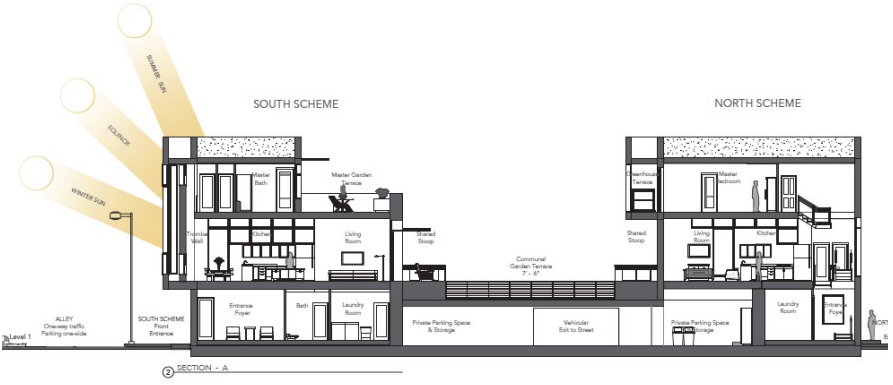


Figure 12. Example 2 Cross Section; Pratty

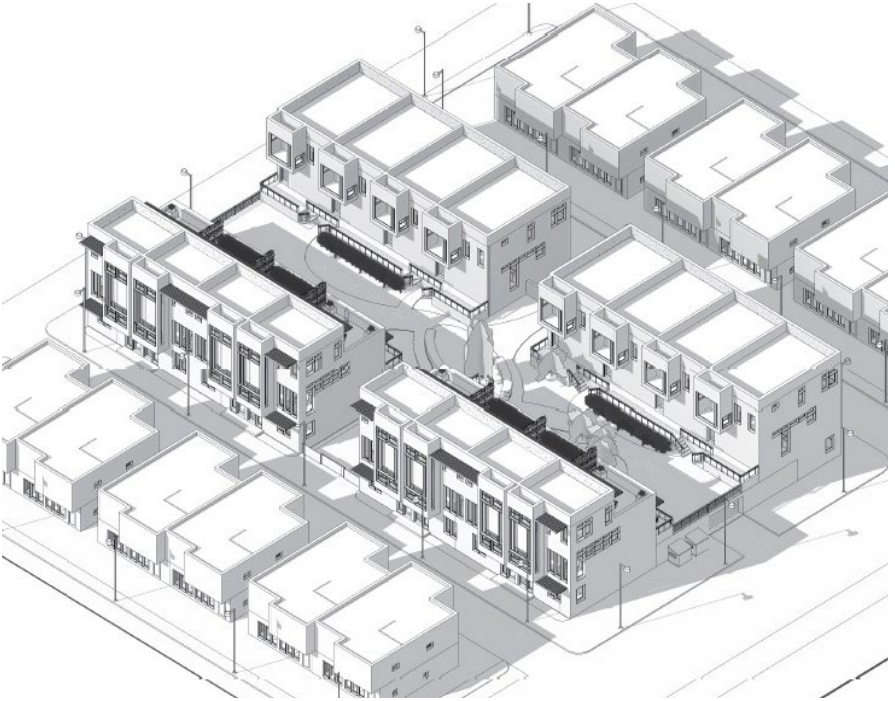


Figure 13. Example 2 Isometric; Pratty

CONCLUSION

> "...the general idea was that the suburbs offered comfort and personal space, private backyards and a bedroom for each kid. City living was more exciting and offered culture and a more diverse mix of everything, but required some sacrifice. Apartments were smaller, parking a headache and a backyard unimaginable."[11]

Both of the examples above were able to create hybrid *(sub)Urban* housing typologies that provided dedicated off-street parking, more green space, direct sunlight for heat and light, and are forms that are good candidates for prefabrication. They add these suburban qualities while simultaneously respecting and maintaining the urban scale and patterns of the existing neighborhood to take advantage of the underused land outside our city centers. Urban dwelling has shown to be a very sustainable way to live because of the shared walls, services, transportation, etc. created by its density of buildings. To attract hesitant home buyers away from the suburbs and into the city, we may need to entice them with certain qualities of suburban living, along with greater energy efficient homes, that buyers are starting to request.[12] Some builders are already offering suburban amenities like rooftop lawns with hammocks, easy parking and house-like apartments in their new urban developments claiming "the suburban life in the city is what we're going for."[13] The open lands at the peripheries of our cities could provide the place to blend the best of both worlds. If the perceived (and real) negative aspects of city living such as small, dark homes with scarce parking and tiny yards can be minimized though *(sub)Urban* hybrid house models, more people may be willing to move back inward to fill the holes left at the city's fringes by decades of continual, outward expansion.

[11] Candace Jackson, The Suburbs Are Coming to a City Near You, (New York Times, May18, 2019)
[12] Gabriel Popkin, Can expensive, ultra-green homes sell in a gritty suburban Maryland town?, (Washington Post Magazine, May 18, 2017)
[13] Jackson

REFERENCES

Alan Berge, Joel Kotkin, Celina Balderas Guzman, *Infinite Suburbia*, (Princeton Architectural Press, New York, 2017)

Brookings Institute, *Vacant Land in Cities: An Urban Resource,* (2001)

John Kromer, *Fixing Broken Cities: The Implementation of Urban Development Strategies,* (Routledge, 2010)

Yale Program on Climate Change Communication and the George Mason University Center for Climate Change Communication, *Climate Change in the American Mind,* (2018)

Renee y. Chow, *Suburban Space: The Fabric of Dwelling,* (University of California Press, 2002)

Heather Senison, *The Suburban Burden: Living In The City Is Less Expensive In These Areas,* (Forbes Magazine, October 17, 2018)

Hallie Busta, *More PreFab Passive House Options for North America,* (Architect Magazine Website, June 14, 2016)

GO Logic Website, http://www.gologic.us/

Amanda Kolson Hurley, *Radical Suburbs: Experimental Living on the Fringes of the American City,* (Belt Publishing, 2019)

Candace Jackson, *The Suburbs Are Coming to a City Near You*, (New York Times, May18, 2019)

Gabriel Popkin, *Can expensive, ultra-green homes sell in a gritty suburban Maryland town?,* (Washington Post Magazine, May 18, 2017)

PAPER #3.11

CHANGING THE CURRENCY OF MANUFACTURED LAKES IN THE GREAT PLAINS

David Karle[a]
[a]University of Nebraska, Lincoln, Nebraska

ABSTRACT

This paper tackles the principle research question of how the coexistence of old material extraction pits and new residential development has brought the process of urbanism into manufactured sites. This paper will discuss the importance of balancing urban expansion within decommissioned material extraction sites in the Great Plains, and specifically in the city of Grand Island, Nebraska, for the purpose of framing new design opportunities for post-industrial sites.

KEYWORDS

Urbanism; architecture; planning; reclaimed landscapes.

INTRODUCTION

Radical transformations of land use, infrastructure, and ecology that take place beyond urban city limits have been described by Neil Brenner as operational landscapes of planetary urbanization, all of which have made urban density possible (2018). Examples of these transformations include the resource extraction, waste management, food production, water use, energy harvesting, improved transportation networks, and creation of infrastructure that sustains urban society. These transformations have played a significant role in supporting urban growth throughout history, one example being the clear-cut logging operations in the midwestern United States and central Canada between 1890-1920 that provided lumber to build the modern commercial centers of Boston, New York, and Philadelphia (Belanger, 2010, 9). Even today, this and other transformations continue to create significant social, spatial, economic, and environmental change.

Prior to industrialization, city and landscape existed not in a state of conflict, but a state of support. It was only with the coming of the industrial era that cities, countries, and landscapes became isolated zones of occupation and practice. What is often left in the wake of these operations is a decommissioned site with minimal foresight or opportunity for future use. These decommissioned or out-of-use sites index the histories and eras of urban and rural landscapes, and include railroads, sandpits, train stations, single-room schoolhouses, and post offices. Over time these abandoned sites scar the built environment and often service an urban- or infrastructural-scale agenda. As Lucy Lippard describes, "urban culture is unaware of its origins and rural birthplaces" (Lippard, 2014, 11).

Today, urban and rural America are littered with evidence showing the country's former industrial prowess over the last two centuries, and many of these old places, now abandoned, hold new latent value for their transformation and reuse. The Midwest rustbelt and the Mountain West (Berger, 2002) regions have arguably been the most impacted by rapid industrial development. These areas frame the more seldom-discussed Great Plains, whose industrial-scale sites of natural resources (particularly water and sand) have serviced large metropolitan regions around the globe for over a century. This essay addresses the principle research question of how the coexistence of old material extraction processes and new residential development have brought the process of urbanism into

manufactured sites. Specifically, it focuses on the importance of balancing urban expansion within decommissioned material extraction sites in the Great Plains for the purpose of framing new design opportunities for post-industrial sites.

The Great Plains has continually reclaimed old industrial sites by seeking new solutions via innovative programming. This can be seen in examples ranging from sites of agricultural products and production to sites of material extraction. Unlike historic landscape-scale sites such as urban brickyards and cement plants that pose enormous difficulties for brownfield redevelopment, Nebraska's rural sandpits are post-industrial sites with value-changing capacity for emerging recreational- and architectural-scale interventions altering the currency of water by creating new, untapped spatial and environmental configurations that balance systems of urban growth, material extraction, and ecology. These configurations take the form of parks as well as planned and unplanned residential developments ranging from suburban developments and single-family estates. Alan Berger suggests these reclaimed manufactured landscapes "reflect cultural values and shape new models of consuming and occupying the land" (Berger, 7-9). Cultural values change the built environment quickly and often with unforeseen impacts to the space, environment, and quality of life. To understand this impact on the built environment we must recall the value of extracted materials in the Great Plains.

1.EXTRACTION IN THE GREAT PLAINS

1.1. History of Water in the Great Plains

Thomas Jefferson's label of the Great Plains as a garden (1803) was central to his concept of agrarianism, initiating the first misunderstanding of water in the Great Plains. Decades later in 1820 this reading was corrected by explorer Stephen H. Long's label of "great desert," which serves as a more accurate reading of the historical and current condition of the land. The late 1800s saw a rise in attempts both locally and nationally to fabricate water in barren arid climates. This movement was led by Frank Melbourne, who traveled the country alluring communities with his claims to fabricate water from the sky. The idea of fabricating water was revisited by farmers and ranchers in Colorado and western Nebraska through the use of pivot irrigation. A few decades later, however, the role of water was barely considered by the U.S. government in its 1936 New Deal Planning Report for the drought-stricken region, as discussed in Gilbert White's 1986 essay "The Future of the Great Plains Re-Visited." White posits that the implementation of groundwater pumping in the early 1940s and resultant drought-resistant crops "altered their [productivity] capacity" for decades to come (White, 1986, 93). Fabricating water through groundwater pumping and access water through the root systems of drought-tolerant crops has attempted to mediate the harsh climate above the earth by using access water below the surface.

Through resource extraction technology such as the ubiquitous fields of water-pumping wells for cattle and agriculture, the value of pumping water in the Great Plains has never been more clearly visible. Today, nearly one third of irrigation to the region's crops is supplied by the High Plains Aquifer. The semi-arid region of the Great Plains has had a long and often troubled relationship between water and sand, as documented most notably during the Dust Bowl of the 1930s. Today, water and sand are connected through the process of aquifer recharge, although the recharge rate does not equal the rate of extraction. Throughout the region, sand serves as a building block for ecosystems, agriculture, and the built environment.

1.2. History of Sand in the Great Plains

James Swinehart, emeritus research geologist, notes that "the Central and Southern Great Plains contains the greatest concentration of windblown sand in North America" (Swinehart), which includes the Nebraska Sandhills, a national natural landmark and region of mixed-grass prairie on grass-stabilized sand dunes in north-central Nebraska that covers just over one quarter of the state. The Sandhills are the largest and most intricate wetland ecosystem in the United States, and contain a large array of plant and animal life. In addition to being an ecological building block, Nebraska's sand has been considered a commodity since the settlement of urban areas in the 1800s and continuing with the expansion of continental infrastructure systems such as the interstate highway network. The population of Omaha quadrupled from 30,000 to 120,000 in the late 1800s, and the city's first asphalt pavement was laid in 1882, sparking an ambitious street improvement project. This endeavor would last for the next forty years and expand the city's transportation network while providing a huge market for the sand used in making asphalt. At the time, sandpit mines were mostly located along railroad tracks, allowing the use of steam-powered drag-line as well as making it easy to transport material across the state.

Between 1900 and 1993 Nebraska hosted 3,228 separate sand and gravel pits covering nearly 40,000 acres. In 1986 alone over 9,600 short tons of sand and gravel with a value of nearly $24 million were sold or used by producers in Nebraska. In 1999, the annual production value of Nebraska sand and gravel was valued at approximately $40 million. Following the reduction in construction activity that began with the 2008–2009 recession and continued through 2011, the construction industry again began expanding in 2014 with increased production and consumption of cement, construction sand and gravel, crushed stone, and gypsum, mineral commodities that are used almost exclusively in construction.

Sand and water in the Great Plains continue to negotiate space and function similar to the way they did a century ago. More recently, the economy built on sand and water has expanded the value of both by considering old commodity sites based on sand and gravel extraction pits into new amenity-based sites through recreational and residential developments. The old sites consist of decommissioned out-of-use sand and gravel extraction locations, which are then reclaimed with new amenity-based programs allowing the site to evolve with the new needs and values of the local community.

2. SAND AND WATER

2.1. Sand for Lakes

The majority of sand and gravel extraction mines in Nebraska are located directly above the state's aquifers. Unlike other national mining locations, the water table along the Platte River extends only 5-10 feet below the surface, causing the sandpits to quickly fill w ith water. S andpit m ines transformed into freshwater lakes dot the landscape and mask the extraction process in the state. The visibility of these lakes in the semi-arid climate has shifted regional assumptions about water from a mere commodity to a valuable amenity capable of generating an emergent city growth pattern and constructed ecologies that mask the material extraction process.

Nebraska is a landlocked state without any significant b odies o f water, m aking former sand and gravel sites reclaimed as recreational and residential lakes the prevailing lake type in the state. These sandpit lakes are not new to Nebraska and were the result of the state's infrastructure expansion during the 1950s. The cohabitation of old post-industrial sand and gravel extraction sites with new amenity-based programs reconsiders spatial programing in the form of recreational lakes, nesting grounds for endangered birds, and residential development.

2.2. Sand for Infrastructure

In 1956 the Federal Aid Highway Act signed by President Dwight D. Eisenhower authorized construction of the National System of Interstate and Defense Highways. This was a grand plan that required both vision and material resources to produce the necessary 41,000 miles of highway surface. In Nebraska the decision was made to align the interstate highway with the state-spanning Platte River over a distance of 150 miles in the middle of the state. This alignment proved to be beneficial since there was a tremendous amount of raw sand and gravel material available for the extraction and mixing of concrete. However, balancing the river's potential with the needs of the highway would become a point of contention and debate.

During the construction of the interstate's overpasses and on-off-ramps, extraction pits quickly filled with water due to the high water table of the nearby Platte River. At the time, Mel Steen, head of the Fisheries Division of the Nebraska Game and Parks Commission, was aware of the high water table's effect and sought to challenge assumptions related to water and extraction pits in the Platte River valley by advocating for a chain of lakes. Steen determined specifications and "strongly recommended the contractor be required to take fill dirt from a series of small, concentrated surface areas to a depth of approximately 15 feet" (Thomas). The sand, gravel, and fill from these sandpits were needed to construct the roadbeds and overpass approaches, and mining these materials off the right-of-way was an easy way to complete the task. At the time, Steen knew these excavations could create unique fishing opportunities for anglers, and engineers and fishery biologists lobbied hard to keep them within the public right-of-way of the interstate. Their efforts were eventually successful: currently the 150-mile section of I-80 from Grand Island to North Platte has more than 116 excavated lakes, 46 of which are publicly owned, making up 720 surface acres of water available for public fishing. These sites are collectively referred to as the I-80 lakes (Thomas), and the first of these pits near Grand Island generated a 39-acre lake easily accessible from the interstate. These artificially constructed freshwater lakes are an example of a constructed ecology and are a spatial type overlooked by the design disciplines; they hold immense potential for balancing global extraction processes with local ecological systems and create new value for these areas through wildlife habitat (see Figure 1).

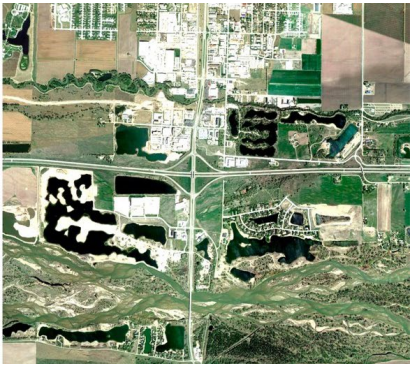


Figure 1. The I-80 lakes range in size from 1 to 42 acres and are visible from the highway, offering habitats that attract new wildlife both above and below the water. (Left photo © Nebraskaland Magazine/Nebraska Game and Parks Commission, right image from Google Earth.)

2.3. Sand for Survival

In Nebraska, sand is more than just a raw material for infrastructure: it is considered an essential habitat. The previously mentioned Nebraska Sandhills are only one example of large areas of sand providing an ecosystem for the state. Throughout Nebraska endangered birds are dependent on the byproducts of heavy industry, including old sandpit lakes, for survival. Active and abandoned sandpit lakes across the state currently sustain two populations of endangered and threatened birds: the interior least tern and the piping plover. These habitats are an example of a constructed ecology—or what David Fletcher describes as the unavoidable result of the interaction of infrastructural and natural systems (Fletcher, 2009, 34-51). In this constructed ecology sand provides an adequate place to nest and the lakes provide opportunities for feeding.

Historically, the state and federally endangered interior least tern and the threatened piping plover have flourished on the sparsely vegetated midstream sandbars of local rivers, but recently much of this natural habitat has been lost due to broad-scale alternations of natural river systems. These habitats are inadvertently created by sand and gravel mining, dredging, and other construction operations. As a result, these birds frequently nest in human-created habitats outside of the river channel: in 2018 there were 47 off-river nesting sites, including 21 at lakeshore housing developments and 26 at sand and gravel mines. These off-river sites are aided by the significant efforts of local activists, university partnerships, and mining and construction companies who incorporate bird nesting into the industrial process (Brown). The human-created habitats represent the coexisting of old sites and new function in an urban context. They are examples of proactive environmental thinking and complex spatial research by the Tern Plover Conservation Partnership (Tern and Plover Conservation Partnership), who annually meets with production crews, property managers, real estate developers, and homeowners' associations to establish site-specific management and monitoring plans.

3. EXTRACTING THE BUILT ENVIRONMENT OF GRAND ISLAND

3.1. Spatializing Extraction

Centered around the idea that an infinite supply of gravel exists in central Nebraska, sandpit extraction is helping to facilitate growth in Grand Island, the state's second fastest-growing city. Grand Island has a population of about 50,000 people and is the third-largest city in Nebraska behind Lincoln and Omaha. Located in close proximity to the Platte River, Grand Island is also located six miles north of Interstate 80. The city's sand and gravel demand figures to be a bout 3 88,450 tons per year based on population estimates from the Regional Planning Department, with the majority being used for streets, highways, and buildings (Overstreet).

As of 2020, seventy-plus post-industrial sandpit lakes are helping to facilitate population growth in Grand Island. The city has embraced both the sand and gravel extraction process and a newfound appreciation for the value of water, with most of the development happening near the seventy industrial-scale sandpit extraction sites within and surrounding the city. These sites are typically mined for as little as a single season or as long as multiple decades, with the majority currently out of production. Lucy Lippard, writer, activist, and curator, posits that "most landscapes are actually designed by culture at the hand of anonymous amateurs who work by trial and error and privileged function over form" (Lippard, 7). Likewise, the shapes and forms of these sandpits are often irregular and based around machine mining until they are no longer economically viable.

Several of the seventy-plus extraction pits in Grand Island have been decommissioned, but by adding new social programs to these

Figure 2. Grand Island active sandpit extraction, size separation, and aggregate separation. The high water table of the Ogallala Aquifer supplies freshwater lakes. Photos by A. O'Neill.

lakes they can be viewed through the lens of what Alan Berger describes as a "reclaimed landscape." According to Berger, "reclaiming landscape is the creation of a new condition in which land is rescraped in accordance with a new program (subdivisions, grazing fields, ponds, etc.) (Berger, 151). The resultant form occupies the land through the co-existence of the previously abandoned old sites and the new amenity-based programs. The reclaimed ground or space for programming among the almost seventy-plus extraction pits is changing the process of city expansion in Grand Island.

The industrial- and ecological-scale networks are forming new development patterns that no longer rely either on the dominant Jeffersonian grid or on architecture's historic role as the basic building block for organizing space, but instead rely on the operating procedures of material extraction and the resultant lakes. These sites are an example of what Nina Marie Lister describes as "complex and dynamic cultural-natural systems [resulting in] a multi-scaled and multi-layered urbanism involving cultural, social, political, economic, infrastructural, and ecological conditions that are layered, tangled, and mutually dependent" (Lister, 525-526). In Nebraska, this multi-layered urbanism consists of vertically layered groundwater where ecologies and architectural environments concealed below ground are revealed to the surface. Multi-layered urbanism exists in Grand Island where the city continues to benefit from material extraction while balancing city expansion. From as early as the 1930s the city's groundwater was made visible in the form of sandpit lakes, and these lakes challenge our assumptions about water usage while drastically altering the city's built environment. While the majority of old extraction pits surrounding the city have not been reclaimed, several have been redeveloped with new amenity-based programs consisting of residential housing, and a smaller number have been reclaimed as public parks.

3.2. Programming Extraction

Over the years the functional and social value of the seventy mining sites in Grand Island has changed, and as of 2017 the existing function of the old extraction pits consisted of 28 residential, 14 undeveloped, 9 ag/business, 8 public parks, and 9 currently active. Some pits are located in the urban center while most are located near the agrarian edge. The overall size of the pits ranges from several hundred feet to a half mile in length. The resultant lakes generally have steep banks and dramatic changes in depth (Nebraska Game and Parks), and some smaller lakes have microtopography ranging from 15-30 feet deep with larger lakes reaching depths of 70-plus feet (Pekraek). Currently the sandpit lakes are owned by homeowners'

associations, engineering companies, private owners, and sand and gravel extraction companies. In an attempt to understand this evolution of pit size and program type, a series of visualizations were assembled to index the changing landscape by documenting the limits of water and sand over the last twenty years.

3.3. Indexing Extraction

Changes to the built environment of a city are often difficult to visualize or spatialize due to their overall size and increment. In the case of Grand Island, the processes of digging down for material extraction and building up for residential development have significantly impacted the annexation of the city. The defining spatial characteristics organizing old urban order for Grand Island include the orthogonal Jeffersonian Grid and the irregular railroad lines that cut diagonally across the city. Today the city is challenging the historical top-down national planning order and no longer relying of the superimposed continental grid to dictate space, with the old urban orders quickly being replaced by new spatial practices based on natural features that include soil type and water table level. This bottom-up practice organizes space around natural features instead of arbitrary ordering systems. The results provide a variety of unique spatial types rather than predictable and repetitive ordering systems, with one example occurring when the former sandpits are reclaimed as public parks and residential developments.

The impacts of these processes can best be seen by analyzing freeze-frame aerial photographic sequences of Grand Island, with the photos cataloguing discrete moments that represent the city as both an object within a field of agriculture and an urban condition undergoing changes over time. The visualizations provide a lens allowing us to understand the correlation between the old material extraction sites and the new residential developments.

The process of indexing and analyzing freeze-frame aerial photographic sequences utilized historic imagery from Google Earth Pro's time slider feature to document the evolution of the extraction pits over the years 1993, 1999, 2002, 2003, 2005, 2006, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2013, and 2016. Aerial photography from the state and county historical societies extended the timeline beyond Google Earth to include 1938 and 1975. The indexing and analysis process provided a new perspective for viewing the city based on the growth and development of material extraction sites. Google Earth Pro technology allows users to track the irregular boundary profile of each lake and compare its evolution over time. This technology also serves as an effective tool for determining the location of each lake relative to Grand Island's city limits, allowing further analysis and consideration of future city annexations. A comparative assessment of each lake relative to its geographical location indicated several trends among each lake type: for example, most residential lakes lie outside the city limits, undeveloped lakes are equally split between city and non-city, all current extraction pits are outside the city limits, most business/ag lakes are outside the city limits, and most park lakes are inside the city limits.

The history of these sites is diverse, ranging from landowners creating their own lakes by allowing extraction companies to mine their land to families purchasing property at the edge of an existing lake on which to build a house. Throughout the city of Grand Island 28 lake areas reminiscent of typical suburban subdivisions were intentionally designed, excavated, and converted into desirable high-end housing. The majority of both planned and unplanned residential lakes remain outside of Grand Island's city limits, suggesting an appeal for suburban dwelling. Using a method of evaluation based on the shifting profile boundary of each lake and the uniformity of the surrounding development, it was determined that only about 20 percent of residential lakes were originally planned for

domestic development. The lakes originally planned for residential habitation share two common characteristics: relatively unchanged lake profiles and an organized array of housing. The planned developments often replicate traditional suburban models with front and back yards, forming continuous yards of grass in the front and back of each house and a strip of sand following the perimeter of the lake. Each home sits perpendicular to the water offering a 180-degree view across the lake to neighboring residents with an attached garage in front and front doors facing the street. Most planned residential lakes operate as homeowners' associations and could have considered public open space or additional community amenities, including parks, playgrounds, or sports fields for use by residents. A good example of these amenities can be seen in the horseshoe-shaped Kuester Lake, which contains a restaurant/bar at one end of the lake and a large park with tennis courts on the peninsula (see Figure 3). The planned residential lakes have about half the average and median property acreage compared to other unplanned lake types. By operating outside the city limits, both planned and unplanned lakes are most easily implemented as new residential areas, likely due to their high desirability and the lack of density and city regulations. The reclaimed landscapes of these sandpits serve a new programing and urban order for the city by bringing urbanism into manufactured sites.

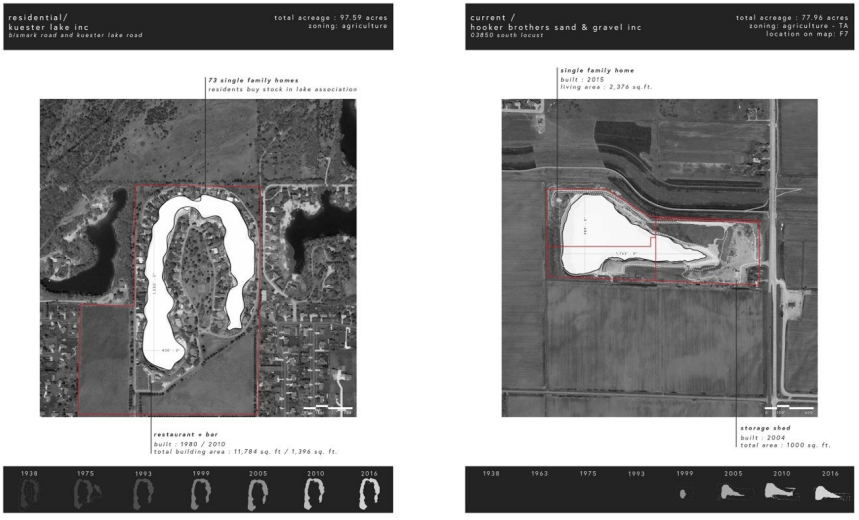


Figure 3. Visualization worksheets indexing changes in sandpit extraction sites and resultant lake changes from 1993, 1999, 1995, 2010, and 2016. Kuester Lake (left), McMahon property (middle), Hooker Bros. Sand & Gravel (right). Of the 29 total residential lakes, 9 are within the city limits and 20 are outside. Visualizations by author.

3.4. Occupying Extraction

There are several ways to occupy the planned and unplanned extraction sites in Grand Island. The city has constructed a range of programs and types of development in Grand Island. The multi-unit planned residential development Kuester Lake is outside the city limits and one of the oldest sandpits in Grand Island, having been mined from 1919 to 1937 by an Omaha sand and gravel company to support asphalt pavement in Omaha. While an active mining site, rail cars would move sand and gravel to building projects, though after operations ceased in 1937 the mine's two ponds were dredged to create the lake's distinct horseshoe shape. Resource extraction and mining operation in this part of the city was replicated over the years, creating new pits, lakes, and residential developments. Another planned site, the residential development of Ponderosa Lake Estates, is within the city limits and ranks as one of the most prestigious sandpit residential sites in Grand Island. The sandpit was developed, mined, and pumped by Missouri Valley Construction in the 1960s and 1970s. The lake is surrounded by 88 homes with an average square footage of 3,311, with the largest covering 10,582 square feet. Currently, some of the houses are undergoing issues with settling because most of them were built on sand that had not yet completely settled after the dynamite mining.

Alternately, an example of an unplanned residential development is one partially owned by Hooker Bros. Sand & Gravel, which was mined from 1994 to 2014. The property has four land parcels, two of which are owned by the gravel company and two of which are owned by individuals. In 2015 a 2,376 square foot house was built on the northwest corner of the site by the co-owner of the Hooker Bros. company. These instances illustrate how both planned and unplanned residential sandpit lakes are maximizing the land value of these decommissioned post-industrial spaces. They have successfully negotiated the process of bringing urbanism into manufactured sites and offer a precedent for similar spatial conditions around the world. In addition to these developed residential sites, the city has repurposed ten former extraction sites into city parks.

Out of Grand Island's seventy mining sites, ten have been converted into public parks in or near the urban center. These lakes have an interesting history: several were hand-dug, and as early as 1910, prior to refrigeration, they were harvested for ice that was sold to residents in the era of iceboxes. In the 1930s, three sites became public parks when they were filled in with topsoil from other pits. Augustine Park (a.k.a. Sunken Garden), which is depressed by about five feet, was used as a borrow pit for an elementary school. These public spaces formerly aided in the development of the urban center by supplying sand and gravel during the 1920s and 1930s for making concrete for building purposes. These old sites leave a mark on the city in the form of physical objects (e.g., buildings or roads), with the resultant park or exposed lake remaining as negative space. The negative space has been programmed with public amenities, including public parks and schools, that physically show the city's history. These urban sites represent an era of development and expansion that has resulted in concentration and density. How will the sandpits at the edge of the city that are being developed by homeowner's associations or as single-family residences contribute to the daily experience for all Grand Island citizens in a manner similar to that of the urban parks? Or is it too late for the edge-city sandpits to engage in public experience, since so many of them have been privatized? As industrial extraction processes have increased, new concerns have surfaced related to the quality of water, habitat, and architecture of sandpit lakes.

3.5. Excessive Extraction

While waterfront residential subdivisions are in high demand throughout Nebraska, they often mask the undiscussed negative impacts of their development: challenges include issues with settling house foundations, lack of awareness, and disagreements among residents regarding best water management practices, temperature and thermal stratification, and chemistry and chemical stratification. Such issues may partly stem from the reclamation of these lakes, since, as Katie Pekarek, Extension Educator on Water Quality, states, "sandpits and stormwater ponds are marketed to homeowners as an amenity, but are not developed with the primary intention of being an amenity and are therefore not designed to serve the purposes that they are sold for" (Pekarek). Consequently, over time these land-use transformations are likely to trigger small-scale environmental changes leading to the displacement of native wildlife, the introduction of new species, and vegetation change, among other ecological consequences. Moving forward, if active mining sites are designed in a responsible way by considering factors from machine mining to architectural buildings, future lakes could provide better amenities for people, animals, and the regional ecological network.

4. FUTURE SCENARIOS

Post-industrial site development has seen landscape and ecology become primary vectors in contemporary urbanism (Lister, 525). This can most prominently be seen throughout the countryside, where these systems are inherent to water usage, land use, and settlement patterns. Mohsen Mostafavi lays the groundwork for challenging the development status quo when he states that "we must be aware of the dynamic relationships, both visible and invisible, that exist among the various domains of a larger terrain of urban as well as rural ecologies" (Mostafavi, 29). Building upon Mostafavi's ecological urbanism theory, these hybrid cultural-natural sites have great value for balancing the demands of global resource extraction with the needs of local planning efforts. In Grand Island alone, eight active and fourteen inactive and undeveloped extraction sites exist, all of which have the potential for a new sensibility that balances the value of water as a developer-driven amenity. Considering the relationship between global resource extraction and urban development further suggests the types of design innovations that can emerge from architecture, landscape architecture, urban design/planning, and ecological thinking as a result of this relationship between post-industrial sites and cultural-natural systems (see Figure 4).

Figure 4. Photographic collage depicting a hybrid scenario balance ecology in the foreground, material extraction in the middleground, and residential development in the background. Representation by A. O'Neill.

As central Nebraska continues to confront changing assumptions about water and sand, manmade lakes serve as a critical cultural-natural nexus. Reclaimed sandpit lakes reflect cultural values by forming a pattern of development and creating new freshwater ecologies across the state. The performance of these lakes, however, can be made more productive prior to and during the mining process by considering factors related to post-industrial development (see Figure 4). Responsible design solutions must be forged through architecture, landscape architecture, urban design/planning, and ecological thinking as a result of this relationship between post-industrial sites and cultural-natural systems. Those seeking future possibilities for sandpit lakes as both operational landscapes and amenities should acknowledge the foresight of Mel Steen as well as the development potential of the lakes themselves to simultaneously provide social, economic, and ecological benefits.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The author would like to thank the research assistants who aided in the development of this paper and funding from the Undergraduate Creative Activities and Research Experience (UCARE) program at UNL.

REFERENCES

Berger, A. 2002. *Reclaiming the American West*. Princetone, NJ: Princeton Architectural Press.

Brown, M.B., Dinan, L.R., Jorgensen, J.G. 2015. *Interior Least Tern and Piping Plover Monitoring, Research, Management, and Outreach Report for the Lower Platte River, Nebraska*. University of Nebraska. http://ternandplover.unl.edu/download/annualreport/2015_TPCP_annual_report.pdf

Fletcher, D. 2009. *Los Angeles River Watershed: Flood Control Freakology.* The Infrastructural City: Networked Ecologies in Los Angeles. Barcelona: Atrar Pres.

Lippard, L. 2014. U*ndermining: A Wild Ride Through Land Art, Politics, and Art in the Changing West*. New York & London: The New Press.

Lister, N. 2010. I*nsurgent Ecologies: (Re) Claiming Ground in Landscape and Urbanisnm*. Ecological Urbanism. Lars Muller.

Mostafavi, M. 2010. *Why Ecological Urbanism? Why Now.* Ecological Urbanism. Lars Muller.

Nebraska Game and Parks. 2013. *Managing Sandpits for Better Fishing*. outdoornebraska.gov/wp-content/uploads/2016/12/SANDPIT-MANAGEMENT-for-Better-Fishing-2013.pdf.

Overstreet, T. 2005. *Sand and Gravel permit controversy back in front of city.* The Grand Island Independent. http://www.theindependent.com/news/sand-and-gravel-permit-controversy-back-in-front-of-city/article_a2fe89fa-cf19-50fc-832e-557eaba3f216.html.

Pekarek, K. 2019. University of Nebraska, Institute of Agriculture and Natural Resources, UNL Water Extension Educator.

Swinehart J. Sandhills. University of Nebraska-Lincoln. http://plainshumanities.unl.edu/encyclopedia/doc/egp.pe.053.

Tern and Plover Conservation Partnership. University of Nebraska, School of Natural Resources. http://ternandplover.unl.edu/

Thomas, B. 1970. *Super Highway Lakes*. Feild & Stream.

White, G. 1986. *The Future of The Great Plains Re-Visited*. Great Plains Quarterly 973.

PAPER #3.12

SCARPA IN LIGHT OF CROCE: THE POST-LYRICAL CITY

Frank Harrison Weiner[a]
[a]Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, Blacksburg, Virginia, USA

ABSTRACT

Analogies across the disciplines of philosophy and architecture are always difficult to construct and often result in 'specious analogies' to borrow a phrase from the philosopher Susanne Langer. Despite the risks accompanying such endeavors this paper attempts to forge meaningful connections between the philosopher Benedetto Croce's idea of lyrical expression and the virtuoso architectural work of Carlo Scarpa at the Museo Civico di Castelvecchio in Verona, Italy. Through a reading of Castelvecchio in light of Croce's aesthetic thought the formulation of a post-lyrical city will be posited.

KEYWORDS

Scarpa; croce; expression; lyrical; lyre.

INTRODUCTION: NORTH AND SOUTH

In bringing together the philosopher Benedetto Croce (b. 1866 – d.1952) and the architect Carlo Scarpa (b.1906 d.1978) one is reminded about the historic divide existing between the North and South of Italy. As to the significance of this division one may recall the book by the Italian poet Carlo Levi exiled to the South under the regime of Mussolini in his memoir, *Christ Stopped at Eboli.* At one time to cross south of Eboli was tantamount to leaving the influence of Rome and the Church. Croce was born in Naples the seat from which Vico established a most beautiful Neapolitan humanistic philosophy uniquely Italian in spirit. Scarpa born in Venice also saw himself a child of ancient Greece and Byzantium. Scarpa worked rather locally but his reputation spread widely among architectural cognoscenti worldwide. Croce's influence spread to the North and well beyond Europe by virtue of the quality of his ideas and the tenacious industry of his substantial publishing efforts. His extensive publication activity was an efficient method to broadly disseminate his ideas to a wide audience in and outside of Italy. Croce and Scarpa both had a love and passion for books. Scarpa's library included nine volumes of Croce's works. To what extent Scarpa explicitly adopted Croce dictums regarding aesthetic expression is certainly a matter for speculation. There are however indications that there was in fact a significant influence from Croce on Scarpa regarding the importance of expression and this may shed new light upon Scarpa's work. In what seems to be a proper proportion Scarpa had over 4,000 books in his library and Croce about 70,000. Let us count these books among their many friends.

Scarpa's substantial personal library was open to many of his friends both within his architectural circle and others such as the noted Venetian musical composer Luigi Nono (b.1920 – d.1990). Nono's wife Nuria Schoenburg Nono spoke of their wonderful experiences as a frequent guest at Scarpa's Venetian home. She learned from the visits Scarpa was deeply erudite and exceptionally well-read across many fields of culture. This of course is true to an even larger extent for Croce. Reading provided Scarpa with a deeper legibility to his work if one takes the time to read his buildings. Perhaps in fact the weakness of Croce was his incredible erudition in which the breadth and depth of his

knowledge were simply too powerful for his own good. He had a tendency to compulsively edit or correct the thoughts and work of others with the mentality of a critic. However, his moments of lucidity particular in relation to aesthetics, literature and history remain largely undetected and are relatively untapped repositories for thinking about architecture. To paraphrase Adolf Loos, only a small part of architecture belongs to art and it is this small artful part that gains large importance when thinking about the work of Scarpa in relation to Croce's idea of expression. Croce's somewhat anachronistic use of the term 'expression' appears to hover between the relative and the absolute and is a novel turn in the history of an idea.[1]

1. A BRIEF GUIDE TO CROCE AND HIS IDEA OF EXPRESSION

Croce burst onto the philosophical scene with the publication of his *Aesthetic as the Language of Expression and the General Linguistic* (first published in English in 1909). It could be said this work unexpectedly propelled him far too quickly into a fame he may have never sought. Throughout the rest of his remarkably productive scholarly life, he amended his initial thoughts about aesthetics that were of part of his broader systematic attempt to layout a fuller philosophy of the human spirit. However, through all his scholarly life the core of his aesthetic ideas remained the same – art was expression identical with intuition. Later he would say that art is a form of lyrical expression and even cosmic expression. It is perhaps this lyrical turn that is most amenable to the work of Scarpa. The simplicity of Croce's statements about expression belies a deep hidden complexity and understanding of the history of aesthetics. Since the time before and after the many attempts at articulating the basis of modern aesthetics by Vico, Baumgarten, Kant, Hegel and Croce no one has been able to conclusively and without equivocation crack the riddle of those things that stir our thoughts and emotions towards a sense of the beautiful. One could ironically call all these attempts beautiful in themselves. This difficulty resides in the ancient agonistic relationship between poetry and philosophy that miraculously stand apart together.

Since Benedetto Croce's death and well before his passing there was a precipitous drop among other philosophers regard for Croce's thought. Some claimed his work to be unintelligible and self-isolated. Others were turned off by what they assumed to be his latent Hegelianism and their own aversion to the Absolute. They also rejected his dependence on Germanic thought. Croce once said that he did not make a system but only *attempted* to make a system. He is however indeed part of a great tradition of systemic thinking following philosophers such as Spinoza, Leibniz and Hegel. Even Heidegger an opponent of system making devoted a large part of his book on Schelling's idea of freedom to explicate the idea of system.

The reasons for the downgrading of Croce's reputation are many as this was a period that led up to and through two bitterly fought world wars. One has to always keep in mind that as high as one can rise one can fall. Croce lived during a long period of political volatility and upheaval within and without Italy. Many

[1] Croce was decidely anti-metaphysical and anti-aesthetical in his use of the term 'expression' and lies outside the mainstream of philosophical thought. For the metaphysical understanding of the idea of expression, see, Deluze, Gilles, Expressionism in Philosophy: Spinoza, trans. Martin Jooghin (New York, 1997). See also George Eliot's translation of Spinoza's Ethics in which the idea of expression, although not explicity stated is a crucial hinge to the related realms of natura naturans (naturing Nature) and natura naturata (nutured Nature). It should be noted writing about 'expression' is a notorioulsy difficult as expression has often been understood in the realm of speech but does not seem particulaly amenable to forms of writing. There is also the dillema of the irreducibility of visual traditions to speech. A recourse to save the idea of expression is through the ancient idea of exphrasis (poetry about poetry). For Croce's somewhat inconsistent use of the term 'expression', see, R.B. Patankar, "What Does Croce Mean By 'Expression?," The British Journal of Aesthetics, Vol. 2, Issue 2, (April 1962):112-125. One should also bear in mind the word 'expression' in Italian (espressione) may carry different meanings than the English word 'expression'. In Italian the word takes on an operatic meaning.

prominent individuals including Croce often changed political sides and positions for the purposes of protecting their own interests. While serving as an editor of the influential literary and philosophical journal *La Critica* from 1903-1945 he made many enemies with his often rather brusque and blunt criticism of almost everyone except himself. The philosopher *cum* senator became a target in some ways due to the fame he achieved during his lifetime. Resentment about his positions both philosophically and politically still remains to this day. Lastly the idea of expression seen as a remnant of romantic thought was repudiated by the turn towards modernity and the search for a 'degree zero' and 'colourless' expression in Roland Barthes sense of these ideas.

In some ways Croce was an even more brilliant literary critic than philosopher. As a literary critic following in the footsteps of Franceso de Sanctis (b.1818 – d.1883) he was fervently searching for the form and soul of a national and even trans-national literary criticism. Perhaps it was this nationalism along with his on again and off again dalliance with Marxism that drew the wrath of his critics. However, his own hyper-critical bent should not take away from the significance of his philosophical thought. That he was a difficult person is not disputed however if one can ever separate a person from their ideas this may be necessary in this case to save the importance of his aesthetic thought and to construct a potentially new frame of reference for understanding Scarpa's work.

Clearly, Croce wanted to demystify the work of the artist. In this own autobiography, he summed up his theory in this way;

> …true thought is simply thought, beautiful expression is simply expression…false thought and ugly expression are non-thought and non-expression.[2]

In Croce's systematic quest for an absolute spirituality, the primacy of aesthetics is posited as a unifying basis for ethical, practical and economic considerations. One of the main ideas in his aesthetic is the identity of expression and intuition. Croce was interested in debunking to some extent all prior theories of art predicated upon the concepts of imitation, representation and beauty per se. Art, taken in the broadest sense subsuming architecture is understood to be an expression of an impression – an expression spiritually imbued by intuition and a sense of the lyrical. He would add art proper has no content but expression alone in the "serenity to form".[3] For Croce expression makes the poet and one might add the architect.[4] He has little patience for mediocre expression as if he were the single arbiter of what constitutes a beautiful expression or ugly non-expression! If something was ugly in his eye it simply could not and did not exist.

2. CROCE'S AESTHETICS

Croce is best known for this book *Aesthetic as a Science of Expression and the general linguistic*. The book written in a highly critical spirit systematically demolished many prior and widely held aesthetic theories while at the same time positing yet another theory. His thoughts on aesthetics are enigmatic in character. The full translation of the *Aesthetic* runs approximately five hundred pages half of which is a history of aesthetics. Croce's brusque criticisms turned away many who may have been sympathetic to the virtue of his ideas. One can speculate Scarpa was willing to accept the bluntness of Croce for the perennial importance of his ideas, especially his expansion of the idea of expression well beyond the limits of expression as a verbal phenomenon. The single prior aesthetic theory

[2] Benedetto Croce, Benedetto Croce: An Autobiography, trans. R. G. Collingwood (Oxford: Claredon Press, 1927), 94.
[3] Benedetto Croce, Aesthetic, trans. Douglas Ainslie (New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux,1972), 21. Regarding the importance of form in Italian literature and poetry Croce was highly influenced by the writings of the Italian literary critic Francesco De Sanctis.
[4] Croce, Aesthetic, 25.

Croce accepts (with some qualifications) is that of G. B. Vico.

In Croce's quest for an absolute spirituality, the primacy of aesthetics is posited as a unifying basis for ethical, practical and economic considerations. One of the main ideas in his Aesthetic is the identity of expression and intuition. By virute of this identity he may in fact be confusing intuition as an *a-priori* category in a Kantian sense and expression as something *a-posteriori.* At times it is difficult to distinguish in his thought the ideas of expression, intuition and beauty. Art, taken in the broadest sense subsuming architecture and including language is understood to be an expression of an impression – an expression spiritually imbued by intuition and a sense of the lyrical. He would add art proper has no content but expression alone in the "serenity to form".[5] For Croce expression makes the poet and one might add the architect.[6]

In the Aesthetic, he posits two kinds of knowledge, either intuitive or logical. Logical knowledge deals with universals and intuitive knowledge with particulars. Logical knowledge is obtained through the intellect and intuitive knowledge through imagination and images. Croce's appeal to the importance of intuitive knowledge and the assertion this is indeed legitimate knowledge in its own right is a critique of the ancient philosophical defamation of imagination. The mistrust towards imagination 'expressed' in Plato's famous description of the divided line in the *Republic* held sway in philosophy well into the early decades of the 1900's. It suggested the realm of the human spirit regarding imagination could only be vaguely understood since it lacked the demonstrative and syllogistic basis of logical knowledge. For Croce it was not enough to have a thought in one's mind unless one made the effort and had the capacity to express it well. The act of expression demanded one cross what he called the "*Pons Asinorum* of expression".[7] As he points out, this is the point where most learners fail. He posed the challenge regarding expression in this way, "…here is a pencil, draw, express yourself."[8] Croce knew full well that it was indeed not that simple. He even had the audacity to dismiss Vitruvius when he writes, "…learn the art and have done with it."[9].

3. SCARPA'S EXPRESSIVITY VIA CROCE

In a lecture "Can Architecture be Poetry" Scarpa stated succinctly;

> "The value of a work lies in its expression – when a thing is well expressed its value is high."[10]

This appears to be a clear demonstration of the importance Scarpa placed on the idea of expression perhaps finding its origin in Croce's aesthetic theory. One gains a glimpse into the contents of the extensive personal library of Carlo Scarpa in a brief article written by Raffaella Vendramin.[11] One comes away after reading this short description with the realization that Scarpa was a highly cultivated auto-didact and his relationship to books was important to his bearing as an architect. His library was open to his wide circle of friends drawn to the power of books. Among the over 4,000 items mentioned are nine volumes by Benedetto Croce. The extent to which Scarpa studied these works is a matter for speculation An architect's personal library always remains an implicit source for inspiration and influence. It is upon accepting such possible

[5] Croce, Aesthetic, 21. Croce was highly influenced by the writings of Italian literary critic Francesco De Sanctis. Croce's idea of expression attempts to make the idea of form more precise.
[6] Croce, Aesthetic, 25.
[7] Croce, Aesthetic, 11.
[8] Croce, Aesthetic, 11.
[9] Croce, Aesthetic, 113.
[10] Carlo Scarpa, "Can Architecture be Poetry?", Paper delivered at the Academy of Fine Arts, Vienna, November 16, 1976. Franceso Dal Co and Giuseppe Mazzariol, Carlo Scarpa: The complete works, trans. Richard Sadleir (New York: Rizzoli, 1985), 283.
[11] Raffaella Vendramin, "Carlo Scarp's Library," Carlo Scarpa: the complete works, p. 307

linkages between Scarpa's work and Croce's thought new ways of understanding Scarpa may emerge. Was Scarpa 'expressing' Croce's idea of expression in his expressions?

There is a profound empathy for the idea of expression in both Scarpa and Louis Kahn. Perhaps it is based upon their shared innate understanding of how expression emerges from the broader institutions of humankind such as the musem and the city. This kinship has to do in one sense on their reliance and faith in the idea of expression. In a lecture Louis Kahn gave at the ETH in Zurich in 1969 the word 'express' and its' related forms 'expression', 'self-expression' and 'expressiveness' are invoked no less than twenty-five times, as well as in diagrams he drew on the chalkboard.[12] In Kahn's lecture, it was desire and the desire to be that grounds acts of expression. Desire becomes the inspiration for expression. Mario Botta studied architecture under Scarpa when he served as Co-Director at what was then called the *Istituto Universitario di Architettura di Venezia (IUAV)*. Botta perceptively stated in an interview;

> As for Scarpa, what is important was his capability and sensitivity in giving expression to materials; his ability to read into the very structure of the material in order to draw the greatest possible expression from it. Then there's also the great pleasure, the joy he derived merely from something well made.[13]

There is a remarkable photograph of Scapa taken while he viewed one of the sculpture installations at Castelvecchio.[14] This highly expressive photograph of Scarpa tells us much about the architect.[15] He has the stance of both architect and curator unifying two professions often at odds. Something of the spirit of the sculpture he was viewing penetrated his very countenance vivifying the brute material existence of the sculpture itself. The photograph shows the back of a robed sculptural figure in the foreground while Scarpa is in the background looking towards the unseen front of the figure while apparently glancing towards a colleague standing just outside of the frame of the picture. Scarpa is pointing downwards to the floor as if to confirm the correctness of the installation with a colleague that stands outside of the frame of the photograph. It is as if the sculpture and Scarpa were confirming each other's existence. Scarpa wore a long robe-like overcoat mirroring the garment on the sculpture. It is as if two 'expressions' were speaking to each other across the space of time. The sculpture raised off the surface of the floor on a simple plinth is spiritually and lyrically animated and awakened from its long night of material slumber.

4. MUSEO CASTELVECCHIO

It may be timely, especially in lieu of the primary topic of this conference – The Architect and The City – to reconsider one of Scarpa's most universally admired works - the Museo Civico di Castelvecchio developed across three periods spanning three decades (1957-64, 1966-1967 and 1973-1975). Scarpa's work at Castelvecchio stands as a high water mark of architecture as a form of expression. The project challenges the modern obsession for the condition of *tabula rasa* out which architecture miraculously appears seemingly out of nothing. The initial stages of Scarpa's interventions began in 1957 under the direction of the museum director Licisco Magagnato (b.1921 - d.1987) and continued until 1975. Most recently in 2017, the East wing rooms were renovated by the Veronese

[12] Alessandro Vassela, editor, Louis I. Kahn:Silence and light (Zurich: Park Books, 2013).
[13] Dennis Doordan, "Changing Aggendas: Architecture and Politics in Contemporary Italy," Assemblage No. 8 (February 1989): 71.
[14] For a reproduction of this photograph see, Carlo Scarpa: The complete works, p.15.
[15] Since a photograph can be considered a kind of frozen slice of reality the question can be raised as to whether this form of technological reproduction can in fact capture the living and vital sense of expression in Croce's sense of the term. The question can be asked – Can Croce's idea of expression extend to photography?

architectural firm Bricolo Falsarella assocati. The brutality across much of Castelvecchio's history underscores the eloquence of Scarpa's interventions. Base expressions are side by side with rarified expressions.[16] Scarpa's unique expression at Castelvecchio broadly resides somewhere between Byzantine iconicity and Grecian lyricism.

In considering Scarpa's work at Castelvecchio it is important to realize that it was in settings of intense, rough and even brutal existing conditions that some of Scarpa's best work was produced. It is expression embedded *in-situ* or what could be termed a situated expression. Expression, like poetry, is not a problem to be solved but rather the unspoken conatus of the architect and the architecture.[17] When Scarpa had more free and open circumstances for expression he could at times become overwhelmed by the force of his own *maniera* and become Scarpesque.[18] However, within the gaps and fissures amidst the limitations of what he found present at Castelvecchio he was able to care for the place like a doctor. It was an extraordinary act of what could be termed expressive curation. The architect does not only curate as in safeguarding with great care all the contents of a museum but as architect *cum* curator innately expresses the curation across an entire project from the scale of hardware and individual installations to the *mise en scène* of building in the city.

Scarpa's successive work at Castelvecchio can be described as the restoration and renovation of an open wound in need of surgical care and reconstruction. This medicinal and ministerial act of restoration required an architect with the capacity to care for the buildings in great detail by taking on the role of a curatorial doctor not only for the Castelvecchio complex of buildings but the city of Verona. In a sense Castelvecchio is Verona. The castle and the city remain inseparable as if there is no real difference between 'architecture and the city'. Scarpa acts as the curator of the city, the castle and the river. For Scarpa architecture is a renovation of expressions past, present and future. Something must be already there in the form of architecture as a concrete expression. His best work innately intuits the existing conditions of expression in terms of what is found and what will be founded. The condition of *tabula rasa* is neither possible nor desired. In the beginning was the fragment and out of this, new layers of fragmentation heighten the feeling of an intensified expressionistic palimpsest.

Aldo Rossi's *The Architecture of the City* offered architects a way back into the city through the idea of affective memory rather than history per se. One could say the work of Scarpa is about memory as well but more precisely a form of remembrance of Verona. Rossi relied on a form of typological monumentality to bring the existence of the city to light and shadow. Scapa telescoped the city into his work through elaborately localized expressive and highly lyrical embellishments dispersed as fragments throughout the project. The word embellishment is selected as distinct from ornament to free the work to new readings and to offer it an aspiration towards musicality in Pater's sense that all art aspires to a condition of music. With Rossi one sees things best from a distance with Scapa the enjoyment heightens when one closes the distance only to be magnetically and magically drawn into its remarkable sway of expressive intensities. The unity of

[16] A colleague has perceptively remarked the significant damage inflicted on Castelvecchio during Allied bombing raids in WWII ironically gave Scarpa the opportunity to work on its rennovation. Prof. Steven Thomspon, personal communtiation (undated). On September 25, 1991 the Gold Medal for Miltary Valor was conferred upon Verona by the Republic of Italy in remembrance of the heroism occuring in Verona during WWII.

[17] There appears to be an unspoken and deeper ancient conatus (effort, endeavor, inclination, impulse) in Croce's thought about expression. The reader is referred to the entry on "conatus" in, Stuart Brown and N.J. Fox, Historical Dictionary of Leibniz's Philosophy (Oxford, 2006), p. 53. Conatus may be considered a presupposition of expression and expression as the externalization of an inner conatus.

[18] In this regard Scarpa's work amidst the intense existing conditions at Castelvecchio and the Fondazione Querini Stampalia in Venice are exemplary. However, in settings such at the Casa Ottolenghi in Bardolino it appears the expression has less limits to overcome creating its own stylistic universe much in the manner of F. L. Wright.

the place is caused by the capacity of these fragments to leap across space joining one to the other in a connective tissue. The spacing of the expressive conditions, more than mere details, allows them breathing room.

5. THE CANGRANDE EQUESTRIAN STATUE AS AN EXPRESSION OF VERONA

Of all the remarkable installations at Museo Castelvecchio Scarpa devised perhaps the most exceptional is the re-location and placement of the statue representing the Cangrande della Scala the child lord of Verona. Scarpa choreographed the museum and in particular the staging of the Cangrande sculpture as the quintessential symbol of Verona's past. The Cangrande was a member of the Scaligeri family ruling over Verona during the 13th and 14th centuries. Richard Murphy commenting on this installation writes, "…it is the most extravagant architectural setting in which to display a single work of art that has ever been created."[19] It is a kind of raised burial mausoleum suspended in the air like a hanging concrete garden.

The sculpture, sitting under an overhanging roof, is mounted on a high platform placed in a semi-enclosed exterior court at the end of a remarkable *enfilade* of five exhibition rooms. The statue and its setting is a complex crescendo to these series of rooms known as the 'sculpture corridor' and stands in a commanding position over the entire castle complex. The Cangrande statue, with its curious odd smile, lords over the Museo Castelvecchio as he did during his short but consequential reign from 1311-1329. The statue is significant because of the unique place of Cangrande in the history of Verona. The Cangrande hosted exiles from other cities and it is said he treated them with generosity and uncommon respect. The story of the young Cangrande imbues the sculpture with an importance it might not otherwise have if one only considers the sculpture itself.

It was this same statue, at that time in another location, John Ruskin made a series of exquisite drawings of during his excursions to Verona. The poet Dante Alighieri had visited the actual Cangrande during his stay in Verona and extoled his virtues in *The Divine Comedy*. He wrote of "the great Lombard who bears the holy bird upon the ladder…"[20] This is a reference to the family crest of the Scaligeri family. Displayed on the ground in the courtyard where the Cangrande sculpture is located resides a cast bell with this same symbol. Verona is a city of scalas or ladders where the stairs are more like ladders. Scarpa by the nature of this installation curated the history of Verona by expressing that history in the ladder-like monument to the Cangrande. Museo Castevecchio is a place of ladders and a distllation of the city of Verona itself. The sheer numbers of exceptional stairs cum ladders carefully placed throughout the museum are experientially staggering.

CONCLUSION: THE POST- LYRICAL CITY

It may be too late for the lyric tradition to have an efficacy in the architecture of the city hence the notion of the post-lyrical city. There is a need to save the lyrical from its total extinction and the road to its continuation is through lyrical expression. Is it proper to consider Scarp's work at Castelvecchio as post-lyrical? The literary critic Marjorie Perloff has written the lyric tendency in poetry had reached an impasse and saw in the later work of Ezra Pound and those that followed the beginning of a turn away from the lyrical towards a kind of intellectual poetry rather than an expressive poetry.[21] The expressive and emotive aspect of poetry was purposely held in abeyance.

[19] Richard Murphy, Carlo Scarpa and Castelvecchio Revisited. (Edinburgh: Breakfast Mission Publishing, 2017), 174.
[20] Dante, The Divine Comedy of Dante Alighieri. Vol. 21, Great Books of the Western World, trans. Charles Eliot (Chicago: Encyclopedia Britannica, Inc., 1952), 132.
[21] Marjorie Perloff, The Dance of the Intellect: Studies in the Poetry of the Pound Tradition, Ch. 8, "Postmodernism and the Impasse of the Lyric", (Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 1985), 172 – 200.

Perloff refers to Eliot's essay, "Tradition and Individual Talent", where Eliot states;

> Poetry is not a turning loose of emotion, but an escape from emotion: it is not the expression of personality, but an escape from personality. But, of course only those that have personality and emotions know what it means to escape these things.[22]

Despite Eliot's rather subtle admonition, it is clear Scarpa understood the limits of an unfettered highly personalized notion of expression. To paraphrase John Cage an artist seeks the expression of self rather than self-expression. The remote origins of the lyric reside in ancient Greek myths associated with the figures of Hermes and Orpheus.[23] We are told as part of the oral tradition of the Homeric Hymns Hermes invented the lyre and Orpheus was the first Greek poet and a virtuoso of the lyre.[24] We may recall for Scarpa the sway of ancient Greece was strong. Orpheus's music asserted its charm to the extent flowing streams would pause in the presence of such sonority. It is important to note in the myth Hermes meets the tortoise (soon to be lyre) at the entrance to his cave. There is a violent darkness associated with the orphic tendency that is particularly amenable to Scarpa's poetics at Castelvecchio best viewed under the cover of shade rather than under a full sun. A post-lyrical architecture suggests an architecture exiting from the threshold of the lyric, closer to the dionysian than the appollonian. As Hermann Broch has written in *The Death of Virgil* ; "…no song becomes lost that has ever plucked the strings of a lyre…"[25]

Could one view the city as a place of post-lyrical expression and the architect as the individual most responsible for actualizing this expression? Might the city itself fall under the umbrella of Crocian expression? This may provide new life for the idea of a city expressed as a work of art. To this end, the architect's responsibility is firstly aesthetic and secondly ethical. In his Noble Laureate lecture of 1987, Joseph Brodsky spoke of aesthetics as the foundation of ethics. In his words, "…aesthetics is the mother of ethics.[26] He adds we are aesthetic creatures before we are ethical ones. For Brodsky our moral compass is made possible and shaped by our fundamental aesthetic intuitions. He writes, "The more substantial an individual's aesthetic experience is, the sounder his taste,… the sharper his moral focus, the freer – though not necessarily happier – he is."[27] How many of us are willing to trade our happiness for our sense of beauty? In Brodsky's sense beauty and the expression that presses it into being offers a challenge to our happiness.

Brodsky raises important considerations for the architect working in the city. In positing his thesis Brodsky touched upon one of the most crucial dilemmas of our time – the tension between aesthetics and ethics. The city is the place where this debate is played out most significantly. The architect who does not cultivate and curate his or her aesthetic expression with precision and rigor leaves the city weaker aesthetically. This in turn leads to a weakening of the ethical dimension of a city. As Eliane Scarry reminds us "…beauty leads us to justice."[28] How do we as architects give expression to the justice beauty can lead us to? The city as aesthetic expression allows

[22] T. S. Eliot, Frank Kermode editor, Selected Prose of T. S. Eliot, "Tradition and Individual Talent" (New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich 1975). 37-44.
[23] Personal communication, Prof. Steven Thompson (August, 2020). See, Mark Cartwright, "Orpheus", Ancient History of Encyclopedia, Last modified March 19, 2020. <www.ancient.eu/Orpheus/>.
[24] Regarding the mythical invention of the lyre, see, Romani Mistretta Marco, "Hermes the Craftsman: The Invention of the Lyre" in, Gaia: revue interdiscplinaire sur la Grece Archaique, numero 20, (2017): 5-22. For the the importance of the mythic origins of the lyre I am indebted to Prof. Steven Thompson for pointing this out.
[25] Hermann Broch, The Death of Virgil, trans. Jean Starr Untermeyer (New York: Vintage Books, 1995), 39.
[26] Joseph Brodsky, Nobel Lecture, <www.nobleprize.org/prizes/literature/1987/Brodsky/lecture/>.
[27] Brodsky, Nobel Lecture, <www.nobleprize.org/prizes/literature/1987/Brodsky/lecture/>.
[28] Elaine Scarry, On Beauty and Being Just (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1999), 93.

the just and the fair to symmetrically extend in all directions like a perfect cube.[29] What is the just city we as architects desire to lyrically express? The fate of the city known as *Verona la Degna* (Verona the Worthy) rests upon on the worthy expression of the architect.[30]
Appropriately Scarpa was interred like the roots of a flower in a vertical standing position under a discretely placed horizontal grave marker at Brion-Vega in the city of his own death of which there can be no visitor among the living. This installation is an homage to the curatorial prowess and highly selective architectural virtuosity of Scapa. One is reminded of a single line from a poem by Charles Baudelaire, a poet Scarpa very much admired – "(For the deep grave is ever the poets friend)".[31]

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I want to acknowledge Emeritus Professor Sal Choudhury, a long time colleague of mine at Virginia Tech for his construcive and enlightened criticism. I also express my gratitute to Prof. Steven Thompson for his sympathetic and objective readings of later drafts of the paper.

29 Scarry, On Beauty and Being Just, p. 93.
30 Alethea Wiel, The Story of Verona (London: J. M. Dent & Co., 1904), preface, viii. The reader is also referred to the poignant fable "The Land Where One Never Dies" in, Italo Calvino, Italian Folktales: Selected and Retold by Italo Calvino, trans. George Martin (New York: Houghton Mifflin Harcourt, Inc., 1980), 77 - 79.
31 Charles Baudelaire, The Flowers of Evil, A selection edited by Marthiel and Jackson Mathews (New York: New Directions Publishing Corporation, 1955), 37. The quotation is from the poem is entitled "Remorse of the Dead". See also the first stanza in the poem entitled, "The Glady Dead".

REFERENCES

Baudelaire, Charles. 1955. *The Flowers of Evil*. Edited by Marthiel and Jackson Mathews. New York: New Directions Publishing Company.

Chiavarini, Moira. Editor. *2018. Carlo Scarpa: The Shapes of Light.* Exhibition Catalogue. Repetto Gallery, London 26-September - 26 October 2018. Arezzo: Magonza Editore.

Croce, Benedetto.1972. *Aesthetic as Science of Expression and General Linguistic*. Translated by Douglas Ainslie. New York: Noonday Press.

Croce, Benedetto.1995. Benedetto. *Guide To Aesthetics: (Breviario di esetica)*. Translated by Patrick Romanell. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing Company, Inc.

Dal Co, Francesco and Mazzariol. 1985. *Carlo Scarpa: The complete works*. Translated by Richard Sadleir. New York: Rizzoli International Publications.

D'Amico,Jack, Trafton,Dain, Verdicchio,Massico. Editors. 2019. *The Legacy of Benedetto Croce: Contemporary Critical Views*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Dante. 1952. *The Divine Comedy of Dante Alighieri.* Translated by Charles Eliot Norton. Chicago: Encyclopedia Britannica, Inc.

Kosuth, Joseph. 2019. *To Invent Relations (for Carlo Scarpa)*. Edited by Chiara Bertola and Fiona Biggiero. Venice: Trolley Ltd.

Nakamura, Yoshio. Editor. 1985. *Carlo Scarpa.* Tokyo: A + U Publishing Co., Ltd.

Moss, M. E. 1987. *Benedetto Croce Reconsidered*. Hanover N. H.: University Press of New England.

Murphy, Richard. 2017. *Carlo Scarpa and Castelvecchio Revisited*. Revised edition. Edinburgh: Breakfast Mission Publishing.

Ruskin, John. 1894. *Verona and Other Lectures.* New York: Macmillan and Co.

Scarry, Elaine. 1999. *On Beauty and Being Just*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Vassella, Alessandro. 2013. *Louis Kahn: Silence and Light.* Zurich: Park Books.

Weil, Alethea. 1907. *The Story of Verona*. London: J. M. Dent & Co.

PAPER #3.13

WHAT DOES A SINGLE BUILDING TELL ABOUT A CITY?

Burcin Basyazici[a], Birsen Sterler[a], Safak Cudi Ince[a]
[a]Yeditepe University, Istanbul, Atasehir

ABSTRACT

Ataturk Cultural Center (AKM) which was built in between 1946-1969, is considered one of the unique architectural examples of Turkish modernization period and stands out as one of the most controversial buildings in Turkey. Since it stands in Taksim Square, which is also considered as the main public square of Istanbul, the building has witnessed many to historical public events –including Gezi Protests- and has served as a showcase of the city by its meticulously designed façade.
However, the building was demolished in 2018. After a series of sterile discussions and protests, the government declared that AKM will be re-built again by the son of the architect who designed the original one. The new architect who is also a well-known architect of Turkey, declared that the façade of the building which has borne witness to an age, will be kept. This paper proposes to expose the architectural and urban history of AKM by confronting the concepts of the new and the old through the same building. AKM will be taken as a case to discuss the impact of a single building to the history of a city by focusing on the following questions; (i) what makes a building historical and iconic for a city? (ii) Can a *new* building represent the same meaning with *the old* even if the two have same function and façade? (iii) What are the effects of politicians and architects to urban memory? Even though *the new* building is under construction now, previous versions of the building will be presented through archival files and shared documents of the related architecture firms. The old and new press clippings will also help to understand not only historical and architectural but also sociological effects of the building on the urban memory.

KEYWORDS

AKM; Istanbul; taksim; urban memory; new-old; relation in architecture.

INTRODUCTION

The *new faces* the old is a promising and creative phrase by all its means, including architecture. Those kind of contention areas that faces two so-called incompatible ontological terms, have always a creative potential to ask new questions. If the case is architecture, the new can face the old in several research areas including restorations projects, urban planning, extension projects and etc. However, this paper does not concern these type of encounters and proposes to confront the new with the old through the same building, that is, Atatürk Cultural Center which has been renewed, re-imagined, reconsidered, and re-built many times in its short history. Ataturk Cultural Center (AKM) has a potential to help us to re-question what is new and what is old in architecture and to ask further questions on the power of a building in historiography of a city, as well. Therefore, it would be crucial to ask first; what AKM can teach us by focusing on the following questions; (i) what makes a building historical and iconic for a city? (ii) Can a *new* building represent the same meaning with *the old* even if the two have same function and façade? (iii) What are the effects of politicians and architects on urban memory? AKM is the most polemical building of Istanbul and Turkey. It is a unique example to understand how a building becomes historical for a city and interiorized and defended by professionals and civilians. This paper aims to question and understand the effect of a single building

in a city in terms of architectural, historical and political concerns. Since the building was demolished and is being re-built again, can we still call it a historical building or has it ever been this? What have changed during never ending debates it caused and what have those debates taught us as professionals? The historical development of AKM has been quite visible. It is often written in academic articles, newspapers and magazines. This study doesn't aim to re-write it's as-known steps again but to help readers to understand its unusual and unique position in Istanbul, the uncompleted history of AKM has been briefly mentioned in following section.

1. UNCOMPLETED HISTORY OF AKM

The history of the building dates back to 1930's and has still not concluded due to the everlasting design and construction processes. Its history began with a decision to build a contemporary Opera Hall in Istanbul to represent the contemporary lifestyle of young Turkish Republic back then. After this first decision of the Government, the first design agreement was made with a group of German designers in 1930 *(Cumhuriyet 1930)*.

However, it has been suspended due to WWII. When it had been put on the agenda again in 1946, the first proposal was designed by architects Feridun Kip and Rüknettin Güney by name Istanbul Opera. Due to budgetary savings of the government, construction was stopped and assigned to The Ministry of Public Works in 1953. Finally, in 1956 the Ministry have assigned architect Hayati Tabanlıoğlu who was a public servant in the same Ministry, to build a new project in Taksim (Can 2015). The building has been built in 1969 after twenty-three years long construction by name Istanbul Culture Palace and celebrated as an example of Turkish Modernization period. In 1970, the building nearly demolished due to a conflagration, and in 1977, it was reopened with the name Atatürk Cultural Center, which is still the name of the building today (Tabanlıoğlu 2010). AKM had done the honors of many national and international prestigious art events in-between 1977-2005. The building has also witnessed to the milestone protests in history of Turkey and the façade of the building had been used to hang protests' banners and posters. In 1999, AKM was registered as A-Class Cultural Asset by the second Preservation Board of Istanbul (*Istanbul Atatürk Cultural Center Directorate Briefing File 2005*). However, the Minister of Culture and Tourism declared the demolition of AKM in 2005 based on the idea that the building has concluded its lifespan (*Hürriyet 2005*). After a series of protests against this declaration, the building was not demolished however was closed. In 2008, the Government decided to restore the building instead of demolishing it. The Ministry of Culture and Tourism signed a contract with Murat Tabanlıoğlu who is the son of Hayati Tabanlıoğlu for a new restoration project (*Cumhuriyet 2012*). However, the restoration process has been stopped by order of 9th Administrative Court. In-between 2005-2018, AKM has been left as dilapidated and no one announced anything about the building despite the calls of Chamber of Architects and professional associations. During the process, AKM had witnessed the Gezi protest in 2013. During Gezi protest, today's president and the then prime minister of Turkey declared that AKM will be demolished and a new Baroque Opera Hall will be built in place of it. After a series of discussions and protests again, the President declared the new AKM project which is designed by Murat Tabanlıoğlu in 2017 and the building was finally demolished in 2018. Although it is declared that the new AKM will be completed in 2019, it is still under construction today in January 2020.

2. METHODOLOGY

To analyze AKM within the scope and the main arguments of the study, the building has been evaluated in terms of the crucial

breaking point of its history. Five periods were determined according to following features; (i) The 1st period in-between 1930-1956 correspond to the period starting from the first decision in 1930 by name Istanbul Opera to the Hayati Tabanlıoğlu's design of Istanbul Culture Palace, including the unbuilt proposals of the other architects who had been involved the process, (ii) The 2nd period in-between 1956-1977 corresponds to the period starting from the construction of AKM to the second opening of the building including the conflagration and restoration process, (iii) The 3rd period in-between 1977-2005 corresponds to the period when the building had served for its purpose and been used for many prestigious events, (iv) The 4th period in-between 2005-2009 corresponds to the period when the building had been closed and left as dilapidated, (v) The 5th period from 2009 till today corresponds to the period when the final decisions have been taken in a wide range of proposals including restoration, demolition and re-build. The building has also been left as dilapidated till its demolition in 2018 and still under construction for the new project today.

All five periods have been evaluated separately in following sections according to the main questions of the study with the help of captions in newspapers. The paper clippings helped to understand the whole process as it is officially announced in related years. For the first three periods, the original paper clippings and official gazettes have been used for main data to follow up the leading decisions and discussion on AKM. For the fourth and the fifth period, the articles which has been written by architects and/or columnists has been also used in addition to original paper clippings. Data have been firstly collected from *Tabanlıoğlu Family Archives* which has been donated to a research institute in Istanbul by name SALT. That archive has helped to collect photos and paper clippings in .jpeg format. The archive of *Cumhuriyet Newspaper* which is the oldest newspaper of Turkish Republic also helped to collect the old press clippings not available in SALT Research Online Archive. Articles and captions in other national newspapers also used for cross-check. To achieve the data; *AKM, Istanbul Culture Palace, Istanbul Opera* and *Taksim Theatre and Opera* keywords had been scanned through the archives in-between the years of 1930 – 2020.

3. WHAT HAD BEEN DISCUSSED IN 90 YEARS: AKM WITH PRESS CLIPPINGS

3.1. The 1st period in-between 1930-1956

1930 refers to the early period of Turkish Republic and the political approach of those years embraced the occidental lifestyle and improvements to carry the new Republic to future. It was also a break of from monarchical state structure of Ottoman Empire to construct the new democratic structure of Turkey. Ankara was –and still- the capital but Istanbul has always been in spotlight. Therefore, it was not surprising that the Government aimed to build a Theatre and Opera Hall in Istanbul instead of Ankara. Taksim Square has always been considered as the main square of Istanbul, and the Government organized an international competition for its masterplan. In 1937, the French architect and urban planner Henry Prost had been invited to Istanbul by Ataturk himself to design the masterplan of the city including Taksim Square and Gezi Park (*Bilsel and Pinon 2010*). At those years there was a mansion belongs to the Power Administration in the place where AKM has been built later (e.g. Fig. 1). The aim of the new Theatre and Opera Hall was to represent the new contemporary face of Turkey. That's why AKM has always been considered one of the most important concrete declaration of the changed system of government and therefore it has always carried a political approach. By referring to the article that

was published in Cumhuriyet Newspaper in 1930 (e.g. Fig. 1), the Government had an agreement with a group of German designers and it was expected to meet with them in Istanbul in the summer of 1930 for the new project. However, the project had been suspended due to the economic conditions of Turkey after WWI. In 1946, it has been put on the agenda again. Although the Government took the suggestions of French architect Auguste Perret for design, Feridun Kip and Rüknettin Güney who had designed many projects for the Government so far, designed the first project by name Istanbul Opera. Unfortunately, project had been halted till 1956 due to the budgetary savings of the Government. On the other hand, according to Murat Tabanlıoğlu, the last building, which was designed by his father in 1969, was still representing the traces of Kip and Güney's design (*Mimarlara Bülten 2013*).

In 1953, the project assigned to The Ministry of Public Works, and the Ministry asked German architect Paul Bonatz who was working as an instructor at Istanbul Technical University in those years, to proceed the design of Kip and Güney. Bonatz worked on some sketches for the building nevertheless none of those proposals had been built (e.g. Fig. 2).

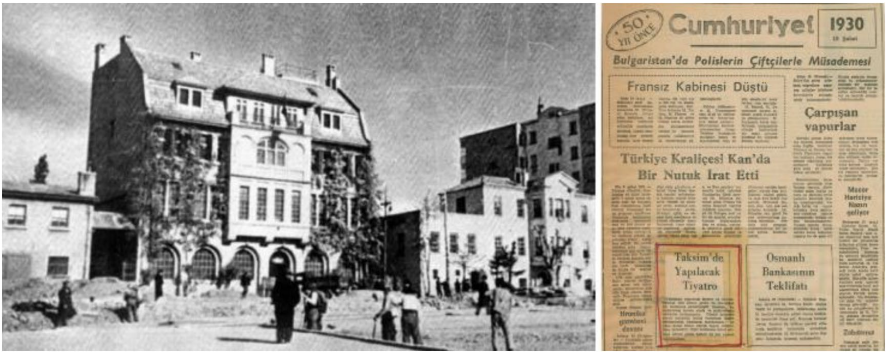


Figure 1. The Mansion in Taksim where AKM has been built later and the first paper clipping declares the new Theatre and Opera Hall in 1930. Source: (Salt Online Archive 2020)

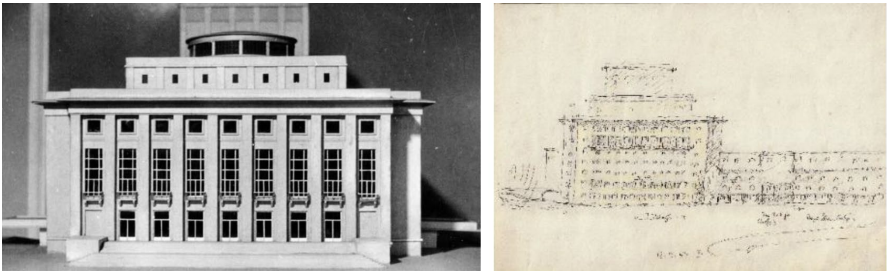


Figure 2. Model of the Istanbul Opera by Kip and Güney and Bonatz's sketches in 1953. Source: (Salt Online Archive 2020)

Finally, in 1956 The Ministry assigned Hayati Tabanlıoğlu to conclude the project but, he designed a new project that conserves the basic structure of Kip and Güney's design. For the 1st period in-between 1930-1956, very few press clippings are available for Istanbul Opera except the announcements of the process. This period had also witnessed an important political change in Turkey. In 1950, Democrat Party (DP) which is considered as one of the first conservative political party -although its name is democrat- had won the elections and Republican People's Party (CHP) –democrat although its name is republican- which is founded by M. Kemal Atatürk, had positioned as the opposition party. Even the major political approach of the county had changed, DP also embraced the Istanbul Opera as the monument of Turkish Modernization project.

3.2. The 2nd period in-between 1956-1977

When it was announced that Hayati Tabanlıoğlu was assigned to the project, the building was expected to be completed in the following years. As a matter of fact, Cumhuriyet Newspaper had announced two times, once in 1960 and second in 1961, that the building will be opened in these years (*Cumhuriyet 1959, 1960*). Those press clippings show that the society of Istanbul was looking forward to experience Istanbul Opera. One of the columnists in the newspaper even mentioned that every highbrowed human being in Istanbul may emulate to experience such operas in Europe and therefore Istanbul Opera is so crucial to allow them such kind of experiences in their hometown (*Felek 1965*). On the other hand, the building was concluded in 1969, after 9 years from the expected date. The press clippings which were collected from archive of Cumhuriyet Newspaper also help us to understand the construction process of the building took twenty-three years. It is clearly seen that; it was the budget saving to avoid the conclusion. A press clipping dated January 1958 shows that the legislator of CHP had accused DP to postpone the opening by saving insufficient budget for the construction for the proudly presented building (*Cumhuriyet 1958*). In 1969, finally the building opened by name *Istanbul Cultural Palace* with a grand opening ceremony. Since the program of the building was expanded for all branches of art not only opera, the name of the building has also changed. This alteration also caused a debate. According to Muhsin Ertuğrul who was the director of Istanbul Municipal Theatre, the building has been constructed for twenty-three years but naming took less than twenty-three days. He also said that palace is not an appropriate name for a contemporary Opera Hall and, also a contemporary country (*Ertuğrul, 1969*). Newspapers announced that opening as "the long-awaited Cultural Palace has finally been opened" (*Cumhuriyet 1969a*). Besides Hayati Tabanlıoğlu and the directors of art institutions –also artists and architects- the then President Prime Minister and even the Chief of General Staff of Turkey was attended the opening ceremony (e.g. Fig. 3). This can be interpreted as a declaration that what AKM means for Turkish Governors and politicians. Besides the supporters, there were also some critics about the building. Some important columnists of those years considered the building as a luxury consumption. While Barlas was pointing out that Turkey has bigger problems than having an international cultural palace (*Barlas, 1969*) and many other journalists was criticizing the elite events and their budgets (*Cumhuriyet 1969b*). The underlying approach of those critics was; the palace was built for just a few highbrowed people in Turkey and -because in that cultural era- opera, ballet and theatre is not a tradition for low-income society. Ironically, paper clippings in those years shows that the servants of surrounding Universities also protest the daytime schedules of the shows because they could not attend (*Cumhuriyet 1969c*).

Figure 3. The visit of Hayati Tabanlıoğlu, the then Prime Minister and senior staff of Turkey. Source: (Salt Online Archive 2020)

The building at the Pafos Gate consists of two main sections that are connected through a corridor over the street leading to the old city (Fig. 5). The north section hosts the entrance of the complex and a glassed exhibition space. The first floor hosts the private and semi-public research spaces accessible by the visitors. The façade panel openings adjust to the functional requirements of the corresponding spaces.

The building units at Sarayonu are positioned at the moat level of the city walls (Fig. 6). The main building section is situated below the street level, and extends on one side of the moat. Deployable units adjust through their size, structure and envelope elements to the functional disposition of the program. In this case the building primarily conveys open and closed spaces within the landscape at the moat level.

The façade of the building was another debate. It is still considered as an important example of contemporary Turkish architecture for architects and scholars. The façade had been designed by a well-known architect Aydın Boysan in corporation with Arçelik which was and still one of the pioneer international technology firm in Turkey. That's why their contribution to construction means a lot for architects to improve new construction techniques. The most important breaking point in the 2nd period is the conflagration in 1970 (e.g. Fig. 4). There had been many speculations on what caused that catastrophic fire, even some left-orientated organizations had been accused to sabotage the building. Some people who has worked for these organizations decreed by death sentence (*Son Havadis 1973*) and this also shows how AKM had been politicized during its history. However, it turned out that it was the electrical system caused the fire. The large part of the building was heavily damaged after the conflagration and the building was decided to be closed due to the need of restoration. It should be also mentioned that Turkish Armed Force staged a coup in 1971 and overthrew the Government. The outcomes of this politic event also blocked the restoration process. It had taken eight years to restore the building. A newspaper captioned that the restoration is going on at a snail's pace because it needs 25.000.000 TL while the budged of the Government is 15.000.000 TL (*Gün 1973*). In 1974, a columnist in Cumhuriyet Newspaper published an article titled File: Culture Palace to elucidate the ongoing process of the restoration. He declared that no one is taking the responsibility of the fire because everyone is so busy to share the tenancy of the Cultural Palace (Ketenci 1974). That everyone includes

the Government, the Municipality of Istanbul, the organization of State Opera and Ballet and Istanbul Municipal Theatre.

Another press clipping in 1976 shows that the construction workers also protested the Government for their unpaid salaries, and they declared strike for a month (*Cumhuriyet 1976*) and this also postponed the re-opening date. It is clear that the low budget was the first reason for delayed re-opening. In 1977, the citizens, reporters, organizations and professionals were at the end of theirs rope. A newspaper captioned that citizens have waited twenty-three years to build plus seven years to restore and now they are waiting for re-opening (*Hürriyet 1977*). In 1977, the building witnessed one of the most heartbreaking event of Turkey which is called *the bloody 1st of May*. Under the leadership of Confederation of Progressive Trade Unions of Turkey, 500.000 people gathered in Taksim for the celebration of the worker's day. The Union also covered the façade of AKM with banners. But unfortunately, 34 people were killed by a group of unidentified murderers by an open fire. The image of the building with that banner still represents 1st of May, 1977 and also still used as a reminder to emphasize the power of the working-class in Turkey. In September 1977, the building has been finally re-opened. However, the name of it had been changed again as *Atatürk Cultural Center* and this new name of the building could manage to survive till today.

3.3. The 3rd period in-between 1977-2005

The importance of the 3rd period is the only period that AKM had served as its purpose. It means that one of the most iconic building of Istanbul which has 90 years of history could be used only for twenty-nine years but still is the most important building of Turkey. During those years the building has also witnessed several government changes and also public events. The period in-between 1977-2004, there wasn't much thing to discuss about AKM within the scope of this paper. Only a columnist in Cumhuriyet Newspaper critiqued the abbreviation of Atatürk Cultural Center as AKM and he claimed that it is a political discourse of the conservatives, they do not want to pronounce the name of Atatürk on purpose (*Arpad 1979*). Another press clipping mentioned that AKM still has not an insurance for fire in 1980 (*Cumhuriyet 1980*). Apart from these, newspaper generally mentioned about the exhibitions and art events, not about the building. However, in 2005 the Government announced an unexpected declaration about AKM. The Minister of Culture and Tourism declared that AKM should be demolished because the building is not earthquake-resistant. The first reaction came from Istanbul Chamber of Architects. They declared that this proposal is baseless and illegal. Because AKM has


TAMİRAT KAPLUMBAĞA HIZIYLA DEVAM EDİYOR

3 yılda harcanan 15 milyona rağmen Kültür Sarayının çehresi değişmedi

Figure 4. A photograph of fire and the paper clipping after then. Source: (Salt Online Archive 2020)

already been registered as A-Class Cultural Asset by the second Preservation Board of Istanbul. However, AKM was closed again without any other declared reason but then it has been understood on following years that the Government has another agenda for Taksim Square. Many people blamed Justice and Development Party (AKP) for this declaration. Architects, artists, students, columnists, professional organizations and some politicians also supported Istanbul Chamber of Architects and the newspapers had started to caption about AKM again. Murat Tabanlıoğlu was also one of them who was against the demolition decision. He gave an interview to Radikal Newspaper together with his four colleagues titled as "Demolishing AKM? Don't even think about it!" (Aktuğ 2005). He also published an article in Radikal Newspaper in 2007 and said that "AKM is not just a building, it is an icon" (*Tabanlıoğlu 2007*). However, he gave up his critical position in later years and has been announced as the new architect of the new AKM in 2017.

3.4. The 4th period in-between 2005-2009

This period corresponds to the second period of AKM that had been kept close. During these four years it was not clear if AKM will be demolished or restored again. In 2007 Cumhuriyet Newspaper caption that AKM should be restored instead of demolition and added that it is a God-given right of art lovers in Istanbul to interpose the demolition. At the same page the newspaper also features the declaration of Istanbul Chamber of Architects titled as AKM shouldn't be demolished, it is one of the most unique example of Turkish Republic architecture and also the symbol of Taksim Square (*Cumhuriyet 2007*). Within these four years many protests had been organized by artists and architects. The Government was in the cross hairs of all these protests. A columnist in Radikal newspaper published an article about AKM titled as "AKM and Memory Removers". He emphasized that it is not important if you like or don't like the architecture of AKM but still to demolish it means to remove one of the most important heritage of 20th century history of Istanbul and the modernization period of Turkey. He also added that who is Istanbulian, has also a memory about AKM. If you demolish it, you will also demolish those memories and none of the buildings can replace those memories even if it will be the most beautiful building of the world (*Şahin 2007*). In 2009, the Government declared that AKM will be restored and the restoration project has been assigned to Tabanlıoğlu Architects which means Murat Tabanlıoğlu. It was not surprising to think that Murat Tabanlıoğlu wants to restore the building which is designed by his father to keep it out from demolition. The restoration project has been accepted by the Preservation Board in 2009, however in the same year the Union of Culture and Art indicted the Ministry of Culture and Tourism by justifying the verdict of A-Class Cultural Asset (Tabanlıoğlu 2013). Although Istanbul 2010 European Capital of Culture Agency Executive Board tried to arbitrate, the Union didn't withdraw the case and the 9th Administrative Court decided to halt the decision of restoration.

3.5. The 5th period in-between 2009 till today

From 2009 to 2017 there have been no official news about the future of AKM, will it be demolished or restored. In 2009 the Government allowed the 1st of May ceremonies to be held in Taksim Square again and in 2011 the Confederation of Progressive Trade Unions of Turkey hold the same banner on the façade of the AKM after 34 years to remind the *bloody 1st of May* in 1977 (*Cumhuriyet 2017*). 2013 is also another important year throughout the history of the building. Thousands of people in Istanbul had protested the decision of demolition of Gezi

Park in Taksim Square. The protest held in in Taksim Square again even it was not allowed by the Government. The Government tried to disperse the demonstrators by police force however it took nearly one month to end the protest. National and international press announced this as "Gezi Protests in Taksim". Throughout the protest, AKM has taken to the stage again. Although the building was closed on that date, protesters used the façade of the building again as a screen and representation of the event (e.g. Fig. 5).

During the protest the president of Turkey announce that not only Gezi Park but also AKM will be demolished. He also proposed to build a baroque style opera hall in place of Taksim. This proposal was also caused a debate among citizens and professionals. Istanbul Chamber of Architects published a release to the public and claimed that the demolition of AKM will be illegal and it is not understandable to demolish one of first Modern project of Turkey to build a baroque style building instead of it. In 2015, another debate occurred related to the façade of the AKM. The Ministry of Culture and Tourism covered Turkish Modernism' iconic façade with a movie poster that, the Movie about Ottoman Empire. It was the first time that one of the most important public square of Turkey had been represented by a movie poster and it was also the first time AKM had been used as an advertising board. In 2016, *World Architecture News 2015 Awards* announced a project which is designed by Adrian Smith & Gordon Gill Architecture awarded as *Future Project Civic Building*. It was a surprising disclose for Turkish citizens because the building was designed in place of AKM. The newspapers announced this news as "the mysterious project" (Cumhuriyet 2016). It is still a mystery for all that who ordered the building and in which purpose. However, this project has also never been built (e.g. Fig. 6).

Figure 5. The façade of AKM in the bloody 1st of May 1977, same banner in 1st of May 2011 and Gezi Protests in 2013. Source: (Cumhuriyet 1977, 2017; Sözcü 2013).

Figure 6. The façade of AKM as advertising board in 2015 and the "mysterious project" in 2016. Source: (Cumhuriyet 2015, 2016)

Finally, in 2017, the Government announced the new AKM project with the participation of the Ministry of Culture and Tourism, the governor and mayors of Istanbul and Tabanlıoğlu Architects. The project was introduced via a video including 3D renders of the new design. The new AKM is completely designed by Tabanlıoğlu Architects under the leadership of Murat Tabanlıoğlu. as far as it is understood, the old and famous façade of the building has been kept and it is the only thing that has matched with the original AKM. Now besides all the memories, *the new* AKM will also face the old with its façade physically. In the opening speech of the ceremony, the President of Turkey declared AKM as an unfortunate building. According to him, there is an institutionalized lobby in Turkey which is also supported by foreign agents. That lobby has been trying to sabotage every urban decision in Turkey just because political reasons. To him, they used AKM as a tool to protest the Government and the only reason that the building has been kept as a ruin for 10 years was the acts of this lobby (*Hürriyet 2017*). The President also considered this *lobby* in the same equation with advocates of the terror in Turkey and he also declared this again in the groundbreaking ceremony of the new AKM in 2019 (*CNNTürk 2019*). The design of the new AKM and Murat Tabanlıoğlu is still a very controversial subject in current days. Since Murat Tabanlıoğlu was one of those who strongly opposed the decision of demolition in 2005, those critiques were not unexpected. Hereupon, Murat Tabanlıoğlu answered those critiques via an interview he gave to Financial Times in 2019. He said that "normally, I would never collaborate with the Government however AKM is a family inheritance for me". Nonetheless, he added that he was so upset the day the building had been demolished and could not even watch or see it (*Financial Times 2019*). In the groundbreaking ceremony, the President declared the building will be opened in 2019 however today in August 2020, the current situation as in figure 7.

CONCLUSION

AKM with its unique history has been representing the role and the debates of architecture in a contemporary society in many perspectives. Within the scope and the questions of this paper, it contains all answers as a cumulative case. What makes a building historical and iconic for a city? The answer would be the architectural design as it is in this case. AKM was one of the first examples of the Turkish Modernization in architecture, it would be also the historical events that the building had witness and AKM has always carried this responsibility throughout its history. The answer also would be the landmark features of the building; AKM

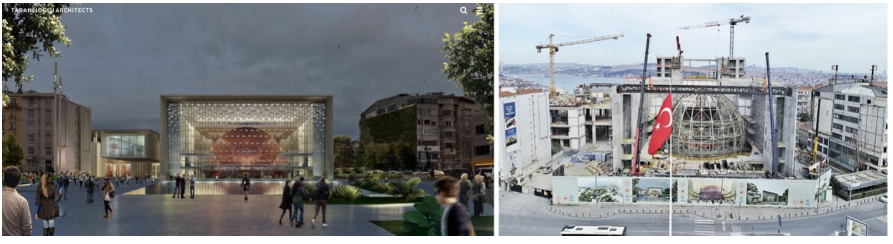


Figure 7. The new AKM project and the current project site. Source: (Tabanlıoğlu Architects 2020)

is placed in the most important public square of Istanbul. However, beyond those answers AKM is historical and iconic because it has always been a battlefield of ideological struggle between modernist revolution and the conservative counter-revolution. This directly leads us to the 3rd question: What are the effects of politicians and architects to urban memory? Even the citizens of Turkey who had never visited Istanbul know many things about AKM. It has created a kind of cumulative urban memory for all Turkish citizens. While some of them strongly against its demolition the others celebrated the new building. When it is considered that it is just a cultural center, this separation becomes much more interesting for architecture. Besides the politicians who has participated the process as decision makers, when current Turkish President claimed people who protested the demolition as terrorist, AKM also became a terror weapon that causes public indignation and this is the answer what are the effects of politicians on urban memory. It is understandable that architect Murat Tabanlıoğlu has wanted to design the new building to adopt his father`s legacy. He is neither politician nor decision maker. However, he has also been accused of betraying the urban memory, and this is the role and the effect of the architect in urban decisions. He was expected to conserve an architectural legacy and the urban memory, so the architect became a political figure and/or a savior instead of a professional. AKM also shows that if a building becomes an urban legend no matter if it is new or old. Possibly, the new AKM will be more functional and well-designed according to the original one however It is not the design that causes the debate in here, it is the memory that a city needs. Thus, when the new AKM will face the old, it will also represent the demolition of the original one, but still will be historical and iconic again. The 2nd question of the paper is still open to discussions. Since the building has not been completed yet, it is not appropriate to answers this question. Future discussions will show us can a *new* building represents the same meaning with the old even if the two have same function and façade?

REFERENCES

Aktuğ, Erkan. 2005. "Mimarlar: AKM'yi yıkmak mı? Aklından bile geçirme!" Radikal. Accessed December 2, 2019. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/89687.

Arpad, Burhan. 1979. "Niçin AKM." Cumhuriyet. Accessed December 10, 2019. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Barlas, Mehmet. 1969. "Benzersiz durum." Cumhuriyet. Accessed January 5, 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Bilsel, Cana and Pierre, Pinon. 2010. Henri Prost's planning works in Istanbul (1936-1951): Transforming the structure of a city through master plans and urban operations. Istanbul: Istanbul Araştırmaları Enstitüsü.

Can, Aslı. 2015. "Atatürk Cultural Center as a part of Hayati Tabanlıoğlu archive." European Union Prize for Cultural Heritage / Europa Nostra Awards 2015, Special Mention. Accessed December 21, 2019. https://www.europanostra.org/2015-eu-prize-cultural-heritageeuropa-nostra-awards-special-mentions/.

CNNTurk. 2019. "Yeni AKM'nin temeli atıldı, Cumhurbaşkanı tarihi törende konuştu." Accessed February 10, 2020. https://www.cnnturk.com/turkiye/son-dakika-yeni-akmnin-temeli-atiliyor-binali-yildirim-torende-konusuyor.

Cumhuriyet. 1930. "Taksim'de yapılacak tiyatro." Accessed December 10, 2019. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1958. "Opera binası meselsi bütçe komisyonunda görüşüldü." Accessed December 10, 2019. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1959. "Istanbul Opera Binası 1961 yılında bitiyor." Accessed December 10, 2019. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1960. "Istanbul'un ilk opera binası 19 Mart'ta perdesini açıyor." Accessed December 10, 2019. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1969a. "Istanbul Kültür Sarayı dün açıldı." Accessed January 2, 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1969b. "Opera, gecekondu, övüntü." Accessed January 2, 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1969c. "Operaya gitmek bizim de hakkımız" Accessed January 2, 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1976. "Günde 750 lira fark için kültür sarayı onarımı durdu." Accessed January 2, 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Cumhuriyet. 1980. "AKM'nin ne sigortası var ne de iskan izni." Salt Online Archive. Accessed January 6, 2020. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/89685.

Cumhuriyet. 2007. "Yıkmak değil onarmak gerek." Accessed December 15, 2019. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/73710.

Cumhuriyet. 2012. "AKM de restore edilecek." Accessed December 14, 2019. http://www.cumhuriyet.com.tr/haber/diger/317616/AKM_de_restore_edilecek.html.

Cumhuriyet. 2016. "Yeni AKM'nin fotoğrafları internette yayınlandı... Müşteri bölümü gizli." Accessed February 4, 2020. http://www.cumhuriyet.com.tr/haber/turkiye/491184/yeni-akmnin-fotograflari-internette-yayinlandi-musteri-bolumu-gizli.html.

Cumhuriyet. 2017. "İşte DISK'in arşivlerinden çıkan 1 Mayıs fotoğraf ve afişleri." Accessed February 4, 2020. http://www.cumhuriyet.com.tr/foto/foto_galeri/730411/1/iste_DiSK_in_arsivlerinden_cikan_tarihi _1_Mayis_fotograf_ve_afisleri.html/15.

Cumhuriyet. 2019. "Yıkmak değil onarmak gerek." Accessed December 15, 2019. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/73710.

Ertuğrul, Muhsin. 1969. "Taksim'deki bina." Cumhuriyet. Accessed January 2, 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Felek, Burhan. 1965. "Personel Kanunu." Cumhuriyet. Accessed December 10, 2019. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Financial Times. 2019. "Architect's son performs second act for Istanbul opera house." Accessed February 10, 2020. https://www.ft.com/content/123bd2e6-c9a8-11e9-a1f4-3669401ba76f.

Gün. 1973. "Tamirat kaplumbağa hızıyla devam ediyor." Salt Online Archive. Accessed January 5, 2020. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/91681.

Haluk, Şahin. 2007. "AKM ve Bellek Silicileri." Cumhuriyet. December 15, 2019. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/85831.

Hürriyet. 1977. "23 yıl yapılışını, 7 yıl tamirini bekledik, şimdi de açılışını bekliyoruz." Salt Online Archive. Accessed January 6, 2020. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/90647.

Hürriyet. 2005. "Koç: AKM'yi yıkacağız." Accessed December 14, 2019. https://www.hurriyet.com.tr/gundem/koc-akmyi-yikacagiz-3128860.

Hürriyet. 2017. "Yeni AKM projesi tanıtıldı." Accessed Februay 10, 2020. https://www.hurriyet.com.tr/gundem/iste-yeni-akm-40635485.

Istanbul Atatürk Cultural Center Directorate Briefing File. 2005. "Binanın idari ve hukuki durumu." Salt Online Archive. Accessed November 17, 2019. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/70030.

Ketenci, Şüfran. 1974. "Kültür sarayı dosyası." Cumhuriyet. Accessed January 2. 2020. https://www.cumhuriyetarsivi.com/cumweb/html/.

Mimarlara Bülten. 2013. "Modern Mimarlık ve AKM'nin Dönüşüm Rüreci." Accessed December 27, 2019. http://mimarlarabulten.com/yazilar/modern-mimarlik-ve-akmnin-donusum-sureci

Salt Online Archive official website. Accessed January 5, 2020. http://saltresearch.org/primo_library/libweb/action/searchalt&dscnt=0&dstmp=1581859605805&backFromPreferences=true

Son Havadis. 1973. "Sabotajcıların idamı istendi." Salt Online Archive. Accessed January 5, 2020. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/83728

Tabanlıoğlu, Murat. 2007. "AKM salt bir bina değil, bir simge yapıdır." Radikal, December 2, 2007. Accessed January 2, 2020. https://archives.saltresearch.org/handle/123456789/76871

Tabanlıoğlu, Murat. 2010. "Istanbul AKM yenilenirken." Mimarlık 352, no. 2. Accessed December 11, 2019. http://www.mimarlikdergisi.com/index.cfm?sayfa=mimarlik&DergiSayi=366&RecID=2319

Tabanlıoğlu, Murat. 2013. "Atatürk Kültür Merkezi: Yirminci Yüzyıl Yapısını Yirmi Birinci Yüzyıla Taşımak, part 1." Mimarlık 371, no. 3. Accessed December 11, 2019. http://www.mimarlikdergisi.com/ index.cfm?sayf=mimarlik&DergiSayi=385&RecID=3149

Tabanlıoğlu Architects official website. Accessed June 5, 2020. http://www.tabanlioglu.com/.

PAPER #3.14

THE URBAN CHURCH: REPURPOSING A COMMUNITY DETAIL

William O'Neil Bourke[a]
[a]Temple University, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, USA

ABSTRACT

What is the status of urban churches today? Changes in congregations and notions of community are causing the abandonment of urban religious structures. As cities change, so do their architecture and communities. This results in urban churches becoming a popular focus for redesign.

The common trend for church redesign--Christ Reformed Church (Philadelphia) and First Baptist Church (Dayton, Oregon)--shows approaches for housing and restaurant space, respectively. Though they seem to be reasonable solutions, they lack the connection to traditions of community embedded in these structures.

This paper looks at the challenging design for hyper-specialized architecture. Through historical research, detail, and respect, the paper proposes how church architecture adaptive reuse should respond to the originality of these sacred spaces. Design should take into consideration adaptive reuse trends of contrast (new vs. old) to architecturally create new buildings with revitalized community purposes.

The design case study it analyzes is the Church of Assumption BVM at 12th and Spring Garden in Philadelphia, PA. Being a Gothic Revival cathedral, the design focuses on not just the space, but also, the sublime experience of the church itself. The design calls to reinvent the way the public interacts with these buildings by changing the procession of space. Since Gothic art was considered an act of devotion, the project, *Art as an Act of Devotion*, adapts and reprograms the space as an artist collective where community members can come to create and experience art in a neighborhood lacking public space.

By introducing site connections that form new geometries (contrast), changing notions of entrance (transparency), and creating new experience through moments of reflection (prayer) and movement, adaptive reuse of churches can begin to respect, reinvent, and revitalize buildings and their communities within the city.

KEYWORDS

Adaptive reuse; new meets old; contrast; urban churches; gothic architecture.

Figure 1. The Church of the Assumption BVM. Philadelphia, PA. Source: (Bourke 2019)

INTRODUCTION

"*The True Church can never fail. For it is based upon a rock"* (Elliot 1917, 27-8).
Throughout history, churches have been gathering places for communities. These structures stood as symbolic representations of spirituality, community, and tradition. They are used for big congregations, pilgrimage destinations, and daily prayer. Yet, in today's changing urban dynamics, they are beginning to lose the purpose of their original design.
Research has shown that churches are primarily affected by changes in their congregations.

> "Far from being fixtures in the urban landscape, the population of congregations is a constantly shifting array--some coming, some going, others moving and still others reinventing themselves" (Simons, 2017 12).

This makes congregations "drivers of change of sacred places" because the changes like "births of new congregations, deaths of existing congregations, contractions and expansions of existing congregations" affect the groups and function of churches themselves (Simons 2017, 12). As communities grow and change, the groups shift and move to different buildings, consolidate from multiple to one, and leave others as a result. The dynamic changes cause the abandonedment of urban churches while their communities develop new needs. The result leaves urban churches with no congregation to serve and creates an infrastructure with no purpose.
The question then becomes why save these buildings? Aside from being beacons for community, they are examples of sublime detail and beauty worth saving. John Milton wrote:

> "But let my due feet never fail/To walk the studios cloister's pale,/And love the high embowed roof/With antique pillars massy proof,/And storied windows richly dight/ Casting a dim religious light" (Milton 2012).

As houses of god, these churches were designed with care and high craft. The spaces they create have an air of spirituality. Architect Steven Holl often talks of the feeling of a place. Holl states,

> "A five-year-old can walk into a building and not really understand the concept, but still get that feeling" (Phaidon (Holl), 2019).

It is the indescribable effect of walking into a space and being struck by an unconscious feeling of awe and beauty that makes one remember a building. Most urban churches do not have to strive to become special spaces because they already embody both the tradition of craft and service that we unconsciously appreciate through our nostalgia towards history and memory (Zumthor 1998, 7). This paper broadly looks at the dilemma of urban church architecture and then focuses more specifically on the Gothic and Gothic Revival building type to propose an interdisciplinary solution to the design problem of respecting these buildings but revitalizing them with new purpose.
The adaptive reuse process will be explained through a design case study that focuses on the Gothic cathedral type and the experiences its architecture creates. Their ornament, their play with light and shadow, and the connection to the spiritual, create an example of awe and stunning architecture that new construction fails to achieve. Church sublimity combined with a community function prove that churches have valuable and unique characteristics. Even though they have lost their institutional purpose, that does not mean the building must lose the qualities that make it special.

1. COMMON USES, REOCCURING ISSUES: HOUSING, RESTAURANTS, AND PERFORMANCE VENUES

With their current uses for abandoned ecclesiastical architecture, designer's approaches fail to preserve the beauty of these spaces. Designs include bars, housing, restaurants, and performance spaces. Cities have many adaptive reuse projects of churches, like Christ Reformed Church-Chapel Lofts (Philadelphia) and the Sheba Apartments, Fishtown (Philadelphia) and First Baptist Church-Block House Cafe (Dayton, Oregon), to name a few. Though these are profitable solutions, they fail to create a connection to the tradition and service-oriented function that churches were designed for. All current reuses *devalue* the sacred, *degrade* the institution, and *restrict* the accessibility of these urban churches.

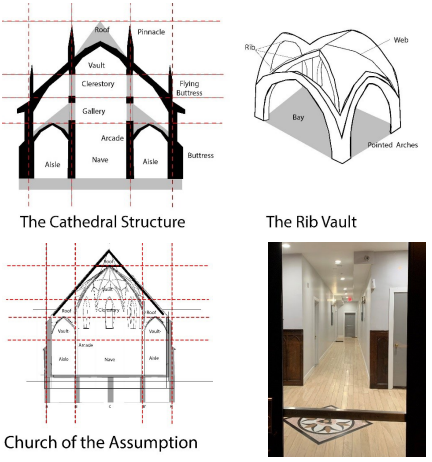


Figure 2. Gothic Church Spatial Diagrams (left), Front Door, Sheba Apartments (right) Source: (Bourke 2019)

Housing design *devalues* the sacred nature of a church. Instead of being a holy "house of God", these buildings lose the sublime by becoming an "apartment for rent." The designs lose the dichotomy of big lofty spaces of the nave, and narrow aisles that shape the spatial integrity of a church (Fig. 2 left). This special and unique spatial organization becomes segmented and fractured to fit in as many rooms as possible and in doing so, destroys the interior dynamics of these churches. By doing this, churches lose their ability to be used for reverence and reflection. Their aspect of awe and emptiness is missing. Located in Fishtown, Philadelphia, Sheba Apartments, was repurposed as apartments, and looking through the front door, it already becomes apparent that there is a change in spatial organization (Fig. 2 right).

Other attempts, like restaurant reuse, degrades the character of the institution of the Church. Rather than being a building for public service the building becomes a business or "profitable" enterprise. Capitalizing on the big open spaces, the approach crams as many tables into a large space with disregard to the original programmatic intent. The nave becomes cluttered with tables and chairs and the institution shifts away from its service-based focus (Fig. 3). The reuse does little to change the space and approaches the "redesign" as a chance to fit in whatever furniture they can based on a square footage count.

Figure 3. The Church, Dublin, Ireland. Source: (The Church (Management) 2017)

The performance venue approach, like The Old Church (Portland), appears at first to be a more viable use but has its shortcomings as well (The Old Church (Management), 2019). This effort restricts accessibility and becomes an issue of "day and night." The design questions the fundamental nature of church-goers needing access to building throughout the day. The adaption becomes a venue operated only at night and no longer offers solace for daily prayer losing its communal purpose. They revitalize the building with new function similar to prayer—performance—which appears to speak to the fact the churches were meant to be big, beautiful, and acoustic spaces, with a large area for gathering. However, this approach narrowly responds to the church architecture and removes the interaction and connection to the building and its details. Performance reuse successfully creates an experience where the participant can interact with the performance (like mass service) but fails to connect the architecture as an active facilitator in its function. Venue plans remove accessibility and the building becomes a shell in which a performance occurs rather than an active contributor to a spiritual experience.

All three types are options, but can church adaptive reuse become something more? New design should reflect the originality of these buildings. Current uses fail to respect the social responsibility that these buildings were created for. By using a method like historical analysis of church design, we can learn to find more appropriate ways to redesign these buildings.

2. METHODOLOGY: RECONNECT AND RESPECT THROUGH HISTORY AND TRADITION

To better grasp design solutions for the urban church, one must understand the history and development of the design of ecclesiastical architecture, and more specifically, Gothic architecture. History can give lessons on how to create more meaningful connections within architectural design by connecting these existing buildings to their roots. Gothic cathedrals were designed with two community-based functions in mind: pilgrimage and the daily purpose of prayer. The fundamental basis of a church design was its programmatic intent to serve the community (Monrose 2012). The architecture was a public space representing a religious institution but meant to be open to all. The program was defined by civic duty, and its beauty was a representation of craft and a call to something greater—a sense of spirituality. To understand these buildings, we must understand their history, as well.

History gives clues to the origins of cathedral architecture. In the Gothic era, art [and architecture] was seen as an act of devotion (Homan 2016, 50). In response to what some saw as the degradation of society, Gothic Art was a mode for uplifting and improving the state of the community and society in general (Homan 2016). Gothic architecture embodied this message, and the relics and the buildings were designed with the intent to create moments of deeper connection for personal prayer and reflection.

The architectural design of these churches was carefully laid out to serve its function. Tracing the history of a church, from a Roman basilica to the Gothic Revival cathedral, shows how its service-oriented function formed its architecture (Fig .4). As mentioned, the Gothic cathedrals were designed as pilgrimage churches with the architecture of the nave, apses, and ambulatory simultaneously facilitating prayer (Stalley 2007). Religious service or mass also shaped the architecture, as the two functions could occur together. The functions led to the development of the church to have a conflicting dynamic of movement and meditation that created the unique spaces found in cathedral design.

These spaces allowed for people to move freely and find their own personal moments for reflection even during mass. This gave churches a purpose as a space of devotion, reflection, and beauty for the community (Homan 2016). The uniquely orchestrated procession of spaces creates a sublime architectural experience of active and static moments centered around prayer and reflection.

2.1. Methodology: Themes of Contrast (New vs. Old)

The adaptive reuse projects call upon one important concept of transformation from new to old, which is contrast. Liliane Wong mentions that "Adaptive reuse, in contrast to demolition and preservation, perpetuates a continuum of growth and change" (Wong 2017, 35). Adaptive reuse is founded upon the

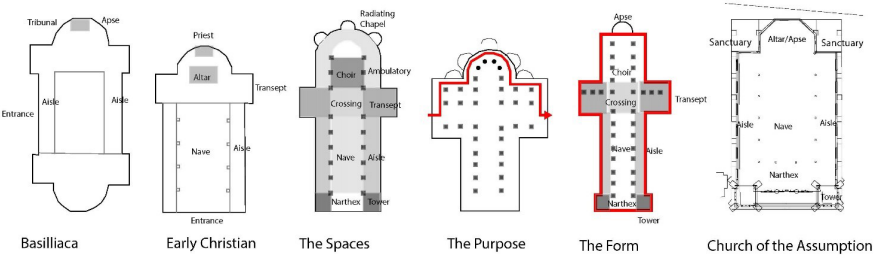


Figure 4. The Historical Development of Church Architecture. Source: (Bourke 2019)

To respect and redesign a sacred space calls on a sensitivity to the original intent, tradition, and beauty found in religious architecture. When designing these spaces, there are special difficulties that arise because the architecture is so specific. How does one design a new adaptive function for a building so focused on its programmatic intent for religious service? The other question is how to create a dynamic change while respecting the originality, spatial organization, and beauty of the church? The solution comes with three foci: community (program), contrast (tectonics), and sublime experience (design approach). To respect the original design, the reuse must maintain its community function. In addition, the reuse will focus on recalibrating the sublime experience, which is the aspect of the design reliant upon the original notion of movement and reflection or procession of spaces. Lastly, the design will call for the contrast of new and old to architecturally state the changing function.

notion of change. Architecture must respond to the changing notions within a community and adapt to fit new needs. As mentioned, churches are facing a period in which they are losing their original function for prayer, so they need to adapt or find a new purpose. The tectonic architectural response to create new functions is through the process of contrast.
Charles Blozies states that adaptive reuse projects require an element of contrast. With adaptive reuse, there should be a response within the architecture that enhances "our appreciation of both new and old" (Blozies 2011, 139). He further breaks down the notion of contrast into three categories: extreme, reserved, and referential. With *extreme* projects, like Daniel Libeskind's Contemporary Jewish Museum, Blozies shows how new alien-like structures can completely redefine old spaces through the introduction of new geometries (Blozies 2011, 94-5, Fig. 5). With *reserved* contrast, found by Renzo Piano's

Morgan Library, Blozies illustrates how architectural interventions can be simple and austere. The design unites three buildings from three different eras of design history with a simple connective tissue forming a new complex (Blozies 2011, 98-9, Fig. 6). With *referential* contrast, like Forte Di Fortezze, Blozies shows how collective architecture can use contrasting materials to create connections that artfully respond to the historic complex and create new passages and routes through the existing building (Blozies 2011, 80-1, Fig. 7). Through all three modes of contrast, adaptive reuse can create new spaces through a varying dialogue between new and old elements to reinvent and revitalize existing architecture.

Disregarding the degrees of extremity, all three projects hold one thing in common, the element of contrast. Whether it's glass and

Figure 5. Contemporary Jewish Museum_Studio Daniel Libeskind_San Francisco, CA 2008. Source: (Basulto 2008)

Figure 6. Morgan Library_Renzo Piano Building Workshop_New York, NY 2008. Source: (Denance 2020)

Figure 7. Forte Di Fortezze_Markus Scherer and Walter Dietl. Fortezza, Italy. 2007. Source: (Jett 2011)

steel against stone, or metallic panels against brick, or steel infiltrating granite, contrast can be used to call attention or notify that there is something new and different within the old architecture. With architects like Viollet-Le-Duc and Louis Kahn, contrast becomes an element that contributes and improves the existing architecture. The connections to "the nature and tradition of a space...and the ideal..human aspiration"(design) show how architecture can respond to what exists rather than ignore it (Bressani (Le Duc) 1989, 327-350). The design case study's approach at the Church of Assumption B.V.M. in Philadelphia, learns from all modes of contrast and looks to create a new architecture that redefines the existing site while paying attention to "the nature of a space..and the will to exist a certain way" (Wong 2017, 35). The proposal shows how interventions can respond to and respect the building and not destroy the integrity and tradition steeped within the beauty and experience of its space.

3. CONTEXT: SPRING GARDEN COMMUNITY

The design case study for the adaptive reuse of an urban church focuses on Church of the Assumption BVM. The church is a Gothic revival building located in the heart of a changing area of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Philadelphia has become a hot bed for the dilemma of abandoned church infrastructure. As a city, Philadelphia is built on the foundations of religious freedom, and as one of the largest cities in the United States, the population has been affected by the flux of congregation demographics.

The Church of the Assumption B.V.M. is in the Spring Garden District of Philadelphia. Recently, the area has been rebranded as the Spring Arts District. It lies in an old industrial part of the city, and has an architectural variety ranging from warehouses, to row homes, to abandoned railways. As a major component of adaptive reuse, the Reading Viaduct, an abandoned railway, has been planned to be repurposed as public greenspace, and as a result, it has sparked incentive for redevelopment of the area (Saffron 2018). With a promising architectural landscape, the area's adaptive resue face the problem of serving a new complex demographic

Many projects only offer an activation of the area at night in the neighborhood. With large populations of homeless people, and the call for redesign of forgotten industrial infrastructure, the area has become popular for adaptively reused buildings like performance venues and breweries (Flynn 2017). Through the process of redevelopment, the creative class is drawn to the area because of its affordable options for artist spaces, which creates an incoming demographic of young creative professionals. The tension between the new incoming population and existing area offers an opportunity for a new community space that can be focused on the arts, performance, and outreach.

Looking at the urban demographics and development, the Art as an Act of Devotion project looks at redesign within the context of its emerging community. With new artists and existing outreach, the adaptive reuse design case study looks to serve the community through a new artist collective where the community can come to make, teach, and connect communities through art. A building created through devotion and art, can be repurposed to serve and revitalize a community through that same devotion.

4. CASE STUDY: THE CHURCH OF THE ASSUMPTION B.V.M. (PHILADELPHIA, PENNSYLVANIA)

The case study, *Art as an Act of Devotion*, looks at the site bordering 12th and Spring Garden. The Church of the Assumption BVM adaptive reuse looks at redesign through elements of contrast, community, and the sublime. The site

includes three religious buildings: the rectory, the convent, and the church (Fig. 8, 11). The buildings are situated neighboring each other and packed tightly together creating spaces that recall the narrow streets and towering masonry buildings of a Medieval city (Fig. 11). The focus of the redesign connects the support buildings and the church to create new spaces for outreach, residences, and studios. By introducing connections between all three buildings, the design calls for an activation of the whole site rather than one building. The artist collective becomes a dialogue for community by creating a complex for public service.

The adaptive reuse proposal focuses on two key elements: creating new viable connections, and fostering the growth of a new community. The connective tissue called the "cloister" encloses bridges between the three buildings making the complex. The bridges then connect the inside by creating new routes on the second floor or "gallery" level. These links are formed by joining the existing and adjacent masonry openings--like windows and doors—of the buildings. The design reinvents, redirects, and reorients the buildings with new routes through the three buildings that offer new interior geometries in the church (Fig. 9). Newly formed connections

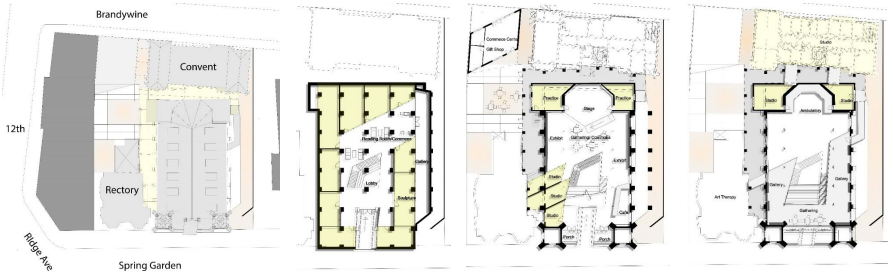


Figure 8. (From left to right) Site Plan, Basement, First Floor, and Gallery Level. Reference. Source: (Bourke 2019)

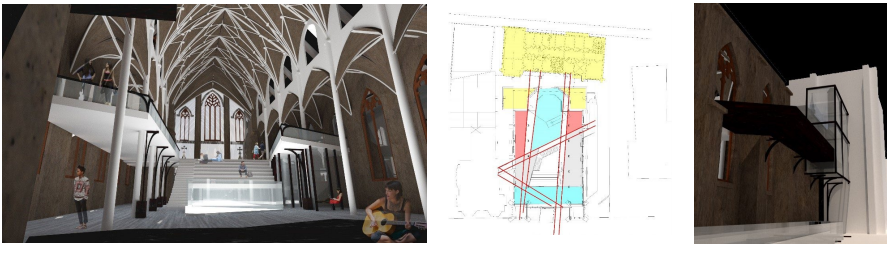


Figure 9. Church Interior (left) Regulating Site Lines and Openings (center) Cloister (right). Source: (Bourke 2019)

begin the dialogue of contrast of the new and the old.

The adaptive reuse implements all contrast types proposed by Charles Blozies. Like Forte di Fortezze, the bridges themselves are *referential* as they respond to the "raw form and structure" of the existing buildings. They solve the "practical problem" of how to connect these three closely knit buildings. In addition to form and structure, the bridges also refer to the industrial past of the area with the material choice of galvanized steel (Blozies, 80). These bridges then actively introduce new extreme geometries. Like Daniel Libeskind's Museum, these geometries are "unsettling and vertiginous" and they notify the shift from old to new by forming new interior spaces (Blozies, 94). Lastly, the cloister connects three startlingly different buildings with a simple reserved response tectonically (Fig. 9). Made of steel and glass, it is constructed with a mesmerizing "rhythm of new and old" in an "understated" manner like Renzo Piano's Library (Blozies, 99). The design does so with regard to material and scale. The glass enclosure allows light into the interstitial space that is wedged between the three buildings. The cloister itself does not reach higher than any of the three structures and allows the church to remain as the focal point of the complex. The proposal creates a complex that calls to serve a new function and design through the technique of contrast.

The design decisions call to breakdown the hierarchy of tradition encompassed in these structures through a focus on concepts of transparency and entrance. The front façade gets modified from stone to glass, which makes the interior always visible to the public (Fig. 10, 11). The design creates street view that establishes the church as a lantern for its community activating it with different programmed areas like classrooms, exhibits, studios, and practice spaces. The new program for the building begins to bring activity to the Spring Garden corridor throughout the day. By doing so, the building breaks down the barriers--institutionally and physically--that seem to be arising between the community, the church, and its architecture.

After inviting the public into the newly repurposed collective, the next step was to change the procession of space (sublime experience) by recessing the entrance into the building and submerging it below grade. This shifts the entrance from going up to going down, and it reactivates the unused basement of the church for new studio spaces and a lobby. The new entrance into the church from the basement allows for a dramatized entrance into the nave of the church (Fig 10). By opening the basement to the nave, the design amplifies the height of the nave space, and reorients the experience of the space by drawing the viewer to look up at the decorative rib vaulting when entering the church. This begins to touch on

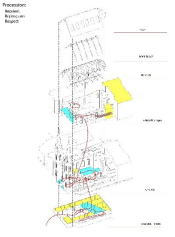
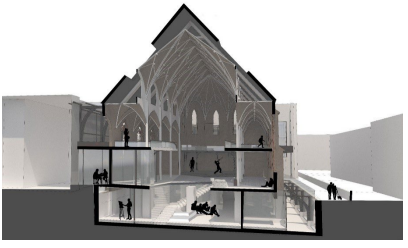




Figure 10. Community Lantern (left), Sublime Procession (center), Section (right). Source: (Bourke 2019)

the importance of redesigning the spatial sequence that becomes the driving force for design (Fig. 10).

The design approach calls for one to design with respect to the integrity of the space and the institution of the church. What gets redesigned in this approach is not quite the building itself but rather the interaction with and procession through the spaces. Elements of contrast, connection, transparency, and entrance, work to respect, reorient, and reprogram the church. By introducing bridges and changing the entrance, the design changes the movement through the building. With new program and geometries, the building becomes activated with a new function and architecture. (Fig. 10) From a building built upon prayer, mass, and movement, it gets reactivated regarding that original function. The Art as an Act of Devotion adaptive reuse calls for the community to reexperience the church through a newly activated spiritual framework for the religious structure. As people come to create, learn, and experience art, the church naturally provides spaces and places where they can participate, reflect, and grow through a community arts-based program. The design proposes to respect religious tradition yet offers a space and opportunity to serve new community needs that its original design no longer can.

CONCLUSION. RECREATING MEANING BY LEARNING FROM TRADITION

Looking at the history of the institution of the church and the original design intent, we can learn how to respect and celebrate church architecture. Looking at Gothic Revival churches and their history, designers can use approaches like sublime experience and meaningful public purpose as a guide to adaptive reuse solutions. By doing so, architects can repurpose these buildings in a manner that does not ignore the beauty, integrity, and spirituality of the space. Church architecture is steeped in tradition and conflict as a house for a religious institution. That does not mean that redesign solutions should ignore tradition, but instead, it should embrace it. When redesigning, architects will run into issues because these buildings are connected and revered by the communities due to the fact, they were created to serve them. It is the tradition and community service that should remain as an integral part of design for these structures. The problems arise when community structures are demolished or redesigned, and the original function ignored.

Can we respond to what is there rather than destroy what exists? The hyper-specialized spaces are designed with spatial relations and feelings that must be preserved. Rather than looking at fracturing these buildings or packing them with furniture, we can celebrate them and their history. Urban Churches not only serve as an interesting topic for redesign, but also offer lessons to design in general. They offer opportunities to work with architecture

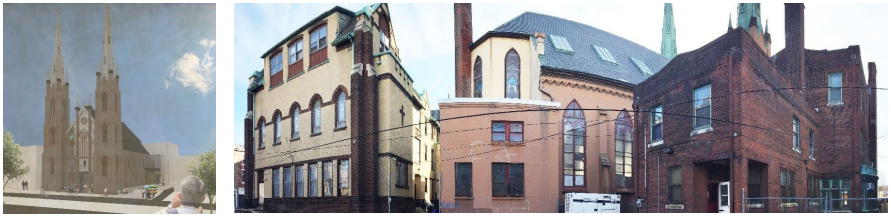


Figure 11. Art as an Act of Devotion (left), Site of Church of the Assumption BVM (Left to Right: Convent, Church, Rectory). Source: (Bourke 2019)

already steeped with meaning and tradition. There is a need today for designers to create architecture that has a deeper meaning and significance. Architecture that was created with fundamentals in history, tradition, the sublime, and public service is an architecture worth saving.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to dedicate this paper to my Grandad, who passed due to COVID-19. An engineer and artist, whose talent and work ethic inspired me to become an architect, Rest In Peace with Gram 08-23-20.

REFERENCES

Basulto, David. "Jewish Contemporary Museum San Francisco / Studio Libeskind." *ArchDaily,* ArchDaily, 10 June 2008, www.archdaily.com/2113/jewish-contemporary-museum-san-francisco-by-daniel-libeskind-opening/.

Blozies, Charles. 2011. *Old Buildings, New Designs*. Princeton Architectural Press.

Bourke, William. 2019. *Art as an Act of Devotion*. (Temple University). Architectural Thesis.

Bressani, Notes on Viollet Le Duc's Philosophy of History, 1989. *Journal of the Society of Architectural Historians*, 48,327-325.

T. S. Eliot, 1920. *Poems*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 27-28.

Homan, Roger. 2016.*The Art of the Sublime: Principles of Christian Art and Architecture*. London: Routledge.

Jett, Megan. 15 Sept. 2011. "Fortress of Fortezza / Markus Scherer with Walter Dietl." *ArchDaily*, ArchDaily. www.archdaily.com/168769/fortress-of-fortezza-markus-scherer-with-walter-dietl.

Milton, John. 2012. *Il Penseroso*. Hardpress Publishing.

Monrose, Pastor Gilford T. 19 Nov. 2012. "The Role and Importance of the Church in the Community." *The Huffington Post*, TheHuffingtonPost.com. www.huffingtonpost.com/pastor-gilford-t-monrose/role-of-the-church_b_1896969.html.

PHAIDON (Holl). 2012. "Steven Holl - 'Architecture Brings Art into Our Lives' | Architecture | Ageda." *Phaidon*. https://www.phaidon.com/agenda/architecture/articles/2015/october/07/steven-holl-architecture-brings-art-into-our-lives/

Flynn, Katherine, and Preservation. 19 July 2017. "Fertile Ground for Adaptive Reuse In Philadelphia's Former Industrial Buildings: National Trust for Historic Preservation." *Fertile Ground for Adaptive Reuse In Philadelphia's Former Industrial Buildings | National Trust for Historic Preservation.* savingplaces.org/stories/fertile-ground-for-adaptive-reuse-in-philadelphias-former-industrial-buildings#.Xht6ZchKiUk.

Saffron, Inga. October 18, 2018. "Philadelphia Expected the Rail Park to Generate New Development. Instead, We Might Get a Self-storage Facility. | Inga Saffron." *The Philadelpia Inquirer*.Accessed December 05, 2018. http://www2.philly.com/philly/columnists/inga_saffron/philadelphia-self-storage-density-zoning-board-michael-grasso-planning-commission-20181018.html.

Simons, R., DeWine, G., Ledebur, L., Wertheimer, L. 2017. *Retired, rehabbed, reborn : The adaptive reuse of America's derelict religious buildings and schools* (Sacred landmarks monograph series). Kent, Ohio: The Kent State University Press, 12.

Stalley, Roger Andrew. 2007. *Early Medieval Architecture*. Oxford University Press.

The Church, (Management). 2019. "The Church, Dublin - Menu, Prices & Restaurant Reviews." *TripAdvisor*, www.tripadvisor.com/Restaurant_Review-g186605-d792839-Reviews-The_Church-Dublin_County_Dublin.html.

The Old Church, (Management). 2019. "About Us." *The Old Church*, www.theoldchurch.org/about/.

Wong, Liliane (Kahn). 2017. *Adaptive Reuse: Extending the Lives of Buildings*. Basel: Birkhäuser, 35.

Unknown. 2017. "Church Brew Works Pittsburgh Brewery & Restaurant in an Historic Church." *Church Brew Works*, churchbrew.com/.

Zumthor, Peter. 1998. *Thinking Architecture*. Baden: Lars Muller.

PAPER #3.15

NEW OLD CITIES.
THE REBIRTH OF GERMAN HISTORICAL CENTERS

Michele Giovanni Caja[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The rebirth of historical centers in some important German cities represents a unique phenomenon, due to the programmatic nature of the designers' intentions and the variety of proposed solutions. Accompanied by a controversial debate, the cases here considered share the same principle of *critical reconstruction*. A principle which aims to correct the errors often carried out in a state of emergency in the post-war period and mostly based on alternative ideas of city. If this reaction – introduced by the revision of the principles of the Modern Movement since the 50s – arises from a slow awareness of the value of the historical heritage, it is with the first critical reconstruction of historical centres of the 80s that the will to recall concretely their identity is manifested.
The projects here presented are to be considered a mature phase of this reflection on urban history and the possibility to reactivate it nowadays. In the search of a new identity of their old characters, emerges a dialectic relationship between historical continuity, critical reconstruction and urban design, with recurring themes like: the memory of the layouts of streets and squares, the small-scaled parcels of the blocks, the reuse of historical typologies, the individuality of each house, the representativeness of the façade, the use of traditional forms and materials. According to a growing attention to the veracity of the original urban image, these projects are intended not as a mere *mise en scène*, but as a real implementation of the historical city with respect to current needs.

KEYWORDS

Germany; historical centers; critical reconstruction; urban image; identity.

INTRODUCTION

The ongoing rebirth of historical centers in some of the most significant German cities – Berlin, Dresden Frankfurt, Lübeck and Potsdam – represents a unique phenomenon, not only in Europe, due to the programmatic nature of its designers' intentions, the richness of the actors involved, the variety of proposed solutions. Accompanied by a lively and controversial debate, the cases here considered share the same principle of *critical reconstruction* (Caja 2018). Such a critical approach dates back to the revision of the urban principles advocated by the Modern Movement in the 20s of last century, which have built the theoretical basis for almost all the projects for the reconstruction of European cities, especially German cities, destroyed by the Second World War. This critical reflection on the fundaments of the historical city arose from the rediscovery of its temporal dimension, understood as a complex and stratified phenomenon built up over time. A phenomenon based on the overlapping of distinct historical layers, of different ideas of cities, surviving only in fragments and parts, for the analysis of which techniques similar to those of archaeological stratigraphy have been developed.

1. THEORETICAL BACKGROUND

The origin of this awareness dates back to the 1950s when, for the first time, the loss of the center and the need to restore a heart to the city became a main topic in the architectural debate (Rogers et al. 1952). The merit of this questioning was to highlight how the functionalist city, so attentive to the question of zoning and the optimization of living spaces, had completely forgotten not only the question of historical centers, but also that of newly founded *nuclei.* The question of the heart of the city was raised as a social, political and economic center as the issue of the new center for many of the devastated cities after the Second World War emerged. This concern for the regeneration of life in the city raised a great range of strategies on how to deal with it. However, many of these actions incorporated decontextualized parts attributable to the model of the open city, which caused the loss of historical identity of the urban space.

The urban analysis developed in Italy during the 1960s (Muratori 1960; Aymonino et al. 1970) became an operational tool to investigate the morphological structure and typological features of historical cities. If the merit of this intense analytical decade was that of classifying historical types and forms in a taxonomic way, its limit was that it didn't have a direct influence on the design phase, which was still understood as an autonomous moment in a tight continuity with the idea of open city based on abstract principles. The reflection of these studies on an international scale in the following decade rediscovered the value, the individuality and uniqueness of historical centers in their spatial and urban dimension. A rediscovery capable of activating a renewed attention towards them, no longer intended only as an object of study and analysis, but as real design references.

This gave rise later to an awareness of the need not only to revitalize these centers but, where necessary, to rebuild them according to the specific settlement principles of the European city (Delevoy 1978). From Léon Krier's first ideal projects for the reconstruction of German cities such as Bremen (Krier 1984) to the Internationale Bauausstellung Berlin (IBA 1984/87), the reconstructive principle took on a formal definition and critical emphasis, poised between revisionism and experimentation. The interventions carried out in Berlin in the two decades following the reunification of the city (1990), under the guidance of Hans Stimmann and a group of "architects of the city", constitute an updated example of this re-constructivist line, pursued today even in smaller historical centers, such as those analyzed here.

The projects here presented are to be considered as a mature phase of a reflection on urban history and the possibility to reactivate it nowadays. Aimed at reconstructing the identity of the historical features of the here considered German cities, they establish a dialectic relationship between historical continuity, reconstruction and urban design.

Within the history of reconstruction (Nerdinger 2010), these interventions prove to be paradigmatic for the questions they raise, but also for the concrete architectural solutions they offer, in their dialogic connection between copy and reinterpretation, which makes them true witnesses of the contemporary condition in which we live (Eco 2016). On the other hand, despite their obvious character of "constructed historical images" (Pehnt 2011), they are to be explained in opposition to the often exasperated desire to be current and new in much contemporary architecture.

In this sense, they constitute a new chapter in the reconstruction of historical centers, different from previous efforts, based on stylistic, typological or technical aspects, as it is shown in the well-known cases of post-war period such as Warsaw, Münster or Colmar; the Bolognese blocks (Cervellati et al. 1977); the Nikolaiviertel in Berlin with its use of prefabrication.

On the other hand, they are also different from the exported urban cities inside extra-European contexts, especially China (Bosker,

2013), for their different intentions and for the expectations they arise: no images to be evoked or suggested, but real pieces of the historical city to be reconstructed where they were before. There is no displacement, as in the idea of Satellite cities often proposed by the Modern Movement – see *Das Neue Frankfurt* by Ernst May – to be built outside the city center, but also in some Italian cases of urban reconstruction after natural disasters as in Gibellina, Teora or Monteruscello. But there is also no analogy, the typical compositional instrument introduced by Aldo Rossi in the 60s and then echoed in the European and American debate by authors like Colin Rowe, Miroslav Šik, Hans Kollhoff and others to recreate imaginary cities as collages of well-known architectures of the past. What these cases present is a new way of critical reconstruction *on site,* where the margins of interpretation emerge from the architectural solutions, more than from the historical morphological structure, which follows directly the original one, with its compact structure, the recognizability of its typologies, the representative character of its urban image.

2. DIFFERENT WAYS OF URBAN CORRECTIONS

These cases do not arise from an emergency condition or from the need to provide an immediate response, as in the above-mentioned experiences or more recent ones linked to natural disasters. The here presented projects are in fact cases of transformation and replacement of previous reconstructions and, as such, are rather to be considered as interventions of urban *correction* on earlier parts, realized after World War II, considered today, for various reasons, inadequate – for scale, morphological characters and architectural language – to the pre-existing structure of historical city. They are projects, therefore, that arise from the conception of the urban form as a palimpsest of different layers and historical traces, modifiable in themselves, and from the desire to restore, as far as possible, the image erased and lost over time.

2.1. Destruction vs. Reconstruction: Hildesheim as paradigm

A first paradigmatic case in this sense is represented by Hildesheim in Lower Saxony, where for the first time a post-war building was demolished to allow the reconstruction of the ancient historical ensemble of the medieval Marktplatz (Häger 2011). For the reconstruction of the most representative historical building on the square – the butchers' guild house (Knocherhaueramtshaus), built according to the typical wooden frame structure common to many other buildings of the historical *ensemble* –, a Hotel from the 1960s, in the typical forms of the post-war International Style, was demolished. (Fig. 1)

Figure 1. Hildesheim: Hotel Rose; Knochenhaueramtshaus, rebuilt (from: «Arch+», n. 204)

Likewise, in the other cases treated here, there have been similar cases of punctual replacement. At the Neumarkt in Dresden, it was necessary to remove an oversized *moloch* dating back to the 1980s, the extension of the Police Garrison, to allow the reintegration of the original perimeter of one of the eight historic blocks. At the Friedrichswerder in Berlin, the Foreign Ministry (Aussenministerium, 1964-67), built on Schinkelplatz site during the GDR regime, partly occupying the Bauakademie area and overlooking the Friedrichswerdersche Kirche both designed by Karl Friedrich Schinkel, was demolished. In Frankfurt, the Technisches Rathaus (1974), a brutalist building, was destroyed in 2010 to free the Dom-Römer Areal area, while in Potsdam the large complex of the Teachers' Training Institute on Friedrich-Ebert Strasse was recently removed to make room for the new blocks in the process of being built around the Castle. These out-of-scale functionalist buildings, dating back to the socialist or technocratic era, produced, for their volume and architecture, an alienating effect within the original historical fabric, without being able to regenerate a real urban life.
(Fig. 2)

2.2. The mixed Model: Leitbauten and Neubauten

Compared to Hildesheim, a true reconstruction *in style* (at least for the façades) of the original historical substance, the model adopted in the cases analyzed here is different and more articulated, as it includes both reconstructions *as they were where they were* and contemporary reinterpretations of the destroyed houses. The *mixed model* is based on the coexistence of *Leitbauten* and *Neubauten* – buildings reconstructed in the same way as the original ones and new buildings inspired by the existing ones.
This model was firstly adopted at the beginning of the new millennium in the reconstruction of the urban blocks around Dresden's Neumarkt, in conjunction with the completion of the reconstructed Frauenkirche.
Similarly, the Dom Römer Areal in Frankfurt consists of an *ensemble* of houses: about a third are copies of the originals and the rest are entrusted to a wide range of local and non-local architects. In contrast to the general plan for the reconstruction of the Altstadt, only a few blocks will be built in Berlin by

Figure 2. Demolished Buildings: Extension of the Police Garrison, Dresden; Foreign Ministry, Berlin; Technisches Rathaus, Frankfurt; Teachers' Training Institute, Potsdam.

a team of not only national studios, with a compact construction similar to the original, but without the stylistic restoration of the old houses.
The validity of the mixed model seems to be reconfirmed in the other two cases. The blocks around the Alter Markt in Potsdam are based on a general plan (Leitbautenkonzept), according to which different types of intervention are identified: from the faithful reconstruction of the original façades of 18th century buildings to new houses which follow the original volumetric and compositional guidelines.
Also in the case of the narrow and elongated blocks of the Gründungsviertel in Lübeck, a similar approach was followed under the guide of UNESCO: reconstructed pilot project buildings and current reinterpretations of the Gothic-merchant houses typical of Hanseatic cities.
In some cases, like Frankfurt, the dialectics between old and new is defined by the permanence of historical traces and *spolias,* considered as building stones to be reintegrated into the new houses. Their presence has the intent to make the reproduction of the original state – still alive in the collective memory of the actively involved community – more plausible.

2.3. Figurative reconstruction of Baroque city: Neumarkt, Dresden

As one of the most important squares in Dresden's historical center, the Neumarkt was built in the 16th century on the space of the pre-existing city walls in continuity with the market square (Jüdenhof). After the War destructions in 1945, its boundaries disappeared, leaving a large open space around the ruins of the Frauenkirche. During the clearing of their rubble, the complexes of the Johanneum and other historical buildings – still partially standing and available to reconstruction – were also removed.

The actual reconstruction of the urban blocks around the Frauenkirche – planned since the German reunification –, has profoundly transformed the place, according to the original baroque layout (SAK 2008) and its famous views painted by the Italian painter, Bernardo Bellotto. (Fig. 3)

Figure 3. Bernardo Bellotto, Neumarkt in Dresden, 1747 (Hermitage Collection)

The plan was based on the rebuilding of eight parceled blocks, including a series of historic pilot project buildings, under the coordination of the Gesellschaft Historischer Neumarkt Dresden (GHND). The reference points for the reconstruction were: the relationship with the perspective views of the paintings, the compactness of the building, the preservation of the original features, such as the road sections, the continuity of the façades, the eaves heights, the shape of the roofs, the layout of the plots, the type of court house. (Fig. 4)

Figure 4. Von Heinrich Lesch, Stadtplan Dresden, 1828 (extract); Neumarkt, 8 Quartiere, Plan

Figure 5. Neumarkt in Dresden, Quartier 1 and Frauenkirche, historical view and actual situation

The City Council, together with investors, has debated and supported these guidelines with the collective participation of the population, through referendums and public demonstrations. The guidelines set out in the Charter of Guidelines defined to rebuild more than 60 plots according to the principle of pilot project buildings and façades, while for the other plots, new houses with simplified façades were planned to fit harmoniously into the complex. The reconstruction of the historical blocks at the Neumarkt won the National Prize for Integrated Urban Development and Architectural Culture awarded by the Federal Ministry of Transport in 2009. (Fig. 5)

2.4. The reinvention of Renaissance city: Dom Römer Areal, Frankfurt

Accompanied by a broad and controversial critical debate, the recent inauguration of the new *old* town center, the Dom-Römer Areal, poses substantial questions about the future of European cities in the era of globalized standardization (Sturm et al. 2018). The project, which received the international MIPIM Award 2019 for the best urban regeneration plan, aims to give back an identity and a heart to the centre of Frankfurt, erased by the war and rebuilt in successive phases, without a precise idea of city. This intervention has filled the gap left by the demolition of the Technical Town Hall, a brutalist building from the 1970s. The old medieval parcellarium, the housing typologies with small courtyards and rich façades, dating back from Mediaeval to Renaissance time, were reused to restore the existing historical structure of urban spaces made of small squares and narrow streets. (Fig. 6)

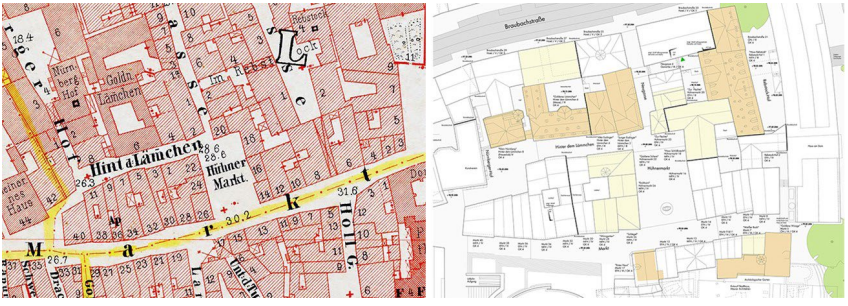


Figure 6. Frankfurt am Main, Ravenstein Plan, 1861 (extract); Dom Römer Areal, Plan.

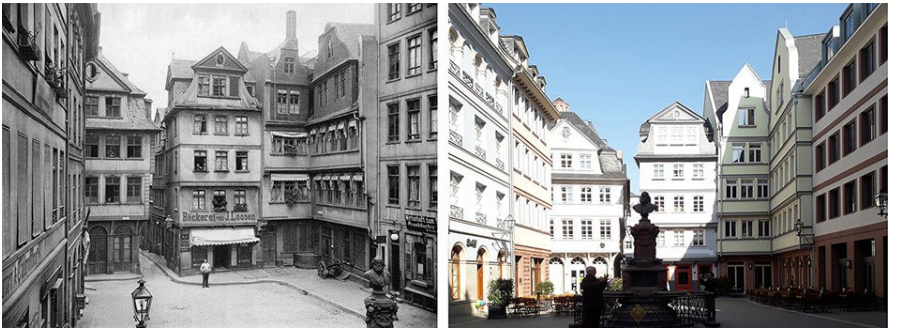


Figure 7. Dom Römer Areal, Hühnermarkt, historical (1904) and actual view.

The competition, promoted by the city, was carried out under the coordination of an architectural quality control committee chaired by local architect Christoph Mäckler. The plan, coordinated by DomRömer GmbH, which was set up specifically for the executive coordination and financing of the project, was based on the urban layout of the original medieval town center, restored while preserving the underground car park of the demolished building. Realized with the close participation of the citizens, the project saw the involvement of several local and some international architectural firms (56 in total), which, following a complex selective phase (5 to 8 different proposals were made for each plot), resulted in a very rich and multifaceted intervention, consisting of 35 houses.

The fundamental principle was based also here on two different degrees of reconstruction: on the one hand, the reconstruction *as it was and where it was* of the most significant historical buildings (Leitbauten) – initially eight, but which then became more – thanks also to the extensive documentation available, assumed as pilot project buildings. On the other hand, the construction of new houses, inspired by the old ones but not identical to them (Neubauten). (Fig. 7)

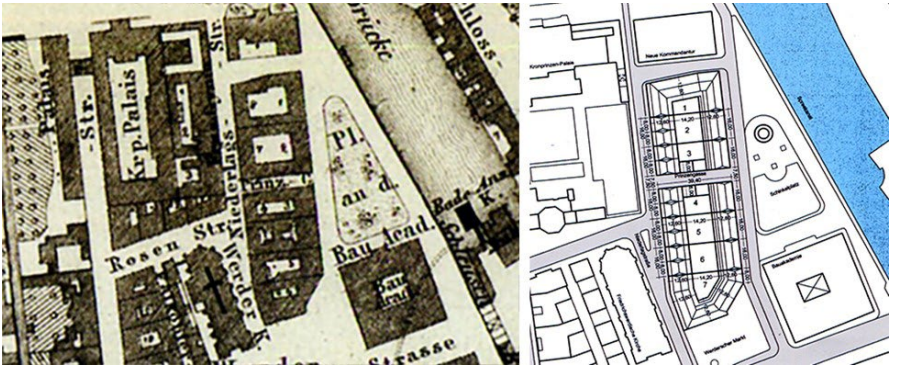


Figure 8. Friedrichswerder: W. Liebenow, Plan 1867 (extract); K.Th. Brenner, Plan 2005 (from: Stimmann 2014).

2.5. The difficult comparison with K.F. Schinkel: Friedrichswerder, Berlin

The area around the former Bauakademie, the Friedrichswerder church and the reborn Schinkelplatz (Fig. 8) – obtained after the destruction of the new Foreign Ministry of the GDR period – is part of the Plan for the city center (Planwerk Innenstadt) elaborated under the direction of former Senate Building Director Hans Stimmann (Stimmann 2014). The actual design of this new prestigious residential area follows the layout of the original blocks, on which the former house typology was to be reinterpreted according to its compact character and its high building density.
The difficulty of this intervention is revealed in the delicate relationship with the two adjacent brick masterpieces by Karl Friedrich Schinkel, the author of Berlin's classical rebirth at the beginning of XIX century, the church of Friedrichswerder and the Bauakademie, the first school of architecture which has been waiting to be rebuilt for more than ten years.
The block known as Kronprinzengärten on the west side of Friedrichswerdersche Kirche (plan: nps tchoban voss, 2014) appears as a simplified version of a first proposal, in which the individuality of each house was called into question by the presence of a common underground car park below the entire block. The unity of the intervention, guaranteed by the constant eaves height and the continuity of the street line, is however compromised by the heterogeneity of the façades, often characterized by strong historicist accents.
The block between the church and the Bauakademie is the result of the re-elaboration of a first plan designed by Klaus Theo Brenner in 2005, divided into two parts, with a total of seven independent plots, two of which are places at corners and five are extended from one side to the other of the block. During the realization this original parceled structure war replaced by a more compact one, with a smaller number of houses. (Fig. 9)

2.6. Reconstructing copies of copies: Alter Markt, Potsdam

The ongoing reconstruction of the urban blocks in the centre of Potsdam, around the Alter Markt, bordered by the Castle, the Nikolaikirche (both rebuilt in different periods) and the buildings along the river Havel, aims to restore the original settlement layout erased by historical events. And this, through the re-proposal of buildings that oscillate between stylistic reproduction and creative reinterpretation of formal principles taken from the past.

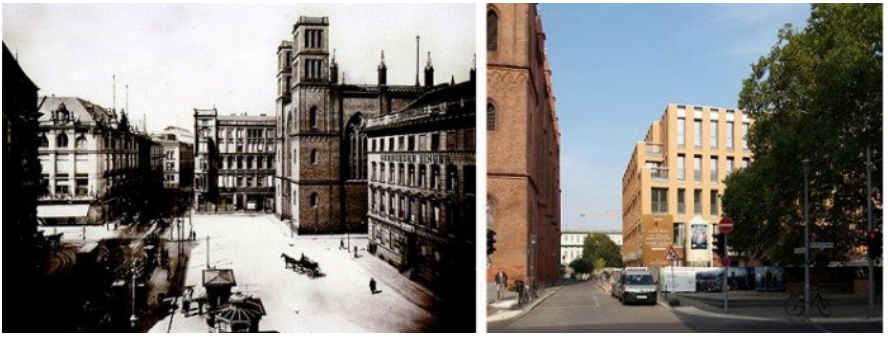


Figure 9. Werderscher Markt: Historical view (1904) and actual situation (House on the right by R. Moneo).

Although the first proposals date back to the last century, it was in 2004 that a competition was launched to redefine the area around the Alter Markt. The winning project introduced the idea of rebuilding the urban blocks around the Nikolaikirche and the Castle which was recently rebuilt almost *as it was and where it was* by architect Peter Kulka. This also gave rise to the idea of reconstructing the sequence of the old buildings on the waterfront, once called *Alte Fahrt* (STP 2012).
The plan of the pilot project buildings elaborated in 2012 (Integrierter Leitbautenkonzept Potsdam) proposed to rebuild the old blocks and, inside them, to reconstruct the houses according to the façades of the ancient models. On an urban scale, the *Leitbautenkonzept* also modified the wide street lane of the late 60s, diverting it and reducing its section, in order to make it possible to rebuild the Castle (even if shortened in length). The blocks under construction, following the demolition of the large building that contained the Fachhochschule Potsdam (FHP), were defined on the basis of a functional *mixitè* principle, capable of conferring new urban complexity and vitality on this central area of the city. (Fig. 10)
In the general plan of the blocks facing the Castle, the Nikolaikirche and the Alter Markt, a precise layout of the plots was outlined, such as to ensure the small scale of the individual houses adjacent to each other. The corner houses, often with façades referring to historical examples, were intended to hold together those arranged along the newly designed streets. Here, too, the levels of reconstruction range from reproducing *how it was and where it was*, in the case of buildings referred to pre-existing models, to a rebuilding subject to common urban and architectural constraints.
The first reconstructed buildings are those on the riverside (*Alte Fahrt*) in front of the castle: here the three adjacent palaces, Barberini, Chiericati and Pompeii, have already been completed, re-proposing the original façades. (Fig. 11)

2.7. The grammar of medieval blocks: Gründungsviertel, Lübeck

The Gründungsviertel (Founders' Quarter) in Lübeck is one of the oldest areas in the western part of the city. Despite some historical references, it underwent several transformations in the post-war period – the modification of some historical traces, the creation of a parking lot, the construction of two isolated professional schools – which led to a shift from the compact structure of the historical blocks towards a more thinned out one (https://www.luebeck.de).
Since the 1990s there had been plans for a restoration of the Gründungsviertel. With the support of the UNESCO World Programme

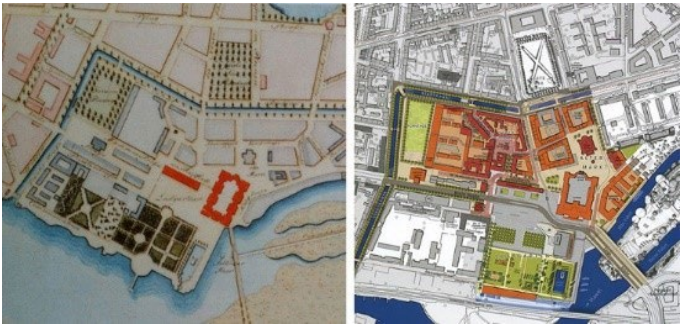


Figure 10. Potsdam: C.L. Oesfeld, Plan 1778 (extract, in red: the Castle); General Plan, 2012 (from: STP 2012).

Figure 11. Palazzo Barberini, Potsdam: 1907 (Photo: E. Eichgruen), 2019.

Lübecker Altstadt, the schools were demolished in 2009. Archaeological excavations and documentary analyses of the site were carried out on the cleared land.

The expected rebirth of the Gründungsviertel on the structure of the original parcels was thought of in the sense of a *critical reconstruction* of the historical layout of the city. The historical parceling of the land made available plots of different widths, thanks to which the richness and variety of the urban image of the past was recreated. In the project under realization, different typologies of houses can accommodate different destinations within a compact building line, which fits well into the minute scale of the medieval center of Lübeck.

Based on the "Rahmenplan Gründungsviertel", the conditions for urban reorganization and development of the district as a residential area within the city were defined in 2015. This plan forms the basis for a reorganization of the "founding district" according to historical street alignments, differentiation of the building type, variation of roof ridges and eave heights. (Fig. 12)

The reconstruction of the Gründungsviertel as an area of contemporary living is one of the most important and challenging projects in the Hanseatic city of Lübeck. The new district is based on the historical precedents, with its compactness of the blocks, the density of the plots, the building alignments, the pitched roof houses. In total, 170 units, including apartments, shops and offices on the ground floor, are foreseen.

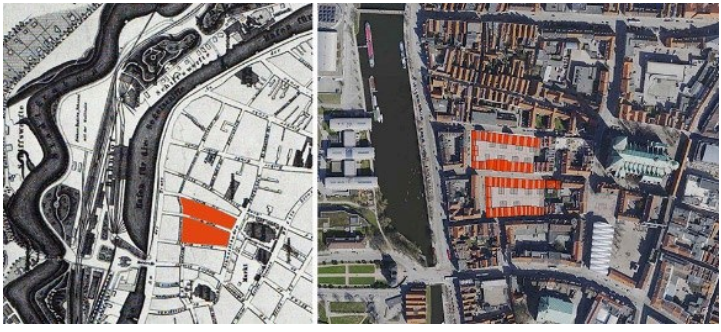


Figure 12. Lübeck, Gründungsviertel: historical situation (1872) and actual plan.

CONCLUSION

For the extent of the here analyzed interventions, recent critics have spoken of *reconstructionism* as a response to *deconstructivism* born in the late 1980s (Fischer 2011). With respect to the desire to dissect the historical city analytically – as if it was a patient on an operating table, attempting to dismember its individual pieces and subject them to conceptual processes of abstraction – the attempt here is rather to reintegrate the surviving fragments and traces still present within a unified image. The aim is to propose an updated version of the historical image that has been lost, following wrong – or today no longer suitable – choices. Choices mostly born from a desire to erase the historical and compact structure of the inherited city, often still legible in its foundations and building layout, and in any case received through the historical iconography, albeit in fragmentary form, in favor of new ideas of the city, which today have mostly proved to be inadequate.

Therefore, these cases are not to be understood as nostalgic attempts to reproduce the city *as it was,* nor as simple urban regeneration projects, but as advanced and mature examples of "critical reconstruction", according to the meaning introduced in the European debate since the 1970s. Projects that are also attentive to current issues related to sustainability and the return to a human scale of city living. In contrast to the futuristic ideologies advocated by the avant-gardes, mostly based on the myth of technological progress, these interventions start from the human scale as a measure to re-found the city and its architecture, in respect to actual needs of pedestrians, cyclists and new ecological means of transport.

In fact, these examples have already been taken as a reference by other non-European nations in search of their identity – following the too rapid processes of urban transformation in recent decades – through processes of reinvention of their history and tradition (Engel 2018). Abandoning the taboo of authenticity and historicity of the original, they reinvent traditional forms as if they were authentic. These "invented traditions" attempt "to establish continuity with a suitable historic past" (Hobsbawm 1983, p. 1).

Beyond the many doubts and criticisms that such interventions are raising, what is clear is that these are real projects of contemporary architecture, in which the historical city acts not only as an image, but as a concrete reference. It is still too early to assess whether their actual role within the city stops at the pure image, or becomes structural to the real life of those who live there. That is, if these reconstructed centers do not actually remain a simple tourist attraction, but become real places to live in, capable of truly reactivating the sense of community lost over time.

REFERENCES

Aymonino, C., Brusatin, M., Fabbri, G., Lena, M., Lovero, P., Lucianetti, S. and Rossi, A. 1970. *La città di Padova. Saggio di analisi urbana.* Roma: Officina.

Bosker, B. 2013. *Original Copies. Architectural Mimicry in Contemporary China*. Hawai: University of Hawai'I Press.

Caja, M. 2018. *Principi di ricostruzione urbana.* «Aión», n. 21, p. 24-33.

Cervellati, P.L., Scannavini, R. and De Angelis, C. 1977. *La nuova cultura delle città. La salvaguardia dei centri storici, la riappropriazione sociale degli organismi urbani e l'analisi dello sviluppo territoriale nell'esperienza di Bologna.* Milano: Edizioni scientifiche e tecniche Mondadori.

Delevoy, R. (ed.) 1978. *Rational Architecture. The reconstruction of the European City.* Brussels: A.A.M.

Eco, U. 2016. *Nel cuore dell'impero: viaggio nell'iperrealtà (1973-76)*. In: Eco, U. *Dalla periferia dell'impero. Cronache da un nuovo medioevo*. Milano: La nave di Teseo.

Engel, B. (ed.) 2018. *Historical versus Modern. Identity through Imitation?* Berlin: Jovis.

Fischer, J. 2011. *Rekonstruktivismus als soziale Bewegung. Eine architektursoziologische Aufklärung.* «Arch+», n. 204, p. 76-79.

Häger, B. 2011. *Der Marktplatz zu Hildesheim und das Knochenhaueramtshaus*. «Arch+», n. 204, p. 70-75.

Hobsbawm, E.J. and Ranger T. (ed.) 1983. *The Invention of Tradition.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press.

Krier, L. 1984. *Heimat und Wiederaufbau oder der Wiederaufbau der deutschen Stadt.* In: Hämer, H.-W. and Kleihues J. P. (ed.) 1984. *Idee Prozess Ergebnis. Die Reparatur und Rekonstruktion der Stadt.* Berlin: I.B.A. 1987/ Fröhlich & Kaufmann.

Muratori, S. 1960. *Studi per una operante storia urbana di Venezia.* Roma: Istituto Poligrafico dello Stato.

Nerdinger, W. 2010. *Zur Einführung – Konstruktion und Rekonstruktion historischer Kontinuität.* In: Nerdinger W. (ed.), with Eisen, M. and Strobl, H. 2010. *Geschichte der Rekonstruktion. Rekonstruktion der Geschichte,* München: Prestel Verlag, p. 10-14.

Pehnt, W. 2011. *Eine Kopie ist nur die halbe Wahrheit. Kampf dem Attrappenkult: Die Debatte um die Rekonstruktion verlorener Bauwerke bleibt heftig.* «Süddeutsche Zeitung», n. 96.

Rogers, E.N., Sert, J.L. and Tyrwhitt , J. (ed.) 1952. *The Heart of the City. Towards the humanization of Urban life.* New York: Pellegrini and Cudahy.

SAK (Sächsische Akademie der Künste) und Stadtplanungsamt der Landeshauptstadt Dresden (ed.) 2008. *Historisch contra modern? Erfindung oder Rekonstruktion der historischen Stadt am Beispiel des Dresdner Neumarkts.* Dresden: Akademie der Künste u. Stadtplanungsamt.

Stimmann, H. 2014. *Berliner Altstadt. Neue Orte und Plätze rund um das Schloss.* Berlin: Dom Publisher.

STP (Sanierungsträger Potsdam GmbH) (ed.) 2012. *Potsdam. Der Weg zur neuen Mitte.* Berlin: Nicolai.

Sturm, P. and Cachola Sturm, P. (ed.) 2018. *Die immer Neue Altstadt. Bauen zwischen Dom und Römer seit 1900.* Frankfurt a.M./ Berlin: Jovis.

PAPER #3.16

ADAPTIVE REUSE & REGENERATION AS POTENTIAL FOR INDUSTRIAL SITES IN THE METROPOLITAN CITIES OF PAKISTAN

Naveed Iqbal[a], Koenraad Van Cleempoel[a]
[a]Faculty of Architecture and Arts, Hasselt University, Hasselt, Belgium

ABSTRACT

Karachi and Lahore are Pakistan's most important cities and they are also among the world's most densely populated cities. After the partition of the Indian subcontinent in 1947, there was a strong emphasis on textile, mechanical, and steel industries such as *Pakistan steel mill* in Karachi and *PECO industry* in Lahore. Like many other sites, there are still visible traces of its industrial heritage. Industries such as these were the reason for internal migration towards the cities providing jobs and life to the cities.

Currently, the urban infrastructure & public amenities of these cities are inadequate and insufficient. But more construction will lead to demolition generating a loss of important layers of recent history. The urban paradox, however, may create opportunities for the city to consider reusing its abandoned industrial sites. Such processes occur in Europe and are now also followed by China where the reuse of former industrial sites became levers for city development and regeneration. Chinese cities like Beijing and Shanghai have several recent examples of adaptive reuse of abandoned industrial sites.

The paper presents the analysis of Karachi's & Lahore's industrial legacy, its adaptive reuse potential, and aims for its regeneration through a local, socio-economic, and cultural revival. This project fits within a broader Ph.D. research on the industrial heritage of Pakistan; its identification and potentialities. Unlike Europe, Pakistan does not recognize industrial sites as heritage. Political instruments to offer new programs for these areas are limited and they are currently not on the radar as potential places for future city development. However, due to unprecedented demographic and geographic challenges, it may well become valuable to reconsider its potentials.

KEYWORDS

Industrial heritage; adaptive reuse; regeneration; revival; Pakistan.

INTRODUCTION

Pakistan's industrialization began during the British rule but continued after the Partition of British India in 1947. Shortly after the partition in the 1950s, it was the time of an apparent stagnation and mounting economic problems due to disruption of the separation. This was predicted by *TIME* magazine calling Pakistan an economic wreck (Zaidi 2005). By the mid 1960s, however, economic growth was strong and Pakistan was considered a model developing country (Papanek 2019). There were different policies in different regimes in the history of Pakistan which had a direct influence on the industrialization and de-industrialization of Pakistan (Table 1).

1947-58 was the first phase in which the foundation was laid for the coming years. The second phase was from 1958-68 with the continuation of the previous policies, at least in general direction and principles. During the second phase, the industries grew rapidly, and they were mainly developed by private entrepreneurs. S.Akbar Zaidi called it *The decade of development* in his book *"Issues in Pakistan's economy(2015)"*. The third significant phase was 1972-1977 and it was bad luck or bad management years in

TIME PERIOD	DEVELOPMENT / DOWNFALL
1947	Division of subcontinent industries after Partition
1947-1958	The first phase after partition, Civil bureaucracy, and industrialization
1958-1971	Civil and military-bureaucratic capitalism
1973-1977	Nationalization in Bhutto regime
1977-1988	Structural adjustment; the Zia regime
1988-2019	Crises and abandonment of Industries
Source: Based on *S. Akbar Zaidi's* book *Issues in Pakistan economy*	

Table 1. Pakistan Industrial development timeline.

Pakistan's industrial history. During this time the nationalization program was introduced in which some of the key private industries were taken over by the government and converted into state-owned industries like Batala engineering company BECO in Lahore was converted to Pakistan engineering company PECO. Most of the industries went into loss after nationalization and were shut down eventually (Zaidi 2005). Some of the abandoned industries are now engulfed by buildings around it due to the rapid urbanization of the cities.

The recent tide of industrial 'heritage' sites (Douet 2013; Wang and Nan 2007; 'The Nizhny Tagil Charter for the Industrial Heritage' 2003; Chen, Judd, and Hawken 2016; Xie 2015; Florentina-Cristina et al. 2014; Cizler, Pizzera, and Fischer 2015) and reuse is unique for south Asian countries. But it seems like an established and recognized strategy in city planning elsewhere. Many western cities preserved its industrial heritage and added values to it by inserting new programs with societal values. Pittsburgh, Chicago, and Detroit the major post-industrial cities in the United States have put life in the industrial spaces to becoming new community assets. Other examples of giving soul to abandoned industrial spaces include the navy yard in Philadelphia, or the High Line in New York (Robiglio 2017). There are also a variety of examples of activating industrial spaces in Europe like the LX factory in Lisbon Portugal, C-mine (former mining sites) in Genk Belgium, tobacco company converted into residential use Wills buildings Liverpool, Richmond station in north Yorkshire converted into restaurant cinema and many more ('Re-Using Industrial Sites | Historic England' n.d.; 'Lx Factory' n.d.).

When it comes to the Pakistani context, little to no research and practices have been done related to industrial heritage identification and reuse. Pakistan Industries constructed after the partition are not old enough to be considered as heritage according to the Pakistan antiquity act 1975 (last modification in 1992) ('Antiquities Act1975' 1992). Besides numerous industrial sites like abandoned tobacco factories, food factories, steel mills, textile mills, warehouses, salt mines, and railway buildings, industrial heritage, and its potential is little recognized in Pakistan. There are no policies and guidelines at hand related to industrial heritage conservation, regeneration, and reuse. The argument of this paper, therefore, is that the industrial heritage sites of Karachi & Lahore have the potential for adaptation and can be initiated by regional-level factors. We want to identify 19th and 20th-century industrial buildings and the involvement of cultural capital (i.e. local artist community, cultural organizations, educational institutes; and the introduction of industrial heritage in regional cultural and heritage policy).

Since the topic of industrial heritage is a new concept for the Pakistan Heritage field, so the first part of the paper is case selection. The case selection area is done broadly by selecting the two largest cities of Pakistan briefly explaining its history and its potential in the field of industrial heritage and its adaptive reuse. The second part is an analytical framework discussing physical type of industrial heritage in Pakistan, possibility in its regeneration, and interventions for activating such sites. The last part discusses international case studies of industrial heritage and its reuse, selected in a way which are relatable to the industrial sites in Pakistan and its potential in the locality in terms of issues and possibilities.

1. CASE SELECTION

The cities of Karachi and Lahore are selected as a starting point for the study and identification of industrial heritage in Pakistan. Both cities have metropolitan characteristics. Karachi is the capital of Sindh province (also the first capital of Pakistan) and at the same time economic capital of Pakistan. It is also the largest city of Pakistan in terms of population (Table 2). The commercial functions of the city are strengthened by international investment, due to its maritime business (Khuhro and Mooraj 1997). Similarly, Lahore is the capital of Punjab province and the cultural capital of Pakistan. Lahore is the second-largest city in terms of population in Pakistan with a history dating back to 1000BC (Kabir, Abbas, and Hayat 2017) (Table 2)(Fig 1). Both cities have large stocks of industrial heritage but from different activities like steel, engineering, textile, and food industries. Unfortunately, most of the practices related to the industrial buildings after closure is neglect or demolition. Unlike the situation in Europe or the USA, such sites are not considered as heritage, witnessing from a particular kind of urban memory. They are measured with the same parameters and rules with which cultural and religious heritage are measured. Although according to *Nizhny Tagil* charter ('The Nizhny Tagil Charter for the Industrial Heritage' 2003)industrial heritage is defined differently;

> Industrial heritage consists of the remains of industrial culture which are of historical, technological, social, architectural or scientific value. These remains consist of buildings and machinery, workshops, mills and factories, mines and sites for processing and refining, warehouses and stores, places where energy is generated, transmitted and used, transport and all its infrastructure, as well as places used for social activities related to industry such as housing, religious worship or education. The historical period of principal interest extends forward from the beginning of the Industrial Revolution in the second half of the eighteenth century up to and including the present day, while also examining its earlier pre-industrial and proto-industrial roots ('The Nizhny Tagil Charter for the Industrial Heritage' 2003).

City name	City orientation	Population	Area	Types of industries
Karachi	Economic capital, beta global city, cosmopolitan, trading port since 1852	14.2 million	3780 sq.km	Textile, state-led heavy Industries: Steel Industries, transportation, footwears
Lahore	Cultural capital, Historically rich, Educational institutes	11.2 million	1305 sq.km	State-led heavy industries: Automotive & Agriculture machinery, Electrical equipment, small Industries

Source: Based on National Bureau of Statistic Pakistan (2017)

Table 2. Statistics and types of industries in Karachi and Lahore.

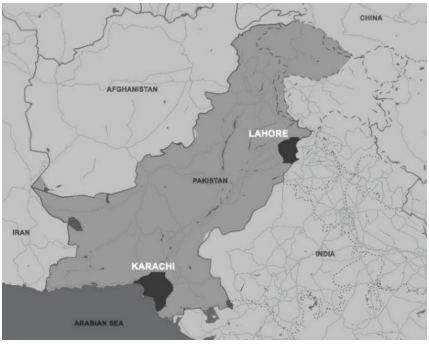


Figure 1. Source: Google Maps, www.google.be/maps edited by author

Instead of demolition the urban paradox mentioned earlier could be the reuse of these sites for a new purpose. Adaptive reuse – the addition of new programs to an existing historical building (Plevoets and Cleempoel 2011) – is the richer option compared to demolition. Rebuilding also enhances the long term usefulness of a building (Bullen 2007). Conversion of architectural sites is not a new phenomenon in the history of the discipline (Wilkinson et al. 2014). Chen, Judd, and Hawken (2016) refer to Grodach and Loukaitou (2007) to develop three cultural development strategies: "progressive strategies", "creative class strategies" and "entrepreneurial strategies" and used it to investigate the adaptive reuse of industrial heritage for cultural purpose in Beijing, Shanghai and Chongqing (Table 3)

Pakistan's industrial development timeline is almost the same as in China. Modern industrial development in China after the 1840 Opium war with Britain was continued after founding of the People Republic of China (PRC) in 1949. In the 1970s due to the high level of urbanization and pollution in the city centers the industries were shifted and the old industrial sites were regenerated and adaptively reused as cultural precincts (Chen, Judd, and Hawken 2016). Most often, adaptive reuse is considered as the only option for regeneration of an industrial building or area. This roots of adaptive reuse in the United States can be found in the 1960s in economically buoyant cities like San Francisco and Boston. Architects Wurster Bernadi and Emmons conversion of Ghirardelli chocolate factory to offices, shops, galleries, and restaurants in the 1964 & 1968 set a style that has followed and evolved worldwide (Douet 2013). The trend of waterfront rehabilitation based on recycled historic buildings have turned industrial waterfronts into desirable properties like St Kathrine Docks, London; Albert Dock,

Strategy type	Goals	Types of cultural projects and programs	Target audiences
Progressive	Community development Arts education and access	Public arts centers Art education and Programmes	Underserved residential population
Creative class	Economic growth through quality of life amenities Promotion of "creative economy"	Arts and entertainment districts Collaboration between arts and private sector	Prospective residents "Knowledge-based" workers
Entrepreneurial	Economic growth through tourism and city image Private sector investments	Cultural landmarks Cultural festivals Promotional activities	Tourists Affluent residents

Source: Based on (Grodach and Loukaitou-Sideris 2007) table by (Chen, Judd, and Hawken 2016)

Table 3. Types of cultural development strategies.

Liverpool; Darling Harbor, Sydney and Granville island, Vancouver. The conversion of the great textile mill complex of Lowell, Massachusetts, into a National historic park is also an equally influential project. (Douet 2013).

The mentioned cities in Pakistan are famous for their historical importance, art, and architecture. National Academy of Performing Arts (NAPA) is one of the famous schools of performing arts in Karachi. National College of Arts (NCA) Lahore is one of the top architecture and art schools in Pakistan. The abandoned industrial sites can be used by these artists communities if assisted by the government and can be a starting point for its regeneration. The second important issue in these cities is the shortage of public and green spaces. According to a report in Dawn newspaper, green areas in Karachi decreased by 4 percent from 2005 to 2017. Many residential neighborhood have almost no green areas,(Ahmed 2020). According to the united Nations health standards, the availability of green space is at least 9 sqm per person while most areas in Lahore city fall short than the UN standards (Shirazi, Zia, and Minallah 2014). The industrial sites have also the potential to be reused as public green spaces and community centers. The examples of industrial sites in Pakistan are discussed below in section four.

2. POTENTIAL INTERVENING FACTORS; AN ANALYTICAL FRAMEWORK

This section characterizes the local intervening factors which can be a lever to developing and reusing industrial heritage or sites. Most of the industrial heritage of Pakistan can be identified from 1958-1971 during the civil and military bureaucratic capitalism and then from 1977-1988 after structural adjustment policies by Zia Regime.

2.1. Physical type of industrial heritage

After the partition, larger parts of the industries of Indian subcontinent came in the territory of India, most of the industrial development in Pakistan started in the mid-20th century (Jaleel 2012). Current industrial types in Pakistan were brought up in two periods, first phase after the partition in the 1950s civil bureaucracy and industrialization and in the 1970s civil and military bureaucratic capitalism. The third period after the 1970s stopped most of the industries due to various reasons one of which was the Nationalization policy.

2.2. Possible role of the community in regeneration

In various examples in the UK, USA, Europe, and now also in China, we see that bottom-up initiatives from the cultural community started using the abandoned industrial sites due to laxer controls and lower rates and converted them into art districts (Evans 2009). In the informal cultural district formation, the local artist community plays a leading role. The organic development of creative clusters and cultural quarters emerged in the USA and Europe in the 1970s and 1980s (Zielke and Waibel 2014).

2.3. Policy intervention influence on activating such sites

The main stakeholders and the different development modes for the governance of developing creative spaces in china are summarized by Zielke and Waibel (2013). The main stakeholders in the development of cultural precincts from redundant industrial sites include the local state, artist community, privates developers, and the actual owners (Chen, Judd, and Hawken 2016). Four types of development methods are put forwarded for the development of creative spaces. *Bottom-Up method*; the method in which industrial

areas are organically occupied by artists and then through official policy promoted by the local government. *Top-Down*; the method in which the local government plays different roles to arrange a common ground for investors owners and developers. *Public-Private Partnership PPP*; In this method the private investor and local government team up to establish a public-private company to coordinate interest between them. *Private Development*; In the private development method the government acts as a supervisor or supporter while the private developer finances most of the investment and in return gain the value addition of the property. In all the development modes local government is involved in one or another way.

3. THE INDUSTRIAL HERITAGE REUSE IN INTERNATIONAL CITIES AND POTENTIAL IN THE STUDY CITIES: A CASE COMPARISON

Besides a handful of immediate reuse potential industrial heritage sites in the cities of Lahore and Karachi (Table 4), they are still standing abandoned and are on the verge of decay, in some cases demolition. First, the urgency is to consider such sites a valuable heritage asset as mentioned by James Douet.

> The industrial landscape is a misunderstood heritage, at worst urban rustbelt, dangerous, a toxic wilderness; at best, an outstanding historical resource to be re-used, regenerating communities, offering real richness and opportunity, reinforcing cultural identity and creating new commercial prospects. But it can also be a vivid reminder of how today's world came to be the way it is, when industry employed whole communities and provided the heartbeat for many towns and cities. In this respect these historic industrial landscapes deserve our closest attention (Douet 2013).

The antiquities' acts and policies related to the heritage of Pakistan (M.R Mughal 1995) is focused on the archeological artifacts, cultural and religious heritage. Industrial buildings in general are not considered as heritage and neither the reuse potential is exploited. Comparing Industrial heritage reuse trend in the city of Beijing summarized by Chen, Judd & Hawke in three ways; In the 1990s it was spontaneously reused by the artist community; in the 2000s was established by private developers through PPP and was driven by the local government in 2010. An example worth mentioning is the conversion of a formal electronics factory

City name	Redundant industrial buildings	City rundown
Karachi	Textile industries, Steel Industries, transportation, railway infrastructure, seaport related infrastructure	Economic capital, artist community, Educational institutes, Entrepreneurs, Small businesses, Fashion capital
Lahore	Mechanical industries, leather industries, textile industries, flour mills	Artist community, Cultural capital, Historically rich, Educational institutes

Table 4. Abandoned industries and potential reuse users.

from the 1950s to "798 Art Zone" in the 1990s. Promoted by the Beijing government it was converted into a "mature creative cluster" from an "underground space of art" (Zielke and Waibel 2014)(Fig 2-3). Chunming Slub Mill a defunct cotton factory in Shanghai is similarly converted into an art district, it was first reused by local artists in the 1990s and then expanded by the Shanghai CIC policy in 2004 (Chen, Judd, and Hawken 2016)(Fig 4).

Figure 2-3. 798 cultural district Beijing. Source: (Martin Thomas Photography-Michael Reynolds)

Figure 4. M50 Shanghai China. Source: (Chinatravelpage.com)

3.1. Industrial development history of Pakistan

The industrial legacy of Pakistan can be traced back to the mid-19th century during the British rule in the subcontinent. But after the partition in 1947 Pakistan got 34 industries out of the total 955 in the Indian subcontinent. Most of them were small size industries and were based on raw materials like small sugar mills, cotton ginning factories, flour mills, etc. The first investment in the industries was by the private investors from 1947-1950. In 1952 Pakistan Industrial Corporation PIDC was established by the government of Pakistan to invest in heavy industries like cement, fertilizer, jute mills SUI Karachi gas pipeline and by 1971 completed 59 industries and created a solid industrial sector base for Pakistan. The GDP share of the industrial sector rose from 9.7% in 1954-55 to 11.9% in 1959-60. After the 1960s Pakistan started investment in heavy industries shifting from consumer goods industries such as mechanical, Petro-chemical, iron, and steel. From 1971-77 the industrial growth and export were disappointing due to various reasons like; separation of East Pakistan, the Indo-Pak war in 1971, suspension of foreign aid, loss of local market of east Pakistan, fall in export, nationalization of industries, and unfavorable investment climate (Jaleel 2012). Due to the above-mentioned reason, there were a lot of industrial buildings abandoned which can be reused for different functions by suitable interventions.

3.2. Cultural capital artist community, cultural organization and Industrial heritage in the study cities

If you take a comparable example of a city to Lahore in terms of industrial development and its reuse will be Beijing. The industrial heritage reuse was driven by the critical mass of artists as Beijing is rich in history due to serving as a capital for five dynasties. Beijing has long been a political and cultural center (Chen, Judd, and Hawken 2016). Similar is the case with Lahore, it is the cultural capital of Pakistan and its importance can be seen in the history of different Rules like Hindu raj, Afghans, Mughals, Sikhs, Britishers, and many more (Baqir 1985). Due to its geographic location, Lahore once called the Paris of the east is still the center of attraction for many in recent years (Kabir, Abbas, and Hayat 2017). Lahore has many universities, art schools, theater, and libraries with a huge density of artist community as compared to other cities of Pakistan (Table 5). Some of the leading art schools in the country are in Lahore. Considering the presence of such a potential artist community there is an opportunity in the industrial sites like PECO industry in Lahore to be reused as cultural precincts like M50 in Shanghai and 798 Art Zone in Beijing. Pakistan Engineering Company PECO which was once Batala Engineering Company BECO established in 1932 by Chaudry Muhammad Latif Batala was one of the leading and Key industries of Pakistan before the nationalization policy (Khan 2008). After the nationalization policy, it went under loss and was eventually closed, currently, it is lying abandoned in the center of Lahore within a densely populated area (Fig 5-6)

City name	Listed universities	Art schools	Museums, Libraries, cinemas & theaters
Karachi	26	18	68
Lahore	34	16	52

Table 5. Educational institutes and cultural resources in the study cities.

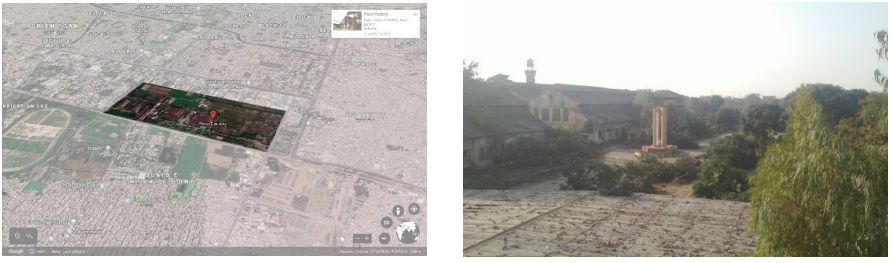


Figure 5-6. PECO industry Lahore Pakistan: (Google earth) edited by the first author

The PECO industry lies almost in the center of densely populated Lahore with universities and sports areas in the immediate vicinity. These points add in the value and promising reuse of such a potential site in the center of the city if opened and assisted by the local government as it is walled and guarded in the current situation.

Similarly, if we talk about the city of Karachi a comparable example is Shanghai. During the trading port period, Shanghai was developed under the influence of semi-colonial and semi-feudal system and the modern culture known as sea culture has a hybrid nature and fusion of western and eastern culture (Wu 2004). Its culture is more market-driven and is based on design industries like media, fashion, and advertising (Ren and Sun 2012). Similarly, the case with Karachi as it is the fashion capital of Pakistan with an active seaport and its architecture is mainly influenced by British colonial architecture. Karachi has also a vast market of small industries and handicrafts. Karachi also has many universities, art schools, libraries, and museums with one of the active artist community of Pakistan. There are several examples of abandoned seaport sheds, railway infrastructure textile industries which can be reused for a new function in the densely populated city of Karachi. The most important example is the recently abandoned Pakistan steel mill PSM with an area of almost 76 square kilometers constructed in the 1960-70s with the help of the USSR. 20 different plants including a thermal power station, forklifts, warehouses, conveyor belts, railway tracks, stockyards, and dozens of other industries standing still (Hasnain 2016) (Fig 7-8). Although political figures of Pakistan always discuss about reviving the PSM but it is already consider as sick industry by some of the economist as it is under the debt of almost 130 million USD.

Figure 7. Pakistan Steel Mill Karachi: (Google maps) edited by first author

Figure 8. Pakistan Steel Mill Karachi: (pakistantoady.com)

3.3. Policy intervention

Whether it be a top-down, bottom-up, public-private partnership PPP or private development the local government involvement in reusing such kind of industrial sites cannot be ignored. More specifically the strategies for the promotion and development of creative industries on such abandoned industrial sites like providing funding, sponsoring cultural spaces, and providing a resident card for prominent professionals (Chou 2012). Such initiatives have been given in the abandoned industrial sites of Beijing which acted as a catalyzer for creating a full-fledged cultural district. Capital steel industrial Park in Beijing is an example of such state-sponsored cultural projects.

DISCUSSION AND CONCLUSION

Industrial development history has left Karachi and Lahore with a substantial amount of industrial heritage. But they are not considered as heritage, which, sadly, seems to hinder their development. We observe the same industrial development timeline in the cities of Beijing and Shanghai, but also in other European or American cities. The first step towards the preservation of industrial heritage in Pakistan is the identification of its potential. Besides looking at it from a Heritage perspective it also creates the possibility for reuse and can be a key area in the city regeneration. For example, the PECO industry in Lahore can be a vital organ for the city's cultural and art activities. Similarly, the Pakistan steel mill can be a center for shifting the urban nucleus of the city as it is already saturated. The heritage reuse policy requires greater consideration of the regional context. Both the cities face a shortage of green urban spaces and parks and these abandoned sites have the potential to be reused as green public and community spaces.

The findings of the paper are; the major intervening factors in starting for a chain reaction of industrial heritage reuse in Pakistan can be government policy and cultural capital. Government policies can start from; sponsored events flagships, incentive policy on a local cultural program, funding on cultural festivals in such kind of abandoned sites. Investigating the regional context and involving the local cultural capital like public cultural organization, public or private cultural enterprises, educational resources; schools, universities, colleges, artist community, and professionals involved in cultural industry. Involving the mentioned resources of the city and providing incentives can be the start of developing and regenerating such abandoned industrial sites which is a sustainable way of preserving such sites both in a material and environmental point of view.

REFERENCES

Ahmed, Amin. 2020. 'Green Areas in Karachi Decreased by 4pc from 2005 to 2017, Says WB Report'. DAWN.COM. 14 February 2020. https://www.dawn.com/news/1534272.

'Antiquities Act1975'. 1992. Google Docs. 1992. https://drive.google.com/file/d/1_9d1YKRIJEytnJkl77DtzGXVKFp4EX6c/preview?usp=embed_facebook.

Baqir, Muhammad. 1985. *Lahore, Past and Present: Being an Account of Lahore Compiled from Original Sources*. B.R. Publishing Corporation.

Bullen, Peter A. 2007. 'Adaptive Reuse and Sustainability of Commercial Buildings'. *Facilities* 25 (1/2): 20–31. https://doi.org/10.1108/02632770710716911.

Chen, Jie, Bruce Judd, and Scott Hawken. 2016. 'Adaptive Reuse of Industrial Heritage for Cultural Purposes in Beijing, Shanghai and Chongqing'. *Structural Survey* 34 (4/5): 331–50. https://doi.org/10.1108/SS-11-2015-0052.

Chou, Tsu-Lung. 2012. 'Creative Space, Cultural Industry Clusters, and Participation of the State in Beijing'. *Eurasian Geography and Economics* 53 (2): 197–215. https://doi.org/10.2747/1539-7216.53.2.197.

Cizler, Jasna, Judith Pizzera, and Wolfgang Fischer. 2015. 'Industrial Heritage as a Potential for Redevelopment of Post-Industrial Areas in Austria'. *AΓΓ+* 1 (2). https://doi.org/10.7251/AGGPLUS1402052C.

Douet, James. 2013. *Industrial Heritage Re-Tooled: The TICCIH Guide to Industrial Heritage Conservation*. Walnut Creek, UNITED STATES: Routledge. http://ebookcentral.proquest.com/lib/ubhasselt/detail.action?docID=1977967.

Evans, Graeme. 2009. 'Creative Cities, Creative Spaces and Urban Policy': *Urban Studies*, May. https://doi.org/10.1177/0042098009103853.

Florentina-Cristina, Merciu, Merciu George-Laurenţiu, Cercleux Andreea-Loreta, and Drăghici Cristian Constantin. 2014. 'Conversion of Industrial Heritage as a Vector of Cultural Regeneration'. *Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences* 122 (March): 162–66. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.sbspro.2014.01.1320.

Grodach, Carl, and Anastasia Loukaitou-Sideris. 2007. 'Cultural Development Strategies and Urban Revitalization'. *International Journal of Cultural Policy* 13 (4): 349–70. https://doi.org/10.1080/10286630701683235.

Hasnain, Subuk. 2016. 'The Demise of Pakistan Steel Mills'. Herald Magazine. 30 October 2016. http://herald.dawn.com/news/1153574.

Jaleel, Sadaf. 2012. 'PAKISTAN INDUSTRIAL GROWTH', 27.

Kabir, Najma, Ghulam Abbas, and Khizar Hayat. 2017. 'A Historic Journey of the Lahore City, to Attain Its Identity through Architecture'. *European Journal of Interdisciplinary Studies* 8 (1): 87. https://doi.org/10.26417/ejis.v8i1.p87-97.

Khan, Anika. 2008. 'Impact Of Nationalization On BECO And Pakistan Economic Development'. *Ramblings of a Pakistani Woman.* (blog). 22 August 2008. https://anikakhan.wordpress.com/2008/08/22/impact-of-nationalization-on-beco-and-pakistan-economic-development/.

Khuhro, Hamida, and Anwer Mooraj. 1997. *Karachi, Megacity of Our Times*. Oxford University Press.

'Lx Factory'. n.d. *Lx Factory* (blog). Accessed 14 February 2020. https://lxfactory.com/en/lx-factory/.

M.R Mughal. 1995. 'Legislation for the Protection and Management of Archaeological Heritage of Pakistan'. Kifayat Academy Educational publishers Karachi. https://en.unesco.org/sites/default/files/pakistan_legislation_07_1995_engl_orof.pdf.

Papanek, Gustav F. 2019. *Pakistan's Development: Social Goals and Private Incentives*. Harvard University Press.

Plevoets, Bie, and Koenraad van Cleempoel. 2011. 'Adaptive Reuse as a Strategy towards Conservation of Cultural Heritage: A Literature Review'. In . https://doi.org/10.2495/STR110131.

'PROVISIONAL SUMMARY RESULTS OF 6TH POPULATION AND HOUSING CENSUS-2017 | Pakistan Bureau of Statistics'. n.d. Accessed 13 January 2020. http://www.pbs.gov.pk/content/provisional-summary-results-6th-population-and-housing-census-2017-0?fbclid=IwAR1E5v641afiqk-oZRD2ZekK_3j3bdiW9tCLQtzy7sZZpnUwG1OOM2c678.

Ren, Xuefei, and Meng Sun. 2012. 'Artistic Urbanization: Creative Industries and Creative Control in Beijing'. *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 36 (3): 504–21. https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1468-2427.2011.01078.x.

'Re-Using Industrial Sites | Historic England'. n.d. Accessed 14 February 2020. http://historicengland.org.uk/advice/heritage-at-risk/industrial-heritage/our-industrial-heritage/re-using-industrial-sites/.

Robiglio, Matteo. 2017. *RE-USA: 20 American Stories of Adaptive Reuse, a Toolkit for Post-Industrial Cities.* Jovis Verlag GmbH.

Shirazi, Safdar Ali, Syed Zia, and Muhammad Minallah. 2014. 'SPATIAL DISTRIBUTION OF URBAN GREEN SPACES IN LAHORE, PAKISTAN: A CASE STUDY OF GULBERG TOWN'. *Pakistan Journal of Science* 66 (September): 277–81.

'The Nizhny Tagil Charter for the Industrial Heritage'. 2003, July, 4.

Wang, Jianguo, and Jiang Nan. 2007. 'Conservation and Adaptive-Reuse of Historical Industrial Building in China in the Post-Industrial Era'. *Frontiers of Architecture and Civil Engineering in China* 1 (4): 474–80. https://doi.org/10.1007/s11709-007-0064-5.

Wilkinson, Sara J., Craig Langston, Hilde Remøy, and Hilde Remøy. 2014. *Sustainable Building Adaptation: Innovations in Decision-Making*. Somerset, UNITED KINGDOM: John Wiley & Sons, Incorporated. http://ebookcentral.proquest.com/lib/ubhasselt/detail.action?docID=1597997.

Wu, Weiping M. 2004. 'Cultural Strategies in Shanghai: Regenerating Cosmopolitanism in an Era of Globalization'. In . https://doi.org/10.1016/j.progress.2003.10.002.

Xie, Philip Feifan. 2015. 'A Life Cycle Model of Industrial Heritage Development'. *Annals of Tourism Research* 55 (November): 141–54. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.annals.2015.09.012.

Zaidi, S. Akbar. 2005. *Issues in Pakistan's Economy.* 2nd ed. rev. and expanded. Karachi: Oxford University Press.

Zielke, Philipp, and Michael Waibel. 2014. 'Comparative Urban Governance of Developing Creative Spaces in China'. *Habitat International* 41 (January): 99–107. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.habitatint.2013.06.007.

PAPER #3.17

METAMORPHOSES IN PARIS: THE FATE OF SAMARITAINE AMONG PRESERVATION AND INNOVATION

Antonella Versaci[a], Alessio Cardaci[b]
[a]University of Enna 'Kore', Faculty of Engineering and Architecture, Enna, Italy
[b]University of Bergamo, Dept. of Engineering and Applied Sciences, Bergamo, Italy

ABSTRACT

In our times, cities regenerate by not only welcoming new and unprecedented activities but also reorganizing themselves from the morphological and social points of view. For a long time, the historic centre has wrongfully been considered as a space crystallized over time - implemented through integral conservation - that has transformed the urban fabric into an enormous museum that is not coherent and no longer meets the needs of the contemporaneity. Today, finding a dialogue, however difficult, between tradition and innovation is essential to implement renewal actions that inevitably must and must increasingly involve the built heritage. A complex palimpsest in which traces of the history and life of man are imprinted and deserve to be read and respected within inescapable mutative processes. However, these processes should be implemented without violence or cancellation, in a planning vision, not limited to the achievement of economic well-being but also to the reinforcement of the cultural dimension of development. Focusing on the transformations that involve the very heart of Paris and, in particular, an iconic place of commerce such as *La Samaritaine*, this essay aims to analyze the complexity of planning strategies in which specific actions of restoration, renewal and reuse involve the entire city to reconfigure new images and urban spaces.

KEYWORDS

Urban transformation; commerce; cultural heritage; architectural design; Paris.

INTRODUCTION

The concept of 'innovative' city refers to an archetype of technologically advanced and particularly characterized urban space. However, towns to regenerate need not only to welcome innovative activities but also to reorganize themselves from a morphological and social point of view.
For a long time, the idea of the historic centre has wrongly given back an image of space crystallized over time - implemented through integral conservation - which has transformed the urban area into a huge museum that no longer fits the demands of the contemporaneity. Today, having overcome this concept, to find a dialogue, however difficult, between tradition and innovation is indispensable given the implementation of renewal activities that inevitably will increasingly involve the built (Purini 2008). A complex palimpsest where the traces of human history and life are imprinted, which deserves to be read and respected within inevitable changes. Metamorphoses that should, however, be implemented without violence or cancellation, following a strategic vision, not limited to the achievement of economic well-being but also aimed at strengthening the cultural dimension of development.
In this sense, emblematic is the city of Paris. Its evolution is, in fact, the result of a continuous

process of adaptation and transformation - obviously not free from contradictions - regulated by debates, challenges, negotiations and crossed by a contextual and progressive change in the conceptions and forms of planning. The latter was first understood as a general instrument and then as a strategic tool, based on long-term choices and applied through timely interventions.

If a radical urban reorganization commissioned by Napoleon III and the prefect Georges Eugène Haussmann was carried out between 1852 and 1870, it was from the second half of the 20th century that the greatest and most traumatic changes occurred (Fumagalli 2008). In the thirty years that followed the end of the Second World War - the so-called *Trente Glorieuses* - French territories were affected by countless operations centred on the merciless operating practice of *the rénovation urbaine*. A concept with a vague and unclear meaning that was essentially translated into modernization - or demolition/ replacement - operations. Especially in Paris, it was materialized in a series of exemplary initiatives aimed at 'revisiting' the city. Although already in 1962, the Malraux law introduced provisions concerning the safeguarding of historic centres, the first decade of application of this instrument - innovative and courageous but extremely rigid and problematic - was still essentially based on the praxis of renewal (Versaci, 2012). This led to the erection of towers, slats and other rationalist buildings in the core of the cities (Nigrelli 1999).

However, new concerns regarding the conservation and recovery of the existing urban and building heritage gradually emerge. By showing all its limitations and contradictions, the practice of renewal, therefore, opens the door to the formulation of new urban theories more attentive to the quality of the city and the life of its inhabitants. With the election to the presidency of the Republic of Valéry Giscard d'Estaing, the thinking of the institutions on the urban transformations hitherto accomplished changes. The excesses of a certain 'quantitative urbanism' are criticized, also thanks to some vehement debates conducted by intellectuals and to a population more sensitive to the fate of their towns (Pinon 2011).

In 1977, the appointment of Jacques Chirac as the mayor of Paris, initiates a substantial review of the ongoing renovation operations, thus helping to define the guidelines of a new French urban planning more prone to the requalification of built heritage and conceived to both respond to the deep aspirations of the community and foster social relations. In 1978, the *Paris Projet* magazine focuses on the description of the objectives of this new policy. This latter proposes a return to volumes coherent with the peculiarities of the context, greater respect for the urban fabric, the protection and improvement of some elements of the existing habitat, the maintenance of traditional craft and industrial activities, the development of gardens and public spaces. In these years, France thus discovers the 'urban form', long denied by a technical approach to development.

An attempt will, thus, be made to achieve the 'active' preservation of the architectural and urban heritage of Paris - carried out through new constructions in the historic centre and its main sites (APUR 1985) - however not free from demolition activities and as many disputes.

Architectural heritage protection that in Paris takes on the forms of the urban project and which is expressed as a series of important operations, such as the remake of the old central food market *Les Halles* that opens in 1979, while devoted to other commercial function. A 'serious' mistake that Paris will never forget without ever stopping 'reinventing' itself, often at the expense of the Paris skyline[1]:

[1] The offence deriving from the suppression of the Baltard pavilions, a now universally recognized masterpiece of industrial archaeology, or the quality of the architectural organisms then made in replacement, globally devoid of character, banal, often ugly, will never be forgiven. at least according to contemporary perception. Above all, architecture is a clear expression of an ephemeral and technologically constantly evolving world, which has inevitably collided without ever reconcile with the values of permanence and immutability of the historical context.

> Paris is a fragile beauty. No city has captivated the imagination or inspired like Paris. It is a beauty different from any other city in the world. And the skyline is integral to that beauty. Like a subtle membrane containing the city in its most delicate aspects, this skyline defines the city. Destroy this, and you destroy Paris. The city will go on standing, and people will come, of course, but the city will be diminished (Pitt 2016, 119).

Today's Paris presents a succession of modern additions that help to define its image of charm, well-known and appreciated all over the world. Works of architecture, which nevertheless at the time of their creation created doubts and malaise: from Beaubourg (1977) to the Grande Arche in the La Défense district (1989) via the Arab World Institute (1987) and the Pei's Pyramid at the Louvre (1988).
Still, in the last decade, numerous experiences of transformation of the urban space have been planned in the French metropolis. Many of them are summarized in iconic projects - often huge skyscrapers - unfortunately inevitably associated with the negative image of a liberal and globalized economy that seems to contradict sustainable and lasting choices regarding plans, materials and construction techniques used (Mercuriali 2018). From the project for the new Forum des Halles (2018) to the various modernization and conversion programs of the Gare du Nord and the Maine-Montparnasse district currently underway, up to the project concerning the Samaritaine, numerous are the demolition/reconstruction actions and extensive changes that affect the commercial sector. They call for some reflections on the scope and quality of these interventions.
In particular, the case of the La Samaritaine - a historical department store among the most representative of early 20th-century architecture and dear to Parisians because it conveys to them, in a contemporary context, the spirit of the *Belle Époque* - is of great interest. The complex has for some years been affected by a vast campaign of works aimed at its renovation. A bold operation that has sparked numerous controversies and that deserves further study, especially for an overall evaluation of the activities that include new grafts in the existing fabric.

1. THE SAMARITAINE AS THE ARCHETYPE OF TRANSFORMATION

The witness of a historical period marked by significant changes impressed, first of all, by the industrial revolution, the department stores appear in the Parisian landscape, along the course of the second half of the 19th century. The great success of Universal exhibitions[2], the new policies of centralization of the railway sector and, within the cities of Paris, the spread of horse-drawn omnibuses that transport a large clientele in the centre, favour an ever-greater development. The introduction of new sales methods (free admission, fixed prices, a wide range of goods) and, at the same time, the possibility of growing - also in a colossal way on the internal courtyards, where it is possible, thanks to the use of the iron and glass, providing lighting through the establishment of zenithal windows - are elements that will facilitate their quick expansion.
In the new Parisian districts resulting from Baron Haussmann's *Grands travaux* and, in particular, in the transit and high-traffic areas, firms are confronted to find strategic planting opportunities. New imposing buildings replace old ones - picturesque but unhealthy - that persist in the heart of the city: the department store is a "modern, solid and light cathedral of commerce, created for a people of customers" - as Émile Zola claimed (Zola

[2] After those of 1855, 1867, 1878, 1889, that of 1900 was the triumph of iron architecture and Art nouveau.

1883, 282) - intended to revolutionize retail and city lifestyles (Leveau 2006).
Five department stores overlook the Parisian market during this period, transforming its landscape: Le Petit Saint-Thomas and Au Bon Marché[3], the oldest *grand magasin* created in 1852 in rue de Sèvres (7th arrondissement), Les Grands Magasins du Louvre[4], in rue de Rivoli, built in 1855 and definitively closed in 1974, the Bazar de l'Hôtel de Ville (known as BHV)[5] opened to the public in 1856 at No. 52 of the rue de Rivoli right in front of the town hall, the Printemps Haussmann built in 1865 in the Opéra district, at No. 64 of boulevard Haussmann, La Samaritaine founded in 1869 facing the Seine, near Pont Neuf and, finally, Les Galeries Lafayette opened in 1894 in the Opéra district, at No. 40 of boulevard Haussmann (Fig. 1).
For these private companies, the role played by architectural design in the conquest of customers is very important (Vayron 2015). The architects in charge of their realization define a style that becomes specific to the department stores, characterized by spectacular codes inherited from the great noble palaces: a classic style chosen to impress passers-by and elevate buildings to contemporary monuments. Extremely attractive features distinguish the façades, the layout and ornamentation of the roofs, the height of the buildings often established in derogation of municipal regulations (Cantelli, 1991). They also concern the interiors, which are sumptuous, true and own triumphs of frescoes, iron's florilegia and stained-glass windows, to adequately serve the flourishing bourgeoisie of both the Second Empire and the Third Republic. In the context of this Parisian transfiguration, the case of the Samaritaine is representative, also for the more recent evolutions that make it one of the most interesting cases of contemporary transformation.

1.1. La Samaritaine, a monument of Modernism

The history of the department store is linked to the lives of Ernest Cognacq - a self-

Figure 1. Construction phases of La Samaritaine. Source: (La Samaritaine, 2015)

[3] In 1989, the name changed to the current Le Bon Marché.
[4] Today on the same site is the Louvre des Antiquaires.
[5] Since 2013, renamed Le BHV Marais.

made man - and his wife Marie-Louise Jay, a first salesperson at Bon Marché). This extraordinary entrepreneurial activity started, in 1870, in a commercial space of just 48 square meters located on the corner of rue du Pont Neuf and rue de la Monnaie, in the Parisian 1st arrondissement. Their small boutique was called La Samaritaine after the old 17th bas-relief representing Jesus with the Samaritan woman placed on the nearby Seine water pumping station. The shop, thanks to the low price policy and the choice of goods suitable for multiple customer groups - but above all because it allowed small producers to have a space to sell their items directly - soon began to grow by acquiring the nearby shops, remodelling at the same time the whole district. The success of this epic commercial adventure is due to the visionary and utopian spirit of its owners and at the same time "to the conscious effort of some French architects towards new forms and towards adapting architecture to the needs of modern life" (Cognat 1930, 1). First of all, the Belgian Frantz Jourdain, a proponent of Viollet-le-Duc structural rationalism, a trenchant critic of the *École des Beaux-Arts*, and ardent supporter of Modernism. He was hired in 1883, later helped, and gradually replaced by the pupil Henri Sauvage, a renowned protagonist of *Art nouveau* and later of *Art déco*. Jourdain and Sauvage together will dare systematise the use of iron and glass to build quickly without ever stopping the sale:

> Tempting facades, dizzying halls, exuberant and offbeat advertisements ... sometimes at the risk of shocking good taste, nothing is daring enough to seduce a clientele that attracts the decor, the profusion of goods and affordable prices (Cabestan 2015, 5).

From the first nucleus, *Magasin* No. 1 extends along the whole lot. To establish a constant relationship between artistic production and daily life is the goal that governs Jourdain's activity for the Samaritaine. Following the thought of the philosopher Hippolyte Taine, he believes that works of art are the reflection of the social moment and civilization (Barré-Despond 1988). He is sure that the artist has a leading role in modern life - "talent has always adorned with magnificence or grace the flattest, brutal requirements of existence" (Jourdain 1909) - and then entrusts in 1891 to the painter and decorator Charles Toché, the realization of a fresco on the façade on what will become the *Magasin* No. 2. Jourdain is then called to unify the neighbouring buildings acquired over time through a series of important internal structural modifications and some specific modifications on the external fronts.

Works of the *Magasin* No. 2 in rue de la Monnaie, in front of the first shop, essentially take place in two phases (1904-1910 and 1927-1929) and are marked by internal and external transformation, expansion campaigns, and later by bold reconstructions. A metal and glass architecture - technologically performing and long-lasting - gradually replaces the traditional construction, characterizing the identity of the department stores.

La Samaritaine - the Samar as it was named by the public - will, therefore, acquire a new 'trendy' look, so becoming one of the most sought-after stores in Paris. Two particularly 'exuberant' polychrome domes will close the building scandalizing and creating many moods in the town.

Soon, Ernest Cognacq imagines the extension of the second store enriching it with a new façade on the Seine. This involves the closure of the rue Prêtres-Saint Germain-l'Auxerrois, as well as the purchase and destruction of the buildings located between the road and the riverbank. The Paris municipality expresses a favourable opinion on this important transformation as long as the domes of Jourdain are demolished and the new façade is planted backwards from the road alignment, to widen the intersection at the Pont-Neuf.

In 1922, Frantz Jourdain defines a first project that is radically rejected; it is then joined in 1925 by Henri Sauvage, to whom the task of definitive is finally assigned. However, the second project

is also rejected due to the presence of an exposed metal frame, the polychromy of the facades, the effect - deemed unpleasant - of two bow-windows on the main front and a top lantern[6]. In May 1926, a third project is drafted by Sauvage which envisages a self-supporting counter-façade characterized by the presence of large stone blocks, the replacement of the lantern with a terrace accessible to all and the downsizing of the decoration. The new Samaritaine thus become a reference for Art Deco architecture:

> emblematic, unitary and of immediate readability, the Senna side facade of the Magasin No. 2 thus conceals the backbone of a very complex reality (Cabestan 2013, 51)

The department store is again extended in the 1930s along the rue de Rivoli. At the request of Gabriel Cognacq, grandson of the founder, the *Magasin* No. 3, is built in the block placed between the Rivoli, Pont-Neuf and Boucher streets. The building permit is issued on 31 December 1929 and the construction site starts on 2 February 1930. The edifice, a masterpiece in terms of prefabrication and assembly, is carried out by the company Lange, Escande et Cie which concludes the works in just eight months, without ever stopping retail. Designed once again by Henri Sauvage, the façades draw clear inspiration from those just built on the Seine but, free from the constraints imposed there, are characterized by lightness and elegance. They inaugurate an urban aesthetic that is no longer the Haussmannian one (Fig. 2). A colossal rewriting that marks the start of an urban sequence of imposing and authoritarian facades that would have been followed by the *Magasin* No. 4.

After Sauvage's death, the extensive building harmonization program continues. Jourdain starts the construction of the last tranche which foresees the rebuilding of the front built on the rue de Rivoli. After his death, his collaborators Louis d'Escrivan and Louis-Marie Charpentier conceive the project for the conversion of the complex consisting of a group of buildings of the 19th century. Alas, the onset of the economic crisis will put a brake on these intentions. The already advanced project of reconstruction of the façades is not realized and the *Magasin* No. 4 remains a succession of four *pre-Haussmannien immeubles de rapport* of a certain aesthetic interest, but certainly not a rarity in the capital.

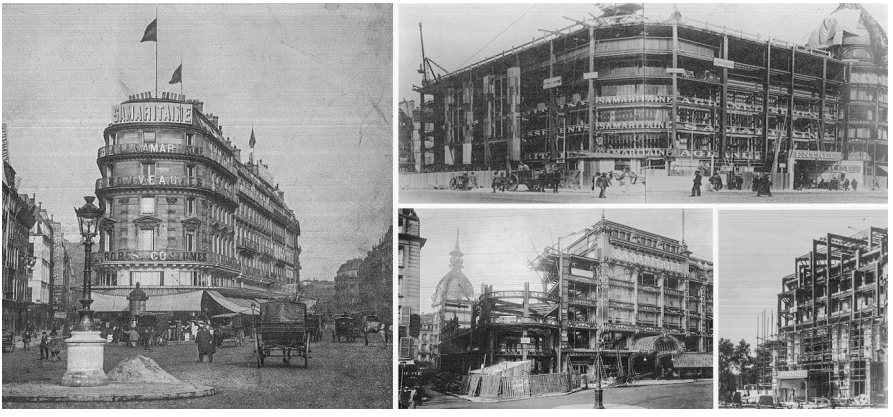


Figure 2. Construction phases of La Samaritaine. Source: (La Samaritaine, 2015)

[6] The municipal authorities were concerned about the impact of this new building on the skyline of the right bank of the Seine and co-visibility with the Louvre.

If in 1990 buildings Nos. 1, 2 and 3 are listed in *the inventaire supplémentaire des monuments historiques*, the intrinsic value of the edifices belonging to the *Magasin* No. 4 did not justify a priori any opposition in terms of new projects, moreover planned but interrupted since the crisis of 1929.
The continuous transformation that governed both the architectural life of the Samaritaine and the entire area, abruptly stopped for incidental causes, could no longer be delayed, especially because of an economic revitalization of the department store, long affected by a process of 'ageing' and decay.

2. RECENT METAMORPHOSIS AND NEW GRAFTS IN HISTORIC LANDSCAPE

In the 1990s, despite several attempts at renovation, the image of the department store is lowering and some financial difficulties arise. In the decade 1990-1999, the Samaritaine suffers a 6% decrease in its turnover while the four other Parisian department stores are up 9%. In 2001, the luxury group LVMH (Louis Vuitton Moët Hennessy) already the owner of Bon Marché, purchases the Samaritaine and inaugurates a new stage in the history of the Parisian department store. Notwithstanding the decision to keep the commercial vocation unchanged, the retail business is shortly after suspended and stopped on 15 June 2005 following studies, which highlight the lack of security of buildings in the face of the risk of fire. At the time, La Samaritaine occupies 75,000 m2 in the heart of Paris, employs 1,400 people and is visited by 10,000 to 20,000 customers per day.
Its sudden closure is a trauma, first for the employees but also for the surrounding neighbourhood, which loses much of its vitality (APUR, 2007). The objective of LVMH is then to renew the activities and change the image of the Samaritaine to attract the young and active clientele.

The department store's grip is further reduced. In 2002, the *Magasin* No. 1 (16,000 m2), long unoccupied, is rented to the Kenzo and Sephora brands (two subsidiaries of LVMH), the Zara group and to offices. The Samaritaine then focuses on its main stores: the Magasins No. 2 and No. 4, (75,000 m2 in total).
A bold and innovative project is therefore conceived by the architects Kazuyo Sejima and Ryue Nishizawa of the Japanese studio SANAA, winners of the Pritzker Architecture Prize in 2010. The program aims to increase and relaunch the image of Paris as the capital of luxury. The redevelopment of the facades and interior spaces, inspired by the original idea of the architects Jourdain and Sauvage, involves the modernization of the commercial spaces and the construction of offices, a luxury hotel (80 rooms), a restaurant with terrace, a nursery for 60 children 7,000 m2 of social housing: (96 homes). A project based on the diversity of function, architectural forms and construction methods.
A conservative approach is followed for the historic façades of *Magasin* No. 2, the multicoloured glazed tiles of the interiors, the glass roof, the monumental staircase and the furnishings; while a contemporary project is conceived for the façades and buildings of Quai du Louvre and Rue de Rivoli, marked by the use of new materials and design elements.
The SANAA project has sparked a series of controversies especially from various associations - in particular, the *Société pour la protection des paysages et de l'esthétique de la France* (SPPEF) and SOS Paris, who have appealed against the project. The latter was considered in contrast to the *plan local d'urbanisme* (PLU) which requires that each new construction would be integrated into the existing urban fabric, taking due account of the morphological and typological peculiarities of the neighbourhood, as well as that of the existing façades and roofs.

> Can we destroy an almost whole block, in the heart of Paris, to build a private commercial building? (Gady 2014);
> For LVMH, as for many industrialists and local authorities who are now playing the same game, starchitecture is a pretext as much as a tenure if not all-risk insurance. It thus relegates architecture to the rank of a consumer product (Chemetov 2014)

are just some of the criticisms brought to the project.

Indeed, the transformation of this important symbol of Paris had already foreseen numerous exchanges among the parties involved. Several meetings, conferences, studies were taken, to guarantee a broad debate on the changes that would take place. Also, in June 2011, two feasibility studies focusing on the compatibility of Sanaa's project with the requirements of urban architectural protection were carried out under the direction of eminent personalities. The one directed by Jean François Cabestan confirmed the validity of the design proposal, recognizing a particularly high historical and patrimonial awareness in support of the analysis of "what must be maintained, what could evolve and what must change" (Cabestan 2011, 121). The logic of the conversion of the Samaritaine and the idea that its rebirth could be based on a contemporary contribution to the image of the old department store in the Parisian public space appeared more than legitimate. It was also added that the transformations were an integral part of the history of this building, as well as the 'transparent' solutions, already widely adopted in the recent architectural history of Paris, even in the historic centre.

Otherwise, the second report drawn up by Pierre Pinon and François Loyer, considered the proposal unacceptable, since it disregarded the characteristics of the urban fabric. Old edifices would be replaced by a new one characterized by a very long and high facade, so destroying the rhythm established by the parcel breaks (Pinon & Loyer 2015). The dimensions of the new building - 75 m in width and 25 m in height - differed substantially from those of an ordinary edifice - on average 15 m wide and about 17 m high - even though its function will be (offices, housing, shops, etc.).

The large undulating glass façade with serigraphies that stands today as a scenographic urban backdrop on the rue de Rivoli was at the core of the criticisms (Fig. 3).

Figure 3. The new Saana's project for Magasin No. 4. Source: (Author 2020)

The so-called 'shower curtain' was the cause of a long procedural battle. As a consequence, in May 2014, the building permit for this project was annulled. However, while legalities proceeded, the work continued and the original four buildings were torn down. The annulment went then to appeal, and in June 2015 LVMH won.

Ultimately, whatever was the purpose of these procedures, they raised many questions regarding the place of architecture contemporary in old centres. They brought out new blames around the forms of expression of contemporary architecture.

AS A 'TEMPORARY' CONCLUSION: CRITICISMS AND MISUNDERSTANDINGS ABOUT CONTEMPORARY ARCHITECTURE IN HISTORIC CENTRES

The case of La Samaritaine perfectly falls within the longstanding, rough and always open debate over the reconciliation of heritage conservation and development. A debate related to the quality and the character of the architectural insertions in historic areas, which especially in the last years - in parallel with the enlargement of heritage conservation significance, from the mere protection of the legacy of the past to the idea of sustainable management of urban growth - has become a timely research topic. However, the notion of quality of the architectural act is not easy to define, but certainly includes some essential requirements such those related to the prior analysis of evocative, cultural and formal values of the place, the concept of durability, objective aesthetic rules, as well as its relevance (i.e. cultural, economic) to be evaluated and assessed based on the most effective community-based decision-making.

The definition of specific guidelines for a successful 'combination' of new constructions with the existing urban fabric, is unfortunately very problematic. Many authors agree that criteria can be used as points of reference or as a reminder list for applicants and evaluators, but they cannot ensure good - or avoid bad - design. In general, the approaches followed in the insertion of the new in the old are varied and constantly evolving: about architecture, they can refer, according to Giovanni Carbonara, to the principles of autonomy/dissonance, assimilation/consonance or be based on the establishment of a dialectical relationship/reintegration of the images (Carbonara, 2011). All categories in which different worthy examples of design, showing a good equilibrium between the exigencies of modernity and that of the historicity, can be found. Besides, there are also special experiences, often aimed at the construction of an image useful to highlight the novelty of the place, turning it into a catalyst for people and activities to exploit in a commercial and marketing perspective.

Located in the centre of Paris - indeed in its hyper-centre, the rue de Rivoli - the Samaritaine, "last avatar of a brilliant, cheerful, somewhat carefree era […] unquestionably the ancestor of today's functionalist constructions" (Barré-Despond 1988, 194) seems to embody all the concerns of a *social milieu* - even culturally high - wary of contemporary architecture. To the latter is attributed the danger of the loss of identity of a historic centre increasingly attacked by homologation processes and 'sold' to mass tourism and to commercial gentrification.

The lack of sympathy for contemporary architecture becomes dislike when the contemporary project 'affects' the historical heritage, a legacy that belongs to the community (local, firstly); that heritage "whose loss constitutes a sacrifice and whose conservation presupposes sacrifices" (Chastel 2008, 62). It turns into a real rejection when the architect is a star architect and the design seems to be so subordinated to technology, so much as to lose any reference to the past. When the architecture is so light and almost immaterial as to seem to have

no connection with the context and poor durability. When, in comparing it to historical architecture, it is judged superficial and without underlying codes.
In reality, the *Magasin* No. 4 project - although it has made *tabula rasa* of the past, perhaps not pushing research enough towards a rewriting of the existing, yet possible - is unquestionably extremely refined and elegant. Today, having removed every yard fence, it appears in the definitive version respectful of the alignments and elevations of the close buildings, without clashing with their materiality made up of stone facings. Its aesthetics may not appeal to everyone, but the final judgment will be that of those who will enjoy it every day or maybe a few minutes. In any case, the much-contested façade seems to fit perfectly in the continuity of that will of the invention that was inherent in both its creators and the first owners of the Samaritaine. A vision that allowed to enrich the neighbourhood, characterizing it with an originality that is today perpetuated.

REFERENCES

Atelier Parisien d'Urbanisme. 1985. *Paris Projet*, No. 25-26.

Atelier Parisien d'Urbanisme. 2007. *La fermeture de La Samaritaine et son impact sur le quartier environnant*. Paris: APUR.

Babelon, Jean-Pierre, Chastel, André. 2008. *La notion de patrimoine.* Paris: Éditions Liana Levi.

Barré-Despond, Arlette. 1988. *Jourdain. Frantz, 1847-1935, Francis, 1876-1958, Frantz-Philippe, 1906. Paris*: Editions du Regard.

Cabestan, Jean-François (ed.), Le Corrolier, Laurent, Lempereur Hubert, Léna Étienne. 2011. *La Samaritaine Magasin 2: Étude d'intérêt patrimonial*, Grenoble: Attrapa - Atelier de transformation des patrimoines.

Cabestan, Jean-François. "La transformation de la Samaritaine ou l'actualité des processus de reconversion à Paris, au travers des dessins de Jourdain, de Sauvage et de Sanaa (1904-2011)". In *Città storiche città contemporanee. Strategie di intervento per la rigenerazione della città in Europa*, edited by Riccardo Florio, 45-62. Napoli: Clean, 2012.

Cabestan, Jean-François. 2015. *La Samaritaine.* Paris: Picard.

Carbonara, Giovanni. 2011. *Architettura d'oggi e restauro. Un confronto antico-nuovo.* Torino: Utet.

Cantelli, Marilù, Guillerme, Jacques. 1991. *L'illusion monumentale: Paris, 1872-1936.* Liège: Mardaga.

Chemetov, Paul, "Le projet de la Samaritaine se résume à de l'empaquetage", *Le Monde*, 11 juin 2014.

Cognat, Raymond, «La Samaritaine par MM. Jourdain et Sauvage", *L'Architecture*, No. 1 (1930): 1-10.

Fumagalli, Mario. 2008. *Inarrestabile città: note di geografia urbana.* Milano: Maggioli Editore.

Gady, Alexandre, "La bonne Samaritaine?", *Le Monde*, 21 May 2014.

Jourdain, Frantz, "Le rôle de l'artiste", *Le Rationaliste*, June 1909.

Leveau, Jean-Damien. "La Samaritaine". In *Les cathédrales du commerce parisien*, edited by Béatrice de Andia, 73-80. Paris: Action artistique de la Ville de Paris, 2006.

Mercuriali, Mathieu. 2018. *Concevoir à grande echelle*. Paris: Éditions B42.

Nigrelli, Fausto Carmelo. 1999. *Percorsi del progetto urbano in Francia e in Italia (1960-1997).* Roma: Edizioni Officina.

Pinon, Pierre. 2001. *Paris détruit: du vandalisme architectural aux grandes opérations d'urbanisme.* Paris: Eds. Parigramme.

Pitt, Leonard. 2016. *My Brain on Fire: Paris and Other Obsessions*. Berkeley: Soft Skull Press.

Purini, Franco. "La necessita del nuovo. Le città innovative net quadro della competizione globale: il caso italiano". In *La città come testo critico*, edited by Nicolò Privileggio, 39-49. Milano: Franco Angeli, 2008.

Vayron, Olivier, "Dômes et signes spectaculaires dans les couronnements des grands magasins parisiens: Dufayel, Grand-Bazar de la rue de Rennes, Printemps, Samaritaine", *Livraisons de l'histoire de l'architecture* [online], No. 29 (2015) http://journals.openedition.org/lha/478;DOI:10.4000/lha.478.

Versaci, Antonella. 2012. *L'origine des secteurs sauvegardés. Intentions et difficultés sans la mise en place des premières operations.* Lille: ANRT.

Zola, Émile. 1883. *Au bonheur des dames*. Paris: G. Charpentier Éditeur.

PAPER #3.18

BUILDING A MODERN ASUNCION: CONTRIBUTIONS OF THE HOTEL GUARANI IN THE CONFIGURATION OF A NEW URBAN SPACE

Julio Diarte[a,b], Elena Vazquez[a]
[a]Penn State University, University Park, PA, USA
[b]Universidad Nacional de Asuncion, San Lorenzo, Paraguay

ABSTRACT

The relative geographical isolation of Paraguay has always been an essential attribute of its cultural production, including its architecture. This condition has also made Paraguay a late and eclectic adopter of the principles of the Modern Movement in architecture. While Oscar Niemeyer's pavilion for the 1939 world's fair represented a hallmark in the definition of a Latin American Modern Architecture, some of the first examples of this type of architecture in Paraguay appear just in the 1950s. Overlooked for decades, recent investigations developed in the last years have studied the architectural production in Asuncion during the mid-twentieth century through the lens of historical, sociopolitical, and aesthetic considerations. There are two modern buildings in Asuncion, the capital, which can be considered of utmost importance for their scale and their meaning as cultural artifacts: the *Colegio Experimental Paraguay-Brasil* —designed in 1952 by Affonso E. Reidy— and the *Hotel Guarani* —designed in 1956 by the Brazilian architects Adolpho Rubio Morales, Rubens Carneiro Vianna, and Ricardo Sievers. While several studies have investigated the first, the *Hotel Guarani* has received much less attention despite its strategic location in downtown Asuncion and introducing novel architectural strategies in terms of urban space configuration. In this paper, through digital reconstruction and formal analysis of this emblematic case study, we analyze the architecture of the building with a focus on the design strategies that defined new urban spatial relationships between the building and the city of Asuncion. Through a formal reconstruction of the project, we identified several architectural concepts such as permeable street-level floorplan, semi-public corridors, and large overhangs. We argue that these design strategies contributed to the new architectural language of the incipient Paraguayan modern architecture.

KEYWORDS

Modern architecture; Paraguay architecture; urban space.

INTRODUCTION

The relative geographic isolation of Paraguay has always been a trait represented on its cultural and architectural production. This condition can also be reflected in its late and eclectic adoption of the principles of the modern movement in its architecture. Scholarship in Latin American modern architecture, for instance, usually frames the story of modernism in the continent from Le Corbusier's 1929 visit to South America to the 1960's completion of Brasilia (Fraser 2001). However, some of the first examples of what could be characterized by modern principles in Paraguayan Architecture do not appear until the 1950s. Overlooked for decades, recent studies have sought to investigate the impact of modern architecture in Paraguay. A recent publication has presented an extensive catalog of buildings dated from 1948 to 1985 (X et al. 2018), providing a panoramic view of the architecture in Paraguay with a focus on buildings that followed design principles of

modern architecture or presented a modern trait. However, there has been little discussion on the contributions that some of these buildings had in the development of a new architectural language with modern principles and its impact on the configuration of new urban spatial relations in Paraguayan cities.

There are two modern buildings in Asuncion, the capital, which can be considered of utmost importance for their scale and their meaning as cultural artifacts that represent the sociopolitical context in which they were built: the *Colegio Experimental Paraguay-Brasil* and the *Hotel Guarani* (Figure 1). The first, a school designed by notorious Brazilian architect Affonso E. Reidy, has been extensively analyzed both in its formal traits and its contribution to modern Paraguayan architecture (Diarte 2009; I. Rivero and Delpino 2009). The second, the *Hotel Guarani*, has received much less attention despite its strategic location in downtown Asuncion and introducing novel architectural strategies in terms of urban space definition (Diarte 2015). The *Hotel Guarani* was designed by Brazilian architects Adolpho Rubio Morales, Rubens Carneiro Vianna, and Ricardo Sievers, who won the international competition for its design, the first of its kind in Paraguay in 1956 (Morra 2010)[1]. This paper presents a formal analysis of the *Hotel Guarani*, identifying its prominent architectural features that help define a new modern urban form and space in Asuncion. Furthermore, we illustrate the surrounding area of the *Hotel Guarani* and deliberate how its design strategies could have influenced subsequent buildings. The main argument of this paper is that this emblematic building with distinct modern design principles gave shape to innovative design approaches, especially in the transformation of the urban space. This paper contributes to the growing body of research on Latin American architecture by discussing a well-known symbol of modern design and the new ideas it brought to the language of Paraguayan architecture.

Figure 1. View of the Hotel Guarani from the Plazas in the late 1960s. Source: (ABC Color 1967)

1. BACKGROUND OF THE PROJECT

The development of modern architecture in Paraguay is closely linked to the country's regional relationships (C. I. Rivero 2016); thus, to understand its origins, one must look at the sociopolitical conditions of the region. Paraguay is surrounded by three countries, Argentina, Brazil, and Bolivia, the first two being prominent players in exerting cultural influence throughout the region–Buenos Aires as the unchallenged cultural capital before World War II and Brazil emerging as a strong contester in cultural supremacy during the Cold War (García 2014). The 1950s then represents, in Paraguay, a shift in regional relations from Argentina to Brazil. However, modernist principles were introduced into Paraguay's architectural production through other vital players in the region. Rivero (2016)

[1] Morales, Vianna, and Sievers received an award of $4,000 and the contract for the design development of the project and the supervision of the construction. The 2nd place ($2,000) was awarded to the architect Jaime Larrain Valdez and his collaborators, Julian Larrain Echeverria, Hernan Martinez, and Federico Lorca, all of them from Santiago de Chile. The 3rd place ($1,000) was awarded to the architect Jose de Souza Reis from Rio de Janeiro, and the 4th place ($700) was awarded to the architect Ruben Dufan from Montevideo (La Tribuna 1957). All of them, except for the 4th place of which we have not found information until the submission of this article, were highly renowned architects in their countries. This situation evidences the importance of the contest in the region.

discusses the influence that Brazil, Argentina, and Uruguay had in the development of modern architecture, describing how modern ideas were exchanged among these southern countries.

According to local researchers, there were two critical moments in the construction of a Paraguayan Modern Architecture. First, the return of Paraguayans instructed in the architecture school of Montevideo (FADU-UDELAR)[2] in the 40s and 50s; and second, the arrival of renowned Brazilian architects to Paraguay such as Affonso E. Reidy. The return of Paraguayans graduated from the FADU-UDELAR helped form the first architecture school in Paraguay in 1957 (at the *Universidad Nacional de Asuncion*). Nevertheless, two of the most iconic buildings of modern architecture in Paraguay have been influenced by the presence of Affonso E. Reidy in Paraguay, either as the designer himself —the *Colegio Experimental Paraguay-Brasil*— or as part of the jury that selected the winning design —the *Hotel Guarani*.

As mentioned before, the *Hotel Guarani* resulted from an international architecture competition organized by the *Instituto de Prevision Social* (IPS). The IPS is a government institution that played an essential role in the construction of public buildings with modern traits. Arturo Herreros, for example, the first architect that graduated from the architecture school in Paraguay in 1963 (Diarte et al. 2019), led the architectural design of important buildings such as the (Diarte et al. 2019)Hotel Acaray in Ciudad del Este in 1965 and the Hotel Casino San Bernardino in 1974. The contest for the Hotel Guarani, first of its kind, called for a design that would become a "symbol of modernity" and attracted 28 entries from different countries. Tomas Romero Pereira—also an architect and former president of Paraguay with strong political connections—chaired the jury, which also had famous Brazilian architect Affonso E. Reidy. Reidy played a key role in the dissemination of Brazilian modernism within his role as architect-in-chief of the Engineering Department of the *Distrito Federal* city council of *Rio de Janeiro* (Rovira Llobera and Herrera Milek 2018). The building's inauguration was on September 11, 1961, on the founding anniversary of the dictator's party. The 15,000 m2 competition brief ended up being a 23,753 m2 of built surface, and the building became an icon for the dictatorial regime that governed the country from 1954-1989 being included even in one of the local currency bills[3].

Up to now, the paper described the broader context and meaning that the *Hotel Guarani* has as a cultural and social artifact. What follows now is an analysis of the architecture of the building with a formal methodological approach centered in its aesthetic, geometric, and constructive nature. The proposed research approach relies on means of graphic representation, such as photographs and drawings—means that architects use to design—to uncover meaning and intentions (Gastón 2010). Data for this study was collected through archival work, photographs, and digital reconstruction of architectural blueprints of the original design. For this study, the architectural project becomes the center for extracting design strategies. In this way, we intend to unveil and discuss design intentions and ideas observed in the architectural project, particularly those concerned with the definition of the urban space.

2. A NEW RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN BUILDING AND THE URBAN SPACE

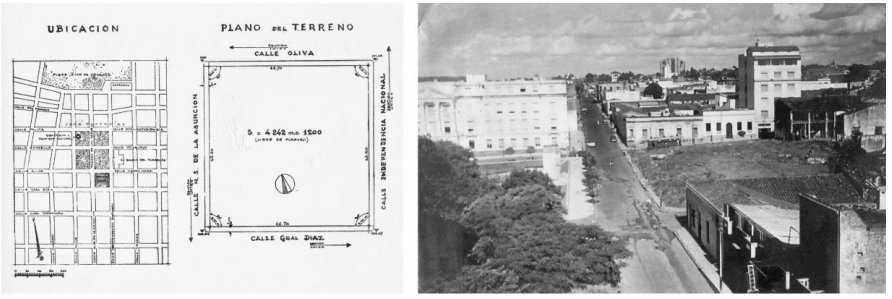
The *Hotel Guarani* is strategically located in downtown Asuncion: in front of a group of four *Plazas* in which the neoclassic *Panteon de los Heroes* (1863) is located, and near the *Banco Nacional de Fomento* (ca. 1940 and formerly

[2] The full name is Facultad de Arquitectura, Diseno y Urbanismo de la Universidad de la Republica Oriental del Uruguay, Campus Montevideo

[3] The total cost of the venture cost around US$4 million representing almost US$35 million of today's value

known as *Banco del Paraguay*), another neoclassic institutional building (Figure 2). The design of the hotel follows the modern typology of a tower over a horizontal base, that can be seen in other iconic buildings such as the Lever House in New York City by Gordon Bunshaft in 1948. The horizontal base contains public programs such as stores, an 800-seats theater, a restaurant, and a terrace with a playground and a pool. The tower on top of the horizontal base is a prism with a triangular base, which also carries over to other design elements such as the columns and terrace design. The tower houses all the 170 hotel rooms and a restaurant at the top with views over the city and the Paraguay river. The program has not changed from its original function as a hotel, although the building has suffered periods of abandonment until the last recent renovation in the decade of 2000 that executed substantial interventions in its architecture.

Jose G. Rodriguez de Francia—the dictator who ruled Paraguay after its independence in 1811 until 1840— established the orthogonal-like geometry of the urban fabric of downtown Asuncion in the decade of the 1820s intending to reorganize the organic development of the city (Gutierrez 1983). The site for the hotel occupied a whole block of this fabric in the hearth of a city characterized by low-rise buildings—mostly private houses—of continuous and modest facades. The largest public building in the perimeter of the four *Plazas* was the *Banco National de Fomento,* built in the 1940s and designed by the renowned Argentinian architecture office of Sanchez, *Lagos y de la Torre*[4]. The relation between the surrounding buildings and the streets around the Plazas was very restricted for three reasons: (a) their design principles—a combination of colonial and neoclassical types of architecture mostly closed to the exterior and turned to inner courtyards to counteract the crude hot and humid local climate; (b) the construction system with which the buildings were erected—load-bearing masonry walls with limited openings in the exterior facades; and (c) the material resources available at that time—the use of glass, steel, and concrete was very limited in Paraguay during the mid-twentieth century, thus, the openings were very limited. In this context, the Brazilian architects who won the international contest for the design of the *Hotel Guarani,* proposed a completely opposite approach that relied on the technological advancements in construction materials and techniques available in Brazil at that time[5].



(a) (b)

Figure 2. (a) Site plan and (b) aerial view of the site in the early 1950s. Source: (a: (Instituto de Prevision Social 1956); b: Javier Rodriguez Archive)

[4] Sanchez, Lagos y de la Torre designed the Cavanagh Building in Buenos Aires in 19

[5] Paraguay did not produce cement until 1969 when the government inaugurated the Industria Nacional del Cemento and did not produce steel products for construction until 1970 when the Aceros del Paraguay was inaugurated. Before that, most of the cement and rebars were imported from Argentina.

3. UNVEILING THE ARCHITECTURE OF THE HOTEL GUARANI BUILDING

The following section describes and considers the architectural features of the horizontal base and the tower in relation to the urban space. To illustrate the architecture of the building, Figure 3 shows the graphic reconstruction of the basement, street level, and +2 level floorplans of the horizontal base, and +4 to +12 levels floorplans of the tower. The reconstruction of all these drawings followed the original design of the building[6].

The organization of the street level floorplan was composed by three main areas occupying the whole block and separated by internal corridors—shaded in light gray in Figure 3-b: (a) the primary access, lobby, and restaurant on the northwest; (b) a small block of stores on the east; and (c) a second block of stores and service areas in the south. The configuration of the internal corridors going through the building from east to west and north to the south allowed anyone who was walking through three of the four surrounding streets to enter the building. This permeability of the building was a completely new urban phenomenon for Paraguay; however, other architects in Sao Paulo, previously adopted this strategy with great success in mix-use buildings[7]. In Figure 3-b, we emphasize the contrast between the openness of the hotel's street-level floorplan in comparison to the surrounding buildings.

Following this idea of permeable street-level floorplan[8], and to reinforce the autonomy of use of the different parts of the program, the architects separated the main entrance of the hotel—that includes a small parking area for the guests—and the entrance to the 800-seats theater (Figure 2-a). The main entrance faces the *Plazas*, and the entrance to the theater is in the northeast corner of the block in direct connection to the street. The lobby of the hotel is a two-levels inner courtyard accentuated by six monumental triangular-based concrete columns and a straight stair on the side that connects the lobby to the level +1 of the horizontal base—the conference rooms are in this level. Overall, the street level floorplan of the horizontal base is key in articulating the different components of this multifunctional building—hotel, theater, restaurant, conference rooms, and shops—their requirements, and hierarchy in the program list. Next, we will stress the main features of the following levels of the building.

Figure 3-c shows the floorplan of the +2 level, which is the roof of the horizontal base. Similar to the Lever House Building in New York City, the roof of the horizontal base occupies the whole block and works as a terrace and leisure area of the hotel that is restricted only to their guests. Triangular shapes dominate three of the four main elements in the terrace. The first triangle is the off-centered tower of the hotel rooms; the second, an exterior lounge covered with a flat roof and a small enclosed space; the third, a triangular void in the horizontal base roof that gives room to a courtyard in the conference rooms level; and lastly, an irregular-shaped pool facing the *Plazas* and exposed to the sun all year-long.

It is somewhat surprising how the architects changed the criteria between the design of the floorplans of the horizontal base and the design of the terrace. The first follows an orthogonal geometry, and the second has a less structured composition of triangular-shaped elements. The triangular shape of the tower, for example, is almost imperceptible in the geometrical disposition of the columns in

[6] The current Street level floorplan of the hotel looks different from the original due to changes in the program implemented by successive tenants.

[7] The Conjunto Nacional building in Sao Paulo, Brazil, designed by David Libeskind in 1952

[8] The architects took a similar approach in subsequent design projects. In this sense, two of the most interesting are the contest in 1957 for the City Hall building of the city of Campinas, Brazil, designed by Viana and Sievers (Instituto de Arquitetos do Brasil - Nucleo Regional Campinas 2015) and the contest for the Legislative Assembly of the Sao Paulo State in 1962 designed by Morales, Viana, and Sievers (Machado Marquez Gabriel 2013) The architects received the 1st place in both contests and the buildings exist until today. The Campina's City Hall building, for example, shares many formal and structural elements with the project for the Hotel Guarani.

the lobby area of the street level floorplan. A possible explanation for this might be that the architects wanted to interrupt the regularity of the orthogonal structure of the urban space by placing triangular-based elements that would be unique in the context, especially for the hotel tower. Another possible explanation for the triangular-based shape of the hotel tower is that this shape allows more rooms to have a better view of the city and the river (Figure 3-d). This combination of different forms in a less structured pattern is a trend in the work of modern Brazilian architects, especially in the works of Oscar Niemeyer, who usually combine regular-shaped buildings with irregular-shaped connectors. The Ibirapuera Park, designed by Niemeyer in 1954, is an excellent example of this design strategy.

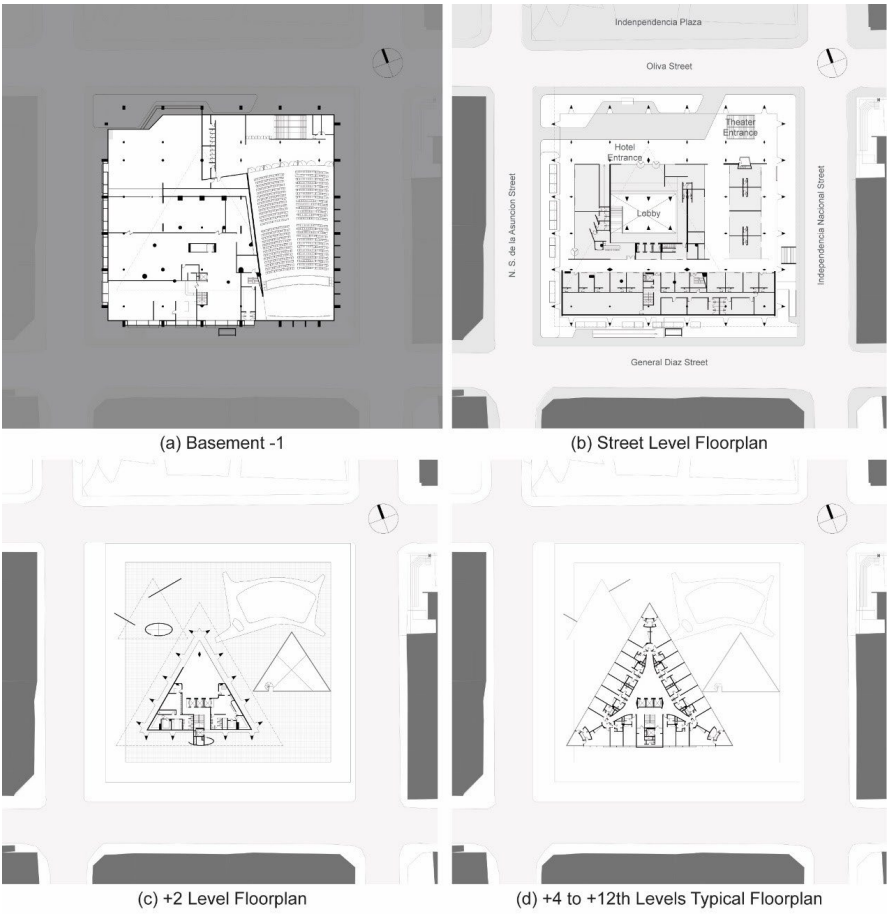


Figure 3. (a) Basement; (b) Street Level, (c) +2 Level; and (d) +4 to +12th Levels Floorplans

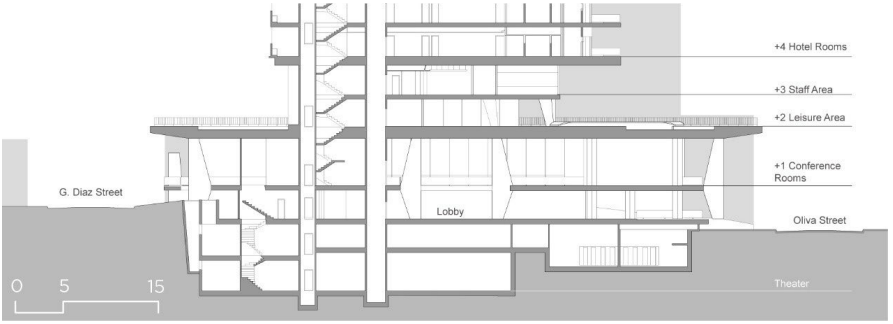


Figure 4. North-south section of the building base.

Turning now to another view of the horizontal base, Figure 4 shows a longitudinal cross-section of this component of the project. As discussed above, the horizontal base is a critical element of the project and controls the transition between the exterior and public urban space and the interior space of the hotel. The horizontal base roof is also a structural element that redistributes loads of some of the columns of the triangular-based tower to the lower levels. The base also compensates for the height difference between the *G. Diaz* and *Oliva* streets, as shown in the section. Another feature that stands out from the section is the significant length of the overhang on the four sides of the square-shaped horizontal base. This overhang creates a type of intermediate space between the street and the façade of the building, and although it is not entirely walkable, it resembles the traditional *"Recova"* or semi-open gallery of the colonial-times buildings in downtown Asuncion. While it is unlikely that the designers took inspiration from the colonial-style galleries, it would be safe to assume that the introduction of the overhangs as an intermediate space shows sensitivity towards the local climate[9]. The section also shows the use of double-height columns in the lobby, similar to those used in the perimeter. The following section will focus on other aspects of the building in relation to the surrounding *Plazas*.

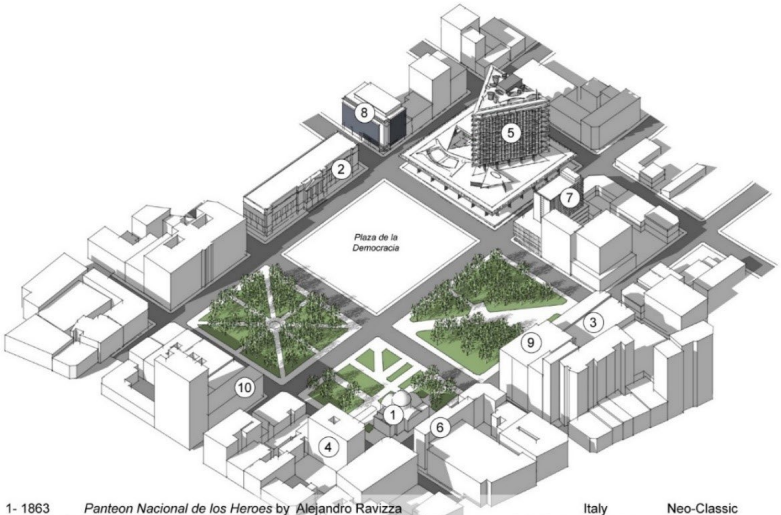
4. POTENTIAL REPERCUSSIONS ON SURROUNDING BUILDINGS AND THE PUBLIC SPACE

The information in Figure 5 shows that there has been a steep rise in the number of modernist-style buildings around the *Plazas* since the inauguration of the *Hotel Guarani* in 1961. The axonometric reconstruction offers some information about 40% of the total buildings around the *Plazas*. Foreign architects designed most of these buildings[10] and some of them—especially the *Banco de la Nacion Argentina* and *Banco Sudameris*—share some architectural features with the Hotel Guarani regarding, for example, the openness of the street level floorplan of the building in relation to the exterior urban space. Nevertheless, it is not clear if the *Hotel Guarani* was the actual reason these newer buildings were designed with a more open configuration in the street level, or it was instead a general trend in the

[9] Asuncion's climate, according to the Köppen–Geiger classification system is hot and humid.
[10] Although there are buildings designed by Paraguayan architects that can be considered within the principles of modern architecture in downtown Asuncion, all of them were built after the 1970s. The first group of Paraguayan architects who graduated from the School of Architecture at the National University of Asuncion was in 1963. After this, their participation in the construction of buildings in Asuncion increased significantly.

design of institutional buildings that followed the principles of the "International Style" at that time. The question remains, nevertheless, what was the actual benefit of the application of this concept to the urban space in downtown Asuncion in the late 1950s?

A possible answer to this question can be found in work done by researchers who have analyzed the significative concessions of "private space" towards urban "public space" in examples of modern architecture. The dissertation of Andrea Parga (2017), for example, investigated the work of Gordon Bunshaft at the Skidmore, Owens, and Merrill's architecture office in New York City. Parga suggest these concessions did not only have an economic reason—the buildings could be taller if they granted private space to the public space, thus more space to rent—but also an architectural intention that makes these buildings much better articulated to their surroundings and therefore "producing" a new type of—privately owned—urban space. Although we cannot draw a direct comparison between the Hotel Guarani and Bunshaft's buildings in Manhattan, we believe the Brazilian architects did not ignore the benefits of this strategy to the urban quality of their buildings and even the benefits related to climate conditioning. Later projects in Brazil by the same architects demonstrate this was a recurring strategy, especially the City Hall building in Campinas (1957) and the Legislative Assembly of the Sao Paulo State (1962).



1- 1863	*Panteon Nacional de los Heroes* by Alejandro Ravizza	Italy	Neo-Classic
2- ca. 1940	*Banco del Paraguay* (*Banco Nacional de Fomento*) by Sanchez, Lagos y de la Torre	Argentina	Neo-Classic
3- ca. 1940	*Cine Victoria* by Sanchez, Lagos y de la Torre	Argentina	Neo-Baroque
4- 1950	Franade Building (Lido) by Francisco Canese	Paraguay	Early-Modernist
5- 1957	*Hotel Guarani* by Morales, Sievers, and Vianna	Brazil	Modernist
6- ca. 1961	*Banco de la Nacion Argentina*, unknown designer	Argentina	Modernist
7- ca. 1965	*Banco Brasil*, unknown designer	Brasil	Modernist
8- 1970	*Banco Sudameris* by Federico Gamba & Asociados	Argentina	Modernist
9- 1972	City Bank Building by Americo Rodriguez Campello	Brasil	Post-Modernist
10- 1985	*Banco de Inversiones del Paraguay II* by Ruggero, Zarza, and Giangreco	Paraguay	Post-Modernist

Figure 5. Axonometric view of the area of the four Plazas with the Hotel Guarani

CONCLUSION

The present research aimed to analyze the architecture of the Hotel Guarani, with a focus on novel design strategies that defined new urban spatial relationships between the building and the city of Asuncion. Through a formal reconstruction of the project, we identified several architectural concepts such as permeable street-level floorplan, semi-public corridors, and large overhangs, that contributed to the new architectural language for the existing Paraguayan architecture. With this paper, we aim to contribute to the literature on Latin American Modern architecture, in general, and to the construction of a history of Paraguayan architecture—in particular. Furthermore, this paper presents one of the first accounts of the Hotel Guarani's architecture and the first comprehensive assessment of the Hotel Guarani's architectural features with a focus on its relationship to the urban space.

A limitation of this study is that we relied exclusively on the documents and architectural floorplans found in the archives of the Instituto de Prevision Social, and on local publications. It is hard to account for original architectural intentions and ideas behind the design of the building without having, for instance, access to documents from the competition. Furthermore, there is limited information on modern buildings built after the Hotel Guarani, to asses the impact it had in design language adopted by the subsequent generations of Paraguayan architects. However, further studies could do a formal analysis of buildings with modern traits build after the Hotel Guarani, comparing architectural features and design principles used.

A somewhat secondary but significant impact the Hotel Guarani had was the technological transfer that supposed the introduction of new materials and technologies into Paraguay's construction industry. The materials imported for the construction of the Hotel Guarani permitted the successful continuation of the works at Reidy's Colegio Experimental Paraguay-Brasil (Barrail, personal communication, December 15, 2015). In a way, the know-how of concrete construction technologies helped introduce a new set of possibilities in terms of architectural language: open floorplans, large overhangs, monumental structures, high-rise buildings, among others. Open floorplans, then, allowed designers to introduce permeability into public buildings with layers between public and private spaces.

REFERENCES

ABC Color. 1967. "Asuncion. Piedra y Cielo." *ABC Color*, 1967.

Diarte, Julio. 2009. *Reconstruccion Del Proyecto: Affonso Eduardo Reidy, Colegio Experimental Paraguay-Brasil (1952-65).* Edited by Facultad de Arquitectura Diseno y Arte. 1st ed. San Lorenzo: FADA UNA.

———. 2015. "Confluencias Arquitectonicas Paraguay-Brasil." In *Relaciones Bilaterales Paraguay-Brasil: Sociedad, Economia y Cultura*, edited by Ariel Orue, 95–132. Ciudad del Este: Editorial Escuela de Postgrado - Universidad Nacional del Este.

Diarte, Julio, Claudia Fleitas, Carla Herrera, Irina Rivero, Teresa Rovira, and Carlos Sosa. 2018. *ARQ MOD PY: An Exploration of the Paraguayan Architecture Between 1948 to 1985 with a Focus on Modern Architecture.* Edited by Julio Diarte and Claudia Fleitas. 1st ed. San Lorenzo: CIDi-FADA-UNA.

Diarte, Julio, Elena Vázquez, Claudia Fleitas, and Juan Carlos Cristaldo. 2019. "ARTURO HERREROS." AIA 49 (2): 219–37. http://www.iaa.fadu.uba.ar/ojs/index.php/anales/article/view/321.

Fraser, Valerie. 2001. *Building the New World: Studies in the Modern Architecture of Latin America, 1930-1960*. New York: Verso.

García, María Amalia. 2014. "Hegemonies and Models of Cultural Modernization in South America: The Paraguay-Brazil Case." *ArtMargins* 3 (1): 28–54. https://doi.org/10.1162/ARTM.

Gastón, Cristina. 2010. *El Proyecto Moderno. Pautas de Investigación*. Vol. 8. Barcelona: Universitat Politecnica de Catalunya.

Gutierrez, Ramon. 1983. *Evolucion Urbanistica y Arquitectonica Del Paraguay, 1537-1911*. Edited by Departamento de Historia de la Arquitectura Universidad Nacional del Nordeste. Asuncion: Ediciones Comuneros.

Insituto de Prevision Social. 1956. "Bases Hotel Guarani.Pdf." Asuncion: Instituto de Prevision Social.

Instituto de Arquitetos do Brasil - Nucleo Regional Campinas. 2015. "Prefeitura Municipal de Campinas." *Inventario Patrimonial Do Bem Arquitetonico*. Campinas: Instituto de Arquitetos do Brasil - Nucleo Regional Campinas. https://iabcampinas.org.br/identidade-arquitetonica/prefeitura-municipal-de-campinas/.

La Tribuna. 1957. "Perpectiva Del Hotel a Costruirse En Nuestra Capital Por Prevision Social," 1957.

Machado Marquez Gabriel, Raquel. 2013. "TRÊS PODERES : A ARQUITETURA CÍVICA PAULISTA , 1950-1970." In *X Seminario DOCOMOMO Brasil*. Curitiba: DOCOMOMO Brasil.

Morra, Cesar. 2010. "Hotel Guarani: La Marca Del Lugar." *Vitruvius* 33 (5).

Parga V., Andrea M. 2017. "Edificios Que Hacen Ciudad. La Arquitectura de Gordon Bunshaft Para La Gran Manzana. 1947-1967." Universidad Politecnica de Cataluña. https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9781107415324.004.

Rivero, Clara Irina. 2016. "Triple Alliance in Reverse." The University of Texas at Austin.

Rivero, Irina., and Rossana. Delpino. 2009. *Colegio Experimental Paraguay-Brasil: Obra de Affonso Eduardo Reidy*. 1st ed.

Rovira Llobera, Teresa, and Carla Herrera Milek. 2018. "Arquitectura Moderna En Latinoamerica." In *ARQ MOD PY Una Exploracion de La Arquitectura de Paraguay Entre 1948 y 1985 Con Enfasis En Arquitectura Moderna,* edited by Julio Diarte and Claudia Fleitas, 152–63. San Lorenzo: Facultad de Arquitectura, Diseño y Arte.

PAPER #3.19

THE ARCHITECTURAL SPANISH IMPRINT IN CHINA. WHY AN "ALHAMBRA-STYLE" MANSION IN SHANGHAI?

Álvaro Leonardo Pérez[a]
[a]Universidad de Alcalá de Henares, Madrid, Spain

ABSTRACT

The history of an old mansion with neo-Arab Spanish style elements in the vibrant, ever-changing city of Shanghai is intertwined with the lives of the two remarkable men: the sole Spanish architect in the city of his day, Abelardo Lafuente García-Rojo (Madrid 1871–Shanghai 1931) and that of Antonio Ramos, the Spanish tycoon who introduced motion pictures in China and was then known as "the king of cinema". A long-forgotten story, its recent discovery reveals the interests and desires of the cultural mix that was the multinational community of what was the most open city of the continent. After launching his career in Manila, the Philippines, in 1898, Lafuente worked almost uninterruptedly in China from 1913 to 1931. Either on his own or collaborating with partners, in these almost two decades in Shanghai, Lafuente expressed himself in a variety of architectural styles. His wide-ranging list of clients included Jewish businessmen, bankers, Spanish tycoons, and also the most important Spanish religious missions in Asia. For ten years, Lafuente was commissioned work in several cities in China from the most renowned hotel chain in Asia, "The Hong Kong and Shanghai Hotels Limited". Furthermore, he single-handedly managed to introduce the Spanish neo-Arab style in several buildings which today are still standing in the city, although he is currently not identified as the architect. His little-known professional career in China is a case study of the cultural melting pot of the city of Shanghai. This article aims to showcase the four buildings commissioned in Shanghai by Antonio Ramos: two cinemas, an apartment building and last, but foremost, his Alhambra-inspired summer family mansion for which he imported tiles from Spain.

KEYWORDS

Abelardo Lafuente; spanish architects in China; Shanghai; neo-Arab style; spanish tiles.

INTRODUCTION

Present day Shanghai is undoubtedly a modern, cosmopolitan and fast-paced city, one of the largest metropolises in Asia and the world with 25 million inhabitants, with urban modernizations and architectural renovations in the last decade that have progressed at a speed that Europe can't even imagine. One expects to find streets full of billboards, state-of-the-art buildings intermingled with Chinese temples, and probably maddening traffic resulting from the high population density and the various means of transport used in the country that so differ from our continent. Neither outlandish nor false, the truth is that this same description was applied to the city a hundred years ago -in 1920- in the surprising and dynamic history in the peak of the Golden Age of this metropolis, between 1907 and 1927, the two decades around which this article is centered. This urban history started seventy-eight years earlier with China's defeat in the First Opium War at the hands of the British which resulted in the

signing of the Treaty of Nanjing in 1842. This treaty opened the city to the English, along with four other coastal cities (French 2010). Unfortunately, few are aware of the British and foreign influence on the country's most multicultural city, as a result of the British, American and French domination between 1860 (after the Second Opium War) and 1949 (with the coming to power of the Communist Party). But absolutely no one could imagine that strolling through the Hongkou neighborhood, known as the Jewish ghetto during World War II and very little exposed to foreign tourism, you may perchance come upon what could be considered the jewel of Spanish neo-classicist architecture in China, and until 2010, a forgotten part of the history of both countries. The building there located is the only still standing example of neo-Arabic Spanish style of the twentieth century, miraculously preserved without having been listed among the Cultural Heritage sites despite its paradigmatic uniqueness, nor having undergone any conservation works to help mitigate the passage of time. The mansion was built between 1923 and 1924 by the only Spanish architect established professionally in the city, Abelardo Lafuente García-Rojo (Madrid 1871-Shanghai 1931) for Antonio Ramos Espejo (Alhama de Granada 1878-Madrid 1944), a Spanish businessman also based in Shanghai known for laying the groundwork of the film industry in China. These Spanish adventurers and entrepreneurs made use of this fruitful professional relationship to advance on the other side of the world and to succeed in their respective disciplines as no one had ever done in China. All this happened at the dawn of a vibrant multicultural society, when, together with a small but select group of fellow Spaniards formed by members of the clergy, lawyers, businessmen, artists, writers, journalists or "pelotaris", under very adverse conditions, they managed to flourish during decades.

This article will attempt to reveal for the first time the fascinating history that intertwined the lives and careers of two of the three most influential Spaniards in Shanghai in the first half of the twentieth century. Their names are almost forgotten by history, save for a brief mention in a posthumous work of Vicente Blasco Ibáñez, volume II of "The Trip around the World of a Novelist" (Blasco 1924). In the chapter dedicated to Shanghai, Blasco refers to the two men, an architect from Madrid and a businessman from Granada who introduced cinema in China, as the cornerstones of the small Spanish population living in Shanghai. Lafuente built not only cinemas for Ramos, but also commercial properties, and his personal mansion on the outskirts of the city. In each of those buildings, Lafuente employed a style that was personal and unique for the city, with a guiding theme reminiscent of an architecture that Spain at that time exported to the world, an architecture that represented the Iberian culture in stark contrast to other European cultures of remarkable world influence. This article traces the connections between the Spanish cinema tycoon, owner of the "Ramos Amusement Company" a successful business in Shanghai, and the professional trajectory of Abelardo Lafuente. In the 1920s and 1930s, Lafuente designed many of the most sophisticated and influential sites in Asia´s most cosmopolitan city, including spectacular hotels ballrooms, social clubs, banks or mansions.

> Lafuente was a self-taught architect, and to date, there is no documentary proof of his university studies in either Madrid or Manila. His extensive non-formal training and experience in construction was tied to his father's career as Manila's interim municipal architect and continued until his father's death in 1900. Subsequently, he worked in the construction field in Manila for 13 years. There is no clear evidence that Lafuente was influenced by the European Beaux-Art tradition. Rather, his unique architectural designs are

> reminiscent of the eclectic and historicist style of nineteenth-century Spain. The question of how he succeeded in capturing the attention of the heterodox Jewish community, which was the wealthiest class in Shanghai, as well as the city's sparse Spanish community with his unorthodox style is an intriguing one. The answer to this question would yield insights regarding an exceptional architect with a unique career. Lafuente is particularly remarkable given his origins in Spain, a nation that was evidently retreating from the global stage at the beginning of the twentieth century. (Leonardo Pérez, 2019b)

Antonio Ramos, who would later be known in the city as the "King of the cinemas", arrived in the city in 1903 with nothing but a projector, knowing, after his stay in the Philippines, that exhibiting films in China would be an absolutely novelty. It took him several years to establish himself, but from the 1910s he controlled the entire emerging Chinese film industry with a heavy hand (Toro, 2012b). He started out projecting films, then went on to convert rented rooms into screening rooms, and eventually built the theatres. By the time he had started a chain of seven cinemas in different parts of the city with his partner -with the same last name as him-, he was even producing his own films with both foreign and Chinese actors. Together with a third Spanish partner named Goldenberg, Ramos, who was by then one of the main players in the film industry, showed some of the first American films in Shanghai. They would buy these American movies, like Charlie Chaplin's, from the black market. This was enormously profitable but also angered the American exhibitors who had wait to legally purchase the films to screen them in their theaters. Tensions in the film industry reached a fever pitch when in 1922 his partner was murdered in one of his theatres, the Olympic Theatre-Cinema. The murder was never solved. With his family now in danger, Ramos hastily left the city. These events, coupled with the social and economic unrest the city started experiencing in 1926, had Ramos decide to sell or lease all of his properties and companies in China and return to Spain as a millionaire. With the fortune made in China, Ramos settled in Madrid with his family, bought a plot on the Gran Vía and built the Rialto Theater (1930, Gran Vía, 54 Madrid). Until his death in 1944, Ramos continued working in Spain in what he knew best: the world of cinema.

The first two works we shall cover in this article were the last ones designed for Ramos in China. They were built during the five-year period in which Lafuente developed his solo professional career in the city (1919-1924) under the architectural firm called "Abelardo Lafuente G Rojo" located at 6, Kiukiang Road and then at 13, Ezra Road (Leonardo Pérez 2019a). Both the mansion and the apartment building that still bears his name were designed and built at the same time. Both were part of the only large plot that Ramos initially bought in this northern area of the city. He decided to divide the acquired plot into two parts: the part that was larger and more exposed to the main street would be for his real estate investments, and the smaller more secluded plot with a chamfered corner, would be for his family's summer residence, since the Ramos family lived in the center of the city the rest of the year.

1. SUMMER MANSION FOR ANTONIO RAMOS (1923-1924)

Given its relevance and formal significance in its surroundings to the north of the modern and exuberant city of Shanghai, this large mansion stands out, as it is on a street where all the affluent people of the city moved to. Far from the centre of town, on the road leading to the northern railway station, as well as to the Rifle Range, Antonio Ramos bought a large corner plot on North Szechuan Road and Darroch Road, where he intended to build a

summer house with a remarkable peculiarity: it was to be a small replica of the Alhambra of Granada in Shanghai, as he wanted to remember his birthplace in this part of the world so far removed from his origins.

Figure 1. Ramos Summer Mansion (front view) circa 1930. Source: (Leonardo Pérez 2019 a)

Work on the mansion began in 1923. On the chamfered corner, the architect placed the main entrance giving it a unique significance on Darroch Road. The main façade was divided compositionally into three areas: in the centre, the door was flanked by two Nasrid-style columns, replicas of the Court of the Lions of the Alhambra, with remarkable ceramic spandrels (albanegas) composed of very colourful ceramic tiles of eclectic Spanish neo-Arab style. The central element of the composition was an overhanging balcony and three horseshoe arch windows. Originally, the most noteworthy element of the central body was the main dome of the house located on the stairwell that accessed the roof floor.

The second area of the main façade had a horseshoe arch on the ground floor with a simple scalloped arch, with a polylobed lintel and a polychrome ceramic tiled spandrel. On the first floor, were two windows with multifoil arches, its upper spandrels ornamented with Arabic geometric motifs of plaster.

The third area of the façade was composed on the ground floor by three narrow multifoil windows with spandrels decorated with Arabic plaster latticework. On the first floor, there was a series of five small windows in the same style. Due to the exterior composition, we can presume that the main room was located in the center of the façade and the other rooms were behind those smaller windows.

Figure 2. Ramos Summer Mansion (back view-veranda) circa 1930. Source: (Leonardo Pérez 2019 a)

The wrought iron gate where the cars or carriages entered through is located on the side of the street; to this day, 1924, the year of its inauguration, is still carved on this gate.

On the rest of the grounds, there was a private remarkably well-kept garden (according to the original photos), which served as a buffer between the mansion and the apartment building. The house was connected to the garden by five central horseshoe arches flanked by two stilted arches that served as the base of a large covered terrace on the first floor which opened to at least two of the upstairs rooms. It was framed by ten stilted arches.

The whole volume of the house was arranged around the large square Andalusian courtyard, which was closed off by a wrought iron gate and with Nasrid capitals crowning the columns such as those mentioned above. The patio was facing the side of the house opening to the entrance of the cars. Its appearance

and use in summer can be seen in the only photograph found of its owner with his son.

Figure 3. Ramos' Summer Mansion (back view-andalusian courtyard) circa 1930. Source: (Toro Escudero 2012 b)

As of today, the mansion is not accessible since it is inhabited by several Chinese families who moved there when the Communist Party came to power. I have been able to observe it in situ, and I can confirm that it is composed of a ground floor with a main drawing room which is now used as the common area for the families that live on both floors. I was also able to see that on the ground floor there are at least three rooms inhabited by three families. The upper floor is accessed by a marble staircase which still has its original wooden handrail carved with Moorish motifs. It ends in a corridor that has been closed off to give privacy to the families who use the four rooms on the top floor. All but one of the above rooms and bedrooms open to the Andalusian courtyard. The original mansion had a flat roof that is now in disuse. Its original domes have been lost and only the four pillars sustaining each former dome now remain as bizarre remembrance of the original shape which stood above them at the time.

In 2013 there was a disappointing attempt to restore its exterior façade by a private company which was supported by the Hongkou district government, but all the external elements that were supposed to be recovered were instead forever damaged. Recently there have been efforts to protect heritage in China, but sadly the building has never been listed in any conservation inventory. The truth is that buildings hailing from the times of foreign domination are just now beginning to be reviewed, whereas buildings in the Bund and surrounding areas that are attractive for international tourists and offer a high economic interest, have been first on the list for proper conservation and rehabilitation.

Figure 4. Ramos Summer Mansion (front view) in 2013. Source: (Leonardo Pérez 2019 a).

The study of this façade, in my opinion, should focus not only on the heterodox composition but also on the materials employed, as most of ceramic tile was certainly imported from Spain. Letters have been found that the architect sent to Francisco Valldecabres' company in Manises, Spain (addressed to Calle Pellicers 7 in Valencia).
The following is a detailed list of each area of the building in order to study the ceramic tiles used in the project. Four different decorative typologies were used in the elements of the walls, and only two in the tiling used as floorings. All of them are replicas of vegetal and decorative motifs similar to those made in the Alhambra of Granada. All of them are shown below.

- Tile type 01: (20x20 cm)
Places where it is used: entrance hall between the two front doors. Keystones of the horseshoe arches on the eastern façade. Covered porch on the ground floor of the eastern façade.

- Tile type 02: (20x20 cm)
Places where it is used: in the three main door spandrels, on the spandrels of the horseshoe arch window with simple scalloped arch with polychrome ceramic tiled spandrel. In the decorative rhombuses between the arches of the eastern façade on the ground floor.

- Tile type 03: (20x20 cm)
Places where it is used: this tile is only used on the exterior pavement of the main courtyard of the house.

Figure 5. Spanish-made tiling currently in place at Ramos' Summer Mansion. Source: (Leonardo Pérez 2019 a).

- Tile type 04: (20x20 cm)
Places where it is used: Main drawing room, exterior walls of the main courtyard.

- Tile type 05: (border 15x20 cm)
Places where it is used: this tile is only used on the exterior pavement of the main courtyard of the house and is used on the perimeter of the area of tile 03.

- Tile type 06: (border: 15x20 cm)
Places where it is used: this tile is always associated with the place where Type 04 tile is used. Main drawing room, exterior walls of the main courtyard. It is also used together with type 01 tile on the covered porch on the ground floor of the eastern façade.

The whole ensemble of the mansion has a very striking visual effect on the visitor especially due to its surroundings: on the opposite corner there is a communist-era tower of little formal interest, and its adjacent buildings are all very similar and repetitive. This part of the Hongkou district has been intentionally left less modernized as all the mansions on Duoluon Road have been conserved and gradually rehabilitated in order to give local tourism a taste of the city's history. Despite this, there is unfortunately no plaque adequately honouring the neighbourhood's history. A plaque marking the residence of the Minister of the Kuonmitang H. H. Kong has been removed in order to update the information.

2. "RAMOS" APARTMENT BUILDING (1923-1924)

This project was carried out at the same time as Ramos' summer mansion also located on the North Sichuan Road Street. It was originally an apartment building with ground floor commercial space used mainly for social clubs and shops. The building was originally divided into four stairwells, with two

apartments per floor each. The fourth stairwell furthest to the right of the picture, next to the grounds of the mansion, is a half-floor and consequently has only one apartment per floor, although in the original plans it had two apartments like the others. There were therefore 32 apartments according to the plan, but then only 28 were built. Each apartment had a living room opening to the main façade, two rooms opening to an inner patio (very rare in Shanghai in the twenties), a dining room, a kitchen with a room for domestic service, and a single complete bathroom with bathtub, toilet and sink. They have a secondary entrance through the kitchen, which is accessed by the emergency stairway for the residents. Both the living room and the dining room have chimneys. The ground floor apartments do not have a front living room as this space is ceded to the shops. The most notable feature of this building is the introduction of the inner patio in the distribution of its storeys, an element so common in Spanish architecture but virtually unknown in China and which therefore makes it stand out on an architectural and constructive level. In China, the room shapes of high-rise residential buildings are usually designed with many corners which are reflected in stepped façades so that all rooms receive natural lighting, according to Feng shui guidelines, though inner patios which would provide lighting and airflow to the interior of the dwellings are not common. According to the building's recovered plans, it was built entirely with reinforced concrete, using isolated footing with four small piles at the bottom to enhance the grip on the terrain. The plan shows the distribution of pillars and beams, as well as the unidirectional elements of the formwork. They are all made out of a wooden platform on the in situ concrete slabs being formed by bidirectional configuration.

The composition of the elevations is classical, consisting of a base part formed by the ground floor shops openings and the original shapes generated by the still original hallway entrance

Figure 6. Ramos Apartment Building (front view) circa 1930. Source: (Leonardo Pérez 2019 a).

to the apartments, the shaft of the façade would be the wide-span lintels, with individual rectangular lintels which stand out over the rest of the decor outside of the drawing room on all the storeys. In this middle part of the façade composition, the most decorated areas are the stairwells: each window of the staircase for each floor displays a different style. The first of the windows is circular and is decorated with a large moulding.

The windows of the next floor are all square, as are those of the third floor though the latter are crowned by a glass semicircle, on the outside, both are in joint composition joined by another larger blinded semicircle. Finally, in the composition of the façade, there is a large stone balustrade and a series of gables crowning the stairwells, under which is a Greek-inspired ledge that linearly crowns that main façade. This sort of crowning was common in his neoclassical works, and therefore through their study we might be able to better determine the authorship of other works in the city that remain anonymous.

The apartment block that is preserved to this day at 2081-2093 North Sichuan Road is called "Ramos Apartments" and was composed of a ground floor plus four stories, with a later added last floor on the top of the building consequently having the premise as of today of 35 apartments. All the original elements of the top were eliminated when

the floor was added to the building. The current maintenance of the façade and the stairwell is the minimum to preserve the main elements of the shaft of the façade. The state of the original carved wood railing of the main staircase is remarkable, as is as the the woodwork of the exterior windows of the stairwells. Many of the windows of the apartments are also original, as are the steel railings of all the outside balconies.

Unlike the previous work, its relationship with its neighbourhood is more of mimicry, as its height and volume do not greatly differ from other buildings of this part of the city. Most buildings around it are of similar dimensions, and since the section of the street is wide, it does not seem enclosed by the adjacent buildings nor drowned by its neighbours, unlike what occurs to old buildings in other parts of this city.

3. OLYMPIC CINEMA (1914) (LATER NAMED EMBASSY)

Figure 7. Olympic Cinema (front view) circa 1930. Source: (ACE 2020).

Antonio Ramos' second movie theatre in the city but first new build project, was located on one of the most important streets of the "International Settlement", specifically on 127 Bubbling Well Road -now West Nanjing Road. It was the most successful of all theatres of the "Ramos Amusement Co." not only because of the quality of the films projected there, but also because the audience was made up of the foreign upper class of the city. The "Olympic" was inaugurated in June 1914 and later in the thirties it was renamed "Embassy". There are many references to it, but I wish to draw attention to the article written regarding its construction in La Vanguardia Española (1949, p.4) under the amusing title "Un Rinconcito Español" (A little Corner of Spain), of May 6, of which an extract is reproduced below.

> […] Ramos and three of his collaborators entered the enclosure: the architect Abelardo Lafuente, who designed the plans and directed the construction of the Olympic and the Victoria, and the Martís, father and son, great artists who decorated the buildings […] An architect of great value and who knows his worth, after proving himself in the Philippines, Lafuente moved to Shanghai to make his mark, in a place where everything was unfavourable, where there were already architects from many countries, most of them English, who counted on the strong support of their government and their fellow countrymen. […].

In the various historical photos found we observe how the façade shows some influence of the works of Juan de Villanueva in Spain, as well as the first theatre that was built in Spain in 1820, the Vitoria Theatre.

As Silvestre Pérez did in the Vitoria Theatre, Lafuente's "Olympic" is monumentalized thanks to its block structure and the flatness of its façade, accentuated in the center with two Corinthian columns placed in-antis above

the glass canopy, supporting a powerful and cushioned entablature, although it is not entirely visible. The intercolumnium houses on the lower part of the canopy three indented apertures in the central body and smooth parament on the sides to place the film posters at street level. That central body at the top has three small windows decorated with steel fences above the canopy, forming the compositive precedent of the large balcony finished by three thermal windows. This central piece, similarly, to Juan Villanueva's most representative works, eliminates the front as a finish, replacing it with a shield with garlands, and a great set of mouldings. The two lateral bodies are made up of a single thermal window of a much larger scale than those three of the central body described before. In what would be the spandrels of the side windows, the architect places clypes with an indistinguishable decoration. Finally, both bodies at the top have a balustrade finish.

The building plans were solved in a more organic and free manner than on the façade, employing curves both in the shape of the amphitheatre and the side boxes, something that had been already advanced by Benito Bails in his treatises in Spain. According to several press articles, both this and many other venues were at the time all made of wood, and so after several destructive fires, smoking was quickly banned inside all the city's cinemas.

Figure 8. Olympic Cinema (interior view) circa 1930. Source: (Leonardo Pérez 2019 a)

The only existing image of the interior has been found in the original personal portfolio of the architect, and shows us a profusely decorated auditorium with half-point arches with decorative motifs that brings to mind a neo Arabic style, and the pillars' shafts painted in a dark tone with the arches in white. A large wrought-iron lamp presided over the entire space, another material that he would repeatedly use throughout his work.

In his outstanding professional career, Lafuente had a very close relationship with the city's entertainment business. In addition to working on the aforementioned venues, he designed most of the dance halls for the most important hotel company in Asia, "The Hong Kong and Shanghai Hotels Limited". Ballrooms such as the one in the "Astor House Hotel" and the largest and most imposing of all in the "Majestic Hotel" brought him such fame and recognition that even Hollywood called at his door, reason why he opened a professional studio in Los Angeles in 1927. He also worked on the interior renovations of more of the company's hotels, such as the "Palace Hotel" or the "Kalee Hotel" both in Shanghai. Lafuente oversaw the renovations at the "Repulse Bay Hotel" and the "Peninsula Hotel" in Hong Kong, as well as at the "Victoria Hotel" in Canton (Shameen).

Unfortunately, the "Olympic" was demolished in the late eighties to make way for yet another high-rise office tower. The only noteworthy element within the city plan is the new building´s concave form, evoking the theatre that once occupied the plot. Therefore this example of a type of architecture more in accordance with what was being produced in Spain in the 19th century has been forever lost because of its economically strategic location, in a part of the city where few historical buildings were not protected in time from real estate speculation, a fate which the sites on the Bund escaped. This foreign architectural ensemble is now confronted with the spectacular, modern and iconic image of Shanghai's most representative skyline which

originated from the urban development of the Pudong financial district in the nineties to the present day, also responsible for transforming the city of Shanghai into a global financial hub. Therefore, through this review of the three works made by Lafuente for his countryman and patron on the other side of the world, we can see the three most common ways that the old meets the new in the city of Shanghai and in China. Also, it should be noted that although from a Spanish point of view, it may seem that this developmentalism destroys all trace of the past, Shanghai is actually the city in China with the greatest number of preserved historical foreign buildings. There is an increasing awareness on behalf of the authorities who slowly begin to realize the importance of knowing about the past and conserving works that are truly worthy of such conservation and rehabilitation.

We could therefore conclude that in the rapidly evolving urbanism that China is experimenting, the chances of the old to survive are very slim, as proven by the third of the works analysed. The odds improve if the sites are not in affluent districts or ones attractive to real estate speculation as might be the case of Jingan, Huangpu, Luwan or Zhabei. By contrast, in other districts which are more committed to their history such as Xuhui or Hongkou and follow a more conservationist attitude in their architecture, survival can occur thanks to one of two different strategies: "mimicry" with the environment or "singularity" in the environment. It seems as though buildings that survive in Shanghai thanks to the second strategy are rather small-scale, and those that fit into the first strategy are usually residential and were therefore quickly inhabited by Chinese families, with no option to demolish them because it was necessary to shelter a very large population. Nevertheless the lack of training in Chinese architectural professionals in the conservation of cultural heritage in China is striking, as well as the absence of appropriate techniques for them to carry out the type of work meriting the relevant heritage that is still standing in China and Shanghai. Aesthetic and historical training on this type of construction has been almost non-existing until recently, and therefore the ways in which these buildings are "conserved" and "rehabilitated" remain in most cases "dramatic", as they have suffered almost irreparable damage, although there is room for hope in a near future, and it is therefore very necessary to let it be known. Hope should always remain, if not all these forgotten imprints from hundred years ago would never been uncovered by one person only having a first feeling in Shanghai. To become something bigger as it is nowadays it has to be supported by all the unpublished original photos, letters and newspapers luckily kept by the architect's family hope in Madrid. Note that only one of these six photos come from a public archive while the rest are from a private one.

For this reason I would like to thank the Lafuente family for their never ending support to this researcher to be able to uncover the trully remarkable story of their grandfather in China.

REFERENCES

ACE- Archivo China-España de la Universitat Oberta de Catalunya (UOC).
"Embassy cinema," *China-Spain Archive, 1800-1950*, consulted on January 2020, http://ace.uoc.edu/items/show/1139

Argente, B 1949 "Un rinconcito español". Barcelona: *La Vanguardia Española Newspaper*, May 6 Page 4.

Blasco Ibáñez, V. 1924 *"La vuelta al mundo de un novelista"* Valencia: Prometeo Editorial.

French, P 2010, *"The Old Shanghai. A-Z",* Hong Kong: Hong Kong University Press.

Leonardo Pérez, A 2019 a *"Abelardo Lafuente García-Rojo (1871-1931), un arquitecto español en China"* (Madrid: Universidad Alcalá de Henares, unpublished PhD thesis)

Leonardo Pérez, A. 2019 b *"Overnight at the Crossroads: Abelardo Lafuente's Architectural Legacy for 'The Hong Kong and Shanghai Hotels Ltd.' in Shanghai'*. Shanghai: Built Heritage Magazine Special Issue No. 3 Volume 3.

Toro Escudero, I 2012a, *"España y los españoles en el Shanghái de entreguerras"* unpublished PhD thesis. Universitat Oberta Catalunya.

Toro Escudero, I 2012b, *"La participación Española en los inicios del cine chino en Shanghái (1896-1937): Antonio Ramos Espejo (1878-1944)"* Master's thesis. Universidad Rey Juan Carlos, Madrid.

PAPER #3.20

TRANSFORMATION OF A HISTORICAL AREA IN ELCHE THROUGH AN APPARENTLY INVISIBLE ARCHITECTURE

Antonio Maciá Mateu[a], Ana Mora Vitoria[b]
[a]University of Alicante, Alicante, Spain
[b]WOHArchitects, Elche, Spain

ABSTRACT

The place where the project is located has extraordinary urban conditions due to relevance of the buildings allocated in its surroundings: the Basilica of Santa María (s. XVIII), a tower which once was part of the Arabian city wall and the Park of the City of Elche (World Heritage).
When we started to work on the proposal, we asked ourselves some questions: how to act in an environment with such historical background? Should our intervention be expressed in contemporary, mimetic terms...? Do we choose, then, an architecture with or without tectonic presence?
Our main goal was, from the very beginning, to regenerate this residual area located in such an emblematic spot of the city. In order to so, we decided to design an invisible architecture that wouldn't compete with its old neighbors, and also to focus on the new vertical garden as the main architectural item of our intervention. Therefore, we built a quasi-vertical garden which hides, in its thicknes, the construction of the cafeteria, the restrooms and a storage room, leaving empty the rest of the square, ready for the terrace to appear.
The garden is a tile of 105 m^2 made up of over 3000 different Mediterranean plants, some of them endemic and singular: Mirto, Hipérico, Lavanda, Carex, Tubalgha, Pennisetum or Lampranto are few of them. Thanks to its hydroponic irrigation system and the mentioned selection of plants, the use of pesticides is not required for its maintenance, what fosters natural pollination. It should be pointed out that this green wall is able to create oxygen for over 100 people, it can catch 70 tons of gases, more than 26 kilos of heavy metals and almost 14 kilos of dust in a year.

KEYWORDS

Historical environment; green city; green architecture; sustainability.

INTRODUCTION

This project starts from the need to make a vertical garden coexist with a cafeteria building in a complex urban space, since it is defined by two of the historic buildings in the city of Elche: the Basilica of Santa María and the architectural complex of "La Calahorra", all this, in the area of the Santa Isabel square. The proposal aims to merge the two needs into a single action. A vertical garden is projected and built that acquires volume to be able to house the cafeteria building inside and, therefore, acquiring the status of "invisible building". In actions of this type, it seems important to bear in mind two aspects from the beginning, on the one hand, the impact that a new construction causes in the historical surroundings of the cities, and on the other, the condition of the use of vegetation as part of the project and the positive consequences it means for the air in these environments. The use of prefabrication processes complete the developed proposal.

1. STARTING DATA, BACKGROUND AND HISTORICAL ENVIRONMENT

In 2013, the Elche City Council published a list of 35 urban spaces in the city that could be transformed through the construction of kiosks or cafeterias, calling a competition for each of them. Space number 25, square of Santa Isabel, turned out to be one of the most interesting. It is an urban space, 140 m^2, finished on sand and delimited by a party wall belonging to a 19th century house. This square enjoys a privileged location, because in its immediate surroundings we find great samples of the city's heritage: the Basilica of Santa María (18th century), a tower-entrance belonging to the Arab wall of the city (12th century), the Altamira Palace (original from the 15th century), the municipal park of Elche (World Heritage) and the remains of the old 12th century Arab palace known as "the governor's house".

For this space, the competition asked for the design of a 20 m^2 built cafeteria, a terrace that covered the earth floor and a vertical garden on the party wall.

At the beginning of the proposal we asked ourselves the following questions: how to act in an environment with such historical baggage? Should our intervention be expressed in contemporary, mimetic terms ...? (Mikhaïl 1992) So, do we opt for an architecture with or without a tectonic presence? (Castrillo, 2011).

The proposal opts for an invisible construction that does not compete with its neighbors of past centuries and that puts the vertical garden in the foreground of the intervention. Thus, the project ends up becoming an almost vertical garden, a garden with volume that houses the dry construction of the cafeteria, the toilets, a warehouse and the rest is terrace.

1.1. Basílica of Santa María. sXVIII

The first of the buildings that define the performance environment is the Minor Basilica of Santa María. It is located in the historic center of Elche, within the old walled area from the Arab period and in front of the tower that marked the entrance to the city from the northeast towards Alicante. The basilica is located on top of a previous church that, in turn, was built over a mosque and is one of the first baroque buildings in the diocese of Orihuela. "The church is the scene of the representation of the "Festa or Misteri d'Elx" every August 14 and 15, uninterruptedly since the 15th century. For many authors, this

Figure 1. Basílica of Santa María (WOHArchitecure 2014)

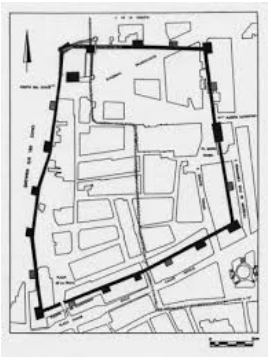


Figure 2. Medieval wall (López Seguí 2004)

purpose is what influenced their spatial and stylistic conception. " (Guía de arquitectura de la provincia de Alicante 1999)
The basilica has a "Latin cross" plan, with four chapels on the sides of the nave, transept and ambulatory behind the presbytery. The arms of the cross are covered with semicircular vaults and the transept with a grandiose dome that every year makes a heaven (a baroque sky) for the "Misteri", hiding the aerial section. The exterior is forceful, with large smooth cloths that contrast with the reliefs on the covers. Both the dome and the large, bare and forceful cloths, that define the ambulatory are visible from the project's area of operation and make up part of the Santa Isabel square.

1.2. Arab wall (s.XII) and the interventions of centuries XV and XIX

The second of the buildings, which marks the environment of the performance and condition is the main tower of the medieval wall. "After numerous reforms, today there are only the remains of what was the main tower of the town's medieval wall. It is a prismatic tower with a rectangular ground plan, with the base walls stunted; the factory is made of masonry covered with mortar, with stone ashlars at the base and at the corners. The neo-Arab windows with the arches in the line of the change of plane and the semi-open vertical booklet blinds. Both these elements and the castellated brick finish are from the 19th century. The semi-detached manor house outside the walls must have taken advantage of the villa's starch. It consists of a basement and two floors and the windows and the portal are a good example of the noble architecture of the XV-XVI s ". (Guía de arquitectura de la provincia de Alicante 1999). On the wall, houses were built that have disappeared over time to the point where there is only one from the s. XIX. Next to this house, another residential building was erected, which was demolished at the end of the 20th century. The party wall of the house attached to the tower and the site left by the demolished house form the basis of the action, since the cafeteria and vertical garden were built on the party wall and the terrace was placed on the site as an extension of the Santa Isabel square.

Figure 3. Tower of Calahorra (Municipal Archive of Elche 2016)

1.3. The urban environment in the centuries XX and XXI. Santa Isabel square

The Plaza de Santa Isabel is the annex to the performance area and is delimited by the Basilica of Santa María, "La Calahorra" and buildings from the 20th century. In 2004 and as a consequence of the pedestrianization of the area, a series of archaeological excavations were carried out. As a consequence of these excavations, the discovery of the remains of a 12th century Mozarabic palace that was called the Governor's House occurred. (Amorós Fructuoso 2005). In the Amorós and Fructuoso project, the floor of the old palace was built using travertine marble blocks. The square connects with three of the most representative areas of the city of Elche: the Eucharistic Congress square, the Glorieta square and the Municipal Park

Figure 4. Santa Isabel square (WOHArchitecure 2014)

2. PROPOSAL FOR INTERVENTION IN THE HISTORICAL CENTRE

As explained in point 1.0, once the scope of the action has been chosen and bearing in mind the urban and historical environment where the proposal is developed, the question arises whether it should be an intervention that clearly shows a contemporary construction or not. (Heath 1996). In any case, how to intervene? With an exposed piece? Through architectural mimesis? or acting with an invisible architecture or which one of the most significant materials prevails in this beginning of the XXI century: vegetation. (Abel 2010)
Initially, several intervention proposals were made, but only two were developed and one of them was built. The first one was made up of three elements: a constructed piece of 20 m^2, a 100% vertical garden (Xin xin 2011) and a terrace for tables. The second of them continue the same three pieces but developed differently. The 20 m^2 building is hidden under the garden, which becomes an almost vertical garden. The terrace occupies almost the entire performance area.

2.1. Exempt Building

The first of the proposals consisted of designing an architectural piece of 20 m^2 of extreme lightness that allowed showing the power of structural actions typical of the s. XXI. For this proposal, the projects of the Japanese architect Junya Ishigami were studied together with Jun Sato's laboratory for the 2008 Venice Biennale and the KAIT workshop building for the University of Tokyo. (Ishigami 2018)
The architectural piece was solved through the use of two parallel ring-shaped porticos 8 m long by 2.60 m high and separated by 2.30 m. These porticos were designed as preflected structures in the same way as those proposed by J. Ishigami and J. Sato (Sato 2020). In the design of the porticos, a 56 mm counter-arrow in the central part was considered. This structure was tensioned with a 12 mm diameter steel bar until it recovered 80% of the counter-arrow. The structure proposed, thus, is extremely light since it resolved an 8m light with only a structural tube of 100.60.8. In the thickness of 100 mm all the facades and roof were resolved. The proposed materials, in addition to structural steel, were aluminum and glass.
The piece houses the part of the program related to the cafeteria and was placed in the square formed by the site of the old residential building of the s. XX that existed next to the old wall. The cafeteria was separated 3 m from the party wall of the s. XIX built next to the "Calahorra". In this party wall, the construction of a 100% vertical garden was

proposed (Pérez-Urrestarazu 2015). The rest of the plaza was intended to house the outside terrace of the cafeteria occupied by tables.
This first proposal presented the alternative of showing a small building that represented contemporary technologies and materiality. The concern to contribute to the improvement of the air conditions of the immediate environment of the area of action was also shown. Therefore, it showed two of the contemporary concerns of architecture: technology and the relationship between human beings and nature.

only show the new architecture through the vegetation. Try to show the relationship between contemporary architecture and concern for the environment and, therefore, show how architecture can contribute to it.
In this new proposal only an almost vertical garden is shown that, which houses the construction of the cafeteria inside and that leaves, almost 100% free, the performance plot that is intended for the expansion of the Santa Isabel square and that houses the tables that form the terrace of the cafeteria. It is important to highlight how an almost invisible performance allows

Figure 5. Proposal1. Exempt building (WOHArchitecure 2014)

2.2. Integrated building

The second of the proposals studied maintains the essential concerns and premises of the first one, but applied with another approach. In the first, it was shown how the proposed construction "competed" with the historical constructions of the environment. Perhaps , this first alternative was too pretentious and its modification allowed to develop the second alternative. In this new proposal, the built architecture is hidden behind a green cloak. The decision is clear: to value historical architecture and transforming an urban area. The initial site showed a somewhat abandoned area with an unmarked party wall and which, over the years, had become a "pipican". The result was not in accordance with the historical and architectural importance of the environment.
The union of the intervention area with the Santa Isabel square allows a clearly recognizable urban link to be established that highlights the historical constructions that define it, in addition to serving as a connection to the important urban points of the city: Eucharistic Congress square, the Municipal Park and the Glorieta square.

Figure 6. Proposal 2. Integrated building (WOHArchitecure 2014)

3. THE IMPORTANCE OF VEGETATION IN THE PROJECT AND ITS IMPACT ON THE NEAR URBAN ENVIRONMENT

The vegetation and the architecture have always been in contact but with more intensity today due to their quality to interact and purify the air in the environment where it is placed and to be able to create microclimates. (Ochoa de la Torre 2012)

Vegetation is also important for the role it plays in shaping and environmental quality of open spaces. It is useful as a humidifier and purifier of the environment. A tree-lined street is four times less dusty than a non-wooded one, and 150 m^2 of leaves or 15 m^2 of grass produce enough oxygen for ten people. " (Díaz 2005)

The data presented above gives an idea of the importance of the use of vegetation in the air quality of cities. Fortunately, the city of Elche is the fifth city in Spain in the ratio of m^2 of vegetation per inhabitant.

3.1. Effect on the city environment

The almost vertical garden has a surface of 105 m^2 and composes a vertical mosaic consisting of more than 3.000 Mediterranean plants, some endemic and unique, of high botanical value. Among all of them, it is worth mentioning the Myrtle, Hypericum, Lavender, Carex, Tulbalghia, Pennisetum or Lampranto. Thanks to its hydroponic system and said selection of species, the use of plant protection products is not necessary for its maintenance, which favors the natural action of pollinators.

The garden was completed in 2014 and after six months and after measurements made, this garden allows the following annual parameters to be achieved:

- generates the necessary oxygen for more than 100 people.
- obsorbs 70 tons of gases,
- removes 26 kg of heavy metals and traps 14 kilos of dust. (Solano 2014)

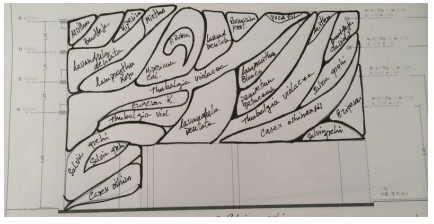


Figure 7. Plant species map (Solano 2014)

4. TECHNICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE PROPOSAL

The technical development proposal of the intervention is divided into three parts: the base structure that forms the garden, the construction of the cafeteria container and the platform that forms the terrace.

4.1. The almost vertical garden structure

For the construction of the garden, a triangulated structure was designed, attached to the partition consisting of square steel profiles. This structure is vertically attached to the masonry party wall and is supported on the foundation in order to define an interior space to house the prefabricated construction of the cafeteria and the rest of the garden facilities.
The garden base is made up of two layers, one of 10mm PVC bolted to the metal frame and the other made of a double layer of felt. Between the two layers of felt is placed the irrigation system formed by a 1 ″ PVC tube that soaks the felts (Solano 2014). The outer felt layer is trimmed and stapled to the PVC to form a container to place the plants.
The structural and cladding package described allows giving enough volume to the garden to be able to house the construction of the cafeteria, the toilets, the warehouse and the facilities.

4.2. Floor plan and structural volumetry

The container that houses the cafeteria program is intended as a prefabricated construction. Within the volume defined by the structure and envelope, described in the previous point, all the facilities that the garden needs are introduced: nutrient dispensers, filters, control of the PH of the irrigation water, water tanks and the cafeteria container. This piece is presented, at a constructive level, as if it was just another deposit for the garden installation and is made of fiberglass and resin. The construction of this container was carried out in a carpentry workshop and is made up of a 5x5 cm pine wood skeleton and 19 mm high-density MDF boards. All this structure is covered with fiberglass and resin in the same way that they build the water tanks that the installation of the garden requires (Keller 2008). The piece was built in three parts to facilitate its transportation and assembly on site and was placed on a reinforced concrete foundation base.
The built piece, thus, contains the storage, facilities and service areas of the cafeteria, as well, as the bathrooms.

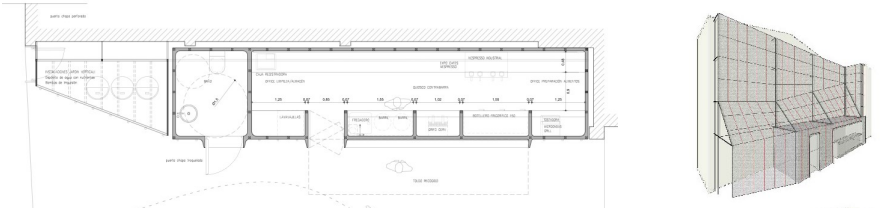


Figure 8. Floor plan and structural volumetry (WOHArchitecure 2014)

4.3. The terrace platform

The platform that forms the terrace is defined by an 8x8 cm pine wood substructure on which a series of 12x2 cm green lacquered pine wood boards are placed. This platform contributes to the expansion of the Plaza de Santa Isabel in a staggered way due to the unevenness between the sides of the terrace.

CONCLUSION

The situation raised in this intervention and its development, allow us to draw three conclusions clearly and concretely:

1. The best way to intervene in an urban environment defined by a historical architecture is not always to display or show a construction that competes with the existing ones. It seems sensible on this occasion to be able to act and solve a program by hiding the construction and not altering the built historical environment. (Loew 1998)

2. The importance of the use of vegetation in architecture and in cities as a means, on the one hand, of showing the intentions and commitments of contemporary architecture with the environment and, on the other hand, of showing the commitment to people's health that we live in cities.

3. The importance of the constructions that plan the processes of manufacture and industrialization of architecture. For more than a century that incorporated this approach and proceed in the field of Architecture. This approach has, today, much more power given the rapid advance of the technology that we live.

REFERENCES

Abel, 2010 "The vertical garden city: towards a new urban topology" *CTBUH journal* issue II

Amorós, Fructuoso, 2005 "Pedestrianisation of Plaza de Santa Isable, Replaceta de la Fregassa, Calle Bisbe Tormo, Calle Sant Jaume and Calle Sant Pere. Elx" *ARA* 05 Alicante Recent Architecture

Castrillo Romón, Jiménez Jiménez. 2011 "La práctica de la arquitectura contemporánea en las ciudades históricas españolas: notas para una aproximación histórico-urbanística". *E-spacio.uned*

Díaz, 2005 "Vegetación y calidad Ambiental de las ciudades" *Arquitectura y Urbanismo* Volume XXVI nº.: 1

Heath, Oc, Tiesdell, 1996 "Revitalising historic Urban quarters" *Routledge*. Taylos and Francis Group

Ishigami, 2014. *How small?, Haw vast?, How architecture growns.* Hatje Cantz

Ishigami, 2017 "Another scale of Architecture" *Seigensha Art Publishing*

Ishigami, 2018. *Freeing architecture*. Ed. Fundation Cartier

Jaén, Martínez, Oliver, Sempere, Calduch, 1999. *Guía de Arquitectura de la provincia de Alicante.* Institute of culture Juan Gil-Albert y CTAA

Jaén, 1989. *Guía de la Arquitectura y el Urbanismo en la ciudad de Elche.* COACV

Jun Sato laboratory + Jun Sato engineers, official website. Accessed January 25, 2020. http://junsato.k.u-tokyo.ac.jp

Keller, Hass, Vallée, 2008 "Structural concept, design and experimental verification os a glass fiber-reinforced polimer sandwich roof" *Journal of composites for contruction* volume 12 issue 4

Loew. 1998 "Modern Architecture in historic cities". *Routledge*. Taylos and Francis Group

Mikhaïl. 1992 "Original ou copie? les dilemmes de la restauration." *Monuments historiques*, nº. 179

Municipal Archive of Elche, official website. Accessed febraury 25, 2020. http://www.elche.es/archivo/

Ochoa de la Torre, 2012 "La vegetación como instrumento para el control microclimático" Politecnic University of Cataluña

Pérez-Urrestarazu, Fernández-Cañero, 2015 "Vertical greening systems and sustainable cities" *Journal of urban tecnologies*, volume 22, issue 4

Solano, 2016. *Definitive Guide of the Vertical Garden.* Ignacio Solano Cabello

Xin-xin, 2011 "From nature to cities: Patrick Blanc's Vertical Garden" *Landscape Architecture*

WOHA, World Of Holistic Architecture, official website. Accessed January 25, 2020. http://antoniomacia.com/projects/cafeteria-en-el-interior-de-un-jardin-vertical/

PAPER #3.21

RECUPERATION OF THE STAIRCASE SPACE OF ARMA CHRISTI SAN JERÓNIMO OF COTALBA

José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

In the structural consolidation works of the body of the Arma Christi staircase of the Monument of San Jerónimo of Cotalba, authorized by the regional Ministry, previous works are carried out on debris, removal of partitions and test pits that allow for the locating of various elements and substructures that were not previously identified. These consist of a relevant heritage and historical value in recognizing the evolution of the monument. Given the relevance of what was found, the intervention is conditioned: the most significant element to introduce, the recovery of the internal staircase to access the Renaissance doorway, the Arma Christi attributed to those who followed on from Pere Compte which was initially proposed as a mere element of use, must now adjust to the relevance of what was found and with this, adapt the intervention criteria to the narrative of the space and its discovered values. Therefore, moving from the action of mere wall and structural recovery over an era, to the recovery of a space with historical heterogeneity, requiring as a response the introduction of a staircase that dialogues with this sequence, at the same time that the historical succession itself is displayed. Moving therefore from a functional to temporary element. This allows diverse time-memory and time-semiotic devices to be used, which activate meaning and even the emergence of the interpreting invention.

KEYWORDS

Intervention; heritage; temporary devices; structure; semiotic.

INTRODUCTION

In the works followed by "Structural reinforcement of the Arma Christi staircase", significant heritage elements have been uncovered[1]. Given the relevance of what was found, the intervention is conditioned: the most significant element to introduce, the recovery of the interior staircase of this disappeared space must adjust to the relevance of what was found. Its objective: the design should adapt its original material-formal criteria of the planned intervention, taking on a more diverse role displaying all of the present space-time; turning into an *element of temporary activation or temporary device* instead of assigning its design to a unique or neutral abstract temporary-space representation. Additionally, this area has undergone various alterations over time and present serious pathologies, making the north and east façades to progressively detach, dragging the structure of the monastery (Alonso 1988). Therefore, the design works of the new stairwell, are treated as a temporary device, are conditioned simultaneously to the structural.

[1] *Through resolution published in the DOGV no. 8361 of August 14th, 2018, aid is granted by Conselleria, Dirección General de Cultura y Patrimonio, to intervene in the stairwell space of the northeast corner of the BIC- Monument, San Jerónimo de Cotalba. By Decree of the Mayor's Office of the City Council of Alfauir, no. 223/2018 of October 11th, the intervention is authorized.*

Figure 1. Partitioned façade hole after removing the painting. Springs and carved railings on walls and facade after removing the door, where the overlapped staircase can be appreciated which was later removed to reveal the lower original one. Behind it, the partition on the flamboyant railing. Source: photographs by the author.

1. HERITAGE FINDINGS IN THE PREVIOUS ARCHAEOLOGICAL WORKS

The appearance of the unknown original heritage elements alters the initial estimate on the value and character of this space (Arciniega 1999), requiring it to be part of the guided visits. These elements that change the marks of the intervention and design of the staircase are the following:

Behind the off-center frame facing the wall of the north façade, concealed an original Gothic opening with superior rosettes in perfect condition, small pillars that defined some tambours that have partially arrived and are carved in stone. The opening had been walled up in a previous period, with a smaller niche in the middle, perhaps to prepare for an image. Due to its offset from the axis, its size and finish, it would correspond to a definition that considered an upper reading, since it is centered with this section that reaches the first floor (Barrera 2015).

Discovered on the ground floor, at the spring of the staircase was a stone embedded in the ground, of stone tap or limestone equivalent, similar to those originally used as a carving stone, smaller than the existing hole. This makes us think that the original 1388 staircase was carved in this stone at least at its spring, and was narrower than the current opening without completely occupying it, and due to its size, very likely simpler than the renovated one next to the 1st floor door and cloister promoted by María Enriquez. It was this intervention of 1505 that altered its longest-running configuration, taking advantage of the entire perimeter of the current stairwell, leaving marks of the carved handrail on the perimeter wall. From this, we only found three steps of the landing built into the width of the 120 cm wall.

The uncovered gap of the main façade, due to its typology of lowered segmental arch, corresponds to the Gothic base, built before 1485, when it was acquired by the Borja family. The carving motifs are floral, grape leaves, verifying this period.

We uncovered two overlapping staircases ascending from the floor level to the upper floors of the cells, attached to the side wall to the east, that is partially emptied in order for it to be built-in. It was developed in only one flight with a compensating curved spring. The lower staircase is the original one. It is fairly simple in design with a clay tread and riser. Once the overlap has been eliminated, leaving the side of the wall where it supported the identifying marks for its explanation, we found the original ascending one in perfect condition and we understand the problems that led to the two overlaps. When reaching the landing at the end, there is a lower altar and two entrances: to the right through three steps you access the corridor elevated in 1630, originally Cambras. The left it is accessed through three steps, now only two since one is missing that would invade the landing (the reason for its new layout), the access step to the landing of the laundry rooms (under the current roofs of the northern cloister wing). Following its layout, ascending two more overlapping but unequal sections, up to the upper floor of cells, 4th level raised in the 18th century. This floor was raised between 1739 and 1759; some works were delayed until 1828 where there are still small finishing actions, after a brief period of secularization and abandonment of the convent. At the same time, in 1739, the decision to raise this 4th floor to 70 cm, is recorded, perhaps to make it flush with the height of the church. We say that the sections are not identical. While the first one adheres to the smaller stairwell over half of the east vault of the space of the staircase which no longer existents, the upper stairwell that accesses the 4th floor is made bigger occupying the space between the north walls and its inner parallel. The reason for this duality is to leave a corridor behind the first section of the staircase for another direct access from the 3rd cell corridor to the clotheslines and laundry rooms, the space under the northern roof. Dual access solution to the same space that was solved by dividing the direct accesses from the staircase that were was found later, leaving only the access through the rear hallway.

We discovered that the support systems and stabilization of the overlap of the ascending stairwell to the upper floors were not as we expected. Through the drawings made and the previous data collection, the graphic results give us a glimpse of the possibility that the staircase with two overlapping sections that saves the height of the 3rd to 4th floor, was supported by a relieving arch that arranged north-south supporting this and will transfer its weight to the two parallel walls, 120 cm thick. However, disassembling this overlapping flight of stairs and verifying the existence of another original below blur this reasonable hypothesis. The reality is that the described northern landing, which has two entrances, a cell corridor next to the north façade and laundry rooms next to its north façade, rests directly on the lower vault, in its northeast quarter. The rest of the sections and the perimeter staircase are supported on sand, pieces of rubble and straw which provide a filling on the lower vault, the southeast quarter, since only half of the right vault is conditioned by this load. This defines a very risky layout and gives rise to the relevant identifiable cracks. It also accounts for vertical cracks due to offsetting, torsion and loss of verticality of the guide wall for the stairs.

We uncovered a handrail –a lookout over the staircase opening, with quality flamboyant latticework, dated around the same time as the flamboyant staircase of the old refectory, today the *Virgen de la Salud* Chapel, as the closing of the Arma Christi portal over the stairwell space. It is accompanied by a circular pillar with a capital similar to the one on the portal, from the same era and authorship with a tambour base perfectly synchronized with original ascending steps of the Arma

Christi portal. This indicates its simultaneous execution, around 1505-1510. This balcony is designed inside the stairwell on the outside, 40 cm of overhang on the design of the 120 cm lower wall. But we observe that this capitel did not originally reach the ribs of the current vault, but a composition that was added later. Originally it was a mullion of the bent entrance of an equivalent rail lengthways that would give access to the priory cell. The surfaces found under the side staircase and the remains of the edge vault under landing confirm it.

Design of the ascending staircase: the entire ascending staircase is arranged around an "espina" that between the ground floor and 1st floor forms the right support of the vault and its stairwell envelope, its thickness being only 15cm. It is arranged roughly on the axis of the right arcade of the portal. To arrange the ascending section, it is necessary to gain space in the lateral wall, which is the inner wall of the cloister, east ambulatory, which continues north. To make this happen, it must be emptied, reducing from 120 cm in the cloister to 50 cm; that is, taking away 70 cm, to arrange the only ascending section. This reduced stonework is the one that separates from the old priory cell arranged on the old ante refectory kitchen in the extreme northeast. Today, this wall coincides with a lower diaphragm arch in PB over the silos, of the same thickness. But it can be seen shaped by the emptying of an older thicker wall, by certain signs: on the north wall and in the uncovered underground corridor. Thus the ascending section from 2nd to 3rd level is encased in a 15 cm guide wall and a 50 cm wall. In the section from 3rd to 4th level, the 50 cm wall is made up of two 10 cm hollow sheets filled with rubble, where the ascending staircase vault supports on the inside and is built into the outside, gaining thickness in its upper flight. This effect is worsened on the 4th floor where this wall becomes 15 cm again, when the interior facade-closing wall is 60 cm. That is, reducing its width considerably and losing bearing capacity. As a result, it is necessary to replace and strap it so it can work correctly in its elevation. On the other hand, the left guide wall of that one-flight staircase, continues vertically, incorporating a staircase eye partitioned to the left, in the form of a cantilever, which forces the collapse in its width due to the lack of rigidity and excess weight in that direction. Both circumstances justify the level of breakage, torsion and collapse of this staircase, which requires strapping and bending to give it mechanical capacity.

The ascending staircase is poor in material nature and is resolved with ordinary partitioned vaults, which are in line with a time when these professions were certainly daring. Its layout was most likely redone in the 18th century, when the decision was made to raise the floor and thus giving an adequate route, from 1759.

Figure 2. Images of the heritage elements found and cleaned. Source: photographs by the author.

The lack of resources at that time would justify its finishes: It has a partitioned exterior space on the upper floor, with a semicircular upper arch, but without lateral finishes. The general partitioning of the opening of the convent is in line with the period of secularization, to avoid intrusions. The upper opening must never have been opened, since in its center there is an original battlement that has been left as a test pit, wider than the closure of the rest of the opening with which it is integrated. It must have had this lightweight configuration to reduce weight and emerge in a simple way as a staircase above the northern ambulatory roof.

The guide wall that we describe is not vertically aligned on the design of the left diaphragm arch of the stairwell, but projects into the gap, 40 cm, like the flamboyant square viewpoint. Given its vertical development and the weight it supports, has facilitated its breakage. This effect is carried out on the support plane of the flat slab on the lower vault by sticking out brick by brick, about 3cm, which are then refined making a curved cup or cantilever. This is divided in a third of the north interior façade, with a displacement of 4 cm towards the staircase. Which requires urgent repair.

2. CONCEPTUAL CRITERIA APPROACHES TO THE STAIRCASE

Initially, a vaulted staircase was anticipated that recovered the original construction system, which allowed the internal and external parallel walls of this body to be braced. The state of the interior substance and the localized remains were less relevant and we did not know if their state would be finally recognized. For this reason, the staircase was functional and not relevant from a heritage perspective; that is, it did not have an impact on the authentic values. However, the previously outlined description and the findings give this space a much greater importance due to the accumulation of the remains of different space-time, whose appreciation will allow to tell its own evolution. Given this relevance and following the consolidated patrimonial discourse in these types of actions, any trace of a phase or style of construction accumulated in the extensive history of the monastery should be highlighted in its value and made known. Fortunately, there are no dualities that require declarations on one phase or another, except for the 1759 staircase that was overlapped onto the previous one from 1630, on a lookout with a railing dating 1505. Proven that the second is

Figure 3. In the first image we see the problem in the outline the upper vault of the stair space whose edges do not coincide at the vertices. The second and third images show problems of joints and geometry posed by the incorporated mullion, originally the top or square post of the flamboyant L-shaped railing, which is strangely extended to form the start of the added ascending staircase. Source: photographs by the author.

improper, modifying the encounter with the floor plan where the Arma Christi portal is arranged and verifying that an intervention took place to make this route more comfortable, it was dismantled leaving a mark on its side to describe its existence and its reasons. Thus, the whole body is recovered and returned to its original heritage value. But the staircase to be introduced is a current element that constitutes one more page in its history, that of 2018. From a semiotic perspective, must solve a stairs that contains the following features:

It begins a dialogue with the existing: this dialogue is as equals, without complexes, but without debt. Enough elements have been found to build such a dialogue: the first three steps to arrive at the 1st floor exist, so their tread to riser relationship is established. The height and modality of the railing is engraved on the surrounding walls, and therefore its details, geometries and characteristics are set, but interrupted. The opening of diaphragm arches, where originally there would have been walls reaching its support plane, are cut and interrupt it, with the railing appearing sectioned. There are so many lines that it is irrelevant to continue it, so as not to create conflict, but it is possible to recover its 'significant' elements in the central flight, with its staircase eye following the Gothic tradition of marking the side of the step on the thread of the vault.

The dialogue must be respectful in both directions: this will force its autonomy: different materials, different configurations, not to be touched, not even brush up against it and yet both are necessary. The surround staircase is necessary because it tells the story of its initial layout and demolition. Its changes over time speak of a noble and relevant access, and end to famine, economic needs and the return of the monastery to an agricultural production unit, typical of the 18th century. This is its part of the speech. The recovery with a current response speaks of the return of the routes, of its absence of an agricultural unit in the present day, its cataloging and its consideration as a Monument. It speaks about putting the building in value in its current conditions, regardless of the urgency and needs of another time under the opinion of the friars. It speaks about today, looking back in search of a future.

The meeting of the present and history should be a structure of limits: get close, but do not touch; they are needed, but are avoided; speeches are distributed, like a magnetic interaction. The new staircase will be light in its lateral view, of only the thickness of the step, showing constructive and technical capacity, as represented at the time by advances in stonework and production in 1505. It will have lighting around the perimeter to highlight the historical surround staircase without being able to touch it; at the 5-6 cm joint perimeter is left. But without being seen, hidden and indirect. Climbing the staircase leaves gaps with the diaphragm arches executed a posteriori, by enabling the trullos. These gaps do not have a railing so as not to affect the existing remains of the perimeter but they must have protection against collapsing. This protection will be made with sections of double, tempered glass held like the curtain walls by means of linear support on platen at its base and upper clamp anchored in the diaphragm intrados about two or three cm from its edge. This means approximately 8-9 cm of projection from the edge of the step; projecting the support steel plate marking a light perimeter void. Knowing that the staircase will have 155 cm of step on each side and being projected from the box of the central structure in the form of a cantilever its execution must be by means of sheet metal measuring 1.5 cm and 12 x 31 with a platen in the middle 3 cm for intermediate support of surface finish stone. This requires a hidden support at the outer end. For this

reason, the seal strip in the shape of steps will be made of 1.5 cm and 500 steel. Being exempt, it needs a centered support: in the corridor between trullos there will be a support of H 100, with bracket and fastened bracket, where it supports the cantilever that forms the central railing of the two sections. Actually supported by the two centered beam sections that extend into the plateau. Those beams will be UPN 180, arranged broken, resembling the tread and riser will leave the dark on the intrados of the staircase, with side view when ascending, so that this game of breakage recalls the usual Valencian Gothic layout, in reality resolved, on the contrary, by means of a lateral projection. Such tiered beams will receive a cantilever box projected on both sides, doubling the cantilever effect from the trampoline. The staircase is fastened on the existing brick masonry at two points: under the third step found in a high flight, carved in a wall 120 cm thick, carved for the support of the original vault, and at its spring on the ground floor, where it was previously attached. In this case removing the original stone from its minor spring, to show it. The trampoline beams described are not self-supporting: they need superior latticework, which must be hidden with the thickness of 12 cm of the original rail. As the upper handrail is visible on site, it is reproduced in metal with a diameter of 9.5 cm like the existing one, from where lateral collaborating plates will be welded with the same original cutting, to cover the latticework.

The prominent limitation is then evident: the central parapet on the trampoline supports the corbelled steps. A technical display equivalent to the constructive achievements of the time. It is a tribute to its risky progress, to the skills of Pere Compte and his officer, Genovés, to his contributions to complex balances. This reference is accompanied by the internal emptying that the UPN 180 profile will leave as a shadow on the intermediate ascending parapet, which in turn will be lined with a steel sheet lacquered on the outside to recover its original 12 cm thickness. To intensify this Gothic reference a little more, the meeting of the vertical plate with the UPN profile will be resolved with a 4 x 6 cm structural tube with a thickness of 4 mm, which will resolve the meeting and will leave an additional 2 cm projection, thus conforming the typical but abstract and conceptual pattern of conventional Gothic formalization.

3. THE STAIRCASE AS A TEMPORARY DEVICE

A temporary device is a skein or multi-linear unit made up of lines of different nature that evoke temporary dimensions. These can be shown through adhesions of social, material, phenomenological, aesthetic, psychological, environmental and hermeneutic or memory information (Deleuze 2012; Foucault 1998). Kubler refers to them as condensers of

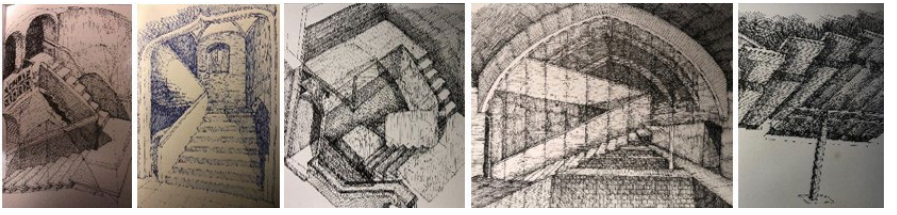


Figure 4. Evolution of the design, the drawing being the support for understanding the scope of the staircase and its implications in allowing to see the time. All temporary devices are derived and graphically tested. Source: drawings by the author.

satisfactory and potentially active states; Buchanan, active agents of longer duration; Calvino, machines for multiplying narratives; and Derrida calls the work that integrates various devices, the producing machine. The representation of time with the intervention takes on a demanding nature, for several reasons: the narration present in the heritage values belong to historical events in time, superimposed; because all time has been relevant in the evolution of the monastery and its appropriation as we now know it; it is linked to a changing social history and because it presents an evolution of the cultural matrix; it is a melting pot of ethnography and history that is part of us. Therefore, expressing their time, in time, through time and generating time is a necessity, without forgetting that from the dialogue between the performance and design, a time yet to come can appear. The floating staircase acts like Denkbilder, "images that think" (Benjamin 2012; Kracauer 2008; Benjamin 2006); like in *Erewhon* by Samuel Butler, this fantasy arises from the negative view of the Darwinian theory, that allows the building of an anti-ethical world, where the concepts are treated as objects of an encounter, endlessly rise up in the successive here and now. Two characters must stand out for this; semiotic time and its display devices and memory time with their own.

3.1. Time and semiotics

- The metonymy part: "the sculpture staircase" for "recuperating the staircase has a structural autonomy". What is shown here is that a mark represents the seed to which it belongs. The "sculpture" mark associated with "structural autonomy" has a certain consistency and veracity. In this way we carry out a displacement of the *structural* through the *sculptural,* making a lateral shift of meaning, although metonymy maintains a certain resistance, because a new meaning is not produced. It is metonymical because a meaning always refers to another meaning or in different way, the meaning does not lie in a single signifier, but in the game between signifiers in the chain, and consequently resulting in this *unstable* operation. "The staircase floats", for "the staircase is inserted into its opening without affecting the test pits and carved remains on the walls from which they nourish to finally understand itself geometrically". Here a seed represents one of the marks. This set is specially forced on its glazed outer perimeter against the Gothic arches, where the lightness that forces the gaze on the central parapet is evident. "Floating sculpture" refers to the weightlessness of certain advances in designs and drawing of high Gothic arches, at the start of the Valencian Renaissance period. It refers to new materials, bold claims, operations of structural risk and assembly that we know. The temporary dimension of this device deals with the recovery of a past by 'its law', not by its form, and its open dialogue with its past characteristics.
- Metaphor: 'Recovery of the lateral enclosures of pointed glass'; 'Recovery of the staircase eye as a bearing wall within the same original cut'; 'Recovery of the size of the staircase in mimetic geometry, but in metallic material discreet in its finish'; 'Recovery of the Gothic geometric lateral cut'; 'Recovery of the extrados of the broken stringer as if it were a Piranesian staircase'. All these elements seek *condensation*, consisting in substituting one meaning for another, creating a new meaning that replaces that one by adopting the meaning of the first. The condensations with the topic are not the same as those achieved with words since it does not break from a common language and therefore, it is always wider and more open.
- Itineraries of the event: the visual route of the staircase, observing the trullos on the right, the exhibition hall, the old winery, on the left, along with the other trullos, is in itself a poetic journey that takes you to a transformed origin. The rescued facade window and the recovered flamboyant railing, take us back to the intended nobility of the predecessor of the Arma Christi portal, María Enríquez, consecutive wife of the

two eldest sons of Pope Borgia. Memories and the passing of time are displayed, as in Ingmar Bergman's cinema, which converge and diverge in a precise place (idyllic garden, junction, corner, here the noble staircase that ascended to original priory cells) to explain the condition of the subject. This condition shows its intimate and psychological interior with the enunciating exteriority (narratives present in the peripheral material recovery). From the symbolism of the exterior, an internal introspection of the subject is carried out. "Retrospective journeys" that reconstruct memory, relating space and time, in both directions. In this, the relationship between the architectural landscape shown and time is crucial (De Lacour 2013, 59). Also presented are some "cinematographic devices" such as:
- Façade window as an object device, which marks the atmospheric hours and relates to the surrounding landscape, weather, times, etc. The phenomenological resources allow giving a concept of time in the act of understanding. But they also transfer the time of its existence, in this multiple case; the recovery was necessary to dismantle three overlapping holes with different openings, until the main one with its capital sculptures is extracted.
- Flamboyant railing on the upper plateau; added in 1505-1510, forming a viewpoint with two sides, of which only one remains, is also as an object device. At that time there was no access to the upper porch from this point, which was introduced in the elevation of cells over the priory in 1630, with partial ruin in 1702-1704, with placement of an octagonal prop on that date. A body that was raised again in 1734. The long side of the original flamboyant parapet served as a corner access balcony to the priory cell over the old kitchen. The intervention of the 1630 (the first elevation of cells) eliminates the long balcony and introduces a staircase, partitioning the recessed side into the hole, but without modifying the upper vault. It is 1734, with the second expansion of cells when this staircase modifies the vault on the staircase, and on this an additional two flights are designed reaching the high cells on the 4th floor. The certainty of this route comes from having found the inner lateral capital of the right portal, buried among the remains of the missing staircase, and therefore in the latest reconstruction actions from 1759 to 1824. Since they were partitioned, they have remained intact. This dialogue between the added staircase (whose lateral marks were kept) and the visible must reveal this temporary sequence. Its understanding is clear, if we have the capital suspended on the wall in its place of origin.
- Other lighting devices: the perimeter light of the staircase arranged in the gap against walls highlights the expressionism of the footprints left by time and the reconstructive transformations of the monks successively: prints, marks, scratches, mortar patches, crevices, cleaned cracks, etc., are expressions of the roughness of the envelope. We show intentions since artificiality contrasts the *natural* lighting of the front hole.
- Evocation devices: materials and added elements, show different times. The same color of the staircase, primed with zinc oxide, leaves a degraded whitish texture like the perimeter, but different: we understand Deleuze (2012) when he describes it as an expressionist gesture of "making a hole". As André Breton does with regard to Chirico's paintings, *Mystery and melancholy in a street*, 1912, "what he does is express feelings that help recognize images in the subconscious, evoking hidden ideas". Here, are the ghosts and fantasies of the interpreting subject that connect with the images recognized in the action of the route and in some visitors it will link with their pareidolia or apophenia. The devices, by forcing situations, radicalize the differences, preventing impossible repetition and highlighting the imaginary illusion.
- Factography: the contribution to the constructivist epic theater contributions by B. Brecht, E. Fuchs and S. Tretiakov, bring different concepts together with Benjamin, within "the dialectic of the state of detention"; the

Figure 5. Digital tests of the staircase, its spaces and relationships, develop it as a temporary device. Source: drawings by author.

aesthetic fusion, the re-functionalization, the active and influential participation that coincide in a sequence of strategies: estrangement, factography, use of attractors, affirmation of authenticity. All within the following process: interruption principle, staging as ideogram, subconscious relationships, discovery of the state of affairs, exhibited value, merchandise, heterotopia or organization of the discursive mass. In this case, the following dualities: the existing and recovered old steps and the new ones; the perimeter railing embedded in the wall and cut; the lateral window facing nothing; the ascending route observing on both sides other agricultural structures forcibly introduced in times of starvation, facing an image of a closed box typical of these structures; lateral transparency when they used to be staircases between walls; the duality between visible vault and the design of the original through the recovered rosette; the supported structure facing the exempt, massive against light, stone against metal, open and transparent against closed and dark; internal plasticity carved on the mass against the external plasticity from the added.

3.2. Time and memory

The project is approached as an *archaeological excursion*, which crystallizes a symbolic-theological thought, but also the political and social power of the Borgia family and the Duchy of Gandía. When it is finished it will act as an *axis world*, axis, or visual landmark of the cloister, that is, a symbolized part of the general object that channels the temporary reading and the opening of time-memory. There is some *death* evoked, figurative, and inferred in intervention, through impossible ruin; the previous one rescued, or the ruin of not seeing a clear and different time, but complex overlapping times. The *design* will link art and heritage. The *remnants* left will show the law, or what remains of it in some cases. The remains bear witness to other times, other structures that do not remain except in the imagination of the viewer who recomposes space-time. Through figurative *mosaics*, or irreplaceable elements that show different temporary natures, which at the same time configure *aporias* of their own cultural and ritual aspects, of access, travel, understanding, dialogue with the past, etc. This creates a *theatrical effect* that separates and distinguishes the times, those actors and the spectators, some spectators from others. But also the theatricality derived from what is produced in space and the typical acts that make up a representation of scenes proper or inappropriate for the anthropomorphic function of space, now paradoxically faced with a floating sculpture as a staircase and its dialogues. That, taken to the limit, it even constitutes a certain *progressive Museumization*, as the building became a container for cultural activities, when, in its history, culture derived from matter, art incorporated into stone, not from its exteriority. Especially, when culture was a set of creative displays and today culture is understood as

"showing the way of life of contemporary society" or culture of the masses. The paradox of these encounters provides images or dialectical sequences that open the appearance of memory, and with it, the querying present, past and future. This questioning activates the circularity of time, and impels us to position ourselves interpretively in the role of the monastery in our constitution as a society. These dialogues are complemented by the *ceremonial aporia* or, also, functional incongruity, derived from separating its teleological and theological objective from the body, from the trampoline staircase introduced, distancing the reasons that illuminated it, its *liturgy* and *ritual*, by a modernized reading of the same, which reveals other additional questions: transparency, multiplicity, versatility, lightness, etc. The new staircase will mark a new liturgy of routes, the sequence of spaces, of additional historical readings, which will provide the viewer with more information about its character. And with it you will have a greater dimension of the memory of it. Things you never thought of before will be clarified and with it, you will understand your limitation. You need to know to understand.

CONCLUSION

The patrimonial value of what was found needs to be shown. However, alterations over time do not give credit to how it was and how it evolved. In order to explain all this from its remains, it is necessary to work with the remnants in the way that the added body of the staircase helps make what is not seen to be seen. Always together with the viewer; who must weave the apparent information, the forced, the expressive, the erased, the subtle and the imaginary reconstruction. The objective is to remove the multiple temporary elements present in the workspace, turning the staircase into a agitator of nuances, or into a complex temporary device. That at the same time clarifies; articulate the activation of time without aim. Time that, *a priori*, is trapped between its immobilized past and an eternal present, in the case of having designed a functional neutral element without a stylistic character, as the law prevents. The activation of time, the reflection on possible sequences, even the opening of a possible future, challenges the present technical predominance and the utilitarian logics placed in society. Thus allowing another scope or understanding of other criteria, as well as the re-functionalization of history. The definition of the device followed is equivalent to the process of symbolizing language, here rehearsed its entire unfolding through the drawing, avoiding contradictions against fact. This reflection of language supports a certain semiotics of time.

REFERENCES

Alonso López, J.E. 1988. *Sant Jeroni de Cotalba: desintegració feudal i vida monàstica (segles XVIII-XIX)*. Gandía: C.E.I.C. Alfons el Vell.

Arciniega García, L. 1999. «Santa María de la Murta (Alzira): artífices, comitentes y la *damnatio memoriae* de Don Diego Vich». In *La Orden de San Jerónimo y sus monasterios. Actas del Simposio, 1-5, IX, 1999*: 269–292. San Lorenzo del Escorial.

Barrera Puigdollers, J. M. 2015. *Plan Especial de Protección del Monasterio de San Jerónimo de Cotalba*. Valencia: unpublished.

Barrera Puigdollers, J. M. 2018. «S. Jerónimo de Cotalba. Strategies for the preservation of the monastic complex». In Vernacular and Earthen Architecture: Conservation and Sustainability. London: CRC Press/ Balkema.

Benjamin, W. 2006. *Obras I/1*. Madrid: Abada editores.

Benjamin, W. 2012. *Denkbilder: Imágenes que piensan*. Madrid: Abada editores.

Campos y Fernández de Sevilla, F. J. 2008. «Los reyes de España y la Orden de San Jerónimo en los siglos XV-XVI». In *Carlos V en Yuste. Muerte y gloria eterna*, 113-143. Madrid: Patrimonio Nacional.

Castillo, Franscisco. 1757. *Historia General de Nuestro Real Monasterio de San Gerónimo de Gandía*. Gandía: Inédito.

De Lacour, R. 2013. «*Smultronstället,* el paisaje de la memoria». In *Arquitectura y el tiempo.* Madrid: Abada editores.

Deleuze, G. 2002. *Diferencia y repetición.* Buenos Aires: Amorrotu.

Deleuze, G. and Tiqqun. 2012. *Contribución a la guerra en curso*. Madrid: Errata Naturae.

Delicado Martínez, F.J. and Ballester Hermán, C. 2000. «El monasterio de Cotalba (Gandía), una fundación jerónima del siglo XIV». In *Ars longa: cuadernos de arte*, no. 9-10, 73-86. Valencia: Universitat de València.

Foucault, M. 1998. *Las palabras y las cosas.* Madrid: Siglo XXI Editores.

Kracauer, S. 2008. *El ornamento de la masa.* Barcelona: Gedisa.

López Martínez, F. J. 1999. «Tapias y tapiales». In *Loggia, Arquitectura & Restauración*, no. 8, 74-89. Valencia: Universidad Politécnica de Valencia.

López-Yarto Elizalde, A., Mateo Gómez, A. and Ruiz Hernando, J. 1995. «El monasterio jerónimo de Santa María de la Murta (Valencia)». In *Ars longa*, no. 6, 17-23. Valencia: Universitat de València.

Mut Oltra, F. and Palmer Terrades, V. 1999. *Real Monasterio de San Jerónimo de Cotalba.* Gandía: F. Mut.

Osset Merle, J. 1927. «Lo rei Felip II visita el monestir de San Jeroni de Gandía». In *Cultura Valenciana*, no. 2, 59-63.

Perles Martí, F.G. 1988. *El Monasterio de San Jerónimo de Cotalba de Gandía*. Gandía: Revista Vall de Bairén.

Ruiz Hernando, J.A. 1997. *Los monasterios jerónimos españoles.* Segovia: Caja Segovia, Obra Social y Cultural.

Sigüenza, J. 1600. *Historia de la Orden de San Gerónimo.* Madrid: Imprenta Real.

Sucias Aparicio, P. 1907. *Los monasterios del Reino de Valencia. Estudios de las fundaciones de los monasterios del antiguo reino, desde sus primeros tiempos hasta la exclaustración.*

PAPER #3.22

WORKSPACES EVOLUTION, TOWARDS THE NEW COWORKING SPACES

Alicia Llorca Ponce[a], Franca Cracogna[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

Several criteria have led the design of administrative spaces throughout time; this paper explores these rules from the origin of offices down to the recent appearance of coworking spaces. Our intention is to make progress in the knowledge of the aspects that should be kept in mind when designing the office of the future. Workspaces are created from the needs derived from productive activities and from the different tasks required. By the analysis of the literature over the history, we conclude that, in the course of time, offices have undergone a constant change guided by the search of productivity and have also been persuaded by the promotion of the corporate image and its firm. Among the factors that have influenced the office design, without a doubt, the technological advances that have sped up since the end of the twentieth century with the incorporation of the information and communication technologies have been key both in workspaces design and daily life activities. The creation of thoughtful and different spaces that consider teamwork, user comfort, exchange, community life and freedom of movement that develop meetings and facilitates creativity and synergies is required. The change in the way of working and, especially, in the characteristics of the tasks to be carried out, have conditioned the unstoppable evolution of workspaces and it could be said that it is difficult to find a list of criteria to follow to ensure the success of a type of offices because each company and activity requires different conditions.

KEYWORDS

Real estate market; office space; office design; co-working.

INTRODUCTION

Workspaces have been transformed throughout history. The changes in the way of working and also in the needs and lifestyles of the workers have been the driving forces of these transformations in office spaces (Harris, 2015). These things, in turn, have witnessed several changes that have been sped up during the last decades, but it is true that there are also a lot of workspaces that are still heirs of the past. To be able to understand and adapt to the current affairs and the future of administrative spaces it is interesting to analyse the evolution of workspaces in the last century and the events that have conditioned its transformations. This article begins by describing the evolution of offices from its origins to the latest developments and proposals opening the way to tackle other interesting and relevant aspects of actual and future office design.

1. CHANGE FACTORS. EVOLUTION OF WORKSPACES

First historical evidences of spaces where administrative tasks were carried refers us to the Sumerians and Ancient Egypt. Already in the fifteenth century Francesco di Giorgio established the bases of what could

[1] Quoted by Hernández (2002)

be considered a prototype of the modern office in his treatise "Casa degli Officiali"[1]. He pointed out that all the rooms of this office prototype must flow around an open atrium with a single entrance. In 1560 the Uffizi Gallery was built, which is considered the first office building of the modern age and an archetype of many others. Two centuries later with the start of the industrial revolution on Great Britain, a radical transformation of the production methods took place, an increment of specialization and division of tasks and a significant increase in administrative. Centuries later, the development of the information and communication technologies, will mean new radical changes on the way of work. The industrial revolution makes possible the appearance of new studies that focus on the optimization of process as Taylor's research reaching its highest point with the publication in 1911 of the *Principles of Scientific Management*. Taylorism looked for a productivity increase by proposing a hierarchical organization of work where the business management takes the strategical decisions and divides the tasks between the workers. Leffingwell was a Taylor disciple who centred his investigation on the administrative work and publishes in 1917 his book *Scientific Office Management* and then, in 1925 a manual called *Office Management*. The objective of this manual is to rationalise the movement of office work and applied, it entailed a constant control over the workers and their job. Years later, during the Great Depression the approaches of the human relations movement began to gain strength, which culminates with Elton Mayo's work, *The Human Problems of an Industrial Civilization*, where he questions Taylor's vision. In the 1960s, the work of Douglas Mcgregor is published with a theory called "Y Theory" that is positioned against Taylorism that is associated with "X Theory". Y Theory defends that the management should be opened to the individual recognition and to the stimulation of workers to reach their goals instead of supervising them. Then, from the 80s, the development of computers entails a new transformation that will free the workers from many tasks and also allow them to focus on creative tasks, with this emerges a new class of workers, the knowledge workers, those who will be the most important resource of the companies. At the same time appears a new theory, the "Z Theory" by Ouchi, (Saval 2014). it was inspired by the Japanese models and proposes horizontal and flexible organizations with capacity to adapt to changes.

In addition to the organization types, technological advances allow and inspire new office designs. By the 50s and the 60s the *General Office or Bull Pen* appears, based on the cellular office which consist on an open floor where the workers are in the center and the executives in the perimeter. Years later the *Open Plan Office* rises, another open floor design that allows workers communication. In Europe, after decades without new proposals, appears in Germany in the year 1958 the *Bürolandschaft* translated as the *Office Landscape*, a more organic and natural design which offers more flexibility and adaptation but also noise and more distractions. Continuing with the office layouts, in 1964 is presented the *Action Office* by Herman Miller and Robert Prost, a furniture design where the worker is the main object. Its creators, ahead of their time, claim that the role of the worker will change and that the repetitive work was being replaced by the "knowledge work", they think that the office is a thinking place. Modularity and flexibility should help adapt the spaces and anticipate to new changes. *Action Office* was well received by theorists, but it wasn't delivered because of its high price (Saval 2014). They created later the *Action Office II* which was related with *System Furniture*, adopted by the *Open Plan Office* and defended by the Modern Movement.

After the second half of the 80s the United States and Europe started to follow different paths. In Europe, the oil crisis shows that open concepts were no longer profitable; workers

wanted more privacy, and, in this period, a pathology known as *Sick Building Syndrome* (SBS) appears. Office landscape wasn't valid anymore, so new designs that give answer to the objective of having open offices but maintaining the workers privacy appears. On the other hand, on the United States the *Open Plan* evolved to the *Cube Farm*. From the latest 80s, personal computers and digital technology development give rise to new ways of working and needs because of that many workspaces design became obsolete.

2. CHALLENGES OF WORKSPACES. DESIGN AND PRODUCTIVITY

The most important challenge of the companies of the 21st century is the need of continuous innovation to maintain it activity. Being competitive requires the creation of new products and adapting to a continuously changing market. More flexible spaces with higher connection are required (Harris, 2015). It is imperative to provide spaces for workgroups rather than hierarchy especially in sectors related to digital and knowledge

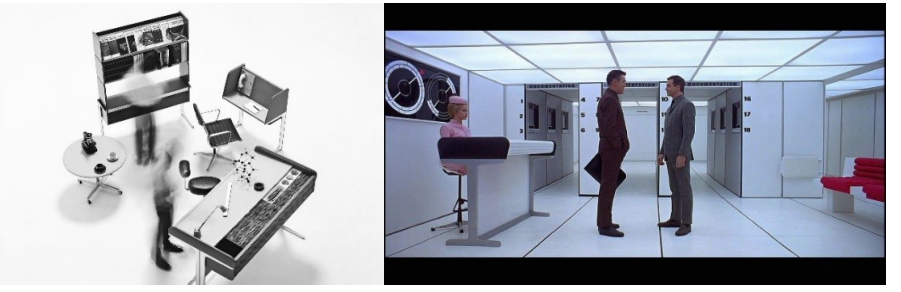


Figure 1. Action Office by Robert Prost and Action Office desk in the film 2001 a Space Odyssey. Concept by Robert Prost and Design by George Nelson. Source:Fist Image recovered from https://www.wired.com/2014/04/how-offices-accidentally-became-hellish-cubicle-farms/ . Second Image recovered from: https://www.decorsed.com/2001-a-space-odyssey/

Figure 2. Action Office II and the evolution of Action Office II, the cubicle. Source Firs Image recovered from: https://www.dezeen.com/2015/02/01/office-cubicle-50th-birthday- herman-miller-robert-propst/. Second Image recovered from: http://www.mikanet.com/museum/item.php?item=2010

economy; office is a place for workers to collaborate developing ideas, strategies and solutions. In offices designed for today and the future the workspace is considered as a hub, it is a network where workers share knowledge and collaboration (Harris, 2015).

Nowadays the new context of work allows more flexibility and autonomy to the workers. With that appears the *Agile Working* which says that work is a task, so it is not tied to a place. This philosophy allows a cost reduction in companies and has a positive effect over sustainability reducing trips and energy waste. There are also some disadvantages, recent studies demonstrate that higher levels of innovation are produced when there is interaction between team members, so it is not a surprise that in some cases remote working leads to less incomes and productivity. Face to face is the most valuable way of communication, (Pentland, 2012; Waber, 2014),[2] casual meetings between workers improve the results. And while ideas can emerge in social places, it is really in workplaces where they are shaped and become real.

Related to *Agile Working*, a new concept of *co-location* appears, to refer to those workers that do not always occupy the same workplace. If part of the employees or part of the time is worked remotely, the space per worker is reduced and if workers occupy different places each day there will be more communication, making knowledge flow to favor innovation. In the past, private offices and cubicles were the most common type of room in workspaces, but nowadays collaborative spaces where knowledge and ideas can flow are needed.

Collaboration, creativity and communication are needed as well as concentration, privacy, contemplation or relax in actual office designs. It means, diversity of spaces is required. (Harris, 2015).

Beyond organizational issues and the tasks to carry out, workspaces should attract and keep the staff. In companies where talent is the fundamental source of productivity this idea is primordial. Today's workers consider that work is only a part of their life, so having different spaces to practice sport, eat healthy or take a break to have a balanced life is valued, especially in non-traditional sectors. Silicon Valley companies were the first adopting this vision in their designs. With that, Active Design concept emerged, outlining that offices should offer more active and collaborative spaces as well as other quieter or different as well as bicycle parking or changing rooms (World Green Building Council, 2014).

From here on, we are going to analyze how performance and productivity are conditioned by design. There are two key points, on one hand, the ergonomics and, on the other hand, the flow of the workers (Riaz, Shoaib & Sarfraz, 2017). Productivity is influenced by design because it affects your concentration capacity, efficiency, creativity or idea generation. Design should contemplate environmental sustainability, workers health and productivity, which is also affected by workplace comfort. Following the 2014 World Green Building Council these last two elements are specially influenced by indoor air quality, thermal and visual comfort (daylighting and lighting), noise and office layout.

Indoor air quality

Air quality is based on ventilation indices, pollutants and CO2 concentration. Studies affirm that productivity could be increased between 8 and 11 per cent with air quality improvements, (Loftness, Hartkopf & Gurtekin, 2013). On the contrary, studies state that poor air quality and elevated temperatures diminish efficiency, (Anderson 2006). Good ventilation helps to reduce malaises; therefore, sick leave diminishes too, and it is beneficial for workers health and companies' productivity (Milton, Glencross & Walters, 2000). High CO2 emissions cause fatigue and affect to decision making. Covid-19 is an actual

[2] Quoted by Harris (2015)

proof of the importance and impact of good ventilation over health and companies' sustainability. As Daisey (2013) indicates, increasing the ventilation ratio and reducing polluted air concentration -computer systems and building occupants being the principal sources- are needed to improve air quality. A good natural ventilation system in office spaces will be a benefit for workers health and for companies because it entails an increase in efficiency and in savings from reduction in energy consumption (Borgeson & Brager, 2011)

Thermal comfort
Thermal comfort has a positive effect over workers satisfaction and productivity, and it is influenced by six factors. Four of this factors are related to work environment, such as air temperature, mean radiant temperature, air relative humidity and air velocity; the other two are related to personal factors, they are human metabolic rates and insulation through clothing (Katafygiotou & Serghides, 2014). All these factors and local weather must be considered in building design to create satisfactory office spaces.

Visual comfort
As previously mentioned, well-being, productivity and efficiency are benefited by visual comfort among other parameters, furniture and lighting being the most important elements that affect both workers' performance and health, (Riaz, Shoaib &Sarfraz, 2017).[3] Visual comfort depends on some design parameters such as lighting conditions and views. The access to natural light and the artificial lighting quality to avoid blinding is also significant. As Al horr (2016) notes quoting Mac Nicholl and Lewis (2014) work, "geometry of windows, photometry of surfaces, amount of glazing, etc., all have an impact on the illumination levels in a work area". Regarding exterior views, proximity to windows and green spaces have positive effects over productivity too, (Newsham, 2008). Prioritising natural lighting is making a bet where both occupants and company wins; workers have higher satisfaction levels and the company could save costs.

Noise
Large number of research papers and studies consider that employees' productivity and efficiency is negatively influenced by noise because they could cause frustration, high stress levels or bad concentration (Leather et al. 2003; Seddigh et al. 2014; Witterseh et al., 2004). Some studies reveal that there are beneficial noises too, such as background sounds or lower intensity noises (Danielsson, 2015).

Office layout
According to actual researches workers have different points of view about the factors that could affect comfort or productivity depending on their office layout. On one hand, the enclosed private offices occupants consider that this type has positive impact on productivity because it avoids distractions. But, on the other hand, Open Plans occupants think that this kind of layout has negative effects because there are more interruptions or distractions, (Al horr, 2016), but they also recognize that there is an increase of productivity bounded to the access to informal meeting points and connections between employees. Special mention on this point to the importance of spaces that invite to healthy life as Active Design, mentioned previously, suggests.

Privacy versus interaction and communication
People need concentration to carry out certain activities, so they need spaces with no distractions. In contrast, activities related to innovation have better results on spaces that encourage teamwork, where communication and discussions are fundamental. In

[3] Quoted by Al horr (2016)

this regard, refreshment spaces play an important role, but sometimes they could be considered as a distraction (Haynes, 2017). Placing refreshment spaces where they cannot interrupt or distract other workers is something to consider during the design period. Another important factor is the use of printers, photocopiers or kitchens could be used to foment interaction on workspaces (Haynes et al 2007; Gladwell, 2000; Dobson & Suckley, 2015).

3. THE FUTURE OFFICE

According to Myerson and Ross (2003) proposal, the 21st century office has evolved into four key themes: Narrative, Nodal, Neighborly and Nomadic office. *Narrative office* expresses the firm personality and principles, giving visual incentives to the workers. *Nodal office* works as a knowledge exchange platform, betting on flexibility and promoting multidisciplinary projects. *Neighborly office* intends to put an end to hierarchical organization bringing workers closer and creating a cooperation and engaging environment. This type of workspace counts on different types of engaging spaces such as cafeterias, open areas and meeting points. *Nomadic office* describes workspaces located on buildings or places that are not designed specifically for working but have amenities too, such as airports or coworking. All these types of offices converge on the disassociation of office and workers empowered by digital technology to be connected all the time and everywhere.

Telecommuting has been greatly intensified recently with Covid-19 pandemic; this is possible thanks to the new technologies. Reduction of commuting time and cost or the possibility to balance work and other activities are some of the advantages of teleworking. By contrast, workers isolation and the loss of control over employees are negative factors of this type. Public buildings such as cafés or libraries could function as workspaces, this is the *Flex Office*, which is defined by Van Meel (2015) as an intermediate typology between the Nomadic and Nodal office of Myerson and Ross joining the *Nonterritorial Office* of Chiat.

Coworking, a typology that fits well on the nomadic office of Myerson and Ross (2003), is a place where entrepreneurs, freelancers, SMEs and start-ups share spaces, creating synergies. It is born as an alternative for telecommuting or *Home Office* (Klauck, 2005), avoiding the isolation of working from home and offering amenities like an office. These spaces emerge to answer the needs derived from the new working methods, the new creative economy and the new information technologies. The creation of collaboration and community between users obtaining synergies is the main idea of coworking spaces.

The development of coworking spaces is accelerated by the economic difficulties from the 2007 crisis. Due to staff reduction in companies, many workers had to start their own business finding in coworking spaces great amenities as internet connection, IT services and flexible spaces. Serendipity and synergies occur thanks to coworking (Messina, 2007), professionals could find partners, clients and new ideas to make their business rise, productivity boost and their business network expansion. To ensure user's continuity, coworking owners try to facilitate their work and concentration and they also offer several services such as legal and economic consulting, training, workshops or mail service.

CONCLUSION

Workspaces have changed and evolved due to social progress and production activities changes influenced by technological advances. Office spaces had to adapt to new processes and technology. At present, the worker is considered an intellect strength, but there has been an important shift from manufacturing and repetitive tasks to creative and ideation activities to get to this. Many professions have been replaced by automation done by computers while more spaces are needed today to crate and innovate. Workers are the most important asset for companies, they are not just machines repeating tasks; for this reason, the workers' comfort and flexibility are nowadays fundamental for a firm to success.

Relationship between design, workers wellbeing and productivity has been a transcendent factor too. Noise, thermal control, lighting and layout design are pointed out as the most important factors that relate productivity, workers efficiency and design. Noise has a negative effect reducing worker's ability to concentrate, by contrast, thermal control, good light, natural if possible, and outside views increase productivity. There are many different interior layouts and all of them have advantages and disadvantages. For example, while noise causes distraction on the Open Plan, interaction and communication have the opposite effect, increasing productivity and innovation possibilities; on the other hand, cubicle office problems and advantages are completely different. In addition, refreshment and sportive spaces should be provided in today offices.

Nowadays workspaces should be prepared for a constantly changing productive environment, for this purpose, flexibility, adaptation capacity and communication, ideas exchange and teamwork fomentation are key points but offering concentration and quieter spaces too. Beyond efficiency and productivity requirements, interior layout plays an important role attracting new talents. Workers from the creative and knowledge economy value pleasant environments with personality and amenities to maintain a balanced and healthy life.

Distancing between work and workspaces is enabled by the transformations derived from computers development, the Internet and digital technology. Remote work separates workers and fixed offices reducing workstations and promoting new interaction between workers because they are not grounded to workplaces. Today what we understand as a workspace has extended to the public space too, work happens in many places. In this context, due to its lower costs, well-cared environment and the ability to connect with other professional and to achieve greater business opportunities, co-working adapts to the autonomous professional, entrepreneurs, freelancers, SMEs, start-ups and today's market.

REFERENCES

Al horr , Y., Arif, M., Katafygiotou, M., Mazroei , A., Kaushik , A., & Elsarrag, E. (2016). Impact of indoor environmental quality on occupant well-being and comfort: A review of the literature. *International Journal of Sustainable Built Environment*, 5, 1-11. doi:http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.ijsbe.2016.03.006

Andersson , J., Boerstra , A., Clements-Croome, D., Fitzner , K., & Hanssen , S. (2006). *Guidebook: Indoor Climate and Productivity In Offices.* (P. Wargorcki, & O. Seppänen, Edits.) REHVA.

Bakó-Biro, Z., Clements-Croome, D., Kochhar N. Awbi, H., & Williams , M. (2011). Ventilation rates in schools and pupils' performance. *Building and Environmen*t, 48, 1-9. doi:http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2011.08.018

Borgeson, S., & Brager, G. (2011). Comfort standards and variations inexceedance for mixed-mode buildings. *Building Research & Information*, 39(2), 118-133. doi:10.1080/09613218.2011.556345

Chang, C.-Y., & Chen, P.-K. (2005). Human Response to Window Views and Indoor Plants in the Workplace. *HortScience*, 40(5), 1354.1359. doi:https://doi.org/10.21273/HORTSCI.40.5.1354

Danielsson, C., Bodin, L., Wulff, C., & Theorell, T. (2015). The relation between office type and workplace conflict: A gender and noise perspective. *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 42, 161-171. doi:https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jenvp.2015.04.004

Frontczak, M., & wargocki, P. (2011). Literature survey on how different factors influence human comfort in indoor environments. *Buiilding and Environment,* 46(4), 922-937. doi:https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2010.10.021

Gladwell, M. (2000). *The tipping Point: How little things can make a big difference.* London: Abacus.

Harris, R. (2015). The changing nature of the workplace and the future of office space. *Journal of Property Investment & Finance*, 33(5), 424-435. doi:https://doi.org/10.1108/JPIF-05-2015-0029

Haynes, B., Suckley, L., & Nunnington, N. (2017). Workplace productivity and office type. An evaluation of office occupier differences based on age and gender. *Journal of Corporate Real Estate*, 19(2), 111-138. doi:DOI 10.1108/JCRE-11-2016-0037

Hongisto, V. (2005). A model predicting the effect of speech of varying intelligibility on work performance. *Indoor Air*, 15, 458-468. doi:https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1600-0668.2005.00391.x

Kaarlela-Tuomaala, A., Keskinen, E., & Hongisto, V. (2009). Effects of acoustic environment on work in private office rooms and open-plan offices – longitudinal study during relocation. *Ergonomics*, 52(11), 1423-1444. doi:https://doi.org/10.1080/00140130903154579

Katafygiotou, M., & Serghides, D. (2014). Bioclimatic chart analysis in three climate zones in Cyprus. *Indoor and Build Environment,* 25. doi:https://doi.org/10.1177%2F1420326X14526909

Leather, P. J., Beale, D., & Sullivan, L. (2003). Noise, psychosocial stress and their interaction in the workplace. *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 23(2), 213-222. doi:https://doi.org/10.1016/S0272-4944(02)00082-8

Leffingwell, W. H. (1917). *Scientific Office Management*. Chicago, New York : A.W. Shaw Company.

Leffingwell, W. H. (1925). *Office Management*. Chicago and New York: A. W. Shaw Company. doi:https://doi.org/10.1177/000271622512200139

Loftness , V., Hartkopf, V., & Gurtekin, B. (2003). Linking Energy to Health and Productivity in the Built Environment: Evaluating the Cost-Benefits of High Performance Building and Community Design for Sustainability, Health and Productivity,. *USGBC Green Build Conference,*. Obtenido de http:cbpd.arc.cmu.edu/ebids Last accessed 5 August 2014

Mak, C., & Lui, Y. (2012). The effect of sound on office productivity. *Building Services Engineering Research and Technology,*, 33(3), 339-345. doi:https://doi.org/10.1177%2F0143624411412253

Mayo, E. (1933). *The Human Problems of an Industrial Civilization*. New York: The Macmillan Company.

McGregor, D. (1960). *The human side of enterprise*. New York : McGraw-Hill.

Milton, D., Glencross , P., & Walters, M. (2000). Risk of Sick Leave Associated with Outdoor Air Supply Rate, Humidification, and Occupant Complaints. I*ndoor Air*(10), 212-212. Obtenido de ttp://www.e-co.uk.com/Recirc-Milton2000.pdf Last accessed 5 August 2014

Moriset, B. (2013). Building new places of the creative economy.The rise of coworking spaces. *Territoire en Mouvement*. doi: 10.4000/tem.3868

Myerson , J., & Ross, P. (2003). *La oficina del siglo XXI*. Madrid: H.Kliczkowski.

Newsham, G., Aries, M., Mancini, S., & Faye, G. (2008). Individual Control of Electric Lighting in a Daylit Space. *Lighting Research and Technology*, 40, 25.41.

Ouchi, W. G. (1981). *Theory Z: How American Business Can Meet the Japanese Challenge*. Reading, Mass. : Addison-Wesley.

Pentland, A. (2012). *The New Science of Building Great Teams. Harvard Business Review*. Obtenido de https://hbr.org/2012/04/the-new-science-of-building-great-teams

Riaz, A., Shoaib, U., & Sarfraz, M. S. (2017). Workplace Design and Employee's Performance and Health in Software Industry of Pakistan. *International Journal of Advanced Computer Science and Applications,* 8(5), 543-548.

Saval, N. (2014). *Cubed: A Secret History of the Workplace*. New York: Random House.

Seddigh, , A., Berntson, E., Bodin Danielsson, C., & Westerlund, H. (2014). Concentration requirements modify the effect of office type on indicators of health and performance. *Journal of Environmental Psychology,*, 38, 167-174. doi:https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jenvp.2014.01.009

Serghides, D., Chatzinikola, C., & Katafygiotou, M. (2015). Comparative studies of the occupants' behaviour in a university building during winter and summer time. *International Journal of Sustainable Energy,* 34(8), 528-551. doi:https://doi.org/10.1080/14786451.2014.905578

Taylor, F. W. (1911). *Principles of Scientfic Management*. New York, NY, USA and London,: UK: Harper & Brothers,. Obtenido de http://www.gutenberg.org/ebooks/6435

Van Meel, J. (2015). Workplaces Today. Icop.

Veitch, J. A. (2001). Psychological Processes Influencing Lighting Quality. *Journal of the Illuminanting Engeenering Society*, 30(1), 124-140. doi:https://doi.org/10.1080/00994480.2001.10748341

Waber, B., Magnolfi, J., & Lindsay, G. (2014). Workspaces That Move People. *Harvard Business Review*. Obtenido de https://hbr.org/2014/10/workspaces-that-move-people

Witterseh, T., Wyon,, D., & Clausen, G. (2004). The effects of moderate heat stress and open-plan office noise distraction on SBS symptoms and on the performance of office work. *Indoor Air*, 38, 167-174. doi:https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1600-0668.2004.00305.x

World Green Building Council. (2014). *Health, Wellbeing & Productivity in Offices.The next chapter for green building*. doi:https://www.worldgbc.org/news-media/health-wellbeing-and-productivity-offices-next-chapter-green-building

Yun, G. Y., Kong, H.-j., Kim, H., & Kim, J. (2012). A field survey of visual comfort and lighting energy consumption in open plan offices. *Energy and Buildings*, 46, 146-151. doi:https://doi.org/10.1016/j.enbuild.2011.10.035

4

BLOCK 4: SMART CITIES VS. TECH CITIES

PAPER #4.01

IS DUBAI A NEW PARADIGM FOR SMART CITIES?

Sabeen bin Zayyad[a], Thomas Patrick Keenan[a]
[a]University of Calgary, Calgary, Alberta, Canada

ABSTRACT

As one of the fastest growing urbanized cities in the world, Dubai is aiming to become the smartest city on the planet by 2021. At the launch of Dubai's Smart City strategy in 2018, the ruler of Dubai tweeted, "Our goal is for the entire city's services and facilities to be available on smartphones". McKinsey Global Institute states that cities are becoming more habitable and accessible as they get smarter. Technology is becoming part and parcel of citizens' lives by virtue of having access to all types of information in an instant. In addition to keeping pace with innovations in technology, cities also face the challenges of social and economic exclusion. Current literature defines smart cities as ranging from those that use technology as tools to make better decisions and improve the quality of life, to using data to increase efficient delivery of government services to its citizens, to making cities more effective in their operations. Current literature also posits that smart cities do not necessarily mean intelligent communities - making cities better and inclusive. In other words, inclusive means that all citizens should be able to have access to essential services including technology to improve the quality of their lives. This paper will begin by tracing Dubai's journey to become a smart city. The second part will examine the social and economic challenges it currently faces in providing access to the Internet and government services for the majority of its residents. The paper will conclude by proposing that Dubai's approach to becoming not only a smart but also an intelligent city should begin by re-evaluating the alignment of the application of various types of technology with the needs of its residents rather than focusing on the economic return of investment that this implementation brings forth.

KEYWORDS

Smart city; intelligent community; technology innovation; community development; Dubai.

INTRODUCTION

> The 19th century was a century of empires, the 20th century, a century of nation states. The 21st century will be a century of cities (HuffPost 2017).

The World Bank (2018) and United Nations (2014) state that, over 55 per cent of the world's population live in urban areas and that number is expected to increase to 66 per cent by 2050. More and more people are moving to cities in search of job opportunities, better wages and access to basic services such as affordable housing, health care and education. Unfortunately, this does not always translate to a better quality of life. The pressure on cities to meet these minimum needs is very high. The development of diverse lifestyles, declining infrastructure, climate change, ageing population, and more recently the influx and integration of refugees are some of the 'newer' challenges that cities currently face. In their attempts to manage existing economic, social and environmental resources, city officials are increasingly turning to the notion of a smart city to not only improve the quality of the lives of their citizens but to also increase the efficiency of how cities operate and reduce costs.

So, what is a smart city and how is that different from an intelligent community? How does the idea of a smart city align with sustainable development?

1. SMART CITIES, INTELLIGENT COMMUNITIES

According to the Intelligent Community Forum (2015), a smart city approach makes cities work better by using innovations in technology to cut down on costs, increase efficiency and provide better services to its citizens. Gassmann, Böhm, and Palmié (2019) define a smart city as one that

> systematically applies digital technologies to reduce resource input, improve its people's quality of life, and increase the competitiveness of the regional economy in a sustainable manner (26).

Other definitions such as Manville's (2014) describes the smart city as one where a collective partnership is formed between government and non-government stakeholders to address the challenges of urbanization by providing solutions based on information and communication technologies. Pelton and Singh's (2018) characterization of a smart city is one that is not defined by its technology and application but, instead is a process that combines seven elements that are key to building a smart city:

• Meeting the needs of citizens – providing basic services of housing, education, health care, transportation and access to the Internet
• Sustainability / circular economy – tackling the challenges of climate change, pollution, urbanization, and growth in population while minimizing the wastage of resources
• Jobs and competitiveness – stimulating economic competition and growth by creating jobs and retention through retraining programs
• Smart planning and citizen support – involving all demographics of the population including youth to find answers to key questions around delivery of vital services, infrastructure, etc.
• Infrastructure and resources – effective and efficient delivery of key services to both citizens and businesses
• Technology and AI – meeting the needs of the community through the smart use of technology
• Security – ensuring protection against cyber-attacks, key infrastructure, natural and humanitarian disasters

Although the definitions of a smart city are many, it is important to note the difference between the concept of a smart city and that of an intelligent community. Defined as civic groups that strive to make urban and rural areas better places to live in, intelligent communities ensure that citizens are able to prosper in a broadband economy. Technology is not necessarily the primary focus of these communities. Instead, they aim to create an environment where citizens are engaged by providing access to technology to develop a highly skilled workforce, thus ensuring better employment opportunities resulting in an improved quality of life (Intelligent Community Forum 2015). The concept of and processes behind the creation of a smart city does not only require cooperation across different disciplines ranging from politics to economics, from social sciences to the law (Celino and Kotoulas, 2013) but is gaining increasing importance for governments who are looking for manageable and sustainable solutions to the rising urbanization of their cities. Given the interdisciplinary nature of a smart city, how do smart cities and intelligent communities translate into 'smart urbanism' where information and communication technologies are incorporated in an efficient and integrative manner to meet the challenges of a city's urban development? Although research into the area of smart urbanism is

very limited (Luque-Ayala and Marvin, 2015), it is becoming a more adaptable response to the challenges of urban growth in which the questions of who the smart cites are geared toward, the governing processes behind it and how this can be socially inclusive, begin to emerge in different urban contexts.

Proponents of smart cities remain divided on the development and implementation of ideas, potential solutions and possible outcomes. On the one side, there are those that want to develop smart city technologies that meet the immediate needs of city administrations and are sustainable, economical and effective. This group consists of mainly scientists and engineers who work in academia, private corporations and the government. On the other side, are civic organizations, policy makers and not-for-profit groups who find that technology-based solutions are extremely narrow in their application and do not take into consideration the addressing of political, economic and social challenges that exist within the urban milieu (Coletta et al, 2018). This dichotomy between a technology-oriented approach and a civic development approach highlights and emphasizes the disconnect between what municipalities think its citizens want versus what its citizens actually need. The approach of the former is top-down and functional determined by what it thinks is best for the citizens, whereas the latter involves the engagement and participation of the citizens to determine their needs and how best they can be met. Coletta et.al. (2018) state that the reasons behind this divide stems from providing short-term solutions rather than addressing the underlying causes of urban issues. They further state that regulations and the lack of partnerships between the public and private sectors highlight the inefficiencies and the inability of governments to deliver critical amenities to its citizens (Kitchin et al 2017). Instead, governments should draw upon

> the competencies held within industry and academia [to] help deliver better solutions through public-private partnership, leasing, deregulation and market competition, or outright privatization (Coletta et al 2018, 4)

Coletta et.al. also believe that governments are already outsourcing the creation of smart city technologies to the private sector. For example, consider the proposed development of a 12-acre parcel of land along Toronto's waterfront by Sidewalk Labs, an urban innovation lab and subsidiary of Alphabet Inc., the corporate parent of Google. After a competitive bid process, Sidewalk Labs was chosen as the "…successful Innovation and Funding Partner to help think through tough urban challenges…" (Waterfront Toronto, 2017). This partnership between Waterfront Toronto (a government agency) and Sidewalk Labs, has been described as a 'smart city' makeover of Toronto's waterfront area (Bozikovic, 2017, October 17). On their frequently asked questions tab of their website, Sidewalk Labs states that it

…proposes to focus on core areas it is uniquely suited to achieve and that the market or government are not able to pursue on their own, including limited deployment of core technologies necessary to achieve quality-of-life objectives that are not available in the market today.

This project has not been without its share of controversies. Many fear this supposedly limited use of "core technologies" will infringe on the liberties of citizens, thus bringing into perspective the role of digital governance in protecting these rights.

It is also important to note that a smart city does not necessarily translate to a better quality of life or a more secure one. It could be if the technology used was carefully planned and thoughtfully implemented (Pelton and Singh (2018). Celino and Kotoulas (2013) state that the adoption of Internet-based technologies in urbanized cities around the

world is evidence enough that Internet-based solutions are effective in providing tangible services and solutions to its citizens. Yet, they make no mention of maintaining the quality of citizens' lives or their security vis a vis their rights as mandated by their governments. Keeping these two perspectives in mind, we now trace Dubai's journey to becoming a smart city.

2. DUBAI'S JOURNEY AS A SMART CITY

> We are building a new reality for our people, a new future for our children, and a new model of development (Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid al-Maktoum, 2018)

A city of superlatives, ambitious, glamorous, and expensive are some of the adjectives used to describe the Emirate of Dubai. From its origins as a tiny fishing and pearling port in the early-20th century, Dubai today has established itself as a 'city of opportunity' according to PricewaterhouseCoopers sixth edition of its 'Cities of Opportunity' report on in 2014. In addition, Dubai was ranked 12th in the intellectual capital and innovation sector and 13th in terms of technology readiness. Its ranking overall was sixteen out of a total of thirty cities. However, Dubai's ranking dropped a notch in PricewaterhouseCoopers report of 2016. In terms of readiness in technology it stayed the same – 13th but dropped to 13th place in intellectual capital and innovation. It is important to note that it was the only city from the Middle East and North African region to be included in both these reports. With the diversification of its economy away from oil, Dubai has constantly reinvented itself to

Year	Initiatives	Purpose
1999	ICT strategy	• no information available as to its purpose
2000	Dubai Internet City	• tech hub to nurture talent and creativity • www.dic.ae
2001	Dubai e-government	• all government services are made available online • reduce bureaucracy • more accessible • ease the lives of its residents • previous website – www.dubai.ae
2013	Dubai Smart Government	• formerly known as Dubai e-government • www.smartdubai.ae
2014	Smart Dubai	• government office in charge of facilitating Dubai's transformation into a smart city and promote the city into an efficient and seamless experience for its residents and tourists • some key initiatives include Dubai Blockchain Strategy, the Happiness Agenda and the Dubai Paperless Strategy • www.smartdubai.ae
2017	Smart Dubai 2021	• a strategy designed by the Smart Dubai Office to respond to the changes that are shaping Dubai by preparing Dubai to become a world-leading city by 2021 • is a 'revolutionary new vision' for a smart city by making Dubai the 'happiest' city in the world • to promote advances in technology that benefit its economy, resources and its residents • www.2021.smartdubai.ae

Table 1. Timeline of Dubai's transformation into a smart city.

face the urban challenges that are similar to that of other growing cities in the world. The unusual demographics, rapid urbanization, form(s) of governance, and globalization are some of the challenges that require Dubai to continually adapt the way it provides and delivers the services needed to sustain a growing population. A city of approximately 3.2 million people where ninety-two percent are expatriates (Dubai Statistics Center 2018), Dubai's journey to becoming a smart city began in 1999 with the initiation of its ICT Strategy. Table 1 below illustrates when these initiatives were launched and the purpose behind them.

After conducting a thorough review of the Dubai Smart government, Smart Dubai and Smart Dubai 2021 websites, the authors found that there were common key terms used to describe each of these three initiatives. Some of the common terms used across both the websites were:

a) to be the happiest city in the world

b) to use innovations in technology such as blockchain, Internet of Things (IoT) systems, and AI applications so as to become the smartest city in the world

c) make city experiences seamless, efficient, safe, personalized, deliver enhanced quality of life and ensure sustainability

This begs the question as to how do each of these initiatives differ from each other in Dubai's bid to join the ranks of other smart cities in the world? At first glance, the initiatives are iterative. The themes are revisited over and over again without any tangible incorporation of new ideas. However, rather than being critical about this, the authors believe that the initiatives should viewed as incremental phases towards achieving Dubai's goal amongst others, to become the smartest city in the world. In addition, Dubai can and should be viewed as a pioneer in its attempt to become the first smart city in the Middle East and North Africa region (Virtudes, Abbara and Sá, 2017).

3. SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC CHALLENGES POSED

> We are making Dubai the happiest city on earth by embracing technology innovation making Dubai a more seamless, safe, efficient and personalised city experience for all residents and visitors (Smart Dubai 2021 n.d.)

Using Dubai's Transformation Agenda model below (Figure 2), the authors have chosen two of the six 'strategic themes' as a guide to illustrate the social and economic challenges that Dubai's faces in embracing the notion of a smart city. The 'city experience' and 'emerging technologies' were chosen because they offer an insight into two important elements that are crucial to building a smart city – affordability and liberty.

Figure 1. Dubai City's Transformation Agenda. (Smart Dubai 2021 n.d.)

3.1. Affordability of the city experience

Human capital is the bedrock of a nation's development. Given Dubai's highly unusual demographic where expatriates outnumber the citizens, this can pose a challenge where terms like happiness, resilience, well-connected, well-planned do not necessarily translate into what Smart Dubai 2021 deems or identifies or states on its website as "… an unmatched urban experience." Being able to 'connect' with the rest of the world is important in this era of globalization. According to the World Bank (2016), only 15%

of the world's population can afford access to the Internet with 60% having no access at all. In addition, despite cell phones being the main device with which to connect to the Internet, approximately 2 billion people do not own one (World Bank, 2016).

In 2013, the Dubai government launched an initiative whereby all government services would be made accessible on mobile devices by 2015. Although only "…96% of public services in the government's 337 most significant departments had successfully gone digital" (Smart City Press 2018), the ruler of Dubai set a new target. It wanted at the very minimum 80% of its residents to actually access government services using their mobile devices. Therein lay the challenge of how both residents and visitors alike could have a seamless experience whilst in Dubai. What is even more daunting is the fact that despite "…active mobile penetration skyrocketing above 260 percent…" (Salem 2016), the financial costs of being able to afford access to the Internet remain unaddressed to date. According to Hassan (2018), of the 9.3 million residents in the UAE in 2015, 89% were migrant workers with most of them being semi-skilled or unskilled. It should be noted that the statistics on what percentage of Dubai's labour force constitute unskilled workers is not available. Although the list is not comprehensive, this demographic includes construction workers, housemaids, drivers, security guards, and building caretakers to name a few. With an average income of US $362 per month (Hassan 2018), most of their income is remitted back to their home countries to support their

	Smartphone plan (talk, text & data)	Basic phone plan (talk & text)
Etisalat	Waselgo Extra Large US $88.48 per month + 5% tax 3.5GB data 175 flexi minutes 3 favourite local numbers	At time of writing, the Etisalat website was undergoing a scheduled system maintenance despite the authors' numerous attempts to explore other plans
du	US $40.84 per month + 5% tax Includes 3GB of data + 3GB 'free' full data (available plan at time of writing) 150 flexi minutes	At time of writing, du requested the authors' contact details as they were 'currently working on improving our eShop experience'
Rogers	US $56.56 per month + 5% tax Unlimited in country-wide calling, text, picture and video messaging including voicemail, call display, call waiting & conference calling Includes 10GB of data	US $26.40 per month + 5% tax Unlimited in country-wide calling, messaging, call display, call waiting & conference calling
Bell	US $56.56 per month + 5% tax Unlimited in country-wide calling, text, picture and video messaging including voicemail, call display, call waiting & conference calling Includes 10GB of data	US $30.17 per month + 5% tax Unlimited in country-wide calling, messaging, call display, call waiting & conference calling

Table 2. Comparison of phone plans between Dubai and North America

families there. One of the ways in which they are able to keep in touch with their families and the world is by using their own mobile devices or borrowing one from friends and colleagues. Despite Dubai's desire to ensure that access to the Internet is available to all, the telecommunications market in the UAE is dominated by two providers – Etisalat and the Emirates Integrated Telecommunications Company (EITC), represented as the brand "du" (ITU 2017). The former is mostly owned by the UAE government with the rest of the shares being publicly traded (Etisalat 2019). Du has a similar ownership structure with different entities of the UAE government owning most of the company and the rest by public shareholders (du 2020). What this means is that competition is limited, thus making the plans unaffordable for many. The table below illustrates the price point of similar plans from the websites of the two providers in the UAE and how it compares to similar plans from the websites of two providers in North America, using pre-paid plans.

Given the average monthly income of these semi-skilled and unskilled workers is only US $362, this makes it very costly for them to connect with their families back home. Allocating between approximately 12-26 percent of their income towards staying in touch with their family and the world does not seem feasible or sustainable in the long-term. The city experience for them begins to lose the connection to simplified living. It begs the question whether this particular demographic who form a large segment of the expatriate labour force has been taken into account in the planning of Smart Dubai? In an Access and Use of Information and Communications Technology survey carried out by the UAE Telecommunications Regulatory Authority (2008) and conducted over a period of 6 months, 65% of the respondents surveyed in 1350 households "…noticed reductions in prices of telecommunication services in the past year or two…" (8). It should be noted that the portion of households surveyed represented only 0.2% of the total number of households in the UAE in 2008.The survey also concluded that 66% of these households had access to the internet. A total of 2 people per household were surveyed and "96% of respondents…had access to a mobile phone which may be owned by the respondent or another party." (12). Although statistics on the number of users that have access to the Internet in the UAE vary from 90.6% to 94.3% (CIA 2016, ITU 2017), the type of demographics surveyed is not clearly stated. This makes is very difficult for the authors to understand the perceived impacts of the various initiatives launched by the Dubai government. What also needs to be taken into consideration is, whether any of the initiatives that Dubai has launched will eventually lead into its transition to an intelligent city where inclusivity becomes a defining factor in the quality of their lives. The advent of smartphone applications such as WhatsApp allow users to communicate with their family and friends at no charge (by accessing free WIFI connectivity), is fast gaining a huge following. The smartphone applications provided by Etisalat and du such as BOTIM, are not free as users are required to pay when downloading the application. With the incremental costs of living, applications that provide communication services at very little to no cost is a boon to many who struggle with being able to afford access to talk and text plans. However, this also comes at an intangible price for many as the next challenge will outline.

3.2. Liberty meter with emerging technologies

"The challenge moving forward is choosing the right technologies to incorporate" according to Danish Farhan of Xische and company in a recent article written for Gulf News. The context within which it was written was a nod to how the transformation of Dubai's government will be based on innovation. This innovation means the deployment of the best

technologies such as blockchain, the Internet of Things (IoT) and artificial intelligence. What is equally disruptive in the embracing of new technologies is the government's reluctance to allow technologies that enable free voice and video calls using the Internet. Commonly used across the world, these Voice over Internet Protocol (VoIP) applications such as Skype, FaceTime, Viber and WhatsApp, are banned not only in Dubai but in the entire UAE. Although the text features of these services are allowed, voice and video calling are not permitted. In Dubai's efforts to become the happiest and smartest city in the world, this does seem in direct contrast to its Smart Dubai initiative launched in 2014. Many residents in Dubai have called for the ban to be lifted stating that it was affecting the development process in Dubai (Habib al-Mulla 2018). In a 2019 Twitter post, prominent Dubai businessman Khalaf al-Habtoor stated that these free VoIP services

> …improved the lives of residents and investors…that must be provided as we strive to be a smart city. Stop the monopoly mentality of telecommunications companies.

Many residents have resorted to using virtual private networks (VPNs) to work around these restrictions. In 2019, the UAE's Telecommunications Regulatory Authority issued a statement saying that there were no laws preventing the use of VPNs as long as it was being used for legitimate purposes such as "…to gain access to internal networks via the Internet." The interpretation behind what would be legal and illegal is broad. In an article on their website, a well-known law firm in Dubai, Al Tamimi and Company state that unless 'nefarious' content was going to be accessed, the authorities were less inclined to stop a user from accessing the latest episode of a television series not yet available in Dubai.

Figure 2. Etisalat response to a customer regarding access to Skype. (Gulf News 2018)

Both the telecommunication providers Etisalat and du have fee-based VPN packages that allow users to make calls via the Internet using applications supported by the providers, such as BOTIM, C'ME, HiU Messenger and Voico UAE. Given the geopolitical tensions that are constantly present in the Gulf region, it is understandable when certain applications are not made completely available to residents in Dubai and the UAE. Citing encryption and the UAE's 'regulatory framework' as reasons for the ban (Taylor CNBC 2019), Dubai's approach to the use of telecommunications technologies is understandably cautious vis a vis their national security. One could argue that this is not much different than the precautions taken by other countries in the world. The executive director of the UAE's National Electronic Security Authority, Mohamed al-Kuwaiti (2019) acknowledged that the enabling of increased connectivity in the country meant that the government needed to reassess how national security could be balanced with access to technology. At the time of writing, Microsoft, Facebook and Apple were in discussions with the UAE government on lifting the ban on their VoIP applications. Regardless of the outcome, a fundamental question remains – if Dubai is to become the happiest and smartest city in the world, how does restricting the freedom to select what technologies its residents embrace, enhance its development? While

leading democracies like the USA, Canada, Britain, France and Germany monitor their citizens' use of the Internet, Dubai restricts and monitors its residents' use of the Internet. Although, more control may be gained by cities in restricting available technologies and tracking their usage by their citizens, it is not sustainable in the long-term (Kar, et al 2019). Cities need to facilitate their citizens' interactions with different technologies in order to better processes, resulting in effective outcomes. In the planning of its initiatives, Dubai needs to enable and integrate a broad range of technologies that will allow for human progress. Granted that the security of cities and their nations is vital to a viable future, embracing new technologies while restricting access to them does not mitigate the challenges associated with urbanization.

CONCLUSION

Smart cities make cities run better by creating efficiencies through technology, whereas intelligent communities focus on making cities better by providing access to technology and developing a highly-skilled workforce. Both intend on increasing the quality of life for its citizens. Both are necessary for urbanization to prosper. However, Dubai's path geared towards developing a smart city requires consideration of the social context rather than the focus on economic return of investment that technologies bring. What this means is that the inclusion of "…citizens, urban dynamics, and citizen participation in public life and decision-making" (Celino and Kotoulas 2013, 9) is important to deliver tangible solutions to a city's inhabitants.

The authors propose three recommendations they believe are crucial to building upon the existing platform of Dubai's current initiatives to becoming a smart city:

• Digital connectivity – just having high-speed Internet is not enough. Providing access to all its residents is important, especially in areas with weak cellular coverage and access to publicly available WIFI is desired but not available. This would require Internet service providers Etisalat and du to streamline processes to improve services. It would also require them to review industry standards, assess current levels of connectivity available, and foster greater competition in the telecommunications industry with a goal of reducing the financial burden that is associated with accessing the Internet.

• Erudite workforce – as new technologies emerge, it is important that all sectors of the labor force are trained and prepared to use information and technology effectively. Greater collaboration needs to take place between Dubai's educational institutions and employers where opportunities such as work-study programs, internships, lunch n' learns are encouraged and created.

• Stakeholder advocacy – with Dubai positioning itself as a smart city, the government should engage in broader collaborations with its residents in building a better future by involving them in open forums, government-resident task forces and resident surveys, to understand how communities work with different technologies. It needs to analyze the dynamics between the public sphere, private sector and communities, and explore best practices to engage the stakeholders in opportunities for them to explore new ways of doing things that are more efficient and cost-effective.

As new technologies develop, Dubai needs to ask itself if its initiatives can be adapted to the changing economic, social and demographic variables? What implications does this have in the delivery of services to its residents? Are their initiatives integrated enough to provide alternative solutions to fulfill, support and sustain the needs of their residents? These and many more important questions deserve further research so as to achieve better collaboration between the government and its residents. Rather than simply focusing on the economic return on investment that the

application of various types of technology will bring, Dubai needs to apply technology to meeting the needs of its residents, improving the quality of life and strengthening the economic and social fabric of its communities if it is to achieve its goal of being the happiest city in the world.

REFERENCES

Du. 2020. "Ownership structure." Accessed February 20, 2020. https://www.du.ae/about-us/investor-relations/shareholders

Acuto, Michele. 2010. "High-rise Dubai urban entrepreneurialism and the technology of symbolic power." *Cities* 27: 272-284.

Alketbi, Hamad. 2018. "An Evaluation of E-government Effectiveness in Dubai Smart Government Departments." PhD diss., Southampton Solent University.

Bozikovic, Alex. 2017. "Google's Sidewalk Labs signs deal for 'smart city' makeover of Toronto's waterfront." *Globe and Mail*, October 17, 2017. https://www.theglobeandmail.com/news/toronto/google-sidewalk-toronto-waterfront/article36612387/#:~:text=On%20Tuesday%2C%20Sidewalk%20Labs%2C%20a,pursue%20a%20much%20larger%20area.

Celino, Irene and Kotoulas, Spyros. 2013. Smart Cities. *IEEE Internet Computing* 17 (6): 8-11. https://ieeexplore-ieee-org.ezproxy.lib.ucalgary.ca/document/6682980

Central Intelligence Agency. 2020. Accessed August 10, 2020. https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/ae.html

Coletta, C., Evans, L., Heaphy, L., & Kitchin, R., eds. 2018. *Creating smart cities*. ProQuest Ebrary.

Dubai Statistics Center. 2018. "Yearly Population Estimates." Accessed February 15, 2020. https://www.dsc.gov.ae/Report/DSC_SYB_2018_01%20_%2003.pdf

Eger, John M. 2017. "This Is The Decade of Cities." *HuffPost*, December 6, 2017. https://www.huffpost.com/entry/this-is-the-decade-of-cit_b_9596524

Etisalat. 2019. "Ownership structure." Accessed February 20, 2020. https://www.etisalat.com/en/ir/corporateinfo/ownership-structure.jsp

Farhan, Danish. 2020. "Dubai Council will be catalyst for change." *Gulf News*, February 20, 2020. https://gulfnews.com/business/analysis/dubai-council-will-be-catalyst-for-change-1.69826448

Fawcett, Andrew and Saleem, Sana. 2019. "Is Using a VPN in the UAE illegal?" November 2019. https://www.tamimi.com/law-update-articles/is-using-a-vpn-in-the-uae-illegal/

Hassan, Riaz. 2018. "The UAE's Unsustainable Nation Building." *YaleGlobal Online*, April 24, 2018. https://yaleglobal.yale.edu/content/uaes-unsustainable-nation-building

Intelligent Community Forum. 2015. "What is an Intelligent Community". https://www.intelligentcommunity.org/what_is_an_intelligent_community

International Telecommunication Union. 2017. "Big Data for Measuring The Information Society: Country Report – United Arab Emirates. Accessed August 10, 2020. https://www.itu.int/en/ITU-D/Statistics/Documents/bigdata/United%20Arab%20Emirates.pdf

Khan, Sajid M., Woo, Mina, Nam, Kichan and Chathoth, Prakash, K. 2017. "Smart City and Smart Tourism: A Case of Dubai." *Sustainability* 9 (12): 2279.

Khatoun, Rida and Zeadally, Sherali. 2016. "Smart cities: concepts, architectures, research opportunities." *Communications of the ACM* 59 (8): 46-57. ProQuest Ebrary.

Kitchin, R., Coletta, C., Evans, L., Heaphy, L. and MacDonncha, D. 2017. "Smart cities, urban technocrats, epistemic communities, advocacy coalitions and the 'last mile' problem." *it – Information Technology* 59 (6): 275-284.

Luque-Ayala, A., & Marvin, S. 2015. "Developing a critical understanding of smart urbanism?" *Urban Studies* 52 (12): 2105–2116. https://doi.org/10.1177/0042098015577319

Maceda, Cleofe. 2018. "Individuals can access VPNs in the UAE, with caution." *Gulf News,* January 3, 2018. https://gulfnews.com/technology/individuals-can-access-vpns-in-the-uae-with-caution-1.1872304

Manville, C., Cochrane, G., Cave, J., Millard, J., Pederson, J.K., Thaarup, R.K. and Kotterink, B. 2014. "Mapping smart cities in the EU." Accessed February 18, 2020. http://www.europarl.europa.eu/studies.

Pelton, J. N., & Singh, I. B. 2018. *Smart cities of today and tomorrow: Better technology, infrastructure and security.* ProQuest Ebrary.

PricewaterhouseCoopers. 2014. "Cities of Opportunity 6." Accessed February 18, 2020. https://www.pwchk.com/en/cities-of-opportunity/cities-of-opportunity-6.pdf

PricewaterhouseCoopers. 2014. "Cities of Opportunity 7." Accessed February 18, 2020. https://www.pwc.com/us/en/cities-of-opportunity/2016/cities-of-opportunity-7-report.pdf

Salem, F. 2016. "A Smart City for Public Value: Digital Transformation through Agile Governance – The Case of "Smart Dubai". *Dubai: Governance and Innovation Program, Mohammed Bin Rashid School of Government*. World Government Summit.

Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid. 2018. "Mohammed bin Rashid: Reigniting Our Civilisation a Resolution, Not a Slogan". https://sheikhmohammed.ae/en-us/news/details?nid=25191&cid=

Smart City Press. 2018. "How Dubai Wants to Scale Up The Happiness Meter With Easily Accessible Public Services?" *Smart City Press*, February 9, 2018. https://www.smartcity.press/smart-accessible-public-services-dubai/

Smart Dubai. n.d. https://2021.smartdubai.ae/.

Smart Dubai. 2020. https://www.smartdubai.ae/about-us

Taylor, Chloe. 2019. "UAE may lift ban on WhatsApp call, head of country's cybersecurity authority says." *CNBC*, November 6, 2019. https://www.cnbc.com/2019/11/06/uae-may-lift-ban-on-whatsapp-calls-head-of-cybersecurity-authority.html

UAE Telecommunications Regulatory Authority. 2008. "UAE ICT Survey: Access and Use of Information and Communications Technology in the UAE."

United Nations Population Division. World Urbanization Prospects: 2018 Revision.

Woetzel, Jonathan, et al. 2018. "Smart cities: Digital solutions for a more livable future". *McKinsey Global Institute*. June 2018. https://www.mckinsey.com/industries/capital-projects-and-infrastructure/our-insights/smart-cities-digital-solutions-for-a-more-livable-future

World Bank, 2016. "World Development Report 2016: Digital Dividends." Accessed February 19, 2020. https://www.worldbank.org/en/publication/wdr2016

Virtudes, A., Abbara, A. and Sá, J. 2017. "Dubai: A Pioneer Smart City in the Arabian Territory." *IOP Conference Series: Materials Science and Engineering* 245 (5). https://iopscience.iop.org/article/10.1088/1757-899X/245/5/052071/pdf

World's Urbanization Prospects. 2014. "World's population increasingly urban with more than half living in urban areas." *United Nations*, July 10, 2014. https://www.un.org/en/development/desa/news/population/world-urbanization-prospects-2014.html

WAM. "Dubai e-Government renamed Dubai Smart-Government". *Gulf News*, June 20, 2013. https://gulfnews.com/business/dubai-e-government-renamed-dubai-smart-government-1.1199985

PAPER #4.02

PERFORMING AND MEASURING SMARTNESS GIVING GROUND TO URBAN INTELLIGENCE BY AN ALTERNATIVE METRIC

Julien Lafontaine Carboni[a], Dario Negueruela del Castillo[b]
[a]ALICE, Swiss Federal Institute of Technology (EPFL), Lausanne, Switzerland
[b]University of Zürich, Switzerland

ABSTRACT

Since the emergence of cybernetics and the growing prominence of the use of IT as tools and instruments to develop and manage urban spaces, the discourses on smart city and their agency reached a central role in the outlining of new markets of urban management and transformation. Numerous scholars attempted to disclose the mechanisms of Smart Cities (SC) as a corporate discourse and a tool for disciplinary control. In this contribution, we propose to unveil the processes of future's normalisation enacted by the current SC program and metrics. We argue that this discourse is acting as an extraction of sovereignty through normalised and neoliberal representations, constraining the way we sense, act and think on and with cities. Grounded on actual alternatives proposed and analysed by the emerging field of SC critique, we will try to outline the frame of a new metric of smartness, based on political and spatial imagination that emphasizes on the coupling between a measure and its worth. Then, we will explore a path opened up by the distributed cognition theory (Hutchins 1995; 2000) and the scaffolded mind theory (Sterelny 2010) put in perspective with the understanding of spatiality as performative (Butler 1993;Gregson and Rose 2000; R.Glass and Rose-Redwood 2014). From these theories giving ground to a new definition of intelligence, we will propose a complementary set of dimensions for an alternative metric, opening up new roles and possibilities for renewed spatial imagination and practices.

KEYWORDS

Smart city alternatives; metrics; sociospatial imagination; spatial intelligence; performativity.

INTRODUCTION

Smart cities, intelligent cities, creative territories… The amount of labelling and publications on the topic of urban intelligence is flourishing. Since the emergence of cybernetics and the growing prominence of the use of IT as tools to develop and manage urban spaces, the discourses on SC and their agency reached a central role in the outlining of new markets. Based on an almost unconcealed collusion between the public sector and a military-industrial complex, numerous scholars attempted to disclose the mechanisms of SC as a corporate discourse and a tool for disciplinary control. Under the banner of efficiency and rationality toward a sustainable and resilient future, most of the SC programs are narrowing decision-making processes, enhancing the decline of the political in urban context and disempowering public policies and local populations of their capacity to imagine alternatives.

In this contribution, we intend to unveil how the current metrics and program of SC impose a normalization, standardization even, of the future. We argue that this discourse is acting as an extraction of sovereignty through neoliberal representations, constraining the way we act and think on and with cities. We thus claim the urgency of finding new ways of theorising and measuring urban intelligence.

Grounded on some alternatives proposed by the emerging field of SC critique, we will try to outline the frame of a new metric of smartness, based on political and spatial imagination that emphasizes on the coupling between a measure and its worth. Then, we will explore a path opened up by the distributed cognition theory (Hutchins 1995) and the scaffolded mind theory (Sterelny 2010) put in perspective with the understanding of spatiality as performative (Butler 1990; Gregson and Rose 2000). From these theories giving ground to a new definition of intelligence, we will propose a complementary set of dimensions for an alternative metric, opening up new roles and possibilities for renewed spatial imagination and practices.

1. RE-EVALUATING THE SMARTNESS. PASTS AND PRESENTS OF THE SMART CITY

1.1. Recent evolutions and metrics of the Smart City

Most of the scientific articles on SC notice the lack of clear definitions. This lack originates in a largely self-congratulatory use of the label (Holland 2007), both shaped by a corporate storytelling and the economic need of cities to develop a competitive image (Söderström and Klauser 2004). If it was firstly used by the public sector, after the reorientation of IBM, the term was appropriated by companies in order to gain a 'dominant position in a huge market'.

Smart city developed at the same moment than the *Rise of the Creative Class* (Florida 2002). Interrogating the coincidence, Holland questions the sustainability of smart entrepreneurialism with its associated economic growth and gentrification, as the city is becoming through IT more economically and socially divided; he considers that smartness is exclusive, attracting a certain part of the population and ignoring the welfare of other citizens. To counter this critique that grew in civil society, the corporate discourse mutated in 2010's to drastically include citizens; 'To build a smart city, we need citizens capable of inventing a new world.' (Vanolo 2014, citing, www.barismartcity.it). With this strategy, the SC enrols citizens by force in its fabrication, and imposes them to be 'smart'. Participating in the construction of the SC becomes a moral obligation. In this process of forced *democratization,* a new form of moral and ethics of control are enacted by the participation. Enclosing the field of the political and the means of imagination into a standardized participatory contribution, the SC entered a third phase, exhausting political and spatial imagination.

The metrics of the SC suffer from the same problem of high heterogeneity. According to the purpose of the labelling or ranking, the dimensions and the ontologies of the data vary consequently. As noted by Picon, they all nevertheless share common means and objectives: ecology, sustainability, efficiency and optimization through the use of IT, providing competitive environments. Two techniques are mainly used to measure the degree of smartness: Benchmarking and Modeling (Komninos 2007). We will focus on benchmarking practices as they constitute the main core.

Benchmarking consists in the comparison of cities between each other to learn from the best practices. It permits to understand the weaknesses or strengths of a particular environment, and to work to overcome or rely on them. The role of these rankings is of a huge importance for territories in order to situate themselves in the international competition and to foster economic growth (Giffinger 2010). Territorial Benchmarking is defined as such:

> In all cases the process starts with a definition of benchmarking topics, and goes on to select

> the indicators per topic, followed by data collection, selection of the comparison group, calculation of benchmarks, and interpretation of the results. The scope of the methodology is always the same. We attempt to define the range of variation of performance in any field of activity, the minimum, average, and maximum scores of performance, the distance from the best, and the practices that sustain performances. (Komninos 2007,131)

Even if there is no consensus on metrics, we can note some more influential insights. One of the most representative research is the *Smart-Cities Ranking of medium-sized city*. The aim of the benchmarking is clear, it is to help medium-sized cities to become competitive at international scale in terms of resources, critical mass and organizing capacity. Were selected cities of more than 100.000 inhabitants, with at least one university, already cited in other ranking or with headquarters of a major company. These criteria added with the data availability permitted to rank 70 cities in Europe. According to the literature' review the scientists made, six domains of smartness were identified -smart economy, smart people, smart governance, smart mobility, smart environment, and smart living. Upon these domains, they proposed 74 indicators, themselves regrouped in 31 factors. There is a lot that could be commented on the factors and indicators of Smartness, but we will focus on the Smart people factors, as it is representative of the new radically inclusive strategy.

The diverse dimensions used point at one type of population. Well trained, adaptable to the labour market, flexible and creative, cosmopolite and open-minded, while always voting; the factors clearly indicate which behaviour is right to be smart. Benchmarking practices and dimensions' finding 'are full of values, judgements and deliberate strategies of occlusion' (Kitchin 2016, 52).
Despite lack of evidence of its impact on the population, the authors insist on how this ranking has oriented numerous politics, particularly in the cities included in the ranking. Coupled with the forced enrolment of citizens in the fabrication when implementing corporate SC initiatives, the performativity of such metrics is extended with the use of environmental technologies that 'mobilise urban citizens as operatives within the processing of urban environmental data [...]. Citizens [...] have a set of citizen-like actions at their disposal, enabled by environmental technologies that allow them to be participants within the smart city.' (Gabrys 2014, 41). These metrics and technologies introduce a self-enforced means of regulating the way we act, move, think and perceive in the SC, without the need to directly govern individual practices; the new environment outlines and makes the right behavior emerge by compliance and convergence. In this motion, the rights of the citizen are replaced by choices to be made (Cowley, Joss, and Dayot 2018), and we observe a transformation from inhabitant to consumer and data-producer

Smart People	Level of qualification	Importance as knowledge centre	2006	regional
	Level of qualification	Population qualified at levels 5-6 ISCED	2001	local
	Level of qualification	Language skills	2005	national
	Affinity to life long learning	Book loans per resident	2001	local
	Affinity to life long learning	Participation in life-long-learning in %	2005	regional
	Affinity to life long learning	Participation in language courses	2005	national
	Social and ethnic plurality	Share of foreigners	2001	local
	Social and ethnic plurality	Share of nationals born abroad	2001	local
	Flexibility	Perception of getting a new job	2006	national
	Creativity	People working in creative industries	2002	national
	Cosmopolitanism/Open-mindedness	Voters turnout at European elections	2001	local
	Cosmopolitanism/Open-mindedness	Immigration-friendly environment	2006	national
	Cosmopolitanism/Open-mindedness	Knowledge about the EU	2006	national
	Participation in public life	Voters turnout at city elections	2001	local
	Participation in public life	Participation in voluntary work	2004	national

Figure 1. Dimensions, factor and indicator corresponding to the calculation of Smart People . Giffinger et al. 2007)

in the way people are considered by policy-making (Cardullo and Kitchin 2019).
The metric of SC does not function as a mirror that reflects reality. The dimensions, indicators and factors that permit to rank cities and policies is creating a form of ethic based on algorithm (Söderström 2014; Vanolo 2014), strongly de-politicising the planning decision, indicating what is the good behaviour to adopt. This 'objective reality' based on the city as a set of measurable facts, apparently transparent and non-political deeply modifies the way cities are produced. They are strongly normative as they are shaping governance while influencing decision-making, institutional spending and workers forms of labour (Kitchin et al. 2015).
In this perspective we intend to outline that, through SC' programs, our spatial and political individuation (Simondon 2005) are short-circuited, hindering our capacity to think the articulation of contingent socio-spatial alternatives, from the level of the body (what is a good and smart citizen) to the level of the institution (what is a good and smart university) and policy-maker (what is a good and smart decision). This reality formulated by those metrics and programs presents itself as natural, and thus should be considered as hazardous (Zupancic 2011; Fisher 2009), extending a *scientific* realism to constitute a capitalist realism. Capturing our future (and its markets) by a colonisation of its imaginaries, it is then urgent to find new narratives and alternative figurations of the way IT could be implemented in our environments, and of what could be a SC.

1.2. Alternatives

Nevertheless, some perspectives arise in the need of new ways of theorizing, cases to examine and methodologies for comparative research (Luque and Marvin 2015). Soderstrom and McFarlane (2017) proposed a new framework to define smart urbanism. To do so, they depart from several assumptions for the most shared amongst critical scholars: urban intelligence or SC program should not be primarily associated with new technologies. Secondly, territories and cities of the Global South should also be studied and hypothesized as potential fields for smart urbanism, for the notion not to be north centric and normative. Then, if technology is not the (main) core of Smart Urbanism, knowledge, in all its forms, is the main means of such an approach.
According to the authors, the return of modernist and technocratic approaches of planning in smart urbanism necessitates the use of theories of usable knowledge (Lindblom and Cohen 1979). As such scientific knowledge is inefficient without the encounter with ordinary knowledge, which combination is at the core of an usable one. It demands scientists or companies to first identify the knowledge and use out of the traditional scope of the 'techno-fetichism of smart urbanism discourse' (2017,16), and defined by grounded co-productions, and simultaneously understanding the knowledge forms of the residents. Knowledge and learning are then becoming the critical point of smart urbanism, as the technology implemented should follow the lines of identification and not the inverse. Based on empirical research, this renewed approach of urban intelligence and SC is grounded on the 'place-based, experiential, and largely neglected urban knowledges of residents in precarious contexts' (2017,30), permitting to foresee an inclusive and contributive dimension in the smart urbanism. Also, Barcelona is developing a remarkable counter-model based on digital sovereignty and it has been largely noticed by scholars. Even if some scholars now proposing some alternative visions' state of the art (see Morozov et Bria 2018), no scholars have yet attempted to provide a frame for an alternative metric. We argue that if we develop a demanding and situated metric, the act of measuring could be seen as an occasion to foster inclusion, knowledge in all its forms

and socio-spatial alternatives to the dominant models of SC.

2. GIVING GROUND TO (URBAN) INTELLIGENCE. IN BETWEEN COGNITIVE SCIENCES AND ARCHITECTURE

2.1. Focusing on the value of the metric. Political and Spatial Imagination

One of the key aspects to consider when assessing the adequacy of any given metric regards the relationship between two distinct yet inextricably linked elements of measurement: worth and value. In explaining the main of *Tractatus de mensuris,* by Von Freiberg, Brighenti (2017) argues that establishing 'measures' is a double task: on the one hand, a measure ought to provide a ratio of magnitude [molis], on the other, it ought to provide a ratio of worth [virtus]. Brighenti unsurprisingly argues that the asymmetrical development of magnitude corresponds to the development of modern science. In this process, we seem not only to have lost sight of the crucial link between measure and worth, but also to have fallen into the argument that magnitude is devoid of any inherent valuing apparatus. Such step conceals that measures constitute a directed focus of attention that frames any given phenomenon within a chosen reference (the metric), and value therefore lies at the core of measure, yet not simply as a *product* of measurement.

That a magnitude has its meaning dependant on the broader context that explains the consequences of such a score is evident. However, with the development of synthetic indicators as in the area of SC assessment, the *moral–political* face of measures might not be explicitly rendered. Any magnitude's use is endowed with such dimension because it was devised as a technical tool to *capture* an essentially axiological value and requires, as Brighenti (2017) puts it, to be cast into light – including for instance issues of justice, fairness, competition and reward. Our objective in this paper invites us to tackle Brighenti's question anew: How could a non-formalised notion of value be envisaged in connection to measure?

One of the the key elements that any metric devoted to capture the intelligence of cities cannot circumvent are the main core values of urban settlements: urbanity. Cities have arguably proven in the course of history to be spatial and social devices for the articulation of social diversity, facilitating the birth of societies that respond to completely different logics than those in rural areas (Tonnies, Durkheim 1912). In fact, cities have facilitated the emergence of greater heterogeneity as if they were devices for overcoming determinism and entropy. A particularly interesting and fecund notion that captures the inherent pregnancy of value within the measures of salient forms (here borrowing from Thom 1988), is urbanity, conceived in terms of unbounded or unrestricted communication (Heidegger and Habermas 1984). In this respect, urban living is closely associated with an orientation towards the other through uncertain and undirected means and uncodified forms. Such orientation is best captured in Levinas' notion of "hospitality", as a sensual contact mediated by closeness and physical proximity (Levinas, 1969,172–174). In Jacques Derrida's (1995) work we find an expansion of this ethics towards an "unconditional hospitality": the idea of welcoming differences rather than simply tolerating them.

This view captures the value of urbanity as essentially alien to current metrics of city's smartness. In fact, this necessary ingredient of contingent indeterminacy brings us to one of the key elements and capacities through which an urban society can effectively dissipate entropy: imagination, understood as the virtual manufacturing (in lack of a better term) of virtual horizons of possibilities.

Now, how can such ideal elements of urbanity be materialized or even programmatically rendered into measurable elements? Analysing

this notion of welcoming diversity through a material spatial perspective, it is in the theories and methods of space syntax (Hillier and Hanson 1989; Hillier 1996) where we find a sophisticated method of quantifying how urban morphology contributes to engendering social heterogeneity. Approached from a spatially syntactical perspective (1996), their methods quantify urban centrality through network measures, allowing us to verify to what degree a given tissue favours types of interaction between locals and passers-by that are arguably behind dynamics of societal richness. We bring this as an example of particular instances of molis (measure) where a complex yet specific virtus (value) is evoked, which seems to us more relevant and programmatically useful than most current indicators of smartness.

2.2. Spatiality as a support for thinking. Intelligence, coupling and performativity

Evelyn Tribble's *Cognition in the Globe* (2011) begins with an enigma: `Early modern adult playing companies coped with enormous mnemonic loads, apparently performing up to six different plays a week, with relatively infrequent repetition, all the while learning and mounting a new play more than once a month' (2011, 1). The traditional explanations of such performances were hypothesized the actor's enormous internal cognitive capacities. Nevertheless, it seems that even for extremely trained actors, to learn so rapidly and with no or little rehearsal is almost impossible. Against all odds, she applied the model of distributed cognition's research that takes into account for a full range of factors that could foster, enhance and distribute certain cognitive processes. She led an analysis of the material conditions, of the social structure of the company, of the gestures in the performances, and of the nature of the text, amongst others, within the hypothesis that "no one of these elements, taken alone, has sufficient explanatory power" (2011, 7). What Tribble proved in her book is that the space of the theater and the embodied and collective use of the stage played a tremendous role in the capacity of the actors to memorize and play the piece. Space and its myriad of objects actively participate to a form of collective intelligence.

Going out of the theater, we could argue that urban spaces are supporting cognitive processes. In some, we put memories -cognitive offloading-, and thus, they support processes of remembrance; in other, we may be supported by the environment to learn, discuss, make politics, imagine, invent as much as space help us in navigating or feeding. In this perspective, thinking, without being situated would be an utterly demanding cognitive burden.

This idea is highly supported by recent cognitive science's theories that go further than the distributed cognition hypothesis. The scaffolded mind theory (Sterelny 2010) proposes that 'human cognitive capacities both depend on and have been transformed by environmental resources' (Sterelny 2010, 472). Going from the analysis of Otto's notebook (2010, and others) to emotions and affect (Colombetti 2017), these theories have been used to outline how human cognition can be better understood if we think the mind in its place and in its body (Varela, Thompson, and Rosch 1991; Conein et Jacopin 1994). Nevertheless, 'there is an absence of a serious consideration of spatial dimension of such resources beyond their object like dimension' (Negueruela del Castillo 2017, 163).

Recent theories on performativity have suggested that 'performances do not take place in already existing locations [...] These "stages" do not pre-exist their performances, waiting in some sense to be mapped out by performances; rather, specific performances bring these spaces into being.' (Gregson and Rose 2000, 441). A performance is a 'situated convergence of human and nonhuman elements and force relations through which people, places and things emerge or

become' (Kaiser and Nikiforova 2008, 123), reenactment of sociospatial norms through citational practices (Butler 1990).
Thus, returning to the Globe Theater, we could argue that the spatial intelligence demonstrated by the actors is due to a performative reenactment of the Elizabethan theater; through their practices, the actors, the spectators and all the nonhuman agents are performing a spatiality that supports the actors individual cognitive capacities in the process of remembrance. In this perspective, it seems really important to insist on the fact that the spatiality that support cognitive processes is brought into being by an individual and collective practice; it underlines that there is no form of spatial or urban intelligence that could exist per se, demanding a relational understanding between objects, bodies and virtualities.

2.3. Measuring. Trust reliability and commons

If there is still a lot to investigate on the way urban spaces can support cognitive processes, and consequently, on how we could (if possible) design space that performatively becomes resources for thoughts and actions, we can frame a metric for urban intelligence based on dimensions that permit to measure to which extent a resource is *scaffolding* a cognitive process. In his essay, Sterelny, without pretending to be exhaustive, proposed Trust, *Interchangeability / Individualisation / Entrenchment* and *Individual / Collective*.
o Trust is characterised by the internal assessment of the reliability of the access to the resources, as much as the reliability in the resources in itself. The more the agent has trust in the resources, the less he/she needs to assess insurances against forms of failure
o Interchangeability, Individualisation and Entrenchment are dimensions of the relationships manufactured by skills in time. In order to illustrate the individualisation dimension, Sterelny introduces the example of the professional cooker's knife. His/her knife is necessarily highly individualised; the weight, the sharpness and the balance of the knife are transformed and modified, fitting perfectly in the routine of the cooker. In the same motion, the routine of the cooker, his/her movements are adapted to the balance, the weight and the sharpness of the knife; his/her knife is highly individualised but also highly entrenched in his/her cognitive processes. The gradient is then from interchangeable and standardised resources to individualised and entrenched.
o The Individual and the Collective are gradients integrating the notion of collective as an environmental resources. In this sense, a lot of cognitive processes occurs through collective interaction and not through individual to external resources' interactions. The collective resources are under the scope of intergenerational dynamics, responding to the niche evolution theory (Odling-Smee, Laland, et Feldman 2003), shaped by collective buildings, generational transmissions and modifications.
While trying to apply this model to urban spaces, several elements can be reported. In first place, dimensions of trust and reliability does testimony for a radical ecology; any damaging or spoiling of a resource -urban space- would have for consequences a biais for cognitive processes, addressing in this prospect the growing prominence of the value of care and of the urban as a common good (Harvey 2008; Lefebvre 1974). As already underlined Clark and Chalmers in 1998, 'It may be, for example, that in some cases interfering with someone's environment will have the same moral significance as interfering with their person. And if the view is taken seriously, certain forms of social activity might be reconceived as less akin to communication and action, and as more akin to thought' (1998, 10).
Equally, it emphasizes on the accessibility of urban space as one of the main dimensions of urban intelligence; if a space can not host, he can not support individual and collective intelligence. In continuation, the urban in its

capacity to welcome and host the alterity (Derrida 1995 elaborating on Levinas 1969), to be radically inclusive in unbounded (Habermas 1984) and potentially uncodified ways, captures the essence of a radical and pregnant (Thom 1988) value, or intensity (Brighenti 2019) , which ought to be re-situated in relation to any extensive measure or metric.

The dimensions of interchangeability, Individualisation and entrenchment unveil two other major issues of urban intelligence; hyper-locality and appropriation. Thus, the westernisation' process of cities are phenomenon that does harm the tissues' ability to support certain kinds of cognition, notably highly specialized and situated cognition. This dimension could be measured through the diversity of uses of the spaces and their degree of specialisation. In continuity, appropriation testimonies of an entrenchment of space into uses, and emphasise the role of care and common. The Individual-collective dimension are directly echoing with the accessibility and sovereignty, as means of imagination. Even if we can not postulate an urban intelligence and its metrics *per se*, these dimensions indicate the crucial role of spatialities that support cognitive capacities and ways to frame situated research in the future.

2.4. Chimerical visions for the smart city. Imaginations, figurations and performativity

Proposing this definition of smartness and urban intelligence implies a major shift in current policy-making and SC initiatives. It formulates urban intelligence as a relation between a capacity of the urban to support cognitive processes and an individual and collective process of imagination and entrenchment. As introduced, corporate discourses on SC and IT's implementation are strongly normalizing the future's imaginaries. Spatial imagination is influenced and enacted by representations outlined by powers and the performative re-enactment of social norms and relationships to space (Gregson and Rose 2000). Thus, scholars from geography argue that new technologies are not leading to a re-invention of these practices, but to their reinforcement. Their implementation in cities is reproducing class and gender-relations, racialized urban landscapes, urban inequalities, while serving the interests of corporations and governments (for a resume, see Rose 2017). Sharing this critical stance, Rose underlined that the urban *media manifold* is however producing new posthuman agencies; posthumans 'can reiterate, modulate, and translate those differences, as well as create new forms of differentiation' (2017, 787); namely this same horizon could make emerge alternatives and subversions from the very material seams of its entangled apparatuses.

Re-appropriations of sovereignty and future through imagination are a key hinge toward an integrative and embodied smart urbanism. As such, we contend that the implementation of new technologies into urban planning can be the occasion to create new situated worldviews based on new posthuman agencies and their associated differentiations' forms. Literature on anticipatory techniques have been flourishing in these last decades (Kinsley 2010). Techniques and technologies play a fundamental role in the merging of new figurations. Through the outlining of new figurations of the SC, at the encounter of embodied practices, individual/collective imagination and anticipation, can emerge new performative spatialities (Gillian and Rose 2000) for cognitive processes to be supported by. Along the proposed dimensions for the new metric based on cognitive sciences theories, these chimerical visions, in between bodies, technologies, virtualities and other vibrant matters (Bennett 2010), give ground to a situated, politicized and embodied urban intelligence.

CONCLUSION

In this article, we try to outline in which ways the SC program and its metrics are acting from policy making to bodily scale. We emphasize the diverse forms of rationalism that lie under the implementation of new technologies in urban planning. This reveals how the reality-making process they are based on is fostering an extraction of sovereignty. A review of one of the most influential metrics showed us how SC programs were addressed to a certain kind of population -well-trained, flexible, creative… Coupled with the forced enrollment of citizens in SC programs and the environmental technologies that permit citizens to monitor their own practices, these metrics are giving ground to a new form of ethics whose compliant associated behaviors are emerging from diffuse and indirect strategies of control. From that point, we bring in the point of view of different scholars and projects on possible or realized alternatives to this SC paradigm. They attest to a dynamic and coherent field of critique challenging the corporate perspective. Nevertheless, no alternative metrics have yet been developed. We argue, in regard to former paradigms, that this could be an instrument for democratization and citizen's sovereignty enhancement by establishing and discussing the worth of a ratio in relation to its magnitude. Grounded on insights from cognitive sciences and performativity theory, we propose another definition of spatial, and thus urban, intelligence. Spatiality has been sketched out as a support for cognitive processes, while being itself brought into being by citational practices, opening the path for a relational, situated and embodied definition. From there, we discuss the dimensions assessing to what extent a resource is *scaffolding* (supporting) a cognitive process in the context of urban intelligence, defining six non-exhaustive dimensions: trust, reliability, accessibility, sovereignty, hyper-locality, appropriation. Then we emphasize the importance of new forms of posthuman agencies in the outlining of urban intelligence, as themselves being able to renew and reinvent spatialities of SC. As such, spatial -and political- imagination, as an embodied and collective practice, had been argued as the main mechanism of creating socio-spatial alternatives to the corporate and normalized SC.

It is thus evident that this metric is highly theoretical and has been manufactured in between the secured and comfortable walls of a (Swiss) university. We nevertheless contend that it is from this same locus that should emerge new SC programs and initiatives focused on knowledge-intensive and inclusive territories despite all the scientific crises that universities are going through. It has been for long outlined that the power-knowledge relationships in cities are the core of the re-enactment of inequalities and corporatism (Foucault 1969, 1975), and universities are the center of this distribution. While recognizing the importance of usable and situated knowledge, against systemic and unadapted solutions, institutions should reinvent their role in their own territories and start taking care of their environment. Institutional imagination (Barnett 2013), as an extension of the chimerical imagination we discussed, is one of the major hinges toward an embodied, politicized and inclusive urban intelligence.

REFERENCES

Barnett, Ronald. *Imagining the university.* Routledge, 2013.

Batty, Michael. « Big Data, Smart Cities and City Planning ». *Dialogues in Human Geography* 3, no 3 (november 2013): 274-79.

Brighenti, A.M « Umwelt-measures. On extensive and intensive measures: Introduction to the special issue 'Theorising measures, rankings and metrics'» In *Social Science Information* 1–14. 2019

Bennett, Jane. *Vibrant Matter: A Political Ecology of Things*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2010.

Butler, Judith. « Gender trouble, feminist theory, and psychoanalytic discourse ». *Feminism/postmodernism* 327 (1990): x.

Cardullo, Paolo, and Rob Kitchin. « Smart Urbanism and Smart Citizenship: The Neoliberal Logic of 'Citizen-Focused' Smart Cities in Europe ». *Environment and Planning C: Politics and Space* 37, no 5 (august 2019): 813-30.

Clark, A., and D. Chalmers. « The Extended Mind ». *Analysis* 58, no 1 (1 january 1998): 7-19.

Colombetti, Giovanna. « Enactive Affectivity, Extended ». *Topoi* 36, no 3 (septembre 2017): 445-55.

Conein, Bernard, and Éric Jacopin. « Action située et cognition. Le savoir en place». *Sociologie du travail* 36, no 4 (1994): 475-500

Cowley, Robert, Simon Joss, and Youri Dayot. « The smart city and its publics: insights from across six UK cities ». *Urban Research & Practice* 11, no 1 (2018): 53-77.

Derrida J, Points: *Interviews 1974-1994* Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1995

Durkheim, Emile. *Les formes élémentaires de la vie religieuse: le système totémique en Australie*, Quadrige, 5. éd, [original 1912] (Paris: Puf, 2005).

Florida, Richard L. *The Rise of the Creative Class: And How It's Transforming Work, Leisure, Community and Everyday Life.* Nachdr. New York, NY: Basic Books, 2006.

Foucault, Michel. *Surveiller et punir. Naissance de la prison.* Editions Gallimard, 1975.

Foucault, Michel, et Angèle Kremer-Marietti. *L'archéologie du savoir*. Vol. 1. Gallimard Paris, 1969.

Fisher, Mark. *Capitalist Realism: Is There No Alternative?* Zero Books. Winchester: O Books, 2009.

Gabrys, Jennifer. « Programming environments: environmentality and citizen sensing in the smart city ». *Environment and Planning D*: Society and Space 32, no 1 (2014): 30-48.

Giffinger, Rudolf, Christian Fertner, Hans Kramar, and Evert Meijers. « City-ranking of European medium-sized cities ». *Cent. Reg. Sci. Vienna UT,* 2007, 1-12.

———.« Smart Cities Ranking: An Effective Instrument for the Positioning of the Cities?» *ACE: Architecture, City and Environment,* february 2010.

Gregson, Nicky, et Gillian Rose. « Taking Butler Elsewhere: Performativities, Spatialities and Subjectivities ». *Environment and Planning D: Society and Space* 18, no 4 (août 2000): 433-52.

Habermas J, *The Theory of Communicative Action*. Vol.1 Cambridge:Polity Press, 1984

Harvey, David. « The right to the city ». *The City Reader* 6, no 1 (2008): 23-40.

Hillier, Bill. *Space Is the Machine: A Configurational Theory of Architecture*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press 1996

Hillier, Bill, and Julienne Hanson. *The Social Logic of Space*. Reprint edition. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press 1989

Hollands, Robert G. « Will the Real Smart City Please Stand up?: Intelligent, Progressive or Entrepreneurial? » *City* 12, no 3 (december 2008): 303-20.

Hutchins, Edwin. *Cognition in the Wild*. MIT Press, 1995.

Kaiser, Robert, and Elena Nikiforova. « The Performativity of Scale: The Social Construction of Scale Effects in Narva, Estonia ». *Environment and Planning D: Society and Space* 26, no 3 (2008): 537-62.

Kinsley, Samuel. « Representing 'Things to Come': Feeling the Visions of Future Technologies ». *Environment and Planning A*: Economy and Space 42, no 11 (novembre 2010): 2771-90.

Kitchin, Rob, Tracey P. Lauriault, et Gavin McArdle. « Knowing and Governing Cities through Urban Indicators, City Benchmarking and Real-Time Dashboards». *Regional Studies, Regional Science* 2, no 1 (janvier 2015): 6-28.

Komninos, Nicos. *Intelligent Cities and Globalisation of Innovation Networks*. 1re éd. Routledge, 2008.

Laland, Kevin N., John Odling-Smee, and Marcus W. Feldman. « Niche Construction, Biological Evolution, and Cultural Change». *Behavioral and Brain Sciences* 23, no 1 (february 2000): 131-46.

Lefebvre, Henri. « La production de l'espace». *L'Homme et la société* 31, no 1 (1974): 15-32.

Levinas E, *Totality and Infinity: An Essay on Exteriority* Pittsburgh: Duquesne University Press, 1961

Lindblom, Charles Edward, et David K Cohen. *Usable knowledge: Social science and social problem solving*. Vol. 21. Yale University Press, 1979.

Luque-Ayala, Andrés, anbd Simon Marvin. «Developing a Critical Understanding of Smart Urbanism? » *Urban Studies* 52, no 12 (september 2015): 2105-16.

McFarlane, Colin, et Ola Söderström. « On Alternative Smart Cities: From a Technology-Intensive to a Knowledge-Intensive Smart Urbanism ». *City* 21, no 3-4 (4 july 2017): 312-28.

Montello, Daniel R. 1998. 'A New Framework for Understanding the Acquisition of Spatial Knowledge in Large-Scale Environments'. In Spatial and Temporal Reasoning in Geographic Information Systems, edited by Max J. Egenhofer and Reginald G. Golledge, 143–154. Spatial Information Systems. New York: Oxford University Press.

Morozov, Evgeny, and Francesca Bria. «Rethinking the smart city ». *New York: Rosa Luxemburg Stiftung*, 2018.

Negueruela Del Castillo, Darío. « The City of Extended Emotions ». Thesis, Ecole Polytechnique Fédérale de Lausanne, 2017. https://infoscience.epfl.ch/record/231145.

Picon, Antoine. *Smart cities: théorie et critique d'un idéal auto-réalisateur*. Paris: Éditions B2, 2013.

Simondon, Gilbert. *L'individuation à la lumière des notions de forme et d'information*. Krisis. Grenoble: Millon, 2005.

Rose, Gillian. « Posthuman Agency in the Digitally Mediated City: Exteriorization, Individuation, Reinvention ». *Annals of the American Association of Geographers* 107, no 4 (4 juillet 2017): 779-93.

Söderström, Ola, Till Paasche, and Francisco Klauser. « Smart Cities as Corporate Storytelling ». *City* 18, no 3 (4 may 2014): 307-20.

Sterelny, Kim. « Minds: Extended or Scaffolded?» *Phenomenology and the Cognitive Sciences* 9, no 4 (december 2010): 465-81.

Thom R 1988 *Esquisse d'une sémiophysique*. Paris: InterEditions.

Vanolo, Alberto. « Is There Anybody out There? The Place and Role of Citizens in Tomorrow's Smart Cities ». *Futures*82 (septembre 2016): 26-36.

———. « Smartmentality: The Smart City as Disciplinary Strategy ». *Urban Studies* 51, no 5 (april 2014): 883-98.

Tribble, Evelyn B. *Cognition in the Globe: Attention and Memory in Shakespeare's Theatre*. 1st ed. Cognitive Studies in Literature and Performance. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.
———. « Distributing Cognition in the Globe ». *Shakespeare Quarterly* 56, no 2 (2005): 135-55.
Varela, Francisco J., Evan Thompson, et Eleanor Rosch. *The embodied mind: cognitive science and human experience*. Cambridge, Mass: MIT Press, 1991.
Zupancic, Alenka. *Ethics of the real: Kant and Lacan*. Verso Trade, 2011.

PAPER #4.03

SMART DESIGN FOR BICYCLE PARKING STATIONS. A PROPOSAL FOR THE HISTORICAL CENTER OF AREQUIPA, PERU

Gabriela Manchego[a], Cinthya Butrón Revilla[a]
[a]Universidad Nacional de San Agustin de Arequipa, Arequipa, Peru

ABSTRACT

The sustainable development of cities implies a comprehensive urban approach, coupled with this mobility and environmentally friendly modal alternatives, have taken an important focus on citizenship. This research addresses the problem of urban mobility in historic centers recognized as cultural heritage of humanity, where the urban layout has similar characteristics, such as the square grid and orthogonal streets. In addition, in recent years, the increase in the number of motor vehicles and the centrality of activities have generated vehicle pressure and congestion in this urban area. The present study proposes to improve the urban mobility of the historic center of Arequipa - Peru, implementing and promoting the use of bicycles, as a modal alternative and part of a sustainable and intelligent urban mobility policy. This current study proposes a quantitative methodology that combines the use of mobile applications with traditional urban design to intelligently and efficiently plan the location of bicycle parking stations. For the purposes of this proposal, two sources of data were used; the first corresponds to the analysis of geo-positioned data of a group of urban cyclists, who agreed to use a mobile application that identifies itineraries and their potential daily routes, while the second corresponds to the visualization of the proposal of the location of the two-party systems generated through the diagnosis of the case study, based on traditional urban design criteria. This information was contrasted, to finally show as a result the criteria for the efficient location of bike parking using technology, thus concluding, in an efficient proposal for locating and typifying bike parking stations for the historic center of Arequipa.

KEYWORDS

Bicycle parking; sustainable urban mobility; smart mobility; historical center.

INTRODUCTION

Modern societies demand high and varied mobility, and this demand has been gradually overcome by the creation of a transport system that guarantees the safe, flexible and efficient movement of people and goods, something which is framed in the new logic of the paradigm of sustainability. From this standpoint, the sustainable development of cities implies an integral urban approach, where the design of a flexible, safe and efficient transport system contributes to intelligent and sustainable mobility patterns. These patterns are currently relevant due to environmental pressures, the effects of on technology social and economic factors, as well as the correlation between them. Therefore, the exponential growth that this sector has experienced and its foreseeable increase makes the challenge of sustainable urban mobility a strategic priority on a wide-ranging scale.

Sustainable urban mobility and environmentally friendly modal alternatives, such as the modal alternative of the urban bicycle, have taken on greater importance for local residents. In this sense, in recent decades, local governments have increasingly encouraged the use of this modal alternative through various initiatives, such as investments in bicycle infrastructure. In addition to this, the amount of research on this

topic has grown exponentially. Latest studies focus on the infrastructure necessary for the circulation of bicycles, but studies related to the infrastructure for bicycle parking have received limited attention, although the bicycles are parked most of the time. For example, studies in Germany and the United States show a probable underestimation of bicycle parking, although bikes are often parked for up to 23 hours a day. This estimate assumes that cyclists who own parked bicycles do not use bicycles as a modal alternative.

In general, in developing cities, where the use of the bicycle as a modal alternative has increased markedly and the construction of infrastructure to boost it has been increasing its value, various studies have shown that bicycles are mostly parked at the place of residence of the users, in a second position at work and in a third position near public transport stations. On the other hand, in developing cities, where bicycle use has also increased, despite the low investment in infrastructure, said increase has been more notable in the historical centers, where the greater concentration of activity generates pressure and vehicular congestion in its urban layout, which has motivated the use of the bicycle as a modal alternative

Arequipa is an intermediate city, whose foundational grid was declared by UNESCO as Cultural Heritage of Humanity in 2000. There are several Latin American cities, which have historical centers with a reticular pattern, narrow streets, religious facilities, entities public, specialized trade and work centers. The local government has implemented measures for the restriction and regulation of motorized mobility, however, there are few actions to promote non-motorized mobility. This work shows the requirement for innovative methodologies that allow prioritizing actions in favor of infrastructure such as bike parking that increase conservation and urban equity in the heritage management of historic centers.

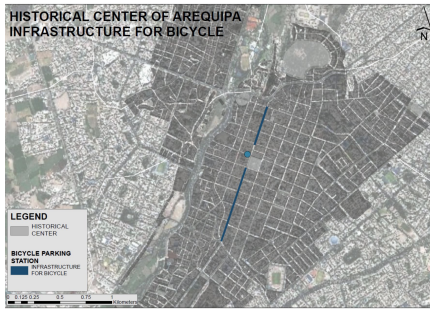


Figure 1. Infrastructure for Bicycle in Historical Center of Arequipa (Manchego 2020)

1. SUSTAINABLE URBAN MOBILITY

Cities feed, change and reproduce in accordance with the mobility of their inhabitants (Joye, Kaufmann, y Bergman 2004). Mobility refers to a series of variables that, unlike transport, which only considers available displacements. Mobility includes the social, political, economic and cultural conditions of those who mobilize. Sustainable urban mobility must be defined based on the existence of a system and transport patterns capable of providing the means and opportunities to cover economic, environmental and social needs efficiently and equitably (Mollinedo 2006). Therefore, the actions to be taken to achieve solutions within the framework of sustainable mobility must consider three factors: First, the social aspect, which must allow the accessibility and generating social equity in the transport systems; second, the ecological aspect, because any such system must protect the environment, reducing the greenhouse gas emissions generated by motorized transport; and third, the economic factor, which must satisfy the economy by promoting development and competitiveness, reducing and regulating the needs of various economic sectors (Muñoz Sotomayor, Betancourt, and Jaramillo Sangurima 2016).

The International Public Transport Union considers that sustainable urban mobility must be based on three "pillars": A land use that incorporates all types of mobility needs, the restriction of the use of private vehicles and the promotion of a system of effective public transport (UITP, 2003). Therefore, adding to the concept of "mobility" the qualification of "sustainable" aims at urban planning that restores the balance between all means of movement (automobile, public transport, walking, cycling), protects the environment and that is articulated to urban development planning and territorial planning (Poole-Fuller 2017). The new concept focuses on the improvement of the mobility and accessibility conditions aiming at a better quality of life for urban citizens, and hence on the pursuit of what is currently called sustainable urban mobility (Costa 2008). In this context, for urban mobility policies to be effective, they must adopt a more integrated approach and make use of technological innovation, promote clean, safe and intelligent transport, economic incentives and changes in legislation. Also, Mobility management consists of soft measures such as awareness, information, communication and marketing campaigns.

The concept of sustainable urban mobility must therefore be understood to be the result of a set of transport and circulation policies that seek to provide broad and democratic access to urban space through the prioritization of non-motorized and collective modes of transport, of effective, socially inclusive and ecologicºally sustainable factors, based on people and not on vehicles (Boareto, 2003, p. 49). As a result, sustainable mobility policies must be integrated from the planning stage, promoting the use of means of clean, safe modes of transport and intelligent, communication awareness and generating changes in legislation as well as the promotion of non-motorized means of transport.

1.1.Smart Mobility

The analysis of urban mobility can be used to understand the behavior of citizens and improve the services, transport and use of urban areas (Ahlers et al. 2016). By adding to the concept of "urban mobility", the qualifier of "sustainable" aspires to an urban planning that restores the balance among all means of displacement (Poole-Fuller 2017) such as cars, public transport, walking and the bicycle. On the other hand, by adding the qualification of "smart", the aim is to articulate these means of displacement transversely (Fu et al. 2016), using technological innovations.

In general, displacement research that contributes with results for studies of sustainable urban mobility has focused on the analysis of the trajectories generated through a smartphone. Paths that are generated by a mobile phone and represented as geographical points on a map are called Smartphone Tracking or Mobile Tracking (Fu et al. 2016). Data obtained from citizens' mobile devices can be used as a basis for urban planning tools. This type of data can facilitate analysis tasks, such as the extraction of human mobility patterns (Wang et al. 2018), or the determination of the urban dynamics of cities. In addition, the data obtained from different users can be visualized simultaneously in a single view, making it possible to identify trajectories or groupings of displacement. In addition, we can analyze the similarity between trajectories, similarity between points within the same grouping, and find anomalous displacements (Senaratne et al. 2018).

Additionally, urban monitoring can be expanded in real time, not only from buses and taxis, but throughout a larger urban area, via an anonymous monitoring platform (Wang et al. 2018). Some studies (Calabrese et al. 2011) have analyzed mobile tracking in order to identify travel or traffic modes in real time, as well as the choice of routes or distribution of products, which has allowed improved urban mobility in terms of vehicular

congestion, especially in spaces where there are conglomeration of activities, such as historical centers or metropolitan areas of large cities. In addition to this, one of the most efficient responses to the problem of vehicular congestion lies in the intensive use of computer systems and telecommunications applied to traffic management. Indeed, the so-called Intelligent Transportation Systems (SIT) have proved to be an efficient support for citizens and for public institutions in the attempt to alleviate the problems of congestion of urban and interurban transport (Seguí Pons and Martinez Reynés 2004), not only helping to improve its mobility but making it more sustainable.

1.2. Mobility in Metropolitan Areas (Historical Centers)

Historical centers, or in the foundational metropolitan centers of cities, especially those that have already grown, have the need to respond to changes in use, customs and a rapidly expanding demography, and in turn need to satisfy commercial, administrative or governmental needs, observing how some colonial mansions or structures have acquired various uses and have become the daily scenario of vehicular and pedestrian, daytime and labor chaos. It is these same centers of the city, subjects of higher density, which brings with its disintegration and greater environmental, visual and auditory pollution, making the deterioration of the city and the lack of attention to important aspects such as protection of history, security and mobility even more evident.

Furthermore, the main problems of mobility and accessibility in the centers of historical cities are the central position, special characteristics of the roads, the concentration in the historical centers of tertiary activities, particularly administrative and commercial, and the presence in these centers of the main historic and heritage buildings. Fig 2. While the main problems generated by road traffic in the historic centers are air pollution, noise pollution, negative visual impacts, the effects on pedestrian movements, streets and squares as places of passage, as well as other effects. (Gutiérrez Puebla and García Palomares 2016). When these conflicts become visible, it is possible that the deterioration of the city center is already advanced, becoming a thorough study of the theory and history of the city's conformation.

Then, to review other cases, models of improvement that facilitate making a diagnosis

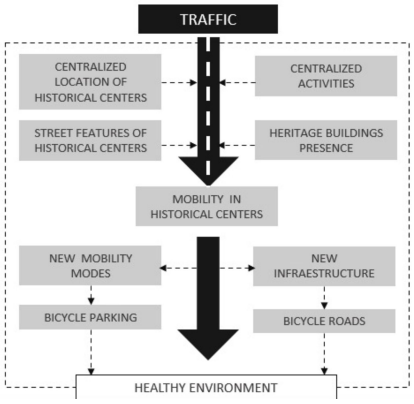


Figure 2. Mobility in Metropolitan Areas (Butrón 2020) based on (Gutiérrez Puebla and García Palomares 2016)

and an appropriation of the problem in order to generate a specific theoretical position of its own (Gutiérrez Puebla and García Palomares 2016). So, if government solutions which take into account the importance of mobility in historical centers are not initially established, the question arises of how to implement tentative strategies to improve not only mobility but also the quality of life of people living in and using this sector. From the point of view of the incorporation of friendly mobility modes, it is the implementation of infrastructure that encourages the use of the bicycle, which would contribute as a tentative strategy to create a healthier environment.

1.3. Biclycle Parking

The location of bicycle parking stations in cities is a challenge from a mobility and urban planning perspective. The development and application of bicycle infrastructure is essential to increased bicycle use. Bicycle parking can protect bicycles from theft, damage and weather. The presence of bicycle parking stations, the comfort and security of the location, its quality and the potential cost facilitates or hinders cycling. Easy-to-access, safe and economical bicycle parking can increase the likelihood of cycling. On the contrary, the absence of an easily accessible, safe and economical bicycle parking stations may deter cycling (Heinen y Buehler 2019). For example, in schools, the availability of parking spaces or stations was found to have a positive effect on cycling to school, but the evidence is mixed, even though the lack of bicycle parking is often mentioned as a reason for not cycling to school (Mackie 2010).

Transportation professionals and urban planners have limited guidance on where parking is best located, how many parking stations are needed and what features this parking should have in terms of quality, proximity and price. The desirable characteristics of bicycle parking facilities may depend on the characteristics of the parking behavior itself (for example, duration and frequency of parking), characteristics of the trip (for example, purpose and distance), the bicycle (value and/or type), location (at home, work, public transport stop) and the user. In addition, these factors can be interrelated. For example, long-distance

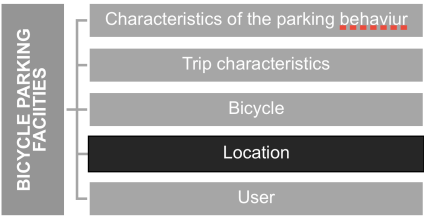


Figure 3. Bicycle Parking Facilities (Manchego 2020) based on (Heinen and Buehler 2019)

trips may require higher quality and more expensive bicycles with greater financial damage in case of theft. Alternatively, people can ride cheaper and lower quality bicycles if the possibility of theft is high (Heinenand and Buehler 2019).

2. MATERIALS AND METHODS

The case study of this research is the historical center of the city of Arequipa, Peru, which is a concentrated urban area of square blocks with narrow, perpendicular streets, stone pavements, and both with both civilian and religious historical buildings. In addition, the city center concentrates important activities and the cycling groups demand more cycling infrastructure. Fig. 1 shows the infrastructure for the existing bicycle, counting only one kilometer of segregated bikeway and one bicycle parking near the main square. It is urgent to prioritize the investment of infrastructure based on evidence that encourages the use of non-motorized modes of travel.

The research presents 2 stages of analysis (Figure 4): Phase 1, a traditional urban analysis and Phase 2 an intelligent analysis of routes

Figure 4. Bicycle Parking Network Stages (Manchego 2020)

of cycling users through the use of a mobile application for the location of a two-station network for the case of study, the historical center of Arequipa (CHA).

The first stage was carried out in the subject Urbanism 1 of the academic period 2018 B, in the School of Architecture at the National University of San Agustin of Arequipa. The students carried out the formative research work entitled "Bike Parking Proposals for the Historical Center of Arequipa", for which they formed work teams to perform an analysis of the components of the urban structure of the historical center of the city of Arequipa, such as activities (land uses), typologies of roads and squares, parks and green areas. In their Tradicional Analysis of the Historical Center of the city of Arequipa, they recognized numerous equipment from administrative, educational, also attracts attention the number of religious equipment. Likewise. Arequipa presents a variety of Parks and places, among the most representative, the Main Square and the San Francisco Place, both spaces around religious equipment. In addition, the Plazoleta San Camilo and the Duamel Park, represent attractive spaces for the location of bicycle parking for the commercial activities they offer in their immediate surroundings. And for another park, in the north zone is the park Selva Alegre, open space for active and passive recreation on weekends. In this Phase the students proposed the location of 15 bi-parking based on traditional urban design.

In the second stage, on the initiative of the local government and the Metropolitan Institute of Planning IMPLA, and supported by the Faculty of Architecture and Urbanism; volunteer urban cycles were called to use a mobile free application data. The cyclists use the application to generated data during a week. Ten urban cyclists were summoned to register their routes through a mobile free application data, to identify potential daily itineraries and routes showing the following. Ten urban cyclists, among women and men, managed to report at least 3 itineraries in the week of experience.

3. RESULTS

The results are visualized on three levels: a macro-level with the general routes of urban cycling at a metropolitan scale (Fig.5); a meso-level where cycling routes in the historic center are displayed (Fig.6); and a micro-level where the public spaces of the historic center and cycle routes are showed (Fig.5). As a result, the contrast between urban cycling routes and cycle parking points are displayed. Those are proposed by a traditional urban design that analyzes: activities and services diagnosis, road directions and open spaces (squares and parks) of Arequipa`s Historic Center to find its strategic location.

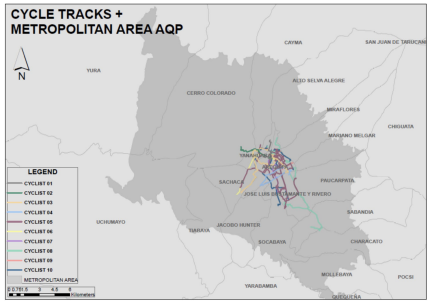


Figure 5. Macro scale. Cycle tracks and metropolitan area of Arequipa (Manchego and Butrón 2020)

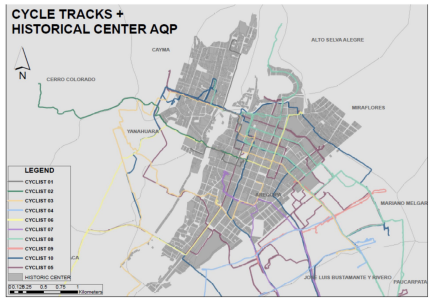


Figure 6. Meso scale. Cycle tracks and historical center of Arequipa (Manchego and Butrón 2020)

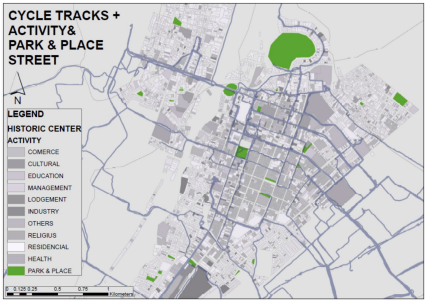


Figure 7. Micro Scale: Cycle tracks and activities of historical center of Arequipa (Manchego and Butrón 2020)

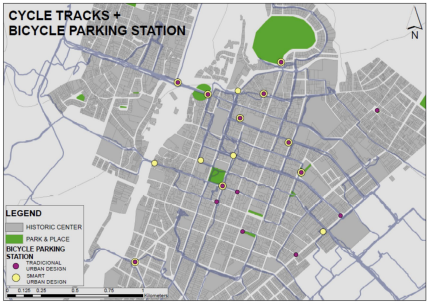


Figure 8. Proposal of Bicycle Parking Station (Manchego and Butrón 2020)

The intelligent analysis shows the real demand of urban cyclists, on the macro scale (Fig. 5) it indicates that the trips are made in the metropolitan area and that in no case do they exceed 5 km in distance. Also, all trips have origin, destination or passage through the historic area. On the micro scale (Fig. 7), it is shown that the routes that cyclists choose to travel through the historical center, is the north zone and displacements in the east-west direction. It can be inferred, the preference of urban cyclists for streets with mixed uses.

3.1. Advantages of smart analysis

As a result, the contrast between urban cycling routes and cycle parking points are displayed. Those are proposed by a traditional urban design that analyzes: activities and services diagnosis, road directions and open spaces (squares and parks) of Arequipa`s historical center to find its strategic location. This work shows the need for cycling infrastructure based on real demand, necessary to enhance this mode of travel.

The combination of the two data sources, the geo-positioned routes of urban cyclists and the preliminary

proposal for the location of the whereabouts are showed at Figure 8. The traditional proposal of location of the bike parking stations have 15 locations and the smart analysis proposal raises 14. There are 9 locations that correspond to both analyzes, however, it is observed that 6 stations proposed in the initial phase do not correspond to the demand of the urban cyclist tracks. In addition, due to the registered tracks, 5 new locations are proposed, completing the proposed bike parking for the historical center of Arequipa.

CONCLUSION

The actions to be taken to achieve solutions within the framework of sustainable urban mobility, are specified in three factors, the social, economic and ecological factors, which in their analysis work must have the technological component in an integral way. Also, of the three factors plus literature also proposes three pillars, which from a traditional urban design, are implemented daily in the different urban plans and manage, however it has not been proposed that these three pillars, which are, the use of land, the promotion of public transport and the decrease in the use of the car, link the modal capacity of the city in a transversal way, taking into account more

options of modes of transport the citizen has greater freedom to mobilize.

This research evidences the importance of the data obtained from the mobile devices of citizens and its relevance as a tool for urban planning and design. From the perspective of the use, analysis and management of citizen displacement data, the literature is corroborated, stating that the use of these can facilitate analysis tasks and decision making in planning, as well as in the extraction of patterns of human mobility or the determination of urban dynamics of cities. In addition, the data obtained from different users allow us to identify trajectories or groupings of displacements that not only link us to determine displacement patterns, but also grouping of anomalous displacements.

The analysis of results allows to detect that urban mobility can be used to understand the behavior of citizens and improve the services, transport and use of urban areas, as is the case of the proposal of the location of the bicycle parking stations. It may have concluded in a traditional urban design, but when using technology, the smart urban design proposal is made, which finally allows us to safely discard some stations where cyclists do not travel frequently. Also, the result, shows the importance of real-time urban monitoring not only motorized vehicles such as public transport, but of friendly transport modes, which allow to implement or improve urban infrastructure in this case, cyclist infrastructure like bicycle parking station, especially in spaces with particular urban structures of historical value.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

We want to thank to the Faculty of Architecture and Urbanism of the National University of San Agustin of Arequipa.

REFERENCES

Ahlers, Dirk, Patrick Driscoll, Erica Löfström, John Krogstie, and Annemie Wyckmans. 2016. «Understanding Smart Cities as Social Machines», 759-64. https://doi.org/10.1145/2872518.2890594.

Calabrese, F., C. Ratti, M. Colonna, P. Lovisolo, and D. Parata. 2011. «Rome. Real-Time Urban Monitoring Using Cell Phones: A Case Study». *IEEE Transactions on Intelligent Transportation Systems* 12 (1): 141-51.

Costa, Silva. 2008. «Multiple views of sustainable urban mobility : The case of Brazil ˆnio Ne» 15: 350-60. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.tranpol.2008.12.003.

Fu, Zhongliang, Zongshun Tian, Yanqing Xu and Changjian Qiao. 2016. «A two-step clustering approach to extract locations from individual GPS trajectory data». *ISPRS International Journal of Geo-Information* 5 (10). https://doi.org/10.3390/ijgi5100166.

Gutiérrez Puebla, Javier, and Juan Carlos García Palomares. 2016. «Modelos de optimización de la localización de bases de bicicletas públicas: un enfoque basado en Sistemas de Información Geográfica». En . http://bike-sharing.blogspot.com.

Heinen, Eva, and Ralph Buehler. 2019. «Bicycle parking: a systematic review of scientific literature on parking behaviour, parking preferences, and their influence on cycling and travel behaviour». *Transport Reviews* 39 (5): 630-56. https://doi.org/10.1080/01441647.2019.1590477.

Joye, Dominique, Vincent Kaufmann, and Manfred Max Bergman. 2004. «Motility: Mobility as Capital». *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 28 (4): 745-56. https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/pdf/10.1111/j.0309-1317.2004.00549.x.

Mackie, Hamish. 2010. «Overcoming barriers to cycling to school: a key to improving transport system performance.» 151 (4): 1-46. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cell.2009.01.043.

Mollinedo, Carmen Lizárraga. 2006. «Movilidad urbana sostenible : un reto para las ciudades del siglo XXI» VI. https://doi.org/http://dx.doi.org/10.22136/est002006260.

Muñoz Sotomayor, Verónica Alexandra, David Betancourt, and Wilson Jaramillo Sangurima. 2016. «Diseño de Ciclovías para Ciudades Intermedias, una propuesta para Loja». *INNOVA Research Journal* 1 (12): 11-22. https://doi.org/10.33890/innova.v1.n12.2016.77.

Poole-Fuller, Esteban. 2017. «¿Hacia una movilidad sustentable? Desafíos de las políticas de reordenamiento del transporte público en Latinoamérica. El caso de Lima». *Letras Verdes. Revista Latinoamericana de Estudios Socioambientales,* n.o 21: 4. https://doi.org/10.17141/letrasverdes.21.2017.2445.

Seguí Pons, Joana María, and María Rosa Martinez Reynés. 2004. «Los sistemas inteligentes de transporte y sus efectos enla movilidad urbana e interurbana». *Revista electronica de geografia y ciencias socialesnica de geografia y ciencias sociales* VIII: 170-60. https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9781107415324.004.

Senaratne, Hansi, Manuel Mueller, Michael Behrisch, Felipe Lalanne, Javier Bustos-Jimenez, Jorn Schneidewind, Daniel Keim, and Tobias Schreck. 2018. «Urban Mobility Analysis with Mobile Network Data: A Visual Analytics Approach». *IEEE Transactions on Intelligent Transportation Systems* 19 (5): 1537-46. https://doi.org/10.1109/TITS.2017.2727281.

Wang, Yulong, Kun Qin, Yixiang Chen, and Pengxiang Zhao. 2018. «Detecting anomalous trajectories and behavior patterns using hierarchical clustering from Taxi GPS Data». *ISPRS International Journal of Geo-Information* 7 (1). https://doi.org/10.3390/ijgi7010025.

PAPER #4.04

A BIOMIMETIC RESEARCH ON HOW CITIES CAN MIMIC FORESTS TO BECOME SUSTAINABLE AND SMART

Aliye Rahşan Karabetça[a]
[a]İstanbul Kültür University, İstanbul, Turkey

ABSTRACT

In nature, everything is functional to each other. Every single organism supports the other either with a symbiotic relationship or in terms of form and function. For instance, some trees shed their leaves to the ground to prepare themselves for harsh winter conditions and also to create nutrition for microorganisms and fungus under the surface. This kind of interaction with nature could lead architects to develop better solutions to create better built environments; this is the main objective of this paper. The paper aims to clarify and prove that nature is the greatest mentor and can teach humanity many solutions about designing smart cities. There is a new and powerful way of seeking solutions in nature; biomimicry. In this context, using biomimicry as a design strategy is the methodology of this study. Biomimicry is used as a design approach to reach examples in nature by filtering them with biology. These examples are considered to be scientific fields for researching and understanding the structural strength, bioclimatic properties, functional morphology and other features of forests. They are explained to identify forests and provide resilient solutions for developing smart cities. Outcomes of this paper aim to scientifically state that forests are naturally sustainable environments which are the greatest examples for smart cities. When they unite, they can create the most suitable living environments for all living organisms. Several conceptual ideas and methods are suggested based on the biomimetic design approach to make the argument clear and more understandable.

KEYWORDS

Resiliency; biomimicry; smart cities; forests; architecture.

INTRODUCTION

Since the Industrial Revolution, cities were created without considering nature, such as surrounding environments, weather conditions, oceans, natural resources, forests, etc. This led humans to become incautiously independent, unaware of the natural world, and put themselves at the top of the life cycle. Thus, today's cities have become incapable of supporting massive population growth (URL1). Considering that environmental pollution, carbon emission, energy consumption, damage to nonrenewable resources are increasing very rapidly. Sets of precise and sustainable solutions should be developed to stop this catastrophe. How can this problem be reversed? What can be done? There are some ways and approaches designers consulted to look for better ideas in the past but very few looked at nature. As Einstein once said, looking into nature helps humans to understand everything better. What one should do to create sustainable cities is to look at nature for solutions. Otherwise, building cities with similar methods and expecting different results is just a hopeless effort. Humanity needs to build environments that function like forests; resilient, generous, recycling, energy-efficient, aesthetic, etc.

This paper aims to emphasize the importance of using biomimicry and biology to reveal functions and solutions a forest can offer

for a sustainable city design. Designing built environments that function like these ecosystems can be possible with the biomimetic design approach. It is a scientific field that works with different disciplines, mainly biology. Thus, multidisciplinary collaboration is a must. Biomimicry is a new field of science that deals with transferring nature's genius into human-made designs. It leads and guides designers to use principles and strategies of functions in nature to solve human challenges. It is a broad and powerful field and offers nature's endless solutions for every part of the built environment.

Forests live as large groups of trees. They can be counted as the biggest built environments of nature. They are the largest ecosystems which differ from each other according to their species, locations and regions containing thousands of microecosystems within them. Every single member of this ecosystem; mainly trees, when they come together, they create the most sustainable, suitable and resilient living environments for other organisms. For example, a dead tree trunk can manage water consumption for living trees even by standing still that provides a useful service (Wohlleben, 2016). This is how trees embrace and give life to thousands of different life forms; fungi, woodpeckers, beetles, leaf cutters, ants, butterflies, giant trees, etc. The safety and lives of these organisms depend on the strength and durability of each tree in the forest. Therefore, they are well designed, structurally strong, durable, resilient and aesthetic.

Forests are part of a biome that is part of a sustaining biosphere (Benyus, 2014). Their contributions to humans' lives cannot be ignored or be underestimated. Humans cannot exist without forests, but forests can. They are natural air filters. They breathe in the carbon dioxide we produce and breathe it out as oxygen for us to survive which is called photosynthesis. So, why not buildings photosynthesize like trees to eliminate the carbon footprint?

The following must be considered: if a city functions as a forest, then local and non-renewable resources will be conserved. The main requirement for cities to be sustainable and smart is to understand how forests work and incorporate them into humans' lives.

1. NATURE CAN PROVIDE SOLUTIONS VIA BIOMIMICRY

Constructing sustainable buildings with technology is solely possible if the technology considers nature as the design mentor. To follow nature's pathway of designing means searching nature's sustainable design ideas to develop innovative technologies and applying these ideas into humans' lives in the most suitable and appropriate ways. Hereby, design challenges such as pollution in cities, energy loss, climate and structural equipment, etc. which have a large impact on the increment of carbon footprint, would be improved and would make the greatest contribution to the development of smart cities. The fundamental principle of these studies is to accept the biomimetic design approach as the major design guide. During this stage, biology is the first discipline to be considered as a fundamental supporter. Besides, it is highly possible to derive healthy and accurate data by applying biomimicry as a design criterion into the design stage to create a prototype that would be tested in pilot regions.

There are some concrete examples of this process proving that biomimicry can change the design and its results. One of them is the East Gate Building in Harare, Zimbabwe (Fig.1). This building is one of the original biomimetic designs. The inspirational organisms are termites and their mound. Cities created with these kinds of designs could decrease and perhaps eliminate the negative impacts of urbanization. According to research, the world is urbanizing rapidly, and cities will be tripled in size by 2030 (URL 2). The research also states that the need for smart and sustainable cities

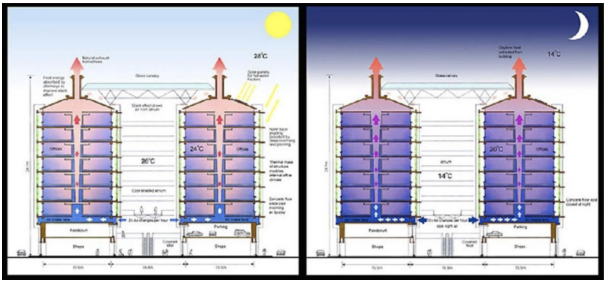


Figure 1. (a) East Gate building designed by Mick Pearce and (b) termite mound. Sources: (URL 3).

is overriding. This is why the design of cities should be based on principles that nature has developed and tested.

There is another example that is not designed with the biomimetic design approach but still a promising building example for designing a sustainable city, Bosco Verticale in Milan. It is considered as pilot project of a new generation of sustainable buildings (URL 4). These buildings were designed in collaboration with ethologists and botanists to develop the botanical components. Two towers have some benefits for the city. For instance, plant-based shields on facades do not reflect sun rays that decrease solar radiation that helps to reduce the use of mechanical ventilation systems (URL4). As a result, forestation on facades can indirectly decrease their carbon footprint.

However, such buildings are considered green buildings where the biophilic design approach is involved more than biomimicry, still very much needed for sustainable cities (Fig. 2). Using biomimicry in architecture not only as a source of form but also as a design strategy comprises more sustainable designs; for example, shapes of nature may provide solutions to architects and engineers for designing resilient structures. On the other hand, many different organisms may offer solutions for energy efficiency, anti-reflective surfaces, self-cleaning paints, or water collecting facades (Karabetça, A.R.,2015). Buildings designed with these ideas would have different consequences.

Figure 2. Bosco Verticale (Vertical Forest) in Milan, Italy (URL 4).

1.1. How do forests work?

It is critical to consider nature while designing. Nature allows nothing to go to waste; it recycles water, soil, carbon, and air to sustain all habitats. A responsible and sustainable architecture lies underneath this logic. Nowadays, the relation between architecture and nature is at its peak point due to the environmental crisis. Because of this peak point, seeking a responsible architecture became vital. Consequently, several kinds of researches on how to establish built environments mimicking

forests have been made throughout the last decades.

Forests are incredibly sustainable and smart environments. They are capable of many things. They have many functions to survive the worst. They can absorb water from clouds, and they can help retain water onsite by interacting with other species. Fallen trees can stabilize and enrich the soil; they inhabit thousands of species working and living in collaboration. There are thousands of valuable functions that forests provide for themselves and for the other living organisms within. Trees in forests such as firs, spruce, beeches or oaks, support each other due to tough/beneficial conditions. They help their young to grow with full nutrients mainly sugar provided from fungus under the soil through their roots. Roots are the most important parts of forests, they are considered as the brain of forests; they provide a very powerful intercommunication with other species (Wohlleben, 2016). On the other hand, every forest survives according to the living conditions of that region. Redwood forests in California have different habits but spruce forests in Europe are quite different then redwoods. For example, Alders can survive in wetlands/marsh areas, but beech cannot. It's because beeches cannot grow in wetlands due to their physical conditions. The forest ecosystem has a sensitive balance. Each member of the forest has functions that contribute to others' lives (Wohlleben, 2016). However, conditions in the forest are not very easy. Each species tries to survive and takes what it needs from others. All of them are brutal and there is only one reason why the system does not collapse; there are protective methods against those who ask for more than their needs (Wohlleben, 2016). It is one of the important reasons why humans face too many problems; we take more than we need, and there is not a protective method against this behavior. The consequences of this greed are underwhelming.

Forests recycle everything cities do not, forests do not produce waste, cities do, and it is mostly not recyclable. Although there are some fights within everything, forests work in harmony where others get benefit from it. Forests are restorative, regenerative, sustainable, and life-giving. Nature uses a minimum amount of energy to complete the process when producing, there are no leftovers. It makes everything as it requires to be when it needs to be (Harman, 2013).

2. SUSTAINABLE SMART CITIES THAT MIMIC FORESTS

A city can be smart but not sustainable that today's most cities are alike. Cities, in general, are growing upwards and outwards like forests. However, they are not the same. One grows upwards due to photosynthesis, which is vital for the sustainability of the forest, and other grows for people to gain benefits of clustered urban life that outweigh the liabilities of living in a densely populated place called economy and business (URL 5). These two targets are essential. But people do not have to live in a city where there are too many adverse effects for sustaining their lives; traffic, air and environmental pollution, energy loss, large carbon footprints, buildings that spread radiation, and carcinogen, etc. Cities are not only growing vertically but also growing horizontally, and doing them at the same time at recorded levels creates deliberate consequences for land use, environment, and planet earth (URL 2). When cities filled with green, does it mean they are sustainable and/or smart? In many cases, they are not. Because turning the city into green helps to reduce radiation of sunlight that also helps to reduce energy consumption. If cities could be designed with ideas emulated from nature, they would not only reduce energy consumption but would reduce water consumption, collect water, store water, create better circulation

No	Name of the city	Location	Design features
1.	Smart Forest City Cancun by Stefano Boeri Architects	Cancun, Mexico	To inhabit 130.000 people with 7.500.000 plants Completely food and energy self-sufficient. (URL7)
2.	Liuzhou Forest City	Liuzhou, China	absorb 116.000 tons of carbon dioxide, solar panels, self-sufficient energy, green roofs and facades
3.	Vincent Callebaut Smart City	Paris, France	bio-air condition the urban heat island phenomenon, depolluting, thermodynamic green towers, etc.

Table 1. Examples of Forest Like Cities (Table created by the Author).

systems, habitable indoors and outdoors, etc.

William Mcdonough known as green architect stated as follows *"…buildings conceived as mass-produced machines impoverish cultural diversity and leave their inhabitants cut-off from the wonders and delights of nature* (URL 6). Based on this statement, it can be said that forests that create considerable parts of nature are fundamental for the sake of the whole world. Several cities that attempted to be designed following some principles of forests (Table 1). However, these promising ideas are still immature, designed with conventional construction systems, and nearly all of them focused on energy saving.

Figure 3. Smart Forest City Cancun, Mexico. Source: (URL 7).

Smart Forest City Cancun, Mexico:

Boeri designed a city that can inhabit millions of plants and 130000 people in an area of 557 hectares (Fig. 3).

The city is designed mainly with green plantation and landscaping. Also, there is going to be internal electric and semi-automatic mobility that aims to reduce the carbon footprint of the city. City plans to absorb 116.000 tons of carbon dioxide. The amount of green and the number of buildings is almost equal to each other which provides a significant balance. There are solar panels for self-sufficient energy, green roofs, and facades for reducing solar radiation enabling less energy use. Agricultural fields for food are other important features of the design (URL 7).

However, there aren't any biomimetic design approaches in this design which are based on emulating/transferring functions of a forest rather than integrating trees and plants into a city.

Liuzhou Forest City, China:

Liuzhou Forest City (Fig. 4) is also designed by the same architect as the previous example. There will be 40.000 trees and more than a million plants which will allow the reduction of carbon dioxide emissions in the city. All buildings will be covered with plants accommodating more than 30.000 inhabitants. All buildings designed in this city are much alike Bosco Verticale in Milan which was also designed by Boeri. The city has similar characteristics to

the previous example explained above. Solar panels on roofs, green roofs and facades, zero impact, an autonomous urban agglomeration, geothermal energy for heating interiors, electric train railway. According to the designer, the environmental benefits of such design are highly obvious. Vegetation for better air quality which aims to absorb 57 tons of carbon dioxide and produce 900 tones of oxygen per year. Other benefits are avoiding the use of cement, blocking the city to cluster outside by keeping buildings within the forest, safeguarding forests, and conserving biodiversity (URL8).

Figure 4. Liuzhou Forest City, China designed by Stefano Boeri is expected to be constructed in 2020. Source: (URL 8)

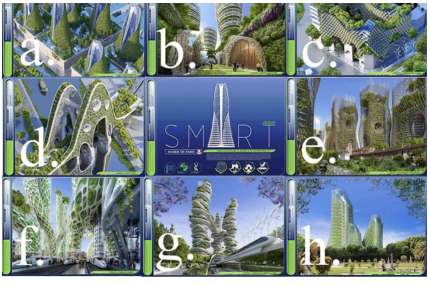


Figure 5. Eight prototypes of energy plus towers for Paris 2050 designed by Vincent Callebaut. Source: www.vincentcallebaut.org (URL 9)

Vincent Callebaut Smart City Paris 2050, France:

Vincent Callebaut is another green architect who has concerns about nature. He created many city designs that contain many plantations for some other countries. But for Paris, he has eight prototypes of energy-plus towers eco-conceived to fight against climate change (Fig. 5) (URL 9).

These are *a. mountain towers* that are green, solar, and hydrodynamic towers which bio-air condition the urban heat island effect, *b. antismog towers* that create an ecologic corridor in the center of Paris, *c. honeycomb towers* that are housing buildings that develop energy solidarity corporation, *d. bridge towers* that inhabit amphibian bridging across the Seine river, *e. bamboo nest towers* that are thermodynamic green towers wrapped by a bamboo wired mesh of vertical gardens, *f. farmscrapers towers* is a vertical urban farm returning the countryside to the city, *g.mangrove towers* that are photosensitive and rooted on piezo-electrical station platforms and *h. photosynthesis towers* that have algae powered bio-facades (URL 9).

Although these designs do not include any function emulated from nature, they are still considered as smart cities. The main idea is to conserve and save energy, decrease pollution, decrease deforestation, and decarbonization which is caused by planting too many plants and trees on tall buildings. However, unexpected consequences of this type of design may result in negative ways, such as ventilation problems of materials of buildings, durability against roots and infestation, weather changes in the cities due to much planting and forestation, high risk of fire, etc. Building such cities in small scales in pilot lands to record expected and unexpected results can be suggested as an option. Meanwhile, biomimetic designs and prototypes can be developed for further achievements. As can be understood from the study, collaborative laboratory studies

must be generated to provide accurate and usable systems.
Not all city forms can do the work the same. They may provide different consequences concerning different countries, locations, weather conditions, topography, and human culture, etc.

2.1. What can be achieved in terms of energy, structure and recycling (zero waste) behaviors of forests?

Biomimetics is a field of science that defines itself consistently with the technical implementation and application of structural systems, emulations, and biological design systems. Although emulating systems is a way of the design approach, there are some points to consider; designers must be cautious during the translation of living systems into artificial human life where everything is mechanic and should not expect the impossible. The other one is to do analog research, such as the ventilation system of Eastgate building based on termites is an analogous system (Pohl and Nachtingall 2015).
Forests have many design features that can be analogous. In this paper, energy and water efficiency, structural behavior, and recycling are studied briefly to reveal some proposals. Here are some examples based on three fundamental features of forests that can inspire innovation in designing and planning a sustainable city (see Table. 2).
Energy and water efficiency (considering that energy consumption is the primary cause of global warming and pollution)
Energy efficiency is one of the primary functions of forests. Forests save energy when they grow, shed their leaves during harsh weather conditions to eliminate energy and water use. Water is vital for the survival of forests. They have specific behavior that saves water for all inhabitants. For example, pine needles divide raindrops into smaller droplets to create a pastoral forest fog that becomes a water source for many organisms (URL11). The density of branches and leaves of different species in the forest creates calm air that prevents water from evaporating for saving water (Wohlleben, 2016). This can inspire façade designers to develop a new generation of façades that could collect water and save energy. Buildings' roofs can be

Figure 6. Roots of a tree from an old-growth forest in Trabzon holding the ground very strongly. Source: (Photo archive of the Author)

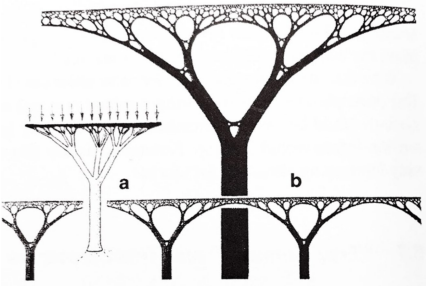


Figure 7. Lightweight tree columns for spanning structures. Source: (Pohl and Nachtingall 2015)

Major functions of forests	What can be achieved with it
*Forests absorb water from clouds	*Water collecting facades
*Interaction with other species to help retain water onsite	*Roads and pathways connected to each other collect and keep the water in specific points
*Everything in forest is recyclable	*Waste management upcycling-recycling, convertible, changeable products, responsive buildings, etc.
*Communication with other species of trees trough roots and fungus	*Protection, resiliency of users, information sharing and gathering for safer and green traffic
*Trees in forest cooperate with other organisms	*Sharing energy and water with other facilities, regions, buildings roads generating energy, collecting solar power by using other building facades, etc.
*Trees adapt to changing conditions	*Buildings that can adapt to changing environmental conditions, responsive architecture is possible.
*Trees are strong enough to resist earthquakes and hurricanes	*Columnar supports, tree columns, resilient structural bearing systems emulating root systems.

Table 2. Some major functions and design ideas that could be achieved and developed Source: www.asknature.org (URL10) (Proposals by the Author)

designed connected like tree crowns to collect rainwater and to avoid evaporation (Fig.6).

Structural behavior

Structures such as the adhesion of a tree to the ground (Fig.6), the body of a tree, and its resistance against strong winds can be an essential structural solution method precisely for the cities on the earthquake lines. Trees grow according to the distribution of total constant stress and thus avoid peaks of tension at roots and forks. During this growth, trees add material specifically in tensioned parts, such as branches and roots (Gruber, 2011). This makes brunches and roots durable and resilient against unexpected storms and wind loads. So, it is possible to design structures functioning like tree trunks, roots, and branches. There are some examples of such systems: lightweight tree columns, root systems for resilient building design specifically located on earthquake lines (Fig. 7). The roots of trees can inspire designers to create foundations for buildings. In rain forests where the soil is shallow and cannot provide the same resistance as others in temperate climates, trees have evolved buttresses that can show greater resistance to larger loads (Pawlyn, 2011). These kinds of structural designs would help to resist against devastating earthquakes.

Recycling

Nature produces what it needs and recycles everything. There is no waste; one's trash is other's nutrients; one's carbon dioxide is another's sugar; dead tree trunk is a nutrient provider for young trees. Life in nature depends on this cycle. As the number of live and dead trees in the forest increases, the humus layer on the ground becomes very thick, as a result, more water is stored in the total forest mass (Wohlleben, 2016). It means even the dead trees have a very high and privilege benefit for all living organisms in the forest. The question is "How can this system be transferred into city planning?" or "Is it possible to design a zero-waste city?". The answer is not discovered yet. However, a prototype pilot region can be designed and built to record results for future generations. A smart and sustainable city, which has waste management similar to forest, convertible or changeable materials, responsible systems that work with recyclable materials, is possible.

There are many organisms in the forests that can inspire designers. Table 2 shows some other examples that could be achieved. These proposals are only representing possible solutions that could inspire designers. Laboratory studies should be achieved to record and prove the results.

CONCLUSION

As a result, forests work very much different from built environments. Their main duty is to survive with the least amount of materials, effort, and energy to achieve the required job, to survive and recreate itself without giving any harm to its foundational ecosystem. After 3.8 billion years of experience, nature has found out effective ways of surviving challenges after many errors, attempts, and experimentations. Now it is designers' time to look at nature's endless library for elegant and efficient methodologies free of charge for those who are on the right path of research (Harman, 2013).

By 2025, biomimicry is expected to impact a considerable percentage of manufacturing, waste management, architecture, and other services such as technology and robotics that are related to remediation and innovation. Technology and nature are two facts that form parts of a continuous process. Biomimicry guides designers to develop a continuous process. Sustainable and smart cities are possible yet difficult to achieve, but not impossible. Biomimicry has the potential ways of using nature's genius to develop ideas and solutions. Studying nature provides opportunities. However, turning these opportunities into rewarding solutions depends on profound laboratory work and collaboration with other disciplines. A special research center is required for such works to be supported and completed. Can a city be both sustainable and smart? What would it take for a city to function as elegantly as a forest? The answers to such questions could be given if serious researches would done.

Nature is always ready to share its endless secrets with humans to achieve sustainability in architecture. It consistently uses energy more effectively and efficiently; its production system and materials are much more innocent and harmless than the materials produced by the human that significantly increases environmental pollution and energy loss.

REFERENCES

Benus, J., 2014. Cities that Function Like Forests: Biomimicry Maps a Sustainable Future. Keynote Speaker at Geodesign Summit, California, USA.

Gruber, P., 2011. Biomimetics in Architecture. Architecture of Live and Buildings. Springer Wien, New York, USA.

Harman, J., 2013. The Shark's Paintbrush. Biomimicry and How Nature is Inspiring Innovation. Nicholas Brealey Publishing, Boston, USA.

Kellert, S.R, Heerwagen, J.H, Mador, M.L., 2008. Biophilic Design. The Theory, Science and Practice of Bringing buildings to Life. John Wiley and Sons. New Jersey, USA.

Karabetça, A.R., 2015. Nature Inspired Architectural Designs: Using Biomimicry as a Design Strategy. International Conference on New Trends in Architecture and Interior Architecture. Proceeding Book p. 143-179. Dubai, United Arab Emirates.

Mazzoleni, I., 2013. Architecturel Follows Nature. Biomimetic Principles for Innpvative Design. CRC Press, New York, USA.

Wohlleben, P., 2016. Ağaçların Gizli Yaşamı, Translated by Ali Sinan Çulhaoğlu, A.S., Publisher Kitap Kurdu, İstanbul. Turkey.

Pawlyn, M., 2011. Biomimicry in Architecture. Riba Publishing, London, UK.

Pohl, G., and Nachingall, W., 2015. Biomimetics for Architecture and Design. Nature-Analogies-Technology. Springer, Germany.

URL1: http://themodernape.com/2015/06/02/building-cities-like-forests-when-biomimicry-meets-urban-design/

URL 2: https://www.curbed.com/2019/2/1/18205869/city-growth-urbanization-sprawl

URL 3: https://www.mickpearce.com/Eastgate.html

URL 4: https://www.stefanoboeriarchitetti.net/en/project/vertical-forest/

URL 5: https://www.e-education.psu.edu/emsc100tsb/node/144

URL 6: https://mcdonough.com/writings/buildings-like-trees-cities-like-forests/

URL 7: https://www.designboom.com/architecture/stefano-boeri-smart-forest-city-cancun-mexico-10-30-2019/

URL 8: https://www.lifegate.com/people/lifestyle/liuzhou-forest-city

URL 9: http://vincent.callebaut.org/object/150105_parissmartcity2050/parissmartcity2050/projects

URL 10: www.asknature.org

URL 11: https://www.ozy.com/fast-forward/cities-that-function-like-forests-are-on-the-horizon/71976/

PAPER #4.05

AGGREGATED DATA MANAGEMENT AND BUSINESS MODEL IN DESIGNING POSITIVE ENERGY DISTRICTS

Paolo Civiero[a], Jaume Salom[a], Jordi Pascual[a]
[a]IREC Catalonia Institute for Energy Research, Sant Adrià de Besòs, Barcelona, Spain

ABSTRACT

The paper aims to describe the results of the on-going EU founded research titled "PEDRERA Positive energy districts renovation model" which scope is to design a tool able to support smart district renovation programmes. The key goal of the model is to facilitate the multiple stakeholders' engagement in large-scale renovation actions according a Positive Energy District (PED) vision, and to predict the sustainability and positive outcomes of distinct renovation scenarios. One of the main barriers to reach this goal is the lack of integration of disaggregated information coming from heterogeneous data sources. The PEDRERA model means to build trust in the business opportunities by allowing better support to decision-making and impact assessment in order to understand and manage both the complexity of financing renewal processes at district scale and the interests of each stakeholder.
The paper addresses these challenges and will examine how data sources from different domains could be adopted in PED design once the information is aggregated, systematized and addressed to specific key performance indicators. Furthermore, the customized model will run data through a special wizard able to filter input data which are displayed and shared on a GIS platform.
According to this approach, the novel tool will be able to (1) guide and support the entire retrofit process according different issues, (2) meet the most relevant requirements from each stakeholder by prioritizing and designing energy efficient measures based on a reliable business model, and (3) help on willing sustainable energy communities to come.

KEYWORDS

Positive energy districts; smart city; sustainable energy communities; data aggregation; interoperability.

INTRODUCTION

In 2050, the built environment should be nearly carbon neutral but it's still not fully clear how to achieve a sustainability scalable model coherently with the SDGs (Sustainable Development Goals) of UN[1] . Considering that the building stock constitutes the largest single energy consumer in the EU, and that the value of the European mortgage market is equal to 53% of EU's GDP, there is huge potential to bridge financial innovation and the energy efficiency (EE) world and to unlock the benefits of mortgage financing to support EE to the benefit of all[2].
The revised Directive 2018/844/EU introduces targeted amendments aimed at mobilizing of investments toward decarbonized cities and accelerating the cost-effective renovation at the neighborhood and district scale[3] which means a transition to an intelligent system based on: (a) Cluster of geo-referenced Energy-efficient Interactive Buildings (EeIB) [Arbizzani et al. 2014]; (b) Interoperability and integration of data; (c) Feasibility of

[1] 2050 Energy Strategy, European Commission https://ec.europa.eu/energy/en/topics/energy-strategy-and-energy-union/2050-energy-strategy.
[2] Source: Energy efficient Mortgages Action Plan. https://cordis.europa.eu/project/id/746205.
[3] Source: ZEBRA 2020 www.zebra-monitoring.enerdata.eu/

technical and economic scenarios enabled by economies of scale.
In this contribution, we present the approach of the PEDRERA (Positive Energy District Renovation Model) project whose main goal is to design an innovative energy large-scale renovation model able to accelerate the urban transition towards Positive Energy Districts (PEDs) by collecting and gathering available data from multiple domains and demonstrating the feasibility and opportunities of renovation projects at large scale. The design of energy efficient retrofitting projects, in this case at district scale, is a challenging problem that requires a spatial model, a multi-scale and multidomain evaluation, a constant interaction among stakeholders, and other not-directly related to energy information that will be useful to formulate predictive and feasible business model adherent to the purpose. Retrofits of this scale will require the ongoing management of a well-financed, data-driven, and strategically-targeted program.

1. LITERATURE REVIEW

Recent developments in the fields of Internet of Things (IoT), Artificial Intelligence (IA) and new city modeling, are driving and supporting the development of smart sustainable cities where Positive Energy Blocks (PEBs) and Positive Energy Districts (PEDs) represent crucial nodes of such cities, due to their capability in achieving a positive average annual energy balance[4]. When the positive energy balance assessment moves from a single building to a group of buildings at district level, new considerations are needed in terms of integrating urban and energy planning and evaluating the overall energy performance (according to different choice of assessment methods defined in the modular and overarching framework of the ISO 52000). Thus, in that case of district scale, the assessment boundaries are strictly related to the attributes of the assessed cluster of buildings, as also the mutual interactions between each other, regarding to the common technical building systems and the delivered energies carriers.
Even if an accurate concept of PED is still under discussion, PEDs are widely considered as mixed-use energy-efficient districts that have net zero carbon dioxide (CO2) emissions and actively manage an annual local surplus production of renewable energy (RES). They require interaction and integration between buildings, the users and the regional energy, mobility and ICT system, while ensuring social, economic and environmental sustainability for current and future generations.
An extensive range of different approaches and actions are currently focused on the PEDs definition and the implementation of PEDs strategy for energy transition and the climate mitigation in the urban context, among which:
- PED concept integration in the SET Plan Action 3.2 implementation plan[5];
- Consultations with city representatives and other urban stakeholders in various countries, in particular collecting input under the PED Programme[6];
- European Energy Research Alliance (EERA) Joint Programme on Smart Cities (JPSC) and the Smart Cities Information System (SCIS)[7] support for the PED definition and a pathway towards PED in Europe.

[4] The concept of PEB is now fully recognised by the European Commission even if PEB is defined by the EU as a group of at least three connected neighbouring buildings (new, retro-fitted or a combination of both) producing on a yearly basis more primary energy than what they use. The ISO 52000-1:2017 establishes a systematic, comprehensive and modular structure for assessing the energy performance of new and existing buildings (EPB) in a holistic way.
[5] The Strategic Energy Technology (SET) Plan Implementation Working Group 3.2 Programme "Positive Energy Districts and Neighbourhoods for Sustainable Urban Development".
[6] Among other, JPI Urban Europe AGORA is focused on JPI Urban Europe's Stakeholder Involvement Platform which aims at creating the space to meet and exchange for urban actors.
[7] The EERA JPSC aims to accelerate new energy technology development by cooperation on pan-European programmes and is directly involved in the SET PLAN TWG 3.2. The SCIS is a platform that brings together different type of stakeholders from across Europe to exchange data, experience and know-how and to collaborate on the creation of smart cities and an energy-efficient urban environment.

- National initiatives supporting R+D+I on PEDs as the Spanish Technological Platform for Energy Efficiency (PTEee)[8].

The draft definition of PED developed by the EERA JPSC working group, is the result of reviewing and considering definitions from current projects and programmes and bringing in particular R&I perspective - such as the "Booklet of Positive Energy Districts in Europe"[9] , the PED Programme Cities Workshop, H2020 Lighthouse projects - and consultations of stakeholders on national and European levels.

Smart districts modeling methods

In this transition process toward efficient and sustainable cities, it is well known that data collection will drive planning investment policies on urban domain. Availability of widely monitored and shared data is one of the key aspects of smart cities, and would represents a barrier to sustainable urban development in the next future. The chance to access information and to manage data depends mainly by the availability of open data according specific departments at regional or local level, but also refers by the ability to aggregate data and exploit this information according user' scope. Furthermore, in order to achieve long term urban renovation processes, innovative monitoring and managing smart decision-support tools are needed to gain economies of scale through a demand-aggregation approach.

In many case the workflows can be developed for whole cities and neighborhoods to generate urban massive models from available datasets such as GIS and CityGML [Ascione et al., 2011]. Furthermore many district tools support the calculation of the yearly energy balance according different categories depending on the scope, scale and purpose of the work at hand[10]. Such information includes usage and conditioning profiles, the number of occupants, schedules, equipment power density, lighting and passive and active systems and their control strategies. The development of Urban-Scale Energy Modelling (USEM) at district or city level is today the goal of many research groups due to the increased interest in applications such as new strategies for city energy supply/ demand, urban development planning, or distribution networks stability. USEM faces a complex set of multi-domain problems e.g. related to multiscale heat and mass transfer phenomena (climatology, building physics, infrastructure requirements, etc.) as well as land use, transportation, urban morphology, local availability of energy resources, or user behaviour [Sola et al. 2019, Letellier-Duchesne et al. 2018].

The first step, which consist in the collection of information for creating spatial models needs, is one of the most time-consuming and costly tasks. There are many different sources of geographic spatial data and many ways to collect them. In practice, there are two main methods of data collection: (1) direct (direct data collection on the object e.g. LIDAR or its raw image); (2) indirect (based on data available in processed form (e.g. cadaster, maps, statistics, etc.) [Yanwen et al. 2017]. In both cases, a high degree of coherence is required for the application of specific data - that are associated with the different objects image- into an effective model [Madrazo 2019]. This also could involve creating scenarios for future urban growth. The number of cities in the world that have their own maps model (3D/2D) is constantly growing. Cities like New York, London, Amsterdam, Helsinki have created their own 3D model based on open CityGML data. This type of service can be used to access geographic information or datasets of several departments, moving from many basic maps to other information on energy

[8] The PTEee promotes the Spanish Priority Technology Initiatives (Iniciativas Tecnológicas Prioritarias -ITPs) among which one of the goal for 2020 is to encourage R+D+i collaborations between the public, scientific and business sectors on energy efficiency with a specific focus on PEDs. https://static.pte-ee.org/media/files/documentacion/itp-01-2019-distritos-de-energia-positiva-peds-tZU.pdf

[9] https://jpi-urbaneurope.eu/app/uploads/2019/04/Booklet-of-PEDs_JPI-UE_v6_NO-ADD.pdf.

[10] Among others, the Building Energy Software Tools. (www.buildingenergysoftwaretools.com)

and water consumption or may include the calculation of the solar potential of all roof and building surfaces. The data content in these city information model can be enriched without limit, and geometrical information are very useful, even more in the cases of a large number of buildings, enabling to calculate slope, aspect or roof surface, and to support a large number of analysis (e.g. solar radiation analysis and the design of Renewable energy sources (RES) and photovoltaic (PV) energy production in that case of self-consumption and energy communities)[11].

The need for innovative financing schemes

The Energy Efficiency Financial Institutions Group reported in 2015 [EEFIG, 2017] that investments of the order of €60-100 billion are required to improve the energy performance of buildings in Europe, while the International Energy Agency (IEA) in its 2°C (450ppm) scenario estimates a requirement of US$1.3 trillion in the period 2014-2035 globally [BPIE 2019]. These financial needs mean that they cannot be met by public funds alone and that also public–private partnership (PPP) must promote the energy performance improvement of buildings. The market has fully recognises that this is a low-risk activity, and that the lack of credible information on results prevents, in most cases, investments in retrofitting. [OptEEmAL 2019].

Adequate financial instruments to overcome market failures and sustain higher renovation rates are highly promoted by the EC[12] and ongoing studies[13] are seeking to validate three main assumptions: (1) improving energy performance has a positive impact on property value, thereby reducing a bank's asset risk; (2) borrowers have a lower probability of default as a result of more disposable income due to lower energy bills, with positive effect on bank's credit risk [source:EeMAP]; (3) implementing sustainable urban models provides notable health impacts on inhabitants, reduce harmful environmental exposures and mitigate effects of climate change, thereby improving economic savings for the healthcare system [Ortiz et al. 2019, Muller et al. 2019]. The availability of a large-scale pipeline of bankable projects to feed investment platforms and financial instruments is the key to upscaling and replicating successful projects, thereby reducing overall renovation process costs. It has been largely demonstrated [Salom et al., 2018] that the scale economy would ease the achievement of the building renovation ratios goals, by lowering the unitary required investments and optimizing the operative processes, from the technical to the administrative one's. Furthermore, this approach is wired by most recent initiatives and regulations (e.g. RD244/2019) that encourage the private sector relationships from an energy and business point of view, by introducing new concepts and legal frames as the so-called energy communities. Due to the complexity and the large number of administrative issues to be solved in such processes, the implementation of new financial schemes and partnerships with local actors (e.g. SMEs, financial institutions, energy agencies or private investors) is crucial for success [Salom et al., 2018]. Cities and regions in cooperation with local financing institutions and investors help to overcome these shortcomings by developing financial products, financial model

[11] Among others, the commercial suite of the software Aurora includes design and financial analysis tools custom built for C&I projects.

[12] The STUNNING (SusTainable bUsiNess models for the deep reNovation of bulldiNGs) Renovation Hub is a web-based knowledge sharing platform addressing technology and business models for building renovation whose aim is benchmarking innovative and adaptable refurbishment packages and sharing and promoting successful business models for their large scale deployment and replication.

[13] On this matter, the MED Efficient Buildings Community, established by interreg MEDNICE Project, gives an overview of available existing barriers and financing schemes to implement Energy Efficiency projects in Public Buildings. (https://efficient-buildings.interreg-med.eu). Other relevant initiatives funded via the EC' Horizon 2020 Programme are the Energy efficient Mortgages Action Plan (EeMAP) that aims to create a standardised "energy efficient mortgage", according to which building owners are incentivised to improve the energy efficiency of their buildings or acquire an already energy efficient property by way of preferential financing conditions linked to the mortgage, or the Energy efficiency Data Protocol and Portal (EeDaPP) project to design and deliver a market-led-protocol to enable the recording of data relating to energy efficient mortgage assets and which will be made accessible via the design of a common data portal.

(e.g. PPP or cornerstone management model) and innovative methods (e.g. one-stop shops) combining affordable financing with people-centric technical assistance (e.g. EuroPACE Platform). The above mentioned solutions make investment in energy efficiency and active measures more attractive and easier for different types of homeowners (e.g. medium income households) and for specific types of buildings (e.g. condominiums) [BPIE, 2019].

2. METHODOLOGY

The following key aspects will briefly describe the potential and main features of the PEDRERA model approach whose aim is to widely support and implement the large-scale renovation projects towards sustainable districts by:

• Defining of fields (issues) and indicators that allow to evaluate, guide and support the best retrofitting strategy, according an holistic outlook from multiple domains and sources;

• Integrating and aggregating of data at building and district scale in order to assess the potential for renovation according specific areas of interest (categories) and scopes.

• Ranking and prioritizing values in an integrated and multidimensional model framework which facilitates - according different stakeholders' profiles - to explore potential cluster of buildings to be renovated, propose rehabilitation measures and refurbishing scenarios, and evaluate the economies of scale.

• Designing a reliable business model able to validate the whole renovation process, and to build trust in the business opportunity for investors and users.

According a wide PEDRERA vision beyond a reliable business tool, the model - still in processing - is meant to offer additional services, empowered by its implementation into a platform environment enabling: (1) to explore urban areas and automatically evaluate their renovation potential based on specific indicators; (2) to create and assess retrofitting plans supported a the reliable business plan; (3) to follow up the impact and the co-benefits of the energy renovation. Indeed, the model refers to a wider "district performance" concept, based on an holistic approach of a few indicators that really can strengthen both the stakeholders recruitment, the design and the fulfillment of the results attended. Thus, many input and indicators considered in the model may appear far from the energy efficiency goals of the renovation process itself, but the reason is stated in the remark of both the real interests of the stakeholders when financing and tackling the process, and the scope of the process.

3. PEDRERA MODEL

Building renovation programmes need to adopt a broader approach to increase awareness and emphasize the co-benefits of the renovation plans such as the appreciation in housing value, increase of building lifespan and improved health benefits for both the household occupants and the healthcare system. Aligned with this vision, the business model is powered by the integration of processed input that can be assumed to assess more than one indicator. Input data are supposed to be automatically retrieved from a large number of external data sources (e.g. weather, demographic/aging condition, income/energy poverty or socio-economic rating, energy demand and consume data, etc.) while other input are measured, calculated or simulated. Each indicator is arranged in specific issue and category, and its value and prioritization rank will modify the business model result [Civiero, 2017].

The model is designed according to a step by step approach where a different deepening of input - output data belongs to each phase of the renovation process (Figure 1). Seven main phases are identified where different activities and action are required: (0) the

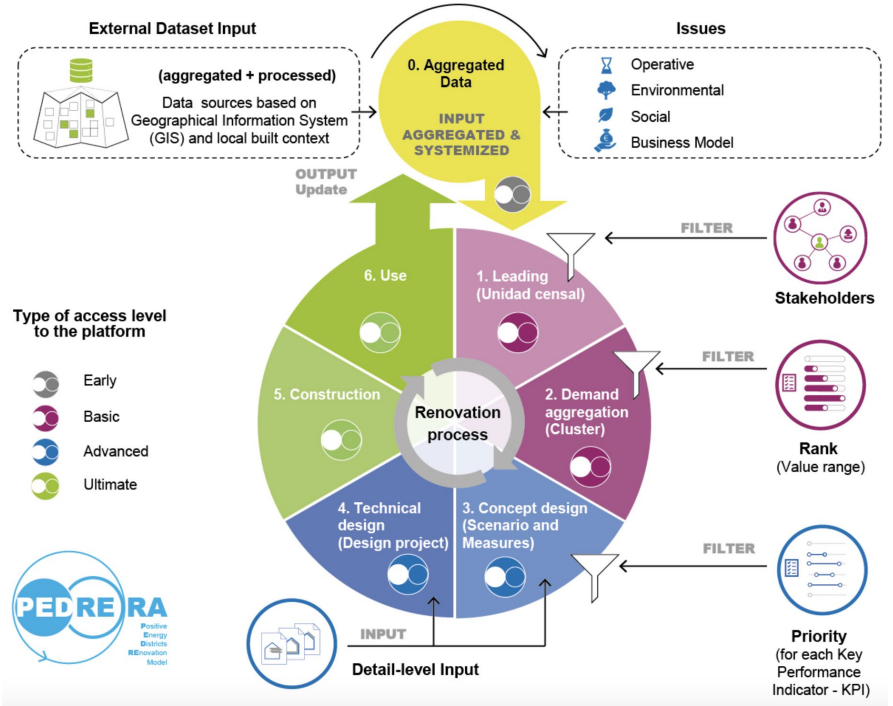


Figure 1. Renovation process: phases and interactivity of the model with data. Source: authors.

"data aggregated" - early aggregation of information, (1) the "leading"– boundaries definition of the energy community at district level (e.g. unidad censal), (2) the "demand aggregation" – clustering, (3) the "concept design" – measures to adopt according a package of solutions, strategies and potential scenario, (4) the "technical design" – economic evaluation (PEC) and business model validation, (5) the "construction phase", (6) "use".

Each phase provides a deeper and different type of information elaborated in the model. The early aggregation of input data in four main fields of performance of the district (Operative, Social, Environmental, Business Model) represents the baseline of the renovation process. In the "leading phase" an evaluation tool of the model manages all input, and returns the "district performance" dataset meant for each issue. Learnt lesson from past experience and literature review, demonstrates that in the first stage of the renovation process, investors need just a very clear and simple information able to show them the potentialities and risks of an investment. Thus, a few number of indicators are strictly linked with the definition of a weighting scheme, namely applying some values that represent the importance a certain indicator has over others.

Once input are collected, systemized and filtered, the first phase is overtaken, and a second level of information is required to

Issues	Categories	Indicators	Access	Scope
Business model	Economic	Grant, and EE revolving funds size	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
		PEC (including Economies of scale)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
		Public Subsidies for low income	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
	Financial management	Annualized Return on Investment (ROI)	A	Financial Appraisal
		Cash Fow (according works schedule/phase)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
		End user type of loan (50/50, 60, 120, …)	A	Financial Appraisal
		Housing implementation price value	U	Financial Appraisal/Marketing
		Housing prices (value/sqm)	A	Financial Appraisal
		Loan Rate (Monthly payments max value/dwelling)	A	Financial Appraisal
		Loan Years	A	Financial Appraisal
		New job opportunities	U	Financial Appraisal/Welfare & Security/Marketing
		Operational costs (each stakeholder)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
		Property (public/private ownership)	E	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Property ratio (Owners/tenants)	A	Financial Appraisal
		VAT (each activity/stakeholder)	A	Financial Appraisal
Environmental	Energy community	Energy flexibility (between buildings) (Prosumer index)	U	Energy model/RES production/Marketing
		Montly/annual energy bill reduction	U	Financial Appraisal/Marketing
		Number of buildings affected	B	Financial Appraisal/RES production
		Number of dwellings affected	B	Financial Appraisal
		Self-consumption Energy community (ScEC) reference	B	Financial Appraisal/RES production
		Radius Max distance (<500 m) inside the same ScEC	B	Financial Appraisal/RES production
		Solar irradiance (horizontal surface)	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model/RES production
		Solar irradiance (vertical surfaces)	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model/RES production
	Energy consumption	Electric consumes (after works)	U	Financial Appraisal/Marketing
		Electric consumes reduction (%)	U	Financial Appraisal/Marketing
		EPC (comparison before and after r.w.)	U	Environmental impact/Marketing
		EPC implementation (upgrade)	U	Environmental impact/Marketing
	Environmental potential	Electric consumes (before renovation works)	E	Renovation Measures/Energy model
		EPC (before renovation works)	E	Renovation Measures/Energy model
		GhG emissions reduction (%)	U	Environmental impact/Marketing
		Primary energy consumption reduction (%)	U	Environmental impact/Marketing
Operative	Building Function	Property type ratio (residential/other)	A	Financial Appraisal/Energy model/RES production
	Building Size	Floors (other function) sqms	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Floors (Residential) sqms	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Number of levels (ground + floors)	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model
	Building Technics	Building cluster type according Age	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Building cluster type according Technologies	B	Renovation Measures/Energy model
	Operational potential	Envelope extension	E	Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Roof extension (general + accurate)	E	Renovation Measures/RES production
	Renovation Strategy	Renovation Measuress (Package of measures)	B	Financial Appraisal/Energy model
		Renovation Strategy (permanence in the place)	B	Renovation Measures
		Renovation target no.A (Deep Renovation)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Renovation target no.B (Accessibility)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures/Welfare & Security
		Renovation target no.C (RES individual/community)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures/RES production
		Renovation works scheduling (duration of works)	A	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
	Vulnerability potential	Accessibility (guarantee: yes/no)	E	Renovation Measures/Welfare & Security
		ITE (certificate: yes/no)	E	Renovation Measures/Welfare & Security
Social	Risk solvency	% of population in age range	E	Financial Appraisal/Energy model/Welfare & Security
		Gross disposable households incomes	E	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures/Energy model
		Households composition (no. of adults/children)	B	Financial Appraisal/Energy model
		Life expectancy (ref. to health/age/pollution)	E	Financial Appraisal/Energy model/Welfare & Security
		People at risk of energy poverty (income decile)	B	Financial Appraisal/Renovation Measures
		Unemployment	A	Financial Appraisal/Energy model

Notes
E - Early Access, **B** - Basic Access, **A** - Advanced Access, **U** - Ultimate Access

Figure 2. Input and output that will be implemented in the PEDRERA model and managed by the multi-step form wizard of the platform. Source: authors.

guide the design and find out the strategy that best fits with the goal. In the second phase, the boundaries and the preferences of the stakeholders involved in the retrofitting project will be applied through pairwise comparison of indicators. The model provides as outcome the calculation of composite performance indexes (categories), as well as the information on compliance with the targets and boundaries established by the user.
In the third phase a cost-benefit customized function will evaluate retrofitting alternatives, taking into account both (a) the available data and information, (b) the database of renovation measure and (c) the system of filters and prioritization applied by the user on the indicators.

Additional more detailed input can be introduced into the model to better perform the Concept and the Technical design in the third and fourth phases. This information will help to refine the knowledge about the building and user' profile, as well as the loans strategy, the costs and the renovation works/cash flow schedule. After the Construction phase is concluded, during the sixth phase of Use, updated information can be uploaded to the on-cloud database, where data can be used for monitoring activities/continuous evaluation (e.g. monitoring of the energy consumes or analysis of the building performance, which can be used for the promotion of new business/intervention actions).
The PEDRERA model is designed to run on web platform with different suited access levels (Early, Basic, Advanced, Ultimate). The PEDRERA model will be implemented into the operating URBANZEB platform provided by CICLICA, main partner of the research project (https://ciclica.eu/en/urbanzeb_en/). Authorized stakeholders will monitor and analyse the whole system sustainability status online. Once stated the priorities and performance required, the users launch a set of simulations by the wizard panel and the data inserted and processed will generate scenarios. In this way a great deal of subjectivity can be introduced to the process finding a relationship between the goals established by the user and relating them to the evaluation criteria (indicators) of the model. Otherwise, users can set up the goal and the algorithms will calculate the best business model scenarios required. The performance of each indicator (e.g. costs, revenue, ROI, regulation compliance, etc.) is the result of distinct algorithms running in the model where the information - mandatory and optional - will be automatically collected and calculated according specific scopes (Figure 2).

CONCLUSION

Research and development in energy transitions should necessarily face both technological and socio-economic problems. Viable business cases remain the weakness point of many renovation plans, while novel methods to integrate co-benefits of smart city solutions in business models are still in their early stages. Therefore, in a sustainable long term vision, the goal of this innovative model is to promote solutions able to create the trust and commitment from civil society to embrace and foster the overall development of the smart cities to come as a whole.
The data which is necessary to calculate sustainability indicators in building renovation areas are distributed in multiple sources, each one managed by a different organization, even from apparently far domains, and of different types. Additionally, one of the main challenge of the future is not only the data availability - which still represents a gap in some European urban areas - but how to integrate heterogeneous data in order to get a comprehensive understanding of district scale renovation complexity thus

enabling better decision support and impact assessment. In spite of a large amount of data about cities are increasingly available and processed according multiple domains and formats , nonetheless there is still a lack of tools/services oriented to the relevant key stakeholders of the building retrofitting processes: building developers, financial institutions, public administrations, building owners and tenants. In order to take informed decisions in their respective realms, these stakeholders need to have access to information which suits their knowledge and capacities. Furthermore, the possibilities of using city model maps are inherently unlimited and can be addressed to current and future city issues that may arise.

The technological-economical feasibility assessment, the proper identification of the types of intervention and their combination in potential scenarios must be investigated and estimated at a multi-buildings large scale, with an effective and interdisciplinary design approach integrating in a whole system the socio-technical aspects into the feasibility study of economical, social, environmental and technical issues. Conventional energy planning and technological learning models are not sufficient because of their inability to deal with issues such as the behaviour of consumers, prosumers of energy or self-consumption community and investors. The role of models in the energy field is cross-sectorial and the use of common principles and techniques are stimulating a rapid development of multi-disciplinary researches (e.g. multi-domain models, GIS cities modeling, open data, etc.), which is an essential part of innovation.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The research project was funded by EU Horizon 2020 research and innovation programme under the Marie Skłodowska-Curie grant agreement No 712949 (TECNIOspring PLUS) and by the Agency for Business Competitiveness of the Government of Catalonia, ACCIÓ.

REFERENCES

Ascione, F., R. F. De Masi, F. de'Rossi, R. Fistola, and G. P. Vanoli. 2011. "Energy Assessment in Town Planning: Urban Energy Maps." WIT Transactions on Ecology and the Environment 155: 205-216. doi:10.2495/SC120181.

Buildings Performance Institute Europe (BPIE). 2019. *Future-proof buildings for all Europeans. A guide to implement the Energy Performance of Buildings Directive (2018/844).* BPIE.

Civiero, P. 2017. *Tecnologie per la riqualificazione. Soluzioni e strategie per la trasformazione intelligente del comparto abitativo esistente.* Santarcangelo di Romagna (RN): Maggioli Editore.

Energy Efficiency Financial Institutions Group (EEFIG). 2017. *EEFIG underwriting toolkit Value and risk appraisal for energy efficiency financing.* no. June.

Fonseca i Casas A., Ortiz J., Garrido N., Fonseca P. & Salom J. 2018. *Simulation model to find the best comfort, energy and cost scenarios for building refurbishment.* Journal of Building Performance Simulation, 11:2, 205-222, https://doi.org/10.1080/19401493.2017.1323011.

Garcia Casals, X., Sanmartí, M., Salom, J. 2019. *Smart energy communities: Insights into its structure and latent business models.* Institut Català d'Energia.

Madrazo, L. 2019. *The Social Construction of a Neighbourhood Identity. Open House International,* Special issue "Urban Performance between the Imagined, the Measured, and the Experienced", vol.44/1.

Mueller, N. 2020. *Changing the urban design of cities for health: The superblock model.* Environment International 134 (2020). 105-132. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.envint.2019.105132.

OECD. 2008. Handbook on constructing composite indicators: methodology and user guide. ISBN 978-92-64-04345-9. (available on line: http://www.oecd.org/sdd/42495745.pdf).

OptEEmAL. 2019. *The solution for designing your energy efficient district retrofitting project. OptEEmAL Final Booklet.* Steinbeis-Europa-Zentrum der: Germany. (https://www.opteemal-project.eu/press-corner/publications/further-downloads.html).

Ortiz, J., Casquero-Modrego,N., Salom,J. 2019. *Health and related economic effects of residential energy retrofitting in Spain.* Energy Policy, 375-388, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.enpol.2019.04.013.

Prieto, I., Izkara J.L., Béjar, R. 2018. *A continuous deployment based approach for the collaborative creation, maintenance, testing and deployment of CityGML models.* International Journal of Geographical Information Science, 32:2, 282-301, https://doi.org/10.1080/13658816.2017.1393543.

Salom, J., Pascual, J. 2018. *Residential Retrofits at district scale. Business Models under Public Private Partnerships.* ÍnnoEnergy; ISBN 978-84-09-07914-8. (available on line: https://www.buildup.eu).

Letellier-Duchesne, S., Nagpal, S., Kummert, M., Reinhart, C. 2018.Balancing demand and supply: Linking neighborhood-level building load calculations with detailed district energy network analysis models. Energy (150/2018). 913-925. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.energy.2018.02.138.

Yanwen, L., Jiang, H., Yuting, H. 2017. *A rule-based city modeling method for supporting district protective planning,* Sustainable Cities and Society (28-2017).277-286. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.scs.2016.10.003.

Scognamiglio, A., Adinolfi, G., Graditi, G., Saretta, E.2014. *Photovoltaics in Net Zero Energy Buildings and Clusters: enabling the smart city operation.* Energy Procedia 61: Elsevier.1171 – 1174.

Sola, A., Corchero, C., Salom, J., Sanmarti, M. 2019. *Multi-domain urban-scale energy modelling tools: A review. Sustainable Cities and Society.* 2019 101872. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.scs.2019.101872.

PAPER #4.06

PURPOSEFUL PLAY: BRIDGING THE ENERGY-EFFICIENCY GAP IN CITIES

Malini Srivastava[a]
[a] University of Minnesota, Minneapolis, MN, USA

ABSTRACT

In the United States, buildings use almost 40% of energy produced and are responsible for 38% of greenhouse gas emissions. Urban areas account for a majority of global energy use and carbon emissions. Compared to usual current practices, energy-efficiency focused urbanization has the potential to reduce energy use by more than 25%. Energy-efficiency measures thus provide an opportunity for substantively impacting global carbon emissions from and energy use at the City scale. While energy efficiency is the cheapest method to reduce energy use, owners and occupants often fail to adopt energy-efficiency measures, a phenomenon known as the energy efficiency gap.
The work described here shows that serious pervasive energy games (SPEGs) have the potential to simultaneously engage individual community members' particular needs while informing city-scale interventions that could impact climate change at larger scales. This approach was tested in our team's winning entry to the nationwide Georgetown University Energy Prize (GUEP) competition, opened in 2014 to American cities with populations between 5,000 and 250,000 people. Over a period of two years, our team effort successfully reduced citywide municipal and residential energy use by 6.85%, normalized for population growth, weather effects and energy source, by the competition organizers. Through iterative research, design and implementation of serious pervasive energy games (SPEGs), we connected the city's built environment and its energy use to the community occupants.
This paper discusses one of the game designs that included individual action, neighborhood cooperative action, nested public-municipal interaction and other engagement activities that empowered community members to make city-wide impacts through personal action by forming active communities in the efargo game.

KEYWORDS

Serious energy games; pervasive games; energy efficiency gap; nested scales; energy efficiency; energy savings.

INTRODUCTION

Long-term temperature observations are consistent and widespread evidence of a warming planet (United States Global Change Research Program, 2018). With high confidence, the likely range of the human contribution to the global mean temperature increase over the period 1951-2010 is 1.1o F to 1.4o F. As of 2018, an estimated 55% of the world's population lives in urban areas, a proportion expected to increase to 68% by 2050 (United Nations 2018). Seto et al (2014) project that urban areas are responsible for 67%-76% of global energy use and 75% of carbon emissions. In the United States, buildings consume almost 40% of all energy produced (U. S. Energy Information Administration 2019 (2)), over 70% of all electricity produced ("Buildings Share of U. S. Electricity Consumption (Percent)" 2012), and are responsible for producing 40% of CO 2 emissions ("Carbon dioxide emissions for

U. S. buildings, by year" 2012). As such urban built environments lend themselves as a location for large-scale interventions.

Despite the fact that energy-saving measures have cost-saving potential, several studies identify barriers preventing owners and occupants from pursuing them. Hirst and Brown (1990), in coining the term "energy efficiency gap," note the failure of households, businesses, manufacturers and government agencies to take full advantage of cost-effective energy-conserving opportunities. Moreover, occupant behavior can have a significant impact on the energy use and causes uncertainty in the predictions of building energy use even for the same properties in similar climate conditions. Hong and Lin (2013) report that austere workstyles in offices consume up to 50% less energy while wasteful workstyles consume up to 90% more energy compared to standard workstyle. There is growing evidence that,

> "behavioral anomalies may influence investment decisions, and such anomalies, ranging from self-control problems to reference dependent preferences to biased beliefs and inattention, are becoming a commonly cited explanation for the energy efficiency gap (Gillingham and Palmer 2013, 33)."

Different issues are relevant to different consumer groups making one-size-fits-all efforts effective only to a limited audience and less effective to other audiences. Heterogeneity presents researchers with both an opportunity and a challenge (Gillingham and Palmer 2013) in energy efficiency programs.

This research contends that Serious Pervasive Energy Games (SPEGs) may successfully address the heterogeneous needs of the community, by accommodating the diverse realities, goals, needs and modes of play of various community members. This paper discusses the design, implementation and results of a SPEG called efargo game in the City of Fargo, North Dakota. The efargo game was released publicly and open to voluntary participation in order to study the potential of incentivizing owners and building occupants through games, to make changes in energy use behavior, leading to energy savings.

1. SERIOUS GAMES WITH ENERGY GOALS

Serious Game research is an established and expanding field. Serious Games are fun, but they have goals beyond entertainment. Serious Energy Games (SEGs) focus on energy as their primary subject matter. This research has identified 127 Serious Energy Games created worldwide since the 1970s, both reflecting and reacting to contemporary energy issues. Based on this research,

1.1 Serious Pervasive Energy Games

Pervasive Games create social, temporal and spatial expansions of game life into ordinary life (Montola, Stenros, and Waern 2009). According to Gustafsson, Bang, and Svahn (2009) traditional learning games may have difficulty achieving a transfer of actions between game play and actual life but pervasive games can include reality in the game play, creating an opportunity for "a situated learning experience." Transferring learning from within a game's "magic circle" to the real world is a challenge (Gustafsson, Katseff, and Bang 2009), but Pervasive Games, by expanding the magic circle into ordinary life's social, temporal, and spatial constructs may enable transfer to occur simultaneously. Serious Pervasive Energy games (SPEGs) are games aimed at impacting energy use outcomes by incorporating actual life energy use, energy users, and energy use infrastructures and structures within the game. The documented history of

SPEGs begins in 2007 with the Power Agent game, implemented by Anton Gustafsson and Magnus Bang, designed to encourage Swedish teenagers and their families to reduce energy consumption. Of the 127 SEGs, there are a total of 14 SPEGs of which 11 have reported results. The 11 that have reported results have achieved substantive results in short periods of time. Energy savings range from 8%-38% of those games reporting energy results. Behavior tests report changed habits, improved attitudes, involvement in energy savings and people formulating new energy saving strategies. Of the SPEGs reporting results, only 3 have been designed and implemented in the United States in small targeted implementations and only 2 have reported results (Energy Chickens (Orland et al. 2014); Dropoly; and Makahiki). In the Energy Chickens game 69% of game participants indicated that the game helped them be more energy conscious and participants reduced their plug load by 13% from baseline (table 2.6). 95% of the participants rated the Makahiki game as educational.

1.2. The Georgetown Prize

The opportunity to further design, implement and test SPEGs as a way of bridging the energy efficiency gap presented itself in the nationwide competition conducted by Georgetown University called the Georgetown University Energy Prize (GUEP). The GUEP goal was to reduce the energy use of cities with populations ranging from 5,000-250,000 people. The competition duration of the semi-finals was January 2015 to December 2016. Normalized data collection of energy use in 2015 and 2016 was compared against a baseline energy use during years 2013 and 2014. In the energy use data collected and published by the GUEP, efargo's work resulted in Fargo being ranked as the fourth highest energy saver and overall winner of the Georgetown Prize. Long (1958), based on a year of field study in the Boston metro area, proposes that "the local community can be usefully conceptualized as an ecology of games." He noted that games provide goals to gamers, sense of structure, the sense of being on a team, and determine roles and strategies and tactics to achieve those goals. Imagining the locality of Fargo as an ecology of games with several interconnected games and gamers as actors of note, a partnership called efargo (led by this author) was established between North Dakota State University, the City of Fargo, ND, and local utilities in 2014. The University (through the efargo research group) provided design, scholarship, research, production and implementation. The utilities provided information and connection to their customer bases. The City provided permissions, resources and connected the team to various for-profit and nonprofit organizations and governmental agencies such as schools, parks, fire stations etc.

1.3. Game locations and types

While this paper primarily focuses on the scaled structures and narratives within the efargo game, there were other games designed, implemented and tested in the community. The first SPEG titled, efargo game, targeted residential energy use, rental and ownership. This game was launched in late February 2016, and ended with a community Earth Day celebration in April 2016. Another SPEG called K-12 Energy Challenge targeted the municipal sector of the Georgetown University Energy Prize, was focused on reducing energy use in K-12 schools while also educating students about energy waste, energy use reduction and energy efficiency (Srivastava 2019). Lastly, several energy games were designed and played at community events where the efargo research team was invited to provide outreach related to energy education and awareness. The community space included the local

farmers market, street fair, winter festival, local shopping malls, downtown community partnership etc. The games at these events included the light bulb game (Figure 1), the energy wheel of fortune, the weights game, the earth piano and others.

Figure 1. Community Games. Source: (efargo, Troy Raisanen, Greta Berens, Dylan Neururer, Alex Jansen, Sam Goodman, Author 2020)shared photographs.

1.4. The scaled narratives within the efargo game

For the efargo game, gamers had to complete energy-saving actions primarily in their homes in order to earn game points. Within the game website, each token (blue circle or coin) indicating a theme such as lighting, heating, community action etc., had to be selected and then moved by a gamer to climb challenge levels represented by blocks. Each level (made up of seven blocks) was associated with a level of difficulty (Level 10-70). For each token, Level 10 (the first level) presented information and quizzes for the gamer to complete for which short tutorials were provided within the game.

> "Level 20 included an easy action item associated with that token that is typically a low-cost or no-cost energy-saving effort such as changing 5 light bulbs in the home from incandescent or fluorescent to LED. Level 30 asked people to share their participation in that week's token through social media or traditional media (phone, email, conversation),

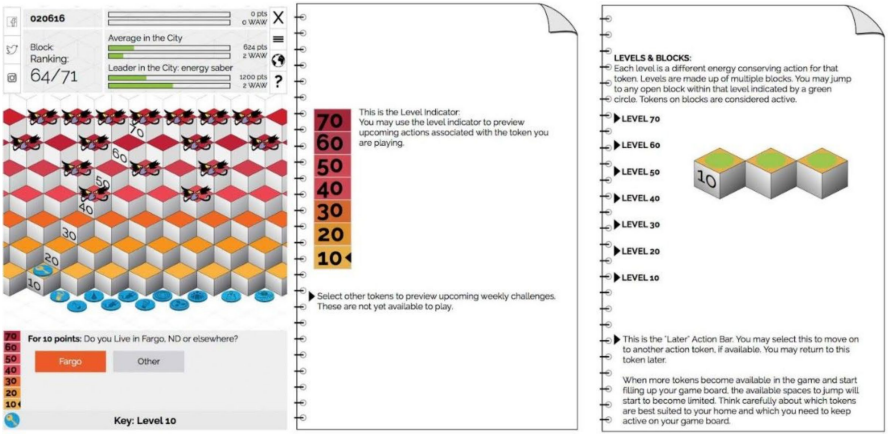


Figure 2. The efargo game board, dashboard, communications box, tokens, challenge block levels and mapping. Source: (efargo, Peter Atwood, Ian Schimke, Troy Raisanen, Nick Braaksma, Greta Berens, Author 2020)

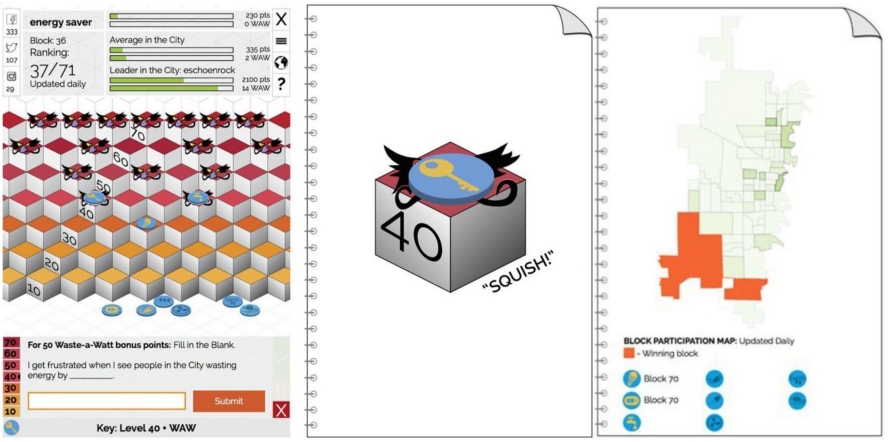


Figure 3. efargo game map based on census blocks. Source: (efargo, Peter Atwood, Ian Schimke, Troy Raisanen, Nick Braaksma, Greta Berens, Author 2020)

> inviting friends, family, and neighbors to participate. Levels 40-70 asked gamers to complete energy-conserving action items with increasing levels of difficulty, requiring more time, effort, cost or preparation (Srivastava 2016)."

As they played the game, information about energy waste and energy efficiency was provided to the gamers. Gamers implemented energy-saving actions in their homes and shared information through social and other media about their actions. Gamers earned points for their activities and could see their scores in comparison to other gamers in the dashboard (upper left corner) (Figure 2), how much they had advanced in the game, and the ranking of their block that allowed them to see how their block was faring in the game in comparison to other blocks in the city. The game board also included a map showing the performance of the city as a whole, based on census blocks (Figure 3). The game scores of all gamers in a census block were aggregated to create the block participation score. The census block with the highest block participation score for the week was declared the block winner. The game included a weekly reward (a $50 gift certificate) given to a randomly selected gamer, the weekly champion from the winning block (Figure 4). Since the game incentivized the aggregate block performance, activities that involved connecting with neighbors in order to achieve broader participation from the block were as important as achieving energy reductions in

Figure 4. efargo weekly winners and champions. Source: (efargo, Greta Berens, Ian Schimke, Author 2020) (Srivastava 2016)

Table 1: Sample of community responses to one of the Waste-a-Watt question (total 700 responses)

	I wish the City would _____ to save energy.	Municipality actions/ policies for the City infrastructure	Municipality incentives for the community
Renewables	Use more solar resources	x	
	Use more solar panels on city buildings	x	
	Put in solar panels	x	
	Implement more sustainable practices, like solar panels	x	
	Invest in renewable sources	x	
	Use nuclear power	x	
	Use sustainable energy sources (preferably wind--vertical tube designs don't take up much room--or solar)	x	
	Require a renewable portfolio		x
	Actively support tax credits for green or alternative energies or other sustainable energy initiatives.		x
	Utilize wind	x	
	Utilize wind energy	x	
	Do more solar power	x	
	Use more solar energy	x	

Table 1. Sample of community responses to one of the Waste-a-Watt question (total 700 responses)Goodman, Author 2020)shared photographs.

individual homes. Nested within the game were bonus points awarded for landing on and answering a "Waste-a-Watt question". The gamers had to land on specific locations in the game board indicated with a Waste-a-Watt icon (Figure 2). These icons were located in the higher levels of the game (Level 40-70). As a result, the fundamental actions on Levels 10-30 had to be completed to access the bonus points associated with questions accessed by clicking the Waste-a-Watt icon.

Gamers' responses to these questions were posted on the game website (Table 1 contains a small sample from 700 responses), creating a dialog within the gaming community. Gamers earned bonus points by responding to Waste-a-Watt questions, incentivizing community participation. Additionally, the last two tokens were focused on creating community-municipality dialogue and a celebratory community event, expanding the game beyond the home to a larger scale. The gamers were connected to an app called Sidewalk, commissioned by the city for city-community dialogue, through the efago game. In this app the gamers could ask questions pertaining to policies, incentives, goals, action items that they believed the city could be involved in or promote. For the community event, on Earth Day weekend in 2016, the efargo group organized a space in downtown Fargo. Several experts from organizations and corporations working on energy issues were invited to the event. Gamers could earn points in the game by learning about all the energy-related work that was happening in the community.

2. RESULTS OF GAMEPLAY

Energy-use data related to household energy use was collected before, during, and after the game. Of the 322 people who joined the efargo game, 55 people completed a pre- and post-game survey. Of these 55 people, 26 people gave permission to access the energy use data. Of these, 18 people were identified as customers with active accounts (13 with Xcel Energy and 5 with CCEC). 13 of the 18 gamers had complete electricity-use records covering the 2013- 2016 period (provided by the utilities)

Data for these thirteen gamers was analyzed using ETracker, a software application developed by Kelly Kissock at the University of Dayton (Ohio), with support from the United States EPA for the Energy Star Buildings Program. ETracker "uses ambient-temperature regression models to reduce the influence of changing weather so that retrofit savings can be more accurately measured" (Kissock 2003). Two study periods were considered for analysis: during game play and after game play. The first study period (during game play) was defined as March 2016 – April 2016. The second study period (after game play) was defined as May 2016 – December 2016. The ETracker prediction was made on the basis of utility bills collected for a four-year period (2013, 2014, 2015 and 2016).

Energy use prior to March 2016 was used to create energy-use data files for each of the individual gamers. Over each study period, each gamer's actual energy use (in kWh) was reported from utility records. Individual gamers' predicted energy use from ETracker was then compared to their actual energy use data from the utilities, and the difference was calculated for each gamer. During the first study period, some individual improvements in energy use were observed: of the 13 individual gamers, 7 showed energy-use reductions. A monthly total drop of 27 kWh, or 0.23%, and a marginal drop in mean difference between actual and predicted energy use (-2 kWh) were observed. Post-game analysis was conducted on the remaining months of energy use data available, from May 2016 to December 2016. A monthly total drop of 1,273 kWh, or 11.65%, and an appreciable drop in mean difference between actual and predicted energy use (-98 kWh) were observed. Figure 5 summarizes the individual gamers' energy use in the two study periods. An increased number of gamers experienced energy savings in the second study period. Thus, with respect to the comparison of (a) predicted energy use with (b) actual energy use, both before and during the efargo game, findings are positive and consistent with SPEG efargo game reducing energy use, but the findings are not statistically significant (p = 0.25 (>0.05), likely due to small sample size.

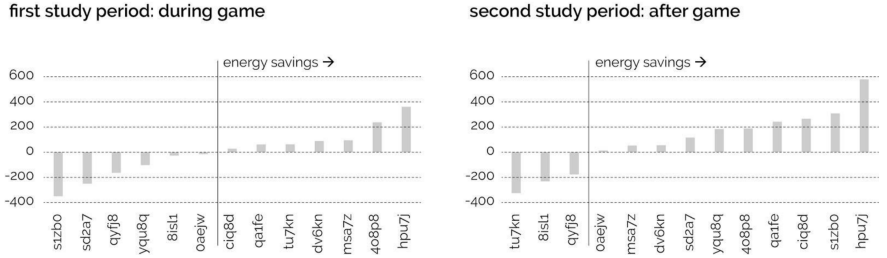


Figure 5. Individual gamers' energy use (Author, Peter Atwood, Mike Christenson).

While the Georgetown University Energy Prize established the core goal of reducing community-wide residential and municipal electricity and natural gas consumption, the structure left it up to each individual community how best to accomplish this goal. The final evaluation of the Prize accounted for energy-use reduction, but also considered whether innovative, sustainable, replicable, and scalable approaches were developed that had potential for wider application. Energy use data submitted by the cities was normalized by the GUEP team according to the protocols outlined in the GUEP
(Srivastava, Nelson 2017). The normalized data constituted the overall results for the City of Fargo for competition years 2015 and 2016 compared to baseline years 2013 and 2014. In two years, Fargo reduced overall energy consumption by over 172,361,882,500 BTUs. Estimated CO2e saved was 49,719 metric tons, and the overall energy consumption reduced on average per-household was over 8,165,800 BTUs. Although it cannot be conclusively stated that the playing of games led to the substantive energy use reductions shown in the GUEP results, it is nevertheless noteworthy that three of the ten cities with the greatest energy savings were gaming cities in addition to other activities (Figure 6). At the end of the competition, the winner (Fargo) and two of four honorable mentions (Fort Collins, CO and Walla Walla, WA) were gaming cities (Srivastava, Nelson 2017).

CONCLUSIONS & LIMITATIONS

In making the local community analogous to a game, Long (1958) contends that games are not trivial but quite the opposite. He contends that,

> "... (hu)man is a game-playing and a game-creating animal ... and that it is through games or activities analogous to game-playing that (s/)he achieves a satisfactory sense of significance and a meaningful role (Long 1958, 252)."

Long posited that politics, banking, contracting, journalism, civic organizations, and ecclesiastics as interconnected, albeit different, games sharing a common locality where each game has well-established goals, known and understood ways to behave and a set of strategies and tactics for gamers. In

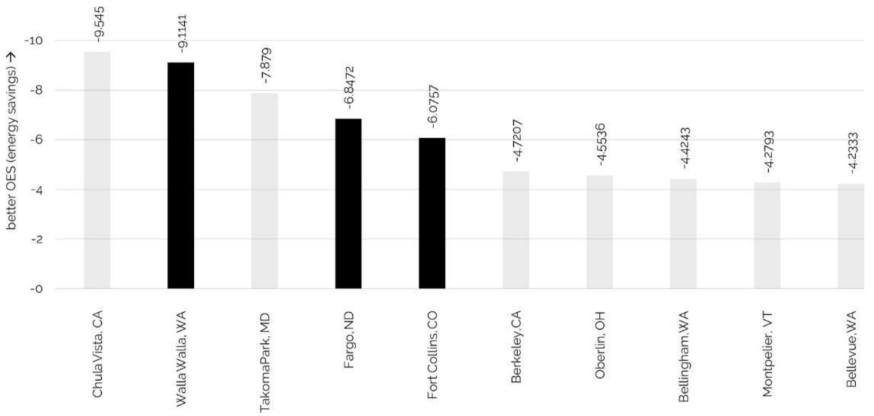


Figure 6. Individual gamers' energy use (Author, Peter Atwood, Mike Christenson).

the efargo game, the most meaningful social expansions not only increased the numbers of people involved but ensured that various constituencies (home owners, renters, community experts, businesses, municipal government, schools and other organizations) were involved, actively participating towards shared goals. This meant that while the game needed temporal flexibility, so people and entities could participate when they were able to, an overall synchronous structure was also needed for meaningful competitive play to occur and shared goals to be realized. Thus the game design had to balance flexible play and a synchronous structure with a defined play duration. Structures game elements such as the Waste-a-Watt questions revealed that frequent opportunities to create a meaningful sense of community within the game elicited the greatest dialogue from gamers (700 responses). Other dialogue structures between the gamers and designers (Key tokens), between gamers and the City (City Token, Sidewalk app) and between multiple organizations, corporations and the gamers (Community Token, Earth Day event) also garnered considerable responses. While dialogue and data collection within the game structure were successful in getting gamer responses, the final attempts to collect post-game surveys and energy use data collection after the gameplay period, were not as successful and had a much smaller response rate. Lack of gamer engagement in the post-game traditional survey format, severe database limitations on the Utility end, such as needing exact format and spelling duplication of gamer addresses made it difficult to locate the gamer utility invoices even for those gamers who had signed the release to access their data. Embedding surveys and energy use data collection within the game, where gamers are asked to submit their own energy use invoices rather than trying to acquire them from the Utility after the game play, needs to be tested in the future.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The work included in this paper would not have been possible without several members of the efargo team including but not limited to Peter Atwood, Troy Raisanen, Mike Christenson, Nate Wallestad, Ian Schimke, Greta Berens and Nick Braaksma. This research was funded by grants from the City of Fargo and the North Dakota Department of Commerce.

REFERENCES

Buildings Share of U. S. Electricity Consumption, Buildings Energy Data Book, retrieved from https://web.archive.org/web/20170122013356/http://buildingsdatabook.eren.doe.gov/docs/xls_pdf/1.1.9.pdf

Carbon dioxide emissions for U. S. buildings, by year, in Buildings Energy Data Book, retrieved from https://web.archive.org/web/20170122013421/http://buildingsdatabook.eren.doe.gov/docs/xls_pdf/1.4.1. pdf

Gillingham, K., and Palmer, K. 2014. *Bridging the energy efficiency gap: Policy insights from economic theory and empirical evidence. Review of Environmental Economics and Policy* 8, no. 1 (2014): 18-38.

Gustafsson, A., Katzeff, C., and Bang, M. 2009. *Evaluation of a Pervasive Game for Domestic Energy Engagement Among Teenagers.* Computers in Entertainment 7, no. 4: 54:1-54:19.

Gustafsson, A., Bang, M., and Svahn, M. 2009. *Power Explorer: A Casual Game Style For Encouraging Long Term Behavior Change Among Teenagers.* In Proceedings of the International Conference on Advances in Computer Entertainment Technology. n. p. Association for Computing Machinery.

Hirst, E. and M. Brown. 1990. *Closing the efficiency gap: barriers to the efficient use of energy.* Resources, Conservation and Recycling 3(4): 267-281.

Hong, T., & Lin, H. W. 2013. *Occupant behavior: impact on energy use of private offices* (No. LBNL-6128E). Lawrence Berkeley National Lab.(LBNL), Berkeley, CA (United States).

Kissock, K. 2003. ETracker User's Manual (Version: 7-26-2003).

Long, Norton E. 1958. *The Local Community as an Ecology of Games.* American Journal of Sociology 64:3, 251-261.

Montola, M., Stenros, J., & Waern, A. 200). *Pervasive games: Theory and design.* Burlington, MA: Morgan Kaufmann Publishers.

Orland, B., Ram, N., Lang, D., Houser, K., Kling, N., Coccia, M., 2014. *Saving energy in an office environment: A serious game intervention.* Energy and Buildings 74: 43-52.

Seto K., Dhakal, S., Bigio, A., Blanco, H., Delgado, G., Dewar, D., Huang, L., Inaba, A., Kansal, A., Lwasa, S., McMahon, J., Müller, D., Murakami, J., Nagendra, H., & Ramaswami, A. 2014. *Human settlements, infrastructure and spatial planning.* In O. Edenhofer, R. Pichs-Madruga, Y. Sokona, E. Farahani, S. Kadner, K. Seyboth, A. Adler, I. Baum, S. Brunner, P. Eickemeier, B. Kriemann, J. Savolainen, S. Schlömer, C. von Stechow, T. Zwickel & J. Minx (Eds.), *Climate change 2014: Mitigation of climate change (p. 923-1000).* Cambridge (UK): Cambridge University Press.

Srivastava, M. 2016. *The efargo Game: A playful way to achieve city-wide energy use reductions.* In ACEEE Summer Study on Energy Efficiency in Buildings (pp. 8.1-8.12)

Srivastava, M., & Nelson, C. 2017. *The Energy Efficiency Prize: Simple Design to Overcome Complex Barriers.* In the ARCC 2017 Conference–Architecture of Complexity (pp. 354-351).

Srivastava, M. 2019. *Architecture as a Gaming Board in Pervasive Energy Games.* The Routledge Companion to Games in Architecture and Urban Planning: Tools for Design, Teaching, and Research. United Nations. 2018. *World urbanization prospects*. Accessed February 7, 2019.

U. S. Energy Information Administration. 2019 (2). *How much energy is consumed in U.S. residential and commercial buildings?* Accessed February 7, 2019. https://www.eia.gov/tools/faqs/faq.php?id=86&t=1

United States Global Change Research Program. 2018. *Fourth National Climate Assessment – Volume II: Impacts, Risks, and Adaptation in the United States.* Accessed December 31, 2018. https://nca2018.globalchange.gov/

PAPER #4.07

OPTIMAL OPERATION STRATEGIES OF THREE DIFFERENT HVAC SYSTEMS INSTALLED IN A BUILDING

Yeo Beom Yoon[a], Byeongmo Seo[a], Suwon Song[b], Soolyeon Cho[a]
[a]North Carolina State University, NC, USA
[b]Korea Institute of Civil Engineering and Building Technology, Ilsan, Republic of Korea

ABSTRACT

A public service building in Korea is undergoing a retrofit process, adding heat pump systems, especially variable refrigerant flow (VRF) systems. The building currently has both central and zonal HVAC systems installed. Absorption chillers provide chilled water to both air handling units and fan coil units. Some rooms also have air source VRF heat pump (HP) systems installed, which have been added after the construction to provide additional energy. Unfortunately, these HVAC systems still do not meet the heating and cooling loads of the building. Simulation modeling processes were conducted to identify the building's thermal performance, verify the peak heating and cooling loads, and propose optimal additional VRF-HP systems to be installed. Optimal operation strategies were proposed for three different HVAC systems (i.e., AHUs, FCUs, and VRF-HPs) after adding additional VRF-HP systems to the building. Results show that operating the VRF-HP system as a main system, while central HVAC system as a secondary system, can reduce the building energy consumption. It is also required a low capacity of the additional VRF-HP system.

KEYWORDS

Air handling unit; VRF system; fan coil unit; system operation; energyPlus.

INTRODUCTION

Some existing buildings do not meet heating and cooling loads. This happens due to usage changes in spaces and addition of new equipment over time. Global warming is also a likely contributor to the additional cooling demand. These factors increase or decrease internal heat gains for which more heating and cooling energy is required. To overcome this issue, studies have been conducted on the retrofitting of buildings.

Luddeni et al. (2018) conducted research to reduce the building energy consumption of an office building in Italy by improving insulation performance, replacing windows, using high-efficiency equipment, and improving boiler efficiency. Somasundaram et al. (2020) applied low-emissivity windows to reduce the building energy consumption, while Biswas et al. (2019) conducted research to reduce building energy consumption by enhancing insulation performance. Previous studies have mostly applied energy efficiency measures or strengthened thermal insulation to reduce building energy consumption. Some studies attempted to reduce the energy consumption of buildings where heating, ventilation, and air-conditioning (HVAC) systems with sufficient capacity are already installed.

The target building of this study is a public service building where the capacity of the HVAC system installed is insufficient. An additional stand-alone air conditioner and a variable refrigerant flow heat pump (VRF-HP) system were installed to the target building to overcome indoor thermal discomfort, yet

doing so did not solve the problem of thermal comfort.
The purpose of this study, therefore, is to identify the capacity of additional HVAC systems and to propose HVAC system operation strategies, including the existing central HVAC system and fan coil unit (FCU) to improve indoor thermal comfort and reduce the building's energy consumption.

1. SIMULATING MODELING

1.1. Simulation software

This study used the EnergyPlus program version 9.0 developed by the U.S. Department of Energy (U.S.DOE). The OpenStudio program was used to implement the simulation model. The OpenStudio program is based on the EnergyPlus Engine and is one of the plug-ins of the SketchUp program.
EnergyPlus combines the advantages of the building loads and system thermodynamics (BLAST) in the building load analysis part and the merits of the DOE-2 program, which has the strength of a system-level analysis. In addition, EnergyPlus uses the heat balance calculation, which is recommended by the American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air-Conditioning Engineers (ASHRAE). It has the advantage of dynamic analysis, such as conduction, convective, and radiative heat transfer [U.S.DOE, 2018a].

1.2. Simulation model

The target building of this study is a public service building located in Ilsan, Republic of Korea. It is a six-story building with one basement floor and consists of multi-functional spaces, including office spaces, seminar rooms, and public service centers.
As previously mentioned, the actual target building does not have enough HVAC systems installed to meet the heating and cooling loads. The indoor air temperature could not meet the heating or cooling setpoint temperature due to the insufficient capacity of the HVAC system. Due to this problem, even in one space, temperature may vary, depending on the location.
To solve this issue, additional HVAC systems were installed in the target building, but these still do not have enough capacity. This study, therefore, aims to identify the additional capacity of the HVAC system that building needs through simulation analysis and to suggest the optimal operation strategies of the HVAC system to ensure energy consumption efficiency.
Figure 1 presents the simulation modeling of the target building. The simulation model is implemented based on the actual building drawings. The window-to-wall ratio of the target building is 35.57% on the east side, 22.17% on the west side, 37.19% on the south side, and 27.48% on the north side.

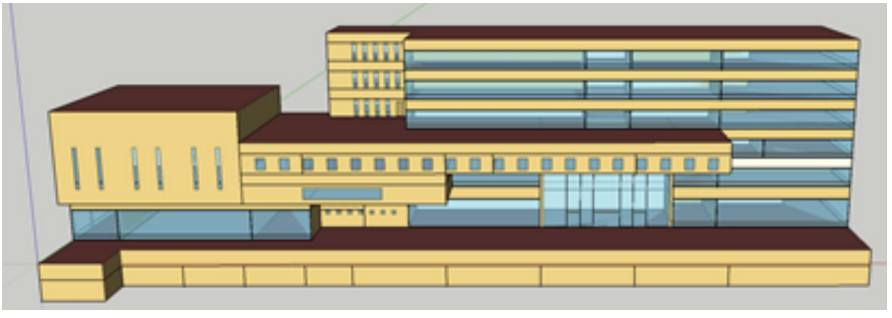


Figure 1. Simulation modeling

Tables 1 and 2 outline the properties of the building materials and the construction sets of the simulation model. The construction set is based on the drawings of the target building. The drawings of the target building do not have information about the building material properties, so we used the actual properties of the building materials that the EnergyPlus simulation program provided [U.S.DOE, 2018b].

The thickness of the air inside the interior wall and floor is not shown in Table 2. The EnergyPlus simulation program requires only thermal resistance values for air, which is one of the building materials. This is why there is no value for air thickness. The thermal resistance of the air layer is 0.15 m2·K/W for the interior wall and 0.18 m2·K/W for the ceiling. The U-value of windows is 3.35 W/m2·K, with the solar heat gain coefficient (SHGC) of 0.36 and visible transmittance (VT) of 0.27.

Table 3 presents the internal heat gain and infiltration values. Lighting power density is based on the drawing of the target building. Other values, equipment, and people are based on the DOE reference building (1980-2004) because the drawing does not include these values. The infiltration values are based on the infiltration modeling guidelines published by the Pacific Northwest National Laboratory [PNNL, 2009].

The heating and cooling setpoint temperatures in the simulation model are the actual setpoint temperatures used by the target building. The heating setpoint temperature is 20°C, and the cooling setpoint temperature is 26°C.

Material	Conductivity (W/m·K)	Density (kg/m^3)	Specific heat (J/kg·K)
Stucco	0.692	1,858	837
Concrete	0.530	1,280	840
Gypsum board	0.160	785	830
Roof membrane	0.160	1,121	1,460
Insulation	0.049	265	837
Metal Decking	45	7,480	418
Acoustic tile	0.060	368	590

Table 1: Building material properties

Construction	Outer layer to inner layer (thickness; mm)			
Exterior wall	Stucco (25)	Concrete (300)	Insulation (50)	Gypsum board (12)
Interior wall	Gypsum board (19)	Air	Gypsum board (19)	
Roof	Roof membrane (9.5)	Insulation (135)	Metal decking (1.5)	
Ceiling and floor	Acoustic tile (19)	Air	Concrete (100)	

Table 2: Construction set

	Values
Lighting	13.83 W/m^2
Equipment	23W/m^2
People	0.054 people/m^2
Infiltration	Perimeter: 0.3 Air change per hour and Core 0.15 Air change per hour

Table 3. Internal heat gain and infiltration

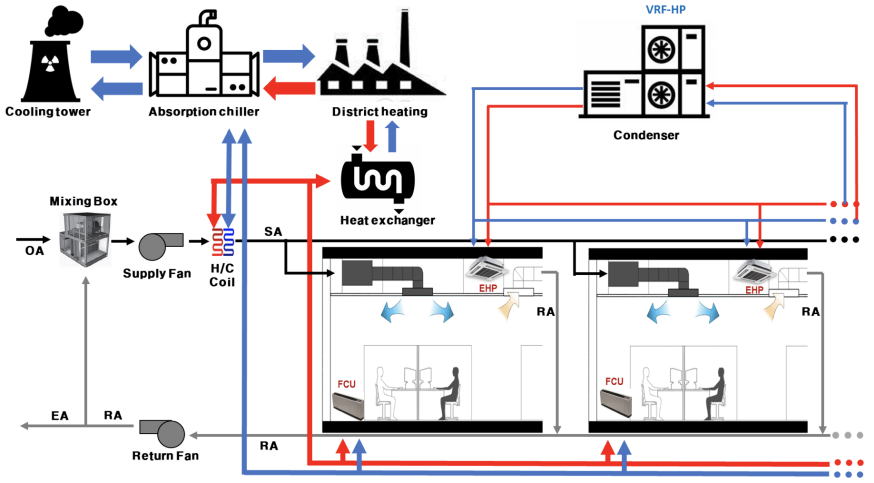


Figure 2. Diagram of the HVAC system in the target building

Figure 2 displays the conceptual diagram of the HVAC system installed in the target building. The FCU systems are installed in the perimeter zones, while the central HVAC systems are installed in the core zones. The existing HVAC system does not have a VRF-HP system in the upper right side of Figure 2 and is currently installing an additional VRF-HP system to improve indoor thermal comfort.

Information on the FCU system in the simulation model is the same as that of the FCU system installed in the target building.

For the absorption chiller and cooling tower, only the number is known, so the actual number of installations is entered, and the rest of the information is autocalculated by the simulation program.

1.3. Calibration

The simulation model was calibrated with the actual monthly electrical energy consumption. The cooling period is from June to September, while the heating period covers December, January, and February.

To calibrate the simulation model, we used the coefficient of variation of the root mean square error (CV(RMSE)) and Normalized Mean Bias Error (NMBE). ASHRAE Guideline 14-2014 provides the tolerance ranges of the calibrated simulation models, and the ranges differ, depending on the data frequency. The hourly data is 30%, whereas monthly data is 15% for CV(RMSE). For NMBE, hourly data is ±10% and monthly data is ±5% [ASHRAE, 2014]. The CV(RMSE) value is 14.4% which is in the tolerance range of the calibration model and NMBE value is 7.1% which is out of the tolerance range. NMBE value is for data value, and CV(RMSE) is for data pattern. Actual data are not enough to compare with simulation results currently. In the future, the simulation model will be updated with more detailed actual building data. Figure 3 compares the actual monthly electric energy consumption and the simulation results.

Equations for CV(RMSE) and NMBE are as follows:

$$RMSE_{period} = \frac{\sqrt{\sum (S-M)^2_{interval}}}{N_{interval}} \quad 1)$$

$$A_{period} = \frac{\sum_{period} M_{interval}}{N_{interval}} \quad 2)$$

$$Cv(RMSE_{period})(\%) = \frac{RMSE_{period}}{A_{period}} \times 100 \quad 3)$$

$$NMBE(\%) = \frac{\sum (S-M)_{interval}}{\sum M_{interval}} \times 100 \quad 4)$$

where,
y= monthly (or hourly) data
N= number of data
S= Simulation results
M= Measured data
Ninterval=number of data
Aperiod=Average of data

2. RESULT AND ANALYSIS

2.1. Analysis of the indoor temperature

Figure 4 shows the indoor air temperature patterns for the winter and the summer representative days. The winter representative day is February 6, while the summer representative day is August 4—both reflect the typical outdoor air temperature pattern in the winter and the summer seasons.
Since the temperature patterns of all rooms in the building cannot be expressed, we selected the office space on the fifth floor. The core shown in Figure 4 is the core of the office space, while perimeter refers to the perimeter zone of the office space. The black line represents the heating and cooling setpoint temperatures, whereas the green line represents the outside air temperature. Although the temperature in the core zone, which is not exposed to the external environment, is higher than that of the temperature in the perimeter zone, the temperatures in both spaces do not reach the set temperature in both the summer and the winter representative days. The installation of additional HVAC systems is, thus, necessary.
Figure 5 presents the indoor air temperature pattern after the installation of the VRF-HP

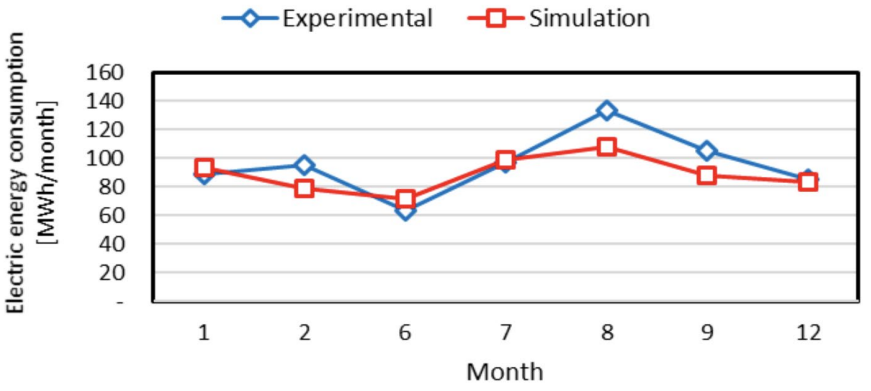


Figure 3. Comparison of the actual monthly electric energy consumption and the simulation results

system. Because of the additional VRF-HP system installed, indoor air temperature reached the heating and cooling setpoint temperature for both the winter and the summer representative days.

2.2. Strategies for optimal operation of three different HVAC systems

This section compares and analyzes the energy consumption of four different cases to suggest strategies for the optimal operation of three different HVAC systems. The four cases are as follows:

- Case-1: Central HVAC system only (current HVAC system);
- Case-2: Central HVAC as main system and VRF-HP as secondary system (sequential);
- Case-3: VRF-HP as main system and central HVAC secondary system (sequential); and
- Case-4: VRF-HP system and central HVAC system work simultaneously (uniform).

The sequential method (Case-2 and Case-3) is the main system handles all the loads. When the main system cannot handle all the loads, it means that the load is larger than its capacity. The secondary HVAC system handles the remaining heating or cooling loads.

The Uniform method (Case-4) is that when heating or cooling loads occur, all the HVAC systems operate at the same time, regardless of the amount of the loads.

Before analyzing the electric energy consumption and the district heating consumption, we describe the energy resources that the central HVAC system and VRF-HP system used. District heating is currently used for both heating and cooling in the target building. Hot water is sent directly to the heating coil in the FCU and air handling

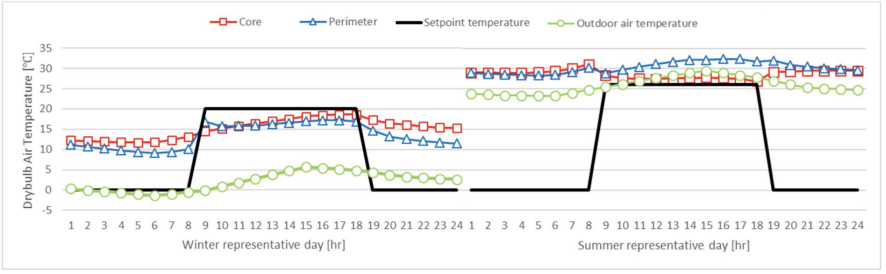


Figure 4. Comparison of indoor air temperaturas for the winter and the summer representative days

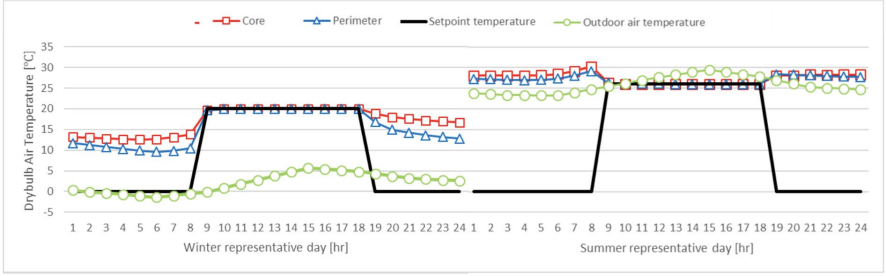


Figure 5. Comparison of indoor air temperature for the winter and the summer representative days after VRF-HP system has been installed

unit (AHU) to provide hot air in the building. For cooling, hot water is sent to the absorption chiller to be cooled through evaporative cooling. Because of these mechanisms, the target building uses district heating not only during the heating season but also during the cooling season. As regards electric energy, the VRF-HP system consumes electric energy to provide hot air and cold air to the zone. The central HVAC system also consumes electric energy for the fans, pumps, chillers, and FCUs. The operating hours of each system varies, depending on the load distribution method. It is essential to maintain a high part-load ratio (PLR) by ensuring the efficiency of the system so that less district heating or electric energy is consumed. Depending on the system's operation hours, it affects district heating, and electric energy consumption.

Central HVAC system information was entered in the other three cases based on the actual data and values calculated in Case-1. Figures 6 and 7 show the monthly electric energy consumption and district heating according to the load distribution method.

Central Only in the figure refers to Case-1, where only the central HVAC system is operated. CEN-VRF refers to Case-2, where the central HVAC system is the main system, while the VRF-HP system is the secondary system. VRF-CEN refers to Case-3, where the VRF-HP system is the main system, while the central HVAC system is the secondary system. Uniform refers to Case-4, where the central HVAC system and VRF-HP system are operated simultaneously. Case-1, which operates only one system, is represented by lines, whereas Case-2, Case-3, and Case-4, which operate two systems, are represented by boxes.

The analysis confirms that the indoor air temperature of all the cases, except Case-1, reached the cooling and heating setpoint temperature (see Section 3.1). This finding indicates that the VRF-HP system handles cooling and heating loads that the existing system (i.e., central HVAC system) cannot handle. Although Case-2 handled more cooling and heating loads than Case-1, the annual electrical energy consumption of Case-2 is lower than that of Case-1. This is due to the characteristics of the HVAC system of the target building, which circulates indoor air without introducing outdoor air.

Before the VRF-HP system is installed in Case-1, indoor air temperature does not reach the heating and cooling set temperatures. Higher air temperature than cooling setpoint temperature is, thus, introduced into the HVAC system during the cooling season, and lower air temperature than heating setpoint temperature is introduced back into the HVAC system during the heating season. In Case-2, where the VRF-HP system is installed, indoor air temperature reaches the cooling and heating setpoint temperatures. Compared with Case-1, lower air temperature is introduced back into the HVAC system during the cooling season, and higher indoor air temperature is introduced back into the HVAC system during the heating season. Case-2, therefore, consumes less electric energy than Case-1 due to the difference in return air temperature. This also affects the district heating consumption because of the same reasons: The temperature differences between return air temperature and supply air temperature in Case-2 are smaller than that of Case-1. This explains why Case-2 consumes less district heating than Case-1.

We also compared Case-2 with Case-3, where indoor air temperature reaches the cooling and heating setpoint temperatures, and only the system sequence is different. In Case-2, where the VRF-HP system is the secondary HVAC system, the central HVAC system covers loads as much as the central HVAC system can handle, and the VRF-HP system only operates when the loads remain. This explains why the electric energy consumption in Case-2 is less than that of Case-3, where the VRF-HP system is the main system.

In other words, when the load is low, the main system takes care of all the loads. For Case-2, the main system is the central HVAC system, while for Case-3, it is the VRF-HP system. As such, while the VRF-HP systems installed in Case-2 and Case-3 have the same capacity, the operation hours of VRF-HP in Case-3 are more than that in Case-2. Case-3, therefore, consumes more electric energy than Case-2. On the contrary, the operation hours of the central HVAC system in Case-2 are more than that in Case-3 since operation hours of the VRF-HP system in Case-3 are more than in Case-2. As such, Case-2 consumes more district heating than Case-3.

In Case-4, the VRF-HP system and the central HVAC system operate simultaneously when a load occurs, which means that both systems operate at low PLR, which lowers the efficiency of the system. The electric energy consumption in Case-4 is, therefore, higher than in Case-2 and Case-3. Notably, in Case-4, the VRF-HP system is responsible for 50% of the load, which requires more capacity than that installed in Case-2 and Case-3.

Considering both district heating consumption and electric energy consumption, Case-2, where the central HVAC system operates primarily, has less electric energy consumption than Case-3, where the VRF-HP system is the main system. However, because the central HVAC system is the main system, Case-2 uses more district heating energy than Case-3.

As regards all energy consumption, Case-3 consumes less energy than Case-2.

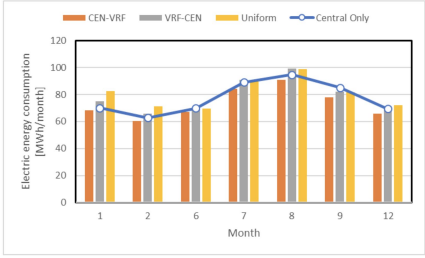


Figure 6. Comparison of monthly electric energy consumption in each caseHP system has been installed

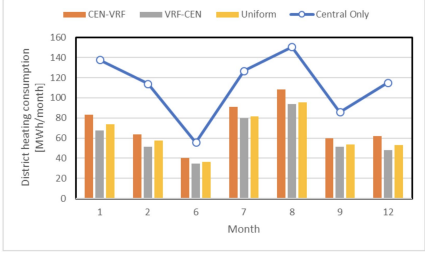


Figure 7. Comparison of monthly district heating consumption in each case

CONCLUSION

The purpose of this study is to identify the capacity of additional HVAC systems, ensure indoor thermal comfort, and propose an energy-efficient HVAC operation strategy for buildings with HVAC systems that do not have sufficient capacity.

The proposed load distribution method in this study is to operate the VRF-HP system as the main system and the central HVAC system as a secondary system (Case-3). In this case, the required installation capacity of the VRF-HP system is smaller than in the uniform method (Case-4), and the energy consumption is less than that of both the existing HVAC system (Case-1) and Case-2, which has a different strategy.

In the future, we will consider factors other than the HVAC systems, such as windows and shading systems, to reduce building loads, and we will suggest the optimal HVAC system installation capacity and control method for the minimized building loads.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This study was supported by the R&D Project (No. 20180576-001) of the Korea Institute of Civil Engineering and Building Technology.

REFERENCES

The American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air-Conditioning Engineers (ASHRAE). 2014. *ASHRAE Guideline 14-2014. Section 5.3.3.3.10.*

Luddeni. G., Kararti. M., Pernigotto. G., and Gasparella. A. 2018. *An analysis methodology for large-scale deep energy retrofits of existing building stocks: Case study of the Italian office building.* Sustainable Cities and Society.

Biswas. K., Patel. T., Shrestha. S., Smith. D., and Desjarlais. A. 2019. *Whole building retrofit using vacuum insulation panels and energy performance analysis.* Energy and Buildings.

Somasundaram. S., Chong. A., Wei. Z., and Thangavelu. S. R. 2020. *Energy saving potential of low-e coating based retrofit double glazing for tropical climate.* Energy and Buildings.

The U.S. Department of Energy (U.S.DOE). 2018a. *Getting Started version 9.0.1.* The U.S. DOE: Washington, DC, USA.

The U.S. Department of Energy (U.S.DOE). 2018b. ASHRAE 2005 HOF *Materials.idf.*

Pacific Northwest National Laboratory (PNNL). 2009. *Infiltration Modeling Guidelines for Commercial Building Energy Analysis.*

EAAE-ARCC INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE

2nd VALENCIA INTERNATIONAL BIENNIAL OF RESEARCH IN ARCHITECTURE

11-14 NOV 2020

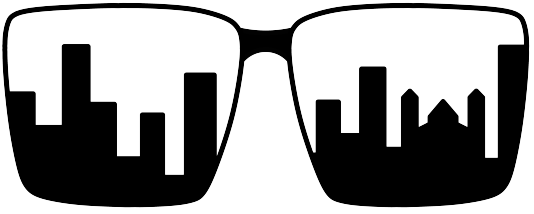
THE ARCHITECT AND THE CITY

VOLUME 2

EAAE-ARCC INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE

2nd VALENCIA INTERNATIONAL BIENNIAL OF RESEARCH IN ARCHITECTURE

11-14 NOV 2020



THE ARCHITECT AND THE CITY

VOLUME 2

UNIVERSITAT POLITÈCNICA DE VALÈNCIA

ESCOLA TÈCNICA SUPERIOR D'ARQUITECTURA

Publisher:

Editorial Universitat Politècnica de València, 2020
http://www.lalibreria.upv.es
ISBN 978-84-9048-842-3 (Set of two volumes)
978-84-9048-981-9 (Volume 1)
978-84-9048-982-6 (Volume 2)
DL: V-748-2021
DOI: https://doi.org/10.4995/EAAE-ARCC-IC.2020.13832
Ref. 6568_01_01_01

EAAE-ARCC International Conference & 2nd VIBRArch: The architect and the city. / Editorial Universitat Politècnica de València

Conference Chair:

Ivan Cabrera i Fausto

Steering Committee:

Oya Atalay Franck
Hazem Rashed-Ali
Ilaria Valente
Ivan Cabrera i Fausto

Organizing Committee:

Ernesto Fenollosa Forner
Ángeles Mas Tomás
José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers
Lluís Bosch Roig
José Luis Higón Calvet
Alicia Llorca Ponce
Maite Palomares Figueres
Ana Portalés Mañanós
Juan María Songel González
Mª Mercedes Cerdá Mengod

Design and Logistics:

Mariví Monfort Marí
Marcos Lizondo Chardí
Maria Piqueras Blasco

Scientific Committee:

Doreen Adengo
Adengo Architecture, Kampala

Fernando Agrasar Quiroga
Universidade da Coruña

Naime Esra Akin
Beykent University

Ajla Aksamija
University of Massachusetts Amherst

Ahmed K. Ali
Texas A&M University

Ana Almerich Chuliá
Universitat Politècnica de València

Miguel Alonso del Val
Universidad de Navarra

Adolfo Alonso Durá
Universitat Politècnica de València

Eva Álvarez Isidro
Universitat Politècnica de València

Cecilie Andersson
Bergen School of Architecture

Isabelle Anguelovski
Universitat Autònoma de Barcelona

Craig K. Anz
Southern Illinois University

César Aquino Insfrán
Universidad Autónoma de Encarnación

Eugenio Arbizzani
Sapienza Università di Roma

Maziar Asefi
Ryerson University

Izaskun Aseguinolaza Braga
Euskal Herriko Unibertsitatea

Oya Atalay Franck
Zurich University of Applied Sciences and Arts

Pnina Avidar
Fontys Hogescholen Tilburg

Rahman Azari
Illinois Institute of Technology

Marilda Azulay Tapiero
Universitat Politècnica de València

Ángela Baldellou Plaza
Observatorio del CSCAE

Berta Bardí i Milà
Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya

César Bargues Ballester
The Getty Conservation Institute

Michela Barosio
Politecnico di Torino

José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers
Universitat Politècnica de València

Luisa Basset Salom
Universitat Politècnica de València

Genevieve Baudoin
Kansas State University

Liliana O. Beltrán
Texas A&M University

Julio Bermúdez
The Catholic University of America

Henriette Bier
Technische Universiteit Delft

Manuel Blanco Lage
Universidad Politécnica de Madrid

INDEX

VOLUME 1

VOLUME 2

5

BLOCK 5: A FUTURE BASED ON TECHNOLOGY

PAPER #5.01

MAPPING THE CITY: DATASCAPE AS A TOOL FOR REPRESENTING THE INVISIBLE

Başak Uçar[a]
[a]TED University, Ankara, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Being an abstract system that translates and reconstructs the real phenomena, map had a long history of recording and interpreting the data. Practiced with different techniques in different periods and contexts, it has always been considered as a preeminent way of collecting, organizing and representing the data. However, map also inherits the potential of representing more than the reality and denotes new and unacknowledged conditions, which initiate the use of maps as generative tools that mediate between real and possible configurations.

Advances in technology and the use of digital design tools initiated a radical shift in communication and mapping techniques, which enabled to acquire, interpret and use complex data. Defining a shift in the conventional mapping practices, this contemporary approach of working with big and complex data engages with what is 'unknown', 'invisible' or 'discreet'. This shift necessitates the acknowledgement of alternative ways of examining and conveying information as well as its visualization. 'Datascapes' are considered as multilayered and multidimensional representations of complex data, which not only represent the data visually or numerically, but also inherit a particular 'eidetic argument'. Since they hold the data in an interpretative manner, they stimulate the designer's creativity and opens up new grounds for explorations. However, datascapes are not static representations confined with the two dimensional representation medium, rather may be configured and represented in various forms, which can be updated simultaneously and result in ephemeral maps of complex matters. These maps can represent the ever-changing relations and ever-expanding data, and can be used to map the visible and invisible data of the contemporary city.

KEYWORDS

Mapping; datascape; representation.

INTRODUCTION

Being an abstract system that translates and reconstructs the real phenomena, map had a long history of recording and interpreting the data. Practiced with different techniques in different periods and contexts, it has always been considered as a preeminent way of collecting, organizing and representing the data. Besides its conceptualization as a visual instrument (Corner, 2011) for annotating and exposing the information in an organized and readable manner, map is also embraced as a tool for reading the visible or invisible information.

Although associated mostly with the graphical representation of a city, maps are also used for understanding things, conditions, processes or events (Harley and Woodward, 1987), which facilitates their use as tools rather than mere graphical representations. Going beyond the reproduction of a bird eye view of the city that provide layers of geographical information, maps help to understand the complexity of the urban conditions and provide different layers of data. Mapping practices that achieve the graphical integrity and consistency of data interpretation enable the understanding of

existing relations and realities of the situation/site/event/processes through various layers of information sets.

However, a map also inherits the potential of representing more than the reality and denotes new and unacknowledged conditions, which initiate the use of maps as generative tools that mediate between real and possible configurations. James Corner identifies mapping as a creative activity, which both reveals and realizes the hidden potential through uncovering realities, even the unseen or unimagined ones (Corner, 2011). Practices that consider the map as a creative tool for reading and understanding the conditions, rather than an operational tool of measuring or defining the existing conditions has the potential of activating new readings. Corner differentiates these two approaches and in reference to the statements of Gilles Deleuze and Felix Guattari, he labels the maps that reproduce the already known and visible as *tracings* (Corner 2011). In his main reference for this differentiation Deleuze and Guattari states that: 'What distinguishes the map from the tracing is that it is entirely oriented toward an experimentation in contact with the real. The map does not reproduce an unconscious closed in upon itself; it constructs the unconscious' (Deleuze and Guattari, 2004)

Therefore, in order to reveal the potential of the map and to use it as a productive instrument, it is necessary to go beyond the routine of collecting, recording, assembling and representing the visible conditions and to appreciate the reading of the invisibles. Overcoming the limitations of the tracings and activating the new readings that reveal the invisibles enrich the mapping practices and expose the potential of a map as an operational and creative instrument.

1. CONTEMPORARY DRIVES

Advances in technology and the use of digital design tools also support the conceptualization of the map as a creative instrument, which embraces and exposes the invisibles in mapping practices. The radical shifts in communication and mapping techniques, as well as increased capabilities of gathering, storing and processing information enabled to acquire, interpret and use complex data. Altering the conventional mapping practices, this contemporary approach of working with big and complex data engages with what is 'unknown', 'invisible' or 'discreet'. This shift necessitates the acknowledgement of alternative ways of collecting, processing and conveying information as well as its visualization.

Computers and their variances are embedded the in all aspects of our lives in the recent years as a consequence of the miniaturization of the computer hardware, maximization of computational and storing capabilities of computers, expansion of network capacities, as well as the development of communication manners. Urban environments are occupied with data collectors, processors and archives, where huge amount of data is made accessible and visible to the society and the designers. Immersed with these abilities, the contemporary city gains the ability of storing and sharing its data through various layers. Massive amount of data is stored, processed and conveyed continuously since the cities are generating new and fresh data in an increasing speed and variety. The complex and big data accessed and processed by the advanced use of technology should be mapped to reveal the multidimensional view of the cities, either visible or invisible.

However, reconceptualization of mapping can be defined both as a revised practice, which is diversified with huge amount of data entry, and also can be considered as an instrument for dealing with the massive data exceeding the limits of human cognition and perception. This paper specifically focuses on the practices where mapping is used as a way of visualizing and understanding data. Through questioning how the data-driven mapping

practices of the recent years changed our definition, understanding and visualization of the city, it is aimed to discuss whether or how they differ from the conventional mapping practices. Considering the conventional and contemporary mapping practices, it is possible to assert that all mapping practices are defined though a process of gathering and interpreting objective or subjective data. However, the contemporary practices that are dependent more on the digital tools and computational capabilities of humans and devices can be asserted to provide deeper insights to the city and the actors involved in it.

The amount of available and operational data defines a dramatic shift in how humans understand, define and visualize the cities. However, changes defined through the use of data are not only in city scale and has affected all sections of the life, as data has become the 'de facto standard through which the world is ordered and understood' (Boyd and Crawford, 2012). The current tendency of understanding the world (cities, science, business etc.) and human through the data -mainly through the big and incomprehensible amount of data- necessitates the extension of humans perceptive and cognitive capabilities, which results in significant changes in the society. Although the increasing tendency for rendering the world through numbers is an ever-present debate (Scott, 1998), the scale of current data sets defines a radical change in the society and hence should be handled with a different mind set. Witnessing the difficulties of dealing with the complex and big data necessitates the adoption of a new mind set and instrumental approach, since the conventional approaches will not be effective in dealing with the multidimensionality of the large data sets.

With a specific emphasis on the city mapping practices, it can be stated that gathering, processing and visualizing the multidimensional and huge amount of data gathered and processed with the contemporary tools and models enables to focus on which was not visible in the conventional maps. During the recent years, it is aimed to work with the *unacknowledged* features of the city and introduce them as another layer of the multidimensional maps defined through the use of technological advances (Amoroso, 2015). However, such an approach to expose the city with its *visible* and *invisible* features necessitates an alternative mapping technique. Since these maps are not expected to only document the existing but also bring the invisible information to the forefront and make it visible, they should be open to unpredicted readings and interpretations (Amoroso, 2015). Hence, they should be structured different than the static and flat conventional maps and should be flexible enough to gather new data, host its interaction with other data sets and sustain its visualization.

Making use of technological advances and new modes of visualization, alternative readings can be provided through the integration of large sets of data, which in turn can also be embraced to understand these data sets. Therefore, attaining the flexibility of the map gains importance, when the continuous input from the city and its actors are considered. Since the data provided by and within the city is continuously changing and this change can be recognized, gathered, recorded by the technological habitat of the city, the mapping is also altered continuously and is never finalized. The maps defined through the computational tools and processes can represent the ever-changing relations and ever-expanding data, and can be used to map the visible and invisible data of the contemporary city.

2. AN ALTERNATIVE MAPPING_Naked City

The search for mapping the invisible features of the city or studying with unsteady and ever changing data is not specific to the contemporary approaches of the digital world. Rather, there have been various attempts of mapping the invisible, unstable, subjective and ever changing information. These maps were also questioning the available techniques of mapping and were proposing ways of widening the visual perspective to be able to visualize and manage information. A specific example of this search, which is also consider by many references as a critical shift in the history of mapping, is the concept of psycho-geographic mapping studied by Guy Debord.

Guy Debord was a key figure of Situationist International, which was an interdisciplinary organization active in Europe in the mid-20th century attempting to return the map to everyday life and to the unexplored, repressed topographies of the city (Corner, 2011). Debord defined psychogeography as: "the study of the specific effects of the geographical environment…on the emotions and behavior of individuals" (Debord, 2008) and made a series of studies on the Paris map, which were not mere representations of the cityscape. Rather, Debord's studies were reflecting the subjective inputs such as perceptions and desires of the human. *The Naked City* map was produced in 1957 by Debord through taking nineteen sections from the original map of Paris, which were reassembled in a subjective manner considering the experience and the desires of the human. Defining this work as a construct that creates a synthesis between the existing conditions and the human experience, Debord also added red arrows to the map (printed in black ink), which illustrate the "spontaneous turns of direction" between the fragments (McDonough, 1994). The fragments and the turns are all defined according to the personal experience of Debord when he wandered along the streets and alleys of the city, defining his own path through turning here and there (McDonough, 1994). Therefore, the arrows together with the fragments- reflect the desires and experience of the human through the city. The produced map is an ephemeral, subjective and personalized one, where the invisible desires and experience of the human is brought forth and opened up new discussions on different aspects of the city ranging from politics to perception.

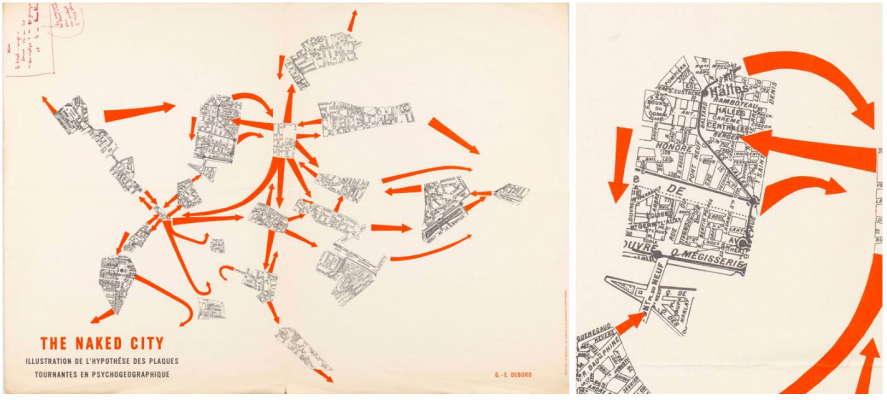


Figure 1. The Naked City map produced by Guy Debord. (1957)

3. DATASCAPES

Guy Debord's approach of considering the fluidity of the city and bringing forth its unknown features dependent on the personal and subjective inputs, initiated the studies that aim to define a deep awareness of the unquantifiable and immaterial qualities of the city. James Corner defines this approach as a creative one and outlines mapping as a process of a strategic and imaginative drawing-out of relational structures, rather than an indiscriminate listing and inventorying of conditions as in a tracing, table or chart (Corner, 2011).

Considering the complexity of the city and the relationship between the city, citizens and the society, the maps are expected to represent the dynamic relationships of the city. For that reason, they are structured to collect, interpret and represent the subjective inputs and experimental data through its multiple layers, besides the objectively constructed data through numeric and quantitative values. In this approach, maps are conceptualized as creative processes, which enable to collect, process and represent various types of data.

One significant development that initiated a radical shift in mapping processes and supported their definition as creative processes is the advances in technology and the use of digital design tools, which enabled to acquire, interpret and use complex data. Over the past few decades, maps have been re-conceptualized to support the creative processes through using the advantages provided with the digital media and computational abilities. Their further development can be asserted to initiate new techniques and definitions of mapping and widened the capabilities of the designer to investigate and interpret the urban data. Defining a shift in the conventional mapping practices, this contemporary approach of working with big and complex data engages with what is 'unknown', '**invisible**' or 'discreet'. These 'new' maps, which enable the representation of the invisibles of the city through the multilayered data, are considered as alternative approaches that re¬-vision and rethink the mapping and urbanism of the contemporary city (Amoroso, 2010).

This shift necessitates the acknowledgement of alternative ways of examining and conveying information as well as its visualization. 'Datascapes' are considered as multilayered and multidimensional representations of complex data, which not only represent the data visually or numerically, but also inherit the potential of influencing the mapping and design processes (Lootsma, 1999). Therefore, datascapes hold the potential to go beyond statistical descriptions and serve as creative grounds for designers. James Corner describes datascapes as representing "objectively" constituted data through numbers, quantities or facts in knowingly selective ways to construct or suggest new spatial formations (Corner, 1998). He differentiates datascapes from the quantitative maps and states that 'they are designed not only to reveal the spatial effects of various shaping (eg, regulatory, zoning, legal, economic, and logistical rules and conditions), but also to construct a particular eidetic argument" (Corner, 1999). Questioning the quantitative and creative potentials of mapping, the term eidetic is used by Corner to discuss the works that represent and mimic the reality and the ones triggering the creativity. He defines eidetic as referring "to a mental conception that may be picturable, but may be equally acoustic, tactile, cognitive, or intuitive" which is "unlike purely retinal impressions of pictures, eidetic images contain a broad range of ideas that lie at the core of processes of creativity" (Corner, 1998) Through point out the potential of eidetic conditions to engender, unfold and participate in emergent realities, Corner underlines their stimulating power for creativity.

Referring to WJ. T. Mitchell's comparison of a picture and an image, where the difference between a specific kind of visual

representation (the 'pictorial" image) and an image (verbal, acoustic, mental images) were discussed, Corner identifies the maps as images holding eidetic arguments (Corner, 1999). Through these arguments, the designer can both represent the reality and also reformulate given conditions, which may lead to new interpretations and innovative solutions (Corner, 1999). Since these eidetic arguments facilitate the subjective inputs introduced of the designer, they enable and welcome alternative reading and interpretations of the conditions. With this potential, they differ from the mere visual representations of quantitative maps and enable the *imaging* of data in instrumental ways (Corner, 1999).

Use of digital medium also affected its instrumental use and enabled multi-layered and continuous data input, which enable to render complex interrelations and interactions. They are not static representations confined with the two-dimensional representation medium, rather may be configured and represented in various forms. They can represent the ever-changing relations and ever-expanding data, which can be updated simultaneously and result in ephemeral maps of complex matters. They also hold the data in an interpretative manner, which stimulate the designer's creativity, enable they future readings and open up new grounds for explorations.

In the late 1990's, when the influences of the shifts defined through the use of digital medium and increased computational capabilities were asking for reassessment of the tools and approaches in use, Dutch architectural firm MVRDV questioned the conventional mapping processes and experimented on datascaping. Their approach to map the urban phenomena through datascaping was a provocative one, which extended the definition of mapping through the use of digital medium. In their publication Metacity/Datatown, MVRDV questioned the contemporary conditions of the city and the inadequateness of the ways used by designers to understand the data provided by the city that exceeds the perception and comprehension of the human. Considering a fictional and extreme scenario, where the current population of the Netherlands was multiplied to increase the data produced by the city, they studied data of the city and / city as data. Through using the qualitative

Figure 2 (left). One large red cube is created measuring over one and half kilometers on edge to represent a massive volume that would contain all the inhabitants of Datatown.
Figure 3 (right). Landscaped datascapes, created by waste emerge as hills and mountainous forms, which create a new landscape.

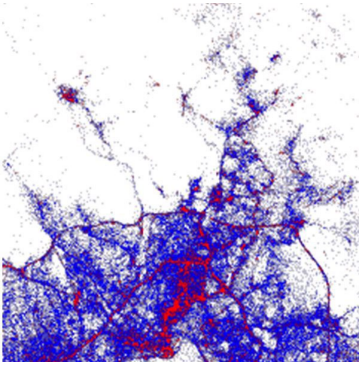
(visual approaches) to signify the quantitative (numerical data) data, MVRDV studied the scenario in two scales where Metacity relates to the whole world and Datatown relates to the Netherlands (Amoroso, 2010). The data gathered through the analysis of the spatial, social and economic consequences of the proposed population was studied both numerically and visually (Amoroso, 2010). Statistical analysis and use of numerical expressions were considered as essential tools to grasp the complexity of the data available, document and process it. However, the visual expression of these numeric values to attain a comprehensible form that abstracts the multiple layers of data in a powerful and yet informative way and also stimulates the creativity of the process. The visual images produced in Metacity/Datatown project can be considered as eidetic arguments, which initiate future scenarios of the city through imaging the statistical data in visual form. In this respect they are differentiated from the conventional maps, which picture the reality through representations.

Considering the uncanny relationship of the maps with real, where they are defined to be abstractions, that initiate new conditions and reading, datascapes provided by MVRDV can also be regarded as maps (Amoroso, 2010). Through considering the extreme scenarios producing complex and multidimensional data, these datascapes deal enable to translate the changing conditions and make future reflections on the urban situations. Processed digitally, these datascapes both reflect the reality and also define an uncanny relationship with the real, which liberates the designer to make predictions, speculations and new readings.

With the increased computational capacity of the twenty first century, map designers also integrated subjective and experience based data, which can be considered as a consequence of the conception of city as a multi-layered entity. Rooted from the experience based maps of Situationists, the contemporary maps have the potential of being datascapes representing not only the visibles and invisibles of the city as a physical object, but also consider it as a complex and emergent system generated through dynamic relations (Urry, 2005). In this system, the data of the human also gains importance, since they are one of the actors of these dynamic relations. These mapping practices ¬-that consider the experiences of the humans and consider the data provided by them within the multiple layers of the map- inherit the potential of providing new readings of the city. They enable to draw the invisibles of the city and explore its immaterial and embodied data.

One significant example of these experimental maps is produced by Eric Fischer, which visualizes the relationship between the social media posts and the location of the author. Introducing Geotagger's World Atlas project, Fischer aims to uncover how people interact with the cities and uses geo-tagged photographs of the cities or tweets in social media. Focusing on a specific period, Fischer attains a huge amount of data to be visualized, which provided the invisible interaction patterns and new data layers of the cityscapes.

Such practices enable to draw the invisibles of the city and explore its immaterial data, which focuses on the relationship between the individual and the city. These subjective mapping practices can also be considered as datascapes, since the datascape holds the flexibility of holding any kind of related with geography, sociology, economy, traffic or personal inputs. They highlight the subjective input from the human and investigate the relationship between the human and the space through analyzing the subjective aspects related with space (emotions, memories, personal experiences etc.) (Perkins, 2009). These practices benefit from the visual power of the mapping to abstract and comprehend the data, communicate with the designer/reader and to initiate new readings of the relations. The data provided



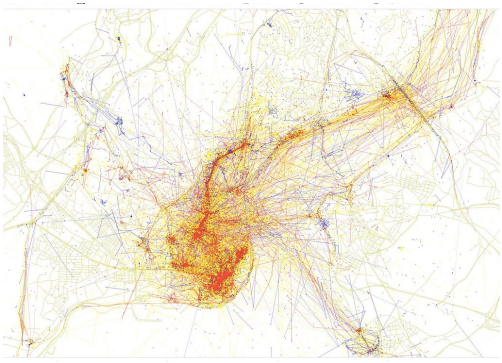


Figure 4 (left). The map visualizes the tweets of residents in İstanbul (identified with blue spots) and out-of-towners, namely the tourists (identified with red spots).
Figure 5 (right). The map visualizes the photographs shared by of residents in İstanbul (identified with blue spots) and out-of-towners, namely the tourists (identified with red spots), where yellow one might be either.

by the subjective definition may reveal the invisible relations, evoke unexpected readings and produce visual images triggering the creative processes of mapping. This aim of investigating the relationship between the human and the city, recalls the psychogeographic maps of Situationists, where it is possible to trace the similarities between these two approaches and define the datascapes including subjective data inputs as arrays of these psychogeographic maps.

With all types of data input the maps turns out to be multilayered and represent the collective invisibles of the society. Since the data becomes available and accessible with the advances in technology, its use in various phases of design and decision-making processes increase significantly. This change in the state of data enabled to map the geospatial data collected from the users, which diversifies the subjective inputs to the datascape and also shift the scale of the data set drastically. Compared to the psychogeographic maps of Situationists, where one or a limited number of subjective data were mapped, contemporaray studies hold the potential of gathering, analyzing and visualizing data provided from various subjects.

An up-to-date example of this approach is provided by Bits'n Bricks office where location mining and web scraping were used to gather data in urban scale for İstanbul. Collecting the publicly avaliable data retrieved from the urban sources they collected the data of the shared images by tourists (through their Flickr accounts) in İstanbul and tried to map the attraction points (Bits'n Bricks) They also provided an association between the routes provided by mobile map applications and the attraction point-instagram post maps (Figure 6). The produced maps read the geospatial data and provide insight on the visibles and invisibles of the city.

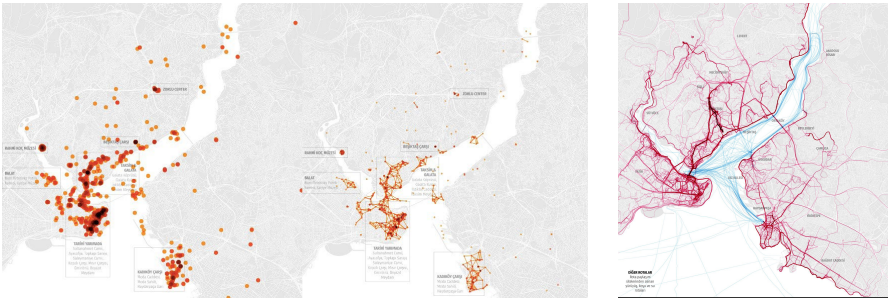


Figure 6. Mapping the attraction points for tourists in Istanbul, through processing the data provided by shared photographs.

CONCLUSION

Contemporary mapping practices that make use of the advances of the technology enable to gather, process, and visualize huge amount of data, where the ubiquitous data production feeds the dataset simultaneously and continuously. In line with the developments in the technology, changing lifestyles also motivates us to produce and share the data and hence become a part of the big data pool. Continuous update of the data sets to be considered in mapping also changes the validity of the mapping, since it evolves with the data input. Their short-term validity can be considered as an important shift, since the arguments and representations expire rapidly. These shifts in the definition and use of data necessitate the reconsideration of conventional mapping techniques to respond to these changes. Although alternative mapping techniques have been applied throughout the history, the experienced shifts request a different mindset and processes to be use in mapping practices.

In order to develop a new approach that may enable to understand how the city functions in line with its citizens, the conventional mapping practices should be updated to hold multiple layers of information; including the unexplored, speculative and subjective ones. These multi-layered studies necessitate going beyond being mere visual representations of the existing realities and trigger creative processes and initiate interpretations of the data sets. However, the gathered data from the collective and multiple sources are usually raw data, which has to be filtered, organized, categorized and read, which requires an interdisciplinary group of expertise. Therefore, mapping cannot be an individual practice but should be considered as a process guided by a group of experts.

REFERENCES

Amoroso, Nadia. 2010. *The Exposed City: Mapping the Urban Invisibles.* Routledge.

Amoroso, Nadia. 2015. *Representing Landscapes: Digital.* Routledge.

Bits'n Bricks. *Journalism Series #2: Tourists of Istanbul.* Available at: http://bitsnbricks.com/data-journalism-series-02-tourists-of-istanbul/

Boyd, Danah and Crawford, Kate. 2012. 'Critical Questions for Big Data.' I*nformation, Communication & Society,* 15:5, 662-679

Corner, James. 1998. "Operational Eidetics: Forging New Landscapes." *Harvard Design Magazine,* Fall, 22–26.

Corner, James. 1999. "The Agency of Mapping: Speculation, Critique and Invention." *Mappings.* Ed. Denis Cosgrove. London: Reaktion Books, 213–252.

Corner, James. 1999. "Eidetic Operations and New Landscapes." *Recovering Landscape: Essays in Contemporary Landscape Architecture.* Ed. James Corner. New York: Princeton Architectural Press, 152–169.

Debord, Guy. September 1955. 'Introduction to a Critique of Urban Geogra¬phy.' Trans. Ken Nabb. *Les Lèvres Nues #6.* Available at: http://www.cddc.vt.edu/sionline/presitu/geography.html

Deleuze, Gilles and Guattari, Felix. 2004. *A Thousand Plateaus: Capitalism and Schizophrenia.* Minneapolis: Continuum International.

Harley, J.B and Woodward, David. 1987. *The History of Cartography.* Chicago: The University of Chicago Press.

McDonough, Thomas F. 1994. "Situationist Space." October. *The MIT Press*. Vol. 67, 58-77.

Lootsma, Bart. 1999. Synthetic Regionalization: The Dutch Landscape Toward a Second Modernity in Recovering Landscape. *Essays in Contemporary Landscape Architecture.* Ed. J. Corner. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Perkins, C. 2009. "Performative and Embodied Mapping." *International Encyclopaedia of Human Geography.* London: Elsevier BV, 126–132.

Scott, James C. 1998. *Seeing Like a State: How Certain Schemes to Improve the Human Condition Have Failed.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

PAPER #5.02

INTEGRAL DESIGN FOR URBAN TRANSFORMATION TO A SMART CITY CORE

Marios .C. Phocas[a], Maria Matheou[b]
[a]Department of Architecture, Faculty of Engineering, University of Cyprus, Cyprus
[b] Institute of Lightweight Structures and Conceptual Design, Faculty of Civil and Environmental Engineering, Stuttgart, F.R. Germany

ABSTRACT

Urban unities of sustainable development may act as transformers of knowledge and technological advancement achieving thus improved social, working and living conditions to their inhabitants. A representative case study of such development refers to the design proposals made in Spring Semester 2017, in the frame of the design studio with an emphasis on technology in the 6th semester of undergraduate studies in Architecture at the University of Cyprus. The design objectives referred to the regeneration of a unified core of Nicosia through the creation of flexible building units of industrial research and technological development, envisioned to act as urban transformers and interaction nodes with the local and global communities of labour, research and production. The presently existing decentralization of the city, as well as the diversity of social groups, lack of production, labour and green areas within the city core have so far led to unfavourable conditions with regard to a respective sustainable urban, architectural and social development of the old city centre. Nine design proposals presented in the current paper refer to timely variant activations of the city core bridge connections with the new city areas, aiming at the transformation of the city core into a smart urban area. The building units are expected to provide flexible and multi-use spaces, where different researchers may work at different time periods. Pedagogically, of equal high importance was the design requirement for the proposed buildings to comprise symbolically prototypes of technological development of respective activities and tectonic structures, while displaying the interrelated areas of function, construction and energy efficiency. The study further demonstrates that different activation scenarios of the buildings and the interactions with the city-core flows of activities are possible.

KEYWORDS

Urban regeneration; smart cities; urban and building transformability; architectural technology; integrated architectural design.

INTRODUCTION

Smart cities have become a landmark in urban planning. They are the result of knowledge-intensive and creative strategies aiming at enhancing the socio-economic, ecological, logistic and competitive urban performance. Smart cities are based on a promising mixture of human capital (e.g. skilled labour force), infrastructural capital (e.g. high-tech communication facilities), social capital (e.g. intense and open network linkages) and entrepreneurial capital (e.g. creative and risk-taking business activities).
Central paradigm of urban transformations to smart regions is the provision of innovation through networking. The key driving force of technological and economic progress essentially depends on cooperation and interaction between firms and different scientific and societal institutions. Such cooperation forms and the associated

personnel and information technological interaction are generally termed "network" (Sydow, 1992), primarily based on the concept of local or regional sustainable developments of so-called regional milieux (Läpple, 2001). The latter can be described as spatial production and actor systems characterised by collective learning processes. For urban development processes, milieux are primarily amplifiers of the city life and productivity. These can generate synergies and thus strengthen regional innovative resources (Läpple, 1994). In this frame, innovation processes are enhanced by local and global cooperation activities among individual research and development institutions and by the specific embedding of operations in the common urban context.

Research and development institutional knowledge-exchange links are important for increasing a city's knowledge economy (Acworth, 2008). In this framework, local proximity and geographic clusters have been important determinants in creating innovative cities, since knowledge and production are generated and realized more efficiently via local proximity and clustering (Audretsch and Feldman, 1996; Audretsch, 2002). These knowledge-production clusters (spaces) enhance the innovativeness of a region. Thus, such urban areas form local spatial foundations for knowledge and local production activities to flourish by bringing out the importance of knowledge- and skills-based activities, knowledge exchange, and spillovers in urban localities (Olcay and Bulu, 2016).

In parallel, the global economy has shifted from an industrial, goods-centered one to an innovation, service-centered one. This occurred gradually as innovative technologies, methods, and concepts evolved over time (Davenport et al., 2006). In today's innovation economy, new value is created through knowledge and intellectual capital and new entrepreneurships are the main drivers of wealth and economic growth, as opposed to the solely traditional physical assets and owners of the industrial economy. While rapid technological developments and increased globalization have forced the economic activity of traditional industries to move to low-cost countries, as Audretsch (2002) suggests, knowledge and innovation are less likely to be transferred across geographical spaces; on the contrary, they concentrate geographically, forming innovation districts and spaces, and eventually turn into innovative cities. Yigitcanlar et al. (2008a) call these urban innovation spaces "knowledge community precincts", mostly referring to place-centered knowledge and innovation clusters. These clusters comprise high-tech manufacturing of knowledge-intensive industrial and business sectors existing in a mix of urban life and culture within central urban locations (Yigitcanlar et al., 2008b). Along these lines, Kline and Rosenberg (1986) define the chain-linked model consisting of basic scientific research, product and process development, and commercialization as the three fundamental stages of the innovation process, where innovation can be initiated at any stage with inputs from internal stages and spillovers. The development of formal relations between research and development with urban unities results in mutual benefits.

In reflecting upon the approach of embedding research and development unities within an existing urban context, a representative case study refers to the design proposals made in Spring Semester 2017, in the frame of the design studio with an emphasis on technology in the 6th semester of undergraduate studies in Architecture at the University of Cyprus. The design objectives referred to the holistic regeneration of a unified core of Nicosia through the creation of flexible building units of industrial research and technological development, envisioned to act as urban transformers and interaction nodes with the local and global communities of labor, research and production. In the

following section, the city core of Nicosia will be briefly described. Subsequently, nine building proposals, a possible scenario of individual building units' activation and interaction with each other and the city core will be briefly presented.

1. NICOSIA CITY CORE

The walled city of Nicosia is an example of medieval town planning, and dates back to the Venetian period (1489-1571). During this time, of major concern was the entity of the urban form rather than the internal structure: the city's Renaissance walls with their 11 bastions and three gates were built to consolidate the town, which had revealed a dispersed character. In this frame, the city core has ten connection links to the new city. The walled city has an area of approximately 200 ha, and comprises the oldest part of the city, symbolizing the geographical and historical significance of Nicosia and Cyprus as a whole. The city core was declared a conservation area within the Nicosia Master Plan in 1989.

Today, Nicosia faces serious and complex problems that are largely caused by the existence of the dividing line, which has contributed to boosting development to the south and the region, and to the general downgrading of the walled city and the wider area of the city centre and the suburb areas along the dead zone. In these areas, there is a degradation of the quality of life and the urban environment, economic stagnation and population decrease. The initial concentration of services, commerce, administration and other core activities in the city centre encouraged the development of a radial road network that functionally results from the existence of a single employment center. Dispersal of employment opportunities and residential areas to wider areas followed in the last decades.

The design of building units of Industrial Research and Technological Development for the Nicosia Core in the Spring Semester 2016-17 aims at the holistic regeneration of a unified core of Nicosia. It is proposed that the

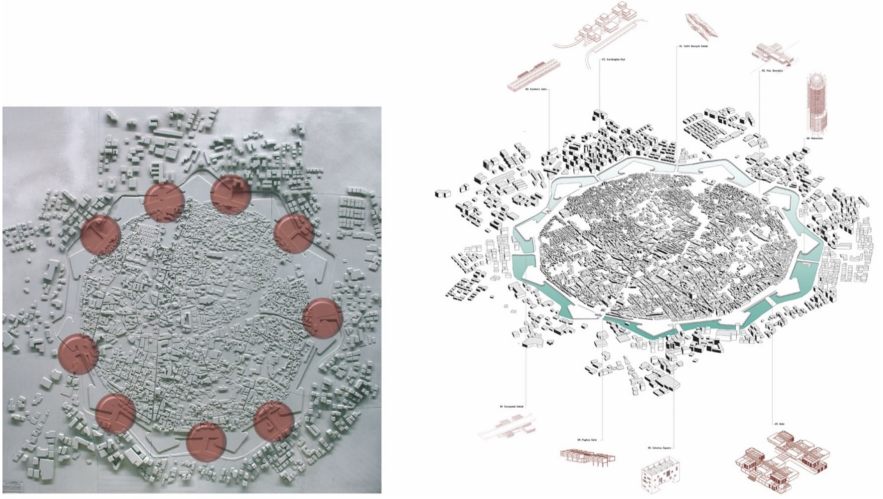


Figure 1. Nicosia city core with bridge connections to new city and corresponding building units

city core transforms into a smart wider urban area with time variant activation of nine bridge connections with the new city of Nicosia through the addition of "temporary" in each case, building units of industrial research and technological development (Fig. 1). In principle, the buildings comprise nodal points of research and technological development in the wider area of south-east Mediterranean, whereas the core of the buildings supports the areas within the city core.

2. BUILDING UNITS

The buildings units' proposals have been developed on the basis of an integrated architectural design approach, i.e. the development of the respective areas of the building morphology, structure, construction and environmental/energy design (Phocas, 2017). In an initial stage the proposed urban space, the functional zones of each building and the structure have been investigated. With the development of a general morphology of individual elements or the entire building, the formulation of an abstract design concept and the coordination between construction, function and form have been pursued. The architectural design has been further developed according to the functional disposition, the structure and the building envelope. Subsequently, the energy efficiency of the building has been investigated. The final stage of development consists of the construction design of the proposed elements and systems in detail.

The building units have a total area of 2000 m² and they are expected to provide flexible and multi-use spaces, where different researchers may work at different time periods. In all cases, of equal high importance is the design requirement for the proposed buildings to comprise symbolically a prototype of technological development of contemporary structures, or and of their internal special functional character, at aesthetic and morphological level, and while displaying the interrelated areas of function, construction and energy efficiency.

The building unit at Archbishop Makarios B bridge is directly positioned on the moat level of the city walls connecting the old with the new city. It consists of a tall skeleton structure acting as an outrigger system, with the prefabricated units of private and public usages plugged into (Fig. 2). A central atrium hosts vertically the exhibition of the building,

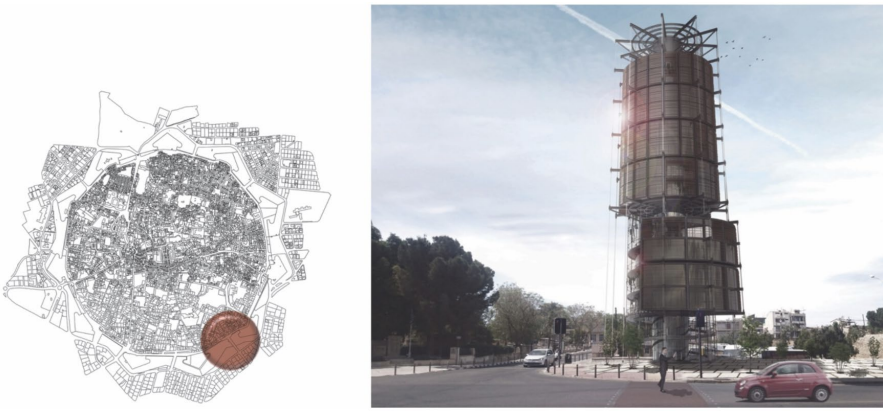


Figure 2. Building unit at Archbishop Makarios B

and all functional levels are accessed on the periphery of this open space through a ramp. Thus, the building develops vertically at the specific site.The building complex shown in Fig. 3 is positioned on both sides of the Dorou Loizou bridge. The building sections are interconnected at the moat level of the city walls underneath, through public spaces. At the street level, the building offers on both sides a window of related exhibits. On the level above, private and semi-public research spaces are accommodated. The building complex forms a gate for the main commercial circulation vain to the old city core.

The building at Solomou square extends from the moat level of the city walls over the level of the square in six floors (Fig. 4). The semi- and public areas of the center are distributed over the height, whereas the private areas are only visible by the public. The structural disposition enables openings at the floor levels, so that the functions are interrelated throughout the building. The circulation is achieved through a ramp on the periphery. A glass envelope with integrated adjustable sun-protection elements enlightens the appearance of the building. hus, the building acts like a showcase of its contents and activities in attracting the public flows within from the main bus stations at the site.

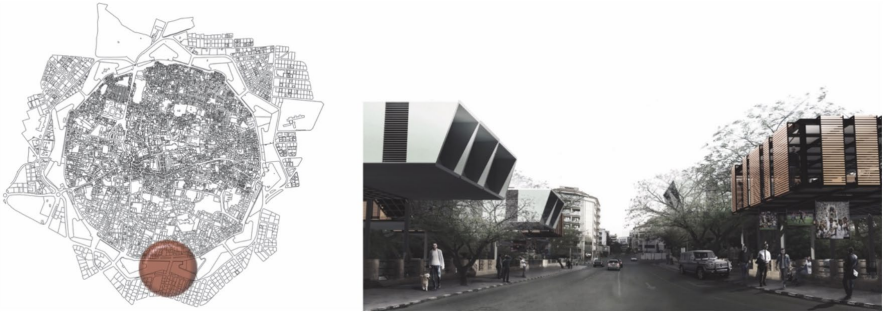


Figure 3. Building unit at Dorou Loizou

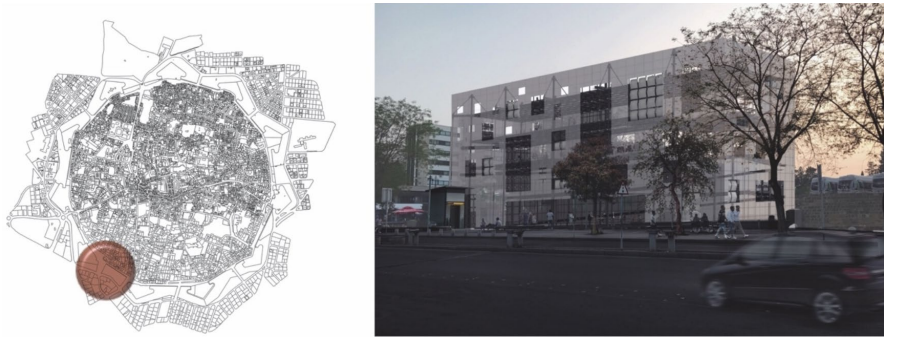


Figure 4. Building unit at Solomou Square

The building at the Pafos Gate consists of two main sections that are connected through a corridor over the street leading to the old city (Fig. 5). The north section hosts the entrance of the complex and a glassed exhibition space. The first floor hosts the private and semi-public research spaces accessible by the visitors. The façade panel openings adjust to the functional requirements of the corresponding spaces.

The building units at Sarayonu are positioned at the moat level of the city walls (Fig. 6). The main building section is situated below the street level, and extends on one side of the moat. Deployable units adjust through their size, structure and envelope elements to the functional disposition of the program. In this case the building primarily conveys open and closed spaces within the landscape at the moat level.

Figure 5. Building unit at Pafos Gate

Figure 6. Building unit at Sarayonu

The building unit at Kerynia Gate bridges two opposite sides of the city walls with the connecting street to the old city extending underneath (Fig. 7). The public functions are distributed within a main glazed open space. The private spaces are contained in prefabricated lightweight units plugged into the main structure on the back longitudinal side facing the new city. The building acts as a gate to the old city exhibiting the public activities within the old city area.

The building unit at Saracoglu Myd develops along the main connecting street to the old city (Fig. 8). A unified space is placed below the street, containing public spaces. The private spaces are placed on the upper levels of the complex. Three cores with vertical circulation elements connect the cantilever functional units above the street level. The latter consists of truss tubes connected to the cores. The building complex is primarily envisioned to activate the urban area at the moat level of the old city.

Figure 7. Building unit at Kerynia Gate

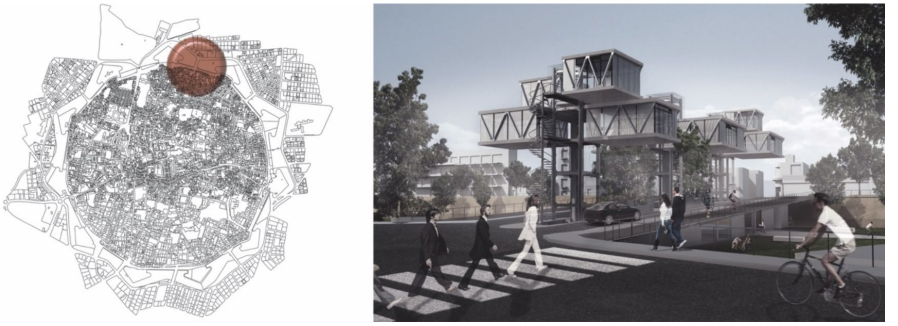


Figure 8. Building unit at Saracoglu Myd

The building unit at Sehit Huseyin Ruso is positioned on the street connecting both city sides, and it transforms the area to a pedestrian zone (Fig. 9). The building is developed in two autonomous sections interconnected at the street level. Each section consists of a mega truss tube, hosting two main functional levels. The public functions are mainly concentrated at the ground level, while the private ones, at the levels above. Thus, the building acts as a passageway at the site.

The building core unit at King George B is grounded at the moat level of the city walls on one side of the connecting street, and it extends over three levels. The building core hosts the exhibition of the center and the vertical circulation elements. The semi-public areas are hosted in prefabricated units positioned at street level and above, and the private research areas, within the main cantilever above the street. The building bridges the street, whereas a steel staircase connects the main cantilever with the park underneath. The building disposes a gate to the old city core (Fig. 10).

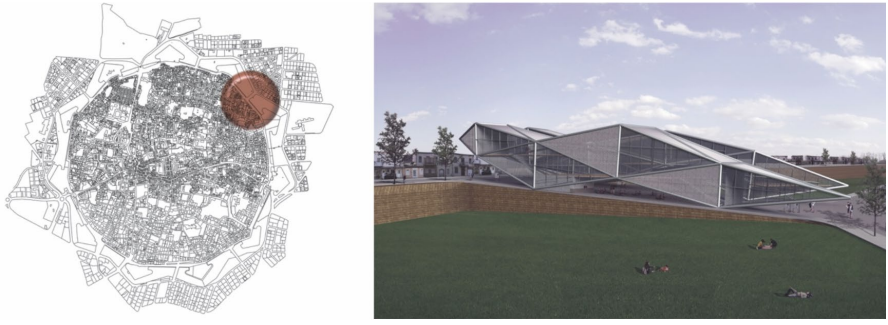


Figure 9. Building unit at Sehit Huseyin Ruso

Figure 10. Building unit at King George B

2.1. Urban activation scenarios

The development of the building units has been based on modularity, light-weight and mass-fabrication to -customization of the components. The buildings' articulation derives from the context of the site and favors a high degree of flexibility of the units' composition. At the same time, the proposals support sharing and networking of functions among different building units within the city grid and by extension, with local urban areas. Different urban activation scenarios may emerge according to the building units realized at different bridge connections to the old city. A case example is shown in Fig. 11, whereas four buildings are activated at a specific time, comprising further a corresponding urban network of research and development within the Nicosia city core. Based on such urban activation scenarios, the old city life and productivity are enhanced. In parallel respective circulation paths, labour, open space and green areas of the city are developed. Further related developments within the old city core are expected to arise due to further urban activations through different buildings' realization and interaction.

CONCLUSION

The current paper has presented design proposals of flexible building units of industrial research and technological development for the city core of Nicosia. In view of the current situation of the city centre, primarily characterized by a degradation of the quality of life and the urban environment, economic stagnation and population decrease, the units are envisioned to act as urban transformers and interaction nodes with the local and global communities of labour, research and production. At the building level, aspects of modularity, light-weight and mass-customization favor the achievement of flexibility for an effective time-dependent interaction of the units at a global and local level, especially within the specific urban context. The architecture developed, provides a particular vision of the future of the area while relying on contemporary technology, and supports flexibility, transformability and adaptability in macro and micro-scale. By extension, embedding research and development institutions within the walled city of Nicosia may further enhance its regeneration and sustainable development. Further investigations of the proposals refer to the socio-economic impact of mixed usages introduction at the urban scale and the application of technology for the achievement of a sustainable regeneration of the old city core.

Figure 11. Urban activation scenario through operation of four building units (Dorou Loizou, Sarayonu, Saracoglu Myd, King George B): Main urban circulation axes, usages and connection areas along the city walls moat

REFERENCES

Audretsch, D.B. 2002. The innovative advantage of US cities. *European Planning Studies*, 10(2), 165–176.

Audretsch, D.B., and Feldman, M.P. 1996. R&D Spillovers and the geography of innovation and production. *American Economic Review*, 86(3), 630–640.

Acworth, E.B. 2008. University-Industry engagement: The formation of the knowledge integration (KIC) model at the Cambridge-MIT Institute. *Research Policy*, 37(8), 1241–1254.

Davenport, T.H., Leibold, M., and Voelpel, S. 2006. *Strategic Management in the Innovation Economy.* Germany: Publicis Corporate.

Kline S.J., and Rosenberg, N. 1986. An overview of innovation. In Landau, R., and Rosenberg, N. (eds.), *The Positive Sum Strategy: Harnessing Technology for Economic Growth. Washington*, D.C.: National Academy Press, 275–305.

Läpple, D. 2001. City and region in an age of globalisation and digitization. *German Journal of Urban Studies,* 40(2), 13–34.

Läpple, D. 1994. Zwischen gestern und übermorgen. Das Ruhrgebiet – eine Industrieregion im Umbruch. In Kreibich, R., et al. (eds.), B*auplatz Zukunft. Dispute über die Entwicklung von Industrieregionen.* Essen, 37–51.

Olcay, G.A., and Bulu M. 2016. Technoparks and technology transfer offices as drivers of an innovation economy: Lessons from Istanbul's innovation spaces. *Journal of Urban Technology*, 23(1), 71–93.

Phocas, M.C. 2017. *Technology-Driven Design Approaches to Utopia*. Stuttgart: Edition Axel Menges.

Sydow, J. 1992. *Strategische Netzwerke: Evolution und Organisation*. Wiesbaden.

Yigitcanlar, T., O'Connor, K., and Westerman, C. 2008a. The making of knowledge cities: Melbourne's knowledge-based urban development experience. *Cities*, 25(2), 63–72.

Yigitcanlar, T., Velibeyoglu, K., and Martinez-Fernandez, C. 2008b. Rising knowledge cities: The role of knowledge precincts. *Journal of Knowledge Management*, 12(5), 8–20.

PAPER #5.03

ARCHITECTURAL ROBOTS: RETHINKING THE MACHINE FOR LIVING IN

Rachel Dickey[a]
[a]University of North Carolina Charlotte

ABSTRACT

As the appearance of robots become more prominent in the built environment, architects face the challenge of exploring design opportunities for their integration. While such a synthesis involves an interest in technological systems and kinetics, it also importantly involves alternative ways of occupying space. This paper outlines the role architectural robotics play in the advancement of the human condition by proposing novel ways of living with and within the machine. Through a critical review of architecture's relationship to the machine paired with the outline of an experimental pedagogy, the intent is to uncover ways for equipping a future generation of architects, not only capable of realizing environments embedded with feedback and dynamism, but also adept in envisioning the design of a better world.

KEYWORDS

Robots; humanism; pedagogy; occupation; feedback.

INTRODUCTION

Like the language of machines that inspired Le Corbusier a century ago, advances in artificial intelligence and robotics have raised questions regarding how these technologies change the way we both design and inhabit space. Thus, contemporary architects are inevitably faced with the challenge of rethinking the creative and technological limits of the discipline. Greg Lynn stresses the need for such developments, when he writes:

> Rather than merely outfitting buildings with technology [and...] rather than implanting empty boxes with artificial intelligence or retrofitting our cities for driverless vehicles, architects should [...] integrate large scale robotics into buildings and urbanism at the very inception of their creative and critical processes [...] to realize not just dynamism and interactivity, but envision new kinds of spaces and structures with a technological integrity that challenges the static status quo. (Lynn 2016, 16).

From this provocation a set of key questions arise asking, how might we, as architects, become active participants in exploring ways robotic technologies are integrated into the built environment and what are the spatial implications and architectural ideas that might emerge from their integration?

The architectural robot legacy, in both its historical and contemporary context, provides a framework for the pedagogical experiment, outlined in this paper, entitled, the *Robot Project*. Taking heed to Beatriz Colomnia's call for radical pedagogies, which "shake foundations, disturbing assumptions rather than reinforcing and disseminating them," (2012) the *Robot Project* seeks to address transformations brought on by new technologies and an information culture. The project recognizes that emerging fields today are exploring the use computers and automation of robots in the home (domotics), in cities (urbotics), and on land (orbotics) (Somalvico 31). While Bill Gates forecasts "a robot in every home" (Somalvico 31), the former dean of architecture at MIT, William Mitchell, envisions homes not as "machines for living" but "as robots for living in" (Kapadia

2010, 48-53). It asks, will a future generation of practicing architects be prepared to address these emerging disciplinary concerns? Similarly to Walter Gropius's description of industrialization as a "'purifying agency' liberating architecture from outmoded technological as well as aesthetic values" (Picon 2014, 58-59) during modernism, the *Robot Project* recognizes that technological innovation can likewise be a driver for epistemological changes, which forces designers to think differently.

1. THE ARCHITECTURAL ROBOT LEGACY

1.1. A Machine for Living in

Importantly, the *Robot Project* is grounded in a much larger historical and contemporary context as defined through the longstanding relationship between architecture and the machine. In Le Corbusier's *Towards a New Architecture,* he envisioned a new world derived from industrialization and his infamous quote, "a house is a machine for living in" first appears. Corbusier situates the quote in the context of the airplane imploring that engineers define the problem of "wishing to fly like a bird" and in response "invent a flying machine" (1986, 113). He then questions how might we, as architects, define and solve the problem of the house. Despite the abundant reference to the machine, its application in modernism focused primarily on style rather than interest in the machine as an instrument. However, 1960's architectural discourse focused on the integration of the machine as way to explore how it might influence both the conceptualization and inhabitation of space from domestic to urban scale.

Post war thinkers like Reyner Banham called for "a restored interest in technology in terms of instrumentality" (Perry 2012, 74). For instance, in Banham's "Anatomy of Dwelling" in collaboration with François Dallegret, he exposes the relationship between technology and domestic life by pointing out that the house is so full of mechanical and electrical services that the instrumentation alone could provide shelter. These drawings acted as a provocation to architects to take a serious approach to technology. Banham also presented these ideas at the 1966 International Dialogue of Experimental Architecture (IDEA). *The Radical Pedagogy* archive describes Banham's talk stating:

> He concluded by asking whether the architect of the future would still find him or herself involved in the "enclosure business" or would instead have turned towards environmental conditioning systems of the type being developed for the space program, from life support suits, to telecommunications helmets and food "shots." (Buckley).

Banham's statement assumed that existing trends in technology would grow and urged architects to look at technological advancements as a precursor for working through the potential impacts on the discipline (Perry 2012, 74). Such early ideas of technological extrapolation focused on adaptable architecture and transformation of space as seen in the designs from many of those 1966 IDEA attendees such as Cedric Price, Archigram, and Yona Friedman. These key players conducted technological experiments that pushed boundaries in architecture and drove resultant ideas regarding ways of living.

Of course, the most notable project for the concept of a reconfiguring building embedded with responsivity was the Fun Palace (1959-1961) proposed by Cedric Price in collaboration with Joan Littlewood, John Frazer, and cyberneticist, Gordon Pask. The Fun Palace proposed a flexible and transformable building able to accommodate a variety of occupation possibilities. The building system included a user interface for reconfiguration along with the ability to autonomously suggest new spatial configurations whenever it would "get bored" with common arrangements. Price believed

providing spatial flexibility was the best way to consider a building's users and he argued that new technology "should both serve the public and further human freedom" (*Ways of Being Political* 2013).

1.2. Architectural Robots a Humanist Project

While the robot legacy in architecture reveals a trend, which exists primarily under a humanist agenda, by striving to explore alternative ways of occupying space in order to enhance the relationship between people and their environments. The exploration of technologically optimistic design practices suggest the line between social activism and a technological agenda is not so distinct. For instance, Buckminster Fuller, saw technology as "a means to redesign society" (Picon 2014, 56). His designs for the Dymaxion house and car "were not only […] meant to revolutionize the building industry, transportation and everyday life; they were also intended to pave the way for a radically different future in which men would roam free on the surface of the globe, live everywhere and fully take advantage of their intellectual capacities" (Picon 2014, 56). In the Potteries Thinkbelt project, Cedric price also appropriated mobility as a means to distribute knowledge. He proposed to occupy a railway system in order to transport and disperse knowledge with the cars behaving as mobile teaching units in addition to "inflatable lecture theaters, foldout desks, and information carrels" in order to provide a means of distributing, sharing, and cultivating knowledge outside of the static campus model (*Changing of the Avant-Garde* 2002).

Urban narratives for softer architecture of the 1960's suggested a liberation from the status quo through flexibility and choice as a means to facilitate density and the expansion of the city. Yona Friedman explored human centered design problems in his project Ville Spatiale, providing an urban infrastructure that supported flexible rearrangement, as a way of having occupants give meaning to their environment through the freedom of individual choice. While Friedman's proposal involved complexity of motion through reconfiguration, the project's focus was to promote the discussion of urban growth by providing the "fundamental right to self-expression of individuals" (*Ville Spatiale*).

Archigram's work provides multiple examples of the integration of various scale robots through the lens of fiction as a way to promote discussion that could lead to change especially different from the ever growing means of suburban life. For instance, their prototype for a house of the future in their exhibition titled, *Living 1990*, included a room with two robots to accommodate moveable services and change various states of walls, ceilings, floors, and furniture. Looking at an urban scale, Archigram's proposal for Walking City envisioned an intelligent infrastructure intended to freely roam the world making decisions about where to move based on resources and production capabilities. Such robotic interventions of the 60's from Friedman to Archigram suggest the capacity for resilient response to natural disaster and also promote an agenda for open boarders in which cities effectively relocate in support of vitality and equal access to resources for all of humanity. In response to skepticism about Archigram's ideas and their relationship to the "human factor," Hans Hollein describes both the social and political agenda behind the work when he writes, "Their ideas are always for people, for a better life for people" (Cook 1999, 6). As Hollein points out in Archigram's work, the architectural robot in its legacy interrogates both practice and culture by exploring novel ways of living with technology and each other.

While Archigram used fiction as a means to deflect questions of actualization, other key players like Nicholas Negroponte founder of the Architecture Machine Group (which later became the MIT Media Lab) sought to realize context responsive buildings.

Negroponte describes the group's vision of "a man-made environment that responds to and is 'meaningful' for him or her" (1975, ii), suggesting responsivity could provide additional significance to the built world. He also describes the goal of "humanism through intelligent machines" (1970, 7) and the desire to "conjure a world where buildings are […] animate, thinking, and emotive beings, which actively house and protect us physically as well as psychologically" (Beaumont 2015). Negroponte's experiments sought not only to promote alliances between architecture and computation, but also strove to find ways to advance the human condition by promoting a symbiosis between man, machine, and the built world.

1.3. The Speed of Society

In contemporary research and design practices, architects have been looking for ways to deal with dynamics and spatial reconfiguration. In projects such as, OMA's Maison Bordeaux in France (1998), Greg Lynn's RV Prototype House designed for the Bienniale Interieur (2012), Axel Kilian's Flexing Room exhibited at the Seoul Biennale of Architecture and Urbanism (2017), and the Hyberbody Group at the Delft University of Technology's projects Musclebody and Muscle Towers (2006), there is a commonality of exploring ways to reconfigure space based on the user needs and/or interaction. In fact, Michael Fox, author of Interactive Architecture, coined the term "robotecture", which explores "human and environmental interaction and behaviors, embedded computational infrastructures, kinetic and mechanical systems and physical control mechanisms" (2009).
Elizabeth Diller, in an interview about the use of moving parts in their practice, explains, "It's not the movement that is important. It's the speed of its responsiveness to the needs of the artist" (Davidson 2016, 59). In this statement she explains the necessity of the artist to not limit ideas or the actualization of ideas. Such freedom within architecture provides a means for the discipline to evolve to the growing needs of occupants within a digital age. In an interview with Sidewalk Lab regarding the development of the Shed along the High Line in New York, Diller describes that society is moving so quickly and it is essential that the architect's work try to respond to the shifting needs of society and the need to create an architecture which is both supple and distinct (Jaffe 2019).

2. ARCHITECTURAL ROBOT PEDAGOGY

2.1. Epistemological Change

Within the context of the historical and contemporary practices involving architectural robots comes a need for a complementary idea about robot pedagogies. Beatriz Colomnia urges for experimental pedagogies in architectural education when writes, "As schools appear to increasingly favor professionalization, they seem to drown in self-imposed bureaucratic oversight, suffocating any possibility for the emergence of experimental practices and failures" (Colomnia 2012). By looking back to the educational experiments of the 60's and 70's, she reminds us of the epistemological changes resulting from pedagogical practices that support a willingness to walk into the unknown. This kind of epistemological change, which forces designers to challenge, question, and rethink, is most important consequence of the subsequently outlined *Robot Project*, at least for now.

2.2. Methodology

Instead of amplifying anxieties about conditions of alienation produced by advanced technologies and machines, the *Robot Project* draws on the history of humanistic concerns seen in the architectural robot legacy and looks for ways that living with and within

the machine permits discovery of newfound intimacies between ourselves, each other, and the world around us. The *Robot Project* was part of a course, of approximately seventy architecture students, that aims to rethink current pedagogies for computational design. It imagines a space of learning that integrates craft and speculation, criticality and creativity, and innovation and social consciousness through production of architectural robots.

Drawing on the definition of a robot, which involves complexity of motion and programmability, paired with the essential qualities of architecture (i.e., space, occupation, light, experience, etc) the project asks students to combine these two characteristics in order to both design and build a working prototype of an architectural robot. Due to the scale and nature of the class (i.e., large scale and conducted outside of the studio setting), the project encouraged self-guided intellectual play through prototyping and workshops in physical computing. For instance, the first workshop was a two hour long design charrette in which the students, working in groups of two, were given a small DC motor and wired battery pack and told to make an object that propels itself forward with materials that are found, recycled, reappropriated, etc. Additional workshops topics included introduction to programming, the basics of physical computing, actuators, sensing, and mechanisms. The project methodology focused on hands on making and prototyping in parallel with modeling in order to see problems related to geometry, materiality, and fabrication. The students also explored historical and contemporary examples of architectural robots to help inform and promote discussion around their own creative narratives.

One of the resulting designs revisited Archigram's Walking City project through the lens of Theo Jasen's Strandbeast using a linkage configuration to both support and accentuate the performative nature of their robot's walking motion (Figure 1). Other student groups envisioned designs for the autonomous cars which separately housed a movie theater, gym, and library in order to provide programmatic amenities during the commute (Figure 2 and 3). Another group sought to explore the use of real time news data to filter out key terms related to gun

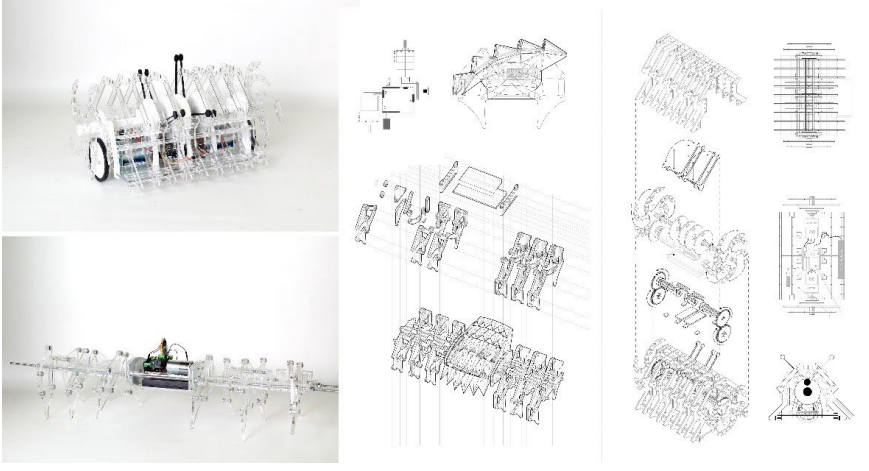


Figure 1. Image of revisited Archigram's Walking City robot through the lens of Theo Jasen's Strandbeast. Source: (Rachel Dickey 2019)

Figure 2. Public library and that roams the city providing access to wifi and distributing knowledge. Source: (Rachel 2019)

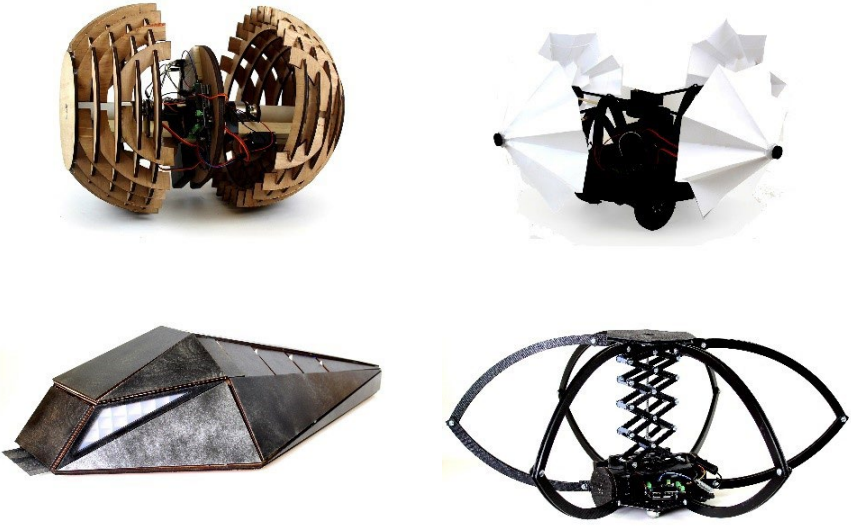


Figure 3. Top left: Autonomous car with 3D cinema display. Top Right: Robot uses real-time news data as input and expands and contracts based on the occurrence of key words related to gun violence. Bottom Left: Robot that reflects signals and remains unseen to other technologies. Bottom right: Expansion robot that temporarily protrudes outward and claims public space for events. Source: (Rachel Dickey 2019)

violence such that their robot would change shape in order visualize conflict in public space and provide a place where conflict is exposed, debated, and transformed (Figure 3). Inspired by Bauhaus pedagogies which included event, performance, and cultural play space, and in lieu of traditional formal design review, the students organized a concluding event and performance of their thirty-nine uniquely designed, fabricated, and programmed robots that strut their computational prowess while walking, rolling, even dancing down a fifty foot long catwalk in their final exam time debut. Driven by Bluetooth technology, and designed and actualized through physical computing and digital fabrication, these robots dared to excite and challenge ideas about the contemporary discourse and discipline of architecture. Evolving from the inherent interest in objects that move, the event also acted as a way to invoke curiosity about the work from faculty and students alike.

Rethinking the culture of design, making, and presentation, the students organized the arrangement of the runway space, designated a DJ to play each robot's theme music during their runway walk, and nominated a series of commentators to actively describe each robot during the runway debut. Some of the descriptions, prepared by each group, read like a detailed high fashion garment summary, while others read like a World Wrestling Federation commencing narrative. Both the project and related event draw a finer line between rigor and play. Similar to the motivations of the Bauhaus, as described by teacher, Johannes Itten when he writes, "Play becomes celebration; celebration becomes work; work becomes play" (Loewenberg 2012, 22). Like Itten's desciption the *Robot Project* and corresponding event try to encourage a design culture of fostering both critical thinking and creativity and provide a play space for responding to a world embedded with technology.

2.3. Takeaways

While a primary objective for the *Robot Project* was to introduce students to computational thinking and adaptive architecture, other architectural problems arose during the project. Students had to consider how to integrate mechanical systems by including their micro-controller, network of motors, gears, power supply, etc. Many for the first time, were exposed to working with integrated systems and specifications in order to understand the basic information related to their actuators, such as ratings, voltages, torque, etc. Additionally the students directly engaged in fabrication problems through both physical and digital prototyping, in which they had to consider material tolerances and material properties such as bending radi, elasticity, and even the coefficient of friction in order to get enough resistance for movement. Thus, the project constraints stemmed from the design problem of making an operational robot relative to their larger narratives regarding transformation of space.

As growing emphasis on information and integrated technologies in the built environment place a new set of requirements on architects, the students were also provided with the opportunity to explore alternatives to previously determined conditions and embrace both quantitative and qualitative characteristics of dynamic systems. The explicit goals for the project seek to explore the boundary between robotics and architecture and promote creativity at their intersection by encouraging novelty with intention. It also strives to introduce students to critical ways of thinking about technological integration in architecture. While the project operated under these objectives, the course also took on a transformation from its traditional pedagogy which shifted focus from the application of computation in design for the generation of new formal languages to the appropriation of

computation as a means for thinking about integrating feedback in architecture.

The difference in shifting focus on computation as formal language to a means of understanding feedback relates to what Theo Spuyroploous, calls "the shift in preoccupation from building as object to building as system" (2011, 425). Early digital architects found interest in this notion of feedback not only related to production of design, but also integrated into the performance of architecture. For instance, Kas Oosterhuis explored shape changing structures using real time content to accommodate changing use over time in the Trans-Ports Multimodal Pavilion (2000). The nodes of the pavilion would change position to allow the overall surface to shift in form. Oosterhuis describes early revelations regarding an adaptable and shifting architecture when they were fabricating the Waterpavilion (1997) with NOX:

> We realized that CNC production machines do not read drawings but process data instead. So we decided to produce data which were directly used by the algorithms running the machines. It was the birth of deep parametric design to production. [….] This triggered me to think of architecture as a dynamic system, not only in the design phase where everything is still moldable, but also in its behavior as a built structure. (Oosterhuis 2017)

Through the lens of the parametric model, Oosterhuis suggested a mindset in which parametric animation does not stop, instead architecture itself could be set of parameters in motion guided by feedback. In other words there was an interest in not limiting architecture to "a static representation of a dynamic process" (Perry 2012, 73), but instead allowing the process to inform a flexible architecture. Thus early digital architects caught up in formal possibilities, like the modernist interest in the machine relative to stylistic concerns, lost sight of its origins, which Oosterhuis explains showed interest in the integration of contingency in architecture. Another important lesson from the class was the consideration of time and speed relative to the built environment. Most students chose to think of architectural robots purely as a means for producing dynamic buildings and spaces and few considered how their robots situated in space change human behavior and activate space differently which is also inherently architectural. Overall the course placed emphasis on design ideas actualized through prototyping rather than efficiency or optimization. Future development of the project and course could include interdisciplinary collaboration between engineers and architects in order to advance kinematic components, while also exploring ways to enhance, define, and accommodate spatial needs. The hope of the *Robot Project* is to generate a new generation of architects that are able to realize architecture as a system, but also equipped in conceiving of novel spaces, environments, and experiences.

CONCLUSION

> Skeptics may well wonder: Why complicate our buildings with robotics? We'd be the first to agree, for example, that buildings should employ windows, not air conditioning and artificial lighting, to make the most of daylight and natural heating and cooling. Still, who would deny that electric lighting and central heating extend the usability of our buildings? We see architectural robotics the same way, as potentially extending and enhancing the use and usability of our built environments. (Gross 2012, 32)

The rapid changes brought on by an information based society and the complexity that exists within negotiating systems and forms relative to varying needs of the occupant have generated a desire for

dynamism and indeterminacy which greatly contrasts with the traditional architectural ideals of determinacy and permanency (Bhatia 2012, 216). The architectural robot legacy and project outlined looks outside the "static status quo" and instead envisions the integration of computation in design as a means for examining feedback directly related to human factors, which could evolve to include flexibility of use and unique forms of experience.

While automation of robots in the built environment is already being discussed by engineers and specialist in human computer interaction, current trends sum up an automated architecture to no more than a "disembodied voice" with voice control systems or "a world of scaffolds and screens" (Kilian 2018, 233; Young 2016, 130). Conversely if we revisit Corbusier's expression and really explore what is might be like to live with or within the machine, opportunities arise for novel spaces and structures that address human needs and ways living, perhaps even needs we never even knew we had or ways of living we have yet to explore. If we, as architects want to be leaders in the discourse and practice of determining the advancement of the built world, then we must carefully reconsider the machine for living and imagine a new set of possibilities for exploring the integration of feedback and responsivity into the built world.

REFERENCES

Beaumont, J. 2015. "Architectures of Firmness and Softness," *Interactive Architecture Lab*, accessed February 17, 2020, http://www.interactivearchitecture.org/architectures-of-firmness-and-softness.html.

Bhatia, N. 2012. "Resilient Infrastructures," *Bracket: Goes Soft*, no. 2: 216-218.

Buckley, C. "International Dialogue of Experimental Architecture (IDEA) 1966," *Radical Pedagogies: Reconstructing*, ed. Beatriz Colomina. accessed February 17, 2020, https://radical-pedagogies.com/search-cases/e17-international-dialogue-experimental-architecture-idea/

Colomina, B., Choi, E., Galan, I., and Meister, A. 2012. "Radical Pedagogies in Architectural Education," last modified September 28, 2012, http://code-collective.cc/radical-pedagogies-in-architectural-education/

Colomina, B. "Radical Pedagogies," accessed February 17, 2020, https://radical-pedagogies.com/

Cook, P. 1999. *Archigram*. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Davidson, C. 2016. "Moving Parts: A Conversation with Liz Diller" *Log, Winter* 36: 48-59.

Fox, M. and Kemp, M. 2009. *Interactive Architecture*. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

"Fun Palace for Joan Littlewood Project, Stratford East, London, England," *MOMA Collection, in 9 + 1 Ways of Being Political: 50 Years of Political Stances in Architecture and Urban Design*, New York: The Museum of Modern Art, 2013, accessed February 17, 2020, https://www.moma.org/collection/works/842

Gross, M., and Green, K. 2012. "Architectural Robotics, Inevitably," in *Interactions: Experiences, People, Technology*, no. 19, Cambridge: MIT Press, 28-33.

Jaffe, E and Quirk, V. 2019. "Responsive Architecture," Interview with Liz Diller. Side Walk Labs. Podcast audio. November 8, 2019. https://www.sidewalklabs.com/blog/episode-10-responsive-architecture/

Kapadia, A., I. Walker, K.E. Green, J. Manganelli, H. Houayek, A.M. James, V. Kanuri, T. Mokhtar, I. Siles, and P. Yanik. 2010. "Rethinking the Machines in Which We Live: A Multidisciplinary Course in Architectural Robotics," in *Proceedings of the 2010 IEEE International Conference on Robotics and Automation*, Anchorage, AK: ICRA. 48–53.

Kilian, A. 2018. "The Flexing Room Architectural Robot," in the *Proceeding for Association for Computer Aided Design in Architecture,* October 18-20. Mexico City, MX, 233

Le Corbusier. 1986. *Towards a New Architecture*. New York: Dover. 113-120.

Loewenberg, P. 2012. "Architectural and Emotional Space," in *Space and Psyche*, ed. Center 17 (Canada, Friesens), 22-23.

Lynn, G. 2016. "Giant Robots." *Log, Winter* 36: 13-16.

Negroponte, N. 1970. *The Architecture Machine*. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Negroponte, N. 1975. *Soft Architecture Machines*. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Oosterhuis, K. "023 | Swarm Architecture," ONL the Innovation Studio, last modified January 15, 2017, http://www.oosterhuis.nl/?p=184

Perry, C. 2012. "Fast Company: Architecture and the Speed of Technology." *Bracket: Goes Soft*, no. 2: 73-79.

Picon, A. 2014. "Robots and Architecture: Experiments, Fiction, Epistemology." *Architectural Design*, 84(3): 54-59.

"Potteries Thinkbelt Project, Staffordshire, England," MOMA Collection, in *The Changing of the Avant-Garde: Visionary Architectural Drawings from the Howard Gilman Collection*, New York: The Museum of Modern Art, 2002, accessed February 17, 2020, https://www.moma.org/collection/works/849

Somalvico, M. 2010. "Bodies and Robots," in *Mediating the Human Body Technology, Communication, and Fashion,* ed. Leopoldina Fortunati, James Katz, and Raimonda Riccini (New York: Routledge), 31. "Ville Spatiale," Yona Friedman, accessed February 17, 2020, http://www.yonafriedman.nl/?page_id=78

Spyropoulos, T. and Spyropoulos, S. 2011. *Elemental Uncertainty: Constructing Behavioral*

Environments." in *Pulsation in Architecture*, ed. Goldemberg, J. Ross

Publishing, 424-425.

Young, Liam. 2016. "Atlas of Fiducial Landscapes." *Log, Winter* 36: 125-134.

PAPER #5.04

THE CUTTING (ROUNDED) EDGE OF 3D-PRINTED ARCHITECTURE

Rodrigo García-Alvarado[a], Alejandro Martínez-Rocamora[b], Francisco Quitral-Zapata[c]
[a]Universidad del Bío-Bío, Concepción, Chile
[b]Universidad de Sevilla, Sevilla, Spain
[c] Universidad Federico Santa-María, Valparaíso, Chile

ABSTRACT

Digitally controlled machines and rapid solidification mixtures are allowing to execute buildings through 3D-printed construction with a reduction of resources, waste, time and manpower. Moreover, this technology provides a direct flow from design to execution. However, the general characteristics of buildings made with this technology have not been confirmed yet. This work aims to identify features of architectural design with 3D-printed construction through material tests, study of cases and digital models, with the purpose of guiding the building development. Printing proofs show the execution of elements with rough textures, rounded corners and limited ranges. The cases analyzed demonstrate the emergence of a variety of buildings executed with different equipment which share some construction conditions. Digital modeling of 3D-printed buildings offers opportunities of analysis and optimization, especially regarding curved walls, as well as the integration of fabrication design and control. The sinuosity of printed walls becomes a preview of the innovative spatial features that this technology is able to provide. This review reveals novel operational and perceptual conditions of 3D-printed architecture that indicate possible evolution in the roles of design and buildings in the city.

KEYWORDS

3D-printed construction; curved walls; additive manufacturing; architectural design; parametric programming.

INTRODUCTION

Digital control of machines and the fast hardening capacity of certain materials has promoted the emergence of new 3D-printing technologies. These technologies have allowed executing individual constructive elements or entire buildings (Labonnote et al. 2016; Delgado Camacho et al. 2018) that can reduce consumption of resources, waste, time and manpower in the construction industry, while providing higher accuracy and digital integration between design and execution. This leads to examine what would be the appropriate characteristics of buildings made with this technology. Therefore, this work aims to identify specific features of 3D-printed architectural design through the study of material tests, cases executed and digital models in order to boost the development and experimentation with this new technology.

3D-printed construction is an additive manufacturing (AM) process based on the deposition of a fast-solidifying fluid material that allows executing human-scaled elements (Craveiro et al. 2019). This deposition consists in the extrusion of a mixture pumped to reach a nozzle that is vertically attached whether to a 3 DoF gantry system or to a 6 DoF robotic arm. In some

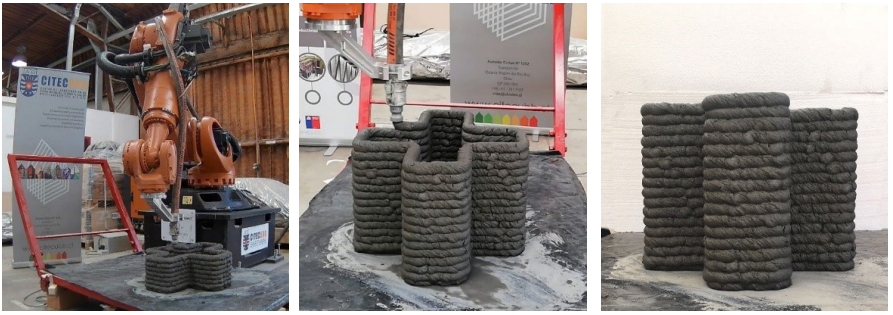


Figure 1. Printed construction experiments with a Kuka120 R2500 robot. Source (Authors 2020).

occasions, there is an additional control, feed or pushing device in the final section of this system. The material pumping must synchronize with the movement speed of the nozzle, which is controlled by the gantry system or the robotic arm through digital programming of the deposition trajectory. This trajectory is determined from a geometrical model and usually divided in horizontal paths that define successive layers of material extrusion.

At the Universidad del Bío-Bío (Concepción, Chile) initial printing proofs were first performed with a small experimental gantry system (1 x 0.6 x 1.2 m) and a mobile deposit of 9 liters. Nowadays, more advanced experiments are being carried out using a Kuka120 R2500 robot with an action radio of 2.5 m, along with a concrete pump of 120 liters to build wall sections, columns and free-form pieces (Fig. 1). These proofs have made it possible to test cementitious mixture, to define procedure for printing proofs, and to identify construction features that have been found to be coherent with other experiences worldwide (Bos et al. 2016; Ghaffar, Corker, and Fan 2018; Ma, Wang, and Ju 2018).

1. THE CORNER ISSUE AND OTHER PECULIARITIES OF 3D-PRINTED CONSTRUCTION

When using 3D printers with fused deposition modeling (FDM), extrusion feed rates are proportional to the lengths of linear segments usually employed. However, in Computational Numeric Control (CNC) machines velocities does not remain constant during the path defined. At the beginning of each segment, the devices must accelerate until a constant speed is reached, and then must decelerate when approaching a change of direction. As a result, an excess of material is deposited in those zones where the trajectory's geometry abruptly changes (Ertay, Yuen, and Altintas 2018). This issue is also known as 'overshot corners'. Through a correct calibration of the speed, acceleration and over-acceleration (jerk) parameters of each axis, the flow rate or extrusion multiplier, and other parameters that can be configured through software, clean edges can be achieved, but there are also machine vibration.

In 3D-printed construction, the Contour Crafting (CC) method incorporates 4 DoF (TX, TY, TZ and RZ), where controlling the rotation of the nozzle during the printing process, to keep a tangential direction. However, in certain moments, the nozzle must stop or slow down the extrusion while

rotates and pushes the material from the opposite edge and this technique tends to create bulges around the corners. Therefore, the nozzle must reduce the flow rate when approaching a corner, and that reduction depends on the corner's angle (Khoshnevis et al. 2006). In rectangular extrusion nozzles another known effect is the torsion of mortar cords in corners. To avoid this torsion, the nozzle's direction must remain tangent to the deposition trajectory in synchrony with the tangential speed and the material pumping pressure. These parameters are directly related to the viscosity of the cementitious mixture (Bos et al. 2016).

Other effects are attributable to the electromechanical configuration of 3D printers or 4 DoF machines. Acceleration and deceleration ramps are necessary to break the inertia of the motors that are part of the pumping and/or extrusion devices. These configurations do not allow printing right angles because of the deceleration of the printer before reaching the corner. This results in an enlargement of material in the outer part of the arc (gap) and an over-accumulation in the inner arc of the corner (Fig. 2). Therefore, it becomes necessary to use a curvature radio in the edges to achieve an homogenous deposition of material (Borg Costanzi et al. 2018). Similar than fillet procedure in digital drawing of corners to execute regular trajectories.

Another printing issue is the cumulative angular error in corners of CC systems with 4 DoF. The nozzle must reach the required rotation in the last segment of a line when it passes through a corner. When the nozzle's rotation speed is too low to finish the rotation within that segment, an angular error arises that the system tries to correct in the next corner. These errors accumulate layer after layer, especially in short segments with great curvature radios (Xu et al. 2019). More effects, such as the lack of material at the beginning of a deposition trajectory occur because of the delay between the start of material pumping, the material's inertia in the interior of the hose, and the deposition movement. The effect of this discoordination increases in trajectories starting and ending in an orthogonal vertex, where they produce whether an excess or a lack of material (i.e. bulge or gap).

A different approach to this 'corner issue' in 3D-printed construction is presented in the CONPrint3D® (Krause et al. 2018; Mechtcherine et al. 2019), which consists in the use of a nozzle especially designed to end straight trajectories with no direction changes, combined with the overlap of cords with a rectangular section. This approach implies a discrete cut (true-false) of the monolithic cords in an alternate way avoiding continuous control of the extrusion flow rate. When approaching a corner, the pumping is abruptly stopped, then the rotation and new

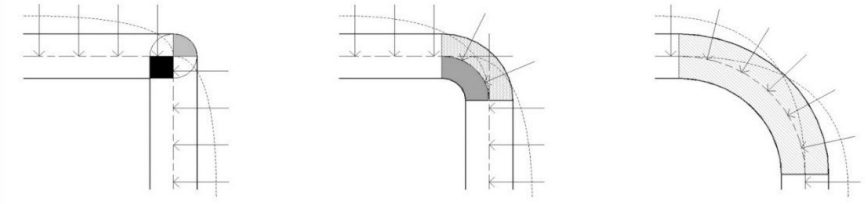


Figure 2. Material deposition in corners with different curvature radios. Source (Authors 2020).

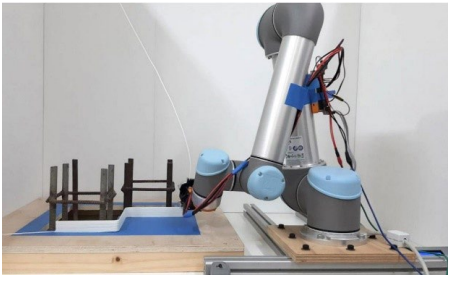
positioning is performed, and the pumping is started again to continue with the next straight segment. Thus, the overlap and gap effects in corners that arise from continuous rotation (RZ) in conventional CC systems with 4 DoF are avoided.

The use of robots with 6 DoF in 3D-printed construction can avoid the continuous flow rate and material pressure control in pumping equipment. The robot-based continuous welding technologies used in automotive industry allow the robot's end-effector to describe trajectories with continuous speed. This process only requires coordinating the start and stop via programming code. The use of conventional slicing programs for FDM that are usually applied in 3D-printed construction experiments to generate straight segments in G-code can be replaced with parametric control tools such asHAL or KUKA|prc , which already integrate continuous trajectories, lines, continuous arcs and splines.

Aside from the 'corner issue' here described, there are several phenomena that occur during the printing process. Since the printing material is deposited as a horizontal cord through the nozzle (which is usually circular), both a transversal expansion and a vertical reduction are produced because of the setting process and its own cumulative weight of material. As a consequence, an adjustment between the design dimensions, nozzle measurements and magnitudes of the deposited cord must be made, as well as a reduction in the horizontal joints between cords is produced making a rough texture in the elements' faces. The cord's dimensions depend on the nozzle's size, mixture density, air humidity, flow rate, print speed, opening time, and initial setting time. These dimensions must be supervised in the execution to estimate the modifications in the design to be printed and the trajectory that allow adapting to these phenomena.

When the printing path completes each lap, it is necessary to change the position of the nozzle in height, and this 'jump' produces a bulge similar to that of the aforementioned 'corner issue'. Thus, it becomes advisable to generate printing paths that follow a spiral form to avoid bulging when completing each lap. These spirals must grow the height of one cord in each lap minus the height adjustments due to the setting and cumulative weight effects. The early setting time of the mixture must be regulated to resist the weight of the subsequent layers without major dimensional alterations. The spiral trajectory, equipment range and material feeding establish maximum magnitudes for the printed elements to keep that slope progression. Therefore, sections and sequences of execution must be established according to the machines position and material load capacity.

The vertical sequence of cords is prone to overturn, especially in straight sections of



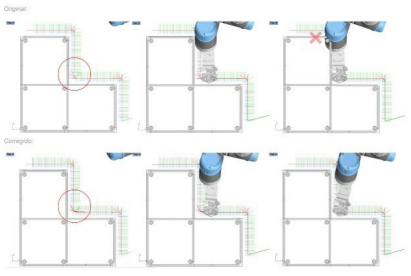


Figure 3. Perimeter printing proofs of a reinforced structural element. Source (Authors 2020).

the element, thereby making it advisable to use ample curves or transversal sections in the design. Interior reticulates also collaborate in supporting the element once executed and act as partial fillings. Additional proofs have been performed with an UR5 robot to print constructive elements with inner reinforcing steel bars (Fig. 3) aiming to determine strategies to move the robotic arm along the perimeter without interfering with them. However, this requires to apply the extruded mixture with an angle of the nozzle that allows avoiding clashes between the tool and the printed element, which can be predicted in the path programming using HAL, KUKA|prc or similar software. Also, this inclination of the nozzle generates greater accelerations both in concave and convex corners. These difficulties make also is preferable to design elements with rounded or curved edges.

2. ARCHITECTURAL EXAMPLES OF 3D-PRINTED CONSTRUCTION

The aforementioned preference of curved shapes has been also present in several examples of 3D-printed buildings worldwide (Perkins and Skitmore 2015; Hager, Golonka, and Putanowicz 2016; Tay et al. 2017). By September 2019, the authors identified 68 experiences in different countries, through a review of websites and scientific papers. These experiences were made by enterprises, universities and/or national programs, and mostly destined to experiment with this new technology and to present examples of what it has to offer. From a small refuge in Milano in 2010, a hotel in Philippines and an office in Dubai in 2016, a house in Russia in 2017, an emergency dwelling in Texas, an energy efficient house in Nantes and another one in Valencia in 2018, 3D-printed construction is spreading at a fast pace. In Latin America seven initiatives have been registered: a dwellings prefabrication company and three universities in Chile, and diverse enterprises in Colombia, Brazil and Argentina.

Most of these initiatives have appeared in the last four years, combining printed elements with other conventional components. 66% of them were executed with gantry systems and 18% with robots, and the vast majority with cementitious mixtures. The WinSun company in China exposed up this date fifteen buildings made with 3D-printed construction, some of them with several storeys, dwelling groups, or urban furniture, but without details on the components and processes used. Cybe (Netherlands), ApisCor (Russia), Printhuset (Denmark), and the Engineering Corps of the US Army presented printed buildings, and even designs, equipment and mixtures to sale. Besides, several institutions have participated in NASA competitions focused on extra-terrestrial construction.

The buildings presented are generally little houses or pavilions around 50 m2, with one floor and some common characteristics such as use of 3d-printed construction mostly in walls with rounded corners and ample curves. These designs use whether filled single-cord or hollow envelope with parallel cords. The visible texture is covered in some cases, and complemented with decorative vegetation, doors, windows and installations. Windows and doors are usually scarce and narrow, and roofs use a different constructive system, whether in wood, metal or concrete slabs. Speed and low cost are frequently highlighted as the main advantages, as well as waste reduction, higher safety and design versatility.

In the latest months, a big building printed in Dubai by ApisCor has been presented, using straight and circular walls. Also, the NASA contest for extra-terrestrial construction showed proposals based on vertical shapes with conical roofs and scarce openings (Fig. 4). Besides, a sinuous design for a dwelling has been executed in Morocco by the Spanish company BeMore3D in the Solar Decathlon Africa contest, as well as a second pavilion

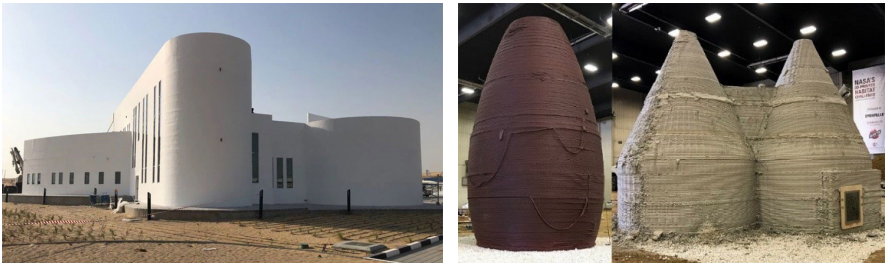


Figure 4. Examples of 3D-printed construction; office building in Dubai (left); constructions in NASA contest (right). Sources: (https://www.apis-cor.com/, https://spectrum.ieee.org/tech-talk/aerospace/space-flight/3d-printers-could-build-future-homes-on-mars, photographer Tracy Staedter)

by the US Army. The companies COBOD and Cybe are executing buildings in different cities of Europe and Asia, and developing equipment and commercial organizations. In their constructions, modular walls with inner reinforcements and services have been observed.

3. BIM MODELING OF 3D-PRINTED ARCHITECTURE

The control of 3D-printed construction requires digital modeling, then some studies have devoted on testing BIM for design and planning printed buildings (Lim et al. 2016; Davtalab, Kazemian, and Khoshnevis 2018). The digital management allows also to analysis constructive conditions like shape optimization. For example, curved partitions provides greater stability against lateral forces than straight (Kounadis and Papadopoulos 2016; Lagomarsino 2015; Liu et al. 2018). Like 3D-printed construction can execute any shape, and in particular curved envelopes, this attribute can reduce material consumption, as well as to decrease environmental impact, manpower needs, waste and transport.

A geometrical analysis was developed by the authors through parametric programming in BIM for the configuration of a 40x20m rectangular enclosure by generating 1,600 randomized alternative solutions of straight and curved walls (Martinez-Rocamora et al, 2020). Considering similar overturning limit force for a straight wall 30cm-thick, and different curved walls with the same projected length but lower thickness depending on the curvature angle. However, it is worth noticing that using curved walls modifies the built-up surface of the enclosure, reducing it with an inner arc and increasing with an outer arc, besides increasing the effective length. In contrast, highly reduced thicknesses are not buildable and do not provide the required noise and thermal insulation. Thus, several factors must be compensated by combining several wall types in a same enclosure or building. Based on the estimation of volume, time and cost as resources for the execution of each solution, it was possible to evaluate their cost-efficiency. The programming allows identifying the most efficient designs to reduce the options that the architect should evaluate from an aesthetic viewpoint according to the spatial and formal expressiveness (Fig. 5). In the shown example, the design with the lowest time of construction presents more pronounced curvatures, while the solution with lowest consumption of material shows soft curves in all its sides. The combined analysis throws a solution with strong curvatures in the extreme sides and soft curves in its long sides. Thus, the architectural solution can

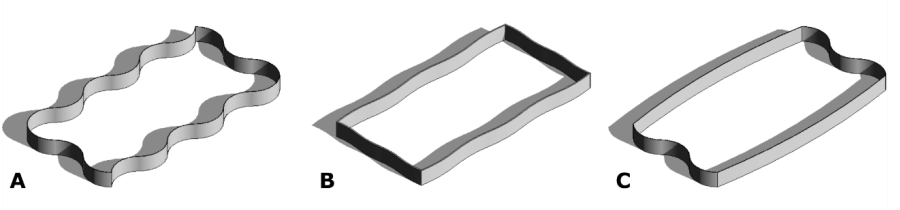


Figure 5. Renders of the best solutions in BIM analysis of envelope with 3D-printed walls in terms of material consumption (A), execution time (B), and economic cost (C). Source (Authors 2020).

consider whether an operational efficiency or economic reduction, with a more functional or expressive design, according to the activity or the building location.

Another initiative derived from the study of 3d-printed curved walls was a practical exercise in BIM with architecture, civil engineering and building engineering students. It was an intensive and collaborative work of integrated design where the students develop a project for an automotive exhibition hall in a site next to a main road with 3d-printed curved walls (Fig. 6, left). This work included building design, budget and energy consumption estimations, as well as architectural visualization, structural and construction details (García-Alvarado et al, 2020). The project was developed during two meetings and four collaborative work sessions of three hours each. Despite some differences among the participants occurred during collective work, it was possible to complete the design with the proper documentation and relevant architectural proposal consistent with 3D printing of curved walls.

In addition, experimentation with definition of 3D printing elements like families in BIM has been carried out. These elements were parameterized according to the analysis conditions, and exporting code for 3D printing through KUKA|prc in Dynamo (Fig.

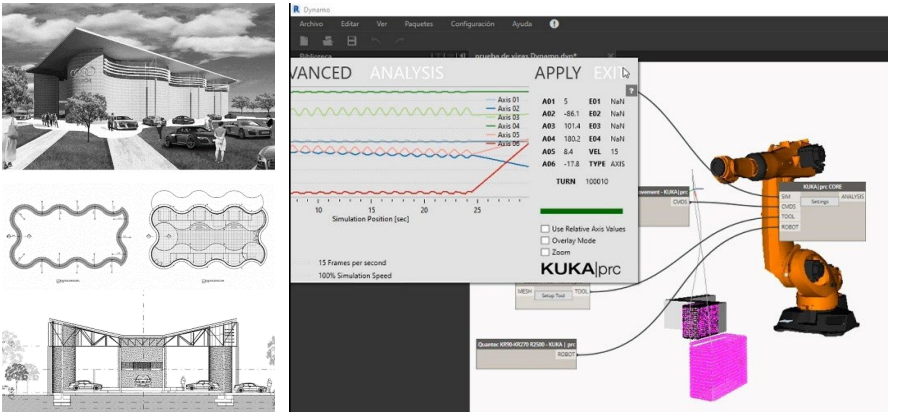


Figure 6. Excerpts of Design Exercise (left), 3D-printing programming in BIM (right). Source (Authors 2020).

6, right). In this case, families were defined for the repertoire of curved walls with angle and thickness variations, as well as material consumption. Also execution toolpaths were defined according to the equipment and concrete pump ranges, thus allowing to program printing trajectories for 80x40x20cm elements. These trajectories follow a helical tour adapted to the estimated dimensions for the printing cord, its vertical setting, and lateral displacement. The programming is usually generated from the volume section of the element by controlling the parameters of the trajectory according to the total length, corners' radio and the available volume of material, and subsequently the G-code for the robot is exported by KUKA|prc. With the robotic arm's control panel, the position of the element, direction of the trajectory, height adjustments and stops of the printing process are calibrated.

These experiences demonstrate the potential that BIM modeling offers for managing an architectural project based on 3D-printed construction, regarding the study and development of technological features with greater effectiveness. It also shows the singular expressiveness of 3D-printed architecture through the use of sinuous forms to accommodate interior spaces and innovative exterior appearance.

4. DISCUSSION

Printing constructive elements requires planning and executing a trajectory of deposition considering the machine capacity, range and constraints in corners. This technique produces rounded edges and textured surfaces. Besides, the building procedure promote curved walls, which can be optimized, integrated and controlled through digital modeling and fabrication. Thus, the design of 3D-printed buildings requires establishing sizes of rooms according to the central measurements of the spaces (see Fig. 7, left) and subsequently determine detailed tool-paths for walls and corners, which must be preferably rounded. Therefore, architectural work must establish the occupation and magnitude of spaces within an integrated analysis and management of construction process, apart from to establish the envelope according the equipment available and deposition strategy, with convex edges that could difficult the fitting of furniture but promote the interiority of activities and a fluid perception of surfaces.

The horizontal and sinuous configuration of 3D-printed buildings also provides a combined appearance of technological innovation and ancestral stability (Fig. 7, right), with curve walls and rounded corners that dilute the visual awareness of edges,

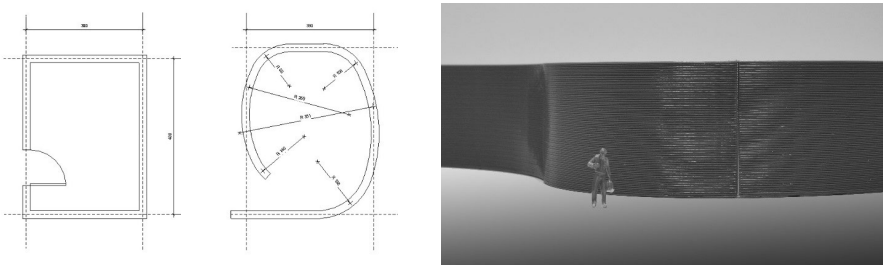


Figure 7. Drawing of conventional and 3D-printed buildings (left) and 3d-printed models (right). Source (Authors 2020).

thus privileging the expression of settled and continuous volumes. The perceptual extension of the faces prolongs the contours and dissolves limits, linking adjacent spaces and activities. Combined with technological and cultural meanings, architecture associated to 3D-printed construction promotes new social relationships, and the design are pushed to functional organization that must articulate technical procedures and expressive capacities of buildings and their urban possibilities.

CONCLUSION

The various proofs, designs and examples built with 3d-printed construction to date present novel architectural features. Material deposition produces rough textures in the building elements, with rounded corners and limited sections. Digital modeling allows integrating and optimizing construction, especially with varied and curved shapes. Buildings executed mostly have 3d-printed long and winding walls combined with conventional roofing elements, windows, installations and coverings. These conditions express an incipient architectural development oriented to an integrated management of design and execution focused on operational control and functional organization. But also, sinuous forms in buildings allow dedicating inner spaces to diverse activities and new expressions. Hence, this work provides a novel and initial review of architectural design with 3d-printed construction that suggests an emerging landscape of the architectural work and the cities' built tissue.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This work has been developed with support of research project Fondecyt 1181015 of National Agency of Research and Development (ANID) of Chilean Government and the VI Own Research and Transfer Plan of the University of Seville (VI PPIT-US).

REFERENCES

Borg Costanzi, C., Z. Y. Ahmed, H. R. Schipper, F. P. Bos, U. Knaack, and R. J.M. Wolfs. 2018. "3D Printing Concrete on Temporary Surfaces: The Design and Fabrication of a Concrete Shell Structure." *Automation in Construction* 94 (May): 395–404. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2018.06.013.

Bos, Freek, Rob Wolfs, Zeeshan Ahmed, and Theo Salet. 2016. "Additive Manufacturing of Concrete in Construction: Potentials and Challenges of 3D Concrete Printing." *Virtual and Physical Prototyping* 11 (3): 209–25. https://doi.org/10.1080/17452759.2016.1209867.

Craveiro, Flávio, José Pinto Duarte, Helena Bartolo, and Paulo Jorge Bartolo. 2019. "Additive Manufacturing as an Enabling Technology for Digital Construction: A Perspective on Construction 4.0." *Automation in Construction* 103 (April): 251–67. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2019.03.011.

Davtalab, Omid, Ali Kazemian, and Behrokh Khoshnevis. 2018. "Perspectives on a BIM-Integrated Software Platform for Robotic Construction through Contour Crafting." *Automation in Construction* 89 (September 2017): 13–23. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2018.01.006.

Delgado Camacho, Daniel, Patricia Clayton, William J. O'Brien, Carolyn Seepersad, Maria Juenger, Raissa Ferron, and Salvatore Salamone. 2018. "Applications of Additive Manufacturing in the Construction Industry – A Forward-Looking Review." *Automation in Construction* 89 (August 2017): 110–19. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2017.12.031.

Ertay, Deniz Sera, Alexander Yuen, and Yusuf Altintas. 2018. "Synchronized Material Deposition Rate Control with Path Velocity on Fused Filament Fabrication Machines." *Additive Manufacturing* 19: 205–13. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.addma.2017.05.011.

García-Alvarado, Rodrigo, Eric Forcael Durán, and Jesús Alberto Pulido-Arcas. 2020. "Evaluación de Colaboración Extrema Con Modelación BIM Para La Enseñanza de Proyectos de Edificación." *Arquitectura Revista* 16 (1): 137–53. https://doi.org/10.4013/arq.2020.161.08.

Ghaffar, Seyed Hamidreza, Jorge Corker, and Mizi Fan. 2018. "Additive Manufacturing Technology and Its Implementation in Construction as an Eco-Innovative Solution." *Automation in Construction* 93 (October 2017): 1–11. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2018.05.005.

Hager, Izabela, Anna Golonka, and Roman Putanowicz. 2016. "3D Printing of Buildings and Building Components as the Future of Sustainable Construction?" *Procedia Engineering* 151: 292–99. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.proeng.2016.07.357.

Khoshnevis, Behrokh, Dooil Hwang, Ke-Thia Yao, and Zhenghao Yeh. 2006. "Mega-Scale Fabrication by Contour Crafting." *International Journal of Industrial and Systems Engineering* 1 (3): 301–20.

Kounadis, A. N., and G. J. Papadopoulos. 2016. "On the Rocking Instability of a Three-Rigid Block System under Ground Excitation." *Archive of Applied Mechanics* 86 (5): 957–77. https://doi.org/10.1007/s00419-015-1073-9.

Krause, M., J. Otto, A. Bulgakov, and D. Sayfeddine. 2018. "Strategic Optimization of 3D Concrete Printing Using the Method of CONPrint3D®." *ISARC 2018 - 35th International Symposium on Automation and Robotics in Construction and International AEC/FM Hackathon: The Future of Building Things*, no. Isarc.

Labonnote, Nathalie, Anders Rønnquist, Bendik Manum, and Petra Rüther. 2016. "Additive Construction: State-of-the-Art, Challenges and Opportunities." *Automation in Construction* 72: 347–66. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2016.08.026.

Lagomarsino, Sergio. 2015. "Seismic Assessment of Rocking Masonry Structures." *Bulletin of Earthquake Engineering* 13 (1): 97–128. https://doi.org/10.1007/s10518-014-9609-x.

Lim, Sungwoo, Richard A. Buswell, Philip J. Valentine, Daniel Piker, Simon A. Austin, and Xavier De Kestelier. 2016. "Modelling Curved-Layered Printing Paths for Fabricating Large-Scale Construction Components." *Additive Manufacturing* 12: 216–30. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.addma.2016.06.004.

Liu, Yu, Daogang Lu, Hongda Liu, and Yijun Huang. 2018. "The Shaking Table Experiments on Sliding and Overturning of CAP1400 Spent Fuel Storage Rack with the Effect of FSI." *Annals of Nuclear Energy* 112: 277–88. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anucene.2017.10.023.

Ma, Guowei, Li Wang, and Yang Ju. 2018. "State-of-the-Art of 3D Printing Technology of Cementitious Material—An Emerging Technique for Construction." *Science China Technological Sciences* 61 (4): 475–95. https://doi.org/10.1007/s11431-016-9077-7.

Martínez-Rocamora, Alejandro, Rodrigo García-Alvarado, Euro Casanova-Medina, Luis Felipe González-Böhme, and Fernando Auat-Cheein. 2020. "(Forthcoming) Parametric Programming of 3D Printed Curved Walls for Cost-Efficient Building Design." *Journal of Construction Engineering and Management*. https://doi.org/10.1061/(ASCE)CO.1943-7862.0001811.

Mechtcherine, Viktor, Venkatesh Naidu Nerella, Frank Will, Mathias Näther, Jens Otto, and Martin Krause. 2019. "Large-Scale Digital Concrete Construction – CONPrint3D Concept for on-Site, Monolithic 3D-Printing." *Automation in Construction* 107 (April): 102933. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2019.102933.

Perkins, Isaac, and Martin Skitmore. 2015. "Three-Dimensional Printing in the Construction Industry: A Review." *International Journal of Construction Management* 15 (1): 1–9. https://doi.org/10.1080/15623599.2015.1012136.

Tay, Yi Wei Daniel, Biranchi Panda, Suvash Chandra Paul, Nisar Ahamed Noor Mohamed, Ming Jen Tan, and Kah Fai Leong. 2017. "3D Printing Trends in Building and Construction Industry: A Review." *Virtual and Physical Prototyping* 12 (3): 261–76. https://doi.org/10.1080/17452759.2017.1326724.

Xu, Jie, Lieyun Ding, Lixiong Cai, Lichao Zhang, Hanbin Luo, and Wenbo Qin. 2019. "Volume-Forming 3D Concrete Printing Using a Variable-Size Square Nozzle." *Automation in Construction* 104 (March): 95–106. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2019.03.008.

PAPER #5.05

THE CITY AFTER THE CATASTROPHE. DILIGENT STRUCTURES

Raquel Martínez Cuenca[a], Ricardo Perelló Roso[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

In the last twenty years, society has witnessed complex humanitarian emergencies caused by radical atmospheric phenomena or sudden political changes with warlike consequences that have produced exceptional movements and resettlement of affected citizens. These emerging circumstances have hit especially hard the most disadvantaged sectors of the population. Needs for land preparation and fast small and large scale housing construction have emerged in order to accommodate those affected in the short or medium term.
In adverse environments, these needs require the generation of diligent architectural structures. In order to fulfill their objectives, these agile and versatile skeletons must be executed at local level, involving the citizenry and using as much autochtonous materials as posible. Capacities ans skills of the locals must be focused on four fundamental concepts: self-construction, portability, sustainability and reuse.
This study traces an introduction to the state of play regarding these diligent architectural studies. It exposes the problem of creating a model which responds by means of folding structures or dismountable ones, to the needs of each emergeny situation. Qualities such as versatility, adaptability to the problem, basic functionalities and conditioning factors are analyzed.

KEYWORDS

Deployable structures; removable structures; sustainability; self-construction; reuse.

INTRODUCTION

Since the 1990s there has been a growing interest not only in providing rapid accommodation for people who lose or have to leave their homes for a variety of reasons. But there is also an interest in making these habitats as safe, useful, flexible, reusable and sustainable as possible. Each location and each town has a certain and very specific idiosyncrasy which makes it unique. The shelter models implemented must be capable of responding to these needs with structural systems that are flexible enough to be able to adapt to different lifestyles, multiple locations and climatic conditions, with the use of sustainable and reusable materials. The present study aims to establish an approach to the needs that each emergency situation requires, the most appropriate type of accommodation in each case and which models of structure can offer a better response, without forgetting the needs of the individual and the sustainability of the system, i.e. its life cycle.

1. SUSTAINABILITY OF COLOR

After the Second World War, due to advances in technology, improved infrastructure and new communication systems at a global level, a movement of aid and collaboration among countries in case of humanitarian disasters and war began to be generated. After the Rwandan genocide in 1994, one of the largest population migrations of that decade took place and ths Sphere Project emerged. During that conflict, significant coordination failures among the different humanitarian

organizations that went to the area to help were observed and the success of those missions was meaningfully reduced. The aforementioned project was launched in 1997 with the aim of improving coordination among humanitarian organizations and of establishing common operating protocols for them all. The goal of the Sphere Project is to establish common principles and minimum quality standards in the event of having to act in any type of humanitarian emergency. These minimum standards are reflected in its "Humanitarian Charter and Minimum Standards in Humanitarian Response", which is regularly updated and revised. As the fundamental philosophy of the project, we can read in its Humanitarian Charter "[...] the right to live with dignity: the right to receive humanitarian aid and the right to protection and security." These rights are complemented by minimum standards covering the needs for: water, sanitation and hygiene promotion; food security and nutrition; shelter, settlements and non-food items; and health services. The present work will focus on this need for shelter and settlement. Two of the main causes behind the need of generating new housing are natural disasters and warlike conflicts, and both cases have different origins and needs that condition the type of response. Aspects such as the volume of population to be rehoused, the urgency with which the accommodation is needed, the assembly times, the duration of the stay, the model of population to be housed (family or individual nuclei), the lifestyle in the area (more or less rural), the climatic conditions of the area and the natural resources of the area determine the shelter model. Broadly speaking, we can establish two strategies that will condition the model of refuge to be implemented as a response to this need for new accommodation. The first one would consist of trying to maintain and respect the existing housing model by readapting it, reconstructing it and improving it and the second one would consist of standardized models or exported from other areas (Davis, 1978). Another important aspect to take into account when considering an efficient shelter design is the time factor. Up to 6 months we talk about emergency aid or what we could call immediate survival; after that time we find ourselves with humanitarian aid or post-disaster rehabilitation; and if the situation lasts for years we are facing a humanitarian action that would imply the reconstruction of the area (Ros García 2015). Any analysis of these issues shows that immediate relief, rehabilitation and reconstruction, although they are distinct phases, constantly interfere with each other, and immediate decisions taken a few days after the disaster usually influence long-term events (Davis, 1978).

2. METHODOLOGY

The bibliographical references shown in part 6 have been used for the drafting of this article, as well as consultations on specialized websites and search engines. Internet searches have been used mainly to extend and update the information on those interesting projects described in the books and whose description was too short, but interesting to extend in order to be able to go deeper into the subject.

3. DISCUSSION

In order to draw conclusions about the best shelters for each context, it is necessary to know which emergency accommodation solutions can be considered. The goal of the current work is, firstly, to analyse as many different models as possible from different points of view, namely: type of assembly, compactness of the system, reuse possibilities and structural system; and, secondly, to establish a classification of the different models employed in order to analyuse pros and cons, establishing then the suitability of each system

in each situation. For this reason, models implemented since the 1970s to the present have been studied, both used in the field and in the prototype phase or still under study. After the analysis a classification according to the constructive and structural features of the shelter models studied will be established.

3.1. Compact units

Compact units are already manufactured products, completely autonomous which do need no or very little assembly. They do not respond to any specific structural system. These models of refuge usually respond to rigid configurations that clash with the forms of traditional architecture of the place and use materials not always available in the area. Hence, it is a kind of model that has some acceptance as immediate accommodation but little success as a habitat in the medium or long term.

Dymaxion deployment unit

The Dymaxion Deployment Unit (DDU), or Dymaxion House, was created by Buckminster Fuller in 1940 to house American soldiers deployed around the world during World War II. It is a circular structure of about 6 m in diameter made of corrugated steel that resembles a silo. The dome shaped roof has perforations acting as windows and an upper ventilation hole. The interior is insulated and finished with wooden panels (fig. 1). This structural model was the germ of the "modern igloos", minimal constructions intended for housing and, later, of the geodesic dome (1948). The "modern igloos" were domes with an octagonal structural matrix that provided stability to the whole using a minimum amount of material. However, they were barely accepted as a shelter due to the rigidity of their shape.

Figure 1. Dymaxion deployment unit. Library of Congress: U.S. Farm Security Administration (Daderot 2011)

Western Germany Red Cross polyurethane igloo

Polyurethane igloos were used by the Western Germany Red Cross in 1972 as shelters after the Masaya earthquake in Nicaragua. It could be assembled in two hours, but it took more than 148 hours to occupy the first one as the right location could not be found. Of the 500 units assembled, only 30% were finally occupied because the model did not meet the living needs of the population.

CMAX System

The CMAX System is a prototype designed by Nicolás García Mayor in 2001 (fig. 2) which, according to the official website, consists of a housing module with a rigid central structure, built in polypropylene, aluminium and polyester fabric; and two wings made with a flexible material that, when unfolded, quadruple their size. This kind of shelter can

Figure 2. Cmax System housing shelter (García Mayor 2013)

withstand strong winds, is waterproof and easy to transport, as it is light and foldable and can be raised above the ground on a set of legs. It can host up to ten peoplele. With the adequate tools it can be assembled and secured in about eleven minutes.

3.2. Deployable structures

Deployable structures usually involve some mechanization and the use of their own materials. These structures are quick to assemble since joints are scare because the whole model is frequently solvid with membranes, curved sheets, domes or vaults. Models based on deployable structures display many possibilities for configuring the space beneath and around them. They are easy to be transported because of their reduced weight. They can be expanded or contracted because of their geometric, material and mechanical properties, turning them into meaningfully changeable elements with the possibility of constantly evolving and adapting to the architecture of the area where they are implemented (Rivas, 2015).

UNHCR Lightweight emergency tent

Tents are the most widely used system when it comes to generating new emergency accommodation. That fact responds to their economy, speed of assembly and versatility. On the contrary, these models do not always respond correctly to the climatic conditions of the area and have a very limited durability without the possibility of reuse after their lifespan. The most basic model consists of a double-flight tent with a central support and side braces that provide rigidity to the canvas. There are multiple variations and extensions of this model which even considers a model resolved with a dome. As a remarkable example, the UNHCR model was initially used in 2002 and is still in service.

Concrete Canvas Shelter

Commonly known with their acronym CCS, Concrete Canvas Shelters are constructed with CC13 concrete canvas, bonded to the outer surface of a plastic interior. The first step of the building process consists of inflating it. Once it has reached its final size and shape, it is hydrated with water and after twenty-four hours, it becomes a rigid structure ready for use. This typology generates curved structures of thin concrete wals which are both robust and lightweight. Concrete canvas shelter units can be coupled and arranged in series to generate sets of structures. The first prototype was developed in 2003 and is currently a registered system.

Weaving home

This prototype designed in 2013 by the architect Abeer Seikaly, re-examines the traditional architectural concept of field shelters by creating a technical, structural fabric which expands to protect but also contracts for later mobility while providing the comforts of contemporary living such as heat, running water, electricity, storage and many other.

3.3. Detachable structures

Detachable structures encompass all those structures which must be mounted entirely on site and require a much longer and demanding process to be finally assembled. In turn, this system has greater versatility making possible the use of local materials. Detachable structures display a much larger variety of structural models which range from framed systems with gabled or curved roofs to systems based on vaults or domes. The main purpose of a detachable structure is to be able to achieve more and better results with the smallest amount of resources as possible. This cathegory also aims to adapt the system proposed to provide answers to the specific needs of the area to be

intervened considering local resources and means. Therefore, detachable structures will be built with the minimum amount of what is available at a certain moments and by means of self-constructing, generating a universal system which allows new constructions to be adapted to the traditional models of existing housing (Ban, 2011).

Paper-Log-House

This currently used model was designed by Shigeru Ban in 1995. It is a temporary shelter made of cardboard tubes waterproofed by means of transparent polyurethane and filled with newspaper sheets. The plywood floor is supported by sand-loaded beer crates, while walls and roof posts are formed by the aforementioned assembled tubes, thus securing the canvas roof (fig. 3). The constructions is quickly recyclable, easy to transport and store, and quick and easy to assemble by the future occupants. Actually a unit can be built within ten hours, being fully reusable after its lifespan. It is a system which has been widely accepted and used in various emergencies, adapting it to the specific climate and materials of each area (fig. 4).

Figure 3. Paper-Log-House in Kobe

Figure 4. Paper-Log-House in Cebu

House elemental tecnopanel

This prototype designed by Chilean architect Alejandro Arevena in 2010 consists of a modular, mountable housing unit designed to meet housing needs during the floods which in that period affected his country. Its most remarkable characteristic is that, once assembled by three people in just one day, it can be both used as a permanent housing or as a temporary dwelling and then reused. It is based on an elemental prefabricated kit mostly based on structural insulated panels, SIP, which are self-supporting and made with a high-density polystyrene rigid foam core. More information on this system can be found in its official website: www.elementalchile.cl.

Superadobe sandbag shelters

Sandbag shelters are dome and vault shaped constructions which combine traditional architecture with new materials. Designed by Nader Khalili in 1995 they are still in use. Sacks filled with soil are compressed with a hand rammer and distributed following a circular pattern. A barbed wire is placed in the joints to prevent sandbags from moving and to provide stiffness to earthquakes (fig. 5). The system is completed with cement, lime or asht to add even more stability (Rivas 2015). This system was used for the fist time as a shelter in 1995 at the Baninajar Camp in Khuzestan, Iran. It was one of the results of applied research at the California Institute for Architecture and Earth Art, also know as the Cal-Earth Institute, founded by Nader Khalili in 1991.

Project VEM

This prototype was produced in 2017 by the Rebirth Inhabit Research Group of the CEU San Pablo University in Madrid, Spain. Architectural models builf after the VEM prototype can be completely dismantled. They are formed by a tubular structure in metallic allow, a light panelling on its horizontal base and a reinforced double layer textile envelope. It presents important architectural advantages when comparent to other current types of emergency housing, such as assembly easiness since it can be assembled by just two people in two hours, airborne, greater adaptability of seating and an extendable capacity system. VEM prototype versatility makes possible to adapt each unit to new locations and materials.

Figure 5. Figure 5: Superadobe sandbag shelters in Djibouti in 2012

CONCLUSION

When we are faced with a natural disaster, we are dealing with a population that is deeply rooted in the area and reluctant to leave their home no matter how destroyed it is, who prefer emergency accommodation in locations close to where they live rather than in remote camps, as all their possessions are there. In these cases, where what is lost is the home they live in, they look for a temporary shelter that can provide and allow for the lifestyle they are used to, a refuge that, if necessary, can end up becoming their permanent home. On the other hand, when we are facing migration due to war, the needs are different. People leave their homes and there is no feeling of attachment to the area. The new accommodation is seen as something temporary. The main purpose will be to return to the original home or find a new one. In these cases there is more freedom to establish the location of the shelters, it is possible to make a better forecast of the volume of people to be housed and the system does not need to be based so much on local models and allows the use of materials from the area. From this we conclude that any study on the provision of housing, shelter or new habitat should start with an analysis of what is needed in that particular community, to make housing that has a relationship to local cultural patterns and not consider it as a minor issue (Davis, 1978). Therefore, in many cases the success of the model to be used depends, not so much on the goodness of the model itself, but on an adequate tuning between the model and the concrete use it is intended for. Thus, we see that forms of housing or shelters that completely ignore the cultural customs of the occupants can become a failure. And the same goes for universal solutions if they are not used in the right context. On the other hand, providing a shelter while recognizing cultural issues and trying to use appropriate

and safe construction techniques has been more widely accepted (Davis, 1978). Analyzing different systems used as emergency accommodation in recent years we can establish a classification of them from a constructive and structural point of view and assess in which situations each model has been more appropriate. We find compact units, completely autonomous and ready to start working immediately as they do not require assembly; but with little capacity for modification and adaptation to different locations. So a priori it is a model suitable for short stays, emergency aid, and in temporary locations with no intention of becoming permanent. Secondly, we have the models of deployable structures, quick to assemble and with a greater flexibility, which allow the intervention of the users as regards their final shape and the use of materials to adapt it to their needs. Finally, we have the case of dismountable structures which need a longer execution time as they have to be assembled entirely on site, which in turn gives the system greater versatility, allowing the use of materials from the area and facilitating self-construction and reuse of the system. Deployable structures and dismountable or detachable structures, due to their versatility, are more suitable solutions for location in areas where there is a strong tradition and which are considered as long term stays, humanitarian aid or post- disaster, and which can end up becoming definitive as they are adaptable, reusable and self- constructed.

REFERENCES

Ban, Shigeru, Michel Quinejure, and Fundación Caja de Arquitectos. 2011. *Shigeru Ban [Vídeo-DVD]: arquitectura de emergencia*. Barcelona: Fundación Caja de Arquitectos.

Davis, Ian. 1980. *Arquitectura de emergencia*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

García Mayor, Nicolás. 2013. Cmax, innovation for humanity. Accessed September 18, 2019. http://www.cmaxsystem.com/es.

Rivas Adrover, Esther. 2015. *Estructuras desplegables: arquitectura, ingeniería y diseño*. Barcelona: Promopress.

Ros García, Juan Manuel. 2015. *Arquitecturas de emergencia: cuestiones pendientes*. Madrid: Ediciones Asimétricas

PAPER #5.06

CONSTRUCTABILITY CRITERION FOR STRUCTURAL OPTIMIZATION IN BIM AND HYBRID DIGITAL TWINS

Víctor Fernández-Mora[a], Víctor Yepes[b]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain
[b] ICITECH (Instituto de Ciencia y Tecnología del Hormigón), Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The introduction of Lean Construction standards into the AEC Industry has changed the way that the professional approach the different problems. BIM and Hybrid Digital Twins are new high demanded technologies that improve the efficiency of the industry's procedures as they allow new and faster methodologies. Optimization algorithms are often used in combination with these techniques to improve the result at several points of the design phase, including the structural project. The optimization can be done using different criteria, like the economy, sustainability, energy consumption or constructability or a combination among them. While there exist exact formulas to quantify some of these criteria there is not a universal one to quantify the constructability. In this article, we establish the key points to create a constructability criterion for each structural project and explore its efficiency. The way to quantify the constructability depends on the structural design and element to be optimized and as there is not an exact formula to quantify the different factors that influence it have been defined and their combinations explored for a certain structural problem: optimization of a concrete beam. With this, we are able to quantify the easiness to build a certain structural project and reduce the building time and crew cost and create a way to improve the structural design. This exposed method can then be expanded to different structural elements.

KEYWORDS

BIM; digital twins; constructability; optimization algorithms.

INTRODUCTION

The Architecture, Engineering and Construction Industry (AEC Industry) has been one of the most static industries in the world and has been reluctant to changes, in the last years this tendency is starting to change. The introduction of powerful informatic tools creates a new environment where automatized tools can be developed for several tasks (Eastman et al. 2011). These tools allow the professionals to improve their productivity and quality of the project and at the same time have more control over it and are based upon management improvements. Some of the management improvements to the industry are led by the increase in the usage of Building Information Modelling (BIM) Environments (Volk, Stengel, y Schultmann 2014) and Digital Twins (Chinesta et al. 2019). Both provide great advantages for the professionals as they are able to handle a lot of parameters and work with them simultaneously. Allowing the AEC Industry to introduce the different Lean Construction (LC) precepts effectively and improve the sustainability of the project. The adoption of the two different environments is an evolution to traditional methodologies and by using them the professionals are able to reduce the risk of errors during the project, achieve

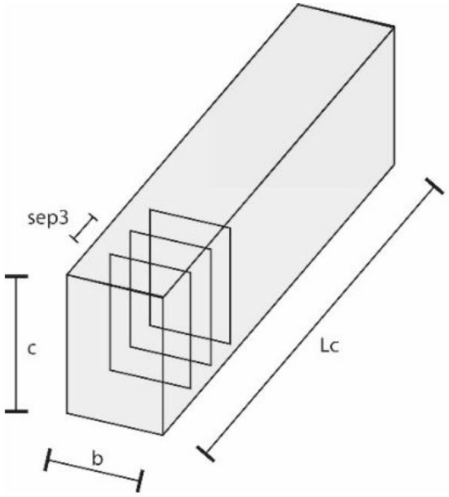
better accuracy through the design phase or their management capabilities. There is also utility when working in cloud-based servers (Jiao et al. 2013) with several people operating at the same time in the same model with coordinated modifications and improvements which are natural in both of them. There are a lot of differences among both of the previously stated environments. On one side, BIM is hard to define term as it includes three concepts: a product, the digital file where the model of the project is stored, the specific type of software and the methodology used to create the model (Eastman et al. 2011) («Frequently Asked Questions About the National BIM Standard-United States™ | National BIM Standard - United States» 2016). BIM, in reality, is a mix between the three concepts is an n-dimensional matrix of the project's data where the user can define and relate new dimensions and variables between them, this set of dimensions is the digital model of the project that is developed on a BIM software and to properly use it the methodology has to be used. On the other side, Digital Twins are one step ahead of the BIM environments in terms of project management. They do not only work during the design phase but also during the life cycle of the building. A Digital Twin is a virtual model for a certain procedure, product or service which is continuously being updated with new input from the real object on the world. For the AEC Industry, it consists of a digital model of the building itself which is being updated through sensors from the building. This model can be used to visualize, analyze, simulate and plan everything on the building (Chinesta et al. 2019). As seen each one of them has its advantages and its uses. BIM works better in the design and construction phase allowing the professionals to optimize results and procedures and Digital Twins are better managing variations and modifications through the life cycle of the building. The environments by themselves are only a framework to control the project and visualize its different aspects simultaneously. They are a completely new methodology that is starting to change the way that the AEC is working. But by themselves, they are only able to control, show and manage parameters. To fully take advantage of the environments these parameters have to be analyzed in conjunction with each other. For this purpose, the Building Performance Tools (BPS Tools) are used, as they are able to take the parameters stored in the digital environments and use them for several tasks. A lot of BPS Tools have been developed through the last ten years to improve sustainability (Chong, Lee, y Wang 2017) (Lu et al. 2017), reduce CO_2 emissions (Chen y Luo 2014), waste reduction (Akinade et al. 2015), optimize structural design (Fernández-Mora y Yepes 2017), among other purposes. A large group pf BPS Tools are focused on the design aspect of the project, helping the professionals to make decisions or even designing some elements by themselves, like structural elements. These design tools are based upon design restrictions (structural analysis and requirements) and design criteria like economy, sustainability, energy consumption or others. These design restrictions or directives can also be introduced into an optimization algorithm that is able to find an optimal design for the problem. In (Diao, Kato, y Hiyama 2011) we can find an example that uses a BPS Tool to optimize the CO_2 emissions for structural design. One of these criteria that can influence the design of a structural element and improve it is the constructability. The constructability or buildability of a certain structural element measures its aptitude to be built. So, it is a measure of the easiness to build a certain element. Lower constructability

measurements allow easier structures to be built and easier structures are more economical. It also reduces the number of mistakes occurring during the execution, because error appearance is directly related to the complexity of the element (Shrivastava, Chaurasia, y Saxena 2017). The term constructability is usually referred to several aspects at the same time. First, the extent to which the design parameters facilitate the construction of the element while achieving the building requirements. Second, the effective and time integration of construction knowledge into the conceptual planning and field operations. Third, to balance the different environmental constraints, project goals and building performance. It is not an universally measurable criteria as different factor interact in a different way for each case. In this paper, we aim to define a way to measure the constructability of an element and be able to compare it among other similar ones. This mathematical model to measure the constructability can then be used in a multicriteria optimization algorithm complementing other criteria and help the professionals to achieve an overall better design.

1. METHODOLOGY

1.1. Case Study

Per the definition above, the constructability is a criterion that has to be defined for each specific problem. So, in this problem, we will not find a universal definition to measure it, but a methodology to define it for every structural case, which will need further study. In this paper, the case study is a concrete beam with rebars on both faces and transversal reinforcement. We use a fixed span of five meters and loads according to residential use, without any particularity that may alter the design there are constraints for both, bending and movements at each ending. We assume that when measuring the constructability the design has been already validated and it is enough to resist the efforts on the beam. The constructability criteria will



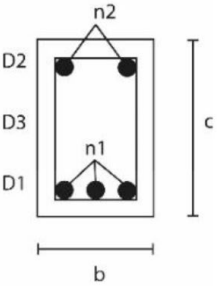


Figure 1. Geometrical parameters of a concrete beam

not check any design restriction, including those regarding the buildability itself as rebar disposition, assuming that they are sufficient for their structural requirements.

1.2. Parameter Definition

Fig. 1 contains the geometrical parameters of the beam. Its dimension is defined by two parameters, width (w) and height (h), in combination with the fixed span they define the external dimensions of the element. The distance between the face of the element and the rebar is defined by the cover (c) parameter. To define the rebar a total of six parameters have been used, three for the diameter of the different rebars: one for the diameter of the rebar in the bottom side of the beam (D1), a second for the diameter of the rebar in the top side (D2) and a third one (D3) for the transversal rebar. And three more to determine the number for each of the reinforcements: bottom rebar (n1), top rebar (n2) and the distance between the transversal rebars (sep3). Constructability is not only related to the geometrical definition of the beam, but there are also other factors that can affect it. The weight of the different materials has to be taken into account through its density with two more parameters also the relationship with the other elements in

Table of parameters	
Parameter	Measurement
Geometrical parameters	
Width (w)	Centimeters
Height (h)	Centimeters
Cover (c)	Centimeters
Bottom-side diameter (D1)	Millimeters
Top-side diameter (D2)	Milimeters
Transversal diameter (D3)	Millimeters
Number of bars in the bottom (n1)	Direct amount
Number of bars in the top (n2)	Direct amount
Spacing between transversal bars (sep3)	Centimeters

Non-geometrical parameters	
Concrete density	Kilonewton per cubic meter
Steel density	Kilonewton per cubic meter
Concrete consistency	Slump test
Rebar homogeneity	Mean value of the rebar diameter
Type of beam	h equal/greater than span thickness
Formwork	Square meters
Type of construction	On-site/Precast

Table 1. Parameters defining the case study

contact and if it is needed the formwork and its size. The consistency of the concrete is another factor directly related. On-site or precast construction can also be a key factor because the parameters interact differently between them. Or the homogeneity of the rebar reinforcement understood as the use of rebars of similar sizes. There are also factors external to the element itself such as the experience of the working crew, time of the day or weather that can affect the constructability of the element. In this paper, this is not taken into account, as our goal is to create a mathematical model able to handle the criteria for further use in the design stage. These parameters can't be known prior to the execution and are independent of design changes and they can introduce noise in the model that will not improve it as they are nor design dependants. A total of 16 parameters have been used to define the constructability of a beam. Table 1 summarizes the different parameters and the units utilized to measure them. Some parameters are not measurable and describe certain characteristics of the element. To be able to compare and combine the factors into one criterion it is necessary to unify and categorize them. For this, a survey has been conducted among several AEC professionals, including architects, engineers and constructors asking for a hierarchy among the parameters.

2. RESULTS

2.1. Parameter Definition

The survey asked different professionals to sort the parameters in order of relevance for the constructability of a beam. With this approach, we can create a hierarchy for the parameters and determine their importance. The results of the survey are shown in Figures 1 and 2. The first one shows box-plots of the results showing the dispersion in the importance of the parameter for the different professionals tend to prioritize different variables when designing the structural elements, this dispersion has to be taken into account to weigh the importance of each parameter. From Figure 2 we can gather the parameters into three different main groups regarding the importance. These clusters have been shown in the figure with the colored lines. The first group consists of two parameters, height and type of construction, both of them are related to the relationship of the beam with their environment, their mean values oscillate between one and four. The second group contains all the parameters regarding both rebars and type of beam. The third and last group covers the rest of the parameters, these group also has the biggest deviations in the box-plot diagram, so different professionals give different attention to them. During the survey, the professionals were also asked about other parameters that were not taken into account in the research. Some of the professionals suggested the size of the arid as a parameter to be added. After further study, this has been discarded, as its effects are taken into account considering the number of rebars and the consistency of the concrete. There is also the fact that in some areas the size of the arid is determined by the availability and not chosen by the professional, so it can be considered an external factor instead of a parameter. From this survey, we can extract a hierarchy based upon the experience of the professionals and how they evaluate the constructability in a concrete beam and then establish a way to measure it. Figure 3 shows the correspondence between the mean value and the standard deviation for each parameter. A parameter with lower mean has been given more importance by the respondents and a lower standard deviation implies more agreement among the professionals in the importance of a certain parameter.

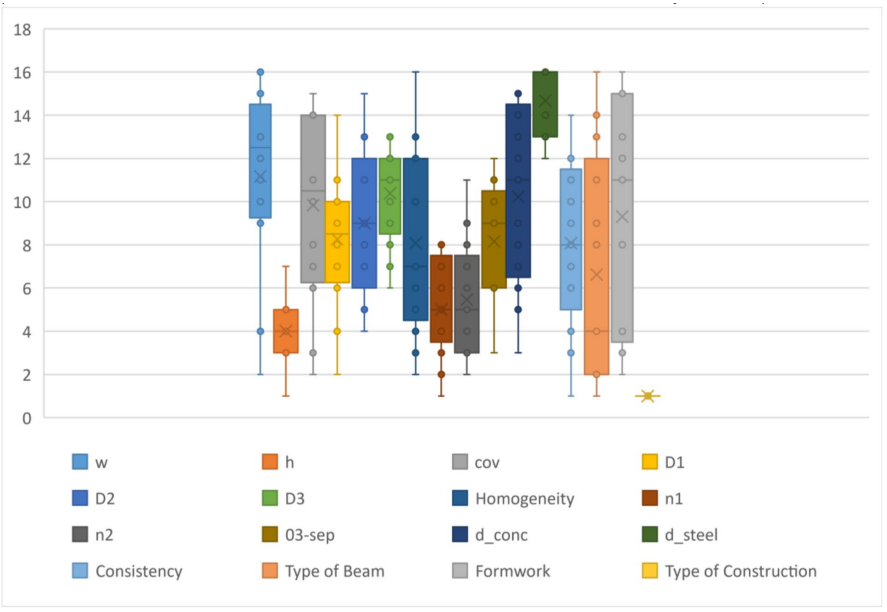


Figure 2. Box-plot diagram with the results of the survey

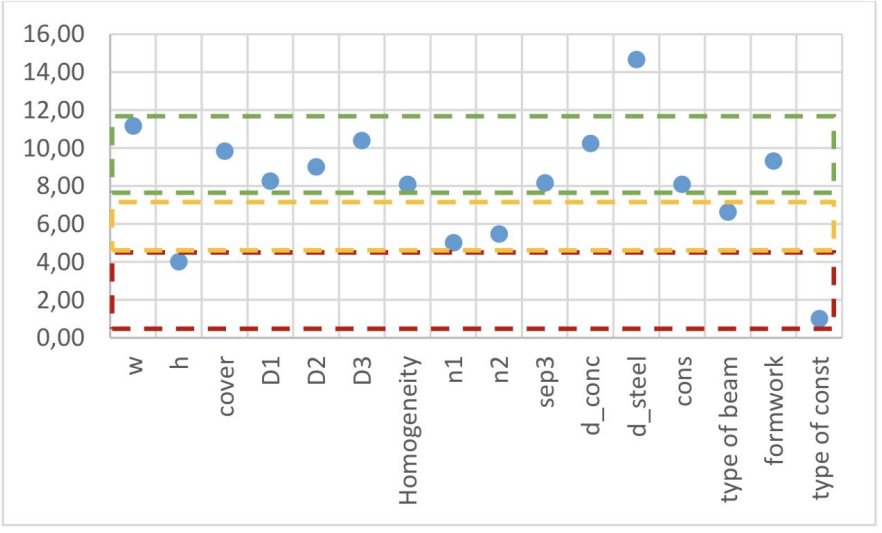


Figure 3. Mean value for each parameter

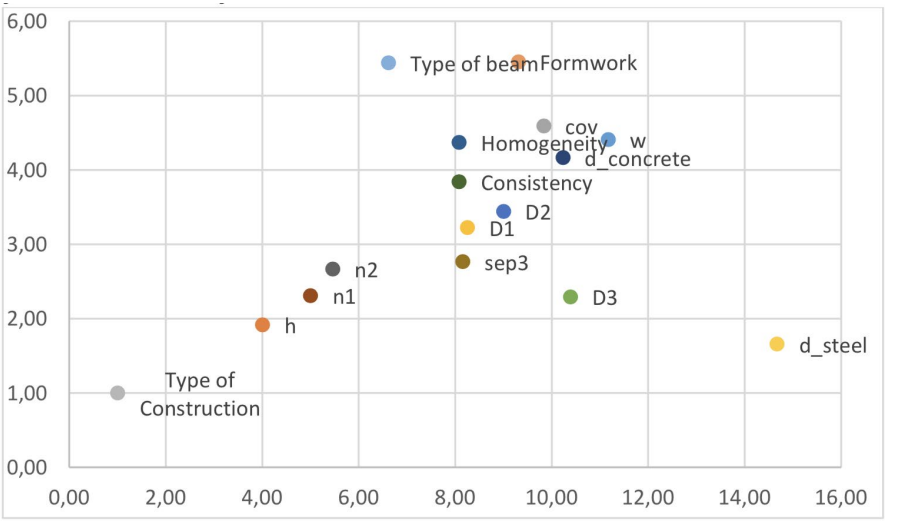


Figure 4. Cluster analysis of the mean and standard deviation for each parameter

2.2. Hierarchy for constructability

From the figure, we can see a tendency between the mean and the deviation, parameters with more importance are also important for most of the interviewees in almost a linear regression. This phenomenon is more accused in the first group of parameters and defines two sets of clusters encircled in the figure, there is a parameter outside of this phenomenon "steel density" which has been considered by most of professionals as the least valuable one. The parameter which has been given more importance is the "type of construction". The first cluster is the one with higher importance and it will be considered in that way when considering the constructability analysis, either way, the second cluster is also relevant and influential even if it has less impact on the criterion. The "steel density" parameter has been unfavored by most of the professionals given its position, for this reason, we are going to discard it as its influence can be explained through other parameters that have a bigger impact on the whole environment. The "type of construction" parameter has been proved to have a lot of influence on the constructability and after analyzing the data its two values cannot be compared between them, so it is going to be considered as an external factor to achieve a more accurate result.

3. DISCUSSION

3.1. Units of measurement

After sorting the parameters and weighing them we are in need to establish a measurement system. Typically, an optimization criterion can be quantified using a certain unit, like currency when studying the economic aspect, the mass of carbon dioxide emitted during production

or watts consumed among others for sustainability, but this cannot be done with the constructability as different units are taken into account. When assessing the constructability every parameter has its own unit and some of them are discrete variables dependent on the amount of something, like rebars placed. These quantifications cannot be mixed in a direct way as it will create inconsistency in the measurement. There are two possibilities to unify the parameters in an indirect way: currency value and working time, both related to the efficiency of the working crew. Both of them can assess constructability in an indirect way. The economic value is usually also taken into account when using a multicriteria optimization algorithm, but it is hard to completely take into account the prize for the working crew exactly as can overload the computer with data or create inaccuracies due to too many factors taken into account. Other possibilities based on discrete quantitative indirect approaches can be used to evaluate the constructability as working crew time but it is hard to define.

3.2. Quantifying the constructability

From the survey results and the cluster analysis, we can confirm that there are factors which influence more than others The hierarchy shows which of them need more weight than the rest, we can also estimate that the first cluster is roughly twice as important as the second, because their total mean values differ in that proportion. Optimization algorithms tend to overload the computer creating a huge population that must be handled and analyzed at the same time. Computational time is a determining factor in them and adjusting the methodology to evaluate the criteria is crucial. Depending on the research it is possible that it is beneficial to reduce the accuracy to favor the computational time. Through this paper, we have seen that constructability is not universal, either by the perception of the professionals or the units that can be measured. We are going to define several methods to quantify the constructability in a concrete beam, allowing us to adjust the computational cost to the necessities. The different proposed methods are sorted from lower to higher computational cost and data needed to perform the analysis.

- Number of rebar reinforcements: The most influential parameters in the constructability are the rebars. The raw number of them is directly related to its constructability. An element with more rebars will need a bigger resource investment to be built as it gains complexity. So, the element with fewer rebars has more constructability than the rest. This criterion can be exposed by the following formula:

$$C_1 = n1 + n2 + \frac{sep3}{l}$$

-Number of rebar reinforcements modified: Considering not only the rebar number but the difference in diameter among them creating and adding the height of the element into the criteria a more accurate scale can be obtained. This takes into account all the parameters existent in the first cluster and weighs them based upon its importance. The formula is the following:

$$C_2 = h \cdot (n1 \cdot D1 + n2 \cdot D2 + \frac{sep3}{l} \cdot D3)$$

This formula does not have any direct physical meaning but weighs the criteria following the intended parameters. Larger values for the parameters reduce the constructability of the element. Each rebar is weighed by its diameter, as thicker rebars are harder to be placed, in the same way, the height increases

the constructability as it lowers showing the negative effect of it. It is also low in computational cost and considers the most influential parameters.

-Working time invested

As previously discussed, one of the most accurate values for the constructability is the time spent by the working crew to build the element. This criterion quantifies the number of hours needed to accomplish it and takes into account the different considered factors and interactions between the defined parameters. The standard amount of time for each of the considered operations differs from country to country, but there are databases where an accurate estimation can be obtained. This criterion is split into different sections.

$$C_{3a} = [(h \cdot w + cov)] \cdot t_{3a}$$

The first section takes into account the time spent in shaping the element or how its external shape and contour factors affects the time spent. The parameter t3a measures the time spent to position the element in the building measures in m^2/h.

$$C_{3b} = [\sigma_{hom} \cdot \left(n1 \cdot D1 + n2 \cdot D2 + \frac{sep3}{l} \cdot D3\right) \cdot (con.)] \cdot t_{3b}$$

$$Homogeneity\ (\sigma_{hom}) = \sqrt{\frac{1}{n-1}\sum_{i=1}^{n}(D_i - \bar{D})^2}$$

$$Values\ for\ consistency\ (con):\ (based\ on\ the\ slump\ test\ results) \begin{cases} (0-2)cm. \rightarrow 1.1 \\ (3-5)cm. \rightarrow 1.05 \\ (6-9)cm. \rightarrow 1.00 \\ (10-15)cm. \rightarrow 0.95 \\ (16-20)cm. \rightarrow 0.90 \end{cases}$$

The second section quantifies the amount of time spent to put the rebars into the right place and distribute them consistently. It takes into account the loss of time due to using different rebar sizes and its difficulty in a placement through the homogeneity of them and also the amount of time spent when dumping the concrete in the cast and its interaction with the rebars. The parameter t3b considers the time spent to develop all these tasks.

$$if\ h = slab\ height$$
$$C_{3c} = (l \cdot w) \cdot t_{3c}$$

$$if\ h > slab\ height$$
$$C_{3c} = [(l \cdot w) + 2 \cdot (l \cdot (h - slab\ height))] \cdot t_{3c}$$

The third and last section takes into account the time spent in the construction of the formwork and it varies depending on if the element has a higher height than the one in the slab that it is in. The parameter t_{3c} measures the hours spent to build the formwork expressed in m^2/h. With these three sections we can define the constructability criterion like the following:

$$C_3 = C_{3a} + C_{3b} + C_{3c}$$

-Working time simplified

A simplified version to quantify the working crew time can be done assuming a relationship between the steel weight in the section of the element. The parameter t4 measures the mean value to build a certain section based on this assumption and is obtained through databases and increased gradually as the amount of steel increases. With this simplification, we can quantify the constructability with the following formula.

$$C_4 = \left[\left(\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} n_n \cdot [\left(\frac{D_n}{2}\right)^2 \cdot \pi]\right) \cdot \gamma_{steel}\right)/(h \cdot w)\right] \cdot t_4$$

CONCLUSION

The AEC Industry has a tendency to automation and improving the procedures by using digital tools such as BIM environments and Digital Twins. For this several BPS Tools are in development to analyze the building requirements and improve, and optimization algorithms are being used in connection with them to help the professionals to achieve better designs.

In this paper, we have explored the parameters necessary to define a new criterion, the constructability for a specific structural problem, a concrete beam. By using a survey a hierarchy among the different parameters has been created and discovered two sets of parameters This methodology can be used to define the same criterion for a different structural element.

Using this previous survey, four distinct ways to measure the constructability have been defined and their strong and weak points explored to adjust the accuracy of the criterion to the optimization purpose where it is going to be used.

Future Research

The model presented in this paper is not a fully developed model, as we have assumed some simplifications. The different mathematical models for the constructability that have been proposed can be refined taking into account more parameters and will achieve a more accurate result, probably at the cost of more computation time. Further research is required to create a mathematical model able to handle a discrete approach for the rebar disposition, including the analysis of each diameter and position individually.

A comparison among the results obtained with the four definitions for constructability in this paper can be done and tested with real results to properly adjust the mathematical models. This comparison of results will show the ideal cases of optimization for each of the four models.

Also, the movement of the crew along the whole building site and the position of the element itself can be taken into account, to assist the constructability for the complete structure and not to each of the elements or the reduction of trims in the rebars to optimize not only the working time but also to reduce the waste. Further study is required to be able to mix both types of construction, usually, precast elements tend to have better constructability because the process has a higher level of automation, but this is not always true for simpler elements and the different interaction between the parameters has to be taken into account.

REFERENCES

Akinade, Olugbenga O., Lukumon O. Oyedele, Muhammad Bilal, Saheed O. Ajayi, Hakeem A. Owolabi, Hafiz A. Alaka, y Sururah A. Bello. 2015. «Waste minimisation through deconstruction: A BIM based Deconstructability Assessment Score (BIM-DAS)». *Resources, Conservation and Recycling* 105 (diciembre): 167-76. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.resconrec.2015.10.018.

Chen, LiJuan, y Hanbin Luo. 2014. «A BIM-based construction quality management model and its applications». *Automation in Construction* 46 (octubre): 64-73. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2014.05.009.

Chinesta, F., C. Elias, E. Abisset-Chavanne, J. Louis Duval, y F. El Khaldi. 2019. «Virtual, Digital and Hybrid Twins: A New Paradigm in Data-Based Engineering and Engineered Data». *Archives of Computational Methods in Engineering* November 2018. https://doi.org/0.1007/s11831-018-9301-4.

Chong, H.-Y., C.-Y. Lee, y X. Wang. 2017. «A Mixed Review of the Adoption of Building Information Modelling (BIM) for Sustainability». *Journal of Cleaner Production* 142: 4114-26. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jclepro.2016.09.222.

Diao, Yunting, Shinsuke Kato, y Kyosuke Hiyama. 2011. «Development of an Optimal Design Aid System Based on Building Information Modeling». *Building Simulation* 4 (4): 315-20. https://doi.org/10.1007/s12273- 011-0054-3.

Eastman, Chuck, Paul Teicholz, Rafael Sacks, Kathleen Liston, y E-libro/Ebrary. 2011. *BIM Handbook [Recurso Electrónico-En Línea]: A Guide to Building Information Modeling for Owners, Managers, Designers, Engineers and Contractors*. 2nd Edition. Hoboken, New Jersey: John Wiley & Sons, cop2011.

Fernández-Mora, Víctor, y Víctor Yepes. 2017. «Structural optimization in BIM environment applied to lineal reinforced concrete structures». En . Valencia.

«Frequently Asked Questions About the National BIM Standard-United States™ | National BIM Standard - United States». 2016. 14 de marzo de 2016. https://www.nationalbimstandard.org/faqs.

Jiao, Yi, Yinghui Wang, Shaohua Zhang, Yin Li, Baoming Yang, y Lei Yuan. 2013. «A cloud approach to unified lifecycle data management in architecture, engineering, construction and facilities management: Integrating BIMs and SNS». *Advanced Engineering Informatics* 27 (2): 173-88. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.aei.2012.11.006.

Lu, Yujie, Zhilei Wu, Ruidong Chang, y Yongkui Li. 2017. «Building Information Modeling (BIM) for green buildings: A critical review and future directions». *Automation in Construction* 83 (Supplement C): 134- 48. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2017.08.024.

Shrivastava, Apurv, Devarshi Chaurasia, y Shweta Saxena. 2017. «Parameters for Assessing a Building Project Within the Purview of Constructability». In *Advances in Human Factors, Business Management, Training and Education*, 1209-14. Springer, Cham. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-42070-7_109.

Volk, Rebekka, Julian Stengel, y Frank Schultmann. 2014. «Building Information Modeling (BIM) for existing buildings — Literature review and future needs». *Automation in Construction* 38 (marzo): 109-27. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.autcon.2013.10.023.

PAPER #5.07

THE SUSTAINABLE WHITE CITY

Paolo De Marco[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The history of architecture and urban planning tells of white cities, whose chromatic characteristic derives from the use of local resources (stone, lime) and which unconsciously responded to principles of environmental sustainability. During the first half of the twentieth century, some European countries undertook economic and social policies aimed at the agricultural development of the territories and a consequent repopulation of the countryside. Especially in the south of Spain, numerous white-colored cities were founded.
Global warming issues call into question the current organization of the city, which must renew itself and create comfortable and compatible living conditions with long-term development. Today the importance of color is reaffirmed in the possibility of re-establishing the contemporary city according to principles of environmental and economic sustainability. In the field of architectural design, one of the central aspects to consider is the amount of energy that buildings need to cool down, and the amount of heat they emit into the atmosphere. Especially in areas with warm climates, the energy consumption of a building is determined by its thermal insulation properties, which mainly depend on the material and color of the external surfaces. The use of white color allows to reduce the heat absorbed by buildings, with lower energy consumption and emissions; furthermore, the amount of heat re-emitted in the atmosphere is reduced, with the possibility of decrease the urban heat island effect.
This simple chromatic principle of architecture can be extended to the urban scale thanks to a wide range of products and technologies, so that some cities have already undertaken a chromatic conversion.
The contribution tells the idea of a sustainable white city and, starting from examples of built architecture, it defines the possible principles, materials, techniques and technologies available for the design of architecture and the contemporary city.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; design; tradition; innovation; color.

1. TRADITION AND CONTINUITY OF THE WHITE COLOR

The origins of the use of white in architecture and the arts are distant and difficult to trace, related to primordial values and ancient ideals such as the sacred and purity, which give this particular color an almost universal meaning (Zammerini 2014). The history of architecture and urban planning tells of ancient white cities, whose chromatic characteristic derives from the use of local resources (stone, lime), a traditional practice that has above all hygienic reasons but which, almost unconsciously, responds to principles of environmental sustainability. In fact, in the thinking of vernacular architects, the holistic conception of the project is completely synergistic with the methods and materials available. The practice of whitewashing the walls of buildings spread throughout the Mediterranean area mainly during the eighteenth century, thanks to the hygienic properties of lime; at the same time, the white coating protects the masonry, decreases

solar radiation and improves the thermal conditions of the buildings. For these reasons, for centuries white color can be considered one of the characteristics of Mediterranean architecture and cities, which also corresponds to a spatial principle based on the construction of elementary and compact volumes - another principle of economy that also has the effect of reducing the exposed surfaces - the adoption of shaded patios and courtyards, and the creation of a few and measured openings, which allow lighting without heating. But the color white is also strongly linked to classical culture: for many centuries (and until the early 19th) the idea that Greek sculpture and architecture were white, idealized in the monochrome of Parian marble, resisted. In the eighteenth century, the tales of the *Grand Tours* and the passion for antiquities emphasize a mythical ideal of Greek art that Johann Joachim Winckelmann encoded in "noble simplicity and quiet grandeur" in which white enhances the beauty and perfection of forms (Winckelmann 1994, 117). Despite Winckelmann's historical reconstructions then turn out to be erroneous, these aesthetic theories are followed by most of the neoclassicals, influencing the plastic arts and architecture for a long time up to the present day (Collins 1970, 111-116). In the revolution wrought by the Modern Movement, white is the background of a page on which to write a new story: it expresses the cleanliness of the surfaces (to which the absence of ornament and the need for hygiene refer), the purity of forms and principles, the concepts of abstraction and denaturalization of volumes and materials[1]. Subsequently, the events of white in some cases are directly linked to the nationalist ideals of the ideologically similar governments of Italy, Spain and Portugal, where a new trend arises that leads to the study and recovery of popular building traditions, to the interest in spontaneous and anonymous architecture. This trend will have its peak, at the height of its diffusion, in the famous Bernard Rudofsky's *Architecture Without Architects* exhibition at the MoMA in New York and in the homonymous book published in 1964. In Spain, during the first half of the twentieth century, as part of a program for the repopulation of rural areas (initiative common to many nations), the color white asserted itself as a particular character in the architecture of newly founded cities. In this context, white experiences a great diffusion as a common feature of the various colonizations, predominant in these neo-popular architectures, which certainly refer to the elements of traditional architecture of southern Spain, but which starting from these introduce interesting linguistic innovations, so much so that it can be considered a pioneering experience on the theme of the rural house and on urban planning (Centellas Soler 2009). Among the many works of interest, those by José Luis Fernández del Amo and Alejandro De la Sota stand out. The projects of the *pueblos* extend the chromatic principle of white to the entire new settlement and, thanks to the sensitivity of their designers, they become bearers of the architectural concerns of the time, certainly extendable to the rest of European culture but, by their nature, referable to the specificity of contexts. This architecture built with reduced economic resources, with essential and humble tools (both design and technical-construction), rediscovers the true *spirit of necessity* that guides the *highest* forms of the art of building. A pioneering and experimental experience, capable of influencing the development of architectural and urban research from the twentieth century up to contemporaneity. So, the history of the white color in architecture is clearly linked to the history of construction materials, techniques and technologies that, as they evolve, contribute to the creation of forms, styles, movements and trends. The events of white architecture - and not only of it - cannot

[1] On the issues of color in modern architecture, a relevant contribution is that of Cramer Ned, "It was never white, anyway", in Architecture n. 88, 88-91. On the same theme, an analysis of the context of modernity is provided by Juan Serra Lluch, "Il mito del colore bianco nel Movimento Moderno", in Disegnare: Idee Immagini n. 41, 66-77.

be separated from the cultural evolution in the succession of the epochs, from the specificity of the places, from the psychological meaning, as they cannot be understood without considering the technological progress of the architecture. Today, new materials and innovative techniques allow to think about further applications of the color white in architecture - combining spatial research and sustainable thinking - potentially extendable, thanks to a wide variety of solutions, to the entire city.

2. SUSTAINABILITY OF COLOR

2.1. Physical factors

Global warming issues call into question the current organization of the city, which must renew itself and create comfortable and compatible living conditions with long-term development. Today the importance of color is reaffirmed in the possibility of re-establishing the contemporary city according to principles of environmental and economic sustainability (De Marco, Margagliotta 2018). In the field of architectural design, one of the central aspects to consider is the amount of energy that buildings need to cool down, and the amount of heat they emit into the atmosphere. Especially in areas with warm climates, the energy consumption of a building is determined by its thermal insulation properties, which also depend on the material and color of the external surfaces. The use of white color allows to reduce the heat absorbed by buildings, with lower energy consumption and emissions; furthermore, the amount of heat re-emitted in the atmosphere is reduced, with the possibility of decrease the *urban heat island* effect. In fact, regardless of the material and construction technique chosen for each architecture, the use of white offers some advantages for the sustainability of buildings. It can be said, in fact, that white is the greenest color in architecture, both for the exterior and the interior of the building (Lechner 2015, 120).

The physical properties of the color white make it particularly efficient from an energy point of view and therefore sustainable. If we are to consider temperatures, the most sensitive surfaces to the absorption of sunlight are the ceilings. The greater reflection of light rays causes, for example, that white ceilings heat half of black ones. This characteristic is quantifiable through solar reflection, also known as albedo, that is, a parameter that measures the capacity of a surface to reflect solar radiation. An albedo equal to 0 (zero) indicates a surface that does not reflect sunlight and, therefore, absorbs it in its entirety, with a consequent increase in temperature; conversely, an albedo value of 1 (one) indicates that sunlight is fully reflected. Table 1 indicates the albedo values for some surfaces commonly used in construction, of which it is observed that the white color has an albedo that varies from 0.5 to 0.9 (50% - 90% solar reflection), depending on the roughness surface and cleanliness. The so-called cool roofs are precisely the roofs that remain cool, or rather less warm, than traditional roofs. Especially in hot climates, paying attention to these aspects of construction can significantly reduce building overheating, resulting in lower costs to cool it down. At the same time, the widespread use of cool roofs can affect the urban scale for the reduction of the already mentioned *heat island* effect. Even on vertical surfaces, the white color reduces heat, two-thirds less compared to a black wall. If applied in buildings arranged in narrow streets, the white color increases the diffusion of natural light on the lower floors. In general, opaque white surfaces can be considered more sustainable than glazed ones, even if they are protected with sunscreens or shading elements. These briefly enumerated principles could be applied to the project of architectures more suitable to the climate and, ultimately, more sustainable; In any case, to more accurately quantify the reduction in temperatures, it is necessary to evaluate not only the color of the material, but also its thermal transmittance properties.

Building surface	% Albedo
White paint	50-90
Highly reflective roof	60-70
Colored paint	10-40
Brick and stone	10-40
Concrete	10-40
Red/brown tile roof	10-40
Grass	20-30
Trees	10-20
Corrugated roof	10-20
Tar and gravel roof	5-20
Asphalt paving	5-20

Table 1. Albedo of typical building surfaces (Lechner 2015)

2.2. Space and perception

According to some studies on human response to the color of its environment, white should not be chosen as the color of a space where people stay for a long time, such as offices or classrooms (Birren 1978; Mahnke 1996). This observation is not based on aesthetic but ergonomic reasons: the use of white - which has the highest light reflection factor of all other colors - associated with high levels of illumination (natural or artificial) and glossy and reflective finishes, it can produce glare and, consequently, a decrease in environmental comfort, causing visual, mental and emotional fatigue. In fact, to adapt to very bright environments, the eye muscles continuously act to reduce the opening of the pupil, with the consequent rapid tiredness. If the chromatic component confers a particular dimension in the architecture, this is even more true if the color is white (Cage 1993). In fact, white has the ability to minimize solar radiation (with the clear advantages previously described), improve the perception of shapes, expand spaces, enhance the play of light and shadow; in contemporary architecture, the use of white can refer to ideologies and specific spatial and linguistic investigations. According to design choices, today more than ever materials are projects in themselves (Deplazes 2013); in addition to building the architecture, the material qualify the space with its perceptual qualities (opacity-transparency, smoothness-porosity, temperature), so that even color must be considered an architectural material. The higher performance demands in contemporary buildings determine a constant drive to implement product quality and improve traditional techniques. These requests also lead to the adoption of materials that have been tested in other scientific fields and then, in some cases, conduce to the definition of exclusive materials for a special work, which can then be extended for a wider production. But the sustainability of architecture does not only concern the energy performance of a building or a set of these. A profoundly sustainable thought must also consider the influence of the project on the landscape (urban and otherwise), its correspondence to the cultural context and the relationship with the construction and living traditions. White architecture, in this sense, refers to universal values capable of adapting to the different conditions of the places.

3. APPLICATIONS FOR ARCHITECTURE AND THE CITY

This simple chromatic principle very present in the architecture of individual buildings may be extended to the urban scale thanks to a wide range of products and technologies, so much so that some cities have already undertaken a chromatic reconversion, intervening on the space and on the existing buildings, as a first step towards a profound change in the paradigms of building and urban design. Below some realizations are analyzed, chosen to represent the principles of white in architecture and which, thanks

to the qualities they emanate, allow the specification of the range of products available for the sustainability of white, by relating their uses and the possibilities they offer to the different design purposes of architectures. It is then made up of a catalog of solutions, materials, techniques and technologies available for the architectural project and the contemporary city.

3.1. Conversion of existing places

For the intervention on existing buildings (especially for refurbishment and renovation of buildings with shape constraints) an important contribution to the use of white in architecture comes from water-repellent and self-cleaning paints, which can also have insulating properties. A particular case is that of the liquid ceramic insulation that Elisa Valero Ramos has used for the construction of her own studio on a small plot in the center of Granada (Fig. 1). The availability of only 3.60 meters of depth, has led to reduce the thickness of the wall towards the street through the use of this special insulation, put into work as a simple painting. Composed of spherical microgranules of special ceramic, the liquid insulation uniformly covers any surface, forming a continuous, flexible and crack-free layer, which in a thickness of less than 1 mm provides insulation equivalent to 10 centimeters of polystyrene. From the point of view of the project, the use of white inserts the building into the chromatic and material continuity of its surroundings and, in other respects, adequately insulates it. As for the sustainable conversion of horizontal surfaces, flat or sloping roofs, the aforementioned cool roof technology includes a wide range of high solar reflectance paints that can reduce the surface temperature up to 30 °C. With regard to circulation spaces, however, the market offers a range of high-performance water-based sealants, directly applicable to existing surfaces (including asphalt) as a normal waterproofing product. The white color and the high reflectivity - although they reduce their effectiveness if not cleaned - allow to significantly reduce the surface temperature and consequently that of the environment, also increasing the night visibility of the streets without producing glare[2].

Figure 1. Elisa Valero Ramos studio in Calle Belén, Granada.

[2] In 2019, the city of Los Angeles began testing this particular technology on 15 stretches of road.

3.2. Design of new spaces

For the external horizontal surfaces (car parks, secondary roads, paths and pedestrian areas or green ways), there are interesting applications of white draining concrete, as in the case of Italcementi i.lab center in Bergamo, designed by Richard Meier (Fig. 2). The building - also entirely white thanks to the use of a special photocatalytic concrete - is part of a large natural park, accessible by walkways, ramps and outdoor spaces made of white draining concrete. This technology, thanks to the special mix-design, allows to safeguard the aquifers and, thanks to a high albedo, reach significantly lower temperatures than asphaltic floors, with the possibility of reducing the heat island effect typical of metropolitan areas. Regarding the building envelope, plaster still represents the most widespread technique for white architecture, due to its low costs and ease of application, especially for small-scale interventions (Reichel, Hochberg, Köpke 2007). However, to achieve the performance required for current architecture, the plasters acquire increasingly high insulating and breathable properties, obtaining interesting characteristics of durability and sustainability. One of the most interesting technologies applied to renderings is photocatalytic, which today is also being used in other finishing materials for architecture (such as the previously mentioned white concrete). In fact, the photocatalytic plaster is particularly white and shiny due to the presence of titanium dioxide (TiO_2); This chemical compound makes the plaster active, decomposing the microorganisms present in the air: with a process similar to the chlorophyll photosynthesis, air and light oxidize polluting substances and fine particles, forming harmless residues. These compounds are washed away by the rain, thus obtaining anti-pollutant, antibacterial and self-cleaning properties. With a greater durability, the photocatalytic plaster also allows to prolong its chromatic characteristics and consequently the physical effectiveness of its whiteness. The use of ceramics in architecture dates back to an ancient tradition, particularly widespread in countries and cultures with Arab influence. In its contemporary use, the ceramic material is renewed, so that some elements - today available in large sizes and reduced thicknesses - can be designed according to specific needs. Some producers also manufacture ceramic pieces with photocatalytic characteristics (also in this case with the use of titanium dioxide) that endow the surfaces with antibacterial, anti-pollution, anti-odor and self-cleaning properties. Among the examples of contemporary applications, always in the context of white architecture, the rental housing building in Gójar designed by Elisa Valero stands out (Fig. 3), which on the exterior, both on the facades and on the roof, is clad with alveolar ceramic: stoneware pieces traversed inside by alveoli that improve insulation; Research for sustainability has also led to the use of an enamel that is characterized by its capacity to capture CO_2.

Figure 2. Italcementi i.lab in Begamo, by Richard Meier.

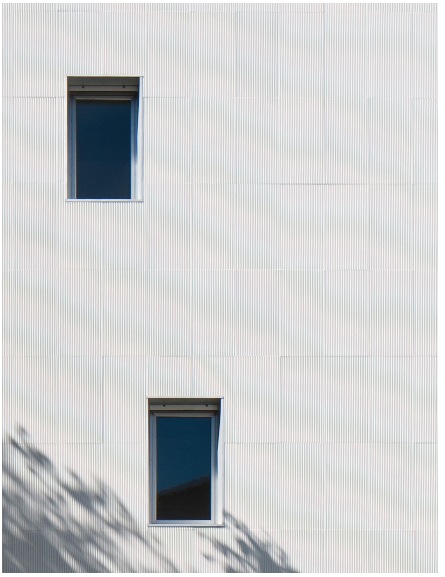


Figure 3. Housing building in Gójar, by Elisa Valero.

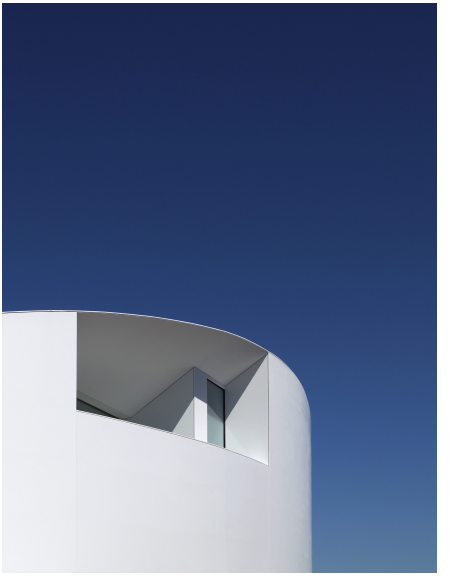


Figure 4. Balint house in Valencia, by Fran Silvestre.

Figure 5. EDP Headquarters in Lisbon, by Aires Mateus.

To remain in the context of Mediterranean architecture, the *Balint house* project by Fran Silvestre Arquitectos studio in Valencia is also interesting (Fig. 4). The white cladding of the unusual curvilinear geometry is made with *solid surface* - a technology widely used for the construction of countertops and sanitary accessories, due to its hygienic properties and the absence of joints. The elliptical and shiny house appears as a monolithic sculptural piece, endowed with a continuous ventilated façade, which also covers the curved roof in continuity. Among the contemporary applications of white concrete coatings, the technology of glass fiber reinforced panels (*Glassfiber Reinforced Concrete - GRC*) is widespread. Present in the architectural field for decades, recent research has improved the characteristics of GRC - greater mechanical resistance and extreme lightness - and has acquired the possibility of prefabricating elements with different shapes and sizes. These technical characteristics, together with the aesthetic qualities, have made GRC panels widely used in white architecture, especially in large-scale projects with complex geometry. The architects Aires Mateus Associados, who often render their small houses white, also used GRC technology in the project of the new headquarters of the electric company EDP in Lisbon, on the banks of the Tagus (Fig. 5): the large building consists of two tall glass blocks whose steel structure is clad with special GRC elements. Oriented to the southwest, these white ribbons run along the facades and cover the square between the blocks, setting the rhythm of the entire composition and solving, with a single expressive gesture, the entire project. The GRC elements act as sunscreens and protect spaces from excessive radiation, varying their size according to the internals, while the diagonal orientation generates a transparency effect that changes in relation to the position of the observer. White, often conceived as an opaque, full and static material, thanks to GRC panels, can express dynamic shapes and combine in an innovative way with transparency and light.

In the historical context of Berlin's Museum Island, David Chipperfield has recently completed a long series of interventions with the James Simon Galerie (Fig. 6). While exposed concrete is widely used in the interiors of the building, the exterior parts are characterized by architectural elements deduced by the neighboring constructions of Schinkel and Stüler, made of *Engineered stone*, a composite material made of stone fragments (in this case limestone and sandstone) joined by a resin. This technology - used above all for the construction of kitchen and bathroom countertops - makes it possible to use the residues from stone treatment and produce elements of large sizes and limited thickness. Finally, some less common materials in contemporary construction are mentioned, which are nevertheless the object of interesting research: fabrics, membranes and translucent polycarbonates, which come to architecture through technological transfer (as in the case of polytetrafluoroethylene, commercially known as *Teflon*) and they come to define new poetics that no longer root the building to the earth (and to history) but are projected towards new concepts of duration and dissolving forms. An example is the *experimental house* at Meme Meadows Center, built by Kengo Kuma, which uses a layer of transparent membranes to provide thermal insulation suitable for the harsh winters of northern Japan (Fig. 7). If the large sloping roof, as well as the larch wood structure, is derived from the traditional constructions of the region (the *chise*, home of the Ainu population), the construction is completed with the use of technologically advanced materials. The outer membrane is a polyester cloth painted with fluorocarbon (colorless substance with high hydrophobic properties), the inner thermal insulation is made of polyester fiber obtained from recycled polyethylene (PET) bottles, while the removable inner membrane is made of polyester cloth. fiberglass. Therefore, the use of transparent plastic materials defines a semi-opaque white volume, capable of being passed through by light.

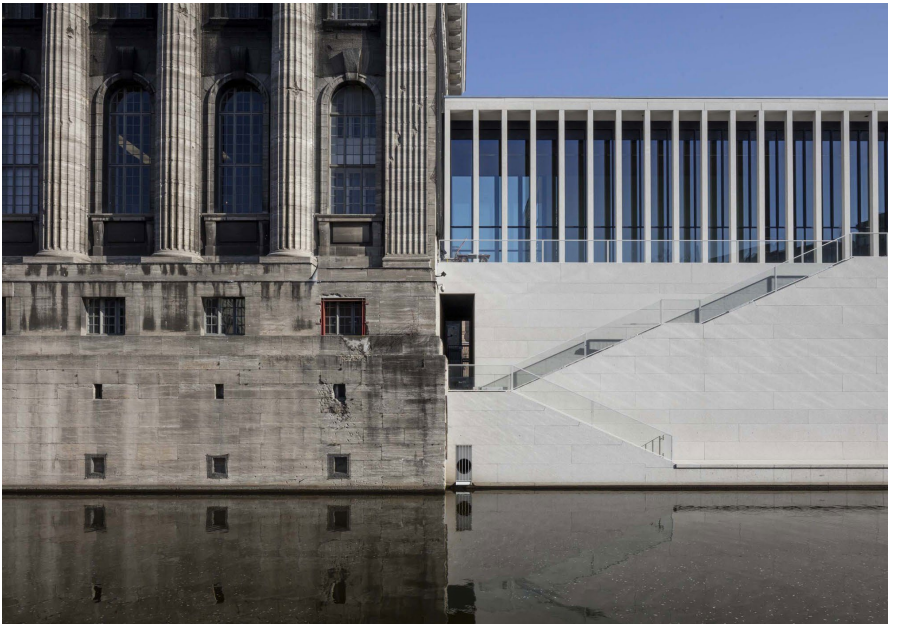


Figure 6. James Simon Galerie in Berlin, by David Chipperfield.

Figure 7. Meme Meadows experimental house, by Kengo Kuma.

CONCLUSION

Today, also due to the recent vicissitudes linked to the pandemic unfortunately still underway, culture, economy and society have returned to discuss the city, its population density, its morphological characteristics and the quality of life of its inhabitants: in other words, we have returned to talk about the sustainability of urban living. The proposal for the displacement of the population from the city for the rediscovery of life in the countryside, supported by some internationally renowned designers, nevertheless appears as an initiative which, if not controlled, could have disastrous effects on the territory. It is useful, however, to return to reflect on the city, first of all on how to intervene on the existing, to make it more responsive to the future vision of living; secondly, on the design of new buildings, public and private spaces. It is from this perspective that color can be rediscovered as an elementary principle of sustainability, as the constructive wisdom of traditional Mediterranean architecture reminds us. Nevertheless, the sustainability of white does not only concern the surface (or the *skin*) of the city, but implicitly includes principles of essentiality and economy for the living space which, consequently, influence people's lifestyles. The sustainable principle of white would thus represent an initiative of rapid feasibility and immediate results, albeit aware that probably, a sustainable model for the city of the future must address much more complex problems. Extending these principles to the urban scale, then, does not mean wrapping the metropolis with a veil of homogeneous, indifferent candor; on the contrary, as demonstrated by the different architectural solutions mentioned above, there are different ways in which white can be used, in the most suitable forms also in relation to particular contexts. From this point of view, white in architecture is not a simple color but instead represents a spatial principle, with technical and technological implications. "Sustainable design has also become a new marketing strategy both among designers and developers" - claims Juhani Pallasmaa (2010, 34) - describing the trend that favors the proliferation of projects that superficially tackle the issue of sustainability, for example, by adorning condominiums with vegetation but without actually intervening on the quality of the living space. A risk, that of *decorativism*, which in some cases also affects white architecture since, unfortunately, the current sustainability assessment system does not promote environmental policies and truly ecological thoughts. In any case, the search for sustainability must be approached from a holistic point of view, which cannot ignore formal qualities: "aesthetics is the mother of ethics", argues the poet and Nobel Joseph Brodsky, for which sustainability in architecture it will find, together with its own aesthetic, its ethical principles.

REFERENCES

Birren, F. 1978. *Color and Human response*. New York: John Wiley and Sons.

Cage, J. 1993. *Color y Cultura. La práctica y el significado del color de la Antigüedad a la abstracción.* Madrid: Ediciones Siruela.

Centellas Soler, M. 2009. *Los pueblos de colonización en Almería: arquitectura y desarrollo para una nueva agricultura*. Almería: Colegio Oficial de Arquitectos de Almería.

Collins, P. 1970. *Los ideales de la arquitectura moderna. Su evolución (1750-1950)*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

De Marco, P., Margagliotta A. 2018. "Il progetto del bianco e la materia dell'architettura / The design of white and the architecture matter", in *TECHNE* vol. 16,113-121.

Deplazes, A. (ed.) 2013. *Constructing Architecture. Materials, Processes, Structures. A handbook*. Basel: Birkhäuser, Basel.

Lechner, N. 2015. *Heating, cooling, lighting. Sustainable Design Methods for Architects,* Hoboken: Wiley.

Mahnke, F. H. 1996. *Color, Environment and Human Response.* New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Pallasmaa, J. 2010. "Towards a New Metaphor", in Balzani M., Marzot N., *Architetture per un territorio sostenibile. Città e paesaggio tra innovazione tecnologica e tradizione.* Ginevra-Milano: Skira.

Reichel, A., Hochberg, A., Köpke, C. 2007. *Detail Praxis. Enlucidos, revocos, pinturas y recubrimientos*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Winckelmann, J. J. 1994. *Historia del arte en la antigüedad.* Barcelona: Editorial Iberia.

Zammerini, M. 2014. *Il mito del bianco in architettura,* Macerata: Quodlibet.

PAPER #5.08

MACROCRITERIA FOR COMPILING DATA ON CO2 EMISSIONS IN BUILDING MATERIALS UNDER EPD, EN, ISO; CATALOG -IVE.

Begoña Serrano Lanzarote[a], César Emmanuel Arguedas Garro[a,b]
[a]Instituto Valenciano de la Edificación, Valencia, Spain
[b]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The objective is to carry out a macro-classification and qualification criteria for the selection of useful data on CO2 emissions in building materials, to be compiled in material databases. It is determined that CO2 emission data are necessary in building technology when selecting a material in relation to environmental impact (Hypothesis 1), the classification of emission data is useful for retrofitting, designing or building systems, for example in facades (Hypothesis 2).
Methodology. The data on CO2 emissions were classified in a representative sample of 829 materials studied from the Catalogue of building solutions, from the Construction Database of the *Instituto Valenciano de Edificación*-IVE, Annex I: Thermal and acoustic insulation (2019), Valencia, Spain ; Analyzing the environmental statements of existing products (EPD) with data on the global warming potential GWP [kg CO2 eq], the information was qualified with 3 evaluation points: 1) use of UNE-EN 15804: 1.00 point, 2) use of EN ISO 14025: 1.00 point, 3) EPD and data on current dates: 1.00 point; being for the IVE catalogue: 0.00 to <2.00 (Not useful); > 3.00 (Useful). The results of the qualification and the obtaining of 3 points provided useful emissions data according to: a) GWP [kg CO2 eq], b) EPD, Standard and ISO, c) current public data.
Conclusions. From the sample of 829 materials in the IVE's catalogue database, about 214 EPD of materials were found in the market, with useful data of CO2 emissions according to European Union regulations; information to be compiled regarding the environmental impact of the material.

KEYWORDS

Emissions; materials; embedded; carbon; energy.

INTRODUCTION

The scope of this study is to identify the criteria for compiling data on CO2 emissions, to be considered within the information of the catalogue of constructive solutions *(Construction Database 2019)* developed by the Valencia Institute of Building-IVE and successive editions (2020), providing specific data, in the building materials applicable in facades, envelopes, thermal capacity and their impact at the time of selecting the material, in relation to nearly zero-energy buildings and knowledge of embodied carbon. The purpose is to establish criteria for the evaluation of GHG data in relation to building material databases.
The comparison and selection of the data is obtained from specific criteria of Environmental Product Declarations- EPD(s), according of the ISO regulations *(ISO, I. 14020 2000)*, the data of CO2 emissions, were identified according to the standard *(UNE-EN 15804 2012)* and *(EN ISO 14025 2010),* through which data were obtained, coming from processes of calculation of emissions, in which the organizations or product companies, indicate data of GHG, according to the global warming potential GWP [kg CO2

eq]. The data of CO2 emissions reported in the EPD(s), are varied, so the classification and qualification of the information was established, to determine its usefulness for the *(Construction Database 2019)* of the Valencia Institute of Building - IVE.
This study is based on a compilation of CO2 data developed in the Environmental Product Declarations; the EPD(s) are regulated from the International Organization for Standardization -ISO(s) (Murphy, Yates 2009), European Union standards and technical sheets; the research defined the hypothesis in the use of a macro-compilation criterion, to demonstrate the usefulness of the data based on the calculations of GHG emissions.

1. DESCRIPTION OF THE CASE STUDY IN CONTEXT

1.1. Embodied carbon and CO2 emissions (energy matrix, production of EPD(s))

The life cycle of materials, as well as embedded energy, identifies the relationship between the energy production matrix and the production process of a material, where the impact of the carbon emissions of a material is also related to the energy matrix on which its production system is based. In the case of countries where the energy matrix is based on fossil fuel sources, the result not only implies a building material based on fossil fuels, but also a production of this material with high CO2 emissions, also establishing an increase in the embodied energy. The energy matrix on which the industry depends on a building material and the use of materials, links it to low or high emissions, the data on energy consumption in the process of producing a material, are reflected in the cycle of the embedded energy and identified in the EPD(s) according to *(ISO, I. 14020 2000), (UNE-EN 15804 2012)* and *(EN ISO 14025 2010)*.

In the international sphere, countries such as Costa Rica *(ICE Group promotes national electromobility with the presentation of a new fleet, consulted on May 1, 2019, https:// presidencia.go.cr),* Iceland, Norway, Portugal, identify successful cases in which the energy matrix is reaching 99% or 100% of production based on renewable energy, it is an achievement of locally produced stationary energy where the objective of carbon neutrality is a success. Another similar case occurs with Uruguay and Lesotho, which also have around 100% of energy production based on renewable energies; according to (Clarke 2017), the case of Iceland is also identified, as an example for the industrialized countries of the planet, for producing clean energy, where stationary energy is 99% renewable energy.
The energy consumption for the elaboration of a building product evidenced in the EPD(s) *(ISO, I. 14020 2000),* is associated with the energy matrix on which its production depends, it implies emissions according to the energy used and the Life Cycle. Building materials have CO2 data, which in the case of Spain are in turn equivalent in emissions from energy use, such as Natural Gas, Diesel emissions, G. Generator, Diesel and Gasoline emissions, Fugitive and Process Emissions, Emissions from Electrical Energy, according to *(Greenhouse Gas Emissions Report 2016)*. The knowledge of CO2 data is related to sustainable design, the lack of production of materials with emissions data generates a problem in contemporary design that aims to reduce the environmental impact of a construction.

1.2. Standard(s) and ISO(s), GHG emissions and criteria for the calculation of CO2 eq

The objective of a low-carbon global economy, seeks to establish criteria and methods for the analysis of the carbon footprint, which allows to establish common policies and regulations that are unified in a homogeneous way,

standards in the European Union establish unified criteria *(UNE-EN 15804 2012)*; in the case of Spain, some management policies were those of the Royal Decree 163/2014, of March 14, relating to the registration of the carbon footprint, compensation and absorption of carbon dioxide projects, published in the BOE on 29 March 2014 *(Royal Decree-Law 2014)*.

The calculation of the carbon footprint after the effect of greenhouse gases has involved both organizations and the building sector, in the case of the European Union, the standards *(UNE-EN ISO 14064-1 2012), (UNE-EN ISO 14064-2 2012), (UNE-EN ISO 14064-3 2012),* have evolved towards an improvement in the calculation of greenhouse gases. According to the standard *(UNE-EN ISO 14064-2 2012)* GHG are understood to be gaseous compounds in the atmosphere, both natural and anthropogenic, that retain and emit radiation at wavelengths, which occur in the spectrum of infrared radiation emitted by the planet's surface, clouds and atmospheric layer *(UNE-EN ISO 14064-2 2012)*.

According to the standard *(UNE-EN ISO 14064-2 2012)*, in point "5.8 Quantification of emissions reduction - increase in GHG absorption", the ton is used as a unit of measurement, converted into the amount of each type of GHG in tons of carbon equivalent -CO2e, using the global warming potentials (PCG). The global warming potentials of PCG greenhouse gases, for a 100 year projection, published by the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change *(IPCC guidelines for national greenhouse gas inventories: reporting instruction, 1997)*, are the basis for the current calculation of CO2 equivalent GHG emissions. The standards *(UNE-EN ISO 14064-1 2012), (UNE-EN ISO 14064-2 2012), (UNE-EN ISO 14064-3 2012),* have been part of a standardized evolution for the quantification of greenhouse gases and carbon footprint, during production processes or activities; as of 2019, these standards have been replaced by the standards *(UNE-EN ISO 14064-1 2019), (UNE-EN ISO 14064-2 2019), (UNE-EN ISO 14064-3 2019)*.

The calculation of GHGs is carried out in two stages *(UNE-ISO / TR 14069 2015);* the first stage consists of converting activity data into GHG emissions: GHG emissions or removals = activity data x emission or removal factor. The second stage considers the Global Warming Potential (GWP) of each GHG and allows calculating the conservation of GHG emissions or removals in the climate impact, identified in tons of CO2 equivalent (tCO2-e):

$$\text{GHG emissions} = \sum_{\text{gas}} \text{emissions} \times \text{PCG}_{\text{gas}}$$

Calculation of GHG emissions; Definition of the symbols: GHG, CO2 equivalent: Σ, sum of gas emissions; PCG, to the potential of global warming. *(UNE-ISO / TR 14069 2015).* Equation (1). Source: *(UNE-ISO / TR 14069 2015).*

The basis for calculating carbon emissions in a building material is defined from the sum of the GHGs provided by the chemical components that make up a material; within the EPD(s) and *(ISO, I. 14020 2000)*, in many cases the content of the sum of GHGs can be seen, data that as a whole will be understood as CO2 emissions and that are indicated according to the ISO *(EN ISO 14025 2010)* and the standard UNE-EN *(UNE-EN 15804 2012),* in which the current foundations are determined, both for the calculation of the life cycle inventory and for the life cycle impact evaluated of an EPD, being verified and validated in the European Unión.

A product is defined as a good or service, or a group of goods or services in relation to the life cycle of the product in which the environmental aspect implies activities, with environmental impact *(EN ISO 14025 2010)*. According to *(EN ISO 14025 2010)* an environmental declaration (type III) -EPD the production of a product implies the acquisition of the raw material, the Industrialization, the use, the end of the useful life (life cycle).

According to the standards *(UNE-EN 15804 2012), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*, the stages and modules included in the life cycle are: 6.2.2, A1-A3: Product stage, modules and information, 6.2.3, A4-A5: Stage in process, construction, modules and information, 6.2.4, B1-B5: Stage and use, information modules referring to the building structure, 6.2. 5, B6-B7: Stage of use, modules and information concerning the operation of the building, 6.2.6, C1-C4: End of life stage, information module, 6.2.7, D: Benefits and burdens occurring after the limits of the material's use (potential for reuse, recovery). These described stages are part of the content of an EPD *(ISO, I. 14020 2000)* and constitute the data of embodied carbon in the materials.

The Building Services Research and Information Association- BRISA, indicates that in order to calculate the embodied carbon in the building, it is necessary to: a- Identify the type of material to be used in a project or design, b- establish the amount of materials to be used , c- make use of the Carbon and Energy Inventory, developed by the University of Bath, UK, d- Multiply each weight of each material by the CO2 emission factor, obtaining the CO2 emissions of each material that has been used in the building, e- finally add up all the CO2 emissions obtained from each material used to see the total impact of the embodied carbon. *(BRSRIA Measuring embedded carbon - the next indicator of sustainability, consulted on August 10, 2020, https://www.bsria.com/)*.

In the research presented in this article, an evolution in the procedure for calculating embodied carbon is demonstrated, as more accurate CO2 data is used in this case: a-Identify the data of the declared functional unit of the material according to the EPD based on the European Union standards *(UNE-EN 15804 2012), (EN ISO 14025 2010),* b-Identify the area in m2 of the surface to be intervened with the material(s) to be used, c-Multiply the data provided by the GWP in the EPD, of the CO2 emissions declared in each material by the surface in m2 to intervene, d- Add up the emissions obtained by each material to be used to define the total carbon embodied in the proposed building or design.

A1-A2 kg CO2 equiv/UF x A.m2 = kg CO2 equiv/UF

Calculation of Embodied Carbon (materials for architectural design); Definition of the symbols: A1-A2: modules (data in EPD), Finished product stage. A.m2: Surface of the facade; Ratio of m2 of the material to be used in the renovation and the weight of CO2 emissions. Equation (2). Source: César Arguedas

2. METHODOLOGY (DESCRIPTION)

2.1. Criteria for compiling CO2 emission data according to DAP(s), UNE, ISO standards

According to the Catalogue of building solutions *(Construction Database 2019)*, of the Catalogue of constructive retrofitting solutions of the Valencia Institute of Building and the classification of products and materials, depending on the properties of thermal insulators for energy retrofitting IVE- Generalitat Valenciana *(P1 Products and Materials: Properties of thermal insulators for energy retrofitting 2014)*, (Serrano, García, Ortega 2011), the following materials have been classified: Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW) of mineral origin, Mineral wool (MW) - glass wool (GW) of mineral origin, Expanded polystyrene (EPS) of synthetic origin, Extruded polystyrene (XPS) of synthetic origin, Polyurethane or Polyisocyanurat or (PUR) of synthetic origin, Expanded Perlite (EPB) of mineral origin, Cellular glass (CG) of mineral origin, Sheep wool (SHW) of animal origin, Cotton (CO) of plant origin, Hemp (HM) of plant origin, Cellulose (CL) of plant origin, Cork (ICB) of plant origin, Coconut fiber (CF) of plant origin, Flax (FLX) of plant origin, Wood fibers (WF) of plant origin.

From the Catalogue of building solutions *(Construction Database 2019)*, the equivalent materials in the construction market were studied, in relation to building products or materials with environmental declarations of EPD product(s), environmental self-declarations, material data sheets according to the producing company; also analyzed data from the Eduardo Torroja Institute of Construction Sciences (IETCC), *(Opendap 2013)*, all according to the standards *(EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE-EN 15804 2012), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*.

The analysis of the data was based on the content of the Environmental Product Declarations -EPD(s), taking into account the data of the global warming potential GWP [kg CO2 eq], and the calculations of the greenhouse gas emissions -GHG, related to the definition of CO2 according to the time horizon of 100 years by the IPCC, Table. A.1 *(IPCC guidelines for national greenhouse gas inventories: reporting instructions 1997),* and the updated data in the ISO 14067 *(UNE-CEN ISO / TS 14067 2015)* replaced in 2019 *(UNE-EN ISO 14067 2019)*.

The process and criteria of the study are described in Table 1; the objective of the analysis of the EPD information was to establish a macro-criteria of information selection to compile the GWP emission data [kg CO2 eq], in the materials indicated in the construction database *(Construction Database 2019).* The content to be evaluated and compiled after the classification of the data was: Product stage: A1-A3, Construction process: A4, A5, Use stage: B1-B7, End of life stage: C1-C4, and reuse: D, indicated in the information, of the EPD according to the standards *(ISO, I. 14020 2000), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*.

Table 2 shows two cases of materials with information on CO2 emissions, according to the parameters of the stages (A1-A5, B1- B7, C1- C4, D); the data were compiled after being classified and evaluated. Case 1: mineral wool (MW); case 2: glass wool (GW).

Table 2 shows two cases of materials: Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW) of ROCKWOOL *(Thermal Insulation of Rock Wool for Buildings 2015)* and Mineral wool (MW) - glass wool (GW), from Isover saint gobain *(ECOVENT 35 2017)*; the EPD information of each material - product, in this case of thermal insulators, identifies the CO2 emission values to be compiled in the Construction Database *(Construction Database 2019)* of the Catalogue of constructive retrofitting solutions of the Valencia Institute of Building.

Graph 1 identifies the analysis performed in the Catalogue of building solutions of the Construction Database of the Valencia Institute of Building-IVE *(Construction Database 2019),* after entering the data of the compilation according to the EPD(s) of the products. From a total of 829 materials, the data of GHG emissions (kg CO2 eq) were introduced, in 214 materials that complied with EPD(s) and the standards *(EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*; of the total of 829 materials studied, no specific emission data was found in some 615, due to Lambda (Λ λ) and the specificity of the material, it was not always possible to find data to compile the information to the catalogue, although this does not rule out the relationship of emissions, with the denominations or origins of some others materials.

Design of the study						
Stage 1: data study	Stage 2: qualification of data	Evaluation	Stage 3: analysis of data	Total of materials analyzed (stage: A1-A3, B1- B7, C1-C4, D)	Stage 4 compilation of data	Total of materials compiled
Data	Points	Total score: 3 point	GWP emissions	Materials (building, thermoacoustics)	opendap	128
EN ISO 14025	EPD (s), data: most up-to-	1	opendap	128	EPD	86
UNE-EN 15804	According: EN ISO 14025	1	EPD (s)	86	no data	615
Data; current in EPD	According: UNE-EN 15804	1	total data GB	214	EN ISO 14025	214
LEED/ BREEAM	Overall rating:	3	IVE	829	UNE-EN 15804	214

Table 1. Graphic representation of the research study design. Source: (own elaboration)

PRODUCTS AND MATERIALS (thermal insulators for energy rehabilitation, based on data and information from the Valencian Institute of Building - IVE)

Detailed value, depending on the Environmental product declaration-EPD, (Global warming potential) GWP [kg CO2 eq]

	Parameters	Product stage: A1-A3	Construction process: A4, A5		Use stage: B1-B7							End of life stage: C1-C4					Entity- Source of information, EPD.	Publication date	Expiration date
	ROCKWOOL rock wool thermal insulation (37 mm thickness; 30 kg / m3 density)	A1: Supply of raw materials, A2: Transportation to factory, A3: Manufacturing	A4: Transportation to work	A5: Installation / Construction	B1: Use	B2: Maintenance	B3: Repair	B4: Substitution	B5: Rehabilitation	B6: Use of energy in service	B7: Use of water in service	C1: Deconstruction / demolition	C2: Transportation	C3: Waste treatment	C4: Elimination	D: Reuse potential, recovery recycling	ROCKWOOL products	1/11/2015.	1/11/2020.
CASE 1	ISO 14025: 2010, EN 15804: 2012 + A1: 2013	A1- A3: 1.2E+00	1.5E-01	3.1E-02	0	MNA	MNA	MNA	MNA	MNA	MNA	MNA	2.1E-03	MNA	7.3E-03	-4.0E-02	https://static.rockwool.com/globalassets/rockwool-es/herramientas/certificados/daps/ROCKWOOL_DAP		
	Total Rating: 3																		
CASE 2	Factory facade air chamber (Glass Wool, 35mm) Isover- insulators	A1: Supply of raw materials, A2: Transportation to factory, A3: Manufacturing	A4: Transportation to work	A5: Installation / Construction	B1: Use	B2: Maintenance	B3: Repair	B4: Substitution	B5: Rehabilitation	B6: Use of energy in service	B7: Use of water in service	C1: Deconstruction / demolition	C2: Transportation	C3: Waste treatment	C4: Elimination	D: Reuse potential, recovery recycling	Isover saint gobain	1/6/2017	31/5/2020.
	EN 15804/ ISO 14025	A1/A2/A3: 2.1E+00	1.3E01	1.1E-01	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	7.2E-03	0	0	0	https://www.isover.es/productos/ecovent-035		
	Total Rating: 3																		

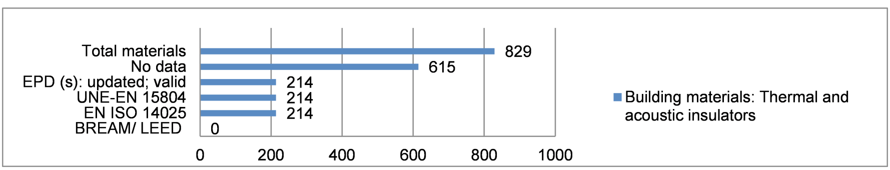
Table 2. Detailed value, according to the Environmental product declaration –EPD, and the Global warming potential -GWP [kg CO2 eq] - Products: ROCKWOOL, Isover, saint gobain. Source: (own elaboration)

Graph 1 shows that the information of the environmental statements of product(s) EPD, were decisive because they are data developed based on compliance with ISO(s) and standards *(EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE -EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*, in this case the regulatory compliance of the European community in terms of environmental product declarations, was the determining aspect to find data to qualify and proceed to compile the information.

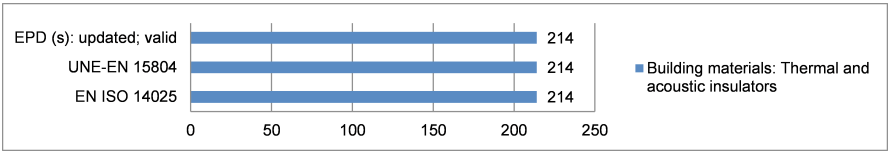
Graph 2 identifies that of the total data analyzed for 829 materials in the catalogue of the Construction Database, of the Valencia Institute of Building-IVE *(Construction Database 2019)*, about 214 comply with the standards *(EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*. This information was evaluated with the aim of indexing the data to the database *(Construction Database 2019)*, following a criterion of qualification of the information according to the fulfillment of the 3 Points evaluated.

2.2. Qualification according to the macro-criteria for the compilation of CO2 emission data

Graph 3 identifies the 3 qualification criteria, which allowed establishing the classification of the data information in the macro compilation criterion applied to the rest of the 829 materials; the qualification was based on the data of the EPD(s) of the consulted materials, the material designation and the origin in relation to the materials in the catalogue *(Construction Database 2019)*. The macro criteria for the compilation of the emission data was: comply with 1- Environmental Product Declaration- EPD according to: Standard *(UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*, 2- Environmental Product Declaration - EPD according to: ISO *(EN ISO 14025 2010)*, 3- Environmental product declaration - EPD, according to: EPD (s) with the most up-to-date information.



Graph 1. Data to be compiled in the database (Construction database 2019), of the Valencia Institute of Building - IVE, according to the EPD(S), and the standards (EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014). Source: (own elaboration)

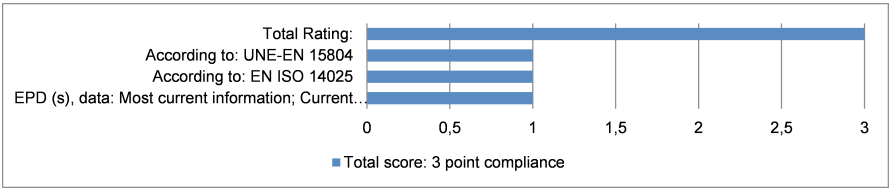


Graph 2. Useful CO2 emissions data for compilation in the database (Construction Database 2019), according to EPD(S). Source: (own elaboration)

By complying with a 3-point rating, the data to be compiled has provided information on the CO2 emissions according to: a-global warming potential (GWP) [kg CO2 eq], environmental impact *parameters (Summary for Policymakers and Technical Summary of Working Group I Report 1995)*, b- EPD according to standard(s), and ISO(s) according to standards *(AENOR, search for 2020 standards),* c-public data, for Spain with information according to standards *(UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014),* useful information from other data sources, e.g. Eduardo Torroja Institute of Construction Sciences-Spain *(Opendap 2013),* d- EPD from the public website - international information (other media), e - EPD(s) verified with current European Union standards *(AENOR, 2020 standards search),* f- EPD independent data from: BREEAM / LEED / VERDE, g- data supplemented with self-declarations of environmental products.

3. RESULTS

The 3 points obtained in 214 cases of compiled materials, implies that the information on the emissions of the materials comply with the regulations *(UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014), (EN ISO 14025 2010),* and valid information. In 15% there were two or more EPD(s) to compare from which emission data compiled only obtained the 3-points, for the other cases there was only one EPD source that in turn met the 3 points. In other cases the only information about the CO2 emission data of a material was based on the web data *(Opendap 2013)* according to the standards *(UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014), (EN ISO 14025 2010)*.
The evaluation of the 3 points qualified was of the following scale: 0.00 to <2.00 (Not useful); 3.00 (Useful), being the qualification (useful), the one of importance for the compilation. This procedure established the selection criteria for the data to be compiled in the database (Construction Database 2019), see the example in Table 3. From the sample of 15 cases of materials, taken based on the



Graph 3. Criteria for data qualification, for compilation to the database (Construction database 2019), (P1 Products and Materials: Properties of thermal insulators for energy rehabilitation 2014). Source: (own elaboration)

information of the EPD according to (ISO, I. 14020 2000) are useful for compiling 14 data from 15 samples, obtaining in these 14 samples the three points.

3.1. Tested hypotheses, criteria for data compilation

Table 3 shows the compilation criteria before including any type of emission data [kg CO2-eq.]. At this stage it was proposed to compare the qualifications obtained among 4 cases of the same type of Rock Wool material, according to the content of 4 EPD(s) case1: *(Acustilaine 70 2013),* case 2: *(Thermal Insulation of Rock Wool for Buildings 2015),* case 3 *(DP-3 Multipurpose Rock Mineral Wool insulation, Knauf Insulation, doo, Skofja Loka 2013)*, case 4 (Rock Mineral Wool Insulation 33 - 45 kg / cu.m 2016) all with market emission data; where the second case of rock wool (SW), went on to have a rating of 3 points, since it obtained the maximum value in each of the criteria evaluated, obtaining the values assigned on the use of *(UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*: 1.00 (point), *(EN ISO 14025 2010)*: 1.00 (point), and EPD, with data on current dates: 1.00 (point); 3 points.
The materials in which it is not possible to find a minimum of 4 EPD(s) to compare them, because they are materials with few data in the market and whose rating in one or two EPD is 3.00 (Useful), which is useful information for the catalog; all cases with ratings> 2.00 (> 3.00) are doubtful.

3.2. Tested hypotheses, classification, and qualification of data usefulness

Table 4 explains the data classification ratings: 0.00 to <2.00 points (Not useful); 3.00 points (Useful); where most of the samples based on EPD(s), obtained useful scores (3 points), i.e. CO2 emissions data are useful for the Database, from the Valencia Institute of Building-IVE *(Database of construction 2019)*. Of the 15 samples, only one case (without data) had a data rating: 0.00 to <2.00 (Not useful).
The demonstration of the usefulness of the qualified data of emissions, with 3 points obtained (compiled in the IVE catalog), applying Equation (2) (A1-A2 kg CO2 equiv/ UF x A.m2 = kg CO2 equiv/UF), in the case of 2 materials in an example of retrofitting of a façade of 83 m2, demonstrated the importance of using CO2 qualified data to calculate the embodied carbon of a building. Case of 2 materials compared: A- Expanded polystyrene (EPS) of synthetic origin: A1-A3: 9,76E+00kg *(GlobalEPD-RCP-007 2018),* (table 4). Apply the material in the retrofitting of the façade: build 83 m2 of facade surface to intervene. 9,76E+00kg x 83 m2= 810, 08 CO2 equiv/UF in façade. B-Mineral wool (MW): A1/ A2/A3: 2.1E+00 *(ECOVENT 35 2017)*, (table

	Qualification for compilation of emission data of [kg CO2-Eq.] (catalog of materials of the Valencian Institute of Building - IVE) according to the content of the "Environmental Product Declaration" -EPD							
	Material designation	Origin	Material Name in the market	EPD according to: EN ISO 14025 (European Union)	EPD according to: Standard, UNE-EN 15804 (European Union)	EPD, data: effective dates	Sum of qualification: utility of emission data, for compilation in catalog IVE: 0.00 to <2.00 (Not useful); > 3.00 (Useful)	Highest Rating: Index to the catalog of materials of the Valencian Institute of Building - IVE
Case 1	Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW)	Mineral	Rigid rock wool panel ISOVER, non hydrophilic, uncoated (0.034 W / (m · K))	1,00	1,00	0,00	2,00	
Case 2	Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW)	Mineral	ROCKWOOL rock wool thermal insulation (37 mm thickness; 30 kg / m3 density)	1,00	1,00	1,00	3,00	Useful ✓
Case 3	Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW)	Mineral	Multipurpose rock mineral wool insulation (0.039 W / (mK))	1,00	1,00	0,00	2,00	
Case 4	Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW)	Mineral	Insulation of mineral rock wool 33 - 45 kg / cu.m (0.035 - 0.037 W / mK)	1,00	1,00	0,00	2,00	
				EVALUATION CRITERIA	EVALUATION CRITERIA	EVALUATION CRITERIA		

Table 3. Comparison of ratings after evaluating the content of 4 EPD(s), case: Mineral wool (MW) - rock wool (SW), according to the grade obtained 3.00 points (Useful); based on the indexation of CO2 emissions data to the database (Construction database 2019) Valencia Institute of Building - IVE. Source: (own elaboration)

4). Apply the material in the retrofitting of the façade: build 83 m2 of facade surface to intervene. 2.1E+00 kg x 83 m2= 174, 3 CO2 equiv/UF.
A- Expanded polystyrene (EPS)= 810, 08 CO2 equiv/UF of Embodied Carbon in façade; B-Mineral wool (MW)= 174, 3 CO2 equiv/UF of Embodied Carbon in façade. In case of using both materials (EPS and MW) in the façade, the total of Embodied Carbon is: 984, 38 equiv/UF. It includes Stages A1-A3 of the EPD(s) including the transport. The calculations in the cases A and B show the importance of the qualified data.

CONCLUSION

The macro-criteria for the compilation of CO2 emissions data proposed in this research, for the database *(Construction Database 2019)*, are defined in the classification and qualification of the information of the EPD(s), the technical sheets, the investigations, according to the data of GHG emissions, based on the standards and ISO(s), *(EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014)*. The current European Union regulations on GHG emissions include global warming potentials (GWP) as a function of CO2 over the 100-year, IPCC *(2006 IIPCC guidelines for national inventories of greenhouse gases, IIPCC 2006)*.
The contents that most contribute to a process of compiling emissions data of the global warming potential GWP [kg CO2 eq], are: Product stage: A1-A3 (including transport),

Qualification based in data of GHG emissions (15 cases of thermal materials)

Bullet point list	Material name	Material name in data source	STAGE A1- A3, GWP [kg CO2 eq]	Qualification
1	**Mineral wool (MW)**	rock wool (SW) of mineral origin, rock wool ROCKWOOL (37 mm; density of 30 kg / m3) *(Thermal Insulation of Rock Wool for Buildings 2015)*	A1-A3: 1.2E+00	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
2	**Mineral wool (MW)**	glass wool (GW) of mineral origin (Air chamber factory facade (Glass Wool, 35 mm) Isover- insulators) *(ECOVENT 35 2017)*	A1A2/A3: 2.1E+00	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
3	**Expanded polystyrene (EPS) of synthetic origin**	Stabilized expanded polystyrene insulator (EPS) <0.065 W/ m • K (Traditerm System)*(GlobalEPD-RCP-007 2018)*	A1-A3: 9,76E+00	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
4	**Extruded polystyrene (XPS) of synthetic origin**	Extruded Polystyrene Foam (thickness 5 cm) *(Extruded Polystyrene Foam Thermal Insulation Sheet XPS -DANOPREN 2016)*	3,98E+00	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
5	**Polyurethane or Polyisocyanurat or (PUR) of synthetic origin**	Thermal insulated projected polyurethane foam (projected polyisocyanurate) *(Thermal insulated projected polyurethane foam, closed cells; density 40 kg / m3 2014)*	A1-A3: 15.6	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
6	**Expanded Perlite (EPB) of mineral origin**	Expanded Perlite *(" Databases: Building", Opendap, accessed May 1, 2019, https://www.opendap.es/)*	A1-A3: 0,14	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
7	**Cellular glass (CG) of mineral origin)**	Cellular glass *(FOAMGLAS® T4 +2014)*	A1-A3: 1.3E+0	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
8	**Sheep wool (SHW) of animal origin**	Sheep wool *(" Databases: Building", Opendap, accessed May 1, 2019, https://www.opendap.es/)*	A1-A3: 5,53	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
9	**Cotton (Insulating, not hydrophilic)**	Cotton *(" Databases: Building", Opendap, accessed May 1, 2019, https://www.opendap.es/)*	A1-A3: 5,53	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
10	**Hemp (Aislatne, not hydrophilic)**	Aislatne, not hydrophilic *(" Databases: Building", Opendap, accessed May 1, 2019, https://www.opendap.es/)*	A1-A3: 17	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
11	**Cellulose (CL) of vegetable origin**	Cellulose (Cl) cellulose insulator- AislaNat *(Loose fill cellulose insulation 2018)*	A1 7,15E-02 / A2 2,10E-02 / A3: 6,49E-02	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
12	**Cork (Wood, compressed)**	Wood, compressed *(" Databases: Building", Opendap, accessed May 1, 2019, https://www.opendap.es/)*	A1-A3: 1.1	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
13	**Coconut Fiber**	Coconut Fiber *(Carabaño, Bedoya, Ruiz 2014)*	no data	**rating: no data (Not useful)**
14	**Linen (FLX) of plant origin**	Flax fiber *(" Databases: Building", Opendap, accessed May 1, 2019, https://www.opendap.es/)*	A1-A3: 17	**rating: 3 (Useful)**
15	**Wood chips (WF) of vegetable origin**	Fiber: Wood, M DF Melamine *(Medium density fibreboard (MDF), both raw as well as melamine faced medium density fibreboards 2017)*	A1-A3: 0,74	**rating 3 (Useful)**

Table 4. Data-based qualification (EPD) of GHG emissions, in 15 cases of thermal materials. Source: (own elaboration)

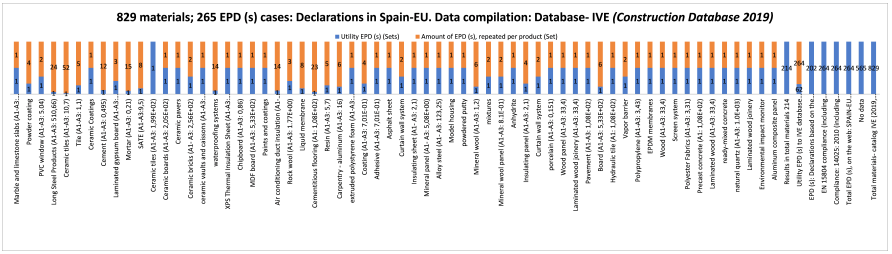


Table 5. Table with 214 materials that have reached 3 points; including data of equivalent CO2 emissions, according to qualified data of the EPD(s), according to the regulation. Source: (own elaboration)

Construction process: A4, A5, Use stage: B1-B7, End-of-life stage: C1-C4, D: reuse, according to the EPD(s), with stage A1-A3 being the one with the most information as it is mandatory.

The macro-criteria used in this research defines a logical procedure for the usefulness of the CO2 emissions data, when compiling the information for the Construction Database, of the Valencia Institute of Building-IVE *(Construction Database 2019)*. From the sample of 829 materials indicated in the catalogue database, about 214 materials whit EPD(s) have been found in the market, which mainly comply with the standards *(EN ISO 14025 2010), (UNE-EN 15804 2012+ A1 2014),* according to the calculation procedures of CO2 emissions established in the European Union standards.

Table 5 identifies a summary with 214 materials with useful data for the materials catalogue, including data on CO2 emissions, according to the EPD regulations. 264 materials include EPD data for repeated materials. Of the 829 materials in the catalogue *(Construction Database 2019)*, no emission data was found according to EM 565 regulations. The usefulness of GHG emissions data in the life cycle of 214 materials for compilation in the construction base *(Construction Database 2019)*, identifies the current status of materials in the building products industry in Spain and its relationship with technological innovation and environmental impact analysis, the choice of materials in the construction of sustainable designs in Spain and the European Union, can be justified in the comparison of CO2 emissions.

The usefulness of the data of the emissions in the EPD(s), is related to the total of the life cycle stages, calculating the emissions for each of the material stages (Product stage: A1-A3, Construction process: A4, A5, Use stage : B1-B7, End-of-life stage: C1-C4, D: reuse; this allows to identify the impact of the embodied carbon from the use of a material in a building, to the possibility of reusing the material; The calculation method for each stage can be carried out with equation (2), which allows to calculate the impact of the emissions even at the time of reuse of the material at the end of the life cycle.

REFERENCES

Carabaño, R., Bedoya, C., & Ruiz, D. 2014. "Análisis de ciclo de vida de una nueva solución arquitectónica que mejora el rendimiento térmico de la envolvente del edificio: Fachada Natural Aljibe". *Informes de la Construcción,* 66(535), 034. https://doi.org/10.3989/ic.12.128.

Clarke, J., Heinonen, J., Ottelin, J. 2017. "Emissions in a decarbonised economy? Global lessons from a carbon footprint analysis of Iceland". *Journal of Cleaner Production,* 166: 1175-1186. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jclepro.2017.08.108.

CHANGE–IPCC, I. P. O. C. 1997. *"IPCC guidelines for national greenhouse gas inventories: reporting instructions"*. Geneva: IPCC.

BOE. 2014. *"Real Decreto-ley 2/2014, de 29 de marzo, por el que se crea el registro de huella de carbono, compensación y proyectos de absorción de dióxido de carbono: Boletín Oficial del Estado, 29 de marzo de 2014, núm. 77"*. España: BOE. https://www.boe.es/diario_boe/txt.php?id=BOE-A-2014-3379.

IPCC. 2006. *"2006 IPCC Guidelines for National Greenhouse Gas Inventories, Prepared by the National Greenhouse Gas Inventories Programme, Eggleston H.S., Buendia L., Miwa K., Ngara T. y Tanabe K. (eds)"*. Japón: IGES.

Instituto Valenciano de la Edificación-IVE. "*Base de Datos de Construcción 2019, Anexo I: Aislantes térmicos y acústicos"*. Valencia: IVE. https://www.five.es/ive/

ISO, I. 2000. *"14020: 2000 Environmental Labels and Declarations—General Principles. ISO"*. Geneva: ISO. https://www.iso.org/standard/34425.html.

Ministerio de Economía, Industria y Competitividad -Mineco. 2016. *"Centro Español de Meteorología. Informe de Emisiones de Gases de Efecto Invernadero (GIE) En 2016"*. Madrid: Mineco.

Murphy, C. N., & Yates, J. 2009. *"The International Organization for Standardization (ISO): global governance through voluntary consensus"*. London and New York: Routledge.

Serrano, B., García, R y Ortega, L. 2011. *"Catálogo de soluciones constructivas de rehabilitación."* Valencia: Generalitat Valenciana. Consellería de Medio Ambiente, Agua, Urbanismo y Vivienda.

AENOR. 2010. *"UNE-EN ISO 14025:2010 Etiquetas y declaraciones ambientales. Declaraciones ambientales tipo III. Principios y procedimientos. (ISO 14025:2006)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2015. *"UNE-CEN ISO/TS 14067:2015 Gases de efecto invernadero. Huella de carbono de productos. Requisitos y directrices para cuantificación y comunicación. (ISO/TS 14067:2013)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2019. *"UNE-EN ISO 14067:2019 Gases de efecto invernadero. Huella de carbono de productos. Requisitos y directrices para la cuantificación. (ISO 14067:2018)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2015. *"UNE-CEN ISO/TS 14067:2015 Gases de efecto invernadero. Huella de carbono de productos. Requisitos y directrices para cuantificación y comunicación. (ISO/TS 14067:2013)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2012. *"UNE-EN ISO 14064-1:2012 Gases de efecto invernadero. Parte 1: Especificación con orientación, a nivel de las organizaciones, para la cuantificación y el informe de las emisiones y remociones de gases de efecto invernadero. (ISO 14064-1:2006)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2012. *"UNE-EN ISO 14064-2:2012 Gases de efecto invernadero. Parte 2: Especificación con orientación, a nivel de proyecto, para la cuantificación, el seguimiento y el informe de la reducción de emisiones o el aumento en las remociones de gases de efecto invernadero. (ISO 14064-2:2006)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2012. *"UNE-EN ISO 14064-3: 2012 Gases de efecto invernadero. Parte 3: Especificación con orientación para la validación y verificación de declaraciones sobre gases de efecto invernadero. (ISO 14064-3:2006)"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2015. *"UNE-ISO/TR 14069:2015 IN Gases de efecto invernadero. Cuantificación e informe de las emisiones de gases de efecto invernadero para las organizaciones. Orientación para la aplicación de la Norma ISO 14064-1"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2012. *"UNE, E. 15804: 2012 Sostenibilidad en la construcción. Declaraciones Ambientales de Producto. Reglas de Categoría de Productos básicas para productos de construcción"*. Madrid: AENOR.

AENOR. 2014. *"UNE-EN 15804:2012+A1:2014 Sostenibilidad en la construcción. Declaraciones ambientales de producto. Reglas de categoría de producto básicas para productos de construcción"*. Madrid: AENOR.

Instituto Valenciano de la Edificación- IVE. 2014. *"Cuaderno de rehabilitación: P1 Productos y Materiales: Propiedades de aislantes térmicos para rehabilitación energética"*. Valencia: Instituto Valenciano de la Edificación. https://es.slideshare.net/tokabi/aislamiento-termico-materiales.

Saint-Gobain. 2013. *"Declaración Ambiental de Producto: Acustilaine 70. Azuqueca: Saint-Gobain Cristalería S.L"*. file:///C:/Users/C%C3%A9sar/Downloads/acustilaine_70_todos_espesores_ad%20(1).pdf

DANOSA. 2016.*"Declaración Ambiental de Producto: de la Plancha de Aislamiento Térmico de Espuma de Poliestireno Extruido (XPS) DANOPREN®"*. España: DANOSA. http://portal.danosa.com/

PU Europe. 2014. *"Declaración Ambiental de Producto: Espuma de poliuretano proyectado aislante térmico (celdas cerradas; densidad 40 kg/m3)"*. Brussels: PU Europe. https://aislaconpoliuretano.com/

Pittsburgh Corning Europe NV. 2014. *"Environmental Product Declaration: FOAMGLAS® T4+. Berlín: Pittsburgh Corning Europe NV"*. http://www.kalcer.si/iz

Association ECIA. 2018. *"Environmental Product Declaration: Loose fill cellulose insulation. Brussels: European Cellulose Insulation Association (ECIA)"*. http://www.aislantesaislanat.es/

Financiera Maderera S.A. 2017. *"Environmental Product Declaration (EPD): Medium density fibreboard (MDF), both raw as well as melamine faced medium density fibreboards (MDF)"*. Coruña: Financiera Maderera S.A Coruña. https://gryphon4.environdec.com/

Institut Bauen und Umwelt e.V. 2013. "Environmental Product Declaration: DP-3 Multipurpose Rock Mineral Wool insulation, Knauf Insulation, d.o.o., Skofja Loka". Berlín: IBU - Institut Bauen und Umwelt e.V. https://pim.knaufinsulation.com/

Knauf Insulation Northern Europe. 2016. *"Environmental Product Declaration: Rock Mineral Wool Insulation 33 - 45 kg/cu.m"*. United Kingdom: Knauf Insulation (Northern Europe). https://pim.knaufinsulation.com/

Saint-Gobain. 2017. *"GlobalEPD: S-P-00756 ECOVENT 35"*. Azuqueca: Saint-Gobain Cristalería S.L. https://www.isover.es/

Grupo ROCKWOOL. 2015. *"Declaración Ambiental de Producto: Aislamiento Térmico de Lana de Roca para Edificios"*. Francia: Grupo ROCKWOOL. https://static.rockwool.com/

Grupo PUMA S.L. 2018. *"GlobalEPD-RCP-007, Sistema Traditerm EPS/EPS-G (SATE/ETICS)"*. Málaga: Grupo PUMA S.L. https://www.grupopuma.com/

Websites

Aenor. *"Buscador de normas: UNE, ISO"*. Consultado el 10 de enero de 2020 https://www.aenor.com/normas-y-libros/buscador-de-normas.

BRSRIA. *"Measuring embedded carbon - the next indicator of sustainability"*. Consultado el 10 de Agosto de 2020. https://www.bsria.com/

RMT-NITA. *"RMT-NITA: Wool"*. Consultado el 8 de mayo de 2019. http://rmt-nita.es/esp/wool.php.

Opendap. *"Bases de datos: Edificación"*. Consultado el 1 de mayo de 2019. https://www.opendap.es/product/ver_edif/24?elementSubtype=25.

Opendap. *"Bases de datos: Edificación"*. Consultado el 1 de mayo de 2019. https://www.opendap.es/product/ver_edif/20?elementSubtype=21.

Opendap. *"Bases de datos: Edificación"*. Consultado el 1 de mayo de 2019. http://www.opendap.es/product/ver_edif/14?elementSubtype=15.

Opendap. *"Bases de datos: Edificación"*. Consultado el 1 de mayo de 2019. http://www.opendap.es/product/ver_edif/21?elementSubtype=22.

Opendap. *"Bases de datos: Edificación"*. Consultado el 1 de mayo de 2019. https://www.opendap.es/product/ver_edif/113?elementSubtype=133.

Opendap. *"Bases de datos: Edificación"*. Consultado el 10 de febrero de 2019. http://www.opendap.es/informacionambiental.

Presidencia de la República de Costa Rica. *"Grupo ICE impulsa electromovilidad nacional con presentación de nueva flota"*. Consultado el 7 de enero de 2019. https://presidencia.go.cr

UNFCCC. *"Climate Change 1995, The Science of Climate Change: Summary for Policymakers and Technical Summary of the Working Group I Report, page 22"*. Consultado el 10 de octubre de 2018. https://unfccc.int/process

PAPER #5.09

MASS TIMBER CONSTRUCTION FOR MULTI-FAMILY URBAN HOUSING: CARBON12 AND THE CANYONS

Edward Becker[a], Kevin Lee[b]
[a]Virginia Tech, Blacksburg, Virginia
[b]StudioMB, Washington D.C.

ABSTRACT

By the year 2050, an additional 2.5 billion people are expected to inhabit urban areas. In addition, cities across the globe face the challenge of aging housing stocks coupled with the necessity to decrease carbon emissions from building construction and use. Such challenges suggest that data-driven design solutions that prioritize fast and efficient construction with sustainably harvested, low-carbon materials such as cross-laminated timber (CLT), a mass timber product, may be best suited to address the housing needs engendered by the aforementioned macro factors. Considering that CLT construction is nascent in many regions of the world other than some timber-dominant countries in the European Union, this document explores how effective information exchange among project constituencies can help CLT-based mass timber projects overcome the unique barriers to construction that exist in regions without well-established mass timber industries, the United States being of particular focus. Two innovative case study projects, Carbon12 (2018) and The Canyons (2020), are unpacked by the authors in regard to both analog and digital information transfer. Both multi-family housing projects were designed and developed by Kaiser+Path in Portland, Oregon and are two of the first examples of high-rise, multi-family mass timber construction with CLT in the United States. The authors draw upon first-hand CLT design experience with one author being an architectural designer for Kaiser+Path's The Canyons. A primary conclusion of this case study document suggests that a close integration between project team members early in the design process is critical to successful project completion. The authors also highlight specific design-to-construction situations where more advanced digital workflows could be particularly beneficial. Based upon the authors' knowledge, this is the first peer-reviewed case study publication to document either building.

KEYWORDS

Low-carbon construction; multi-family housing; cross-laminated timber.

INTRODUCTION

Low-carbon construction technologies including cross-laminated timber (CLT), a mass timber product, have proven to lower carbon emissions from construction and lower construction costs while increasing construction speed and construction site safety in Europe and Australia where a majority of CLT-based buildings have been built (Mayo 2015). Underpinning each of the aforementioned CLT-related construction benefits are integrated workflows, or data flows, that allow project teams to collectively coordinate nearly every aspect of the design-to-construction process. Data-driven design solutions that prioritize fast and efficient construction with low-carbon materials like CLT may provide a solution for the architecture, engineering, and construction (AEC) industries over the coming decades

as they attempt to overcome the inverse, "wicked," challenge of significant urban growth and provision of housing on one hand, and the need to lower greenhouse gas emissions from construction on the other (Boyer Cook 2013). Despite the recognized benefits of mass timber construction in the AEC fields, only a few European countries have mass timber industries that are well-developed enough to facilitate fast, efficient construction of low-carbon multi-family urban housing on a large scale. For many other countries globally including the United States, the infancy of the mass timber industry - including the relatively slow adoption of building codes that permit high-rise mass timber buildings - hinders overall construction efficacy.

This case study research provides a roadmap for AEC professionals regarding two of the first large-scale, CLT, multi-family housing projects developed in the United States: Carbon12 and The Canyons. Carbon12 was completed in 2018, becoming the tallest CLT building in the United States, whereas The Canyons is scheduled to complete construction in Summer 2020. Located in Northeast Portland, Oregon, both projects were designed and developed by Kaiser+Path, a Portland-based company composed of Kaiser Development, Inc. and PATH Architecture, Inc. Similar to other CLT-based mass timber projects in the United States and in countries around the globe with nascent mass timber industries, the projects faced a number of unique process barriers due to the novelty of CLT use among project constituencies and the size of the projects for which the material system was employed. Such barriers challenged the Kaiser+Path project team, and despite the successful completion of Carbon12 and the expected successful completion of The Canyons, could, if improperly handled by a project team, lead to undesirable project results or cancelled projects.

Carbon12 and The Canyons are uniquely innovative in the context of American housing and employ construction methods not found in other buildings of similar type and scale. As such, this case study document provides novel intellectual content to the AEC industries as the projects have not been the subject of peer-reviewed documentation previously. This case study document of Carbon12 and The Canyons will begin with a background description of the global macro factors that have engendered the mass timber movement with CLT. The background description frames two primary challenges to the city of the future, the ability to provide enough equitable housing and the ability to provide that housing in a low-carbon manner. Using Carbon12 and The Canyons as examples for high-quality, innovative construction technologies/practices - quick to build with low-embodied carbon - the case study then focuses on the barriers to CLT construction in regions of the world like the United States with nascent mass timber construction industries. Barriers to successful project completion include the difficulty to accurately cost estimate a project under evolving financing conditions, the difficulty to achieve code compliance when local jurisdictions are unfamiliar with mass timber construction, and the difficulty to coordinate construction when few of the project constituencies have experience with mass timber products and the related logistical demands they entail.

Through a particular focus on the aforementioned project barriers, each of which relate to data management and interchange, the authors seek to provide a resource for related CLT-based projects in urban areas globally as a means to support the increased provision of mass timber housing and the successful completion of buildings with low embodied carbon. The innovative building technologies and practices explored in the following sections

are relevant due to their ability to enhance urban quality of life and urban social and environmental sustainability through high-quality, high-tech construction.

1. INTELLECTUAL CONTEXT

1.1. Case study background

According to research from the European Commission, the world's urban population is expected to nearly double by year 2050 from the 4.2 billion people in cities in 2018. "By 2100, some 85% of the population will live in cities, with urban population increasing from under 1 billion in 1950 to 9 billion by 2100" (European Commission, n.d.). To support urban population growth globally and the related provision of adequate housing in cities by 2025, construction spending alone is expected to cost $9-$11 trillion (Woetzel et al 2014). In the United States, "the baseline demand for new housing units between 2015 and 2025 will range from 16.0 to 18.2 million units" as a short-term forecast (McCue 2017). A vast majority of these homes are expected to be built in urbanized areas.

Inversely, the building sector must significantly reduce greenhouse gas emissions from building construction and operation to align with the climate goals set forth by a number of leading global organizations including the World Green Building Council and the United Nations. It is widely recognized in the architecture, engineering, and construction (AEC) industries that lowering the embodied carbon in building materials is one of the key avenues to achieve global climate goals. As embodied carbon in building materials accounts for 28% of total greenhouse emissions from construction globally, the utilization of low-carbon or carbon-negative building materials can be particularly significant for lowering total expenditure (Cramer 2020).

Wood is widely recognized for its carbon sequestration benefits and its potential to assist in the lowering of embodied carbon in construction. As such, global demand for wood products is expected to double in the next 15 years and global wood industries

Figure 1. Mass Timber Code (IBC 2021). Source: (Atelier Jones, LLC n.d.). "CLT is a large-scale, prefabricated, solid engineered wood panel. Lightweight yet very strong, with superior acoustic, fire, seismic, and thermal performance, CLT is also fast and easy to install, generating almost no waste onsite. CLT offers design flexibility and low environmental impacts" (APA 2018).

are experiencing the highest growth since the 2008 economic crash (Laguarda-Mallo Espinoza 2018). In the United States, the increased demand is coupled with changing building codes, sustainable forest management policies, and the expanding demand for low-carbon construction solutions. The increased demand for wood is largely in opposition to concerns over global deforestation, only recently in decline due to emerging forest management practices such as FSC certification in the United States. Additionally, the International Building Code recently adopted new terminology and height protocols for heavy timber material use after an internal committee focused on tall wood buildings conducted over two years of extensive interdisciplinary debate, research, and testing including, but not limited to, structural studies and fire performance testing. Although the new Type IV codes (Fig. 1) have yet to be fully implemented within individual American states, such legislative adjustments present new opportunities for the utilization of technologically advanced wood products such as cross-laminated timber (CLT).

CLT in combination with other mass timber technologies has been heralded as the first new way to build skyscrapers and related multi-story construction in over 100 years. Despite the expanded use of cross-laminated timber (CLT) for structural applications, timber-dominant countries in the European Union are the only countries globally with matured mass timber markets/industries. For much of the rest of the world, CLT is a nascent technology. The infancy of mass timber markets/industries in many countries, including the United States, injects certain use barriers to mass timber construction that may limit the potential for such low-carbon construction solutions to be used on a large scale in response to housing needs for increasing urban populations. Thus, a key objective for AEC professionals with successful CLT-based design and construction experience should be to disseminate knowledge to lower such use barriers for future projects. The following two case study projects are a direct attempt to disseminate such knowledge as it pertains to the information exchange or "dataflows" found within the two projects' design-to-construction processes.

1.2. Novelty of case study buildings in non-European contexts

Carbon12 is the first - and tallest - CLT-based mass timber structure to be built in the United States. It is also the only high-rise residential building to be permitted and completed in the U.S. The Canyons is a furtherance of the mass timber construction ideas and processes developed for Carbon12. It is the first and only CLT project in the U.S. to use a hybrid, light timber frame and CLT structural construction system. Both projects provide novel information for the subject area of this study. Brock Commons is the only related non-European CLT-based high rise project globally. It was permitted and built in Canada with construction completing in 2017.

2. METHODOLOGY

As presented in the forthcoming sections, the extracted information from both case study projects is drawn from the authors' first-hand experiences with mass timber construction in both Europe and the United States, as well as relevant project references. One author of the paper was an Architectural Designer for Kaiser+Path who was intimately involved in the design development, permitting, and construction administration process for The Canyons. The author also has experienced-based knowledge of Carbon12 through the direct exchange of project insight from colleagues who designed Carbon12 – e.g., the project owner, architects, and builders who sought to facilitate a dissemination

of mass timber education as well as to further prepare the author for their design/construction role within The Canyons project. All case study information was acquired through first-hand experience with the project team and on the project site unless otherwise noted. This information was also corroborated with multiple project team members for the writing of this document. The authors' objective to provide uncompromised information directly from the source and the lack of available project-specific data elsewhere about The Canyons are both rationales for using the direct-knowledge, experienced-based approach for this document.

3. EXTRACTED INFORMATION FROM CASE STUDY PROJECTS

3.1. Carbon12

At the time of this writing, Carbon12 is the tallest mass timber building in the United States. The eight-story urban multi-family housing project was completed in 2018 in Portland, Oregon and was designed and built by Kaiser+Path: an integrated design, development, construction firm led by Owner and Principal Benjamin Kaiser (Fig. 2, 3). Carbon12 set multiple key benchmarks for high-rise, multi-family mass timber construction in the United States. As stated by Kaiser+Path, the firm "set a new standard for what's possible in sustainable development in the United States … [by working] with city and state officials to waive restrictive codes limiting the height of wood buildings, making Carbon12 and future tall wood buildings in the US possible" (Kaiser+Path, n.d.). The 95-foot tall, 38,000 square foot building features a German-developed, mechanized underground parking system, first floor commercial space, and 14 multi-family residential units above. Structurally, the project utilizes a hybrid system composed of steel buckling restrained brace (BRB) frames paired with glulam columns and beams. Carbon12 uses "Douglas fir lumber in its columns, beams and the bottom layer of the exposed CLT" (Kaiser+Path, n.d.). The interior of the CLT panel uses spruce-pine-fir (SPF). The wood is sourced from British Columbia and uses wood killed by the Mountain Pine Beetle. Exemplifying the multifaceted

Figure 2. Carbon12 by Kaiser+Path. Source: (Kaiser+Path n.d.)

benefits of tall wood construction, the project overcame legal and logistical barriers to construction and provided new insight into the potential benefits of dataflow optimization to enhance future mass timber construction and project team coordination. The project also illustrates the importance CLT-related design teams should place on manufacturer engagement and coordination even within early design phases.

3.2. The Canyons

Following the successful completion of Carbon12, Kaiser+Path designed and developed The Canyons, a six-story, multi-family mixed-use project located directly adjacent to Carbon12 in Portland, Oregon (Fig. 3). The Canyons is a 65-foot tall, 110,000 square foot building that uniquely utilizes a combination structural system pairing lightframe timber bearing and shear walls with CLT floor panels. It has 70 market-rate residential units in the main building with a pedestrian alley, located on a North-South axis, that separates 11 micro-retail work-units from additional ground floor retail within the main building. Unlike Carbon12, Kaiser+Path collaborated with local builder R&H Construction as their general contractor while working directly with Catena Consulting Engineers to develop the structural strategy. Similar to Carbon12, Structurelam was the mass timber manufacturer/supplier and a critical project partner for both buildings. The Canyons is currently under construction with completion expected during Summer 2020. While the project is considered by Kaiser+Path to be a direct furtherance of Carbon12 regarding the pioneering of low-carbon construction techniques and methods in the United States, The Canyons' hybrid timber structural system, unique atrium design, and construction interfacing and logistic strategies are each unique to the project.

Both projects contain valuable process-knowledge for the AEC industry globally, particularly in regions of the world with nascent mass timber industries. The projects are presented in a back-and-forth manner over the following paragraphs with case-study knowledge being disseminated through the following two sections: (1) project funding and code compliance; and (2) project construction. The authors focus on specific instances in the design-to-construction process for both projects that are intended to provide the best use-value information for AEC professionals to positively influence future, urban, multi-family construction with CLT.

Figure 3. The Canyons by Kaiser+Path. Source: (Kaiser+Path n.d.)

3.3. Project funding

"As part of the Obama administration's commitment to mitigate climate change," the USDA launched the U.S. Tall Wood Building Prize Competition in 2014 (McKalip 2014). As engineering cost factors and code-related variances were deemed as key limitations to the expansion of tall wood construction in the US, the $2 million in USDA funds were targeted to specifically address both issues through the selection and subsequent financial support of winning projects. Having just independently developed, designed, and constructed a commercial mass timber

(glulam) project, Kaiser+Path shifted their focus and entered the competition with six weeks before the deadline. Due to their unique internal composition of "trained architects, contractors, and developers... [that also] already owned the proposed building site," they submitted a proposal for Carbon12 but were not ultimately selected (Kaiser+Path, n.d.)(Fig. 4). Despite the setback, the team decided to move forward with the design anyway. Kaiser+Path's office composition as owner/developer, architect, and general contractor will reappear throughout the case study as a key strategic advantage for successful project completion. In this case, the team was able to pivot financially and fund the project without USDA money, although there was a significantly smaller amount of US Forest Service Wood Innovation Grant money supporting engineering and permitting. The project's integrated, architect-as-developer funding model allowed greater flexibility with design and construction logistics than would otherwise be available if the project were reliant upon other funding means or an alternative team composition. This is one key reason the project was ultimately constructed successfully whereas other related projects by other offices were cancelled (Njus 2019). Throughout the project period, the team was able to adjust hard and soft project costs on-the-fly in coordination with the digital models and project affiliates. This was particularly important for a CLT-based project as the unique, hybrid structural system and novel wood use added additional complications to the standard methods of costing and construction. The ability to pivot design-wise to adapt to changing cost conditions and project constraints was time efficient in the small office where the owner/developer-architect-builder team consisted of approximately seven persons - depending upon the project stage - unlike related situations in larger, less-centralized companies. The project was planned as a condominium project with two ground floor commercial tenants and 14 potential residential owners. The high upfront project costs of using new CLT construction methods were able to be handled through the condo financing model. The premium price for high-end condo units in the up-and-coming Williams Avenue, Portland neighborhood was able to offset the uniquely high development costs for the project in terms of its special underground parking system and CLT expenses as compared to other non-CLT projects of a related size.

Figure 4. C12 Render 1, Tallwood Competition Proposal by Kaiser+Path. Source: (Kaiser+Path n.d.)

Kaiser+Path relied on the same architectural and general contracting Revit model for Carbon12 and separate Revit models for The Canyons. Structurelam, the mass timber supplier for both projects, produced a CLT package and project-specific glulam package that included handling and assembly notes, tolerance specifications, CLT panel data charts, and construction sheet sets in coordination with the general contractor. This information was not cohesively imbedded in a singular BIM model with linked data flows between project teams. As Carbon12 was the first project for which Kaiser+Path had utilized CLT at this scale of building, the project team held weekly meetings regularly to manage the complexity of design, construction, and CLT-specific material challenges. The project team was proactive and intentional in regard to predesign work

and coordination. For The Canyons, close coordination within the design development phase between architect, general contractor (GC), and mass timber supplier led to cost savings through the reduction of CLT panel thicknesses which then led to decreased concrete foundations.

3.4. Building code compliance

The challenge of building code compliance is one of the key factors that may impact design-to-cost decision making by CLT-related project teams. In world regions with less developed mass timber industries and relatedly less mass timber use, the work to overcome building code compliance challenges can cause significant financial problems due to project delays, unexpected fees, or further required research to gain approval by local governing bodies. The process for Carbon12 was no exception.

> Initially, the City of Portland required that Carbon12 go through an extensive third-party review process similar to a concrete building over 240 feet tall. The city had never reviewed a CLT project before, so it was clear that this route would take significant time and cost. However, at the state level, the Oregon Building Codes Division was launching a pilot program to establish a method for reviewing CLT buildings for local jurisdictions (Kaiser+Path, n.d.).

Ultimately, the city and state partnered on the review effort for Carbon12 after multiple city entities were consulted, and project data from Carbon12 was shared with the state to enhance its review process for future CLT buildings. The sharing of Carbon12's data with the state directly benefited The Canyons project by Kaiser+Path, which was designed a few years later, and it is likely to have lasting benefits for future CLT buildings even outside of Oregon's jurisdiction. This is not only due to the establishment of a baseline code review process for Oregon mass timber structures, but also due to the impact Carbon12 has had as a direct reference for the ICC Ad Hoc Committee on Tall Wood Buildings in their "review and approval of new building types to the 2021 International Building Code" (Kaiser+Path, n.d.).For both Carbon12 and The Canyons, challenges to overcome building code restrictions impacted the project timelines and had the potential to significantly disrupt cost estimates. The developer-architect-builder model at Kaiser+Path provided flexibility to overcome cost barriers and the small project team size helped to expedite project workflows. Each Kaiser+Path building also illustrates from a cost and code perspective how beneficial pilot-type buildings can be to pave the way for a further streamlining and optimization of related projects.

3.5. Project Construction

Above and beyond the required planning for a typical multi-family housing project, CLT-based mass timber projects require extensive pre-planning and project coordination. In regions of the world with nascent mass timber industries, the administrative hierarchy and coordination methods between the architect, general contractor (GC), and product manufacturers is particularly important to determine early in the process as working relationships and the division of labor may be different than in typical project delivery models. Additionally, the digital model, or building information model (BIM), may be developed and utilized differently than in standard - non-CLT - practice. For CLT-based projects, the tolerances between various building materials must be considered early in the design process and reflected in the method of BIM model development and utilization due to the high-level of mass timber precision from the factory, often 1/32 inch, as compared to steel and concrete which are considerably less precise.

The following paragraphs present specific aspects of the construction process for both Carbon12 and The Canyons. Through the following examples, tradeoffs are introduced between the utilization of integrated digital models for construction sequencing and coordination versus the less digitized methods of direct manufacturer interfacing and in-the-field construction workflow improvements. When novel material systems for construction such as CLT are adopted by the project team, key questions must be answered regarding the reliance on digital planning tools like BIM versus more traditional forms of project team communication, and at what point may more traditional methods of project team communication need to evolve into more advanced digitally-integrated workflows.

3.6. Carbon12: Material tolerance and coordination

If low-carbon construction using CLT-based mass timber elements is to provide a widespread, scalable solution for urban housing construction, the precision-based benefits of CLT's manufacturing process likely will need to be maximized, namely construction speed. As construction speed increases, project costs are lowered. Carbon12 was faced with a dual challenge, the need for construction speed to lower project costs on one hand and the inability to use CLT for the building's elevator cores on the other - a result of local seismic code limitations. As concrete construction for the building's structural core would have been schedule inhibiting due to time-intensive formwork construction and cure time, increased trade coordination on a limited site, and potential context-specific winter weather hindrances, the team chose to use a buckling restrained-braced (BRB) frame system. The steel-brace system was designed to work in conjunction with the CLT floor slab and glulam post-beam arrangement. The steel for the frame was sourced specifically for the project due to the engineers concerns that the typical steel-brace components were designed for much heavier types of the buildings (Forest Business Network 2018). The team also directly coordinated with Timberland, the framing subcontractor with an internal steel division, so that Timberland would directly fabricate and install the BRB system in conjunction with the timber package. Thus, the assembly of the entire structural system was optimized as a singular subcontractor would conduct not only 3D clash detection between the two material systems, but they would also facilitate efficient labor scheduling resulting from the same crew erecting the building's whole structure. The BRB frame system was constructed in three-story high increments so that the CLT could be threaded by a crane through the steel frame for fast assembly. After the CLT floors were completed to the required height, the next three stories of BRB framing were added. Uniquely, the CLT was prefinished in the factory by Structurlam which further enhanced the project's onsite construction schedule and proved be particularly critical through a historically wet and snowy Oregon winter. The factory-finished panels were directly lifted into place from arriving trucks, minimizing potential damage and staining while also eliminating the need for additional weather protection or finish work onsite. The factory pre-finishing by Structurlam is unique because it went beyond typical means of service for a mass timber company and required a significant amount of labor and space investment by the manufacturer. However, the intensive process directly facilitated onsite success as it not only minimized onsite panel labor but also allowed the construction team to continue structural assembly through inclement weather conditions without costly setbacks.

As new forms of advanced fabrication engender the creation of increasingly high-

precision building products such as CLT, a key concern for project teams is how to best coordinate the precision of such building systems with other project systems of significantly lower precision. The CLT elements for Carbon12 were significantly more precise than the steel frame and concrete foundation - the CLT precision being approximately 1/8" while acceptable tolerances for concrete could range from 1/2" to 1". As such, the project team coordinated with the structural engineer to fabricate steel 'buckets' (Fig. 5,6) that allowed the high-precision wooden elements to rest on the less-precise steel. The glulam beams were adjusted - trimmed to fit if necessary - to accommodate fluctuations in the steel and then bolted to the buckets to tie back to the primary steel structure.

This particular design solution is important to recognize for its key benefits to the construction coordination and assembly process. The project team recognized in advance that the steel, despite its factory fabrication, may not perfectly meet the wooden elements in the field due to factors such as creep, thermal expansion/contraction, and human assembly imprecision. Therefore, the intentional design of steel bucket joints allowed the element-to-element connections to be slightly adjusted on site. Such a process questions the utility of highly precise digital models that cannot simulate the human error or climatic factors that may influence material performance/accuracy on site. In this case, direct manufacturer interfacing regarding assembly logistics, detailed logistical planning for assembly, and in-the-field construction workflow improvements provided a streamlined construction process. For Kaiser+Path, extensive weekly pre-design meetings between the architect, builder, mass timber manufacturer, and framing subcontractor were necessary to coordinate the successful design, integration, and assembly of the BRB & CLT hybrid system of Carbon12.

Figure 5,6. Carbon12 Detail, Beam - Steel Core Connection with adjusted glulams. Source: (Kaiser+Path n.d.)

3.7. The Canyons: Construction speed and logistics

As a direct evolution of the ideas and processes that drove the design and construction of Carbon12, The Canyons was also designed with a CLT-based structural system. Construction speed and precision with low-carbon materials were each important drivers for the project team. Unlike Carbon12 that employed a hybrid mass timber and BRB-frame structural system, The Canyons is constructed of a unique combination of light-frame wood and CLT floor slabs. The hybrid wood assembly with light-frame structural walls - bearing and shear - and CLT floor slabs was chosen due to cost concerns and code-related obstacles. The concrete foundation, housing underground parking and topped with light-gauge metal framing for ground floor retail, is superimposed with light-frame timber walls and CLT floor panels from levels two through six. A multi-story exposed CLT atrium spanning nearly the entire length of the building, approximately 120 feet, and bisecting the main building mass down its North-South centerline, was a particularly challenging spatial element to permit and to construct. Excluding the exterior work-units, which are constructed with traditional building strategies, the project is in essence a double-loaded corridor arrangement with the timber corridor/atrium being an experiential focal point for the occupants.

As noted previously, integrated workflows between project team members that optimize on-site construction logistics are key to the success of fast-build, CLT-based mass timber construction systems. In response to this necessity, the multi-disciplinary project team spent a substantial amount of effort early in the project planning process to achieve a rapid construction timetable while also maintaining a comprehensive moisture mitigation plan. Unique to the project, the light-frame wood walls were originally designed to be prefabricated for fast, modular onsite installation. The team recognized from their experience on Carbon12 that the CLT assemblies could be constructed on site very quickly compared to other building systems. Thus, a clear challenge for the project team was to match the construction speed of CLT with that of the structural light-frame walls to keep the project on schedule, to minimize onsite CLT storage time, and to reach topout as fast as possible. The original intent was to have simple prefabricated walls, including wall frames and rough sheathing, "chase" or rapidly be constructed after CLT panel installation for assembly and schedule efficiencies. Assembly of the residential floors would occur sequentially beginning with the units east of the atrium after the atrium panels were completed. CLT panels would be installed from south-to-north on the east units with the prefabricated wood frames being craned into place immediately afterwards, just as CLT panels would begin to be installed simultaneously on the west units. Trade crews would then be coordinated to follow closely afterwards to create MEP penetrations, etc. in a fluid sequence.

However, during the design development project phase, the prefabricated nature of the light-frame wall elements were

Figure 7. The Canyons CLT and light frame integration. Source: (Marcus Kauffman, Oregon Dept. of Forestry n.d.)

changed due to project cost implications and means and methods complications. Without affecting the overall design intent or drawings, the construction strategy was shifted to traditional onsite timber framing, with the added consideration that light-frame studs would be precut for faster onsite assembly. This strategy facilitated faster assembly times than could be accomplished with traditional wood framing, but ultimately the light-frame wall construction method slowed the structure's overall construction speed as this framing strategy required an entire floor's wall assembly to be completed before the subsequent level of CLT could be craned into place (Fig. 7). As a result, onsite labor efficiency was significantly reduced and potential weather damage to stored and installed CLT panels onsite increased. An intensive amount of pre-construction coordination and review was also required by relevant parties due to the nature of pre-cutting the studs, similar to other types of prefabrication. In addition to a construction sequence plan for the structure, R&H had a predetermined internal strategy for panel shipment and laydown that they directly coordinated with Structurlam. Key project documents related to the CLT shipment and assembly included the following: (1) CLT shop drawings complete with handling instructions, panel identification, panel schedules, plan sheets, specifications, a tolerance listing, and a responsibility statement that included panel unloading guidance; and (2) elevation drawings of the shipment trucks loaded with panels and number coordinated to corresponding shops. The construction crew averaged approximately three days per floor for CLT assembly and six days per floor for light-frame wood construction. The project has already set a number of benchmarks for innovative wood construction (Fig. 8 and 9) in the United States and is on schedule for successful completion in Summer 2020.

In summary, the early coordination between Kaiser+Path, Structurelam, and the other project team members was highly desirable to develop a successful approach to panel fabrication and construction logistics. The Canyons was a direct furtherance of the design and construction intelligence utilized on Carbon12, yet was unique in a number of its challenges. The digital technology workflows for the project were defined less

Figure 8,9. The Canyons CLT and light frame integration. Source: (Marcus Kauffman, Oregon Dept. of Forestry n.d.)

by high-tech uses of simulation and analysis software, but rather the diversity of file types and multiple team members through which the information had to flow. An emphasis was placed on direct person-to-person coordination.

4. DISCUSSION

4.1. Opportunities for off-site fabrication and integration

Relative to The Canyon's prefabricated wall assemblies, the construction speed challenges that the project team experienced may be mitigated through higher-end workflows that pair Revit data with advanced robotic manufacturing. If the team continues to refine the hybrid-timber construction logistics and costs for advanced fabrication are managed, technologies such as the robot-based fabrication of timber-frame modules pioneered by the ETH's Gramazio Kohler Research Lab may be of particular utility (Gramazio Kohler, n.d.). Additionally, relative to factors that are unpredictable on site such as human construction error and weather, integrated cloud-based models across the project team that allow for construction changes to be quickly coordinated could be particularly useful. For example, with integrated digital tools, the construction team can use mixed-reality overlays, site scans, and shared digital models across the construction team to account for, and subsequently fix, construction inconsistencies.

4.2. Opportunities to enhance design-cost modeling

Based upon the authors' experiences designing mass timber buildings in Europe and the United States, including The Canyons, a further integration of cost and design models could be beneficial across the mass timber industry to help streamline the design-to-construction process, specifically after initial project bidding. The aforementioned lack of Revit model integration between the architects and contractors on The Canyons presents an opportunity to link decision making with real-time design-to-cost updates. After initial project bidding is typically completed and the general contractor and primary subcontracting teams have been selected, BIM design data could be linked to cost calculations in real-time for major project components. Such a linking of information is uniquely relevant to large prefabricated buildings like The Canyons due to the extreme degree of pre-project coordination necessary. Architectural offices have shown an interest in such streamlining through projects such as Model-C by Generate and B2 by SHoP.

CONCLUSION

Effective information exchange among project constituencies can help CLT-based mass timber projects overcome the unique barriers to construction that exist in regions of the world without well-established mass timber industries. Additionally, a close integration between project team members early in the design process is critical to successful project completion in such contexts. Both Carbon12 and The Canyons have overcome design, permitting, and construction barriers, many of which stem from the lack of experience with CLT construction in the United States and the general infancy of the mass timber construction industry at a global scale. If urban populations increase globally as projected, case study projects such as Carbon12 and The Canyons can provide valuable information for AEC professionals in support of the widespread construction of new, low-carbon, multi-family urban housing.

REFERENCES

APA. 2018. "Cross-Laminated Timber (CLT)." *Cross-Laminated Timber (CLT) - APA*, www.apawood.org/cross-laminated-timber.

Boyer, B., Cook, J. 2013. "Clearing the Cowshed." In *Yale Perspecta 46*, edited by Joseph Clark and Emma Bloomfield, 140–153. Cambridge, Massachusetts. MIT Press.

Cramer, N. 2020. "It's Time to Quit: A Call to Action on Climate, Carbon, and the Built Environment." *Architect Magazine*. American Institute of Architects. https://www.architectmagazine.com/design/its-time-to-quit-a-call-to-action-on-climate-carbon-and-the-built-environment_o

European Commission. n.d. "Worldwide urban population growth." *Knowledge for Policy*. Accessed January 2, 2020. https://ec.europa.eu/knowledge4policy/foresight/topic/continuing-urbanisation/worldwide-urban-population-growth_en

Forest Business Network. 2018. "Carbon12: A Cross Laminated Timber and Buckling Restrained Brace Frame Hybrid." *International Mass Timber Conference*. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AlnmgyOHx74

Gramazio Kohler. n.d. "Spatial Timber Assemblies, Zurich, 2016-2018." Accessed January 2, 2020. https://gramaziokohler.arch.ethz.ch/web/e/forschung/311.html

Kaiser+Path, n.d. *Building Carbon12*. Accessed December 18, 2019. https://buildingcarbon12.com/

Laguarda-Mallo, M., Espinoza, O. 2018. "Awareness, Perceptions and Willingness to Adopt CLT by U.S. Engineering Firms." *BioProducts* 3(1): 1-14.

Mayo, J. 2015. *Solid Wood: Case Studies in Mass Timber Architecture, Technology and Design.* New York: Routledge.

McCue, D. 2017. "Projection: US will add 25 million households by 2035." *Joint Center for Housing Studies of Harvard University*. https://www.jchs.harvard.edu/blog/projection-us-will-add-25-million-households-by-2035/

McKalip, D. 2014. "Announcing the U.S. Tall Wood Building Prize Competition to Innovate Building Construction." *The White House – President Barack Obama*. https://obamawhitehouse.archives.gov/blog/2014/10/10/announcing-us-tall-wood-building-prizecompetition

Njus, E. 2019. "Plan for timber high-rise in Pearl District shelved." *The Oregonian,* January 29, 2019. https://www.oregonlive.com/business/2018/07/plan_for_pearl_district_mass_t.html

Woetzel, J., Ram, S., Mischke, J., Garemo, N., Sankhe, S. 2014. "Tackling the world's affordable housing challenge." *McKinsey Global Institute Repor*t.https://www.mckinsey.com/featured-insights/urbanization/tackling-the-worlds-affordable-housing-challenge

PAPER #5.10

A PARAMETRIC STUDY OF DAYLIGHTING IN HIGH-RISE RESIDENTIAL BUILDINGS IN DHAKA, BANGLADESH

Sumaiya Mehjabeen[a], Ute Poerschke[a], Lisa Domenica Iulo[a]
[a]The Pennsylvania State University, State College, PA, USA

ABSTRACT

Daylighting has gained significant attention in the contemporary building industry to support a sustainable living environment. This is a challenge in the ever-increasing density of urban contexts. Empirical research shows that daylighting needs to be incorporated in regularly occupied spaces, including residential buildings. Surprisingly, residential buildings are designed largely ignoring daylighting necessity in compact urban contexts in developing countries. It is imperative to ensure enough daylighting ingress in residential buildings for improved health outcomes and comfort conditions. Daylighting in high-rise residential buildings in a dense urban context is still a less explored field in empirical research. This research presents an analysis of daylighting ingress relating to urban street canyon configurations of high-rise residential buildings in the dense urban context of Dhaka, Bangladesh. A parametric study is used to investigate the impact of building and street canyon geometry on daylight autonomy in high-rise residential buildings. Six residential building typologies are analyzed concerning how varied geometry of these typologies and the width of urban street canyons impact daylight ingress. The key aspects to analyze daylight autonomy in this study are building geometry, surrounding obstructions, orientation, and urban street configurations. These are computationally analyzed and visualized utilizing software, such as Rhinoceros, Grasshopper, and environmental plug-ins such as Honeybee and Ladybug. Observations from the study are used to understand how the geometric aspects of street canyons impact daylight autonomy in high-rise residential buildings in the dense urban context of Dhaka.

KEYWORDS

Daylighting; density; urban; high-rise; residential.

INTRODUCTION

Daylighting is as old as architecture itself and has a significant influence on building design. Before artificial lighting replaced natural light, the provision of daylight in every space was a necessity. Throughout history, daylight has influenced the building forms in numerous ways. The interaction between building design and daylighting depends on the importance of the availability of daylight in the building. The required illuminance quantity and quality are defined by the typology of a building. Building form determines the possibilities of daylight utilization and illuminance distribution patterns (Nancy et al. 2000). The factors related to building forms that influence daylighting design are - the ratio between exterior façade area and total floor area, building height, floor depth, floor-to-floor height, interior walls, and other obstructions (Compagnon 2004; Mayhoub and Carter 2010). Moreover, designing for daylight in a dense urban context asks for external urban factors, such as external obstructions, height and width of urban canyons, and other geometric aspects of the buildings (Cheng et al. 2006; Compagnon 2004).

Problem Statement

Urban densification and the construction of high-rise buildings are very specific problems related to daylighting in urban environments. In dense urban areas, the tall buildings that are built in direct proximity to each other, cover part of the sky, shade the windows from daylight and therefore, reduce daylight ingress and duration of sunlight. Moreover, tall buildings form street canyons, and these canyons reduce daylighting ingress inside the buildings. The use of artificial lighting is the only substitute in these cases. The negative psychophysical impacts of artificial lighting are well researched and proven (Boubekri 2008). Moreover, dependence on artificial lighting accounts for a substantial amount of energy use.

The development of high-rise buildings is a consequence of urban densification, expanding urban population, and economic growth. This is an ongoing issue, particularly countries in Southeast Asia. In many Southeast Asian cities, such as Dhaka, Mumbai, Hong Kong, Kuala Lumpur, high-rise residential buildings are abundant (Farea et al. 2012). According to Ahsan et al. (2016), the number of high-rise buildings has increased by three times between 2010 and 2016, whereas in Bangkok and Kuala Lumpur, the number has doubled over the same time (Ahsan 2016). Thirty percent of these high-rise buildings in Dhaka is of the residential type, and this number is increasing (Ahsan et al. 2014). The current number of high-rise housing may be much higher.

The Context of Dhaka

Dhaka, the capital of Bangladesh, is a fast-growing metropolis in south Asia and the 9th most densely populated cities in the world (United Nations Department of Economic and Social Affairs 2016). An influx of internal migration and spontaneous growth of population turned Dhaka into a densely built populous city with a demographic of 8.5 million people as of 2016 ("Atlas of Urban Expansion - Dhaka" n.d.). The built-up area density was 552 persons per hectare in 2014, and it is increasing every year ("Atlas of Urban Expansion - Dhaka," n.d.). The city suffers from extensive uncontrolled densification horizontally, and very recently, vertically in both planned and unplanned developments, resulting in a very compact urban form. The growing trend of constructing taller buildings is creating the problem of very dark and narrow urban street canyons (height: width aspect ratio 8:1 – 10:1). The two-way urban sprawl with no consideration of livable environmental factors, such as daylighting, etc. and proper infrastructure, including housing, has made Dhaka one of the unlivable cities of the world ("Global Liveability Ranking," n.d.).

It is a matter of concern that a majority of the existing residential buildings in Dhaka are built neglecting the adverse effect on occupant's psychophysical well-being, comfort, and overall urban environment (Ahsan, 2016). The high-rise buildings take advantage of the setback rules that require the buildings to have a minimum distance from the site-lines. These buildings obstruct admission of daylight forcing the occupants to rely on artificial means of lighting (Ahsan et al. 2014). This creates the problem of very dark interior living spaces in these buildings and the increased use of artificial lighting (Ahsan et al. 2014). This poses the following research question: How do building and related street canyon geometry affect daylighting in high-rise buildings in a dense urban context such as Dhaka, Bangladesh?

Review of Scientific Research and Recommendations on Daylighting

Parametric methods have been utilized in many pieces of research that intend to solve the complex problem of daylighting design utilizing available data and taking advantage of the flexibility of user manipulation (Eltaweel

and Su 2017). Daylighting design is dependent on many divergent criteria such as the latitude, longitude, sun-path, sun angles, dynamic sky conditions, solar irradiations, which makes the task complex and challenging. The parametric method can provide the utility of processing and connecting all the relevant data using specific software, which makes the process of analysis and decision making easier.

Over the past couple of decades, several studies have been undertaken to evaluate daylight ingress using parametric methods. Compagnon (2004) proposed a method to evaluate daylighting in urban areas by looking at irradiance values on building roofs and facades. This method has limitations as it does not consider the fact that daylight ingress is dependent on the depth of the building. In another research by Strømann-Andersen and Sattrup (2011), building depth and related urban canyons were analyzed. Their correlational study investigated building scale, urban density, and passive energy factors and established a relation between urban geometry and building operational energy, assuming a homogeneous urban setting. In PLEA 2006, Cheng et al. (2006) introduced another approach to investigate daylight availability by looking into daylight factors and urban density. This study presented the potential of daylighting simulations for urban design. However, the daylight factor approach is not a climate-based daylighting metric.

In recent years, climate-based daylighting metrics based on annual hourly indoor illuminance data are repeatedly investigated, promoted, and validated by researchers (Mardaljevic, Heschong, and Lee 2009) (Reinhart, Mardaljevic, and Rogers 2006). The Illuminating Engineering Society (IES) introduced Lighting Measurement protocol LM-83 that provides recommendations for using spatial daylight autonomy metric (sDA) to evaluate daylight availability in buildings. According to the IES recommendation, if a point in the work plane of an interior space receives daylight above 300lux at least 50% of the occupied time ($sDA_{300,50\%}$), it is considered 'daylit' ("Illuminating Engineering Society – The Lighting Authority" n.d.). According to LEED V4, the recommended $sDA_{300,50\%}$ level for an interior living space is at least 55% of a regularly occupied floor area ("LEED Green Building Certification | USGBC" n.d.). This is also adopted by the WELL building standard ("Light | WELL Standard," n.d.).

Research overview

This research intends to investigate the existing daylighting situation in a dense urban residential context of Dhaka, Bangladesh. The study is done first, at the building level, and then extended to the urban level. Six types of building geometry are tested at a building level to see the effect of building geometry. Then, the author investigated five rectangular building types at an urban level study. The urban level study focused on urban canyon configurations such as the width of streets, street adjacency to the longer side of building façade, and orientation. The research employs specific parameters to simulate hypothetical urban scenarios. This investigation helps to understand and identify the effects of building geometries and urban street canyons on daylighting in a dense city. Consequently, building orientations are also studied to understand how the buildings and urban canyons relate to each other. From this investigation, it is to be determined what geometric aspects of buildings and urban street canyons affect daylighting ingress in heavily obstructed high-rise residential buildings and whether a parametric exploration can help designers understand how daylighting ingress in densely built cities can be improved.

1. METHODOLOGY

1.1. The Climate and the Sun

The tropical city of Dhaka has a mainly direct sunlight climate. Conventionally, the principal daylighting strategy is window design with considerations for visual and thermal comfort. In dense areas with high-rise development, overshadowing cuts down a significant amount of incident daylight, and window design becomes a secondary concern. In such cases, urban street canyons and the shape of the buildings can be strategic areas for daylighting design. This research explored these specific strategies concerning daylighting in Dhaka. For this exploration, it is crucial to understand the sun's positions and angles throughout the year concerning the location of Dhaka.

The latitude of Dhaka is 23.8° North, and the longitude is 90.4° East. The Sun path diagram and solar chart presented in Figure 1 graphically show the year-round solar positions. These diagrams indicate that the sun altitude angles are high. The altitude angles for Summer and Winter solstices are 89.64° and 42.76°, respectively (calculated by the SunAngle program - https://susdesign.com/sunangle/). The sun path and solar chart diagrams are intended to show how the sun's position throughout the year affects the facades facing the west, southwest, south, southeast, and east, while the north facades have diffused daylight. The solar position is a critical factor for the daylighting design in Dhaka because of the high solar angles.

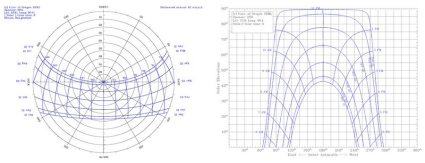


Figure 1. Sun path diagram and solar chart for Dhaka. (Source: http://solardat.uoregon.edu/unChartProgram.php).

1.2. The workflow

This research adopts a computational approach to analyze daylight availability in Dhaka. A parametric workflow is created based on existing scientific research. To calculate the sDA at a building level, the Radiance-DAYSIM approach is used and validated in many research (Saratsis, Dogan, and Reinhart 2017; Reinhart and Wienold 2011). Ladybug and honeybee plug-ins for rhinoceros-grasshopper use the Radiance engine to simulate daylight availability. The parametric workflow shown in Figure 2 is used to model, simulate, and evaluate building geometry and related urban street canyons. The workflow is divided into four sequential phases: (1) modeling the geometries and environment, (2) define and iterate the geometries which include defining the analysis geometry, creation of windows, walls, floors and ceiling, (3) annual daylight simulation, and (4) evaluation based on dynamic daylight availability metrics.

Typical meteorological year (TMY) weather data for Dhaka, Bangladesh, is used for the dynamic sky and daylight conditions.

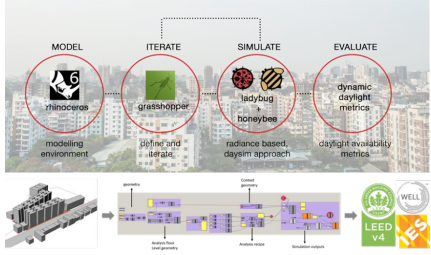


Figure 2. The computational workflow. (Author 2019)

1.3. Urban Geometry

The characteristics and form of urban residential buildings are a result of ever-evolving codes and regulations as well as climatic, socio-cultural, political, and technological factors. Dhaka's urban housing scenario is not any different from that. In this research, urban geometry is analyzed at the building level and the urban level. Several residential building form typologies are seen in Dhaka. Some typologies are adapted from the old courtyard houses with living spaces in the perimeters of the buildings with a central courtyard. Other typologies are variations and combinations of the central courtyard and vertical shafts at the outer shell of the buildings. The author identified six common residential buildings form typologies based on their geometry, which is shown in Figure 3. These are simplified massing diagrams for the typologies of residential building forms. The primary geometric types are square and rectangular forms of the building mass. Diagrams show the shapes of the buildings with external cuts and internal lightwells modified from existing residential buildings in Dhaka. Exterior protrusions and details such as windows, shading devices, are not shown. The number of dwelling units ranges from 4-8 per floor. At the urban level, the rectangular typologies were studied with varied urban canyon configurations. One example is shown in Figure 4.

1.4. The Parametric Research

The computational analysis is done in two levels –

1. Building level simulations:

A series of simulations were run for fourteen floor levels for each building typology. The total floor area is 8800 square feet in all six cases. For this set of simulations, the author set the building geometry as isolated objects on a ground plane with no obstructions. The freestanding geometry sDA values serve as references for the urban level analysis.

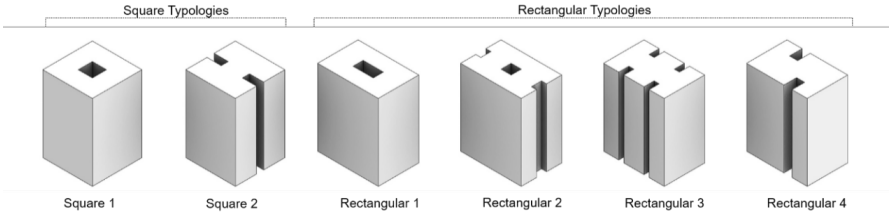


Figure 3. Six residential building form typologies. (Author 2019).

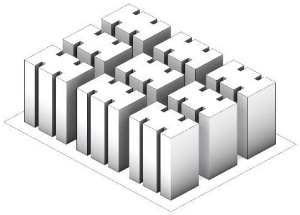


Figure 4. Example of a 3X3 grid geometry (R3 type) at the urban level. (Author 2019).

	Parameters	Details
Building Level		
	Building geometry	Shape, form
	External cuts and internal lightwells	Shape, area
Urban Level		
	Urban street canyons	Width of the adjacent street
	Canyon orientation	N-S vs E-W
	Context	Relative compactness or dispersion
	Obstruction of solar penetration	Overshadowing from adjacent buildings

Table 1. Building and Urban Level Parameters. Source: (Author 2019)

2. Urban level simulations:

For the urban level simulations, only rectangular typologies were studied. Another geometric type with no external or internal lightwell is included in the study (R0) to see how it performs in comparison to the other four rectangular types. Each of five the rectangular typology is simulated and analyzed in hypothetical 3 X 3 grids of repeating geometry with streets. The urban level study for five rectangular typologies are done in the following scenarios –

i. North-south building orientation, 20' streets
ii. East-West building orientation, 20' streets
iii. North-south building orientation, 30' streets
iv. East-West building orientation, 30' streets
v. Wider East-West streets
vi. Wider North-south streets

The proposed simulation approach features parameters in the parametric modeling environment to allow for an understanding of daylight availability and increasing simulation complexity. These variables affect the annual simulation analysis either by adding to the accuracy level or by impacting the daylight availability. Table 1 summarizes the parameters explored in this study. The Radiance parameters are set at the following levels- the ambient bounces (ab) at 5, ambient divisions (ad) at 1000, ambient resolution (ar) at 300.

The computational methodology used here, while effectively producing relevant results, makes some important simplifying assumptions for simulation to minimize calculating irrelevant objects and shorten the simulation time. A key assumption is that there are no interior walls, partitions, structures, furniture, or other internal obstructions in the building. Another key assumption is, the massing of the building is simplified, not considering the façade treatments such as exterior protrusions, verandas, other overhangs, or shading devices concerning the windows. It should be noted that the sDA computed in this exploration is not the actual sDA required by LEED that complies with IES LM-83 since there are no shading devices, such as blinds, applied in the parametric model. The sDA metric is not originally intended for residential development and there are very limited guidelines for evaluating the daylighting performance of residential buildings. The exterior wall thickness and the building elevator and stairwell core were not deliberately defined in the geometry. The sDA calculated in this research is the output of the Honeybee annual daylight simulation and is referred to as sDA henceforth. ASE metric was not tested because shading devices are

not incorporated, and this research focuses on daylighting ingress concerning building and canyon geometry. Further research is needed to analyze visual and thermal comfort. Within the limitations imposed by these caveats, this computational framework can be used to effectively calculate research sDA values and generate data necessary for this research.

2. OUTCOMES

2.1. Building level simulations

Figure 5 shows annual daylight autonomy false-color graphics on the tenth-floor level for all six building typologies for comparison. The effect of changing floor levels on $sDA_{[300lux][50\%]}$ percentages is shown in Figure 6, where the graph presents the sDA values on all the floors except the ground parking level. These data visualizations demonstrate that the sDA percentages for a specific floor level in all building typologies vary within a small range and the variation is highest in the 14th-

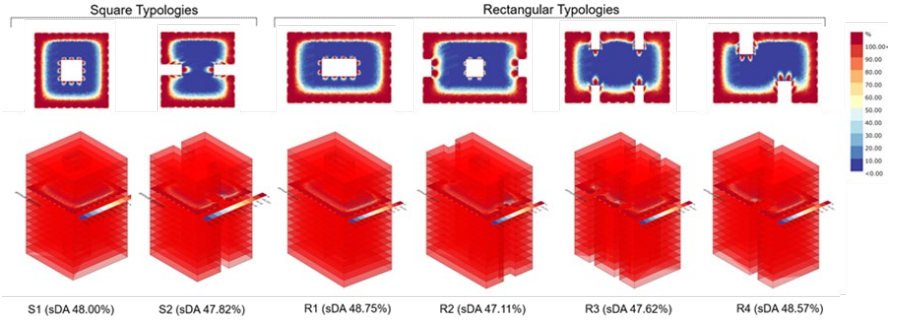


Figure 5. Building level study for daylight availability- example level 10th floor (Author 2020).

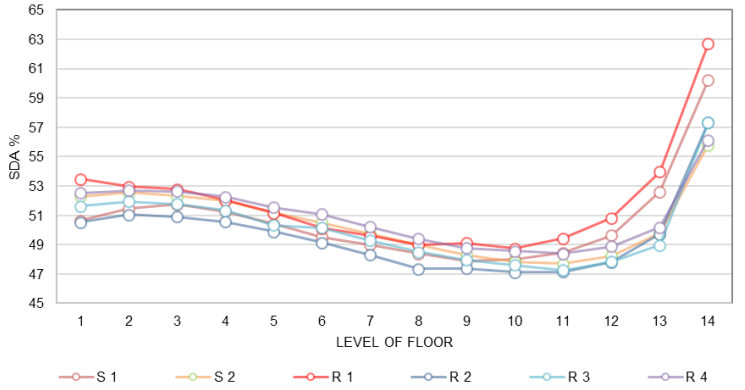


Figure 6. Floor-by-floor sDA plot for the six typologies (Author 2020).

floor level. The R4 type presents the minimum difference in floor-to-floor sDA percentages, whereas the R1 shows the highest variation. Although type R4 has the longest perimeter and thus more glazed surfaces, the upper floors get comparatively lower percentages of sDA than R1. It can be speculated that R1 type has uninterrupted facades that benefit from the unobstructed direct sunlight. Figure 5 also shows that these exterior cuts decrease the direct sunlight ingress. The other types have wider shaded regions between red and blue extremes, mostly near the windows, whereas the R1 type has uninterrupted red color adjacent to the perimeter and the less shaded area between the two extremes. A similar effect can also be seen in S1 and S2 types. These external cuts may be beneficial to reduce glare and overexposure to direct sunlight. The impacts of having these external cuts were also explored in the urban level investigation discussed later. The sDA percentages in all cases are somewhat at a good level principally because of unobstructed direct sunlight exposure. It is intriguing that in an isolated geometry, the lower floor levels receive more daylight compared to the middle levels. One assumption can be made here that this is due to the diffused sunlight reflected from the ground surface penetrating the building interiors through the glazed openings. The upper floors receive more daylight than the lower floor because of sunlight exposure, whereas the lower floor levels do not receive direct sunlight when the sun is at a higher position in the sky.

In the isolated geometry study, the diffused daylight from the ground, the sun positions, and the external cuts in the façades play crucial roles in daylight ingress. Interestingly, the data also shows that the shape of these typologies does not have any significant effect on spatial daylight autonomy for isolated buildings, and all the typologies seem to have an almost similar level of daylight ingress year-round (Figure 6).

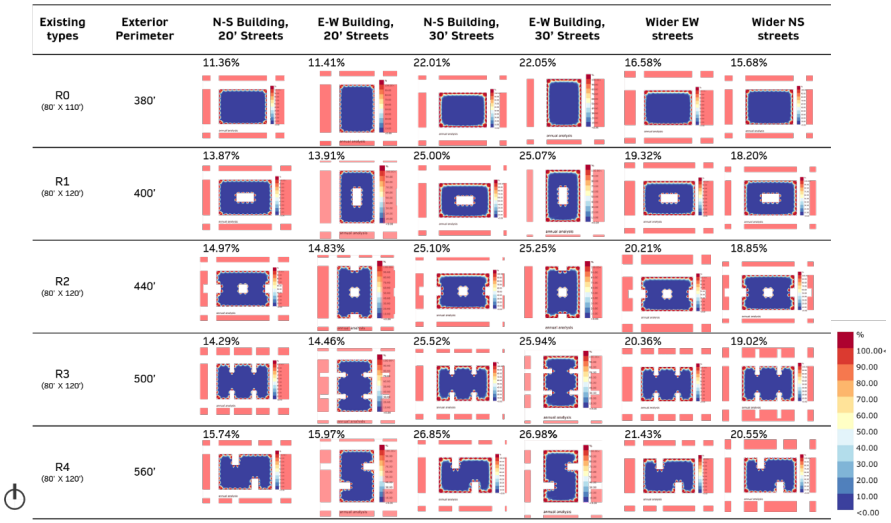


Figure 7. Urban level Study for Daylight Availability: Investigated floor- level 10. (Author 2020)

2.2. Urban level simulations

Figure 7 shows the data visualizations from the thirty annual daylight simulations for the 10th floor of the five rectangular types in the six hypothetical urban scenarios. Predictably, the matrix depicts that having a longer building perimeter, and thus, having more glazed surfaces allow more daylight ingress. Therefore, type R4 performs slightly better than the other types. In contrast to the building level study, type R1 did not perform better than the other types in the urban level study. The external cuts may be more useful in urban scenarios than isolated geometry because the diffused light reflected or scattered from surfaces of nearby buildings influence daylight ingress. There are slight improvements in the sDA with an increase in the perimeter length and glazed surfaces. On the other hand, increasing street widths around the building from 20 ft (6 m) to 30 ft (9 m) resulted in significantly higher spatial daylight autonomy percentages. This outcome reinforces the hypothesis that the geometric configuration of urban street canyons, in this case, the width of the street canyon, plays a vital role in daylight autonomy. In comparison, building shapes seem to have less effect on daylight autonomy. Moreover, having different street widths shows slight variations in the sDA which shows that having the longer side of the building along the wider street performs better in terms of daylight ingress.

CONCLUSION

The daylighting analysis in this research indicates that, in the extreme urban scenarios of Dhaka, the width of urban street canyons has a significant effect on daylight autonomy. For example, a ten feet width increase from a twenty feet street increases the sDA calculations at least 60% from the respective cases with twenty feet streets. In comparison, building shape and form has some, albeit minimal, impact on daylight ingress. For example, up to a 13.5% sDA increase is observed for buildings with external cuts (R4) compared to buildings with internal lightwell (R1). A conclusion can be drawn considering these findings, that it is critical to address the width of the urban canyon while designing for such density. Additionally, the urban street widths adjacent to the longer façades of the high-rise developments are critical for daylighting in the living spaces of residential apartments built in density, along with other factors traditionally addressed in daylighting design. Therefore, the regularly occupied spaces in residential buildings of Dhaka, such as the bedrooms, study areas, and family living areas, should be located along the longer side of the building façade to benefit from daylight. The building level parametric study shows that the internal lightwells in high-rise residential buildings performed poorly regarding daylight ingress, allowing daylight ingress only on the top 4-5 floors in a 15 storey building, whereas the external cuts are effective for all floors. Further research can be done on the different floor levels to see the difference at the urban level. Additionally, investigations can be done to investigate realistic geometric configurations of urban canyons with more simulation complexity to further explore daylighting in dense urban areas.

REFERENCES

Ahsan, Tahmina. 2016. "High-Rise Residential Buildings in Dhaka, Bangladesh: Strategies for Socially and Environmentally Sustainable Practice," 414.

Ahsan, Tahmina, Veronica Soebarto, and Terence Williamson. 2014. "KEY PREDICTORS OF ANNUAL ELECTRICITY USE IN HIGH-RISE RESIDENTIAL APARTMENTS IN DHAKA, BANGLADESH," 13.

"Atlas of Urban Expansion - Dhaka." n.d. Accessed October 31, 2019. http://www.atlasofurbanexpansion.org/cities/view/Dhaka.

Beck, Hylke E., Niklaus E. Zimmermann, Tim R. McVicar, Noemi Vergopolan, Alexis Berg, and Eric F. Wood. 2018. "Present and Future Köppen-Geiger Climate Classification Maps at 1-Km Resolution." *Scientific Data* 5 (1): 180214. https://doi.org/10.1038/sdata.2018.214.

Boubekri, Mohamed. 2008. *Daylighting, Architecture and Health.* Routledge.

Cheng, Vicky, Koen Steemers, Marylene Montavon, and Raphaël Compagnon. 2006. "Urban Form, Density and Solar Potential," 6.

Compagnon, R. 2004. "Solar and Daylight Availability in the Urban Fabric." *Energy and Buildings* 36 (4): 321–28. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.enbuild.2004.01.009.

Eltaweel, Ahmad, and Yuehong Su. 2017. "Parametric Design and Daylighting: A Literature Review." Renewable and Sustainable Energy Reviews 73 (June): 1086–1103. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.rser.2017.02.011.

Farea, Tareq G, Dilshan R Ossen, and Abubakar D Isah. 2012. "COMMON CONFIGURATION OF LIGHT-WELL IN HIGH-RISE RESIDENTIAL BUILDINGS IN KUALA LUMPUR," 9.

Ghafur, Shayer. 2011. "Imprints of the Changing Doctrines on Housing in Dhaka," 16.

"Global Liveability Ranking." n.d. Accessed December 26, 2019. http://www.eiu.com/topic/liveability.

"Illuminating Engineering Society – The Lighting Authority." n.d. Accessed December 16, 2019. https://www.ies.org/.

Islam, Zareen Habiba. 2016. "Changing Housing Scenario of Dhaka and Its Impact on Social Interaction." *Cities People Places: An International Journal on Urban Environments* 1 (2): 16. https://doi.org/10.4038/cpp.v1i2.8.

"Koppen Climate Classification | Description, Map, & Chart | Britannica.Com." n.d. Accessed October 31, 2019. https://www.britannica.com/science/Koppen-climate-classification.

Kotani, Hisashi, Masaya Narasaki, Ryuji Sato, and Toshio Yamanaka. 2003. "Environmental Assessment of Light Well in High-Rise Apartment Building." *Building and Environment* 38 (2): 283–89. https://doi.org/10.1016/S0360-1323(02)00033-1.

"LEED Green Building Certification | USGBC." n.d. Accessed December 26, 2019. https://new.usgbc.org/leed.

"Light | WELL Standard." n.d. Accessed October 7, 2019. https://standard.wellcertified.com/light.

Mardaljevic, J, L Heschong, and E Lee. 2009. "Daylight Metrics and Energy Savings." *Lighting Research & Technology* 41 (3): 261–83. https://doi.org/10.1177/1477153509339703.

Mayhoub, Ms, and Dj Carter. 2010. "Towards Hybrid Lighting Systems: A Review." *Lighting Research & Technology* 42 (1): 51–71. https://doi.org/10.1177/1477153509103724.

Nancy, Ruck. 2000. "Daylight in Buildings-A Sourcebook on Daylighting Systems and Components." the Lawrence Berkeley National Laboratory.

Reinhart, Christoph F., John Mardaljevic, and Zack Rogers. 2006. "Dynamic Daylight Performance Metrics for Sustainable Building Design." *LEUKOS* 3 (1): 7–31. https://doi.org/10.1582/LEUKOS.2006.03.01.001.

Reinhart, Christoph F., and Jan Wienold. 2011. "The Daylighting Dashboard – A Simulation-Based Design Analysis for Daylit Spaces." *Building and Environment* 46 (2): 386–96. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2010.08.001.

Santamouris, Mat. 2013. *Environmental Design of Urban Buildings: An Integrated Approach*. Routledge.

Saratsis, Emmanouil, Timur Dogan, and Christoph F. Reinhart. 2017. "Simulation-Based Daylighting Analysis Procedure for Developing Urban Zoning Rules." *Building Research & Information* 45 (5): 478–91. https://doi.org/10.1080/09613218.2016.1159850.

Strømann-Andersen, J., and P.A. Sattrup. 2011. "The Urban Canyon and Building Energy Use: Urban Density versus Daylight and Passive Solar Gains." *Energy and Buildings* 43 (8): 2011–20. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.enbuild.2011.04.007.

United Nations Department of Economic and Social Affairs. 2016. *The World's Cities in 2016*. Statistical Papers - United Nations (Ser. A), Population, and Vital Statistics Report. UN. https://doi.org/10.18356/8519891f-en.

PAPER #5.11

APPLICATION OF ARTIFICIAL NEURAL NETWORK IN SOLAR RADIATION PREDICTION FOR REAL-TIME SIMULATION

Hany Gaballa[a], Yeo Beom Yoon[a], Byeongmo Seo[a], and Soolyeon Cho[a]
[a]College of Design, NC State University, Raleigh, NC, USA

ABSTRACT

Solar radiation is one of the essential energy sources in our life. The availability of solar radiation as a parameter is important in getting the most effective use of solar energy resources in design or energy simulations. Acquiring real-time solar radiation data is costly; most of the available data are historical. Predicting solar radiation is considered an essential process for developing real-time weather data required to run real-time building simulation to track the building systems' performances. Artificial Neural Networks (ANNs) have a good application history, especially in predicting solar radiation, which increased in the past years due to its ability to solve complex and nonlinear tasks. This paper aims to use an ANN model to predict hourly global solar radiation using only temperature and humidity, which can easily be accessible in the Building Automation System (BAS). An ANN algorithm had been developed in a previous study (Gaballa & Cho 2019), which shows that using predicted global solar radiation to run building energy simulation during the summer season gives a good accuracy based on the ASHRAE Guideline 14. In this paper, the ANN model mentioned earlier is tested throughout the entire year. The ANN model has some variables, i.e., the number of hidden neurons, the number of epochs, and the learning rates. For each season, the variables are calculated to give the most accurate results with minimum error difference. TRNSYS software is used to calculate direct and diffuse solar radiation from the predicted global solar radiation. After the prediction method, a new weather data file is developed according to the predicted data using the EnergyPlus weather converter tool. The EnergyPlus program is used to simulate a case study office building. Using two weather files (measured and predicted), a comparison between the measured and predicted cases is discussed.

KEYWORDS

Artificial Neural Network; solar radiation prediction; real-time building energy performance.

INTRODUCTION

Every day, technologies become more advanced to solve daily and significant problems. Artificial Intelligence (AI) is one of the advanced technologies used in various fields. This paper discusses how AI technologies can help in diagnosing the building`s systems efficiency.

Simulation software makes the process of making the right decision easier; it helps in making that in the early design stage to save time and money. After the construction process, it is still hard to diagnose the building`s systems using simulation software since it uses historical data. That is why developing real-time weather data is necessary.

Solar radiation data is considered one of the most effective parameters in simulation (Qazi et al., 2015); also, it is the most important renewable energy source on earth (Gana and Akpootu, 2013). According to Wang et al. 2011,

there is a shortage of solar radiation data preventing a great use of solar energy. For this reason, solar radiation data is essential. While the measuring process is costly, predicting solar radiation became necessary for real-time building performance. Not only for that purpose, it also helps in many other different industries such as, sizing PV planets (Egido, and Lorenzo, 1992) and increasing agricultural productivity (Dohleman & Long, 2009). According to Gungor and Yildirim, 2012, global solar radiation data is the required information as an input parameter for developing solar energy systems.

In this study, an ANN model is used for global solar radiation prediction, which had been revealed from different studies that ANNs are superior in prediction problems (Mubiru and Banda, 2008). Only easily accessible data from Building Automation System (BAS) is used as input parameters in the ANN algorithm, which is temperature and relative humidity to predict hourly global solar radiation. The main goal of this paper is to measure the accuracy of running real-time building simulation using the predicted weather files, which is developed using the predicted solar radiation from the ANN model. The simulation process using EnergyPlus is performed to run two different scenarios using two different weather files, the measured 2018 and the predicted 2018 weather files. A comparison using cooling and heating loads are analyzed for the entire year to see the efficiency of the ANN algorithm.

1. PREVIOUS STUDIES AND GOALS

ANN models are found to have applications in different fields of science and technology. ANN algorithms extract the information and learn from data, so it can be used to solve nonlinear problems. A study conducted by Amit et al. 2014, concluded that ANN techniques have more accuracy in comparison to the conventional methods in predicting solar radiation. The ANN prediction accuracy is found to be dependent on a combination of input parameters, training algorithm, and architectural configuration.

Previous studies used a combination of different parameters which influence the solar radiation prediction such as longitude, latitude, altitude, time, solar zenith angle, air temperature, wind speed, relative humidity, cloud cover, rainfall, etc. Historical data of these parameters in a specific location is used as input to the ANN to predict solar radiation at this location. However, this paper aims to focus on easily measured data from the BAS, which are temperature and relative humidity to be used as ANN input parameters.

It was found through the prediction process in the ANN model that there is no rule for selecting a specific number of hidden neurons or learning rate; otherwise, a try and error is performed. Such as a previous study done by Chiteka and Enweremadu in 2016, the author suggested some numbers (3, 7, 10, 13, and 20) for hidden neurons to be tested. While in this paper, an optimization process is performed to test all possible combinations of three variables; the number of epochs, the number of hidden neurons, and the learning rate.

Previous studies interested in real-time building performance used onsite measurement tools required to develop weather files. Some other studies used the Seo model (Seo, 2010) to calculate solar radiation data that requires more than six parameters, which is not readily available. This paper aims to use the ANN prediction model to develop a new weather file to be used in simulating the real-time building performance.

2. RESEARCH METHOD AND ASSUMPTIONS

2.1. Data acquisition

One of the most effective steps in the ANN algorithm is how to deal with the data set required to run the algorithm. In this paper,

2018 weather data files for Raleigh-Durham, NC, weather station represent real measured data. Temperature, humidity, and solar zenith angle picked from the 2018 weather files are used as a testing data in the ANN model to predict the global solar radiation. Data were divided into four seasons. Hourly global solar radiation in each season was predicted separately. In this way, it makes the prediction process more accurate as the set of data becomes more precise to each other. The training data is differentiated for each season. For spring, summer, and fall, the training data set are picked from Typical Meteorological Year (TMY) for Raleigh-Durham weather files. While for winter, it is selected from the 2017 Raleigh-Durham weather files as it gives more accurate results than using TMY weather files. By running a separate ANN algorithm for the four seasons, a predicted global solar radiation is possible after an optimization process. This process includes the calculations of the most accurate variables that affect the ANN model. The variables are the number of neurons, number of epochs, and learning rate. After the optimization process, the hourly global solar radiation for the whole year is available. TRNSYS software is used to calculate the direct and diffuse solar radiation from the predicted global solar radiation through the Perez model. Then, the EnergyPlus converter program is used to develop a new EnergyPlus weather (EPW) file to be called (Predicted_2018) weather files using the predicted global radiation from ANN and calculated direct and diffuse from the Perez model.

2.2. ANN algorithm optimization process

Generally, there are three basic methods in Machine Learning (ML), such as supervised learning, semi-supervised learning, and unsupervised learning (Muller and Guido, 2017). The summary of a detailed definition and abilities for the three methods was published by Seo B. et al. (2019). Artificial Neural Network (ANN) is considered one of the supervised learning that belongs to ML (Mitchell, 1997). ANN uses the processing of the human brain as a basis to mimic its behavior, trying to learn from previous tasks to solve complex patterns and prediction problems. To learn from experience, ANN uses two algorithms; feedforward and backpropagation (Puri M, 2016).

ANN consists of three layers; input layer, hidden layer(s), and output layer in order. A random weight factor is assigned to each layer of the input layers. Each layer has connections to the next layer, but there are no back connections; this process is called feedforward. The backpropagation turns over this process to train the algorithm by calculating the error and adjusting the randomly assigned weights backward. The whole process that is repeated is called an epoch, which aims to reduce the error value. There is an essential parameter in the backpropagation process called learning rate, which settles the weights` changes at the end of each epoch (Rezrazi et al., 2016). An activate function is used to simulate the behavior of the neurons, which differentiates depending on the application of the algorithm. In this paper, the activation function used is the sigmoid function, which gives values between 0 and 1; this kind of feature is commonly used for non-linear problems (Kyurkchiev and Markov, 2015).

The performance of the ANN model is mainly dependent on the input parameters, as Rezrazi et al. (2016) mentioned that the selection of the most appropriate input variables is essential to improve the algorithm efficiency. This paper aims to predict the hourly global solar radiation using easily accessible data from the Building Automation System (BAS), such as temperature and relative humidity. An ANN model was developed depending on these data set and mentioned in more detail in the previous study (Gaballa and Cho, 2019). This ANN model uses temperature, humidity, solar zenith angle, and time as input parameters to get the desired output, which

is the hourly global solar radiation (Figure 1). This model is used four times for the four seasons separately using different input data sets.

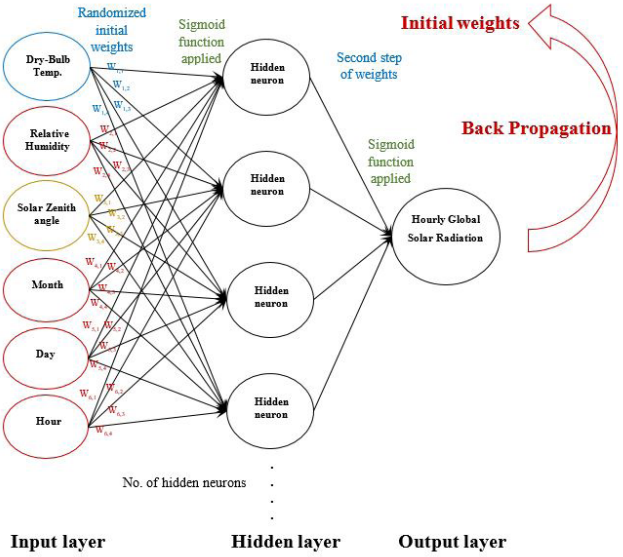


Figure 1. ANN architecture

An optimization process is performed, which includes a calculation of three different variables; the number of hidden neurons, the number of epochs, and the learning rate. The optimum variables for each season were calculated to be used in the ANN model to predict the most accurate global solar radiation. Through the optimization process, a range and a distance for each variable were given. The range for the number of hidden neurons, learning rate, and the number of epochs is as follows; 10:100, 0.01:1.0, and 100:1000, respectively, while the distance was 10, 0.01, and 100, respectively. Table 1 shows the optimum variables` value for each season.

Season	Number of hidden neurons	Learning rate	Number of epochs
Spring (March 1-May 31)	60	0.82	200
Summer (June 1- Aug 31)	80	0.03	600
Fall (Sept 1-Nov 30)	10	0.07	600
Winter (Dec 1- Feb 28)	20	0.02	100

Table 1. The optimum values used in the ANN model

Figures 2- 5 show comparisons between the predicted and measured global solar radiations for each season individually. The horizontal axis shows the date and time every hour, while the vertical axis shows the global solar radiation in Wh/m2.

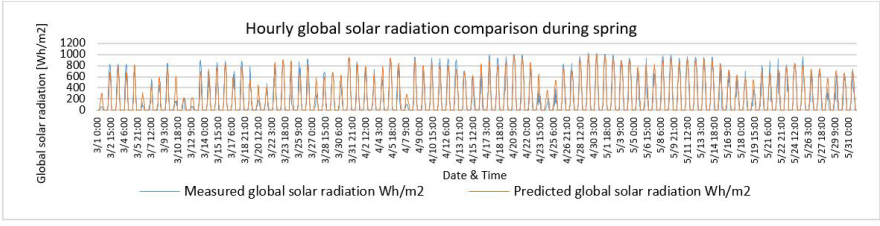


Figure 2. ANN results from comparison during spring

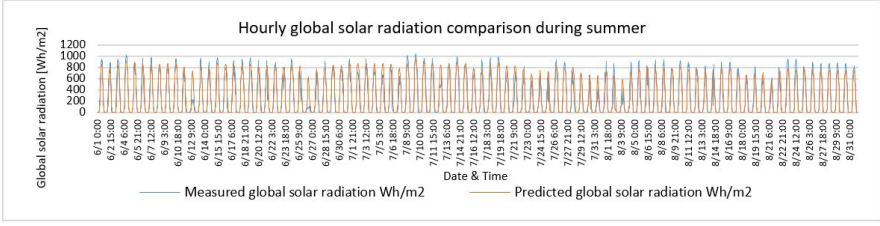


Figure 3. ANN results from comparison during summer

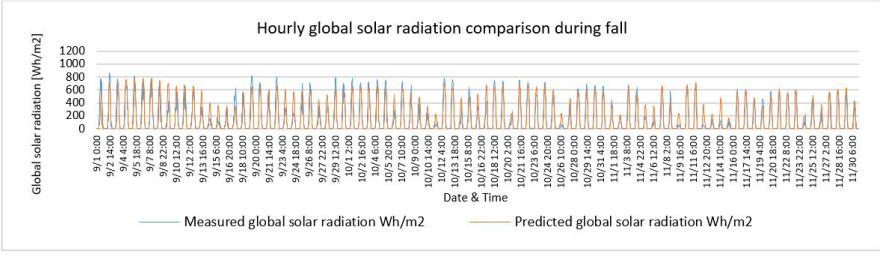


Figure 4. ANN results from comparison during fall

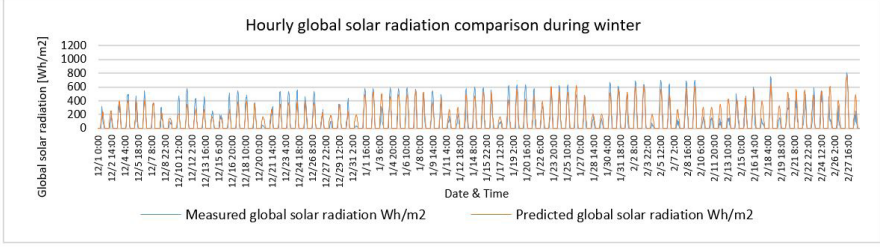


Figure 5. ANN results from comparison during winter

2.3. Simulation

EnergyPlus (US DOE, 2010; Crawley et al., 2001) is one of the most popular software programs used for the whole building energy simulation and analyses (Basarkar M. et al., 2011). In this paper, EnergyPlus V8.9.0 is used in simulating two different scenarios through two different weather files; the predicted 2018 weather files through the ANN model and the already measured 2018 weather files.
A commercial building located in Durham, NC, was chosen as a case study building. The building consists of three floors with a total area of 4,024 m2. There are 29 different zones divided into the three stories; in the EnergyPlus software, each space was assigned to the related zone. The building has 1,690 m2 glazing area with a window to wall ratio of 42%, as shown in Figure 6.

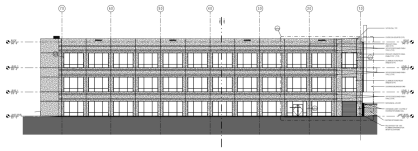


Figure 6. EPA building west Elevation

EnergyPlus model inputs need full information of the building; geometry, materials, openings, location, HVAC system, etc. The two scenarios are considered the same for the building`s configurations except for the weather files used to run the simulations. The simulations were performed for the whole year to make a comparison.

3. RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

As mentioned before, this study aims to measure the effectiveness of using the ANN model in prediction by comparing the two cases, using the measured and the predicted weather files. Heating and cooling loads are selected as indicators to make this comparison. The CV(RMSE) and NMBE are calculated to measure the uncertainties between the two cases. Table 2 shows these percentages between the two cases for the entire year, and as shown, cooling and heating loads differences meet the requirements of ASHRAE Guideline 14 as less than 30% for CV(RMSE) and less than 10% for NMBE (ASHRAE, 2014). Figure 7 shows the total loads comparison for the entire year and the difference between predicted and measured loads.

Loads	CV(RMSE)	NMBE
Heating loads	23.3%	10.5%
Cooling loads	13.7%	-5.9%

Table 2. Statistical measures between measured and predicted loads for the entire year

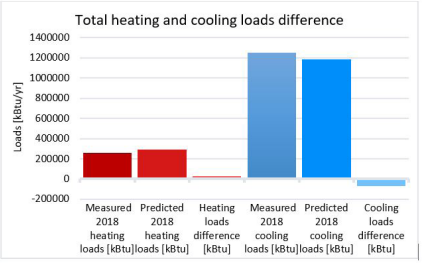


Figure 7. Total heating and cooling loads comparison

Loads are calculated for each season separately to make a clear comparison. Table 3 shows the CV(RMSE) and NMBE for each season. The results show that in summer and winter season, cooling and heating loads are more efficiently predictable while in the swing seasons, the accuracy decreased but still within limits. For more clarity, Figures 8-13 show comparisons between the measured

and predicted loads for each season with zero load values ignored.

Loads		CV(RMSE)	NMBE
Spring	Heating loads	33%	11.8%
	Cooling loads	18.7%	-8.6%
Summer	Cooling loads	9.4%	-3.9%
Fall	Heating loads	26.9%	10.7%
	Cooling loads	16.2%	-7.5%
Winter	Heating loads	18.9%	10.1%

Table 3. Error difference between measured and predicted loads for each season

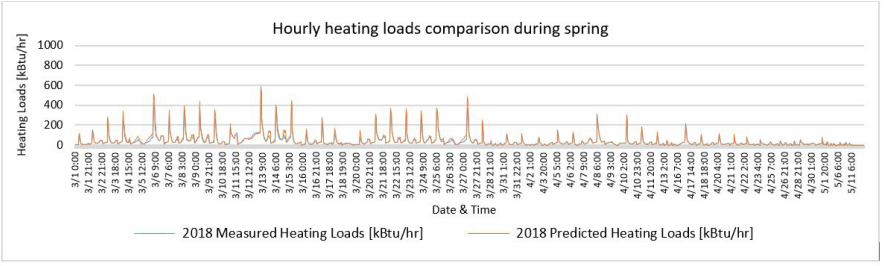


Figure 8. Heating loads comparison during spring

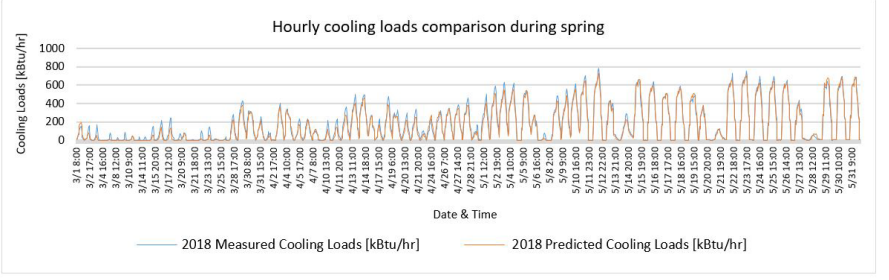


Figure 9. Cooling loads comparison during spring

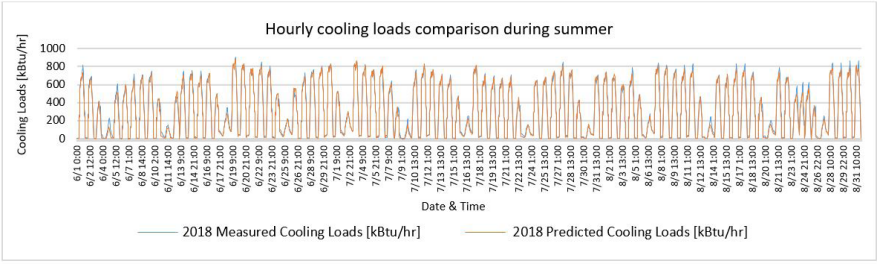


Figure 10. Cooling loads comparison during summer

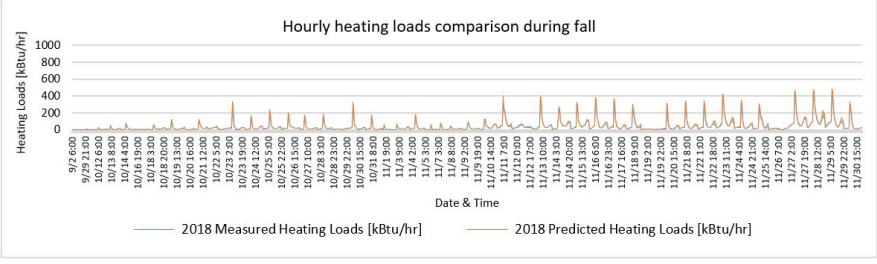


Figure 11. Heating loads comparison during fall

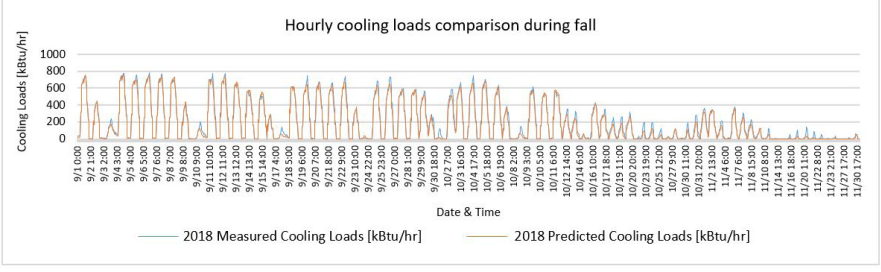


Figure 12. Cooling loads comparison during fall

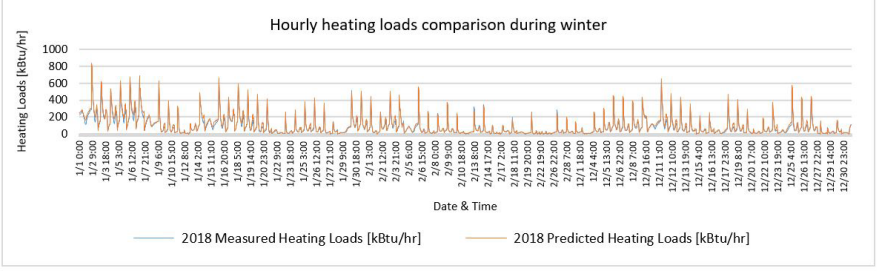


Figure 13. Heating loads comparison during winter

CONCLUSIONS AND FUTURE WORK

This paper presented an ANN algorithm for solar radiation prediction, which makes developing real-time weather files possible. Only temperature, relative humidity, and solar zenith angle are used as input parameters, which means that the ANN model uses only readily accessible measured data from the BAS to predict global solar radiation. Real-time building energy simulation is demonstrated using the developed weather file (Predicted_2018). The simulation is performed using EnergyPlus software for the whole year. A comparison between the measured and predicted building performance is provided using two weather files, measured 2018, and predicted 2018 weather files.

The results show that the cooling load's difference is 13.7% (CV(RMSE)) and -5.9% (NMBE), while the heating loads difference is 23.3% (CV(RMSE)) and 10.5% (NMBE). Looking deeply into each season, for summer, the CV(RMSE) for cooling loads difference reaches only 9.5%. Besides, in the winter season, the CV(RMSE) for the heating loads difference is only 18.9%. These results are found to meet the tolerance range addressed in ASHRAE Guideline 14.

In conclusion, this method gives a reasonable error difference, which makes it possible to predict real-time building performance. Building operators can compare these predictions with the actual measured data and identify any potential problems that happen in the building systems to take any actions required early.

Two different methods were used in calculating direct and diffuse solar radiation from the predicted global solar radiation, EnergyPlus converter software, and TRNSYS software. Although the two programs use the same Perez model, the results are significantly different. For instance, CV(RMSE) for cooling in summer, the EnrgyPlus converter shows 21.9%, but TRNSYS 9.5%.

For future studies, the pros and cons of different methods used in calculating the two derivatives of solar radiation from the global solar radiation should be presented.

REFERENCES

Basarkar, M., Pang, X., Wang, L., Haves, P., and Hong. T. 2011. *Modeling and simulation of HVAC faults in Energyplus.* Lawrence Berkeley National Laboratory, Berkeley, CA, USA.

Chiteka K., and Enweremadu, C.C. 2016. *Prediction of global horizontal solar irradiance in Zimbabwe using artificial neural networks.* Journal of Cleaner Production, 135, 701-711. Elsevier.

Crawley, D.B., Lawrie, L.K., Winkelmann, F.C., Buhl, W.F., Huang, Y. J., Pederse,n C.O., Strand, R.K., Liesen, R.J., Fisher, D. E., Witte, M.J. and Glazer, J. 2001. *EnergyPlus: creating a new-generation building energy simulation program.* Energy and Buildings, 33, 319-331. Elsevier.

Department of Energy Efficiency and Renewable Energy, 2018. *Ground heat transfer in EnergyPlus. Documentation,* EnergyPlusTM Version 8.9-Auxiliary Programs, p. 36.

Dohleman, F., and Long, S. 2009. *More productive than maize in the Midwest: how does Miscanthus do it?* Plant Physiology, 150, 2104–2115. Am Soc Plant Biol.

Egido, M., and Lorenzo, E. 1992. *The sizing of sand-alone PV systems: A review and a proposed new method.* Solar Energy Mater Solar Cells, 26, 51-69. Elsevier Science.

Gaballa, H., and Cho, S. 2019. *Prediction of hourly solar radiation using temperature and humidity for real-time building energy simulation.* Journal of Physics, 1343, 012049. IOP Publishing.

Gana, N.N., and Akpootu, D.O. 2013. *Estimation of global solar radiation using four sunshine based models in Kebbi, North-Western, Nigeria.* Adv. Sci. Res., 4, 409-421.

Guideline, A. S. H. R. A. E. 2014. Guideline 14-2014. *Measurement of energy, demand, and water savings.*

Gungor, A., and Yildirim, U. 2012. *Global solar radiation estimation using sunshine duration in Nigde.* 16th International Research/Expert Conference. 327-330. Citeseer.

Hierons, R. 1999. *Machine learning. Tom M. Mitchell International Student Edition, 1997.* Software Testing, Verification and Reliability, 9, 191-193. Wiley Online Library.

Kyurkchiev, N., and Markov, S. 2015. *Sigmoid functions: some approximation and modelling aspects.* LAP LAMBERT Academic Publishing, Saarbrucken.

Mubiru, J., and Banda, E.J.K.B. 2012. *Estimation of monthly average daily global solar irradiation using artificial neural networks.* Solar Energy, 82, 181-187. Elsevier.

Muller, AC., and Guido, S. 2017. *Introduction to Machine Learning with Python: A Guide for Data Scientists.* O'Reilly Rashid.

Puri, M., Pathak, Y., Sutariya, V.K., Tipparaju, S., and Moreno, W. 2016. *Artificial Neural Network for Drug Design, Delivery and Disposition.* Academic Press.

Qazi, A., Fayaz, H., Wadi, A., Raj, R.G., and Rahim, N.A. 2015. *The artificial neural network for solar radiation prediction and designing solar systems: a systematic literature review.* Journal of cleaner production, 104, 1-12. Elsevier.

Rashid, T. 2016. *Make your own neural network.* Create Space Independent Publishing Platform.

Rezrazi, A., Hanini, S., and Laidi, M. 2016. *An optimisation methodology of artificial neural network models for predicting solar radiation: a case study.* Theoretical and applied climatology, 123, 769-783. Springer.

Seo, B., Yoon, Y.B., Song, A., and Cho, S. 2019. ANN-based thermal load prediction approach for advanced controls in building energy systems. ARCC Conference Repository.

Seo, D. 2010. *Development of a Universal Model for Predicting Hourly SolarRadiation-application: Evaluation of an Optimal Daylighting Controller.* Ph.D Dissertation, University of Colorado-Boulder, USA.

Wang, Z., Wang F., and Su, S. 2011. *Solar irradiance short term prediction model based on BP neural network*. Energy Procedia, 12, 488-494. Elsevier.

Yadav, A.K., and Chandel, S.S. 2014. *Solar radiation prediction using Artificial Neural Network techniques: a review.* Renewable and sustainable energy reviews, 33, 772–781. Elsevier.

PAPER #5.12

THE SPATIAL BLOCK: NATURAL VENTILATION AS AN ARCHITECTURAL INSTRUMENT

Ezgi Bay[a]
[a] Illinois Institute of Technology, Chicago, Illinois, USA

ABSTRACT

The housing deficit is a global problem. In Turkey, the governmental agency 'TOKI' has proposed solutions to inadequate and unaffordable housing. However, it has been widely criticized that its residential projects are based on 'standard regulations' and 'repetitive, high-rise typologies'. This approach is discussed by researchers because of its limited exploration of contemporary needs of people. Also, the limited and low quality architectural and urban conditions in these projects marginalize the living standards of the residents.

Sprawling rapidly throughout different climate regions in Turkey, one of the permanent complaints of TOKI residents is related to indoor thermal conditions. As consequence of this 'homogenization effect', overheated and underheated conditions are experienced. In these 'naturally ventilated buildings', few considerations are given to the surrounding environment and it is ignored how the residential units perform under extreme seasonal circumstances.

Through post-occupancy evaluations, this paper investigates a TOKI built in hot and dry climate. Also, it brings new 'typological' alternatives analyzed through energy simulations and computer fluid dynamics (CFD). Results illustrate the dynamic of thermal stress, and alternatives of using prevailing winds in consonance with building form to alleviate these problems.

Summer heat stress periods and cross ventilation limitations are studied through Indoor Temperature, PPD and ACH analyses performed IES-VE software. The link between thermal comfort and indoor microclimate in TOKI housing can be better with the reformulation of its residential typologies by proposing a 'Spatial Block' approach.

KEYWORDS

Post occupancy evaluation; hot and dry climates; natural ventilation; residents' satisfaction; CFD.

INTRODUCTION

Informal settlements appeared in cities due to the housing demand of high population in many countries during the industrialization period (Keles 2006, Majale 2008). This phenomenon is described as over-crowded, temporary, probably illegal and unhygienic by Uzun et al. (2010). In the case of Turkey- with the last decade migrations mostly from Syria- the population has reached to 82 million today (Fig.1). Parallel to the urban-rural balance shift, the structure of cities has changed. This generates a serious pressure on urban areas, where housing demand has emerged, and informal settlements appeared through the years.. The current housing deficit in Turkey has been solved through a governmental institution called the 'Mass Housing Administration' (Toplu Konut Idaresi Baskanligi / TOKI). Since 1983, TOKI has replicated a high-rise typology all over the country with the purpose of providing ownership to higher number of people. Gur and Dostoglu indicate that 70 % of TOKI users prefer these projects due to the low cost compared to other housing possibilities (Gur et al. 2011).

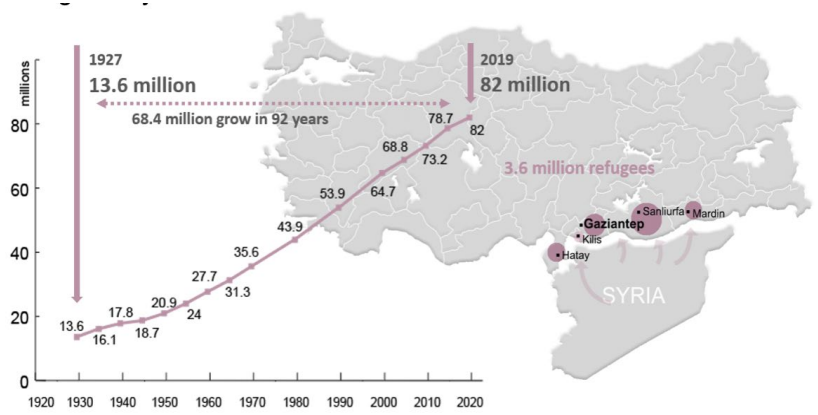


Figure 1. Population growth in Turkey. Source: (The graph was created data from Turkish Statistical Institute)

Applications of TOKI Administration to meet low-income people's necessities within financial margins result that the projects have serious limitations in terms of other aspects. Therefore, TOKI housing has become the object of multidisciplinary research. Although TOKI provides better infrastructure and hygienic environments for these groups, post occupancy evaluations (POE) by various researches show that design decisions on urban form, residential typology, and building enclosure create negative outcomes (Bay 2019; Savran 2014; Turan 2010; Karaca 2008). As Choguill (2007) mentioned, 'meeting the needs of the present without compromising the ability of future generations to meet their own needs', will not be successful in long term. For sustainable environments, housing problem should be discussed with multidimensional perspectives such as the involvement of the community in all phases (planning, constructing, maintaining), environmentally friendly material selection, quality, affordability and providing ideal density. Although there are many studies about TOKI housing in social and political sciences, there has not been much investigation about these projects in terms of their environmental sustainability. Applied research conducted on energy efficiency in these buildings is relatively limited. From the literature review, it is concluded that a key research area in TOKI project is their sustainability which is a research gap. For example, how natural forces such as sun or wind can be used to improve their indoor conditions. Therefore, this paper moves along the idea of using the environmental forces to satisfy comfort demands of communities.

The objectives of this paper are:

(1) To identify the current conditions of a TOKI housing project on a hot and dry climate.

(2) To study natural ventilation and aerodynamic flow effects to improve indoor conditions.

(3) To interpret residents' opinions about their units.

(4) To investigate residential typologies that can be more adequate for hot and dry climates in Turkey

1. STUDY CASE AND ITS PROBLEMS

In Turkey, one of the most common complaints expressed by the TOKI residents is their thermal dissatisfaction directly related to their specific weather conditions. This study is conducted on a TOKI residential project in the city of Gaziantep. Located in the South-Eastern Anatolian region, Gaziantep is a city with a hot and dry climate. In the studied project, residential units are overheated and cause higher level of dissatisfaction in the summer months. Buildings in Gaziantep have high cooling loads in warm seasons. As a climate zone 3B (ASHRAE 90.1) and Csa- Mediterranean Climate (Köppen), summer temperatures are above 30°C while winter are cold (Turkish State Meteorological Service). In this sense, a weather data analysis developed in IES VE shows that in at least 2600 hours per year (30% of the time), there is no high humidity that can cause thermal stress in the city. In this sense, low relative humidity, high evaporation and temperature differences between day and nighttime during summer months favor the potential of using the city's southwest prevailing winds for natural ventilation of buildings. (Fig. 2). Under these weather circumstances, natural ventilation techniques favor the connection between better living conditions and better thermal environment at lowered cost, particularly on the reductions to mechanical cooling (Olgyay, 2015). This paper explores building form as a manner to improve the relationship between human thermal comfort and indoor microclimate in TOKI housing. The case study 'TOKI Etiler project' is composed by six rectangular towers each one with 12 stories (Fig.3). These are the highest structures in the middle of a low-rise neighborhood. In the recent time, the city has had a growth rate of 56% receiving the highest number of Syrian refugees in the country. With nearly two million of inhabitants, the city's housing demand is expected to rise quickly in the coming years.

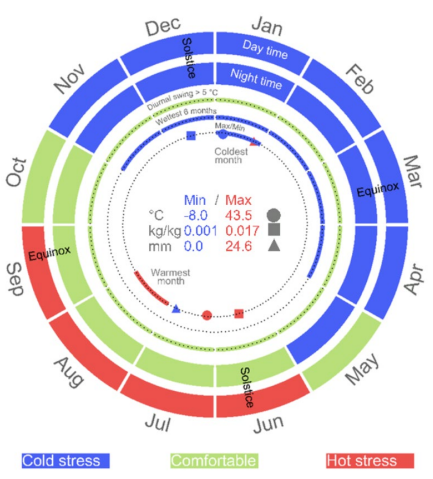


Figure 2. Weather analysis in Gaziantep locating in a region with high cooling demand. Source: (The graph was created in IES-VE by the author)

Figure 3. TOKI Etiler Project in Gaziantep. Source: Author, 2019

2. METHODOLOGY

This research employs a mixed methods approach to integrated qualitative and quantitative data collected during a field study carried out in the TOKI Etiler Project. Three methodological steps are used: (1) Computational Fluid Dynamics (CFD) simulations, (2) Post Occupancy Evaluation and (3) a Generative Design Process. First, energy modeling was used to observe the real conditions in the studied project. The second step surveyed the residents about their environment to obtain information regarding the performance of the residential typology. In the third step, an iterative design process was used for producing an alternative typology for this mass housing project to enhance passive cooling in this hot and dry climate region.

2.1. Computational Fluid Dynamic (CFD) simulations

In this study, three 'key performance indicators': indoor temperatures (T), air renovation in units (ACH), and percentage of people dissatisfied (PPD) were used for comparison between a baseline and a proposed case. In addition, typical flow regimes and their interaction with the high-rise typology is observed through computational fluid dynamics (CFD) through airflow diagrams. CFD simulations (external and internal) were tested in IES-Microflo. The time lapse of external simulations is a 5-month period (from May to September while the time lapse of internal simulations is applied single instances in time in specific days. Three dates which have the highest airflow rate were selected: May 17, June 14, and September 21) For external airflow analysis, wind direction, meteorological wind velocity and exposure type were used as inputs to obtain streamlines in a CFD grid. Through a graphical analysis of velocity profiles, the difference of airflow rate on windward and leeward facades was observed along the buildings. For the weather data, the typical meteorological year (TMY 15) file for Gaziantep was used.Ç For this step, three external analysis were conducted in Microflo that is based on Finite Volume Method. It uses steady state three-dimensional convection-condition heat transfer and flow model. First, aerodynamic flow effects were investigated in the baseline model. After a preliminary test series on generic courtyard buildings, a mid-rise with an equivalent urban density is proposed as an alternative typology. A graphical analysis of velocity profiles is done for different levels. The difference of airflow rate on windward and leeward facades was observed. Then, three consecutive test series examined the flow behavior in courtyards with gradually changing 'width to height ratio' and openings. After observing courtyards with the same orientation as the TOKI towers in Etiler project, the series were repeated with courtyards aligned to the prevailing winds. It showed that narrower courtyards (w/h of 3.75) have a larger funnel effect, proportional to a more constant flow acceleration of the prevailing streams. Same steps were performed in the development of the proposed case. In this process, the aim was to find possibilities that can enhance the interconnection of airflow across courtyards. So, eight courtyard models were analyzed through velocity profiles. Obtained results of speeds on inward and leeward facades showed that homogenous profiles were targeted between first and top levels.

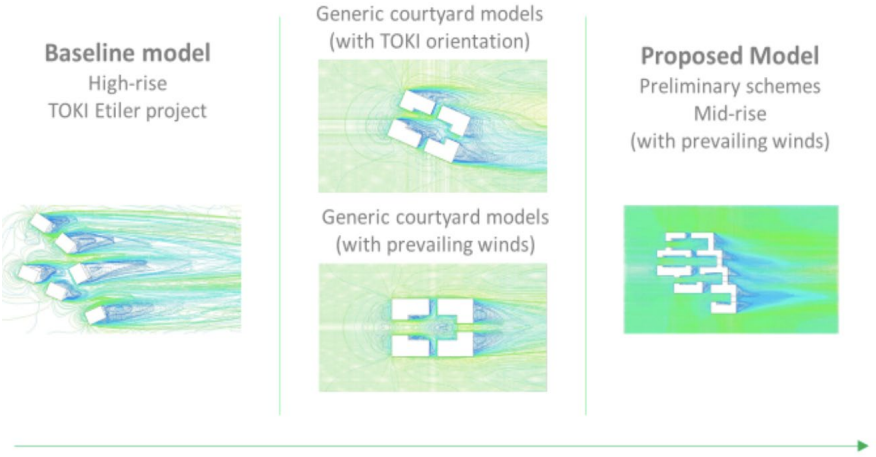


Figure 4. External analysis steps in IES-VE. Source: (Author 2020)

2.2. Post occupancy evaluation

The main goal of this step is to understand objective and subjective factors which influence the TOKI Etiler residents' satisfaction. A sample of 143 residents representing their household (50 % households of the project) responded to a questionnaire. This was a random sample that the probability of a subject being selected depended on those who were at home during the surveying time and were interested to be surveyed. Majority of respondents expressed that without open spaces and major climatic control, families try to adapt their lives into the high-rise. The complaints about life in towers specifically about units, surroundings lack functionality and thermal control, generate community disintegration particularly senior residents. In this project, a minority of families with more economic resources invests in space conditioning. However, these express that it is used only for overheated periods when other neighbors rely on open windows to deal with the harsh summer. Overall, windows are opened to enhance cross winds through the units, this is the most used alternative. Also, responses to questions on window indicate the windows in the unit that are frequently opened during the daytime. Balcony doors are the type that remains open for a larger period of time, since these have the larger opening area. Contrary to its common use for ventilation, some of these doors' balconies are modified by residents, limiting airflow from outdoors due to reduced opening area. Related to thermal sensation, residents manifest in a high proportion a 'warm' sensation in winter (with a central heating system). However, during the summer month more that 60 percent of people express a thermal sensation "above neutrality" already with a "light" clothing value. In addition, only 25 percent of residents express an acceptable satisfaction with their indoor thermal conditions. However, a dissatisfaction of 80 percent about their outdoor areas shows the lack of climate control of this project (Fig. 5). Moreover, in SPSS software, the interdependence between air flow

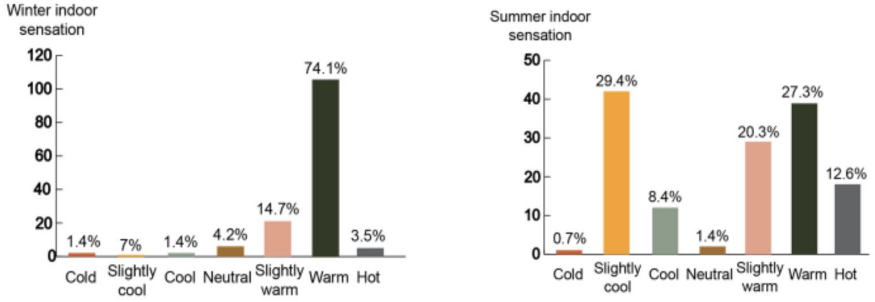


Figure 5. Thermal sensation of residents in winter and summer. Source: (Author 2020)

performance and thermal sensation is investigated. A positive correlation shows that when air flow increases in units, there is also an increment of 0.357 in the thermal satisfaction. From coefficient table, 'adjusted R square' shows that 12 percent of the variance of the thermal sensation is predictable from air performance.

2.3. Generative design process

Previous methodological steps made evident the potential of a residential typology (building mass) that can take advantage of its form to enhance passive cooling. In this sense, a scenario called "Spatial Block" was proposed. While energy and external CFD analysis of TOKI project provided information of how to assess the baseline model, generic models with courtyards shaped the concept of 'porosity'. The effect of voids for decreasing cooling loads in multi-story buildings was mentioned by Muhsin et al. (2017). This concept is tested through not only courtyards also terraces, porches and balconies as transitional spaces. Furthermore, the air flow potential the porous structure is explored through generative design techniques. For this step, the Grasshopper plug-in for Rhinoceros that allows processing the following algorithmic and geometrical operations was used (Fig. 6). First, by using five courtyards whose width to height ratios were determined through previous steps, a building mass was generated. This model was comprised of 5mx5m cells – 25 m² cell was

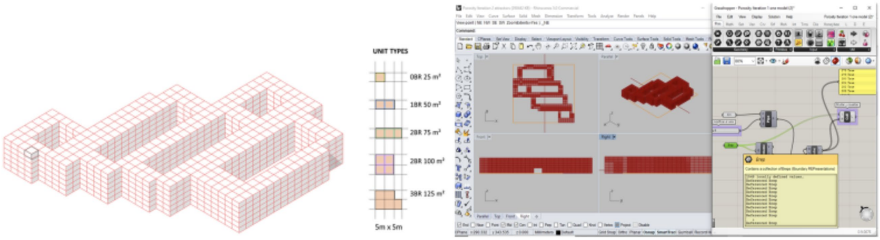


Figure 6. Generative design process. Source: (Author 2020)

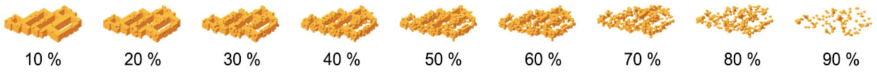


Figure 7. Mass porosity ratio from 10% to 90%. Source: (Author 2020)

defined as an optimum area per person. The combination of cells represents apartment units. Under the influence of prevailing winds, cells were subtracted to generate a 'porous' volume that allows cross ventilation. At a building scale, arranging void spaces as vents was conducted through data validation. With a random selection, 'cells were omitted from the geometry. After the development of a culling list, three components that take Boolean values (true/false) generate a list of 'selected' cells. These are subtracted cells from the massing. A ratio of porosity (10% to 90%) are controlled through 'slider components' that determine the percentage of reduction (Fig. 7). Through this step, 'diverting effect' was clearly seen between courtyards at ground level. In a subsequent step, prevailing winds were formulated as a 'generative vector' that based on its magnitude, direction and sense perforate the 'building volume'. So, cells intersected by this vector were omitted from the massing by determining the distance from it which are defined as 'area of influence'. These processes are oriented to displace, reorient, and re-scale iterations that can be analyzed through CFD simulations to reach a fitness proposal (Fig. 8). After outdoor CFD in IES-VE analysis and urban density study in Grasshopper, a model with 40 per-cent porosity was selected. Stronger airflow moving through the courtyards and apartments was observed that in more porous models. These void spaces of the building volume/ mass provide similar velocities across each one of the floors and units around a courtyard and enhance the interconnection of wind with their boundary. Also, this causes the increment of air exchanges in the units. Under this choice, the speed levels and outdoor temperatures in ground and first levels get similar to the values obtained from level 2 to level 4. Without less mass on top levels, openings influence a full flushing courtyards area that is dependent of having width to height rations larger than 2.4.

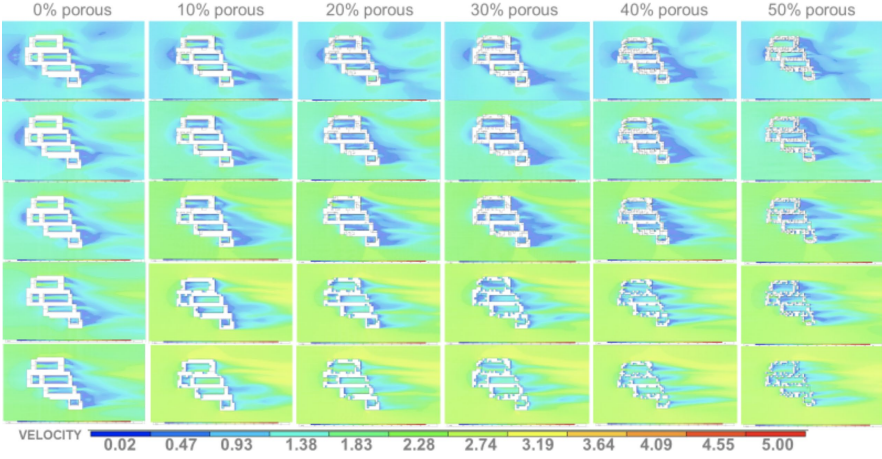


Figure 8. Porosity on massing via CFD analysis. Source: (Author 2020)

3. FINDINGS

Air flow and heat transfer processes occurring withing and around buildings were observed through CFD analysis. Specified boundary conditions (local climate conditions, internal energy sources such as people), surface temperatures of external walls were added for model accuracy.
Comparisons between baseline and proposed model through indoor temperatures, predicted percentage of dissatisfied and air changes showed that proposed courtyard building model reached the higher ventilation performance. Proposed model favors predominant westerly winds through mainly funnel and diverting effects when compared with the TOKI building. Indoor summer peak temperatures are lowered through building form, also operative temperatures are lowered corresponding to higher percentages of satisfaction. In terms of ventilation rates, 33% of improvement on ACH is obtained compared to the baseline model (Table 1).

Date	T (°C)		ACH		PPD (%)	
	B (Level 3)	P (Level 3)	B (Level 3)	P (Level 3)	B (Level 3)	P (Level 3)
May 17	22.8	20.8	1.8	2.46	6.7	6.3
Jun 14	22.3	21.2	4.6	9.6	10.5	9.3
Sep 21	23.1	21.7	2	3.96	9.3	7.7

Table 1. KPI comparisons on three selected days

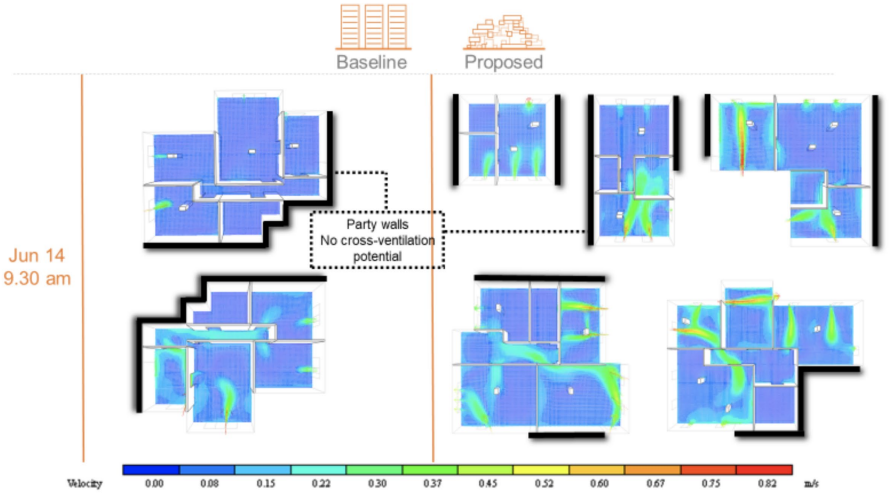


Figure 9. Comparison between baseline and proposed model on June 14th. Source: (Author 2020)

After external analysis, internal CFD simulations allowed to see airflow intensity and behavior in units. The TOKI project and the proposed model were compared on three selected days: May 17, June 14, and September 21. These days have the largest natural ventilation potential along summer. Among these months, June is the month when the velocity is the highest (Fig. 9). It affects cross ventilation inside units. Although airflow between rooms is observable in the TOKI southeast unit, all proposed units show higher performance. Overall, increased façade surfaces in the proposed projects make cross ventilation more effective in units. On the other hand, party walls in the TOKI projects prevent the cross-ventilation potential and limits rooms for only single-sided ventilation.This formula does not have any direct physical meaning but weighs the criteria following the

4. RESULTS

Under the analyzed case study, the conclusion of this paper is that the proposed typology is better by achieving various improvements and thermal comfort due to the application of cross ventilation. After outdoor and indoor analysis in different iterations, the 40 percent porous structure was selected. It provided a balance between urban density and air flow performance. Moreover, it has the potential to bring public housing closer to human needs and to the environment. Using renewable sources such as prevailing winds with the configuration of the new typology helped to alleviate thermal related problems in consonance with building forms derived from vernacular architecture in this region. Besides KPI's on natural ventilation, also urban density aspects are compared. Between projects, there is a difference of 11.2 square meter area per person. In TOKI model 13.8 square meter domestic pace per person increased to 25 square meters in the proposed case. Although number of people per hectare is slightly decreased in proposed units, multifunctional communal spaces have a potential of positive impact on this community.

CONCLUSION

This paper shows an improvement to the problematic presented in a public housing in Turkey. Lessons from vernacular architecture allow regulating harsh conditions of the climate. It proves the reformulation of well-known techniques can be still used for contemporary buildings. The usage of rule sets allowed to generate site-specific outcomes withing the context limitation, allowing the proposed model to take full advantage of and contribute to the environmental and connectivity characteristics of the surroundings. This generative approach resulted in a building mass calibrated towards environmental and social sustainability. The model based on courtyards shows a significant role in climate control and resident satisfaction. This model that is compelling enough with social aspects that were mentioned previously does not cause a stigma about social housing in the society. These are connection to the street, well-defined green areas, community spaces and different programs that will provide a sustainable solution for poorer communities.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This document was originally adopted from the author's doctoral dissertation.

REFERENCES

Choguill, C. L. 2008. "The search for policies to support sustainable housing." *Habitat International* 31.

Bay, E. 2018. "Enhancing Natural Ventilation through Massing: New Possibilities for Turkish Mass Housing", *Prometheus*, 3: 120-127.

Bay, E. 2019. "Life in a High-rise: Surveying Opinions and Expectations on Social Housing in Turkey", *ARCC 2019 International Conference*, 401-410.

Choguill, C. L. 2007. "The Search for Policies to Support Sustainable Housing." *Habitat International,* 31, 143-149.

Gur, M., Dostoglu, N. 2011. "Affordable Housing in Turkey: User Satisfaction in Toki Houses." *Open House International*, 49-61.

Karaca, M.2008. "Energy Efficiency of Housing Development: A Survey over Housing Development Projects of Housing Development Administration of Turkey". Gazi University, M.Sc. Thesis, 92-143.

Keles, R. 2006. *Kentlesme Politikasi.* Imge Kitabevi, Ankara.

Majale, M. 2008. "Employment creation through participatory urban planning and slum upgrading: the case of Kitale, Kenya". *Habitat International,* 32, 270–282.

Muhsin, F., Tusoff, W. F. M., Mohammed, M. F., Sapian, A. R. 2017. "CFD modeling of natural ventilation in a void connected to the living units of multi-story housing for thermal comfort." *Energy and Buildings*, 1-16.

Savran, S. 2014. "Evaluation of TOKI Low Income Housing Areas within the Perspective of "Adequate Housing": The Case of Ankara Kusunlar." Gazi University, M.Sc. Thesis, 123-129.

Takeuchi, A., Cropper, M., & Bento, A. 2008. "Measuring the welfare effects of slum improvement programs: the case of Mumbai." *Journal of Urban Economics*, 64(2008), 65–84.

Toplu Konut Idaresi Baskanligi https://www.toki.gov.tr/

Turkish State Meteorological Service https://www.mgm.gov.tr/files/en-us/climateofturkey.pdf

Turan, I. 2010. "The Evaluation of the Social Housing Schemes of the Mass Housing Authority of the Prime Ministery of Turkish Repubic in the Framework of Sustainable Architecture: Bezirganbahce Example", Istanbul Technical University, M.Sc. Thesis, 154-156.

Uzun, B., Cete, M., Palancioglu, H.P. 201). "Legalizing and Upgrading Illegal Settlements in Turkey." *Habitat International*, 204-209.

PAPER #5.13

TUNING THE MASSES: CLIMATE SPECIFIC ENERGY OPTIMIZATION GUIDELINES

Alexander Mitchell[a], Tom Collins[a]
[a]Ball State University, Muncie, IN

ABSTRACT

In the United States, residential structures consume 21.5 quadrillion Btus annually--approximately 20% of the country's energy consumption-- and an equivalent percentage of carbon emissions. Most of these houses are not designed to be high performance buildings, and are built quickly to code minimums, where simple energy modeling programs, Res-Check for example, validate compliance. The goal of this project is to create an easy to use, accessible, and open-source framework to improve building performance specifications in the schematic design phase, with the goal of complying with a high-performance building standard.
Programs such as Department of Energy's (DOE) Zero Energy Ready Homes (ZERH), and LEED for Homes aim to offer simple, prescriptive checklist design methodologies, while organizations like Living Building Institute and PHIUS offer performance-based programs that can require the expertise to achieve their standard, and in PHIUS' case require a specific, costly compliance software. There needs to be an option that helps bridge the gap, in terms of being open source and more accessible to non-specialists.
By using direct search optimization methods, this study developed a tool to determine residential energy benchmarks to enable designs to meet high performance standards such as PHIUS. these are determined through thousands of iterations on ten different house geometry typologies in the nineteen distinct climate zones in the United States. These newfound limits on performance ranges get a new, climate specific script that will tune a mass, and provide the designer with simple, project geometry and climate-distinct building specification to incorporate into the building's design.

KEYWORDS

Optimization; energy modeling; climate responsive design; parametric modeling.

INTRODUCTION

Building performance standards and codes are dominated by points systems that may or may not actually produce higher performance buildings. A limited number of these standards are performance based, where the standard is based on an energy consumption target, such as PHIUS, PHI, or LEED. These are relatively complicated standards to meet and require energy modeling to meet these standards. Designers of high-performance houses are increasingly moving away from prescriptive design standards and toward system that rely on modeling to prove performance that meets energy use targets. These methods require special software and skills, as such, are beyond the reach of non-specialists interested in understanding whether a building form can meet high-performance standards
Performance based tools allow for building energy optimization. These types of programs and methodologies allow for the design team to evaluate many options in terms of enclosure, glazing, mechanical system, lighting and domestic water heating, and compare them to a series of output metrics such as carbon emission production, cost of higher end insulation and systems,

and energy consumption- in both energy (i.e. Btus) and monetary value. One way that energy performance modeling tools differ from prescriptive energy efficiency methods is that they are based on a specific building geometry (shape) modeled in specific climates or locations.

Optimizing a building's performance specifications through an energy model increases the quantity and quality of possibilities for achieving high performance outcomes. The performance-based tools, especially those running iterative parametric optimizations, create multiple options that can meet the design criteria. But this tool is frequently reserved for qualified professionals, and it is not accessible to most people working on home building projects. Approximately two percent of American houses are designed by architects (Conroy 2007), compared to those designed solely to be the contractor or built from a set of available plans. Herein lies the goal of this project, to make a simple, climate-specific optimization tool that almost anyone can run on a pre-designed 3D mass. This allows for architectural flexibility, whether the project is a new and fanciful architectural design, or a simple spec home from a pattern book or set of hardware store plans. These geometries, or house forms, can be input into the script and get sets of building performance specifications as feedback on the design. Many contractors have the form in mind already, but just lack the tool set to determine the building performance specifications to design to high performance building standards.

There are some assumptions built into the design tool, based on practices are conventional and have worked well in the past. When challenging and building norms, it is important to provide references for the revised idea. The tool will be provided with a supplemental user's manual, which includes instructions for using this optimization framework, some collected anecdotes about best high performance home design practices, and some details that may be handy when it comes to applying the newly created building performance specification to the final built house.

Climate specific standards are critical in terms of high-performance home design, because an understanding of how the building interfaces with the climate that has the largest impact on the building's overall energy performance. The more tuned a building is in form, materiality, and passive strategies, the less energy it will consume, especially for space conditioning (Olgyay 2015). In this paper we will describe the development and pilot testing of a new tool for climate specific housing design guidance. The pilot study tested one specific climate zone as a precursor to the final tool, which will include all climate zones in North America.

1. METHODS

Climate specific building envelope specs started in the 1970s in the United States and have been greatly developed by organizations like PHIUS, and that PHIUS+ now represents the gold standard. These strategies are all based around energy conservation as the first step, and meeting the remaining loads with smaller, highly efficient mechanical systems. Therefore a standard based around passive design principles first will likely need a few different methods of rating the buildings, and in the case of the PHIUS+ criteria, there are three key pillars: heating and cooling demand limits, a source energy limit for all building energy consumption, and a prescriptive airtightness requirement. This creates a standard that requires some complicated modeling in order to comply with the goals and may be less accessible to all homebuilders. A defining feature of the PHIUS criteria is that it is climate specific. Every project complies with the PHIUS+

criteria is built to these climate specific criteria (Klingenberg, 2015).
The US Department of Energy's Building America Program, and the resulting Zero Energy Ready Homes (ZERH) standards provide much of the prescriptive minimums for the PHIUS+ guidelines. Like the more rigorous PHIUS+ guidelines, the ZERH is focused on energy conservation methods first, by setting an airtightness minimum, and climate zone specific minimums of the thermal performance of the building enclosure. As this program is purely prescriptive, there is no complicated modeling compliance. This is likely due to a goal to saturate the market with the standards, while PHIUS standards prove to be more niche.

2. HYPOTHESIS

This pilot study poses three hypotheses. First, greater amounts of thermal insulation are required for climates with more heating degree days. Second, compact geometries with less surface area use less energy than complex geometries with more surface area. Third, houses with more southern glazing perform better than houses with more southern glazing in Chicago's cold, humid climate.

3. ANALYSIS

To test and determine the appropriate ranges of input specifications for the Chicago, USA pilot study climate zone, 11,520 modeling iterations were performed to create a broad spread of data to analyze and parse through. Chicago was selected due to its large number of households, potentially yielding a large impact, and the climate is one of familiarity to the authors. The modeling methodology described below has been performed for this climate zone only and will be continued for six additional climate zones with few revisions for the furthering of this study. The refined data will be built into the resulting design product, a climate specific optimization script for any single-family residential structure in that climate zone.

4. METHODS

The parametric modeling for this study was performed in multiple stages in order to ensure the lack of errors that potentially occur from the design of the study or the myriad of software utilized and to allow for parallel computing on multiple machines. Based on the study of existing, built high performance homes, it can be understood that an energy conservation first approach, with efficient mechanical systems to meet the reduced loads is a clear and direct path to higher performance homes. This conservation first method relies on some of the understood best building science practices, with simulation of specific elements to create a refined design. For this study, the enclosure was the focus of this load reduction first study, and the wall insulation value, roof insulation value, window thermal resistance, and window to wall ratio of the glazing on each of the four orientations creates seven variables, with the house geometry as the eighth.
The building massing models were drawn using the Rhinoceros 3D modeling program, and then using Ladybug, Honeybee, and Colibri, plugins for the Grasshopper parametric design interface for Rhinoceros, the variables were iterated and IDF files, the input document for the EnergyPlus simulation engine were written. Originally, the simulations were to be performed directly using the Honeybee plugin to communicate with EnergyPlus, however this proved to be error prone and time consuming, so EnergyPlus was used in its native format for the remainder of the study. It is important to note that all PHIUS+ compliance is

done solely through the WUFI energy simulation engine, so EnergyPlus would not be permitted for compliance. However, the PHIUS+ targets were determined using BEopt, a platform that uses EnergyPlus as the simulation engine.

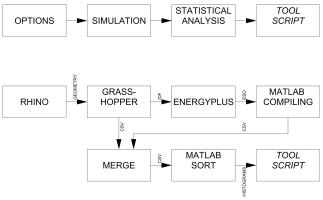


Figure 1. Flow chart detailing the overall process for the study. The top flow chart represents the overall flow of the study, while the bottom details the software used and interactions between programs.

4.1. Geometry and Grasshopper script

Five different home geometries were selected to create a variety of inputs for the study (see Fig. 2). The aim of this variable is to ensure the results are not a climate-specific response to only one house shape. The five house types selected are based on common American housing forms and are as follows: T-1 two story Georgian, T-2 two story foursquare, T-3 ranch, T-4 craftsman bungalow, T-5 L-shaped gable. See Figure 1 below. These were modified to all be approximately 204 m2 (2200 sqft) to meet the benchmark size from the US Department of Energy's Zero Energy Ready Homes (ZERH) program for a three-bedroom home (DOE 2019).

4.2. Variables Iterated

Four of the five home types are modeled with three thermal zones with the first floor, second floor, and unconditioned attic each separated out for ideal air load analysis, as most two-story single-family homes are split into zones by floor. The ideal air load analysis is to allow for the selection of an efficient mechanical system later in the design process and focus on tuning the passive space conditioning loads to start. The T-3 ranch house was split in half to create two thermal zones (a public and private wing of the house) as this style is typically a one-story house layout. The occupiable zones then had parametrically determined window to wall ratios applied on all four orientations in 0.10 (10%) increments. East and west facades were eligible for 0.10 and 0.20 options, the north 0.10, 0.20, and 0.30, and the south could have 0.10, 0.20, 0.30, and 0.40 as the window to wall ratio. All windows matched the same performance specification, and the southern windows had shading overhangs determined automatically through a script based on the tuning point of the solstices, as to wholly shade a southern

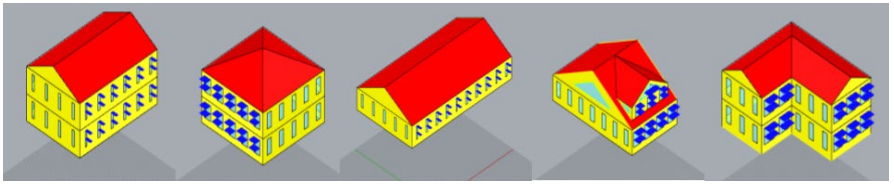


Figure 2. House types, from left to right: 1. Georgian, 2. American Foursquare, 3. Ranch, 4. Bungalow, 5. L-Shaped Gable. These were selected for their diversity of shape and orientation and are commonly found across the United States (Howe 2002).

facing window at noon on the solstice. This practice is commonly recognized as a good starting place for shading overhang design (Kwok 2018).

Windows for the Chicago pilot study all had a Solar Heat Gain Coefficient (SHGC) of 0.50 and a Visible Transmittance (VT) of 0.70, from the PHIUS Climate-by-Climate Recommendations for Window Performance (PHIUS 2019). The houses were modeled with three different window U-Factors: 0.568 W/m2 K (0.10 Btu/hr ft2 °F), 1.703 W/m2 K (0.30 Btu/hr ft2 °F), and 2.839 W/m2 K (0.50 Btu/hr ft2 °F) for the entire window assembly, including the frame. The houses were modeled different opaque wall U-factors: 0.284 W/m2 K (0.05 Btu/hr ft2 °F), 0.189 W/m2 K (0.033 Btu/hr ft2 °F), 0.114 W/m2 K (0.02 Btu/hr ft2 °F), and 0.071 W/m2 K (0.013 Btu/hr ft2 °F). These assemblies were modeled with the insulation as a no mass material sandwiched between a 13 mm (0.5 in) layer of gypsum board on the interior and 25 mm (1 in) of stucco on the exterior to add a slight amount of thermal mass to the wall, to more accurately resemble typical building assemblies. The houses were modeled with different roof assembly U-factors: 0.071 W/m2 K (0.033 Btu/hr ft2 °F), 0.284 W/m2 K (0.05 Btu/hr ft2 °F), 0.071 W/m2 K (0.013 Btu/hr ft2 °F), and 0.057 W/m2 K (0.01 Btu/hr ft2 °F). Each of these assemblies was also equipped with the 13 mm (0.5 in) gypsum board on the interior for some thermal mass. These houses were modeled with cold roofs, where the insulation is at the ceiling of the highest occupiable space in the building. The airtightness of the of the house has been kept constant at 0.0002 m3/s per m2 (0.039 cfm/ft2), and the slab on grade modeled as a 100 mm (4 in) concrete slab with insulation underneath, for a total assembly U-Factor of 0.278 W/m2 K (0.05 Btu/hr ft2 °F), representing a reasonable building construction and airtightness compliant with the PHIUS+ 2018 requirements.

4.3. Energy Simulation and Data Analysis

With the input variables of the simulation defined above, the output metrics considered are ideal air loads for annual heating and cooling energy, normalized per building area, or *EUI*, and the total insulation R-Value in the house normalized per the respective enclosure area. This total insulation factor is labeled *R- Points* and is used as a cost and embodied carbon analog. In a more advanced study, cost and embodied carbon of the building enclosure can be computed, but as this is an early analysis tool, these specific enclosure assemblies have not necessarily been decided yet.

The IDF files written by the Grasshopper script were then computed on multiple machines to batch run in EnergyPlus, allowing for four simulations to run simultaneously on one single machine, and save time compared to the previous method in data storage. To compile the 11,520 iterations' output files, a MATLAB, a numerical programming environment, script was written. Then, the resulting data was compiled into a larger spreadsheet including the input variables.

4.4. Data Sorting

A second MATLAB script sorts through this data and prompts the user for the upper heating and cooling limits, and the total number of *R-Points* permitted. The space conditioning limits are determined by the PHIUS space conditioning criteria, and the *R-Point* limit is lowered to find the range of the 10% of compliant options. This script filters the data that is beyond the set range allowances and creates a new table with the parsed data including the total number of the iterations after the limits are applied. These represent the high-performance options in that climate zone. The MATLAB function

fitensemble was used to apply an ensemble of learning regressions to the data that provides the user with a table that describes the importance of each input variable to the user. Histograms of the input parameters are also plotted, to detail the frequency of occurrence of the input variable. This is the determining factor of what ranges the input variables will be used in the *tool script*.

5. RESULTS

Although writing EnergyPlus IDF files, running the simulations, and aggregating the data is quite time consuming, analyzing the results was relatively quick by comparison. The resulting data provided the modified input ranges for guidance as to where to put the limits on their energy optimization script, or the *tool script*.

5.1. Setting Limits

Limits on energy consumption can come from many sources, but for this pilot study, the annual heating demand and annual cooling demand from the PHIUS Space Conditioning Criteria Calculator has been used (PHIUS 2018). For the 204 m2 (2,200 ft2) homes used in this pilot study with an expected occupant load of four occupants, the calculator provides the performance specification for compliance with PHIUS+ 2018 standard. For the Chicago climate shown, the annual heating demand limit and annual cooling demand limit are 31.6 kWh/m2yr (10 kBtu/ft2yr) and 34.7 kWh/m2yr (11 kBtu/ft2yr) respectively. These are entered when prompted by the data sorting MATLAB script along with a R-8.8 m2K/W (R-50 ft2 °F h/Btu) normalized *R-Point* limit. The result is a table that has 1,057 iterations remaining, approximately 10% of the total iterations. The aim here is to determine buildings that are compliant, yet do not require excessive insulation, typically resulting in higher costs and higher embodied carbon.

5.2. Variable ranges

The remaining 1,057 iterations have been analyzed for variable importance, with the window thermal resistance, wall insulation value, and house geometry (in that order) showing dominance in effect on the space conditioning energy demand. These ranges are then used to influence a second, climate specific script to optimize homes for that climate zone. These input ranges represent the best practices in the climate zone, specifically the representative city, and confirm existing knowledge and other studies examining passive building strategies approaching the point of diminishing returns. These ranges are plotted on histograms shown in Fig. 4,5,6,7.

Based on this pilot study and across the input variables given, buildings meeting the early design PHIUS threshold have 0.189 W/m2 K (0.033 Btu/hr ft2 °F) to 0.114 W/m2 K (0.02 Btu/hr ft2 °F) walls, 0.071 W/m2 K (0.033 Btu/hr ft2 °F) to 0.071 W/m2 K (0.013 Btu/hr ft2 °F) roofs, well insulated windows and a minimal amount of glazing. While this study aims to be geometry agnostic, it is important to note the histogram for the house type. There are no house type 3's in the results, and a strong showing of house type 4's, with house type 3 as the ranch house, and house type 4 as the bungalow. This is likely a factor of the compactness of the bungalow relative to the other designs, and the ranch having the highest surface to volume ratio in this housing geometry selection, which is a strong driver of energy consumption, especially in heating dominated climates like Chicago. This means that none of the ranch house geometries met the limits in the statistical analysis.

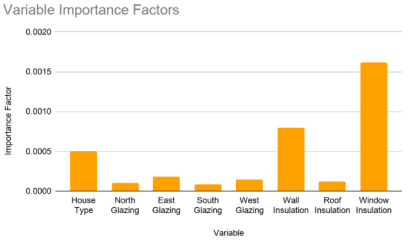


Figure 3. Chart depicting the relative importance of the different input variables for Chicago, IL. The primary factors on space conditioning for this climate are window insulation, followed by wall insulation and then house type, or building geometry.

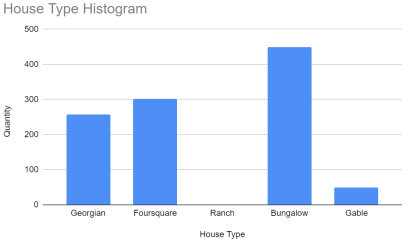


Figure 4. House type histograms. The resulting count of house geometries present after limiting the results. Note that there are no ranch houses that met the limits set. The strong presence of bungalow geometry confirms the advantage of a compact enclosure area.

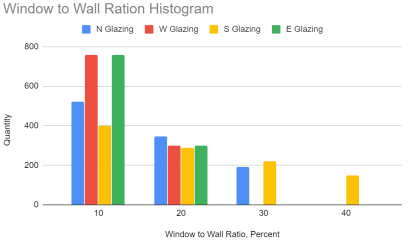


Figure 5. Window to wall ratio histograms. Note the strong trend towards lower glazing areas on all facades.

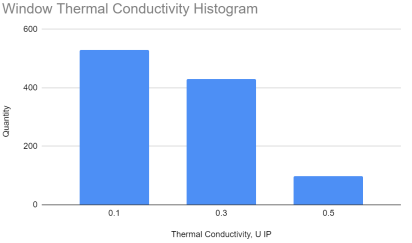


Figure 6. Window U-factor histograms. The lower the U-factor, the greater the prevalence. This confirms the PHIUS specifications about window U-factors. It also ties in with the high importance of window insulation relative to other aspects of the building.

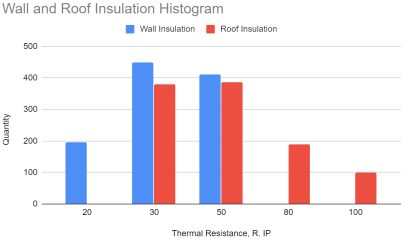


Figure 7. Histograms corresponding to the wall and roof insulation types. There is the hypothesized bell curve forming around R-30 walls and R-50 roofs.

5.3. Regression Analysis

A fitness ensemble of regressions was applied to the data as well and determined that the most important variable in the design is the window insulation, followed by the wall insulation, followed by the overall building geometry, see Fig. 3. The window ranges for this pilot study are likely to be a little high compared to the ranges of windows installed on most residential structures as the ZERH guidelines recommend that the window to wall ratio does not exceed 15% (DOE 2019).

5.4. Resulting Script

The result of this direct search optimization is a climate specific script to tune residential structures for a specified climate zone. In the case of this pilot study, that climate zone is ASHRAE 5A, Chicago, IL. Based on the resulting histograms, Fig. 4-7, the input variables were pared down for this climate. The house geometry variable is eliminated, as this script takes in user defined geometry. East and west glazing are limited to 10%, being a built-in factor in the script. North and south glazing are left with the options of 10% and 20%, so there are two options in each of those spots. The wall insulation is varied in two options, 0.189 W/m2 K (0.033 Btu/hr ft2°F) and 0.114 W/m2 K (0.02 Btu/hr ft2 °F), and the roof three options, 0.071 W/m2 K (0.033 Btu/hr ft2 °F), 0.284 W/m2 K (0.05 Btu/hr ft2 °F), and 0.071 W/m2 K (0.013 Btu/hr ft2 °F). Windows were also limited to two options, 0.568 W/m2 K (0.10 Btu/hr ft2 °F) and 1.703 W/m2 K (0.30 Btu/hr ft2 °F), with the constant SHGC of 0.50 and a VT of 0.70. Three roof options, two wall options, four glazing options, and two window options results in 48 variations for the input house to be varied through, and based on an approximately 45 sec runtime per variation, the user can have 48 options, the majority of which are likely compliant with the PHIUS+ 2018 criteria in 36 mins.

CONCLUSION

Even though this is only a pilot study, the resulting script or *tool script* is developed. The pilot study will inform the development and refinement of the finalized script that includes a wider range of climate zones. At this point, the ability for the user to input any geometry for a residence of their own design, and get quick options that would comply with the rigorous PHIUS+ 2018 standard should prove valuable, especially in the early design phases. The results provide options that would comply with standards such as PHIUS+ 2018, but also the total number of results that comply with the standard is a good indicator as to how well the geometry alone performs. Out of the 48 iterations in the current *tool script,* a well-designed building geometry would have a majority, say 36 (75%) of the iterations return with a compliant result. A less efficient shape, maybe with a low compactness ratio would likely have less compliant results, or perhaps none. When further developing the *tool script*, it would be wise to have this information including the surface to volume ratio displayed as feedback on the design. The data from this pilot indicates that the script developed can provide useful information to users about the potential of their design idea (as represented by a massing strategy) to meet high-performance standards.

Future Work

Further studies are to be done in six more climate zones, to build a library of these tools to aid in the design to PHIUS+ 2018 criteria around the United States. However, before expanding out, a few things should be looked at further within this study. Primarily, it would be wise to have more finely graduated steps in the variables, for better accuracy. For example, maintaining the current spread of variation in wall assemblies, but having seven options instead of the mere four done in this pilot study. The ranges of window to wall ratio should be adjusted as well, moving the south from 10% to 40%, to a range of 5% to 25%, in 5% increments. These window to wall ratios would better align with the common residential construction done currently and follow the ZERH guidelines. It would also be worthwhile to test this method using energy simulations other than EnergyPlus, to see if that influences the results, as other engines like TRNSYS and WUFI handle some

building physics aspects differently. This study focuses on North American climate zones, but can be expanded internationally, as many of the climate zones in the world are represented by and analog in North America. A graphic, user-friendly interface would be developed to ensure accessibility for all users.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Walter Grondzik, Dan Overbey, Bob Koester and Tarek Mahfouz of Ball State University for their unlimited patience and guidance. And to Lisa White, James Ortega, and Katrin Klingenberg at PHIUS, for their support and encouragement.

REFERENCES

Conroy, S. 2007. *the 98 percent solution*. Washington, DC: Hanley Wood Media.

DOE. 2019. *DOE Zero Energy Ready Home National Program Requirements (Rev. 07)*. United States: United States Department of Energy.

Howe, J. 2002. American House: Domestic Architecture in the USA. London, UK: Badsford.

Kwok, A., Grondzik, W. 2018. *The Green Studio Handbook: Environmental Strategies for Schematic Design*. New York, NY: Routledge, Taylor & Francis Group.

Olgyay, V., Olgyay, C., Olgyay, N. 2015. *Design with Climate: Bioclimatic Approach to Architectural Regionalism*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

PHIUS. 2018. *PHUIS+ 2018 Space Conditioning Criteria Calculator v2*. Chicago, IL: Passive House Institute US.

PHIUS. 2019. *PHIUS+ 2018 Passive Building Standard Certification Guidebook: Version 2.0*. Chicago, IL: Passive House Institute US.

USGBC. 2013. *LEED Reference Guide for Homes Design and Construction*. United States: USGBC.

Wright, G., Klingenberg, K. 2015. *Climate-Specific Passive Building Standards*. United States: National Renewable Energy Lab.

PAPER #5.14

THERMAL PERFORMANCE OF A NOVEL MASONRY BLOCK MADE FROM RECYCLED GYPSUM DRYWALL WASTE.

David Drake[a], Taiji Miyasaka[a]
[a]Washington State University, Pullman, WA USA

ABSTRACT

Developing new product applications for waste recycled from building construction and demolition (C&D) provides environmental and economic benefits. However, challenges remain for recycling certain low-value C&D materials, such as gypsum drywall waste, which is banned from landfilling in some areas due to hydrogen sulfide emissions during decay. The gypsum and paper components in drywall have low thermal conductivity relative to concrete and brick, suggesting a novel insulative masonry block system made from recycled gypsum drywall waste could have higher thermal performance than conventional concrete masonry units (CMU). The authors have developed such a system, referred to as Drywall Waste Block (DWB), and have previously published investigations of DWB engineering properties including compressive strength, water absorption, bulk density, and thermal conductivity. This paper describes investigation of resistance to heat flow of a reinforced DWB wall assembly, using a calibrated hot box apparatus as specified in ASTM C1363-11. The hot box apparatus was designed and fabricated as a cost-effective alternative to commercially testing services, affording rapid iteration during the research and development phase of novel building products made from unconventional materials. Some aspects of the apparatus design, fabrication, and characterization are discussed. Thermal performance of the DWB wall relative to a comparable CMU wall is discussed, as are areas for further research.

KEYWORDS

Construction & demolition waste; drywall recycling; drywall waste blocks; new technologies & materials; insulative masonry systems.

INTRODUCTION

Industry studies show waste from building construction and demolition (C&D) is a growing problem (US EPA 2016) and that recycling C&D waste provides many environmental and economic benefits (CDRA 2017). Challenges remain for recycling some C&D waste materials, including gypsum drywall waste, which has limited uses and low value as a recycled commodity (CDRA 2017) (King Co. 2017). Lack of demand for recycled drywall waste is a barrier to increased recycling (Lederman 2015). Drywall waste recyclers have unused capacity, and would like new markets for recycled drywall products (CDRA 2017) (King Co. 2017). To divert increased amounts of waste from landfills, new applications for recycled drywall waste need to be developed and brought to market.

The authors have developed proprietary mixtures and methods for producing a masonry block system that utilizes recycled gypsum drywall waste. Previous investigations have shown these Drywall Waste Blocks (DWB) approach ASTM compressive strength and water absorption standards for conventional concrete masonry units (CMU), with lower density and lower thermal conductivity than CMU.

However, the construction industry is typically slow to adopt new building products in the absence of demonstrated cost and performance advantages (Sorrell-Neal 2018). Processing drywall waste for DWB production is simpler than other drywall recycling methods, and DWB can be manufactured using standard CMU machinery and curing methods. Therefore, cost-per-unit is expected to be competitive with CMU. Establishing superior performance vs. CMU in the area of thermal performance may further adoption of DWB, increase recycling of gypsum drywall waste, and divert more drywall waste from landfills.

Gypsum drywall panels consist of a gypsum core (calcium sulfate dihydrate: $CaSO4•2H2O$) sandwiched between paper facing and backing layers, and are widely used as an interior finish material in both residential and commercial construction (Crangle 2018). Drywall is inexpensive, relatively easy to install, and inherently fire resistant. However, installation methods produce significant waste during construction, typically 10-12% of installed material (Crangle 2017).

Where permitted, drywall waste is usually disposed of in municipal landfills. In 2016, the most recent year for which figures are available, some 8.8 million tonnes of drywall waste were landfilled in the United States alone, approximately 9.1% of the landfilled waste from building C&D (CDRA 2017). Under anaerobic conditions common in landfills, decaying drywall waste emits hydrogen sulfide gas ($H2S$). At low levels, $H2S$ is detectable as an offensive 'rotten-egg' odour, and has health impacts at higher concentrations. Landfilling drywall waste from construction is now banned in some locations (Lederman 2015), (King Co. 2017).

Methods for incorporating drywall waste in building materials have been reported in literature, including use of recycled gypsum drywall waste as a supplemental cementitious binder in concrete (Naik 2010), and use of gypsum drywall waste as a binder in controlled low strength materials (Raghavendra 2015). Cited benefits of incorporating drywall waste in new building materials include reducing $H2S$ emissions associated with landfilling, and substitution of waste-derived binders for Portland cement, reducing energy use and $CO2$ emissions.

Gypsum has inherently lower thermal conductivity than both Portland cement and conventional concrete aggregates (Asakura 2013). Investigation of insulating composites of gypsum and natural and artificial fibres have been reported (Belayachi 2016), (Mounir 2015). Previously published investigations of DWB engineering properties found thermal conductivity for a homogeneous sample of DWB material to be as low as 0.149 W/mK, well below the range for typical concrete and brick masonry (Drake 2019). Because masonry wall construction is typically heterogenous, thermal performance for a heterogenous wall assembly is often lower than measured performance of a homogenous specimens.

ASTM 1363-11 describes procedures for investigating resistance to heat transfer of wall assemblies by means of a hot box apparatus, including schematic designs and performance parameters for such an apparatus. Hot box testing by certified test facilities have lead- and turn-around times complicating rapid iteration of preliminary investigations, and can be prohibitively expensive (Seitz 2015). Nor is there a commercial supplier of lab-scale hot box apparatus. Facilitating further investigation and optimization of DWB wall assemblies required the design and fabrication of a cost-effective hotbox testing apparatus, meeting ASTM 1363-11 standards where practical.

There are few published reports of design and fabrication of an affordable, lab-scale hot box testing apparatus. Seitz and MacDougall report successful construction, commissioning and characterization of such an apparatus, and its initial use to test plastered straw-bale wall sections (Seitz 2015). Costs of $37,135 CAD are reported for

the completed apparatus, including $9,135 CAD for construction materials, sensors, and data acquisition. The reported design is not self-contained, relying on enclosure of the entire apparatus in an environmental chamber. Metering wall plus flanking losses between 94-96% of total heat input to the hot box are reported, likely due to the temperature differential between the metering chamber and the climatic chamber being identical to the differential between metering chamber and ambient temperature surrounding both chambers.

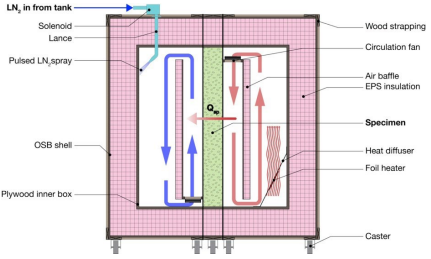


Figure 1. Schematic diagram of calibrated hot box as constructed, with heating, cooling, and air circulation systems, typical air flows in the chambers, and heat flow through the specimen, Qsp.

1. MATERIALS AND METHODS

1.1. Hot box apparatus design and fabrication

Figure 1 illustrates the calibrated hot box apparatus designed for investigation of DWB assemblies. The apparatus accommodates specimens approximately 1.5 m¬2, the minimum area required by the ASTM standard, and consists of two temperature-controlled chambers: a metering chamber ('hot' side), held at typical indoor temperature (i.e., 21° C); and a climatic chamber ('cold' side), controlled to simulate a range of outdoor temperatures. When separated by a test specimen, measurement of power required to maintain hot side temperature can be used to derive surface-to-surface thermal resistance, R, to heat transfer through the specimen, Qsp, provided the temperature of both chambers can be held in narrow bands around respective set points, and that heat transfer along other paths is understood and minimized. Determining metering chamber heat flow corrections is accomplished by characterizing the hot box apparatus with a specimen of known resistance.

To reduce error, heat lost through the metering chamber walls, Qmw, and flanking losses around the edges of the specimen, Qfl, is designed to be a small fraction of Qsp; the ASTM standard is ≤ 10%, with 1-2% preferred (ASTM 2018). This can be done by keeping the chamber wall area small, insulating the walls of one or both chambers to keep resistance to heat flow high, and minimizing or eliminating the temperature differential between metering chamber and ambient lab temperature. Noting the loss percentages reported by Seitz and MacDonald, it was determined a self-contained design would offer the best control of temperature differentials.

Chamber construction. Hot and cold side chamber inner walls are 19 mm plywood, painted with flat grey acrylic paint for emissivity > 0.8. Air circulation baffles in each chamber are 6 mm medium density fibreboard (MDF), insulated with one 51 mm layer of Type 1 expanded polystyrene foam (EPS). Chambers walls are insulated with four layers of 51 mm Type 1 EPS, bonded with polyurethane glue, seams offset and taped to minimize air leaks. Chamber apertures are gasketed with 16 mm closed cell foam. An outer wall of 11 mm oriented strand board (OSB) reinforced with 19 mm plywood strips protects EPS insulation and provides a mounting surface for hardware and controls. Test specimens are installed in an insulated frame constructed in the same fashion. During operation, the framed specimen is clamped tightly between the two chambers by means of adjustable-tension draw latches

attached around perimeters of the chamber apertures and the specimen frame.

Heating and cooling systems. Metering chamber heat source is a 205 W / 120 VAC foil resistance heater, attached to a galvanized steel heat diffuser located behind the air baffle. The climatic chamber is cooled by pulsing liquid nitrogen (LN2) from a low-pressure tank (~172 kPa) through a thermostatically-controlled solenoid valve. LN2 is used rather than mechanical refrigeration due to lower up-front costs. Both chambers are equipped with four 1.44W computer fans for air circulation.

Instrumentation. Electronic Innovations EI1022 temperature sensors (operating range -40°C—110°C; accuracy ±1° C) are installed in the air circulation paths of each chamber for thermostatic control of heating and cooling systems. An additional EI1022 sensor, shielded to minimize effect of air currents, is installed near the outside surface of the metering chamber to monitor ambient lab temperature. Specimen temperature is monitored with nine Texas Instruments LM34CAZ temperature sensors per side (operating range -17°C—110°C; accuracy ≥ ±1°C), arranged in an evenly-spaced grids. Grids of four LM34CAZ sensors are installed on each air baffle, facing the specimen. The metering chamber exterior wall is instrumented to act as a heat flux transducer using 42 thermocouple junctions (T-type, 24 gauge, special limits sensitivity), alternating between inside and outside of metering chamber and connected in series. All sensors are attached to surfaces with foil tape topped with black duct tape to increase emissivity.

Controls and data acquisition. A LabJack T7Pro data acquisition and control module, expanded to 56 input channels with LabJack Mux80 multiplexer and two LabJack CB37 terminal boards, is used for all monitoring, controls, and data acquisition. A LabJack RB12 relay board with Opto22 relay modules is used to pulse power to the LN2 solenoid valve and heater. Kipling3 software is used for configuration and custom Lua scripting. LJLogM software is used for data acquisition and recording. Data logging interval is 100 ms, averaged and recorded every two seconds.

Expenditures. Final costs for the hot box apparatus were $15,823 USD, of which $3,900 USD was for construction materials, cooling, heating and air circulation systems, instrumentation, and data acquisition; and $11,923 was for fabrication and commissioning labour. The LN2 lockset tank is rented for $30 USD per month, and cost of LN2 is $1.10 USD per liter.

1.2. Hot box apparatus operation

Minimum test run duration. To establish a minimum duration for test runs (outlined in ASTM C1363-11 sec. A10.3), a 3 mm MDF panel was installed in a specimen frame, instrumented, and sealed with self-adhesive polyethylene plastic film and tape to minimize air permeability. Real-time monitoring using LJLogM software was used to determine when the system reached initial steady-state, (i.e., hot and cold side temperature sensors stable around respective setpoints, with no more than ±0.5° C fluctuation, and calibrated panel and baffle sensor readings within ± 1°C of each other), and when the system returned to steady-state following a 1°C change in the climatic chamber set point. Time to return to steady-state following perturbation was found to be ≤ 10 minutes. Although a so-called 'time constant' calculated according to the ASTM standard would be shorter than the time to return to fully to steady-state, it was decided characterization test runs for a minimum of 60 minutes following initial steady-state were practical and exceeded the ASTM standard of six consecutive time constants.

Characterization. A characterization panel of 1219 mm x 1219 mm x 153 mm was constructed using three layers of 51 mm Type 1 EPS foam. The panel was mounted in the specimen frame, and instrumented and sealed as above. Once operating procedures were established, a total of five characterization

Test No.	t_h (°C)	t_c (°C)	Δt (°C)	t_a (°C)	Q_h (W)	Q_f (W)	Q_{aux} (W)	Q_{cp} (W)	$Q_{(mw+fl)}$ (W)	$Q_{(mw+fl)}/Q_{aux}$ (%)
001	29.5	-14.3	43.8	26.5	12.3	5.8	18.1	14.9	3.2	17.7
002	30.9	-9.2	40.1	25.9	12.2	5.8	18.0	13.0	5.0	27.8
003	29.1	1.6	27.5	26.1	7.1	5.8	12.9	8.9	4.0	31.0
004	29.2	11.9	17.3	25.0	5.3	5.8	11.1	5.6	5.5	49.5
005	31.2	17.2	14.0	26.3	5.3	5.8	11.1	4.6	6.5	58.6

t_h: panel surface temperature, hot side; **t_c**: panel surface temperature, cold side; **Δt**: temperature differential (t_h - t_c); **t_a**: ambient lab temperature; **Q_h**: heater power input; **Q_f**: fan power input (from manufacturer's data); **Q_{aux}**: total power input (Q_h + Q_f); **Q_{cp}**: heat flow through panel; **$Q_{(mw+fl)}$**: heat flow through metering chamber wall and around panel (Q_{aux} - Q_{cp}).

Table 1. Characterization panel results

tests were performed, at nominal temperature differentials of 35°C, 30°C, 20°C, 10°C, and 5°C.

Characterization test runs are summarized in Table 1. Heat flow through characterization panel, Qcp (W), is calculated using:

Equation 1.

$$Q_{cp} = \frac{A \bullet (t_h - t_c)}{R}$$

Where A (m2), is the characterization panel area, th and tc (°C) are temperatures of panel hot and cold sides, and R (K m2/W), is resistance to heat flow of the panel per manufacturer-supplied data. For the EPS panel used to characterize the hot box apparatus R = 4.5 K m2/W.

Heater power input to the metering chamber, Qh, is calculated by taking a one-minute moving average of on/off time as recorded by the data acquisition model and multiplying by heater power, Wh, for the length of time heat balance within the system is observed in steady-state.

1.3. Waste block materials and methods

Mixing, forming, and curing. Gypsum drywall waste (GW) was sourced from local building construction and demolition sites, and included a typical variety of types and thicknesses. Demolition waste tested negative for asbestos (third-party certified lab). Waste drywall boards were reduced to convenient size by manual breaking, then pulverized using a hammer mill equipped with 5 mm screen (Figure 2a).

Blocks measuring 75 mm x 305 mm x 153 mm were formed on a custom-made hydraulic block press (Figure 2b), at formation pressure of 7.6 MPa, resulting in block dry density of approximately 1.2 g/cm3 Blocks were cured for seven days covered with polyethylene sheet, followed by ≥ 56 days of drying at ambient lab temperature and humidity.

A single-wythe DWB wall section measuring apx. 1219 mm x 1219 mm x 153 mm was constructed, consisting of 15 courses of block, mortared with 7 mm joints of Type S mortar (ASTM C270). All cores were fully grouted with fine aggregate grout meeting ASTM C476-18, and the two perimeter cores were reinforced with nominal 13 mm steel reinforcing bars (1070 mm on centre). The assembly was allowed to cure and dry for ≥ 28 days at ambient lab temperature and humidity before mounting in specimen frame for testing (Figure 3).

A series of five tests were conducted, at nominal temperature differentials selected to match characterization conditions. Due to lower ambient lab temperatures and sensor sensitivity limits, actual differentials were less than for characterization tests.

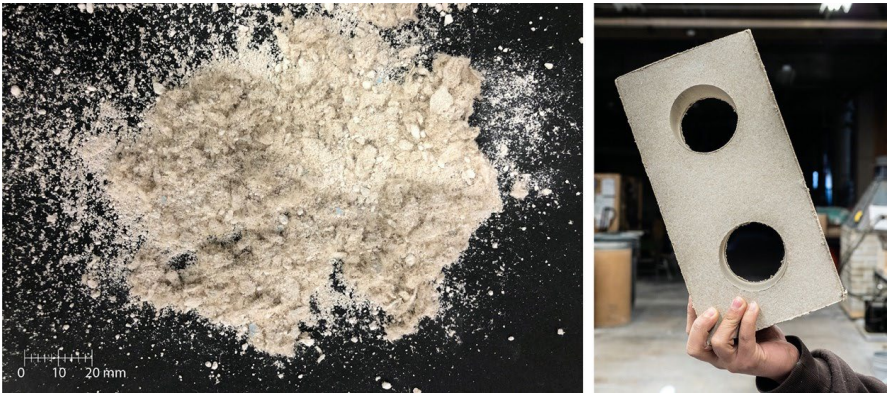


Figure 2a. Shredded drywall waste from demolition; Figure 2b: prototype DWB masonry.

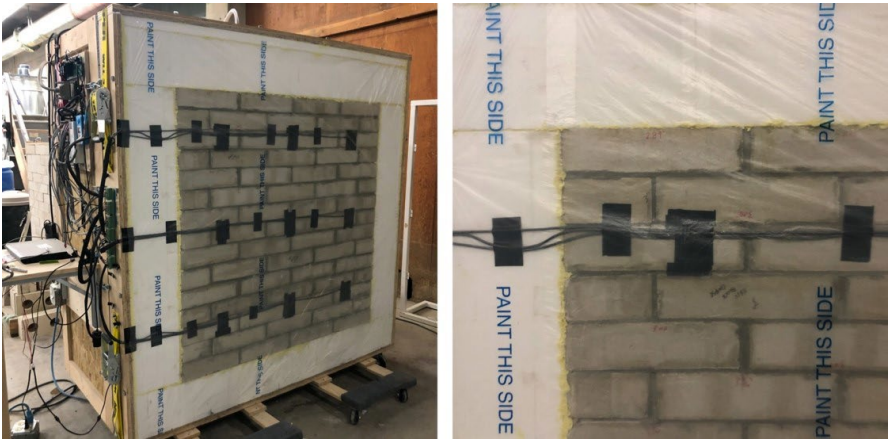


Figure 3a. DWB specimen wall prior to testing. Figure 3b: Wall detail. Wall has been instrumented, mounted in frame, and frame is clamped to climatic chamber.

2. RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

Results from DWB specimen test runs are summarized in Table 2. Note these test runs were conducted on the same DWB specimen wall, with the variables under examination being the temperatures of specimen hot and cold sides (th and tc), and the consequent temperature differential between them. Resistance to heat flow, R (Km2/W), is calculated using:

Equation 2.

$$R = \frac{A \bullet (t_h - t_c)}{Q_{sp}}$$

Where A (m2) is specimen area, th and tc (°C) are temperatures of specimen hot and cold sides, and Qsp (W) is the net flow of heat through the wall, equal to metering wall and flanking losses, Q(mw+fl), minus the metered input of heater and fans, Qaux.

Test No.	t_h(°C)	t_c(°C)	Δt(°C)	t_a(°C)	Q_{aux}(W)	Q_{sp}(W)	$Q_{(mw+fl)}$(W)	R(Km²/W)	R_{dwb}:R_{cmu}
105	14.2	-6.0	20.2	14.1	35.4	28.5	6.9	1.05	4.0 : 1
091	20.5	6.4	14.1	16.9	32.2	23.0	9.2	0.91	3.5 : 1
104	14.3	0.6	13.7	12.5	34.1	25.4	8.7	0.80	3.0 : 1
090	21.0	13.7	7.3	14.4	30.9	25.0	11.9	0.43	1.6 : 1

t_h: specimen surface temperature, hot side; **t_c**: specimen surface temperature, cold side; **Δt**: temperature differential (t_h- t_c); **t_a**: ambient lab temperature; **Q_{aux}**: total power input; **Q_{sp}**: heat flow through specimen; **$Q_{(mw+fl)}$**: heat flow through metering chamber wall and around panel; **R**: resistance to heat flow of the specimen; **R_{dwb}:R_{cmu}**: ratio of DWB R to published CMU R.

Table 2. DWB specimen wall results.

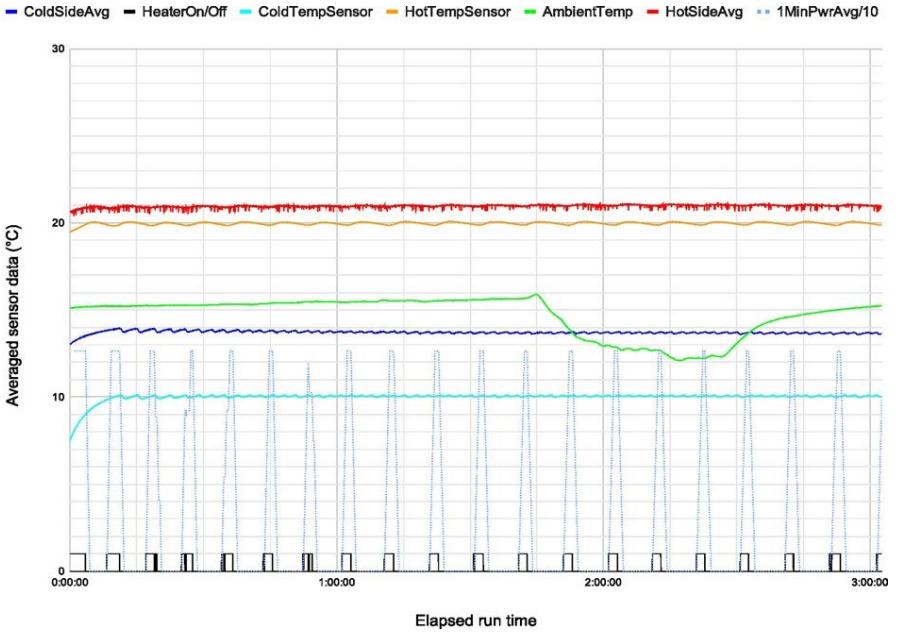


Figure 4. DWB wall specimen test no. 090. Steady-state observed after approximately 00:30:00 minutes.

Figure 4 illustrates temperature and power levels logged during a typical DWB specimen test run. Fluctuation of average temperatures measured across specimen hot and cold sides ("ColdSideAvg" and "HotSideAvg"), is ≤ 1°C, as required by ASTM C1363. Sensors used for thermostatic control of heating and cooling systems ("HotTempSensor" and "ColdTempSensor") also show recorded fluctuations ≤ 1°C, as required by ASTM C1363. Dip in ambient lab temperature starting ~ 1:45:00 due to exterior building doors being opened.

The value of R for the DWB specimen, calculated using power input Qaux and Equation 2, is regarded as relative, not absolute. As expected, heat flow through both the characterization panel and the DWB specimen increased as temperature differentials increased. As expected, heat flow through metering chamber wall to surrounding lab, Qmw, and flanking losses through the specimen frame, Qfl, both decreased as temperature differentials increased; test runs with higher differentials have less potential for error than test runs with lower differentials. Losses, Qmw+fl, are a higher percentage of total heat transfer than allowed by the ASTM standard, but significantly lower than losses reported for the apparatus designed by Seitz and MacDougall. Losses calculated during characterization using Equation 1 are relatively sensitive to an exact value for characterization panel R; since R is calculated from manufacturer's data rather than established empirically, this is a possible source of error. However, when R is calculated for the DWB specimen using Equation 2, the inverse is true, and the calculated value for R is relatively insensitive to the exact value of Qmw+fl.

Calculated R for the DWB specimen is up to four times higher than published values for nominal 152 mm thick, unreinforced single wythe wall assemblies of normal weight CMU with fully grouted cores (NCMA 2013). Because steel reinforcing rod has greater conductivity than concrete mortars and grouts, it is likely that R for a steel-reinforced CMU wall would be lower still, i.e., thermal performance of DWB specimen relative to reinforced CMU would be even greater. Construction and testing a reinforced and fully grouted CMU wall to directly compare thermal performance is an area for further research. The apparent correlation in Table 2 between higher R, higher temperature differentials, and lower cold side temperatures is also an area for future research.

CONCLUSIONS

The constructed hot box apparatus meets ASTM parameters for temperature control. Data acquisition and controls were found to be reliable. Flanking losses and metering wall losses were higher than prescribed, likely due in part to a metering chamber area proportionally greater relative to specimen area than would be the case for a larger apparatus. This could be mitigated by increased air-sealing of box sections and specimen contact with frame, as well as increased insulation of hot box chambers and specimen frame. Use of an LN2 cooling system permits rapid temperature changes and precise control, with low upfront costs, but operating costs are high (~$11 USD/ hour for test runs with ≥30° C differentials) and eventual replacement with mechanical refrigeration is planned. Nevertheless, the design represents a cost-effective alternative to commercial testing facilities, and is practical for use as a design tool in educational and R&D facilities.

Results of initial investigations favour the conclusion that DWB wall assemblies have higher resistance to thermal conductivity than CMU, even when using conventional reinforcement, mortar, and grout. This is further evidence for the potential of DWB as a high-performance, low-cost alternative

to CMU, and concomitant diversion of problematic C&D waste from landfills.
Hot box testing of DWB assemblies that utilize lower-conductivity reinforcement, mortar, and grout is an area for further research, with the goal of developing DWB wall assemblies that approach or equal thermal performance previously found for homogenous DWB specimens. Such assemblies could potentially meet energy code standards for non-residential construction, without requiring additional insulation. This would represent considerable reduction of labour and material costs. It is also appreciated that lower-conductivity reinforcement, mortar, and grouts may be higher performing with regard to embodied energy and carbon footprint.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Support: American Institute of Architects Upjohn Research Initiative; Amazon Catalyst Fellowship; NSF I-Corp; Washington State University Commercialization Gap Fund. The researchers gratefully acknowledge assistance from Vikram Yadama (WSU Composite Materials and Engineering Center); lab associates and assistants including Maynard Siev, Zaky Ramadhan, Garrett Kenny, Jose Becerra, and Zach Ashment; as well as past and present WSU architecture and engineering students.

REFERENCES

Asakura, H. 2013. "Removing gypsum from construction and demolition waste (C&DW)," in *Handbook of Recycled Concrete and Demolition Waste,* ed. F. Pacheco-Torgal, Y. Ding, 479-499. Philadelphia: Woodhead Publishing.

ASTM C1363-11. 2018. *Standard test method for thermal performance of building materials and envelope assemblies by means of a hot box apparatus*. West Conshohocken: ASTM International.

Belayachi, N., Hoxha, D, and Slaimia, M. "Impact of accelerated climatic aging on the behavior of gypsum plaster-straw material for building thermal insulation." *Construction and Building Materials*, 125 (2016): 912-918.

CDRA. 2017. *Benefits of construction and demolition debris recycling in the United States.* Chicago: Construction & Demolition Recycling Association.

Crangle, R. 2017. "Gypsum," in *U.S. Geological Survey 2015 Minerals yearbook*, 33.1-33.10. Washington, DC: USGS.

Crangle, R. 2018. "Gypsum," in *U.S. Geological Survey Mineral commodity summaries, January 2018,* 74-75. Washington, DC: USGS.

Drake, D., Ramadhan, F., Sze, P., and Miyasaka, T. "Drywall Waste Blocks: A Novel Masonry Material Utilizing Recycled Construction & Demolition Waste." *Proceedings of the 2019 Modular and Offisite Construction Conference, Banff, Alberta, Canada.* doi.org/10.29173/mocs106.

King County. 2017. *King County LinkUp Program 2017 Market Assessment*. Seattle: King County Dept. of Natural Resources and Parks Solid Waste Division.

Lederman, P., Gannon, J., and Young, L. 2015. *Management of Waste Wallboard.* Trenton: New Jersey Dept. of Environmental Protection Science Advisory Board.

Mounir, S., Abdelhamid, K., and Maaloufa, Y. "Thermal inertia for composite materials white cement-cork, cement mortar-cork, and plaster-cork." *Energia Procedia* 74 (2015): 991-999.

Naik, T.R., Kumar, K., Chun, Y and Kraus, R.N. "Utilization of powdered gypsum-wallboard in concrete." *Proceedings of the International Conference on Sustainable Construction Materials and Technologies* (2010).

NCMA TEK 6-2C. 2013. *R-values and u-factors of single wythe concrete masonry walls.* Herndon, VA: National Concrete Masonry Association.

Raghavendra, T. and Udayashankar, B.C. "Engineering properties of controlled low strength materials using flyash and waste gypsum wall boards." *Construction and Building Materials*, 101 (2015): 548-557.

Seitz, S. and MacDonald, C. "Design of an affordable hot box apparatus." *Proceedings of the 16th NOCMAT Non-Conventional Materials and Technologies Conference, Winnipeg, Manitoba, Canada,* (2015): 10-15.

Sorrell-Neal, T. (Executive Director, Masonry Institute of Washington), personal communication, 19 September 2018.

US EPA. 2016. *Construction and demolition debris generation in the United States, 2014.* Washington, DC: United States Environmental Protection Agency.

PAPER #5.15

INDOOR ENVIRONMENTAL ANALYSIS OF A LEED GOLD-CERTIFIED OFFICE BUILDING IN ASHRAE CLIMATE ZONE 6

Antonio Martinez-Molina[a], Hazem Rashed-Ali[a], Jae Yong Suk[a]
[a]University of Texas at San Antonio UTSA, San Antonio, TX, USA

ABSTRACT

Building quality and performance can be assessed in terms of indoor air quality, thermal comfort, lighting quality, and acoustic comfort, collectively referred to as "Indoor Environmental Quality (IEQ)." User satisfaction in buildings has been clearly linked to productivity, lower absenteeism, and employee retention among other outcomes. Conducted as part of a larger Post-Occupancy Evaluation (POE) of a LEED Gold certified office building located in Wisconsin, USA (ASHRAE climate zone 6), this study takes a comprehensive approach to analyzing the IEQ of the building by employing a questionnaire conducted in parallel with measuring several indoor environmental parameters. The field measurements were used to explore, understand, and validate the outcomes of the survey.

The building is approximately 90,000 square feet including both private offices and open-plan spaces, plus other facilities. It is conditioned through a centralized HVAC system that separately supplies the three 2-storey wings and controls indoor temperature, relative humidity, and fresh air supply based on a pre-programmed algorithm. A total of 126 answers were collected out of 200 employees, representing a response rate of more than 60%. The questionnaires were collected and analyzed using the online survey tool: QualtricsXM.

The results show that office design layout and orientation play a key role in occupant satisfaction and productivity. Employee thermal comfort was strongly impacted by their location in the building. This was due to a mixture of design and operational issues, which also strongly impacted the building's energy use. As is expected in open plan design, issues with noise and privacy were also identified. The results however showed a high level of satisfaction with air quality, which was supported by the field measurements. The findings will inform architects, engineers, and researchers in their efforts to promote more efficient and healthy office spaces and to run POEs of existing office buildings.

KEYWORDS

Indoor Environmental Quality (IEQ); office building; Post-Occupational Evaluation (POE); LEED Gold; health.

INTRODUCTION

One of the key factors to improve occupants' health and productivity in the workplace is Indoor Environmental Quality (IEQ) (Fisk 2002; Hedge 2000; P. Wargocki 2000; Choi and Moon 2017; de Dear, Brager, and Berkeley 1998). In order to provide a healthy and comfortable indoor environment, buildings need to use energy for heating, cooling, ventilation, etc. Based on this thought, IEQ and energy efficiency go together while designing a sustainable and healthy building (Geng et al. 2019). Additionally, these two parameters are two key factors while certifying a building with the Leadership in Energy & Environmental Design (LEED). Generally, occupants are able to identify the air quality level through their sensory perception reflects, responding with yawns

and sneezes (Wolkoff et al. 2006). However, many of these parameters are difficult or nearly impossible to people to notice while working in their workplace. For example, Carbon Dioxide (CO2) is considered colorless and odorless, then occupants are unable to identify the concentration level, which can have a very strong impact on health. In fact, a high concentration of CO2 could derive in a sick building syndrome (SBS) (Gupta, Khare, and Goyal 2007).

A common best practice to understand the correlations between occupants' opinion and IEQ measurements is comparing the IEQ measurements with a Post-Occupational Evaluation (POE) (Loftness et al. 2009; Newsham et al. 2009; Veitch et al. 2007). In fact, Formaldehyde (HCHO), Total Volatile Organic Compounds (TVOC), CO2 and Particulates (PM2.5 and P10) are crucial IEQ parameters that are often considered in the field measurements of a POE.

It is critical to have good indicators in order to detect problems, monitor progress over time while trying to reach objectives (Cole 2005; Fisk, Black, and Brunner 2011). For instance, one of the most important parameters when identifying indoor air quality due to poor ventilation rate is CO2. This high concentration will generate dizziness, nausea, mental fatigue, throat irritation, headache and eye irritation, known as well as SBS symptoms (Thach et al. 2019). Moreover, most of the parameters responsible for this SBS symptoms are affected by outdoor air quality conditions, building ventilation system operations, and indoor activities (Cheng 2017). In 2017, a study showed that indoor air quality and thermal conditions generally affect performance, impacting negatively in the ability to concentrate and to think clearly (Pawel Wargocki and Wyon 2017).

This research presents an extensive IEQ monitoring campaign together with the results of exhaustive environmental questionnaire in LEED gold-certified office building in a cold climate. Authors believe that the collection of qualitative and quantitative data in addition to a thorough data analysis is the most accurate method to assess the thermal comfort and indoor environmental performance of a building. This study measured indoor concentrations of CO2, HCHO, TVOC, PM2.5 and PM10, air temperature and relative humidity, together with the subjective occupants' opinions of the indoor environment. The results and correlations of this paper can be used to determine a detailed characterization of the air pollutants present in office buildings and the impact of the office design on air quality and occupants' productivity.

1. DESCRIPTION OF CASE STUDY

The building analyzed is the Grande Cheese Corporate Home Office located in Fond du Lac, Wisconsin (USA), 5 miles South from the lake Winnebago and 40 miles West from lake Michigan (Figure 1). Fond du Lac is 760 feet above sea level and its climate according to the ASHRAE classification (Briggs, Lucas, and Taylor 2003), is zone 6. The building was completed in 2016, and its main use is administrative (office), although there are two cheese laboratories on the first floor. The structure consists of 83,402 ft2 air-conditioned space, of which 79,967 ft2 are offices, and 3,435 ft2 are lab spaces, all distributed in three wings with two floors each, surrounding a large internal courtyard. The office building also houses a fitness center, a cafeteria, two kitchens, a coffee room, a study room, a game room and a loading deck. Over 175 people occupy the building daily with a regular office schedule from 9:00am to 5:00pm Monday through Friday, although a few of the occupants work different hours since the building is accessible 24/7. Additionally, the building is LEED gold-certified by the United Stated Green Building Council (USGBC). This

certification proves the building performance in terms of energy efficiency, water usage, air quality, and choice of building materials as well as environmental factors such as access to public transportation and responsible land use.
The HVAC system is divided in three sections that each one of them supplies fresh air, heating and cooling to each building wing. However, the two cheese laboratories, with dedicated 100% outside air HVAC, are independent of the general HVAC system. The office spaces have two different typologies, open spaces with individual cubicles, and private offices and small conference/meeting rooms. These diverse office designs generate very different occupants' satisfaction.

Figure 1. Grande Cheese LEED gold certified building. Exterior (left) and courtyard (right) views.

2. METHODOLOGY

This study was conducted in an office building equipped with a mechanical ventilation system, including air and heating cooling, and air supply devices, for maintaining comfortable room temperatures and good indoor air quality. A very detailed data collection campaign was performed combining qualitative (occupants' satisfaction) and quantitative (environmental monitoring) data. This campaign took place June through August 2019.

2.1.Questionnaire

In order to understand what type of opinion occupants currently have of the indoor environment, the research team used an analytical qualitative method with online questionnaires as main tool. The questionnaire included multiple-choice questions (using Likert-type scales) and open-ended fields, and was divided into the following sections: Individual data; personal workspace; office layout; thermal comfort; air quality; acoustic quality; building features; and general comments.
An anonymous link to access the online questionnaire prepared on the Qualtrics ("Qualtrics XM" 2019) platform was sent to occupants of all departments and was kept open for three months (from June 2019 to August 2019). The link was distributed to the participants via email and reminders were sent periodically by using the same strategy. The questionnaire was designed with the goal of extracting honest and reliable responses with the following considerations in mind: brevity and simplicity. Indeed, it was unlikely that occupants would have filled out the questionnaire if it was too difficult to understand, and responses would not have reflected the real experience.

2.2. Indoor environmantal monitoring

Indoor and outdoor temperature and relative humidity levels of the office building were monitored for the duration of the of 3 months and data gathered at one-hour intervals. The equipment utilized for the internal monitoring was carried out with the use of a pre-installed network of data loggers evenly distributed throughout the building. To evaluate the indoor environmental quality, one-time noise, CO2, HCHO, TVOC, PM2.5 and PM10 measurements were taken during a regular building operation day, in every room.

3. OUTCOMES

This part presents the results of the quantitative objective monitoring through data logger and the results of the qualitative investigation through questionnaires, in order to assess occupants' satisfaction with the indoor environment. These outcomes are divided in three sections: thermal satisfaction; acoustic satisfaction; and air quality satisfaction. As shown in Table 1, the response sample analyzed in this study was evenly distributed along the entire building, therefore, this data can be considered reliable and representative of the case study. The 1st floor on the North wing does not house offices (only common areas), therefore, there were not responses collected in that area.

3.1. Thermal satisfaction

Table 1 summarizes the 3-months indoor average temperature values monitored, showing mainly that there is a significant difference between floors. While 1st floor temperatures range between mean values of 69°F or 70°F, 2nd floor has higher values around 73°F. Based on the sustainable building design and usage, and the occupancy pattern, this 3°F - 4°F difference between floors is very substantial and worth to investigate.

Despite the temperature difference shown in Table 1, Figure 2 depicts that most of occupants feel thermally comfortable in the building (67%), and only 5% of them reported being hot. However, it is very significant that 28% of workers answered to the questionnaire reporting feeling cold (28%). This 28% is too high and does not fit in the parameters that are acceptable to consider the building thermally comfortable (Paliaga et al. 2013). Looking at floor level, there is an insignificant difference in answers between the 1st and 2nd floor, therefore, a more detailed analysis was required (Figure 3).

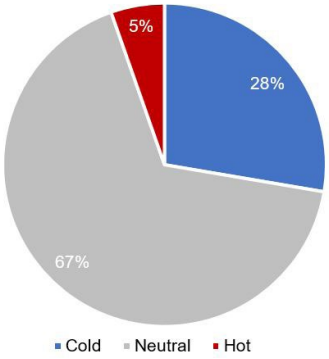


Figure 2. Total workers' subjective thermal comfort opinion.

		Questionnaire Responses	Indoor Average Temperature
1st Floor	West Wing	23%	70.3
	South Wing	25%	68.6
2nd Floor	West Wing	21%	73.2
	South Wing	23%	73.5
	North Wing	8%	72.4

Table 1. Spatial distribution of questionnaire responses, plus indoor temperature values.

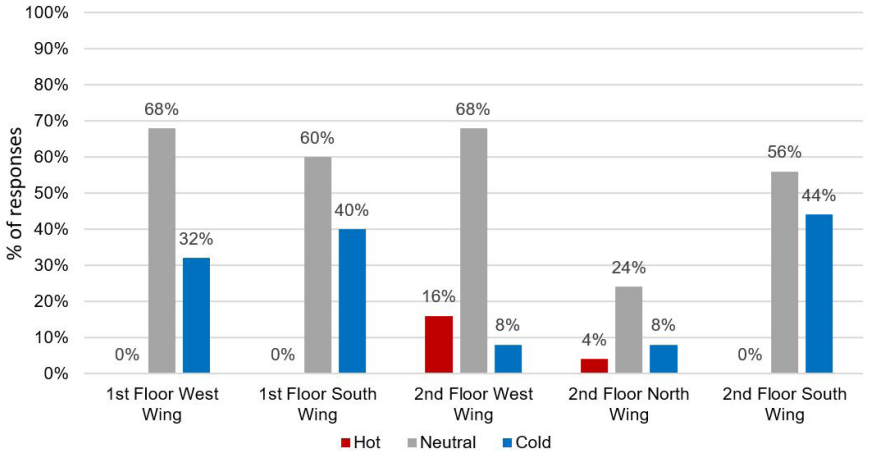


Figure 3. Workers' subjective thermal comfort opinion by building wings.

A result breakdown among different wings and floors is depicted in Figure 3. While there was no disparity between 1st and 2nd floors, building wings get very diverse answers. While West and North wings are consistent with 70% neutral, 20% cold and 10% hot answers, the South wing occupants reported being only around 60% neutral and 40% cold. This data locates the occupants reporting being cold and narrows it to both floors of the South wing. The questionnaire results also revealed that office design has a significant impact on thermal satisfaction. Occupants in closed offices feel colder (34%) than workers using an open space office (cubicles) 10%. Combining all the answers gathered, building occupants have a general opinion of being cold while being in their workplace.

3.2. Acoustic Satisfaction

As mentioned above, offices design heavily impacts on the overall occupants' experience. The acoustic performance of the building is not an exception. Figure 4 presents the results of workers satisfaction to the buildings' noise level, sound privacy and noise satisfaction based on office design. The 78% of occupants

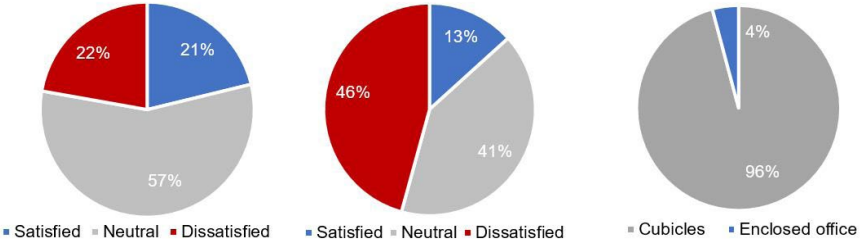


Figure 4. Total occupants' noise level (left), sound privacy satisfaction (center) levels, and location of dissatisfied occupants (right).

described their noise experience as neutral or satisfied, against 22% of the answers were negative. Regarding sound privacy, dissatisfied answers are higher reporting a 46% of negative opinions. This undesirable number of discontented occupants (46%), were located mainly in cubicles in the open office spaces. Therefore, this negative feedback is due to a design solution since, in general, open office spaces have less privacy.

3.3. Air quality monitoring

It is very difficult that occupants notice pollutants, that is the reason for mostly relying on the monitoring results instead of occupants' opinion. However, an air quality satisfaction question was included in the general questionnaire with very positive results. Figure 5 depicts the occupants' great opinion regarding indoor air quality with only 1% of the surveyed workers unsatisfied.

As a part of the indoor monitoring campaign, Formaldehyde (HCHO), Total Volatile Organic Compounds (TVOC), Carbon Dioxide (CO2) and Particulates (PM2.5 and P10) were measured throughout the entire building. Particulates are responsible for sore throat, eye irritation, and nervousness (PM10), and there is a strong correlation between PM2.5 and perceived air quality by occupants.

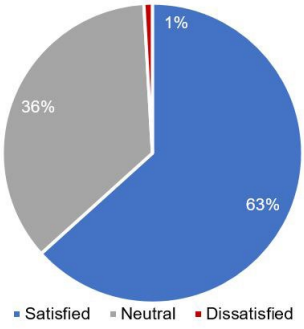


Figure 5. Total workers' air quality opinions.

The way of addressing and reducing these particulates levels is cleaning the duct system, filter replacement and cleaning carpets. Figure 6 shows the levels of PM2.5 and PM10 all rooms analyzed in the building. It is very clear that indoor levels are very low and far away from the recommended limits of 35PPM for PM2.5 and 150PPM for PM10 according to the American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air Conditioning Engineers ASHRAE and EPA. In fact, the outdoor readings are the higher registered with 14.1PPM (PM2.5) and 20.8PPM (PM10). Figure 7 shows other critical indoor environmental aspects that were measured such as Total Volatile Organic Compounds (TVOC), Formaldehyde (HCHO), and Carbon Dioxide (CO2). Regarding the CO2 readings registered in the building, they are very consistent ranging between 100PPM and 172PPM with the only exception of the areas where more people are concentrated such as open office spaces (294) and conference rooms (201). Moreover, in the loading deck CO2 values were 647PPM, a total of a 100% more than the second highest recorded value. This high value could be attributed to trucks that regularly park in the loading deck to deliver supplies for the labs. All these CO2 figures are below the maximum recommended value of 800PPM (Park et al. 2019). Concerning TVOCs, concentration values are below the recommended parameters except, once again, open offices, conference rooms and kitchen. However, the readings in the laboratories, cafeteria and loading deck are close to this limit of 1PPM. In particular to HCHO, all the rooms in the building have concentrations below the recommended limit of 0.40PPM, except the laboratories. It is worth mentioning that these laboratories have dedicated 100% outside air HVAC.

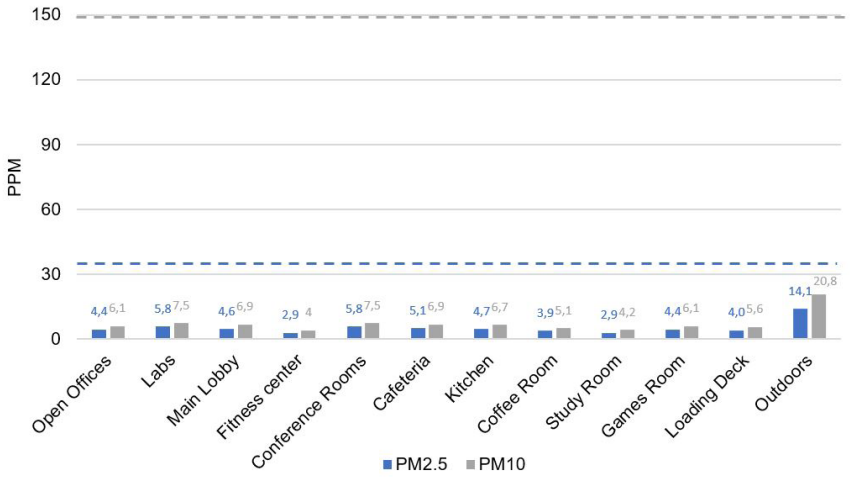


Figure 6. 2.5 and 10 Particle Matter field measurements by location.

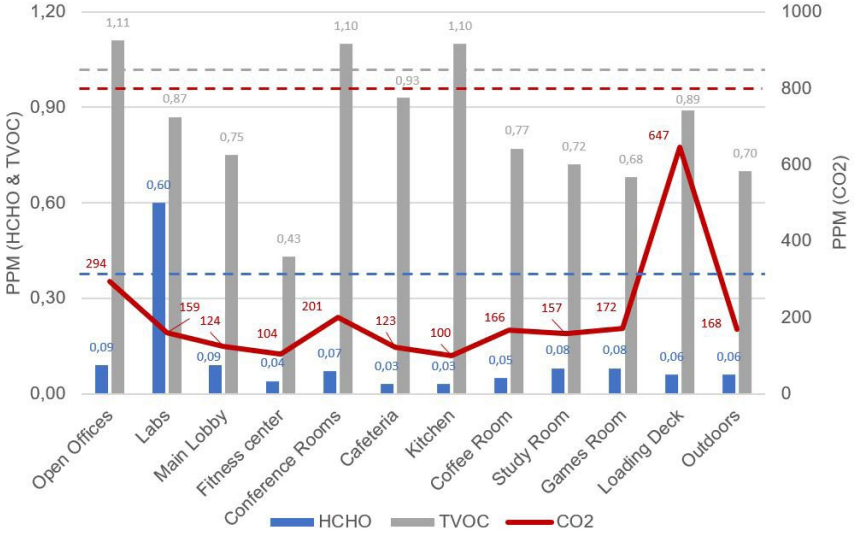


Figure 7. CO2, HCHO and TVOC field measurements and recommended limits, by location.

CONCLUSION

From user satisfaction surveys in this LEED gold-certified office building in ASHRAE climate Zone 6, 64% of occupants overall responded "satisfied", 27% answered "neutral" and 9% of occupants reported "dissatisfied" with their indoor environmental conditions.

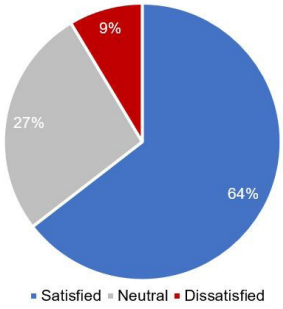


Figure 8. Total workers' overall building satisfaction based on indoor environmental quality.

While 1st floor temperatures range between mean values of 69°F or 70°F because of the impact of the HVAC system, 2nd floor has higher values around 73°F, probably due to the solar radiation. With these temperatures, 28% of occupants felt cold or very cold which is a percentage too large for high performance building. Most of these unsatisfied occupants were located in the South wing, particularly on the first floor and seating in open office spaces. Occupants also reported being cold during both seasons, winter and summer. Due to the building design and occupancy pattern, this reported discomfort could be easily addressed with location specific HVAC operation. Large office buildings are impacted by the outdoor environment in different ways and building locations, therefore, require a HVAC broken down approach for each particular area.

Furthermore, open space offices are proven to promote occupants' interaction and accountability, however, sound privacy and noise are the main two negative aspects of this design solution. Occupants seating in open office spaces reported a 46% of dissatisfaction of sound privacy. This is a design approach that has these negative consequences and there are very limited applicable solutions that can be implemented such as higher partitions, etc.

Given the measured air quality concentrations, occupant satisfaction with overall air quality is very positive. Most rooms do not exceed the recommended thresholds, only particular locations with high occupancy levels like open office spaces and conference rooms. The loading deck is a very different space form the rest of the building where truck engines are constantly running and the CO2 readings are the highest, but not exceeding the permitted parameters. When a mixed used space is located inside a building with occupants and vehicles together, a very strict ventilation strategy must be in place to reduce exhaust air and other pollutants. One of the most interesting aspects about this building is that the cheese laboratories, have dedicated 100% outside air HVAC, and are independent of the general HVAC system. These laboratories generate high quantities of air pollutants (highest HCHO level in the building beyond the recommended values) and need a very strict ventilation strategy in order to preserve optimal conditions for their operation.

As a result, it can be concluded that occupant satisfaction can help inform design decisions. Among the technical attributes of building systems, the factors mentioned above are critical for user satisfaction and health and can support workspace design. Moreover, this research demonstrates that the use of occupant satisfaction surveys could redefine user comfort thresholds.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Funding for this project was generously provided by Overland Partners, who also provided the design information for the project. The research team would also like to thank Grande Cheese Company for providing the building's operational information and allowing the team access to the building.

REFERENCES

Briggs, Robert S., Robert G. Lucas, and Z. Todd Taylor. 2003. "Climate Classification for Building Energy Codes and Standards: Part 2 - Zone Definitions, Maps, and Comparisons." *ASHRAE Winter Meetings CD, Technical and Symposium Papers* 2003: 125–33.

Cheng, Yu Hsiang. 2017. "Measuring Indoor Particulate Matter Concentrations and Size Distributions at Different Time Periods to Identify Potential Sources in an Office Building in Taipei City." *Building and Environment* 123: 446–57. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2017.07.025.

Choi, Joon-Ho, and Jehyun Moon. 2017. "Impacts of Human and Spatial Factors on User Satisfaction in Office Environments." *Building and Environment* 114 (March): 23–35. https://doi.org/10.1016/J.BUILDENV.2016.12.003.

Cole, Raymond J. 2005. "Building Environmental Assessment Methods: Redefining Intentions and Roles." *Building Research and Information* 33 (5): 455–67. https://doi.org/10.1080/09613210500219063.

Dear, Rj de, Gs Brager, and U C Berkeley. 1998. "Developing an Adaptive Model of Thermal Comfort and Preference." Ashrae Rp- 884. 1998. http://repositories.cdlib.org/cedr/cbe/ieq/deDear1998_ThermComPref.

Fisk, W. J., D. Black, and G. Brunner. 2011. "Benefits and Costs of Improved IEQ in U.S. Offices." *Indoor Air* 21 (5): 357–67. https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1600-0668.2011.00719.x.

Fisk, W.J. 2002. "How IEQ Affects Health, Productivity." *ASHRAE Journal* 44 (5).

Geng, Yang, Wenjie Ji, Zhe Wang, Borong Lin, and Yingxin Zhu. 2019. "A Review of Operating Performance in Green Buildings: Energy Use, Indoor Environmental Quality and Occupant Satisfaction." *Energy and Buildings* 183: 500–514. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.enbuild.2018.11.017.

Gupta, Sanjeev, Mukesh Khare, and Radha Goyal. 2007. "Sick Building Syndrome-A Case Study in a Multistory Centrally Air-Conditioned Building in the Delhi City." *Building and Environment* 42 (8): 2797–2809. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2006.10.013.

Hedge, A. 2000. "Where Are We in Understanding the Effects of Where We Are?" *Ergonomics* 43 (7): 1019–29. https://doi.org/10.1080/001401300409198.

Loftness, V., A. Aziz, J. Choi, K. Kampschroer, K. Powell, M. Atkinson, and J. Heerwagen. 2009. "The Value of Post-Occupancy Evaluation for Building Occupants and Facility Managers." *Intelligent Buildings International* 1 (4): 249–68. https://doi.org/10.3763/inbi.2009.SI04.

Newsham, Guy, Jay Brand, Cara Donnelly, Jennifer Veitch, Myriam Aries, and Kate Charles. 2009. "Linking Indoor Environment Conditions to Job Satisfaction: A Field Study." *Building Research and Information* 37 (2): 129–47. https://doi.org/10.1080/09613210802710298.

Paliaga, Gwelen, Lawrence J Schoen, Peter F Alspach, Edward a Arens, Richard M Aynsley, Robert Bean, Josh Eddy, et al. 2013. "Thermal Environmental Conditions for Human Occupancy AHSRAE 55." *ASHRAE*. https://doi.org/ISSN 1041-2336.

Park, Jihyun, Vivian Loftness, Azizan Aziz, and Tsung Hsien Wang. 2019. "Critical Factors and Thresholds for User Satisfaction on Air Quality in Office Environments." Building and Environment 164 (July): 106310. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2019.106310 "Qualtrics XM." 2019. 2019. https://www.qualtrics.com.

Thach, Thuan Quoc, Dhiya Mahirah, Gerard Dunleavy, Nuraini Nazeha, Yichi Zhang, Christina En Hui Tan, Adam Charles Roberts, George Christopoulos, Chee Kiong Soh, and Josip Car. 2019. "Prevalence of Sick Building Syndrome and Its Association with Perceived Indoor Environmental Quality in an Asian Multi-Ethnic Working Population." *Building and Environment* 166 (July): 106420. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2019.106420.

Veitch, Jennifer A., Kate E. Charles, Kelly M.J. Farley, and Guy R. Newsham. 2007. "A Model of Satisfaction with Open-Plan Office Conditions: COPE Field Findings." *Journal of Environmental Psychology* 27 (3): 177–89. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jenvp.2007.04.002.

Wargocki, P. 2000. "The Effects of Outdoor Air Supply Rate in an Office on Perceived Air Quality, Sick Building Syndrome (SBS) Symptoms and Productivity." *Indoor Air* 10 (4): 222–36. https://doi.org/10.1034/j.1600-0668.2000.010004222.x.

Wargocki, Pawel, and David P. Wyon. 2017. "Ten Questions Concerning Thermal and Indoor Air Quality Effects on the Performance of Office Work and Schoolwork." *Building and Environment* 112: 359–66. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2016.11.020.

Wolkoff, P., C. K. Wilkins, P. A. Clausen, and G. D. Nielsen. 2006. "Organic Compounds in Office Environments - Sensory Irritation, Odor, Measurements and the Role of Reactive Chemistry." *Indoor Air* 16 (1): 7–19. https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1600-0668.2005.00393.x.

PAPER #5.16

ANALYSIS OF ENERGY PERFORMANCE IN A RESIDENTIAL BLOCK IN THE ENSANCHE OF VALENCIA AND PROPOSALS FOR IMPROVEMENT

Vicente Blanca-Giménez[a], Natalia Cardona Guerra[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The installations and construction systems in a typical residential block in the *Ensanche de Valencia* quarter have been analysed, and the parameters that allow economic costs to be optimised have been quantified, and can be extrapolated to other similar blocks in the neighbourhood, giving us a global vision. The construction dates from 1910, affecting a total of 92 homes. We start by taking construction and energy data. Then we calculate the urban compactness and complexity and take the reference grid. Houses and premises have been asked for receipts for energy consumption. A survey has also been developed to assess the acceptability of energy saving measures. Final y, we implemented the thermography technique.
After diagnosing the real situation, we developed the analysis for the viability of building's services improvements. To conclude, the results are presented according to the convenience or not to install active systems, as well as a rethinking of the enclosures in order to minimize energy consumption.

KEYWORDS

Rehabilitation; energy consumption; building envelope; efficiency.

INTRODUCTION

Valencia is a city located in the East Coast of Spain. (Longitude 0º22'28"W Latitude 39º28'36"N). Its maximum altitude is 24 meters above the sea level. The average annual temperature in Valencia is 17.4°C. The approximate rainfall is 445 mm.
The intervention takes place in the Ruzafa district, located in the southeast of the city, which nowadays is part of Valencia historical centre, and is of outmost sociocultural importance. The permanent relationship that already existed between Ruzafa and Valencia when the former did not belong to the city, increased with its annexation, and was later reinforced due to the project for urban centre widening (in Spanish, *"Ensanche"*). Ruzafa enjoyed the title of municipality between 1863 and 1877, when it was finally annexed to the city of Valencia, and started being a residential neighbourhood with major commercial activity [1]. Figure 1 shows the urban planning scheme for the *Ensanche*, where the existing town conditions the alignments and so the pre-existences have major importance. The new building regulations coexist with a public space typical of the old town, totally different from the orthogonal plot that characterised the first *Ensanche* of Valencia, resulting in a spatial configuration with its own personality and particular conditions which are of great interest. (fig.1).
The urban organisation of this nucleus laid out around the church of San Valero and the axis formed by Ruzafa Street, which links the neighbourhood to the city centre and the unique irregular streets. Concerning the building, it is characterised by an architecture built for the middle class and bourgeoisie, based on dwellings between party walls, facing the street and the inner courtyard of the block, which has modified its regulations over time and varied its formal language

through the use of new materials. The urban regulations of the "Ensanche" provided for the construction of buildings with a maximum of three floors, but successive regulations have progressively increased this height to 8 floors in some cases [2].

Figure 1. Russafa's district. Source: (C. Jiménez 2014)

Figure 2. Building at the crossroads of Carlos Cervera and Cura Femenia streets

The model chosen is an extension block made up of 8 residential and commercial buildings with a total of 92 dwellings arranged over a ground floor plus three floors, bounded by the streets Cura Femenia, Carlos Cervera, Dels Tomasos and Cádiz (Figs.2 and 3). Energy performance data of the buildings have been taken to implement, improvement measures, aimed at minimising overall consumption [3]. The final aim is to ensure that the comfort of the occupants is achieved through the rational use of energy in the buildings. [4]

An assessment has been carried out using the CE3X tool to obtain the qualification of energy efficiency in the existing residential buildings. Energy bills have also been collected to provide evidence of their actual expenditure. Subsequently, a survey has been carried out with two different groups of questions: a first one to indicate the real environmental performance of the house, and a second one which reveals the degree of satisfaction of the user. Finally, the construction performance of the building was studied and the thermal losses along the building envelope were located using a thermographic camera.

Figure 3. Selected buildings. Source: Sede Catastro Valencia.

1. OBJECTIVES

- To evaluate the real performance of the building, an extension block in the city of Valencia that can be extrapolated as a repetitive typology to other buildings in the neighbourhood [5]
- To compare the current performance with what could be reached if a series of technological improvements were implemented to minimise consumption
- To adopt measures to improve the energy efficiency of housing
- To provide a formal opinion on the construction system used in buildings which, as a result of their age, are significantly different from current ones, mainly in the treatment of the building envelope. We emphasise on the use of passive systems (walls, windows, blinds, carpets, curtains, carpets, etc.) to act as corrective screens and reducing dependence on artificial systems.

2. METHODOLOGY

In order to achieve the proposed objectives, a methodology has been developed to obtain the necessary information and draw conclusions for possible intervention, according to the following steps: (1) Carrying out a graphic analysis of the buildings and the extensions that have been made from their original state; (2) characterisation of the building envelope; (3) carrying out surveys of the homes' residents who make up the extension block, so to get information on the conditioning systems, degree of well-being of the homes and willingness to incorporate active and passive measures in the block; (4) evaluation of real energy consumption through energy bills for both electricity and gas (owners were asked to provide the "CUPS" (Universal Supply Point Code) on their bills), which allow (5) the results of the simulator to be compared with reality; and (6) results are justified by means of thermography simulation of every internal and external part of the building envelope that form the block.

All data collected were processed and analysed using the programmes recognised by the Ministry of Industry, Energy and Tourism (MITECO): CE3X version2.1., CE3 version 2375.1015, HULC version 20151113, and CERMA version 4 to characterize the houses from the energy perspective, as well as to check whether there have been alterations in the results.

3. DATA ANALYSIS AND RESULTS PRESENTATION

Climate data:

The climate data for the city of Valencia (table 1) and the construction of the buildings under analysis have been taken into account.

Constructive materialization:

The buildings were constructed using the characteristic construction techniques of this period, thus:

- The main façades are solved with solid brick load-bearing walls of one and a

Month	Jan	Feb	Mar	Apr	May	Jun	Jul	Aug	Sep	Oct	Nov	Dec
T avg (ºC)	11.2	11.1	13.4	15.3	18.2	21.8	24.6	24.9	22.8	18.9	14.5	11.9
T min (ºC)	6.8	7.3	8.6	10.6	13.8	17.5	20.4	20.9	18.4	14.3	10	7.5
T max (ºC)	15.7	15	18.3	20	22.7	26.1	28.8	29	27.3	23.5	19	16.3

Table 1. Climate data for the city of Valencia

half or two feet thick and joined with lime and mortar cement (thermal transmittance value U=1.22 W/m2 ºK.)

- The rear façades have half a foot of solid brick wall closing the interior doorway (U= 2.13 W/m2 ºK.)
- The dividing walls are the building's own wall separating the boundaries, made up of piled up walls of solid brick, half a foot thick, and taken with lime mortar (U= 2.42 W/m2 ºK.)
- The sloping roof is formed with purlins interposed to bard bricks. This layer is the base on which 3 or 4 cm of lime mortar is poured directly onto the Arabic tile (U= 3.45 W/m2 ºK.)
- The "Catalan" style flat roof is made up of three layers of ceramic tiles plus the floor, supported by purlins, which are in turn supported by the roof structure (U= 3.33 W/m2 ºK.)
- The floor that divides the commercial premises is made of unidirectional wooden beams and covered with a two-threaded revolving floor of ceramic pieces. The hydraulic floor is supported by a 2 or 3 cm lime mortar filling. (U= 2.42 W/m2 ºK.) [6]

Surveys of residents:

From surveys conducted to residents (Table 8), which were answered by 32% of them, it is possible to know the current status of the building (Tables 1 and 2), as well as inferring a well-being indicator (Table 3). It can also be gathered from the surveys the degree of a person's liking on the changes required for the inclusion of new measures to improve the current situation. All the information collected during the study has provided an understanding of what their needs are, and the relevance that each resident gives to them (Table 4). Finally, it is appreciated that any measure that can technically solve a deficiency, may not necessarily imply an improvement in the well-being of the residents (table 5). The ultimate aim of the proposed questionnaire is to evaluate the degree of acceptance of common energy saving measures by the residents of a block of homes. The form used for the survey is shown in table 7.

Electric radiators	54,17
Air Conditioner	37,50
LGP furnace	08,33

Table 2. Survey results on Heating Systems

Do not have	41,67
Air Conditioner	58,33

Table 3. Survey results on Refrigeration Systems

	Winter	
Bearable	65,50	%
Hard to bear	20,83	%
Pretty hard to bear	04,17	%
Very hard to bear	0,00	%
Unbearable	0,00	%
No answer	12,50	%

Table 4. Survey results on thermal comfort in winter and summer,

Completely acceptable	08,33
Acceptable	54,17
Mostly unacceptable	12,50
Completely	04,17
No answer	20,83

Tabla 5. Survey results on the acceptability of measures

Bearable	25,00
Hard to bear	12,50
Pretty hard to bear	37,50
Very hard to bear	0,00 %
Unbearable	0,00 %
No answer	25,00

Tabla 6. Survey results on uncertainty degree on the economic charges distribution among neighbours.

1. Do you home have a heating system installed?
2. If answered yes to Q1, which system do you have?

Electric radiators	
Air Conditioner	
LGP furnace	

3. Does your home have a cooling system installed?
4. Rate the comfort degree you perceive during winter

Bearable	
Hard to bear	
Pretty hard to bear	
Very hard to bear	
Unbearable	

5. Rate the comfort degree you perceive during summer

Bearable	
Hard to bear	
Pretty hard to bear	
Very hard to bear	
Unbearable	

1. Would you be willing to accept changes in your building to help improving the comfort?

Completely acceptable	
Acceptable	
Mostly unacceptable	
Completely unacceptable	
No answer	

2. How do you rate the economic cost these improvements would mean?

Completely acceptable	
Acceptable	
Mostly unacceptable	
Completely unacceptable	
No answer	

Tabla 7. Survey Questionaire Model used

Energy simulator:

The evaluation of the energy consumption demand has been carried out using, as already indicated, the tools endorsed by the Spanish Ministry of Energy, which enable obtaining the energy efficiency rating in existing residential buildings, and easing a detailed study to improve the resulting rate. In this study the simulation results were compared with the real energy consumption data, by means of the electricity and gas bills of the visited homes. The obtained model indicates that the maximum demand of energy occurs during winter time, and not that much in summer (Fig.4). In terms of the buildings' envelope, results indicate that the most generalized losses arise from the rear facades, where the is almost no isolation at all. Another construction element where significant losses are produced is through the roof of the buildings.

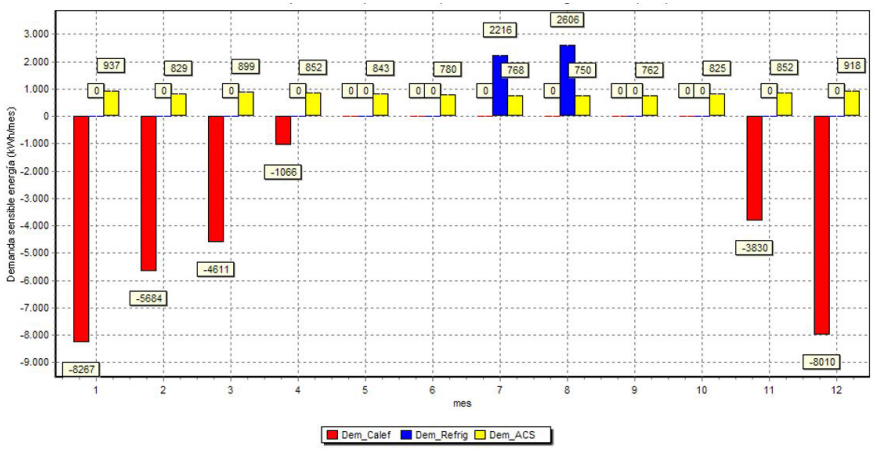


Figure 4. Energy consumption demand of a modelized building (kWh/month)

Measurements:

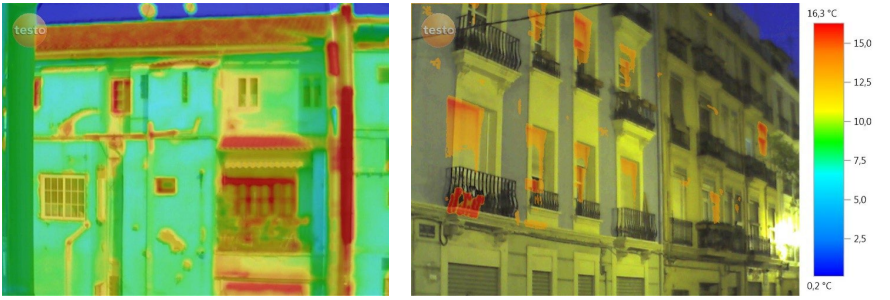


Figure 5. Thermografy measurements taken for inner and outer facades (note the effect of shadowing over facades thermal performace) Source: (Vicente Blanca 2012).

The thermographic measurements performed over the facades of the buildings under study confirm the result of the simulation modelling. The most significant losses occur through the rear facades and the wooden enclosures (Fig. 5).

4. DISCUSSION

Concerning the proposal of a global improvement of the building's thermal envelope, , it is concluded that about 10 cm of insulation would be needed, to reduce CO2 emissions, until the letter initially obtained in the energy rating, which was an E, is modified. This thickness would be required to be enlarged to 10cm for the facades and roofs and, in addition, to install low emission glass windows, to reach a qualification of D, one level above the current one [7].

A possible way to alleviate the economic effort that the building envelope global improvement would mean, considering the very long amortization periods estimated, is to make specific improvements in particular points, like only isolating the clearly deficient facades,which are those facing the inner courtyard, or to restore the windows and their shields [8].

Obviously CO2 emissions are reduced to a minor amount, but if it is related to the investment to be made in each case, from the perspective of the optimum cost of the action, it would be more feasible to consider this type of intervention, taking into account the specific climatic conditions of Valencia.

In relation to the possible position of the thermal insulation in the facades studied, it could be concluded that in the main facade which is very thick and has a high thermal inertia, the placement of the insulation is not excessively relevant. Furthermore, in the walls of the rear facades, which are very thin and have a high level of inertia, the differences between the two situations are more pronounced, although not substantial. In these cases, placing the insulation on the inside of the façade has a significantly better performance in winter conditions, but worse than in summer. On the outside, the behaviour is the opposite, that is, it works better in summer. In any case, considering that many of the main façades of the buildings in the neighbourhood are protected, if the installation of the insulation on them were planned, it would only be possible to intervene on the inside.

With regard to the façade openings, it has been observed that the original woodwork was made of wood, an important aspect given the low conductivity of said material. Nevertheless, it has been found that many of

the original woodwork has been replaced and, in the case of the solar protection, it has been altered or removed. The aim is to recover and improve the thermal behaviour of the original damaged wooden windows, including their protection (blinds, shutters, gazebos, etc.), which in many cases has been removed. In this sense, it is understood that the most interesting option would be to repair the carpentry by placing flashing to improve its behaviour with regard to air permeability and the arrangement of the corresponding glazing beads to be able to place double glazing with a chamber, so that, if the replacement of original glass is considered, normally of very little thickness, ranging between 3 and 6 mm. by 4/12/4 [9][10]

If intervention on the enclosure and on the installations is considered, it is concluded that CO2 emissions are reduced, but not enough to reach a letter C in the energy rating [11]. Only the installation of a biomass boiler could achieve a letter B. As these are through houses with two opposite facades, it favours good ventilation, an important aspect especially in summer [12]. Another system typical of this type of building for natural ventilation is the staircase itself. In order for it to work properly, in addition to the usual openings to the interior courtyards, it is vital that it also has them at the top and bottom of the stairwell, that is, in the hallway and the roof [13]. It has been observed that, in many cases, the original doors of the building have been replaced, which had practicable elements in the upper part to favour the entry of air and the consequent ventilation through the staircase. The recovery of these simple natural ventilation systems has been considered, given that the cost-benefit ratio in summer is very beneficial, but incorporating control systems over the openings so that they can remain closed in winter [14][15][16].

CONCLUSIONS

Given the difficulty created in the collection of energy data, as a result of the distrust created by the occupants of the homes and the lack of information, it has been very positive to provide the homes with intelligent meters.

There have been no relevant changes in the results obtained with the use of the software backed by the Ministry of Industry, Energy and Tourism, when characterising the energy of the homes.

In a warm climate, such as the city of Valencia, the years needed to recover the investment, if it is considered the rehabilitation of the entire enclosure, are more than 10 years. This means that energy service companies are not interested in managing the renovation of buildings with these climatic characteristics. In this sense, the most relevant result is the improvement of the thermal comfort and the quality of life of the users, more so if we consider that a high percentage of homes do not have heating systems. Another problem detected is the high number of uninhabited dwellings in the buildings of the neighbourhood. This differentiates the theoretical results obtained by means of the computer tool from the real global consumption data for each building. This situation is aggravated by the fact that most occupied dwellings are occupied by users over 65 years of age and, in many cases, they live alone. All these problems together mean that the owners are not interested in investing in their houses' rehabilitation.

The very uniformity of the cornice heights in the buildings, that make up the neighbourhood, avoids the shadows cast by facilitating the incorporation and use of renewable energies through thermal and photovoltaic solar panels, notably improving the building's energy management [17].

The division of the urban development, the similarity in construction, the occupation of the houses and the socio-economic study carried out, allows us to extrapolate the values obtained, as well as the indicators, to other blocks in the same neighbourhood.

REFERENCES

[1] Jiménez Alcañiz, C. (2014): "Análisis de las metodologías para la recuperación patrimonial de entornos urbanos protegidos. Propuesta metodológica: desde los valores históricos a los nuevos modelos energéticos. Russafa desde el siglo XIX" Tesis Doctoral. Valencia.

[2] Ayuntamiento de Valencia. REVISIÓN SIMPLIFICADA DEL PLAN GENERAL DE VALENCIA. CATALOGO DE BIENES Y ESPACIOS PROTEGIDOS. Ordenación Estructural. 2010

[3] Romera, M.: El potencial de la rehabilitación energética en viviendas individuales residencial colectiva. 2019 VI congreso EECN Madrid

[4] UNE-EN ISO 10551:2002 Ergonomía del ambiente térmico. Evaluación de la influencia del ambiente térmico empleando escalas de juicio subjetivo.¬

[5] Ceresuela, A.(1985). Rehabilitación ambiental con métodos tradicionales. Colegio Oficial de Arquitectos de Madrid.

[6] REY, F.J. y VELASCO, E. (2010). Eficiencia energética en edificios. Certificación y Auditorías Energéticas. Ed. Thomson. Valladolid

[7] Las claves de la rehabilitación energética. (www.buderus.es)

[8] Zabalza, I, Llera, E, Aranda, A., Martínez, A.Scarpellini, S., Barrio, F. 2007.El ahorro energético en el nuevo Código Técnico de la Edificación. Fundación CONFEMETAL. Madrid.

[9] ARANDA USÓN, Alfonso. Eficiencia energética en instalaciones y equipamiento de edificios. Zaragoza: Prensas Universitarias de Zaragoza, 2010. ISBN 9788492774968.

[10] Martín, E.: La importancia de correcto uso de las carpinterías en el confort térmico: el caso del edifico de la sede administrativa de la ULPGC. 2019 Universidad de las Palmas de Gran Canarias.

[11] Asociación Española de Normalización y Certificación. UNE EN ISO 13790 Eficiencia térmica de los edificios. Madrid: Aenor, 2008.

[12] Consejo Superior de los Colegios de Arquitectos de España. CTE-HE Ahorro de energía: aplicación a edificios de uso residencial vivienda - DAV. 2ª rev. ed. Madrid: Consejo Superior de los Colegios de Arquitectos de España, 2007. ISBN 9788493561901.

[13] COSCOLLANO RODRÍGUEZ, Jos. Ahorro energético en la construcción y rehabilitación de edificios. Madrid: Paraninfo, 2001. ISBN 842832803X.

[14] FISCH, Klaus. Instale fácilmente medidas de ahorro energético. Madrid: Susaeta, 2000. ISBN 9788430593903.

[15] GRANADOS, Helena; and Fundación Laboral de la Construcción. Rehabilitación energética de edificios. 1st ed. Madrid: Tornapunta, 2014. ISBN 9788415977230.

[16] DÍEZ RUIZ, Irene. Una nueva oportunidad para las ciudades españolas. Extracto del Informe Cambio Global España 2020/50-Programa Ciudades. ECOsostenible, 2010, no. 1, pp. 3 edb. ISSN 1699-3942.

[17] ARANDA USÓN, Alfonso; ORTEGA BIELSA, Abeland DÍAZ RAMÍREZ, Maryorí. Energías renovables: integración de energías renovables en edificios. Zaragoza: Prensas Universitarias de Zaragoza, 2011. ISBN 9788492521241.

PAPER #5.17

COMPARATIVE STUDY OF SUSTAINABLE THERMAL INSULATING MATERIALS IN ARCHITECTURE

Jose Vercher[a], Joaquin Segura[a], Enrique Gil[b], Angeles Mas[a], Carlos Lerma[a], Carlos Silvestre[a]
[a] Deparment of Architectural Constructions, Universitat Politècnica de València, Spain
[b] Deparment of Continuum Mechanics and Theory of Structures, Universitat Politècnica de València, Spain

ABSTRACT

The study aims to know the alternatives to thermal insulation currently used in the type of double-sheet enclosure, with or without an air chamber, and thermal insulation inside. Objective data is provided to justify the value of new eco-friendly thermal insulating materials that allow a more respectful architecture with the environment.
Ecological awareness today reaches any discipline. Architecture does not escape this concern and, therefore, new, greener materials are introduced. On the other hand, the new regulations advocate for more efficient, ecological and sustainable construction.
In this sense, the new materials come from natural sources or from recycled products, which, through simple transformation processes, achieve a new product that complies with current regulations, as well as new social and architectural requirements.
To know the characteristics of these sustainable thermal insulating materials, a comparative study of different products is carried out, contrasting their characteristics and properties. The formats that best fit the double-sheet enclosure solution are the blanket, board and bulk. The selected thermal insulators are natural cork, cotton, hemp, cellulose, sheep wool and wood fiber.
In order to determine their behavior, several technical features are studied. In addition, some environmental properties are evaluated to complete the comparison. Various studied aspects are the origin of the raw material, the consumption of energy and the level of emissions generated by the manufacture.
All values and data obtained show the thermal and ecological insulating value of the studied sustainable materials against those currently used in the construction of enclosure systems.

KEYWORDS

Thermal insulation; sustainable; recyclable; comparative study; ecological.

INTRODUCTION

Over time, humans have taken into consideration their environment regarding architectural construction in terms of the collection of materials, the climatic conditions and the adaptation to the surroundings. However, this adaptation has been abandoned mainly due to the technological developments that have been incorporated during the industrialization. From that moment on, we have arrived to a point in which the construction of buildings consumes 40% of the materials, generates 40% of wastes and consumes 40% of the primary energy in the European Union (Baño & Vigil-Escalera 2005). A great amount of this consumption takes place due to the building activity in cities. Technology has improved living conditions and has provided more suitable conditions to increase the amount of population. Nonetheless, it has now a responsible role in the development of sustainable ways to preserve and keep improving social welfare. In this sense, many courses are being taken

at this precise moment. In a long term research, bioinspired materials and artificial reproduction of existing substances are two of the most growing research fields. Regarding building conditions, thanks to the growth of a more ecological consciousness, a change towards sustainable construction is slowly taking place. This transition is necessary considering that if we maintain the current consumption rate, the stocks of the different fossil fuels will disappear: between 35 and 45 years for petrol, between 60 and 70 for natural gas and between 200 and 230 for carbon (BP 2013). Hence, sustainable construction, which is based on respecting and adapting to the environment, saving resources and energy, and considering the users, becomes a wide field of research to reduce our consumption rate. Embracing both sustainable construction and technological development, this paper outlines another approach towards what a future based on technology could be: the use of more natural, sustainable and environmentally friendly materials in the building industry.

> The use of fossil fuels for heating, lighting and ventilation of buildings is responsible for the 50% of the global heating, being transport another of its main causes (25%) (Edwards 2005, 4).

Thus, amongst the variety of natural and environmentally friendly materials, this work aims to provide further information on those which are thermal insulators, sustainable, available in the market and feasible to implement in the most common brick wall constructive technics in Spain: the double layer façade with and without air chamber. Consequently, this study is framed on the second condition of the sustainable construction (saving resources and energy) since it will delve into the study of thermal insulator materials that are suitable, have low environmental impact and have properties with high influence on the energetic behaviour of buildings. In order to consider these materials as potential substitutes of the traditional thermal insulators they will need prove of being not only more sustainable but also provided with at least as good properties as the traditional materials.

1. MATERIALS AND METHODS

The aim of this paper is to present the research made on several sustainable thermal insulators in order to review their potential as substitutes of the traditional materials. To do so, a precise methodology has been applied along the investigation. It consists of a comparison between the sustainable materials and with the traditional ones both in technical aspects and in environmental features. The first consideration emphasizes their suitability to perform as thermal insulators, since they should behave as well as de usual thermal insulators, while the second allows determining the level of sustainability and environmental impact amongst them. To accomplish this comparison, their technical features and environmental characteristics have been translated into numeric parameters. The studied technical aspects have been the following: *Thermal conductivity, λ [W/mK]:* it is an indicator of the heating transmission capacity and represents the ease of the material to conduct it. The smaller the value of λ, the better the thermal insulator. *Thickness*, *e [m]*: to achieve an equitable comparison, a certain thermal resistance is fixed, R = 1m^{2}K/W. Thus, for the same value of thermal resistance, the value of the thickness of each material is obtained

$$e = R \cdot \lambda \qquad [\,1\,]$$

Where: R = thermal resistance [m^{2}K/W]
λ = thermal conductivity [W/mK]

All the studied materials present a thickness of 40 or 50 mm as the value that would correspond with the closest commercial value available.
Hygroscopicity [%]: the capacity to absorb or spread the humidity in the air. It promotes the equilibrium of internal humidity. The higher the percentage, the better hydrophilic behaviour.
Water steam diffusion, Sd [m]: the capacity of a material to allow water steam to move through it. Materials with a good water steam diffusion are prone to expel out the steam.

$$Sd = \mu \cdot e \qquad [2]$$

Where: μ = resistance to steam diffusion
e = thickness of the material [m]
Being Sd: <4: optimal
4-7: satisfactory
7-15: bad
15-25: very bad
>25: impermeable barrier to steam

Thermal diffusivity, α [m^2/s]: it is the expression of the capacity of a particular material to transmit a variation of temperature in a specific time. The lower the value, the longer it will take the material to transmit a variation of temperature from the exterior to the interior.

$$\alpha = \frac{\lambda}{\rho \cdot C\rho} \qquad [3]$$

Where: λ = thermal conductivity [W/mK]
ρ = density [kg/m^3]
Cρ = specific heat [J/kgK]

Fungi and insect resistance: all the studied materials present this feature.
Fire resistance: it is expressed according to the Euroclasses:

A Non-combustible, no contribution to fire
B Combustible, very limited contribution to fire
C Combustible, limited contribution to fire
D Combustible, middle contribution to fire
E Combustible, high contribution to fire
F Unclassified, no specific fire behaviour

Price [€/m^2]: the indicated price belongs to the material according to the appropriate commercial thickness to ensure R = 1m^2K/W.

The environmental characteristics of each material can also be translated into tangible numbers to facilitate the comparison between their values. In that sense, the following magnitudes are the ones that have been evaluated:
Energy [MJ/kg]: total energy consumed along its life cycle.
Emissions [kgCO^2/kg]: CO_2 emissions during the whole life cycle of each material.
Biodegradability: is the ability of organic substances and materials to be broken down into simpler substances through the action of enzymes from microorganisms. If this process is complete, the initial organic substances are entirely converted into simple inorganic molecules such as water, carbon dioxide and methane (Ecozema 2020).
Recyclability: is a characteristic of materials that maintains useful physical or chemical properties after serving their original purpose and therefore allows them to be reused or remanufactured into additional products through a recognized process. All the studied materials are recyclable but the bulk format is itself harder to recycle.
After determining all the numeric parameters considered in the study, it is necessary to narrow the scope of the research and adequate it to a feasible analysis which could provide conclusions. To do so, four conditions have been applied to preselect the materials (Fig. 1): the material must be sustainable, thermal insulator, the material must be available in the market and it must be feasible to implement in the most common construction systems.
The double layer façade with and without air chamber are the most common brick wall constructive technics in Spain. This condition is applied to reduce the variety of formats of the materials to either board or blanket and bulk. The formers are meant to be implemented through fixation while the latter is used as insufflated insulator. The materials that fulfil all these requirements are potential substitutes of the traditional thermal insulators used in the building industry. The

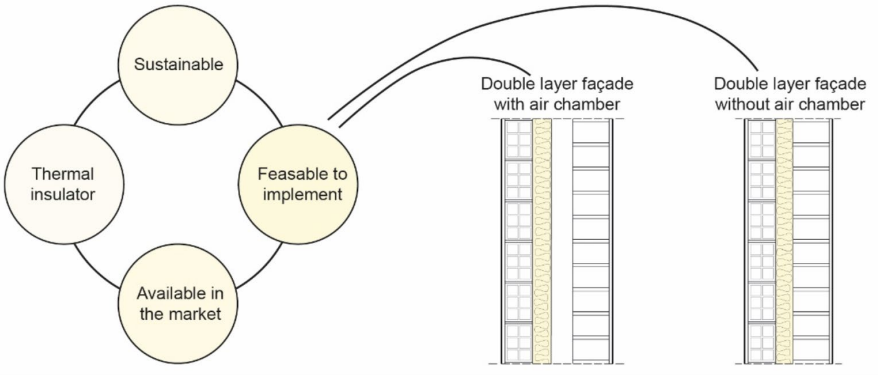


Figure 1. Conditions to select a material.

resulting ones are cork, hemp, wood fibre, cellulose, sheep wool, cotton and mineral wool. They are commented in the paper hereunder. Once the materials have been specified, the condition of availability in the market will determine which formats are studied for each material. This specification on the configuration of each of them is worth to be highlighted because it is not equivalent to all the materials. There are some that can be transformed to be implemented with different technics while others are limited to a single application (Table 1).

Materials	Format		
	Board	Blanket	In bulk
Cork	x		x
Hemp		x	
Wood fibre	x	x	x
Cellulose			x
Sheep wool	x	x	x
Cotton	x	x	x
Mineral wool		x	x
Glass wool		x	
Extruded polystyrene	x		

Table 1. Formats available in the market.

1.1. Cork

Natural cork consists of the rind of the cork oak, which is made up of death cells that are filled with a gas similar to air. This gas constitutes the 90% in volume of the cells and is responsible for the low weight and compressibility of the cork. The extraction of the material from the tree does not damage it, since this process takes place mainly in July when it offers less resistance to be detached, and it does not require cutting down the tree, providing a renewable and durable process (Barnacork 2020).
Cork presents a great mechanical strength due to its ordered cell structure that does not allow gaps between them. Thanks to its resistance against atmospheric changes and the impossibility to rot, cork does not suffer dimensional variations along its useful life (Barnacork 2012). The product is 100% natural, since it only needs water steam and an increase of pressure. The glue used to ensemble agglomerate cork should be water based and totally biodegradable (ICSuro 2020).

Figure 2. Cork: in bulk and board.

1.2. Hemp

Hemp fibre is subjected to a genetic selection process to ensure that the chosen varieties present a low quantity of THC, the main psychoactive constituent of cannabis (under 0,2%), an amount supported by the European Union (López 2018). These fibres contain lignin, which provides strength and resistance, and the absence of proteins avoids the attack by insects. Since these fibres are renewable, biodegradable and grow fast, hemp is considered a sustainable material. The life cycle consists of the growth of the plant for more than a hundred days and the extraction of the fibres by moisturizing the plant (*Tipos de aislantes. LANA DE CÁÑAMO 2020*).
It is durable, comfortable and presents an ecological process without requiring chemical agents throughout it (Rodríguez 2014). In addition, it allows the recovery of the soil where it is produced thanks to its herbicide effect (Cannabric 2008).

Figure 3. Hemp: blanket.

1.3. Sheep wool

Most of the raw material comes from shearing sheep, what is a necessary process in the life of sheep that should occur every year. This means that the basic element is naturally designed to provide thermal comfort while being elastic, hygroscopic and able to breath. Shearing one sheep can provide three to five kg of wool that should be transformed by bleaching the wool with a borax salt treatment after removing the dirt by washing it in hot water. Then, a 15% of polyester binder is added to gather all the fibres and the thermal insulator is ready to be implemented (T*ipos de aislantes. LANA DE OVEJA 2020*).
The final product is renewable, recycled and recyclable and contributes to improve the environment in a social aspect by helping to develop the wool sector (*RMT-NITA WOOL* 2020).

Figure 4. Sheep wool: in bulk & blanket.

1.4. Cotton

The thermal insulators derived from cotton are obtained from recycled textile products, thus, the raw material is not totally natural but it is completely recycled. The transformation process consists of a shredding operation to extract single fibres that are later gathered into a multi-fibre product.
For this particular material, the ecology of the process can only be guaranteed in the production but the whole process is sustainable in time. Cotton insulators need a special treatment to resist fire, fungi and insects and help to reduce the production of emissions and waste (*RMT-NITA COTTON* 2020).

Figure 5. Cotton: in bulk & blanket.

1.5. Cellulose

Once again, the origin of the basic material is not natural but recycled. It consists of newspapers that have not been sold. The whole transformation process is based on collecting newspapers to transform them by means of grounding and borax treatments into a bulk thermal insulator (*RMT-NITA CELL* 2020).
This alternative presents great resistance to biological attacks while helping to create dry environments where it is incorporated. Cellulose insulators also provide great comfort and acoustic performance thanks to their thermal lag (8-12h) (AISLAnat 2020).

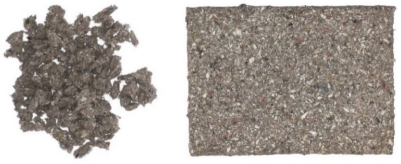


Figure 6. Cellulose: in bulk & blanket.

1.6. Wood fibres

Grinded wood is the raw material used to produce this thermal insulator. Forestry and wooden industry generate wastes in form of sawdust and cutting pieces that are transformed by means of grinding and shredding either in a wet or a dry process.
Wood fibres insulators are comfortable, ecological and sustainable. Their temperature is stable before temperature variations and are suitable to be implemented in almost every constructive system. However, they are mainly produced out of Spain (GUTEX 2020).

Figure 7. Wood fibres: in bulk & blanket.

2. RESULTS

The following table contains the fundamental technical and environmental features to understand the behavior of each material. The R-values and U-values have not been included for space, as they can be approximated from thermal conductivity.

		Technical features							Environmental features		
		Density ρ (kg/m³)	Thermal conductivity λ (W/mK)	Hygroscopicity (% of its own weight)	Water steam diffusion Sd (m)	Thermal diffusivity α(m²/s)	Fire resistance (class)	Price (€/m²)	Energy (MJ/kg)	Emissions (kgCO₂/kg)	Biodegradable
Cork	Board	100	0.037	7	4.20	2.22 E-07	E	14.82	7.54	-1.72	Yes
	In bulk	65	0.040	7	4.20	3.68 E-07	E	10.55	6.75	-1.70	Yes
Hemp	Blanket	30	0.041	17	0.50	5.94 E-07	F	7.10	-	-0.62	Yes
Sheep wool	Blanket	14	0.043	33	0.50	1.81 E-06	F	7.50	18.92	1.55	Yes
	Board	35	0.035	33	0.40	5.88 E-07	F	10.29	16.64	1.45	Yes
	In bulk	20	0.041	33	0.50	1.21 E-06	B-s3d0	4.60	10.96	0.71	Yes
Cotton	Blanket	25	0.036	24	0.50	1.31 E-06	F	6.00	9.69	0.70	Yes
	Board	60	0.034	24	0.40	5.15 E-07	F	9.00	9.69	0.70	Yes
	In bulk	20	0.042	24	0.50	1.91 E-06	B-s2d0	2.20	7.46	0.46	Yes
Cellulose	In bulk	40-60	0.038	30	0.60	3.62 E-07	B-s1d0	2.12	5.55	-0.65	Yes
Wood fibres	Blanket	50	0.036	20	0.80	3.43 E-07	E	4.62	19.59	0.20	Yes
	Board	110	0.038	20	1.60	1.65 E-07	E	8.00	20.40	0.23	Yes
	In bulk	40	0.038	20	0.80	4.52 E-07	E	2.06	11.15	-0.34	Yes
Extruded polystyrene	Board	32	0.034	No	60	7.33 E-07	E	12.66	57.47	2.65	No
Glass wool	Blanket	35	0.032	No	0.40	1.14 E-06	F	7.45	44.81	2.95	No
Mineral wool	Blanket	70	0.034	No	0.40	6.07 E-07	A1	7.00	18.15	1.26	No
	In bulk	70	0.037	No	0.40	6.07 E-07	A1	6.47	20.30	1.03	No

Table 2. Technical and environmental features.

CONCLUSION

In this section, the conclusions extracted from the analysis and comparison of different traditional and alternative thermal insulators are presented, with respect to their technical and environmental features. The outcomes are divided in two parts, according to the insulator format. This decision responds to the different implementation in each case. The thermal insulators in bulk are generally used to be insufflated inside an air chamber while the blanket and board formats are meant to be attached vertically to a layer of the façade. The best in bulk insulators in a global scene are granulated cork, wood fibres and cellulose. While cork outstands due to its environmental factors, such as the fixation of CO_2 during its process (-1.70 $kgCO_2/kg$), wood fibres show better technical characteristics is aspects like the thermal conductivity (0.038 W/mK). However, cellulose insulator presents great performances in both fields and has a really competitive price (2.12 €/m^2). Regarding technical values, its thermal conductivity (0.038 W/mK) is one of the lowest of all the studied materials. It has a good hygroscopic behaviour (30%), an optimal behaviour in terms of thermal diffusivity and its fire resistance is type B. Environmentally speaking, cellulose presents a low energy consumption (5.55 MJ/kg) and a negative value of CO_2 emissions (-0.65 $kgCO_2/kg$). A quite surprising outcome of the study is that the price of the traditional insulator materials, which was supposed to be one of their biggest advantages, appears to be at the same level as some alternatives. In relation to board and blanket formats, the best options are wood fibres blanket, cork board and cotton both in board and blanket. In this case, each of the mentioned materials outstands for a reason. The wood fibres blanket presents one of the lowest prices (4.62 €/m^2) while cork board insulator presents excellent environmental features such as its negative level of CO_2 emissions (-1.72 $KgCO_2/kg$). With regard to blanket and board cotton, both present similar features. Blanket format stands out due to its low price (6 €/m^2), while board format is preeminent in relation with the thermal conductivity (0.034 W/mK). Nevertheless, both of them show comparable hygroscopic behaviour, with one of the higher values of the analysed materials (24%). Their water steam diffusion is optimal while their fire resistance is class F, the lowest. Concerning environmental performances, the energy provided during their life process is 9.69 MJ/kg and their level of CO_2 emission reveals one of the lowest values with only 0.7 $kgCO_2/kg$. Furthermore, due to their vegetable origin, they are biodegradable and recyclable materials. As a result, it is possible to acknowledge that due to its great balance between environmental behaviour, low price and good thermal conductivity, cotton thermal insulator is the most complete of the studied alternatives. Ultimately, this research can confirm that the best sustainable alternatives to traditional thermal insulators are cellulose in bulk format and cotton both in blanket and board.

REFERENCES

AISLAnat. "El aislante de celulosa." Accessed February 12,2020. http://www.aislantesaislanat.es/ficha-tecnica/.

ArtChist. "Tipos de aislantes. LANA DE CÁÑAMO." Accessed February 12, 2020. https://artchist.blogspot.com/2015/09/tipos-de-aislantes-lana-de-canamo.html.

ArtChist. "Tipos de aislantes. LANA DE OVEJA." Accessed February 12, 2020. https://artchist.blogspot.com/2015/09/tipos-de-aislamiento-lana-de-oveja.html.

Baño, A. & Vigil-Escalera, A. "Guía de construcción sostenible." Published November, 2005. http://istas.net/descargas/CCConsSost.pdf.

Barnacork. "Catálogo aislamientos." Published 2012. http://barnacork.com/11Boris/fileWeb/catalogo-aislamientos-2012.pdf.

Barnacork. "¿Qué es el corcho?" Accessed February 12, 2020. http://www.barnacork.com/el-corcho/ique-es-el-corcho.html.

BP. "Statistical Review of World Energy." Published June, 2013. http://large.stanford.edu/courses/2013/ph240/lim1/docs/bpreview.pdf.

Cannabric. "Ficha técnica Cannabric." Published December 2008. http://www.cannabric.com/media/documentos/1c5e2_CANNABRIC_ficha_tecnica_y_ensayos.pdf.

Ecozema. "biodegradability & compostability." Accessed February 12, 2020. https://ecozema.com/en/why/biodegradability-compostability/.

Edwards B. 2005. *Rough guide to sustainability.* London: RIBA Enterprises.

GUTEX. "Madera – el material aislante ideal." Accessed February 2020. https://gutex.es/sortiment/produkteigenschaften/sommerlicher-hitzeschutz/.

(ICSuro) Institut Català del Suro. "Propiedades del corcho." Accessed February 12, 2020. https://www.icsuro.com/es/propiedades-corcho/.

López S. "El cannabis le planta cara al ladrillo." *El País*, October 13, 2018, https://elpais.com/economia/2018/10/11/actualidad/1539248215_081925.html.

RMT-NITA. "Datos técnicos." Accessed February 12, 2020. http://rmt-nita.es/esp/cotton-datos-tecnicos.php.

RMT-NITA. "RMT-NITA CELL." Accessed February 12, 2020. http://rmt-nita.es/esp/cell.php.

RMT-NITA. "RMT-NITA COTTON." Accessed February 12, 2020. http://rmt-nita.es/esp/cotton.php.

RMT-NITA. "RMT-NITA WOOL." Accessed February 12, 2020. http://rmt-nita.es/esp/wool.php.

RMT-NITA. "Ventajas ambientales." Accessed February 12, 2020. http://rmt-nita.es/esp/cotton-ventajas-ambientales.php.

Rodríguez H., "Aislamientos Naturales I: Productos industriales de cáñamo." *Mimbrea*, 2014, http://www.mimbrea.com/aislanientos-naturales-i-productos-industriales-de-canamo/.

6

BLOCK 6: RESTORATION, CONSERVATION AND RENOVATION

PAPER #6.01

RESEARCHES AND PROJECTS BETWEEN CONSERVATION AND RENOVATION FOR THE FUTURE OF THE CITIES

Stefano Francesco Musso[a], Giovanna Franco[a]
[a] Architecture and Design Department, University of Genoa, Genoa, Italy

ABSTRACT

The paper proposes the synthesis of some recent research experiences carried out by the authors, in Genoa and Liguria Region. These researches, committed by public authorities (Ministry of Cultural Goods and Heritage, Regional Department of Culture) and public owners (the University of Genoa among others) are both theoretical and applied to single buildings or architectural complexes. Objects of the researches are, in some case, ancient monuments (in need of restoration, re-use and renovation) located in the consolidated tissue of the contemporary city. In other cases, we worked on Architectures belonging to the Modern Movement, spread off in our whole region that need to be known and appreciated by the community, as first, in order to be conserved and reused respecting their architectural, constructive, historical and social values. All the researches show a high interdisciplinary interaction and collaboration among experts in architectural restoration and conservation, consolidation of traditional buildings, history and archival researches, building physics, chemistry, ICT and digitalization, energy efficiency, thermal enhancements and technical equipment. These works have led to important operative consequences in terms of safeguarding, restoration, renovation and re-use, through the social engagement of local communities, with significant impacts on the future of the contemporary city. To quote some examples, we worked on the monumental complex of the "Albergo dei Poveri" in Genova (almost 60.000 square meters of total covered surface, built from XVII to XIX C.), preparing a general masterplan for its complete reuse and restoration (for crowdfunding). Another real case has been the historic palace Belimbau (one of the most important of the "Rolli Palaces" dating from medieval age and transformed since XVII C.). Thanks to our researches, the University obtained in this case some funds to restore the monumental rooms and open them to the city. We also worked on the ancient former church of the Jesuits' college (XVII C.), now abandoned and in need of a future destination and on the Prince Andrea Doria's Palace, one of the major Renaissance Villas in Genoa and, recently, on the Doge's Palace, in the heart of the city. Ancient and recent buildings are essential parts of the collective memory of the contemporary cities and built landscapes. Their permanence and transmission to the next generations are thus essential for a conscious, creative and not oblivious future and for human well-being. The paper deals with all these aspects going beyond the single case studies.

KEYWORDS

Conservation; renovation, cultural heritage; interdisciplinarity; digitalization.

INTRODUCTION

The expansion, for fields of interest and meanings, of the term "heritage", as suggested by the Italian Code of Cultural Heritage, leads not only the scientific community to question the values (testimonial, historical, economic, social and of other nature) conveyed by ancient but also

by recent and even very recent architectures. In this perspective also their fate and their protection, enhancement, redevelopment or, conversely, their definite oblivion and destruction, are nowadays on the fore as a matter of discussion. The continuously expanding universe of artefacts to which conservation and restoration necessarily turn their attention is in fact extraordinarily rich, for historical, constructive and formal variations, in time and space, and it escapes any claim of total and autonomous domination by a single discipline and, even more by individual technical operators. In fact, the forms and spaces of the artefacts change, according to the resources, places and historical moments of their realization, as well as their constructive principles, the techniques of working materials, the executive or installation devices adopted by blacksmiths, bricklayers and carpenters, belonging to the different material cultures involved. The causes of the processes and of degradation phenomena that afflict the buildings are also very changeable, from place to place, from time to time and from building to building, and this outlines a universe of very vast and complex problems that no single expert can face alone. We must therefore ask ourselves, since there is no answer that is valid forever and for everyone, whether we recognize and want to take those elements of our heritage as a real legacy of which to take care of, with the contradictions and shadows that every process of "patrimonialization" brings with itself. For this reason, it is necessary to raise the level of training, to allow future professionals and technicians to handle the increasingly complex demands and problems posed by contemporary society in regard with the fate of our heritage(s). The paper briefly illustrates the structure and the training objectives of the School of Specialization in Architectural Heritage and Landscape of the University of Genoa (Master-post-Master Programme), its links with the main cultural institutions and local and national bodies in charge of tutorship and safeguarding, its relations with advanced research activities and its impact on education.

1. RESEARCH AND INTERVENTION ON CULTURAL HERITAGE

1.1. An interdisciplinary path of higher education

The post-graduate training course of the School of Specialization responds to the extreme complexity of the field of architectural restoration, that involves many specialists. Among them are surveyors, analysts, chemists, physicists, technicians of different kind, restorers, expert in the various materials and constructive elements involved, structural engineers, historians, art historians and experts in artistic techniques and many others. The School, therefore, trains professionals characterized by a strong technical profile, rich in articulated and complex skills and competences but, above all, in those of cultural nature, rising their awareness and ability to rule the many aspects, sometimes even conflicting, that characterize this delicate field of study, design and practical work.

The School of Genoa has therefore a strong multi-layering and operative imprinting and the curriculum with the organization of teaching activities follow the phases and the sequence of operations that characterize a real restoration project, albeit in the "didactic" time of the two years of the course. In order to strengthen this objective, the final thesis also retraces the same analytical and planning path, put to the test in the "professional time" of about six months.

The teaching courses cover, in their articulation, the fundamental scientific, technical and cultural guidelines of restoration, nevertheless overcoming the apparent and rigid separation between the

two years of the course. The frontal teaching, the laboratory and practical experiences are therefore oriented to the acquisition of knowledge, skillsand competences necessary to carry out and to control the main and most common non-destructive analysis and diagnosis techniques on the material consistency of buildings and their behaviour over time. This involves a strong focus on documentary and archival investigations and rigorous architectural survey (through traditional and innovative techniques). Aside these, strong attention is given to chemical and physical, mineralogical-petrographic and technical-mechanical characterization of materials. Also the evaluation of the spatial and morphological characteristics of buildings, according to their potential use and compatible reuse, is crucial, as well as the exam of their technological and construction components, the analysis and diagnosis of decay phenomena, of structural instability, as well as of the environmental conditions that affect their consistency, stability, functionality and durability. Further, the School provides the knowledge and the necessary skills to design and coordinate the various forms and phases of intervention on existing buildings: from the preliminary design (of technical-economic feasibility) to the final and detailed one, including the methods of management of the entire building process. This includes the use of ICT tools, the knowledge of the construction phase, the direction and final assessment of the works, as well as the attention for fate of the restored good (planned maintenance and conservation, modes of use, management models). Within the didactic activity, at least one full day every week is dedicated to an "Interdisciplinary Laboratory". The laboratories are the instrument, the space and the occasion for outlining a path, guided by teachers, throughout the analytical-diagnostic inquires and elaborations, in the first year, and the design phases, in the second one. All activities regard a specific artefact and site, chosen in agreement with the bodies in charge of the protection and safeguard of cultural heritage or other local authorities, because of their cultural interest and on which they really intend to intervene with a restoration. By working on the selected artefact, the students have the chance to develop some clearly finalized studies and to elaborate on their basis a project characterized by correct proposals and feasible technical solutions for real needs. Moreover, the design choices must be culturally aware and coherent with the laws and regulations in force on the subject, with the different and often contradictory demands of protection, conservation, use and compatible re-use, environmental sustainability, improvement of energy and seismic behaviour, valorisation and future management of the restored good. Particular attention, during the first year of the programme, goes anyway to the use of information and communication technologies (ICT) for the cataloguing and management of data acquired during the study phases.

At the end of the first year, the students will acquire the following knowledge and develop the corresponding competences and skills:

- understand the architectural artefact, through the related studies of its geometries, building elements and materials, surfaces, structures and stability, spaces, accessibility, usability, functions and safety;
- understand the transformations of the building over times, relating the results of historical reconstructions from indirect sources and those deriving from direct archaeological analysis;
- evaluate the state of conservation of the building, as a whole and in its individual parts and construction components, recognizing phenomena of decay, damages, failures, deficits affecting materials and installations, construction elements, systems and structures;
- identify the causes and extent of damage, failures and deficits, assess the

vulnerability and level of exposure of the good to the aggression of environmental factors and related risks of different nature;
- assess the compatibility between the functions and current uses, the characteristics of the available space, the characters of the structures and the primary needs of conservation;
- manage sets of information of various kinds, complex, heterogeneous and evolving in time, through relational databases and, in general, digital data management systems (GIS, BIM, …);
- Identification of adequate criteria and guidelines for the design of the interventions of conservation, restoration and redevelopment of buildings and spaces of cultural interest.

The second year faces the elaboration of the real restoration project of the building object of interest during the first year. At the end of the second year, the student should therefore acquire the following knowledge and develop the corresponding competences and skills:
- consciously and critically use the results of the studies and of the analytical and diagnostic phases developed during the first year and integrate them where necessary;
- identify the general objectives of the project of restoration of the involved building and the strategies to pursue through a gradual focus (from the programmatic phase to the technical final report of the project and its graphical-digital and administrative elaborates);
- motivate the project's choices with reference to the contemporary methodological, disciplinary and cultural debate and to some similar significant examples of interventions carried out in recent years;
- adapt the project to the regulations (related to earthquake's resistance improvement, fire-proof, overpassing of architectural barriers, containment of energy consumption, ...), identifying solutions consistent with the conservation objectives, respecting the specificity of the protected property;
- choose the type of installations (heating, cooling, lighting, air treatment) necessary and most suitable, in relation with the conditions of use of the building, the needs of conservation and enhancement of the property and the current standards of regulation and comfort;
- choose the most appropriate materials, techniques and products for the restoration interventions, based on the specific needs of the building, the surrounding environmental conditions, their technical and commercial characteristics, in a cost-benefit conscious budget.

1.2. The Laboratory of Analytical Methods for Restoration and History of built Heritage (MARSC)

The teaching of restoration in the School of Genoa can count on the technical and operational support of the Laboratory of Analytical Methods for Restoration and History of the Built (MARSC Laboratory of high qualification of the University). The Laboratory comprehends three sections: dedicated to: analytical methods for architectural survey, archaeology of architecture and characterization of materials.

Among the research activities and the fields of applications developed by the section dedicated to the survey we can remember:
- rigorous longimetry for the three-dimensional survey of architecture and and solid modelling;
- topography for architecture;
- the rigorous analytical and digital, flat and three-dimensional analytical photogrammetry;
- simple and mosaic rectified photos for the relief of flat surfaces (ortho-photos), also deriving from clouds of points obtained through the use of laser scanners or with structure from motion techniques;

- advanced information systems for the management of the restoration project (interoperable relational data-bases, GIS, BIM, WEB-GIS);
- the treatment and quantitative analysis of digital images for the recognition of materials and decay phenomena and the simulation of the expected results of the restoration interventions;
- the construction of repertoires and repositories of adequate techniques of intervention in restoration.

The second section of the Laboratory, dedicated to the Archaeology of Architecture, is the development of the laboratory founded at the end of the 1980s by Tiziano Mannoni and is dedicated to the study of the constructions of the ancient and recent past, in their quality of direct "material sources". The section developed many methodological and applied researches within the field of stratigraphy and archaeology of architecture to reconstruct the history of the buildings and to date its materials and constructive elements. Also important are the analysis of documentary sources and the analysis of decay phenomena and structural instability conducted according to a historical perspective, in order to provide restoration designers with extensive and integrated elements of knowledge and evaluation in this field.

The third section of MARSC, is devoted to the study and characterization of the materials employed within buildings of historical and cultural interest. The areas of research regard the pre-industrial production of binders (with particular regard to dolomitic limestone), the formation of lumps in lime mixes, the role and characteristics of hydrating agents in mortars. The production and processing of iron in pre-industrial times, with attention to its structural use in tie rods is as well a research theme with the use of pigments in fresco and dry colouring

2. EDUCATION AND RESEARCH: A NECESSARY COMBINATION

Alongside the traditional educational activities, the School reserves adequate space for practical experimentation, proposing to the students an intervention of restoration and reuse of buildings and sites of cultural interest, based on real needs. The buildings and sites for each year's work belong to historical centre of Genoa or the Liguria Region that require conservation, consolidation, restoration, and enhancement and eventually a compatible re-use. In agreement with the public or private owners of the selected buildings, the students work on the analytical and diagnostic phases (first year) and in the elaboration of design hypotheses in the second year, as already mentioned. Much of the matters thought can thus be immediately reflected in the design activity, with contributions by many specialists in subjects like technical installations and equipment, safety and accessibility requirements, lighting solutions, energy saving and comfort improvement. The projects reach the definite level and executive details with the necessary technical and estimative documentation.

The buildings or monumental complexes described in the following paragraphs have been the subject of research funded at national or local level, and represented for the students the occasion to achieve methodological, technical and cultural advancements.

2.1. The Doge's Palace of Genoa: prisons and the "Grimaldina tower"

The Doge's Palace, currently the heart of the city's cultural life, was the seat of the first Genoese Doge, Simon Boccanegra, during the early medieval age. The first Palace incorporated different pre-existing buildings, in a glorious moment of the Republic of Genoa, after the victories against the Pisans (1284) and the Venetians (1298) that gave Genoa the supremacy within the Mediterranean basin.

The so-called "Grimaldina Tower", between XII-XIII centuries, knew some transformations and the addition of a new floor in the first half of the 16th century. Between the 14th and 15th centuries, the Palace enlarged, until it reached a closed configuration along the four sides of an inner and secluded courtyard (now Piazza Matteotti). The succession of the porticos and courtyards and the covered atrium belong to the 16th century constructive phase due to architect Andrea Ceresola, known as "Vannone" who designed and built also the monumental double staircase leading to the main noble floor. In 1777, a great fire almost completely destroyed the palace and architect Simone Cantoni, who also came from Ticino district like Vannone, was committed to rebuild the damaged parts among which the great rooms of the Maggiore and the Minor Consiglio, on the first floor with their covering structures and the Doge's apartment. He adopted for the roofs a solution characterized by parabolic arches in bricks, without using wooden beams (still surviving in the Minor Consiglio), thus preventing the risk of a new fire. The Grimaldina Tower is, together with the Lantern (the medieval lighthouse of the harbour), a string symbol of the political power of the Oligarchic Republic. Its inner spaces, together with others located above the Doge's Apartment, were in the past a jail where also famous prisoners were imprisoned along the centuries (Niccolò Paganini, Jacopo Ruffini...). The objective of making the spaces of the Tower accessible and ready to host a small museum (exhibiting objects found during the restoration works of the 90s of the 20th century) required the students undertake a refined analytical and design path throughout so many and precious signs of the history and memory of .the city. In this way, the School will answer to the needs expressed by the Direction of the Foundation of the Ducal Palace contributing to a wider social use of this monument of the city.

Figure 1. Doge's Palace, the Salone del Maggior Consiglio. Source: (G. Franco 2020)

2.2. Former Church of SS. Gerolamo and Francesco Saverio, former seat of the University Library of Genoa

The Church of the Jesuits' College of Genoa, currently hosting the Rectorate of the University, was built in the mid-seventeenth century by the nobleman Francesco Maria Balbi on the ruins of an older church, adjacent to the convent of the nuns of St. Augustine. The church, with a single nave and four side chapels (partly added afterword), was decorated with frescoes by Domenico Piola, one of the most important painters of the period.

With the suppression of the Society of Jesus (1773), the Republic of Genoa assigned the College and the Church to higher educational institutions; at the beginning of the 20th Century, the former church was transformed into the Natural History Museum of the University. In 1915, the "Casa del Soldato" (Soldier's House) was installed in the Rectorate also using the former church, which knew afterwards further transformations (insertion of side galleries). In 1926, Eng. Arch. Carlo Fuselli presented the first project for the insertion of the University Library inside the church; the project aimed at the division in height of the nave thanks to a new reinforced concrete ceiling at the base of the vaults, to create the books' stores below and the reading room above it. After of Fuselli' death the Superintendence for Monuments, in 1934, committed to architects Mario Labò and Giuseppe Crosa di Vergagni the design of the

University's library inside the former church, to recover and ameliorate the works already realized. The Library was inaugurated in 1935 and, in 1947, it was transferred to the state's property.

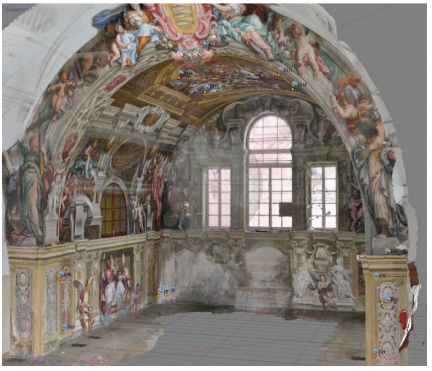


Figure 2. Frescoed apse in the former church of Saints Gerolamo and Francesco Saverio. Elaboration of the photoscan survey. Source: (MARSC 2019)

In 1966, the complex of the former Jesuits' collegium with its church was recognized as of "Cultural Interest", according to Law 1089/39, "because it preserves the original 17th century façade and, inside, valuable frescoes by Domenico Piola in the apse area". Following the recently completed transfer of the University Library to another location (the former Hotel Columbia, via Balbi 40), the church has been closed to the public since 2014 and is currently abandoned, in needs of conservation and restoration interventions with new compatible uses. The School is now working to support the local Superintendence in this perspective thus giving a real contribution to the City development.

2.3. Villa of Prince Andrea Doria in Fassolo, Genoa

The "Palazzo del Principe Andrea Doria" (the winner of Lepanto's naval battle against the Turks), built during the first half of XVI century incorporating some pre-existing buildings, is one of the largest and most important noble residences of the Renaissance age in Genoa. The Villa is known for a significant decorative cycle, realized by Perin del Vaga, Raphael's best pupil. The monumental complex, that comprehend a Italian-style garden towards the sea (with a private landing place, no more existing) and a romantic park (now completely disappeared) towards the hills on the back, was enlarged by Andrea's heir, Giovanni Andrea I. Today, the Palace still houses the Doria Pamphilij family and a museum full of masterpieces of art. The eastern wing of the Villa, partly unused, contains spaces of considerable interest, partly belonging to pre-existing residences. The students of the School of Specialization consulted public and private archives, recovering many documentary and iconographic sources about the history and transformations of the complex. They also realized a rigorous topographic and laser-scanner survey and studied the material consistency of the artefact, its constructive techniques as a primary and direct source of information about its history. This allowed us to re-write a history almost completely unknown to the city, even if it is in a focal and a crucial point of it. The Trustee Florida Doria Pamphilj that manage the complex asked

Figure 3. Villa of Prince Andrea Doria, XVI Century. Source: (G. Franco 2018)

the School to develop these researches and to provide some design suggestions for the restoration and the compatible-sustainable re-use of its east wing and its valorisation for the entire city.

2.4. "Belimbau Palace", Genoa

The Belimbau Palace, located in the heart of the ancient city and at the junction between "Piazza della Nunziata" and "Via Balbi", belongs to the system of Rolli palaces destined to host the most illustrious guests of the Republic of Genoa. It belonged to noble families until the end of the 20th century when their last descendant left it to the University of Genoa, which is now taking care of its complete restoration and reuse. The Palace was built at the behest of the nobleman Francesco De Ferrari at the end of the 16th century by incorporating some pre-existing buildings and the rests of the medieval aqueduct still visible in the body of the façade. The pictorial decorations by Lazzaro Tavarone (pupil of the great painter Luca Cambiaso who ended his life in L'Escorial in Spain) are among the most important of the XVII century in Genoa. The frescoes decorate the vaults of the atrium, of the staircase, the entrance loggia and the main room of the first noble floor (with one of the first representations of the natives of America and of Christopher Columbus kneeling in front the Queen and the King of Spain coming back from the Americas). Between the end of the 18th century and the early 19th century, the Palace underwent a major renovation of the monumental staircase and of the main façade. Over the centuries, the Palace knew several fragmentations into single apartments and suffered many modifications that make now difficult to read and completely understand its original configuration. Together with the Head of the Technical Office of the University and under the supervision of the teachers, the students of the School conducted many analytical and diagnostic activities aimed at better understanding the evolution of the Palace and its current state of conservation. The materials thus produced and the knowledge acquired thanks to them made it possible to obtain some funding by the Italian Government for the restoration of the monumental spaces of the palace, for its future public use.

Figure 4. Belimbau Palace. Elaboration form photo-scan and laser scan survey. (Laboratory MARSC 2017)

2.5. Albergo dei Poveri, Genova

The "Albergo dei Poveri" (the Poors' Hostel) in Genoa is a vast welfare complex dating from the middle of 17th century, built outside the city walls, radically modifying a natural valley. It was built for philanthropic purposes (at the behest of the nobleman Emanuele Brignole Sale) but also as a sort of seclusory for poor people. The complex, afterward incorporated into the expansion of the modern city (after the demolition of the city walls in the first half of XIX century), lost its original role and was definitely abandoned in the late Nineteens of XXth century. The complex, in force of a loan, is now in the hands of the University that is in charge of its management and already restored and reused about 30% of its covered surface for the departments of humanities and law and their didactic spaces. However, an exact knowledge of the physical state of the structure and its spaces was missing until recent years. The School of Specialization, on behalf of the Rectorate therefore concentrated the teaching activities for some years on the study of this vast and very important

architectural complex. It has been also a case study within a Research Programme of Significant National Interest (PRIN 2010-2011). It investigated the possibility that the computer tools of parametric nature, that facilitate the management of cognitive,design and management data, could be adapted to the needs (theoretical, cultural, technical and operational) of a complex reality such as an architectural and urban monument of ancient formation and stratified consistency like the Albergo. The School thus developed rigorous architectural surveys (topographic, longimetric, digital photogrammetric, Z-scan, laser scanner, Structure from Motion), a BIM and a GIS information system, for the collection and archiving of the numerous data collected. The constructive characteristics and the macro-conditions of conservation of the complex were as well investigate and recorded alongside the identification and location of the most relevant risk factors, the correlated most urgent interventions, the functional layout for the entire complex and some design hypotheses on single parts related to new possible and compatible uses. Thanks to these studies and design explorations, several new restoration interventions are now going on.

CONCLUSION

The few quoted examples of studies carried out during the years by the School of Specialization show how the University can provide real and effective contributions to the future life and quality of the contemporary cities. Knowledge and technical or professional expertise are in fact necessary for any intervention, at any scale, on the continuous material palimpsest of our cities, very often multilayered not only in material terms but also in symbolic end social ones. The quoted buildings, as many others, ancient or recent, are essential part of the collective memory of the local communities if recognized of cultural, architectural, historical and social or economic value. Their fate thus depends first on their knowledge and shared appreciation among the citizens. On this level lies a first fundamental filed of commitment for the University. We can/must in fact spread of the knowledge we can acquire whilst educating and training future professionals culturally aware and technically strong and ready to face the many challenges the destiny of these or other buildings, in strict connection with the entire urban fabric they belong to. Then University can support their public and private owners in looking for the necessary economic resources for restoring, enhancing and correctly re-using them in order to be still part of the city's life. Further University can provide several forms of design explorations of possible solutions, thus increasing the quality of the whole process, from the planning scale to the real construction sites. University can and must thus play a real role for the future of our cities.

Figure 5. The Albergo dei Poveri, front facade. (MARSC 2016)

REFERENCES

Fiorani, D., Franco, G., Kealy, L., Musso, S.F. and Calvo-Salve, M.A. (Editors), 2019. *Conservation/Consumption. Preserving the tangible and intangible values*, EAAE, Hasselt, BE.

Fiorani, D., Kealy, L. and Musso, S.F. (Editors), 2017. *Conservation-adaptation. Keeping alive the spirit the place adaptive reuse of heritage with symbolic value.* , EAAE, Hasselt, BE.

Crisan, R., Fiorani, D., Kealy, L. and Musso S.F. (Editors), 2015. *Restoration/ Reconstruction. Small Historic Centres. Conservation in the Midst of Change*, EAAE, Hasselt, BE.

Franco, G. and Magrini, A., 2017. *Historical Buildings and Energy*, Springer, Switzerland.

Musso, S.F., 2015. *Information Communication Technologies per la conservazione e la valorizzazione dei Beni Culturali*. In: Gambaro P Vannicola C. (Editors), Design & open sources for Cultural Heritage, Alinea, Firenze, pp. 13-17.

Musso, S.F. and Franco, G., 2015. *The "Albergo dei Poveri" in Genova: conserving and using in the uncertainty and in the provisional,* in Della Torre, S. (Editor). ICT per il miglioramento del processo conservativo, 2014, Nardini Editore, Firenze.

Musso, S.F., 2014. "'Inheriting' our Cultural Heritage: Changes of paradigm of conservation". In *ICONARP*, Turkey, vol. Vol.2, Issue 2, p. 84-103.

PAPER #6.02

A BIBLIOMETRIC REVIEW OF LIFE CYCLE RESEARCH OF THE BUILT ENVIRONMENT

Ming Hu[a]
[a] University of Maryland, College Park, Maryland, USA

ABSTRACT

Life cycle assessment (LCA) has been used as an analysis tool to help decision-makers plan for mass urbanization and building construction; however, the research to date focuses on either the individual building scale or overall urban scale. Although several methodologies have been applied to both scales, the results have not been reconciled or synchronized. In light of this, this paper first presents a systematic literature review using bibliometric network data to assess state-of-the-art knowledge of the use of LCA at different scales from 1990–2017. Second, the paper identifies the main research foci at the building and urban scales. At the building scale, three research focal points are identified: building materials and products, design solutions, and energy consumption/ emissions reduction. At the urban scale, there are three research areas of focus as well: urbanization and infrastructure planning, urban metabolism (water/energy/ waste synergy), and complexity of urban issues. Next, the most influential papers and journals are presented. Drawing upon the findings from the literature review, major gaps in current research activities are identified as the building-centric approach, energy performance–centric approach, and lack of consideration for uncertainties. These are critical areas requiring further study and research

KEYWORDS

Life cycle assessment; literature review; urban scale; building scale; bibliometric network data.

INTRODUCTION

Addressing the ecological impacts of the built environment requires an understanding of global trends in the building sector. Life cycle assessment has been used as an analysis tool to help decision-makers plan for mass urbanization and building construction; however, the research to date focuses on either the individual building scale or overall urban scale. Although several methodologies have been applied to both scales, the results have not been reconciled or synchronized. Many studies have centered on quantifying environmental impacts at the building scale (Utama et al. 2009, Treloar et al. 2000, Fay et al. 2000, Utama et al 2008, Li et al 2011, Wang et al. 2005, Bribian et al. 2009), and robust methodologies have been established and developed. At the urban scale, certain methods have been implemented and tested to quantify the ecological impact of large built environments that include multiple buildings (Stephan et al. 2013, Kennedy et al. 2011, Davila and Reinhart 2013). However, assessments of environmental impacts of buildings and urbanization have been largely confined within their own singular scales. An overview of research activities, foci, and trends is the first step to creating an integrated framework to understand the environmental impacts of the built environment. A review of cutting-edge knowledge in the life cycle assessment (LCA) approach and studies on the built environment is meant to (1) identify the main research areas within each scale, (2) gain insight into the size of the different research focal points, and (3) identify any research gaps.

1. RESEARCH METHODS AND TOOLS

Bibliometric research is a research technique for studying science-based citation data, which originated in the early twentieth century. Citation analysis (CA) and Co-citation analysis (CCA) are very well- established branches of bibliometric research that are used to evaluate the relative importance or impact of an author, article, or journal. Since citation frequency reflects a journal or article's value, citation analysis can be conducted to establish the impact of a particular study and identify the research focus and pattern, based on citation patterns (Garfield 1972, Narin 1976, Moed 2006, Harzing et al. 2008, DeBellis 2009). Applying mathematical and statistical models in CA and CCA are primary techniques that are used to date. Rapid changes in digital technology have introduced new techniques and methods that are used in bibliometric research to capture large amounts of text data available online. For example, Text data mining (TM) is a fast-developing technique that extracts critical information from unstructured datasets—unlike citation. TM techniques involve information retrieval, text analysis, information extraction, clustering, visualization, machine learning, and data mining (Nagarkar et al. 2015). TM is particularly viable in a multidisciplinary research where co-citation patterns appear to be difficult to decipher. Integrating TM in citation and co-citation analysis helps researchers to process unstructured information, such as abstracts from a thousand papers, in the matter of a couple seconds and extract the meaningful numeric indices from the text, eventually feeding them into statistical and machine learning algorithms. Using machine- learning algorithms, the information derived from a large text dataset could be used to form meaningful and rational summaries or conclusions based on the words contained. This method/technique could be used on clusters of words or to determine the relationship between words. Put simply, text mining turns words into numbers that can be computed and analyzed.To analyze and interpret the results from CA, CCA, and TM, maps are often constructed to help visualize the data. For this project, VOSViewer was chosen for its two-dimensional distance-based map (Moed 2006). VOS stands for "visualization of similarities" and aims to locate words in a low-dimensional space in such a way that the distance between two words reflects the similarity or relatedness of the words as accurately as possible (Van Eck et al. 2009). VOSviewer constructs a map based on a co-occurrence matrix and consists of three steps. The first step is to obtain a similarity matrix; in the second step, a map is constructed by applying the VOS mapping technique to the similarity matrix; then, in the final step, the map is translated and reflected. In a VOS-constructed map, different cluster maps represent different research foci; the sizes of the nodes indicate the relevance of the items—including research topics, authors, sources, or countries—and the distance between nodes illustrates the intellectual connections.

2. THE HOME-WORK LINK

VOSviewer map was used to determine influential studies, thinkers, and concentrated research topics and their correlations. In order to identify the research areas of focus, a term map was created based on a corpus of scientific publications. The corpus of scientific publications includes 1,063 articles found in Web of Science (WOB) from 1990–2017 using the key search words, "life cycle assessment," "life cycle analysis," "buildings," and "architecture." The co-occurrence frequencies of terms (text) were determined based on a minimum of 20 occurrences of a term, and out of the 22,459 terms, 315 meet the threshold.

For each of the 315 terms, a relevance score was then calculated. Base on this score, the most relevant terms were selected, with the default choice in the program being to select 60% of the most relevant terms. Altogether, 189 terms were selected for LCA research at the building scale, with the results shown in figure 1. Based on VOSviewer clustering techniques, the terms in the dataset were divided into three clusters, with the colors indicating the different research clusters and the adjacency of nodes from different clusters suggesting the intellectual connection of different fields.

• Cluster 1 (blue): building materials, products, environmental assessment, impacts (left)

• Cluster 2 (red): design solutions/costs, sustainability/criteria, framework (right)

• Cluster 3 (green): energy consumption, emissions, reductions (lower)

These clusters represent three major research focal points: *building materials and products, design solutions, and energy consumption and emissions.*

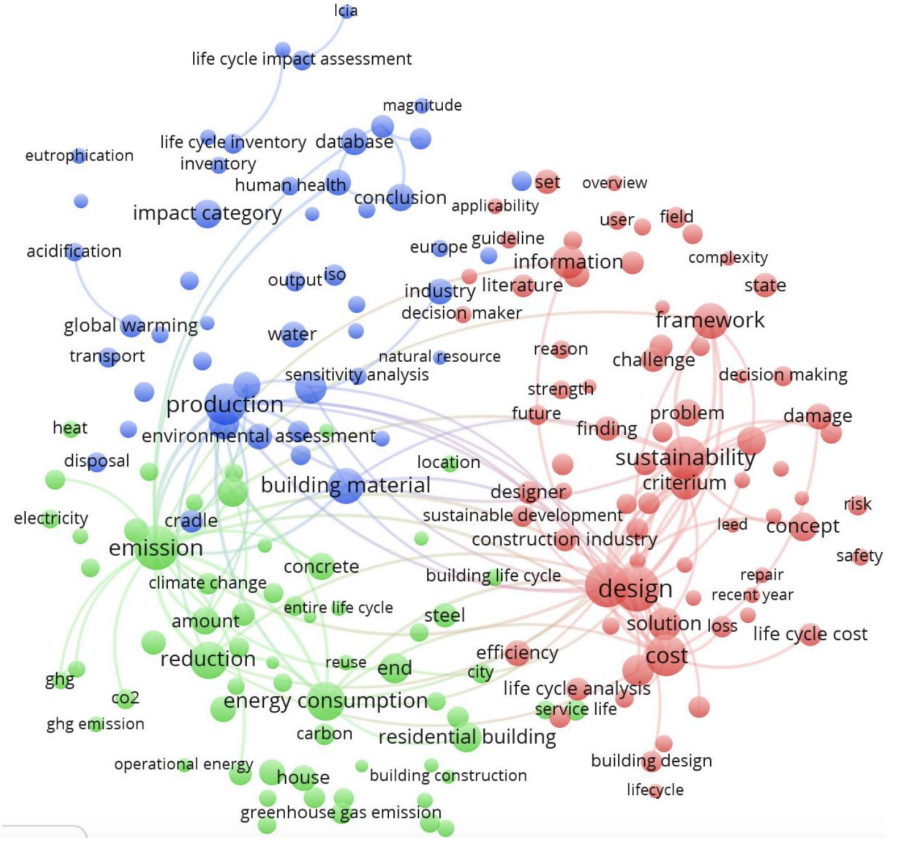


Figure 1.Term map representing the main research areas of LCA at the building scale

Cluster One: Building Materials and Products

The majority of building materials studied in academic publications concentrate on conventional materials used for base building, such as concrete and steel framing. Concrete and steel account for 20–35% and around 12–22%, respectively. Together, steel reinforcement bars and concrete account for 50–80% of the environmental impact from buildings. Consequently, one of the basic ingredients of concrete— cement—has been studied extensively. It accounts for 4–5% of overall CO2 emissions from the building industry (Chau et al. 2007, Guggemos and Horvath 2005, Bribián et al. 2009, Wu et al. 2005). Other common building materials that have been researched are brick and wood (Tettey et al. 2014). Koroneos and Dompros (2007) used data provided by a local brick manufacturer, together with published references, to study the brick production process and identify possible areas for improvement in brick production. Additionally, Ximens and Grant (2012) quantified the greenhouse benefits of wood products and found that replacing all floors and sub-floors with timber could reduce greenhouse gas emissions from buildings. Jönsson et al. (1997) studied different kinds of floor materials—including wood, vinyl, and linoleum—and concluded that solid wood appeared to be the most environmentally preferable material. The most commonly used building materials have not changed for decades, and, following 2014, there has not been much grounding-breaking LCA research about building materials. The only new, advanced material to become a research focus in the past three to five years has been nano-materials—phase- change materials and their application as paint, coating, and building envelope materials.

Cluster Two: Design Solution

The second area of focus is architectural design, which includes location, orientation, building façade design (glazing ratio), building density and massing, and related sustainability criteria. Pacheco and team members studied different design factors—such as building compact factors, orientation and shape, and building envelope—and concluded that the factors with the greatest repercussion on the final energy demand were building orientation, shape, and the ratio of the external building surface to the building volume (Pacheco and Martínez 2012). Building orientation and shape are major design decisions made in the early design stage that cannot be reverted; therefore, integrating the concept of LCA in the early design stage will help the design team to find an optimized solution for building performance while minimizing the environmental impact. Even with active research in this area, the knowledge translation has been slow. While there are several quite robust design codes for building mechanical system optimization (occurs in a later design stage), such as the ASHRAR standard, there is a lack of systematic design guidelines focused on architectural design optimization. Consequently, the opportunity to translate the research findings into practical design solutions is tremendous.

Cluster Three: Energy Consumption and Emission Reductions

This area is expected to produce results since energy consumption has a direct correlation with emissions reductions, and it is the only overlapping research focus in both the building and urban scales. This research focal point examined the construction process, operation phase, and building material-acquiring phase, and results reveal that the energy consumed during the construction phase accounts for a very small percentage and, therefore, has little environmental impact on the entire building life cycle. The main influential phase is the building operating phase, and the largest environmental impact, CO2 emissions, is associated with the operating energy (Flower and Sanjayan 2007, Norman et al. 2006, Fuller and Crawford 2011,

Jiao et al. 2011, Jones and Kammen 2014, Glaeser and Kahn 2008). The second most important consumption category is embodied energy. Venkatrama Reddy and Jagadish estimated the embodied energy of a residential building consisting of different low-energy materials and obtained a 30– 45% reduction in embodied energy (Jones and Kammen 2014).

3. FINDINGS - URBAN SCALE

The process used in section 3.0 was repeated to identify research focal points of LCA at the urban scale. The corpus of scientific publications that included the 340 articles from WOS was used to create a term map, with the keywords used in the search being "life cycle assessment," life cycle analysis," "urban," "city," and "district." The size of research activities at the urban scale is substantially smaller than those at the building scale; therefore, less occurrence frequency was used to create the term map. The co- occurrence frequencies of terms (text) were determined based on a minimum of 10 occurrences of a term. At the end, 296 out of 13,218 terms met the threshold. For each of the 296 terms, a relevance score was then calculated. Based on this score, the most relevant terms were selected, with the default choice in the program being to select 60% of the most relevant terms. Altogether, 178 terms were selected for LCA studies at the urban scale,

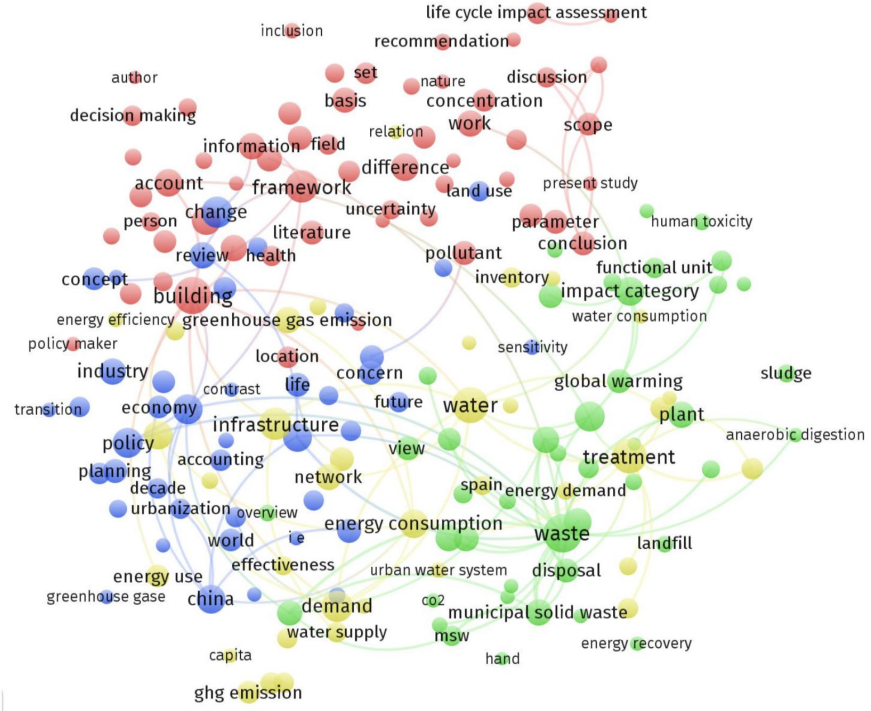


Figure 2. Term map representing the main research areas of LCA at the urban scale

with the results shown in figure 2. Four clusters of terms are illustrated in figure 2.

• Cluster 1 (blue): problems, urbanization/ planning, challenges/changes (left)

• Cluster 2 (red): building, information, framework (upper)

• Cluster 3 (green): waste, global warming, impact category (right)

• Cluster 4 (yellow): infrastructure, water/ treatment, greenhouse gas emissions (middle)

Cluster 4 is interwoven with clusters 1 and 3; in the term map, the closeness of the terms represents the intellectual connection and shared research interests and trends. Therefore, the author investigated the combination of clusters 1 and 4, with this focused research area redefined as ***urbanization and infrastructure planning***. Next, after combining clusters 1 and 3 together, one clearly defined focus area emerged: waste, water, and energy. Cluster 2, however, did not appear to have a clear leading term like the other clusters and is relatively separated from the other three clusters. Furthermore, its research terms appear to illustrate a high-scale challenge related to LCA at the urban scale, including framework and decision-making, building, and health. Accordingly, we gave this area of focus a more general description: *human factors and future uncertainty.*

Cluster One: Urbanization and Infrastructure Planning

A number of studies have examined the impact of residential and commercial density on energy use and life cycle costs within urban regions (Anderson et al. 2015). Low-density suburban neighborhoods were found to have higher energy use and GHG emissions per capita compared to a high-density urban core (Borg and Groenen 2005, Newman et al. 1989, Zhang et al. 2010). Increasing population density while maintaining low-rise building typology tends to reduce the total energy demands and associated greenhouse gas emissions per capita (Borg and Groenen 2005). Another important finding was that a reduction in house size had a positive impact on decreasing overall urban energy and material use. The composition of urban space impacts—mixed use versus single use—also demonstrates the impact of use on energy efficiency. The results found that households in urban centers had lower emissions than their suburban counterparts; however, the urban sprawl could neutralize all the benefits from urban development and redevelopment (Zhang et al. 2010, Conte and Monno 2012, Turconi et al. 2014).

Cluster Two: Waste, Water, And Energy

The second area is waste, water, and energy, which can be summarized as urban metabolism. An urban metabolism framework was developed with the aim to provide a foundational understanding of city resource uses and distribution (Naess 2009). Urban metabolism was originally developed by Wolman in 1965 as a methodology for measuring a city's overall energy, materials, water and nutrient inputs and outputs, and related processed and transformative energy and resources (Chester and Horvath 2012). Until now, the application of metabolism has been focused on energy consideration. Many studies on this have been conducted, including Ristimaki and team members who found that, in comparison to district heating, a ground source heat pump including 10% renewable energy was the most cost-effective method for an urban area with a 100-year life span (Newman and Kenworthy 2015). The shortcomings of the urban metabolism method lie in its lack of inclusion of upstream effects or a quantitative impact assessment regarding the local environment or human health. In a

recent report produced by a research team from the University of California, Berkeley, the research team assessed how the life cycle assessment method could beintegrated with urban metabolism to develop comprehensive energy and environmental inventories. Consequently, this approach could compensate the shortcomings of the traditional metabolism method.

Cluster Three: Human Factors and Future Uncertainty

The third area includes all topics relating to the complexity of urban issues, such as building-related health issues, decision-making, and associated information. Urban and built environments can be understood as complex social-ecological systems, where multiple related metabolisms interact at different scales (Berkes and Foke 1998), with the building representing just one scale in the holistic system. However, the cluster two (building) unlike others that are intertwined together, is isolated from infrastructure, planning, and energy consumption in other clusters. The disconnection of this cluster from others may be due to the emerging transdisciplinary research represented within the core of building industry: decision science, uncertainty theory, parametric modeling, and economy. The integration of multidisciplinary research is still in the infant stage, where including human factors as part of the decision-making process has been challenging due to uncertainty. Therefore, it will take some time before this research focus is mature enough to reach out to other areas. died energy (Jones and Kammen 2014).

4. DISCUSSION

In the current prevalent building-centric analysis approach, an individual building is regarded as a function unit, with individual building performance as the top priority. Analysis at the individual building scale treats the building as a stand-alone object, isolated from its context within the built environment (Anderson et al. 2015). This approach reflects the conception of the building as a consumer of resource and energy rather than as a producer of sustainability at different spatial scales (Turconi et al. 2014). Currently, life cycle energy consumption of buildings includes embodied, operational, transportation, construction, and demolishing energies. However, all of these are direct energies whereas several significant indirect energy types have not been included in the evaluation of building performance, which could represent a large missing portion. For instance, an office located in a dense urban space will result in much less energy being spent by occupants on commuting, due to widely available public transportation.

Another misleading concept, according to Pacheco's study, is the energy performance center: "A more energy-efficient building design does not necessarily coincide with more economical or more environmentally friendly designs" (Pacheco et al. 2012). The contribution of a building to sustainable development is assessed based on building performance (Kibert and Grosskopf 2012), with performance often quantified by energy performance and efficiency. Other indicators—such as indoor air quality, thermal comfort acoustic quality, visual comfort, and the occupants' well-being and satisfaction—are equally important to building energy performance (De Nooy et al. 2018, Rodríguez et al. 2013). Currently, some studies have tried to integrate those factors; however, a standardized procedure is still lacking.

The last knowledge gap involves the inclusion of temporal and human factors in LCA. Unlike other commercial products, a building has a much longer life span—about 50–75 years—and the use phase can have large environmental impacts, with multiple renovations and building upgrades related to building technology developments.

Variations within the use phase can sometimes be greater than the total impact of the materials, construction, and end-of-life phase (Burnett 2007), and the variations are often caused by the users' decisions, or human factors. The most current LCA studies of built environments use a static model that assumes the impact factor is constant over the time span. This could result in an inaccurate projection, as building materials and systems are constantly changing and improving. Instead, the measurement should have a dynamic framework, rather than a static one, to accommodate technology development.

Based on the findings from the literature review, the author can conclude that significant progress has been made over the past twenty years of life cycle studies and assessment at the building and urban scales, respectively. Very few studies have been conducted on integrated LCA for buildings within an urban context; such studies could reveal hidden factors and result in new findings.

CONCLUSION

The built environment assists societies in meeting basic needs for shelter and security. Throughout time, it has increasingly developed to provide greater scales of comfort and amenities, albeit with considerable environmental impacts (Chester and Horvath 2009). Accordingly, a comprehensive LCA framework that integrates different scales of the built environment could play a major role in promoting the reduction of related ecological impacts. Most current LCA studies are confined to their own scale and scope while lacking consideration of other related factors, such as population density, urban density, transportation accessibility, open space, and public parks. It is imperative to synergize LCA at the building and urban scales together, using an integrated framework. The potential to use an integrated framework in both urban planning and a building design context is a relatively new development. At the building scale, early adoption of an integrated framework could help designers, architects, and engineers find optimized solutions through quantitative analyses and evidence. At the urban scale, the planning process is a matter of organizing land use and optimizing resources, materials, and the energy flow within city boundaries. Therefore, a future integrated framework could be used in two ways: either as an analysis tool to aid the decision-making of government officials or as a design tool for urban planners. There is also a need for the planning and design community—specifically, architects, engineers, and planners—to work together as a synchronized unit to set up work for a higher level of LCA integration in the built environment (Chester and Horvath 2012).

This research project identifies primary LCA research activities at the building and urban scales, followed by an explanation of the main research areas of focus and an outline of the knowledge gaps. Findings from this research project include other important environmental factors and also provide a foundation for further studies of an integrated framework incorporating LCA from different scales. There are limitations in this research, as LCA was divided into two macro-scales: building and urban. Significant differences exist between different micro-scale urban contexts—such as city, neighborhood, and district—thus there are specific considerations related to each individual scale.

REFERENCES

Anderson, John E., Gebhard Wulfhorst, and Werner Lang. 2015. "Energy analysis of the built environment—A review and outlook." *Renewable and Sustainable Energy Reviews* 44.

Berkes, Fikret, and Carl Folke. 1994. "Linking social and ecological systems for resilience and sustainability." In *Workshop Property rights and the performance of natural Resource systems*..

Borg, Ingwer, and Patrick Groenen. 2003. "Modern multidimensional scaling: Theory and applications." *Journal of Educational Measurement*.

Bribián, Ignacio Zabalza, Alfonso Aranda Usón, and Sabina Scarpellini. 2009. "Life cycle assessment in buildings: State-of-the-art and simplified LCA methodology as a complement for building certification." *Building and Environment*.

Burnett, John. 2007. "City buildings—Eco-labels and shades of green!." *Landscape and Urban planning*.

Chau, Chi K., F. W. H. Yik, W. K. Hui, H. C. Liu, and H. K. Yu. 2007. "Environmental impacts of building materials and building services components for commercial buildings in Hong Kong." *Journal of Cleaner Production*.

Conte, Emilia, and Valeria Monno. 2012. "Beyond the buildingcentric approach: A vision for an integrated evaluation of sustainable buildings." *Environmental Impact Assessment Review*.

Chester, Mikhail V., and Arpad Horvath. 2009. "Environmental assessment of passenger transportation should include infrastructure and supply chains." *Environmental research letters* 4, no. 2 (2009): 024008.

Chester, Mikhail, and Arpad Horvath. 2012. "High-speed rail with emerging automobiles and aircraft can reduce environmental impacts in California's future." *Environmental research letters*.

Davila, Carlos Cerezo, and Christoph Reinhart. 2013. "Urban energy lifecycle: an analytical framework to evaluate the embodied energy use of urban developments." In *Proceedings of BS2013: 13th Conference of International Building Performance Simulation Association,* Chambéry, France, August.

De Bellis, Nicola. 2009. "Bibliometrics and citation analysis: from the science citation index to cybermetrics." *scarecrow press*.

De Nooy, Wouter, Andrej Mrvar, and Vladimir Batagelj. 2018. *Exploratory social network analysis with Pajek: Revised and expanded edition for updated software*. Vol. 46. Cambridge University Press.

Flower, David JM, and Jay G. Sanjayan. 2017. "Green house gas emissions due to concrete manufacture." *The international Journal of life cycle assessment*.

Fay, Roger, Graham Treloar, and Usha Iyer-Raniga. 2000. "Life-cycle energy analysis of buildings: a case study." *Building Research & Information*.

Fuller, R. J., and R. H. Crawford. 2011. "Impact of past and future residential housing development patterns on energy demand and related emissions." *Journal of housing and the built environment*.

Garfield, Eugene. 1972. *Citation analysis as a tool in journal evaluation.* Science.

Glaeser, Edward L., and Matthew E. Kahn. 2010. "The greenness of cities: carbon dioxide emissions and urban development." *Journal of urban economics*.

Guggemos, Angela Acree, and Arpad Horvath. 2005. "Comparison of environmental effects of steel-and concrete-framed buildings." *Journal of infrastructure systems*.

Harzing, Anne-Wil K., and Ron Van der Wal. 2008. "Google Scholar as a new source for citation analysis." *Ethics in science and environmental politics*.

Jönsson, Åsa, Anne-Marie Tillman, and T. Svensson. 1997. "Life cycle assessment of flooring materials: case study." *Building and Environment*.

Jiao, Junfeng, Anne Vernez Moudon, and Adam Drewnowski. 2011. "Grocery shopping: how individuals and built environments influence choice of travel mode." *Transportation research record*.

Jones, Christopher, and Daniel M. Kammen. 2014. "Spatial distribution of US household carbon footprints reveals suburbanization undermines greenhouse gas benefits of urban population density." *Environmental science & technology*.

Kennedy, Christopher, Stephanie Pincetl, and Paul Bunje. 2011. "The study of urban metabolism and its applications to urban planning and design." *Environmental pollution*.

Kibert, C. J., and K. Grosskopf. 2005. "Radical sustainable construction: envisioning next-generation green buildings." In *The 2005 World Sustainable Building Conference*. Tokyo.

Koroneos, Christopher, and Aris Dompros. 2007. "Environmental assessment of brick production in Greece." *Building and Environment*.

Li, Jinfeng, Ming-Huang Wang, and Yuh-Shan Ho. 2011. "Trends in research on global climate change: A Science Citation Index Expanded-based analysis." *Global and Planetary Change* 77.

Moed, Henk F. Citation analysis in research evaluation. Vol. 9. *Springer Science & Business Media*, 2006.

Næss, Petter. "Residential location, travel behaviour, and energy use: Hangzhou metropolitan area compared to Copenhagen." *Indoor and Built Environment* 18, no. 5 (2009): 382-395.

Norman, Jonathan, Heather L. MacLean, and Christopher A. Kennedy. "Comparing high and low residential density: life-cycle analysis of energy use and greenhouse gas emissions." *Journal of urban planning and development* 132, no. 1 (2006): 10-21.

Newman, Peter WG, and Jeffrey R. Kenworthy. "Gasoline consumption and cities: a comparison of US cities with a global survey." *Journal of the American planning association* 55, no. 1 (1989): 24-37.

Newman, Peter, and Jeffrey Kenworthy. *Sustainability and cities: overcoming automobile dependence*. Island press, 1999.

Pacheco, Rosalia, Javier Ordóñez, and Germán Martínez. "Energy efficient design of building: A review." *Renewable and Sustainable Energy Reviews* 16, no. 6 (2012): 3559-3573

Rodríguez, MA Rubio, M. Feitó Cespón, J. De Ruyck, VS Ocaña Guevara, and V. K. Verma. "Life cycle modeling of energy matrix scenarios, Belgian power and partial heat mixes as case study." *Applied energy* 107 (2013): 329-337

Stephan, André, Robert H. Crawford, and Kristel De Myttenaere. "Multi-scale life cycle energy analysis of a low-density suburban neighbourhood in Melbourne, Australia." *Building and Environment* 68 (2013): 35-49.

Tettey, Uniben Yao Ayikoe, Ambrose Dodoo, and Leif Gustavsson. "Effects of different insulation materials on primary energy and CO2 emission of a multi-storey residential building." *Energy and buildings* 82 (2014): 369-377

Treloar, G., R. Fay, P. E. D. Love, and U. Iyer-Raniga. "Analysing the life-cycle energy of an Australian residential building and its householders." *Building Research & Information* 28, no. 3 (2000): 184-195.

Turconi, Roberto, Davide Tonini, Christian FB Nielsen, Christian G. Simonsen, and Thomas Astrup. "Environmental impacts of future low-carbon electricity systems: detailed life cycle assessment of a Danish case study." *Applied energy* 132 (2014): 66-73.

Utama, Agya, and Shabbir H. Gheewala. "Life cycle energy of single landed houses in Indonesia." *Energy and Buildings* 40, no. 10 (2008): 1911-1916.

Utama, Agya, and Shabbir H. Gheewala. "Indonesian residential high rise buildings: A life cycle energy assessment." *Energy and Buildings* 41, no. 11 (2009): 1263-1268.

Van Eck, Nees, and Ludo Waltman. "Software survey: VOSviewer, a computer program for bibliometric mapping." *Scientometrics* 84, no. 2 (2009): 523-538.

Wang, Weimin, Radu Zmeureanu, and Hugues Rivard. "Applying multi-objective genetic algorithms in green building design optimization." *Building and environment* 40, no. 11 (2005): 1512-1525.

Wu, Xing, Zhihui Zhang, and Yongmei Chen. "Study of the environmental impacts based on the "green tax"—applied to several types of building materials." B*uilding and Environment* 40, no. 2 (2005): 227-237.

Ximenes, Fabiano A., and Tim Grant. "Quantifying the greenhouse benefits of the use of wood products in two popular house designs in Sydney, Australia." *The International Journal of Life Cycle Assessment* 18, no. 4 (2013): 891-908.

Zhang, Dong Qing, Soon Keat Tan, and Richard M. Gersberg. "Municipal solid waste management in China: status, problems and challenges." *Journal of environmental management* 91, no. 8 (2010): 1623-1633.

PAPER #6.03

COMMUNITY PRESERVATION OF DISTRICTS: THE *BROWNSTONERS*. THE CASE OF BEDFORD-STUYVESANT

Ana García Sánchez[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The preservationist movement started in New York City in the mid 1960s, as a reaction to the losses of a series of historically significant buildings for the city. In response, the Mayor Robert F. Wagner, Jr. enacted the Landmarks Law in 1965, which laid the foundations for the creation of the Landmarks Preservation Commission, main municipal agency in charge of safeguarding built heritage in New York City.
In these same years, a group of intellectuals created an association to protect the brownstones, a housing typology characteristic of New York City in the 19th century. These activists called themselves brownstoners, and their mission was to fight against the massive demolitions of this type of dwelling and their subsequent replacement by modern apartment buildings.
In New York City, on top of the philanthropic contributions coming from the private sector (something typical of American culture), it is paramount the work of local associations and the same citizens when it comes to deciding which buildings and collections of them are liable to be granted landmark or historic district status.
An example of a historically deteriorated neighborhood at the heart of Brooklyn was taken, Bedford-Stuyvesant, in order to prove how community efforts can have a determining effect on the Commission's decision to have a collection of buildings designated as a historic district.
This system of heritage management that gives so much importance to community support may be a valuable contribution to the model that currently prevails in our country.

KEYWORDS

Heritage; preservation; brownstones; bedford-dtuyvesant; New York City.

INTRODUCTION: BUILT HERITAGE PRESERVATION IN NEW YORK

In the United States, public awareness about the importance of protecting historic buildings is something relatively recent. The New York Landmarks Preservation Commission (LPC) was created in 1965 when the Mayor Robert F. Wagner signed some legislation in response to the losses of several historically significant buildings.

Figure 1. Pennsylvania Station, 1911. Source: (Library of Congress, Prints and Photographs division, Detroit Publishing Company Collection 1910)

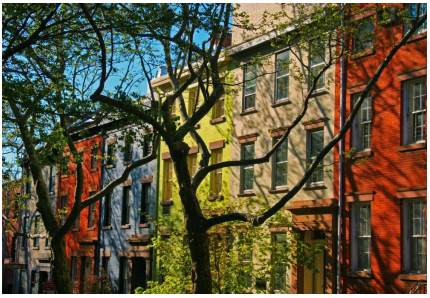


Figure 2. Row houses in the Brooklyn Heights historic district, 2012

The most infamous and controversial of these losses was Pennsylvania Station in 1963, when the building designed in 1911 by the renowned architectural firm of McKim, Mead & White (Fig. 1) was demolished to make way for the multipurpose venue Madison Square Garden. Some years later, there was another milestone, also related to a train station, Grand Central Terminal. In this case, the Commission rejected the construction of a 55-story tower above this station. The case was taken before the U.S. Supreme Court, which decided to keep the historic building as it was, victory in favor of the preservationists that strengthened the Landmarks Law and validated the preservation movement across the country. As well as protecting individual structures, this legislation also designates historic districts, interior landmarks and scenic landmarks. It is worth mentioning that, on the other side of the ocean, legal protection was granted at the same time to individual landmarks and to historic ensembles. Thus, the first historic district that was approved in New York City was Brooklyn Heights (Fig. 2) in 1965, the same year that the Commission was founded and the Law was enacted, unanimously and with great support from neighbor associations and homeowners. It is interesting how this designation was made just a year after in Europe started the concern about preserving historic centers, since the publication of the Venice Charter in 1964, where for the first time "modest works" are mentioned (Icomos 1964, 1). A consideration to consider regarding historic districts protection (or any other property subject to protection) in New York is related to the designation process. Naturally, proposals may be initiated by the same Commission members, through research they carry out regularly, with surveys which are also inventories of the city's significant buildings. However, it is noteworthy is that any member of the public can submit a Request for Evaluation (RFE). In order for the Commission to consider these requests, it is necessary that enough support from residents and neighbor associations is shown (Historic District Council 2018), as we will confirm on the example described below. Besides the governmental organizations, it is essential the work of other non-profit associations that cooperate with the advocacy of New York's built heritage, for instance, the New York Landmarks Conservancy and the Historic Districts Council (HDC), both of them having been started in the early 70s, soon after the Landmarks Law was passed.

1. THE *BROWNSTONERS*

Back in the 60s, while many white families fled the hustle and bustle of the city looking for the suburbs' peace and African American and Puerto Rican immigrants crowded in the housing projects (public housing developments), a group of middle-class educated young people (Osman 2011, 8; Schuman 1973) settled down in a neglected neighborhood in Brooklyn, focused on preserving the urban typology of the 19th century par excellence, row houses, more commonly known as brownstones.[1]

These houses were suffering a massive demolition because of their advanced state of decline, due to having been abandoned a few decades before or occupied by more people

[1] *Brownstone* is a kind of sandstone which the façades of most houses at the time were built with and, by extension, in New York any row house built around this time is termed a brownstone, be it this material or other, such as limestone or brick (Lockwood 1972, xiii).

than they should, after their subdivision into several apartments, as well as because of their location in troubled neighborhoods, with a population comprised mainly of Latin and African American immigrants that had moved to New York looking for better job opportunities (Lockwood 1972; Osman 2011; Schuman 1973).

These activists, who named themselves brownstoners, founded the Brownstone Revival Committee and gave rise to the movement known as Brownstone Revival, which soon expanded to other areas of Brooklyn[2]. They started to restore some of these houses, in an attempt to give them back their original magnificence (Osman 2011, 5). The neighborhoods that they occupied were called "Brownstone Brooklyn" (Fig. 3) and their names were coined during these years. What they were searching was a sense of belonging to a community, rather than the anonymity of the suburbs. As Osman (2011, 5-6) states:

> Brownstoning was a cultural revolt against "sameness", conformity and bureaucracy. In a city that was increasingly technocratic, Boerum Hill[3] was a "real neighborhood," a vestige of an "authentic community" lost in a modernizing society.

Figure 3. Location of the brownstone neighborhoods in Brooklyn.

In its early years, however, the organization focused on fighting red-lining, a process where banks denied loans to immigrants in these neighborhoods. However, their results were not immediate, as an article on the *New York Times* from 1976 showed. In these years also operated a sister organization, the Brooklyn Brownstone Conference, which proposed the Brownstone Savings & Loan, a new savings and loan association that provided money for buying and renovating brownstones.

In 1974 the Brownstone Revival Committee issued a publication, *Home-buyer's guide to New York City Brownstone neighborhoods*, destined to potential brownstone buyers, where they described a series of neighborhoods where these houses could be found, and offered their price and state of preservation. In addition, they started to promote their designation as historic districts. Their preservation efforts led to these neighborhoods' social and economic regeneration, which went hand in hand with a rise in property values (Osman 2011; Schuman 1973).

Another line of work of the Brownstone Revival Committee was education, which proved to be very popular, according to a 1973 *The New York Times* article. In order to help the brownstone enthusiasts renovate their new houses appropriately, the Brooklyn Brownstone Conference also sponsored the Brooklyn Brownstone Fair for several years starting in 1972, with an array of experts who could offer practical advice, among which was the Brownstone Revival Committee, along with representatives from all the brownstone neighborhoods.

This organization is still operating today, under the name of *Brownstone Revival Coalition*, offering guided tours, seminars and newsletters. In addition, they keep a list of craftsmen and preservation specialists that these houses' homeowners can turn to when they have to carry out restoration work on them.

[2] The great brownstone revival is continuing throughout Brooklyn, thanks in part to the enthusiastic proselytizing of "pioneer" brownstoners who began to reclaim blighted neighborhoods in the early nineteen sixties (Schuman 1973)
[3] Boerum Hill is another neighborhood in downtown Brooklyn with an abundance of brownstones.

2. CASE STUDY: BEDFORD-STUYVESANT

Bedford Stuyvesant's (Fig. 4) urban development started in the mid-19th century, during the American Civil War, when the Dutch farmers that had settled there during the 17th century sold their lands to speculative builders and real estate developers, who turned the existing rural community into an urban residential area of brownstones for upper and middle classes. In the 1860s and the 1870s an increasing number of merchants who worked in Manhattan, mainly of German and Dutch origin, established residence in Bedford (Echanove 2003, 3), as well as families coming from New England. Thus, Bedford became a very attractive and sought-after neighborhood, and proof of that is the refined architecture of the houses that mushroomed all around the empty lots, replacing most of the freestanding frame houses from the colonial era (Fried 1969; Lockwood 1972, 251). The most intense construction period was between 1895 and 1900. During this first stage, some wealthy African Americans also bought houses in the area. Over these years, it was a well-to-do neighborhood. After the First World War, and particularly after the Great Depression, the demographics started to change. The upper and middle class fled the area, moving to the suburbs, causing thus a drop in property value that was taken advantage of by the immigrant working class, comprised of a variety of ethnic groups (Jews, West Indians, Irish, Italians), who worked at the Brooklyn Navy Yard, near the Brooklyn Bridge. As Echanove mentions (2003, 3) when the subway line that connected the neighborhood with uptown Manhattan was built in 1936 along Fulton Street, many inhabitants from a crowded Harlem migrated to central Brooklyn, which offered more jobs and better housing. After World War II, the black population grew to dominate the neighborhood completely; by 1940, sixty-five thousand blacks lived here (Morrone 2001, 252). These demographic shifts, however, maintained intact the architectural character of the neighborhood (Fig. 5):

> while the brownstone houses of Bedford were solidly built and long lasting the community itself was to be temporary, transformed in a few short years by the ceaseless forces of urban change (Ment and Donovan 1980 cited in Echanove 2003, 3)

This was, however, only exteriorly, as in the 1930s and 40s many brownstones were subdivided into multiple dwelling and rooming houses (Morrone 2001, 251), as it has been seen on the previous section that happened in many other areas of Brownstone Brooklyn.

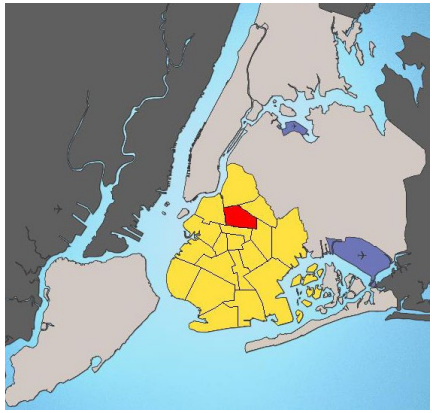


Figure 4. Location of the Bedford-Stuyvesant district within the borough of Brooklyn. Source: (Schorzman and JacobS 2009).

Figure 5. Halsey Street and Nostrand Avenue. Source: (Irma and Paul Milstein Division of United States History, Local History and Genealogy, The New York Public Library 1941)

The neighborhood fell into decline during the central decades of the 20th century, partly because of the tension caused by the racial riots and the crack epidemic that took place during these years at the New York areas inhabited mostly by black people, as well as redlining from the banking institutions. As Morrone (2001, 252) states "In the 1960s, Bedford-Stuyvesant became synonymous with the "urban crisis" in America"[4]. As property value kept dropping, black people came to Bedford-Stuyvesant because they were not able to be anywhere else.

In addition, during these years the construction of housing projects for low and moderate-income residents on the northern part of the neighborhood gave it a bad reputation. Another problem were abandoned residential properties. As housing deteriorated to slum conditions, the community turned gradually into "one of the nation's worst urban ghettos" (Rejnis 1974).

In 1967, Senator Robert F. Kennedy decided to tackle the problems that these neighborhoods faced, marked by poverty and left to themselves by the public authorities, and planted the seeds for what would become the Bedford-Stuyvesant Restoration Corporation, the first Community Development Corporation[4] in the country, after touring the dilapidated area.

This organization was born with the mission of creating job positions, renovating the existing housing and building new, affordable houses. During its first years it was moderately successful: after four years, the Corporation had improved the physical appearance of 55 blocks, renovated the exteriors of 2,230 brownstones, erected a 52-unit apartment house and rehabilitated 34 others (Emerson 1972). This work was done entirely by unemployed community residents who were given training by the Corporation. The President of the Corporation stated in 1972:

> The impact of young guys off the streets, learning a skill and seeing a job finished and homeowners seeing what they can do has an energizing effect. We are further along as a community now.

Senator Kennedy even invited the prominent architect I.M. Pei to consult on the physical planning needs of the area (Morrone 2001, 252). The result was the execution of an urban enhancement project on two blocks within the neighborhood, which, according to I.M. Pei's office, provided the variety of focal points that the area had been lacking (Fig. 6).

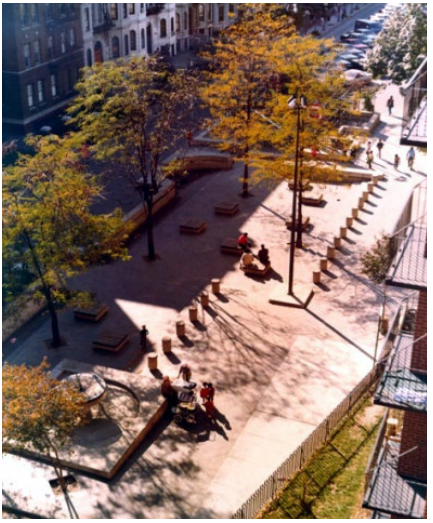


Figure 6. I.M. Pei's superblocks in Bedford-Stuyvesant. Source: (Pei, Cobb, Freed, and Partners 1969)

At the Brooklyn Historical Society there was a collection of magazines that this association published between the years 1975 and 1981, where they offered some interesting data and statistics about the neighborhood and the regeneration work of the Corporation in those difficult years. They stated that

[4] Community Development Corporation are not-for-profit organizations that provide programs, services and other activities that promote and support community development in struggling neighborhoods organizations are often associated with the development of affordable housing.

Bedford-Stuyvesant had traditionally been a stable community, with half of its residential buildings being owner-occupied. Finally, in 1981 there was news of restoration projects of old, abandoned buildings with public funding, which were destined to social housing.
But all these projects would not have been materialized without the people of Bedford-Stuyvesant. The owner of a house at one of the blocks object of I.M. Pei's project stated that

> now it's all nice again, and it's just because the people on the street wanted to make it that way (Borders 1969)

The "brownstoning" phenomenon also arrived in Bedford-Stuyvesant in the 1970s, with people who had grown in the neighborhood but had left for college. Instead of heading to the suburbs, they moved back and started renovating brownstones, joining block associations[5] and getting involved in other aspects of community life (Landmarks Preservation Commission 2015b, Rejnis 1974). The president of one of these associations claimed that "What Bedford-Stuyvesant needs is more of its people to care about it" (Fried 1969).
In 1978 "a small group of friends and neighbors who wanted to make a contribution to their great community" founded the "Brownstoners of Bedford-Stuyvesant", a non for profit organization dedicated to the preservation, revitalization and enhancement of the neighborhood. They tried to change the media's concept of the community, sparkling new pride in the neighbors who still lived there and encouraging many African Americans to come back to the properties that their parents and grandparents coming from the South and the Caribbean, had worked hard to acquire. It is still operating today, being one of its committees dedicated to promoting affordable housing and planning the annual house tours.
Recently a new wave of immigrants, from a variety of ethnic origins, has arrived in the neighborhood, having achieved its revitalization, by renovating and occupying properties which had been previously abandoned. The main reasons behind the growth and the charm of the neighborhood are its strong sense of community as well as its abundant and handsome houses, being the area of Brooklyn with the highest concentration of this typology. Signer (2012) speaks of these new arrivals as a second wave of brownstoners.
Echanove (2003, 3) suggests that the preservation works undertaken by community and governmental organizations, such as the Bedford-Stuyvesant Restoration Corporation, have been instrumental in uplifting the neighborhood. The Landmarks Preservation Commission (2013, 3) agrees: "this effort (…) has brought renewed stability the historic neighborhood".
However, the main disadvantage of the neighborhood's development, from the point of view of historic preservation, is the renovation of its housing stock by speculators, in the form of "luxury" developments, progressively removing the elegant row houses that made it famous (Vandam 2009). Here is where designations of historic districts come into play.

Figure 7. Row of brownstones within the Stuyvesant Heights historic district. Source: (Landmarks Preservation Commission 2013)

[5] Block Associations are groups of residents who decide to collaborate to strengthen a block or area, beautifying neighborhoods or advocating for better crime prevention. Their organization and governance comes in a variety of formulas. Nowadays, Bedford-Stuyvesant has the biggest concentration of block associations in the city (Schubach 2016). In 1969, it already had 100 block associations that "are striving, with varying degrees of effectiveness, to foster community improvement and spirit" (Fried 1969).

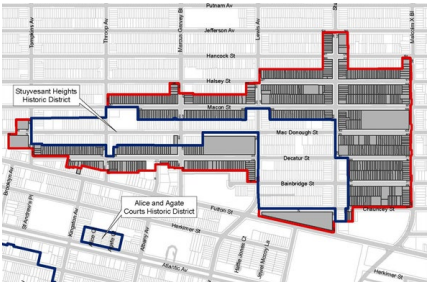


Figure 8. In red, boundaries of the expanded Stuyvesant Heights historic district. In blue, boundaries of preexisting historic districts. Source: (Landmarks Preservation Commission 2013)

In 1971 the Stuyvesant Heights historic district was designated, being expanded in 2013 (Fig. 7 and 8), after public hearings having taken place in 1993 and 2011. On the press release that followed the designation, Commission Chairman Robert B. Tierney made a statement highlighting the importance of community support (Landmarks Preservation Commission 2013, 2):

> We finally crossed the finish line today, thanks to a great deal of work by the residents, homeowners and leaders of this community. We look forward to our continued partnership with them to protect the extraordinary streetscapes of their neighborhood, one of the most renowned in New York City

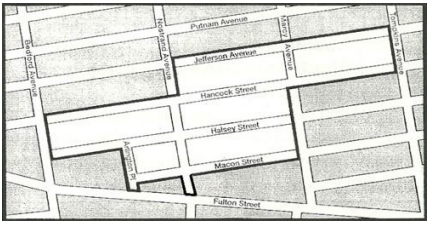


Figure 9. Boundaries of Bedford historic district before the official survey. Source: (Brownstoner 2010)

In 2010 started the process of protecting another historic district in the southwest section of Bedford-Stuyvesant, when the Bedford District Block Associations (BDBA) submitted a RFE to the Commission (Fig. 9) and started collecting signatures in support of the designation (Brownstoner 2010). They arranged meetings as well in order to inform the neighbors about what it would mean to have their house protected.

Figure 10. Rows of houses at the Bedford historic district proposal. Source: (Landmarks Preservation Commission 2013)

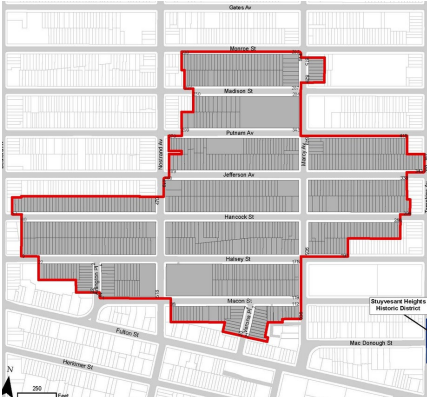


Figure 11. Final boundaries of the Bedford historic district. Source: (Landmarks Preservation Commission 2015)

Finally, the historic district was calendared on May 12, 2012, and the public hearing was scheduled on January 15, 2013. On the hearing, there was a presentation on the district, including photographs of relevant rows of houses (Fig. 10). The spokesperson for the New York Landmarks Conservancy also testified at the public hearing, stating that:

> The Conservancy is pleased to have that community as partners in preservation (…) This designation will only spur more applications and more improvements. We (…) look forward to speaking on the other Bed Stuy areas, including Stuyvesant East and Stuyvesant North, as well as several others

At the time, there were opposed positions (Budin 2013; Dunlap 2013; Landmarks Preservation Commission 2015a, 1; The New York Landmarks Conservancy 2013), and the Commission's vote was postponed[6]. It was not until December 8, 2015 that the Commission unanimously approved the designation of Bedford historic district (Fig.11).

As it has been already argued, the work of community associations is crucial when it comes to the Commission considering approval of a Historic District proposal[7]. In 2013 there were several associations that promoted the preservation of Bedford-Stuyvesant, whose work was decisive in order to get the positive vote from the Commission: the B*edford Stuyvesant Society for Historic Preservation, the Bedford Corners Historic District Joint Block Association and the Stuyvesant East Preservation Action League*.[8] The first one gathered information about the different historic districts that have been proposed in the area of Bedford-Stuyvesant and worked closely with the HDC to promote Bed-Stuy's historic district (Frishberg 2015). As for the second, it was basically a portal that answers the questions of the owners and residents in the Bedford area regarding its designation as a historic district and what this would entail, declaring itself in favor of its preservation, and offering the chance of signing a petition supporting the designation. There was also a section with news related to the historic district and its designation. The third one had more or less the same mission, but focused on the Stuyvesant East area.

3. THE SPANISH MODEL

In order to ascertain what the New York model of heritage management can offer to our system, we need to provide some information about how our model works. According to the Spanish Historic Heritage Law (Cortes Generales 1985, 10) and the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law (Cortes Valencianas 1998, 22), the designation of a landmark can be initiated by the administration or by citizens. The process includes a stage where the proposal is publicly exposed and a public hearing for the affected city councils is held. Then, article 5.4 of the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law (Cortes Valencianas 1998, 14) states:

> The Valencian Government will promote a collaborative framework with volunteering associations for the preservation and dissemination of the Valencian Cultural Heritage.

[6] According to the LPC (2015a), thirty people spoke in favor of designation, three people testified in opposition and three people questioned whether the designation process had provided enough community notification. The LPC received 356 form letters and emails in support of the historic district, and 220 letters stating that they wanted additional information about the process

[7] According to a 2011 news article "LPC didn't see enough community consensus to convince them that the Bed-Stuy residents wanted the designation (…) without community support, the LPC is not going to do this. If they don't see community support, they walk away (…) We've been on their agenda since 1993. They're just waiting to see the neighborhood support (Morris and Staff 2011)". Also, in 2011, Spellen stated after an informative meeting with the LPC that "Landmarks was very pleased by the turnout and positive interest of the majority of the crowd, an important part of their decision to landmark any area"

[8] The information about these three organizations was retrieved from their websites in 2013, but they are no longer operating, hence why they are not included on the reference list.

This is as far as Spanish law goes in relation to the role of non-governmental organizations and citizens on landmarks designation and preservation.

CONCLUSION

Having seen this, it can be asserted that the model of heritage management that prevails in New York presents very interesting contributions that could be adopted by the Spanish system, such as the necessity of community involvement when it comes to protecting their built heritage. The case of Bedford-Stuyvesant is an example of how people of the community can help regenerate and preserve a historic neighborhood, be it by renovating its façades or advocating the designation of the district. However, public awareness of the importance of safeguarding historic buildings and districts would not be what it is today in this city was not for the work of the brownstoners and other activists that set out to reclaim those houses and neighborhoods that no one valued at the time.

REFERENCES

Bedford-Stuyvesant Restoration Corporation. 2007. *Bedford-Stuyvesant Restoration Corporation publication and photograph collection, 1968-2007 (bulk 1970-1980)*. New York: Bedford-Stuyvesant Restoration Corporation.

Bedford Stuyvesant Restoration Corporation. 2009. "Bedford Stuyvesant Restoration." http://www.restorationplaza.org

Borders, William. 1969. "Mrs. Kennedy Tours 'Superblocks' Renovated in Bedford-Stuyvesant". *New York Times*, October 31, 1969. https://www.nytimes.com/1969/10/31/archives/mrs-kennedy-tours-superblocks-renovated-in-bedfordstuyvesant.html

Brownstone Revival Coalition. 2010. "Brownstone Revival Coalition." http://www.brownstonerevival.org/

Brownstone Revival Committee, ed. 1974. *Home-buyer's guide to New York City Brownstone neighborhoods*. New York: Brownstone Revival Committee.

Brownstoner. 2010. "Bedford Corners Historic District Meeting." http://www.brownstoner.com/blog/2010/07/bedford-corners

Brownstoners of Bedford-Stuyvesant, Inc.". 2018. "Brownstoners of Bedford-Stuyvesant". http://brownstonersofbedstuy.org/

Budin, Jeremiah. 2013. "Bed-Stuy Gentrification Watch". *Curbed NY*, January 16, 2013. https://ny.curbed.com/2013/1/16/10284672/bed-stuy-gentrification-watch

City of New York. 2020. "New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission." http://www.nyc.gov/html/lpc/html/home/home.shtml

Cortes Generales. 1985. "Ley 16/1985, de 25 de junio, del Patrimonio Histórico Español". BOE 155. https://www.boe.es/buscar/act.php?id=BOE-A-1985-12534

Cortes Valencianas. 1998. "Ley 4/1998, de 11 de junio, del Patrimonio Cultural Valenciano". BOE 174. https://www.boe.es/buscar/act.php?id=BOE-A-1998-17524

Dunlap, David W. 2013. "In Effort to Preserve Bedford-Stuyvesant, Some Ask: For Whom?" *New York Times*, January 16, 2013. http://cityroom.blogs.nytimes.com/2013/01/16/in-effort-to-preserve-bedford-stuyvesant-some-ask-for-whom

Echanove, Matias. 2003. "Bed-Stuy on the move: demographic trends and economic development in the heart of Brooklyn." Master's Thesis, Columbia University. http://urbanology.org/bedstuy

Emerson, Frank E. 1972. "A Man Who Keeps Faith in Bed-Stuy". *New York Times*, May 14, 1972. https://www.nytimes.com/1972/05/14/archives/a-man-who-keeps-faith-in-bedstuy.html

Fried, Joseph P. 1969. "Bedford-Stuyvesant has bright side, too". *New York Times*, February 1, 1969. https://www.nytimes.com/1969/02/01/archives/bedfordstuyvesant-has-bright-side-too-neat-blocks-of-houses-attest.html

García Sánchez, Ana, and Ana Torres Barchino. 2020. "El proyecto de Halsey Street (Brooklyn, NY): Documentación y Materialización". *EGA Expresión Gráfica Arquitectónica* 25 (39): 156-69. https://doi.org/10.4995/ega.2020.12947

Historic Districts Council. 2018. "Frequently Asked Questions About the Landmarks Process". https://hdc.org/faq/

Icomos. 1964. *The Venice Charter*. Icomos.

Lockwood, Charles. 1972. *Bricks & brownstone: the New York row house, 1783-1929: a guide to architectural styles and interior decoration for period restoration*. New York: Abbeville Press.

Morris, C. Zawadi, and Patch Staff. 2011. *Community Consensus: Why LPC Really, Really Needs to See It*. Patch, January 13, 2011. https://patch.com/new-york/bed-stuy/community-consensus-why-lpc-really-really-needs-to-see-it#c

Morrone, Francis. 2001. *An architectural guidebook to Brooklyn*. Salt Lake City: Gibbs Smith.New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission. 1965. *Brooklyn Heights Historic District Designation Report.* New York: New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission. http://s-media.nyc.gov/agencies/lpc/lp/0099.pdf

New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission. 2013. C*ommission approves the expansion of the Bedford-Stuyvesant/ Stuyvesant Heights Historic District*. New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission, April 16, 2013. http://www.nyc.gov/html/lpc/downloads/pdf/13-02_bed-stuy_expanded_historic_district.pdf

New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission. 2015a. *Bedford Historic District Designation Report.* New York: Landmarks Preservation Commission. http://s-media.nyc.gov/agencies/lpc/lp/2514.pdf

New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission. 2015b. *Landmarks Commission votes to protect more than 800 buildings in Brooklyn*. New York City Landmarks Preservation Commission, December 8, 2015. http://home2.nyc.gov/html/lpc/downloads/pdf/press/2015/Bedford-HD-Release.pdf

Osman, Suleiman. 2011. *The invention of brownstone Brooklyn: gentrification and the search for authenticity in postwar New York.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Rejnis, Ruth. 1974. "Young People Coming Home to 'Bed-stuy'". *New York Times*, October 20, 1974. https://www.nytimes.com/1974/10/20/archives/young-people-coming-home-to-bedstuy-the-young-return-to-bedstuy.html

Schubach, Alanna. 2016. "How block associations work to make NYC a city of neighbors". *Brick Underground,* September 12, 2016. https://www.brickunderground.com/live/nyc-block-associations

Schuman, Wendy. 1973. "Brooklyn Brownstone Revival". *New York Times*, February 4, 1973. https://www.nytimes.com/1973/02/04/archives/brooklyn-brownstone-revival-1000-gaslights-installed.html

Signer, Rachel. 2012. "On Bed-Stuy, Brownstones, And Gentrified Brooklyn". *Thought Catalog,* July 25, 2012. https://thoughtcatalog.com/rachel-signer/2012/07/on-bed-stuy-brownstones-and-gentrified-brooklyn/

Sloane, Leonard. 1976. "Tighter Brownstone Loans". *New York Times*, January 25, 1976. https://www.nytimes.com/1976/01/25/archives/tighter-brownstone-loans-squeeze-on-loans-for-brownstones.html

Spellen, Susan. 2011. "Landmarking Bed Stuy: A Forum". *Brownstoner,* February 17, 2011. https://www.brownstoner.com/history/landmarking-bed-1/

The New York Landmarks Conservancy. 2013. "Statement of the New York Landmarks Conservancy before the N.Y.C. Landmarks Preservation Commission regarding the proposed designation of the Bedford Historic District in Brooklyn". T*he New York Landmarks Conservancy*, January 15, 2013. http://nylandmarks.org/pdfs/our_public_testimony/Bedford_LPC_11513.pdf

Vandam, Jeff. 2009. "History, With Hipper Retailing in Bed-Stuy." *New York Times,* August 21, 2009. http://www.nytimes.com/2009/08/23/realestate/23living.html

PAPER #6.04

DEFROSTED ARCHITECTURE: DEBUSSY'S *CATHÉDRALE ENGLOUTIE* CASE STUDY

José L. Baró Zarzo[a], Pedro Verdejo Gimeno[a], Gracia López Patiño[a], Verónica Llopis Pulido[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

Music is liquid architecture; architecture is frozen music said once Goethe quoting Novalis; *music is mobile architecture*, declared Xenakis, while according to Pallasmaa, *architecture is the art of petrified silence*. All these expressions deepen in a same idea, the material consistency of matter in front of the ethereal volatility of sound; but they also suggest another think: the interchangeability of their states of matter, solid from liquid, water from ice. Is it possible? To look into such a slippery business, we'll move closer to the programme music, that which, as opposed to absolute music, attempts to represent extra-musical contents (poems, images, descriptions…). In our case, we'd rather a piece based on an architectural program. Debussy composed the famous prelude for solo piano *La Cathédrale Engloutie* (The Sunken Cathedral) by 1910, inspired on an ancient legend: in the coats of Brittany, the mythical city of Ys had immersed into the sea and every clear morning the cathedral emerges from water and sinks back again.
This paper tries to discover the musical resources employed by Debussy to evoke specific architectural images, like Impressionist painters also did. For this purpose, we'll turn to the analytical study of the main musical components under the perspective of Architecture.

KEYWORDS

Music and architecture; impressionism in music; programme music; préludes for solo piano; city of Ys.

INTRODUCTION

It should be noted that the following text is not intended to give an absolute depiction of the extramusical content of Debussy's Prelude. Quite the opposite, only a possible interpretation is here presented.

1. CONTEXT

1.1. The Preludes for piano (1909-1910) by Claude Debussy (1862-1918)

The poetic sensitivity of Claude Debussy, the light and color that emerge from his music, have earned him the qualifier of "sound painter":

> Judging by his works and by their titles, he is a painter and this is what he wants to be; he calls his compositions pictures, sketches, engravings, arabesques, masks, black and white studies. There is no doubt that for him it is a pleasure to paint in music.[1]

The personality of Debbussy stands out for his bohemian and rebellious character, little given to follow the established. His music was influenced by the nationalist Russian composers (Mussorgsky, Rimsky-Korsakov...), the Impressionist painters (Monet...) and, above all, by the French symbolist poets (Mallarmé, Rimbaud, Verlaine...). In front of the grandiloquence of the Sublime, embodied by Richard Wagner, whose figure could not go unnoticed at the time, Debussy's musical choice was focused towards the delicacy of the Beautiful. Facing

[1] Quotation of René Peter, Debussy's close friend. Quoted in: Thompson (1967). *Debussy: Man and Artis*t. New York: Dover, p. 19.

the shape and structure of German music, he bets on color and texture.

It was from the 1890s when Debussy abandoned abstract music in favor of a more programmatic conception (Morgan 1994: 59). The composer chooses picturesque scenes that boost the recreation of suggestive atmospheres in search of the pleasure of listening, far away from the tears provoked by the expressionist music of Schoenberg and Webern.

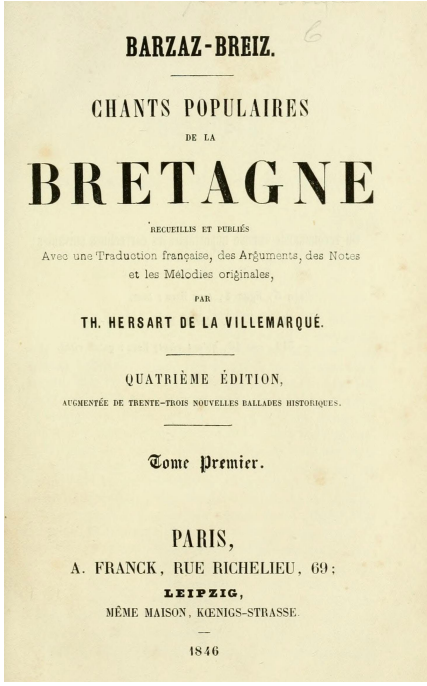
In his mature period, Debussy composed two volumes of preludes for solo piano, containing short pieces of varied subject matter. They are works of independent character, in the line marked by Frédéric Chopin in his Op. 28 (Llácer 1980: 127), that is, without subordination to other subsequent piece of greater extension. The total number of pieces is 24, the same as each of the volumes of Johann Sebastian Bach's *The Well-tempered clavier* and the aforementioned album by Chopin. However, unlike these, Debussy does not follow a predetermined pattern that justifies the number and order of the pieces, which is why concert performances are not always integral and do not always follow the original numbering correlation. The first volume of preludes[2] was composed between December 1909 and January 1910 and, that same year, they were edited and premiered.[3]

It is a music more evocative than descriptive. In fact, the title of each prelude does not appear at the beginning of each piece, but just at the end: it appears in brackets and after suspension points, as if wanting to leave the performer to transmit his own impressions, without conditioning him by those of the composer. However, the extra-musical reference of Prelude n. 10, *La Cathédrale engloutie*, is very specific. But let's know first where it is inspired from.

1.2. The city of Ys

The legend of city of Ys is based on historical facts about King Gradlon, in the area of Brittany, near Quimper, around the 6th century of the Christian era. From then on, the popular tradition has been fattening the myth of the submerged city. Ys was a town of Celtic origin, built below the sea level, so it was surrounded by dikes to contain the onslaughts at high tide. A single gate allowed ships to pass through during the low tide, the key to which was jealously guarded by Gradlon.

One night, while the king was asleep, Princess Dahut, his daughter, wanting to please his


BARZAZ-BREIZ.

CHANTS POPULAIRES
DE LA
BRETAGNE

RECUEILLIS ET PUBLIÉS
Avec une Traduction française, des Arguments, des Notes et les Mélodies originales,
PAR
TH. HERSART DE LA VILLEMARQUÉ.

QUATRIÈME ÉDITION,
AUGMENTÉE DE TRENTE-TROIS NOUVELLES BALLADES HISTORIQUES.

Tome Premier.

PARIS,
A. FRANCK, RUE RICHELIEU, 69;
LEIPZIG,
MÊME MAISON, KŒNIGS-STRASSE.
1846

Figure 1. Front page of: Villemarqué, Th. de la, 1939. Barzas-Breiz. Chants populaires de la Bretagne. Paris.

[2] N. Opus / Catalogue: CD 125 (catalogue of François Lesure in 1977); L.117 (catalogue revised later). I-N. Catalogue: ICD 71. (Source: Petrucci Music Library).

[3] First edition in Paris, by Durand et Cie., April 1910. The first performance or Preludes n. 1, 2, 10 y 11 took place at the *Société musicale indépendante* in Paris, played by own Debussy. The first comprehensive audition of the 12 preludes was on 3 May 1911, at the Pleyel Hall in Paris, performed by pianist Jane Mortier.

lover's madness, stole the key and handed it to him. The lover ran to open the door and the city began to flood, disappearing soon after under the waters. The king managed to reach his horse on dry land riding on the waves, but during the scape the princess fell off the horse (Fig. 2), and then she sank and transformed into a mermaid.

The legend tells that in calm days one can hear the chime of bells and the singing of monks of the ancient cathedral from the depths. This and other popular Breton songs were rescued from oblivion by Théodore Hersart de la Villemarqué in 1839, in a book of great reception (Fig. 1), from which some texts would be adopted and adapted for several artistic manifestations, including Debussy's famous prelude.

2. *LA CATHÉDRALE ENGLOUTIE:* FORM AND STRUCTURE

Now entering to spell out the musical contents, we can first state that this prelude consists of a short (89 bars, about 6 minutes long), slow ("profondément calme"), soft (mostly between *p* and *pp*) and very tied piece. Although it is theoretically in C major and C# minor, the fact is that there is no clear tonal center because of the chromatism, the use of Gregorian modes, the sequence of parallel octaves and fifths, the pentatonic and whole tone scales, and the arrangement of triads with no harmonic function. The desire for freedom affects also the rhythm. The initial equivalence of two time signatures implies an ambiguity in the pulse, opting for duple compound meter in some segments (6/4, e.g. bars 16-21), and triple simple meter in others (3/2, e.g. bars 28-46).

It cannot be said that the musical fabric is woven by themes or melodies in the traditional sense, but rather by "short motivic cells that are variations of other interconnected to one another" (Morgan 1994: 60). Among the motivic units there is a very frequented cell, formed by notes D-E-B (bars 1, 3, 5, 14, 15, 84, 85), taken both ascending and descending. But just because the genesis of the work is not thematic it does not mean that there are no themes. We will quote two, formed in turn by motivic material: the melody of bars 7-13, which is later repeated in measures 47-51, and the theme formed by parallel chords in 28-38.

Figure 2. Évariste Vital Luminais: La Fuite de Gradlon (1884). Source: Musée des Beaux-Arts, Quimper.

2.1. Program

As we said, the extramusical reference of *La Cathédrale engloutie* is very specific. Some of the nuances of expression contained in the score refer directly to phenomena compatible with the mythical legend, such as the misty atmosphere that is ordered in measure 1 ("dans une brume doucement sonore") or in bar 16 ("peu à peu sortant de la brume").

In the course of the piece, the cathedral seems to emerge from the sun-bathed waters and then to return to depths, while ringing bells, religious chants and organ chords are heard. It is possible to imagine this tour from the very structure of the work.

2.2. Structure

From the get-go, the prelude comprises three sections divided by corresponding key signatures (Tab. 1), resulting in an A-B-A' scheme, where the last part includes fragment variations of the first. The initial section (bars 1-46) is in C major, the central (47-71) in C# minor, and the last one (72-89) in C major again. However, this organization is far from the rigid scheme typical of classicism, since the material is freely reworked.

In turn, each section contains several variable extension segments, which are underlined -although not always- by indications of *tempo*.

2.3. Section A (bars 1-46)

Within the first section, the longest of the three, subsection A1 (bars 1-15) represents the haze on the swell and the depths with the submerged cathedral; subsection A2 (16-27) evokes the gradual emersion of the temple; while segment 3 (28-46) already shows the majestic building clearly raised on the waters.

In turn, each of these passages could be broken down into smaller segments. And so, in the first part, the succession of ascending chords in pentatonic scale (D-E-G-A-B) over a pedal note in the first bars (1-6) is taken up again in ascending and descending movement at the end of this same subsection (14-15), allowing the clerics' singing be heard, still underwater, in the central bars (7-13) with the indication "doux et fluide", a theme that will reappear more clearly in section B.

The following subsection (16-27) comprises a first part in which the series of ascending and descending chords continue progressively increasing their intensity (16-21), in the presence of an ever-raising temple, to conclude with a transition passage composed of descending octaves in diatonic and pentatonic scales (22-27) that prepares the entry to the next subsection.

The beginning of the last excerpt goes along with the indication "sonore sans dureté". It starts with a very intense first part (28-38) that represents the sound of the organ rhythmically accompanied by bell taps (pedal note). It is the moment of greatest splendour, in front of the imposing volume of a cathedral outlined with grazing lighting. Tonality remains stable in C major, with homophonic texture based on parallel chords. After this passage, and before entering the next section, the musical discourse goes through two brief episodes: the first of transition (bars 39-41), and the second of returning to calm, where the soft chime of bell becomes diluted (42-46).

2.4. Section B (bars 47-71)

The second section begins with the same melody heard in 7-13, but two octaves lower (measures 47-51), and continues in a high-pitched position, intensifying the listening up to bar 61. The end of this passage is

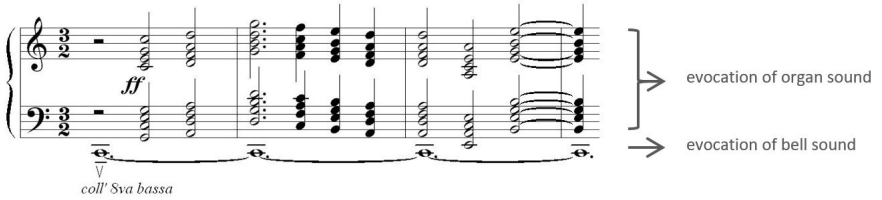


Figure 3. Claude Debussy: La Cathédrale engloutie, bars 28-31. Source: Petrucci Music Library.

reinforced by appoggiaturas in the left hand (59 and 61).
Suddenly, dynamics fades and evolves descending through a bridge of dominant seventh chords (bars 62-65: D#7-C#7-B7-A7-C#7-G#7), closing with a double cadence. The section ends with a new transitional episode (66-71).

2.5. Section A' (bars 72-89)

In the last section, the shortest one, the motivic development of measures 28-38 is repeated, but with significant differences: dynamics goes from *ff* to *pp*; the pedal note is transformed into an unfolded chord, whose *ostinato* oscillation recovers the soft swell and sun reflections; and, in addition, right hand chords descend an octave, all with the intention of generating "comme un écho de la phrase entendue précédemment" (72-83), evoking the progressive return to immersion and the reappearance of the misty atmosphere on the waves.
At the end of the piece, the ascending chords of the first bars are taken up again (84-85), with the indication "dans la sonorité du début". The cathedral has been completely submerged and now only the mist can be perceived. This passage is solved in the final cadence, where the sound is slowly extinguished with chords that extend to the entire keyboard range (measures 86-89).

section	bars
A	1-46
B	47-71
A'	72-89

Table 1. Structure of Debussy's Prelude n. 10. Source: own elaboration.

3. *LA CATHÉDRALE ENGLOUTIE:* EVOCATIONS

Once analysed the structure of the piece, we'll interpret what Debussy might evoke with his music and how he carried it out.

3.1. Remote times

At the time to move the imagined scene into the past, Debussy uses at least two resources.
On the one hand, he introduces the *organum*, or movement by chords with parallel octaves and fifths, which refers to the origins of polyphony in 11th and 12th centuries (*Ars Antiqua*). This movement was banned in Western music during the Renaissance precisely in order to distance itself from what was considered as outdated.
On the other hand, the composer resorts to different Gregorian modes, transcending the limitation to the major and minor scales of the tonal system. The use of Lydian (T-T-T-S-T-T-S)[4] and Æolian (T-S-T-T-S-T-T) modes will be discussed later. Doric mode (T-S-T-T-T-S-T) is present in bars 23 and 24 over D.

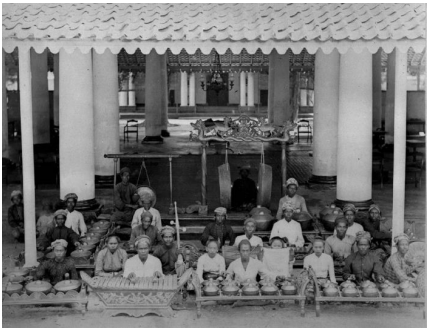


Figure 4. Gamelan orchestra in Java, late 19th century. Source: Tropenmuseum, Amsterdam.

[4] T: tone; S: semitone or half tone.

3.2. Exoticism

Although at first the pentatonic scale connects with the sound of Eastern music -in the case of Debussy, the connections would lead to Javanese gamelan, which he met at the Paris Universal Exhibition of 1889[5]- (Fig. 4), it is likely that the search for the exotic is mixed with references to the distant in time and the aura of suspense that surrounds the myth. Among other passages, there are pentatonic sequences in bars 16-18 (B C# D# F# G#) and following (19-21: E_b F G B_b C; 22-23: G A C D F) (Bruhn 1997: 42-44).

3.3. Religious content

The legend of Ys is imbued with ethical-religious connotations around the idea of sin, incarnated in Princess Dahut, as a result of which the destruction of the city would have been derived as divine punishment, as Sodom and Gomorrah were in their time. Also involved in the story was Saint Winwaloe, founder and abbot of the first monastery established in Armorica region, who had prophesied about what would eventually happen.

At a time when the Christian tradition is still present in French culture, Debussy resorts to sound references linked to the Christian liturgy to evoke this specific atmosphere: organ chords, monodic singing, and bell ringing.

The sound of **organ** appears in all its sumptuousness in bars 28-38 (Fig. 3), with a dense, sharp, homophonic, and rhythmic texture, without being polluted by the existence of other effects except for the bass touches of pedal. The movement by parallel fifths and octaves has already been mentioned.

As for **singing**, the arrangement of a simple melodic line with no doublings comes to evoke the monody of Gregorian chant, performed by male voices. This tune is half-heard fleetingly from the depths in measures 7 and 13, and then plainly with the cathedral emerged (47-51); the first in Lydian mode on E and, the second in Æolian or minor mode over G# (Bruhn 1997: 42-44).

Finally, the ringing of **bells**, understood among the Christian tradition as a sign to summon the faithful, is evoked through the iteration of long-lasting pedal notes in deep range.

3.4. Architecture

In bars 16 and 17, the symmetrical up-down movement (F#-G#-D#-G#-F#) of the right-hand chords represents almost literally the outline of some towers, still under water, but already visually noticed. The melodic drawing with a 5th jump in the middle suggests a pointed top, perhaps a steeple or a spire. At bar 18, symmetry becomes imperfect (F#-G#-D#-F#-G#), perhaps by glimpsing the connection of the towers to the central nave (Fig. 5).

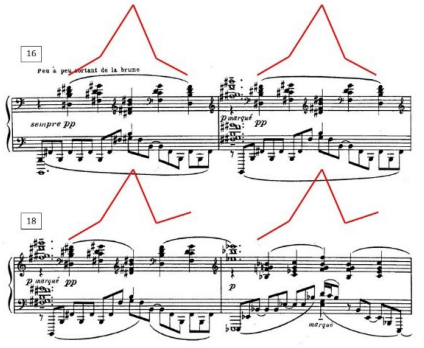


Figure 5. Claude Debussy: La Cathédrale engloutie, bars 16-19. In red the ascending and descending movement of the chords that suggests the vision of two towers. Source: Petrucci Music Library.

[5] The sonority of Thai gamelans has influenced many composers, such as Debussy, Satie, or John Cage and their *prepared piano*.

The magnificence of the building is shown in subsection A3 (bars 28-40), by means of resources such as the key of C major, very clear in 28-32; the homophonic texture formed by parallel diatonic triads with the counterpoint of a bell; the intense dynamics (*ff*); and the simple motivic development, both melodic and rhythmically. These tools may also insinuate the presence of consistent and imposing materials, such as a stone ashlar fabric.
Over this play of solemn representation, another capricious and delicate game is superimposed: the arabesque. In bars 19 to 21, Debussy introduces a recurring ornament consisting of groups of three or four descending fast notes (even reinforced by an *acciaccatura* in bar 20), which just appear in full ascent of the temple to the water surface. It could be interpreted in a vague way with the progressive visualization of the decorative apparatus that usually accompanies the architecture of great cathedrals (traceries, moldings, foliage…). The melodic material however does not seem to refer to a specific stylistic affiliation beyond providing a simple exotic touch.

3.5. Emersion - immersion

The dynamic intensification and the progression to higher-pitched tessituras suggest the rising ascension of the temple to surface (Bruhn 1997: 42-44). This phenomenon occurs from bar 18 (*p*), passing through 22-24 (*f*), 25 (*più f*) and 27 (*sff*), until measure 28 (*ff*). The opposite process implies consequently the descent and subsequent re-immersion of the cathedral into the sea. Observe the resolution of this episode, where dynamics passes from *ff* in 38 to *p* (42), *più p* (43), *pp* (44) and *più pp* (45-46).
The tower-top appearance on surface happens in measure 19 et seq, with some really marked notes on a rhythmic background based on triplets. In bar 23, it is the central nave that is emerging; the extended octave lines in Doric mode, first in right hand and then in left hand, followed by a pentatonic scale on the same D, allow us to calibrate their magnitude. Finally, the cathedral can be appreciated completely in bar 28.

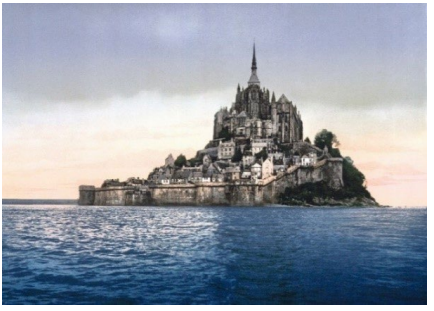


Figure 6. High tide in Mont Saint-Michel, France (c. 1900). Source: (old post card)

3.6. Atmosphere: sea and mist

Seascape is one of the favorite pictorial topics of Debussy and, in general, of all Impressionist painters. The poetic strokes that sketch the sound image of the sea focus mainly on its most sensory aspects, such as the uninterrupted movement of waves and the incidence of light on the surface.
In the case of the swell, the incessant rolling of the waters is evoked by the succession of ascending and descending chords, perhaps accompanied by rising bubbles, as if something was happening underneath.
As far as light is concerned, two characteristic and simultaneous phenomena converge. Firstly, transparency, which allows a glimpse of what lies beneath, for whose musical expression the level of intensity and tessitura are played, depending on the proximity to the surface of the sunken objects. Secondly, reflections or light flashes, recalled by sporadic replication of motifs or melodic material fragments. In this sense, the presentation passage of the temple (bars

28-38) could be tinged by the rays of sunrise, thanks to a greater harmonic and melodic clarity after the disappearance of the mist.
To represent the appearance of the mist with its aura of mystery, Debussy associates the idea of blurring or loss of visibility with that of fogginess or lack of sound sharpness. And this is achieved through harmonic vagueness, the absence of a clear melodic line, or the incorporation of pedal notes, which eventually make turbid the sound.
The atmosphere hinted at by all these phenomena could well be identified with some of Claude Monet's paintings, among which *Impression, soleil levant* (1872), the series of the London Parliaments (1900-1904) (Fig. 7) and the one of Rouan Cathedral (1892-1894) deserved to be highlighted.

Figure 7. Claude Monet: Parlements de Londres (1904), oil on canvas. Source: (Kunsthaus, Zurich)

CONCLUSION

Music has effectively a great capacity to evoke extra-musical contents: arguments, images, atmospheres, movements... In *La cathédral engloutie* all this is combined: the tale of an emersion, the representation of a mythical city, the recreation of an inner life, the evocation of a mysterious atmosphere... Certainly, the evanescent character of all music seems to fit perfectly with the ephemeral and instantaneous perception the impressionists were interested in. And Debussy, with his synesthetic ability and clever sensitivity, gets easily to transport us into a world of vibrant images, drawn in the air with sound brushstrokes.
Among the gamut of dreamy figures, there are also architectural ones: spires, main nave, perhaps an impressive façade..., that are aroused by a wide display of tools: scales, harmonic games, motivic and melodic material, rhythms, dynamics and other nuances... Based on this election, it would be said that the evocation of *La cathédral engloutie* is oriented towards a High Medieval Period rather than a paleo-Christian construction (Early Middle Ages), which would be in greater accordance with the chronology of the legend. Debussy's frequent visits to the island of Mont Saint-Michel may be at the base of this association (Fig. 6).
It should be reminded, however, that the music of this prelude is not purely descriptive. Not even the author could see directly the image represented, but only imagine it. Hence, his intention was not to predispose towards an accurate interpretation of the story but only to suggest it, leaving performers and listeners to build their own world of impressions.

REFERENCES

Bruhn, S. 1997. "La cathédrale engloutie", in *Images and ideas in modern French piano music. The extra-musical subtext in piano works by Ravel, Debussy, and Messiaen.* New York: Pendragon Press, 41-44.

Burkholder, J. P., Grout, D. J. Palisca, C. V. 2008. *Historia de la música occidental.* Madrid: Alianza.

Centre de documentation Claude Debussy <http://www.debussy.fr/encd/bio/bio1_62-82.php>

Hersart de la Villemarqué, Th. 1846. "VI. Submersion de la ville d'Ys", in *Chants populaires de la Bretagne, recueillis et publiés avec une traduction française, des arguments, des notes et les mélodies originales, par Th. Hersart de la Villemarqué.* Paris/Leipzig: A. Frank, 1846, 63-74.

Llácer Pla, F. 2001. *Guía analítica de formas musicales para estudiantes*. Madrid: Real Musical.

Morgan, R. P. 1994. *La música del siglo XX. Una historia del estilo musical en la Europa y la América modernas.* Madrid: Akal.

Petrucci Music Library <https://imslp.org/wiki/P%C3%A1gina_principal>

Roberts, P. 2001. "Debussy: ¿Impresionista o Simbolista? Reflets dans l'eau - La cathédrale engloutie". *Quodlibet: revista de especialización musical,* n. 19, 74-98.

Sansa Llovich, J. 2013. *Quintas y octavas prohibidas en el periodo modal-tonal.* Barcelona: Universitat Autònoma.

Schmitz, R. 1966. *The Piano Works of Claude Debussy*. New York: Dover.

Strobel, H. 1990. *Claude Debussy*. Madrid: Alianza.

Vela González, M. 2017. "El arabesco y otros orientalismos en la música de Debussy". *Musicaenclave*, n. 3.

Zamacois, J. 1997. *Temas de estética y de historia de la música.* Cooper City: SpanPress.

PAPER #6.05

INTERVENTIONS IN SPANISH MONUMENTAL HERITAGE: A HOLISTIC VIEW OF BURGOS CATHEDRAL

Elisa Bailliet[a]
[a] Universidad Rey Juan Carlos, Madrid, Spain

ABSTRACT

Theoretical protection -derived from conservation theories and international recommendations and conventions on the protection of historical cultural heritage- as well as the legal protection of monuments, are as necessary as they are vain if they are not accompanied by intervention, whether conservation or restoration.
Based on this concept, the present document proposes that there is no protection without a thorough knowledge of the good itself and the recognition of monumental values brought together in it. This fact is evident in monuments of high complexity. An example of this is the huge sequence of interventions in the Cathedral of Burgos, Spain. Motivated by the obvious historical and artistic values, more than half a hundred projects were carried out during the twentieth century.
This work provides an overview of the interventions made in the Cathedral of Burgos during the last century, and demonstrates that a global analysis allows us to understand this process as a constant search for balance and coherence, not only theoretical but also constructive, structural, and aesthetic.

KEYWORDS

Heritage; restauration; cathedral of Burgos.

INTRODUCTION[1]

In recent decades, there has been an explosion of interest for the state of conservation of cultural heritage in general, and spanish heritage in particular. Also, generic and specific studies, analyses, and research, have proliferated to provide further information on monumental heritage. This, in part, originates in intervention projects, whether conservation or restoration, and there are many researchers from multiple disciplines who analyze the past of goods, theories, and interventions.
During the last decades, a premise has been frequently repeated about heritage: it is not possible to protect what is unknown or what is known superfluously.
We can try, and just try, to find partial solutions through partial knowledge, but we cannot protect all values encompassed in a monumental good without the integral knowledge of it. Though it seems obvious, this has not always been accomplished. From our perspective, this fact demonstrates that, there is a need to determine a minimum knowledge that was required in each intervention of historic buildings. This minimum turned out to be the Director's Plans, which have served and still serve today to gather the vast information disseminated along the centennial history of the largest monuments in Spain. This seems like an immense task ... and, in view of the historical results, it has certainly been.
But, before intervention, even before the recognition of the need for intervention, there is a stage subject to legal norms

[1] This paper is part of the research carried out for the preparation of the Doctoral Thesis entitled "History of the protection of architectural heritage in Spain. 1933-1985", presented in 2016, under the direction of Mr. José Luis García Grinda and Mr. Jesús Prieto de Pedro, in the Department of Architectural Composition. Escuela Técnica Superior de Arquitectura (ETSAM). Universidad Politécnica de Madrid. Spain.

and criteria that protect the Monument conservation, or at least try to. The legislative set of protection rules has evolved since the nineteenth century with the sole intention to be increasingly efficient. After two centuries of evolution, we can appreciate that the doctrine must be applied, and that its application is the intervention itself. Far from inaction or indolence, the intervention MUST materialize everything that, as a rule, the Laws require.
Therefore, it is a succession of several documental, legal, and constructive efforts.

1. SEVERAL GENERATIONS UNDER CONSTRUCTION

In 1221, the new Cathedral of Santa María of Burgos was built on a Romanesque temple that would remain, like so many others, encysted inside or under it.
It shows reminiscences of French Gothic style and is therefore related to other similar cathedrals such as those of Burgundy or León (Gonzalez-Varas Ibáñez, 1999), sharing the stonemason master, Master Enrique in 1240.
Hans of Colonia, who also participated in its construction, built the perforated spiers in 1442 which would become one of the hallmarks of the Cathedral, as recognized by Vicente Lampérez y Romea in the installation project of the lightning rod in 1892 (Lampérez y Romea, 1892).

2. INTRODUCTION TO CENTRAL ADMINISTRATION RESTORATIONS

The Spanish administrative management during the first half of the twentieth century, through the General Commissions of the National Artistic Heritage for the conservation of Monuments, was concentrated in some architects for a long period of time. Therefore, in spite of the absence of a comprehensive document that implied an exhaustive documentary and historical investigation as well as the monitoring and control of all past interventions, knowledge of the monumental good was extensive and intense. This allowed that the works would follow a logical way, based on a planning that, far from being anarchic, has been progressive.
The same as for so many other monuments, the administrative organization, according to a geographical zoning, allowed some continuity of architects in charge of conservation and restoration works in the Cathedral.
Between 1942 and 1944 Francisco Iñíguez Almech, Director of Monuments of the National Treasury of Art, was in charge of interventions. From 1948 to 1963 he was replaced as architect of the monument by Anselmo Arenillas, who was followed by José Antonio Arenillas Asín (Assistant Architect of the 2nd zone). In 1978, Francisco Iñíguez Almech carried out two works, but the remaining ones, more than twenty restoration projects for the Cathedral, were performed by Marcos Rico Santamaría between 1976 and 1990.
The last restoration of the Cathedral of Burgos in the 19th century was carried out by Ricardo Velázquez Bosco in 1898. From then on, for almost twenty years, Vicente Lampérez y Romea intervened different areas of the monument. In 1929, J. Apraiz made the consolidation of the South needle.

2.1. Interventions on the roofs of Burgos Cathedral: the fundamental link for integral conservation

If the construction of a "building" lasts more than four centuries, it is apparent that the restorations alternate with the construction. In that case, we have to admit that some interventions have not recorded its imprint because they have been made interspersed and mimicked with the construction itself. According to the data provided by García Escudero and Hernández Gil in the 1995[4] intervention project, the first restorations was carried out in 1692 in the towers, followed by

the "Pellejería" (1516), the reconstruction of the dome (1539-1567) and the reform of the cruise of the cathedral (1642 and 1664).

They were followed by a multitude of cases with diverse objectives and incomparable magnitudes, from needles to reliefs, from facades to traceries and ornaments, which will be the subject of other studies.

But in 1948, although it had been proposed in some previous project and as an emergency plan, begin forty years of restoration works in all the roofs of the complex, alternating with works in other constructive and decorative elements.

By 1910, Vicente Lampérez y Romea had restored the covers of the Chapel of the Constable and the lower nave of the south side, with a budget of 18,732.89 pesetas, but unfortunately it has not been possible to access the documentation of the project, which prevents us specify the magnitude of such an intervention.[2]

Also, in 1929, Apraiz undertook the timely restoration of the cruise deck, as part of a general intervention.

But it is in 1942 when we began to recognize the interventions in the real problems of the roofs, starting with the project of Francisco Iñíguez Almech (Iñíguez Almech, 1942). In this project he faced the repair of the pavement of the low cloister and recognized that his roof had leaks and that it was necessary to restore it, although only the "review of the zinc cover" was indicated.

A few years later, in 1948, Anselmo Arenillas (Arenillas, 1948) insisted on this situation again, which let us infer that the tasks carried out proved insufficient.

As Iñíguez Almech explained in the project in 1963, almost twenty years later, the rains of the previous year had deteriorated the tissues of the whole, so he proposed the restoration of the roof of the Chapel of Santiago, such as the side skirt from the Chapel of Santa Tecla. This restoration involved the replacement of 40% pairs of the roofs, around 500m2 of planking, and with 50% use of the roof tiles.

Despite this, a year later José Antonio Arenillas Asín (Arenillas Asín, 1964) proposed the reconstruction of the cover of the Condestable Chapel due to the great deterioration detected (loss of section due to the presence of xylophagous insects), which compromised the structural stability of the cover, and put at risk the vaults and arches. The reconstruction proposed involved the construction of a metal structure with articulated anchors to avoid the transmission of effort when the material dilated.

It should be noted that this change in the construction system proposed by Arenillas Asín in his project, the replacement of a wooden structure by a metal structure, minimized the possibility of a fire like the one in Notre Dame Cathedral, in Paris, in 2019.

Obviously, the situation of the Condestable Chapel was no exception, and in 1966 Arenillas detected that this state of consummate ruin, not incipient, had repeated in the cover of the Chapel of Santiago (Arenillas Asín, 1966).

This situation would continue over time, and in 1976 architect Rico Santamaría presented three new roof repair projects of the lateral naves of the Chapel of "San Nicolás", the Chapel of "La Natividad" and the Chapel of "San Antonio" (Rico Santamaría, 1976a), "Santa Ana" and "Santa Tecla".

In addition to the structural replacement, the vaults were reinforced by a water-repellent concrete coating to minimize the possible leaks of the roof, and the stone material of the coronation of the walls was consolidated.

Due to the structural unit of the roof of the Chapels of Santa Ana (Rico Santamaría, 1976b) and Santa Tecla (Rico Santamaría, 1976c), the project for the roof replacement of the latter was prepared on the same year. On this occasion, and with the double objective of facilitating water evacuation and minimizing its effect on the left tower, and also visually freeing the flying buttress and the tower, the

[2] General Archive of the IPCE, Ministry of Education, Culture and Sports, Madrid, and General Archive of the Administration (AGA), Alcalá de Henares. Consultation period: January and February 2012.

project proposed the reconfiguration of the roof to four waters. The project contemplated the protection of the churrigueresque dome through an internal formwork with minimal impact on the surface.

The project also contemplated the restoration of the stones of the wall, as well as the provision of isolated zinc gangways to prevent the tiles from stepping on. The exterior stone walls would also be repaired, covering them with a coat of transparent and matt silicate paint as protection against future erosion.

From the general analysis carried out by Rico Santamaría, there is evidence that the roofs were in a state of poor conservation and that it was necessary to undertake successive restoration works that, could involve the dismantling and reconstruction of some zones.

In general, and due to the structural similarities of the roofs, the conservation problems were similar throughout the whole building. The leaks in the vaults and the consequent deformations, as well as the appearance of damp in adjacent walls would cause the wooden structures to be replaced by a metallic one. Besides this reconstruction, the stone material of the walls had to be also restored by means of stapling and grating at the coronation.

In the same way, the roofs of the central nave of the apse, both lateral naves, and the passage of the Chapel of the "Condestable" (Rico Santamaría, 1977b), respectively, were intervened.

Two years later, in 1979, two projects were drawn up with the objective of partially restoring the roofs of the Cloister, in the area near the Chapter House (Rico Santamaría, 1979a) and in the Sarmental (Rico Santamaría, 1979b) area, respectively. In both works, the wooden elements were replaced by metal belts laminated with a hollow ceramic vault board, with the corresponding compression layer and double metal mesh. These projects proposed to reduce the slope from 45% to 33% and replace the flat by the curved tiles. In the opposite sides, in the area near the chapel of Santiago and San Enrique, roofs of one water with a 10% slope and covered

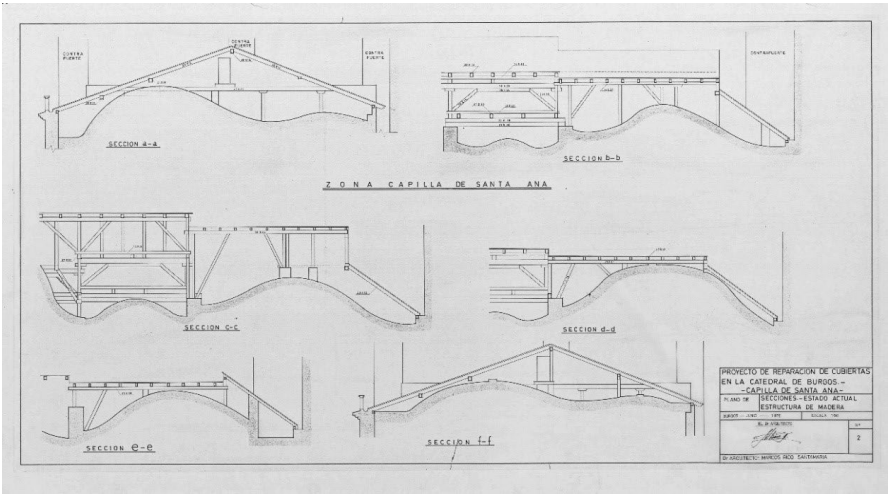


Figure 1. Detailed plan of the roof repair project in the Cathedral of Burgos. Chapel of Santa Ana. Current State. Architect: Rico Santamaría, M. Date: March 1976. Source: IPCE General Archive. IPCE Planoteca. Ministry of Culture and Sports. Spain.

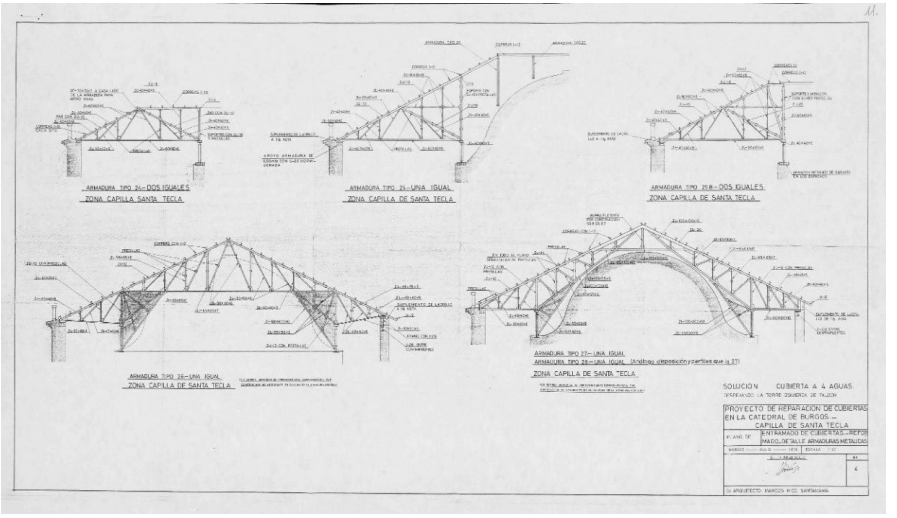


Figure 2. Detailed plan of the roof repair project in the Cathedral of Burgos. Chapel of Santa Ana. State reformed. Architect: Rico Santamaría, M. Date: March 1976. Source: IPCE Planoteca. Ministry of Culture and Sports. Spain.

by zinc sheet were renovated. In addition to the replacement of downspouts, valleys, and gutters, access doors to the galvanized sheet platform would be incorporated, plastering the skirts with water-repellent mortar.

That same year, at the end of 1979, Rico developed two complementary projects in which he proposed the partial repair of the roofs of the Anterior Central Nave, in Plaza de Santa María, the left front lateral nave (Rico Santamaría, 1979c) and the roofs of the towers, and the right lateral nave (Rico Santamaría, 1979d).

The following year, efforts were focused on areas that had not been previously intervened, covering 1,657 m2. Thus, the project for the partial repair of the roofs of the Burgos Cathedral (Rico Santamaría, 1980) was proposed, including several areas like the Chapel of the Remedies (or of the Holy Christ of Burgos), the Dressing Room of the Canons, and the Sacristy of the Chapel of the Presentation, the Chapels of the Presentation, of the Relics, of San Juan de Sahagún, and of Santa Isabel, the South arm of the transept, the Chapel of San Enrique, and the Vestibule of the Sacristy.

The intervention consisted in the application of the same technique of substitution of the wooden framework by a metallic structure of laminated profiles, the restoration of the accessory elements of the roof. Unlike other sectors, this area presented unevenness and access to the below deck, so access skylights would be incorporated. This solution makes it possible to bridge the gap between roofs and vaults without it being perceived from the outside.

In 1981, while the works in the nearby areas were being completed, the General Directorate of Fine Arts, Archives and Libraries of the Ministry of Culture commissioned Rico Santamaría a new project (Rico Santamaría, 1981) for the restoration of 2,014 m2 in order to conclude the repair of the Cathedral roofs. This new project included restorations in six priority areas which were located in the Sacristy of the Main Chapel, the roofs

of the transept lantern, the Chapel of the Condestables, the Chapel of Santiago, that of Santa Catalina and the Archive (on the Chapel of Corpus Christi), access to the archive (on the Chapter House), and the Engine Room and boilers.

As with all covers, the protocol was limited to the protection, replacement, and adaptation of covers according to their state of conservation, the degree of deterioration, and the material used.

For years, Rico Santamaría dedicated himself to restoring and rebuilding the roofs of the cathedral with the aim of stabilizing and updating the structures because, as he himself indicated in the project, "All the roofs of the Cathedral have been studied conscientiously to free them from their deplorable state, ..., having given an effective remedy to all of them." (Rico Santamaría, 1981. Pág. 2)

But this complex and methodical process would culminate in one of the most visible tasks, such as the intervention in the cruise ship's lantern. This element, rebuilt in the 16th century by Juan de Vallejo, had a plementery with openwork hidden by a framework. Such a sculptural filigree deserved special attention, literally, "... if there is one in which that scrupulous study has to be taken to the extreme, it is this one, the lantern in the transept." (Rico Santamaría, 1981. Pág. 2). This scrupulous study consisted of verifying the state of conservation of the roof elements, the decision to maintain the beams that supported the framework that was to be removed, "... as a relic of other times ...", the estimated calculation of the self-weight of the structure and the need to lighten it without intervening the openwork plementery.

Likewise, the placement of three skylights per triangle roof, a total of twenty-four Stadip skylights on the octagonal roof, was proposed with a double mission of lightening the roof and illuminating the delicate works of Juan Vallejo.

CONCLUSIONS

In the last decades, some studies have suggested that the works carried out in the Spanish monumental heritage during more than half of the 20th century had not followed any planning and that, on the contrary, they had been the result of impulses motivated by emergencies. It is true that, on many occasions, the appearance of pathologies of variable magnitude and importance has marked the sequence of works in many heritage assets. But, in contrast, some monuments have gone through a process of exhaustive analysis through which priorities were identified that guided the intervention process.

Gradually, interventions in the Cathedral of Burgos have been linked to a strategy of structural stabilization and roof consolidation, and this was demonstrated by the progression of the works carried out on the roofs by Marcos Rico Santamaría.

The Cathedral of Santa María de Burgos is one of the most intervened Spanish monuments over the last three centuries. Altogether, numerous works of all kinds, size, and budget have followed one another. All this with the sole and essential purpose of maintaining, preserving, safeguarding its integrity and that of the artistic, historical, architectural, and sculptural elements: to preserve their cultural values.

This monument, declared by Royal Decree of April 8, 1885, would take a century to be declared a World Heritage Site in 1985. During that century it became one of the hundreds of pampered goods, in the best sense, of Spain. And, for this reason, it was recognized by UNESCO in the best possible state thanks to, at least, sixty-four projects of various kinds.

It has been speculated that the tragedy occurred at Notre Dame of Paris could take place in one of the Spanish Cathedrals. It would be naive and reckless to deny emphatically that any disaster could occur

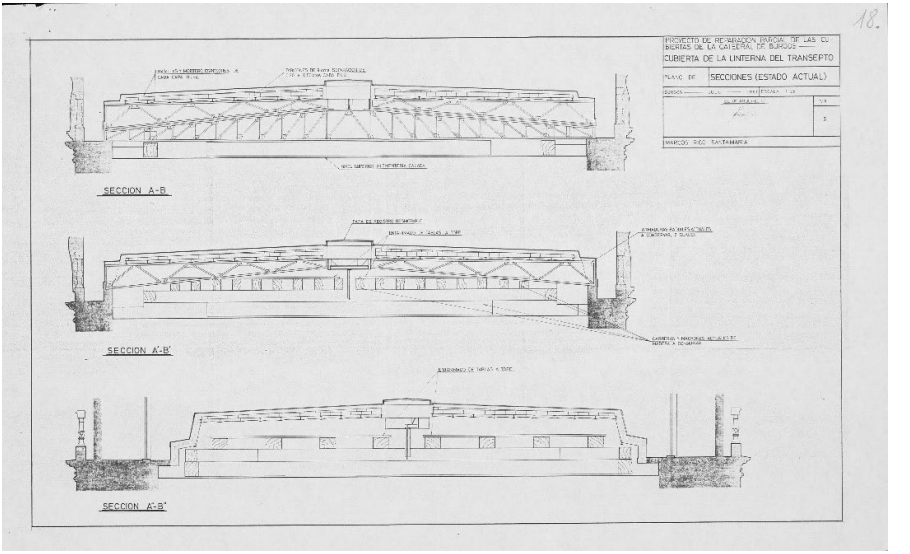


Figure 3. Burgos Cathedral: Cover of the Lantern of the Transept. Actual state. Author: Rico Santamaría, M. (1981). Instituto del Patrimonio Cultural de España. Planoteca. Signatura: PLM CAJA 7 127 / 1442

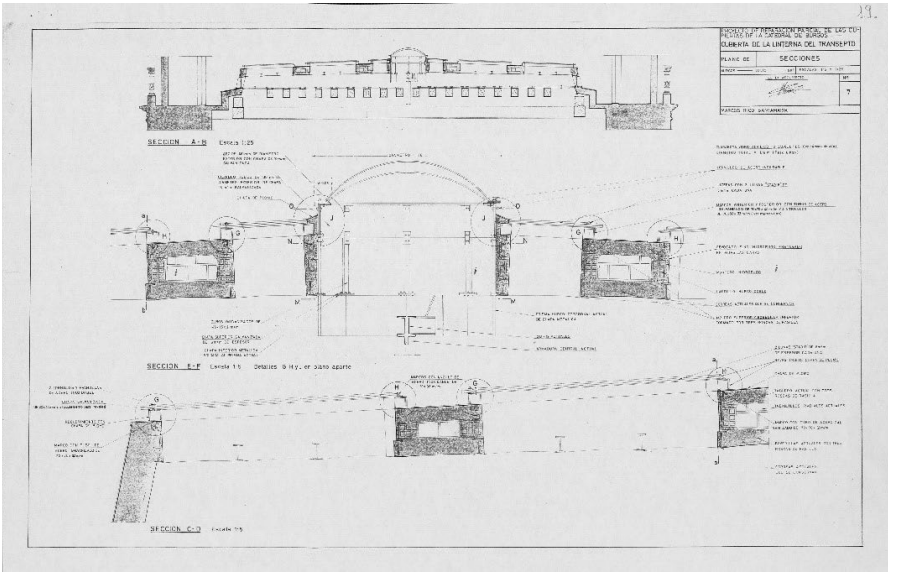


Figure 4. Burgos Cathedral: Transept's lantern cover. Reformed state. Author: Rico Santamaría, M. (1981). Instituto del Patrimonio Cultural de España. Planoteca. Signatura: PLM CAJA 7 127 / 1443

in the Spanish heritage, but in the light of data available, after centuries of meticulous and effective care, the possibilities seem drastically reduced and that image, less likely. Or at least we hope so.

REFERENCES

Arenillas, A. (1948). "Reparación de las cubiertas de la Catedral". Fecha. Marzo 1948. Fuente: AGA, Signatura: 26/00264.

Arenillas Asín, J.A. (1964). "Reconstrucción de la cubierta de la Capilla del Condestable". Fecha: marzo 1964. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 6/20.

Arenillas Asín, J.A. (1966). "Reconstrucción de cubiertas de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: abril 1966. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 6/24

García Escudero, P. y Hernández Gil, D. (1995). "Obras de emergencia en la aguja norte de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: octubre 1995. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 1393/1. Expte. 488/95.

Gonzalez-Varas Ibáñez, I. (1999). *Conservación de Bienes culturales. Teoría, historia, principios y normas*. Madrid: Cátedra.

Gonzalez-Varas Ibáñez, I. (1995). *Restauración Monumental en España durante el siglo XIX*. Valladolid: Ámbito.

Iñíguez Almech, F. (1942). "Obras de reparación del pavimento del Claustro bajo y cubiertas del mismo de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha. 1942. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 6/17.

Lampérez y Romea, V. (1892). "Proyecto de instalación de pararrayos". Fuente: AGA, Signatura: 31/8039.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1976)."Reparación de las cubiertas de la nave transversal izquierda, Capilla de San Nicolás, Capilla de la Natividad y Capilla de San Antonio de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: marzo 1976. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 486/6.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1976). "Reparación de la cubierta de la nave de Santa Ana de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: junio 1976. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 486/4.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1976). "Reparación de la cubierta de la nave de Santa Ana de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: junio 1976. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 486/5.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1977). "Reparación parcial de las cubiertas de la Girola naves laterales, la capilla de San Gregorio, y la nave lateral derecha de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: marzo 1977. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 486/8.

Rico Santamaría, M. "Reparación parcial de las cubiertas de la Nave Central Ábside, Nave lateral posterior izquierda, y paso a la Capilla del Condestable de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: marzo 1977. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 487/1

Rico Santamaría, M. (1979). "Reparación parcial de las cubiertas del Claustro en la zona contigua a la Sala Capitular de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: agosto 1979. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 487/2.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1979). "Reparación parcial de las cubiertas del Claustro en la zona Sarmental de la Catedral de Burgos". Fecha: agosto 1979. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 487/4.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1979). "Reparación parcial de las cubiertas de la Nave Central anterior (Plaza de Santa María) y nave lateral anterior izquierda". Fecha: abril/ diciembre 1979. Fuente: AGA, Signatura: 51/11343.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1979). "Reparación parcial de la Torre, nave entre torres, nave lateral anterior derecha". Fecha: diciembre 1979. Fuente: AGA, Signatura: 51/11343.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1980). "Proyecto de reparación parcial de las cubiertas de la catedral de Burgos. Zonas A,B,C,D,E,F". Fecha: marzo 1980. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Legajo: 487/3.

Rico Santamaría, M. (1981). "Reparación parcial de las cubiertas de la Catedral de Burgos. Sacristía de la Capilla Mayor, Capilla de los Condestables, Capilla de Santiago, Capilla de Sta. Catalina y Archivo (sobre capilla del Corpus Christi), Acceso Archivo (Sala capitular), Cubierta Sala de maquinas y calderas, varios". Fecha: julio 1981. Fuente: Archivo General IPCE. Expte. 123/82. Legajo: 488/2.

PAPER #6.06

THE ROLE OF KNOWLEDGE TRANSFER IN MASONRY BRIDGE CONSTRUCTION FROM SPAIN TO GUATEMALA

Sandra Hernandez[a], Ahmed K. Ali[a]
[a] Texas A&M University, College Station, TX

ABSTRACT

By the 16th Century, transportation networks played a vital role in the urban growth of many settlements during the Spanish colonization in Guatemala. Consequently, the construction of masonry bridges ran parallel to the regional trading networks. Beyond its humble simplicity, expressed in the use of local materials, such as stone and bricks, these bridges resulted from technological advancements that fostered cultural, social and knowledge exchange between the Spanish colonists and the local Mayan Indigenous. Moreover, the construction of masonry bridges included a complex process of knowledge transfer among both cultures. Interestingly, little has been written about the still-standing Colonial bridges, which have not always been the primary focus of preservation efforts. The influence of both cultures on the masonry bridge's construction during the 16th Century in Latin America is one critical question in revealing its construction history yet to be answered.

This paper builds on an ongoing doctoral research that intent to investigate and document both the Las Donadas Bridge in Montoro, Spain, and the Los Esclavos Bridge in Santa Rosa, Guatemala. This study attempts to understand the non-verbal reflections of history through the physical characteristics, materials, and constructive methods of each bridge. Ultimately, the goal is to build a comparative analysis using three material and construction elements of a bridge, such as stone, arch, and abutment. A qualitative case study approach incorporates historical archives, field observation, survey, and photography. Each structure is expected to provide a greater knowledge of the cultural influences and the apportioning of both cultures' craftsmanship during the Los Esclavos Bridge construction.

KEYWORDS

Knowledge transfer; bridge construction; stone; arches; Colonial Period.

INTRODUCTION

In the 15th Century, during the Exploration period, Spain invested an extensive effort to expand its empire in America. Previous experiences in warfare strategies, including technological advantages such as weapons and horses, gave Europeans the superiority over Indigenous groups. Consequently, Spanish conquerors became experts in incorporating strategies of colonization throughout America. During this period, the encounters between local ideas and foreign ones created a hybrid exchange of knowledge between both Mayan Indigenous and Spanish cultures resulting in new cultural entities (Headrick 1988). This interweaved cultural integration was developed to fit local conditions through many areas of life. For example, the Spanish Colonization in Guatemala reveals a sum of new intangible manifestations expressed by language, faith, and folklore. In conjunction with tangible entities, such as architecture, cuisine, clothing, and building technology, all together became the cultural legacies between the Mayan and Spanish cultures.

In the 16th Century, the Colonization period started a new wave in building technology and infrastructure. It coincides with the development of a transportation system and the construction of masonry arched bridges. Few scholarly writings have been focused on the role of infrastructure related to colonization. One influential work is "The Tools of Empire" by Daniel Headrick. In his book, Headrick pointed out the impact of technological advances in transportation and infrastructure as elements of colonization in the new environments. Although the work focuses on the transfer of knowledge in technology, it is framed within the 19th-Century European context (Headrick 1988). Even less has been written about the role of the masonry bridges as elements of technological innovation in the context of the Colonial period. One crucial structure for this research is the Los Esclavos Bridge, found in a small village located in the Department of Santa Rosa on the southeastern Guatemalan territory. The masonry bridge's construction was primarily carried out by the Xinca Natives, one ethnic group within the Mayan civilization (Recinos 1984). To inquire into the role of knowledge transfer and the requirements to build the structure, first, it is necessary to know about the source of hand-labor and source of knowledge prior and during its construction. At the same time, it is essential to know the materials, methods used for its construction. Therefore, one section of this analysis provides a general background for each bridge undertaken. The other section offers a technical analysis of both structures to compare about their visual characteristics.

1. METHODOLOGY

The interdisciplinary nature of this research requires the need to analyze different fields, theories, and concepts, from a subjective perspective. Therefore, it is based on the comparative analysis of qualitative case studies. The focus of this approach is to develop an in-depth understanding of two units of analysis, represented by two historic bridges. This model will explore the phenomenon of transfer of knowledge through the architectural lens to demonstrate repetition, patterns, and commonalities between both cases (Merriam and Merriam 1998) The first bridge which will serve as a benchmark is the Las Donadas Bridge, located in Montoro, Spain, built approximately between 1498 and 1544. The second bridge that acts as an embedded (in-depth) entity is the Los Esclavos Bridge, located in Santa Rosa, Guatemala, built between 1592 and 1600. Los Esclavos case received a broader perspective of analysis with a more in-depth understanding of the factors that affected its construction (Scholz and Tietje 2002). The goal is to use the findings as a starting point to establish the patterns and interrelations between the Spanish and the local Indigenous, to argue the established assumption that the process of knowledge transfer ran only one way as imported and blueprinted from Spain. The research methodology included the following tasks: To establish the time-frame: built between 15th and 16th Century (based on Los Esclavos' date of construction in 1592) To select the geographic location: Guatemala and Spain (to display the sequence of events from Spain to Latin America) To generate a survey and analysis: based on bridge typology construction method, arch configuration; span range; length; function or utility; architectural features, such as construction materials: Masonry, stone, and brick To organize the acquired data. To draw the conclusions.

2. BACKGROUND

This analysis presents general information of the Indigenous and Spanish technological developments that influenced the construction of the Los Esclavos Bridge. As well, the historical background of the

locations where the bridges' construction took place. De-winding those factors together with the stone, arch, and abutment technical analysis will help create a holistic view.

2.1. The Mayan Indigenous' Influence

The region of Guatemala is the center of the ancient Mayan civilization. It is documented that during the time of the Spanish conquest, Mayan builders already knew the corbeled arch method, which they used to construct vaults. This particular spanning system is also known as the Mayan arch, designed to cover rectangular spaces and support the stone ceiling (e.g. Fig. 1). The Mayan arch system is based on the cantilever principle that relies on an offset horizontal stone projecting beyond the one underneath (Gilabert Sansalvador 2018). Simultaneously, the horizontal stone layers create an inverted "V" shape over a linear axis (depicted as stepping stone stairs in cross-section). Unlike the semicircular Roman arch, the Mayan arch's construction was less complex because it only worked under gravity loads or by axial forces; therefore, it was also known as a false arch (O'Kon 2012). Researchers believe that Mayan builders relied on two different methods to achieve this effect during construction. First, the synchronized construction of the exterior and interior masonry walls served as a mold or framework for the core fill-in material, usually ruble. Second, the internal thrust beams built with timber were designed to serve two purposes; as a scaffolding to reach heights fixed to remain-in place after completion and as an axial shear reinforcement of the arch (e.g. Fig. 1).

While the Mayan builders took advantage of their local resources efficiently, using mostly limestone, clay, and timber founded in the surroundings (Wernecke 2005), recent research demonstrated that the Mayan builders used a different method for building bridges across a major rivers. According to the archaeologist and engineer James A. O'Kon, the archeological remains found in a Mayan site called "Yaxchilan" demonstrated that they used a combination of a suspension rope-cable method aided by two a passing-through masonry towers and anchorages to each side. (O'Kon 1995). Because of the structural advantages of this system that allow longer lengths, the Mayan were able to build a bridge with three continuous spans for a total length of approximately 182 meters (approximately 600 ft.) over the Usumacinta River, which defines the border between Guatemala and Mexico.

2.2. The Europeans' Influence

Roman builders were considered as the fathers of the masonry arched bridge's construction that were built throughout Europe. When the Romans conquered Spain, they brought their knowledge of civil engineering to that region. Consequently, the history of bridges in Spain's western part was influenced by both the Roman and Moorish cultures that occurred the land.

Similarly, since the Spanish Empire colonized Guatemala, it was expected that the knowledge of bridge-building technology was an adaptation and incorporation of both cultures, the Spanish and the Mayan Indigenous.

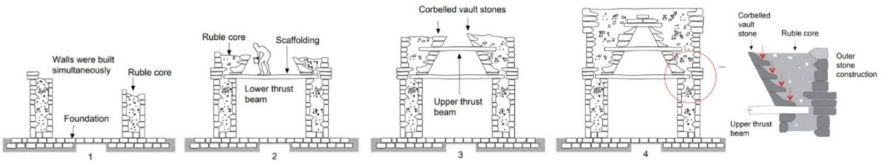


Figure 1. Construction process of the Mayan arch based on O'Kon sketches. Source: (Author 2020)

One crucial example of this technology is exemplified in the Los Esclavos Bridge, found in a small village located in the Department of Santa Rosa on the southeastern Guatemalan territory. It is undeniable that the Los Esclavos Bridge is a clear example of European colonists' intent to introduce their constructive methods in the new environment. For the first time, the Indigenous of Guatemala were introduced to the production and technology of fired brick and semicircular arched masonry structures. These skills and knowledge were passed down from Spanish builders and masons to the local artisans and then to their new generations (Fraser 1990). In Spain, similar structures were constructed in the Cordova and Extremadura regions, near the Portugal's border. One example is the Las Donadas Bridge, located in Montoro, Cordova (e.g. Fig. 2). Despite the two structures being built more than 150 years apart, and different continents with a distance of approx. 8,690 km from each other, the most visible characteristic of comparison are their physical configuration and surface qualities such as material and craftsmanship.

2.3. Las Donadas Bridge as a benchmark case study

The Las Donadas Bridge, located in Montoro Village, Province of Córdoba, Spain, carries the Cedrón road over the Guadalquivir River. The bridge's original name was Puente Mayor, which means "Major Bridge" in the English language. The exact dates of its construction have not been determinate. However, according to Jose Ortiz Garcia, a researcher from the University of Córdoba, it is estimated that the bridge construction lasted for nearly over 40 years between 1498 and 1544. There is the possibility that Enrique Egas, an architect from Brussels, was in charge of the design and the construction under the direction of a master of works named Pedro Fernandez (García 2006).

Portion of the funding for its construction came as a donation from the Montoro's inhabitants and neighbor communities under the justification of regional financial benefit (García 2006). For this reason, the bridge was called El Puente de Las Donadas or "the bridge of the donated" in the English language. According to Daniel Vela, historic bridges in Portugal and Spain that belonged to the Roman political system were regulated by pre-established rules that define their craftsmanship and materials and not by local conditions (Vale 2019). One of these rules dictated that a bridge must be wider than 5 meters (approx. 16.5 feet) to allow the Roman mounted troops to campaign and commercialize. Here, it is necessary to remember that back in the 15th Century, the typical transportation method in Spain and Europe was by horses and carriages, which justified the 5 meters bridge's width ruling. Despite the present technological advances in transportation, the Las Donadas

Figure 2. Left, Las Donadas Bridge, Montoro, Spain. Source (Garcia 2008). Right, Los Esclavos Bridge, Santa Rosa, Guatemala. Source (Author 2018). Two remarkable technological innovations from 15th and 16th Century.

Bridge still serves its original purpose. The 29 feet width clearance of its road is enough to accommodate a two-way vehicular traffic and the pedestrian circulation (Table 1). During special events, the bridge modifies its function and becomes part of the Montoro's community space for an open social events and celebrations (e.g. Fig. 3).

2.4. Los Esclavos Bridge as an embedded case study

As colonists began to establish new foundations, it became necessary to connect those settlements that were part of the Viceroyalty of the New Spain (now known as Mexico, Guatemala, and much of Central America). Before the year of 1592, colonists who traveled the southeastern mountainous area of Santa Rosa, Guatemala, encountered a raging river that caused a loss of time, human resources, and money. Those reasons were the primary motivation for constructing a masonry-arched bridge that would withstand the violent waters, especially during the rainy season, providing a fast and easy method to safely cross over the river for all the traffic operating during that time. The arched bridge's construction was executed by the Xinca Natives, who were enslaved to serve the colonists. Based on the chronicles of Bernal Diaz del Castillo, a traveler historian, the Xinca were the first slaves formally assigned to conquerors in that area (Tom. II, Tratado IV, Cap. XXII, from the MSS. of Fuentes). For this reason, the small village, including the river and bridge were named Los Esclavos, which means "the Slaves" in the Spanish language. Its construction began approximately on February 17, 1592, and was finished in the year 1600. Unfortunately, there is no known document describing the construction process or an inventory of the people who participated in its construction, which what makes this study important to reveal the construction story of that bridge.
During that time, the primary means of transportation were either riding a horse or a wagon pulled by oxen. Therefore, the three meters width of the Los Esclavos Bridge allowed just one-way traffic at a time (e.g. Fig. 3). The access ramps on each side of the roadway probably functioned as a waiting zone for travelers, cattle, and merchandise to cross over (Table 1). Similar to the Las Donadas Bridge, the construction of the Los Esclavos Bridge was partially funded by a taxation policy; in this case, a tax was applied to bottles of wine (Hemeroteca PL. 2017). Over time, the bridge's economic benefits became visible to the surrounding area, and the Viceroyalty of Santiago de los Caballeros in Guatemala located 40 miles away from the site (de Administración Tributaria 2009).

	Las Donadas Bridge	*Los Esclavos Bridge*
Location	Montoro Village, Cordoba, Spain	Los Esclavos Village, Santa Rosa, Guatemala
Length Approx.	180 Meters/590.5 Feet	89 Meters/293 Feet
Width Approx.	9 Meters/29.5 Feet	3 Meters/10 Feet
Height Approx.	19.5 Meters/62.3 Feet	11 Meters/29.5 Feet
Number of arches	Four (4)	Eleven (11)
Latitude and Longitude	38°01'37.4 N / 4°22'63 W	14°25'10 N / 90°27'42 W
Material(s)	Stone	Stone and Brick

Table 1. Technical information and table-comparison of both bridges, Source: (Author 2020)

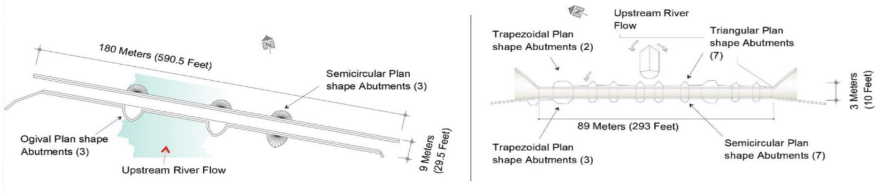


Figure 3. Left, plan of Las Donadas Bridge, Montoro Spain. Source (Author 2020) Right, Plan of Los Esclavos Bridge, Santa Rosa, Guatemala. Source (Author 2020)

3. TECHNICAL ANALISYS

3.1. Abutments

Both bridges appear to have similar abutments in their design and geometric configuration; perhaps their arrangement is one of the most common elements. While the structural analysis of the bridges is out of the scope of this research, it is necessary to provide a general explanation of the acting forces to justify the role of abutments on the bridges. Structurally, semicircular arches transfer loads in a vertical direction, and segmental aches transfer the loads in an inclined direction to the supporting piers and abutments (Huerta Fernández 2001). The Los Esclavos Bridge involves a combination of both type-arches, five semicircular, and six segmental arches that form the barreled vaults. The piers located on either side of the vault receive upper loads and bring them to the foundation. In conjunction with the piers, the abutments have three main functions; first, to absorb half the weight of each adjoin barreled vault; second, to resist the side forces created by the load on each vault; and third, to provide equilibrium and stabilization to the bridge in the horizontal direction (Apreutesei and Oliveira 2005). The presence of sharp edges on the upstream abutments serves as a hydraulic approach to redirect and lessen the upstream river flow's impact against the spandrel wall. Further, it deviates the floating debris by controlling the flow passing through the barreled vaults' openings and between piers. The upstream abutments in both bridges present the same principle. The abutments in the Las Donadas Bridge have only two plan configurations and fewer abutments; three are ogival and three semicircular. On the upstream façade, two of the ogival abutments are full height up against the road level, and a third is with half-height; some scholars suggest that it was never finished. One unique element of this bridge is that two full height ogival abutments became a balcony at the road level, modifying its function and providing pedestrian access for a lookout. This particular experience enhances the relationship between landscape, bridge, and the user. The semicircular abutments are built on the downstream façade. Each abutment is elevated until half the height of the bridge. After this point, the semicircle flat-based rises to a conical cap ending towards the spaniel wall, where it reaches the pinnacle (table1). Differing from the Las Donadas Bridge, the number of abutments in the Los Esclavos Bridge increased significantly to nineteen (19). All of them have a full-height; however, there is no pedestrian access. As expected, all the upstream façade abutments (east) have sharp edges, however, their plan configuration is distributed to seven triangular and two more in a trapezoidal shape. On the downstream façade, the plan configuration changes to seven semicircles and three trapezoidal shapes (table1).

Abutment	Las Donadas Bridge			Los Esclavos Bridge		
Location	Plan shape		Height	Plan shape		Height
Upstream façade	Three (3)	Ogival	Full (2)	Seven (7)	Triangular	Full
			Half (1)	Two (2)	Trapezoidal	
Downstream façade	Three (3)	Semicircular	Half	Seven (7)	Semicircular	Full
				Three (3)	Trapezoidal	
Total	Six (6)			Nineteen (19)		

Table 2. Distribution of abutment in both bridges, by plan shape, façade and number of units. Source: (Author 2020)

3.2. Arches

Contrary to the Mayan corbeled arch, the construction of a semicircular arch involves the use of a temporary framework in the form of mold to guide the construction as the arch gets shaped. The curvilinear shape of this deck not only provides stability, but also supports the dead weight of the materials, and maintains the semicircular shape of the upper unfinished vault-structure until it acquires the strength to support itself. In the Los Esclavos Bridge, five central barreled vaults have a series of small holes embedded on the walls along a horizontal axis as evidence of this procedure. By definition, those holes are known as "putlogs" it was a prevalent practice in masonry historical bridges (Curl 2006). Their consistent rectangular shape and their size indicated the possibility of perpendicular beams that penetrated the walls to support the curved platform's ends. However, there is no specific information about the material used for this purpose. It would be possible they used timber or bamboo as part of the framework and scaffolding since the grass grows in the area. Bamboo is a common material in Guatemala that is fast growing and can be up to 30 centimeters (12 inches). The Las Donadas Bridge is composed of four semicircle arches, all with different spans that support the 180 meters-long deck. This structure works on the basic principle of semicircular arches; the load and forces are transferred in a vertical direction to the piers, which was previously explained (e.g. Fig. 4). This was the technology that the Spanish Colonists brought to New Spain. The Los Esclavos Bridge has eleven arches to support the structure, distributed along a linear axis approximate 89 meters long (293 feet). Each arch became a barreled vault to carry the single-lane deck, defined by the three-meter width (approx. 10 feet) of the road above. The facades have five semicircle arches and six segmental arches

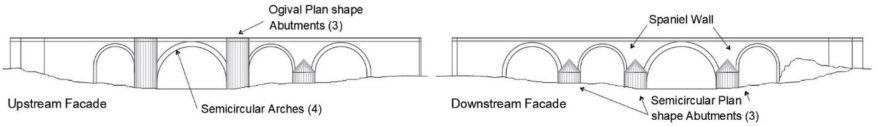


Figure 4. Left, Upstream Façade Las Donadas Bridge. Source (Author 2018) Right, Downstream Façade of Las Donadas Bridge. Source (Author 2020)

in elevation, each with different height and span to accommodate the uneven terrain. The role of the framework (or mold) in the construction of the Los Esclavos Bridge was essential for the learning of the local carpenters and builders who became acquainted with the new arch principles. This historical structure is sober in decorations, but it is evident they used an appropriate and well-constructed framework, which allowed a structural sound bridge when it comes to its efficiency. Despite torrential rains during wet seasons and the constant earth-shaking, this structure still stands to attest its exceptional craftsmanship, passed from the expert European master to the novice Mayan Indigenous builders (e.g. Fig. 5).

3.3. Stone of the Las Donadas Bridge

The village of Montoro, Spain, is well known for using a red colored stone in its buildings and ornamentation around the town. The Las Donadas Bridge was built with a local stone classified as lithotype known as "Molinaza Roja" (Molina et al. 2015). It is unquestioned that the Las Donadas Bridge's construction involved a considerable amount of labor not only in preparing the cut stone but also arranging the ashlar setting at the site. It was finely worked to produce a masonry system predominantly made of rectangular and square ashlar blocks. Although the structure was carefully built from start to finish, visually, it exposed two particular patterns. The upper section starts from the top of the handrail down to the road level. The lower section starts from the road level, down to the foundation (e.g. Fig. 5-b). Both upper and lower sections are separated by a continuous horizontal sill located approx. at the bridge's road level. This sill is projected from the spaniel wall and extends to the bridge's entire length in both facades. The upper section presents a modular system crafted into consistent stone blocks. Detailed stonework was applied to precisely lay the stone and neatly to address the handrail's edges. All three rows of the handrail wall are well proportioned and balanced for a uniform ashlar configuration, including the robust capstone that matches the wall pattern (e.g. Fig. 6-a, and 6-b). The size of the joints are consistent and relatedly thing that the mortar is almost invisible. The lower section presents a different modular arrangement (e.g. Fig. 6-c). Most of the blocks were laid horizontally and maintained the interlocking system between each row. However, each row has a different height related to the other (e.g. Fig. 6-c). In some cases, the stone units were laid in a random pattern, sometimes facing the headers and others facing the stretcher, but keeping the same height through the entire course. The changes in the ashlar configuration could be the product of an intermittent sequence of construction. The present findings suggest that the craftsmanship applied to the Las Donadas

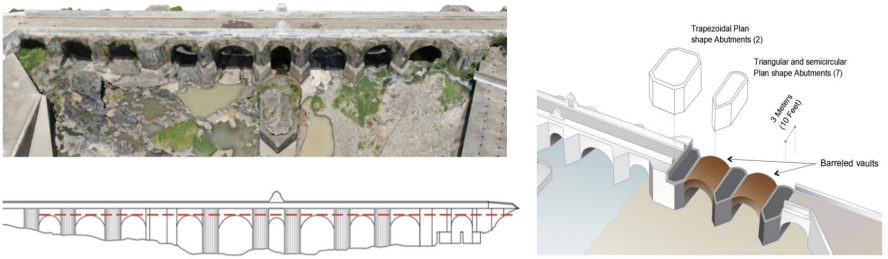


Figure 5. Left, Upstream Façade of Los Esclavos Bridge. Source (Author 2018) Right, 3Dimentional model of Los Esclavos Bridge. Source (Author 2020)

Bridge and its work's magnitude might significantly influence its 40 years of construction. Both sections' patterns balance the bridge; the lower part was designed for general serviceability. Based on the visual characteristics of the upper section, it suggests the use of sophisticated craftsmanship and material hierarchy compared to the lower section. Perhaps, the upper part was influenced by the relation between pedestrians and the bridge, to please and enhance the people's experience.

Stone of the Los Esclavos Bridge

The masonry stone system of the Los Esclavos Bridge is mainly composed of rubble stone except for the arches, barrel-vaults, and handrails that were made of brick. In some cases, the use of rough-cut stone was implemented to create specific elements of the bridge, such as the abutments, corners, and edges. The pattern configuration of the stone is varied and improvised. It is speculated that the Indigenous hand labor resolved the issues instinctively as it arose. The stones were laid with the intention of horizontal rows; however, not all the times it was achieved. The overall character of the bridge depicts a massive and permanent structure. However, visually at close range, the sober character of materials exposed an assemblage of emergency as if the constructors whisking to build the bridge as soon as possible. Further, the timeline coincided with the socio-political situation of the region at that time of its construction. Compared to the Las Donadas Bridge, the differences of the masonry stone system of the Los Esclavos Bride became evident at first sight. While the Las Donadas was built with red ashlar stone, in an almost perfect square-cut arrangement, the Los Esclavos Bridge was constructed with available local materials such as uncut rubble limestone in an irregular pattern configuration (e.g. Fig. 7).

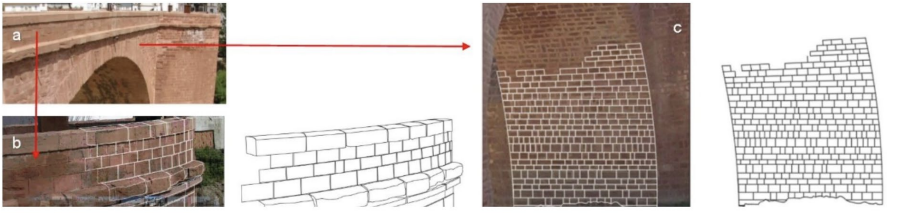


Figure 6. Upper and lower masonry stone system in Las Donadas Bridge, Montoro, Spain. Source (Garcia 2008) (Author 2020)

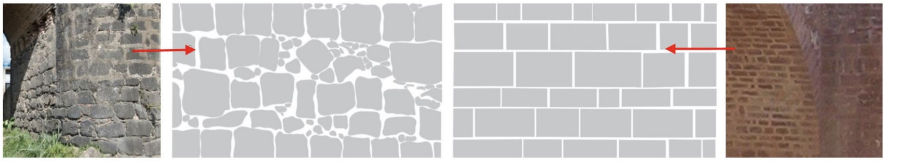


Figure 7. Left, masonry stone system of Los Esclavos Bridge. Source (Author 2018) Right, Masonry stone system of Las Donadas Bridge. Source (Garcia 2008)

CONCLUSIONS

The results of this analysis highlight several visual characteristics among the two bridges. These findings will lead to support or refute the hypothesis that the knowledge applied to the construction of the Los Esclavos Bridge is the adoption of European technologies. Similarities and differences in characters, and construction techniques might be summarized as follows:

Similarities:

Based on typology, both bridges showed a close relationship in their components, such as incorporated abutments, barreled vaults, massive handrails, and spandrel walls protected by colossal abutments. Although the abutment's plan configuration differs in each bridge, they are related by the same principle of sharp edges facing upstream river flow. The same situation happened on the downstream façade, where the principle of smooth semicircle abutments is evident. Also, each bridge presents a symmetrical number of abutments in both the upstream and downstream facades. While the number of arches and the type of building materials are different, the principle of an arched masonry structure is still the same. They shared the same structural principles, by transferring the weight loads in a vertical and inclined direction to the piers, then to the abutments, and lastly to the foundation.

Differences:

The most visual difference between both cases is based on craftsmanship and the pattern arrangement of the stone. The surfaces of the Las Donadas Bridge present more elaborated and smooth stone craftsmanship. Logically, Spanish builders had hundreds of years of practice in the making of masonry arched bridge technology. Spanish trained craftsmen had a superior advantage over the novice and informally trained Maya Natives. In terms of construction length, the Los Esclavos Bridge took less time to build (ten years), probably due to three important facts. First, the bridge's proportions are smaller; this involves fewer materials, less financial inversion, and less hand-labor compared to the Las Donadas Bridge. Second, the purpose of the bridge was to serve the necessity of crossing the river; its materials, ornamentation, and labor were applied accord to its function. Lastly, it is speculated that the amount of hand-labor provided by Mayan-Xinca Indigenous and African slaves was substantial at the time of the bridge's construction. Both bridges differ by the number of arches and abutments in their physical composition. Although the Los Esclavos Bridge is significantly smaller in its dimensions and proportions, it has a greater amount of elements such as eleven arches and nineteen abutments. The Los Esclavos Bridge presented a high degree of uneven stone configuration. There are many possible explanations of this craftsmanship issue, such as variations in builder's crew skills, hand-labor shortage, economic funding struggles, or quarry location changes. Further, the use of raw stone reflects its experimental status, challenges faced, and the Indigenous' problem-solution skills when issues arose. The level of sophistication of the Las Donadas Bridge's craftsmanship and technology correlates well with Montoro, Spain's socio-political context. Oppositely, the stone's size variations and the improvised pattern arrangement of the Los Esclavos Bridge reflect the historical circumstances when the bridge was created, characterized for economic manipulation, forced labor, and slavery against the Indigenous population. Two reasons might influence plaster usage as a final finishing on the surfaces in the Los Esclavos Bridge. First, to cover up the pattern irregularities and rough contour of the stone. Second, influenced by the local cultural customs coming from Mayan traditions with the use of plaster on the walls. Several fundamental questions remain partially or entirely unanswered due to the insufficient material and evidence to

thoroughly compare both structures, such as drawings or historical documentation. The construction of the Los Esclavos Bridge was a significant milestone of the vault method in the region of Guatemala. This bridge acted as a tool for learning, which provided the Mayan Indigenous and the Spanish masters the opportunity exchange the knowledge of masonry bridge technology and adapt it to local needs. It is anticipated that future analysis through photogrammetry will be reported on the bridge that can reveal more secrets about the history of its construction.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

The author gratefully acknowledges the help of the faculty and writing groups at Texas A&M University.

REFERENCES

Apreutesei, Vlad, and DV Oliveira. 2005. *"Strengthening of Stone Masonry Arch Bridges– Three Leaf Masonry Walls–State of the Art." University of Minho Escola de Engenharia Guimaraes, Portugal.*

Curl, James Stevens. 2006. *A Dictionary of Architecture and Landscape Architecture: Oxford University Press*. de Administración Tributaria, Superintendencia. 2009. *Historia de la Tributación en Guatemala, Desde los mayas hasta la actualidad*. Guatemala, Instituto Centroamericano de Estudios Fiscales.

Fraser, Valerie. 1990. *The architecture of conquest: building in the viceroyalty of Peru, 1535-1635:* Cambridge University Press Cambridge.

García, José Ortiz. 2006. "El Puente de Las Donadas de Montoro: de los inicios de su construcción a la Real Cédula de la Reina Juana de Castilla." *Meridies. Estudios de Historia y Patrimonio de la Edad Media* (8):155-171.

Gilabert Sansalvador, Laura. 2018. "La bóveda en la arquitectura maya."

Headrick, Daniel R. 1988. *The tentacles of progress: Technology transfer in the age of imperialism, 1850-1940*: Oxford University Press.

Hemeroteca PL. 2017. *"Puente De Los Esclavos: Obra Cuatricentenaria."* Prensa Libre. Augosto 30, 2017. Accessed October 24, 2019 https://www.prensalibre.com/hemeroteca/el-puente-los-esclavos-leyenda-obra-de-436-aos/.

Huerta Fernández, Santiago. 2001. "Mechanics of masonry vaults: The equilibrium approach."

Merriam, Sharan B., and Sharan B. Merriam. 1998. *Qualitative research and case study applications in education. 2nd ed, A joint publication in the Jossey-Bass education series and the Jossey-Bass higher education series.*

Molina, Eduardo, David Benavente, Eduardo Sebastián, and Giuseppe Cultrone. 2015. "The influence of rock fabric in the durability of two sandstones used in the Andalusian Architectural Heritage (Montoro and Ronda, Spain)." *Engineering Geology* 197:67-81.

O'Kon, James. 2012. *The lost secrets of Maya technology*: Red Wheel/Weiser.

O'Kon, James A. 1995. "BRIDGE TO THE PAST." *Civil Engineering* 65 (1):62-65.

Recinos, Adrián. 1984. *Crónicas indígenas de Guatemala. 2a ed, Publicación especial / Academia de Geografía e Historia de Guatemala.* Guatemala: Academia de Geografía e Historia de Guatemala.

Scholz, Roland W, and Olaf Tietje. 2002. *Embedded case study methods: Integrating quantitative and qualitative knowledge*: Sage.

Vale, Daniel. 2019. "Old Bridges in Bragança–Building a Landscape Heritage." *International Conference on Arch Bridges.*

Wernecke, Daniel Clark. 2005. "A stone canvas: Interpreting Maya building materials and construction technology."

PAPER #6.07

ARTS AS CATALYST: STRATEGY FOR URBAN REGENERATION - CASE OF BENESSE ART SITE: NAOSHIMA, INUJIMA & TESHIMA-

Koichiro Aitani[a]
[a] Texas A&M University, College Station, Texas, USA

ABSTRACT

"Benesse Art Site Naoshima" is the collective name for all art-related activities conducted by Benesse Holdings, Inc. and Fukutake-Foundation on the Naoshima Island and also extended to the Teshima Island in Kagawa Prefecture and the Inujima island in Okayama Prefecture. The Seto Inland Sea, known as "Japanese Mediterranean Sea" with hundreds of islands, are now became the tourist destination triggered by the combination with ART, Architecture and Nature.
In a heyday of these islands, industries brought permanent habitants, however, due to the decline of industry along with aging population, brought significant problems in there. Benesse's fundamental aim was to create engaged spaces by bringing contemporary art and architecture in resonance with the pristine nature of the Seto Inland Sea, a landscape with a rich cultural and historical fabric.
The world-renowned architect, Tadao ANDO was asked to be an advisor for establishing an "International Learning Camp", and 3 years later, commissioned the first project, Benesse House Museum, mixed-use development of hotel and museum (1992) after Benesse opened the International Camping field in 1989. As a great impact resulted from this bench mark project, Benesse accelerated its various interventions in Naoshima, as well as surrounding islands. Collaboration with Kagawa Prefecture government, they have launched the Art Triennale, since 2010, so far four Triennale has been held (1st: 2010, 2nd:2 013, 3rd: 2016, 4th:2019). In totalling with 105-108 days of this art festival, over 1million tourists have visited those islands during the event.
This paper will clarify a process of the Benesse's Strategy and its execution of interventions, impact to the neighbourhood, and summarizing a mechanism of urban regeneration chronologically, and will discuss and theorize this urban regeneration as an outcome of catalytic effect of series of Urban Interventions.

KEYWORDS

Urban Catalyst; art intervention; aging society; shrinking society; urban regeneration.

INTRODUCTION

Setouchi Art Triennale has initiated to pursue the reaeration and vitalization of the Setouchi Inland Sea and islands since 2010. Prior to this art Triennale, Benesse Holdings, Inc. and Fukutake-Foundation has been heavily involved with the regeneration of Naoshima Island particularly. "Benesse Art Site Naoshima", its fundamental aim is to create significant spaces by bringing contemporary art and architecture in resonance with the pristine nature of the Seto Inland Sea, a landscape with a rich cultural and historical fabric. Through contacts with art and nature, sceneries and inhabitants of the Seto Inland Sea region, they have been seeking to inspire visitors to reflect on the meaning of Benesse's motto - Well-Being.

The 1st Triennale was held in 2010, for a total of 105 continuous days in Takamatsu and Uno ports and on the 7 islands of Naoshima, Teshima, Megijima, Ogijima, Shodoshima, Oshima, Inujima, and from the 2nd time, 5 more islands of Shamijima, Honjima, Takamijima, Awashima and Ibukijima were added to the exhibition places (Table 1 and Figure 1). In addition to that, the Triennale periods are divided into 3 sessions; Spring, Summer, Autumn from the 2nd time, due to the high demand by the residents. The total number of participants (visitors) for the 1st Triennale resulted in over double numbers than originally anticipated. The nature of the art exhibition was to activate the declined island, where population decreases, ration of senior residents increases, decreased younger gradations, etc. Although the objectives to make a positive contribution to the local communities, administration and operation staff of the events depended on the local residents and volunteers on top of prefectural staff and Benesse Holdings, Inc. and Fukutake-Foundation. By the surprisingly large number of visitors to the islands exceeded the capacity of organization. Dividing into three sessions helped their operation and management of the visitors, and the Triennale was organized smoothly.

Year	**2010**	**2013**	**2016**	**2019**
Days	07.19 – 10.31	03.20 – 04.21 07.20 – 09.01 10.05 – 11.04	03.20 – 04.17 07.18 – 09.04 10.08 – 11.06	04.26 – 05.26 07.19 – 08.25 09.28 – 11.04
	105 Days	**108 Days**	**108 Days**	**107 Days**
Places	Naoshima Teshima Megijima Ogijima Shodoshima Oshima Inujima Takamatsu Port Uno Port	Naoshima Teshima Megijima Ogijima Shodoshima Oshima Inujima Shamijima Honjima, Takamijima Awashima Ibukijima Takamatsu Port Uno Port	Naoshima Teshima Megijima Ogijima Shodoshima Oshima Inujima Shamijima Honjima, Takamijima Awashima Ibukijima Takamatsu Port Uno Port	Naoshima Teshima Megijima Ogijima Shodoshima Oshima Inujima Shamijima (Sp) Honjima (Au) Takamijima (Au) Awashima (Au) Ibukijima (Au) Takamatsu Port Uno Port
	7 Islands & 2 Ports	**12 Islands & 2 Ports**	**12 Islands & 2 Ports**	**12 Islands & 2 Ports**
Artist County/Numbers	18 Countries 75 Artists	26 Countries 200 Artists	34 Countries 226 Artists	32 Countries 230 Artists
Art Work/Event	76/16	207/40	206/37	214/35
Volunteers	8,500	7,000	7,000	7,165
Participants		263,000 (Sp) 435,000 (Su) 372,000 (Au)	254,284 (Sp) 401,004 (Su) 384,762 (Au)	386,909 (Sp) 318,919 (Su) 472,656 (Au)
	938,000	**1,070,000**	**1,040,050**	**1,178,484**

Table 1. Year, Days, Places, Artists, and Participants of Each Art Triennale

1. SETOUCHI TRIENNALE

1.1. Background

Over 1 million visitors from Japan and abroad came over the course of the three sessions. This demonstrated the popularity of the Triennale's unique approach, which allows visitors to experience the nature and culture of the Setouchi region and its islands through a wide array of site-specific works and projects. New art works and events were added with particular emphasis on each year's sub-themes, such as the region's connections with Asia and the world via the sea; the Setouchi Food Project; and sharing regional culture, such as lion dances and bonsai.

Not only the domestic and internal visitors, the number of foreign visitors rose dramatically as well. This was due in part to the establishment of additional international routes connecting Takamatsu Airport to other parts of the world and in part to the increase in overseas exposure with each Triennale. The number of repeaters also increased as did the length of time each visitor stayed in the area. In addition, a greater number of people visited sightseeing spots that were not part of the Triennale. The Triennale also generated many other benefits. The influx of visitors not only enlivened the islands during the Triennale but also sparked local initiatives directed at revitalization. In addition, media coverage by newspapers, television and magazines raised the reputation and increased the visibility of Kagawa prefecture as a whole.

Many local people were actively involved in making this Triennale a success by helping with the production of art works, manning the reception desks, offering food and hospitality that reflected local customs, and greeting and sending off visitors at the ports. Such efforts, which also contribute to revitalizing local communities, increased noticeably, indicating that they are becoming an established feature of the Triennale.

Figure 1. Islands for the Art Triennale Places. Source: (Kagawa Prefecture 2016)

1.2. Naoshima

Naoshima is an island town administratively part of Kagawa Prefecture, Japan located in the Seto Inland Sea. As of April 2017, the town has an estimated population of 3,117 and a density of 220 persons per km². The total area is 14.22 km². Naoshima Island is known for its many contemporary art museums. For example, the Chichu Art Museum (Figure 3: Top Left) houses a number of site-specific installations by James Turrell, Walter De Maria, and paintings by Claude Monet. Designed by world recognized architect, Tadao ANDO, it is located on one of the highest points of the island, and various exhibits and facets of the museum's buildings take advantage of its commanding view. Another contemporary museum (with hotel function, one of the early experiments in Japan) is Benesse House, also designed by ANDO. Table 2 shows the chronological interventions applied to Naoshima Island, Teshima Island and Inujima Island by Benesse Holdings, Inc. and Fukutake-Foundation in relation to the Setouchi Triennale.

The museums and beauty of the island draw many tourists, whose visits help support the local economy. However, it is Mitsubishi Materials, loosely affiliated with other Japanese companies of the Mitsubishi name, that dominates industry on the island, as Naoshima has been the site of massive refining by Mitsubishi since 1917. Benesse Art Site Naoshima, Benesse Corporation (one of the largest education companies in Japan and based in Okayama) has directed the creation and operation of the island's museums and other projects since the late 1980s. Basically, Naoshima is categorized in 3 regions, the North with Mitsubishi Materials, Central is with residential neighborhoods both traditional and modern time 2020, Universitat Politècnica de València
with two ports (Miyanoura and Honmura) for residents and visitors, and the South with National Park and Benesse's Art Site (Figure 2: Left).

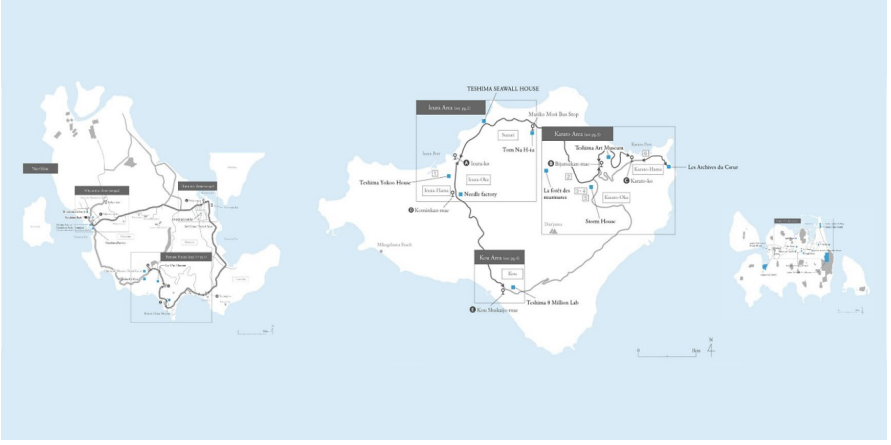


Figure 2. Naoshima (Left), Teshima (Middle). And Inujima (Right). Source: (http://benesse-artsite.jp/)

Year	Naoshima	Teshima	Inujima
1989	Naoshima International Camp		
1992	Benesse House Museum		
1994	“Out of Bounds” Exhibition		
1995	Benesse House Oval		Shift toward Site Specific Works
1998	The Art House Project		
2004	Chichu Art Museum		
2006	Benesse House Park/Beach		
2008			Inujima Seirensho Art Museum
2009	Naoshima Bath I Love Yu		“Naoshima” Exhibition, Venice, Italy
			“Naoshima” Exhibition, Paris, France
2010		**Setouchi Triennale 2010**	
	Lee Ufan Museum	Les Archives du Coeur	Inujima Art House Project
		Teshima Art Museum	
2012			“Insular Insight” Exhibition, Paris, France
2013		**Setouchi Triennale 2013**	
	ANDO MUSEUM	Teshima Yokoo Museum	
2015			“The Naoshima Symbiosis for the Future” Symposium. New York, USA
2016		**Setouchi Triennale 2016**	
		Teshima 8 Million Lab	Inujima Life Garden
		Needle Factory	
		Teshima Seawall House	
2019		**Setouchi Triennale 2019**	

Table 2. Timeline of Projects in Naoshima, Teshima, Inujima. Source: (Benesse Art Site Naoshima)

1.3. Teshima

The main attraction on Teshima is the Teshima Art Museum (Figure 3: Top Middle), one of the most intriguing contemporary artworks in Japan. Standing amongst terraced rice fields, the simple concrete structure stimulates its visitors’ senses with the play of water drops on a concrete surface. Several more artworks are scattered around the island’s three fishing villages. Most are open almost every day, especially the larger museums and outdoor installations, however some of the smaller artworks are only open on weekends and holidays.

Teshima is the region’s second largest island after Shodoshima with population of 867. A forested mountain stands in its middle, and a circular road connects its three small fishing villages. Two of the villages have ferry ports, Karato and Ieura, the latter of which is the more important. A half to a full day is needed to explore the peaceful island with its slow-paced atmosphere and rural landscape. Dining, shopping and lodging choices are limited, but slowly increasing by the effect of Art interventions such as Teshima Art Museum and Teshima Yokoo Museum (Figure 3: Bottom Middle). Without previous knowledge, visitors will not notice that Teshima once made news due to a toxic waste scandal in the 1980s in which a company illegally dumped hundreds of thousands of tons of toxic waste on the western tip of the island. Cleanup efforts were finally completed in 2017 (Figure 2: Middle).

1.4. Inujima

Inujima (literally: "dog island") is a small island off Okayama in the Seto Inland Sea that is named after a large rock resembling a sitting dog. Like nearby Naoshima Island, Inujima has become known as a site for modern art in recent years and serves as a venue of the Setouchi Triennale. Due to its small size, the peaceful island can be explored entirely on foot (Figure 2: Right).

Before turning to modern art, Inujima was mostly an industrial site. During the feudal age it produced granite blocks for castle construction, and in the early 20th century a copper refinery was supposed to bring prosperity and people to the island. However, copper prices plummeted within ten years of the refinery's opening and led to its premature closure and a drop in the island's population. The refinery was not demolished after its closure, and despite being out of business for almost a century, its ruins still characterize Inujima's landscape. Designated as a "heritage of industrial modernization", the ruins with their exposed brick walls, overgrown power plant and crumbling smokestacks can now be explored by tourists.

In 2008, the refinery ruins were converted into the Inujima Seirensho Art Museum (Figure 3: Top Right) by tastefully incorporating an art gallery into the ruins. The gallery is located mostly underground and uses local materials such as granite and discarded bricks from the refinery. Among the small number of artworks on display are an intriguing tunnel of mirrors and a tribute to the late novelist Mishima Yukio, which consists of pieces of Mishima's former residence suspended in midair.

Figure 3. Architecture and Art interventions in Naoshima (Left), Teshima (Middle). and Inujima (Right). Source: (http://benesse-artsite.jp/)

2. IMPACT AND EFFECT

2.1. Effect of the Triennale

The results of input-output analysis and hearing surveys of transportation companies and other related parties indicate that Setouchi Triennale 2010, 2013, 2016, 2019 had the effects described below.

2.1.1. Economic Ripple Effects

Based on the Ministry of Internal Affairs and Communications' 2005, 2011 input-output table and the 2005, 2011 input-output table for Kagawa produced by the prefectural government, the Takamatsu branch of the Bank of Japan and the Setouchi Triennale Executive Committee concluded that the Triennale had the following economic ripple effects (Table 3, Table 4, Table 5 and Table 6).

2.2. Ripple Effects

Economic Ripple Effects (JPY) of Setouchi Triennale 2010			
	Direct Effect (JPY)	Primary Effect (JPY)	Secondary Effect (JPY)
11.1 billion	**6.4 billion**	**2.5 billion**	**2.2 billion**

Table 3. Ripple Effects of Setouchi Triennale 2010

Economic Ripple Effects (JPY) of Setouchi Triennale 2013			
	Direct Effect (JPY)	Primary Effect (JPY)	Secondary Effect (JPY)
13.2 billion Spring: 2.7 billion Summer: 5.9 billion Autumn: 4.6 billion	**7.7 billion** Spring: 1.6 billion Summer: 3.4 billion Autumn: 2.7 billion	**2.9 billion** Spring: 600 million Summer: 1.3 billion Autumn: 1.0 billion	**2.6 billion** Spring: 500 million Summer: 1.2 billion Autumn: 900 million

Table 4. Ripple Effects of Setouchi Triennale 2013

Economic Ripple Effects (JPY) of Setouchi Triennale 2016			
	Direct Effect (JPY)	Primary Effect (JPY)	Secondary Effect (JPY)
13.9 billion Spring: 2.8 billion Summer: 5.9 billion Autumn: 5.3 billion	**8.6 billion** Spring: 1.7 billion Summer: 3.6 billion Autumn: 3.3 billion	**2.9 billion** Spring: 600 million Summer: 1.2 billion Autumn: 1.1 billion	**2.4 billion** Spring: 500 million Summer: 1 billion Autumn: 900 million

Table 5. Ripple Effects of Setouchi Triennale 2016

Economic Ripple Effects (JPY) of Setouchi Triennale 2019			
	Direct Effect (JPY)	Primary Effect (JPY)	Secondary Effect (JPY)
18.0 billion Spring: 5.2 billion Summer: 5.0 billion Autumn: 7.7 billion	**11.2 billion** Spring: 3.2 billion Summer: 3.1 billion Autumn: 4.8 billion	**3.7 billion** Spring: 1.1 billion Summer: 1.0 billion Autumn: 1.6 billion	**3.1 billion** Spring: 900 million Summer: 900 million Autumn: 1.3 billion

Table 6. Ripple Effects of Setouchi Triennale 2019

Direct Effect: The amount spent that would flow out of the prefecture, such as goods and services that must be procured externally, etc., was deducted from the amount spent by Triennale visitors within the prefecture.

Primary Effect: The increase in output for each industry within the prefecture due to the Triennale's direct effect.

Secondary Effect: The increase in output for each industry within the prefecture due to the direct and primary effects that would result in additional consumption due to increased employee earnings.

The economic ripple effect within Kagawa prefecture in 2013 amounted to 13.2 billion yen, which represents an increase of 2,100 million yen, or a percent increase of 118.9%, compared to 2010.
The economic ripple effect within Kagawa prefecture in 2016 amounted to 13.9 billion yen, which represents an increase of 700 million yen, or a percent increase of 105.3%, compared to 2013.
The economic ripple effect within Kagawa prefecture in 2019 amounted to 18.0 billion yen, which represents an increase of 4,100 million yen, or a percent increase of 129.4%, compared to 2016.

Over all, the Triennale has been proved successful and even more the degree of economical impact getting bigger.
Operation budged including 2years of preparation for each Triennale was 723 million JPY (2010), 1 billion JPY (2013), 1.27 billion JPY (2016) and 1.25 billion JPY (2019). The budget has been increased, and the period of the triennale was almost identical. The number of visitors is increased as well. Comparison of the Economic Ripple Effect over the budget is 15.3 (2010), 13.2 (2013), 10.9 (2016) and 14.4 (2019). This proves the economic impact against the investigation is very successful.

2.3. Amount Spent by Visitors

Setouchi Triennale 2016	From Outside: Overnight Stay	From Outside: Daytrip	From Kagawa: Overnight Stay	From Kagawa: Daytrip
Ratio Amount Spent/Person (JPY)	47.0% 43,699	26.0% 15,927	1.0% 33,975	26.0% 15,514

Table 7. Amount Spent by Visitors of Setouchi Triennale 2010

Setouchi Triennale 2013	From Outside: Overnight Stay	From Outside: Daytrip	From Kagawa: Overnight Stay	From Kagawa: Daytrip
Ratio Amount Spent/Person (JPY)	43.0% 41,870	23.0% 14,529	1.0% 31,762	33.0% 14,899

Table 8. Amount Spent by Visitors of Setouchi Triennale 2013

Setouchi Triennale 2016	From Outside: Overnight Stay	From Outside: Daytrip	From Kagawa: Overnight Stay	From Kagawa: Daytrip
Ratio Amount Spent/Person (JPY)	47.5% 53,127	21.4% 19,150	0.9% 31,072	30.2% 14,646

Table 9. Amount Spent by Visitors of Setouchi Triennale 2016

Setouchi Triennale 2016	From Outside: Overnight Stay	From Outside: Daytrip	From Kagawa: Overnight Stay	From Kagawa: Daytrip
Ratio Amount Spent/Person (JPY)	52.6% 67,034	18.8% 13,913	1.0% 29,281	27.6% 13,041

Table 10. Amount Spent by Visitors of Setouchi Triennale 2019

The amount spent by overseas visitors was 61,733 yen per person, accounting for 13.3% of the total in the "From Outside: Overnight Stay" category.

The classification of visitors is divided into 4 categories: From Outside - Overnight Stay (50 %), From Outside – Daytrip (22 %), From Kagawa - Overnight Stay (1 %), and From Kagawa – Daytrip (27 %). Approximately of the breakdown was relatively similar. Significance of this table is the amount spend by the outside p overnight visitors increases.

Gender	No. of People 2010	%	No. of People 2013	%	No. of People 2016	%	No. of People 2019	%
Female	7,826	68.6%	11,637	67.5%	10,297	67.2%	4,419	67.2%
Male	3,581	31.4%	5,602	32.5%	5,019	32.8%	2,387	32.8%
Total	11,407	100.0%	17,239	100.0%	15,316	100.0%	6,806	100.0%

Table 11. Number of Participants for the Questionaries' Survey by Visitors in 2010, 2013, 2016 and 2019

Setouchi Triennale	2010	2013	2016	2019
Average Days (Stay)	1.96 days	2.48 days	2.72 days	3.05 days
Average Overnights (Stay)	1.94 nights	2.00 nights	2.36 nights	2.56 nights

Table 12. Average Days and Nights spent in Islands, Survey by Visitors in 2010, 2013, 2016 and 2019

Table 11 shows the proportion of Female and Male numbers who contributed to the Questionaries' Survey in 2010, 2013, 2016 and 2019. It shows the tendency of more female visitors than male visitors, roughly 2:1 throughout of the all Triennale.
And Table 12 shows the increase of average days and nights to stay in islands.

CONCLUSION

Many local people were directly involved in the production and implementation of Setouchi Triennale 2010, 2013, 2016 and 2019. This has become the culture and developing a sense of bonding among them. Such involvement contributes to the revitalization and restoration of local communities and is becoming a firmly established feature of the Triennale.
Not only making an economical advantages and impact, each Triennale helped building the benchmarks on the islands. Those permanent facilities will generate visitors even outside of the Triennale years. Chichu Art Museum in Naoshima, Inujima Seirensho Art Museum of Inujima, Teshima Art Museum, and Teshima Yokoo Museum are the great landmarks or anchor destinations to trigger more visitors.
There are tendencies for new restaurants and local inns to accommodate tourists by converting the vacant houses. Locations are mainly in the existing neighborhoods. The mechanism of spread of renewal is still unclear, therefore, it is significant to carry on this research by finding out when and where the new shops/inns appeared in 3 Islands (Naoshima, Teshima, and Inujima). Other small islands are still lacking permanent interventions yet.
The increase of permanent residents is clarified; however, the numbers are still limited. Most obvious reason is the visitors are limited still seasonal. Therefore, to make continuous income through the year is challenging if they rely on the tourism.
Conclusion is the Benesse Holdings, Inc. and Fukutake-Foundation, and Kagawa Prefecture`s effort has been very successful to revitalize the declined islands, moreover, it makes declined islands as a world-wide destination. 30 years ago, nobody knows those islands outside of Kagawa prefecture or Shikoku Island, now the international recognition is superb. It is important to continue observe, to collect data for this impact, and find out theory behind for application to other places.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This research was sponsored by the Japan Society for the Promotion of Science with a Grants-in-Aid for Scientific Research. Also, my research was concentrated the theme of "Urban Catalyst", and my previously published book, "Urban Catalyst" from SHOKOKUSHA Publishing Co., Ltd. contributed the research approach. The contribution of above society and firm is hereby gratefully acknowledged.

REFERENCES

Aitani, K. *Urban Catalyst*. Tokyo, Japan: SHOKOKUSHA Publishing Co., Ltd.

Setouchi Triennale Executive Committee. 2010. *Setouchi Triennale 2010 General Report*. Japan: Kagawa Prefecture.

Setouchi Triennale Executive Committee. 2013. *Setouchi Triennale 2013 General Report*. Japan: Kagawa Prefecture.

Setouchi Triennale Executive Committee. 2016. *Setouchi Triennale 2016 General Report*. Japan: Kagawa Prefecture.

Setouchi Triennale Executive Committee. 2019. *Setouchi Triennale 2019 General Report*. Japan: Kagawa Prefecture.

PAPER #6.08

SPACES AND PLACES OF CULTURE FOR THE RENEWAL OF CONTEMPORARY CITY

Antonino Margagliotta[a]
[a] Università degli Studi di Palermo, Palermo, Italy

ABSTRACT

Spaces for culture are necessary places for human and community life. Architecture gives form to this need and contributes, at the same time, to the construction and modification of the city.
In countries where architectural culture is more widespread and civic sense is linked to the qualifying experience of space, the construction of new spaces for culture (museums, libraries, etc.) - or the redevelopment of existing ones - has contributed to spreading the presence of services into the territory and has proved to be a valid opportunity (or pretext) to launch urban qualification programs (of the historicized city as well as that of recent formation). Moreover, it allowed to give quality to the public space through the modification induced in the context by the architectural project, through its ability to define formal relationships and functional correspondences, as well as significant exchanges with the existing place. In some cases, the new architectures, designed or become the strategic presence of urban transformations, have collaborated to outline (and communicate) the true identity of the city. In particular, public library, more than any other space, revealed itself to be a political-cultural communication tool: library projects have often determined initiatives and established important dynamics for the regeneration of the city (requalification of historic centres, provision of services of the suburbs, attribution of identity to the newly formed settlements). The library, a place of knowledge and encounter, of sociality and dialogue, exalts and develops transversal processes up to be a suggestive pretext for defining a program on the role of architecture and public space in the current urban scenarios.
In addition to outlining the theme in its transversal motivations and through some recent architectural solutions on the international scene, the contribution will present the results of an academic research project about the role of libraries (as representation of collective memory, invention and renewal occasion too) in the contemporary city.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; culture; city; library; project.

INTRODUCTION

The spaces and places for culture (especially libraries and museums, which are linked respectively and traditionally to the presence of books and of art) have been transformed spatially and typologically in recent decades; they have also modified specific settlement strategies, taking on precise roles in the organisation and construction of the contemporary city. Historically these architectures have been built (especially since the nineteenth century) in what we now consider the historic city, sometimes in buildings specially buit for, sometimes in pre-existing buildings of considerable historical and architectural value. The latter condition, if on the one hand it has defined the identity and prestige of many cultural institutions, on the other hand it has also determined a strong link between institution and city, even helping to clarify the image of the city itself. Many libraries, located in buildings sometimes created even

earlier to the formation and transmission of culture (convents, monasteries, seminaries, colleges) have guaranteed the permanence and continuity of the cultural institution in precise areas of the city and allowed the architecture to last, despite transformations and tampering. In this sense architecture has represented the vocation of the place and the recognition of the cultural institution. However, this condition is now sometimes assumed to be a weak and a critical point: the presence of libraries and museums inside the ancient city and in historical containers opens up some questions to be read and interpreted in the necessary relationship between the cultural structure, the architectural organism and the city, which appear to belong to internal order (since historical buildings have little inclination to change and assume the degrees of flexibility that modern cultural services require) and to external order (because of the difficult accessibility, the impossibility of expanding and acquiring new functions). At the same time, now that the city has expanded and become polycentric, architectural culture and political strategies favour the diffusion of services for culture in the vast urban area, the prediction (or implementation) of which has often proved to be an opportunity (or pretext) to launch qualification programmes both in the historicised city and in the recently formed one; it has also made it possible to confer quality on public space through the modification induced in the contexts by the architectural project and the ability of architecture to define formal relations. In some cases, the new architectures, conceived or become the strategic presence of the transformations, have collaborated to delineate (sometimes even projecting outside) the identity of the city itself with the iconicity attributed to the project.

1. LIBRARY ARCHITECTURE IN CONTEMPORARY CITY

Among spaces for culture, public library - more than any other space – has revealed itself to be a political-cultural communication tool: library projects, through presence of service for community and the role of space, have determined several urban initiatives and established dynamics for the regeneration of the city as requalification of historic centres, provision of services of the suburbs, attribution of identity to the newly formed settlements. The interest comes from the role of library, outlined in these years, which became a fundamental space of sociality and democracy that helps to overcome the individualist risk of contemporary societies tending to impoverish city of public spaces and cultural spaces. Library's role and functions transformation has been supported by several experiences made in those countries where architecture culture is consolidated and diffused while civic sense goes through public spaces as necessary qualifying agent for growth and learning. At the same time, in these contexts library represents for inhabitants a service for the community and a usually frequented place. It represents for the city an opportunity to organize public space and, sometimes, to give and identity to the existing one. Construction of new libraries and the spatial and organizational requalification of many existing structures, became an opportunity to create places for encounter and dialogue, to provide services to territories and, even, to enhance city marketing actions undertaken through *cultural operations.* Library went beyond a certain rhetoric which for century has consider it as a space – if not as a temple – for books but it can't be considered anymore exclusively connected to preservation and access to books: it is no longer a poetic "public granary" as described by Marguerite Yourcenar because the primary role of the book is now substituted by the primary role played by the user, therefore by the person that reads, or better, by all those

people that populate this space also for activities different from traditional reading; it is neither the "splendid courtyard" described by Joseph Fletcher where is possible to converse with old sages and old philosopher. To understand what a library of a contemporary city has become, it should be remembered that Temple University public library was open on 2018 in Philadelphia designed by Snøhetta to support 39,000 thousand students of the university but also to welcome (besides other traditional spaces for books storage, study and research) a variety of places for cooperative and social learning and to accommodate 5,000,000 visitors per year.

During these years, library became a perfect architecture to start and establish urban transformation dynamics: there are many contemporary experiences where the project of a library allowed to offer or to return to cities, meant as urbs (therefore as space and organisms) and as *civitas* (therefore as a community), spaces and places that historically and traditionally belongs to territory and population as right to access to cultural development and to access to cultural services. Library, though as infrastructure and as fundamental service for city and territory (as well as hospitals) it is an authentic place of urbs and civitas which accelerate urban regeneration and qualification in a physical and social sense, applying democratic principles; therefore, the public library is protagonist of city redevelopment projects, being a perfect example of participation and sharing, of freedom and creativity of each citizen.

Especially from recent architectural experiences, the role played by public libraries in contemporary cities arise as strategic presence in transformation's dynamics as important public space to freely access to information, as cultural service oriented to a polyvalent character. The library has lost its mono-functional place sacral character responsible for books preservation and to knowledge diffusion, in order to became a communication space (a centre of information and formation) and a place for community.

From the organizational and spatial point of view library transformed itself in a flexible container capable to contain multiple functions and roles, likewise necessity of user as changed following the rapid development of multimedia and digital technologies, with a destiny similar to museums: it is not a coincidence that, among cultural spaces, it goes to Piano & Rogers' Centre Pompidou in Paris the claim and implementation of a *free* space to facilitate interdisciplinary of communication tool, youth and pauperistic language which, anyway, can't stand without support of most sophisticate technology, almost like a revival Labrouste's libraries technological vocation. The Beaubourg, like a supermarket - which will be taken up again twenty years later in the Idea-stores (new concept libraries and permanent training centres designed by Adjaye Associates in the East End of London as a response to the decline of traditional library and training services) puts at the centre of the project the void for users (who see and touch everything), not necessarily attracted by the book but by the activities connected to it. As well as the *Sala Borsa* in Bologna (2001) uses the covered courtyard of an old building, in communication with the street, as the main space of a public multimedia library of general information that privileges the use of electronic resources and access to new information technologies, positioning itself as a centre of aggregation through services and the organisation of cultural events open to everyone, the city and the metropolitan area: it is the *square of culture* (Agnoli 2009) that opens the library to the city and is itself a fragment of the city. The library, in this way, becomes dynamic and "moves, driven by the interests and interventions of its users that are constantly developing and transforming" (Oechslin 2017, 29).

The library is then to be considered as a mirror reflecting the city and contemporary sociality,

at the same time a place of education and communication, "instrument of a social communication strategy [...] emerging point of a leisure management policy that involves the urban equipment and the planning of specific metropolitan areas. Around [libraries] the cultural districts are organised, through which the revitalisation of disused containers is proposed" (Irace 2001, 6-7), ancient buildings are recovered and reused, particularly in cities where the number of historical buildings and the density of the urban fabric are significant. In this vision, even libraries institutionally responsible for conservation and documentation (often located in ancient buildings) have directed their management towards overcoming the traditional model and have focused on promoting integrated cultural and social initiatives (Fig. 1). In these institutions, moreover, the enormous growth of the library heritage and of the number of users has in fact transformed the library into an urban component, a point of accumulation of the social and cultural life of the city; therefore, in any case, even historical libraries must perform more varied and complex functions than in the past and require reorganization with new architectural solutions.

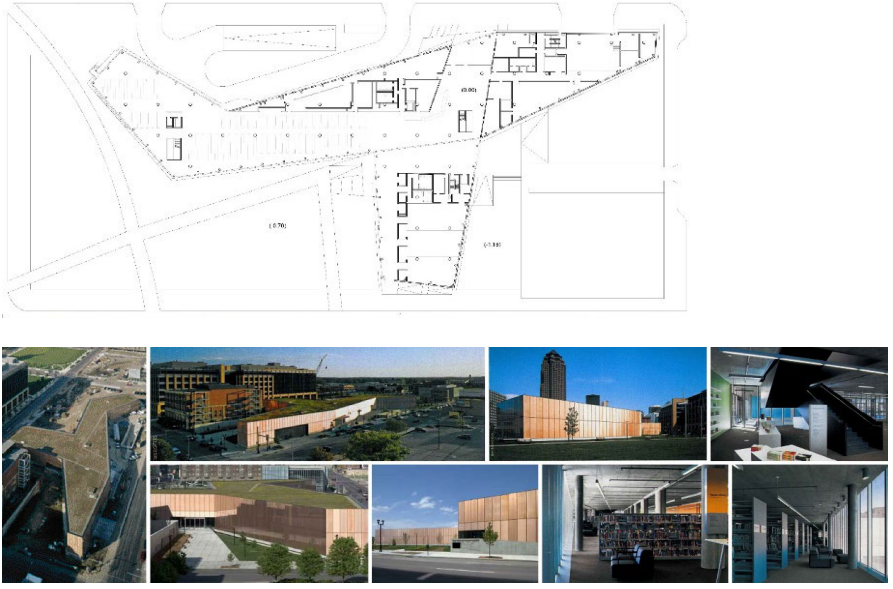


Figure 1. David Chipperfield, Des Moines Public Library, 2006. Source: (Biagio D'Ugo 2013, Paolo De Marco 2017)

2. THE PROJECT FOR NEW LIBRARIES FOR URBAN REGENERATION

Following the needs and transformations of the contemporary city, considering the role of the public library as an architecture that structures urban space, bearing in mind that the library still remains susceptible to definition and continues to offer itself for experimentation and research, the project of public libraries has often been used as a didactic theme for the students of the Course of Studies in *Building Engineering - Architecture* and in *Architecture* at the University of Palermo. The project of the public library, integrated in different urban contexts to propose services suited to the idea of the city, has for several years constituted the suggestive pretext for the definition of a programme about the role of architecture and public spaces in the contemporary city, with the ambitious intention of attributing to the projects the value of exemplariness, in the hope that the formal values of the building (and the transformations induced into the city) will generate further beauty in public and even private spaces. In any case, it proved to be an exercise in beauty and civil commitment. Within the framework of a general vision on the issues related to the library project in the contemporary city in different conditions and contexts in the didactic activity of the Courses, the project of new architectures has been privileged with the intent also to study new places of culture and meeting in the territory of modernity and in the contexts of marginality. The first experience - *A library for every city* - carried out in the academic year 2008-09 (*Course of Architecture and Architectural Composition 1* - prof. A. Margagliotta, tutor Giovanni Lumia and Ignazio Saitta) involved the whole of Sicily since small towns do not always have public places and spaces where to cultivate cultural interests and have opportunities for meeting and comparison. In small towns the library can represent an important centrality and assume the function of a multi-purpose cultural service. On this occasion almost fifty projects of small libraries are formalized for as many cities for which, in addition to spatial and figurative, functional and constructive research, the positioning and insertion in the urban landscape, the design of open spaces played a fundamental role, having taken as a starting point for the construction of the place relations between the existing system of signs, with the idea of identity and belonging (Fig. 2, Fig. 3).

In the academic year 2012-13 (*Architectural Design Laboratory 1* - prof. A. Margagliotta, tutor Sebastiano Provenzano, Ignazio Saitta and Giuseppe Scuderi) the theme was explored with the project of *new architecture*

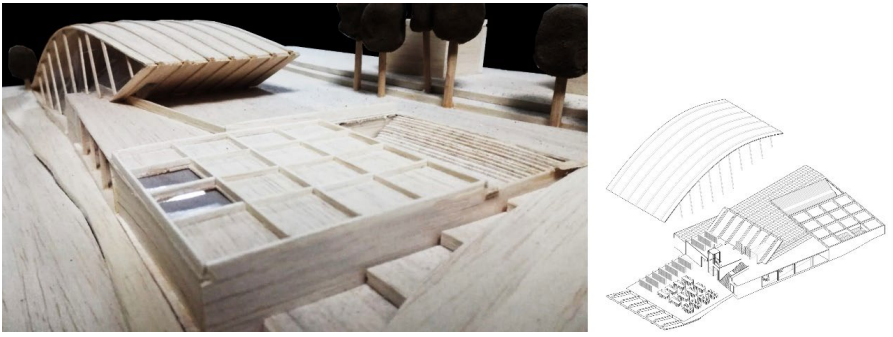


Figure 2. Project of Public Library in Buseto Palizzolo - Trapani. Source: (Paolo De Marco, Giuseppe Tranchida 2008)

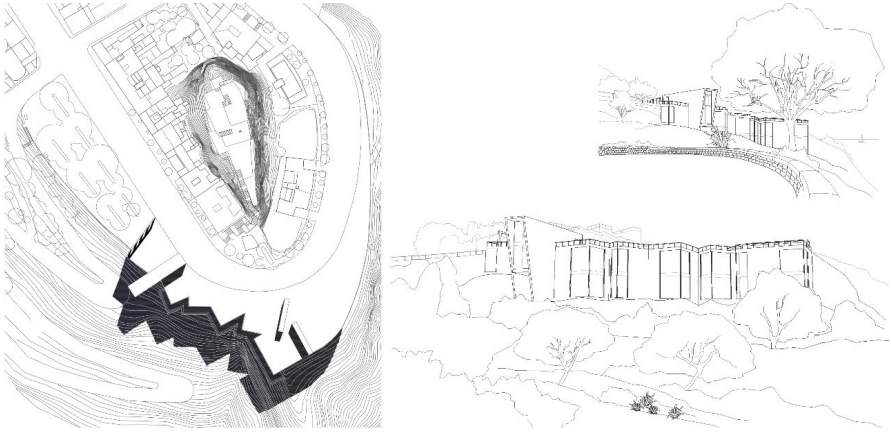


Figure 3. Project of Public Library in Termini Imerese - Palermo. Source: (Helena Carì, Melania Baldone 2008)

for the municipal library system in Palermo: small neighbourhood libraries to highlight the need for new *cultural infrastructures* for a city of great size (which, among other things, was preparing that year to become the Italian Capital of Culture 2019) with the intention of strengthening the municipal library system with a *widespread* presence to be established in emblematic areas, either in the organisational strategy of the neighbourhood, in the relation to the recognisability of the place, or in order to resolve critical spatial or environmental situations. Symbolically, eight areas were identified, corresponding to the municipal districts into which the city is divided, for which each library had to express its identity and explicit its identity. Thus the library of the old town centre (which is the district where all the ancient libraries are located and would be considered already abundantly served) is planned in a highly degraded but highly suggestive area for *the multimedia library*; in the district characterised by a small port (memory of a seaside village) the library requalifies the ancient landing place and builds the *library of the sea*; in a marginal district, marked by environmental degradation, inside a disused quarry the *environment library* is planned; in the residential area, in the area belonging to a school, the programme includes the *learning library* (Fig. 4). In this way, besides proposing a realistic functional programme, the project participates in the idea of *propagation* of architecture and services into the city, so each site has been chosen with its own specificity, which the project have to highlight in relation to the logic of the settlement, the character of the place and the communities for which it is intended. In this way the library becomes a new urban centrality with the function of a multi-purpose cultural service that acts as a centre of aggregation capable of encouraging more intense and active participation by citizens in the life of the community.

In the Degree Course in Architecture in Palermo (Agrigento's headquarters) during academic year 2016-17 the students of *Laboratory 3 of Architectural Design* (prof. A. Margagliotta

- tutor Giovanni Gueli and Sandro Lo Bello) designed new spaces to enhance the existing municipal library of Agrigento with new functions and attractiveness. Strategically, the area below the railway station forecourt has been identified, which today constitutes itself an urban centrality and is close to the municipal library and other cultural institutions. Also in this case the formulation of the functional program foresees functions necessary for a library that intends to relate and identify itself with the activities of a cultural production centre. The new place had to strengthen the existing service with new attractive spaces through the quality of the architecture that for didactic and narrative reasons is developed with a possible theme (the immaterial library, the library/archive, the children's and youth library, the multicultural library, the city library, the library of sounds, the popular library, the study-library, etc.) that synthesises the cultural and social needs of the city.

Figure 4. Project of Library of the see on the small port of Bandita - Palermo. Source: (Mattia Bruno 2013)

3. THE DESIGN EXPERIENCE ON HISTORICAL LIBRARIES

For several years, from 2008 to 2013, the final thesis Laboratory of *Building Engineering - Architecture Degree Course* (in charge prof. A. Margagliotta) developed a study and project strategy on places and spaces for culture in the contemporary city, identifying as a privileged area of research the city of Palermo for which (in addition to museums and places for music) project proposals have been developed for the reorganization, enhancement and expansion of historical libraries. The methodological approach followed as a path:

- the study, critical analysis and redefinition of the organisational structure in relation to modern techniques and recent library economics;
- the understanding and the attribution of meaning to the spatial structure, conducted through the history of the fabrics, the survey of the architectural complexes (of which the libraries often constitute only a small part) in order to overcome, through the project, the dyscrasies and fragmentations deriving from property constraints that over time have dismembered the architectures and caused the loss of spatial unity;
- the definition of the institution's relationship with the city in order to rediscover the sense of architecture in its relationship with the urban structure, also taking the opportunity to resolve open spatial issues through the project, wounds that have never been healed, to restore quality of abandoned or degraded spaces, to restore meaning to spacial situations waiting to be defined, to build the city.
- the elaboration of a design solution on the scale of the building and the city.

The projects, starting from the analysis of critical issues, aimed at reorganising spatiality in relation to the reasons of architecture, often aiming at configuring new extensions, sometimes redefining the proprietary framework because of architectural and urban coherence, sometimes with new projects describing new potentialities and new languages to be put in dialogue with what exists. Through the projects, an attempt was made to address a cultural policy for the city that aimed to adapt the library service to contemporary standards and, at the same time, to redefine the library's presence in the city (Fig. 5, Fig. 6).

All the project proposals, therefore, include both the redefinition of the existing spaces and the hypothesis of expansion through the search for a capacity of relationship that the new must establish with the historical architecture and cultural services existing in the urban surroundings; They also intend to express the sense of a research that contains the understanding of the urban phenomenon in relation to the artefact studied and the possibility of generating spatial relations, making the single intervention an opportunity for regeneration for a portion of the city (whose extension is connected to the capacity of interference of the single artefact with the morphology and the nature of the service offered). The project of the new, under this light, is not taken as an isolated phenomenon but is inserted into urban dynamics, generating relationships, connections, paths, unifying parts that have undergone processes of separation or detachment over time. Ultimately, through study, analysis and experimentation, the works as a whole have the ambition to offer a vision for the spatial and cultural redevelopment of the city.

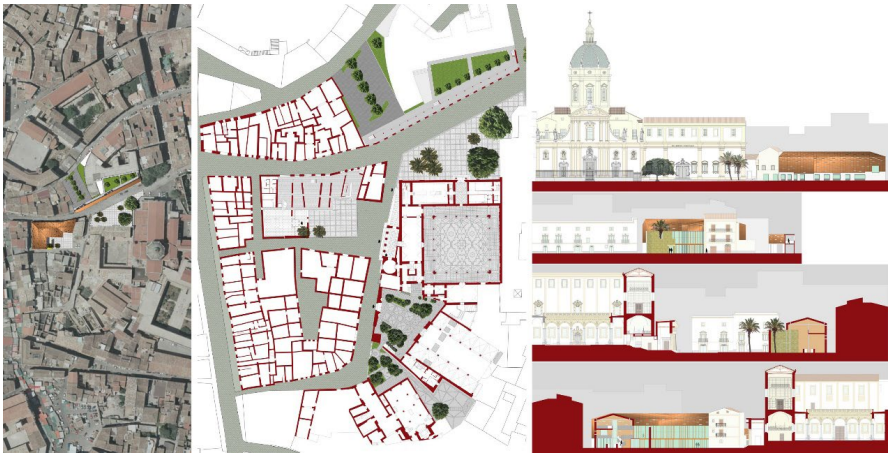


Figure 5. Reorganization of the Municipal Library of Palermo. Source: (Carmelo D'Anna, Antonio Giunta 2005)

4. CONCLUSION. EXERCISE THE COMMITMENT

Ultimately, the library requalifies the city in two ways and defines itself as a priority for the presence of users and is proposed as a place for the dissemination of knowledge, information and training, enhancing the possibility of developing cultural and social activities.

For the new libraries, which have become a symbol of urban public space, the project therefore becomes a way of rethinking urban spaces, of removing them from the increasingly rampant and pervasive commercialisation and making them places of encounter, exchange and collective action. In this vision, the public library becomes an *open territory*, a centre for reflection and knowledge sharing, the node of a network with other cultural institutions.

For the existing historical libraries, in particular, it is time to redefine the places in which they have settled, considering the condition that the contemporary city has assumed: in the face of the external turmoil, inside the library it is possible to find spaces for silence and listening (listen to others, to memory, to oneself). However, it becomes essential to adapt the spaces to the new ideological and library-related needs, offering more modern and attractive services, mitigating the austerity and rigidity of the buildings with the provision, where possible, of new expansions that coexist with the presence of the past but speak the contemporary language.

These aspects, with a view that simultaneously embraces a single building, a system of buildings and the city, are analysed through the ability of architecture to offer itself, for its relational value, to address (and try to solve) spatial and socio-cultural issues, in the ideal of an architecture that knows how to become an instrument of promotion and development. We have tried to grasp this attention and share it with young people in the didactic dimension, with the awareness that the project's didactics accord aesthetic issues to ethical ones.

However, the library cannot renounce beauty and the presence of books: the library can only be beautiful because it bears values for the

Figure 6. Reorganization of the Library of the Capuchin convent in Palermo. Source: (Giovanni Lupo 2015)

space itself and for the city itself, knowing that beauty educates and generates other beauty. This is the great responsibility of architecture. The library, then, must build on the friendly presence of the book as it is an ancient but lasting sign of culture and an expression of the dissemination and sharing of knowledge. Jaen-Claude Carriére compared the presence of books to a warm fur that warms and protects. In fact, in a library one is protected "against error, against uncertainty [...] Being surrounded by all the ideas of the world, by all feelings, all knowledge and all possible errors, offers a feeling of security and comfort. You will never be cold in your library. Here you are at least protected, at least from the dangers of ignorance" (Carrière, Eco 2009, 247).
For this reason, therefore, through the project of new libraries, as well as through the work of dissemination (exhibitions, seminars, conferences in Palermo and in the places of interest) following many of the initiatives described, we have tried to link the concept of urbs to the civitas, in order to try to influence the quality of the service, the city and, above all, the consciences of young students: urging them to pay attention to the spaces for culture, to the knowledge (and love) for libraries, to the exercise the commitment to the cities we live in. "If there is a subject that is pleasing an architect and that is capable of inflaming his commitment - Etienne-Louis Boullè seems to write about it - this is the project of a Public Library".

REFERENCES

Agnoli, A. 2009. *Le piazze del sapere. Biblioteche e libertà*. Roma-Bari: Laterza.

Bergamaschi, M. 2015. *I nuovi volti della biblioteca pubblica. Tra cultura e accoglienza.* Milano: Franco Angeli.

Carrière, J.C., Eco, U. 2009. *Non sperate di liberarvi dei libri.* Milano: Bompiani.

Casartelli, G., Muscogiuri, M. 2008. *La biblioteca nella città. Architettura del servizio, architettura dell'edificio.* Roma: AIB Lombardia.

Failla, L. 2017. *Du livre à la ville.* Genéve: Mētis Presses.

Gentili, D. 2009. Topografie politiche. *Spazio urbano, cittadinanza, confini in Walter Benjamin e Jacques Derrida*. Macerata: Quodlibet.

Iraci, F. 2001. *Dimenticare Vitruvio.* Milano: Il Sole 24 ORE.

Mandolesi, D. 2008. *Biblioteche e mediateche.* Roma: Edilstampa.

Margagliotta, A., Palazzo G. 2012. *Biblioteche storiche di Palermo. Progetti di nuovi spazi per istituzioni antiche, in Scuderi, G. "Dalla Domus studiorum alla Biblioteca centrale della Regione Siciliana".* Palermo: Regione siciliana, Assessorato dei beni culturali e dell'identità siciliana.

Oechslin, W. 2017, *The library and its Movers.* Domus n. 1019.

Settis, S. 2017. *Architettura e democrazia. Paesaggio, città, diritti civili*. Milano: Einaudi.

PAPER #6.09

THE NEW CHALLENGES FOR CONSERVATION AND MANAGEMENT OF HUWI, AHMEDABAD, INDIA

Mehrnaz Rajabi[a], Stefano Della Torre[a]
[a] DABC, Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The overall aim of this paper is to investigate the new role of Historical Underground Water Infrastructures (HUWI) as *cultural heritage*, under the contemporary environmental and climate changes. The paper's first attempt is to understand the issues related to HUWI due to the gradual loss of its original function, and furthermore, to investigate the lack of proper protection and management and usual absent of effective and feasible future plan toward sustainability and the resilience of their contexts.
In this regard, the paper also critically reviews the *P Preventive and Planned Conservation* method -a long-run strategy of integrated management of built cultural heritage- as one of the most significant and recent integrative methods of dealing with complex conditions like in Ahmedabad, India. The main challenge which this paper presents, therefore, is the engagement of the conservation, protection and management processes as an innovative method of capacity building for sustainability and resilience for both the HUWI and their local context/communities.

KEYWORDS

Cultural heritage; historical underground water infrastructures; climate and environmental change; resilience; preventive and planned conservation.

INTRODUCTION

Scarcity of water resources has always been a critical issue for most settlements in the arid and semi-arid climates throughout Central Asia, North Africa, and especially Southwest Asia. Historically people of these regions invented or slowly adopted a variety of solutions to deal with their harsh environments. Historical Underground Water Infrastructures (HUWI), which can be found throughout those territories, are among the most fascinating architectural artefacts of local production, astonishing works of engineering and hydraulics with superb formal and structural aspects. The modernization, the introduction of new industries and heavy mechanization of agricultural systems that accompanied, by accelerated population growth, have generally sought different, more ecologically damaging system of water management through deep drilling, gradually ignoring the well-planned networks of the earlier systems, which had been so carefully integrated with cities/villages, their habitats, and the hinterlands. In India, the stepwells were unique national forms of subterranean water storage systems, especially in the western states where always exists a high level of scarcity of water resources. The main functional role of stepwells was water supply, both for habitats, households, and their personal means as well as for animal watering or agricultural purposes. As the water was a crucial factor in Indian's life, the underground water buildings –as a community center and religious place– were flourished with

the best responsive interplay. In fact, stepwells were designed and constructed as a combination between utilitarian and social manifestations, where the water resource became a meeting point for social and cultural interactions, and therefore a simple act of water drawing became a ritual. With the arrival of modernization to India and the lack of water resources for industrial agriculture, the dramatic shift from traditional hydraulic system to piped system occurred and hence, almost all of those stepwells lost their original function. Nowadays, they are either drastically ignored, severely damaged and abandoned, or on the contrary their cultural image used as the center of speculation for the real-estate market. Some of them can still be found in decent condition but totally or partially disconnected from the network they once supplied from. Only a few of them have been recognized as a monument, listed as cultural heritage nationally or internationally, while almost all of these structures and their networks could be qualified as cultural heritage. Even those that remained under continual maintenance usually do not have proper management and are lacking any future plan, which could provide sustainability or resilience of their contexts –both historical and emergent ones. Although those stepwells have the potential to contribute to the touristic offerings of their regions, their current lack of conservation and their poor management, make it difficult to consider them capable of fostering either local or international tourism, or contributing to the local economy. Hence, this paper aims to explore the current conservation management issues of Indian HUWI, and to critically investigate its protection/management quality, which often lacks an effective and feasible plan toward future sustainability and resilience of its contexts. The paper questions the contemporary landscape of conservation and management of cultural heritage in India, showcasing and comparing the current conditions of two cases of Gujarat stepwells. Furthermore, as the main challenge, this paper pursues the possible new role of HUWI, especially the Indian stepwells, as *cultural heritage,* under the contemporary environmental and climate changes. The paper finally advocates the *Preventive and Planned Conservation* strategy, as one of the most significant and recent integrative methods of dealing with the complex condition of cultural heritage such as HUWI, due to its effective and comprehensive multi-disciplinary process-based approach toward the conservation of cultural heritage and its strategic long term vision.

1. HISTORICAL UNDERGROUND WATER INFRASTRUCTURES

1.1. The Indian Stepwells: the genesis of problems

During the 18th century, with the decline of the Mughal Empire in India, the door to the remarkable career of commercial enterprises of the British East India Company was opened, and empowered by its political ascendency in India until the Indian independence. And, by gradually substitution of the Indian cotton textile manufacturing with the later imported mechanized manufactured products of British mills, a new era of commercial activities and trades was started which progressively, marginalized the role of Indian merchants, as well as gradually weakened the Indian handloom weaving and spinning wheels that were “the pivots of the structure of that society” (Marx 1853). Traditionally, in response to the arid and semi-arid climate, the artificial irrigation system by canals, and water storage buildings in India was providing the basis of agriculture, in which the “prime necessity

of an economical and common use of water" required "the interference of the centralizing power of Government" (Marx 1853). Although the economic function of providing the related public works, was led by Central Government, the internal economic and social structure of the villages/small cities –the so-called village system- allowed the domestic industries -agriculture and manufacturing- and local communities, to have "their independent organization and distinct life" (Marx 1853). Nevertheless, that particular form of the social and economic structure of Indian villages and cities was, gradually, broken by the English interference in trade, land and tax policies, and by neglecting agriculture and the maintenance of water storage buildings. During the mid-19th century, thus, the consequential issues related to the mismanagement of especially water resources in India, led to the debates, that originated the *foundation of an economic critique* by Karl Mark. In his thesis, he stated that "British steam and science uprooted, over the whole surface of Hindostan, the union between agriculture and manufacturing" (Marx 1853)[1]. In parallel events, the inauguration of the railway system in India by the British Government, "opened up the door of opportunity toward the industrialization of the textile system" (Heidari Afshari and Rajabi 2016, 936), which water was the fundamental resource for that type of industry. Once, those textile mills were successfully naturalized, due to the consequential fast growth of populations around them -especially the labor class– settlement patterns of the host Indian villages/cities, were drastically transformed, in particular in the western regions such as Gujarat in which the traditionally-planned networks of the water-buildings and agricultural lands integrated well with their original habitats' needs. Furthermore, the new hydraulic engineering system –piped system– was introduced also by the British, and thus the nucleus of the "social ecology" of those water-buildings was dramatically alternated. Although "caring for wells was once a critical community responsibility and created an invisible circle around a well", after the introduction of the piped system "they [people] stopped to cleaning it" (Livingston 2002, 139). The piped system became an overcoming substitute for the traditional water structures. Starting from the late 1960s –in the post Indian independence era- the so-called *Green Revolution* credited to the new type of agriculture, to the new related technologies such as deep bore wells system and thus, to the establishment of much heavier industries. And thus for decades, India witnessed the overloaded mass water drawing. As the underground water tables dried deeper until the contemporary time, several districts in western states such as Gujarat and Rajasthan became overexploited. One can consider the *Green Revolution* as the final blow to the traditional water infrastructure. Furthermore, the big scale ambitious construction projects –nationally valued- such as the dam of Sardar Sarovar on the Narmada River in south-eastern Gujarat are the good excuse of "the government [to] ignore small restoration projects when newsworthy dams were available to them" (Livingston 2002, pp. 164-6). Those devastating events, are not unique to India, similarly lots of developing countries in the arid and semi-arid climatic zone, have faced the consequences of their late modernizations, and over scaled industrialization. The condition which more than ever seems crucial, due to the contemporary impact of climate change on the sectors such as water. In fact, the "accelerated warming has been observed in India" between 1971 and 2007, "primarily caused by an intense warming trend observed in the recent decade (1998-2007)" (Revi et al. 2015, 12),

[1] Such critiques picked up by Marxists and Indian nationalists, are still alive in political debates in India.

in which urge us reasonably to rethink the contemporary role of Indian well-rooted and culturally feasible pre-industrial water infrastructures, ignored for the last decades.

1.2. Contemporary condition of Indian stepwells; case study of Ahmedabad

Gujarat state, on the west of India, is where one can find the most distinguished HUWI, stunning stepwells, water reservoirs, and Kankarias. Geographically speaking, Gujarat has a semi-arid climate with raining monsoon and almost half a year of the dry season. In the pre-modern India, stepwells were the strategic infrastructures and eminent architectures with the capacity to store monsoon's collected water in their wells and to have it accessible during the dry season. Their strategic locations based on the geographical features of the territory, as well as, their vicinity with the main roads and settlements, were well calculated and complimented by the nature of rural India. However, as mentioned before, their condition is changed. During the last 20 years, the whole Gujarat state transformed drastically, from typical rural/hinterlands and core cities to vast urbanized territory via an exploding, eclectic and uneven urbanization process. One can clearly observe the impact of rapid urbanization in the case of Ahmedabad city, which has been, recently, converted into a mega-region of several municipalities, most of which were previously rural in 2000. That was mainly the result of the so-called *smart development* vision, which is being accelerated by the first implemented program in India, *the Integrated Mobility Plan for Greater Ahmedabad Region, 2031*; the comprehensive plan which intended to adapt both *transportation plans* and *Development Plans* together in order to, shape the future vision of the Ahmedabad and Gandhinagar region. *The Greater Ahmedabad (GA) region* envisioned to cover the developments in the area, in a span of 20 years, arriving from 8.1 million habitants in 2011 to about 12.5 million in 2031 and, increasing employment by 70% in 2031. Looking into the condition of India after independence, without a doubt, the economic reforms of the 1980s and 1990s, consequently, the *liberalization of the Indian economy* and its transition to service sector, opened up the door of opportunities to large investments of private-sectors, as well as the emergence and development of small and medium industries, which were interspersed within, the historical villages and cities such as Ahmedabad. Accordingly, under the Urban Renewal Mission the program which was launched in 2005 by the Government for the development of hundred Indian cities, the Ahmedabad city envisioned *smart city, City Development Plan Ahmedabad, 2006-2012*, and *Comprehensive Development Plan of 2021*, were initiated. All comprehensive visions, as expected, accelerated the rapid urbanization and population growth in Ahmedabad city, having 5,633,927 populations as per the Census of 2011 and becoming the sixth largest city of India. Meanwhile, the Ahmedabad district, together with Gandhinagar, possesses some of the finest examples of stepwells, all of which lack a minimum of protection/conservation, not to say, a lack of a management plan. Out of around 60 recognized stepwells in Gujarat[2], only one -Rani-Ki-Vav (the Queen's stepwell) at Patan- has been nominated and inserted into UNESCO World Heritage Sites. Those recognized stepwells are protected, by the Central Government and Archaeological Survey of India (ASI), as the monuments of *national importance*, such as Dada Harir Stepwell at Ahmedabad city and Rudabai Stepwell at Adalaj village in Gandhinagar district, or the other 45 stepwells, by the Gujarat Archaeological department. Yet, there are a lot of lesser-known stepwells in the Gujarat state that, unfortunately, are

[2] Based on the published list by the Archaeological Survey of India.

not recognized, and thus, drastically ignored, severely damaged and abandoned. (Fig. 1) Dada Harir stepwell -dated around 1499 A.D- was built with Hindu and Islamic styles. It is located in the eastern part of Ahmedabad city -near the core historic city, which by 2017 inscribed in the UNESCO World Heritage List- in the post-industrial context with several abandoned textile mills' sites, several small/medium-scale industries, and their low-income society settlements. Nowadays, the stepwell and its mosque are, to some extent, isolated and separated from their context, original programs, and social and economic structures of their contexts. Although, Dada Harir stepwell, is declared as the monument of *national importance*, in the development plan of the city, it is not provisioned as a cultural heritage site. The stepwell suffers from ignorance, not only by the state government and decision-makers but also by local people -where Hinduism entails the majority religion in the city. And thus, during the last decades, the preservation plans for the stepwell mostly were limited to the monument itself. (Fig. 2) On the other side, another declared *national importance*; Rudabai Stepwell -dated around 1499A.D, located at the historic village of Adalaj and constructed with Hindu style- currently, is one of the most famous touristic destinations on the periphery of Ahmedabad city. While, the stepwell's complex is well protected, during the last decades, the edges of its protected boundary and the surrounding areas of the historical nearby village, have been dramatically transformed. Such immediate transformations were the consequences of separate development plans based on the promotions of tourism in India initiated in 2002, followed by the states' tourism policies in 2015, and accompanied by the regional *smart development plan*. For instance, the new highway and touristic facilities nearby the stepwell, built under the assumption of beautification for the mass tourism, has been transformed the social, economic and spatial structure of the village. By consequence, the villagers are being, more than ever, separated from the stepwell, incoming tourists and any possible future programs of the under-used touristic facilities. (Fig. 3)

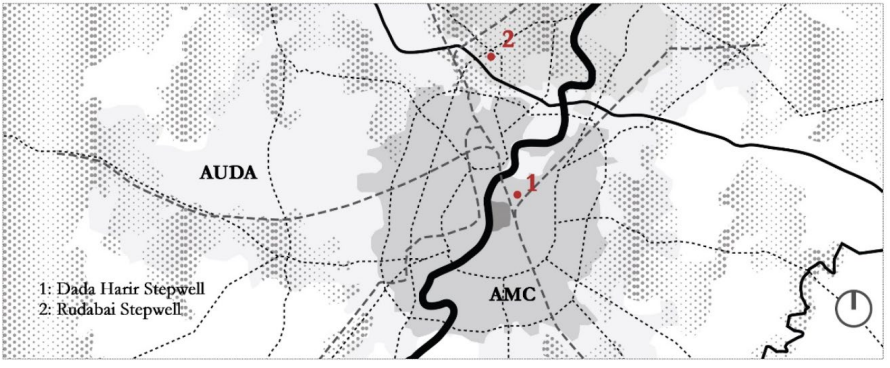


Figure 1. The location of Dada Harir and Rudabai Stepwells in relation to Ahmedabad Municipal Corporation – AMC, and Ahmedabad Urban Development Authority - AUDA. Source: (Authors 2020)

Figures 2 and 3. Up: Dada Harir stepwell and its surrounding; Left: 2001, Right: 2020. Down: Rudabai Stepwell and its surrounding; Left: 2001, Right: 2020. Source: (Google Earth 2020)

2. CONSERVATION, MANAGEMENT, PROTECTION IN INDIA

The Archaeological Survey of India (ASI), under the Ministry of Culture, is the prime governmental organization that is responsible for excavations, protection, conservation, and preservation of monuments and sites, already recognized as the monuments of *national importance*. While the Archaeological department inside the states conducts the preservation activities, as well as, the protection actions on the *protected monuments of the state*, the Indian National Trust for Art and Cultural Heritage (INTACH) -the only non-governmental body of professionals in India- has been involved, with identification, documentation, protection, and conservation of India's cultural, natural and intangible heritage, which are not under the jurisdiction of the ASI as well as protected heritages of the state; INTACH's Charter of 2004 -*charter for the Conservation of Unprotected Architectural Heritage and Sites in India*- has been the main document, to refer to, for the conservation of *unprotected architectural heritage and sites of India* within an institutional framework. Nonetheless, without a doubt the conservation manual of Sir John Marshall, in which the principles of the conservation was comprehensively laid down, for the first time, is still one of the primary conservation references in India; where the values of cultural heritage used not to be considered, in governmental decision makings and policies, nor inclined to be inserted in legislation and norms and similarly used to follow the old colonial-period heritage laws, constituted by focusing on the fabric of the monuments, or else, on the material-based approaches (Sharma 2019). In recent years yet, the ASI has adopted several international charters and guidelines to, better, define conservation approaches for the protected monuments (NPC – AMASR 2014). Likewise, *The National Policy for the Conservation of the Ancient Monuments,*

Archaeological Sites and Remains (NPC – AMASR) of 2014 is the first conservation policy in India for safeguarding, protecting, managing and conservation of the monuments and sites of *national importance*. The National Policy primarily dealt with the internationally recent issues such as *capacity building* and *building of partnerships with multi-disciplinary organizations and institutions, Community Participation in Conservation, Public-Private Partnership in Heritage Conservation and Management, Tourism and Visitor Management,* and *Disaster Management*. The National Policy was envisioned, in concurrence with the provisions of the *Ancient Monuments and Archaeological Sites and Remains* (amended and revalidated) Act of 2010, which, in specific, obligated the 100 meters around protected boundary of the monument as *Prohibited Area or Buffer Zone*, and further beyond the prohibition area, up to 200m in all direction, as the *Regulated Area*[3]. However, those protections designated for monuments, such as stepwells of Ahmedabad, have not been successfully implemented or, if the profit necessitates, the more powerful bodies prefer not to deliberate those further protections around heritage. On the contrary for instance, in the case of Rani-Ki-Vav, it was evident that besides all Indian heritage regulations, the international organizations had effective influence on the stepwell's protection from the disengaged development plan of the city of Patan, which was prepared and sanctioned, before inserting the stepwell at Tentative List of UNESCO, in 1998, and its inscription at UNESCO World Heritage List, in 2014. In recent years, several policies, charters, and strategies are passively deliberated by Government, ASI, and INTACH, in order to adopt more *values-based* and *people-based* approaches to conservation, management, and protection of built heritage in India, yet, practically, they have not been even-handed; as in two cases of Dada Harir and Rudabai stepwells, the missing roles of local and low-income communities in the so-called *smart development* plans were evident, and the process of economic speculation of residential extensions and *tourism development* exceeded over the conservation programs of the two monuments. At least, in the monuments of *national importance* under the protection of the Governmental bodies and the legislations which are *purpose-oriented*, one can, clearly observe that those decision makings are still based on the *top-down* attitudes and the new tendencies on the *bottom-up* approaches are not yet considered effectively. And, thus, by contemporary measures, those monuments, are not validated truthfully as *cultural heritage*; their factual authenticity and significant values, are not fully recognized by decision-makers, politicians, and developers as well as, by their local people. The actual condition on Indian conservation, critically requires a shift in attitudes, towards a *global strategy* which "needs to be carefully designed as a set of different tools (regulations, incentives, education, and dissemination of best practices...)", and "actions have to be taken at different levels, and many regulations have to be harmonized" (Della Torre 2010, 169). In India, the missing link in the regulations and the strategic plans is that they are not strategically oriented toward conservation, management, and protection of cultural heritage. That does not mean that the plans and strategies should include conservation of monuments inside their programs, but rather put the conservation of resources especially cultural heritage and its human resources, in the center of all key decisions. Involving citizens, local professionals, experts, and NGOs, should be the main orientation for the policy making for those contexts. As a result, in order to identify the contemporary role of that cultural heritage

[3] The *Prohibited Area*, where no construction is allowed, the *Regulated Area*, where any new construction will be granted permission only with the approval of the National Monument Authority and ASI.

such as stepwells, in their historical and emergent contexts, it is necessary to understand their true authenticity and to recognize them as *cultural heritage* with its most comprehensive and contemporary meaning which includes integration among different disciplines, and at various scales.

3. GLOBAL CHALLENGE FOR CONSERVATION; CLIMATE CHANGE AND CULTURAL HERITAGE POINTS OF VIEW

Taking to account that although climate change has critically affected our cultural and natural heritage sites, generally speaking, the current national and international rules and policies on climate change have not been placed in any respective plans for heritages; "Only Italy and France have included Cultural Heritage in their respective National Adaptation Plan to Climate Change" (Lefèvre 2018, 15). Moreover, cultural heritage still does not have any central role in any international Policies in relation to climate change. In rare cases like Italy, the *Italian National Strategy for Adaptation to Climate Change* referred to cultural heritage sector -by the three technical-scientific documents produced in 2014 and connected with Cultural Heritage protection will be discussed (Bonazza 2018). The ground-breaking initiative of ICOMOS Symposium on *Climate Change* in Pretoria in 2007, was one of the first to underline the significant impact of *Global Climate Change* on cultural heritage "that is often about loss and destruction as much as preservation" (ICOMOS 2008, 4). The initiative underscored "the serious local social impact from such loss" and the involvement of local communities "in establishing related priorities" (ICOMOS 2017, 18) policies and decision makings. But, the turning point was in Quebec ICOMOS Symposium in the same year, which promoted efforts to actively involve climate change concerns in cultural heritage practices. Meanwhile, by 2007, the UNESCO's efforts, on identifying the world heritage properties at risk from climate change, achieved the significant results, in a compulsory *Policy Document on the Impacts of Climate Change on World Heritage Properties,* and in a pioneering report on *Predicting and Managing the Effects of Climate Change on World Heritage* as well as a "strategy to assist States Parties… to implement appropriate management responses", in order to "protect the outstanding universal values, integrity and authenticity of the World Heritage properties from the adverse impacts of climate change" (UNESCO 2007). And thus, "Between 2007 and 2017, 154 reports on 38 World Heritage properties located in 33 States Parties were examined … in relation to climate change related impacts on Outstanding Universal Value" (WHC/18/42. COM/7, 2018). Currently, the World Heritage properties play a significant role in gathering and disseminating the impacts of Climate change, raising public awareness, and capacity building in relation to their contexts. And in similar events, freshly revised UNESCO *Strategy for Action on Climate Change* (2018-2021), -recalls the same strategy of 2008, was adopted by the UNESCO's General Conference in 2017, so as to underline the 2015 United Nation's *Paris Agreement on Climate Change*, and *the 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development*; "an innovative and ambitious agenda that places the issue of the environment and sustainability at the center of all social and economic activities" (UNESCO 2019, 6). The strategy considers four thematic focus area for action: *Climate change education and public awareness programs and policies, Interdisciplinary Climate knowledge and scientific cooperation, Cultural diversity and cultural heritage safeguarding,* and *Inclusive social development, intercultural dialogue and ethical and gender quality principles*, for climate change mitigation and adaptation.

Developing countries such as India are also slowly picking this issue up. For instance, in 2017, the *Declaration on Heritage and Democracy* issued by ICOMOS in New Delhi identified the *Heritage* and *Democracy* as key ingredients in a *people-based approach* to *sustainable development*, as well as setting it as a relying vision for the cultural heritage societies toward climate actions. One can argue that it is natural for those countries to have consequential delay in recognizing and adopting those kinds of brand new international agreements, yet the concerning issue is that, despite all considerable international efforts during the last two decades, not only the bodies involved in cultural heritage conservation in those countries, have been inefficiently engaged in this mainstream, but also there is no significant and organized rise of cultural heritage concerns in regard to climate change alarming issues.

And that is mostly due to the absence of sensitive cultural heritage driven management system and the lack of consensus among public and governmental bodies regarding the climate change preventive and planned actions.

4. PREVENTIVE AND PLANNED CONSERVATION

The analysis of the current situation of stepwells in India detected a dramatic alternative between abandon and improper management of some cases, which should be protected, but rather suffer exploitation and commodification. This happens because the recognition as *cultural heritage* does not entail a management system focused on the multiple roles heritage can play for local development, but just on the function to foster tourism. Therefore, decision making refers more to tourism destination management models rather than to best practices in the heritage field. Actually, some practices in the heritage sector can be inspiring in dealing with HUWI problems. Some decades ago the problem has been set no longer just in terms of outstanding values, but in the frame of a wide vision of the implications of growth at the planetary scale. This was the contribution given by Giovanni Urbani (1925-1994), who actually started a research stream on conservation as the management of risks, overcoming the theoretic and radical discussions on the preventive conservation, enhancing it from the scale of the objects in the museums to the monuments and sites at territorial scale. Underscoring a shift in the whole matter, that "Cultural heritage must not be dealt with, separately from the natural environment", he prepared, accordingly, a pilot plan for the planned conservation of the cultural heritage in Umbria in 1975[4], which considered the environmental concerns in the conservation of cultural heritage that was radically different from the traditional restoration. One can observe a distinctive common background between Urbani's *Conservazione Programmata* and the parallel concept of *integrated conservation* stated by the *European Charter of the Architectural Heritage* of the Council of Europe and the Declaration of Amsterdam in 1975. By the verge of 21st century, Urbani's planned conservation was re-launched in Italy, encompassing the idea of *preventive conservation*, in concordance with the Italian development of planned conservation from 2000, especially by enforcing the *Cultural Heritage Framework Law* in 2004 which quantified the *strategy*, as a "coherent, coordinated and planned activity of study, prevention, maintenance, restoration". The statement obviously presented the paradigm shift from traditional restoration as event,

[4] Only part of the foreseen activities were implemented, thanks to the enduring commitment of the Umbria Regional Government. Urbani's initiatives were perhaps unsuccessful, because of the political issues of that time, but they had a great influence on the long run.

to conservation as process, which didn't refer anymore to single actions, but "include many more phases, tasks, and activities, like restoring, maintaining, monitoring and also, planning" (Della Torre 2010/a, 169; Della Torre 2010/b, 145) inside the process as a *whole*. And evidently, in the new method, all the phases introduced to be implemented within a long term vision, in order to achieve the maximum coherence. Urbani's claims also bridged the gap between Italian and International practices, introducing a broader understanding of the relationships of cultural objects with environment and society. Those researches in Italy eventually ended up in a vision and a management model, the *preventive and planned conservation*. One can argue, that the focus on prevention has been undoubtedly inspired by the best practices in Netherlands and Belgium, or by the problem solving approaches practiced in the UK. Indeed, the successful experiments in practice by the preventive conservation in Belgium underscored the cost-effectiveness of the approach and highlighted the well-known message of *prevention is better than cure*, and it is worthy to underscore that also these researches came to broaden their approach towards issues like community involvement and economic impact (Van Balen, Vandesande 2015; Van Balen, Vandesande 2016). The *preventive and planned conservation* has been theorized as a long-term strategy of careful planning of uses and quality, information management, regular maintenance and control of environmental factors (Della Torre 2013 and 2015). In this comprehensive vision, all actions and strategies on cultural heritage are deliberated, to be programmed, in the systematic view that they are coordinated, by the management process. As, the strategy encompasses the *planning of large scale features*, from the policies and decision makings for the optimal performance of local people, it emphasizes on being "implemented in the design of regional development projects which encompass investments on cultural heritage properties and sites" (Della Torre 2013, 123). As a matter of fact, strategically, as a new management approach dealing with built cultural heritage (Vandesande et al. 2018), in a long-term vision, endeavors to put together a top-down approach (prevention of territorial risks, such as floods, quakes, abandon…) and a bottom-up approach, i.e. every day behaviors of stakeholders, like architects, conservators and users (Della Torre 2010 and 2013). And thus, in case of successful implementation, this kind of strategy is more effective and feasible in the coherent sustainability and resilience frameworks. In the *preventive and planned conservation* method, the main targets are oriented to, involve different actors and supply chains and to give the opportunities for educational activities and training on the field, as the tactical tool for innovation and capacity building. It provides thus, the necessary condition, to the intellectual capital enhancement in the target territory. In this regard, conservation as planned process, by recalling the *culture as a unifying factor*, could have effective incentives on the improvement of local/ regional development processes, in order to empower local resources and economy. This vision is focused on the recognition of the potentialities of cultural heritage for society, economy and development, and spans from the value of precious details to the global trends related to major challenges and threats. That's why this model is promising, in order to deal with the problems detected in stepwells, which are no longer useful for everyday life in a becoming world. In overall, the capacity to provide an effective and comprehensive multi-disciplinary process-based approach toward the conservation of cultural heritage, inclusiveness of the process, and its strategic long term vision, is making the *Preventive and Planned Conservation*, one of the most appreciated methods in regard to the contemporary challenges like climate change as well as enhancing the intellectual capital of

a territory; the issue which former methods and approaches of managements and policy making in the camp of conservation, failed to address feasibly and effectively, especially in the global south and countries such as India.

CONCLUSION

The *cultural heritage* which, in the 21st century discourses, has been proved not to be anymore, "a cost to society" (*Getting cultural heritage to work for Europe* 2015, 6), but rather, a unique constructive *identity*, should always be measured as an important source of *creativity and innovation* that could encourage *education and lifetime learning*, enhance local development, and empower the local and regional economy. It is obvious that it is almost impossible to achieve these objectives, unless, the governmental bodies consider and apply the integrative type of methods for the conservation and management of cultural heritage, to guarantee their historical and contemporary social, cultural, economic and environmental values and, last but not least, to revive their true authenticity. The main challenge in this regard and, in complex contexts such as Ahmedabad -within its fast-forward development and growth- is, exactly in the systematic management of cultural heritage which, introduces and follows the rational and feasible paradigm of resilience. To put it simply, the management of cultural heritage is much different from the management of the cultural and natural destinations of tourists that insists on the cultural image or, the *Outstanding Universal Value* of cultural heritage, in order to produce the center of speculation of the real-estate market and the source of attraction for the tourists which, is far away from the contemporary definitions of sustainability. Regarding the resilient attitude toward cultural heritage, more than ever before, the need to think and act differently seems necessary; in those contexts, the overall condition of conservation debates requires to change the attitude in both public and engaging bodies. And thus, the strategic plans have to provide stability by refusing to fell in a trap of short term political positivism. The innovation has to be found, in the provision of constancy and anticipation of uncertainties rather than achieving the so-called *smart growth* objectives. The *preventive and planned conservation* as an innovative long-term management approach to cultural heritage, with the definition which was mentioned before, would be an appreciated alternative, especially regarding the contemporary challenges of climate change for cultural heritage. While in 2018, the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC) projected that by 2030, global warming could reach +1.5°C, and thus, urged all to "immediately and collectively achieve a paradigm shift" (IPCC 2018), the 2019 UNESCO's report of *Changing minds not the climate* underscored that "the climate crisis is an ethical challenge". The management plans should actively pick upon "the cultural dimensions of climate action" (ICOMOS 2019, ii). And, in the contexts such as Ahmedabad, with a long history of water preservation and traditional resilience toward arid climate, the stepwells, are not just water infrastructures out of commission, or historical sites, their value as cultural heritage, are far more climatically ethnical, and culturally proactive. And thus, at least, the stepwells can act in the *preventive and planned conservation* as the strategic *identity* for the contemporary dimension of cultural resilience.

REFERENCES

Bonazza, A. 2018. *Cultural Heritage in the Italian Strategy for Adaptation to Climate Change*. In R.-A. Lefèvre and C. Sabbioni (eds.). *Cultural heritage facing climate change: experiences and ideas for resilience and adaptation*. Bari: Edipuglia.

Della Torre, S. 2010/a. *Conservation of built cultural heritage, laws enabling preventive approach: the case of Italy.* In M. Gustin and T. Nypan (eds.). *Cultural Heritage and legal Aspects in Europe*, Koper.

Della Torre, S. 2010/b *Economics of Planned Conservation*. In M. Mälkki and K. Schmidt-Thomé (eds.), *Integrating aims. Built Heritage in social and economic development*. Helsinki: Helsinki.

Della Torre, S. 2013. *Planned conservation and local development processes: the key role of intellectual capital*. In K. Van Balen and A. Vandesande (eds.), *Reflections on Preventive Conservation, Maintenance and Monitoring*. Leuven: Acco.

European Commission 2015. *Getting cultural heritage to work for Europe, Report of the Horizon 2020 expert group on cultural heritages*. Luxembourg: European Union.

Heidari Afshari, A. and Rajabi, M. 2016. *Interior urbanity; in-between scales' scenarios for contemporary urban design, learning from Ahmedabad, India.* In *European Symposium on Research in Architecture and Urban Design: In Between Scales eurau2016 Bucharest*. Bucharest.

ICOMOS 2008. *Recommendations from the Scientific Council Symposium, Cultural Heritage and Global Climate Change (GCC*). Pretoria: ICOMOS.

ICOMOS 2017. *Resolutions of the 19th ICOMOS General Assembly, Heritage and Democracy.* New Delhi: ICOMOS.

ICOMOS 2019. *Future of Our Pasts: Engaging Cultural Heritage in Climate Action.* Paris: ICOMOS.

Lefèvre, R.-A. 2018. *Le Patrimoine Culturel dans le Plan National Français d'Adaptationau Changement Climatique.* In R.-A. Lefèvre and C. Sabbioni (eds.), *Cultural heritage facing climate change: experiences and ideas for resilience and adaptation*, Bari: Edipuglia.

Livingstone, M. 2002. *Steps to water, the ancient stepwells of India*. New York: Princeton.

Marshall, J. and ASI 1923. *Conservation manual. A handbook for the use of archaeological officers and others entrusted with the care of ancient monuments*. Calcutta: Superintendent Government printing.

Marx, K. 1853. *The British Rule in India*. New York: New-York Daily Tribune.

Revi, A., Bazaz, A., Krishnaswamy, J., Bendapudi, R., D'Souza, M. and Pahwa Gajjar, S. 2015. *Vulnerability and Adaptation to Climate Change in Semi-Arid Areas in India.* South Africa: ASSAR PMU.

Sharma, T. 2019. *The Paradox of Valuing the Invaluable: Managing Cultural Values in Heritage Places*. In Avrami, E., et al. (eds.). *Values in Heritage Management: Emerging Approaches and Research Directions.* Los Angeles: The Getty Conservation Institute.

UNESCO 2019, *Changing minds not the climate!,* UNESCO: Paris.

Urbani, G. and Zanardi, B. (ed.) 2000. *Intorno al restauro.* Milan: Skira.

Van Balen, K. Vandesande, A. 2015. *Community Involvement in Heritage*, Antwerp – Apeldoorn: Garant.

Van Balen, K. and Vandesande, A. 2016. *Heritage Counts,* Antwerp – Apeldoorn: Garant.

Vandesande, A., Van Balen, K., Della Torre, S. and Cardoso, F. (2018). *Preventive and planned conservation as a new management approach for built heritage: from a physical health check to empowering communities and activating (lost) traditions for local sustainable development.* "Journal of Cultural Heritage Management and Sustainable Development", Vol. 8 Issue 2: 78-81.

PAPER #6.10

AN INCESSANT RESEARCH EXERCISE ON THE HISTORICAL CONTEXT OF FIORENZUOLA D'ARDA CITY

Michele Ugolini[a], Rossana Gabaglio[a], Stefania Varvaro[a]
[a] Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

Designing means looking at and listening to what surrounds us, it means respect for the dense layers of signs sedimented by the time that, in their continuous change, become elements that enrich the existing heritage.
Knowing the stratigraphy of a building or a context, not only in a physical sense, allows us to think about new uses, new needs and to set them up in a manner consistent with the pre-existence.
It is a matter of unveiling potential unexpressed identities to materialize them in reality and bring them out of their latent state.
When the project faces a historical built environment, the role assumption of the knowledge direction becomes particularly significant and necessary in the transforming process of a space in another way than the original one. The project interprets the role of unifying catalyst of the different disciplines necessary for the design of a new space.
Following this track, the case study of Fiorenzuola d'Arda city will be taken as a concrete laboratory in which the knowledge of history has become a guiding tool for the project.
The enhancement of the architectural context characterized by the presence of historic buildings with their internal spatiality and the open space with which they relate, also requires the inclusion of new architectural elements, both through internal interventions, and through new addictions, opening a dialogue aware between what the building was, is now, and what is becoming. A process that is not closed in itself, but that tries to investigate and value the continuous and changing relationship between the city, a part of it, and the single architectural episode with its system of relationships.
It is a profitable process that defines levels of complex relationships, enriches, presents, adds, removes, mediates, tells, briefly, plans the change, searching the appropriate form.

KEYWORDS

Architectural heritage; permanence and transformation; unveiling identity.

INTRODUCTION

The demonstrative occasion of the project methodology application to investigate and design in a systemic way, which primarily chooses to work on the existing heritage by promoting a line of sustainable development for the current city, was the collaboration program between a group of researchers from the Polytechnic of Milan and the Municipal Administration of Fiorenzuola d'Arda city.
The ambition to offer a concrete project theme and direct debate with institutional bodies and citizenship over the years has allowed us to verify new functions and activities to be included, test different structures of public spaces, highlight the possibility of connection urban alternatives, framing the focus of the investigation each time within the historical stratigraphy and re-reading the complex weave of signs and relationships that constitutes the urban fabric.

1. KNOWLEDGE AS A PREMISE TO RESPECT COMPLEXITY AND TO REKINDLE A TERRITORY TOWARDS THE PROJECT

1.1. The complexity of the territory: space and time

The territory can no longer be considered as the physical place where fragmentary monumental episodes are located, but as a complex system of architectural assets and open spaces that interact to form its structure. The widespread historical architecture is perhaps the essential component of the landscape resources that contributes to determining the historical substance of any territorial system. Recently, in addition to the interest in architectural monuments, all those tracks that constitute a concrete testimony to the material, social, political and religious life of a place and the community that inhabits it have become important: the effort result, both in terms of knowledge and design, is to consider them as part of a more complex and articulated system.

Within this ever-changing panorama, the architect interprets, builds and tells. Apparently in opposition, construction - linked to space, which uses stone to show itself - and storytelling - linked to time and word - are instead closely related to each other: in fact not all about the space is regarding to the form, and not all about time is related to the stopwatch.

Both are linked to the concept of human life (Riva 2008): that's why we can define the existing reality, be it an urban or landscape fragment, a place of living, with all the meanings and depth that derive from it. When the architect is called to know and to intervene on architectural heritage, in its several aspects, the effort has to be to interpret places not only from the physical point of view, in any case very rich of meanings and character, but also from an *anthropological* point of view: the built carries on itself the tracks of the ways of living.

Questioning ourselves also on this aspect is necessary to prefigure possible transformation scenarios able, on the one hand, of preserving the character of tradition and, at the same time, of welcoming new needs and new requests and trying to give an answer through an appropriate spatial configuration.

1.2. The knowledge between representation and vision

First of all, what do we mean by a *knowledge project?* A representation that is the language we use to describe a piece of the world. What is represented is not the reality itself, but a reconstruction chosen by the observer who, by returning it, interprets it. However, it cannot be limited to a description of the obviousness, linked to the perceptual approach, but has to become an explanation of the phenomenon investigated.

Through an inquiring gaze of complexity (material, architectural, spatial, relational...), capable of a *deep vision*, it aims to reveal the mechanisms and reasons that explain, as well as give meaning, to the evidence. It is not an almost obsessive accumulation of data and notions, although scientific, the use of these, in a conscious and transversal way, to be able to highlight the *underlying form* (Tagliagambe 1998, 20), or the system of relationships (physical but also temporal and social) between the parties.

Therefore bibliographic, documentary, and archival research become an opportunity to read and interpret the transformation processes, over time and in the matter.

Survey activity is no longer a mechanical action - taking measurements and returning them graphically - but it means investigating, researching, knowing, and understanding, to acquire awareness of the complex and articulated nature of architecture, over time and history.

Specialized investigations, which in recent decades have used increasingly advanced

equipment, are invaluable when they help to give specific answers, to validate some insights or not. The analytical data itself, the result of a specialist investigation, has a relative and limited value if not related to the complexity of the complete cognitive activity.
The constructed reality remains unchanged; knowledge can be compared, therefore, to the set of linguistic tools that we use to explain the existing, capable of giving us back the most different aspects, which are located at levels of greater or lesser depth.
The knowledge of the built city is therefore an opening in a multiplicity of interpretations that have to be respected in their plurality and become the premise for the project. Different points of view and methods of investigation from ours help us to read and understand the forms of contemporary life: they are the result of an articulated framework of complicity and differences, of contradictory and complementary elements of continuous processes of direct and induced transformation.

1.3. The project between permanence and mutation

The territory cannot be described, analyzed, and even less designed, and therefore transformed, through simplifications and reductions, but requires an approach

> that respects its inextricable complexity and the simultaneous presence of heterogeneous events and aspects, which they constitute a network of relationships that is gradually expanding to always include horizons larger and to compose a dust of possibilities that aggregate and disintegrate starting from portions the existing one (Tagliagambe 2005).

How can these design experiences, so specific in terms of context, architectural, material, spatial and temporal characteristics, become opportunities for research?

The question is once again related to the ability to "ask the right questions, choose the right tests and find the right conclusions" (Tagliagambe 1998, 18). The challenge consists in the ability to investigate a specific *object* (an urban or landscape fragment) through its peculiarities and, at the same time, be able to abstract its aspects capable of interpreting some more general questions. Following this, we can test, through the project, a response to conservation and transformation requests.
A project thought not as the only possible but as, "the possible alternatives seen from reality" (Tagliagambe 1998, 34): it's an active and dynamic balance between the rights of the *sense of reality* and the reasons for the *sense of possibility*. We can speak of *ontological planning* (Winograd, Flores 1987), which looks back on the tradition that has formed us, but also towards the transformations that have not yet taken place; it's can only grow on the existing, and starting from it to imagine possible scenarios.
So what is the challenge that increasingly becomes a necessity? Being able, through the project, to define a balance between the ability to innovate and build new meanings and, at the same time, the capability to subordinate these changes to the preservation of a specific identity, which we can define dynamic (Tagliagambe 1998, 5-6).
The essential condition of any authentic and effective design activity is therefore the *ability to feel* and see reality not as something complete and defined forever, but as a process in continuous evolution.

2. THE CATALYST AND UNIFYING ROLE OF THE ARCHITECTURE PROJECT

The assumption of direction role of knowledge and disciplines required in designing a space in a many and different ways from the original one, becomes particularly significant. The architectural project has the catalytic and

unifying role of this articulated process of knowledge.

> Modification, belonging, context, identity, specificity, are a group of words that seem to presuppose a pre-existing reality to be preserved by transforming it, passing on its memory with the traces in turn founded on the basis of the previous traces, a reality that appears in the physical form of a geography whose cognitive cult and interpretation of which provide the backbone of the project (Gregotti 1991).

The project therefore, as a meaningful synthesis of knowledge and interpretation of the existing heritage, has the responsibility to convey the contributions of all the disciplines that, today more than ever, contribute to better define a space. Without this cultural direction in the project the technicalities, the norms, the laws, the functionality prevail and the space, with the load of meaning expectations, is lost.

2.1. A recent experience of territorial government policy in Emilia Romagna region

Promoting a culture that recognizes the complexity of the urban fabric in which it is called to operate, underlines the relational values between the parties and recognizes and confirms the importance of regeneration actions, discouraging new land use, therefore becomes the foundation of each territorial policy that wants to propose itself as sustainable. The city today should push appropriate development policies "to enhance the productive, cultural and relational potential within the growing levels of systemic interconnection" (Losasso 2015).
Based on the in-depth knowledge of the historical building at various scales, the territorial, the urban and the architectural one and defining a systemic framework of all potential that the existing carries with it, has certainly represented a constant with which to measure oneself by those who work in the area, but also an essential challenge of not always easy promotion.
In this sense, the policies of the Emilia Romagna region, one of the most advanced regions of Italy together with Lombardy, are interesting to understand how administrative and political support is a necessary condition for extensive and shared action.
Since the early 1990s, the Urban Redevelopment Programs introduced by the Regional Law have been promoted and funded n. 19/98 "Rules on Urban Redevelopment". These planning actions have anticipated for a large part the contents contained in the "Urban Regeneration" call issued subsequently by the Emilia Romagna Region, without however putting into place a real systemic planning. On the other hand, they contributed to increasing the sensitivity and institutional development of a more structured and complex programming. It is in fact in 2018 that the aforementioned regional call for funding is being promoted which it intends to represent:

> a policy in support of the reuse and adaptation of public and private heritage with targeted, long-lasting and sustainable planning, of obtaining a widespread urban, territorial, socio-economic and environmental quality that is a response to phenomena of spatial and environmental degradation combined with functional decline and poor social cohesion, divestments of activities and improper spatial uses, congestion and settlement disorder, as well as the safety and efficiency of the diffuse heritage, the requalification of marginal spaces with precise attention to the reduction of the consumption of soil. [1]

It is clear the desire to attribute to the planning action the possibility and the ability to transform not only physically and functionally parts of cities. The goal is to finance a strategy for urban quality with a view to a "revitalization

[1] From the regional call Urban Rigeneration, Regione Emilia Romagna, 2018.

of the cities of Emilia-Romagna", as it is written in the call.
The *widespread* term with which the demand for regeneration is characterized by identifying the relationship between urban spaces, buildings and structures to be redeveloped, business plans and management programs as the foundation. In summary, it is an invitation to a systemic reading of the space, be it public or private, whether open or inside a building envelope in close relationship with the life of its inhabitants. In search of what De Carli called "primary space", that complex of relationships that "above all and par excellence in architecture" constitutes "an act of qualification and an authentic attribution or donation of meaning" (De Carli 1982, 362).
Widespread also demonstrates the need to emphasize a cross-scale feature, from the municipal or supra-municipal dimension to the size of the neighborhood, square, building, with the specific request to reason by systems, never in a reducing manner. The single intervention takes on value if inserted in a broad regeneration program that involves a complexity of factors and has positive and lasting effects over the years. [2]

2.2. Fiorenzuola d'Arda

Fiorenzuola d'Arda is a small town of just over 15,000 inhabitants, located along the historical roman Via Emilia, on one of the main motorway axes that connect Milan to Bologna, in the province of Piacenza.
The historic urban fabric of Fiorenzuola is characterized by an older nucleus enclosed within a contiguous quadrilateral of the Via Emilia in which Piazza Fratelli Molinari takes a place as the core of the city with the Collegiata, San Fiorenzo Church and the peculiar bell tower detached from the church.

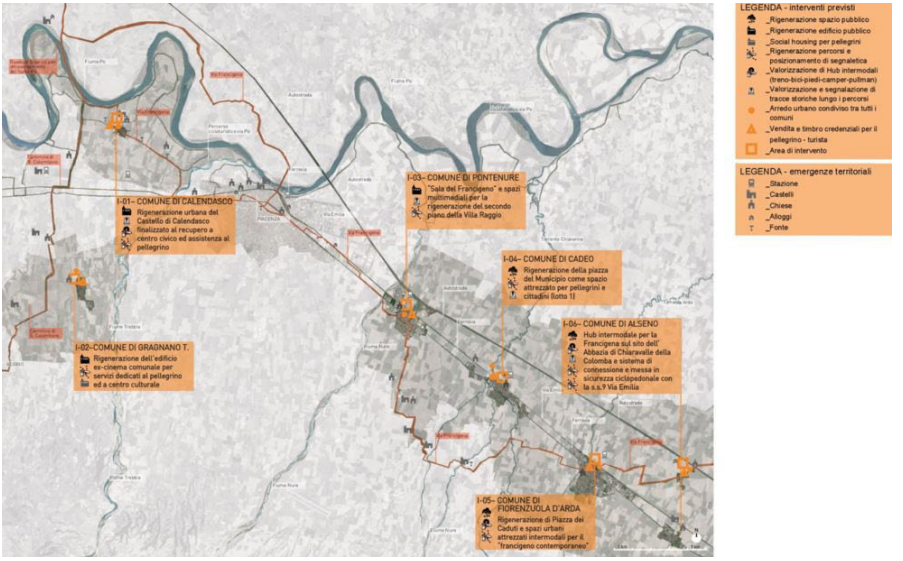


Figure 1. The Via Francigena as a territorial systemic project: the six municipalities involved whose single projects are included in a broad vision regeneration strategy are highlighted. Source: (Vito Redaelli 2018)

[2] The text of the call refers to the absence of a state-level strategy and explicitly adopts some of the principles introduced by the European Union through the Leipzig Charter of 2007 and the Toledo Declaration of 2010 (assuming the integration of policies and sustainability environment as fundamental factors for the attractiveness and competitiveness of cities) and the objectives of the European Agenda for sustainable development.

This original nucleus is in turn inserted in a first historical rectangular shape expansion that extends itself longitudinally following via Emilia, enclosed within the Roman walls on whose route the ring road of the city has been set. Blocked by the railway track, in the second post-war period, urban growth occurred mostly in the south, strongly unbalancing the city towards the hill.
An articulated road network, set on a matrix of roads parallel and perpendicular to the Via Emilia, design the historic area of Fiorenzuola; except for some streets, all road axes are quite narrow.
Instead, there are numerous spaces with a square vocation, urban value and green spaces with relational value. It is not interesting here to go into the specifics of each design solution but to illustrate the principles that generated the project experiences which are described below.

2.3. The Via Francigena as an opportunity for a linear cross-scale connection

The case study of the city of Fiorenzuola d'Arda represents an example of good practice for having participated in the aforementioned regional tender and for taking part in a grouping of six municipalities that proposed the enhancement of a territorial system and historical connection such as the via Francigena (Fig. 1). Also called via Romea, it is the set of historical routes that in the Middle Ages brought pilgrims from Canterbury to the Holy Land passing through Rome, it has united and historically and physically unites the urban agglomerations intercepted by it and, in the specific case, it is assumed the significant connector role of all the projects that each municipality has identified.
Starting from the planning policies developed after the publication of the 2000 European Landscape Convention, the landscape is

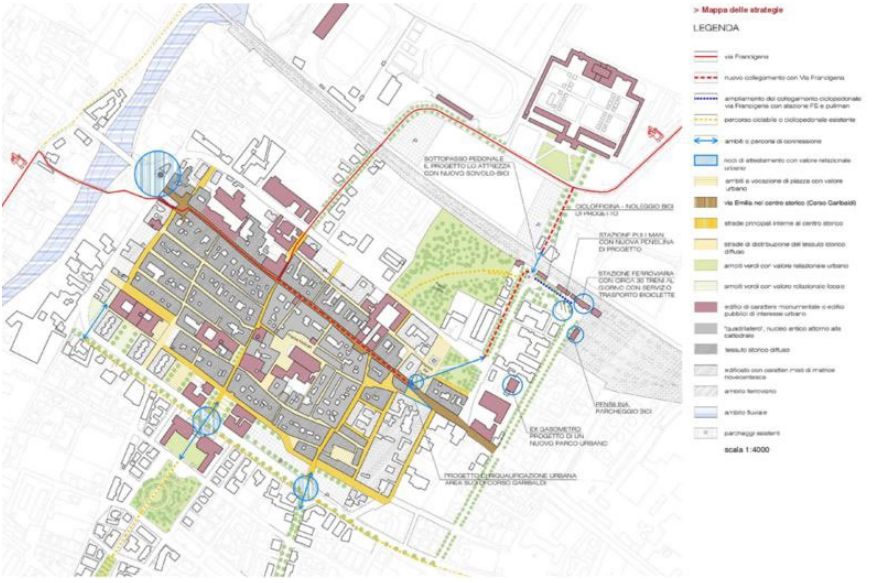


Figure 2. Map of strategies relating to Fiorenzuola d'Arda: all urban regeneration interventions are identified along the urban stretch of via Francigena. Source: (Ugolini, Varvaro 2018)

assumed among the programmatic aspects of the government of the territory.

> The Via Francigena must be structured as one of the axes of the European slow mobility network, in the idea that the corridors are not only fast mobility, but also slow mobility green ways. (...) We agree with the fact that the landscape must, in turn, be considered as one of the values of sustainability (Bettini, Marotta, Tosi 2011).

The landscape of the Via Francigena near Fiorenzuola d'Arda is particularly interesting because it touches an alternation of spaces still open in the countryside and heavily urbanized and infrastructured spaces. There are numerous architectural beauties, among which we can find the Cistercian Abbey of Chiaravalle della Colomba, near the town of Fiorenzuola, which animate the horizontal landscape of the low Emilian plain.
A strategic map is thus outlined which aims to highlight the great potential in the areas directly or indirectly linked to the Via Francigena. Specifically, in relation to Fiorenzuola d'Arda, the railway underpass is redefined as the access point of the Francigena in Fiorenzuola and the bus station, the public space in front of the railway station are redeveloped, providing them with a cycle workshop, the boulevard connecting the station and the Via Emilia is also improved. The intervention aims to enhance intermodality, as an indispensable sustainable choice identified in the broader project of strengthening and upgrading the Francigena route.
Specific occasions have been identified graphically in a dot, usually the expression of a need on the hand of the public administration, by means of a crosshatch it has been identified the area actually involved in the project actions.
It is then proposed, as it emerges from the strategic map (Fig. 2), the definition of a new urban park on the reclaimed area of the former gasometer and the redevelopment of a sequence of open spaces now disqualified and episodic, disconnected from each other, among which piazza dei Caduti takes a place. The project of the square is part of an urban design which, from via Emilia, involves the whole space in front of and behind the war memorial and leads, crossing the public garden, along the large tree-lined pedestrian and cycle path of Fratelli Cairoli boulervard, towards the railway station, the most important of the six municipalities participating in the call.
The nineteenth-century Lucca Park is also involved in this strategy, now in total abandonment, providing for its restoration and proposing it as an alternative connection between the station and the historic center.
The whole project presents via Francigena as a complex territorial system which, knots other systems at the scale of the single municipality which, in turn, strategically insert potential and critical issues to be solved. The necessary knowledge of history and its signs

Figure 3. Behind the actual town hall

Figure 4. Don Bosco school

Figure 5. Former town hall.

passes, therefore, through a dimension of cross-scale project, which, as can be seen from the actions put in place at Fiorenzuola, makes individual projects meaningful and collects the regional political invitation to structure long period topics.

2.4. Redefining the boundary between the historic center and the new expansion in Fiorenzuola d'Arda

Through the project, there have been some occasions to rethink the areas between the new urban expansion and the historic center. The request to qualify the open space behind the current town hall created the opportunity to identify and reconfigure the system of spaces overlooking the ring road that follows the Roman city walls (Fig. 3); the request for new public services within the Don Bosco school complex suggested the need to restore the city thistle to the south and to study the urban connection and the relationship between the built outside and inside the walls, pushing the sequence of spaces and urban park beyond the building (Fig. 4); the request to first place a library, then a health home inside the former town hall overlooking the axis of via Emilia has allowed us to redefine an entire urban quadrant, giving shape to the incongruous and residual open spaces, the result of planning sectorial and approximate past (Fig. 5).
The knowledge of the urban historical evolution (Fig. 6, 7, 8) together with a desire to record the complexity of the issues put in place by any changes in the status quo, has allowed us to identify spheres of influence extended to the single occasion of intervention and therefore to work on parts of the city, where open spaces take on a strategic relational role. The interpretative maps, not only historical but also investigating the architectural and urban form, the dimensions and the altimetry of the built and the ground, the green spaces, the ways of use, the critical points and, the strengths, are developed together to the design suggestions in a relationship of mutual feed.
We try to record the opportunity not to respond to the specific need with an optimal design response, but with a response that makes a reflection and obliges us to a scale and multidisciplinary discussion.

CONCLUSION

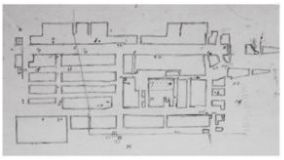
The awareness that *the urban project is structured as a dialogue with the existing, its modification and the constitution of an existing future* (Gregotti, 1993), brings with it the need to articulate that process of context historical knowledge and critical analysis that becomes a project. The analytical approach, already in the identification of the themes, structures the guidelines for a contextual reading from which the project originates. This is the teaching that comes from the work of Giancarlo De Carlo.

> Considering the environment, the city, the neighborhoods, the house not only and solely as artifacts, but rather to consider them as phenomena that make up the human experience. (De Carlo, Sichirollo, 1992)

Opposing functionalism with a reading of the use of space as *experience in all its meanings: practical, contemplative, symbolic (...)* and, proposing participation as an operational tool for drawing up plans for the city of Urbino.

> Beginning to 'know' one realizes almost at first sight, how the landscape of Urbino is rich in events, variations, subtleties, which intersect and stratify to generate a multiplicity of situations that are already memorable or can become one (...) (De Carlo, 1994)

We welcome the invitation not to give up on the interpretation of the complex nature of the urban fabric and to take it as a value, to arrive at diversification of the project capable

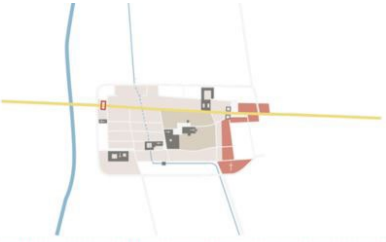


Gli isolati si spingono al di là dei confini degli assi di costruzione principali, tra cui la storica via Emilia. La città si espande a nord dell'asse storico e viene completata l'edificazione dei lotti gotici, disposti parallelamente e perpendicolarmente al castrum romano. Sono ancora ben visibili i caselli, posti alle estremità della via Emilia.

1790

Figure 6. 1790, interpretative map: the city expands beyond the historical axis of the via Emilia (yellow line) and the construction of the Gothic lots is completed, the ancient toll booths at the ends of the via Emilia remain clearly visible. Source: (Ugolini, Gabaglio, Master degree studio Politecnico di Milano 2012-13)

Verso la fine del 1800 l'espansione della città si estende oltre il casello ad est della via Emilia, andando a tangere e ad oltrepassare le mura del castrum romano. Compare il cimitero all'interno delle mura e viene interrato un tratto del canale che attraversa la città parallelo al fiume Arda.



1850

Figure 7. 1850, interpretative map: the expansion of the city extends beyond the walls of the Roman castrum, the cemetery appears within the walls and a section of the canal that crossed the city is buried, parallel to the Arda river. Source: (Ugolini, Gabaglio, Master degree studio Politecnico di Milano 2012-13)

A metà del 1900 si registra una forte espansione a macchia d'olio della città, che rimane però al di sotto del tracciato ferroviario, costruito intorno al 1870, che rappresenta tutt'ora un elemento di forte disconnessione urbana. L'espansione della zona industriale si concentra nella fascia compresa tra l'asse della via Emilia e l'asse ferroviario. Scompaiono le porte della città e l'antico sedime delle mura romane lascia spazio alla nuova circonvallazione esterna della città.

1968

Figure 8. 1968, interpretative map: in the mid-1900s there was a strong expansion which remains in the south of the railway track built in 1870, which still represents an element of strong urban disconnection. The expansion of the industrial area is concentrated in the area between the via Emilia and the railway. The city gates disappear and the ancient site of the Roman walls leaves the floor for the city's new external traffic road. Source: (Ugolini, Gabaglio, Master degree studio Politecnico di Milano 2012-13)

of grasping the richness of the stratification of history understood as vital human experience. The design experiments that have been briefly described concerning the city of Fiorenzuola d'Arda tell of the importance of facing a project never in a closed way. Whether it is a building or whether it is an open space, a street or, a square, a project is needed that, in its functions and material form, chooses the open path of relationship, dialogue, and systemic thinking never partial. In this sense and even more so in historical construction, working on the ground assumes a strategic role because it can be entrusted to it the task of establishing significant relationships between the parties.

In recent past, that of the eighties, where the non-consumption of land was already widely promoted, at least in the cultural debate, and parts of the city recovery and regeneration ware encouraged, Secchi invited to this reflection:

> (...) shift our attention: from the building to the ground, to the surface between the buildings and which cannot be denied or reduced to pure technical space. The opportunity to deal with it, the moment in which to deal with it is certainly this when the pressure for the construction of a huge amount of houses in addition to the existing ones has become perhaps lesser and, instead the pressure for the modification of the existing is strong. I maintain that it is not a matter of thinking only of modifying the use of what already exists or of replacing it with new architectures, of filling the parts of unfinished cities, but today it is also the time, if not above all, of planning the soil in a way not trivial, reductive, technical and inarticulate (Secchi 1986).

REFERENCES

Bertelli, G., Dubois, H., Mei, P., Roda, M. 2014. *Sulle tracce della via Francigena: punti di vista sullo spazio pubblico*. Rimini: Maggioli.

Bettini, V., Marotta, L., Tosi, S.S. 2011. *La Via Francigena in Italia alla ricerca del paesaggio*. Venezia: Ediciclo.

De Carli, C. 1982, *Architettura Spazio Primario*. Milano: Hoepli.

De Carlo G., 1966, *Urbino: la storia di una città e il piano della sua evoluzione urbanistica*. Padova: Marsilio

De Carlo G., Sichirollo L. (a cura di)., 1992, *Gli spiriti dell'Architettura*, Roma: Editori Riuniti

De Carlo G., 1994, *Documento programmatico Piano di Urbino*

Gregotti, V. 1991. *Dentro l'architettura*. Torino: Bollati Boringhieri.

Gregotti V., 1993, *La città visibile. Frammenti di disegno della città ordinati e catalogati secondo i principi dell'architettura della modificazione contestuale.* Torino: Einaudi

Losasso M., 2015, Rigenerazione urbana: prospettive di innovazione, in Techne *Journal of Technology for Architecture and Environment*, 10, Firenze: University press.

Riva, F. (a cura di) 2008. *Leggere la città. Quattro testi di Paul Ricoeur.* Enna: Città aperta.

Secchi, B. 1986. Progetto di suolo, in Casabella 520-21, Milano: Electa.

Tagliagambe, S. 1998. *L'albero flessibile. La cultura della progettualità*. Milano: Dunod.

Tagliagambe, S. 2005. *Le due vie della percezione e l'epistemologia del progetto*. Milano: Franco Angeli.

Winograd, T., Flores, F. 1987. *Calcolatori e conoscenza.* Milano: Mondadori.

PAPER #6.11

URBAN DESIGN STRATEGIES FOR A PROBLEMATIC, SOUTHERN MID-SIZE AMERICAN CITY

Thomas C. Sammons[a]
[a] University of Louisiana at Lafayette, Lafayette, Louisiana

ABSTRACT

Lafayette, Louisiana, is a mid-size southern city with a population of 240,000. This city thrived during the latter part of the 20th century from its oil driven economy and the university, thus making it a regional, economic center. Typical of most American cities of this size which experienced staggering and unchecked growth during this time period, Lafayette now possesses a fragmented core and blighted, traditional neighborhoods. For the past decade, the city has struggled to regenerate its urban core and traditional neighborhoods, but redevelopment efforts have been stymied by political, economic and poor policy planning decisions. The city suffers an assortment of reconstruction issues including; multiple commercial centers, inadequate zoning policies, dysfunctional planning, private property rights, favored suburban development and an anemic public transportation system.

The Community Design Workshop (CDW), a graduate studio within the School of Architecture and Design at the University of Louisiana at Lafayette, has worked with the city for the past 23 years on developing urban design strategies and economic tactics for the city's renewal. Two case studies proposed policy changes and urban design planning strategies to redevelop the city's urban core. The end goal for both projects was to renovate the single-story neighborhoods into a thriving multi- level, mixed-use redevelopment.

The recent economic downturn combined with a low tax base and a shifting political climate created an environment that has impeded the city's urban core reconstruction efforts. Possessing a clear understanding of these factors while being linked to viable urban tactics for combating these issues at a policy level along with formal and economic strategies, is the foundation of the two projects and the CDW.

INTRODUCTION

Lafayette, Louisiana is a regional hub servicing the southwestern area of the state. The Community Design Workshop (CDW), a graduate studio in the School of Architecture and Design at the University of Louisiana at Lafayette, has been working with the City of Lafayette to provide both urban strategies and economic tactics for redevelopment of the city's urban core. Two projects emerged from the graduate studios that helped identify some of the barriers and possibilities for redevelopment. The first project, Freetown, a neighborhood whose name is derived from the area where free African Americans lived and worked, is currently occupied by students and faculty, and includes a mix of commercial and industry. The CDW produced urban proposals on how to redevelop this neighborhood into a multi-story development. The second neighborhood, the Oil Center, sits adjacent to the University of Louisiana at Lafayette. This area was developed for the newly emerging oil industry in the late 50s and 60s. It housed geologists, engineers, land men and wildcatters, as well as some commercial properties and a hospital. The development of this area again was a single story, single program. The CDW made proposals and wrote an urban code to redevelop the Oil Center district into mixed-use office and housing. The City of Lafayette

recently completed its comprehensive plan which lays out strategies for large buy in collaboration from neighborhoods, businesses, and public officials. The challenge for this city and the comprehensive plan is to overcome the multitude of barriers that exist within a mid-size American city.

Figure 1. Image showing French long lots. Source: (CDW – Original to Author)

1. ORIGINS OF URBAN FORM

Lafayette, Louisiana's morphology is impacted by the French long lot. A French long lot is a special land structure that exists within Southwest Louisiana along the Mississippi River Valley (Figure 1). This agrarian structure allowed French colonists access to the river for the transport and movement of goods. Partitioning the land in this manner provided main routes to the interior and created a long, thin land organization. The long-lot system divides large land acreages into long narrow strips. Each long lot had a narrow frontage on the river only 5 to 8 arpents wide but extended as much as 40 to 60 arpents deep. Cities along the Vermilion River and the Bayou Teche are organized according to this morphological structure which impacts the urban form. This urban form facilitates travel perpendicular to the bayou but becomes problematic when traveling parallel to the river. Contemporary road systems are required to cross these individual land boundaries. Jean Mouton laid out the French long lots in 1821, and the city's original 20 block position is far inland and aligned on the North-South Axis or the national grid. (Figure 2). Lafayette's early development and expansion was forced within the existing organization to the French long lots. "In the beginning, most businesses were located near the church or the courthouse or between the two. Lee Avenue later cut diagonally across the southeastern part of the map, and the cross streets and lot lines were reoriented to that axis…After the railroad tracks were laid northeast of town, streets in new additions were laid out to run parallel or perpendicular

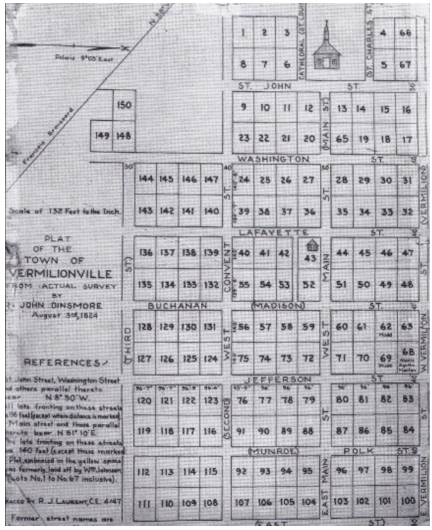


Figure 2. map showing Lafayette original 20 block position. Source: (Keisel, 2007)

to the tracks" (Kiesel 2007, 12). Lafayette's success also contributed to Mouton securing the parish church and then establishing Lafayette as the parish seat of Lafayette Parish. In 1887, the urban form was impacted by the southern intercontinental railroads which came through the City of Lafayette. The railroad forced an economic-driven shift to the city grid (Figure 3). The city's grid shift toward the railroad is an effect of landowners developing around the infrastructure. The railroad provided a corridor to connect industry to bring resources beyond the Mississippi River. Another bearing on the urban development happened in the late 19th century when the University of Louisiana at Lafayette was sought by several cities of the area, but the City of Lafayette instituted a tax to buy the land and then donated it to the state for the establishment of the University. Since the first graduating class in 1904, the University has continued to operate as an economic engine for this area. "Higher education came to Lafayette in 1900 when the Board of Trustees decided to locate Southwestern Louisiana Industrial Institute there. The Girard family gave 25 acres of land, local citizens pledged $8000 in cash, and the parish passed a two-mill property tax to support the school. Local banks offered loans totaling $10,000 against the proceeds of the tax, so the school could begin work immediately" (Kiesel 2007, 39).

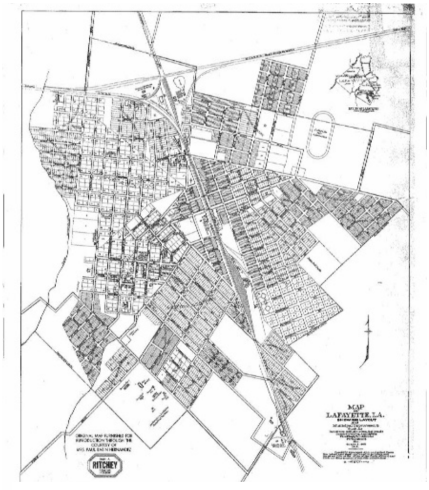


Figure 3. 1912 Map of Lafayette, LA. Source: (Dismukes, 1972)

2. SUBURBANIZATION OF A CITY

Many issues contribute to the suburbanization of Lafayette. Beginning in the 1950s through the 1970s, the United States experienced a post-war population boom. Government supported the country's infrastructure with roads, water, sewer, and electricity, thus helping to expand the American city's periphery. Lafayette was no exception. Office parks, suburbs and the American strip became common place to suburban development.

Another restriction to Lafayette's urban growth was the facilitation of the automobile. The Federal- Aid Highway Act of 1956 passed by Congress and initiated by Eisenhower, created a network of interconnected roads across the country. These main arteries led to negative consequences that penetrated the urban core of cities. The interstate emerged in Lafayette in the late sixties and I-10 was completed across the Atchafalaya Basin during the mid-1970s. The interstate shifted the economic activities to the suburban fringe. The interstate and highways became economic engines that expanded the development of cities away from the urban core. This displacement affected Louisiana cities and began the organization and emergence of suburban neighborhoods. Single-family homes encase the surrounding areas of Lafayette's urban core. "Within the overall scope of the ranch house type, an evolutionary pattern of development is evident. Primarily, both the size and complexity of the floor plan layouts increase. In fact, the house type evolves through three rather distinct phases from modest basic ranch type, on its way to the

sprawling, highly articulated ranch rambler" (Rowe 1991, 73). These subdivisions create entire communities where family incomes and demographics are almost completely similar. Suburban neighborhoods separate residential and commercial development, thus depriving the walking access for daily needs. These subdivisions mostly consist of single-family homes placed within a field of green landscape, garages that replace porches, and roads conforming to a hierarchy. Dead-end roads feed into residential streets that lead into the large collector roads to current shopping malls and strip malls hidden behind large parking lots.

Johnston Street is a major artery running through the heart of Lafayette (Figure 4). It began as a modest country highway then grew to become today's five-lane state highway. It links a series of important landmarks in Lafayette: the University of Louisiana at Lafayette campus, the Cajundome, and commercial districts along the street, including the Acadiana Mall. It is also the spine for thoroughfares that branch out to many other places throughout the city. This major artery exhibits the characteristics of most American commercial strips. With a series of object-oriented architecture placed in a field of parking lots, landscape is either miniaturized or pushed to the margins of the development while the architecture becomes a flat generic response to the automobile. Big box stores, malls, gas stations, car salons, and fast food restaurants, with a collage of signage, produced a typical suburban development that occurs throughout the United States. Acting as a connector to many important buildings and activities, Johnston Street has created extreme congestion which is one of the major problems with the existing condition. In addition, this major thoroughfare lacks a presence as a connector for a community that has a unique history and a rich and vibrant culture.

Figure 4. Johnston Street Lafayette, LA.

3. BARRIERS

The barriers to redevelopment in a mid-size American city are numerous but can be categorized into physical, bureaucratic, policy, economic, and political. The physical barriers to redevelopment can be seen in the city's urban form. This urban form was generated by the land division of the French long lots. This land pattern is useful in an agrarian economy with transportation on the river, but with established neighborhoods and developed road networks, this land pattern is problematic. The vision for this early town was somewhat limited with the original design of 1821 with just 20 blocks and limited space for right of way for roads and streets. Additionally, the lot sizes were average 40 feet by 80 feet making it difficult for contemporary redevelopment. These modest lot sizes can be seen in the 1912 plan for the City of Lafayette (Figure 3). From a bureaucratic point of view, until recently, the city was being regulated by an outdated zoning code based on suburban principles. Pyramidal zoning separates land use, institutes setbacks from the street and produces oversized parking requirements that eat up valuable land and hinder a more compact building model. The Lafayette Consolidated Government Zoning Ordinance states setbacks for the general business zoning district are, "Front- 20 feet; Side- for detached dwellings, 5 feet per side; Rear- for dwellings, 10 feet; Where lots are created

adjacent to or abutting a substandard public right-of-way, a building setback line shall be placed at a distance from the public right-of-way equal to the sum of one half of the right-of-way deficit and the zoning setback for the applicable zoning district." (Lafayette Consolidated Government 2012, 69) The setback policy which is suburban in nature excludes any mixed-use or urban buildings fronting on the public right-of-way such as sidewalks or public spaces. Administratively, the city's planning department organized its code enforcement based on the suburbanmodel. The traffic department deals with road planning and its development. The two departments rarely converse with each other and traditionally defend their turf.

With its newly completed comprehensive plan, Lafayette instituted a Unified Development Code. (Figure 5). This code replaced the old zoning ordinances and has been in place for the last fifty years. Progress has been made, particularly in the downtown, where the code is following a form-based three-dimensional model. Two new construction projects have adhered to this new code. Unfortunately, the newly elected Mayor-President has formed a task force to reopen the UDC and remove critical urban development codes in order to expedite development. "There's a regulatory aspect to this and an implementation from the administration that we need to learn how we can better serve developers, how to better serve business… Guillory said". (Welty 2020)

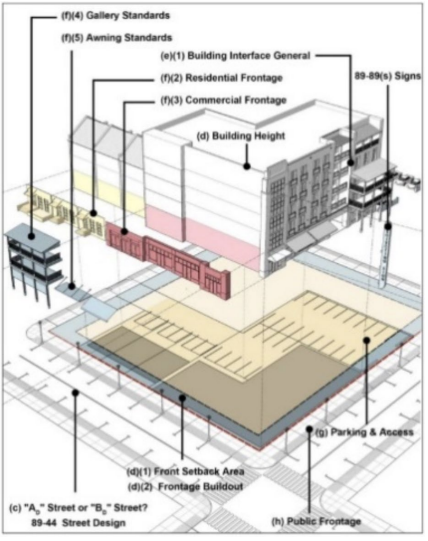


Figure 5. Unified Development Code. Source: (Lafayette Consolidated Government, 2019)

The city's most recent outgoing elected officials implemented Taxing Incremental Financing Districts (TIF). A TIF is a taxing district that has the ability to levy taxes in a designated area with approval from the State Legislature. These districts are monitored by an independent board. The tax monies can be implemented for infrastructure improvements such as electrical, roadways, sidewalks and even streetscape improvements The new Mayor-President is opposed to the economic development districts. "I want our city and parish to be known as business friendly, low tax jurisdictions that are more inviting to visitors who want to stay here and shop here," he wrote. "These taxing districts do the opposite." (Taylor 2019). This administration could stop this badly needed policy to help redevelop Lafayette's urban core.

At a state level, Louisiana has no mechanism to assemble a series of properties for urban redevelopment. Governor Kathleen Blanco's administration passed legislation that favored strong property rights over redevelopment. Political pressure applied to the city council comes from developers that do not have the skill set to build multifamily housing in an urban context and continue to only build three-bedroom family housing. The barriers for the redevelopment of Lafayette's urban core are numerous and wide ranging from physical to political. Unless some of these barriers can be overcome, urban redevelopment will be delayed and will follow the anemic pace of the last 20 years.

4. POSSIBILITIES

The City of Lafayette and the surrounding region has always enjoyed a history of creative and energetic involvement for Lafayette's redevelopment. The Chamber of Commerce and other civic groups have been hyperactive in the city's interests. These groups have been instrumental in procuring and supporting the comprehensive design. This civic process that the community has been engaged in has brought a new optimism to the city. The process is encouraging more development in the urban core and establishing an urban code. It also has been publicly discussed to reorganize the departments of planning and code revision into one streamlined department. The hope is that the plan will set some priorities for the redevelopment of the city's urban core. The University also has completed its own Master Plan for redevelopment of its campus. What is optimistic is that the University's Master Plan and the city's Comprehensive Plan are proceeding forward with an unprecedented, cooperative dialogue between the two, whereas before they acted as an independent agency making plans in isolation. The best example of this is the recent sale of the horse farm and land swap that benefited both parties for the development of a new passive park in the middle of the city. Opportunities exist to operate a hybrid condition of suburban-urban landscape in this American mid-size city. This American urban landscape is, at best, a difficult entity to read and comprehend that may be attributed to the collision of two very different city types that make up the urban condition. This condition is composed of the traditional city, and its post-industrial counterpart, the suburban city. Each has its own reading, its own properties and elements. The traditional city, with its layers of history, contains highly distinctive urban elements perceptible in its containable spaces, grids or fields, block structure, and commercial core, even if they have been fragmented by 20th century development. These elements produce a clear datum whereby one is capable of reading the city's fabric. It is within this backdrop of hybrid urban form, political and bureaucratic barriers and current economic and policy opportunities that the Community Design Workshop (CDW) has operated in Lafayette and the region in the last twenty-three years.

5. THE COMMUNITY DESIGN WORKSHOP

The School of Architecture and Design provides expertise in urban design, planning, landscape design, architecture, housing, and preservation. The Community Design Workshop (CDW), located in the School of Architecture and Design at the University of Louisiana at Lafayette has been involved with small town projects that promoted the revival of their downtown areas and neighborhoods along with large infrastructure designs for interstate highways and major arterials for Municipalities and the State of Louisiana Department of Transportation and Development. The CDW was engaged in restoration projects for small towns following Hurricanes Katrina and Rita devastation. Additionally, the CDW has completed multiple

Figure 6. Aerial of the Oil Center. Source: (CDW – Original to Author)

projects for the University of Louisiana at Lafayette. In all CDW projects, the team, which is comprised of students and faculty, propose the design, develop the construction documents and become involved with supervising the building construction The purpose of the CDW is to function as an outreach Institute to the community for urban design and provide architecture students an opportunity to gain practical experience with real world design problems.

6. TWO PROJECTS

Two projects that illustrate redevelopment possibilities are the Freetown neighborhood and Oil Center district. Freetown is an original Lafayette subdivision formerly called the Mouton Addition. Prior to the Civil War, many freed slaves settled in this subdivision, along with a heterogeneous mixture of lower- and middle-class Caucasians. Over the years Freetown, as it became known, served as a melting pot of various cultures including African, Cajun, Lebanese and Middle Eastern, Greek, Spanish and Irish. Freetown residents came together and developed their neighborhood into a strong community. Traditionally, this area has been home to university professors and their families. The other study area, referred to as the Oil Center, was developed by Maurice Heymann beginning in the 1950s through the 1970s and provided valuable office space for southwest Louisiana's emerging oil industry. (Figure 6). Originally established as a Lafayette office park, today the Oil Center is a suburban city model surrounded by housing. "The importance of the Oil Center extends beyond the oil business. The Oil Center has become a city-within-a-city, containing professional offices, retail shops, a shopping center, banks, brokerage firms, a medical clinic, florist shop, gift shops, drug stores, art galleries, and post office" (Guaranty Bank and Trust Company 1980, 78). This condition has restrained the Oil Center's horizontal expansion and has forced a more urban vertical redevelopment. The CDW hosted a series of charrettes with stakeholders for both projects where precedents of successful urban districts and neighborhoods with diverse programming were introduced. The fabric of these example urban districts called for mixed-use building typologies which allowed these districts to be more vibrant and compact. The CDW analyzed these precedents and synthesized them with the stakeholder concerns and the context of the existing districts' conditions. The CDW made impressive strides in building consensus and generating momentum amongst stakeholders and the general public regarding the redevelopment for both of these districts.

7. FREETOWN

7.1. Urban Design

Freetown's physical position between the university and the downtown has created a great need for redevelopment. Programs that would bring life to this district are a denser mixed-use fabric of housing and commercial supported by additional infrastructure of parking, pedestrian walkways, and landscape. The overall proposed plan was divided into three phases. Phase One proposed the development of four blocks at the intersection of Jefferson and McKinley Streets. Within these four blocks, a grocery store would be placed to occupy an existing building with a parking garage to extend over the roof. On the smaller block adjacent to the park, the existing industrial buildings remain but include new construction, mainly housing, and would reflect surrounding typologies. The final block proposed new construction to reflect the typologies of old warehouses and include housing, commercial, offices, and restaurants. The parking for this block would be consolidated to the block's core

thus keeping the urban edge while creating a dense street presence. Phases Two and Three continue down Jefferson Street to the downtown area and McKinley Street to the university. The redevelopment included two to three story buildings with housing, commercial, and parking. Two green spaces are strategically placed within the neighborhood offering different amenities.

Other CDW proposals presented an opportunity to connect both the University and downtown Lafayette and with the redevelopment of McKinley Street, that connection could be formed. The intersection of McKinley Jefferson Streets would become the primary node with the establishment of McKinley Park. and commercial shops on the opposite side of Jefferson Street along McKinley Street. In order to accommodate parking, three parking structures were proposed. These structures were internalized on their respective blocks and surrounded by mixed-use buildings in order to keep an active urban street front thus providing sufficient public parking for the majority of the development. The park consists of commercial and mixed-use developments surrounding a large, public green space. The northeast end of the park is home to a culturally rich development, programmed with an open farmer's market, restaurant, classrooms for culinary arts, music venue, theater, and art galleries. The other mixed-use developments incorporate cafes and retail shops that act as an extension of the park through outdoor seating. (Figure 7).

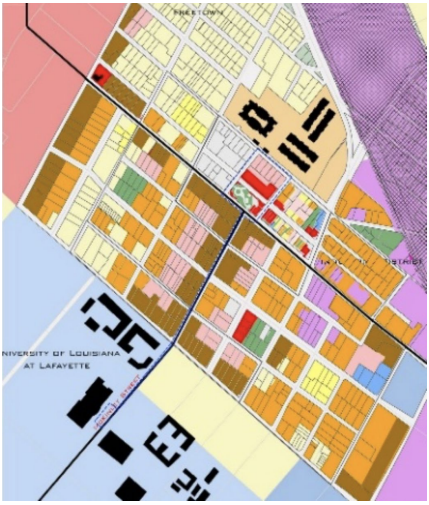


Figure 7. Mixed use growth down McKinley Street
Source: (CDW – Original to Author)

7.2. Architecture

Many of the proposals for the Freetown neighborhood took on a more urban quality along the prominent Jefferson and McKinley Streets. The architecture was kept small scale allowing it to relate to the existing neighborhood (Figure 8). The site strategy pushes itself to the sidewalk edge with parking in the back of the building. This maintains the urban edge and keeps the sidewalk activated. Along the ground floor and adjacent to the sidewalk, the building footprint carves out space for interaction with the street. These mixed-use buildings animate the street with public space for outdoor dining. Apartments are designed for the upper floors with terraces for the restaurants and the apartments. Parking was organized to the back of the buildings or tucked underneath while still being screened from the street.

Figure 8. Corner of Gen Mouton and McKinley Street.
Source: (CDW – Original to Author)

7.3. Streetscape

In order to redevelop McKinley Street and the surrounding neighborhood, a plan was generated to connect the University of Louisiana at Lafayette and downtown Lafayette through the McKinley Street Corridor. An option to create a pedestrian promenade along McKinley Street was available. Multiple schemes produced a variety of options within the promenade's plan. In urban environments perception of the street is important. In the pedestrian promenade, traffic would be diverted to peripheral streets, creating a bike path in the center bordered by landscape. Sidewalks were widened to allow for outdoor seating while balconies create an arcade for shade. The corner of McKinley and Jefferson Streets would be home to a children's playground. The overall design was a joint effort between neighboring property owners, the Lafayette Consolidated Government, and the University of Louisiana at Lafayette.

7.4. Urban Design

The urban design strategy for the Oil Center Office Park was not only to transform the overwhelming majority of its single-story/ single-use structures into mixed-use low to mid-rise buildings, but to also reverse the primacy of the automobile over the pedestrian by creating a greener and walkable community. The urban plan was forced to take into consideration that a significant public transportation system will not come into existence in the City of Lafayette and therefore, automobile access and parking would maintain its influence in all aspects of programming. The challenge of maintaining automobile access and parking, while giving primacy to the pedestrian, was further compounded by the relatively small city block sizes and the area's high groundwater table. The main parking strategy that would allow the density of the Oil Center to expand from single story to low and mid-rise buildings would focus on the creation of parking decks

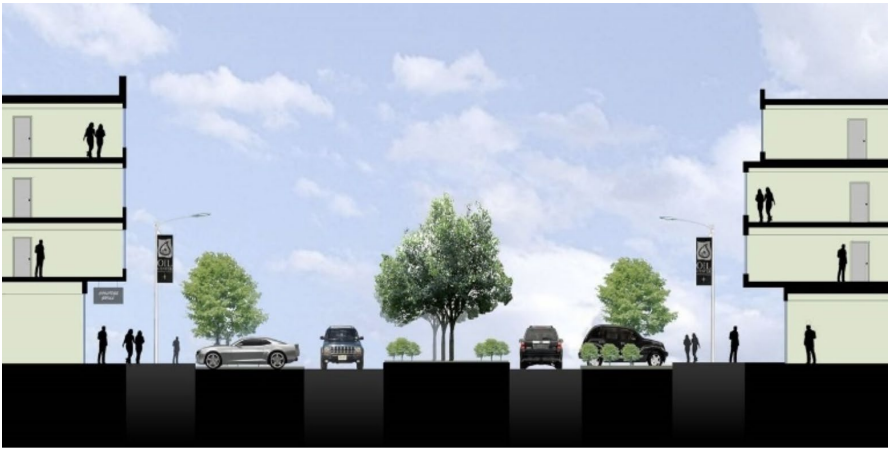


Figure 9. Coolidge Blvd Proposed Section
Source: (CDW – Original to Author)

embedded into the center of the urban blocks where each development or building would screen parking from the street and pedestrians. Additionally, a shared parking strategy for mixed-use buildings was integrated into the overall master plan. In order to capitalize on the proven value of diversified programming in the use of urban districts, the master plan offered urban buildings with commercial and/or retail space on the street level, office space on the floors above, and to be capped with residential space on the top floors.

The pedestrian urban space between the building skin and curb edge is energized by generous sidewalks and positioning the urban buildings' edge close to allow for increased commercial development on the lower floors (Figure 9). To incorporate more green space into the redevelopment, four types of green spaces were included in the master plan: urban parks, streetscapes, linear parks and a river walk. The existing boulevard landscape was redeveloped into tree-lined boulevards and streets, and the secondary streets include landscaping at the corners of the blocks. The planned extension of the existing thoroughfare to the river incorporates a linear park along the street edge, and urban parks are incorporated into the block structure in the districts. This system of parks included additional landscaping, urban furniture, lighting and benches throughout.

7.5. Urban Code

The second task facing the CDW studio was to create an urban code for the Oil Center. For mixed-use urbanism development to exist there must be a mechanism to change a suburban environment into a more vertical and compact urban environment. The CDW was able to introduce preliminary code requirements which were then tested and expanded with the CDW projects. (Figure 10). Best practices and test cases were identified and discussed at the charrettes and public meetings. Strategies for developing an urban-suburban hybrid code were chosen for the city's extreme suburban development and its dependency on the automobile. Many model codes were documented, analyzed, studied and compared including the urban code for City Place in Dallas, Texas, Transit Oriented Development Code in Austin, Texas, Buckhead Village District in Atlanta, Georgia, and the Louisiana Overlay District. Best practices and code analysis reviewed height restrictions, setbacks, floor-area ratios, parking, programming efficiencies, and proximity slopes. The projects revealed the strengths and weaknesses of the developing code. The hybrid codes strengthened and defined public space such as streets and squares. Requirements for parking placement and reduction in automobile spaces linked to programmatic and transportation needs were varied. Analysis for best practices and core elements were synthesized and reorganized to the new Overlay District. The code provided bonuses for pedestrian environments such as landscaping, bike racks, paving, public spaces, LEED certification and parking garages. These bonuses would permit a higher floor-area ratio than was otherwise allowed.

Figure 9. Coolidge Blvd Proposed Section. Source: (CDW – Original to Author)

7.6. Implementation Strategies

Public meetings and charrettes explored the issues of implementation strategies. All strategies involved developing an urban code utilizing urban design, architectural standards and economic development. Historically, the CDW has studied implementation techniques in the form of TIFs, Business Incentive Developments and Overlay Districts. A TIF District is a planning tool that supplies economic incentives to the developer and builder in redeveloping urban districts. TIF District monies can be used for a variety of infrastructure needs: roads, streetscapes, parking garages and even construction costs for new buildings.

A financial framework makes the development of a hybrid suburban-urban condition possible. Taking cues from cities such as Dallas and Lafayette itself, the Oil Center's code threads residential architecture into the existing fabric and procures success through economic stimulation. The concept of a multi-use environment dense with purpose and activity can be realized through the merger of commercial, residential, medical and other types of usage. This reinvestment in streetscape, utilities, land acquisition, parking garages and new buildings will directly enhance this area's living environment.

CONCLUSION

Lafayette, Louisiana is indeed facing challenges and barriers to the redevelopment of its urban core. The city is at a pinnacle point within their history. There is optimism that many of these barriers will be mitigated by the adopted comprehensive plan. Discussions have addressed the reorganization of the planning and transportation departments to become more streamlined and updated with a contemporary code. The other great strength for the city of Lafayette is that the creative class has been instrumental in a public discussion of a true urban form and traditional neighborhoods. Of course, support from

the University and the Community Design Workshop facilitates a public discussion on architecture that identifies opportunities within the city and advances urban design principles. The CDW goals have always been to engage the public in its design process, how student learning benefits both the student and the public, and the development of the design.

REFERENCES

Dismukes, J. Philip "Chapter Four: Reconstruction." The Center: *A History of the Development of Lafayette*, Louisiana. City of Lafayette, 1972. p *34*.

Guaranty Bank and Trust Company. "People and Oil: Lafayette Counts Its Most Important Assets." *Lafayette: Its Past People and Progress*. Baton Rouge, LA: Moran Publishing, 1980, p 78.

Kiesel, Jean S. "The Early Years." *Lafayette*. Charleston, SC: Arcadia Pub., 2007. p 12 and 39.

Lafayette Consolidated Government Planning, Zoning, and Codes Department. *Zoning Codes*. Lafayette, LA, 2012, 69

McElfresh, Amanda. "Lafayette Economy: Strength in Data." *The Daily Advertiser,* 20 May 2012.

Persac, Nicholas. "Expert:: TIF Districts Hurt Economies, Corrupt Politicians." *The Daily Advertiser*, 1 July 2011

Rowe, Peter G. "Houses in Gardens." *Making a Middle Landscape*. Cambridge, MA: MIT, 1991, p. 73.

Sammons, Thomas C. *ReEnvisioning the Oil Center: Transitioning from Suburban Development to a Multi-Use Neighborhood*. University of Louisiana at Lafayette: Lafayette, LA, 2015, p 3.

Taylor, Claire. "Incoming Mayor-President Josh Guillory Opposes Six Proposed Taxing Districts." *The Acadiana Advocate*, 16 December 2019.

Welty, Chris.,"Mayor-President Josh Guillory looking to revamp Unified Development Code.". KATC.com, Published: January 22, 2020. https:/www.katc.com/news/local-news/Lafayette-parish/mayor-president

PAPER #6.12

GREEN BOOK IN ARIZONA: INTERSECTING URBAN HISTORY, HERITAGE, AND PLANNING

Clare Robinson[a], Arlie Adkins[a]
[a] University of Arizona, Tucson, Arizona

ABSTRACT

The Negro Motorist Green Book published between 1936 and 1964 steered middle-class African American travelers toward businesses that would serve them during racial segregation. Although few of the businesses listed in the *Green Book* are extant in Arizona, the neighborhoods that once hosted businesses evidenced alternate experiences of travel in a state well-known for its tourism. Many of these historical conditions remain un-researched by urban historians and architects. This paper integrates methods in architectural history, planning, and preservation practice to describe and analyze the material and social characteristics of the neighborhoods in Arizona's two largest cities, Tucson and Phoenix. The paper uses archival material, fire insurance maps, aerial photography, and census data to examine Black tourism and argues that multi-faceted and intersecting material, economic, and social conditions combined to create segregated ethnic environments that have largely been erased physically or through processes of displacement and gentrification. The study reveals that the neighborhoods home to Green Book businesses were materially poor at mid-century, built inexpensively of wood or unfired adobe, yet they also contained vibrant social and economic institutions, such as Chinese grocery stores, Mexican churches, schools, and clubs. Thus, as motels, tourist homes, and restaurants opened doors to Africa American travelers, these travelers synthesized contrasting experiences: the stereotypical images of mid-century automobile tourism and cowboy culture; modern interstate highways; and the diverse material and social realities of the urban environments in which Black travelers were most welcome. Remaining portions of the neighborhoods are now gentrified, housing affluent residents or mainstream economic and civic institutions and activities. This study of Arizona's urban Green Book neighborhoods thus illuminates the past ethnic and racial mixture of neighborhoods; the understudied outcomes of urban renewal and gentrification; and issues pertinent to the preservation of neighborhoods that have undergone significant social and economic transformation.

KEYWORDS

Urban renewal; historic preservation; African American travel.

INTRODUCTION

The Negro Motorist Green Book, created by the New York City postal worker Victor Green, was a travel guide for African Americans in the United States. Although published for nearly three decades under different names with special editions about air and international travel, the purpose and format of the book remained unchanged: businesses listed by state and city helped Black Americans travel with greater ease during the final decades of legalized racial segregation and discrimination. What appeared in *The Green Book* came recommended by travelers, select companies, and US institutions and with careful editorial oversight (*The Negro*

Motorist Green Book 1940, 4). Thus, by printing only a few paid advertisements and listing Black-friendly businesses by state and city, *The Green Book* not only steered African American travelers toward welcoming hotels, restaurants, and services, but also represented first-hand knowledge of local places. With information garnered by travelers navigating less familiar social and material environments, *The Green Book* provided a service as it evidenced the racial conditions of cities during the mid-twentieth century.

Scholarship concerning *The Green Book* examines the travel guide itself alongside Black migration and tourism in the United States (Taylor 2020; Kennedy 2013; Hall 2015). These studies consider North America as a whole, or emphasize the South, where racial segregation was most visible. Other studies analyze urban renewal's impact on cities, giving attention to the ethnic, poor, and segregated neighborhoods of metropolitan areas after World War II. Although numerous, few of these studies focus on the Southwestern states (Fairbanks 2014; Otero 2010). This paper builds upon extant scholarship by zooming into a single state and two of its cities to analyze the location of *Green Book* businesses; ethnic and racial neighborhoods; transportation routes; and the issues pertinent to urban renewal, gentrification, and the preservation of neighborhoods that have undergone significant social and economic transformation.

Arizona and the cities of Phoenix and Tucson present unique historical circumstances relevant to contemporary preservation practices and planning. Once part of New Spain and Mexico, the history of the territory and state includes Native American settlements, Spanish colonization, and modern economic expansion through ranching, mining, railroad, and road. Moreover, the state's landscape of mountains, canyons, forests, deserts, and seasonal rivers, and the harsh climate framed the experience of Arizona's diverse population, which according to the 1940 tour book, *Arizona: A State Guide*, hovered at 50% Hispanic in Tucson and 10% in Phoenix, with whites, Blacks and other races comprising the rest.[1] The vast, rugged landscape, climate, population growth, and diversity of the state amounted to a unique set attributes that differed from many other US areas. Thus as motels, tourist homes (similar to bed and breakfasts), and restaurants appeared in *The Green Book*, African American travelers in Arizona would have synthesized contrasting experiences: modern national highways; cowboy culture; Mexican food; Native American and Spanish Colonial architecture; racial discrimination; and the diverse material and social realities of Arizona's towns and cities. In other words, the complexity of Arizona's racial, ethnic and political past, and experiences of racial discrimination in the US, challenge straightforward examination of tourism, ethnic neighborhoods, and urban renewal.

1. METHODS OF RESEARCH AND ANALYSIS

This paper integrates methods in architectural and urban history with contemporary planning and preservation practices to describe and analyze the material and social characteristics of the neighborhoods with *Green Book* listings in Arizona's largest cities Tucson and Phoenix. First, the research used various archival sources, including all Arizona businesses listed in every edition of *The Negro Motorist Green Book,* Sanborn fire insurance maps of Phoenix and Tucson released in 1948 and 1949, historic aerial photography, state highways and railroad lines extant in 1940,

[1] Writers' Program of the Work Projects Administration in the State of Arizona. *Arizona, a State Guide.* American Guide Series. New York: Hastings House, 1940, pp218, 254 describes the racial and ethnic makeup of Arizona by city. Elsewhere this source states one third of the state's population was Native American and Mexican (p6).

Home Owners Loan Corporation (HOLC) home security maps (i.e., redline maps) and urban renewal districts from the mid-twentieth century. Additionally, census data from 1960 through the present contributed to the context of each city. Then, archival material was combined in GIS to spatialize Black tourism in Phoenix and Tucson. Next, neighborhoods with numerous businesses in Phoenix and Tucson were documented and described using photographs of historic properties, Sanborn fire insurance maps, and windshield surveys of extant buildings. Finally, these documents were analyzed spatially and materially for social, racial, and economic conditions.

2. GREEN BOOK NEIGHBORHOODS

Touring the United States and Arizona in the 1940s required knowledge and planning, especially if you were Black (Monahan 2016). *The Green Book* was first published just a decade after the Federal Aid Highway Act, signed into law by Calvin Coolidge, required a system or numbered highways. These paved US Routes crisscrossed Arizona and connected small and large cities, including Yuma, Phoenix, Flagstaff, the Grand Canyon, Prescott, Tucson, Bisbee and Douglas. These routes also served as important transportation links for what is now referred to as the "second great migration," which saw an exodus of 1.5 million African Americans from the South to industrial centers in the Midwest and Northeast as well as to western cities including Phoenix, Los Angeles, San Diego, San Francisco, and Oakland (Price-Spratlen, 2008; Tiagi, 2015). Other established transportation routes included rail and bus routes as well air travel in Phoenix, Tucson, and Douglas. With great distances between cities and settlements, standard tour books of Arizona recommended travelers carry water, gasoline, and layers of clothing to prepare for the long stretches of highway without services and for the daily temperature swings.[2] The open road, however, was not egalitarian (Seiler, 2006). Knowledge of local Green Book businesses helped Black travelers avoid discrimination and violence (Bottone, 2020).

Multiple highways linked numerous cities with *Green Book* businesses, but the most listings appeared in Tucson and Phoenix and situated on or near US Route 80. This route connected Arizona to southern California and New Mexico, and led travelers through the various landscapes of Southern Arizona. The neighborhoods with *Green Book* businesses were spaces of social, architectural, and urban encounters. According to Sanborn maps, the urban neighborhoods were materially poor, built inexpensively of wood or unfired adobe, yet they also contained vibrant social and economic institutions, such as Chinese grocery stores, Mexican churches, schools, and clubs. These various social and economic conditions contributed to the separation of ethnic neighborhoods in each city, but more important here were the characteristics of the neighborhoods and the physical and social environments traveling African Americans faced, which differed somewhat between Phoenix and Tucson.

2.1. Phoenix

Of the forty-eight businesses listed between 1939 and 1964, *Green Book* businesses in Phoenix resided in one of three areas. Most were located east of downtown on either Jefferson or Washington Streets in the city's historic African American neighborhood south of US Route 80 and north of the rail yard. The first listings in this neighborhood included two restaurants, two service stations, one tourist home, four motels, and a beauty parlor. After World War II, eighteen new businesses

[2] For travel guides, see the Writers' Program of the Work Projects Administration in the State of Arizona. *Arizona, a State Guide.* American Guide Series. New York: Hastings House, 1940, ppXIX-XXI. Locke, Harry. *Arizona Good Roads Association Illustrated Road Maps and Tour Book [1913].* Los Angeles, California: Printed by Frank E. Garbutt Company, 1913. Browne, J. Ross. *A Tour through Arizona*. 1864-1864.

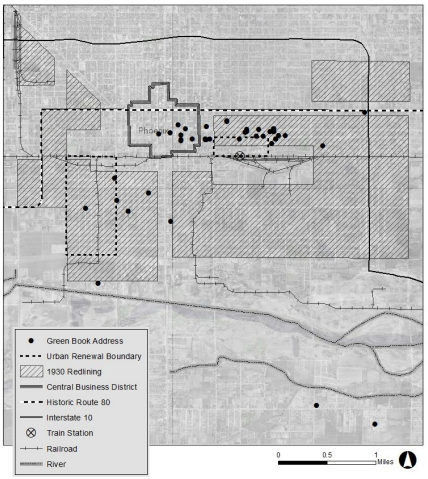


Figure 1. Phoenix Green Book businesses mapped with aerial imagery, historic Route 80, Interstate 10, railroad lines and train station. (Source: data compiled in GIS by Author 1+2 and RA1)

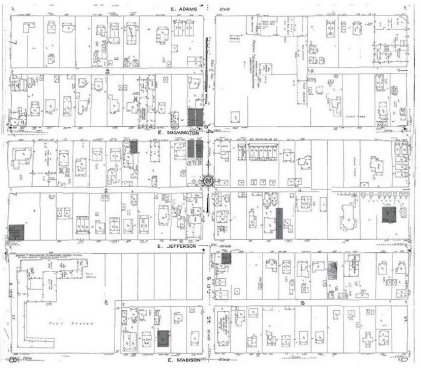


Figure 2. Select Green Book businesses in Phoenix on Jefferson and Washington Streets visualized on Sanborn maps. (Source: Sanborn, Author1, RA1)

appeared in *The Green Book*, increasing the number of restaurants and tourist homes. Although some businesses moved and disappeared from the travel book, the spatial patterns of Green Book businesses in Phoenix remained clustered together to form a clear pattern of African American tourism in Phoenix (Figure 1).

Arizona's 1940 state guide describes areas of the historic Black (and Mexican) neighborhood as the "shack town" of Phoenix, but Sanborn maps evidence a diverse working-class neighborhood (*Arizona: a State Guide* 1940, 218). Within four blocks, travelers could find a service station, a motel, numerous restaurants, and a beauty parlor as well as a Mexican Church, a Black Church, the Urban League, and the Booker T. Washington Elementary school (Figure 2). The institutions and commercial enterprises illustrated established architecture for social and economic activities and a mixture of African American and Mexican residents. Travelers to these areas would have found patterns of urban development set on a grid, with storefronts generally facing the street and built to the street's edge and dwellings set back from the street and sidewalk. Moreover, tourist homes and motels typically had an older dwelling near the street and a row of small dwellings near the alley. These street-scale urban patterns and the neighborhoods hosting businesses friendly toward African Americans suggest a breadth and diversity of economic activities in central Phoenix that would change by the late 1960s, in part through processes of urban renewal.

2.2. Tucson

In Tucson, *Green Book* businesses resided in one of three neighborhoods. The first businesses to appear, however, were located in either the historic African American neighborhood now called Dunbar Springs, which was north of downtown and the railroad line, or El Barrio Libre, a neighborhood immediately south of downtown now called The Barrio. Later listings for motels were located further south on the Benson Highway, also known as US Route 80. At a glance, the Tucson businesses presented to Green Book

travelers between 1939 and 1964 amounted to only two restaurants, three tourist homes, one service station, and three motels. In any given year, only a few businesses appeared in the book, meaning that the businesses either came and went or opened later. Although few in number, the businesses evidenced a pattern of African American tourism in Tucson in three distinct neighborhoods over time (Figure 3).

Platted at the beginning of the twentieth century, Dunbar Springs presented travelers an established neighborhood that by 1948 was peppered with African-American churches, Chinese grocery stores, service stations, and schools. Two tourist homes, for example, operated within walking distance of six established churches and several corner stores. Nearby stood a gas station and many automobile repair services. The diversity of uses amounted to a diversity of architectural style, building materials, and urban conditions. Set on a grid, bungalows made wood of wood and built on stone foundations, stood back from the street. Other dwellings made of adobe stood at the edges of streets or alleys to suggest well-defined public right-of-ways. Corner stores met the sidewalk and defined intersections. Taken together, the neighborhood presented a tight-knit urban neighborhood with local businesses, churches, and accommodations to both locals and visitors.

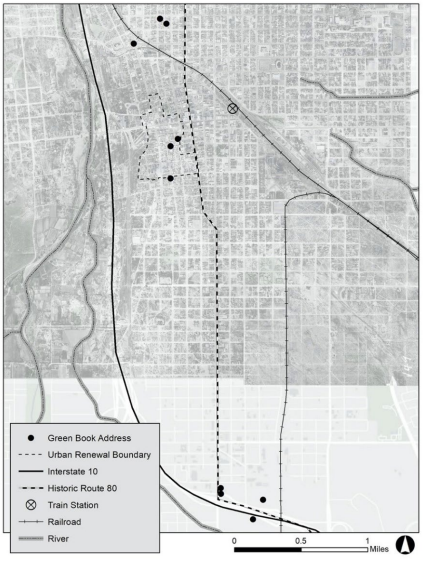


Figure 3. Tucson's Green Book businesses mapped with aerial imagery, historic Route 80, Interstate 10, railroad lines, train station and mid-twentieth century urban renewal boundaries. (Source: data compiled in GIS by Author1+2, RA2 and RA!)

An area just south of downtown Tucson, referred to locally as the Bario or La Calle, was the center of Mexican Tucson (Otero, 2010). But during the mid-twentieth century it also housed many Chinese and Black residents. Tour books suggested the Church of San Augustin, and the Temple of Music and Art, the Carnegie Library, and Amory Park as nearby tourist attractions (*Arizona: a State Guide 1940,* 259). Travelers utilizing *The Green Book* would find the Criterion Rooms one half block from Meyer Street, the main business corridor of the neighborhood where two *Green Book* restaurants and numerous other stores stood. Unlike Dunbar Springs, structures in the neighborhood were almost exclusively made of adobe and followed the urban patterns of Mexico and New Spain, with some likely dating to Tucson's pre-Gadsen Purchase history as a Mexican settlement. The thick exterior walls of buildings defined property lines, hid private courtyards, and formed a well-defined public right-of-way (Otero, 2010). With the neighborhood's urban density, dirt streets, and adobe architecture, mid-century Anglo residents of Tucson viewed the area as a poor ethnic enclave, which similar to many such areas in other cities in the US, soon fell victim to the forces of urban renewal during the 1960s and 1970s (Gomez-Novy 2003; Otero 2010).

Unlike these older parts of Tucson, the third area of Tucson that housed a number of motels listed in the Green Book represented the era of modern automobile travel. Sited adjacent to the highway, accommodations offered parking spaces, air-conditioned rooms with direct access to the outside, and a common garden or pool area. These *Green Book* motels mirrored the mid-century motor court, which by the mid-twentieth century was a national typology (Jakle and Sculle, 2011). All three of Tucson's *Green Book* motels stood on route 80 south of town near the postwar suburbs populated by a significant number of Tucson's African Americans residents (US Census, 1960). Despite their standard, modern convenience, the Green Book motels south of Tucson contrasted with the dozens of motels clustered along the celebrated and better preserved Miracle Mile (Clinco, 2017). None of the accommodations found along the Miracle Mile were ever listed in the Green Book.

Important to Tucson's history was how the pattern of African American *Green Book* businesses changed over time. The earliest *Green Book* editions listed a single tourist home and a gas station in Dunbar Springs, as well as two restaurants and the Criterion Rooms in the Barrio. In later editions, the businesses listed in the Barrio disappeared to be replaced by another tourist home in Dunbar Springs and three motels south of town. The shift evidenced urban, economic, and social factors, and the tastes of Black travelers reporting back to Victor Green. The Criterion Rooms, for example, stood near "Gay Alley," a street known for prostitution. The more reputable Veterans of Foreign Wars building was nearby, but Black travelers may have found the conditions of the Criterion Rooms distasteful, particularly if veterans were familiar with the Mountain View Black Officers Club at Fort Huachuca. Moreover, the motels south of town presented travelers options for modern, standard, and convenient automobile tourism.

3. URBAN RENEWAL AND GENTRIFICATION

Green Book locations in Tucson and Phoenix were in neighborhoods that have largely been erased through processes of segregation, racialized disinvestment, and, beginning in the 1950s and 1960s, physical displacement and gentrification. Notably, Phoenix and Tucson *Green Book* locations existed almost exclusively in areas identified as either "hazardous" by HOLC's notorious red line mortgage risk maps or within zones designated as slums targeted with clearance through federally supported urban renewal programs.

3.1. Phoenix

Phoenix best illustrates the impact on *Green Book* locations of an overlapping mesh of racialized policies and practices that, beginning in the 1930s, denied Black and Hispanic neighborhoods investment and stability and then used neighborhood conditions resulting from that disinvestment as justification for slum clearance in the 1950s and 1960s (Figure 1). The area just north of Union Station and the rail yard, which contained the majority of Phoenix *Green Book* listings was described in HOLC maps as follows:

> "In the Negro section are some very good homes, considering their occupancy by colored people. Other houses in the area are cheap. There is within this area a mixed occupancy, including Mexicans, foreigners, etc."

Another area with a cluster of *Green Book* listings was described as "very ragged, occupied by Mexicans, Negroes and the low class of white people." Homeowners or would be home owners in areas deemed hazardous, largely due to the racial and ethnic makeup of inhabitants, could be denied mortgages and insurance and these areas

were often avoided by businesses such as grocery stores (Rothstein, 2017). The result was systematic, race-based disinvestment in these areas, even as a post-war housing boom benefitted homeowners elsewhere. Poor housing conditions resulting from this disinvestment was then used as justification for slum clearance efforts in the 1950s and 1960s, spurred by the 1949 Housing Act which provided federal funding for identifying and clearing blighted areas, largely in central city neighborhoods.

3.2. Tucson

Tucson was not redlined, but the traditionally Mexican American parts of the central city, which contained half of Tucson's *Green Book* listings, were labeled as blighted and cleared through the Pueblo Center Urban Renewal District in the 1960s (Figure 3). In her book about this particular urban renewal project, Otero (2010) describes a common pattern of systematic disinvestment in first half of the 20th Century followed decades later by efforts to use the results of that disinvestment to justify labeling the area as blighted in order to clear it for redevelopment.

3.3. Different displacement patterns since 1960

Nationally, about 80% of residents displaced through urban renewal were Black (Nelson & Ayers, 2020). Of the 1,223 families displaced through urban renewal in Phoenix between 1950 and 1966, 59% were families of color. This figure likely represents displaced Black families, as the U.S. Census did not include a "Spanish origin" or Hispanic until 1970. In Tucson, 1,007 families were displaced beginning in 1958 to make way for new government buildings, a convention center, hotel, and parking lots. Eighty-two percent of families were white, which likely consisted largely of Hispanic/Latino residents.

The Black populations in central Phoenix and central Tucson, areas where *Green Book* listings concentrated, has dropped since 1960. In Phoenix, the Black share of the population in these areas was 31% in 1960. This share dropped to 14% in 2000 but has remained steady from 2000 to 2018. In Tucson, the Black share of the population in central Tucson was 22% in 1960 and has continued to drop through the decades, with 4% in 2018 (Figure 4).

While the Black population of central Phoenix and Tucson declined, one key difference is evident in the data. The decline in Black population of central Phoenix occurred at a time when the overall population of central Phoenix declined at a similar rate (from just over 30,000 in 1960 to about 16,000 in 2018), largely due to physical displacement resulting from the construction of freeways and the expansion of the central business district, including office buildings, civic buildings, and sports facilities as Phoenix grew into what is now the fifth largest city in the United States. The areas of central Tucson that historically had sizable Black populations have grown in population since 1960 (from roughly 16,000 to just over 20,000) even as the Black population has dwindled from 22 percent to 4 percent. With the exception of the Pueblo Center Urban Renewal District just south of downtown other areas with historic Black populations, including several *Green Book* locations remain physically intact.

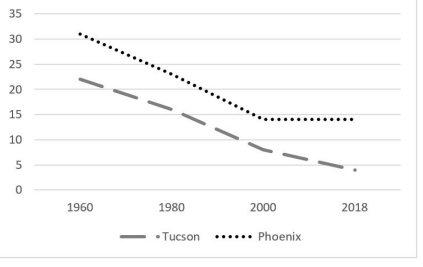


Figure 4. Black share of the population in central Tucson and Phoenix between 1960 and 2018 (Source: census data compiled from Social Explorer by author2).

CONCLUSION

This study of the locations of Arizona's urban *Green Book* listings illuminates the past ethnic and racial mixture of urban neighborhoods as well as co-occurring practices and legacies of racialized mortgage financing and displacement through urban renewal. *Green Book* listings, viewed together with HOLC mortgage security maps, Sanborn fire insurance maps, and urban renewal documents, provide a snapshot of African American spaces in Arizona cities during the early-highway, pre- and immediately post-war period. By viewing demographic and physical changes in these locations we begin to untangle a complex web of racialized policy, market, and physical interventions that have transformed these places in subsequent decades.

From the perspective of historic preservation, the temporal character of *Green Book* businesses, and the demographic changes within neighborhoods, present challenges. Current residents, who tend to write the place-based histories, no longer represent past residents; the businesses serving African Americans have left or changed; and contemporary Black travelers tour differently (Lawrence-Zuniga 2016). The conservation of districts and buildings must not only confront these absences and changes but also address the reality of past racial and ethnic diversity (Robinson, 2017). From the perspective of planning, legacies of segregation, displacement, and erasure – and their lasting economic impacts – are still very much at the fore of community conversations about contemporary planning decisions. In Tucson, for example, past urban renewal efforts have entered into conversations about transportation and other neighborhood investments in communities concerned with ongoing processes of underinvestment and gentrification (Ingram et al., 2017). This paper provides the context necessary for the work of planners, preservationists, and architects to benefit from the documentation and analysis of complex histories of race, urban renewal, and displacement.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This research has been supported by the work of RA3, RA1, and RA2 and a Grant.

REFERENCES

Belasco, Warren J. *Americans on the Road: From Autocamp to Motel,* 1910 -1945. 1979. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Bottone E. 2020. "Please Mention the Green Book:" *The Negro Motorist Green Book* as Critical GIS. In: Travis C., Ludlow F., Gyuris F. (eds) Historical Geography, GIScience and Textual Analysis. *Historical Geography and Geosciences.* Springer, Cham.

Clino, Demion. 2017. *Miracle Mile Historic District*, National Register of Historic Places Registration Form, Revised August 2017, City of Tucson Historic Preservation Office, https://www.tucsonaz.gov/historic-preservation (accessed September 13, 2020).

Fairbanks, Robert B. 2014. "The War on Slums in the Southwest Public Housing and Slum Clearance in Texas, Arizona, and New Mexico, 1935-1965." *Urban Life, Landscape, and Policy*. Philadelphia: Temple University Press.

Digital Scholarship Lab, 2020. "Renewing Inequality," American Panorama, ed. Robert K. Nelson and Edward L. Ayers, accessed February 27, 2020, https://dsl.richmond.edu/panorama/renewal/#view=0/0/1&viz=cartogram.

Gomez-Novy, Juan, and Stefanos Polyzoides. 2003. "A Tale of Two Cities: The Failed Urban Renewal of Downtown Tucson in the Twentieth Century." *Journal of the Southwest* 45, no. 1/2: 87-119.

Hall, M. 2015). "The negro traveller's guide to a Jim Crow South: Negotiating racialized landscapes during a dark period in United States cultural history, 1936–1967. *Postcolonial Studies*, 17(3), 1-13.

Ingram, Maia, Arlie Adkins, Krista Hansen, Vanessa Cascio, and Evren Somnez. 2017. "Sociocultural perceptions of walkability in Mexican American neighborhoods: implications for policy and practice." *Journal of Transport & Health* 7.

Jakle, John A., and Keith A. Sculle. 2011. *Remembering Roadside America: Preserving the Recent Past as Landscape and Place*. Univ. of Tennessee Press.

Kennedy, R., Alderman, Derek H., Brewer, Jennifer, Crawford, Thomas, & Hapke, Holly. 2013. *Automobility, Hospitality, African American Tourism, and Mapping Victor H. Green's "Negro Motorist Green Book",* ProQuest Dissertations and Theses.

Lawrence-Zuniga, Denise. *Protecting Suburban America: Gentrification, Advocacy and the Historic Imaginary*. 1st ed. 2016.

Monahan, M. 2016. "The Green Book: Safely navigating Jim Crow America." *The Green Bag,* 20(1), 43-80.

The Negro Motorist Green Book, New York: Victor H. Green, 1940.

Otero, Lydia R. 2010. *La Calle: Spatial conflicts and urban renewal in a Southwest city.* University of Arizona Press.

Price-Spratlen, Townsand. 2008. "Urban destination selection among African Americans during the 1950s great migration." *Social Science History* 32, no. 3: 437-469.

Robinson, Clare. 2017. "Unrepressing Class to Reinterpret the Tradition of Midcentury Modern Architecture and Its Preservation in Tucson, Arizona." Traditional Dwellings and Settlements Review 29, no. 1: 21-34.

Rothstein, Richard. 2017. *The color of law: A forgotten history of how our government segregated America*. Liveright Publishing.

Seiler, Cotten. 2006. 'So That We as a Race Might Have Something Authentic to Travel By': African American Automobility and Cold-War Liberalism. *American Quarterly,* 58(4), 1091-1117.

Taylor, Candacy. 2020. *Overground Railroad: The Green Book and the Roots of Black Travel in America.* New York, NY: Abrams, Inc.

Tiagi, Raaj. 2015. "Occupational mobility of Black migrants in the West during the 1950s." *Labor History* 56, no. 1: 58-68.
United States Commission on Civil Rights. 1962. *Hearings before the United States Commission on Civil Rights, Phoenix, Arizona, February 3, 1962*. Washington DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.
Writers' Program of the Work Projects Administration in the State of Arizona. 1940. *Arizona, a State Guide*. American Guide Series. New York: Hastings House.

PAPER #6.13

THE EVOLUTION OF THE SPANISH BUILDING CODES: AN OVERVIEW FROM THE SEISMIC DESIGN PERSPECTIVE

Luisa Basset-Salom[a], Arianna Guardiola-Víllora[a]
[a]Department of Continuous Mechanics and Theory of Structures, Universitat Politècnica de València, Spain

ABSTRACT

When assessing an architectural building, it is essential to know not only in which period it was designed but also which constructive recommendations and technical standards were at force at that very moment.
This information is a must when the aim of the analysis is to use consistent techniques and materials in the retrofitting or repair process, but it is also needed with regards to define the structural and constructive quality and the seismic response in the occurrence of an earthquake.
This paper establishes seven different constructive periods for the last 100 years, considering the evolution of the construction techniques and the corresponding Spanish building codes, evaluating the influence of the legislative framework in the quality of the materials, the design and execution of the structures and the consideration of the seismic loads in the analysis.
For that purpose, not only the legal framework has been analysed considering the date in which every document has been approved and published, but also the transition periods in which different codes were in force. Prescriptions and compulsory conditions have been compared discussing improvements in the proposed constructive details and calculation parameters.
Finally, a proposal about how to consider the influence of the constructive periods in the seismic vulnerability assessment has been included.

KEYWORDS

Spanish building codes; constructive periods; seismic design; architectural buildings; retrofitting.

INTRODUCTION

The Iberian Peninsula shows low to moderate seismicity (Capote 2011) with minor earthquakes, due to the convergence of African and Eurasian plates. Occasionally, earthquakes of catastrophic consequences may occur in the future with a foreseeable maximum magnitude of around 7. The most destructive earthquakes that affected the Iberian Peninsula in the past occurred before the 20th century (Martínez 2003). Fig. 1 shows the seismicity in Spain. Most of the central plateau (Castilla-Leon, Madrid, Castilla-La Mancha), the north (Cantabria, Asturias, Galicia) and the central eastern area (Castellón) are of low seismicity; the northern Provinces of Andalusia, Catalonia, Aragon, the Basque Country and Navarra are of medium seismicity, being the Betic chains (Granada, Almeria, Murcia and the south of Alicante) the most active seismic zones of the Iberian Peninsula followed by the Pyrenees.
The majority of the Spanish cities, like many other regions in the world located in areas of low or moderate seismicity, reveal a high seismic risk, due to the vulnerability of their buildings. Even though current advances in technical knowledge provide a variety of construction and structural systems to withstand seismic actions, a large number

of buildings in these cities don't fulfil the recommendations, mainly because they were built before the first seismic regulations came into force.

The objective of this paper is to organise in periods the residential buildings built in Spain during the last 100 years, taking into account the evolution of the construction techniques, the improvement of the structural materials, the design of construction details and their execution, as well as the influence that the technical standards, in force at each moment, have had on their seismic performance. The seven construction periods that have been established are described in this document. Following other Spanish researchers' recommendations (Lantada 2007, Feriche 2012) they have been grouped in pre-seismic code, low-seismic code and high-seismic code periods according to the seismic standards. The ranges of dates corresponding to each period have been defined considering the approval of the different regulations, as well as the transition years in which different seismic codes were in force.

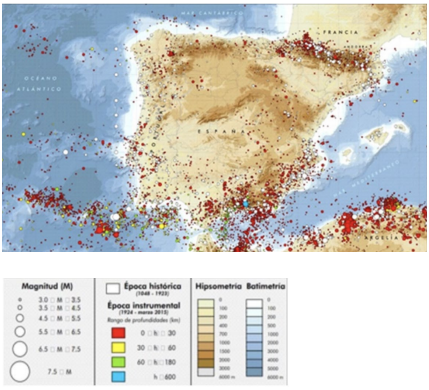


Figure 1. Seismicity in Spain. Source: (Instituto Geográfico Nacional 2015)

1. PRE-SEISMIC CODE BUILDING CONSTRUCTION PERIODS

Three periods are defined before the approval of the first Spanish seismic standard came into force, namely, prior to 1940, from 1940 to 1962 and from 1963 to 1968.

1.1. First period: Prior to 1940

The main characteristics of the first period (prior to 1940) are the absence of technical building regulations and the poor quality of the building practices.

Since the end of the 18th century, most of the Urban Police ordinances requested, for every construction work, to present a scale drawing of the building plan and elevation, signed by the Master Builder, and lately, in the 19th century, signed by the Architect in charge of the technical project management and supervision. One of the main duties of the Mayor Master Architect (Age of Enlightenment) and of the Municipal Architect (technical municipal body created by Royal order in the 19th century) was "*to examine the design and to correct any defect that exists, both in terms of solidity and in terms of symmetry and good shape*" (Anguita 1995). However, in practice, these bylaws were seldom adopted, and it was common that projects at that time lack of any architect or technical project supervisor.

The prevailing vertical structural system in this period consisted in load-bearing unreinforced masonry walls without any bracing system, designed to withstand only gravitational loads. The horizontal structural system changed from timber beams and joists floors to cast iron[1] beams and joists floors at the end of the 19th century and finally, since the first quarter of the 20th century to reinforced concrete floors.

At that time, timber and cast iron floors were calculated by means of tables. As an example, Fig. 2 shows two tables to design cast iron beam floors, a novel structural

[1] The main difference between cast iron and steel is the presence of carbon. Alloys with a carbon content higher than 2.1% are known as cast iron, being the carbon content of structural steel around 2º/$_{00}$

system in Madrid in 1883. These tables and the explanation of their practical application were proposed by Page (1883), director of public works, in a paper published in the Public Works Journal. In 1925, this journal, published a similar article about the construction of reinforced concrete floor slabs (Laffon 1925). In this paper, the author (a civil engineer) explained his personal experience in the dimensioning of the tension and compression reinforcement of a site-cast concrete rib with the abacus of Fig. 3.

In this period, apart from the fact that there weren't any regulations applicable to the calculation of the structural elements, there were no requirements regarding the minimum documents and the level of detail required to apply for a construction permit. Projects used to contain a distribution plan, a drawing of the facade and a short technical report that barely included a brief description of the construction work that was intended to be done in terms of materials and structural elements. The technical report of a project signed by Joaquin Rieta in 1931, can be seen, as an example, in Fig. 4 (Rieta 1931).

"We do not think that these tables require any explanation, however, to facilitate their application we will give them:
Table number 1 gives the loads that the floors must bear, according to the uses to which they are destined, loads that, as it is seen, vary from 300 to 600 kilograms per square metre, and it is the first one to be consulted.
Determined that load, for example, 350 kg per square metre, which is what we have adopted in our constructions, which we classify as ordinary houses, we look for table number 2: first the row in which this load appears; second, the average distance between beam and beam, equal for all floors, which in the present case is 0m,60; and third, the bay or span width, which varies in our case from 4m,50 in the basement to 5m,40 on the fourth floor, so considering the average, which is 4m,95. Finally, it is obtained from the same table the height of the above mentioned beams: 16 centimetres, and its weight per linear metre: 15 kilograms.
To complete this work, the dimensions of these double T beams must be detailed; but once given the height and weight, the best iron distribution cannot be done better than by the manufacturer."

NUMERO 1.

TABLA *que dá las cargas que deben sufrir los suelos segun el uso á que se los destina.*

CLASES DE EDIFICIOS Y HABITACIONES DE CADA CLASE.		Espesor del suelo.	SUELOS CON YESO Y CASCOTE. CARGA POR METRO CUADRADO. Del suelo.	Sobre carga.	TOTAL.	SUELOS DE LADRILLOS HUECOS. CARGA POR METRO CUADRADO. Del suelo.	Sobre carga.	TOTAL.
1.°—Casas ordinarias.	Reuniones poco numerosas. . .	0,30	275k	75k	350k	225k	75k	300k
	Boardillas	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.
Casas de lujo.	Alcobas y cuartos de vestirse.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.
	Salones de los pisos 3.° y 4.° . .	0,35	300	400	400	245	105	350
	Grandes salones de los pisos 1.° y 2.° . .	0,35	320	430	450	260	140	400
	Almacenes del piso bajo para mercancías de peso pequeño respecto al volúmen.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.	id.
Edificios públicos.	Oficinas.	0,30	275	175	450	225	175	id.
	Salones para reuniones ordinarias.	0,35	200	200	500	245	205	450
	Salones para las grandes reuniones	0,40	320	280	600	260	290	550

REVISTA DE OBRAS PUBLICAS 9

NUMERO 2.

SUELOS CON VIGAS DE HIERRO.

TABLA *que dá la altura y peso por metro de las vigas, en relacion con la distancia á que se coloca y la carga por metro cuadrado.*

HIERROS USADOS EN EL COMERCIO. Altura de las vigas. Cents.	Peso por metro lineal. Kilóg.		CARGA DE 300 KILÓGS. POR METRO CUADRADO. Distancia entre las vigas. 0m,50	0m,55	0m,60	0m,65	0m,70	0m,75
12	11	Longitud del vano en metros.	4,43	4,23	4,04	3,89	3,74	3,62
14	14		5,44	5,11	4,88	4,70	4,51	4,37
16	15		5,81	5,58	5,32	5,13	4,93	4,77
18	20		7,09	6,78	6,47	6,24	5,99	5,80
20	24		8,26	7,90	7,54	7,26	6,98	6,76
22	26		9,00	8,61	8,22	7,93	7,61	7,36
CARGA DE 350 KILÓGRAMOS POR METRO CUADRADO.								
12	11	Id. id.	4,40	3,92	3,74	3,60	3,43	3,35
14	14		4,94	4,72	4,52	4,34	4,17	4,04
16	15		5,40	5,16	4,94	4,74	4,56	4,42
18	20		6,56	6,28	6	5,76	5,54	5,36
20	24		7,62	7,30	6,98	6,70	6,45	6,25
22	26		8,32	7,96	7,62	7,30	7,13	6,84
CARGA DE 400 KILÓGRAMOS POR METRO CUADRADO.								
12	11	Id. id.	3,83	3,65	3,50	3,36	3,24	3,13
14	14		4,63	4,41	4,22	4,06	3,91	3,78
16	15		5,06	4,82	4,62	4,43	4,27	4,13
18	20		6,14	5,87	5,61	5,35	5,19	5,04
20	24		7,15	6,82	6,53	6,27	6,04	5,84
22	26		7,79	7,43	7,14	6,83	6,59	6,36
CARGA DE 450 KILÓGRAMOS POR METRO CUADRADO.								
12	11	Id. id.	3,63	3,45	3,30	3,18	3,06	2,96
14	14		4,37	4,17	3,98	3,83	3,69	3,59
16	15		4,76	4,56	4,35	4,18	4,04	3,90
18	20		5,80	5,54	5,29	5,08	4,90	4,74
20	24		6,76	6,45	6,15	5,92	5,71	5,52
22	26		7,36	7,03	6,71	6,45	6,22	6,01
CARGA DE 500 KILÓGRAMOS POR METRO CUADRADO.								
12	11	Id. id.	3,44	3,27	3,14	3,00	2,90	2,81
14	14		5,14	3,95	3,78	3,63	3,50	3,38
16	15		6,52	4,32	4,13	3,98	3,84	3,70
18	20		6,50	5,24	5 »	4,82	4,64	4,49
20	24		7,40	6,10	5,84	5,62	5,40	5,23
22	26		7,97	6,65	6,36	6,12	5,89	5,70

Figure 2. Tables for cast iron beam floors design. Source: (Page 1883)

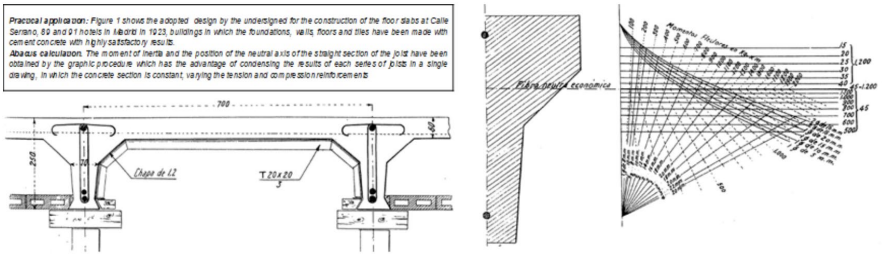
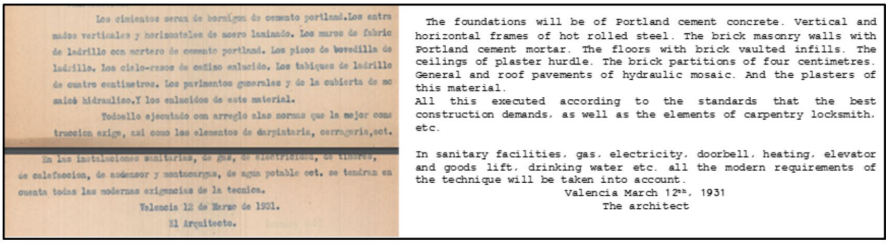


Figure 3. Design of reinforced concrete floors and abacus. Source: (Laffón 1925)


Los cimientos serán de hormigón de cemento portland. Los entramados verticales y horizontales de acero laminado. Los muros de fábrica de ladrillo con mortero de cemento portland. Los pisos de bovedilla de ladrillo. Los cielo-rasos de enlucido. Los tabiques de ladrillo de cuatro centímetros. Los pavimentos generales y de la cubierta de mosaico hidráulico. Y los enlucidos de este material.

Todo ello ejecutado con arreglo a las normas que la mejor construcción exige, así como las elementos de carpintería, cerrajería, ect.

En las instalaciones sanitarias, de gas, de electricidad, de timbres, de calefacción, de ascensor y montacargas, de agua potable ect. se tendrán en cuenta todas las modernas exigencias de la técnica.

Valencia 12 de Marzo de 1931.

El Arquitecto.

The foundations will be of Portland cement concrete. Vertical and horizontal frames of hot rolled steel. The brick masonry walls with Portland cement mortar. The floors with brick vaulted infills. The ceilings of plaster hurdle. The brick partitions of four centimetres. General and roof pavements of hydraulic mosaic. And the plasters of this material.

All this executed according to the standards that the best construction demands, as well as the elements of carpentry locksmith, etc.

In sanitary facilities, gas, electricity, doorbell, heating, elevator and goods lift, drinking water etc. all the modern requirements of the technique will be taken into account.

Valencia March 12th, 1931

The architect

Figure 4. Technical report with description of the structure. Source: (Rieta 1931)

1.2. Second period (1941-1962)

After the Spanish Civil War, an increase in the economic stability favoured the improvement of the constructive systems and the use of better-quality materials

In 1941, the first antecedent of the Spanish technical regulations was approved: Regulation for the application of the Decree on iron restrictions for buildings (*Reglamento para aplicación del Decreto sobre las restricciones del hierro en la edificación*, BOE 02/08/1941). This document established the "Technical standards of knowledge and unavoidable application" to be considered in the calculation and execution of every construction work in which iron was to be used. One of the recommendations for the reinforced concrete framed structures (the most common in this period) was the removal of the compression reinforcement in all the beams and the reduction of the reinforcement in the structural elements under combined bending plus compression. Fig. 5 shows the first part of this Regulation. In article 2, the concepts of permanent and imposed loads, respectively, are defined for the first time, specifying the values that must be adopted in the structural analysis. However, what is most significant in this document is the restriction on the use of iron, a circumstance that, on the one hand prevented the design and construction of steel structures, moving away once again from the trends in Europe and, on the other hand, forced the reduction to a minimum extent of reinforcements in reinforced concrete structures, leading to the execution of a low-strength concrete. The specification regarding the iron restrictions in floors is included in Fig. 6, while Fig. 7 shows an excerpt from a technical report signed in 1941, justifying the reduction of iron in concrete columns following these requirements.

In 1944 came to force, with minor changes, the first code for design and execution of concrete works, (*Instrucción para el Proyecto y Ejecución de Obras de Hormigón*, BOE 1/6/1944) formerly published in 1939 (BOE 16/2/1939) but subject to further confirmation. It was mandatory only for public works.

GOBIERNO DE LA NACION

PRESIDENCIA DEL GOBIERNO

REGLAMENTO para aplicación del Decreto sobre las restricciones del hierro en la edificación de 11 de marzo de 1941 (BOLETIN OFICIAL del 12)

NORMAS TECNICAS

CAPITULO PRIMERO

Art. 2. For the purposes of an exact interpretation of the precepts contained in these technical standards, the following general concepts are established:

a) Permanent load: sum of loads that invariably act in the construction (self weight of structure, floors, pavements, partitions, etc.).

Self weights of the different construction elements will be established according to the following values:

Laminated iron, 7,850 Kg/m³.
Wood, according to its nature and state, 800 to 1,000 Kg/m³.
Natural stone masonry, 2,500 to 2,800 Kg/m³.
Ceramic brick masonry, 1,800 Kg/m³.
Hollow brick masonry, 1,300 Kg/m³.
Mass concrete, 2,200 Kg/m³.
Reinforced concrete, 2,400 Kg/m³

b) Imposed loads: loads representing the weight of people, furniture, stored products, etc., and, in general, any load which is not permanent.

The following imposed loads will be considered for the calculation of the iron structure, provided that the need for higher values is not justified:

Housing 150 to 200 Kg/m².
Offices, 200 to 250 Kg/m².
Public buildings, 250 to 300 Kg/m²
Showrooms 400 to 500 Kg/m²
Garages (light cars), 350 to 400 Kg/m².
Roofs, 150 Kg/m²

In warehouses and other constructions dedicated to special uses, loads will be fixed according to their destination.

Prior justification, loads other than those established may be allowed, as well as in cases where it is necessary to take into account dynamic effects, in which the following increases will be fixed: Venues for shows and meetings in which people can get up at the same time, 50 percent, Structure cases that have to withstand dynamic effects produced by machinery, etc., 25 percent.

Figure 5. Regulation for the application of the Decree on iron restrictions for buildings. Art.2, permanent and imposed loads. Source: (BOE 12/03/1941)

2ª *Peso de hierro.*—Para el empleo de hierro en forjados de pisos (viguetas) el peso máximo total permitido será el siguiente:

Luces menores de 3 metros, 10 Kg/m2 y planta.
Luces menores de 3.5 metros, 12 Kg/m2 y planta.
Luces menores de 4 metros, 15 Kg/m2 y planta.
Luces menores de 4.5 metros, 18 Kg/m2 y planta.
Luces mayores de 4.5 metros, 21 Kg/m2 y planta.

Para obtener la superficie anterior se emplearán las luces libres de las crujías.

Cuando además de los entramados horizontales se hiciera uso de otros elementos permitidos, no se podrá sin previa autorización de la Dirección General de Arquitectura rebasar en ningún caso la cantidad de 10 kilogramos por m3 de edificación, descontando para esta determinación el volumen de patios.

Para los efectos de este artículo se considerarán los pesos teóricos dados por los catálogos de hierros y perfiles laminados.

2º Weight of iron: for the use of iron in floors (joists) the maximum allowed weight is:

Spam smaller than 3 m, 10 kg/m² and floor
Spam smaller than 3,5 m, 12 kg/m² and floor
Spam smaller than 4 m, 15 kg/m² and floor
Spam smaller than 4,5 m, 18 kg/m² and floor
Spam bigger than 5 m, 21 kg/m² and floor

To obtain the former area, the spam of the bays will be considered

When, additionally to the steel floors, different allowed elements were used, it is forbidden, without a permit of the General directorate of Architecture to exceed in any case the amount of 10 kg/m³ built, taking away, for this calculus, the volume of the patios.

For the effects of this article, theoretical weights provided by iron and steel cross sections catalogues should be considered.

Figure 6. Regulation for the application of the Decree on iron restrictions for buildings. Iron restrictions in floors. Source: (BOE 12/03/1941)

Estructura.- El edificio que se piensa construir tendrá una estructura de hormigon que se ha calculado a base de reducir, todo lo posible el hierro de la armadura.- En este sentido, se proyecta, en lo que hace referencia a pilares centrales, la construccion de 6 pilares de 0.30 x 0.30 armados con 6 redondos de 20 mm. hasta el piso 5º continuando estos pilares en proporcion de 20 cm. x 30 cm. y 6 redondos del 16 hasta el resto de la altura.-

Los pilares de medianera estan formados en toda su altura por pilares de 0.20 x 0.30 y cuatro redondos de 20 mm. hasta el 5º piso, siendo el armado de estos pilares a partir de este piso, cuatro redondos de 16 mm.-

Structure: The building that is intended to be built will have a concrete structure that has been designed reducing, as much as possible, the iron of the reinforcements. In this sense, in which refers to the central columns, the design consists in the construction of 6 0.30 x 0.30 columns, reinforced with 6 rebars of 20 mm. up to the 5th floor, continuing these columns in proportion of 20 cm x 30 cm and 6 rebars of 16mm to the rest of the height.

Columns at party walls are designed in all their height by columns of 0.20 x 0.30 and four rebars of 20 mm up to the 5th floor, being reinforced these columns from this floor, with four 16 mm rebars.

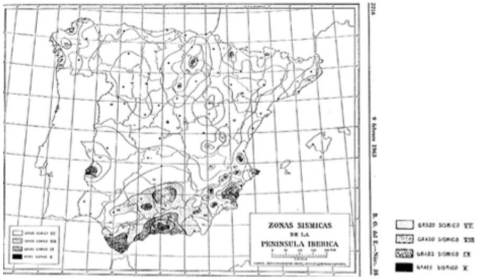
Figure 7. Technical report justifying the reduction of iron in columns. Source: (Albert, 1941)

1.3. Third period (1963-1968)

The beginning of the third period is marked by the publication of the MV 101, Actions on Buildings (*Acciones en la Edificación*, BOE 9/02/1963). Although not a seismic code, it was the first time that seismic actions were included in a Spanish regulation. These actions were to be considered, compulsorily, in cities with a seismic grade on the Wood-Newman Modified Mercalli Intensity Scale (also known as Modified Mercalli Intensity, MMI) equal to or greater than VII, being optional to take them into account in cities with a seismic grade equal to or smaller than VI. Fig. 8 shows the established seismic zones in Spain according to the values of MMI.

The horizontal seismic load was obtained from the vertical gravitational load acting on the structural element multiplied by the seismic coefficient, obtained from the table in Fig. 9, according to the building type and the seismic grade of the city.

Furthermore, this standard repealed the restrictive provisions of the use of iron in buildings. Consequently, the quality of the reinforced concrete structures with respect to the previous period was improved.



Cities with seismic grade equal or bigger than VII:
Almería,
Córdoba
Coruña
Jaén
Pontevedra
Sevilla

Cities with seismic grade equal to VIII:
Badajoz
Cádiz
Granada
Málaga
Murcia

Figure 8. Seismic zones in Spain. Source: (MV 101, 1962)

TABLA 7.2 **SEISMIC COEFFICIENT** COEFICIENTE SISMICO

Tipo de construcción **Building Type:**	Valor del coeficiente sísmico en localidades cuyo grado sísmico es: **Value of the seismic coefficient in locations where the seismic grade is:** ≤ VI	VII	VIII	IX	X	
Construcciones enramadas sobre:						
a) Terrenos compactos (rocas, gravera y arenosos gruesos, arcillosos duros, etc.)	0	0.02	0.05	0.07	0.10	Compact soils (hard rocks, gravel and thick sand, hard clay etc.
b) Terrenos semicompactos (arenosos finos, arcillosos semiduros, etc.)	0	0.04	0.08	0.10	0.15	Medium dense granular soils (thin sand semi-hard clay)
c) Terrenos blandos, arcillosos blandos y fluidos, etc.) y construcciones sobre pilotes	0.01	0.05	0.10	0.15	0.20	Soft cohesive soil and foundation by piles.
Torres, depositos elevados, casos análogos	0.01	0.05	0.10	0.15	0.20	Towers and deposits in height
Construcciones con muros de fábrica, no enramados	0.01	0.05	0.10	0.15	0.20	Buildings with masonry walls. Not-framed.
Ornamentos aislados y elementos en mensula vertical u horizontal	0.02	0.10	0.20	0.30	0.50	Isolate ornaments and cantilever elements (vertical or horizontal)

Figure 9. Seismic coefficients. Source: (MV 101, 1962)

2. LOW-SEISMIC CODE BUILDING CONSTRUCTION PERIODS

Two periods are part of this block. They are marked, respectively, by the approval, the entry into force and the years of application of the first Spanish seismic standards: The Seismic Code PGS-1 (BOE 4/02/1969) and the Seismic Code PDS-1 (BOE 21/11/1974).

2.1. Fourth period (1969-1974)

This period starts in 1969, when the first Spanish Seismic Code (PGS-1) was published. This document included very basic requirements and a static method of analysis applied to structural and construction elements, although there weren't any recommendations related to the structural design and detailing.

The national territory was classified into three zones of low, moderate and high seismicity according to the Macroseismic intensity. As shown in Fig. 10, most of the national territory was associated to zone A of low seismicity, in which the application of the standard and the consideration of the seismic actions in the structural analysis was optional.

The analysis, design and execution of the structures were improved with the recommendations of a series of mandatory standards which came into force throughout this period. It is worth mentioning, on the one hand, the Codes for design and execution of plain and reinforced concrete works (EH-68 and EH-73) and, on the other hand, two standards which focused on the structural analysis of steel structures for buildings (MV 103, BOE 28/6/1973) and on the design of loadbearing brick masonry walls (MV 201, BOE 31/5/1972), respectively. As an example of this improvement in the design, it is important to point out that the MV 201 made mandatory

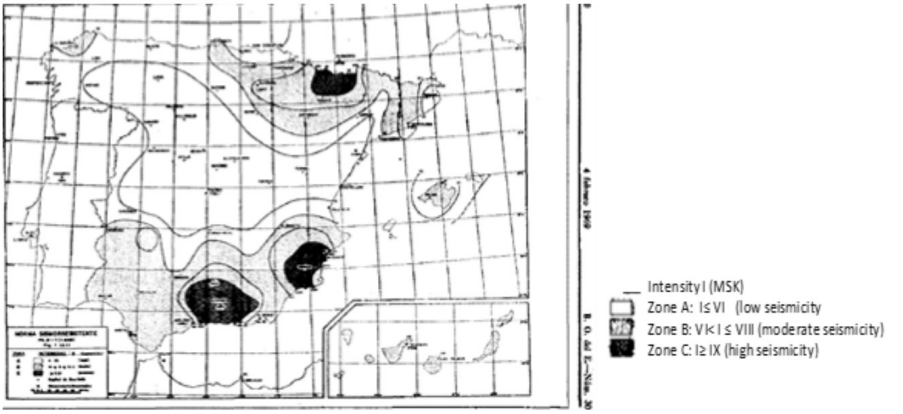


Figure 10. Seismic zones in Spain. Source (PGS-1,1968)

to connect the floors with the loadbearing and transversal walls by means of reinforced concrete ring beams.

2.2. Fifth period (1975-1996)

In this period, the structural analysis of buildings under seismic actions, defined by the Seismic Code PDS-1 (PDS-1 1974), was addressed in a more systematic way. The seismic hazard map remained nearly unchanged with respect to the map of the previous seismic code including the zones with low seismicity in which the consideration of the seismic actions in the design and structural analysis weren't mandatory.
It is also worth noting that during this period, the government decided to create a unified framework for all the building regulations, transforming the technical standards in force at that moment (MV) into the Basic Building Standards (NBE, *Normas Básicas de la Edificación*), mandatory for all the building agents (architects, construction managers, product suppliers, etc.), leading to a higher control and to a new improvement of the quality of the constructive process. Amongst them, it is worth highlighting the NBE AE-88, (Actions on Buildings (BOE 17/11/1988) and the NBE EA-95 (Building Steel Structures, BOE 18/1/1996). Several codes for design and execution of plain and reinforced concrete works (EH-80, EH-82, EH-88, EH-91) and for prestressed concrete works (EP-77, EP-80 and EP-93) and a set of non-mandatory Standards, but good building practice recommendations called Building Technological Standards (NTE, *Normas tecnológicas de la edificación*) were also published during this period.

3. HIGH-SEISMIC CODE BUILDING CONSTRUCTION PERIODS

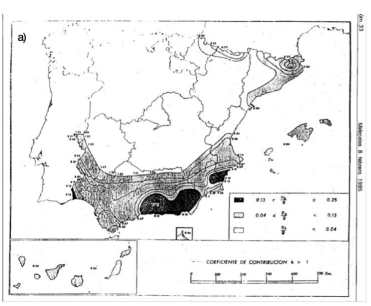
Two periods are identified as high-level building construction periods with regards to the seismic regulation. They are defined, respectively, according to the entry into force of the Spanish Codes for Seismic Design of Buildings NCSE-94 (NCSE-94, 1994) and NCSE-02 (NCSE-02, 2002) which included for the first-time technical design and constructive prescriptions.

3.1. Sixth period (1997-2004)

The beginning of the sixth period is established in 1997, just after the two-year transition from the Seismic Code PDS-1 to the new Spanish Code for Seismic Design of Buildings, NCSE-94 (BOE 08/02/95).
This document was a turning point in the Spanish seismic standards, since it included design and constructive prescriptions in addition to defining the parameters and methods of structural analysis, leading to a significant qualitative improvement.
The seismic hazard map, based on probabilistic studies, was presented, for the first time, in terms of ground acceleration, instead of intensity, providing the value of the basic seismic ground acceleration (a_b) across the country for a 500-year return period (Fig. 11 a).The application of the NCSE-94 was mandatory for buildings of normal importance located in areas with a basic seismic ground acceleration (a_b) equal or bigger than 0.06g, increasing, consequently, the number of cities which should consider the seismic actions in the structural analysis and comply with all the design prescriptions.
The code identified three methods of structural analysis namely the modal spectrum analysis, the dynamic analysis and the simplified design method, in which the dynamic earthquake effects were approached by horizontal static forces applied to the structure. This method could only be used for building structures which met several requirements related to the geometric, stiffness and mechanic regularity, the number of storeys above ground level or the building height among others.
It is worth pointing out the approval of the Code on Structural Concrete, EHE-98 (BOE 13/1/1999), which included, for the first time, the plain, reinforced and the prestressed concrete in an only document. According to this code, the minimum values of the compressive strength for plane and reinforced concrete were increased up to 20 N/mm^2 and 25 N/mm^2 respectively.

3.2. Seventh period (2005 up today)

The current Spanish Code for Seismic Design of Buildings NCSE-02 (BOE 11/10/2002), was approved in 2002, establishing a regulatory adaptation period of two years. Its mandatory enforcement, in 2005, marks the starting point of the seventh period.
The seismic hazard map (Fig. 11b) has minor changes with respect to the one presented in the NCSE-94, but it was updated in 2015, after the Lorca Earthquake (11^{th} May 2011), by the Instituto Geográfico Nacional (IGN 2015).
The novelty was that the application of the NCSE-02 is mandatory for buildings of normal importance located in areas with a basic seismic ground acceleration (a_b) equal or bigger than 0.04g, or equal or bigger than 0.08g when the frames are effectively braced in all directions.
Apart from this, the most relevant improvement consists in the seismic detailing requirements to achieve better ductile structural behaviour.
The Building Act (*Ley de Ordenación de la Edificación*, BOE 06/11/1999), approved in 1999, established a building regulatory system with a performance- based approach, setting in terms of objectives the Basic Building Requirements on functionality, safety and habitability which were developed, subsequently, in the Spanish Technical Building Code, CTE (BOE 28/03/2006), approved in 2006. The CTE comprises a set of different Basic Documents, currently in force, to guarantee the fulfilment of the above-mentioned building requirements such as structural resistance, serviceability, durability, robustness, among others.



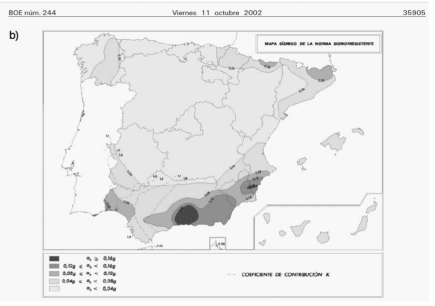


Figure 11. Seismic zones in Spain defined by a) NCSE-94; b) NCSE-02. Source: (NCSE-94 and NCSE-02)

4. INFLUENCE OF THE CONSTRUCTIVE PERIODS IN THE VULNERABILITY ASSESSMENT

The structural and the constructive quality of the buildings affect their seismic vulnerability and, therefore, their seismic performance in the event of an earthquake.

A suitable method to assess the seismic vulnerability of the residential buildings in urban areas is the Risk-UE level 1 Vulnerability Index Method (Milutinovic, Trendafiloski 2003). A vulnerability index is assigned to each building according to its typology and then adapted to the its specific characteristics by means of regional and behaviour modifiers. The regional modifiers account for the quality of the building at regional level based on the technical, structural and constructive characteristics of the buildings which are basically related to the period in which they were built, except when the building has been completely retrofitted.

Different values for these coefficients have been proposed for Barcelona (Lantada 2007), Granada (Feriche 2012) or Valencia (Guardiola-Víllora, Basset-Salom 2015), and modified considering the seismic performance of the masonry and RC buildings damaged during Lorca May 11th 2011 earthquake (Feriche et al. 2012; Basset-Salom, Guardiola-Víllora 2014; Martinez-Cuevas, Gaspar-Escribano 2016).

CONCLUSION

Despite several destructive earthquakes occurred before the 20th century, most of the Spanish cities show low to moderate seismicity. Consequently, many residential buildings show high vulnerability because they were calculated neglecting the seismic actions. To consider the structural and constructive quality in the seismic vulnerability assessment, the evolution of the Spanish building codes has been described, classifying the buildings into different periods according to the entry in force of the seismic standards.

The pre-seismic code periods (prior to 1969) are characterised by poor construction practices and absence or very basic national regulations for concrete and cast iron structures. Buildings were designed to withstand only vertical loads and suffered, for many years, a restriction in the use of iron which reduced the quality of the structures. This restriction was repealed with the approval of the MV 101, the first in representing the seismic actions considering equivalent horizontal loads.

From 1969 to 1996 (low-seismic code periods), construction and structural design were regulated by several building standards such as the NBE, the codes for design and execution of steel and concrete structures

(which were updated along the period) or the non-mandatory NTE. The seismic standards in force were, respectively, the PGS-1 (fourth period) and PDS-1 (fifth period), addressing more systematically the structural analysis of buildings but without any seismic design recommendations.

In the last two periods (from 1997), the enforcement of the NCSE 94 and the NCSE 02 caused a great impact in the seismic vulnerability of buildings, being mandatory to include the seismic loads in the structural analysis and to follow the design prescriptions. The approval of the Technical Building Code (CTE) and the Code on Structural Concrete (EHE-08) have also been relevant in the improvement of the construction quality of buildings and their seismic performance.

The regional modifiers of the vulnerability indices are defined for the most common residential buildings' structural typologies, based on the constructive periods. These modifiers can be implemented in other Spanish regions with similar seismicity and construction practices.

REFERENCES

Albert, L., 1941. *Proyecto para edificio avenida del Oeste*. Archivo histórico de Valencia, 1941 box 9.

Anguita Canteri, R., 1995. *Ordenanza y policía urbana, Los orígenes de la reglamentación edificatoria en España* (1750-1900). PhD Thesis. Universidad de Granada.

Basset-Salom L., Guardiola-Víllora A., 2014. *Seismic performance of masonry residential buildings in Lorca's city centre, after the 11th May 2011 earthquake*. Bull Earthquake Eng 12:2027–2048.

Capote, R., Estévez, A.; Santanach, P; Sanz de Galdeano, C.; Simón, J.L., 2011. *¿Dónde y por qué se producen terremotos en la península ibérica?* Enseñanza de las Ciencias de la Tierra 19 (3): 317-329.

Feriche M. (2012). *Elaboración de escenarios de daños sísmicos en la ciudad de Granada*. Ph.D. tesis. Instituto andaluz de Geofísica y prevención de Desastres sísmicos. Universidad de Granada.

Feriche M., Vidal F., Alguacil G., Navarro M., Aranda C., 2012. *Vulnerabilidad y daño en el terremoto de Lorca de 2011*, 7ª Asamblea Hispanoportuguesa de Geodesia y Geofísica, S. Sebastián, España.

Guardiola-Víllora A, Basset-Salom L, 2015. *Escenarios de riesgo sísmico del distrito del Eixample de la ciudad de Valencia*. RIMNI 31(2):81–90.

IGN (Instituto Geográfico Nacional), 2015. *Sismicidad de la península ibérica y zonas próximas*. https://www.ign.es/web/ign/portal/mapas-sismicidad (accessed 8 January 2020)

Laffón A., 1925. *La generalización de los pisos de hormigón armado*. Obras Públicas 2439

Lantada N., 2007. *Evaluación del riesgo sísmico mediante métodos avanzados y técnicas GIS. Aplicación a la ciudad de Barcelona*. PhD Thesis. U.P. Cataluña, Barcelona.

Martínez-Cuevas S., Gaspar-Escribano J M. 2016. *Reassessment of intensity estimates from vulnerability and damage distributions: the 2011 Lorca earthquake*. Bull Earthquake Eng 14:2679-2703

Martinez Solares J.M., 2003. *Sismicidad histórica de la Península Ibérica*. Física de la Tierra 15, 13-28

Milutinovic ZV, Trendafiloski GS, 2003. WP04. *Vulnerability of current buildings. RISK-UE project: an advanced approach to earthquake risk scenarios with applications to different European towns*. Institute of Earthquake Engineering and Engineering Seismology (IZIIS), Skopje

Page S., 1883. *Suelos de vigas de hierro*. Obras Publicas año 1883 Nº 1

Rieta Sister, J., 1931. *Proyecto de edificio señores de Cervera*. RIETA-CIA Collection https://riunet.upv.es/handle/10251/73371

PAPER #6.14

THE SPECIAL PROTECTION PLAN FOR THE HISTORIC 'CIUTAT VELLA' DISTRICT (VALENCIA, SPAIN). A NEW TOOL TO APPROACH HERITAGE ENHANCEMENT AND MANAGEMENT

María Emilia Casar Furió[a], Maria José Viñals Blasco[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The Special Protection Plan for the historic district of the city of Valencia is a heritage and urban-use planning tool proposed by the City Council to protect the historic centre called the 'Ciutat Vella' (officially known as District 1). This district was designated as a Cultural Asset of National Interest (BIC in Spanish) by the Decree passed by the Valencian Government (Generalitat Valenciana) in May 1993.

This Special Protection Plan is a tool that unifies and adapts several urban planning and heritage rules in a single recast instrument. It will replace the five existing Special Protection and Inner-city Regeneration Plans (PEPRI in Spanish) for El Carmen, Velluters, Mercat, Seu-Xerea and Universitat-San Francesc, as well as those Special Protection Plans for the Buffer areas applied to the Cultural Assets of National Interest (PEP-EBIC in Spanish) of District 1.

This paper analyses this protection, enhancement and management tool. The methodology for this study is based on a bibliographic review of the legal documents and the Plan itself. Likewise, consultations and interviews have been carried out with experts. In addition, field research consisting in visits to the district affected by the Plan has been conducted in order to identify the existing problems on-site.

The results point out the more innovative aspects, such as: a) codifying all the heritage and urban planning legislative instruments applicable to District 1 in a single text, under the same legal standards; b) updating the current state patrimonial and urban legal system in accordance with the Valencian legislation in force; c) recognising and regulating the urban uses according to the current social situation, paying special attention to the residential and tertiary uses; and d) the enhancement and management of the architectural, urban and landscape heritage of this historic centre.

KEYWORDS

Historic centre; heritage; urban planning; legal management tools.

INTRODUCTION AND OBJECTIVES

As a heritage element, in the 20th century, sites of historic interest were addressed in numerous international treaties and conventions that highlight their value and the need for their legal protection and proper management. Examples include the Athens Charter (1931), the United Nations Conference (1962), the Venice Charter (1964), the UNESCO World Heritage Convention (1972), the Amsterdam Declaration (1975) and the Nairobi Declaration (1976), among others. Such agreements have allowed specific criteria to be consolidated and unified for application around the world. At the Spanish regulatory level, historic city centres are also considered heritage elements and can therefore be granted legal protection. Due to their double condition as a heritage element and an urban ensemble, both heritage and urban planning regulations are applicable for their protection.

The aim of this work is to analyse the successive urban planning and heritage administration instruments applied to the historic city centre of València that have led to the current regulations, which are set out in the Special Protection Plan (Plan de Especial Protección – PEP) for the "Ciutat Vella" of València that was approved on 26 February 2020. From the methodological point of view, the present work is based on the review of normative documents and specialised literature, but it also examines the current regulations and the proposals included in the Special Protection Plan for the "Ciutat Vella" of València. Likewise, consultations and interviews have been carried out with experts. In addition, field research has been conducted, consisting in visits to the district affected by the Plan, in order to identify the problems that currently exist on-site.

1. REGULATORY BACKGROUND

In this section, we will review the history of the heritage protection and urban planning in District 1, "Ciutat Vella" of València. Prior to the approval of the Spanish Constitution in 1978, the first glimpses of the legal treatment of heritage can be found in the Municipal Works Statute and Regulations (*Estatuto y Reglamento de Obras Municipales*) of 1924, the 1926 Decree governing the Protection, Conservation and Growth of Artistic Assets (*Decreto de 1926 sobre Protección, Conservación y Acrecimiento de la Riqueza Artística*), and the National Historic Heritage Law (*Ley Nacional de Patrimonio Histórico*) of 13 May 1933. In relation to urban planning regulations, there is the Land Act (*Ley del Suelo*) of 1956, which mentions the Special Plans (*Planes Especiales*) that were intended to protect historic and artistic sites and ensembles, and also the Inner-city Regeneration Plans (*Planes de Reforma Interior – PERI*). This state regulation also mentioned that it could

> *"lay down special rules for the cataloguing, conservation, restoration and improvement of buildings or urban ensembles and of natural elements or spaces, and establishes the limitation of uses or the facilities incompatible with their nature".*

Cataloguing was declared mandatory and the PERI had to

> *"contain a comprehensive study of the social and economic consequences of their implementation, justifying the existence of the means needed to carry it out and adopting the necessary measures to ensure that the interests of the population are defended".*

In addition, the law took into consideration the harmony of the sites and proposed that *"the constructions should be adapted to the environment in which they are located".*

Under these regulations, various specific assets and sites were declared to be of cultural interest, simply on the basis of their exceptional nature, their historical and artistic value being crucial in this respect, as is the case in València of the Lonja de Mercaderes (BOE 04/06/31), Baños del Almirante (BOE 16/02/44), Atarazanas-Grao (BOE 24/11/49), and Edificio del Antiguo Almudín (BOE 01/04/69), among others.

Article 46 of the Spanish Constitution of 1978 establishes the obligation of the public authorities to guarantee *"the preservation and promote the enrichment of the historic, cultural and artistic heritage of the peoples of Spain"*, as well as "*of the property of which it consists, whatsoever its legal status and to whomsoever it may belong*". Thus, in response to this constitutional mandate, the Spanish Historical Heritage Law was passed in 1985, followed by the 1992 Land Law.

The first of these two laws establishes the concept of Cultural Asset of National

Interest (*Bien de Interés Cultural – BIC*) with different categories for those elements that are recognised as having the most relevant historical, artistic and cultural value (Casar Furió, 2009). It also introduces the obligation for local councils to develop a Special Protection Plan to guarantee the conservation of the assets, in accordance with its Art. 20.1:

> *"declaring a Site of Historic Interest, Historical Site or Archaeological Zone as Cultural Assets of Interest will determine the obligation of the Municipality or Municipalities in which they are located to draw up a Special Protection Plan for the area affected by the declaration or some other planning instrument of those provided for in the legislation on town planning that, in any case, fulfils the requirements set out in this Law".*

This period coincides with an awareness of the importance of European sites of historical interest, as at that time many of them were in a state of deterioration and abandonment.
The first major attempt to enhance the value of València's historic city centre was carried out in 1984. In that year, a set of Special Protection Plans were approved en bloc for the "Ciutat Vella" District. District 1 "Ciutat Vella" is the administrative denomination currently used to refer to the historic city centre of València. These municipal plans developed the 1966 General Urban Development Plan (*Plan General de Ordenación Urbana* – PGOU), regulated by new state legislation (Revised Text of the 1976 Land Act and its regulatory development). These were plans with very ambitious objectives that basically referred to

> *"the maintenance of the road network with the generalised elimination of large operations involving the opening of new thoroughfares except for just a few cases that were deemed necessary; the maintenance of architectural typologies and urban scenes; the definition of road traffic proposals suited to the area with the progressive incorporation of pedestrian routes; the reinforcing of the residential attitude and the maintenance of the existing social structure with restrictions on the tertiary uses derived from traffic; the establishment of public facilities compatible with the historical urban structure".*

However, they were in fact a set of plans that were little more than just a declaration of intent.
In addition to this planning drawn up in 1984, the Inner-city Regeneration Programme of the old riverbed of the River Túria (*PERI del Jardín del Túria*), published in the Official Gazette of the Province on 11 October 1984, placed special emphasis on the city's urban landscape. Subsequently, a new PGOU for València was approved in December 1988. The implementation of this plan included the introduction of the planning instrument called the Special Protection and Inner-city Regeneration Plan (*Plan Especial de Protección y Reforma Interior* – PEPRI). This tool is similar to the previous special protection plans, but takes into account the heritage element in urban planning and also deals with inner-city reformation (decongestion, creation of urban provisions, community facilities, cleaning up unhealthy neighbourhoods, circulation, improvement of the environment or public services, etc.). Thus, between 1990 and 1993, the PEPRI for El Carmen (1991); Velluters (1992), Universitat-Sant Francesc (1992); Seu-Xerea (1992) and Mercat (1993) were approved, still in accordance with the State Revised Text of the 1976 Land Act and the implementation of the València General Urban Development Plan of 1988.
Shortly afterwards, in 1993, the historic city centre of València was declared a Cultural Asset of National Interest (BIC in Spanish) in the "Site of historic interest" category, in accordance with the Spanish Historic

Heritage Law (*Ley de Patrimonio Histórico Español*) of 1985.

The implementation of the aforementioned PEPRI raised expectations in view of the obvious ineffectiveness of the 1984 PEPs that they were replacing, which had not achieved any structuring actions or management models that would allow these tools to be considered really effective (Gaja Díaz et al., 2001). These PEPRIs of the 1990s generally advocated the conservation of the urban fabric and selective "sponging" (selective demolition of buildings in dense, historical urban environments to make way for public spaces or rights-of-way of some sort), with the introduction of management techniques such as expropriation.

During these years, moreover, certain competences in the 1978 Constitution were transferred to the Autonomous Communities. As a result, the Valencia Region passed its Law Regulating Valencian Urban Development Activity (*Ley Reguladora de la Actividad Urbanística Valenciana*) in 1994 and the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law (*Ley de Patrimonio Cultural Valenciano*) in 1998. These regional regulations reinforced the joint treatment of the heritage element in urban planning (Casar Furió, 2008).

With the new State 1992 Land Law and Valencian regulations (Law Regulating Valencian Urban Development Activity in 1994 and the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law in 1998) and the declaration of the historic city centre as a BIC (1993), the need arose to standardise all the regulations. Consequently, for the development and execution of the urban planning of the "Site of Historic Interest of the city of València", a series of framework collaboration agreements were entered into between the Generalitat Valenciana and the City Council of Valencia. The first agreement was the Plan of Integral Rehabilitation of València Antigua (RIVA 1992-1997), signed on 16 June 1992, for the intervention on the historic centre. Thus, a new stakeholder is introduced into the historic city, in addition to requiring the supervision of the Department of Culture and the Department of Urban Planning of the Generalitat Valenciana, along with the City Council itself for these interventions (VVAA, 1999).

For the implementation and management of the provisions of this agreement, the management offices of the València City Council were created (València Antiga S.A.) and the RIVA Offices on the part of the Generalitat Valenciana, both with a specific budget allocation for the rehabilitation of the historic city centre (Jimenez Alcañíz, 2000). These were mixed public-private initiatives, focused on redeveloping and re-qualifying the uses of urban spaces, improving the economic and commercial fabric, and providing social and cultural facilities. By so doing the aim was to rehabilitate neighbourhoods that were, at the time, very run-down and both the resident population and commerce were undergoing a sharp decline. The biggest problem in the implementation of this agreement was its high economic cost; so funding was insufficient and many goals were eventually not accomplished. However, the living conditions and quality of life in these city centre neighbourhoods improved substantially, leading to economic, heritage and cultural revitalisation, so that a certain recovery of demographics and local identity was achieved, and they also started to become a focal point for tourists.

Following this beginning, in the 21th century, the historic centre of Valencia firmly established its status as a cultural and tourist district thanks to the promotion of trade and the hospitality industry and enhancement of heritage buildings that were acting as cultural attractions or containers and institutional administrative headquarters.

However, these PEPRIs from the 1990s proved to be equally insufficient and ineffective (Gaja Díaz, et al., 2010). Therefore, in order to resolve the discrepancies that arose in

relation to urban planning interventions and heritage protection measures, in 1994 another framework collaboration agreement was signed between the Department of Culture of the Generalitat Valenciana and the City Council of València for the development and execution of the urban planning of the site of historic interest.

In the 21th century and within the legal-technical framework of the Valencian Autonomous Community, numerous urban planning regulations have been approved and modifications have been made to the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law, including the figure of "Cultural Asset of Local Interest" (*Bien de Relevancia Local Valenciano* – BRL) and subsequent independent regulation (Decree 62/2011, of 20 May, issued by the Consell regulating the declaration procedure and the regime of protection of Cultural Assets of Local Interest).

To overcome the shortcomings of the Spanish Historical Heritage Law as regards the Buffer areas of the BICs, the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law develops criteria to define them (Casar Furió and Taberner, 2010). For this reason, the Special Protection Plans for the Buffer areas of Cultural Assets of Interest (EBIC) were expressly provided for, as stated in Art. 39.3. Thus, a Special Protection Plan for the Buffer area of the Cultural Assets of Interest (PEP-EBIC 06-07) was approved to regulate the heritage, urban planning and landscaping aspects of 29 monuments in the city centre area. The Special Protection Plan (PEP-EBIC 08) was also approved for the Buffer areas of the Cultural Assets of Interest of the Puerta de Serranos, Iglesia y Convento de Santo Domingo, Museo de Bellas Artes, Monasterio del Temple, Palacio de Justicia y Ex-convento del Carmen e Iglesia de la Santa Cruz. They were finally approved in 2016.

Thus, these were the last legal-technical precedents before the approval of the current Special Protection Plan for the "Ciutat Vella".

2. THE SPECIAL PROTECTION PLAN FOR THE "CIUTAT VELLA"

The Special Protection Plan (PEP) for the "Ciutat Vella" of València derives from the 1998 Valencian Cultural Heritage Law which, in imitation of the National Heritage Law, establishes the obligation for municipalities in which a BIC is declared a "Historic Site" to carry out a Special Protection Plan (Taberner, 2016) for it. On the other hand, Art. 43 of the current Valencian urban planning regulations, which are the Law on Land Use, Urban Planning and Landscape (*Ley de Ordenación del Territorio, Urbanismo y Paisaje*) of 2014, with its modification in 2019, also includes the Special Protection Plan as an instrument of heritage management. This Law refers to the Valencian Cultural Heritage Law of 1998 (Arts. 34 and 39) to provide content for the regulation of this plan (Casar Furió, 2008). Therefore, the City Council of València detected the need for an urban plan that contemplates an adaptation of the state and regional regulations and, at the same time, combines the legal aims regarding urban planning and heritage to achieve coherence and sustainability in its management. Hence, the Special Protection Plan for the "Ciutat Vella" of València was finally approved on 13 February 2020 (BOP, no. 39, supplement, announcement of approval, 26/02/2020), its scope being the current District 1, which includes the districts of La Seu, El Mercat, El Pilar, El Carme, La Xerea and Sant Francesc (Fig. 1). This Plan will replace all previous regulations governing the historic centre. The initial diagnosis for drafting the Special Protection Plan for the "Ciutat Vella" of València (Esteve, 2020) was based on the need to:

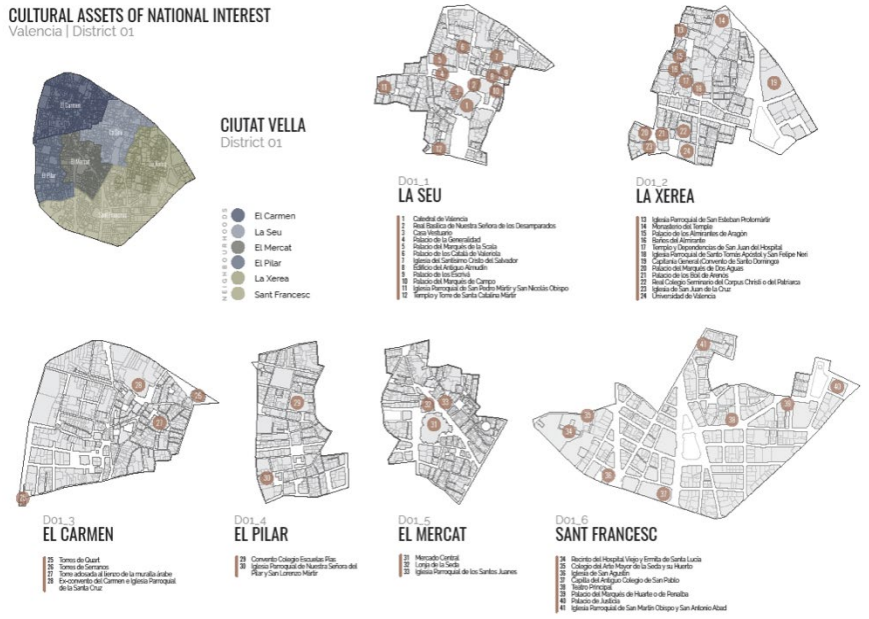


Figure 1. District 1 "Ciutat Vella" of the city of Valencia. Location of the neighbourhoods and the main Cultural Assets of National Interest (BIC).

- Update and rewrite the current plan
- Review and update the planning standards in order to guarantee a minimum level of quality in the urban planning actions that are carried out
- Recover deteriorated areas
- Conserve and enhance the value of cultural heritage
- Recover the residential fabric and the quality of housing
- Establish sustainable management of District 1 on an environmental, social and economic level
- Coordinate these actions with the current Municipal Urban Mobility Plan
- Activate and revitalise uses and activities in the neighbourhoods that make up District 1.

This Plan was developed within the framework of a broad process of public participation implemented in four phases (from October 2016 to November 2019), and taking into consideration the phenomenon of "touristification" that had been affecting the district's neighbourhoods for some time.

With regard to the updating and recasting of the current plans, it should be underlined that the Special Protection Plan will involve the homogenisation of criteria as a result of the need to adapt and unify the planning of "Ciutat Vella", which is characterised by having been regulated in a dispersed way for more than 20 years. Thus, at present, a single document brings together all the urban planning determinations of the historic urban landscape of District 1 of the city of València.

In addition, this Special Protection Plan applies to a wider area as it includes the former riverbed of the River Túria, from the Puente de las Artes to the Puente de la Exposición. On the other hand, it takes into consideration the determinations of the Sustainable Urban Mobility Plan (Plan de Movilidad Urbana Sostenible) of the city of València (2013) in relation to the urban layout, the accessibility and parking of vehicles and the pedestrian routes. The Plan thus addresses mobility as a binding determination of the planning, which tends towards facilitating the full pedestrianisation of the city centre and the use of bicycles.

With respect to the quality of the urban development actions, the Plan is oriented towards preserving the historical site, and considers the public space a priority scenario in the social life of the citizens. It was assumed that the public spaces were executed with low quality in this district (Esteve, 2020); for this reason great attention is paid to "neighbourhood or proximity facilities", as opposed to the large facilities "at the city level". It also complies with the Strategic Housing Plan of the city of València (*Plan Estratégico de la Vivienda de la ciudad de València*), approved in December 2017 for the period 2017-2021, which includes the social housing policy and social housing rental assistance in the historic centre. Moreover, according to the justification report of PEP 2020, the aim is give preference to adapting the use of provisions to meet residential needs, by promoting educational-teaching facilities, among others.

In this Special Protection Plan, cultural heritage is considered a crucial identity landmark of society and more than 2,000 heritage elements (cultural, natural and scenic) have been catalogued as protected, including BIC, BRL and new elements. It is important to point out that the Legal Register of Protections (*Catálogo de Protecciones*), as an annex to the Special Plan, includes for the first time in València, with a specific regulation within the plan itself, the protection of modern 20th century architecture. Thus, it includes elements from the DOCOMOMO Ibérico Register (Documentation and Conservation of buildings, sites and neighbourhoods of the Modern Movement).

Also relevant is the regulation that the Plan proposes for the subzone of the city, established in the detailed ordinance, called "Trama Histórica" (Historical Layout) where, as regards new buildings, it suggests particular building ordinances related to respect for and dialogue with the inherited scenarios and the traditional typologies, in close harmony with the old buildings.

On the other hand, one of the main challenges of this Special Protection Plan is the recovery of the population and the residential fabric before the advance of the tertiary use of the historic city centre, especially tertiary by the hospitality trade. Prior to 2018, there was a high demand in the city for exclusive tertiary licences for protected buildings in the historic centre (Ayora, 2019). In this way, the limitation and regulation of tertiary uses in the residential areas of the district are addressed based on checking the growth in the number of tourist apartments, among other measures. The Plan also assumes the regulation of tourist uses, achieved with the urban planning technique of zoning. Thus, it proposes a new tertiary use, called "Tourist Housing", with two modalities, the so-called "V1 Tourist Housing", which is admitted within the area of residential classification as compatible, and the so-called "V2 Tourist Housing", which is admitted as a building for exclusive use in the predominantly tertiary areas, both cases subject to certain requirements and in accordance with the regulations on urban planning stipulated in the Plan.

It seems that a lot of attention is going to be focused on the issue of the tertiarisation and the "touristification" of the historic centre in the near future, because since the Plan was drawn up until now, the growth forecasts for the tertiary sector have already exceeded the estimates made.

CONCLUSIONS

As final considerations, it can be noted that:

- The Special Protection Plan for the "Ciutat Vella" of València constitutes a great regulatory advance due to the fact that a single urban planning instrument for a historical complex includes and homogenises State, regional, heritage and urban planning regulations regarding its organisation and management.
- It is a widely debated social document, implemented within a broad framework of public participation. It has gone through four phases of public participation where the allegations made have been taken into account at all times throughout the process. However, we believe that amendments made in 2019 to the Valencian Law on Land Use, Urban Planning and Landscape have made the current regulations more accurate (closer citizen participation in the public participation provided for in Art. 49 bis) since, for the first time, the Valencian legislator provides for public consultation before drawing up the first draft of the Plan.
- The Plan has a highly protectionist vision as regards heritage; it presents a large number of protected assets, which will make it a complex management challenge.
- It is a tool that was intended for public use from the outset, with regulation of uses bearing in mind residential use as a priority (it protects residential use in the majority of buildings in the centre; the constructed floor area of non-residential premises is limited; a transitory system is implemented for occasional tourist housing). However, this is a challenge because it is anticipated that it will be difficult to attract a stable population on a permanent basis.
- One of the great challenges of this Plan will be to manage the restriction on tertiary use, which today, shortly after the approval of the Plan, is already exceeding the growth forecasts.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The authors of this work would like to thank Dr Francisco Taberner for revising the text. Likewise, they are also grateful to the architect Inés Esteve for her help and advice regarding certain technical issues that arose during the research on this paper.

REFERENCES

Ayora, M.T. (2019). *Análisis de la terciarización del tejido edilicio del Centro Histórico de Valencia y su repercusión en la puesta en valor del patrimonio arquitectónico*. Master's Degree Thesis, Universitat Politècnica de València.

Casar Furió, M.E. (2008). "La doble vertiente de ordenación y protección del Plan Especial, en particular en la legislación valenciana." *Práctica urbanística de la Ley*, 75: 55-65.

Casar Furió, M.E. (2008), "Interconexión normativa de la legislación urbanística y sectorial valencianas en materia de Patrimonio Cultural, y de los Bienes Inmuebles de Interés Cultural en particular." *Revista de Urbanismo y Edificación*, 18, Aranzadi, Thomson Reuters: 43- 52.

Casar Furió, M.E. (2009), *Régimen jurídico de los bienes inmuebles de interés cultural en la legislación valenciana*, Tirant lo Blanch.

Casar Furió, M.E. & Taberner, F. (2010). "El concepto de entorno y su delimitación en los BICs valencianos." *Práctica urbanística de la Ley*, 99: 51-59.

Esteve, I. (dir.) (2020). *Plan Especial de Protección "Ciutat Vella" de València*. Ayuntamiento de València / Actuaciones Urbanas de València.

Gaja Díaz, F. (coord.) (2001). *Intervenciones en Centros Históricos de la Comunidad Valenciana*. Servicio de Publicaciones Universidad Politècnica de València.

Gaja Díaz, F. (coord.) (2010). *Un futuro para el pasado: un diagnóstico para la Ciutat Vella de València*, Universidad Politècnica de València.

Jiménez Alcañíz, C. (2000). "Actuaciones en Ciutat Vella, Valencia." *Informes de la Construcción*, 52 (nº469-470): 52-59.

Taberner, F. (2016). Instrumentos del planeamiento urbanístico en relación con el patrimonio cultural. En *Nuevo régimen urbanístico de la Comunidad Valenciana. Ley 5/2014, de Ordenación del Territorio, Urbanismo y Paisaje de la Comunidad Valenciana* (coord. Hervás Más, J.). Tirant Lo Blanch: 173-194.

VVAA (1999). *Cinco años de intervenciones en Ciutat Vella*, 1992-1997.Ícaro, Colegio Oficial de Arquitectos de la Comunitat Valenciana.

LEGISLATION CONSULTED

Urban Planning Legislation:

Ley de 12 de mayo de 1956, sobre Régimen del Suelo y Ordenación Urbana, *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 14 de mayo de 1956*, num. 135: 3106-3134.

Texto Refundido de la Ley sobre Régimen del Suelo y Ordenación Urbana,de 1976 (Real Decreto 1346/76, de 9 de abril). *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 16 de junio de 1976*, num. 144: 11755-11769.

Reglamento de Planeamiento, de 1978 (Real Decreto 2159/1978, de 23 de junio). *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 15 de septiembre de 1978*, num. 221: 21592-21606.

Reglamento de Gestión Urbanística, de 1979 (Real Decreto 3288/1978, de 25 de agosto). *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 31 de enero de 1979*, núm. 27: 2451-2464.

Reglamento de Disciplina Urbanística, de 1978 (Real Decreto 2187/1978, de 23 de junio).*Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 18 de septiembre de 1978*, num. 223: 21767-21776.

Constitución Española de 1978. *Boletín Oficial del Estado, 29 de diciembre de 1978*, num. 311: 29313- 29424.

Real Decreto Legislativo de 1/1992, de 26 de junio, por el que se aprueba el Texto Refundido de la Ley sobre el Régimen del Suelo y Ordenación Urbana. *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 30 de junio de 1992*, num. 156: 22238-22274.

Ley 6/1994, de 15 de noviembre, de la Generalitat Valenciana, Reguladora de la Actividad Urbanística. *Diario Oficial de la Comunitat Valenciana de 24 de noviembre de 1994*, núm. 2394.

Ley 16/2005, de 30 de diciembre, de la Generalitat, Urbanística Valenciana. *Diario Oficial de la Comunitat Valenciana de 31 de diciembre de 2005,* núm. 5167.

Decreto 1/2011, de 13 de enero, del Consell, por el que se aprueba la Estrategia Territorial de la Comunitat Valenciana. *Diario Oficial de la Generalitat Valenciana de 19 de enero de 2011*, num. 6441.

Ley del Suelo y Rehabilitación Urbana, de 2015 (Real Decreto Legislativo 7/2015, de 30 de octubre). *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 31 de octubre de 2015*, num. 261: 103232-103290.

Ley de Ordenación del Territorio, Urbanismo y Paisaje de la Comunidad Valenciana, de 2014 (Ley 5/2014, de 25 de julio). *Diario Oficial de la Generalitat Valenciana de 31 de julio de 2014*, num. 7329. Modificación de 2019 (Ley 1/2019, de 5 de febrero). *Diario Oficial de la Comunitat Valenciana de 07 de febrero de 2019*, núm. 8481.

Heritage legislation:

Ley de Patrimonio Histórico Español 16/1985, de 25 de junio. *Boletín Oficial del Estado, de 29 de junio de 1985*, num. 15: 20342-20352.

Ley 4/1998, de 11 de junio, del Patrimonio Cultural Valenciano. *Diario Oficial de la Comunitat Valenciana de 18 de junio de 1998,* núm. 3267.

Real Decreto de 62/2011, de 20 de mayo, del Consell, por el que se regula el Procedimiento de Declaración y el Régimen de Protección de los Bienes de Relevancia Local Valencianos. *Diario Oficial de la Generalitat Valenciana de 26 de mayo de 2011*, num. 6529.

PAPER #6.15

OVER-ELEVATION AS A MEASURE OF URBAN RENEWAL

Maria Piqueras Blasco[a], Ernesto Fenollosa Forner[b]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Spain
[b] Depart. of Continuous Mechanics and Theory of Structures, Universitat Politècnica de València, Spain

ABSTRACT

Demographic growth has promoted new approaches of cities development. Although extensions are a recurrent practice, this work focuses on the extensions in height through increased building volume. This method, in addition to increasing the demand for housing, promotes urban renewal. The chosen buildings always have an added value such as their privileged urban zoning or their aesthetic component. In this type of expansion, industrialized construction is the form of intervention that takes advantage. These over-elevations are previously manufactured in an industrial unit, where the main elements of structure are assembled, as well as enclosures and conditioning systems. The result forms different modules that are embedded together at the corresponding location. This way of working is given by the need to generate new homes with a higher level of energy efficiency and sustainability, and with a reduced construction time in the building site itself. The reduction of working hours is one of the main advantages; nevertheless, the predominant obstacles are the assembly of the modules with the existing construction. Therefore, advantages and disadvantages of this new form of execution are assessed, with methods and periods substantially conditioning this constructive practice.

KEYWORDS

Cities; over-elevations; buildability; offsite; industrialized construction.

INTRODUCTION

Throughout history, cities have experienced substantial population increases. Urban morphology and mode of growth have been affected accordingly. As an example, a fact that significantly marked the growth of the city was the Industrial Revolution, from hosting 3% of the world's population to 13%. This percentage was already 50% in 2007 and is expected to continue to rise (Joan Artés 2018, 370). In this rapid evolution, current cities have covered these needs in different ways, and it is common to see the creation of a model of city that increases its extension, is often dispersed, disordered and inefficient (José Bailach 2018). In the face of this rapid development, which causes uncontrolled land use and consumption, a new model of compact, more efficient city with optimised infrastructures, reduced environmental impact and, therefore, lower energy consumption can be considered. This choice results into a more sustainable city model. This new model of city, in view of the need for new surface area proposes underground spaces and new heights, and therefore an increase in buildability. The extension in height takes advantage of the volumetry allowed by the urban planning regulations not consumed by the existing building (Joan Artés 2018, 369). This practice means an elevation of the existing building in exchange for an improvement of common elements such as facades or conditioning systems. All this improvement, promotes an urban re-activation in the central areas of the cities, which by their antiquity probably need a restoration. We could refer

to the architects Lacaton & Vassal, who in many projects propose the adaptation of architecture against demolition and subsequent construction. The approach of this study is based on "Working with the existing," to revalue and reuse the built elements. In addition to responding to current issues such as flexibility or sustainability (Druot, Lacaton, Vassal, 2007). While this expansion strategy generates a benefit for the city's architectural heritage, it should not be forgotten that new housing must respond to a sustainable model, and respond to concepts such as Net Zero Energy Building (Net ZEBs), that is, low energy demand buildings powered by renewable energy systems (Garde et al. 2014). In this study we will focus on the residential sphere, considering both the existing building and the newly generated dwellings.

1. METHODOLOGY

During the course of this research, we have consulted different proposals that companies and offices are making nowadays, especially in the city of Barcelona, where several firms are making multiple penthouses in the nineteenth-century quarters. Based on documentation from these enterprises and bibliographic consultations, a critical view of this technique has been drawn up and frequent solutions in this type of construction of over-elevations, have been compared.

2. BUILDING EXTENSIONS. A RECURRING PRACTICE

Over-elevation in existing buildings is a relatively current option. However, extensions of buildings, in public ones or single-family housing, have been a very common practice. The dynamics of any extension are led by two clearly differentiated actors. The first is the primitive element, understood as the starting point. The second element is the new volume or surface area, which must adapt to the conditions of the first one and the urban and technical regulations. The most common extensions in architecture usually correspond to a horizontal extension (fig. 1.A). There are numerous designs such as the extension by David Chipperfield Architects at the James Simon Gallery, or the extension of the Reina Sofía Art Centre by Jean Nouvel, or even the Bois-le-Prête by Druot, Lacaton & Vassal housing tower, a very visual example of expansion and remodeling in residential buildings. Another form of extension corresponds to the connection of two separate buildings which are connected through a junction element, for instance a footbridge or even an underground corridor (fig. 1.B). A very recognizable example is the Skywalk Rennweg in Vienna by Studio Solid Architecture, or also the ABC Museum by Aranguren y Gallegos in Madrid. Another recurrent practice when it is not possible to build on an adjacent site is to build within the courtyard of the building itself (fig. 1.C.). This situation is most often observed in administrative buildings. On the other hand, when it is not possible to grow horizontally, it is usual to increase the surface area manipulating the cross-section of the building. A possible solution, usually employed in warehouses or shops, is the construction of a new floor or mezzanine within the main volume (fig. 1.D.). Finally, the case that we will deal with more detail in the rest of this study is the incorporation of a new volume on the roof of the pre-existing building (fig. 1.E.). An example of this construction can be found in CaixaForum Madrid by Herzog & De Meuron.

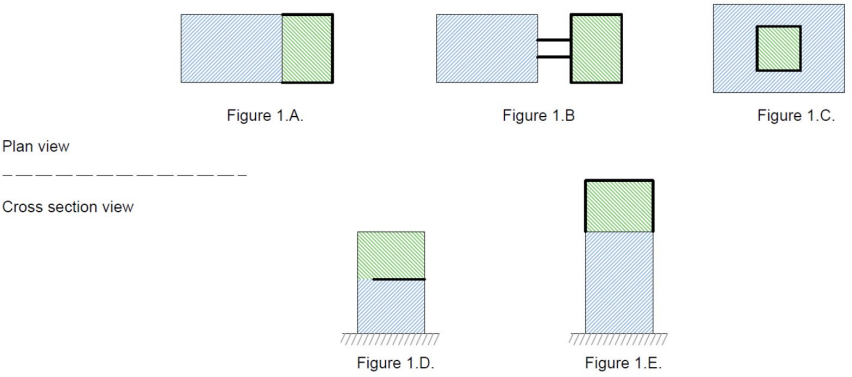


Figure 1. Schemes of expansion types, both in plant and cross-section views

3. THE OPPORTUNITY OF OVER-ELEVATING IN RESIDENTIAL BUILDINGS

This new alternative of over-elevations paves the way for historical city centres such as Barcelona, Madrid or Paris. The construction of new penthouses in residential buildings offer the possibility of reusing unused rooftop terraces to complete a city. On the other hand, the creation of new housing revalued existing buildings from the improvements made, thus helping the urban reactivating of downtown areas (José Bailach 2018).

The working methodology applied in these extensions tries to respect the values of the heritage. The roof terraces are intervened in careful way without losing the architectural value that characterizes them. Another determining factor is the industrialized building technique, which favours respecting deadlines and guaranteeing minimum qualities (Nicolás Millán 2018). In addition, this type of construction is also concerned about ecological value, aiming to get certifications such as LEED (USGBC) or GREEN (GBCe) that qualify the environmental performance (José Bailach 2018).

The total construction of the over-elevation has in general terms two phases: design and execution. During the design, and due to the high exigency of the project, it is necessary an exhaustive and complete study of the building to be completed, to know all the legal aspects of city-planning codes, the technical exigencies required by the different current regulations, the economic resources, in addition to a logistic of transport and complete assembly of the whole project. Regarding the execution, this is the most characteristic stage of this type of work and, unlike conventional work, it has two locations: initially the industrial unit where the modules are built, and finally the building which is going to receive the extension where the modules are assembled and the refurbishment and improvement work is carried out (fig. 2). These works are offered to the property in exchange for the extension of the building (Nicolás Millán 2018).

The improvement works of the building rely on several internal and external factors. Internally, these works depend on the condition of the architecture piece, either at an aesthetic, functional and structural level.

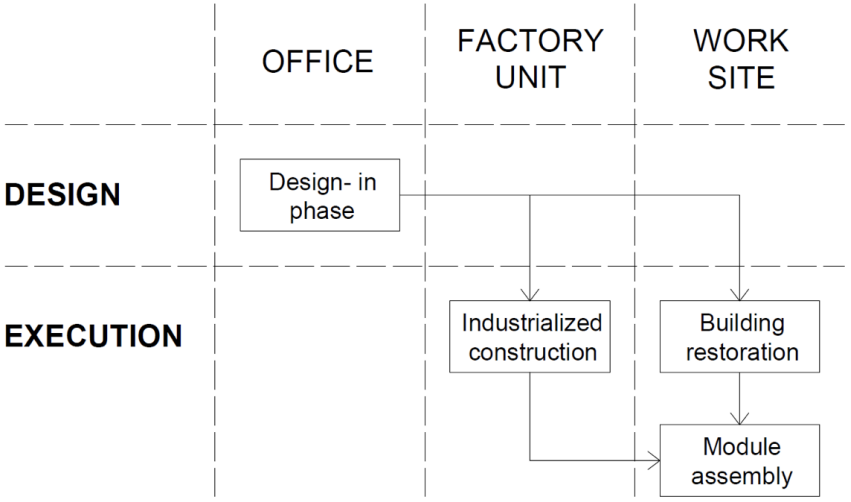


Figure 2. Diagrams of the phases that follow the projects of over-elevations

Externally, it depends on the agreement between neighbours and investors and the possibilities offered by the property object of investment.

Firstly, a study of the building deficiencies must be carried out in order to determine the actions to be taken. Once these points have been decided, all the rehabilitation and improvement work will be agreed upon based on an agreement with the neighbourhood. Normally this falls to questions of accessibility, such as works in the stairwell and lobby, incorporation of a lift and elimination of architectural barriers.

Aesthetic aspects and correction of pathologies, for example, rehabilitation of facades and courtyards, and restoration of architectural heritage elements. In addition to an improvement or replacement of obsolete conditioning systems, which must already be taken into account in the whole project due to the increase in the number of dwellings. All these improvements mean that the owners obtain, apart from the new upgrades, a revaluation of their homes (La casa por el tejado 2020).

Before receiving the new housing modules, it is necessary to have studied the viability of the intervention. To do this, it is essential to understand the structure of the building and how it works. Depending on the load to be added, the structural state of the building and the constructive and logistic conditions, the interventions will be different. Initially, we have the possible reinforcement of the foundation, where there are multiple repair and reinforcement techniques (Emma Colom 2016). If necessary, in addition to acting on the foundations and the upper structure, the rooftop terrace must be prepared to receive the new housing modules.

Once the rooftop terrace is cleared, it is time to execute the new structural elements where the modules will be supported. It should not be forgotten that the modules must be adapted to the structural elements of the existing building. The structure of these buildings is usually load-bearing walls parallel to the façade, and must

be taken into account for the support of the new modules. Therefore, the original structure will condition the new structural elements, and also the spaces.

Simultaneously to all the on-site work, the new housing modules are executed in the industrial unit thanks to the industrialised building technique. Each house is composed of different modules that are formed in a factory. All this three-dimensional structure is made of steel profiles that will be subsequently treated for both corrosion and fire as indicated by the regulations. Next, the partitioning made of plasterboard is placed. At the same time, as progress is being made with the partition walls, the plumbing, draining, electricity and telecommunications systems are installed. Finally, works on the wall coverings, tiling, flooring and suspended ceilings are solved. Once interiors are done complete, work is done on the exteriors, installing the carpentry and the façade coverings (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017).

Being the modules prepared, the transport and assembly logistics are organised for their placement at the final location. During the days of hoisting and assembly, everything has to be well planned. In addition, an organization with public roads is necessary for special transport and crane placement (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017).

Due to the type of building technique, the modules are practically finished in the industrial unit, but once there, the last details are carried out, such as joints, connection of conditioning systems, last details, waterproofing and sealing. Simultaneously, the improvement work on the existing building is being performed.

The building and the manufacturing of the modules in the industrial unit takes usually three months. Subsequently, the raising of the modules means several days. Then, the assembly of modules for new homes with the existing building and all the completions usually last between two and three months (Joan Artés 2018, 373). Therefore, the total time, without taking into account the project phase and legal procedures such as the license obtaining, is close to five or six months.

Some of the companies that are carrying out this type of construction are *La casa por el tejado*, a construction company that, in collaboration with an external team of technicians makes these houses. In addition, new companies related to this modality are emerging, such as *Growing Buildings*, which makes passive houses, or *Inbesters*, an investment consultancy for real-estate projects (Nicolás Millán 2018). It bears mentioning the *Abracadabra project*, a plan financed by the *European Commission* based on the energy renovation of existing buildings taking advantage of the creation of new housing on the roof (European Commission 2020)

4. LA MARINA 285. OVER-ELEVATION EXAMPLE IN BARCELONA

The elevation project carried out by La Casa por el Tejado is located in the Eixample district of Barcelona, at La Marina 285. The existing building has a ground floor and three floors, and it is located between party walls. On the other hand, the extension consists of the supplementation of two floors. These are the first premises for the development of the project.

The vertical structure of the building to be extended is made up of 15 cm load-bearing walls, except for the wall on the outside, which is 30 cm (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017). In addition, the type of roof corresponds to the Catalan roof. In the city of Barcelona, a large part of the buildings corresponds to a similar type of flat rooftop terrace. The peculiarity of this type of roof is its inner air chamber, with a depth between 40 and 60 centimetres (Joan Artés 2018, 374). This double-layer roof creates an air current that minimises high temperatures and prevents condensation.

First, once the structural and constructive performance of the existing building was studied, the foundation was reinforced. In this case, the option was for micro-piloting and reinforcement of the existing footings. This had

a positive effect on the rooftop, because the air chamber did not have to be demolished, unlike in other cases. Once the necessary demolitions and adaptations to the rooftop had been made, the 15x20 section concrete edge beams were installed in line with the load-bearing walls. Once the concrete has been poured, the metal plates are placed, at the points where they will receive the modules. These plates will be responsible for providing the new houses with precise flatness (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017). An important point between the extension and the existing building is the structure. In this case, the support structure of the modules had to coincide with the load-bearing walls of the lower floors, and the extension of the vertical communications nucleus. Four different types of modules were established. Therefore, we found 4 modules of 17 m deep by 3.25 m wide, 2 modules of 17x2.6 m, 4 modules of 9x3.25 m, and other 2 of 7x2.6 m, with a total of 12 modules for the two floors.

Once the roofing work had begun, another important point was the installation of an elevator and the refurbishment of the hall. Here the problem lay in the installation of the elevator because, as it had limited dimensions, the space had to be reconfigured. The first flight of stairs was demolished, ramps were added to the entrance to access the elevator, and the new electricity and water meters were relocated (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017).

Although unforeseen works may occur on site, this is not usually the case in factory construction. Once all the exact dimensions were collected and the project was completed, the company assemble the pieces in the workshop without any problem. In this case, the edges of the box were made from steel tubulars, in which the wooden slabs were placed in order to significantly reduce the load, a very important premise in this type of action. As for the enclosures, sandwich panel with SATE system (Exterior Technical Insolation System) was used, which favors the creation of a housing model with greater energy savings (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017).

Once the main square was assembled, the fire resistance treatment was carried out, using fireproof mortar for beams and intumescent paint for pillars. Then, the installation and finishing works were done, as well as the transport to its final destination (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017).

The biggest problem of this work was the assembly on site. Once the modules are being placed on the rooftop, everything has to be very measured. In this case, one of the modules was located a few centimeters away from its correct position, which caused the incompatibility of the next one. This caused temporary delays due to the displacement of the incorrect module (Jon Kepa Areitio 2017).

5. RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

This practice of over-elevation in historic-residential buildings arises from a problem of city growth. Despite this methodology favours an efficient city model, there are points to improve and to debate not only on an urban level, but also in the construction methodology itself.

At the urban level, there are many advantages. The most obvious advantage is shown in the use of the existing fabric and facilities, which are more optimised due to the increase in density of the neighbourhoods (Nicolás Millán 2018). Furthermore, the actions on the façade, the restoration of architectural elements, the levelling of coronations between buildings and the elimination of blind walls raise the value of the urban environment (fig. 3). All these improvements contribute to regenerate the city. Indeed, there are policies for the rehabilitation of neighbourhoods and sustainable development. For example, in 2007 the Leipzig Charter on Sustainable European Cities was adopted. Although these aspects are positive, it must be the urban regulations those which limit the buildability taking into account the available infrastructures of the

Figure 3. Over-elevation housing in Barcelona. Source: (Oriol Vives 2016)

city so that do not hold up and negatively affect these infrastructures (Nicolás Millán 2018).

Constructively, industrialized manufacturing has a number of benefits in itself. Due to its *off-site* concept, production is carried out in a more controlled and automated way, and therefore makes the system more productive, efficient and with a better optimization of resources. In addition, the construction is not altered by weather conditions, which often causes delays in conventional construction. All these facts entail a reduction in time and, consequently, costs. Although these favourable aspects seem to be on the investor's side, the existing building and its inhabitants also get a benefit. The control in the industry unit is higher than in conventional construction, and moreover the influence in case of human error is not that meaningful. Likewise, a high definition of the project is necessary for it to fit in its final location, the dimensional accuracy is more than evident. In fact, one of the drawbacks is observed when there is a lack of definition in the project, due to manufacturing outside the final location, any element not considered in the design, will affect the placement of the modules on site.

As mentioned before, new houses must have certain minimum quality and comfort conditions. This construction process not only guarantees these factors, but also, thanks to technology and research into new materials, makes houses more sustainable and more energy efficient. But the new housing does not only respond to energy aspects, but also to the need of reduction of load on the existing building, due to the remarkable lightness of the systems

employed (Meggers et al. 2012). In fact, this new search for materials responds to criteria of weight. Surely, the step to follow in order to achieve better results with these over-elevations is the search for new materials that guarantee a lighter, sustainable and modular systems.

Lightweight and industrialized construction is the optimal methodology for over-elevations. This requirement is given by the building to be completed, which initially was not designed for an increase of floors and, therefore, of loads. In addition, industrialized construction correctly solves the energy aspects (Meggers et al. 2012). Finally, it leads to a reduction in the time which it takes to build on site, reducing the inconvenience to a community of neighbours who will be bothered with the noise, rubble, etc. for less time.

Despite the advantages and opportunities offered by over-elevation, there is a lack of knowledge at the social, technical and constructive level about this practice, which still does not make it frequent. That means that building companies and their workforce should adapt in the future to this methodology and its required skills. Although society might be still rather reluctant, there are growing initiatives for example those by Descombes & Thieulin Architects which use the resource of over-elevation. Or projects such as *The Skyscape Rooftop House* by WARarchitect in Thailand. This new working methodology for the growth of cities is not only being applied at a particular level in different buildings. There are other types of proposals that follow along the same lines on a larger scale, such as the *Up project* in the city of Zaragoza. This proposal aims to build new passive, lightweight and quickly executed housing through the use of buildability, and a general refurbishment at a city level (José Bailach 2018).

CONCLUSION

Cities themselves offer options for sustainable and controlled growth by means of over-elevation. This possibility is not intended for outskirts or empty plots, where it would be more normal to think of brand new buildings. On the contrary, over-elevation is an opportunity for historical centres of cities and their first expansion dense neighbourhoods. It promotes the renovation and refurbishment of our architectural heritage, which on many occasions is deteriorated because of time and political and social negligence.

While at an urban level it promotes a more efficient system, the same is true at a construction level. Industrialised construction has an optimized manufacturing process. This favours the whole sequence of the work, which will benefit from a reduction in time, and therefore the inconvenience caused to the community of neighbours will be shorter. In addition, this type of construction offers a more sustainable service, with better energy value, precision and lightness. Despite the use of more sophisticated technology, new ways must be found to respond to greater comfort, energy and sustainable demands, based on modular and lightweight solutions.

REFERENCES

Areitio Mata, Jon Kepa. "Prácticum: obra de rehabilitación y sobreelevación de un edificio del ensanche de Barcelona." Final Grade Paper, Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya, 2017.

Artés Joan, Gerardo Wadel, Núria Martí, and Thomas Wainberg. "Sistema constructivo industrializado para rehabilitación y sobreelevación." In *X Congreso Regional de Tecnología en Arquitectura: tecnología y políticas públicas*. Universidad Nacional de La Plata, 2018.

Bailach Hernandis, José, and Diego Lostao Chueca. "Up. Completar edificios para mejorar las ciudades." In *Contart 2018: VII Convención de la Edificación*. Escuela Universitaria Politécnica de La Almunia, 2018.

Colom Emma, Còssima Cornadó, and César Díaz. "Caracterización sintética de las actuaciones de adición de plantas en los edificios históricos del ensanche de Barcelona." In *Rehabend 2016 construction pathology, rehabilitation technology and heritage management*. Burgos, 2016.

Druot, Fréderic, Anne Lacaton, and Jean-Philippe Vassal. *Plus. La vivienda Colectiva. Territorio de excepción*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili, 2007

European Comission. Accessed September 3, 2020. https://cordis.europa.eu/project/id/696126/es

Garde F., A. Lenoir, A. Scognamiglio, D. Aelenei, D. Waldren, H.N. Rostvik, J. Ayoub, L. Aelenei, M. Donn, M. Tardif, and S. Cory. "Design of Net Zero Energy Buildings: Feedback from International Projects." *Energy Procedia* 61 (2014).

La casa por el tejado. Accessed January 20, 2020. http://lacasaporeltejado.eu/.

Meggers F., H. Leibundgut, S. Kennedy, M. Qin, M. Schlaich, W. Sobek, and M. Shuyuka. "Reduce CO2 from buildings with technology to zero emissions." *Sustainable Cities and Society* 2, no. 1 (2012): 29-36

Millán Delgado, Nicolás. "La edificabilidad vacante como estrategia de negocio actual en el sector inmobiliario, análisis y viabilidad de un modelo implantado en el eixample de Barcelona." Master's Thesis, Universitat Politècnica de Catalunya, 2018.

PAPER #6.16

ADAPTIVE REUSE IN FRAGILE CONTEXTS. COMBINING AFFORDABLE HOUSING SOLUTIONS, NEW JOB OPPORTUNITIES AND REGENERATION OF URBAN PERIPHERIES

Elena Fontanella[a], Fabio Lepratto[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, DAStU – Department of Architecture and Urban Studies, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The proposed contribution considers living spaces in relation to the themes of affordable housing, work accessibility, adaptive reuse of existing heritage, and regeneration of peripheral areas. It presents the first results of an ongoing research-by-design experience, undertaken at Politecnico di Milano's Department of Architecture and Urban Studies, within the "Territorial Fragilities" Project, and bringing together two lines of research dedicated to contemporary housing solutions and to town and city peripheries. The research is also developed through teaching activities as part of the "Affordable Housing" Final Thesis Studio (MSc in Architecture – Built Environment – Interiors). The aim is to define innovative housing solutions obtained from adaptive reuse of non-residential, underused or abandoned public assets (offices, schools, hospitals, depots, barracks). The architectural solutions will seek answers to profound socio-economic-demographic changes (transformation of family structure, labour market insecurity, migration) and the criticalities they trigger (inadequate space, functional rigidity, lack of targeted services, poor affordability). Housing access is often conditioned by unemployment, therefore the research challenge consists in producing scenarios where a building can become not only a home but also contribute to reactivating the finances of people who are in need of a life experience that goes beyond just a roof over their heads. In this perspective, housing is seen as a tool for starting empowerment processes – of people and buildings – that define new space and type solutions able to produce effects, especially in fragile contexts when supported by special policies. The contexts touched upon by the research are fragile areas: buildings and neighbourhoods found in town and city peripheries. The intervention aims to reinforcing economic and relational networks already present within the context, impacting the surrounding public spaces and encouraging an alternative way of living.

KEYWORDS

Territorial fragilities; affordable housing; peripheries; adaptive reuse; home-work link.

INTRODUCTION

Our contribution addresses the subject of living space designed in the perspective of access to housing, the home-work connection, the adaptive reuse of existing stock, regeneration of peripheral areas and fragile contexts. The text presents the initial results of ongoing studies developed within the "Territorial Fragilities" project put in place by Politecnico di Milano's Department of Architecture and Urban Studies. Two distinct lines of research[1] are brought together: *ForDwell*, considering forms, uses and spaces for contemporary living, and *PeriFrag*, observing projects and policies for

[1] Overall, this paper is the joint work of the two authors. However, §1 and §2 were written by Fabio Lepratto; part §4 by Elena Fontanella; the abstract, the introduction, §3 and §5 were written together.

architectural, urban and social regeneration of town and city peripheries. The argument developed here refers to the first stage of a research-by-design experience, aimed at defining new forms of accessible living, achieved by the inventive redevelopment of non-residential, under-utilized or derelict public stock. The research was developed within the Affordable Housing Final Thesis Studio at Politecnico di Milano,[2] which was a place for research and design experimentation using a multidisciplinary approach.

1. ACCESS TO HOUSING

Italian housing conditions are in a critical state, with an average regression of affordability and institutions seriously challenged in coping with the growing crisis, which also extends to new forms of fragility that affect even regular user profiles (Baldini 2010). If it is true that "one hundred years of housing policies in industrialized countries have never eliminated housing exclusion" (Tosi 2017), it is equally demonstrable that it is actually a growing phenomenon (Nomisma for Federcasa 2016), in Italy and across most of Europe (Pittini et al. 2017). There are between two and three million Italian families facing housing difficulties, many of whom suffer social marginalization (Tosi 2017). Over 1,700,000 households are at similar risk of succumbing to forms of default and loss of their home.[3] In the face of these high numbers, public housing stock, estimated at just over 850,000 dwellings, is not proportionate to the number of people experiencing acute housing difficulties.[4] This growing "fragilization" of housing conditions is a process simultaneously encountering social, spatial and institutional issues, faced with the rapid change in economic conditions and, above all, with difficulties in accessing employment and income. The sheer speed at which the latter vary impacts the population much more quickly than the ability of institutions to react with policies or of spaces to adapt to changing needs (Balducci 2018): a misalignment that accentuates social marginality, neglect, deprivation.

The correlation between access to housing and access to employment, especially in peripheral areas, has been addressed in recent programs and policies promoted by local institutions, linked to cohesion and social inclusion projects, financed at national and community level. For example, the special program for urban redevelopment and safety in peripheries launched by Naples Municipal Authority merges the right to housing with the right to work, education and training. The joint goal of the "Agenzia Sociale per la Casa" ["Social Agency for Housing"], financed with PON (National Operational Program) funds for metropolitan areas, is to counteract those housing problems generated by lack of income because of unemployment. In addition to receiving a living space, the people engaged by the program are included in guided independence courses, aimed at rebuilding employment and so indirectly resolving right to housing issues.[5]

Similarly, in Milan's Lorenteggio district, ongoing urban requalification is aided by a plan to support training, professional requalification and self-employment for the most fragile subjects and the unemployed. The aim is to strengthen the economic

[2] Politecnico di Milano, School of Architecture Urban Planning Construction Engineering, Master of Science in Architecture - Built Environment Interiors, Final Thesis Studio "Affordable Housing: Domesticity Reloaded. Form, Uses, Spaces, Practices and Policy for Contemporary Dwelling", Professors: Massimo Bricocoli, Gennaro Postiglione, Stefania Sabatinelli. In collaboration with the Research Team "ForDwell-DASTU Dipartimento d'Eccellenza": Gaia Caramellino, Stefano Guidarini, Fabio Lepratto, Simona Pierini, Roberto Rizzi; and with AIUC School scholars: Barbara Brollo, Antonio Carvalho, Lorenzo Consalez, Elena Fontanella, Francesca Gotti, Marco Jacomella, Massimiliano Nastri, Ingrid Paoletti; in cooperation with Double Degree program TU Graz prof. Andreas Lichtbau.

[3] Less than 4% of Italy's housing stock: one of the lowest percentages in Europe.

[4] Source: Nomisma research for Federcasa "Il ruolo dell'ERP negli interventi di rigenerazione delle periferie-Stato di fatto e prospettive future" ["Public Residential Building's role in regeneration actions for peripheries – state of affairs and future prospects".

[5] www.coesionenapoli.it/bandi-e-avvisi/pon-metro-napoli/

fabric of the neighbourhood, in tandem with the improvement of spatial quality. The various actions envisaged, with POR-ESF funds for 2014–2020 and the European Regional Development Fund, also 2014–2020, combine support for micro-businesses and the creation of social impact enterprise. Only the future will tell if these actions are successes or failures. It is nonetheless interesting to register how housing and employment are perceived as interacting issues, which cannot be addressed separately. Moreover, what kind of space do these kinds of projects require? What role could be played by a rethinking types of living spaces? What prospects open up for abandoned public buildings in developing opportunities that combine access to housing and access to jobs? This research considers the idea of starting over from unused buildings and their repurposing, to trigger positive reactions in the relationships between spaces, societies, institutions, and economies. The boundaries of the project research are therefore determined by the recognition of two main issues: the need to act on the home–work link, and the desire to seek opportunities for reclaiming extant public – and not solely residential – stock.

2. THE HOME-WORK LINK

The problem of having access to housing is the fallout of failure to find employment. In the current conditions of uncertainty and high unemployment, a large part of the population is marginalized, without a continuous and adequate income that would allow stable access to a decent home.

The architectural relationships between work and living spaces stand as a concrete expression of the different economic models following on over time, with specific building types emerging for each model, distinguished by the ways in which the settings are conceived and organized. For example, the archetypal shared work and living space of the Medieval house-shop or the rigid functional separation, typical of Fordism (Holliss 2015). Starting from the 1970s, changing economic models brought new practices in the use of space and triggered type changes (still incomplete), which highlight how existing dwellings are often unsuitable for current needs, especially if referred to today's forms of economic livelihood (van Gameren et al. 2019). This occurs in an era where work or productive environments demand compatibility with living spaces and installation in urban areas (Melotto, Pierini 2012; Misino 2018). We refer not only conditions rendered favourable by current technologies that enable efficient remote or home working (as the spread of smart working activity due to Covid-19 pandemic has shown), but also the return of manufacturing, artisanal or digitized production, within the urban fabric (Rappaport 2015). Nonetheless, the most recurrent experiments proposing new architectural solutions do not seem to fall within the realm of affordable housing.

Among the most popular type variants, the concept of a single building accommodating "co-living" and "co-working" combinations has taken hold in Europe and the United States, also attracting attention in the academic field (Coricelli et al. 2018). It is worth pointing out, however, that this is a commercial product, targeting subjects who do not face economic problems: generally young professionals who do not see themselves in traditional housing models and are willing to commit themselves economically to live within solutions they consider most congenial to their needs. There seems to be room for exploring new architectural solutions therefore, which might offer scenarios for rethinking the status of the dwelling and transforming it into a spatial support for accommodation but also assisting in the reactivation of the finances of those requiring a housing experience that

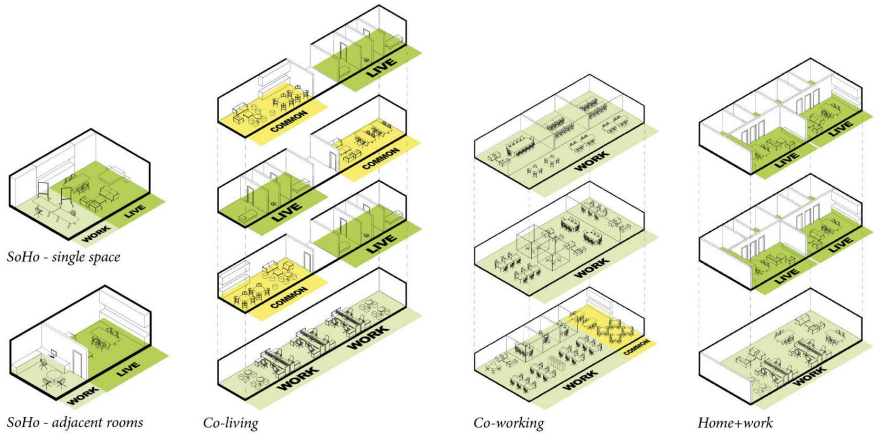


Figure 1. Contemporary housing+working models, ranging from private to public way of interaction between the different embedded activities (Cui, Mendoza 2019). From left to right: SoHo (with a single space or adjacent rooms), Co-living, Co-working, Home+work. In light green: working spaces, in green: living spaces, in yellow: common facilities.

goes beyond just having a roof over their heads. By combining accessible housing, a productive environment and upgrading of extant properties, a dwelling can then become a device for initiating processes to redeem people, buildings and urban contexts by defining innovative space and type solutions, integrated with targeted policies and services.

3. STARTING OVER FROM EMPTY PERIPHERAL SPACES

Italy is littered with public structures in a state of neglect but with huge redevelopment potential. As detailed by many studies and much research,[6] Italy has a large pool of unfinished works, derelict buildings, unused structures, assets confiscated from organized crime, etc. Part of the huge extent of this legacy – comprising offices, schools, hospitals, depots, boarding schools, barracks, warehouses, sports facilities, and much more – can be brought under the microscope thanks to a number of databases, including real estate surveys conducted by public authorities and made available by the Ministry of Economy and Finance, or the list of assets confiscated from organized crime, collected from the open platform OPEN RE.GI.O.[7]

Faced with the question research asks about how unexploited public assets can be put to good use in an approach seeking interaction between residential spaces and work opportunities, development potential may vary according to different factors, which include prompting from contexts, social networks, local opportunities and resources, public and private players, the type of

[6] Among them: Re-cycle Italy PRIN (Projects of Relevant National Interest) research (https://recycleitaly.net/); Ri-formare Milano and Ri-formare Periferie: a teaching and research project promoted by the School of Architecture of Politecnico di Milano (http://www.riformaremilano.polimi.it/); The Abandonment Atlas for the Metropolitan City of Milan, promoted by the Centro Studi PIM (http://www.pim.mi.it/atlante-abbandono/); The research developed by the Permanent Laboratory on Abandonment Places of the Università degli Studi di Milano, Dipartimento di Beni Culturali e Ambientali (http://users.unimi.it/labb/index.html).

[7] Official platform of the National Agency for the Administration of Distressed and Confiscated Assets from Organized Crime (Anbsc): https://openregio.anbsc.it/.

artefact, its size and state of repair, the user profiles (ordinary or fragile) to be engaged.
The reference contexts correspond to areas that are experiencing or have experienced fragilization processes in the past and focusabove all on "rejects" located in town and city suburbs, where there is more marked social and material vulnerability, often accompanied by strong housing pressure. Within these town and city contexts, the presence of abandoned or underutilized buildings simultaneously represents a "fragility" and a "spatial resource". Indeed, while the presence of abandoned buildings contributes to degradation in peripheral areas (Bianchetti 2003; Petrillo 2018) by intensifying the perception of a daily absence of care, it also represents an opportunity for redevelopment that will trigger or support regeneration processes. The quest for accessible housing solutions able to integrate work opportunities and accommodation spaces becomes a chance to overturn the predominantly monofunctional residential status that is often the case in peripheral areas and contributes to the development of new centralities. This could translate into the ability to spark changes through architectural projects, acting on the spatial dimension of suburban fragility in towns and cities, while engaging social and economic fragilities. When synergies develop for housing, employment, social policies, and the regeneration of metropolitan suburbs, the effects produced by spatial conversions strengthening the home–work link could possibly contribute to generating better effects for economic and social factors. Architectural actions on abandoned buildings also aim to strengthen relationship and economic networks found in the reference context and generate further transformations to impact neighbouring public spaces, promoting an alternative way of life able to "make a city". The various options for redevelopment of buildings abandoned in the urban fabric are closely linked to the specific construction features (both in spatial and structural terms) and to the characteristics of the reference contexts. However, in more general terms, we can identify various openings that support ideas for conversion into economically accessible residential buildings that can accommodate work and production spaces, where spatial potential derives from the type of public building where neglect is prevalent. In particular, considering the presence in Italy of state-owned barracks, schools, hospitals, mental homes, and indoor markets, in a state of neglect or severely underutilized,[8] we can suppose that these types of construction lend themselves to redevelopment projects both in short-term and long-term scenarios. In point of fact, these categories frequently combine the presence of large spaces, often on the ground floor (gyms and refectories in the case of schools; canteens or garages in the case of barracks) with smaller circulation areas set along corridors (for example classrooms or hospital rooms), and with large distribution and circulation spaces. The categories mentioned feature not only individual buildings but also groups of constructions vaunting open spaces that connect seamlessly with public areas. Opening these up, and quickly, may offer an opportunity to rethink the relationship with the surroundings. These opportunities for repurposing and redevelopment could open the door to unforeseen combinations that precisely through the integration of domestic and production spaces contribute to enhancing existing areas that have lost their active role in the life of contemporary cities.

[8] The Italian Ministry of Economy and Finance completed an accurate Survey of Public Administrations Real Estate, including that in state of abandonment. The data are collected according to art. 2, paragraph 222, Law 23 December 2009, no. 191. Administrations inform the Ministry: about 80% for the 2016 survey.

4. LEARNING FROM PRACTICE: THREE CRUCIAL "INGREDIENTS"

The first step declared in the research project discussed here aims to work on integrating the more strictly private and domestic dimension of living and working the same place. It intends to observe with coherence the accessibility of dwelling and working in peripheral urban and metropolitan contexts by enhancing existing spatial resources.
In this sense, it intends to recover the complexity often found in a number of types in the past, which has gradually been lost. To do this, the (minimum) "ingredients" deemed necessary for the definition of innovative structures that would integrate living and work areas were identified and explored with reference to recent works and experiments in the Western context. This breakdown is required before proceeding to the subsequent phase of re-composition, articulation and hybridization, which will be addressed by the project in its role as an outright instrument and field of research. There are three ingredients – understood as components for pursuing the relationship between access to a home space and access to a work space – identified as "domestic spaces", "production spaces" and "shared spaces".

1) *Domestic* –in particular *affordable– spaces* can be considered an essential ingredient, beginning from adaptive reuse of non-residential public buildings, an approach that opens up the possibility of increasing the number of accessible dwellings, starting with abandoned public resources. In this respect, the Vandkunsten Architects *Apartments in the Constable School* project, put in place in Copenhagen in 2015, is a particularly relevant reference. These small student apartments were devised in a school building that had been abandoned for decades, in the up-and-coming Margretheholm district. The project focused on redevelopment of the entire building, to which a new layer was added that did not erase what already existed and allows appreciation of the brickwork textures near staircases and windows. The contrast between new and extant also permeates internal spaces, where the housing units are integrated and completed by collective spaces (areas for studying or socializing). The Gantry Studios project in London, designed by Architecture 00 + HawkinsBrown (2017), is another interesting case study of the potential of infilling work and shared space with an existing structure. Indeed, the project was born from an existing framework used as a warehouse for the 2012 Olympics and averted its probable neglect by seeing the potential for redevelopment. The twenty-one units mimic the archetypal house concept and are arranged on the three levels of the structure. Each is finished in different colours and materials, while the supporting structure was constructed from prefabricated wooden modules. These two examples take two approaches recurring in the conversion of existing structures: the first corresponds to the reutilization of the entire building, starting from the intervention on the envelope, while the latter exploits the extant as a support into which smaller elements are introduced to make the space habitable.

2) The *production spaces* intended to be integrated into the design experiments, range from more traditional types of work environments (art studios, manual workshops, ateliers, offices) to more innovative spaces linked to new forms of production, including cultural. Strathcona Village, built in Vancouver (2018) to designs by GBL Architects, shows how integrating production spaces into residential complexes can affect the base layer of buildings, combining light industrial production, commercial spaces and offices. A BETA Office project in progress in Amsterdam – *NDSM Treehouse* – develops a concept for 100 affordable studios for young emerging artists. This incremental structure built from recycled materials combines individual

workspaces with two large area for hosting exhibitions and workshops, concentrating on the interaction between private, collective and open spaces.

3) It is precisely the latter dimension, the *collective space* and "communal area", that represents a third important ingredient. Referable to both the domestic and the productive component, the communal areacan build the way to opening towards the context of reference and the local community, as in the case of the *Ru Paré Community*, which redeveloped a school into a community centre, to a design by BETA Office. In a suburban district of Amsterdam (Slotervaart, 2017), the redevelopment devised by this project refers both to the building itself and to the surrounding district, with the added aim of stimulating the local economy. The old classrooms allowed placement of different functions related to the new community centre, while the presence of a gym – initially considered an element of weakness because of its position inside the building – developed into a resource. By relocating the building's entrance to the gym and adding a vertical opening and closing system, this area became a foyer that manages the transition from the interior to the exterior. Communal areas thus became the core of the project. The case of *Hal7 Makers Corner* is also interesting for the role played by communal spaces in hybrid programs. Realized by Vandkunsten Architects in Roskilde (DK, 2017), the conversion worked on redeveloping a disused industrial shed by modifying the structure itself and installing new buildings inside it. The new building units are then made by upcycling waste, in particular by repurposing disused shipping containers. The spaces created inside the readapted and suitably insulated containers are dedicated to work and light production, while the intermediate spaces are designed to welcome both those who work inside the structure daily and as a meeting point for the local community.

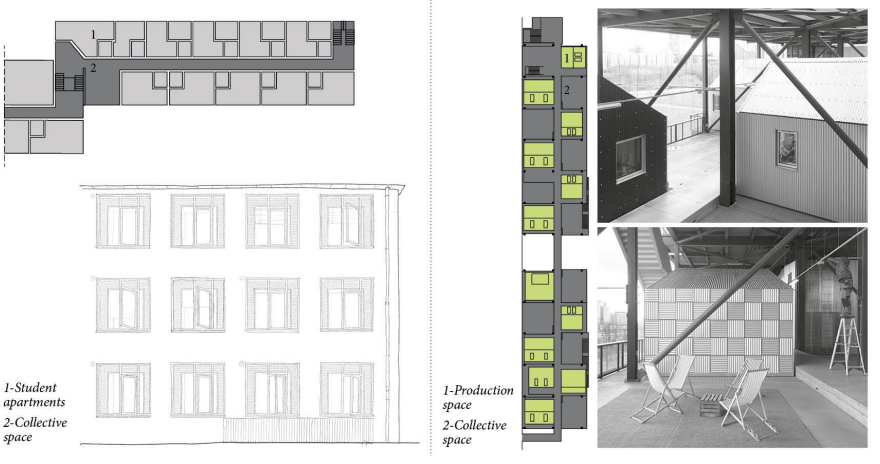


Figure 2. Two adaptive approaches to make the space habitable: reusing the entire building within the envelope (I), exploiting the extant as a support for introducing smaller units (II). Left side: Student Apartment in the former Constable School, Vandkunsten Architects, Copernhagen 2015 (Diagram and sketch: Lepratto 2020). Right side: The Gantry Studios. Architecture 00 + HawkinsBrown, London 2017 (Diagram: Fontanella 2020, photos: Lepratto 2020).

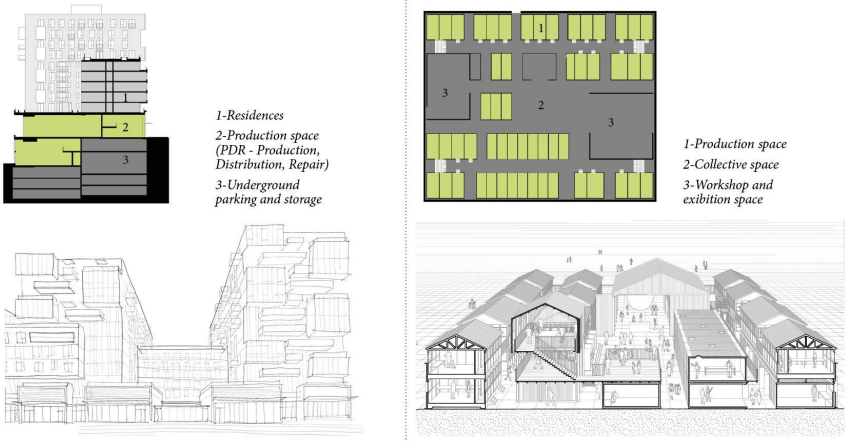


Figure 3. "Productive spaces" in recent developments. Left side: Strathcona Village, GBL Architects, Vancouver 2018 (Diagram: Grassano 2020, sketch: Lepratto 2020). Right side: ADSM Treehouse, Beta Office, Amsterdam (ongoing) (Diagram: Grassano 2020, perspective: Beta Office 2019).

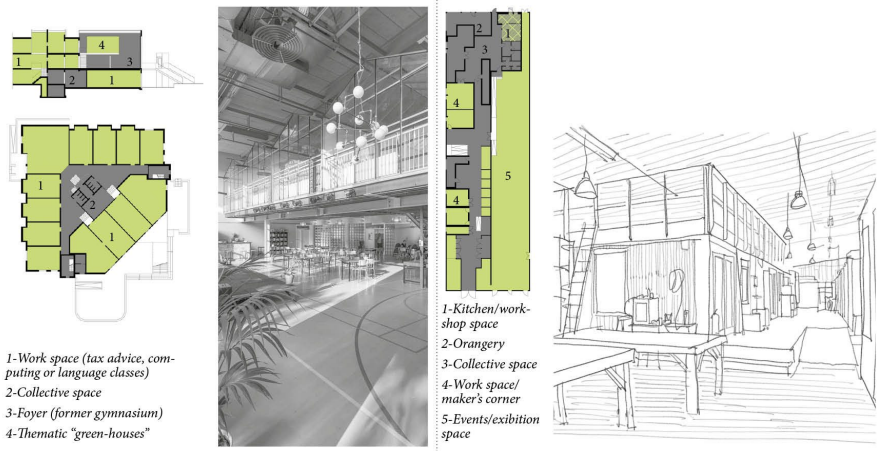


Figure 4. Collective spaces and communal areas. Left side: Ru Paré Community, Beta Office, Amsterdam 2017 (Diagram: Grassano 2020, photo: Marc Faasse - Beta Office 2019). Right side: Hal7 Makers Corner, Vandkunsten Architects, Roskilde 2017 (Diagram: Grassano 2020, sketch: Lepratto 2020).

CONCLUSIONS: FIVE POINTERS FOR ARCHITECTURAL DESIGN TRIALS

By studying and comparing an extensive number of past and contemporary case studies – some of which were described in the previous paragraph – we drafted initial input for defining some points crucial in outlining a possible functional program that will be tested and implemented through future research by design. These points range from the scale of functional areas to relationships within the building, and also look at the rapport with the contexts.

Domestic spaces

In an attempt to redefine living spaces perceiving them in relation to workspaces, we can define a domestic environment by suggesting a number of architectural configurations, even far removed from what we usually call "home". Finding dedicated resources and spaces for working, in an affordable housing context may require compression of private domestic arrangements, partially offset by planning for shared spaces and services. We see not only the construction of small apartments, occupied by a single-family, but also of "clusters" of rooms or mini-lodgings, grouped around communal spaces,[9] as well as independent micro units, prefabricated boxes positioned to render large-scale structures habitable, with sound and heat insulation, air-conditioning, and building services. Depending on each case, the challenge posed by finding a physical demarcation line between the home and the work environments will differ. Sometimes these two dimensions share a single space and a boundary is established simply by the time of day. In other situations, home and work are in adjacent rooms, separated by furnishings or a door, and only the actual user is involved. In yet other cases, the two dimensions are installed in the same building, connected by a distribution system, and the workers are not obliged to reside there or residents to work there.

Productive environment

The space of the productive environment can be organized to meet the requirements of different work situations: self-employed, business, contractor, etc. Some workplaces are fluid, complex to describe; others are more static and traditional. Design then needs to conceive and/or combine environments that have very different characteristics and scales: the minimum space required by a freelancer who may need nothing more than a PC; the environment required by a small business; a medium-sized production area for companies or cooperatives. In the first case, a workspace can overlap with a dwelling (Small Office Home Office – SoHo categories) or it can be integrated into shared spaces, where it is possible to rent meeting rooms or occasionally work with other professionals (co-working spaces). The latter two cases, albeit on different scales, require spaces with boundaries, properly separated from a domestic area, often for hygiene, safety or access control reasons. They include home–workshops, where the two functions interact but are separated by a boundary, and production surfaces integrated into neutral mixed-use buildings, available to host activities compatible with – even if not directly connect to – housing. In the three cases, if the working activity is visible from the outside, it is a positive element that may foster business development.

Communal areas

Communal spaces play an important negotiating role for areas in the building, first of all managing the relationship between the dimensions of personal and working lives, acting as filters to ensure coexistence of the two aspects in a single construction. Shared

[9] For instance, the Mehr als wohnen project (2009-2015), designed by the Duplex Architekten firm of Zürich.

spaces can be configured as informal areas, extremely adaptable and thus versatile in use. They may allow an integration of leisure and socialization activities and shared services (laundry, gym, communal kitchens etc ...). They are often intersected by distribution spaces, transforming stairs and corridors into timeout or observation spaces for the many activities going on in the complex. They have different levels of accessibility that correspond to just as many levels of sharing: some are aimed at the general public, others are only for the entire community of resident and/or workers who have settled in the building, or part of it. Finally, other environments can be shared by a few individual users, generally to complement their compact homes.

Adaptive reuse

The identification of abandoned public buildings can be considered a relevant starting point for definition of non-conventional adaptive reuse projects focused on the home–work relationship. If the presence of unused buildings in a state of neglect inevitably generates forms of degradation around them, regardless of their location, their redevelopment comes as a great opportunity in the urban fabric for upcycling *rejects* into *resources* to avoid further consumption of land and waste of embodied energy. The adaptive reuse of vacant public buildings can open up forms of temporary living tied to specific situations demanding immediate responses, but also be involved in long-term planning. Such time constraints will inevitably correspond to different levels of conversions, use of economic resources and materials. In a perspective targeting environmental sustainability, the latter can be identified as part of virtuous recycling and upcycling processes.

Periphery Regeneration

In peripheral areas, converting what is discarded and no longer used into resources also offers an opportunity to start or support wider-ranging regeneration processes. Within these, the relationships between living and working spaces can play an active role in abolishing residential or production monofunctionality, which is often a connotation, fostering mixité, leveraging local specificities. In contemporary suburbs, developing the home–work connection can translate into the possibility of promoting opportunities for exchange that may allow these contexts to be opened up, engaging them with their surroundings by intercepting flows and attracting a non-resident population. At the same time this could contribute to the strengthening or building – when absent – of a sense of belonging to a community and a place. In this perspective, the energies (like non-profit associations and cooperatives) already present in these territories, which very often perform different activities in these contexts in support of the local population, represent an additional resource with which experiences such as those already mentioned for Naples and Milan could come into contact and build fertile interactions.

The preliminary work presented here targets a perspective of design research commensurate to the different scales of architecture; housing, social and urban planning policies; economics; and social sciences. From a methodological standpoint, the role attributed to future architectural experimentation is considered crucial as a further investigation to increase knowledge of the described topic. The project is used as a probe capable of testing redevelopment actions in paradigmatic situations. The experiments will help to understand complex realities that intercept the material, social and institutional dimensions. The research key combined with clearly stated intentions to act are intended to produce narratives, stimulate new scenarios, asking interacting disciplinary sectors open questions, tracing generalizable and/or replicable actions that increase disciplinary knowledge.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

We would like to thank Amirhossein Adelfar, Carlo Bernyak, Victoria Braile, Jiarui Cui, Vanessa Falcone, Anamaria Giraldo, Gaia Grassano, Gerardo Mendoza, Dario Michencigh, Matej Paladin: the group of students of the Final Thesis Studio "Affordable Housing: Domesticity Reloaded. Form, Uses, Spaces, Practices and Policy for Contemporary Dwelling" that developed, under our supervision, some of the drawings that are shown in this paper.
We wish to extend our special thanks to professors Massimo Bricocoli, Gennaro Postiglione and Stefania Sabatinelli for giving us the opportunity to combine our research topics within teaching activity in a multidisciplinary studio.

REFERENCES

Baldini, M. 2010. *La casa degli italiani*. Bologna: Il Mulino.

Balducci, A. 2018. "La città mutevole". In *Città, sostantivo plurale*, edited by Giuliani, I., Pasqui, G. and Piscitelli, P., 73-97. Milano: Fondazione Giangiacomo Feltrinelli.

Bianchetti, C. 2003. "Periferie". In *Abitare la città contemporanea*. 63-76. Milano: Skira.

Coricelli, F., Quaglio, C., Robiglio, M., Rolfo, D., Russi, N. P. 2018. *Re-housing. La casa come dispositivo di integrazione*. http://hdl.handle.net/11583/2713706

Holliss, F. 2015. *Beyond Live/Work. The architecture of Home-based Work*. London and New York: Routledge.

Nomisma per Federcasa, 2016. *Report annuale per FEDERCASA, Dimensione e caratteristiche del disagio abitativo In Italia e ruolo delle Aziende per la casa*.

Melotto, B., Pierini, O. S. 2012. *Housing primer: le forme della residenza nella città contemporanea*. Santarcangelo di Romagna: Maggioli.

Misino, P. 2018. *La casa On/Off. Spazi dell'abitare produttivo*. Siracusa: LetteraVentidue.

Petrillo, A. 2018. *La periferia nuova. Disuguaglianza, spazi, città*. Milano: Franco Angeli.

Pittini, A., Koessl, G., Dijol, J., Lakatos, E., Ghekiere, L. 2017. *The State of Housing in the EU*. Brussels: Housing Europe.

Pittini, A. 2012. *Housing Affordability in the EU: Current situation and recent trends*. CECODHAS Housing Europe's Observatory Research Brifing.

Rappaport, N. 2015. *Vertical urban factory*. New York: Actar.

Tosi, A. 2017. *Le case dei poveri. È ancora possibile pensare un welfare abitativo?* Milano-Udine: Mimesis.

van Gameren, D., van Andel, F., van den Heuvel, F., Klijn, O., Kraaij, A., Kuitenbrouwer, P., Mooij, H., van der Putt, P., Schreurs, E., Teerds, H., Zeinstra, J. 2019. *Home Work City. Living and Working in the Urban Block*. Dash 15: Delft Architectural Studies on Housing.

PAPER #6.17

SINGLE-WALL TIMBER GRANARIES BOX CONSTRUCTION IN TURKISH AND SPANISH RURAL ARCHITECTURE CONTEXTS

Ahmed K. Ali[a]
[a] Texas A&M University, College Station, Texas, USA

ABSTRACT

This paper offers a comparative overview and analytical dissections of the elements of two semi-identical vernacular structures built in similar environments but in very distant locations: The Eastern Black sea region of Turkey, and the northwest of the Iberian Peninsula in Spain. Serander of the Black sea region in Turkey, and Hórreo in Spain are two elements of vernacular architecture, which have similar appearances; functions and construction techniques. Not surprisingly, the two elements are products of similar environmental and economic conditions. Changing social and economic conditions, migration to cities, and abandoning farming has left the old structures empty but with a wealth of knowledge particularly on single-wall timber construction techniques. Unfortunately, these endangered and unprotected structures are being demolished and disappeared in a rapid rate. It is important to document, protect and preserve these unique structures, as there is much to learn from their construction methods. Various aspects of both Serander, and Hórreo are thus surprisingly similar. Both of them were built and detailed for disassembly. Many of the Hórreos are well preserved and well protected, but it is not possible to make a similar statement for Seranders, which are in the process of perishing, due to changes in economic activities and life-patterns in the modern Turkish society. This paper is based on an extensive fieldwork throughout the Eastern Black sea region during the summer of 2014 and the review of relevant literature of Horreos. A digital reconstruction of the construction assembly process was also prepared for this paper.

KEYWORDS

Vernacular architecture; hórreo; serander; single-wall timber construction; black sea region; Spain.

INTRODUCTION

Serander of the Black sea region in Turkey and Hórreo in Spain are two forgotten elements of vernacular architecture, which have similar appearances; functions and construction techniques (Figure 1,2). Not surprisingly, both are products of similar environmental and economic conditions (KARPUZ 1999). Serander is part of a rural residential typology founded by natural and economic conditions of the Eastern Black sea region. A simple single-wall timber structure constructed on posts over a platform (Ali and O'Brien 2016). This building is usually used to store grains and food, while some are used for residential purposes as guest houses. Serander consists of a front terrace (logia) called 'Çardak' or 'Sofa', and a storage space at the back. In some examples, there exist an intermediary space between the Çardak and the storage space. Seranders are classified either according to the position of the logia (positioned on either one, two, or three sides), or according to its size, in the case of which the number of load-bearing posts are taken into consideration (4-post, 4/6-post, 10/12-post). Serander often have

carved timber ornamentations, regardless of its type and size. Serander is considered as the most important adjacent structure to the typical country house in the region. Serander is constructed approximately 4-5 meters away from the rural house but close to the roadside. Anyone who is wealthy enough in the countryside would own a Serander. It is suggested that the original source and the word Serander comes from two words: "Kseros", which means dry in Pontus Greek, and "Andiro" means balcony/ terrace. Kseros" + "Andiro" = "Kserosandiro" "Kserander" "Hserander" "Serander". Which means literally drying place, "drying balcony" for corn and hazelnuts (Türk Dili Dergisi Sayı 630, Prof. DR. Hasan EREN). The Eastern Black sea region of Turkey is geographically separated from the inner regions of the Anatolian Peninsula by a chain of mountains. The four-season rainy climate created a green flora, and settlements were established at the skirts of the mountains up to 3000 meters high. Villages were established at the banks of several rivers arising from the mountains and reaching to the sea. Due to topography, an isolated culture was developed in the Eastern Black sea region (Usta 2012). In the two cities of Rize and Artvin, a rich wooden craftsmanship has been developed. Traditional wood and masonry construction methods were used in building masjids (mosques), houses and grain storages. Although an irregular settlement is commonly observed in the Eastern Black sea villages, there are clustered houses in some neighborhoods and villages. A barn is added to the house plan and placed at the ground floor due to steep terrains. A kitchen (*Aşhana*), bedroom, and storeroom were located at the first floor. The main components of the kitchen are; a stove in the middle, an oven located by one of the walls, a ground washbasin (*Suluk*), and a cabinet. Besides, a seating bench (*Peyke*), a stove, and a ground washbasin are also located inside the room. The typical Eastern Black sea house layouts were divided into two types; East of the city of Trabzon where houses with porch (*Hayat*) and west of Trabzon where houses with kitchen (*Aşhana*). Rooms were located around the porch, which is interconnected to the kitchen. On the other hand, there was no porch in the houses with kitchen, and two rooms (one is a storeroom) were connected directly to the kitchen (KARPUZ 1982). A barn is located at the ground floor and a storeroom (for milk and cheese) is connected to a kitchen. In Trabzon, a combination of stone and wood construction were used, however in Rize and Artvin, a timber log construction and masonry techniques were used (SÜMERKAN 1991).

Figure 1. House (left) and Serander (right), Pervane Köyü Araklı Village in Trabzon. Source: (Author 2014)

Figure 2. Elements of a typical Spanish Hórreos. Source: (Flicker / Artilanes.com 2008)

1.HÓRREO

Hórreos are traditional rural storage buildings usually found in the northern part of Spain and primarily used for storing food and grains. The particular type of Horreos discussed in this paper is located in the Asturias, within the Iberian Peninsula (de Aldecoa 1999). Its shape and configuration are different from the traditional Galician Horreos (Rouco 2001). Hórreos were the solution to provide natural ventilation, while preventing access to unwanted rodents. They are typically built of timber, stone, or masonry with a grain chamber (warehouse box) elevated and isolated from the ground and with ventilation openings on the side walls (Perez-Garcia et al. 2010). The Iberian granaries were mainly constructed in two different materials: stone and timber. They were completely constructed of thick slabs of granite. The platform or pillars below, the frame system of the granary, the gridded walls between the frame system and even the roof were made of stone (Özcan 1999). Similar to Seranders, Hórreos were an indispensable separate structure for the locals living in the rural parts of the region. The unique structures were developed with outstanding aesthetical appearance yet surprisingly functioned as the modern fridge. Many kinds of food, especially hazelnuts and corns were dried and stored. These structures sometimes functioned as guest houses. Hórreos were typically built on 4 thick pillars. On the intersection points between these pillars and the warehouse box, wheels or disks approximately 70-80 cm diameter, a part of which is plain, and the other part is domed are placed. The purpose of these wheels was to prevent mice to reach the stored food and grains. Hórreos were covered with terracotta or slate tiles and surrounded by wooden bars. A room and balcony made of timber sticks were also part of the Hórreo. Hazelnut and corn were dried in the balcony and the room was usually used as storehouse (Ozen and Keles 2008).

2.SERANDER CONSTRUCTION PROCESS

The The sequence of a typical Serander construction was as follows: first, timber posts were erected with a height that is taller than a regular person. The posts were then laterally supported with buttresses or knee-bracing system (figures 1). In sloped terrains, posts were seated on tree trunk bases. There are also circular, wooden or stone headpieces (wheel) that sit on the top of the posts to prevent rats and other animals from climbing up through the structure. Thick wooden beams that carry the main warehouse box structure are placed on the headpieces. The main structure, which is made of 5-7cm-thick chestnut or hornbeam wood planks, is seated on these beams. Serander, is built with wooden masonry construction method (similar to log construction by stacking the structural members horizontally). Timber members are combined to each other primarily by the mortise or lab joints, but corners are joined using scarf joint techniques (figure 5). Since no nails were used in the assembly, Seranders were designed to be disassembled and moved to other villages (Eruzun 1977). The warehouse box floor system was usually constructed as grid shaped, knitted branches of a tree called “Kumar” underneath. Grills for ventilation on the openings of the sidewalls are necessary to circulate air inside the storage box and air circulation is primarily obtained inside the warehouse through this system. The roofing system of Serander is typically built with wooden truss members from trees and designed as a “saddle-headstock” roof (sloped to two sides) or “four shoulder” (sloped to four sides). The roofing material was either wood shingles (Hartama) or fired clay roof tiles (Figure 5). Below the storage box, where the load baring posts stand, not only the tasks like shucking corns, sorting hazelnuts took place, but also woodpiles or beehives etc. were stored. The upper semi-covered section of the Serander is designed

as a balcony, gallery or logia. In some parts of the region, the logia is called "Hayat", and in other parts called "sofa". The logia is usually located at one or four sides of the structure. Corn cobs are hanged, and some foods and pickle jars are stored in the logia. Grinding of flour with a hand mill is also a task that is usually done in that section.

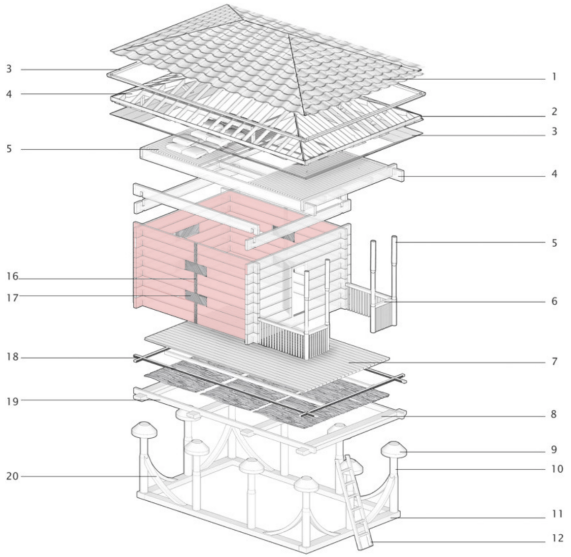
The main space of the Serander is the warehouse box. Peeled corns are stored and sometimes dried there. Some of the warehouses include a half-story floor (mezzanine), where corn clusters and hazelnuts are dried. The warehouse sections are divided into two parts in some Seranders. These are called "two-section Serander". There is a small storage section called "sofa" between the logia and the warehouse in some layouts. In this middle section, corns are threshed, and small spaces or storerooms exist for placing corn, flour, and beans. These middle sections can be observed in the villages of Akçaabat and Tonya. Serander types are categorized among the locals according to their sizes, and the size of a Serander is determined primarily based on the number of its posts. Özgüner suggested a different typology based on the logia/warehouse relation: Seranders with a logia on one side, two sides, three sides, and four sides (ÖZGÜNER 1970). Another size-based typology of Seranders were suggested as small Seranders with four posts, mid-size Sranders with 6-8 posts, and big Seranders with 10-12 posts (Eruzun 1977). The common single-story Serander types are mainly used for drying corn, storing materials and food supplies. They are also used as a guesthouse and/or resting place when necessary. In hot summer nights, people use the Serander to socialize after a long day of work. The function of the guestroom, an important element in Turkish architecture, is provided through placing a room at the ground floor of the two-story Seranders. The ground floor is used as a cellar and sometimes as a storeroom.

Figure 3. Entrance (ornamented) to the box from logia, Muhtar Bey house, Trabzon. Source: (Author 2014)

Figure 4. Corn and hazelnuts inside the storage room, Muhtar Bey house, Trabzon. Source: (Author 2014)

Serander is a special structure that represents the wealth of a village house owner. Because of that, the structure is elaborately ornamented. Beams at the front of a Serander, the entrance door, and the ventilation openings of the warehouse section are also ornamented. The ornamentations are done with wood engraving and hemstitch (auger) techniques. Rims and panels made with geometric and botanical patterns were included. Symbolic examples as pinwheel and star-crescent exist among other traditional patterns. No sufficient information regarding the sources of these wooden decorations and folk architecture exists. It is presumed that the oldest examples in this region were around 200-250 years old.

2.1. Serander elements and assembly process



1. Örtü (roofing material)
2. Ayna (facia)
3. Tavan döşemesi (ceiling slab)
4. Duvar tahtasi (side boards)
5. Balkon direği (balcony post)
6. Korkuluk (railings)
7. Hasir (reed mat)
8. Kiriş (beam/girder)
9. Teker (disk/wheel)
10. Direk (post)
11. Sal bağı (raft knot / wooden beam)
12. Merdiven (ladder)
13. Çita (lath)
14. Mertek (framed structure)
15. Raf (shelf)
16. Kanalli dikme (slotted/ channeled mast)
17. Havalandirma deliği (ventilation opening)
18. Döşeme alti çitasi (slab bottom lath)
20. Çalman / payanda (buttress)

Figure 5. Exploded drawing of the elements of a typical Black sea region Serander. Source: (Author 2014)

1. Örtü (roofing material): The earlier versions of the seranders' roofs were covered in sliced hornbeam tree trunks, called "Hardoma". Trunks were sliced in boards that are approximately 8-10cmx100cm and 1cm thick, then they were overlapped on each other from the sides to the center to cover the roof. Since nailing the hornbeam tree was hard, heavy stones were placed on top for protection from wind effect. Later on, a roof tile material called "Alaturka" (ottoman style tiles) were used. However, low-income families couldn't afford neither wood boards, nor tiles, therefore they reused tin containers after cutting and unfolding it and were nailing them on the roof instead. In order to protect the tin layer from corrosion they coated them with tar. This is the reason why some of the Serander roofs in the black sea region appears black. In the Paphlagonia region (between Kastamonu and Sinop) in both houses and Seranders "kayrak taşı (slate stone)" was used (similar to Seranders in asturias-kalicia regions of Spain "*Horreo*").

2. Ayna (facia): This wood part called "ayna" was nailed for covering the end points of the "Mertek"s (framed structures). Ayna is typically ornamented with wood carvings.

3. Tavan döşemesi (ceiling slab): Above the ceiling of Serander was never completely sealed with wooden slabs. When viewed from inside upwards roof Merteks (framed structures) can be seen. The roof beams stretch from the sidewalls only about 80-100 cm (like a big shelf) in order to use that space as a storage or for drying fruits. These shelfs are also called "Caçel, Tarzel or Tarcel" in the town of Rize.

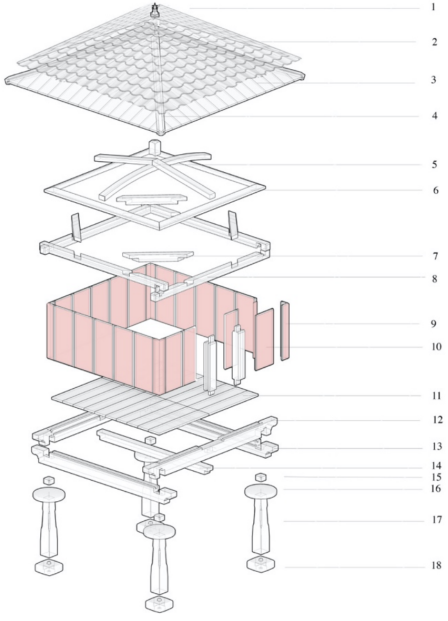
4. Duvar tahtasi (side boards): Almost all around the Black sea region interlocking wood parts by notching their head parts is called "Boğaz (throat-interlock)" (boğaz serander (throat/interlock serander), Boğma Serander (jamming/throttling Serander)).

5. Balkon direği (balcony post)

6. Korkuluk (railings): Usually railings are between 50-60cm high.

7. Misir odasi (corn room): The room floor (ground of the serander room) is covered with chestnut tree wood (no space between woods) in artvin, rize and regions of trabzon close to rize (sürmene). In this case the ventilation openings should be enlarged. On the other hand, in other regions the ground of the serander room is covered by 1cm spacing between wood parts in order to allow air circulation.
8. Kiriş (beam/girder)
9. Teker (disk/wheel)
10. Direk (post)
11. Sal bağı (raft knot / wooden beam): wooden beam is called "sal bağı". The name comes from the vehicle raft. As the raft carries the load upon it, the "sal bağı" carries the load of the Serander.
12. Merdiven (ladder)
13. Çita (lath): No matter what is used as roof covering, in order to attach the covering to the roof laths are nailed (like laths under tiles in modern architecture).
14. Mertek (framed structure): elements used in roof frames and structure are generally called "Mertek".
15. Raf (shelf)
16. Kanalli dikme (slotted/channeled mast): head parts of the side boards from both sides are penetrated into the channel opened in this mast.
17. Havalandirma deliği (ventilation opening) these grilled windows are placed on four sides of the warehouse box. These openings allow air circulation in order to ventilate and dry the corns inside. The patterns of these openings vary in different regions.
18. Döşeme alti çitasi (slab bottom lath)
20. Çalman / payanda (buttress) In modern architecture it is called Payanda (buttress). However, in many places in the Black sea region it is called "Çalman".

2.2. Hórreos elements and assembly process



1. Moños (Bows cover)
2. Tejas (Ceramic roof tiles)
3. Cabrios (rafters)
4. Aguilónes (Vertices Beams)
5. Vigas del queso (curved tie rods)
6. Orilleros (end beams)
7. Gatos (corner bracing)
8. Liños (decorated head beam)
9. Engüelgos (Box Bracing)
10. Colondras (decorated vertical wood planks)
11. Pontes (floor wooden planks)
12. Trabe superior (upper floor beam)
13. Trabe durmiente (lower floor beam)
14. Sovigaño (central bridge beam)
15. Tazas (square wooden levelers for the main beams)
16. Muelas (stone disks or squares/ post head/rodents shield)
17. Pegollos (posts wood, stone or masonry)
18. Pilpayos (column isolated base/ slab on grade)

Figure 6. Exploded drawing of the elements of a typical Spanish Hórreos. Source: (Author 2014)

1. Moños (cantapaxarinos, obispos): The bows, besides fulfilling an aesthetic function, are the finishing pieces that cover the cuts of the tiles or the zenith slates to avoid a possible entrance of water. They are generally formed by two stones, a slab that can be square, round or irregular, placed horizontally and over it a stone more or less conical or pyramidal. There are also ceramic bows in the form of pinnacles that adorn some granaries built in the first half of the twentieth century.
2. Tejas (teyes, teas, teichas, techas, teixas): Tejas are the ceramic roofing tiles that shed water from the roof. The tile traditionally used in hórreos is the curved tile, known as "Arab tile". Also original is the flat tile of industrial manufacture (Asturian pottery of San Claudio, Guisasola ceramics), used in some hórreos and Paneras. The old Arab tiles better protect the roof from wind force uplift because they are heavier, as well as the frost, since their resistance is guaranteed by the years that they are exposed to the elements.
3. Cabrios (cobrios, quebrios, clabios): Cabrios are rafters that form the roof surface. They are nailed with lathes to the burrows and embedded in the watering of the gables. They typically varied in width and have a thickness of between 3.5 and 5.5cm.
4. Aguilónes (aiguilones, aguiles, aligues, anguilones, aquilones): Gables are the beams that define the vertices of the roof in granaries and Paneras. They are placed on the plane, anchored in the insertion of the burrows and connected to each other or to the ridge at the top. They have a longitudinal watering on their two lateral faces, where the heads of the cabrios are inserted. The section of the gables oscillates between 16 x 10cm and 25 x 14cm. The positioning of the gables defines the eaves length and the percentage of inclination of the roof, this can vary from 30 to 40% slope for Arabic tile, and between 40 to 60% for slates. The length of the eaves can vary between 60 to 120cm.
5. Vigas del queso (perros, crucetes): These are two pieces of rectangular timber section, typically curved, to make tie rods in order to counteract the horizontal pushes of the cover and thus avoid the bulging of the lines. In Paneras these beams also serve as support for the pairs that hold the ridge. Its diminsion oscillates between 12 x 10cm and 22 x 15cm.
6. Orilleros (orelleros, agueros, aguaderos): Orilleros are the members that cross the eave perimetral and are typically attached to the ends of the Cabrios.
7. Gatos: Gatos are the bracing members that hold the warehouse box avoiding possible deformations. Gatos are not essential pieces in the granaries, but they are useful to serve against lateral forces.
8. Liños: These are rectangular section beams smaller than the Tabes, that fit on the Colondras and joined using a lab joint. In some cases, Linos are decorated with carvings and paintings, it is common that the heads of the files are carved. Its section is variable, oscillate between 9x14cm to 18x32cm.
9. Engüelgos (embuelgos, engüelbos) Engels are the pieces that form the corners of the box. They are usually made in one piece in the oldest hórreos or made from two Colondras nailed. The swivels give the box stability against possible lateral stresses and have the same thickness and length as the Colondras.
10. Colondras (colondes, corondies, curondes, curondies, cureñes): The Colondras are rectangular planks, with its exterior face carved, that arranged in vertical position conform the box of the granary. On some occasions the Colondras have carved or painted decorations, as well as decorative and functional vents. Its length vary from 100cm in the oldest granaries to 160cm in the most modern. They are made in varied widths, depending on available timber. The thickness oscillates between 4 to 8cm.
11. Pontes (pontis, puentes, puontes, puöntis): Floor planks are found in the oldest granaries and Paneras and are formed by timber boards of varied widths from 6-12cm.
12. Trabe superior (madres): Trabes are the main girders that support the Hórreo load. They do not necessarily have to be straight in

their horizontal face, since typically they take the form of the trunk from which they were sawed. They are joined together by a lab joint. The inner faces of the two longer girders have a length of approximately 6 x 6cm or 7 x 7cm in which the heads of the bridges are arranged. The girders have to span between 3 to 5 meters and their section varies from 16 x 25cm to 25 x 40cm.

13. Trabe durmiente (madres) secondary girders or beams

14. Sovigaño (alcarcelera, carcelera, sobregañu, sobrigañu, sobregaño): Sovigaño is a beam that is centered in the frame which prevents the deflection of the bridges, or, in case the floor is made of boards, There are cases in which, for this same function, two or more overlaps are used. Although it is a piece that is not essential, in most cases it is necessary. The section of the Sovigaño can be square or rectangular and oscillates between 12 x 12cm to 20 x 20cm.

15. Tazas (taces, mollideros, mullideros, tacos, tocos, tecos): A square-shaped prismatic wooden blocks that are placed between the wheels and the girders (chairs), used to level the frame, as well as centering and damping the weights on the wheels. Its dimension oscillate between 12 x 12 x 3cm to 20 x 20 x 12cm.

16. Muelas (mueles, pegolleres, pegulleres): Muelas are stone slabs (rarely made of wood) of square, round or irregular shape, that are placed horizontally on the Pegollos to avoid the access of animals and rodents to the granary or Panera. Its measures oscillate between 60 x 60 x 7cm to 80 x 80 x 20cm.

17. Pegollos (pegullos, peollos, peullos, pigollos, piollos, pegoyos, pigochos, piales): Pegollos are the columns/posts that support, balance and level the granary. Depending on the areas and the antiquity of the construction, they can be made of wood, stone or masonry bonded with mortar of lime or clay.

18. Pilpayos (pilpaños, soleres): Pilpayos are the slabs on which the whole weight of the Hórreo rests on, their function is double, since in addition to cement, they avoid the access of the humidity of the ground to the Pegollos. Its surface dimensions are always greater than the base of the Pegollos and its thickness can never be less than 12cm.

3.SIMILARITIES OF TYPOLOGIES AND CONSTRUCTION METHODS

It is evident that when studying the construction, proportions and materials of traditional architecture, we can realize the simple yet complex machines these objects are; how everything has a reason to be and nothing is superficial or meaningless in them. These folk structures share not only construction, material and form features, but also the areas where they can be found have common climatic and geographic conditions despite the physical distance (Rodríguez, G. G., & Velasco, S. A. 2013). General elements of both Serendars and Horreos can be summarized as the following:

1. Foundations: Drying sheds built in stone needed more carefully planned foundations than wooden ones since they were heavier, but despite this fact, they all must have a solid support.
2. Feet (Posts): They were built in wood or stone and shapes typically varied from circular to square and rectangular. They were conceived as pillars and appeared in different even numbers depending on the size of the drying shed and the style it is built in.
3. Corbels (post capitals): Pillars were typically capped with stone or wooden slabs (wheels/disks) where beams later rest on. These slabs were larger than the columns and beams they serve, and it was because they prevented animals and rodents from reaching corn and hazelnuts. Corbels are structural elements and protection devices at the same time.
4. Grill (matt) This subfloor ventilated layer allowed air to flow around the warehouse box removing high levels of humidity

and allowing constant air replacement. It prevents moisture to reach the storing chamber and acted as a natural barrier for rodents to access the maize.

5. Warehouse (box): The floor system always laid on beams set on top of the structure supports and can vary in size as well as in layout. The first case is the most primitive type and reminds of big knitted baskets in atruncated cone shape with irregular openings all around its perimeter.
6. Roof: In the earlier versions, roofs where movable as the warehouse was loaded from the top. Every year straw was replaced as it didn't keep its properties longer, and the drying shed was loaded with a new crop. Later on, it became a stationary roof as straw was replaced by more endurable roofing materials and an access on the walls was opened for loading maize.
7. Stairs (Ladders): were typically built next to the construction as a separate object. They were never connected to the upper level and the void left corresponds to human dimensions and proportions, preventing rodents or snakes from reaching crops. Sometimes, removable ladders were stored somewhere else when not needed, or stationary isolated steps designed for human proportions.

Figure 7. Tectonics in Serander detail of the corner & ornamentation, Trabzon, Turkey. Source: (Author 2014)

Figure 8. orreo corner detail. Asturias and Galicia, Spain. Source: (iberianature.com N. Lloyd)

4. COMPARISON OF ELEMENTS

The warehouse box structural assembly and construction techniques developed in the mountainous region of the Iberian Peninsula of Spain is fundamentally different than the one developed in the Black sea region of Turkey. While both structures utilized timber board single wall approach, the timber boards in the Horreos were assembled vertically, however in the Seranders were assembled horizontally, similar to timber log construction techniques. The Turkish horizonal arrangement of the single wall boards allowed the development of the resilient corner lap joint which provided the box with more structural stability at the same time the flexibility to cope with seismic forces (the Black sea region have been prone to earthquakes and seismic forces). It could be argued that the corner lab joint was developed as a result of similar techniques that could be traced to timber log construction in the region, similarly assembling the timber boards horizontally could be traced to ship and boat building traditions in the region given the proximity to the sea. The vertical board assembly in the Horreos however were developed without a lab joint at the corners and therefore the box was prone to lateral forces. The examination of many timber Horreos documentations revealed that the majority of structures lost

stability due to earth and wind movements. It could be argued then that the warehouse box typology although seemed similar in both countries, they astonishingly differ in their structural and architectural approach. As seen in figure 7, The development of the corner in Seranders allowed for a sophisticated tectonic expression through the elements and wood carvings. An elaboration of the importance of the structure to folk and vernacular architecture. The following observations could summarize the study findings:

1. These warehouse box granaries structures in Turkey and Spain were prosperity indicators, prestige structures in the cultural life of the two countries. These separate structures served as guest houses, food, and valuables were stored and dried, entertainment and resting activities took place.
2. Both of the two structures were constructed to store grains, and host guests nearby the rural house.
3. Both of the structures were constructed with hybrid wooden and masonry techniques. Loadbearing posts, single wall timber box, and roof systems were similar, however structurally different as explained, and therefore, both could easily be demounted, diss-assembled and transported.
4. Both of the structures had similar sections. Storage-warehouse box, free standing posts with wheel capitals, and a Logia in front or all around were common elements in both structures.
5. The elaborate ornamentation with wood engraving technique or paintings were originated from the importance given to them. However, it was more developed in the Turkish example.

Figure 9. Post/ head/ disk/ and logia detail. Source: (Author 2014)
Figure 10. Scarf joint corner detail. Source: (Author 2014)
Figure 11. Knee bracing and corner post detail. Source: (Author 2014)

CONCLUSION

It is known in the architecture history, especially vernacular architecture, that in similar physical and environmental conditions, similar architectural language and vocabulary are created. Warehouse structures typology found in the country sides of Scandinavia, the Iberian Peninsula, and the Black sea region shared a simple yet sophisticated elements of architecture that were born out of necessities. The two compared examples offered in this study namely Serander in Turkey and Horreo in Spain, while both seemed similar in their structural techniques, a deeper investigation on the box single wall structure revealed a fundamental difference in dealing with lateral forces. It is possible to argue that the geographic timber craftsmanship that were developed in the Black sea region were a major influence in more resilient warehouse box structure that coped with seismic movements. A construction technology that issurprisingly absent from the Iberian Peninsula type. A series of similarities can be seen between the Eastern Black sea region and the Iberian Peninsula life and folk architecture depending on the natural environment. Similar geography and living conditions ended up with creating similar solutions. Great similarities were observed in the economic activities such as: the construction techniques, house and agriculture tools, animal breeding, hunting, and forestry. Similar living styles, structure design and techniques were produced by this way. When the fundamental structures of vernacular and folk architecture are considered, there are functional similarities between the house, the main living unit, and subsidiary structures as barn and hayloft. As throughout Turkey, specifically in the Eastern Black sea region, the structures of folk architecture such as the Seranders were not researched in detail and cannot be protected at sufficient levels. Village houses and Seranders should be researched in detail and necessary protection works should be done in specific to Eastern Black sea. Changing social and economic conditions, migration to cities, and abandoning corn farming have left the old houses and Seranders empty. These empty and uncared structures are demolished and disappeared rapidly. It is an important mission to protect and cherish these unique structures of the folk architecture as architecture works, artworks, and historical places.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This study was conducted during an extensive travel throughout the Black sea region of Turkey in the late summer of 2014. The author is grateful for the immense help of Mr. Mustafa Mustafaoglu and Mr. Ali Mustafaoglu for their friendship, guidance and support in traveling across the Black Sea region of Turkey. Sincere gratitude also goes to Mr. Atalay YILMAZ for his elaborate explanation of the terminology of Seranders in Turkish language, and Nancy Al-Assaf for her assistance with drawings.

REFERENCES

BAKANLIĞI, T.C. MİLLÎ EĞİTİM, and TRABZON - DÜZKÖY - TAŞOCAĞI ORTAOKULU. 2012. Dünden Bugüne Taşocağı.

Ali, Ahmed K., and Michael O'Brien. 2016. "Knowledge Transfer: Single Wall Construction and Modern Quest for a one-Component Structure and Enclosure." 5th Biennial Meeting of the Construction History Society of America, University of Texas at Austin, May 26th to May 29th 2016.

de Aldecoa, E.I. 1999. *El hórreo en Asturias*. Trea.

Eruzun, Cengiz. 1977. "Doğu Karadeniz'de Seranderler, Birinci Uluslararası " *Türk Folklor Kongresi Bildirileri, Ankara* (5):125-140.

KARPUZ, H. . 1982. "Trabzon Köy Evlerinin Bölümleri." *Türk Folklor Araştırmalart* (1981/2):37-48.

KARPUZ, Haşim. 1999. "'SERANDER' VE 'LOFT': TÜRK VE NORVEÇ HALK MİMARÎSİNDE EŞDEĞERLİ İKİ YAPI*." *ODTU MFD* 19:71-82.

Özcan, Zühal. 1999. "A peculiar type of structure; granaries from Iberia and Anatolia." *Transactions on the Built Environment* 39:399 - 408.

Ozen, H., and S. Keles. 2008. "VERNACULAR BUILDING HERITAGE IN THE EASTERN BLACK SEA REGION IN TURKE." 8th EC Conference on Sustaining Europe's Cultural Heritage, Ljubljana, Slovenia.

ÖZGÜNER, Orhan. 1970. *Köyde Mimari: Doğu Karadeniz.* Ankara.

Perez-Garcia, O. A. ;, X. C.; Carreira , E.; Carral , M. E.; Fernandez, and R. A.; Mariño 2010. "Evaluation of traditional grain store buildings (hórreos) in Galicia (NW Spain): analysis of outdoor/indoor temperature and humidity relationships." *Spanish Journal of Agricultural Research* 8 (4):925-935.

Rouco, L.V. 2001. *El hórreo en la Península Ibérica:* Consello Galego de Colexios de Aparelladores e Arquitectos Técnicos.

SÜMERKAN, M. R. 1991. "Doğu Karadeniz'de Kırsal Kesim Geleneksel Ev Plan Tiplerinin Yöresel Dağılımı." Türk Halk Mimarisi Sempozyumu Bildirileri, Ankara.

Usta, Gülay; Onur, Dilara; Ziyrek, Burcu Efe. 2012. "The impact of physical and socio-cultural factors on structuring vernacular dwellings in Eastern Black Sea Region." *Scientific Research and Essays* 7 (8):839-851.

7

BLOCK 7: NEW PROFESSIONAL PRACTICES AND RESEARCH PRACTICES

PAPER #7.01

DESIGN FICTION AND ARCHITECTURE

Philip D. Plowright[a]
[a] Lawrence Technological University, Michigan, USA

ABSTRACT

Design fiction is a design approach emerging out of the formal disciplines of Industrial Design and ubiquitous computing (Dourish and Bell 2008, Bleecker 2009a, Grand and Wiedmer 2010, DiSalvo 2012, and Sterling 2013b, 2016). Other design fields are starting to consider the value of this approach, including architecture and urban design (Knutz et al 2014). However, it might be claimed that both architecture and urban design have long involved the production of fiction and fictional environments in their pursuit of novel or aspirational project outcomes. The architectural design ideas competition can be traced back as far as the documented history of architecture – at least two and a half thousand years (Kreiner 2010, Lipstadt 1989) – and has been focused on reimagining our built context through visionary futures. Architectural environments are a staple in media representations of future-orientated imaginings. All design can be defined as exploring possible futures through formal outcomes as the products of a design process do not yet exist but will possibly come into being. This begs the question of a more precise understanding of design fiction and its role as both a positioning approach as well as a methodology for its use in architectural design. As such, this paper examines the nature of design fiction and reveals its close relation to a group of design approaches related to future-forecasting but also the growing consolidation of its definition through a design research structure, recurrent method frameworks, the translation of literary tactics and focus of diegetic environments.

KEYWORDS

Architectural fiction; design fiction; diegetic environments; rhetoric; design research.

INTRODUCTION

Design fiction is an emerging approach that has developed out of several independent sources (Sterling 2005; Dourish and Bell 2008; Bleecker 2009a) and, while reaching some level of agreement, remains somewhat ambiguous in its definition and application (Barbas 2017). While the approach has its origins in product design and ubiquitous computing (ubicomp) through science fiction representations of technological artefacts in literature and film, it has been connected with all of the formal design disciplines including architecture (Knutz et al 2014). The current, and oft quoted, definition of design fiction given by science fiction author Bruce Sterling is "the deliberate use of diegetic prototypes to suspend disbelief about change" (Bosch 2012) stressing *plausible futures* rather than proposed futures. There are various interpretations of what exactly this means in application. Other theorists have expanded or restated the Sterling definition, describing design fiction through "narrative elements to envision and explain possible futures for design" (Tanenbaum 2014b), the use of world-building and prototypes within those worlds to produce a discursive space (Lindley and Coulton 2015) and "a conceptual design placed within a broad cultural context focusing not just on product functionality but potential social consequences of use" (as quoted in Blythe & Encinas 2018, 16).

While the various definitions introduce some nuances, there is a general agreement of key concepts needed to be present for an approach to be defined as design fiction. These are *diegetic artifacts present through narrative structures* (Bleecker 2009a; Sterling 2013a), the suspension of disbelief in near future forecasting (Girardin 2015) and understanding artefacts as *socio-technical representations* rather than simply technical objects (Bleecker 2009a; Dourish and Bell 2014). Each of these concepts need unpacking a little to clarify their effect and importance as part of the overall approach. Diegetic is a term imported into design theory from film studies and refers to something that exists within the world of a narrative rather than external to that world. A simple example is the difference between music playing on a radio in a film versus the overlaid score that builds an emotional tone. The former is diegetic as it is heard by the characters and embedded in the narrative – it exists in the narrative world. The latter is not diegetic as it is heard only by the audience is not part of the narrative world. For designers, then, a diegetic prototype is a "kind of techno-scientific prototyping activity" embedded in "a story into which the prototype can play its part in a way different from a plain old demonstration." (Bleeker 2009a, 39) The prototype, the designed artifact, is explored by its presence in the narrative through subtle interactions with narrative elements rather than presented as a discrete and independent to its surroundings. In this, a diegetic artifact is very different to traditional design visualization tools such as sketches, renderings, product placements, or presentation boards as the designed object is not the focus but there to move "the story forward while at the same time subtly working through the details of itself." (Bleeker 2009a, 39). The presence of the diegetic environment requires logical consistency – even if we don't know exactly how things might work, the artefact must present its operation as defined through the internal logic of the narrative (Tanenbaum 2014a).

The purpose of the diegetic prototype is the suspension of disbelief for a plausible future as an extension of reality rather than the production of fantasy. In this way, design fiction is a form of realism which "implies self-consistency in both the real world and the story world." (Kirby 2010, 46). It could be said that all design activities engage future conditions as designers envision objects and environments that do not yet exist in the particular context, composition, adjacencies and relationships of the proposal. However, design fiction is focused on the plausible rather than the probable as one type of possible future (Hancokc and Bezold 1994). Fiction, in this case, is not a form of speculation and, therefore, design fiction includes the intention to produce valid knowledge in a structured way as part of design research (Grand & Wiedmer 2010; Markussen & Knutz 2013). This shifts the purpose of design fiction away from being a creative technique, a tactic of divergence which allows an author to imagine a world that does not yet exist, to be instead a legitimate research method.

While design fiction prioritizes the technological, the diegetic artifact is co-created with the socio-cultural context in which it exists which makes the artifact a *socio-technical representation*. There are two effects of this relationship. First, the artifact is co-dependent on the social values, social identity political, ethics and morality of its narrative context as well as the interactions, beliefs and construction of social expectations for the users or occupants. Design fiction makes visible a fundamental fact of design: namely there is no way to separate a designed object or environment from its context as all applied design is situated. As Bleecker (2009a: 76) states, "the implications of culture are not something that happens after design. They are always part of the design". Second, the role of the artifact as an aspect of socially constructed knowledge and the construction of belief

systems allows an entry point to influence those belief systems. The fictional world, and its elements, is a persuasive rhetorical device as it "has taken the time to take user experience and technology seriously" (Tanenbaum et al 2016, 4). This introduces a point of tension into the theory as defining design fiction as a research method is epistemologically in conflict with understanding design fiction as an agent in changing values and perspectives - shifting what we believe in or what we desire to bring into being or, as Bleecker names it, an "epistemological wrench" or "swerving systems of meaning" (2009b). The interaction or conflicting purposes between these two aspects of design fiction are not well resolved or even identified in the theoretical literature.

This paper expands on the points above to consider design fiction as a possible approach for architecture. This includes its relationship to other discursive design approaches as well as the design tactics and general frameworks used to generate outcomes. The examination brings more clarity to design fiction while generally considering its application to architecture as a formal design discipline.

1. CLARIFYING THE THEORY

1.1. Discursive design and its variations

The term *design fiction* came into its current meaning through a seminal essay by Julian Bleecker of The Near Future Laboratory (Bleecker 2009a). It was this essay that positioned the approach as having a socio-technical focus, stressing the diegetic nature of the artefact and its role in influencing human belief systems. Previous to this, the term design fiction had been used by Bruce Sterling (2005) and, even earlier, Sterling introduced the term *architectural fiction* to refer to the production of built environments for use in narrative construction (Sterling 2003a). As discussed below, architectural fiction and design fiction differ in definition and theoretical approach although they both belong to a group of design practices labeled as discursive design (Tharp and Tharp 2009, 2015). These include, along with design fiction, critical design (Dunne 2005), forecast design (Buhring & Koshkinen 2017), and speculative design (Auger 2013). Discursive design approaches are part of a social constructivist epistemology and can be defined as design research since the result is the generation of knowledge as an outcome rather than production of a product. Being social constructivist in worldview, discursive design practitioners and researchers are primarily focused on the interrelationship between technology, designed artifacts and socio-cultural interactions where the ability to treat artifacts as isolated and inert objects is impossible.

The primary purpose of discursive design practices is "to communicate ideas [and] encourage discourse. These are tools for thinking; they raise awareness and perhaps understanding of substantive and often debatable issues of psychological, sociological, and ideological consequence" (Tharp and Tharp 2009). These operate through provocation, production of uncanny situations or uncomfortable reflection (critical design) but also through narratives using a story or fictional situation (Auger 2013, 4-5). The differences between these practices are quite subtle and often do not operate with strict boundaries. A discursive project might align with several approaches although each practice has its differences in intention, cognitive tactics (i.e. the major tool in their method construction) and approach to epistemology.

Critical design, for example, is used to challenge social expectations and generate a debate focusing on current concerns by using a designed artifact in the same way as "a critique, like a political essay or satirical sketch" (Blythe & Encinas 2018, 12). It uses design outcomes, specifically product and industrial design artefacts, as a way to probe and interrogate social practices and values with a focus on consumer culture (Tharp and Tharp 2009). The

driving question for critical design is: we can do this, but should we? As such, critical design is focused on the present and uses satire and the uncanny as major design tactics.

Forecast design is intended to engage preferable futures rather than the *plausible futures* that is the focus of design fiction (Buhring and Koskinen 2017). While both forecast design and design fiction are concerned with the near future, the purpose of forecast design is to predict what might happen considering current trends. Design fiction, on the other hand, is not engaged to predict a future but to create a future that would not normally manifest, to influence through the design fiction outcomes. The alignment is closer to critical design than forecast design, but less as a critique of social ethics but "to spark conversations about the near future, check the sanity of visions and uncover hidden perspectives" (Girardin 2015, 7).

It is speculative design that is often confused with design fiction (Auger 2013). Kirby makes a clear separation between the two through a discussion of the role of diegetic prototypes in contrast to speculative scenarios. He considers a speculative scenario to

> "represent highly implausible and impractical situations and technologies that film-makers and science consultants imbue with a sheen of plausibility, so that they look possible within a film's narrative. They make these technologies look plausible, knowing that they are impossible to achieve in real life. In contrast, technological advocates who construct diegetic prototypes have a vested interest in conveying to audiences that these fictional technologies can and should exist in the real world." (2010, 46).

This definition would consider speculative design as producing daydreams, fantasies and imagining for pleasure. Speculative design does not require the internal or narrative logic to be aligned with perceived reality. In the end, the results of a speculative exploration have no requirements or possibility of coming into being. As such, these technological fantasies, while seeming possible, are not engaged to build desires – i.e. they lack the epistemological focus of design fiction (Bleecker 2009a). In addition, speculative design might suggest possible futures but as interesting explorations. Design fiction, in contrast, is positioned as a critical research tool. The outcomes of design fiction are understood as experiments to return usable information through a design approach (Grand and Wiedmer 2010; Markussen & Krutz 2013; Krutz et al 2014; Coulton et al 2017).

1.2. Design fiction and architectural fiction

One of the difficulties in clearly defining the role and application of design fiction is the presence of a similar, but significantly different, term presented through popular media outlets. Before design fiction entered the lexicon, the term *architectural fiction* had already been coined in a blog post by Bruce Sterling (2003a). Sterling, a science fiction author, expounded on the lost potential of Archigram as a form of a fictional future. In a series of magazine and blog posts, Sterling drove the idea of architectural fiction single-handedly, adding Greg Lynn FORM (Sterling 2003b) and Lars Spuybroek (Sterling 2008) as his inspirations. The role he envisioned for architecture was not meant for architecture though, nor did it have the intentions to be either an epistemological device or a research tool. Rather, as Sterling (2008) writes, "Want to write a novel? A screenplay? An essay about landscape and climate change? Want to direct a music video? Start a blog? Architecture offers fuel – and amazing visuals – for all of these things". In this, Sterling is acting as a voyeur, using architectural visualizations of possible future built environments driven by technological developments to "world build" as an aid for writing.

There is a version of Sterling's architectural fiction that can be found historically within the architectural discipline. This is the ideas competition and speculative design project

which can be traced back as far as the documented history of architecture (Kreiner 2010, Lipstadt 1989). However, it has been noted by critics such as Jeremy Till that the architectural competition focuses on the building "as static object … It privileges a whole set of architectural values that are counter to what might make really great architecture" (Hopkirk 2013). In this, the focus is the *representation* of building form rather than the social effects that trends towards utopian and deterministic outcomes. In recent decades, the idea competition is closely tied to imagining complete environments based on speculating technological changes – although we could argue that most of these changes manifest at the urban or architectural engineering levels through technological line-items rather than through architectural knowledge. Regardless, we can clearly define this approach as discursive design, although it lacks the polemical and epistemological purpose of design fiction. Rather, it is a form of speculative design connected to technological utopianism. What is important about the clear excitement of Sterling when he discovered for himself the possibilities when considering the design of human environments is that one must "realize that architectural projects, by definition, entail the reimagination of how humans might inhabit the earth – how they organize themselves spatially and give shape to their everyday lives" (Sterling 2008). That is, architectural design inherently involves social and cultural content. However, architectural fiction as a form of speculative design does not have the structure or intentions to critically engage this architectural content as it lacks epistemological and research focus aligned with socio-technological environments. In contrast, Varnelis uses the term architectural fiction in alignment with the theoretical framework of design fiction rather than the form-based speculative worldbuilding of Sterling. Varnelis wonders if there is a possibility for architectural fiction to be a critical design tool that, "Instead of being Utopian or imaginative, might it be possible for architecture to shape our experiences in such ways as to approximate the effects of films or fiction? […] could architecture fiction be something that re-shapes our subjectivity?" (Varnelis 2009a) It is exactly this subjectivity that Bleecker addresses when he considers the core application of design fiction to be the shifting of human belief patterns and desires through swerving systems of meaning (2009b).

2. THE COGNITIVE STRUCTURE OF DESIGN FICTION

2.1. Process actions, tactics and tools

While there is some consolidation of theory that forms the boundaries of design fiction, there are very few discussions of the methods used to do design fiction. Methods, in general, are difficult to discuss as they are generated from the assemblage of tactics within a framework based on situated needs. This makes methods fluid and operating with great variation depending on context but also suggests that considering frameworks and tactics is ultimately more useful for designers.

2.1.1. *Frameworks*

A framework is the intellectual super-structure to which the overall form of any situated method is aligned and provides the starting position, restricts the information to be considered and provides the major testing criteria. In the case of design fiction, the frameworks are identified through the relationship to future-forecasting and notions of plausibility. The major frameworks present are *extrapolation* and *speculation* (Bleecker 2009a; Hales 2013; Bell and Dourish 2014). As Bell and Dourish note, "extrapolation and speculation as the twin bases for the production of science fiction, and which we would argue applies also to the ways in which design-oriented research is typically carried out, with an explicit focus not only

on the extrapolation of current technological opportunities, but the imaginative and speculative figuring of a world in which new technologies can be applied." (Bell and Dourish 2014, 2). However, to meet the requirements for design fiction – near-future siting, alignment with realism, plausibility rather than possibility, epistemological requirements of belief shifting, and the production of valid knowledge – speculation, in this case, cannot mean free-form and fantasy-based imagining (Bleecker 2009a). Extrapolation is based on the question: this is what we have, where does it go? It is the action of determining a future or end state based on assuming that the existing trends will continue without deviation. While the common use of extrapolation is predictive (i.e. logical future conclusions or outcomes), in design fiction extrapolation is used to explore possible alternatives (Girardin 2015). Bleecker calls this process developing "fiction from fact" (Bleecker 2009a). Lindley and Coulton reinforce the presence of extrapolation when they present a three-layer model that moves from a reality layer of the "world today as particular sets of users may know it" (2014, 2). The reality layer as source material is critical as it is used to contextualize all other information in the design fiction development. As a framework, extrapolation anchors any methods firmly into factual information present in the current environment as the starting point of any design work. The nature of design fiction would also stress that information be based on socio-technological factors. Speculation is the second framework present and it is easy to misunderstand its application in design fiction. The general definition of speculation is the act of forming a theory without facts, proof or firm evidence with "a strong leaning towards conjecture" (Auger 2013, 2). Usually, there is little concern if the generated ideas are real, defensible or "contained by the rules of real life" (Auger 2013, 2). However, design fiction *requires* the construction of plausibility with the focus to produce valid knowledge – a goal that conflicts with the general application of speculation if pursued as the production of identifiable false and fantastical scenarios. Bleecker provides clarity to the use of speculation as a framework that aligns with design fiction through an operation he refers to as "facts from fiction" (2009, 26). Rather than forming a theory without facts, speculation in design fiction operates as forming a theory (design idea or possibility) *before* facts. Open speculation of near-future possibilities ('fiction') is possible but then requires the generated idea to be anchored back into current reality and factual knowledge with the intention to make the speculation seem believable or obtainable. This is accomplished by tracing the speculative idea from the future backwards to possible ways that idea might come into being. Design fiction speculation is more complex than "what-if" scenarios we find in speculative design as the latter requires little expectation that the scenario has any relationship to current reality (Markussen and Knutz 2013, 233). Speculation in this form produces the question: this is where we want to go, how do we get there?

2.1.2. *Tactics*

A tactic is an action performed as part of a method. There are limited tactics discussed in the design fiction literature and those referenced are often standard design tools such as sketching, building models and mood boards as well as research methods such as ethnographic and behavioral mapping (Grand and Wiedmer 2010). While this might suggest that design fiction has nothing to add to the "toolbox" for generating design outcomes, there is one fact that is important to recognize: design fiction engages socio-technical information to understand the designed artifact as an active agent within the situated context in which it exists rather than an inert object. The approach does not allow an architectural designer to limit their values and decisions to only formal consideration for physical aesthetic decisions of shape-to-shape relationships. At the same time, the traditional

tactics of architecture – environmental force identification, program resolution, cultural identity through elevation, massing variations – that visualize architectural decision making do not allow access to the type of information that design fiction engages. There are tactics found in other design disciplines and literature practices that can be imported into architecture. One tactic found in design disciplines such as product design and UX/UI that directly addresses human interaction with designed objects is persona construction. A persona is a construct – we might think of it as a character against which design decisions are tested.Architecture does not normatively construct persona to determine formal choices although it could be argued to be aligned with the abstracted sense of client needs and desires formalized through a project brief. The architectural version, however, lacks a direct connection to a larger scenario or narrative construction required for design fiction. Personas have been criticized as being a representation of the designer rather than a tool of empathy as well as often "two dimensional and stereotypical" (Blythe and Encinas 2018, 17). Through design fiction, however, the persona is linked directly with "narrative voice" (Burdick 2019, 85) which requires a much deeper understanding of the motivations and actions of the user. While in other design approaches, the persona might be connected to a mood board, journey map or other visualization tool, in design fiction the persona is directly involved in the construction of scenarios and then used to "predict the goals or actions of users" (Blythe 2004, 52). Scenario construction is a key element in design fiction, and it is the interaction between persona/characterization and scenario construction that makes design fiction a research tool.

A variation of persona and scenario construction is the tactic of *pastiche scenarios* developed to address limitations in both the former. Pastiche "is a form of writing that imitates and borrows from other works and styles" (Blythe 2004, 52). When applied in a design fiction context, the designer uses previously existing characters, locations and events to develop persona and scenarios for the project. As the persona was not created for this particular design context, it introduces more richness and complexity to motivation as well as disconnects the persona traits from the expected or desired functionality of the designed artifact (Markussen and Knutz 2013). Examples of pastiche scenarios is using favorite characters of a novel as the clients of an architectural project or using an author's literary style to produce a design context. The pastiche tactic allows a designer to "very quickly evoke resonant contexts in which to place a new design or consider user needs" (Blythe 2004, 52).

Another literary tactic proposed to have relevance in design fiction is tropes. Tropes "are figurative language such as metaphor, irony, or hyperbole [that] convey an idea through terms and structures that are not literal, but rather symbolic" (DiSalvo 2012, 117). Although DiSalvo mistakes the operation of literary metaphor as equivalent to conceptual metaphor, the theoretical basis has some validity. These literary devices can be used to create a meaning "scaffold" through associating two domains of knowledge where the first provides a reference to the second. Examples could be presenting food production as a type of politics, grocery shopping as urban hunting or dinner parties as combat environments. While these are not metaphors as there is no incongruence in the association (i.e. food production does involve politics, grocery shopping is a type of food gathering), they do provide a reframing of the source material that allows us to reveal associations that are normally suppressed or obscured through societal norms. What the trope does is open up "expressions of values" (DiSalvo 2012, 117) and shifts the point of focus to consider the social implications rather than physical object. Bleecker suggests that tropes are involved in the anchoring of facts to fictional ideas as part of speculation (2009a, 15).

2. 2. Design fiction and the frame

The framing and presentation of the designed artifact is a key factor in design fiction, an aspect that makes it distinct from other forms of discursive design, and a factor that makes its use in architecture difficult. While other discursive design approaches celebrate their outcomes, producing spectacles, fantastical worlds, uncanny apparatus and strange curiosities, the artifacts that design fiction introduces are "mundane" (Girardin 2015, 2); everyday objects and spaces that are unspectacular (or anti-spectacular). Design fiction uses "real-life delivery methods" (Auger 2013, 10) that deny the existence of a frame between the object and the viewer through creating an ambiguity if the designed artefact, space or event exists or not. It is that moment of unsurety, of second guessing, which makes design fiction effective. The role of the approach is not to criticize, challenge or comment on society (that is critical design). Instead, its application is to examine possibilities in near future narrative scenarios to test if that scenario is one that we wish to bring into being and, if so, to introduce desire towards those things proposed to be present. The diegetic nature of design fiction requires an artifact, and the built environment is an artifact, to exist within a larger narrative structure. However, the artifact is not the focus of the narrative, it simply exists to support larger socio-technical interactions engaged as an act of everyday life. This process merges what is fictional with what is factually reality in a "knotting action" (Bleecker 2009a, 25) and suppresses the frame where constructed narrative is ambiguously located. The choice of media representation becomes a key aspect in the design fiction methodology and why practitioners of design fiction, such as Bleecker, Girardin and Near Future Laboratory (NFL), produce "catalogs, newspapers or user manuals from the future" but also "unboxing videos, user reviews" (Girardin 2015, 3). These media strategies are typologically normative and expected in our current reality so allows the framing of a fictional artifact in such a way to suppress the visibility of that frame. However, these media strategies are non-normative in architecture and introduce a point of difficulty in applying the approach successfully.

CONCLUSION

Design fiction is one of several approaches found within discursive design. The key differences between this and other discursive approaches center on 1) the ambiguity of the designed artifact existence as fictional, 2) the presence of the designed artefact as part of a larger cohesive narrative and 3) the desire to use the designed artifact and its scenario to test and shift belief systems. While some speculative designers also believe that it is "preferable for the concept to pass as real," (Auger 2013, 9), one could argue that speculative design that attempts this should be understood as a form of design fiction. At the same time, the purpose of design fiction is not fiction, which seems counter-intuitive. Rather, it is to return knowledge or affect beliefs.

Design fiction has several benefits but also introduces some difficulties for architecture. One benefit is the prioritization of the relationship between the user and the artifact. In the architectural design process, this means that attention moves from values that support the idea of a building or environment as a static sculptural object to those that are focused on the possible social and emotional positioning of its constituents. Environments are then understood as active participants in those social interactions. A second benefit produced by the shift in focus is the required abandonment of the notion of 'problem-solution' framing for design. As a research approach based in the interrelationship between humans and their constructed technological artifacts, design is understood as a situation to be acknowledged rather than a narrow problem-solution conceptualization.

The role of the persona and scenario tactics reinforces broad, and often contradictory, responses to the same design artefact as a reflective tool for designers.

Finally, the factors that design fiction provide as benefits can also introduce difficulties in architecture. It is easy to consider a building or built environment as a type of sculptural object. It is also relatively easy to consider engineering products as 'cool' features in buildings or even to imagine some non-existent technology that might be integrated into built space. However, based on our current toolset, it is much more difficult to consider the effect of both on socio-cultural systems of dwelling and identity. In addition, the media strategies used by design fiction in other disciplines, such as product design, do not exist in architecture. As design fiction is focused on technology, architecture needs to consider the role of technological elements in larger spatialized and compositional systems through social effects.

REFERENCES

Auger, J. 2013. "Speculative design: Crafting the speculation." *Digital Creativity,* 241, 11–35. https://doi.org/10.1080/14626268.2013.767276

Barbas, H. 2017. "Diegetic Prototypes - To Ware or Vapourware passing through Solutionism and Paleo-Future." *SCIFI-IT '2017 - The 2017 International Science Fiction Prototyping Conference - Designing Your Future with Science Fiction*, 5–12. http://helenabarbas.net/papers/2017_Diegetic_Prototypes_H_Barbas.pdf

Bell, G., & Dourish, P. 2007. "Yesterday's tomorrows: Notes on ubiquitous computing's dominant vision." P*ersonal and Ubiquitous Computing*, 11, no. 2, 133–143. https://doi.org/10.1007/s00779-006-0071-x

---. 2014. "resistance is futile": Reading science fiction alongside ubiquitous computing. *Personal and Ubiquitous Computing*, 1, no. 8, 769–778. https://doi.org/10.1007/s00779-013-0678-7

Bleecker, J. 2009a. "Design Fiction: A Short Essay on Design, Science, Fact and Fiction." *Near Future Laboratory*. https://doi.org/10.1145/1516016.1516021

---. 2009b. Props to Prototypes: Design Fiction Part 2 Design Connexity 2009. https://www.slideshare.net/bleeckerj/props-to-prototypes-design-fiction-part-2-design-connexity-2009

Blythe, M. 2004. "Pastiche scenarios." *Interactions*, 11(5), 51. https://doi.org/10.1145/1015530.1015554

Blythe, M. and M. Encinas. 2018. "Research fiction and thought experiments in design." In *Foundations and Trends in Human-Computer Interaction*. 12, no. 1. https://doi.org/10.1561/1100000070

Bosch, T. 2012. *Sci-Fi Writer Bruce Sterling Explains Intriguing New Concept of Design Fiction.* Slate. http://www.slate.com/blogs/future_tense/2012/03/02/bruce_sterling_on_design_fictions_.html

Buhring, J., & Koskinen, I. 2017. Beyond Forecasting: A Design-inspired Foresight Approach for Preferable Futures. IASDR 2017 Re: *Research, October.*

Burdick, A. 2019. "Designing Futures From the Inside." *Journal of Futures Studies*, 233, 75–92. https://doi.org/10.6531/JFS.201903

Coulton, P., Lindley, J., Sturdee, M., & Stead, M. 2017. "Design Fiction as World Building." *Proceedings of the Research Through Design Conference,* Research Through Design, 1–16. https://doi.org/10.6084/m9.figshare.4746964.Image

DiSalvo, C. 2012. "FCJ-142 Spectacles and Tropes: Speculative Design and Contemporary Food Cultures." *The Fibreculture Journal,* 120, 109–122. https://doi.org/10.15307/fcj.26.190.2015

Dunne, Anthony. 2005. *Hertzian Tales,* MIT Press, Cambridge, MA.

Girardin, F. 2015. *Our Approach of Design Fiction.* Medium. https://medium.com/design-fictions/our-approach-of-design-fiction-3ac0b1ae81f0

Gissen, D. 2009. *Architecture fiction — a short review of a young concept « HTC Experiments.* HTC Experiments. http://htcexperiments.org/2009/02/22/architecture-fiction-—-a-short-review-of-a-young-concept/

Grand, S., & Wiedmer, M. 2010. "Design fiction: a method toolbox for design research in a complex world." *Proceedings of the DRS 2010 Conference: Design and Complexity.,* 1–25.

Hales, D. 2013. "Design fictions an introduction and provisional taxonomy." *Digital Creativity,* 24, no. 1, 1–10. https://doi.org/10.1080/14626268.2013.769453

Hancock, T., & Bezold, C. 1994. "Possible futures, preferable futures." *The Healthcare Forum Journal,* 37 no. 2, 23–29.

Hopkirk, Elizabeth. 2013. "RIBA Competitions Accused of Exploiting Architects." *Building Design* Online. March 8

Kreiner, Kristian. 2010. "Designing Architectural Competitions: Balancing Multiple Matters of Concern." *Conditions Magazine, The Future of Competitions.*

Kirby, D. 2010. "The future is now: Diegetic prototypes and the role of popular films in generating real-world technological development." *Social Studies of Science, 40,* no. 1, 41–70. https://doi.org/10.1177/0306312709338325

Knutz, E., Markussen, T., & Christensen, P. R. 2014. "The Role of Fiction in Experiments within Design, Art & Architecture - Towards a New Typology of Design Fiction." *Artifact, III,* no. 2, 8.1-8.13.

Lipstadt, H. 1989. *The Experimental Tradition*. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Lindley, J., & Coulton, P. 2014. "Modelling Design Fiction: What's The Story?". *StoryStorm Workshop at ACM Designing Interactive Systems 2014*, n.a1. https://doi.org/10.13140/2.1.5047.8085

---. 2015. "Back to the future: 10 years of design fiction." *ACM International Conference Proceeding Series,* 210–211. https://doi.org/10.1145/2783446.2783592

Markussen, T., & Knutz, E. 2013. "The poetics of design fiction." *Proceedings of the 6th International Conference on Designing Pleasurable Products and Interfaces, DPPI 2013*, 231–240. https://doi.org/10.1145/2513506.2513531

Sterling, B. 2003a. *Schism Matrix: Week 64 01.20.03.* Infinite Matrix. http://www.infinitematrix.net/columns/sterling/sterling64.html

---.2003b. The growthing. *Metropolis,* January.

---.2005. *Shaping Things*. Cambridge Massachusetts: MIT Press.

---.2008. Architects of the Near Future. *Metropolis.* https://www.wired.com/2008/12/bldgblog-enters/

---. 2013a. "Fantasy Prototypes and Real Disruption". *Keynote NEXT Berlin 2013.* https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=M7KErICTSHU

---. 2013b. "Patently untrue: fleshy defibrillators and synchronised baseball are changing the future." *Wired Magazine.* http://www.wired.co.uk/magazine/archive/2013/10/play/patently-untrue

---. 2016. "Design Fiction." *Interactions,* 375–386. https://doi.org/10.1145/2851581.2892574

Tanenbaum, J. 2014a. "Design fictional interactions: Why HCI should care about stories." *Interactions, 215,* 22–23. https://doi.org/10.1145/2648414

---. 2014b. "What is Design Fiction". *Quora*. https://www. quora.com/What-is-design-fiction

Tanenbaum, J., Pufal, M., & Tanenbaum, K. 2016. "The limits of our imagination: Design fiction as a strategy for engaging with dystopian futures." *ACM International Conference Proceeding Series, Article No.:10*, 1–9. https://doi.org/10.1145/2926676.2926687

Tharp, B. M., & Tharp, S. M. 2009. *The 4 Fields of Industrial Design*. Core77. https://www.core77.com/posts/12232/the-4-fields-of-industrial-design-no-not-furniture-trans-consumer-electronics-toys-by-bruce-m-tharp-and-stephanie-m-tharp-12232

---. 2015. What is Discursive Design? Core77. https://www.core77.com/posts/41991/What-is-Discursive-Design

Varnelis, K. 2009a. *In defense of architecture fiction*. http://varnelis.net/in-defense-of-architecture-fiction/

---. 2009b. *On performance, green architecture and architectural fiction*. http://varnelis.net/on-performance-green-architecture-and-architecture-fiction/

---. 2011. "In Pursuit of Architecture Fiction." *Town Planning and Architecture*, 351, 18–20. https://doi.org/10.3846/tpa.2011.02

PAPER #7.02

WHAT DO WE TALK ABOUT WHEN WE RESEARCH THE CITY? ACADEMIC PUBLISHING IN URBAN STUDIES

Débora Domingo-Calabuig[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

When we talk about urban studies, we focus on the physical environment that gives support to social, political and economic relationships, and therefore the approach is usually transdisciplinary and diverse. Research projects are broadly communicated to the scientific community through academic publications, and particularly through journals. Therefore, these periodicals on urban studies have concentrated on specialized scopes and have been included in indexes and databases according to their relevance. The academia has agreed to trust journals for measuring the research impact, but the question is raised about its general visibility in terms of real knowledge transfer.

This paper maps the scientific production about the city through the periodicals of recent years: we census a total of 682 journals related to urban studies on the Web of Science, Scopus, ERIH PLUS and the DOAJ platforms. We aim to know which journals support what kind of works, how different areas of knowledge intersect in them, which countries produce one or another type of research, and what study methods are used in research about the city. In addition to the quantitative results, the objective is to make a critical reading about the impact of what is published. In this regard, a final comparison is also made by putting in parallel the articles included in the most relevant journals and the research projects about the city and its particular problems that have been encouraged by the last Framework Program of the European Union.

The results show a clear fragmentation of the urban studies subject area and a traditional framing of the topics, with little presence of emerging issues. Besides, the research funds percentage is lower than in other knowledge areas. Finally, this study reveals a very limited open access to research that undoubtedly determines its visibility.

KEYWORDS

Urban studies; research journals; architectural research; research impact.

INTRODUCTION: TALKING, RESEARCHING, PUBLISHING ABOUT THE CITY

The ability to select a good topic is something that researchers strive for their entire academic career. Whether it is for the opportunity to belong to a reputable laboratory or to receive a PhD grant, the thematic fields are essentially in reach, according to our knowledge on the subject. In the urban studies, different disciplines intersect that reflects the diversity and complexity of urban problems and solutions. Such as the themes outlined in this conference, the city has many sides: experiential, participative, narrative, history, technical, etc. These perspectives interact in a research proposal and contribute to improving our cities, but: what do we want to research about the city and why? How is this research generated and communicated? To answer these questions, this work follows research on urban studies through academic publications

and maps, although in a biased way, what we talk about when we research the city. Research results are transmitted in several ways in the academic world. Any policy paper from any institution establishes the difference between written output (articles, books, conference proceedings) and non-written production (patents, exhibitions, documentaries) (ACSA, 2017; ACSA, 2019). However, and because of their immediacy in the processes and their impact on the university community, the articles published in scientific journals reach a growing relevance. In terms of research quality evaluation, and regardless of our position in this regard, the journals are classified in indexes with impact factors while other contributions meet less regulated criteria. High-impact journals are the priority spaces when choosing how to communicate a project's results, among other things, because they have an impact on the careers' promotion (Clemens et al. 1995; Rawat and Meena 2014). We shall admit that this study is not without limitations due to the range of the questions asked and their restricted answers, but we aim to offer at least some information that can foster new reflections.

1. THE STUDY SAMPLE: JOURNALS ON URBAN STUDIES

Within the vast panorama of urban studies journals, we select the indexes generally best valued in terms of research results, those published on the Web of Science (WoS) platforms (by Clarivate Analytics) and Scopus (by Elsevier). These scientific information services elaborate specific databases (Science Citation Index Expanded, SCIE; Social Science Citation Index, SSCI; Arts & Humanities Citation Index, A&HCI; Emerging Sources Citation Index, ESCI; Scopus) and journals' lists (Journal Citation Report, JCR; SCImago Journal Rank, SJR), whose quality contributions are commonly accepted thanks to the review process and openly communicated editorial policies. In this specific case, and given the direction that we want to go in with this study, we add to the display the data of the European Reference Index for the Humanities and Social Sciences (ERIH PLUS) and the Directory of Open Access Journals (DOAJ). For each of the information sources, we take as a base of this study the available data according to its mediums: web pages, reports, and databases. Thus, this study includes the articles published in the journals whose categorization corresponds to Urban Studies of the WoS, Scopus, ERIH PLUS and DOAJ platforms: we census a total of 682 journals. We establish a temporary boundary between 2013 and today: these six years exceed the usual 5- and 3-year periods in impact calculations and "h" indices, and include the entire H2020 framework program with which we will try to contrast the results. The sample is not limited to geography (according to the publisher's location or according to the author's affiliation) so as not rule out possible intercontinental collaborations. The working method is of a statistical type, although bibliometric indicators are alternated with qualitative analysis of representative cases. The data interpretation should be understood within the margins of error produced by the sample and its analysis. Also, not all databases provide the same indicators, so certain readings are made only with specific information sources. Consequently, the analyses and interpretations are more from the perspective of the urban and architectural researcher than from experts in library science.

2. WHERE DO WE TALK ABOUT THE CITY?

When locating the publications for this study, we must point out that each of the databases used has a different cataloguing of knowledge

areas. In the case of the Master Journal List of the WoS, the two categories "Urban Studies" and "Regional & Urban Planning" belong to the Social Sciences area. Scopus associates the code 3322 to 'Urban Studies' that is included in the "Social Sciences & Humanities" subject area. The ERIH PLUS has recently implemented the Field of Research (FOR) system from the Australian and New Zealand Standard Research Classification (ANZSRC) but uses a 2-level structure for 2 and 4-digit codes: "1205 - Urban & Regional Planning" is included in "12 - Built Environment & Design". Finally, the DOAJ follows the categorization of the Library of Congress: the contributions are equally distributed among "Cities. Urban geography" (in the "Geography, Anthropology, Recreation" section), and "Urban groups. The city urban sociology" (in the "Social Sciences" section). A first observation is related to the scarce presence of these journals in the global publications' landscape since they do not exceed 0.5% of the total periodicals, except in the case of ERIH PLUS where it barely reached 4.5% despite being an archive of social sciences and humanities publications. Furthermore, Urban Studies journals are published primarily in Britain and the United States, although this data varies significantly according to indexes: WoS and Scopus reflect an Anglo-Saxon domain pattern, while in ERIH PLUS and DOAJ they are strongly positioned in Continental Europe and South America (Fig. 1). The countries that publish the most on urban studies are the United Kingdom with 104 journals and the United States of America with 67, followed by Brazil, Spain and Poland, with 62, 57 and 41 periodicals respectively.

3. WHAT DO WE TALK ABOUT WHEN REFERRING TO THE CITY?

In the same way that we talk about the city under multiple disciplinary approaches, journals are not classified exclusively into categories similar to urban studies but instead, belong simultaneously to other thematic areas. Visualizing these areas overlapping (according to each database classification) allows us to demonstrate a first nature of research on the city (Fig. 2). The diagram for the 107 journals in the WoS sample indicates a prevailing number of

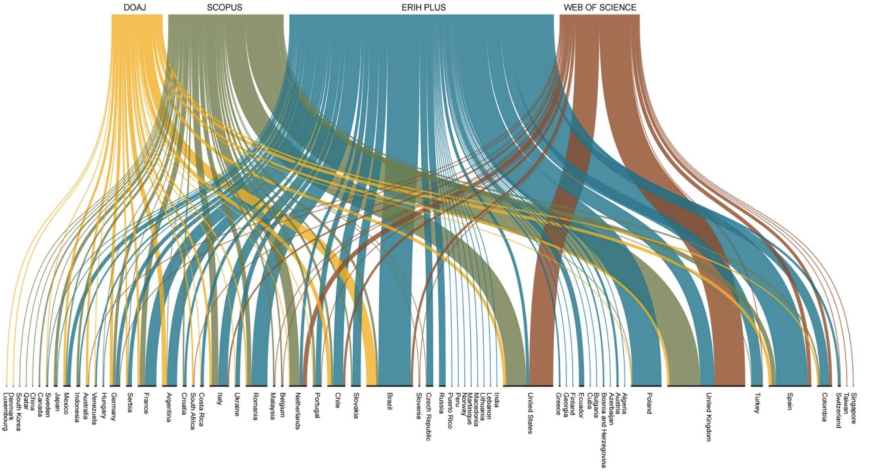


Figure 1. Geographical distribution of the journals related to Urban Studies. Sources: WoS, Scopus, ERIH PLUS, DOAJ. Online data, January 2020.

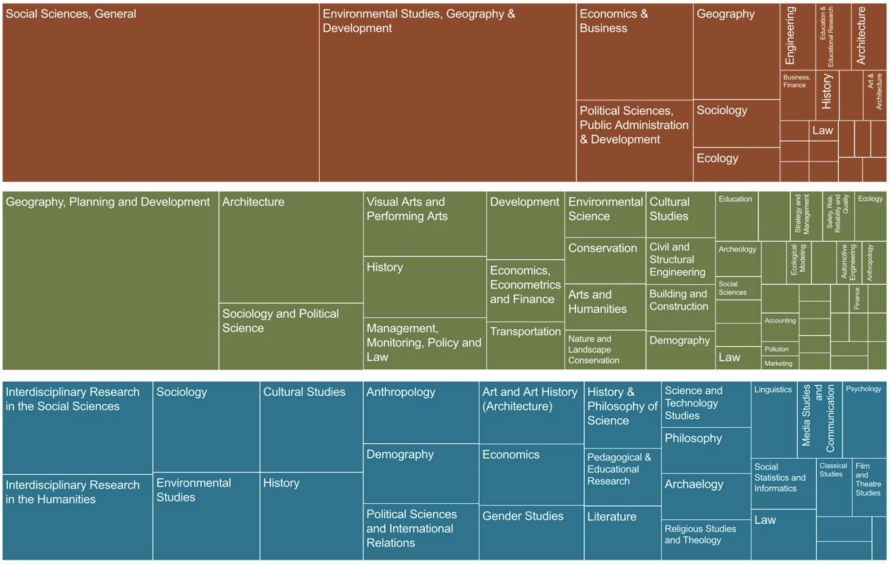


Figure 2. Disciplinary intersects of journals on Urban Studies: simultaneity with other thematic categories in a) WoS; b) Scopus; c) ERIH PLUS. Sources: WoS, Scopus, ERIH PLUS. Online data, January 2020.

publications in the category "Social Sciences, General" and in "Environmental Studies, Geography & Development". Also, it is especially significant that only 3 of the 157 journals are included in the Arts & Humanities Citation Index of the WoS. In the case of the 154 Scopus journals, the largest number of publications has to do with the category "Geography Planning & Development", followed by "Architecture". The map of disciplines that are extracted from the 353 ERIH PLUS journals is especially detailed since they are all devoted to the humanities, as corresponds to the index itself.[1] The journals of the study sample have published a great volume of texts in the last six years, but only the contributions considered as research articles are here under study. In that respect is an upward trend in the number of items in the last six years (from 6500 to 9000 in the case of the WOS) and the dominance of the WoS and Scopus products that offer 6 more times articles per year than ERIH PLUS and DOAJ. We analyse some bibliometric indicators of the most representative journals to get a general idea of the research topics. We are interested in which journals publish more articles and what they focus on (Fig. 3). A keywords analysis is carried out in the highest impact journals, though admitting that the Impact Factor (WoS), or the SJR and the SNIP (SCImago Journal Rank and Source-Normalized Impact Paper, Scopus) are related to the research visibility in the academic community (Garfield 1999; Colledge 2010). The journals that publish the greatest number of articles per year are coincident in WoS and Scopus, but if we look for the most productive journals in ERIH PLUS, the publications are completely different.[2] The DOAJ does not offer this data.

[1] The DOAJ does not allow to extract this type of information and therefore it is not here considered.
[2] However, all journals included in ERIH PLUS are also in Scopus. The differences are due to the cataloguing or to the greater number of articles published in WoS and Scopus.

Web of Science - Scopus

Source title	Country	Publisher	No. of articles (2013-2019)	Frequent keywords
Urban Studies	UK	SAGE Publications	1405	United States; Neighborhood; China; Urban Development; United Kingdom; URBAN PLANNING; Governance Approach; Urbanization; Metropolitan Area; Urban Economy; *HOUSING* Market; *HOUSING*; England; Urban Policy.
Cities	UK	Elsevier	1284	URBAN PLANNING; Urban Development; China; Urban Area; Urban Policy; Neighborhood; Urbanization; Urban Economy; United States; Sustainability; Governance Approach; Urban *HOUSING*
Urban Forestry and Urban Greening	GER	Urban & Fischer Verlag	1088	Greenspace; Urban Area; Urban Forestry; URBAN PLANNING; Urban Ecosystem; United States; Perception; Ecosystem Service; Tree; China; Urbanization; Biodiversity
Habitat International	UK	Elsevier	1012	China; URBAN PLANNING; Urban Development; Urbanization; Urban Area; Sustainability; Sustainable Development; Urban *HOUSING*; *HOUSING* Market; Developing World
Urban Ecosystems	USA	Springer	648	Urbanization; Urban Ecology; Urban; Biodiversity; Ecosystem Services; Species Richness; Urban Biodiversity; Aves; Green Infrastructure; Urbanisation

ERIH plus

Source title	Country	Publisher	(2013-2019)	Frequent keywords
Transportation Research Part D Transport and Environment	UK	Elsevier	1326	Transportation; Vehicles; Traffic Emission; Emission Control; Carbon Emission; Electric Vehicle; Carbon Dioxide; Greenhouse Gases; Roads And Streets; Environmental Impact; Fuels; Fuel Consumption; United States; Gas; China
Planning Perspectives	UK	Routledge	449	URBAN PLANNING; Planning History; Urban History; Urban Development; Twentieth Century; Historical Perspective; Town Planning; United Kingdom; United States; Urban Design
Journal of Urban History	USA	SAGE Publications	438	United States; Urban History; URBAN PLANNING; Twentieth Century; Historical Perspective; New York [United States]; Urban Development; Urban *HOUSING*; Neighborhood; Race
Journal of Urban Design	UK	Carfax Publishing	406	Urban Design; URBAN PLANNING; Public Space; United States; Urban Development; Urban Area; Neighborhood; United Kingdom; Australia; England; Urban Policy; Pedestrian; Urban Renewal
Urban History	UK	Cambridge University Press	359	Urban History; United Kingdom; England; Historical Perspective; Social History; Historical Geography; Planning History; Twentieth Century; URBAN PLANNING; Ireland

Figure 3. Journals with the greatest number of articles published and their most frequent keywords from 2013 to 2019. Sources: WoS, Scopus, ERIH PLUS. Online data, January 2020.

A sub-sample of the WoS and Scopus is carried out so we can attempt a visualization of the articles published in high-impact journals.[3] By combining the "Urban Studies" and the "Regional and Urban Planning" categories in the WoS, we get 109 indexed journals; in Scopus 154 journals are included in the category "Urban Studies" of SJR. If we cross both data, the resulting amount is 216 journals, 45 of which are simultaneously in both indices, and 26 of them are in the first quartile of one or both of the two rankings (JCR and SJR).

The keywords of the 10,888 published articles between 2013 and 2019 in these 26 journals of greater impact show research mainly based on planning –its development, its policies, its economic factors–, an important presence of residential issues, and a relevant number of studies located in China, the United States and the United Kingdom (Fig. 4).

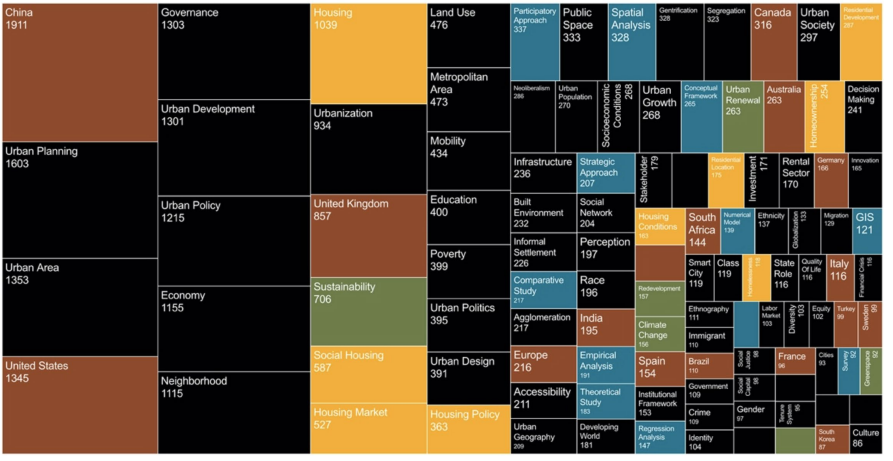


Figure 4. Most frequent keywords in articles published in high-impact journals related to Urban Studies from 2013 to 2019. Sources: WoS, Scopus. Online data, January 2020.

[3] ERIH PLUS and DOAJ do not order their journals according to quantitive value. Equally, WoS journals included exclusively in the Arts & Humanities Citation Index cannot be considered either in this sub-sample as they have not an impact factor.

4. WHO RESEARCHES THE CITY?

From the previous samples, we extract two additional data related to the authorship or the promotion of the research projects on urban studies. It is relevant to know who is researching the previously indicated subjects and who is financing them (Fig. 5). It is surprising to discover that only 30.4% of the contributions acknowledge a funding source, especially if we relate these articles to research projects awarded in open calls. The funded projects are selected based on, among other things, their expected impact in solving real problems. This fact would show that approximately 70% of research in urban studies is dedicated to topics "not driven" by administrative interests. However, this same data of not-funded research decreases to values lower than 30% in areas of knowledge such as Chemical Engineering. When the articles of our sample were analysed, some of the keywords –those in blue in Figure 6– referred to research methodologies. We list here these methods by identifying them with their source titles (Fig. 6):

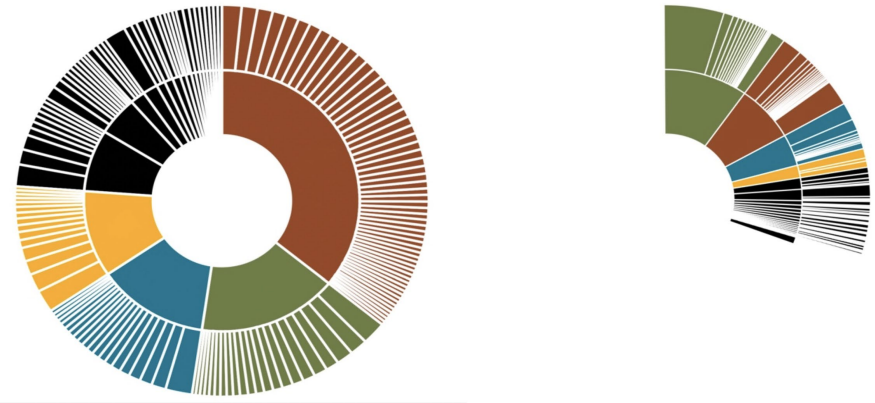


Figure 5. Authors' affiliation (left) and funding sponsors (right) in the 10,888 articles published in the 26 highest-impact journals on Urban Studies from 2013 to 2019. Right higher values: United States 36%, China 16%, United Kingdom 13%, Australia 10%. Left higher values: China 10%, United States 7%, United Kingdom 4%, Australia 1,6%. Sources: WoS, Scopus. Online data, January 2020.

KEYWORD	Frecuency	Journals when the keyword most appears
Spatial Analysis	328	*Cities; Urban Studies; Habitat International*
Conceptual Framework	265	*Cities; Urban Studies; International Journal of Urban and Regional Research*
Comparative Study	217	*Cities; Habitat International; Urban Studies*
Strategic Approach	207	*Cities; Habitat International; Urban Studies*
Empirical Analysis	191	*Urban Studies; Cities; Habitat International*
Theoretical Study	183	*Urban Studies; International Journal of Urban and Regional Research; Cities*
Participatory Approach	140	*Urban Studies; Cities; Habitat International*
Numerical Model	139	*Urban Studies; Cities; Habitat International*
GIS	121	*Habitat International; Cities; Urban Studies*

Figure 6. Frequency of keywords related to research methods in the 10,888 articles published in the 26 highest-impact journals on Urban Studies from 2013 to 2019. Sources: Scopus. Online data, January 2020.

5. HOW DO WE RESEARCH THE CITY?

As an addition to the parameters observed so far, this work explores some of the articles in these journals to analyse how research is done and how it is shown. The differences between some journals are not significant: these are works based on empirical analyses that attempt to quantify the results to build general frameworks for debate. The manuscripts are fundamentally written with little graphic material. Last but not least, we also make visible the vast quantity of research published through "paying walls". The figures for open access publications in Urban Studies are neither better nor worse than the rest of the disciplines, but they do not seem to account, for example, for the Open Access mandate in H2020 (European Commission 2017), or similar policies that exist in many European countries. In our sample, the open access articles only represent 7.67%, and if we extend the analysis to all the journals included in the WoS, the result rises to 20.37%. We can now understand why the DOAJ only included 677 articles on urban studies in 2019 compared to the 9,065 ones indexed by the WoS.

6. WHAT IMPACT DOES RESEARCH ON THE CITY GENERATE?

Research impact is a thoughtful and complex topic. The open calls for project proposals generally ask researchers to specifically state their expected results and what their impact will be. We understand the academic impact as the proof of new knowledge within the scientific community; we mean by "social impact" or "knowledge transfer to society" what has been improved in social problems thanks to an investigation. In the first case, the academic impact is measured through citations. This parameter is not always realistic since only the citations in indexed journals are counted. Alternatively, it can be more inclusive when any mention of media work is computed, as it happens with Google Scholar. The scientific impact of our sample's articles is obviously among the highest level since the journals are located in the first quartile of the JCR (WoS) and SJR (Scopus) lists. The data show how some articles have had up to 289 citations in the last 180 days (and 1793 citations since 2013), and this highlights the thematic link between one contribution and another, that is, the construction of knowledge in a consistent research path. It is not easy to track the impact of research, because the transfer of knowledge can be done in very diverse ways. However, we can outline a possible approach by glancing at the list of urban studies projects granted by the European Union (EU) framework programs (FP) in recent years. The FP has substantially determined the research in terms of financing since its inception. In FP8, known as Horizon 2020 (H2020), the Societal Challenges pillar supported research that "target society and citizens" and included areas such as "Demographic Change", "Smart Green and Integrated Transport", "Climate action and environment", "Inclusive, innovative & reflective societies" and "Secured Societies". Almost all of these issues come from similar denominations since FP4 (1994), although it should be noted that some are newly created: the term "security" appears for the first time in FP7 (2006), and the concern for social integration is incorporated only in H2020 (2013) (Reillon 2017). The preliminary structure of Horizon Europe includes in the pillar of "Global Challenges and European Industrial Competitiveness" various clusters with the aforementioned areas. This structural evolution shows an intention to obtain breakthrough solutions coming from multi-disciplinary collaborations. Regardless, the funded projects of these open calls are endowed with financial resources and must demonstrate the impact of their results through academic publications and dissemination actions.

Funding programme	Achronym and Project title	Website	Keywords
H2020-EU.3.3.1.3.	**REMOURBAN - REgeneration MOdel for accelerating the smart URBAN transformation**	http://www.remourban.eu	plan; replicability; **energy**; model; strategy; city; citizens; urban **regeneration;** cities; nottingham; lighthouse; eskisehir; **sustainable**; deployment; **renovation;** tepebasi; valladolid
	GrowSmarter	https://grow-smarter.eu/home/	plans; cities; mobility; industrial; grids; **reducing emissions**; **renewal**; **smart**; quality; market; demonstration; business; follower; citizens; lighthouse; waste; urban; **sustainable**; **energy**; lower; **grow smarter**; rollout; solutions; preparing
	Triangulum: The Three Point Project / Demonstrate. Disseminate. Replicate.	http://triangulum-project.eu	sip; replication; cities; deployment; **energy**; cutting; dynamic; triangulum; **smart**; cross; city; technologies; urban
	CITYKEYS - Smart City performance measurement system	http://www.citykeys-project.eu	cities; horizontal; transparent; performance; monitoring; evaluation; citykeys; comparability; **smart**; framework; kpis; recommendations; stakeholders; data; solutions; validate; urban
	ESPRESSO - Systemic standardisation approach to empower smart cities and communities	http://www.espresso-project.eu	city; framework; cities; models; horizontal; data; **smart**; interoperability; sectors; standards
	SHAR-LLM - Sharing Cities	http://www.sharingcities.eu	**smart**; **energy**; citizens; digital; efficiency; solutions; city; infrastructure; economic; cities; mobility; true; accelerate; market
	REPLICATE - REnaissance of Places with Innovative Citizenship and TEchnolgy	https://replicate-project.eu	urban; buildings; cities; **smart**; solutions; districts; citizens; deployment; city; transport; residential; technologies; local; replicate services; replication; complexity; tools; ict; **energy**; natural; plans
	SMARTER TOGETHER - Smart and Inclusive Solutions for a Better Life in Urban Districts	http://smarter-together.eu	**energy**; housing; lighthouse; citizen; districts; follower; ict; cities; data; solutions; **smart**; smarter; business; created; mobility
	SmartEnCity - Towards Smart Zero CO2 Cities across Europe	https://smartencity.eu	**energy**; city; coordinated; urban; **smart**; extensive; citizens; **renewable**; cities; local; carbon; benefits; planning; supply; clean; demand; actions
H2020-EU.3.6.1.4.	**RELOCAL - Resituating the local in cohesion and territorial development**	https://relocal.eu	policy; place; **justice**; notions; spatial; local; **cohesion**; territorial
	IMAJINE - Integrative Mechanisms for Addressing Spatial Justice and Territorial Inequalities in Europe	http://imajine-project.eu	national; empirical; **justice**; policy; imajine; economic; data; insights; **inequalities**; spatial; political; territorial; disciplinary; conceptual
	COHSMO - Inequality, urbanization and Territorial Cohesion: Developing the European Social Model of economic growth and democratic capacity	https://www.cohsmo.aau.dk	recommendations; territorial; instruments; capacities; local; **inequality**; **justice**; sensitive; cross; democratic; spatial; theories; **cohesion**; relation; policy; policies; economic; place; **social**; cohsmo; scales; location; **injustice**

Figure 7. Funded research projects where urban studies are involved in the sub-programs H2020. Sources: CORDIS and Open-H2020 observatory, January 2020.

For almost three decades now, the CORDIS database offers information on projects and their results, classifying these by areas and sub-areas: 12 projects are included in the programs. The results always mention two chapters: "deliverables" (reports, pilots, websites) and publications (books, conference proceedings, but mostly peer-reviewed articles). The subjects of smart city, sustainable energy, urban regeneration and social cohesion emerge through these analyses (Fig. 7). One can find in their web sites the impact that each of the projects has had on social contexts: specific actions in the consortium cities, webinars and press releases.

CONCLUSION: WHO DO WE TALK TO WHEN WE RESEARCH THE CITY?

If we were to come up with a headline, we could say that we speak little when we research the city: other knowledge areas are more productive in writing. We do it in diversified forums that do not offer a simple and a global overview because urban studies have a multidisciplinary nature and a contribution might be included in similar categories and under different names. Mostly, our research is not supported with funding –other subject areas are much more financed– and therefore, the issues we address on our own are unlikely to be coincident with our institutions' interests. Besides, we talk 'in a closed circuit' and what we say remains in a very small area, so we may not see much beyond this. Finally, we talk about topics that do not seem to correspond fully with the emerging issues of interest, at least if a comparison is made between the most cited articles and the funded projects entrusted for applied results. This conclusion would support existing studies that warn of the black-boxing of academic communication and its evaluation, thus paraphrasing the black-boxing that Latour coined when referring to the development of scientific research (Bruni and Magaudda 2017). The high-impact journals on urban studies (those that are more relevant for the research evaluation) are less visible to the scientific community. Therefore, the topics discussed in them do not need to be directly linked to real needs. Finally, this study shows that it is not an easy task to monitor the transfer of knowledge. Who do we talk to when we investigate the city? We speak for few, but it has repercussions on many and it is difficult to trace the path because the track is lost. Recipients of the research

results are the general public (citizens), the service providers (transportation, energy), the management decision-makers (community organizations, and private businesses), and the policy decision-makers, but the contact details with this target audience are lost beyond the results reports of a project. The questions about the effectiveness of the knowledge transfer asked in other areas (Lavis et al. 2003) could help to reflect on our urban studies.

REFERENCES

ACSA. 2019. *ACSA White Paper on Assessing the Quality of Architectural Research & Scholarship*. Association of Collegiate Schools of Architecture.

ACSA. 2017. *Research and Scholarship for Promotion, Tenure, and Reappointments in Schools of Architecture. White Paper.* Association of Collegiate Schools of Architecture.

Bruni, A., Magaudda, P. 2017. "Opening the Black-Box of Academic Research: Assessment, Publishing and Critical Perspectives." *Teknokultura* 14, no. 1: 57–65. https://doi.org/10.5209/TEKN.54674.

Clarivate Analytics. "Web of Science Group." Accessed February 7, 2020. https://clarivate.com/webofsciencegroup/.

Clemens, E. S., Powell, W.W., McIlwaine, K., Okamoto, D. 1995. "Careers in Print: Books, Journals, and Scholarly Reputations." *American Journal of Sociology* 101, no. 2 (September): 433–94. https://doi.org/10.1086/230730.

Colledge, L., Moya-Anegón, F., Guerrero-Bote, V., López-Illescas, C., El Aisati, M., Moed, H.F. 2010. "SJR and SNIP: Two New Journal Metrics in Elsevier's Scopus." *Serials* 23, no. 3: 215–21. https://doi.org/10.1629/23215.

Elsevier B.V. "Scopus." Accessed February 7, 2020. https://www.scopus.com/home.uri.

European Commission. "CORDIS." Accessed February 7, 2020. https://cordis.europa.eu/en.

European Commission. 2017. "Open Access & Data Management - H2020 Online Manual." Accessed February 13, 2020. https://ec.europa.eu/research/participants/docs/h2020-funding-guide/cross-cutting-issues/open-access-dissemination_en.htm.

DOAJ. "Directory of Open Access Journals." Accessed February 7, 2020. https://doaj.org/.

Garfield, E. 1999. "Journal Impact Factor: A Brief Review." *Cmaj* 161, no. 8: 979–80.

Lavis, J. N., Robertson, D., Woodside, J.M., McLeod, C.B., Abelson, J. 2003. "How Can Research Organizations More Effectively Transfer Research Knowledge to Decision Makers?" *The Milbank Quarterly* 81, no. 2: 221–48. https://doi.org/10.1111/1468-0009.t01-1-00052.

Norwegian Centre for Research Data. "ERIH PLUS." Accessed February 7, 2020. https://dbh.nsd.uib.no/publiseringskanaler/erihplus/.

Reillon, V. 2017. *EU Framework Program for Research and Innovation. Evolution and Key Data from FP1 to Horizon 2020 in View of FP9*. European Union. https://doi.org/10.2861/60724.

Rawat, S., Meena, S. 2014. "Publish or Perish: Where Are We Heading?" *Journal of Research in Medical Sciences* 19, no. 2 (February): 87–89.

PAPER #7.03

A MODEL FOR COMMUNITY AND CRITICALITY: THE UNIVERSITY URBAN DESIGN AND RESEARCH CENTER

Courtney Crosson[a]
[a]University of Arizona, Tucson, Arizona, USA

ABSTRACT

University urban design and research centers link academic pedagogy and research to real world applications. As the rate of urbanization accelerates and universities' missions become increasingly grounded in visible impact and financial self-sufficiency, these centers continue to offer an important and appealing model. These centers have doubled over the last two decades, yet a systematic investigation of their growth, successes, and failures does not exist. From a survey of over fifty centers throughout the United States, a typology is established based on the dominant activity of each center: Advocate, Consultant, Educator, and Scholar. Case studies from each mode are examined at greater depth. Overall, this paper finds continued growth in the number of these centers and a recent broadening of involvement by a diversity of academic and professional disciplines. Given this expansion, this paper is a tool for emerging centers to frame their missions within an established typology and gain best practices. Across all modes, universal challenges include: sustained funding, administrative support, and clarifying student and community roles. These centers are important models for universities to demonstrate visible impact and establish diversified revenue sources.

KEYWORDS

Community design; urban research center; urban lab; service-learning.

INTRODUCTION: THE NEED FOR A FRAMEWORK

This paper examined centers, labs, initiatives, projects, or institutes that formalize a link between universities and the urban planning and design of the communities in which the university sits. For ease, this paper titles these formalized links *university urban design and research centers* or *centers*, but recognizes the great variety under this umbrella. Certainly, each center in the study will continue to evolve and, in the long term, may alter the activities and purpose captured in this paper's assessments. In an attempt to make a broad and thorough study of centers, this paper includes the margins in order to identify emerging approaches and guarantee a complete sampling.

Recent Assessments of Centers

The literature on university urban design and research centers offers discrete analyses of the successes and failures of centers within research and education goals. However, this literature falls short on establishing a cohesive framework to characterize and evaluate centers across multi-dimensional objectives. This paper addresses this existing gap through a systematic study of over fifty centers to provide a relational framework comprised of four modes.

Centers that produce academic research within a community-focused mission face several consistent challenges. The largest issue highlighted by the literature is sustaining funding once it is acquired (Baum, 2000; Peason, 2002; Stahler and Tash, 1994). If the university is not able to offer stability to the center by supporting its annual operating

budget, the center must rely on grants, awards, and professional consulting service fees. Despite these challenges, Gerald Stahler and William Tash (1994) identify research centers as one of the most successful methods by which universities secure outside funding.

University-community partnerships run through educational courses are often challenged to meet initial, community expectations due to limitations in student abilities and the semester timeframe (Baum, 2000). Matching community expectations of professional quality work with student abilities and motivation is underlined as one of the greatest challenges of community-engaged pedagogy (Neuman, 2016; Dorgan, 2008). Real world projects often have timelines that are out of step with academic schedules and faculty have little ability to incentivize students to complete work outside of the structure of grading (Forsyth, 2006). To address these gaps, Howell Baum (2000) emphasizes approaching projects with realism: setting purposes that are clear, specific, and realistic; on matching purposes to resources; making partners accountable to one another; and in continual organization.

Recent Surveys of Centers

In 2002, the National Endowment for the Arts (NEA) published a directory of university-community design partnerships (Pearson, 2002). Rather than a framework, this directory catalogues centers that are a shared university-community enterprise and currently take on projects that use design as a tool to take action. This definition is narrower than the work undertaken by this paper's study. In an assessment of these partnerships, the NEA reports that while the work of these programs is impactful at a local scale, the learning outcomes often fall short of a national impact on community development objectives (Pearson, 2002).

In a 2006 article, Ann Forsyth looked at a broader definition of centers than the NEA directory, more aligned with the scope of this paper. She outlined and critiqued seven approaches to university-community partnerships: research centers, university firms, community advocacy center, extension, studio, clearinghouse, and umbrella organization. This outline provides an overview of types of activities undertaken by centers. Forsyth's article speaks in general terms from observations and experience. This paper provides a systematic examination of existing centers. It builds on the directory by NEA and the characterization of centers by Forsyth to analyze the growth of centers, modes of operation, and specific opportunities and challenges. It ultimately provides a relational framework of the broad diversity of centers that exist today.

1. METHOD: EVALUATING UNIVERSITY URBAN DESIGN AND RESEARCH CENTERS

The methodology of this study involved three stages: survey, framework formulation with the creation of a timeline, and framework testing through case study (see Figure 1). First, a survey of the existing urban design and research centers in the United States was conducted. The list of top twenty-five public universities (US News and World Report, 2016), top twenty-five private universities (US News and World Report, 2016), top 25 graduate urban planning programs (Planetizen, 2016), and top twenty-five schools of architecture (Design Intelligence, 2016) were investigated for the existence of a center. Over fifty centers with an urban, multidisciplinary focus were identified within many of these universities. Data was gathered by reading centers' websites and blogs, related news articles, and social media presence. Additional information was gathered by contacting the directors, administrators, or faculty members involved in each of the organizations through email and phone. During these conversations, the interviewees referenced other centers for inclusion in the survey. Reviewed literatures were also drawn upon for the survey.

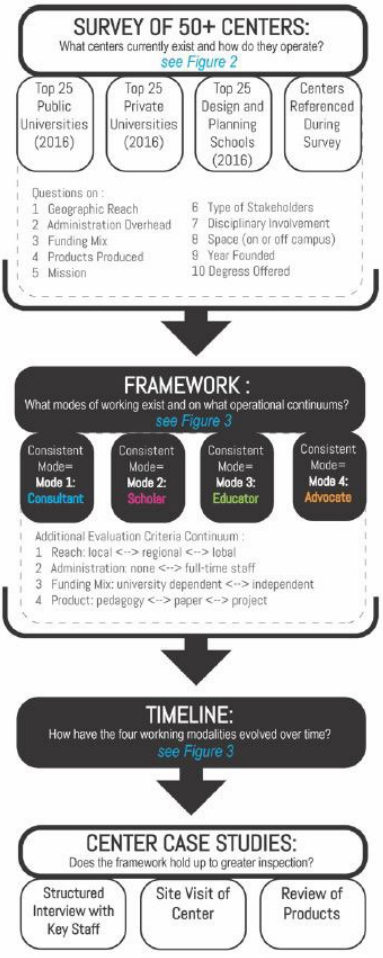


Figure 1. Research Methodology (Author 2020).

1.1. Survey of Centers

A comprehensive spreadsheet was created to document the information generated from the survey process. The spreadsheet recorded detailed information on each center including geographic reach, administrative overhead, funding mix, products produced, mission, type of stakeholders, disciplinary involvement, designated space (on or off campus), year founded, and degrees and classes offered. From this master list, over fifty centers were identified, relationally mapped, and organized chronologically to understand trends and relationships. Figure 2 diagrams the translation from consolidated spreadsheet to relational representation. The centers were charted on two axes: type of product (paper to physical) and type of activity (thinking to doing). Additionally, each center was encircled with the disciplines that were involved from their host university. Although planning, architecture, art, and landscape architecture dominated in involvement, some of the most dynamic products were produced in centers where there was involvement from other fields including sociology, geography, engineering, and political science. In this diagram, centers that have off-site locations are tagged and stakeholder involvement is indicated through color. Most centers broadly engaged with students, community members, and the professional community.

1.2. Categorization: Establishing the Framework and Timeline

The second stage was to interpret the gathered information in the spreadsheet to inform a set of deeper case studies. From an analysis of the activities and voiced purpose of the centers, a framework was developed based on four dominant modalities: Consultant, Scholar, Educator, or Advocate. These are represented by distinct colors in Figure 1 and 3. Although most centers engaged in all four modes, each center was tagged with a primary activity. Two main questions drove the categorization process: (1) who is doing the majority of the work production (e.g. students, faculty, administrators, or community collaborations) and (2) who is paying for the majority of the work (e.g. tuition revenue, research grants, contracts, or mission-driven foundation grants)? If the majority of a center's products were produced

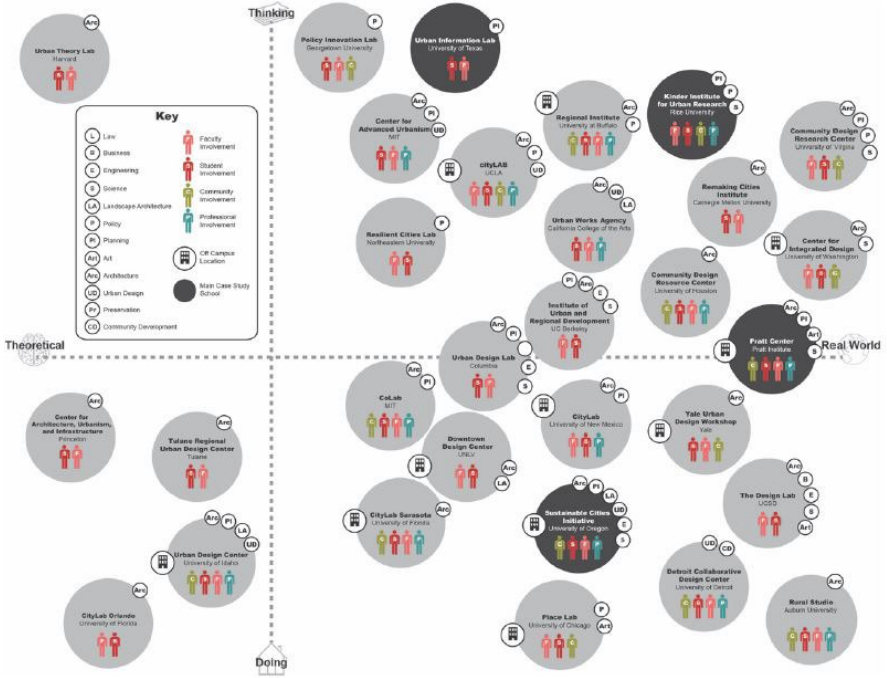


Figure 2. Initial Mapping of University Urban Design and Research Centers (Author 2018, with contribution from research assistants Andrew Marriot and Queston Kwolek).

by students and funded through tuition dollars, it was classified as an Educator. If the majority of work was produced by faculty and funded by grants, it was classified as a Scholar. If the majority of work was produced by a variety of positions with substantive administrative support and funded through contracts, it was a Consultant. If the majority of the work was produced in collaboration with community groups with support from Foundations and mission-driven organizations, it was an Advocate. Additionally, some centers have emphasized different modes over time, but the categorization focused on the current status of the center in the last year. Two graphic tools were created to organize the centers and understand the evolution and current operation of these modalities. A timeline, Figure 3, tracks the creation of these centers against historic trends. Various decades see greater growth or a higher disposition toward certain modalities. A consolidated line diagram, Figure 3, links each center and modality with type of funding, administrative capacity, extent of reach, and product produced. This graphic decodes dominant clustered operational behaviors of different modes.

1.3. Testing the Framework through Case Study

In the third stage, one case study was completed for each of the four modalities to test the framework and understand the great variety within each mode. Additional case

studies were completed to cross examine this main case study. In depth interviews with a set of preset questions with the current director of the center were conducted to gain this deeper picture of operation. Site visits were also conducted by the author to see firsthand the physical location and functioning of the center. A comprehensive review of the center's products, available through the center's website or physically acquired during the site visit, was done. Findings are discussed in the following sections.

2. RESULTS: A FRAMEWORK FOR THE UNIVERSITY URBAN DESIGN AND RESEARCH CENTER

Once this data was gathered from all three methodological stages, results were analyzed. This section shares these results across the strengths and challenges of the four modes. The ultimate aim is to provide guidance for universities seeking to start similar centers or current centers to contextualize their efforts.

2.1. The Consultant Mode

These centers are typically project based and are not focused on theoretical research. Funding usually comes from community and industry partners and grants, but not the university. These centers typically require at least one designated administrator to function (usually to pursue grants and manage multiple incoming monetary streams). They use mainly the professional skills of faculty to assist partners in design or social change work. Overall, these centers were the most financially successful. They had the largest annual budgets and consistently excelled at securing large, multi-year funding sources. The work produced by the Consultant mode often had quick and direct impact as the projects were framed to answer a specific need and were output oriented. However, the Consultant mode often struggled to fit easily within the bounds of the university setting. Challenges included projects driven by client needs rather than intellectual discovery, misalignment between the projects that clients were willing to fund and the specific interests of research faculty, and lack of student learning due to the narrow objectives and strict timelines of client funded projects. Another common issue voiced by the Consultant mode was a perception of the center as taking work from professional partners within their communities. This perception went against the community engagement mission of these centers. Consult mode examples include: Kinder Institute at Rice University and the Yale Urban Design Workshop (mainly supported through contracts for real projects), Columbia University's Urban Lab (garnering funding from internationally commissioned studies and projects), and Colorado States' Institute for the Built Environment (largely executing contract research work). Each of these cases has at least one administrator who oversees development and contract execution. These centers are not formally associated with courses or curriculum within the universities.

2.2. The Scholar Mode

These centers are focused on theoretical and applied research. Funding usually comes from the university or grants. The majority of collaboration tends to happen within the university and its bodies, rather than with the government or community partners. Little to no administration (outside of the typical facilities and administration provided by the university) is needed in this mode. The work products from these centers included journal articles, books, newsletters, and blogs. Oftentimes, impact of the work extends out to other universities or professionals who bring theories to reality or expand on the knowledge-base related to the work. As the output of this mode is mainly publications, it syncs well with a typical university promotion structure that prioritizes academic publications. Additionally, this mode was often a positive mechanism to encourage multi-discipline

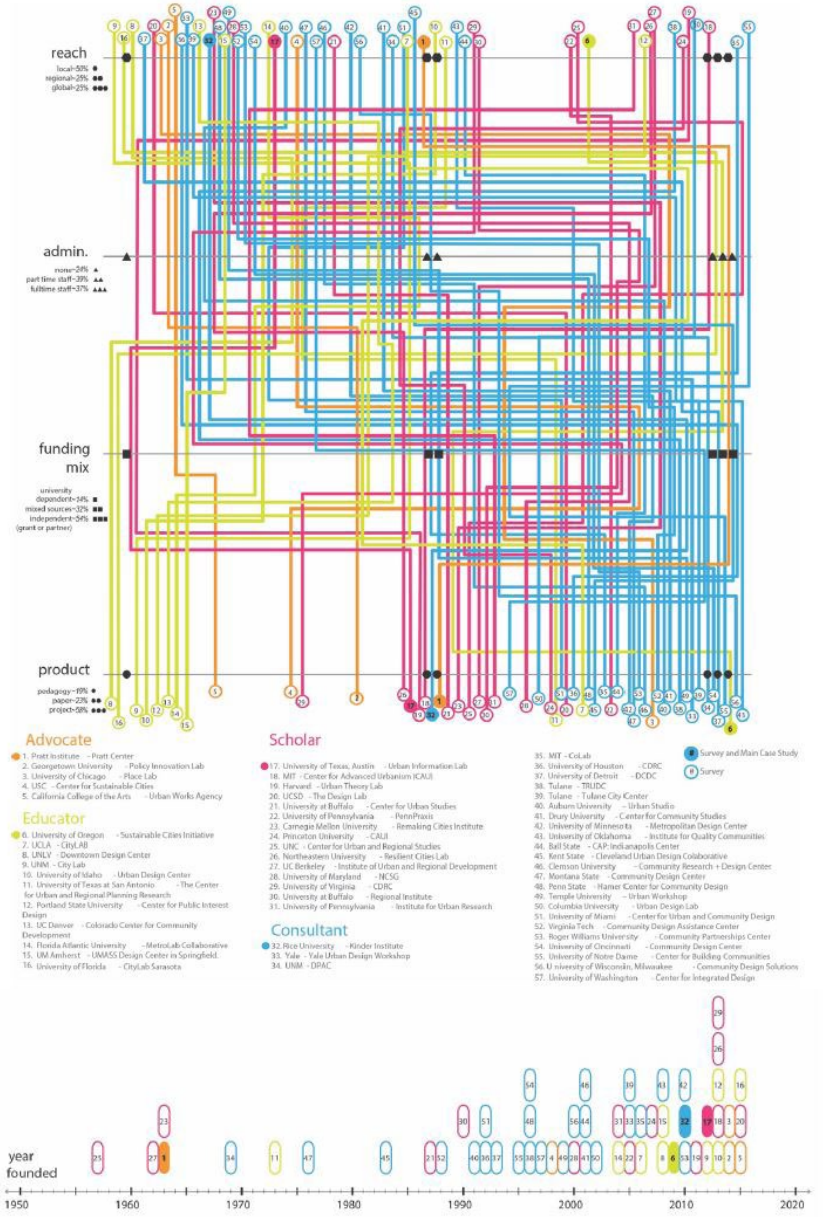


Figure 3. Timeline and Modalities of University Urban Design and Research Centers. (Author 2018, with contribution from research assistants Andrew Marriot and Queston Kwolek).

and multi-sector collaboration and provide graduate and advanced undergraduate research opportunities. One downside was that work from the Scholar mode was often less connected to the community. Academic publication did not always communicated in a way that was accessible and useful to community members. This mode largely relied on faculty to administer the center. Due to limited time, centers led by a faculty administrator were often steered toward the faculty member's own research agenda. Thus, in the Scholar mode, the center's work seemed less agile to new needs or demands of community partners. Scholar mode examples include: University of Texas-Austin's Urban Information Lab, Harvard's Urban Theory Lab, University of Pennsylvania's Institute for Urban Research, Massachusetts Institute of Technology's Center for Advanced Urbanism. All of these centers mainly produce academic publications and are supported largely by grants and the universities in which they sit.

2.3. The Educator Mode

These centers are focused predominantly on teaching the next generation of planning and design professionals. Funding is almost all university (tuition) based. Some centers in this mode hired additional administrators to handle development and dissemination of work (particularly if construction was involved). Service-learning and design-build pedagogies are strategies commonly used by these centers. Positively, the Educator mode supports the core mission of the university to educate. This mode provides real-world project experience to students, particularly aligned with professional schools of planning and architecture that seek to produce practice-ready graduates. This mode also appeared more able to respond to local community needs because the center is funded through a stable stream of tuition revenue rather than beholden to the fluctuating demands and interests of clients or grants. Centers in this mode took on more pro-bono and short-term projects. Challenges faced by this mode included inconsistent quality of products due to the limitations of the academic calendar and student effort and skill and variability in community connection because of a constant turnover of students. Educator mode examples include: University of Florida's CityLab (offering degrees and classes directly through the Lab), Texas A&M's Institute for Sustainable Communities, and Auburn University's Rural Studio (delivering the majority of its work through coursework). These centers are all focused on the dual mission of connecting with their communities and supporting student learning.

2.4. The Advocate Mode

These centers focus largely on policy advocacy and public education for the betterment of communities. Funding comes from those looking to promote change – be it the university, community partners, or national organizations. This typology typically has at least one administrator (such as a director) to clearly guide the mission and fundraise. The impact of the Advocate mode ranges from simply distributing knowledge to changing laws for the public good. Few of the surveyed centers were classified under the Advocate mode, though many hybridized Advocate activities with their dominant mode. This mode strongly focused on community needs and supported long-term community relationships. With the right mission, these centers received sustained, multi-year funding by mission-aligned foundations and organizations. One challenge faced by this mode was a conflict between the political nature of advocacy and the apolitical mission of institutions of higher learning. Additionally, some faculty found it difficult to situate their scholarly publication incentives within the work of these mission-driven centers. Advocate mode examples include: Pratt's Center for Community Development, Georgetown's Policy Innovation Lab (focused on informing and changing

policy) and University of Chicago's Place Lab (emphasizing advocacy for communities surrounding the university).

3. DISCUSSION: VARIATIONS WITHIN AND BETWEEN THE FOUR MODES

During the creation of this framework, three inter and intra mode variations were observed: (1) operations,
(2) hybridization between modes, and (3) transitions of modes over time. The next section discusses these dynamics between the four modes.

3.1. Four Modes: Operations

During categorization, centers were also mapped against four operational continuums: geographical reach, administrative support, funding mix, and type of products produced (Figure 3). Generally, the Consultant mode tended to have a regional to global reach, require greater administration support, secured higher volumes of funding largely from industry, and produced professional products. The Scholar mode tended to have a broad reach, required less administrative support, secured moderate levels of funds largely from grants, and produced academic publications. The Educator mode tended to have a local focus, required little administration, derived funding from existing tuition dollars, and produced semi-professional products. The Advocate mode tended to be locally focus, have greater administrative support, successfully secured larger amounts of funding from mission-driven foundations, and produced products that directly address community identified needs. At the time of the survey, half of the over fifty sampled centers were locally oriented, with only a fourth (25%) with a global mission. The majority of centers (54%) were financially self-sustaining through grants and contracts, with only 14% relying solely on university funding. Projects were the dominant output of 58% of centers, with a balanced divide between pedagogy (19%) and papers (23%) as alternative products. A variety of administrative models either within departments or spanning multiple disciplines exist. More than three quarters of centers (76%) relied on additional part or fulltime employees to operate. Research work overwhelmingly used an applied rather than theoretical methodology (Figure 3).

3.2. Four Modes: Combinations

Within a dominant mode category, there are several hybrids or combinations. Take for example, a center that does the majority of its work in the Consultant mode, but also acts as an Educator and Advocate. Such a center receives the majority of its funding from industry partnerships and paid reports, but also acts as an Educator when it hires undergraduate, graduate, and post-doctorates to carry out the work. Additionally, this same center can play the role of an Advocate for the particular mission of the agency supplying funding. In other cases, centers are Educator-Scholars (primarily tuition revenue focused, run through coursework and occasionally publishing papers from course products) or Scholar-Consultant- Advocates (principally grant focused with additional streams of revenue from contracts, powered by faculty time, demonstrating impact through scholarly publications while advocating for community wellness through progressive urban design). Although each center is classified by its dominant funding source and work product, most centers engage with a community through a myriad of processes.

3.3. Four Modes: Transitions

Additionally, many centers have transitioned from one model to another over time. Transitions are most often spurred by a change in the interests of the center's leadership or funding availability. For example, the Kinder Institute at Rice University initially grew out of a course that produced an annual

comprehensive area survey documenting the changes in Houston over time. It was funded by tuition dollars and powered by student work (fitting the Educator mode). As the survey grew, the center garnered grants and several post-doctorates were hired and enlarged the center's academic publication (fitting the Scholar mode). Most recently, the Kinder Institute has switched from a faculty director to an executive director pulled from industry and government experience. The main source of revenue is now a healthy endowment and contracts with industry partners. A marked decrease in faculty involvement has been replaced by hired research associates to complete the terms of contracts (fitting the Consultant mode) (Klineberg, 2018). This one example is indicative of the journey of many centers across the country over time – endeavoring to stay nimble within changing funding availability and institutional expectations.

CONCLUSIONS: A FUTURE OF ENGAGED WORK, SCHOLARSHIP, EDUCATION, ADVOCACY

University urban design and research centers link academic pedagogy and research to real-world applications. These centers provide an infrastructure for faculty, students, and research staff to complete research, coursework, and projects that engage with urban planning and design practice. Four modalities (Educator, Scholar, Consultant, and Activist) structure a framework to understand the diverse work of these centers. Variations within and between these four modes include operational factors (administrative support, funding sources, geographical reach, and material outputs), hybrids, and transitions. This paper addresses a current gap in a systematic study and relational understanding of these centers.

Overall, this paper is a tool for universities interested in starting a center to develop their own missions and for existing centers to contextualize their efforts within a systematically established framework. The strengths and challenges and analyses of the four modes can be weighed by universities in this position. The Consultant can encounter complaints by the professional community of unfair competition, yet also has demonstrated the greatest capacity to expand university revenue. The Scholar can endure yearly budget uncertainties between grant funding cycles, yet most naturally fits within the skillsets and incentive structure of faculty in a tenure system. The Educator may enjoy a stable university budget, but struggle to meet the expectations of the community partners within the fixed schedule of coursework. Further, the Educator seems to be the easiest center to initiate, as it functions within existing coursework structures and there is little new overhead. Finally, the Advocate may encounter misunderstandings of their role of advocating for a community while staying apolitical, especially if the center sits within a state university. This mode seems to be the best model for targeting specific issues or desired areas of change within a community. All four modalities can demonstrate visible impact and bring diverse sources of revenue for universities. Overall, centers continue to expand in number and mission across the country and involve a widening set of multi-discipline academic and professional interests.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Andrew Marriot and Queston Kwolek contributed through survey research and graphic development.

REFERENCES

Balassiano, K., & West, D. (2012). "Seeking the studio experience outside of the studio course." *Journal of Planning Education and Research*, 32(4), 465-475.

Baum, H. S. (2000). "Fantasies and realities in university-community partnerships." *Journal of Planning Education and Research*, 20(2), 234-246.

Bose, M., Horrigan, P., Doble, C., & Shipp, S. C. (Eds.). (2014). *Community matters: Service-learning in engaged design and planning*. Routledge.

Design Intelligence. (2016). "America's Best Architecture and Design Schools 2016." DI 21, no. 16.

Dorgan, K. A. (2008). "Principles of engagement:(Mis) understanding the community-design studio." *Cityscape*, 9-19.

Forsyth, A., Lu, H., & McGirr, P. (2000). "Service learning in an urban context: Implications for planning and design education." *Journal of Architectural and Planning Research*, 236-259.

Forsyth, A. (2006). "Urban Centres in Universities: Institutional Alternatives for Urban Design: Practice Note." *Journal of Urban Design*, 11(1), 97-103.

Klineberg, Stephen. (2018). Interview on Kinder Institute. Interview by author. 9 November 2018.

Neuman, M. (2016). "Teaching collaborative and interdisciplinary service-based urban design and planning studios." *Journal of Urban Design*, 21(5), 596-615.

Pearson, J. (2002). "University-community design partnerships: innovations in practice." National Endowment for the Arts with the support of The Richard H.

Planetizen. (2016). "Top Graduate Urban Planning Programs, 2016." *Planetizen*. Retrieved 10 Sept 2016.

Stahler, G. J., & Tash, W. R. (1994). "Centers and institutes in the research university: issues, problems, and prospects." *The Journal of Higher Education*, 65(5), 540-554.

Taher, Grace M., ed. (1971). *University urban research centers*. Vol. 1. Urban Institute.

US News and World Report. (2016.) Best Colleges. US News and World Report. Retrieved 10 Sept 2016.

PAPER #7.04

PEER-REVIEW OR POPULARITY-CONTEST: THE EROSION + IMPLOSION OF INTERNAL ASSESSMENT IN HIGHER EDUCATION

Brian Robert Sinclair[a]
[a] School of Architecture, Planning + Landscape, University of Calgary + sinclairstudio inc, Canada

ABSTRACT

Architectural education historically has an awkward existence in the academy, in part due to strong links to the profession and in part due to subjective dimensions. Universities struggle to understand environmental design fields, reluctantly accepting creative endeavors as valid undertakings yet questioning an absence of empirical rigor, methodological discipline and measurable outcomes. Within this complicated milieu falls the task of faculty performance review. Universities develop guidelines for promotion, tenure and merit that attempt to cover the broad spectrum of fields dwelling in the halls of higher learning. In many instances general solutions are simply inadequate. Within colleges of architecture, unique evaluation policies are established that seek some resolution between discipline-specific circumstances and generally-applicable expectations. It is a rough fit at best. The subjective nature of environmental design has implications on student work, academic research and faculty assessment, to name but a few impacted realms. While external review, such as journal article consideration or conference paper evaluation, is commonly blind, the assessment of faculty on university campuses is never such. Rather than being objective and blind, these evaluations are commonly tainted with politics. Inappropriate aspects, such as a faculty member's popularity, philosophical posturing or pedagogical positioning have undue negative influence on delivery of fairness and execution of justice in determining meritorious performance. The present meta-enquiry argues that within architecture schools such loose and slippery qualities are heightened and amplified, based in large measure on subjective grounds used to evaluate many activities in the ethos, including design. The research examines literature exposing flaws in assessment within the academy and builds arguments for further and more focused study. Design faculty often claim uniqueness and difference as grounds to opt out, in part, from larger university guidelines. However, departing from universally accepted norms opens doors for abuse, arbitrary judgements and inequity. The paper provides a provocation, and opens the door to an emergent field of research, that is proving both urgent and significant. The author paints an initial picture of a complex landscape that is often ignored in higher education, and as such encourages broader and deeper investigation of topics that strike sensitive yet vital cultural, legal, social and cognitive chords.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; higher education; systems; review; performance; equity; justice.

INTRODUCTION

> "Education is about healing and wholeness. It is about empowerment, liberation, transcendence, about renewing the vitality of life. It is about finding and claiming ourselves and our place in the world." Palmer[1] (1999)

[1] Palmer, Parker J. "The Grace of Great Things: Reclaiming the Sacred in Knowing, Teaching and Learning". In The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education. Editor: Steven Glazer. Tarcher/Putnam: New York New York. 1999. Pp 18-19.

Universities tend to take great pride in the rigor and discipline required to discover knowledge, search for understanding and solve problems. Without doubt our present world is overflowing with crises and catastrophes that warrant our attention, ingenuity, wisdom and resolve. Within such a demanding milieu many academics rise to the challenge, pushing hard to consider the complexity of dilemma and to chart viable paths forward. Higher education is a unique environment where freedom of thought is supported and unconventional thinking is encouraged. In this ethos, competition runs high and over-achievement is commonplace. Faculty vie for position and fight for the finite rewards, monetary and otherwise, that accompany the conferral of the title 'meritorious'. However, the game is zero-sum, filled with winners and losers and perhaps a few scattered serendipitously in-between. Modern societies increasingly lose sight of the notions of right and wrong, truth and lie, good and bad, and fair and unjust. In times when governments have abandoned moral compasses, and elected officials drool in their pursuit of money and power, it is understandable how ripples reach far and wide. The university, of course, is in no way immune to the plague of politics as it seeks to acknowledge achievement, reward accomplishment and honor those deemed worthy. In fact, the present paper argues that in many ways the academy falls victim to moral decay and 'might makes right' mentality propagated by powerful politicians, corporate leaders and others who routinely abuse position and power – all too often placing self-interest, self-promotion and self-gratification well above qualities of compassion, charity, grace and the support of the community.

1. BACKGROUND

> "Complicating matters are colleagues who in social situations appear collegial, congenial, and supportive to the victim but in private become just the opposite.
> The victims are excluded, disenfranchised, silenced, overlooked, or ignored." Twale + De Luca[2] (2008)

One of the potent tools used within the academy to assess performance and measure impact is peer review. In its purest sense, that is when truly blind in structure and execution, peer review is a powerful vehicle to determine the value and significance of work – whether that be a scholarly paper, a grant application, a request for advancement, etc. In such a scenario the identity of the person or persons whose work or performance is being adjudicated is hidden, rendering said assessment more objective, more fair and in principle without political or personal bias. In some cases where there are numerous stages of assessment, the review can be double blind, or more so, in an effort to proffer even more objective outcomes. In some cases, at some institutions, there are selected processes that do deploy blind review. However, this approach for many internal evaluations, such as promotion of rank or merit assessment, is often anything but blind. In a growing number of cases throughout higher education the evaluative systems in place are corrupted by internal politics, swayed by individual personalities, and skewed by power dynamics that unduly tip the scales of justice. In recent years many researchers have cast light onto dark subjects such as incivility, bullying, mob mentality and incessant individualism within the halls of the academy. Such studies point to a growing climate of toxicity in many units on campuses across the USA and Canada.Fueled by heightened competition, stagnant salaries and a culture of greed,

[2] Twale, Darla J and De Luca, Barbara M. Faculty Incivility: The Rise of the Academic Bully Culture and What to Do About It. Jossey-Bass: San Francisco. 2008. Page 24

it is increasingly common to see brutal political games play out in the colleges and departments of our institutions, and of course, to have them manifest in systems of assessment. The research, concerned with an escalating climate of injustice and incivility, critically reviewed recent literature outlining dysfunction in the academy (see, for example: Twale & De Luca[3], 2008; Coates & Morrison[4], 2011; Bennett[5], 2003; Ginsberg[6], 2011; Hollis[7], 2012). The author, with intense experience in senior administration on both sides of the 49th parallel, has witnessed this escalation in attacks, rise in bias and exercises in prejudice within universities. Of course no one wants to admit that higher education could fall into these traps of incivility and injustice – especially given the lofty status many academics ascribe to themselves by virtue of degree and pedigree. However, as in the society looming beyond the ivory towers, the academy's behavior reflects a broader decline and deterioration that must be admitted, owned and hopefully rectified.

2. PEER REVIEW - FAIR OR FRAUD

> "Professors, taken as a group, are far from perfect. They can be petty, foolish, venal, lazy and quarrelsome. Nevertheless, at its best, the university is a remarkable institution. It is a place where ideas are taken seriously; where notions that are taken as givens elsewhere are problematized; where what has seemed to be reality can be bent and reshaped by the power of the mind." Ginsberg[8] (2011)

The concept of peer review is robust and fair when executed with professionalism, mindfulness and care. Key aspects of fairness include impartial review, to minimize politics and favoritism, and deployment of accepted standards, to ensure reasonable enforcement and similar comparison. When peer review is handled in this manner academics, administrators and the public enjoy confidence in the system. Academics understand the nature of assessment, knowing what is deemed meritorious and feeling comfortable that adjudication is being delivered in a balanced and transparent fashion. Even when the game is zero sum, at least there is comfort in knowing the mechanisms for evaluation are rational, consistent and even-handed. In many cases at many institutions the peer-review systems in place operate with fair play front of mind.

In many cases, however, and especially in the current climate of turbulence and distrust, the peer-review process slides south, rendering decisions in ways that delegitimize the system and divide up cohorts into opaque pools of winners and losers. Rather than ensuring blind review, whereby the assessors hold an arm's length to those under assessment, many contemporary approaches are exposed to the dark sides of the academy where popularity is preferenced over performance, where favoritism trumps fairness, and where who you know can matter more than what you achieve. In such scenarios certain groups of faculty stand exposed to far greater risk – for example tenure-track members who are in vulnerable positions and who are subject to serious power differentials. Rather than standing securely on objective review of the merits of their work, as measured by impact factors or awards or funding, they can face subjective judgements based on perceived collegiality, arbitrary assessments of research value, or selective screening of

[3] Twale, Darla J. and De Luca, Barbara M. Faculty Incivility: The Rise of the Academic Bully Culture and What to Do About It. Jossey-Bass: San Francisco, CA. 2008.
[4] Coates, Ken S. and Morrison, Bill. Campus Confidential. James Lorimer & Company: Toronto. 2011
[5] Bennett, John B. Academic Life: Hospitality, Ethics, and Spirituality. Anker Publishing: Bolton, MA. 2003
[6] Ginsberg, Benjamin. The Fall of the Faculty: The Rise of the All-Administrative University and Why It Matters. Oxford University Press: NY, NY. 2011
[7] Hollis, Leah P. Bully in the Ivory Tower: How Aggression & Incivility Erode American Higher Education. PatriciaBerkly: San Bernardino, CA. 2012
[8] Ginsberg, Benjamin. The Fall of the Faculty: The Rise of the All-Administrative University and Why It Matters. Oxford University Press: New York, New York. 2011. Page 201.

teaching evaluation commentary. In these cases the direction of the assessment can be predetermined based on goals of sending a message, curtailing freedom, suppressing ascension, or simply engaging in bullying and incivility.

3. ESCALATING DYSFUNCTION

> "We see that there are proclivities toward individualism across the higher education world. The disposition to behave in self-absorbed and self-protecting ways and to put narrow self-interest ahead of the welfare of others or a broader common good is widespread. Individual and institutional identity, worth and fulfilment are understood in terms of power to shape and control others, and to resist their power." - Bennett[9] (2003)

Higher education is a remarkable, potent and positive vehicle within our societies. Critical missions that embrace the power of teaching, the shaping of minds, the building of character, the discovery of knowledge, and service to community, to name but a few attributes of the academy, serve as vital forces to keep society in check and our progress on track. This is not to imply that the academy is ideal, but rather that its many roles however flawed are important and meaningful. In recent decades, as society has confronted growing separation, fragmentation, angst and anger, the university milieu has also encountered its share of trials and tribulations. Some of these challenges are merely reflections of obstacles facing society writ large. Some of these challenges, however, are somewhat unique to the institution, or at least assume a unique character and condition due to the peculiarities, parameters, qualities and quirks of place. The array of novel negative features that have been building in the academy is broad. For the purposes of the present paper, intending to catalyze future research, the author has identified, and will elaborate upon, five features: Relentless Individualism, Mob Mentality, Power Differential, Popularity Contest and Barefaced Discrimination. Relentless Individualism: The systems in place in higher education promote competition before community, and generally both within the ranks of the professoriate and in student populations. Coates & Morrison[10] (2011), for example, highlight that: "Faculty members compete for research grants and academic prestige; they compete for tenure and promotion, and often for an annual merit bonus; and they work in a complex professional environment, where evaluation is constant, real approval rare, and criticism routine and intense." The milieu, for all stakeholders, can be aggressive with high stakes. Grading scales, pay scales, performance curves, merit assessment, chasing points, pursuing papers, seeking attention, demanding accolades, and the like all tend to foster a milieu of winners and losers. And while, without question there must be means to differentiate levels of success, and to acknowledge progress, such focus on individual advancement should not come at the expense of building community, of cultivating civility and of propagating a culture of caring. In reaction to many institutional developments, including reduced operating budgets, eroding salaries (taken to irrational levels where institutions refer to oxymoronic 'zero percent' increases), and misguided efforts to encourage rivalry, faculty double-down on self-preservation, escalate self-interest and slide into survival of the fittest modes. Relentless individualism is concerned about winning at all costs, aggressively displaying the peacock feathers and assertively keeping others in their place. Mob Mentality: While the concept of mob mentality seems on first glance to oppose relentless individualism, they are in fact mutually supportive. Often individuals fear for their success and progress in a climate

[9] Bennett, John B. Academic Life: Hospitality, Ethics and Spirituality. Anker Publishing: Bolton, MA. 2003. Page 21.
[10] Coates, Ken S. and Morrison, Bill. Campus Confidential. James Lorimer & Company: Toronto. 2011. Page 146

plagued with power plays, where senior faculty with authority can make or break the careers of junior members. Often less outgoing faculty dwell in the shadows of those with voice and influence, being easily swayed to take a side or move with the mob. In academic environments there tend to be very few checks and balances on mis-behavior, and this is especially true as one climbs the ladder in power and position. In many cases there are systems through which to raise grievances, or to appeal decisions, or to express concern – however in many cases these same systems lack substance, enforcement and impact. In many cases the rewards of travelling down a path of complaint are few and far between. In some cases merely raising a matter places a target on one's back – whereby the group is clearly able to rally against the whistle-blower, marginalize the outlier or sideline the opposition. Power Differential: University environments, while frequently taking pride in claims of independence and horizontal structure (e.g., difficulties in herding cats or raking water uphill), tend in fact to be very vertically structured. In many cases the lines of authority are clearly defined, delineated, apparent and applied. In such cases positions and position descriptions, including job responsibilities, are well cast with manifest accountability. However, and far more disconcerting, are the power differentials and power games that exist in informal ways. For example, senior tenured faculty members that have sights set on controlling the behaviors, interests and agendas of junior tenure-track academics. At times the biases play out in the open, at faculty meetings or committee sessions, where intentions may be vehemently verbalized and loyalty expectations explicitly expressed. In a dark observation around power differentials Hollis[11] quotes a junior faculty member: "Untenured faculty are very susceptible to being bullied by their tenured colleagues; the whole system is set up to support that." Far more problematic are passive-aggressive actions whereby confusion and chaos are sown, wherein junior faculty sense they are being judged, or their work is in question, or they are slipping, all without the benefit of overt & objective guidance. In many instances the power differential rears its ugly head in committee deliberations considering tenure, promotion, merit, leave requests, internal seed funding applications, or similar entreaties. In such committees senior faculty tend to wield extraordinary influence by virtue of experience, rank, seniority or connections. They are often leading these adjudications, expressing views, often personal, about the virtues of an academic, an application, an argument, or an advancement. Due to the authority and power (might makes right) imbalance more junior members are often reserved, intimidated and/or acquiescent. While questions about right or wrong may be in mind, it is difficult to challenge those in power and especially if there are demonstrably bad consequences for running against the current. Twale & De Luca[12] underscore: "To acknowledge the power and authority differential is to begin to redefine and redistribute power with an aim to neutralizing a bully and a bully culture." Popularity Contest: Human beings have a natural craving to belong. Our identities are, in part, derived from those we associate with, from those we resonate with, and from those we feel most alike. To be popular is to have a sense of belonging – to feel comfortable and to know we fit in. On the contrary, to reside outside of a social group, to be alone and to be out of place is challenging and discomforting. In the halls of academia there are many cliques, groups and gangs based on common views, shared values and similar posturing. When an academic strays too far from the party line they face risks of alienation, marginalization and ostracization. Such party lines may not be

[11] Hollis, Leah P. Bully in the Ivory Tower. Patricia Berkly: San Bernardino, CA. 2015. Page71.
[12] Twale, Darla J. and De Luca, Barbara M. Faculty Incivility: The Rise of the Academic Bully Culture and What to Do About It. Jossey-Bass: San Francisco, CA. 2008. Page 167

explicitly delineated yet are tacitly understood – for example, subscription to a given view on pedagogy, or particular research methods, or an in-vogue style, or certain internal politics, and the like. When it comes to evaluation, whether for merit, promotion, awards and so on, one's popularity can factor large in decision-making. If professors are outliers, with views that are contrarian, they can be harshly assessed and even punished. Even with the guardrails of tenure, those in power (whether administrative, committee, jury, etc.) can inflict pain and suffering upon those deemed to be assuming unpopular positions. Barefaced Discrimination: Perhaps the most egregious of tactics at play in the academy is blatant, open, unvarnished discrimination. Certainly the academy, as a cultural institution and at the highest levels of aspiration and action, is a champion for fairness, justice and equity. In general, and in many ways, the academy subscribes to and achieves elevated positions around morality and ethics. That said, at lower levels, including internal peer review mechanisms, there are many instances of abuse of power, abandonment of values and simply bad behavior. Of course the academy frowns upon discrimination of all types, opting instead to champion the rights of all members, and all students, in a climate of equality and acceptance. However, when committees need to render decisions, or individual administrators are called upon to take a stance, undue considerations such as gender, age, race, income and other factors can surface. In many cases when infractions are brought to light, by whistle-blowers for example, the system struggles to react in positive ways. Often the legal experts in the system, on both faculty and administrative sides, suggest cases of discrimination are exceedingly hard to prove. Again with almost no means to discipline belligerent behavior, such as demonstrations of overt discrimination, the issues are downplayed or swept under the carpet. The toll of fighting the system, in the case of victimized faculty members, is commonly significant. In the end the odds of winning are slim and the potential risks of precipitating retribution and escalating abuse are many. To sum up … These negative forces, and damaging actions, within the academy are not of course omnipresent but are evident enough to warrant our attention and demand our concern. Shrinking university budgets and growing obsession with things quantitative have tended to translate into growing aggression in the ivory towers, with voracious academics clamouring for anything of substance in the zero sum game. Notions of rating, or ranking, or sorting or sifting, are totally understandable but that said, must be informed by evidence, must be executed with fairness, and must be grounded in justice. Unfortunately in many instances these qualitative judgements are frequently rendered in less than pristine ways, and often without the benefit of unbiased means, metrics or methods.

4. MEANS, METRICS + METHODS

> Peer-Review[13]
> "process by which a scholarly work (a paper or a research proposal) is checked by a group of experts in the same field to make sure it meets the necessary standards before it is published or accepted."

While many of the identified concerns are discoverable in all corners and crannies of the university, some colleges and departments are arguably more susceptible to various forms of bias and discrimination. The design professions, including Architecture, are especially prone to abuse due to the unique nature of the disciplines. Architecture, for example, is a complex melange of art and science, humanities and technologies. Due to the highly subjective dimensions of the

[13] http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/peer-review

profession, judgements around right and wrong, good and bad, strong and weak, often degrade into realms of intuition, opinion, flavor and favor. Unlike more empirically based fields, where measurement and quantification are intensely standardized, architecture endorses and encourages very subjective ways of interpreting, understanding and judging. In architectural design many facets of the equation are more about 'appropriateness' than about right or wrong. A dozen architects working on the exact same problem would arrive at a dozen largely unique solutions – all with greater or lesser levels of appropriateness and suitability to the challenges at hand. One might argue that in the creation and construction of a building this level of tolerance or latitude is acceptable if not desirable. However, in the academy, when decisions are being made that have demonstrable impacts on one's career advancement, research progress, teaching efficacy and so on, the need for fairness, integrity and transparency looms especially large. Promotion of rank or judgements around meritorious performance should not be a moving target based on whim, personalities and politics. Rather, all faculty members should know the rules of engagement and should have confidence that the scales of justice, and modes of judgement, will be fair. The present paper wades into some difficult and turbulent waters. A key goal is to explore some dark corners of the academy – at this point in a preliminary manner that paves the way for more fulsome study. It is worthwhile to briefly review some of the typical approaches to internal assessment of faculty, including the areas normally considered for evaluation. As an initial examination the research aims to be exploratory – in many ways more speculative than definitive. The author acknowledges and accepts that further study will be required, especially in a comparative sense, both within and between institutions. While the evaluative strategies of institutions vary widely (and, of course, differ widely between various countries), and the author is quick to support said nuance, the overall tactics and techniques for review are relatively common within the academy. For example, most universities globally attend to the triad of teaching, research and service, albeit with percentage weighting at times shifting from school to school. The following section of the paper is intended to provide a very general understanding of forces and factors under consideration. Narrative Assessment + Committee Review: In many schools the process of internal assessment, whether for advancement in rank, acknowledgement of performance, or conferring of awards, involves two components. On one hand the administrator closest to the academic in question prepares a narrative summarizing performance and underscoring high and low moments in that performance. This often involves a rather subjective read of an application prepared by the academic under review, which in and of itself is often quite subjective. In Architecture there are few definitive standards that are set with respect to impact factors of journals, weighting of publications, value of research outputs, etc. So to reiterate, a rather comprehensive yet ill-categorized listing of accomplishments by an academic is then interpreted, again in an often loose manner, by an administrator deemed to be the closest supervisor in the hierarchy. The language of such interpretive narratives is often colorful, highlighting the poetic posturing of the discipline rather than underscoring a more fair and objective evidence-based adjudication. This narrative, a summary of an academic's performance as interpreted by an administrator, is then used as a starting point for a committee review. The tone of said narrative often leads the witness – that is, the position of the administrator may unduly influence the committee that is charged with being fair and honest judges of a faculty member's performance. This aspect alone is enough to call into question

or even discredit the system, as it is highly influential and anything but blind. Review committees, often elected by fellow faculty members from the field, sometimes with additional academics drawn from outside, then consider the narrative as a starting point with judgments then strengthened or weakened by review of the candidate's application (e.g., portfolio of performance). These committees are commonly highly politicized, with junior members deferring to senior members and with extroverts dominating deliberations. While these committees are often intentionally composed of tenured and tenure-track professors, the power differential is obvious and difficult. Few tenure-track faculty are willing to confront senior professors, knowing that soon enough the junior members' fate will be in the hands of their senior colleagues. After a decision departs a review committee it is commonly screened again by the next administrator above, typically a dean, who judges that the committee's assessment can be upheld or modified – upwards or downwards. This point in the process demands tremendous strength, integrity and openness by the administrator – or else another point of exploitation can be introduced. The internal systems of adjudication, in general, are often far too tight, intertwined and incestuous for comfort and confidence to prevail. In many cases such committees deliver a judgement on the applicant, meritorious or not, worthy of tenure or not, deserving of promotion or not. While some universities strive to inject as much balance as possible into such systems, in the end the ensuing determinations are often colored negatively by the many flaws inherent in such closed, internal arrangements. The university typically structures review of faculty around a very traditional trilogy of teaching, research and service. It is helpful to briefly consider these realms, and in particular with respect to weaknesses and faults inherent in prevailing methods of assessment.

Teaching: Teaching is a hallmark of higher education and as such weighs heavily under any schemes for assessment of faculty. There are many means to assess effectiveness in teaching. Unfortunately many institutions rely too heavily on only one or two approaches, and most commonly just student executed evaluations (also called course and instructor surveys). There are myriad problems with reliance on a single instrument, and even when they are executed with care and professionalism the results can be misinterpreted and even abused to ill ends. For example, most course & instructor evaluations include scales for questions but also include written anecdotal comments. In reviews, such as faculty performance, individual comments can be extracted without context and without a complete picture. In other words, negative comments can be extracted for the purposes of building a case, even if the evidence points elsewhere. Also, if anecdotal comments are 'cherry-picked' without the inclusion of the full statistics around the survey then the conclusions can be misguided and even malicious. A better approach is to deploy an array of tools to more robustly measure teaching effectiveness – and there are many from which to draw.
Research: Research is a vital activity of the university, with the pursuit of new discoveries and the application of existing knowledge fundamental to equations of success. In so many ways the contributions of the academy, in terms of the advancement of society, the alleviation of suffering, the improvement to quality of life, and other positive actions, are outstanding. Measures of research achievement are many, and in general are fair and appropriate. Impact factors, funding levels, external awards, patents secured and other metrics aim to objectively assess the benefits of scholarly exploration and scientific experimentation. In terms of internal systems of assessment for faculty, at times the consideration of research accomplishments

is reasonable yet at times it is skewed. To expand on the latter, in some cases a faculty member's research area can be viewed negatively by assessment committees or administrators, based on personal opinions or group tendencies.While there are good reasons for the concept of academic freedom, the principle and the practice are commonly out of resonance. Pressures to chase funding – that is opportunistic research – or to conduct research in line with donor interests, can unduly alter any aspirations around fairness and freedom. Also, while strategic areas for an institution and/or a school are important in many regards, they should not be paralytic in terms of faculty who stray from the party line. Judging the worth, impact and importance of scholarly work should be executed at arm's length – without the influence of politics, personalities & popularity.
Service: The final leg of the trilogy is service, with this activity assuming many forms and touching many communities. In some cases the service efforts are internal to a faculty or to an institution, such as a curriculum committee or a university appeals process, but in other instances are dedicated to professional organizations or toward the public sphere. This work can be quite difficult to measure, as in many cases the outputs are less tangible and quantifiable compared with what might be seen in teaching and research endeavors. However difficult to empirically judge, service pursuits are nonetheless a critical part of an academic's contributions. In many schools this work is weighted less than teaching and research, with a common breakdown of 40% teaching, 40% research and 20% service. With regard to internal evaluation perhaps the greatest risk is an overlay of politics into the mix – for example, a faculty member donating time to address human rights, a sustainability agenda, indigenous affairs, or working to lessen homelessness, may be judged negatively if the culture of the school or university runs in counter directions. In some schools such hot topics are seen as irrelevant, or niche, or marginal which then colors assessment of faculty performance.
Conflicts of Interest and Conflicts of Commitment: An area of unease that warrants mention is conflict of interest and conflict of commitment, both of which can negatively shape decision making within internal evaluation schemes. For example, a member on a merit assessment committee could have previously been evaluated for tenure, or promotion, or a teaching award, by the same individual they are now charged with assessing. Such blatant conflicts commonly arise within the academy – again the lack of blind assessment subjects the process to corruption in serious ways. A frequent response by administrators, and legal folks, within the university points to the smallness of the pool and the fact that academics need to simply get along and trust each other. Unfortunately such posturing is foolishly naïve and simply unrealistic. Various forms of conflict are the reality and must be understood and managed as such – the internal processes of assessment need to fairly and objectively consider such conflicts and, in response, demand conflicted faculty to resign from committees or recuse themselves from evident problems. While many schools do have policies and language around such conflicts, the actual discharge of the policy is another beast altogether.

5. AN ALTERNATIVE NIEW | FIT

> "Faculty and administrators with tenured faculty appointments are untouchables and they continuously get away with bullying because it isn't looked at as a termination worthy cause. … The norm is bullies running unchecked devouring the meek and weak in an organizational structure. The bullies pick on those they believe they can bully but won't stand up against someone on equal footing. It is sad to watch." Hollis[14] (2015)

[14] Hollis, Leah P. Bully in the Ivory Tower. Patricia Berkly: San Bernardino, CA. 2015. Page 70.

In light of some of the serious challenges to peer-review internal to our institutions, the author proposes a much more mindful, and disciplined, approach to the processes, policies and procedures deployed. In particular, the individuals and especially the leaders responsible for the conduct and oversight of peer-review need to be vigilant to ensure peer-review is honorable and just. Of course the words are easy to write or say while the actions and operations are difficult and demanding. In the academy we profess to students the need for our societies to be balanced, compassionate, respectful and reasonable. In our classrooms we endeavor to model good behavior and to espouse the worth of a life well lived. We teach theories and principles, and explore application and implications, with care and attention to detail. In terms of our evaluation of our peers, some of these same strategies and objectives seem apropos. For certain the systems of evaluation we enact must be evident, must be consistent, and must be justifiable. Too often decisions are rendered behind closed doors, with directions determined by preference and personality versus by policy and principle. In our research we aim at rigor, validity, certainty and clarity. The author argues that this same set of guideposts should inform our peer-review systems. Exercising narrow agendas, limiting academic freedom, playing politics, abusing power, deferring to the mob, and preferring popularity over performance all have no credibility within the seriousness of internal peer-review. The present paper advances a framework for peer-review that acknowledges the system complexity and recommends careful attention to the triad of Fairness, Integrity and Transparency. Considered together, and if applied with an understanding of their inter-relatedness, significance and vitality, these three dimensions of peer-review have potential to reform and redesign the policies and processes in meaningful ways. Given the tremendous responsibilities we, in the academy, are charged with by society, and considering the great privilege we hold within the education and research realms, we need to get the assessment equations right. Based on explorations of the literature, as well as several decades of direct experience in the academy and senior administration, the author proposes a system for internal peer-review that demands three interdependent qualities. **Fairness; Integrity; Transparency**. These three dimensions (FIT) need to be diligently addressed when formulating principles then developing and executing policy for peer-review.

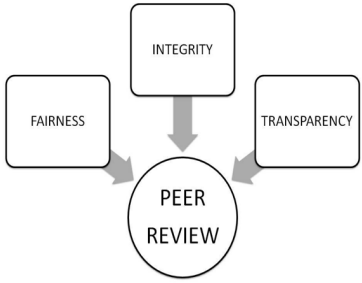


Figure 1. Integrated Framework for Enhanced Peer Review

5.1. Fairness

Fair[15]

- *marked by impartiality and honesty: free from self-interest, prejudice, or favoritism <a very fair person to do business with>*
- *(a) conforming with the established rules : allowed (b) consonant with merit or importance: due <a fair share>*
- *open to legitimate pursuit, attack, or ridicule <fair game>*

The idea of being truly impartial lies at the heart of any peer-review approach. To be 'fair' necessitates some shared understanding of the conventions enacted – in other words, going into an internal peer-review process

[15] http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/fair

both the reviewers and the individual under assessment must clearly grasp the regulations, policies and, most critically, the criteria being used. The focus should be on explicit criteria that can be in some ways measured – it does not necessarily mean that every aspect of the review should bequantifiable, but rather that every aspect should be explainable. The processes and methods should also be consistently applied across those being reviewed. In this case, one size does fit all. When the rules and regulations morph based on personality, preference or politics, the system cannot be fair.

5.2. Integrity

Integrity[16]
- *firm adherence to a code of especially moral or artistic values: incorruptibility*
- *an unimpaired condition: soundness*
- *the quality or state of being complete or undivided: completeness*

The academy is a very special place, comprised of people who largely aspire to do meaningful work with positive impact. In doing this work there needs to be values in place – which, while both implicit (tacit) and explicit (say-able), need to resonate within and across the larger community. Ethics need to underpin the enterprise, including attention to not only the well-being of individual members but also to the fitness of the whole. The notion of a moral compass is appropriate, where each of us can ensure our actions are mindful and our intentions are good. The health of the academy rests, in significant part, on the clarity, relevance of and subscription to such a moral code. Following the code has implications for all of our activities, from teaching and research to community volunteerism and public outreach. It also, of course, holds undeniable connections to and correlations with peer-review. If a faculty member treasures the code and watches the compass, then ill-behaviour within internal peer-review processes should be kept in check. If the code is ignored, and the compass broken, then a trail of damage and destruction is inevitable. Unfortunately there is always tremendous collateral damage in such cases – it is never just the individual under review that bears consequences. The system, as a whole, is assaulted and undermined.

5.3. Transparency

Transparent[17]
- *free from pretense or deceit: frank*
- *easily detected or seen through: obvious*
- *readily understood*
- *characterized by visibility or accessibility of information especially concerning business practices*

As the saying goes, 'The sun disinfects all it touches'. Douglass[18] (1986) noted "Institutions create shadowed places in which nothing can be seen and no questions asked." Internal peer-review, considering its essential place within the academy, must be fully transparent. Not only do the policy and criteria need to be explicit and shared, but critically the processes and procedures therein must be fully understood and visible. The notion of being 'free from deceit' is fundamental. Based on the experience of the author, in many instances decisions around peer-review within institutions are rendered in a black box – rather like the great Wizard of Oz performing his magic behind the curtain. Internal peer-review, whether addressing merit pay, performance assessment, promotion and tenure, or grant money, cannot be a mystery. The rules need to be readily understood and without fail, followed. In many cases the metrics for success, for example in teaching or in scholarship, are

[16] http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/integrity
[17] http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/transparent
[18] Douglass, M. How Institutions Think. Syracuse University Press: Syracuse, New York. 1986.

loosely defined then more loosely interpreted. The value of a teaching assessment, or the worth of a journal publication, should not be determined 'willy-nilly' by any one academic or even by a committee of academics. In the experience of the author, the outcomes of annual peer-review processes within institutions can swing dramatically based solely on the composition of the committee. This is entirely inappropriate. As with any complex system, peer-review is multi-faceted and influenced by a plethora of forces. The aforesaid framework is intended as a guide to direct thinking around peer-review policies and procedures. The value of peer-review within the academy and, by extension and implication, beyond, is unquestionable. We need to be very disciplined, conscientious and decent in the development and execution of rules, processes and outcomes of peer-review. We need to develop peer-review systems that treat all with equality, respect and dignity, and that fosters not only the well-being of our faculty but also furthers the civility and worth of our institutions. academy

CONCLUSION

> "Despite their public representations – and perhaps their inner intentions – these institutions offer a philosophy of atomism, and ethics of opportunism, and a spirituality of self-preoccupation." Bennett[19] (2003)

> "Professors, taken as a group, are far from perfect. They can be petty, foolish, venal, lazy and quarrelsome. Nevertheless, at its best, the university is a remarkable institution. It is a place where ideas are taken seriously; where notions that are taken as givens elsewhere are problematized; where what has seemed to be reality can be bent and reshaped by the power of the mind." Ginsberg[20] (2011)

Peer-review remains a vital and valued aspect of higher education – when it works it ushers in many positive outcomes including the potential to demonstrably raise the quality of teaching, research and service. However, as the present paper delineates, in many instances the system is in disrepair and/or dysfunction. Such problems are, of course, part and parcel of greater challenges facing the academy and society beyond. That said, the academy, and its members, have a responsibility to act at more elevated ethics levels and to behave in ways that inspire and influence our students. There needs to be a fundamental shift away from relentless individualism, abuse of power, and a culture of greed. In its place we need to cultivate a milieu of respect, of caring, of fairness, of civility and of community. Bennett[21] (1998) calls for a move from 'academic professionalism to collegial professionalism. He explains the latter noting "professionalism is converted from credentialism and exclusivity, protectionism, and isolation from others, and it moves to an emphasis upon connectivity and imaginative empathy, competence and dedication to the learning needs of others." There is little doubt that the arrival of negative dimensions of internal peer-review is a product of the greater ethos that rewards and encourages competition before collaboration and presents a 'zero-sum' scenario as the only game in town. The author seeks to open eyes, minds & hearts, including his own, in an attempt to encourage more investigation into very complex and disconcerting aspects of the academy (see also, for example, Sinclair[22] 2019 "The

[19] Bennett, John B. Academic Life: Hospitality, Ethics and Spirituality. Anker Publishing: Bolton, MA. 2003. Page 38.
[20] Ginsberg, Benjamin. The Fall of the Faculty: The Rise of the All-Administrative University and Why It Matters. Oxford University Press: NY, NY. 2011. Page 201
[21] Bennett, John B. Collegial Professionalism: The academy, individualism, and the common good. Oryx Press – American Council on Education: Phoenix, AZ. 1998. Page 52
[22] Sinclair, Brian R. The Devil's Crop: Rightness, Wrongness & Appropriateness in an Upside-Down Abyss. Keynote Address, 31st International Conference on Systems Research, Informatics and Cybernetics, Germany, 2019. https://ucalgary.academia.edu/DrBrianRSinclair

Devil's Crop). The current explorations are admittedly preliminary and perhaps provocative, with a goal to reveal both obstacles, and opportunities, concerning the realization of a more equitable ethos. The researcher is optimistic that the academy can find its bearings, not only pertaining to the matter of peer-review but more generally regarding its discharge of duty and owning of accountability. To recalibrate the compass requires a concerted effort by academics to be far more mindful of their actions, far more generous with their care, far more reasonable with their demands and far fairer in their deliberations. It also relies on valuable and indispensable players within our institutions, such as faculty associations, ombudspersons, centers for teaching + learning, research services, institutional assessment offices, and units for protected disclosure, to help us stay true and on track. At the end of the day the system, and its constituent members, needs to be more honorable and more just. The present paper outlines concerns with the structure and conduct of internal peer-review and, in response proffers an integrated framework for reform and redesign. This work necessitates risk, courage and openness. Glazer[23] (1999) stressed: "While openness begins as an inner, personal discipline, it very quickly evolves into a dynamic, interactive experience. Our own openness actually collapses boundaries between ourselves and others and the world."

[23] Glazer, Steven. The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education. Tarcher/Putnam: New York, New York. 1999. Pages 247.

REFERENCES

Bennett, John B. *Academic Life: Hospitality, Ethics, and Spirituality.* Anker Publishing: Bolton, MA. 2003

Bennett, John B. *Collegial Professionalism: The academy, individualism, and the common good*. Oryx Press – American Council on Education: Phoenix, AZ. 1998.

Coates, Ken S. and Morrison, Bill. *Campus Confidential.* James Lorimer & Company: Toronto. 2011

Douglass, M. *How Institutions Think*. Syracuse University Press: Syracuse, New York. 1986.

Ginsberg, Benjamin. *The Fall of the Faculty: The Rise of the All-Administrative University and Why It Matters.* Oxford University Press: NY, NY. 2011

Glazer, Steven. *The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education*. Tarcher/Putnam: New York, New York. 1999.

Hollis, Leah P. *Bully in the Ivory Tower: How Aggression & Incivility Erode American Higher Education*. Patricia Berkly: San Bernardino, CA. 2012

Hollis, Leah P. *Bully in the Ivory Tower*. Patricia Berkly: San Bernardino, CA. 2015.

Palmer, Parker J. "The Grace of Great Things: Reclaiming the Sacred in Knowing, Teaching and Learning". In *The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education*. Editor: Steven Glazer. Tarcher/Putnam: New York New York. 1999.

Sinclair, Brian R. The Devil's Crop: *Rightness, Wrongness & Appropriateness in an Upside-Down Abyss*. Keynote Address, 31st International Conference on Systems Research, Informatics and Cybernetics, Germany, 2019. https://ucalgary.academia.edu/DrBrianRSinclair

Twale, Darla J. and De Luca, Barbara M. *Faculty Incivility: The Rise of the Academic Bully Culture and What to Do About It.* Jossey-Bass: San Francisco, CA. 2008.

PAPER #7.05

ARCHITECTURAL EXPERIENCED MACHINES: THE ACTIVATION OF TIME

José Manuel Barrera Puigdollersr[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The optical and kinetic art of the 1960s converged on the architecture of the 1970s with a sensitive and poetic style, with its sensorial imprint making it phenomenological. The semiotic contributions of the same period raised from the theory of reception, the open work of Umberto Eco, the debates on the interpretation between J. Derrida and H. G. Gadamer channeled through the critical work of Manfredo Tafuri, culminated in the hermeneutical contamination of this discipline. The mutations from 'art as activism' to 'activism as art', 'the personal is political' in 'everything is political', the postcolonial theory transferred to 'all minorities', added to the above, provides a scenario of transformation, where activism, participation and politics converge in conceptual art. The architecture unfolds under these signs and the post-conceptual at the end of the 20th century and the direction changes from the search for meaning to the search for experience and in its excess, it is sometimes constituted as experiential devices for activating time. Some works by Miralles and Pinós, Diller Scofidio, Olafur Eliasson, Turrell and Neón Artist, Libeskind, Eisenman, SANAA, Carlo Scarpa, sculptures by D. Bestué, J. Plensa or R. Serra, among others, will allow us to identify the temporal prevalence in the space-time relationship so characteristic of our discipline, and in it to recognize the strategies of temporary mobilization.

KEYWORDS

Space; time; machines; conceptual; post-conceptual.

INTRODUCTION

I see an advertisement on a poster for the facial cream InstaMoisture from the cosmetic brand KIKO, which promotes a virtual investment: that the new look is like the virtual one in Instagram (fig. 1). Here, the virtuality is taken as a simulation of reality (our first photo was already fictitious since it was edited), mobilizes the disintegration of the little reality that remained. A third order virtuality. An activating image of time "How did we come to this? Does the same thing in architecture?" In the extensive bibliography produced (Giddens 1994), we look for indicators to clarify the imprecise transition towards post-metaphysics of architecture, where we appreciate its indistinct implementation in a short, aporetic period, in which these "experiential machines" emerge.
Jürgen Habermas (1980) In view of the preceding (postmodernity), had to remind himself of the establishing of the project of modernity through Max Weber's idea:

> Cultural modernity is defined by the separation of the substantive reason expressed by religion and metaphysics in three autonomous spheres those being science, morality and art that are distinguishable because the unified world views of religion and metaphysics are separated.

Tiempo	características	dispositivos
Refigurado (1980-95) Desde el configurado se resignifica	Imagen Relato Narración Temáticas adicionales Giro hermenéutico Fantasmas y síntomas	Narración material Estético Hermenéutico Acontecimental
Resignificado (1995-2010) Refigurado por su representación	Liquido Desestructurado Des contextual Desconexas Acción por la acción Disolución de limites Hiperestetización	Acontecimental Psicológico Narrativo material Estético Semiótico Hermenéutico
Recodificado	Neoformalísmo Reacio a experiencia Poéticas personales Racional instrumental Neo estructuralista Tecno arte Compromiso social Materialismo social Anticapitalista	Fenomenológico Memoria Narrativa material Hermenéutico Tiempo social Psicológico Hermenéutico
Refracción (2010-20)	Cansancio, insatisfacción Perdida autenticidad Imágenes mnémicas Efectos alucinatorios	Virtuales Narrativa Material Psicológicos Hermenéuticos
Reaccionario	Reactivo Experiencialidad Nueva figuración kitsch Imágenes hibridas Heterodoxas Pret a porter Postconceptual	Virtual Narrativa Material Hermenéutico

Figure 1. Image as a temporary device. Summary table of devices and time modalities. Source: image from https://www.kikocosmetics.com/es-es/novedad/instamoisture-foundation.html and table provided by author.

In this "false autonomy" of art lays a certain complexity. This agitated debate on postmodernity presented different approaches. For Jürgen Habermas (supporter of the "critical appropriation of the modern project") modernity was a challenge against the cultural order of the bourgeoisie and the "false regulations" of its history. Today it is considered as the official culture to transgress; "It is dominant but dead" as long as it does not practice its unfolding, warning in turn about the "false denials" that happen to it. Facing a new culture portrayed in the 70s by: (1) configuring a new representation scene, (2) employing supreme fictions derived from thinking about difference from a sensible perspective, (3) by its populist masking, (4) with stylistic "avant-garde" that falls on kitsch, (5) embroiled in hermetic codes, with as many models as there are works, (6) without affiliations and easily assignable to apparent relativism. A set of adhesions that caused skepticism towards the autonomous spheres of culture, without being recognized by experts, navigating formal affiliations that led to social affiliations, to finally delve into the political-cultural nexus that in practice formed an activism as art (Felshin 1995, 9-29) (hardcore, which transforms the physical and social environment) and enhances the political reaction. A liberating effect through an aesthetic anarchy, or "utopian dream of a time of pure presence" and a space beyond representation. This display was influential based on conceptual art that tried to "find art in social energies"; a possibility that would allow the expansion of social.[1]

[1] Helen and Newton Harrison–environmental art; Suzane Lacy–feminists performance; Judy Chicago in The dinner party (1979); Mierle Laderman Ukeles–kinectic art; Carol Condé and Karl Beveridge–political activism (1969, 1976).

1. DISCUSSIONS AND ANALYSIS

This trend is possible due to several previous transgressive ideas: a) the historical concept of culture made up of the representational and performing arts, mutates due to the effect of mass culture to approach how the lifestyle is organized and carried out (Bell 1979); b) simultaneously from feminism it is coined that "the personal is political" (Hanisch, 1969). Ideas that in their extensive implementation led to enhance non-cohesive individualism with social structures and with it their segregation that led to dystopia and diachrony. At the time, neo-conservative critics (Shils 1969; 1967) the majority in the Atlantic sphere maintained that this emerging culture "took the form of a struggle from an *oppositional* mindset to discover a new logic" and with it ties the revised concepts to different forms of extremism. Those empty criticisms did nothing but provoke the forcibly autonomous emancipation of art that led to activism, performance, participation, *virtuality* and *kinesic staging*, which in its evolution was seized by the new politics in the construction of new pseudo-cultural identities.

Hal Foster's (1988) gathers a larger sample of critics who announce a "break with the aesthetic field, changing the very object of representation". Or they emphasize postmodernity as the object of post-criticism and the politics of interpretation. Specifically as a new, "schizophrenic manner of space and time, which declares the "death of the subject". From literary criticism Paul de Man points out that each period goes through a modern moment, which is followed by a period of "the transgression of the ideology of the transgressive", to turn it into mutating purposes and thus autonomy into identity. Roland Barthes cites the relevance of continental culture in the transition from structuralism to post-structuralism, where he reflects on "culture as a corpus of codes or myths", as a set of imaginary solutions of real contradictions. The following gathers some common features that define the operational plexus of this postmodernity: c) it follows a textual, narrative, allegorical but contingent model; d) it deconstructs itself to open up to other images, other heterogeneities, rewriting its contradictions, challenging the dominant narratives with the "discourse of others". And so it distinguishes between two directions: (I) the postmodernism of "resistance" and (II) that of "reaction"; the first is of action, the second of diction through rejection and praise, dominated by neo-conservative messengers (Connor 1996; Lyon 1996; Rorty 1996; Rorty 1986; Jencks 1982; Jencks 1981; Bell 1977); e) it will be Jürgen Habermas who points out the common aspect; those factors act strategically, separating the cultural from the social, and then blaming modern problems for social problems; that is, they confuse cause with effect while reaffirming an economic and political status of a new "affirmative" culture. Along these lines, Kenneth Frampton had already warned that historically culture was a force above all of social control that mutated towards a "free image drawn on the face of instrumentality". No wonder, therefore, that the new policy eliminates the control that culture exercises if its intention is to break with the future, history and the past. On the contrary, the resistance groups are interested in implementing post-metaphysical in two ways; (II.1) with a reconstructive bias (as in *dismantling*) and (II.2) (as *disassembly*) the critical deconstruction acting on the traditions that question without presenting cultural codes since it explores them without hiding social and political affiliations. Rosalind Krauss (2013; 2006) points out an important aspect in this position; it is a rebellion of external cultures (to the art in question, painting, sculpture, architecture through politics, feminism, gender, sociology, psychoanalysis, etc.), against the breakdown of internal culture, even in its most exclusive domains (utility, strength and beauty, or

[2] The Marxist left in the 70s revises modernity: Victor Burgin, Jo Spencer, Mitra Tabrizian, Henry Bond, Liam Gillick. Tainted the Next Left. In 1993, "Whitney Biennials" makes official activism.

the equation form + function + meaning in architecture). Gregory Ulmer details that this crisis of representation has led to new cultural forms: a) through collage and montage the conventions of modernity are questioned; b) deconstruction as a critique of mimesis and the sign (Derrida); c) allegory, as a thought *in progress* linked to action, participation, kinesthetic art, etc. (Benjamin); f) other authors (Sánchez 2006) introduce us to a hermeneutical problem (Gadamer and Derrida) derived from participation: if the work is clarified with this mediation or intervention, the personal expectations of the receiver are integrated. For this reason aesthetics becomes a weapon, by extending to all areas "the personal is political", and since personal expectations are integrated in such a way that collective interest is declined. g) For his part, Simón Marchan (2006) introduces us to the duality between *real and virtual* in the rise of techno aesthetics or aesthetics of digital appearance, where references to reality are diluted "in the random games of the signifiers", a hyper-textuality derived from the implosion of signs, which produces a *divide between the material and the immaterial*; or the rise of new antinomies through dematerialization and de-realization. All these shelled factors form the basis of an architecture that converges towards "experiential machines".

2. THE CRITIQUES

Regarding both lines, Fredric Jameson (1996; 1991; 1989) (like Terry Eagleton, I. Hasan, J. Baudrillard) point out that this new cultural form is a guise to avoid our complex present (present-present or eternal present according to the authors). That is, the heart of the problem is focused on temporality. Other discourses cite the transit of intentional time to mere temporality. It is through the *pastiche* "where we swim in a sea of private languages", that satisfy the desire to return to less problematic times. For Jean Baudrillard we are witnessing the dissolution of space and time, because simulation loses cause; and without it there is no unmasking of reality, "the object no longer serves as a mirror for the subject and there is no private and public scene, only information". Such an excess of information is not accidental but opportunist. Edward Said points to a purpose: to establish a "doctrine of non-interference", by which humanism and politics are kept at a distance that allow the second to re-establish a new order that, not being global with the humanistic parameters linked to art, they must be of a different nature; propagandistic, informational, fast-paced and populist. For this reason, the illustrated project is uncomfortable for these groups that question it, seeking to serve other purposes among followers of multiple circles of political-identity. And thus he suggests that contaminations and interference practices are necessary to deconstruct this perverse dynamic through artistic and cultural criteria. Along the same line, Umberto Eco (1968) will express himself, in relation to anti-critical programs in mass culture, where opinion-makers, routines, outsiders, ragmen and scavengers, interview each other, objectifying and constructing virtual anti-social themes. With all this came the displacement of spatiality by temporality.

Thus, through the configuration of a parallel (*unsightly*) network of ideas, meaning is ignored and aesthetic *experience* is shaped, derived from post-colonialist trends (Fanon 2007; 1962; Césaire 2006): ethnic arts, ethnographic twist, multiculturalism, social heterogeneity, whose existence is separate, without object and beyond history (as shown by the new urban contextualism or the landscapes of action born from Land Art as restorations that generate an ecological aesthetic). For this reason, art can produce interactions, inter-subjective relationships of identity and a symbolic totality, which by its separation (also externality to the being of the subject), keeps the subject anchored in the "eternal present", but vested with a new

plexus of alienating political formulations that are presented as new independent stories with supplementary language (as occurs with those abducted). It is what Habermas calls "aestheticization of politics", that occurred with futurism and constructivism prior to the Second World War, and which transformed the enunciated autonomy (*logos*) of modernity into stylistic identity (pathos). A change in the re-appropriation of art or the process of altering meaning through the *aesthetic experience* - so typical of today's virtual world. Because:

> When such an experience is used to ished light on a life history situation and is related to life problems, it delves into a language game that is no longer that of aesthetic criticism. So the aesthetic experience not only renews the interpretation of our needs in whose light we perceive the world. It also permeates our cognitive meanings and our normative expectations and changes the way all these moments relate to each other".

This process has been gaining strength with the modernizing of computers, until defining the time of virtual dominance, described by Slavoj Zizeq (2011). A process that Marchán (2006, 42) attaches to rampant *sociologism,* "which invokes micro-politics of power that tend to postpone the goals of a social transformation for the sake of the exploration of *Myself* where all the personal is placed in the category of the political". However, Derrida is opposed to part of this analysis: because he points out its opportunity as the aesthetic experience allows complete alterity and a hermeneutic of the event, opposing the errors that prevent temporal disruption.

3. THE TEMPORARY TURN

But also, in those years, a conceptual implementation forging transversality was conceived, which, being carried out from that distance of society and history, was the underlying layer of its later problematic situation; (1) from the incorporation of subjectivity it contributes: participation, multiculturalism or acceptance of other logic of meaning, transforming the approaches based on self-awareness (Kant, Hegel), towards positions on moral will (Fichte), genius aesthetics (Schelling); but finally mutating towards subjectivism (misreading Saussure or Derrida) ethically understood as the predominance of the Other, here as pseudo alterity that ends up being aestheticized. (2) "Complex" thinking (Edgar Morin) and lateral thinking (Edward de Bono from cognitive development) were applied to the "processes" of work, discriminating the repertoire (superstructures) that mutates towards the acceptance of multiple logics of meaning. But instead of approaching infinity in a qualitative way, it is replaced by free will: with a possibility of the structural side and alterity on the post-structural side. It was when the cognitive cartographies, the maps of forces, energies and tensions, and diagrams emerged in their two readings; quantitative and qualitative. (3) The theory of processes, (in relation to situationism), through its particular conceptualizations in literary, creative and architectural dynamics, also converge in the incorporation of *significant topologies*, which allow the receiver to act as co-author when participating in the hermeneutic discovery, as well as its desire-driven *invention*. (4) Such a hermeneutical dimension of architecture lends itself to testing the duality between open work and deconstruction, through existentialism and phenomenology. Where the lack of understanding of the deconstructive work resulted in relativistic with no more reach than the synecdoche or the pseudonym. But in any case, the predominance of time over space, known as the *temporary turn* (Brandt 2015), was imposed. Umberto Eco (1975) gives as an example at the Faculty of Caracas of Carlos Raúl Villanueva, 1960; Colin Rowe (1963) approaches as a key element

the "dissolution of limits", through glass, as a temporary device; Superstudio (1967) appeals to "ideas as objects", because these can change time; Paul Virilio, points it out *in Architecture, virtuality and disappearance*; Bernard Tschumi develops it in the Glass Pavilion from 1994-96, challenging instability in a sloping glass box, reflecting the data codes of interior computers. Enric Miralles calls *imaginary machines*, for whom the viewer's gaze reconstructs the time of the project, such as the *Casa Garau Agistí*, the Kolonihaven cabin or the Igualada Cemetery; Josep Quetglas says "as if inhabiting were nothing more than moving between the time of a place" (Miralles 2004, 34); Curtis, indicates his maps of forces and energies, which converge to modify time; Robert Brufau, highlights his *archeology of time* and Zabalbeascoa (2013), calls it *architecture of time*. The objective of this temporary primacy in architecture is to overcome the *prefigured time* through its operation and perhaps the recurring *invention* is possible, not only of the initial author, but of the participating subject successively. Every time we contribute a new signifier to the work it is renewed and updated, able to configure a different future. As Derrida (1998, 347-372) points out for the work as a text,

> Writing is a kind of brand that will constitute in turn a kind of *producing machine*, that my future disappearance will not prevent it from continuing to work and giving, to reading and rewriting"

4. ITS DEVELOPMENT

Since the mid-1980s other factors converge in that initial dissent, which only augment this *temporal diachrony*: the excess of information, the speed that prevents successive adaptation, the high level of alienating demand, the predominance of the video sphere or interactive virtual reality. In other words, "second degree simulations" (like our advertisement) that produce "transitions from traditional spaces of optical illusion to current ones of immersion" (Marchán 2006, 43), *virtual environments, multisensory* works, which generate their own reproductions mimetics. For this reason, these excrescences are overflowing with digital narratives, mediated communication, substituting inter-subjectivity for interaction and subjectivist sensitivity that hinder their real socialization, being replaced by the pseudo-artistic communal experience of a marked sign of private politics; that is, the complete overcoming of the simulation reached by Real (Barrera 2019). Where the marks of space-time "are transformed into virtual figures, things or events" that generate a universalist semiosis —sometimes of impersonation—, whose answer is: "despite the facts, I feel that way." Here, time results from iconic transformation and post semiotic response (transformation of signs). With this, an explosion of referentialities occurs, where the similarity within the virtual field becomes iconic correspondence, which, being a mirror image of itself, passes towards the *hyper-aestheticization of the virtual*. Where we can neither allege the theory of experiential expression, but only "the production of meaning that is altered by metamorphosing itself into the reworking of the stored data" randomly. The works of *techno art* are therefore floating, evolving, interactive, in permanent dissolution, capable of "manipulating the synesthetic system by controlling environmental stimuli" (Marchán 2006, 48). Having overcome hyper-reality, we enter the Lacanian Real (Lacan 1999), which does not belong to either the imaginary or the symbolic order, but which has its own presence and existence, although it is not representable. It is the place where the signifiers of foreclosure reappear or return in the form of hallucinations or delusions.

5. EXPERIENCED TIME ACTIVATION DEVICES

They are parts of the project, encounters, forms, sequences or routes, materials, optical, haptic, or sound supporting the multiplicity of experiences leading to the questioning about time. They unfold on the basis of an activist architecture, symbolically, socially and politically, or in their encounter with space; endowed with participation, inter-subjectivity, with a predominance of paradoxes and antinomies or resources that in its interpretive reading allows multiple annexations and grafts; they form significant concepts. We recognize the architecture that displays the diversity of these devices as *experiential machines, virtual environments,* imaginary machines or producers. The devices created serve ten modalities; social time, phenomenological, aesthetic, material narrative, psychological, hermeneutic, eventual, semiotic, memory and virtual time. We acknowledge the following trends:

5.1. Re-figured time

The fifth generation of Modernity (second to postmodern time, 2nd PMT) emerges and is set between 1980-1995. It stands out for the empowerment of the discourses described through two transitions; the specific importance that *the image* and *the story* acquires, in the terms that Ricoeur (2008, 148) quotes while "the story or the plot… refigure an action in time" because, "we continue, then, the passage from a prefigured time to a refigured one through the mediation of a configured one" (the one that we imagine could be subject for debate). Those two transitions will destroy the inherent space-time relationship of the architecture, to turn to the temporal primacy, the *refigured* time. Introspective glances seek inner clarification by extracting unsuspected, invisible relationships in a substantially transformative creativity. Through significant transversality, investigative themes are introduced, such as the fold, plateaus, rhizome, the fractal, etc., which allow the participative, activist, integrated, collaborative praxis of the subject in the work experience. With it, a hermeneutical turn, between narrative and poetic; because "what is interpreted in a text is the proposal of a world in which I could live and project my own powers" (Ricoeur 2008, 153); that is, making it narrative *re-signifies* the world in its temporary dimension. Because dynamism, activity and participation transform aesthetic experiences into life experiences. Faced with this "poetry, by its *mythos*, *re-describes* the world" (Ricoeur 2001). In this the communicative scope of the image is explained, in the fight against the surviving image (pathos) that Didi Huberman (1990) exposes, as the structure that appears through form, or "invisible tension that confronts visibility"; latent forces of the past that are presented; Aalto (Schildt 2000) already pointed out that "what has ever existed, always reappears in a new form". This overvaluation of memory, like its disconnection between image and story, allows old ghosts to emerge, which in Derridian terms, would be the *symptom*: "falling together", a word that means first the sinking, the collapse, then coincidence, the fortuitous event, the encounter, "the other way than being" (Derrida 2003; 1987). Its impossibility of re-allocation lies in the mixture of polarities or antinomies, and its overlapping in movement tending towards the activation of temporality. Álvaro Siza (1995) will call it "a fusion agent", the cause of transformation or *union*, in the ambivalent transition from synchronic to diachronic. And this despite the fact that the priority option of poetics is autonomy, autarky, loss of hierarchy, break with conventions or the discovery of possibilities, which nevertheless end up in new alienating identities; Also called "inversion of motive" (Baseliz, 1984), *simulated savagery* by Dahn (Marchán 1984, 446) or as Jean Baudrillard (1978), "simulating is pretending to have what one does not have". This transformation will successively establish a supposed new

iconographic modernity, autistic and devoid of a story (neither social nor personal), which apparently will have the signs of that one but which pretends to have what it does not have. Its devices are, time and narration, aesthetic time, hermeneutic, eventual.

5.2. Re-signified time

At the turn of the century and the first decade of the 21st century, together with the growth of provocative post-structural responses, (mistakenly disclosed under the shadow of deconstruction and formed through the implosion of the object, the multiplication of volumes or the plastic decomposition[3]) is configured by the sixth generation of modernity (6th gM) between 1995-2010 (3rd PMT), various alternatives to these drifts within the same; through *liquid* architecture and the will to formalize the *destructuring* in proposals constituted in temporary activators or *disconnected* experiential machines ', all of them through action. The architecture of Miralles had rehearsed multi-temporality, as Gordon Matta Clark did, in its cuts and holes in obsolete dwellings, the re-activation of time, giving them an opportunity to show their hidden reasons for their foundation; Olafur Eliasson, reproduces time in overlapping narratives that look mirrored. Diller Scofidio raises the evanescence of time through the blurring of form in steam; and SANAA, from their poetic *dissolution of limits*, allows the work to be circularly changing like its concern. The 'representation of time' by the sculptor David Bestué, in his exhibition 'Rosi Amor' (2017), aims through the accumulation of objects that make up a disorganized memory - fragments of ruins and remains - to represent linear and the centrifuged time, "as if time were just another substance and could also change shape and turn to dust". All this in a work of internal symbolization to action, since according to Ricoeur (2008, 156),

> it is re-symbolized or de-symbolized —or re-symbolized by de-symbolization— thanks to the schematism sometimes turned into tradition and others subverted by the historicity of paradigms. Ultimately, it is the time of action that is truly refigured by its representation.

Its devices are: eventual, psychological, narrative, aesthetic, semiotic and hermeneutical time.

5.3. Recoded time

But another more structural line is needed that longs for a certain return to those foundations of modernity, exhausted from the osmotic ideologization of the marginal contents that had politicized all creative displays through their narratives. Thus, two routes emerge with a certain importance and in parallel; I) on the one hand, a *neo-formalism*, (opposed to experiential machines) that, as in post-conceptual painting (Marchán 1972), evokes a certain satiety with the previous excesses so belligerent: the expressionist tectonic (even technical brutalism) as a priority response of the previous generation: Foster, Piano, Rogers, Ito, Sou Fujimoto, among others within the structural line. Such neo-formalism addresses some common variables, such as a certain synthetic formal expressionism, vernacular features interspersed with a geometric, compositional and monochromatic reductionism, an instrumental and practical rationality, which is based on the power of hidden structural solutions, arranged as if it were nothing. This formalism recovers previous personal poetics in the shadow of the last masters such as Louis Kahn, or that shown by Siza Vieira, Lina Bo Bardi, Adalberto Libera, José Antonio Coderch, recovering that spirit of Gastón Bachelar (1957). It is in the form of phenomenological dialectics, "as a study of the phenomenon of the poetic image" recalled by the architectural space. We do not say represents, simulates, mimics, seems, recomposes, but its scope is established in

[3] David Bestué (2016) anticipate the keys.

the *recalling* of mnemonic memories, and with them the virtual ones. Its devices are: phenomenological time, memory, material narrative, and hermeneutics. On the other hand, II) with certain structuralist doses the continuous line of social *commitment* is developed (reluctant to let the experiential machine denote different signs of materialism),

> taking a position and real commitment to all forms of connection with the problems of social environment, the only way out of the quality of the marginalized, imposed by the superstructures of the system.[4]

It is a line that sacrifices capitalist evocation and the liberal discourse implicit in technical-functional benefits, for the discourse of technical sustainability, as a giver of quality or human value. Thus they recall the most radical positions of Radical Architecture, 1965-75. To do this, they must do so without the usual means of production, or with the standard channels of communication, but through their tactical use.

This line will strive to create new information channels, and new forms, according to their recipients. All displays will be produced by *occupation* (ideological-political act of the medium) of the space, showing its contradictions. Their responses are not merchandise, but work, *co-creation* and materials, provision of services, disarticulating the economic-cultural relationship even for their part-time work and alleging the lack of work to their fellow believers. Like Santiago Cirugeda (2020) of an anti-system character. From ideological marginalization they oppose the system: he is a worker-intellectual-artist linked to a process of transformation of the relations of artistic-cultural production -their tools of resistance, direct interaction and non-verbal communication. Faced with the metaphors, or *"informal translations"*[5] of the previous line, the "blockade between different symbolic universes" is considered '. Or in another way, without mediation, producing messages for no one in particular, latent in the video sphere. In this line the new millennial generation or Gen Y: with late works by Lacaton and Vassal, and the young Izaskun Chinchilla, Uriel Fogueé, Andres Jaque, Ecosistema Urbano, Zuloark etc. Its structuralist underlay comes in this case from its political appeal, as visible as it is prone to the "pro-common", with proposals such as *urban endodontics*. Its temporary devices generate psycho-political experiential machines. The following temporary devices are used; social time, psychological time and hermeneutic.

5.4. Refraction time

In the second decade of the 21st century, with generation Z (7th gM and 4th PMT), all open lines are maintained, but under two transformative effects; the complete unfolding of the *video sphere* and the tiredness and *dissatisfaction* that traditional and reinvented sociopolitical discourses generate. Applying these two factors assumes that their *authenticity* fades because instead of making conscious proposals of their full scope, they are mediated not by their experience or the author's experience, but by the virtuality of such borrowed experience. Thus, the eventual autonomy germinates in an inexorable identity. They do not intend to establish spaces and times of their own experience, but to offer a reflection of virtualities that in turn mirror mnemonic images of other people's experiences, impossible to make their own. This leads to design *refraction* (the action is refigured by the representation, Ricoeur said); It is designed following apparent images of force, which in reality exhibit the remains of other things than those pursued, from an unconscious consciousness. In it, time

[4] Response from Marchán (1972) to Tapies' article
[5] Joseph Kosuth in "One and Three Chairs" (1965): "The art I call conceptual is such because it is based on an inquiry into the nature of art".

disappears, anchoring itself in the *eternal present*. Hence the invasion of simulations, impersonations, *freaks*, or the distorting mirrors of Eco (2012, 34), "semiotic projects through strange prostheses that generate hallucinatory functions". Such hallucinatory effects are more evident; the more political idealism underlies the structure. Its devices are mainly virtual, material, psychological and hermeneutical.

5.5. Reactionary time

The most *reactive* line against that unfolding is manifested in the "alienating neo-formalist poetics" that emerged earlier, but that is now deformed by nonsense. And this, because it escapes from the previous prefigured assignments; It is not completely structuralist, nor is it post-structuralist. It is basically reactionary with everything, but it is comforted in this *hallucinatory-experiential* drift to which subordinates or personal stories lead, seeking a return to the essential and contained. Here the activation of time is no longer relevant. This pseudo-poetic line supported by the sensitive and defined by images indebted to its power, extracted from the force and formal energy that material plastics have, contains certain mutations like most of the video sphere's time architecture towards *experientiality* different from *experience*; its ideality. This means suffocating the project to a lesser repertoire of signs that make the personal pseudo-poetic visible in an apodictic way, which leads to *figuration*. This is the reason why an eclectic or *prêt-à-porter* reading period is presented, where a wide sector of professionals wanting to occupy a space, with cloned images of variants on the same and with few nuances that extends like a new *international panorama*. Heterodox group that articulates the so-called post-conceptual art, known in Spain as the "new Madrid figuration" or neo-metaphysical art. Defined as post-abstract and anti-realistic, it is driven by *hybrid and unorthodox images*. The exhibition "Painted Architectures" (2017-18), curated by Juan Cuellar and Roberto Mollá, testifies the *dissolution of time* to this creative line. It participates in that melancholy and historical exceptionalism that Gerhard Richter highlighted, when he describes this aesthetic as one that retains the material form of an object whose previous historical function indicates other functions and another context of scope as irremediable; thereby revealing the *"representations of representation"*.

CONCLUSION

The temporary turn of the 80s brings to architecture an entire display of formal, material, haptic, optical, and phonic constructs that, in the manner of semantic tropes, inoculate projects, mobilizing time. According to its development, it incurs one of the five described modalities. The re-signified time and the re-figured time allow ideological neutrality, the displacement of the subject with its personalities and it resembles the poetic unfolding from a semiotic perspective. The rest contain transgressions of some order: imaginary, real or symbolic. Especially highlighted is an ideological contamination towards two trends: recuperate the neo-Marxist materialism at all costs and on the other hand, the liberal current, fed up with such impositions implored by ideology, allowing for contamination of the market. Both unfold to the virtualities that present a desired world.

REFERENCES

Bachelard, G. 1957. *La poética del espacio*. Buenos Aires: Fondo de Cultura Económica Argentina.

Barrera Puigdollers, J. M. 2019. «El surgimiento de una nueva estética». In *Reactive Proactive Architecture*. Valencia: Universidad Politécnica de Valencia.

Baudrillard, J. 1978. *Cultura y simulacro*. Translated by Antonio Vicens. Barcelona: Editorial Kairós.

Bestué, D. 2016. «La deconstrucción en arquitectura. Historia de un malentendido». In *El estado mental*, 4 de abril de 2016. https://elestadomental.com/diario/la-deconstruccion-en-arquitectura-historia-de-un-malentendido. Acceso 22 de marzo de 2020.

Bell, D. 1977. *Las contradicciones culturales del capitalismo*. Madrid: Alianza.

Bell, D. 1979. *Industria cultural y sociedad de masas*. Caracas: Editorial Monte Ávila.

Brandt, R. «El giro temporal de la época moderna y sus consecuencias». In *Mudanzas espacio temporales*. Valencia: Universitat de València.

Césaire, A. 2006. *Discurso sobre el colonialismo*. Madrid: Akal.

Cirugeda, S. 2020. "Recetas Urbanas". Accessed September, 7th. http://recetasurbanas.net

Connor, S. 1996. *Cultura postmoderna: introducción a las teorías de la contemporaneidad*. Madrid: Akal.

Derrida, J. 1998. *Márgenes de la filosofía*. Madrid: Cátedra.

Derrida, J. 2003. *Papel máquina*. Barcelona: Trotta.

Didi-Huberman, G. 1990. *La imagen superviviente: historia del arte y tiempo de los fantasmas según Aby*. Madrid: Abada editores.

Eco, U. 1968. *Apocalípticos e integrados*. Barcelona: Lumen.

Eco, U. 1975. *Tratado general de semiótica*. Barcelona: Lumen.

Eco, U. 2012. *De los espejos y otros ensayos*. Barcelona: Debolsillo.

Fanon, F. 1962. *Los condenados de la tierra*. México: Fondo Cultura Económica.

Fanon, F. 2007. *Piel negra, máscaras blancas*. Madrid: Akal.

Felshin, N. 1995. *But is it Art? The spirit of art as activism*. Seattle: Bay Press.

Foster, H. 1988. *Postmodernidad*. Barcelona: Kairós.

Giddens, A. 1994. *Consecuencias de la modernidad*. Madrid: Alianza.

Habermas, J. 1980. «La modernidad, un proyecto incompleto». In *New German Critique*, no. 22. New York: Duke University.

Jameson, F. 1989. *Documentos de cultura, documentos de barbarie; la narrativa como acto socialmente simbólico*. Madrid: Visor.

Jameson, F. 1991. *Postmodernismo o la lógica cultural del capitalismo avanzado*. Buenos Aires: Editorial Paidós.

Jameson, F. 1996. *Teoría de la postmodernidad*. Barcelona: Trotta.

Jencks, C. 1981. *El lenguaje de la arquitectura posmoderna*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Jencks, C. 1982. *Arquitectura tardomoderna y otros ensayos*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Krauss, R. 2006. *La originalidad de la vanguardia y otros mitos modernos*. Madrid: Alianza.

Krauss, R. 2013. *El inconsciente óptico*. Madrid: Editorial Tecnos.

Lacan, J. 1999. *Seminario 3. Las Psicosis*. Buenos Aires: Paidós.

Lyon, D. 1996. *Postmodernidad*. Madrid: Alianza.

Marchán Fiz, S. 1972. *Del arte objetual al arte del concepto*. Madrid: Akal.

Marchán Fiz, S. 2006. «Entre el retorno de lo real y la inmersión en lo virtual». In *Real-virtual en la estética y la teoría de las artes*. Buenos Aires: Editorial Paidós.

Miralles Moya, E. 2000. «Rehabilitación del Mercado de Santa Caterina». In *El Croquis 1983-2000*, no. 100-101: 34-44.

Ricoeur, P. 2001. *La metáfora viva*. Barcelona: Trotta.

Ricoeur, P. 2008. *Tiempo y narración.* Madrid: Akal.
Richter, G. 1997. «Notas datadas en 1964 y 1965». In *Indiferencia y singularidad. La fotografía en el pensamiento artístico contemporáneo.* Barcelona: MACBA.
Rorty, R. 1988. *Habermas y la modernidad.* Madrid: Cátedra.
Rorty, R. 1996. *Consecuencias del pragmatismo.* Madrid: Editorial Tecnos.
Rowe, C. and Slutzky, R. 1963. «Transparency: Literal and Phenomenal». In *Perspecta*, vol. 8. Cambridge: The MIT Press.
Schildt, G. 2000. *Alvar Aalto, de palabra y por escrito.* Madrid: El Croquis.
Shils, E. 1960. «Mass Society and Its Culture». In *Daedalus*, vol. 89, no. 2. Cambridge:The MIT Press.
Siza, A. 1995. «Alvar Aalto: tres facetas al azar». In *Alvaro Siza: obras y proyectos*. Madrid: Electa.
Superstudio. 1967. « Invention design / Evasion design». In *Domus*, no. 475. Milan: Editoriale Domus.
Virilio, P. 1998. *La estética de la desaparición.* Barcelona: Anagrama.
Zabalbeascoa, A. 2013. *Enric Miralles con el tiempo.* Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.
Zizeq, S. 2011. *El acoso de las fantasías.* Translated by Francisco López Martín. Madrid: Ediciones Akal.

PAPER #7.06

AWOL: PSYCHOLOGY, BUSINESS + RESEARCH IN CONTEMPORARY ARCHITECTURAL EDUCATION

Brian Robert Sinclair[a]
[a] School of Architecture, Planning + Landscape, University of Calgary + sinclairstudio inc, Canada

ABSTRACT

Architectural design today is a wickedly complex and dauntingly difficult undertaking. The ethos for design activity has grown more complicated, with building and urban projects mired in legal considerations, political expectations, cultural dimensions, environmental demands and financial limitations. Architectural education desperately attempts to keep pace with the present milieu and, under ideal circumstances, to predict future circumstances. The pedagogy required to adequately prepare tomorrow's architects must, by necessity, be agile, resilient and potent. Students must not only learn technical competencies, but must be conferred the abilities to think critically, to anticipate change, to be culturally sensitive, and to be environmentally responsible. Such a deep and broad set of aspirations is not for the faint of heart. The present research, in many ways a first step forward within a broader research agenda, critically examines architectural curricula from a vantage point of societal preparedness. The paper provokes both a broader and deeper understanding of the complex landscapes of design education, with a focus on North American systems. An argument is made, based on meta-analyses and literature reviews, that present-day architectural education is deficient in three major ways. Absent without leave in modern design education & training is understanding concerning human-environment interaction (e.g., environmental psychology), business acumen (including financial awareness & fiduciary responsibility) and research skills (including both quantitative/qualitative methods as well as the need for a knowledge base to advance and apprise practice). While concerns around the subjective nature of architectural production are longstanding, patience is growing thin concerning lack of empirical grounding in design decision-making, irresponsibility in budget management of projects and arbitrary judgement around suitability, quality and appropriateness of design solutions. The author argues that psychology, business and research are key missing ingredients that must be meaningfully introduced into the curriculum. While the paper uses North American higher education as a case, relevance & implications reach out to international jurisdictions beyond. Given urgencies around climate change, health crises, global conflicts, racial injustice, resource depletion and political decay, it is essential for future architects, regardless of geography, to be educated in more meaningful, appropriate and effective ways.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; education; systems thinking; culture; complexity

INTRODUCTION

> "We must take on the work of facing our fears, opening to intimacy and vulnerability, and opening to the unknown, to surprise. We can learn to open to situations simply, without aggression or defensiveness; and open to the inside as well; the depths beyond the surfaces of all life." Glazer[1], 1999

[1] Glazer, Steven (Editor). The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education. Penguin Putnam Inc.: New York, 1999. Page 247

Over the past several decades we have witnessed, as global societies, a rapid increase in the severity of calamities and an exponential escalade in the complexity of our world. There are many reasons for these dramatic shifts, including the prevalence of information technology, the ease of mobility and heightened confusion around ethics. While it is undeniable that our world has always been a melange of good and bad, right and wrong, and fair and unjust, recent developments arguably put the equations off kilter and place crises on steroids. From rising conflict and erosion of human rights to climate change and pandemics we confront many unprecedented problems that challenge our conventions and threaten our existence. In earlier days many problems were grounded in local conditions and manageable both in terms of our understanding and our solutions. However, in contemporary times problems become catastrophes with increasing frequency, and often reside beyond our comprehension and outside our ability to act. Historically, universities have played important roles in society, including educating future citizens, discovering new knowledge, and serving as a sounding board & informed critic considering the past, the present and the future. Freedom of thought and freedom of expression provided academics, and by extension students, with a milieu in which to critically consider our many paths and manifold possibilities. The autonomy of the institutions translated into abilities to question the status quo, to develop alternative ways, and to imagine a different tomorrow. Within this unique environment, academics and students have been able to develop novel ways of seeing, thinking and acting that have, over time, ushered in many advancements for our people, our communities, our companies, our governments and our nations. In earlier iterations of the academy, and its curricula, the formulas and the factors seemed simpler and more straightforward. However, in our modern times burgeoning data, information and knowledge engulfs us and commonly overwhelms us. In an effort to fast-track learning and manage growth we have seen increasing specialization, departmentalization and fragmentation. The notion of a well-rounded liberal arts grounding has been dissolving, with many students now channelled quickly from high school into disciplines via direct entry programs. The value of a common core within undergraduate education has diminished, with many students locked within the walls of their baccalaureate degree for their full time at university. In many ways this pigeon-holing makes management sense given the complicated nature of higher education. However, the author argues it makes limited sense with respect to preparing future citizens to grapple with the wicked problems they stand to inherit. We need to be broadening and deepening understanding, versus being overly obsessed with narrow training and pursuing job-readiness. The present paper considers architectural education within the shifting conditions of society and given the context of new demands on higher education. It errs on the side of provocation and speculation, understanding that doors need to be open to tackle pedagogical and curricular reform. The author accepts that such preliminary posturing, by both necessity and invention, is exploratory and challenging as opposed to proving definitive and set.

1. BACKGROUND

> "The longer one listened to him, the more obvious it became that his inability to speak was closely connected with the inability to think, namely, to think from the standpoint of somebody else. No communication was possible with him, not because he lied but because he was surrounded by the most reliable of all safeguards against the world

and the presence of others, and hence against reality as such."[2] (Hannah Arendt 1977)

In the bigger picture, architecture as a discipline and profession is a relative latecomer to the academy. With roots in the guild system of Europe, with the architect positioned as a informed craftsman, knowledge was held tightly and wielded with cautiousness. In time, with the formalizing of knowledge, the role of the master builder was separated into two distinct yet complementary realms – that of the engineer (Ecole Polytechnique) and the architect (Ecole de Beaux Arts). Polarization of positions was a natural tendency. On one hand the engineer was concerned with function, pragmatics, science and technology. On the other hand the architect was focused on form, poetics, art and humanity. The means and methods of these two divisions evolved in unique directions, as did their status and standing in society.

Clearly many of the distinctions drawn between engineering and architecture are stereotyped, with caricatures developed to simply describe the roles and responsibilities of each. That said, there are real differences in the ways these groups are educated, in the values they hold and in the manner in which they problem solve. The present paper addresses the path of the architect within the academy and within broader society with an eye to understand the present circumstances and to chart some directions forward that are productive and worthwhile. The paper is most concerned with serious curricular deficiencies in place that arguably limit the architect's ability to make a profound impact and a positive difference to a world in dire need.

2. ARCHITECTURAL EDUCATION - COMPLEX + WICKED

"In that context, and in practice, the process of individual creativity was imbued with a certain utopian potential and intrinsic positive value and universal social dimensions. Today, however, that 'creativity' is reduced to a caricature of aesthetic forms, expressionistic objects or sculpture –
and is mobilized in the service of the dominant power structures."[3] (MacDonald, 2014)

Architectural education arrived late into the university compared to other fields such as theology, the humanities and the sciences. Coming from a guild and then atelier tradition, the discipline of architecture was at times difficult to understand and place within the accepted structures of the institution. Sometimes placed in art departments and sometimes housed in engineering colleges, architecture programs tended to be seen as niche and quirky. When located in art schools, the architects were viewed as objective and disciplined. When embedded in engineering faculties the architects were seen as subjective and unbridled. Perspective, of course, matters. With the increasing demands of accreditation imposed on the education of architects came heightened uniformity in the substance of the curricula and in the training of future professionals. Accreditation sought to set standards and improve quality control within the educational preparation of architects. Accreditation organizations, such as the National Architectural Accrediting Board (NAAB) in the USA and the Canadian Architectural Certification Board (CACB) in Canada, endeavored to develop guidelines to ensure consistency of content and parallel education of architects regardless of state, school and situation. A key goal was ensuring the competency of individuals while

[2] Arendt, Hannah. Eichmann in Jerusalem: A Report on the Banality of Evil. English version of the 1965 edition. Penguin: Harmondsworth. 1977. Pages 48-49.
[3] MacDonald, Robert. Foreword. In: Design for a Complex World: Challenges in Practice and Education. Graham Cairns – Editor. Libri Publishing: Oxfordshire. 2014. Page vii.

acknowledging the diversity of schools and permitting some freedom of expression.

Architecture, as a pursuit and profession, has increased dramatically in complexity. This heightened complexity ironically has been accompanied with narrowing limits to the scope of practice and a proliferation of allied disciplines within the building industry. Post-WWII architects had a relatively wide role and an impressive range of responsibilities, including in many cases work covered today by engineering disciplines. Over time, with the tendencies of society towards greater specialization, architects relinquished many activities, choosing to focus more narrowly on the 'art' of architecture. Today the scope of the architect in North America has been greatly reduced, with some government legislative bodies arguing they should not be in the business of 'licensing artists'.

3. ABSENT WITHOUT LEAVE

> "A connected curriculum would encourage the integration, application and discovery of knowledge within and outside the architecture discipline, while effectively making the connections between architectural knowledge and the changing needs of the profession, clients, communities and society as a whole."[4] (Boyer, 1996)

Without question, the education of an architect is a long, complex and demanding exercise. Architecture is a unique field in that it resides in the nexus between art and science. While a profession in its own right, Architecture is a complex melange of other disciplines, borrowing principles and practices, theories and actions from allied realms. Invoking the rigor and empiricism of science on one hand, including structures and strengths of materials, while straying into the poetics and subjectivity of art on the other hand, including aesthetics and a quest for beauty. Engineers and scientists view architects with suspicion due to the indeterminate aspects and relative subjectivity of the field. Artists perceive architects with equal misgivings, driven by a sense of the architect's finite approach and overly objective manner. Architects then dwell in this space of the in-between – neither hard science nor fine art, but perhaps a touch of both. As relative newcomers to the academy, architecture programs continue to find a forced fit in many ways. With a limited knowledge base, or at least one that is poorly delineated and infrequently acted upon, architecture is seen by some as more vocational than scholarly. While the education of architects has been refined over decades and perhaps centuries, the methods of teaching, the core of knowledge and the nature of the fit within the university remains controversial. In looking between schools of architecture in North America one is struck by commonalities, informed in large part by somewhat prescriptive accreditation standards and regimes. Whether at the undergraduate or graduate level, the diet of courses and studios is quite similar. At the heart of the teaching model is the studio, an intensive small group teaching method that relies on a master-disciple relationship and the instilling of tacit knowing. Rather than being formulaic, in a glass box sense, the studio is often an ethos of exploration, iteration, creation and testing, that is at once praised for its effectiveness and criticized for its inefficiencies. University administrators often lament the resource intensive quality of the studio, in many cases categorizing it as a lab versus a class. Surrounding the studio is a rich array of courses, in some instances referred to as 'support' courses, which serve to buttress design thinking and ground creative endeavor. These courses tend to be both stand alone ventures as well as offerings more meaningfully integrated into studio. The author has written widely about studio education, including studios that are evidence-based, culturally-focused and also comprehensive.

[4] Boyer, Ernest L and Mitgang, Lee D. Building Community: A New Future for Architectural Education and Practice. Princeton: Carnegie Institute for the Advancement of Teaching. 1996.

While the precise composition of curricula varies in some ways from school to school, the basic foundation of the education proves remarkably alike. Within accreditation there is some latitude provided for schools to celebrate their own DNA, and to express the school's character, perhaps most notably through the spectrum of electives offered. Some schools take pride in a digital focus, some in a design focus, some in a cultural focus, etc. Even with this ability to express uniqueness, accreditation demands ensure that no school deviates too far from the party line. In some ways this is understandable and positive – that is, in the assurance of quality, competencyand consistency. In other ways the accreditation overlay serves to limit experimentation, suppress identity, and restrict agility + adaptability. In reviewing the curriculum of schools at a meta-level, and considering both USA and Canadian accreditation systems, the author contends, albeit and admittedly in a preliminary and speculative sense, there are three serious and arguably debilitating omissions: psychology, business and research. In the view of the author these three areas of study are urgently needed as architects enter the workforce to confront unprecedented problems and cope with an ethos of upheaval, uncertainty and unrest. Each of these three curricular realms will be examined in detail, including some speculation on impacts through exclusion.

3.1. Psychology

Architecture is neither a fine art nor a hard science. It is, however and arguably, a social art that is first and foremost human-centric. A building is not a pure piece of sculpture – it is, to the contrary, a container for dwelling, working, playing, living, etc. Architecture exists for use by people and as such demands of the architect a solid understanding of people – their needs, their desires, their concerns, their aspirations, etc. Evidence shows that buildings, spaces and places influence, impact and inspire people. Churchill once stated that "We shape our environments and they in turn shape us". The directions of such influence can be subtle or glaring, and positive or less so, including architecture's ability to help us to heal, to improve our productivity, to amplify our learning, to heighten our happiness or to repress us. Studies have looked at notions of place, including place-making, place-attachment and place-identity. The places we live in, that we grow up in and that we have affinity for, play significant roles in the ways we view ourselves and our world. Architects have great responsibility to get design as correct as possible when it comes to human comfort in the built environment. In order to achieve such goals, the education of architects must include curriculum addressing environment-behavior studies, environmental psychology, urban sociology, cultural anthropology, etc. Many opponents to inclusion of such content in architectural curricula point to an already overcrowded array of courses on the student's plate. However, to keep such human-centric knowledge out of the education of architects is to deny the true nature of architecture as an ethos of inhabitation. It is simply irresponsible to graduate an architecture student without a solid understanding of how people react to and behave in buildings. It is neglect of duty to send students out without deep awareness of design's capacity to impact lives for better or for worse. Some schools claim this content is captured in architectural programming courses or curricular modules, which has some aspects of reality but which alone proves woefully inadequate. All schools of architecture should have dedicated courses addressing human behavior in the built environment. And in the same way that structures are often integrated into studio, environmental psychology should be a mandatory dimension of studio education. Architecture schools do not need to go it alone – they can and should collaborate with programs in psychology, sociology and anthropology. Such collaboration is both helpful and healthy, in many ways.

3.2. Business

Another realm of knowing that is commonly absent in architectural education is business – business principles, business practices, business knowledge, business acumen and so on. While many graduates of architecture schools go on to work in private practices, or eventually start their own firms, few leave the university adequately skilled and equipped to succeed in the business end of the profession. Looking over almost any school's curriculum one is hard pressed to find serious content addressing business knowledge, short of small modules embedded in professional practice offerings. While studio is the heart of the education of architects, and building designs (almost all new constructions) are the subject of the vast majority of studio exercises/ projects, very few schools require business assignments within said studios. For example, it is rare to have students run pro-forma on projects they are designing. In few cases do studio instructors require cost estimating, even order-of-magnitude, or take-offs to be addressed. Most commonly students are given free reign with respect to the cost of projects, the nature of materials, the energy loads, etc. Certainly the hypothetical aspects of studio are understandable. However, at least some of the studios within a student's program of studies, should be intensely grounded in the realities of cost, practicality, viability and buildability. Without doubt some studios should and must be free to explore the fantastic, the futuristic, the spectacular, the unbound and the unbridled. However, tempering such necessary folly must be experience in meeting budgets, in ensuring constructability and in fostering fiduciary accountability. At present such aspects of education are few and far between. Money is often seen as an unpalatable subject that contaminates the purity of the pursuit of design. Business is often seen as a burden in the curriculum and is knowledge best left to the profession to push into interns and associates as they learn the ropes. Architectural education, however, must attend to business knowledge within the confines of the degrees. The architecture schools do not need to cover this content alone – they can and should partner with business programs in exploring how architects can be equipped with skills needed to flourish financially in practice. After all, if an architectural firm is not liquid how can they realistically pursue their true desire to design & construct buildings?

3.3. Research

Due in part to the character and composition of architecture, and to an extent its public mystique, there are longstanding concerns and criticisms around the shallow nature of the discipline's knowledge base. Many decisions in design are rendered in ways that other fields view as thin or suspect. Such approaches may include intuition, tacit knowing, iteration as experimentation, precedent studies, etc. While these strategies can be, and often are, potent in their own right they tend to be insufficient given the complexities and responsibilities of contemporary building design and construction. The terminal degree in the field (e.g., BArch, MArch, etc.) has, for a very long time, been an acceptable entry into the ranks of the academy. While on one hand, historically, this was an appropriate posturing, in recent decades the call for greater research activity, higher research funding, more impactful research discoveries, etc. has clearly disadvantaged many schools of architecture. The academics within architecture programs have often struggled to secure grants and execute serious research projects, much to the chagrin of senior administrators. And while the author is quick to acknowledge the value of curiosity based research and the worth of design as research, in the present milieu architecture professors can and must do more. This inadequacy in their own research skills and acumen has naturally had demonstrable impacts on architectural curricula. In many schools the pursuit of research by, and the

imparting of research skills for, students is seen as a distraction at best and irrelevant at worst. Even in so-called research studios, or within regular studios that call for the conduct of research, this research work usually comprises only internet searches based on some key words or design precedents. Few students in professional programs (note: research or thesis programs are a different situation), whether at the undergraduate or graduate levels, have a solid grasp of qualitative and quantitative methods, know how to read and apply research findings to their design work, or even how to search periodicals for articles and papers that might strengthen their problem solving. Clients and governments today demand greater accountability and higher performance, including expectations around the deployment of evidence-based design. To be fair some professional programs contain or retain thesis components to their BArch or MArch (or DArch) programs – and in numerous instances such programs do underscore the need to deeper, more thorough and more thoughtful investigations. However, such programs tend to be in the minority with many programs opting to abandon time-intensive thesis projects in favor of migrating towards course-based curricula. Even within course-based programs, and in light of an absence of accreditation criteria mandating any real research content, there are few if any research courses and limited cases of studio engaged in what most universities would deem to be actual research. The author argues that, for many reasons, schools of architecture must include research courses, research skills, research ethics and research impacts as part of the education and training of future architects. Aside from meeting societal expectations, building research skills in our students will undeniably place them in a more competitive position to contribute to firms, to contribute to the profession, to contribute to the industry and, in the end, to contribute more meaningfully to society.

3.4. To sum up ...

Without a doubt it is a daunting challenge to have a faultless curriculum – one that is complete, one that is robust & resilient, one that covers all professional & societal needs and one that fully prepares students for graduation. The author in no way claims that any curricula can be perfect, but rather has aimed to identify perhaps the most glaring gaps in architectural curricula in North America. The selection of Psychology, Business and Research as the most pressing deficiencies in present day education of architects serves to highlight the most evident areas in need of attention – that pertain to the human-centric nature of the built environment, to the need to be financially responsible & solvent in the conduct of practice, and to meet the serious responsibility to make decisions, design and otherwise, based on evidence, facts and reality.

4. FILLING IN THE GAPS

> "In spiritual education the world comes alive. Living and education become inseparable. Self and the world become inseparable. Something is always happening that can be learned from. The only things that are required are openness and attentiveness: the allowing and examination of direct experience." Glazer,[5] 1999

Much debate has transpired over the years concerning the worth and tactics around accreditation. For sure many benefits accrue in pursuing and ensuring accreditation regimes, especially considering that in North America the profession of architecture is regulated – scope and in many cases, title are enshrined in and protected by statute (legislation). In exchange for the privilege of restricted practice, the profession, in our case architecture, must ensure competency. This competency is fostered through numerous mechanisms, including critically the delivery of sound and

[5] Glazer, Steven. The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education. Penguin Putnam Inc.: New York, 1999. Pages 136-137

effective education by schools of architecture. Accreditation shapes the content, consistency and consequences of education across jurisdictions, meaning that disparate schools in far removed locations produce graduates with comparable knowledge, skills and values. The author is not raising issues about the value of accreditation but does encourage the arrival of criteria (e.g., student performance criteria) and conditions that capture psychology, business and research as indispensable ingredients to a potent education in architecture. At present, in both the USA and Canada, language and intention around these three vital subject areas, in any meaningful sense, is largely vacant. In considering the robustness and tactical landscape of the architecture curriculum, it is important to understand that the most critical aspects revolve around preparedness for anticipated conditions. It is, in the author's view, insufficient to remain too connected to the past or to be too obsessed with the present. On the contrary, contemporary society is under rapid pressures to twist and turn based on unanticipated developments, demanding & dynamic needs, and shifting expectations. In order to prepare students for an uncertain tomorrow it is especially wise to build a curriculum that hits the main points. The author's inclusion of environmental psychology, business principles and research acumen, into the diet of modern architectural education, attends to this urgent need for relevancy, responsivity and capacity. The following realms pertain to an approach to curriculum building that considers indeterminacy and uncertainty.

Comprehensive Knowledge:
While the education of architects cannot be complete in exhaustive ways – time and resources operate against such grandeur – it should prove comprehensive, spanning divides between art and science, the general and the specific, the poetic and the pragmatic, the subjective and the objective, and so on. Architecture is unique, as has been previously noted, in its dwelling in the nexus of many disciplines, principles and practices. In many ways, to the author's mind, an ideal education should be comprised of a liberal arts undergraduate degree followed by a professional degree in architecture. Over these two components it is reasonable to develop knowledge that is professionally focused while also providing a well-rounded based (that contributes to awareness and responsibility on the citizen side). In those cases where the curricular sequence differs from this ideal, it is contingent upon individual schools to develop a curriculum that is comprehensive on one hand and balanced on the other.

Strategic Nimbleness:
Advanced education is not the same as technical training. Of course many critics have argued that architectural education is out of place in the university, and might better be directed to technical schools. However, the counter argument revolves around the intense complexities of contemporary society and its accompanying problems. Modern day crises are not merely about technical matters – including of course climate change and global warming. The wicked nature of problems that architects face, and not merely building challenges, demand far greater depths of understanding than technical training alone could ever provide. Many dilemmas today are as much political and cultural as they might be technical in character. Architecture students must not simply be inculcated with facts and figures but must be educated in how to learn with nimbleness and potency. Knowing where to find answers is as strategically valuable today as simply knowing answers. The explosion of data and information has made the prospects of knowing all exceptionally slim. In fact, Socrates once mused that "wisdom is knowing you know nothing". Today we are well advised to teach our students that they cannot know everything and that survival, in a professional sense, demands an ability to know

what you don't know and then determine how best to move forward with such understanding.

Professional Competencies:
In North America the profession of architecture enjoys a special status within society – depending on jurisdiction title and/or scope are protected to varying degrees. This basically means that the profession is allowed to operate in a 'closed' fashion through a guarantee of competency. In other words, the gravity of the work of designing buildings warrants extraordinary care to ensure user health, safety and welfare. To meet this expectation of competency the architectural profession deploys a multi-stranded approach, with one strand being accredited education thatcovers realms of expertise required to practice architecture. These professional competencies are numerous and serious. Relative to the present paper, the author argues that beyond the currently categorized competencies the areas of psychology, business and research must be addressed. The author is an architect and psychologist – from this vantage point he argues the societal expectation for welfare is transcended to encompass wellness. Buildings today must tackle more than egress in the event of fires – they must support inhabitants physically, socially, psychologically, culturally and even spiritually. In order to rise to this level of 'well-buildings' it is crucial for students to be equipped with competencies spanning much broader and deeper than was the case in previous decades.

Societal Understanding:
One only has to look at the past few years to grasp the volatility and unpredictability of our world and its nations. Countries that were deemed leaders only a few years back are now in chaos and turmoil. Nations that were not on any radar a few decades back are now major players who cannot be ignored. Governance that was stable a generation back now appears to be unfolding and unraveling. Polarization of populations, the rise of mob messaging and disdain for the rule of law all loom large in our lives – the university needs to prepare students to grasp such conditions and to act in positive ways to move us ahead. This obligation, and opportunity, should not concern itself with a student's major or their degree – rather, all students regardless of college, department or discipline need to be prepared to act upon graduation. With respect to the present paper, the author argues all students and all faculty need to be aware of shifting sands and should be able and willing to make a difference. The call for inclusion of psychology, business and research buttress the skills and knowledge of architecture students in weighty ways that will better equip them to tackle some of the messy problems that await them upon graduation.

Ethical Posturing:
Finally, and not the least consequential, is the need to instill in students a moral compass to help them find their way in the torrent of noise and distractions of modern day societies. The author has written widely about the need for building a strong awareness of moral action and ethical behavior within the academy (see, for example, Sinclair 2019 "The Devil's Crop") – in both the professoriate and the student body. We live in an era where lines between right and wrong are more and more blurred, the understanding of good and bad increasingly confused and the value of facts and truth decaying and dissolving. Architecture students, being educated to operate within a legislatively protected profession, have extraordinary expectations around ethics. Architectural associations, at regional levels and at national scales, clearly delineate and subscribe to codes of ethics. A solid grounding in such affairs needs to be established within architecture schools and their curriculum.

5. HOLISTIC EDUCATION IN AN ETHOS OF CRISES

> "In the beginning, new ground must be carefully prepared; the old growth and underbrush removed; the soil tilled and raked; seeds planted; fertilizer spread; water provided in adequate amounts; while the sun provides ultraviolet and infrared rays creating a warm environment. When all this has been done through long hours of labor and required intervals of germination, a new young tree emerges. Eventually this young tree will bear fruit to reward those who have labored in the vineyard. It would be foolish to chide those who are preparing the soil and planting the seed because there is yet no fruit. It would be unwise to water too much or allow the sun to parch the land. When the time has come, the fruit will be ripe and its substance will sustain those who harvest it. So it is with knowledge." Eberhard, 2007[7]

University education is not in its primary mission about training. Rather it is more rightly concerned with the discovery of knowledge, the instilling of wisdom, and the ability to effectively and creatively solve complex problems through the application of both (i.e., knowledge and wisdom). While in some instances (for example in the case of professional education) there are aspects of skill development and occupational training that need to be addressed, the fundamental focus remains on higher level thinking and more theoretical/philosophical ways of understanding our world. Advanced education, perhaps more now than ever before, must assume the leadership required to educate a next generation of students who can critically examine widespread suffering, who can imaginatively see beyond the status quo, who can devise high-impact mindsets, methods and models, and who can garner the strength and assume the risks necessary to right a ship gone widely off course. In the author's view this challenge should begin with a reconsidered system that includes, in pervasive and transcendent ways, the features of ethics, integrity, competency + wisdom. Taken together, as an integrated system, the pursuit of these qualities should better equip students to cope with a tsunami of negatively and a mountain of incomprehensible problems. This approach assumes that these features find

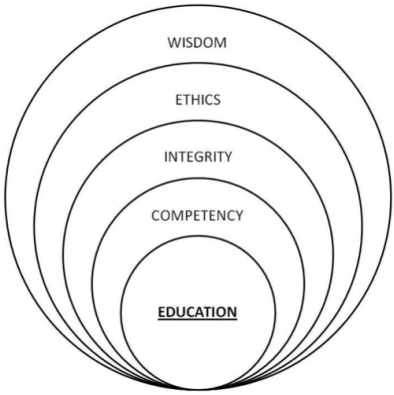


Figure 1. Holistic Model for Higher Education in a Complex World

meaningful fit and resonance within curriculum regardless of college or major. In other words, all programs of studies within the academy would set performance goals that holistically incorporate ethics, integrity, competency and wisdom. Within this mix perhaps wisdom stands out as the most challenging yet the most crucial. The researcher views wisdom as the coupling of head and heart. The university finds great comfort in affairs of the head yet struggles to embrace matters of the heart. It is easier to quantify and rationalize intellectual realms, whereas emotions present territories of uncertainty, indeterminacy

[7] Eberhard, John P. Architecture and the Brain: A New Knowledge Base From Neuroscience. Ostberg | Greenway Communications: Atlanta, GA. 2007. Page 19.

and the unknown. That said, both the pragmatic and poetic need serious adoption and conflation in order to solve modern crises and avert catastrophes downstream.

CONCLUSION

> "The essential difference between life and a machine is that a machine eliminates all idleness and ambiguity. It is constructed entirely on the basis of physical connection, functional, rational principles, and efficiency. In contrast, life includes such elements as uselessness, ambiguity, the unknown and idleness. It is a flowing interrelation continuously creating a dynamic balance." - Kiso Kurokawa[8] (1995)

Architectural education, and indeed advanced education writ large, is in urgent need of reform and redesign and in particular in ways that better equip graduates to address levels of turbulence, trials and tribulations unprecedented in severity and consequence. In considering the education of architects (within North American higher education systems), the present paper has delineated many circumstances, demands, obstacles and opportunities that should be factored into equations for teaching and learning. The author delineates, in an initial and exploratory sense, some of the dimensions of such education yet underscores further investigation is both warranted and timely. Attention to the curriculum in accredited schools of architecture illuminates critical deficiencies that, if left neglected, hold promise to further erode the profession and weaken its practice. Of special interest in the present paper are three realms that straightaway require introduction and integration into the curriculum of architecture schools (both accredited and not): namely, psychology, business and research. While the author acknowledges, by way of a caveat, that some schools do include aspects of these disciplines and spheres of knowledge, there is not consistency in substance, intention and content across the academy. Accreditation regimes must more aggressively define and delimit courses and student performance criteria that attend to student understanding of human behaviour in the built environment, of business principles + practices to ensure financial responsibility & stability, and of research methods and means essential to both the discovery + appropriate application of new knowledge. In our current times, where we face climate change, global pandemics, social unrest, escalating conflict and growing gaps between people, to name but a sampling, it seems urgent for architects, and architectural education, to be better prepared for an uncertain, confusion and risky tomorrow.

[8] Kurokawa, Kisho. "From the Age of the Machine Principle to the Age of Life Principle". In *The Master Architect Series: Kisho Kurokawa.* Editor: Stephen Dobney. Images Publishing Group: Victoria, Australia, 1995.

REFERENCES

Arendt, Hannah. *Eichmann in Jerusalem: A Report on the Banality of Evil*. English version of the 1965 edition. Penguin: Harmondsworth. 1977.

Boyer, Ernest L and Mitgang, Lee D. B*uilding Community: A New Future for Architectural Education and Practice*. Princeton: Carnegie Institute for the Advancement of Teaching. 1996.

Eberhard, John P. *Architecture and the Brain: A New Knowledge Base From Neuroscience*. Ostberg | Greenway Communications: Atlanta, GA. 2007.

Glazer, Steven (Editor). *The Heart of Learning: Spirituality in Education*. Penguin Putnam Inc.: New York, 1999.

MacDonald, Robert. Foreword. In: *Design for a Complex World: Challenges in Practice and Education*. Graham Cairns – Editor. Libri Publishing: Oxfordshire. 2014.

Sinclair, Brian R. The Devil's Crop: *Rightness, Wrongness & Appropriateness in an Upside-Down Abyss*. Keynote Address, 31st International Conference on Systems Research, Informatics and Cybernetics, Germany, 2019. https://ucalgary.academia.edu/DrBrianRSinclair

PAPER #7.07

DESIGN RESEARCH AND A SHIFT IN ARCHITECTURAL EDUCATION AND PRACTICE

Ayşe Zeynep Aydemir[a], Sam Jacoby[a]
[a]Royal College of Art, London, UK

ABSTRACT

Research, once associated only with academia, now equally connects to learning and practice in architecture, as focus has shifted towards a wider design research community. Research has become inclusive of formerly marginalised areas such as process-oriented and practice-based research in the arts and humanities as well as applied commercial research undertaken by industry. Providing a first study of this shift, this paper explores why design research is of growing importance to architecture. It systematically analyses a selection of current cases at the intersection of architectural practice and education within the UK to survey existing design research approaches, and asks: How can design research transform and create new architectural practices and forms of education? Following this question, the paper discusses some of the design research models used across architectural practice and education.

KEYWORDS

Design research; architectural education; architectural practice.

INTRODUCTION

Research in architecture has long been associated with design research (Archer 1978, Frayling 1993, Till 2005, Geiser 2008, Fraser 2013). Known as 'architectural design research', it highlights the design and research processes and outcomes useful for the creation of projects or a broader contribution to design thinking (Fraser 2013). This definition corresponds with new agendas and frameworks by international research institutions in support of a diversification of research and knowledge exchange.

Design research is increasingly recognised as essential to disciplinary development and architectural education and training. For example, it is one of architecture's core research activities (Rendell 2013) at both graduate and undergraduate levels. In 1999, the Bologna Declaration (Joint Declaration of the European Ministers of Education) caused a shift in education policy within Europe towards research in design-oriented disciplines (Geiser 2008). In the following years, design research in architecture was internationally acknowledged and included within the UK Research Excellence Framework (REF), the Excellence in Research for Australia agendas, and the research framework of the European Association of Architectural Education (Fraser 2013). This year, the European League of Institutes of the Arts (ELIA) presented the Vienna Declaration on Artistic Research to support the establishment of research in all disciplines of art practice including architecture.

Architecture is regarded as a research discipline in its own right (Till 2005), and research is considered to be essential to architectural practice (RIBA 2014c). In 2016, the Royal Institute of British Architects (RIBA) received the highest number of submissions to the President's Awards for Research (RIBA 2017), revealing a growing interest not only in academic research but also by architectural practices to secure funding to conduct research. Therefore, the research community

and audience have become larger, and the distinction between academia and practice lessened. Moreover, the scope and scale of the topics covered expanded and diversified in 2016, while previously most research was project-focused and technical in nature (RIBA 2014c).

Considering these changes, this paper studies how design research transforms architecture. Part of a larger study, this paper will discuss how design research affects architectural practice and creates new forms of education. Based on a survey of current practices and studios within London in the UK, it will further provide a more detailed analysis of selected cases and the differences they present of how design research is understood.

1. HOW DID RESEARCH EVOLVE IN ARCHITECTURAL EDUCATION AND PRACTICE IN THE UK?

For the UK Research Excellence Framework (REF) that replaced the previous UK Research Assessment Exercise (RAE), the definition of research changed from 'an original investigation undertaken in order to gain knowledge and understanding' (RAE 2005) to 'a process of investigation leading to new insights, effectively shared' (REF 2019), with several interim modifications occurring between 2001 and 2019. A comparison of these definitions shows a significant transformation in the understanding of the value of research and the research community over the last two decades. The change also indicates that there is a shift in focus from the academic community to a wider audience, the public. Design research is becoming more important with this shift, as it tends to have a direct impact on practices and practitioners and is directed towards a larger public audience and not just academics. Furthermore, there is a growing emphasis on the process of research and how it is shared, while at the same time still meeting the criteria of 'originality', 'significance' and 'rigour' used in the assessment of research quality. The new definition manifests that world-leading research can include formerly marginalised areas such as process-oriented and practice-based research in the arts and humanities as well as applied commercial research undertaken outside academia in industry.

Research is associated with postgraduate-level programs in architecture and a requirement specified by the RIBA. The RIBA criteria for Part 2 (master level) UK courses in architecture, which it validates with the Architects Registration Board's (ARB), emphasise a 'critical understanding of how knowledge is advanced through research to produce clear, logically argued and original written work relating to architectural culture, theory and design' (RIBA 2014a, RIBA 2014b). This criterion unfolds the significance of research in architectural education by identifying it as a necessity to advance professional practice.

Design is also increasingly regarded as important in higher research degrees. Some institutions have started to define PhD-level projects through design research, often coined 'PhD by Design', 'PhD by Practice', or 'Practice-based PhD'. For example, currently nine PhD programmes with practice-based pathways in architecture are advertised online within the UK by the Architectural Association, Edinburgh College of Art, Goldsmiths (University of London), Royal College of Art, The Bartlett (University College London), Manchester School of Architecture, University of Edinburgh, University of Nottingham, and the University of Brighton. At the same time, most other universities offer an option to integrate design research into PhD work.

In parallel, there is a growing interest in securing funding for research by professional practices. Architectural practices typically apply for research funding by collaborating with a university or as part of a knowledge transfer partnership (RIBA 2017). The new definition of research for the UK REF, which

is run by UK Research and Innovation, and an expansion of subject coverage for quality-related funding from the UK research councils are encouraging practice-based research. This expansion supports architecture – which is deemed unique as a subject and a discipline (Rendell 2004), as it brings together different modes of research that are often kept apart – to develop practice-based and practice-led forms of research and provides possibilities for new interdisciplinary research.

Architectural design research and skills are also recognised as essential to economic growth. Design skills contribute 12% to the total UK gross value added, and their contribution to the economy rose by 47.2% in the architecture and built environment sector from 2011 to 2015 (Design Council 2018). In particular, architecture schools significantly contribute to a growing pipeline of design skills that benefit not only the design economy but the UK economy as a whole. According to the RIBA Education Statistics of 2016/17 (RIBA 2018), there is a long-term growth in the number of student applications to architecture schools. However, the Design Council reported in 2018 that 82% of people with design skills gained in architecture and the built environment, work outside these disciplines in other design roles (Design Council 2015). It shows that the current skillset of architecture graduates is also effective in other industries.

To summarise, one can say that architectural design research in the UK is currently encouraged by the REF definition of research, RIBA and ARB programme validation criteria, a PhD-level focus on practice-led and practice-based research and the UK research councils' quality-related funding eligibility criteria. Furthermore, the contribution of design skills gained in architecture and the built environment studies to the UK economy is recognised as essential.

2. CURRENT UK LANDSCAPE IN ARCHITECTURE: PRACTICE, RESEARCH, STUDIO

New models of learning and practicing in architecture are encouraged and reformulated through collective processes of learning and design research (Geiser 2008), which address an audience beyond just the academic studio and professional practice (Lawson 2002). New learning and practice approaches consolidate the emphasis of the UK REF on research process and impact, an understanding of research that can be seen reflected in the professional architecture course validation criteria of the RIBA and ARB.

In recent years, architects have become progressively interested in design research in both their practice and teaching as well as the wider societal impacts it can create. Practitioners are increasingly taking part in postgraduate-level teaching as studio tutors, are involved in funded research projects and participate in exhibitions and publications. Design studios thereby provide a valuable ground to test activities at the intersection of learning, research and practice. To study this in greater detail, the paper considers necessary the following survey of postgraduate-level architectural design studios.

In the UK, there are currently 44 Schools of Architecture offering RIBA/ARB Part 2 validated courses at master's degree level. The professional advancement offered by Part 2 studies seems to attract the majority of students after passing their Part 1 and having taken a year out. The number of students entering RIBA validated Part 2 courses in 2017/18 was 2,167 (RIBA 2019). This number grows slightly year on year, but for the academic year starting 2017, it is below the number of graduates who completed their Part 1 studies in 2015/16 (2,973). The number of new entrants from outside the UK to first year Part 2 was 734. Thus, around half the students passing their Part 1 in 2015/16 examination must have decided to continue

School	Programme	Architectural Design Studio	Studio Tutors/Associated practices	AP	UK	CP	T	R	I	Int
The Royal College of Art (RCA)	MA Architecture (13 Unit)	ADS0	Steve Salembier (Bildraum)	•				•		•
			Paul Sheppeard							
		ADS1	Maria Paez Gonzalez (Foster + Partners)	•	•	•			•	
			Douglas Murphy	•	•	•	•	•		
			Andrea Zanderigo (Baukuh)	•		•			•	
		ADS2	Ahmed Belkhodja (Fala Atelier)	•		•	•	•	•	
			Diana Ibáñez López (The Why Factory)							
		ADS3	David Knight (DK-CM)	•	•	•		•	•	
			Daniel Fernández Pascual, Alon Schwabe (Cooking Sections)	•	•		•	•		•
			Tom Greenall (DSDHA)	•	•	•	•	•		•
		ADS4	Matteo Mastrandrea (Es Devlin Studio)							
			Nicola Koller							
		ADS5	Christopher Dyvik, Max Kahlen, Isabel Pietri (Dyvik Kahlen Architects)	•	•	•	•	•	•	•
		ADS6	Clara Kraft, Satoshi Isono (Kraft Isono)	•	•		•			•
			Guan Lee (Grymsdyke Farm)	•	•		•	•	•	•
			Marco Ferrari (Studio Folder)	•				•	•	
		ADS7	Elise Hunchuck							
			Jingru (Cyan) Cheng							
			Kamil Hilmi Dalkir							
		ADS8	Marina Otero Verzier					•	•	•
			Ippolito Pestellini Laparelli (OMA)	•		•		•	•	
			John Ng (Elsewhere Architecture)	•	•		•	•		
		ADS9	Zsuzsa Péter (Farshid Moussavi Architecture)	•	•	•		•	•	
			James Kwang Ho Chung (Hopkins Architects)	•	•	•				
			Gianfranco Bombaci, Matteo Costanzo (2A+P/A)	•		•	•	•		
		ADS10	Francesca Romana Dell'Aglio							
			Davide Sacconi							
		ADS11	Renaud Haerlingen Victor Meester (Rotor)	•		•	•	•	•	
			Livia Wang							
		ADS12	Benjamin Reynolds, Valle Medina (Pa.LaC.E)	•	•		•	•	•	
		Unit 10	CJ Lim (Studio 8 Architects)	•	•				•	•
			Simon Dickens (Youmeheshe)	•	•	•	•	•		
		Unit 11	Laura Allen and Mark Smout (Smout Allen)	•	•		•	•	•	
		Unit 12	Elizabeth Dow and Jonathan Hill							
		Unit 13	Sabine Storp and Patrick Weber (Storp Weber Architecture)	•	•	•	•			
		Unit 14	Jakub Klaska (ZHA)	•	•	•		•	•	
			Dirk Krolikowski (DKFS)	•	•	•	•	•		•
		Unit 15	Max Dewdney (Max Dewdney Architects)	•	•	•			•	
		Unit 16	Matthew Butcher	•	•		•	•	•	
		Unit 17	Yeoryia Manolopoulou (AY Architects)	•	•	•		•	•	
			Nial McLaughlin (Nial McLaughlin Architects)	•	•	•		•	•	
		Unit 18	Ricardo de Ostos (NaJa & deOstos)	•	•		•	•		
			Isaie Bloch (Eragatory)	•	•		•	•		
		Unit 20	Marjan Colletti (Marcos and Marjan Architects)	•	•		•	•		
		Unit 21	Javier Ruiz							
			Abigail Ashton, Andrew Porter (Ashton Porter Architects)	•	•	•			•	
			Tom Holberton (SoHo+Co)	•	•		•			•
		Unit 22	Izaskun Chinchilla Moreno (Izaskun Chinchilla Architects)	•		•	•	•		
			Ovalle Costal (Wilkinson Eyre Architects)	•	•	•			•	
		Unit 24	Penelope Haralambidou and Michael Tite							
		Unit 25	Emma-Kate Matthews	•	•	•	•	•		•
The Bartlett (University College London)	Architecture MArch (ARB/RIBA Part 2) (14 Unit)									

School	Programme	Architectural Design Studio	Studio Tutors/Associated practices	AP	UK	CP	T	R	I	Int
The Architectural Association (AA)	AA Diploma (MArch) (21 Diploma Unit)	Diploma 1	Martin Jameson (Serie Architects)	•	•	•	•	•		
			Miraj Ahmed							
		Diploma 2	Lara Lesmes & Fredrik Hellberg (Space Popular)	•	•	•	•	•		•
			Christina Varvia, Merve Anil, Eyal Weizman (Forensic Architecture)							
		Diploma 3		•	•		•	•	•	•
		Diploma 4	John Palmesino, Ann-Sofi Rönnskog (Territorial Agency)	•	•			•	•	•
		Diploma 5	Umberto Napolitano, Andrea Guazzieri(GFC Architecture)	•		•	•	•		
		Diploma 6	Guillermo Lopez Ibañez (MAIO)	•		•	•	•		
			Jack Self (REAL Foundation)	•	•			•		
		Diploma 7	Hamed Khosravi, Platon Issaias							
		Diploma 8	Rok Oman, Špela Videčnik (OFIS)	•		•		•		
		Diploma 9	Stefan Laxness, Antoine Vaxelaire	•		•				•
		Diploma 10	(TOI-T) Carlos Villanueva Brandt Architecture	•						
		Diploma 11	Shin Egashira							
		Diploma 12	Inigo Minns, Ivan Morison, Alexandra Daisy Ginsberg							
		Diploma 13	Bostjan Vuga (SADAR+VUGA)	•		•			•	
			Alvaro Velasco							
		Diploma 14	Pier Vittorio Aureli (Dogma)					•		
			Maria Shéhérazade Giudici							
		Diploma 15	Sam Chermayeff (June 14 Meyer-Grohbrügge & Chermayeff)	•		•		•	•	
			Lucy Styles (SANAA)	•		•			•	
		Diploma 16	Ila Beka, Louise Lemoine (Beka & Lemoine)	•				•	•	•
			Gili Merin							
			Gabu Heindl (GABU Heindl Architektur)	•		•	•	•	•	
		Diploma 17	Eleanor Dodman (Eleanor Dodman Architects)	•	•	•		•	•	
			Liza Fior (muf architecture/art)	•	•	•		•		•
		Diploma 18	Aude-Line Dulière, James Westcott, Lionel Devlieger, Maarten Gielen (Rotor)	•		•	•	•	•	
		Diploma 19	David Kohn, Bushra Mohamed (David Kohn Architects)	•	•	•		•	•	
			Selva Gürdoğan, Gregers Tang Thomsen (Superpool)	•		•		•	•	
		Diploma 20	Jonathan Robinson (Civic)	•	•			•	•	•
		Diploma 21	Tatjana Crossley Didier Fiúza Faustino (Mésarchitecture) Anna Muzychak			•			•	•

Table 1. Postgraduate architecture programmes and studio units leading to professional qualification (ARB/RIBA Part 2) in selected schools of architecture in the 2019/20 academic year.
AP: Architectural Practice, UK: UK-based, CP: Conventional Practice, T: Teaching, R: Research, I: Impact, Int: Interdisciplinarity

Part 2 studies in the following year after having taken a year out for Stage 1 practical experience (with a minimum 24 months work experience required before taking the Part 3 examination and fully qualifying as an architect).

London has the leading postgraduate architecture schools using design research and to analyse the current landscape of architectural design research in higher education institutions, three schools of architecture are selected among them. Choosing the Architectural Association, the Bartlett and the Royal College of Art provides a cross-section of leading schools of architecture within very different contexts. The AA is a private non-research institution, the Bartlett is one of the major centres for

research, and the RCA is a research intense art and design school with only postgraduate students.

In the 2019/20 academic year, there were 48 units/design studios in postgraduate architectural programmes leading to professional qualification (RIBA/ARB recognised) at the Royal College of Art (13), The Bartlett (University College London) (14) and the Architectural Association School of Architecture (21) (Table 1). In these studios, the total number of associated practices are 60. 89% (43 of 48) of the studios are run by architectural practitioners, of which 63% (38 of 60) predominantly work on building design, therefore, can be considered 'conventional' architectural practices. 63% (38 of 60) of the practices are based in the UK and 50% (30 of 60) of them state that their teaching is an integral part of their practice.

75% (45 of 60) of the practices explicitly refer to research as a learning strategy or associate their practice with research. 32% (19 of 60) of the practices define their practice as interdisciplinary, and 55% (33 of 60) frequently disseminate their work through publications and exhibitions to reach a wider public. All these numbers are based on the written statements given by the practices within their separate practice descriptions online. However, it is likely that more practices see their work fall into categories of practice-based research, interdisciplinarity and engagement with public audiences. Thus, these numbers are only an estimate of the current research landscape within postgraduate architectural design studios in parts of London.

3. HOW CAN DESIGN RESEARCH CONNECT ARCHITECTURAL PRACTICE AND EDUCATION?

Research-led teaching in the MA Architecture programme at the Royal College of Art (RCA) is one of the prominent examples connecting learning and practice in a Part 2 course. Validated by the RIBA and ARB since 1983, the programme philosophy responds to RIBA criteria by fostering independent postgraduate research and experimentation in design with a strong connection to practice and the material reality of the discipline.

In the 2019/20 academic year, the MA Architecture programme offered 13 different Architectural Design Studios (ADS) that resonate with the key research themes of the School of Architecture: Architecture and Social Movements, Institutional Forms and Practices, Intergenerational Cities and Climate Justice. As stated in the Programme Specification 2019/20, each ADS has unique thematic interests and offers a 'Live Project' in alignment with their studio brief and agenda. The ADS structure is based on peer learning, with first- and second-year students working alongside one another. Furthermore, second-year students are required to prepare an Independent Research Project, which is tutored through the ADS and relates to its specific research agenda and studio brief.

ADSs provided a valuable context for this study. In parallel to the programme philosophy, all ADSs at the RCA are run by professional practitioners, and 69% of them are associated with 'conventional' architectural practices (9 of 13). Based on how they describe themselves online, all of the studios explicitly use research as a learning strategy, or they associate their practice with research; 46% (6 of 13) of the studios define their practice as interdisciplinary and 61% (8 of 13) of the studios frequently disseminate their work through publications and exhibitions (Table 1).

To understand better the intersection of learning, research and practice, ADSs in the MA Architecture programme at the RCA were observed during their introductory presentations, Work-in-Progress show and the RCA2020 graduation show in the 2019/20 academic year. In the introductions at the beginning of the year, ADS tutors presented fully-developed briefs suggesting a variety of themes, sites, methods, schedule and external collaborations, which later reflected on the studio outputs exhibited in the work-in-progress and graduation shows.

ADSs differ in terms of their process-driven, output-driven and impact-driven focus. To discuss these different strands of design research they represent, ADS3, ADS6, ADS9 and ADS11 were selected for further observation during their pre-exam reviews before the Final Examination. Observations were undertaken on different days within a remote learning environment due to Covid-19 outbreak measures. For this study, only second-year students' work was reviewed, which were 22 presentations in total. 68% (15 of 22) of these students completed Part 1 in the UK and 32% (7 of 22) had gained their undergraduate degrees outside the UK.

During their pre-exam reviews, all students presented their work in the format of a research book, a design portfolio and slides, and often an additional medium relevant to their studio focus. Examples of this medium are a web platform, an Instagram page, a short film, a simulation, or a digital animation. Students introduced their design research process, stating a research question, methodology, a project brief and a design proposal, often including multidisciplinary considerations. The importance of these elements differed according to the studio approach adopted by ADS tutors.

ADS3 'Refuse Trespassing Our Bodies: Metabolising the Built Environment' is run by Daniel Fernández Pascual and Alon Schwabe of Cooking Sections. Cooking Sections is a research-based practice that explores the overlapping boundaries between visual arts, architecture, ecology and geopolitics. In 2019/20, ADS3 investigated synthetic pollutants and explored the spatial implications and circular trajectories of these substances. Similar to Cooking Sections' own design research approach, all studio projects addressed issues of locating and investigating a present pollutant, and tracing and bringing into view their spatial implications as well as their sociological, political, metabolic, environmental and ecological impact. Consistent with their chosen dissemination models, students presented their work through performance, mapping and video. Cooking Sections' practice model sets an example for design research with value to policy making and promotes an artistic focus in the studio work.

ADS6 'The Deindustrial Revolution – Garden of Making' is run by Clara Kraft and Satoshi Isono of Kraft Isono, and Guan Lee of Grymsdyke Farm. Kraft Isono is a multidisciplinary film and architecture studio, whereas Grymsdyke Farm is a research facility, fabrication workshop and live-work space that was established by Guan Lee. In 2019/20, ADS6 studied the theme of deindustrialisation and students explored potential contradictions and inconsistencies of human and non-human ecologies in relation to craft and making. The projects varied in spatial, temporal and practical contexts, as did the methods of investigation, which made use of performance, field recording, 3D scans, archival material, poetry, models, prototypes, interviews and photography. All students produced animations and films as part of their studio outputs. Diversity in topics, locations, tools and methods as well as multiple iterations and rigorous use of animation brings together the multidisciplinary approach and specialisation of Kraft Isono and the research and fabrication background of Lee. Their studio focus underlines craft and making as a design research approach.

ADS9 'Aura – A Call for Open Architecture' is run by John Ng, Zsuzsa Péter and

James Kwang Ho Chung. All tutors are practicing architects and Ng also runs a multidisciplinary practice called Elsewhere. In 2019/20, ADS9 investigates architectures of openness with a particular interest in the modes of co-existence. The students' projects explored various spatial contexts and scales in which design proposals can achieve societal, political, cultural and economic impact. Students developed their work through material experimentations, spatial explorations and environmental analysis, and presented their work through web platforms, models, poetry, videos, collages and architectural drawings.

ADS11 'Already There' is run by Renaud Haerlingen and Victor Meester of Rotor with Livia Wang. Rotor is a cooperative design practice that investigates the organisation of the material environment. They have a spin-off project called Rotor DC that facilitates the reuse of construction materials by dismantling, conditioning and selling them. In 2019/20, ADS11 examined practices of deconstructing existing architectures, working with a series of sites and collaborators to develop an understanding of the methods and design possibilities deriving from dismantling and reuse. Students investigated the regeneration of Aylesbury Estate in South East London. Their various proposals involved experimenting with hyper-density, inclusive renovations and reclaiming dismantled materials. The life cycle of materials, residents survey, speculations, learning from demolition, construction and renovation processes were their tools and methods of investigation. Rotor's and Rotor DC's influence is highly present and creates a practice-based focus in the studio outputs.

Evidently, ADS3, ADS6, ADS9, ADS11 tutors have different approaches to research in architecture. ADS3 have a process-driven, artistic focus aiming impact on ecology and geopolitics. ADS6 also have a process-driven research understanding, but they prioritise craft and making through various medium. ADS9 has an output-driven research understanding with a focus on wider societal impact, whereas ADS11 has a practice-based focus with a specific interest in dismantling and reuse. However, design research is an integral part of connecting their teaching and practice in all of them. Their practice methods highly influence the studio works in terms of research topics, research methods, project development and outputs.

CONCLUSION

Over the last decade, professional practice and research and learning in architecture have become integrated. This recognised a new international understanding of research and a growing importance of design research, which has fostered interdisciplinary collaborations, new research communities and a wider societal impact. Several factors drive this transformation and can be summarised as follows:

- Expanded subject coverage and range to include design within established research frameworks.
- Expanded subject coverage and range to include design in quality-related funding from UKRI research councils.
- New validation criteria by professional bodies in support of research.
- PhD-level focus on practice-led and practice-based research projects in higher education institutions.

This study shows that practitioners that internalise design research in their teaching and practice represent a majority among tutors of postgraduate architecture design studios in London. They have either process-driven or output-driven strands of design research, they are interested in creating wider societal impact and they are highly influential. Further studies are essential to analyse how this influence and growing importance of design research transforms design practice, learning and research in architecture. One

area of research is to conceptually frame and analyse the difference of research processes, outputs and impact in practice and academia. Another is to undertake qualitative research to understand how different practitioners experience design research and the transformations it brings to industry. Therefore, following this paper, a critical reading will be undertaken within a conceptual framework and structured interviews will be conducted with practitioners to study these influences in greater detail.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This paper is produced as a part of an ongoing postdoctoral research project supervised by Dr Sam Jacoby, funded by the Scientific and Technological Research Council of Turkey (TUBITAK, grant number 1059B191801865) and undertaken at the Royal College of Art, School of Architecture in London.

REFERENCES

Archer, B. 1995. "The nature of research." *Co-Design Journal,* 2 (11): 6-13.

Cooking Sections. "Info". Accessed July 24, 2020. http://www.cooking-sections.com/

Design Council. 2015. "The Design Economy – The value of design to the UK." Accessed February 24, 2020. http://www.designcouncil.org.uk/what-we-do/design-economy

Design Council. 2018. "Designing a Future Economy: Developing design skills for productivity and innovation." Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.designcouncil.org.uk/what-we-do/research/designing-future-economy

ELIA. 2020. "Vienna Declaration on Artistic Research." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://www.elia-artschools.org/userfiles/File/customfiles/vienna-declaration-on-ar24-june-2020_20200629143821.pdf

Fraser, M. 2013. *Design Research in Architecture: an overview.* Ashgate Publishing, Ltd.

Frayling, C. 1993. "Research in art and design" *Royal College of Art Research Papers*, 1 (1).

Geiser, R. 2008. "Introduction." In *Explorations in architecture: teaching, design, research,* edited by Urs Staub and Reto Geiser, 8-11. Birkhäuser.

Grymsdyke Farm. 2014. "What is Grymsdyke Farm?" Accessed February 24, 2020. http://www.grymsdykefarm.com/index.php?/about/about-the-farm/

Joint Declaration of the European Ministers of Education convened in Bologna on 19 June 1999, http://www.ehea.info/cid100210/ministerial-conference-bologna-1999.html

Kraft Isono. "About". Accessed July 24, 2020. http://www.kraftisono.com

Lawson, B. 2002. "The subject that won't go away But perhaps we are ahead of the game. Design as research." *Arq: Architectural Research Quarterly,* 6 (2): 109-114.

RAE. 2005. "RAE2008 Guidance on Submissions." Accessed February 24, 2020. http://www.rae.ac.uk/pubs/2005/03/rae0305.pdf.

REF. 2019. "REF2019 Guidance on Submissions." Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.ref.ac.uk/media/1092/ref-2019_01-guidance-on-submissions.pdf.

Rendell, J. 2004. "Architectural research and disciplinarity." *Arq: Architectural Research Quarterly,* 8 (2): 141-147.

Rendell, J. 2013. "A Way with Words: Feminists Writing Architectural Design Research." In *Design research in architecture,* edited by Murray Fraser, 117–136. Farnham, UK: Ashgate.

RIBA. 2014a. "Architects and research-based knowledge: A literature review." Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/gathercontent/architects-and-research-based-knowledge/additional-documents/architectsandresearchbasedknowledgeliteraturereviewpdf.pdf

RIBA. 2014b. "RIBA Procedures for Validation and Validation Criteria for UK and International Courses and Examinations in Architecture" Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/GatherContent/Validation-Procedures-and-Criteria/Additional-Documents/ ValidationProcedures2011SECONDREVISION2MAY2014pdf.pdf

RIBA. 2014c. "How architects use research: Case studies from practice." Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/GatherContent/How-Architects-Use-Research/Additional-Documents/HowArchitectsUseResearch2014pdf.pdf.

RIBA. 2017. "President's Awards for Research 2016: Knowledge and Research in Practice." Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/gathercontent/knowledge-and-research-in-practice/additional-documents/knowledgeandresearchinpracticepdf.pdf

RIBA. 2018. "RIBA Education Statistics 2016/17." Accessed February 24, 2020. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/gathercontent/education-statistics/additional-documents/educationstatistics201617pdf.pdf.

RIBA. 2019. "RIBA Education Statistics 2017/18." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/GatherContent/Education-Statistics/Additional-Documents/Education-Statistics-2017-18.pdf

Robinson, J.W. 2001. "The Form and Structure of Architectural Knowledge: From Practice to Discipline." In *Discipline of Architecture*, edited by Andrzej Piotrowski and Julia Robinson, 61-82. University of Minnesota Press.

Rotor. "About us". Accessed July 24,2020. https://rotordb.org/en

Royal College of Art. 2019a. "Architecture MA Programme Specification 2019-20." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://rca-media2.rca.ac.uk/documents/Architecture_Programme_Specification_2019-20.pdf

Royal College of Art. 2019b. "MA Architecture, ADS Themes 2019/20." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://www.rca.ac.uk/schools/school-of-architecture/architecture/ads-themes-2019-20/

The Architectural Association. 2019. "Diploma Programme (MArch)." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://www.aaschool.ac.uk/academicprogrammes/diploma

Till, J. 2005. "What is architectural research. Architectural research: three myths and one model." Accessed February 24, 2020. http://www.architecture.com/Files/RIBAProfessionalServices/ResearchAndDevelopment/WhatisArchitecturalResearch.pdf.

UCL The Bartlett School of Architecture. 2019a. "Architectural Design March (B-Pro)." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://www.ucl.ac.uk/bartlett/architecture/programmes/postgraduate/march-architectural-design

UCL The Bartlett School of Architecture. 2019b. "Architecture March (ARB/RIBA Part 2)." Accessed July 23, 2020. https://www.ucl.ac.uk/bartlett/architecture/programmes/postgraduate/march-architecture

PAPER #7.08

RENEWING DESIGN PRACTICE VIA A DIACHRONIC STUDY OF TEKTON AND ARKITEKTON PRACTITIONERS

David N. Benjamin[a], Jonas Holst[b]

[a] better, Inc., Burlington, Vermont U.S.A. / Sivilarkitekt MNAL, Oslo, Norway

[b] Claustro de la Instituto Humanismo y Sociedad Universidad San Jorge, Zaragoza, Spain

ABSTRACT

The Architect Peter Clegg, of Fielden Clegg Bradley Studios remarked to me in 2006, that it is the very practice of Architecture that needs to be reformed, not just the designs, forms and materials used for construction. This paper will review opportunities for different reform processes and networks, focused on renewing and incorporating into current design/construction practices, cooperation and authentic work with construction craftspersons as co-creators in Design Participation Teams or Conservation Participation Teams. The paper will review the history of such practitioners from European history, such as the Tektons and Arkitektons and look at possible cognates in non-Western cultural histories. Historian Jonas Holst, at Universidad San Jorge has written an important introduction to these key members of the construction team in history: The *Fall of the Tektōn and The Rise of the Architect: On The Greek Origins of Architectural Craftsmanship*, published at the EAHN website: https://journal.eahn.org/articles/10.5334/ah.239/ This paper will further review current practitioners that have taken on these roles and how other Architects can work with these professionals or take on these roles/responsibilities themselves.

KEYWORDS

Participation; tekton; arkitekton; intangible heritage; sustainability.

INTRODUCTION

Despite claims, made by this conference convening committee, that a new generation of architecture students and practitioners, "….is characterized by…. an inclusive, transversal and revisionist nature," which includes, "….feminism, gender, childhood, shelter, migration, wealthy, transversality, glocality, interculturality, multiculturality…." This set of idealistic concepts seems to leave out what we propose are key members of the Design/Conservation Team (DPTs or CPTs), who deliver the built environment, such as the craftspersons performing the making of settings and artefacts. Further, the above list of concepts seems to be overly ambitious and would be difficult for most individual designers and craftsperson to fully encompass, understand, let alone take on and authentically accept. The conveners further challenge this conference and the profession to: Explore the role of the city and regain the, "….leading role that architects should have in its design.While some authors have proposed a more nuanced view of the Architect's actual and conceptual leading role,[1] we agree that the Architect (or *Architekton* in ancient Greece and in pre-Socratic Greece, or *Tektons*, sometimes

[1] See for example Foster, Hal. 2013. The Art-Architecture Complex. London: Verso. in toto and the review by Rowan Moore in The Guardian, The Art-Architecture Complex – Review. Published 16. September, 2011 accessed 27. Feb., 2020 https://www.theguardian.com/books/2011/sep/16/art-architecture-complex-foster-review

written *Tektones*), as an individual player and as representing the institution of the profession, do play relevant and helpful roles in the building professions. Architects often do work as an intermediary, multi-disciplinary 'bricoleur' and advocate for the interests of the diverse group of community stakeholders, landowners/clients, the aesthetics/beauty and environmental health and welfare of the built environment and the general stability of the planet's ecology. As one way of regaining the "leadership" role in designing cities and of maintaining the key relationship to the urban peripheries (and we would add rural regions and wildernesses), we propose to work at enabling and enquiring reflexively into the *reformulation* of the profession of architecture itself, mainly through authentic efforts at inclusivity, listening, active questioning and reflective interaction and collaboration with all the members of the DPTs and CPTs. . This includes opening up to learning and teaching in convivial and collaborative relationships with often neglected members of the profession, for example skilled crafts- and tradespersons and their associated institutions which make the physical objects from the designers' concepts.

We furthermore propose that this inclusion of all members of the construction sector, including skilled tradepersons, into the multifarious working process of architectural practice is in line with its own age-old traditions, across many different cultures, places and time periods, even up to the present. For example, many well-known Architects in ancient Greece and Rome based their know-how on the archaic arts of tectonic craftsmanship, including their conceptual-intellectual knowledge and also, the knowledge, creativity, manual dexterity, and facility with formulating buildable, repairable and common-sense constructions to further programmatic and aesthetic purposes, or to use ancient terms, their senses of *phronesis, techne*, and *ars* (the ancient term for productive making, which came to be known as our modern "art" with its more aesthetic connontations)[2]. Most of these Architektons, were first-class craftsmen themselves, who possessed a detailed hands-on knowledge of materials, their selection, prudent material combinationsand highly developed, diverse manual dexterity skills, to cut, shapeand combine materials in order to create well-wrought buildings, landscapes, infrastructures (fortifications, roads, and so on), and interior furnishings. , They also mastered over many years of *apprenticeship* and *mastery-as-practice*, the essential skills of being auto-didacts while at the same time having the humility and 'teachability' to apprentice to older experts during their early training. Many of these individuals even had their own forms of inclusivity, in their acceptance and cooperation with migrant craftspersons from other racial backgrounds, cultures and nations, such as the mobility of craftspersons between the Mycanean, ancient Greek and Levant regional cultures, which contributed to their skills mastery and their ability to organize, design and construct structures with remarkable components, such as the 100 ton lintel blocks of some Mycanean monuments (approximately 90.7 metric tonnes).[3] These crafts/design mastery *communities of practice* helped lay the foundation forthe flourishing and maintenance of new and diverse Mediterranean societies, up to, during and beyond the time of Homer, or the 8th Century, B.C. . At some point,, from approximately the middle of the 6th Century B.C. the building projects, which came to define the landscape of the Hellenic and Roman world, became so large that new leading supervisors were needed to project, oversee and orchestrate the whole enterprise. The *tektones* became

[2] See Blockley, David. Practical wisdom and why we need to value it. OUPblog. Published July 11, 2014. https://blog.oup.com/2014/07/practical-wisdom-vsi/ accessed 27. Feb., 2020.

[3] See the articles on Ancient Mediterranean Civilizations and Architecture, for ex: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mycenaean_Greece accessed 29. February, 2020 and Burkert, Walter. 1998. The Orientalizing Revolution Near Eastern Influence on the Greek Culture in the Early Archaic Age. Cambridge, MA., U.S.A.: Harvard University Press. (rev. ed) ppg. 9 – 24.

architektones, the leaders of craftspeople, the organizers of the construction works, acting as liasons to the procuring powers and socio-political hegemons financing the works and as designers of the structures.Since this rupture in ancient Greece a gap has opened up within construction sector, between designers, craftspeople and, at some point in the 19th century, engineers.

Leaving out skilled trades- and craftspeople from architectural practice and the broader DPT/CPT group of collaborators, as often happens today, thus creates anunfortunate and unnecessary rupture within architectural practic itself between designers and engineers, on the one hand, and craftspeople, on the other hand. The rupture thus seems to have contributed to a cleaving of the functional roles and status levels of the ancient Tektones into three legally defined institutionalized 'professions'. Following the ancient etymology of *Architect*, Αρχιτέκτων,[4] it could be said that the leaders become separated from the people of craft and trade, thus cleaving αρχή and *tektōn* in to two. [5] This rupture or separation often leads to delays and mistakes in the working processes and even sometimes lead to an antagonistic relationship among the members of the design and construction teams. It is not out of a nostalgic desire, or normative historicist motive, to revive ancient and historical era traditions that we bring tectonic craftsmanship into the discussion in order to 'heal' this relationship. Rather This enquiry stems from a sincere concern for architecture as a multi-faceted discipline, containing a rich variety of knowledgeable professionals working together, based also on a diversity of current practical and scholarly efforts: These include several applied scientific and artistic research efforts and work in the design research and professional practice of architecture fields.

Examples include several scientific fields actively seeking out research questions and learning from the past, as in the multi-disciplinary Climate Culture Catastropher Network ,[6] led by archaeologist Felix Riede at the University of Aarhus. Also, the cognitive sciences are highly interested in design and the human perception of environments, since much recent research into embodied and social cognition takes as a necessary component of thought and 'mind,' the physical body and especially the active body, with goals or purposes, in relationship to other thinking agents.[7] Such valorization of embodied and social cognition that enables both ethical and at the same time effective and efficient construction practices is all the more critically important now that AI and parametrically defined agent systems and robots are being used in design studios and on the building site, with obvious consequences for the loss of human employment, mistakes due to non-relevant software selection, machine 'glitches' or 'buggy' software, and possible unintended consequences, such as has already happened with a reported casualty from the interaction between an AI controlled robot and humans at a fabrication shop floor.[8]

Further examples are authors working in professional design and built environment research to learn from the past, include the knowledge of indigenous and traditional cultures which encompass oral and embodied/social learning, in addition to conventional, Western models of scientific discovery, such as the work of Rudofsky, Weber, Sayigh, Mileto, Van Beek, Oetelaar,

[4] See Holst's key review and introductory paper at the EAHN journal website: Holst, Jonas. 2017. The Fall of the Tektōn and The Rise of the Architect: On The Greek Origins of Architectural Craftsmanship. Architectural Histories 5(1). accessed 15. Feb., 2020. https://journal.eahn.org/articles/10.5334/ah.239/

[5] Architect can be written in Greek script as: Αρχιτέκτων. Architecture itself, its institutions and artefacts, thus have contained within its Greek root word: craftsmanship, as in αρχή = first and τέχνη = craftsmanship = architecture. See http://www.hellenicaworld.com/Greece/Architecture/en/GreekAncientArchitecture.html accessed 15. Feb., 2020

[6] See the website: https://c3net.au.dk/ their aim to - is to bring together an interdisciplinary team of researchers concerned with the human impacts of climate change and extreme environmental events in the past – as well as in the present and future. C3NET aims to create and catalyze a Palaeoenvironmental Humanities research, education and outreach cluster at Aarhus University and beyond.

[7] Sutton, John. 2010. Exograms and interdisciplinarity: history, the extended mind and the civilizing process. In The Extended Mind. Ed: Richard Menary. Cambridge, MA., U.S.A.: MIT Press

[8] Asimov's Laws of Robotics are often used in AI work. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laws_of_robotics accessed 2. March, 2020

Guidoni, Benjamin and many others too numerous to mention. See the References for their research.

Furthermore, Architecture as a profession and research field has now a responsibility to engage with the humanities and sciences in efforts to advance the general understanding of and production of settlement design improvement and effects on human wellbeing. This is especially relevant since the acknowledgement by the Swiss Academy of Sciences that Architecture is its own field and indeed, operates at a 'meta-level' of enquiry, contributing to the methods, approaches and therefore findings that are possible from interdisciplinary collaboration.[9]

Therefore, the research and paper question: Shall this rupture be healed, how shall this be achieved, by whom and how will the healing of this alleged rupture be promulgated and accepted by the design and craftspersons communities, within the design, construction and art curation/art criticism sectors of the global economy?

Reformulating the designer/engineer to craftsperson relationship in the construction sector in Dana Cuff's updating of her own seminal work, *Architecture: The Story of Practice,* , which offered a then current account of architectural education and practice, in 1991, she argued for reviving "fabrication at a one-to-one scale" and "community-based design-build projects" (Cuff 2014: 92-93) in order to help in reforming and making more relevant the profession itself.. Yet, what she focuses less on in her studies of architectural practice, and very few other authors do even today, is enquiring into the role which craft and craftspeople could or should play in contemporary architectural practice and the entire value-chain of built environment delivery (known in the humanities as the *chaîne opératoire*). Her own research seems to confirm the tendency which has only grown stronger during the past two or three decades: Design, especially in the design studio, but also in the academic school, is the form of education and artistic *savoir-faire*, which makes the architects into the professionals they are. There is no need to argue about that, but what could be argued is that architecture should still safeguard its own historical and cultural tradition based on tectonic craftsmanship and so resist being reduced to a mere digital design discipline without any foothold in materiality and craftsmanship.

The lack of status and valorization of buildings and landscape sector related to skilled crafts-tradespeople still seems current today.[10] Predominant are the relationships between the key construction sector actors, designers, engineers and other related sector curators of style and design significance and the currently popular efforts and policy/funding implementation mechanisms driving the virtualization and robotization of construction, leading to a world of seamless, intangible concept to physical object construction.

Instead, we argue in favor of reformulating the profession of architecture in order to encourage and enable learning, teaching and collaboration opportunities in design schools, in design to fabrication work-flows, at construction job-sites and in other relevant fora, even at design and construction conferences, symposia and certainly in the design, design management and construction literature, certainly as members of the informant cohort or 'subject' of research, if not also co-creators.

To enable this reformulation in practice and research contexts: We propose the inclusion within the fields and disciplines of Research by Design, Design by Research, general architecture research into the architecture 'profession,' architectural history and contemporary to ancient buildings archaeology: The participation and co-

[9] See Zinnstag, Jakob, et al. 2016.

[10] The authors make this claim from over 35 years of practice in professional architectural design, design research, and research and teaching efforts in design and the humanities. See also Holst's paper, noted below and cf. Jean-Paul Morel's The Craftsman, a chapter in The Romans. 1993. Ed.: Andrea Giardina. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, or concerning modern design education curricula propositions: Fern Lerner. Foundations for Design Education: Continuing the Bauhaus Vorkurs Vision. Studies in Art Education, Issues and Research. 2005. Vol. 46, no. 3, ppg 211-226.

creation in research design, research work and the development of theories, methods and research designs: The knowledge sets, skillsets, learning/teaching regimes and the auto-didactic skills of ancient-to-historical *architektones* together with today's craftspeople. This includes current individuals that the authors propose can be seen as conceptual cognates for these roles, as in current master craftspersons that are also Architects and/or engineers/architectural engineers. These individuals still exist and are active in buildings and research production and this paper will briefly report on their work as a first step to guiding research questions and research design approaches for this reformulation of the Architecture profession and the role of agency of the persons and institutional frameworks performing in these design/construction sectors.

We further propose here, preliminary and early attempts at the formulation of research approaches, including theoretical stances, methods, research designs and concrete efforts to reformulate the relationships of the above mentioned actors toward deeper and more authentic conviviality, co-creative cooperation and collaboration.

We posit, further, that these individuals, from ancient eras and through to today, can be said to have a sort of role *identity*, in their known characteristics, activities, structures and functions in society, often within the same person and in the activities of groups of these persons acting together in teams. The difficulty in describing these persons' roles and structures/functions is itself an indication of this rupture, evidenced by the pre-Socratic use of *tektōn* and the *aristoi tektones*, where manual skill, design knowledge and creativity, ethics, sense of phronesis and awareness of artistic and societal purpose for making things were often encompassed to a greater or lesser extent based on training and experience, in one and the same person.[11]

A normative research and participatory Action Research type interventional agenda. This very preliminary proposed agenda is an interdisiciplinary effort between the author's own fields and those of their collaborators over many years, including: The experiences of architectural practice (thus both auto-ethnographic and anthropological as learning from peers and craftsperson collaborators), the humanities, including history, ancient material cultures studies, archaeology and the sociology of the professions/work, Participatory Action Research as interventions with informants toward transformation and the practices of engineering and the several sciences within the broad realm of long-term cultural adaptation to systemic natural and man-made change; popularly known currently as climate change adaptation and mitigation.

The approach should start from realizing that there are several dimensions of learning, design practice and research opportunities and knowledge spheres to take account of. We propose a 'mapping' categorizing the knowledge as dimensions as follows:

1. Cartography of knowledge of the recent history and current situation of the architect-craftsperson-engineer relationship

Dimension 1: overarching categories of knowledge to be gained: geographic regions, functions of the agents and their institutions as to how they perform which types of work and effects, structural relationships between the agents and their several institutions

Dimension 2: A diachronic view of the relationship, looking to the ancient past in several different regions and cultures and, forward to enquiring into current proposals and research on the future of the work and design relationships of making settlements and landscapes

Dimension 3: What are the different forms and sources for relevant, emic and etic knowledge about this relationship(s), i.e.: what can we induce from the data/information by studying

[11] See Holst's paper in the EAHN journal, as in note iii, in toto.

specific places and sites and their detailed histories, opposed to what can we learn from generalized knowledge of this relationship that scholars have induced from informants or deduced from theory

Dimension 4: What are the interesting and relevant forms of knowledge that can be thereby deduced from these empirical examples or from thinking through thought experiments and from theories in the humanities, architecture, and other scholarship, i.e.: the forms and content of the nomothetic and idiographic knowledges, or respectively the learnings about this relationship that can lead to generalizable, more or less reproducible and broadly accepted in peer communities knowledge for use in across different cultures and in different economic sectors, as opposed to what relevant findings can we learn about particular places, occasions, buildings and their specific histories, or their long-term taphonomy

Dimension 5: What is the market pushing the built environment sector to change toward, in terms of funding agendas, policy statements and implementation regimes, educational curricula and funding mechanisms for designer education and vocational training

Dimension 6: What directions are the broadly defined construction sector pulling the designer-craftsperson relationship to do, to remain the same, to change and toward what change, as the sector itself does its own reflection and self-critique, such as the several reports of the U.K. based Royal Institute of Chartered Surveyors, building quality assessments of the Building Research Establishment Constructing Excellence platform[12] the U.S. based National Institute of Building Sciences, and many other platforms and institutes calling for and guiding change because of measured and perceived deficiencies in the design delivery mechanisms and the built products of the construction sector.

Dimension 7: Above the known unknowns. This dimension should enquire into the unknown knowns, i.e. what we do not yet know that we know, such as can be accessed through the study of ancient histories of construction and architecture; and the unknown unknowns, such as what we might discover in both looking to the past and through experiments that seek novel solutions to new construction or the conservation of the existing stock/ historic buildings and landscapes

2. Normative research and intervention proposals for devising effective and ethical applied scholarship and virtuous transformation processes for the relationship between craftspersons and designers in the broadly defined construction sector (buildings, settlement related infrastructures, etc)

Dimension 1: Engage with current craftsperson-designer cooperation initiatives to develop and record, (.i.e. ethnographic, auto-ethnographic, knowledge management and sustainable innovation methods) scholarly research and participatory Action Research methods, their current and ongoing production of findings and interpretive results - quantitative and qualitative type of knowledge and practices and both explicit reportable knowledge and tacit, embodied, social cognition types of knowledge otherwise difficult to record via conventional means

Dimension 2: Compare, contrast and critique these knowledges and practices from Dimension 1 with the published records and scholarly or design research, from ancient cultures, through historical periods through to the current era to further a triangulation of knowledge, findings and interpretations, which should furthermore

Dimension 3: based on these findings and network engagement from Dimensions 1 and 2, develop preliminary proposals, for programs to renew, repair and help in the ongoing maintenance of the craftsperson

[12] See their reports and guidances at http://constructingexcellence.org.uk/about/

– to -designer relationship, starting with a focus on projects in the realm of the built cultural heritage (both buildings and ancient-to-recent era infrastructures). The research and interventional proposals should be devised and implemented with craftspersons and designers as co-equal co-creators, in as much as possible convivial and authentically collaborative relationships.

Dimension 4: Seek new funding and engage with currently funded projects in the above programs to promote these programs' work and to devise and produce new works. Such work should include: media productions such as documentary films, audio recordings, or other media, devising, buidling and producing onsite or travelling exhibitions that explicate this research and these practices and building and conservation projects where the collaborative work relationships between the members of the CPTs/DPTs is explicitly framed as the cooperation of co-equal and co-creative partners.[13]

The current state the design/construction relationships.

There is reported in the general construction industry journals and the popular press, in addition to architectural and engineering journals, several different types and levels of change, because of a general, measured and perceived lack of both quality in the built product and a lack of cooperation, from the design studio to the building site. (Sayigh, 2019, in toto; Rahman, 2014, in toto; and RICS et al 2018, in toto). Thus, what efforts to date that the construction industry has devised and implemented have had at most marginal success but certainly has produced a great deal of learning about the possible patways for leading virtuous change, producing better quality buildings and infrastructure and helping to enable more convivial construction work sites, that are simply non-antogonistic, but rather authentically collaborative and cooperative.

The authors propose one of the viable pathways to enable better job-site work relationships and product delivery should include this reformulation of the designer to craftsperson relationship.

Two examples of interventions in the building industry-design sphere are:

1. Haus der Farbe: An NGO in Zurich Switzerland that provides a workshop space and curriculum for designers and craftspersons to work together on specific projects, such as learning about and making higher quality building finishes and color coding for buildings in Switzerland. Their color map of all the buildings in the city of Zurich was produced by human sense agents, not computers, as they found humans to be more accurate and quicker than machines.
2. The Norwegian National Cultural Heritage Conservation Academy: A second example is the work of the NNCH Conservation Academy in Norway, along with the allied Norwegian Institut for Kulturminneforskning. They have over many years produced cutting edge research and products, including restored wooden, 900 year old barns, the restoration of 800-900 year old stave churches, and modern replicas of high grade near-steel iron axes that are apparently better at cutting and shaping wood than currently market-available stainless steel axes. This is based on the research work of several metallurgists at the NTNU University and Architect Anders Haslestad at the NNCH.

The above two examples are just two of many found even in the Nordic countries. Many other examples can be found throughout Europe and to be sure, further afield in Africa, Asia, North America and the Russian/Slavic speaking worlds. The authors look forward to working with the participants of the conference to build and maintain effective networks across many cultures and territories to repair and rejuvenate this relationship.

[13] From the website on Greek Architecture, accessed 15. Feb., 2020: http://www.hellenicaworld.com/Greece/Architecture/en/GreekAncientArchitecture.html

REFERENCES

Benjamin, David. "Resources for Sustainable Architecture from Historic, Ancient, and Indigenous Knowledge," Paper presentation at the *Rethinking Sustainable Construction conference, Powell Center for Construction & Environment*, College of Design, Construction and Planning, University of Florida, in Sarasota, Florida, 19 – 22 Sep 2006.

Ibid. "Architectural heritage: A challenge to sustainable design practices and an opportunity for learning from the past," Paper presentation at *Smart and Sustainable Built Environments*, University of Delft, 16-19 June, 2009.

Binda, L. editor. 2008. *Learning from Failure Long-Term Behaviour of Heavy Masonry Structures.* Southampton, U.K.: WIT Press.

Burkert, Walter. 1992. *The Orientalizing Revolution Near Eastern Influence on Greek Culture in the Early Archaic Age*. Cambridge, MA., U.S.A.: Harvard University Press.

Butti, Ken, et al. 1980. *A Golden Thread. 2,500 Years of Solar Architecture*. Palo Alto, CA.: Cheshire Books.

Cuff, Dana. "Architecture's Undisciplined Urban Desire," *Architectural Theory Review* 19, no. 1 (2014): 92-97.

Fazey, Ioan. "Ten essentials for contributing more directly to transformational change," *Gaia* 28, no. 1 (2019): 8.

Guidoni, Enrico. 1978. *Primitive Architecture*, New York, N.Y.: Harry N. Abrams.

Holst, Jonas. 2017. "The Fall of the Tektōn and The Rise of the Architect: On The Greek Origins of Architectural Craftsmanship," *Architectural Histories* 5(1). Accessed 15. Feb., 2020. https://journal.eahn.org/articles/10.5334/ah.239/

Lerum, Vidar. 2015. *Sustainable Building Design: Learning from nineteenth Century Innovations.* Abingdon, Oxon, U.K.: Routledge.

Mileto, C. 2014. *Vernacular Architecture: Towards a Sustainable Future.* Leiden, The Netherlands: CRC Press.

Oetelaar, Taylor. "CFD Thermal environments and cultural heritage: Two case studies of Roman baths," *Proceedings of the 2016 IEEE 16th International Conference on Environmental Electrical Engineering*, 7-10, June, 2016.

Perlin, John. *Let it Shine: 2013. The 6,000 Year History of Solar Energy.* Novato, CA.: New World Library.

Protzen, Jean-Pierre. 1993. *Inca Architecture and Construction at Ollantaytombo*. Oxford, U.K.: Oxford University Press.

Rahman, S. H. A. et al. "The Importance of Collaboration in Construction Industry from Contractor's Perspectives," *Procedia Social and Behavioral Sciences* 129 (2014): 414-421.

RICS, RIBA and CIOB. 2018. *Building in Quality Joint Memorandum of Understanding.*

Rudofsky, Bernard. 1964. *Architecture Without Architects: A Short Introduction to Non-Pedigreed Architecture.* New York, N.Y.: Doubleday Publishers.

Sayigh, Ali. 2019. *Sustainable Vernacular Architecture: How the Past Can Enrich the Future.* Basel, Switzerland: Springer Nature.

Sisa, József. "Joseph Hoffer and the Study of Ancient Architecture," *Journal of the Society of Architectural Historians* 49, no. 4 (1990): 430-439.

Sutton, John. Exograms and Interdisciplinarity: History, the extended mind and the civilizing process, In *The Extended Mind,* Ed.: Richard Menary. Cambridge, MA., U.S.A.: MIT Press.

Van Beek, Gus. 2008. *Glorious Mud: Ancient and Contemporary Earthen Design* Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Scholarly Press.

Weber, Willi, et al. 2014. *Lessons from Vernacular Architecture.* Abingdon, Oxon, U.K.: Routledge.

Zinnstag, Jakob, et al. "Exemplary Transdisciplinary Projects – swiss academies award for transdisciplinary research 2015," *Gaia* 25, no. 3. (2016): 182-184. http://www.akademien-schweiz.ch/en/index/Portrait/Kommissionen-AG/td-net.html

PAPER #7.09

PLATFORM, CONTAINER, ENVIRONMENT. 2019 SHENZHEN BIENNALE AS INNOVATION IN PRACTICE

Edoardo Bruno[a], Valeria Federighi[a], Camilla Forina[a], Monica Naso[a], Michele Bonino[a]
[a] China Room, Politecnico di Torino, Turin, Italy

ABSTRACT

In a time of supra-national economic, political and social crises, the architectural profession is acknowledged as necessitating of a fundamental restructuring in order to gain both renewed relevance as a discipline (Awan, Schneider and Till 2009; Till 2014, 9-11) and sustainability as day-to-day practice (Deamer and Bernstein 2010; Deamer 2015; etc.). A tendency to diversify the products of architectural practice - i.e. beyond buildings - is facilitated by a constantly increasing number of curatorial outlets - i.e. Triennales, Biennales - allowing to increase the perceived pace of innovation (Papastergiadis and Martin 2011, 45–62).
The paper looks at the curatorial process of the 2019 Shenzhen Biennale of Architecture and Urbanism[1] as a way to access a select sample of internationally mobile contemporary practices whose work is produced at the intersection between profession, academia, and independent research. Drawing on literature pertaining to the concept of communities of practice (Amin and Roberts 2008, 353-369; Faulconbridge 2010, 2842–2858), ethnography of practice (Yaneva 2009) and feminist theory (Frichot and Runting 2015, 397-411), we question the agency of the Biennale and similar curated events as facilitating environments entailing the reconceptualization of design practice (O' Neill & Wilson 2015; Szacka 2019). In order to do so, we look at the practices that populate the exhibition, how they self-represent and how they employ the exhibition to maximize the possibility of producing innovation.
Finally, we select a small number of installations that appear the most resilient to contingencies, and analyze their trajectories outside of the Biennale in order to understand the way specific networks are built and effects are achieved, within platforms that are indeed part of day-to-day practice, rather than existing outside of it.

KEYWORDS

Innovation; practice; Biennale; container technology; contingency.

1. THE AGENCY OF PRACTICE AND THE ROLE OF EXHIBITIONS

In a time of supra-national economic, political and social crises, the architectural profession is acknowledged as necessitating of a fundamental restructuring in order to gain both renewed relevance as a discipline (Awan, Schneider and Till 2011; Till 2014) and sustainability as day-to-day practice (Deamer and Bernstein 2010; Deamer 2015). A tendency to diversify the products of architectural practice - i.e. beyond buildings - is facilitated by a constantly increasing number of curatorial outlets - i.e. Triennales, Biennales - allowing to increase the perceived pace of innovation (Papastergiadis and Martin 2011). Cultural events par *excellence*, biennials are generally studied and debated as a global phenomenon, as tools of marketing strategies adopted by cities that strive to emerge in the neoliberal system of the so-called "knowledge

[1] More specifically, we consider the practices that applied to the Open Call of the "Eyes of the City" section and were selected for the exhibition.

economy." Even though they are inextricably associated with notions of homogenization, commodification and spectacularization of contemporary cultural experiences (Urry 1995; Evans 2003; Hornstein 2011), nevertheless these exhibitionary formats are commonly considered among the best-rehearsed media of dissemination and display of disciplinary knowledge in the fields of architecture and arts (Jones 2016; Smith 2012; Vogel 2010; Martini and Martini 2011; Gardner and Green 2016).

A growing amount of literature attempts to understand the role that such outlets have had in the development of architectural discourse ever since the onset of architecture as a liberal profession through the Beaux Arts, the Modern and the Postmodern (Macleod, Hourston Hanks and Hale 2012; Szacka 2019), to name just a few key moments in which the close relationship between curatorship and practice has allowed for a stronger perception of the architect as public figure. More recently, architecture as a practice has known a decrease in public relevance; disciplinary discourse tends to mirror a growing concern with the real agency of design with respect to pressing matters of the contemporary world such as urban poverty and informality, climate change, and even the very conditions within which design and construction are carried out as practice (WBYA 2018, Deamer 2015, Brenner 2015), while architectural education is showing an "undisciplined" move towards the scale of the city (Cuff 2014) in search of renewed relevance. If we accept that exhibitions are facilitating environments entailing the reconfiguration of design practice (O' Neill and Wilson 2015; Szacka 2019), thus impacting the way that design is understood and the degree to which it can claim relevance, we must understand how exhibitions are made as a real practice. In his conceptualization, architecture historian Florian Kossak (2012, 214) uses the term "productive exhibition" to acknowledge the exhibitionary format acting as the testing ground for "new forms of the production of architecture itself" and as "a continuation and integral part of the architectural praxis [..] that has a transformative and progressive role in the development of architecture": this allows for a re-consideration of the exhibitionary format in terms of potential agency outside the "white cube" conceptual space and its well-rehearsed politics of display, as investigated today by a growing bulk of curators and scholars.[2]

The discourse around the way exhibitions impact on architectural debate most usually revolves around an epistemological approach, centering on the distance between curators' intention and effect at a critical level (O' Neill and Wilson 2015), on the way mediated messages convey a real shift in the way architectural design is practiced (MacLeod, Hourston Hanks and Hale 2012), or on the way exhibitions allow for a stronger vector of change (Pestellini Laparelli 2018, 22) and internationalization of discourse (Filipovic, van Hal and Øvstebø 2010). These perspectives rarely allow for an unpacking of the relationship between the exhibition and the real conditions within which it is produced. Drawing on Bruno Latour's understanding of the "entanglement" (1988, 1996, 2007) and subsequent ANT explorations of the relationship between sites of reality and the production of any (necessarily sociotechnical) advancement, we set out to explode the real conditions of production of a specific exhibition, in the hypothesis that such real conditions – the contingent here and now - have a stronger impact on the content of the exhibit and therefore on the way it, in turn, impacts on discourse, than has been recognized. In this perspective, the observation of UABB 2019 – Shenzhen Bi-City Biennale of Urbanism and Architecture (hereafter UABB) is employed as a way to measure the effectiveness of the notion of "entanglement" as applied to the life-scale laboratory environment of the curated

[2] Recently, an entire issue of the magazine Volume has been dedicated to the investigation of the potentials and of the roles of biennials today (See Volume #54.On Biennials).

exhibition, looking in particular to one of the two main sections of the exhibition, "Eyes of the City.

2. OUTER TRAJECTORIES

In this section, we look at the way selected practices describe themselves as participants to contemporary discourse around the redefinition of the boundaries of architectural practice, in order to assess the role that UABB has played in their innovation/deviation/reinvention/development. To do so, we employ as main sources: 1) the data on all participants that we have gathered throughout the curatorial process, 2) parallel interviews we have conducted with nine participating groups, and 3) personal exchanges and conversations held throughout the development of the work. Collected data (1) refers to the type of firms that have participated and the way they describe their practice; on various occasions, the curatorial team were asked by UABB and local authorities to give exhaustive accounts of all participants to the exhibition, in terms of individual affiliations, geographical locations as well as narratives. The nine parallel interviews (2) were structured in three main parts: the first looked in closer detail to the structure of the group, the second to its reasons for participating to the biennale and the third to the way that each proposal has evolved within it. Both (1) and (3) were collected throughout the six months of continuous interaction with participating groups, while (2) were carried out after the opening of the exhibition. Using these data on an epistemological level allows us to define some of the strategies that are consciously deployed by these practices in order to actively push perceived boundaries of the discipline and gain agency within the contemporary world.

Within the total amount of 130 teams that applied to the Eyes of the City UABB Open Call, 25 defined their structure as "research group" or "academic association". Of the remaining 105, a large part defined its activity as "freelance" or "private studio", while 17 preferred more hybrid definitions such as

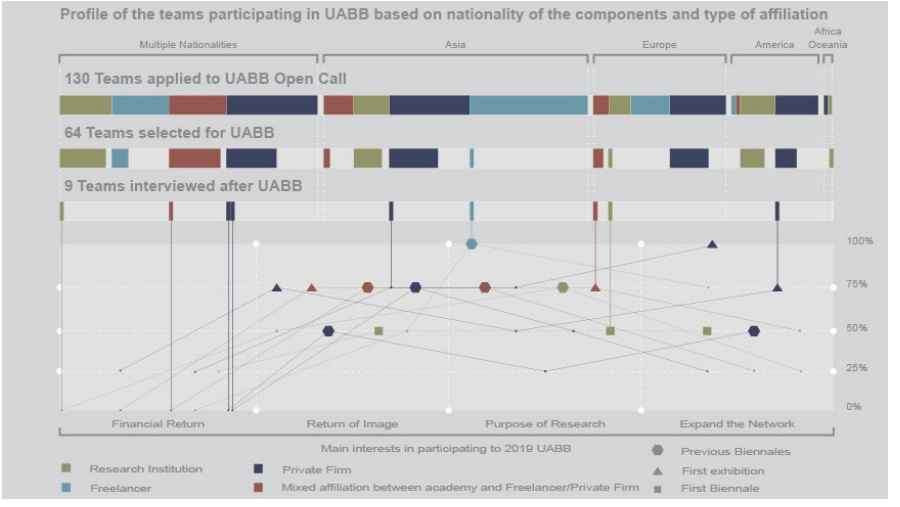


Figure 1. Tracing of the nationalities of the teams and their interests in participating within 2019 UABB – Bi-city Biennale of Urbanism/Architecture. Diagram by the authors.

"freelancer/academic", "studio/academic". Looking at the individual biographies provided by the 64 teams selected to participate, it is evident how the profile of architectural or design firm is perceived as constraining; most exhibitors show a tendency to describe their design work as other from a projection of built artifacts, towards more experimental and less tangible contents, which identify the social, interpretative and innovative role of the profession in an heterogeneous mix of multiple activities. This is
evident in the self definitions that have been provided, such as "research and media practice," "multidisciplinary design practice," "Space Lab," "platform".

While only 19% of participating groups stated an official affiliation, as group, to an academic institution, for a further 15% different affiliations explicitly coexisted as some members stated a professional affiliation to an office or private organization, while others stated an academic affiliation. Furthermore, of the 25 academic institutions involved within the UABB exhibition, 6 of them[3] participated with two or three different proposals. Some of the professional skills that were featured within participating groups were conventional ones such as architects, designer, artists and urban planners, but also extra-disciplinary ones such as "CG Artist," "Coder," "Computer Scientist," "Virtual Reality Specialist," "Software Engineer," "Aerospace Engineer," "Economic Geographer," "Actress," "Filmmaker," "Information Designer" and "Computational Designer," among others.[4] From a geographical point of view, of all participating teams, 45 have members with different nationalities, and 13 have members that currently reside and work in different cities or nations[5] .Finally, of the 64 participating groups, at least 9 were formed specifically to participate to the exhibition, across individuals and pre-existing groups.

While this sample is not wide enough to give an exhaustive restitution of the type of practices that populate architecture biennales, it is nonetheless clear that these practices, specifically, tend to structure themselves through recombinative strategies and "intercohesion" (Stark and Balàzs 2010). Contact across different cohesive groups through spatial proximity (Amin and Roberts 2008) and global mobility (Faulconbridge 2010) has been identified as the locus of innovation production; some authors argue that in order to maximize innovative potential, groups should foster "cohesion" and "connectivity" (Watts 1999; Moody and White 2003; Uzzi and Spiro 2005) as well as "closure" and "brokerage" (Burt 2005; Baum, McEvily and Rowley 2007). Building on these positions, more recently authors have proposed that communities of practice allowing for individuals to work "across" different groups show an increase in innovative activities, where "creative tensions of familiarity and diversity" are meant to "promote group performance" (Stark and Balàzs 2010, 1152).

This perspective is interesting to the degree to which the participation to a specific exhibition is not likely to be the main activity of any organised body at any time - if not in the very short term of impelling deadlines. In fact, just two of the nine interviewed groups had only low expectations of financial return, none of them had any expectation of building ties with possible clients, while they all had expectations of building ties with media, institutions and peers. Four out of nine had already participated in an international exhibition, seven out of nine had already participated in an exhibition, and all nine intend to participate in an international biennale in the future. Furthermore, nine out of nine had already been in contact with 1 to 15 other participants through a collaborative project (1), a previous exhibition (3) or a common

[3] Strelka, Massachussetts Institute of Technology, Tsinghua University, Politecnico di Torino, University of Applied Arts in Vienna, University of Innsbruck, South China University of Technology.
[4] These definitions were provided by exhibitors in the bios they submitted for the initial application and later for cultural censorship and for the catalogue publication.
[5] These data were collected by the curatorial team during the curatorial process through direct interactions with the participants, and were shown in the exhibition in the form of infographics.

network (5). In this sense, while it is clear that the construction and strengthening of weak ties (Granovetter 1973) through contact and visibility is one of the main objectives for all participants, it can also be argued that participants consciously used the exhibition as a strategy to maximize "overlappings" (Stark and Balàzs 2010) at different levels within and across communities of practice. This works at the level of organisational structures and has a direct impact on the modes of production of the project. The theme proposed by the exhibition was "partially" (6) or completely (3) in line with the team's research and work topics; significantly, in the former case, the project was a new proposal developed specifically for the exhibition, while in the latter it was an iteration of a previous project, and six of the nine groups intend to repurpose the same project for participation to another exhibition.

If we look at built installations within the exhibition as units of observation, it is clear that each installation cannot be analysed as the material effect of an abstract design idea, but needs to be read as product of an iterative process that is the result of the encounter between intercohesive practices, strategically employing the space of the exhibition as breeding ground for multiple levels of innovation, and an institutional container - UABB - in which projects go through successive rounds of modifications as the effect of a wide range of stimuli and irruptions. In this sense, UABB works as a "container" (Frichot and Runtig 2015), fostering the gradual progression of projects from world of ideas to specific, on-the-ground conditions. In the following paragraphs we look at UABB as a container for the 64 installations through a linear account of the process, and then more qualitatively at the nine installations authored by the nine groups we have interviewed.

3. CONTAINER/CONTAINED

Throughout its eight editions, since its inception in 2005, UABB has been acknowledged as one among the eleven most relevant architecture biennials worldwide.[6] Its strong impact on international discourse[7] is mainly due to its approach, the exhibition aspiring to act as a "catalyst"[8] and as a laboratory for urban transformation. UABB declares ambitions that are not limited to the display of the "state of the art" of global architectural debates: rather, the event aims at establishing a proactive transformative tension towards the issues related to hyper-urbanization processes within and around the local context of Pearl River Delta mega-region. There is a growing narrative around UABB's unconventional approach as well as the innovative charge of practices that participate in it. Despite this, UABB (as a direct emanation of the Shenzhen Urban Planning Bureau) operates within a municipal-level political scenario bound to a strong regulatory framework. As a consequence, it is necessary to take immediate distance from a narrative of epistemological correspondence between intentions and effects. Rather than linear and one-directional, the trajectory between project and built object is iterative and recursive, made of twists and turns, of constant exchanges and negotiations, as much as any work of architecture (Armando and Durbiano 2017).

In this paragraph, we look at the mechanisms of the exhibitionary institution, and at the actions that have been carried out within it by a collective of actors. In our working hypothesis, the exhibition acts as a "container" of practices: this section aims therefore at briefly unfolding the commonly intended image of the exhibition as a monolithic institution where the process involving curation as a real practice is often concealed, focusing instead

[6] https://www.archdaily.com/908891/11-architecture-biennials-to-pay-attention-to-in-2019?ad_source=search&ad_medium=search_result_all. Accessed 2020.02.10

[7] The 2017 edition of Shenzhen-Hong Kong UABB has been visited by more than 550.000 people (Source: UABB Organizing Committee. See also Volume #54 "On Biennials"). Recently, UABB has been defined by online platform Archdaily as the "The World's Most Visited Architecture Biennale" https://www.archdaily.com/930683/the-worlds-most-visited-architecture-biennale-opens-in-shenzhen?ad_source=search&ad_medium=search_result_all. Accessed 2020.02.10

[8] The term "catalyst" is commonly used by the official narrative of the event to describe the curatorial approach of UABB.

on measuring the exchanges that took place between the container and embedded practices, with the purpose of demonstrating their negotiating and incremental nature.

Our hypothesis is that there are measurable points in the collision between the ontological level of exchanges and the epistemological level of each narrated agency, and that those can be found in the progressive validation of the latter within the former.

These validations take the form of signed contracts and documents, defining how the implementation of the project has been developed. This aspect is not secondary if we want to overcome the perception of the exhibition container as simple platform, and go beyond the threshold dictated by the exhibition's communicative media to understand the mechanisms through which the exhibition works.

If each agreement remains unchanged between the parties until a new agreement is reached, as successive synchronic objects, proposals are, on the contrary, diachronic objects. In different moments of development, proposals undergo modifications prompted by exchanges with the institution that legitimizes their eventual translation into built objects. In this sense, we represent proposals as trajectories: in the exhibitors' initial intentions these would proceed linearly from acceptance to construction, but, due to

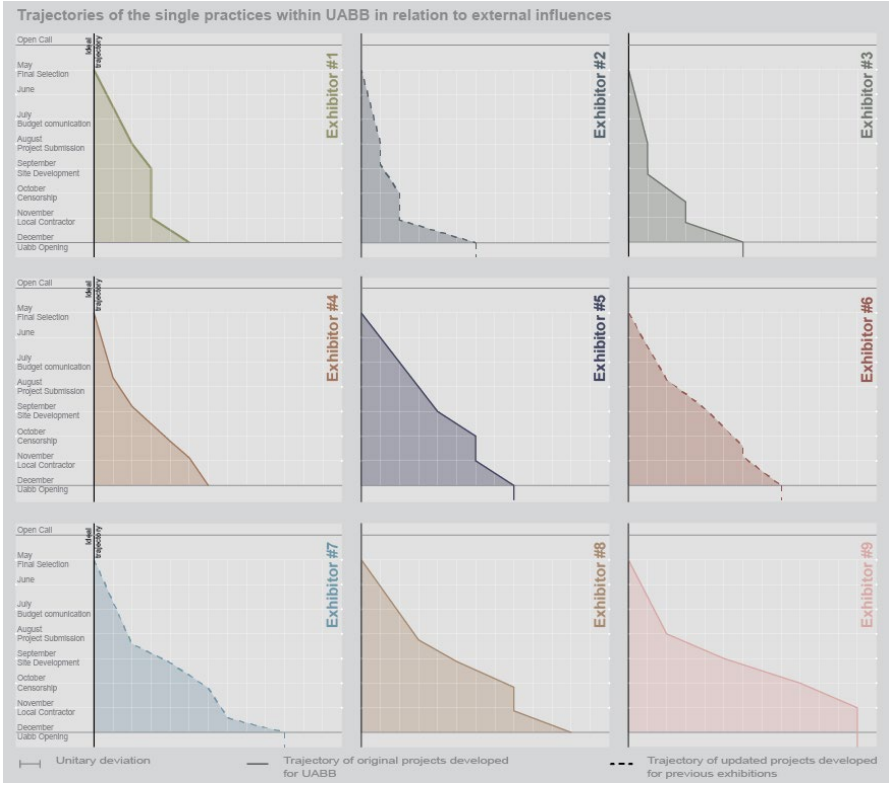


Figure 2. Tracing of the trajectories of the practices of each interviewed teams within 2019 UABB – Bi-city Biennale of Urbanism/Architecture. Diagram by the authors.

the many irruptions of the container-biennale in its many forms, they need to deviate to get to the final stage of construction.
Under this perspective, the process works as continuous exchange; each modification is neither a result of authorial intentions, nor an automatism of cause and effect, or action and reaction. Since it is capable of internalizing an enlarged vision, and carry the agency of a validating collective, we can look at it as a socio-technical and incremental process.
Also because there are no clearly stated rules that can be accepted by all parties from the start, acceptance proposals are not either accepted as-is or excluded, but are rather co-constructed through a more synergistic process, where the agency of one party overlap with the agency of the other.
This exchange was analyzed using the data derived from the parallel interviews carried out with 9 of the participant groups: these were asked to evaluate the impact of some irruptions on their proposal. Exhibitors were asked to evaluate, on a scale from 1 to 5, how much the proposal had been modified as a response to each of the following irruptions: specific budget allocation changes, contents revisions, site development, local producers requests, submissions deadlines; which, at different times along the process, influenced the proposals to varying degrees. The diagrams allow to visualize the results of the interviews and compare them (fig. 2). From these, two aspects emerge as immediate demonstrations of our hypothesis: first, that practices are not developed independently from the container, and second, that the irruptions have different impacts at different moments, depending on the specific proposal.
The first aspect points to the fact that practices consciously adapted to embed within the container. No line of the diagram is perfectly vertical; that is, no practice went through the container without having to negotiate at least some aspects of their proposal. This appeared as the only means to survive, in a continuous tension between container and contained and their opposite agencies - on the one side, the procedural and bureaucratic eagerness to get things done, on the other the need to maintain the integrity of a design intention while striving to obtain the former's legitimation.
The second aspect makes explicit that there is no generalizable relationship of causality between each irruption and its effects on proposals, as effects change from one proposal to the other and from time to time. The spatialization of this gap is a non-constant deviation between irruptions and practices' intentions. By looking at the diagrams, it can be observed that exhibitors #1, # 2 and # 3 (fig. 2.1, 2.2, 2.3) described their initial proposal as remaining more or less unchanged until it had to face site development and local contractors' feedback on feasibility. Of these three teams, two are research institutions whose proposal was the result of previously developed research work, while the third one is a renowned architecture firm. Two of them had already participated in a biennale before, and many of their components are from China. These groups likely had a clear idea from the start of the project they wanted to show in terms of conceptual narrative, and concentrated their efforts in reworking it strictly when needed, in answer to the formal requests of construction and set-up.
At the opposite end of the spectrum, exhibitors # 4, # 5 and # 6 (fig. 2.4, 2.5, 2.6) described their proposal as having consistently changed in the first phase of concept development, while being easily translated into part of the exhibition in the production phase. In this sense, their initial redefinition was deemed useful to make these proposals more resilient to formal adjustments. All these teams are small to mid-size private offices with a strong research agenda, and had previously participated in other minor exhibitions. This shows how some proposals may be innovative in their capability in discovering how containers work step by step, strengthening their perspective at each negotiated stage.

Finally, exhibitors # 7, # 8 and # 9 (fig. 2.7, 2.8, 2.9) show a definite diagonal trajectory, telling a story of constant negotiation throughout the process. These three teams had previously participated in a biennale, and defined themselves as experimental practices. Their proposals were described as having undergone the most changes, both in the initial phase of conceptual development and in the phase of development and construction. In this sense, these are the practices that have demonstrated the most willingness to adapt to contingent factors and, more generally, to the container.

These three categories are intended to define a spectrum of the possible strategies that practices employ in order to legitimize their work within an institutionalized container. To trace the complex tangle of relationships that are in place allows to redefine the narrative of an exhibition, past the interpretation of each object as a result of a curatorial intention.

4. CLOSING REMARKS

By tracing the variable trajectories of proposals, we attempt to describe how selected practices constructed their progressive legitimation and, therefore, the feasibility of their proposals, through strong conceptualizations, constructive detailing or minute negotiations.

The graphs demonstrate that there is a continuous interchange between the space of ideas and construction: within the container, the two poles converge and diverge continuously.

The irruptions of final selection, blueprints submission, cultural censorship, all had effects on the level of the symbolic values of the proposals, supporting the vision and authorial perspective of each exhibitor. Budget communication, site development, and meeting with the local contractors had effects mainly on the translation of projected symbols into physical matter. Their turnover along the route depends on the rules of the container as well as on the contingencies that can co-exist with those rules.

A description of exchanges allows the observer to define categories based on the different degrees of interaction, with the purpose of deconstructing the narrative of the "white box" toward an operative definition of "productive exhibition".

There have been proposals capable of holding firmly to their contents and having to change only to the test of reality. Others have experienced the opposite while still others have had to incrementally stake the entire proposal to be able to legitimize themselves inside the container. Under this perspective institutionalized containers should be read as negotiated spaces rather than platforms. Narratives on exhibitions focus on communicative and epistemological stances, while this paper aimed at observing how the development of projects engenders symbiotic exchanges between practices and containers. Mapping how practices deploy strategies to spatialize their ideas opens the possibility to shift scholarly attention from synchronic media objects to the diachronic procedures through which they are produced. The preliminary categorization shown in this paper is intended to point towards a possibility of measuring the relationship between the symbolic and the material, to explore practices and define the circumstances within which they work.

REFERENCES

Amin, A., Roberts, J. 2008. "Knowing in Action. Beyond Communities of Practice". *Research Policy,* 37:(2): 353-369.

Armando, A., Durbiano, G. 2017. *Teoria del progetto architettonico. Dai disegni agli effetti*. Roma: Carocci.

Awan, N., Schneider, T. and Till, J. 2011. *Spatial Agency: other ways of doing architecture*. London: Routledge.

Baum, J. A. C., McEvily, B. and Rowley, T. 2012. "Better with Age? Tie Longevity and the Performance Implications of Bridging and Closure". *Organization Science* 23:(2): 529-546

Brenner, N. 2015. "Is "Tactical Urbanism" an Alternative to Neoliberal Urbanism?". Post, March 24, 2015, https://post.at.moma.org/content_items/587-is-tactical-urbanism-an-alternative-to-neoliberal-urbanism.

Burt, R. S. 2005. *Brokerage and Closure*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Cuff, D. 2014. "Architecture's Undisciplined Urban Desire". *Architectural Theory Review*, 19:(1): 92-97.

Deamer, P. (Ed.) 2015. *The architect as worker. Immaterial labor, the Creative Class, and the Politics of Design*. London: Bloomsbury.

Deamer, P., Bernstein, P.G. (Eds.) 2010. *Building (in) the Future. Recasting Labor in Architecture*. New York: Princeton Architectural Press.

Evans, G.L. 2003. "Hard branding the culture city: from Prado to Prada". *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research,* 27:(2), 417-440.

Faulconbridge, J.R. 2010. "Global Architects: Learning and Innovation through communities and constellations of practice". *Environment and Planning A: Economy and Space*, 42:(12): 2842–2858.

Filipovic, E., van Hal, M., Øvstebø, S. (Eds.) 2010. *The Biennial Reader: An Anthology on Large-Scale Perennial Exhibitions of Contemporary Art*. Bergen: Kunsthall Bergen.

Frichot, H., Runting, H. 2015. "Welcome to the Promenade City: a Gentri-Fictional Cartography of Stockholm in the Postindustrial Age". *Architecture and Culture*, 3:(3): 397-411.

Gardner, A., Green, C. 2016. *Biennials, Triennials, and Documenta: The Exhibitions That Created Contemporary Art.* Chichester: Wiley Blackwell.

Granovetter, M. 1973. "The Strength of Weak Ties". *American Journal of Sociology,* 78:(6): 1360–80.

Greenberg, R., Ferguson, B. W., Nairne, S. (Eds.) 1996. *Thinking about exhibitions*. London: Routledge.

Hornstein, S. 2011. *Losing Site: Architecture, Memory and Place.* London: Ashgate.

Jones, C. A. 2016. *The Global Work of Art: World's Fairs, Biennials, and the Aesthetics of Experience*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Kossak, F. 2012. "Productive Exhibitions. Looking backwards to go forward". In MacLeod, S., Hourston Hanks, L., Hale, J. (Eds.) 2012. *Museum Making.Narratives, Architectures, Exhibitions*. London: Routledge, 213-222.

Latour, B. 1988. *The Pasteurization of France*. Translated by Catherine Porter. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Latour, B. 1996 *Aramis, or The Love of Technology.* Translated by Catherine Porter. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Latour, B., 2007. *Reassembling the Social: An Introduction to Actor-Network Theory*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Latour, B. 2010. *The Making of the Law: An Ethnography of the Conseil d'Etat*. Translated by Marina Brilman and Alain Pottage. Cambridge, UK: Polity.

MacLeod, S., Hourston Hanks, L. and Hale, J. (Eds.) 2012. *Museum Making. Narratives, Architectures, Exhibitions.* London: Routledge.

Martini, F., Martini, V. 2011. *Just another exhibition: Histories and Politics of Biennials.* Milano: Postmedia Books.

Moody, J. A., White, D. R. 2003. "Structural Cohesion and Embeddedness: A Hierarchical Concept of Social Groups". *American Sociological Review*, 68 (1): 103–27.

O'Neill, P., Wilson, M. (Eds.) 2015. *Curating research.* London: Open Editions.

Papastergiadis, N., Martin, M. 2011. "Art Biennales and Cities as Platforms for Global Dialogue". In Giorgi, L., Sassatelli, M., Delanty, G. (Eds.). *Festivals and the Cultural Public Sphere.* Oxford and New York: Routledge, 45–62.

Pestellini Laparelli, I. 2018. "Work in Progress: On Manifesta 2018 Interview". *Volume 54: On Biennials*, Amsterdam: Archis, 20-23.

Smith, T. 2012. *Thinking contemporary curating.* New York: Independent Curators International.

Stark, D., Balàzs, V. 2010. Structural Folds: "Generative Disruption in Overlapping Groups". *American Journal of Sociology,* 115:(4): 1150-1190.

Szacka, L.C. 2019. *Biennials/triennials: conversations on the geography of itinerant display.* New York: Columbia Books on Architecture and the City.

Till, J., 2014. "Scarcity and Agency". *Journal of Architectural Education*, 68:(1): 9-11.

Urry, J. 1995. *Consuming places.* London: Routledge.

Uzzi, B., Spiro, J. 2005. "Collaboration and Creativity: The Small World Problem". *American Journal of Sociology*, 111 (2): 447–504.

Vogel, S. B. 2010. *Biennials - Art on a Global Scale*. Vienna: Springer.

Watts, D. J. 1999. "Networks, Dynamics and the Small-World Phenomenon". *American Journal of Sociology*, 105:493–527.

Who Builds Your Architecture? (WBYA?), 2018. "Design Construction Networks". *Ardeth - Architectural Design Theory*, 3: 193-203.

PAPER #7.10

GLOCAL ARCHITECTURE AGAINST CLIMATE CHANGE: RICE STRAW IN VALENCIA

A. Quintana[a], Joan Romero[b], I. Guillén-Guillamón[a], F. A. Mendiguchia[a]
[a] Center for Physics Technologies, Polytechnic University of Valencia, Valencia, Spain
[b] Instituto Valenciano de la Edificación, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

Global warming is today a reality, and some countries are already suffering its consequences. The building industry is one of the main contributors to this effect, being responsible for around 23% of the carbon dioxide worldwide emissions. Despite this being a global problem, the already available solutions are mostly local. To tackle this situation, each country or community needs to maximize the possibilities its local resources offer sustainably. This way of thinking globally about local solutions is called glocal. This paper tries to exemplify this concept with the case of the rice fields located in the Albufera park in Valencia. After the harvest, there is a vast amount of straw that remains over the rice fields. This rice straw is typically considered a residue and ends up either burned or mixed with the soil. These management practices not only generate a considerable amount of CO_2 and CH_4 but also represent a threat to the local population and the integrity of the flora and fauna of the natural park. One possibility for avoiding the mentioned impacts is to use the straw as a raw material. This study analyzes the environmental benefits and the acoustic characteristics of prefabricated building panels containing rice straw as the primary element for building façades. The environmental results show that using the straw panels not only reduces the carbon dioxide emissions but also avoids the emissions related to the straw management practices. When it comes to the acoustic insulation, the results obtained are comparable to most common façade typologies in the Spanish construction sector.

KEYWORDS

Glocal architecture; climate change; LCA; carbon emissions; building acoustics.

INTRODUCTION

Climate change has become a priority in all aspects of human life. Since the first climate emergency declaration (Ripple, Wolf, Newsome, Barnard, & Moomaw, 2019), 25 countries and more than 1250 local governments have released their own. The effects of climate change are starting to be noticeable worldwide, and they are already causing severe damage in some impoverished countries (Climate Centre, 2018). This is just the beginning of a process that is only going to accelerate unless international measures are taken immediately. Considering the severity of the situation, industries must adapt and find ways to carry their activities without compromising present and future generations. The building sector has shown to be especially reluctant to change. Despite the relatively high amount of new materials with a low environmental impact, most new buildings tend to use conventional high-impacting options. This is the case of concrete, responsible for a large amount of the total carbon emissions in the world, as well as metal structures, glass, bricks, and many others.

Since buildings are designed to last for decades, both construction companies and costumers lean toward materials and building typologies with a proven record of reliability. There is only one solution to counteract that tendency: to prove that the new alternatives and biological products are better for the environment than the conventional options and perfectly adequate for the building sector. In many cases, bio-based building materials have better thermal properties and are healthier for the dwellers.

Materials used on a global scale like concrete or metal are not compatible with a sustainable future. The extraction of the raw materials and the processing required during the manufacturing process generates an immense amount of waste and carbon emissions. Many innovative solutions are made from biological materials. Each country or even region has a different environment with different crops and different local conditions. That is why the availability of biological raw materials changes geographically. Each region should try to find raw materials extracted in its surroundings to minimize the emissions associated with transportation. Focusing on a local scale to tackle both global and regional problems is called Glocal. This concept was coined by Akio Morita in the 1980s (Dr. Pradip Kumar Das, Mr. Pema Lama, & Tamang, 2019). Since then, it has been used for developing business models in international companies, but it has barely had any repercussions in the architecture sector. This concept could be applied in architecture to counteract the growing homogeneity both in design and in construction materials used worldwide.

Valencia, a city located on the Spanish Mediterranean coast, is well-known for the use of rice in its local cuisine. The rice used to meet the demand is mostly farmed in the southern part of the city, in an area surrounding a coastal lagoon called Albufera. The Albufera natural park, formed by the coastal lagoon and its surroundings, is considered a symbol of the local identity. Rice cultivation is an important economic activity for the city and a source of pride for its inhabitants. However, the impact over the environment this activity generates has been controversial for several decades and continues to be an unsolved problem nowadays. The conflict originates from the vast quantity of straw remaining over the fields after the harvest. In just a few weeks, the rice fields in Valencia generate between 75000 to 90000 tons of rice straw. Properly managing this quantity of straw requires an amount of machinery and workforce that the farmers are not able to afford. Because of that, straw has traditionally been burned over the fields. This practice generates not only CO2 but also NOx and Sox. As a way to avoid those impacts, the Common Agricultural Policy forced the farmers to mix the straw with the soil as a fertilizer. Although this practice might seem better, it generates an enormous quantity of CH4 due to the anaerobic decomposition of the straw. Taking everything into consideration, the only way to avoid those emissions is by turning that waste into raw material.

Using a wooden frame and compressing the straw, it is possible to create straw panels. This idea was pioneered by the company Okambuva Figure 1. This study will compare the carbon footprint and the acoustic insulation of the rice straw panel with a conventional façade typology

Figure 1. Construction process using rice straw panels.

1. GOAL

The goal of this study is to analyze the potential environmental benefits of using rice straw panels as the building façade instead of other conventional constructions. Additionally, the study assesses its airborne acoustic insulation.

− To compare the carbon emissions generated by a square meter of straw façade with a typical double-layer brick façade. The software used to create the inventory and perform the calculation is Simapro

− To analyze the influence the management of the straw has over the total impacts of a square meter of façade.

− To obtain the acoustic insulation offered by the rice straw panels and to assess if it meets the required building standards.

− To exemplify how using regional biological materials can be a way of both mitigating climate change and preserving local environments

2. METHODOLOGY

This study is structured around the comparison between rice straw panels and a double layer brick wall typology, common in the Spanish construction market. The work can be divided into two separate phases:

− Life cycle assessment: The first phase consists of performing a life cycle assessment from cradle to gate of the rice straw panels and comparing it to a conventional two-layered brick façade. The calculations and life cycle inventory are carried out using Simapro. Simapro is a software that uses reliable databases to account for all the environmental impacts generated by any human activity.

− Airborne acoustic insulation measurement: This part consists of measuring the acoustic insulation of the typologies under study in the acoustic transmission chamber. The transmission chamber consists of two rooms, an emitting room, and a receiving room, separated by the construction that is going to be tested. Pink noise is emitted from a loudspeaker in the emitting room. The sound pressure level of the pink noise is measured in both rooms to determine the acoustic pressure attenuated by the wall. The methodology follows the process described in the ISO 717-1 standard (ISO, 2013)

2.1. Typologies under study

As explained in previous sections, the main typology under study is a kind of prefabricated panel composed mainly of rice straw. The straw is compressed and held together using a wooden frame. The standard panel is designed for low rise buildings, but its wooden frame can be adapted to bear loads

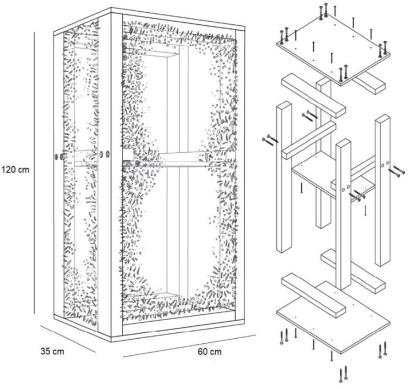


Figure 2. Straw panel dimensions and frame design SOURCE:("Okambuva," n.d.)

Material	Mass (kg)
Rice Straw	49
Clay mortar	100
Lime mortar	31.5
Pine wood	7

Table 1. Inventory for 1 m2 of rice straw wall

of higher constructions. Therefore, the structural integrity of the panel depends on the wood frame, while the compressed straw provides thermal and acoustic insulation, besides some extra rigidity. The physical characteristics of the panel are depicted in Figure 2, and the material inventory is detailed in Table 1. By covering the panels with lime mortar, the straw core and the wood frame are protected against the weather conditions, fungus, xylophagous, and other kinds of insects (Elert, Rodriguez-Navarro, Pardo, Hansen, & Cazalla, 2002).

The other typology used for the comparative study is a double layer brick wall Figure 3. This wall type is described in the Spanish Technical Building Code in its catalog of building elements (Ministerio de Fomento, 2011). The inventory of the façade is specified in Table 2.

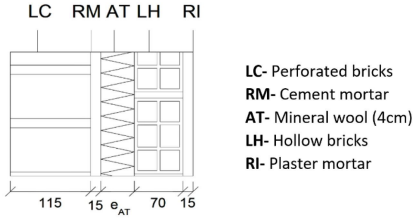


Figure 3. Double layer brick façade.

Material	Mass (kg)
Perforated brick	83.63
Hollow brick	53.33
Cement mortar	90.7
Mineral wool	5
Gypsum mortar	18

Table 2. Inventory for 1 m2 of Façade 1

3. CARBON FOOTPRINT. LIFE CYCLE ASSESSMENT

3.1. Scope definition

This study will analyze the life cycle of the straw panels from cradle to gate. All the impacts related to the building process, maintenance, and end-of-life will not be considered. In this particular study, the only environmental indicator will be the global warming potential. This indicator is measured in kg of CO_2 equivalent.

3.2. Functional Unit

The functional unit used to assess the carbon footprint is 1 m^2 of wall. The life cycle inventory for the façades is summarized in Table 1 and Table 2.

3.3. Data quality

The data used for the article come from different reliable sources. The data for developing the Life Cycle Inventory of the rice straw panels comes from direct contact with the production company("Okambuva," n.d.). The carbon emissions produced during the burning process and the process of mixing the straw with the soil were obtained from the study developed by Elena Sanchis (Sanchis Jiménez, López Jiménez, & Calvet Sanz, 2014). The data needed to create the Life Cycle Inventory of the brick wall was extracted from the Ecoinvent database V3.5 (Ecoinvent, 2016). Ecoinvent is a not-for-profit organization founded by institutes of the ETH Domain and the Swiss Federal Offices. This database collects highly reliable information due to its peer-review process (Pascual-González, Guillén-Gosálbez, Mateo-Sanz, & Jiménez-Esteller, 2016).

3.4. Life cycle scenarios for the rice straw panels

The study will compare the carbon emissions that are avoided depending on the waste management practices. The different possibilities will be divided into three scenarios:

– Base case scenario (BCScenario): The influence of the management of the straw is not considered in this scenario. It accounts for the impacts generated during the recollection of the straw, the transportation, the manufacturing of the panels. The rest of the raw materials are also considered.

– Avoiding burning scenario (ABScenario): This scenario accounts for all the processes considered in the base case and subtracts the greenhouse gases produced during the burning of the straw. This scenario shows how much CO_2 equivalent could be avoided per square meter of rice straw façade used in case the straw were going to be burned.

– Avoiding mixing with the soil scenario (AMScenario): In a similar way as the previous one, this scenario considers all the impacts in the base case scenario and subtracts the greenhouse gases generated when mixing the straw with agricultural soil after the harvest. This scenario accounts for how much the emissions can be reduced by using one square meter of rice straw panel in case the straw were to be mixed the soil.

3.5. Carbon footprint results

The carbon emissions generated are depicted in Figure 4.

The results obtained, Figure 4, clearly show a big difference between the impacts generated

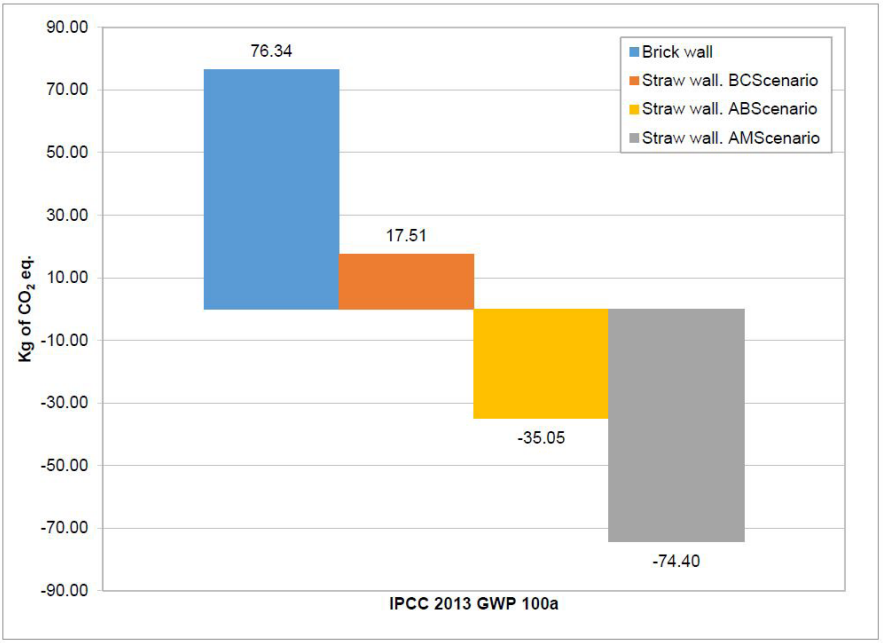


Figure 4. IPCC Global Warming Potential.

by the Brick wall and the impacts generated by each one of the three straw wall scenarios. When comparing the Brick wall to the less favorable straw wall scenario, the BCScenario, the straw wall reduces 76.3 % of the impacts generated by the brick façade. It is, therefore, safe to say that the straw wall façade reduces the impact over the environment in comparison to the brick façade studied.

The comparison between the results of the three different building façade scenarios illustrates clearly how the different management practices of the rice straw affect the environment. Looking at the ABScenario, it can be seen that by manufacturing 1 m^2 of rice straw wall and preventing the burning of the amount of straw contained in it, the emission of 35.05 kg of CO_2 equivalent is avoided. The results obtained in the AMScenario show that preventing the mixing of the straw with the soil by manufacturing straw wall panels avoids the emission of 74.4 kg of CO_2 equivalent.

4. ACOUSTIC PERFORMANCE

A straw wall has been built at the acoustic lab of the Polytechnic University of Valencia to assess the acoustic insulation of the straw wall panels. The preliminary results show that the acoustic insulation of the rice straw wall is adequate as a building façade. As said in previous sections, the acoustic measurements have been performed according to the ISO 717-1 standard (ISO, 2013). The equipment used to perform the acoustic measurements is detailed in Table 3. The comparative preliminary results of the straw wall insulation are shown in Table 4.

Device	Company	Model number	Serial number
Building acoustics analyzer	Brüel & Kjäer	4418	1086424
Spectrum analyzer	Brüel & Kjäer	2148	1701550
		7667	1819863
Microphones	Brüel & Kjäer	4416	1776748
			1776646
2 rotating microphone stands	Brüel & Kjäer	3923	1877571
			1877572
Sound source	Brüel & Kjäer	4224	1148210
Pistonphone	Brüel & Kjäer	4220	1404458

Table 3. Equipment used for the acoustic measurements

	$R_{,w}$ (C; C_{tr})
Brick wall	49 (-1, -2) dB
Rice straw wall	47 (-2, -7) dB

Table 4. Weighted sound reduction index of the typologies under study.

As can be seen in table 4, the sound reduction index Rw of the rice straw wall is 2 decibels lower than the one obtained with the brick wall. Two walls separated apart by two decibels could be considered as equivalent, regarding the fact that the human auditory system can only notice differences in sound pressure level of at least 3 decibels.

5. DISCUSSION

After obtaining the carbon footprint and the acoustic results, it is possible to consider the use of rice straw panels as an alternative to other more conventional solutions. This study has been developed to exemplify how architecture, and the building sector can take part in solving local and global problems. Manufacturing and using the rice straw panels not only avoids the emission of between 35.05 and 74.4 kg of CO2 equivalent but also tackles a very controversial local problem. As explained in the first section of this study, there is a complicated relationship between the local ecosystems, rice cultivation, and the city of Valencia. The impact the management of rice straw has in the area goes beyond the carbon emissions. The burning of the rice straw releases chemical compounds into the air that harm human health. Depending on the direction of the wind during the burning, a big cloud of smoke can cover part of the city, having an impact on the local population. In the case of mixing the straw with the soil as a fertilizer, the methane emissions generated are not the only problem either, since the rice straw fields are connected to the Albufera wetland. The incorporation of the straw has a direct effect on the coastal lagoon, producing an effect known as eutrophication. Eutrophication refers to the excessive growth of algae produced by high levels of nutrients and minerals in the water. Eutrophication is one of the most common problems in lakes, lagoons, and rivers in Spain, and it is responsible for flora, and fauna depletion (Cobelas, Olmo, & Ruiz, 1992). This effect, combined with other environmental problems threatening the Albufera natural park,
has put the local ecosystem in extreme danger(Lloret, Marín, & Marín-Guirao, 2008) (del Barrio Fernández, Gómez, Alba, Díaz, & Revilla Cortezón, 2012).
Problems such as this one affect many countries and regions all over the world. The building industry, as one of the most impacting production sectors, must take responsibility and try to help in solving, or at least mitigate those situations. Fortunately, the use of biological products not only is favorable environmentally wise but also, it usually provides good thermal insulation, which has a positive effect on the entire life cycle of buildings. Besides, using these kinds of local materials raises awareness in the general population. It is a way to get local people involved in their environment. Taking everything into consideration, designing buildings with a glocal idea is a perfect way for architecture to be part of the solution to both climate change and to many problems that affect local communities and ecosystems everywhere.

CONCLUSIONS

After the completion of this study, several conclusions can be drawn:
– Using straw panels as a building façade reduces 76.3% the environmental footprint compared to a typical double-layer brick façade
– Considering that the two likely scenarios for the rice straw are either burning or mixing with the soil, it can be stated that using the straw to build façade panels avoids the emission of carbon dioxide. When the straw is burned, manufacturing a square meter of rice straw panel avoids 35.05 kg of CO2 equivalent. If mixing the straw with the soil is the considered scenario, the straw panels avoid the emission of 74.4 kg of CO2 equivalent

per square meter. The preliminary acoustic measurements show that the rice straw panels provide adequate acoustic insulation to be used as a building façade. The acoustic insulation is comparable to the ones obtained with the other commonly used façades in the Spanish context.
– The results obtained so far indicate that building using rice straw panels as the building envelope is a perfect alternative in the Valencian context.
– Glocal architecture is the best way for the building sector to take responsibility by mitigating climate change and contributing to bring back local ecosystems to a healthy state.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This study is self-funded by the center of physics technologies of the polytechnical university of Valencia. The materials used for setting up the laboratory measurements were provided be company Okambuva.

REFERENCES

Climate Centre. (2018). UN: Sahel region one of the most vulnerable to climate change. Retrieved September 16, 2019, from https://www.climatecentre.org/news/1066/un-sahel-region-one-of-the-most-vulnerable-to-climate-change

Cobelas, M. A., Olmo, A. R., & Ruiz, P. M. (1992). "Eutrophication in spanish freswater ecosystems." *Limnetica*.

del Barrio Fernández, P., Gómez, A. G., Alba, J. G., Díaz, C. álvarez, & Revilla Cortezón, J. A. (2012). "A model for describing the eutrophication in a heavily regulated coastal lagoon. Application to the Albufera of Valencia (Spain)." *Journal of Environmental Management*. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jenvman.2012.08.019

Dr. Pradip Kumar Das, Mr. Pema Lama, & Tamang, R. (2019). *An introduction to international business management*.

Ecoinvent. (2016). Database V3.3. Retrieved April 4, 2017, from http://www.ecoinvent.org/

Elert, K., Rodriguez-Navarro, C., Pardo, E. S., Hansen, E., & Cazalla, O. (2002). "Lime mortars for the conservation of historic buildings." *Studies in Conservation*. https://doi.org/10.1179/sic.2002.47.1.62

ISO. (2013). 717-1 Acoustics - Rating of sound insulation in buildings and of building elements -- Part 1: Airborne sound insulation. *Standards*.

Lloret, J., Marín, A., & Marín-Guirao, L. (2008). Is coastal lagoon eutrophication likely to be aggravated by global climate change? *Estuarine, Coastal and Shelf Science*. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.ecss.2008.01.003

Ministerio de Fomento. (2011). Catálogo de Elementos Constructivos del CTE. *Secretaría de Estado de Vivienda y Actuaciones Urbanas,* 3, v2.1. Retrieved from http://itec.cat/cec/

Okambuva. (n.d.). Retrieved from https://www.okambuva.coop/

Pascual-González, J., Guillén-Gosálbez, G., Mateo-Sanz, J. M., & Jiménez-Esteller, L. (2016). "Statistical analysis of the ecoinvent database to uncover relationships between life cycle impact assessment metrics." *Journal of Cleaner Production,* 112, 359–368. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jclepro.2015.05.129

Ripple, W. J., Wolf, C., Newsome, T. M., Barnard, P., & Moomaw, W. R. (2019). *World Scientists' Warning of a Climate Emergency. BioScience*. https://doi.org/10.1093/biosci/biz088

Sanchis Jiménez, E., López Jiménez, P. A. (directora), & Calvet Sanz, S. (codirector). (2014). *Emisiones De Gases En El Cultivo Del Arroz: Efecto De La Gestión De La Paja* (Universidad Politécnica de Valencia). Retrieved from http://hdl.handle.net/10251/47780

PAPER #7.11

TRANSFERRING VISUAL METHODS FROM DESIGN TO SOCIAL SCIENCE TO ADVANCE BUILT ENVIRONMENT RESEARCH

Caryn Brause[a]
[a]University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, MA, USA

ABSTRACT

Designers are well positioned to transfer visual methods from design-focused prospective sensemaking activities to qualitative social science methods in order to deepen translational research efforts. This paper contributes to the discussion regarding methods designers can employ to strengthen hypothesis building when working with qualitative data by demonstrating the use of visual tools available in Computer Assisted Qualitative Data Analysis (CAQDAS) software. The paper outlines steps in the initial analysis process for a research project investigating the relationship between collaborative professional practices and design outcomes. The pilot data were analyzed in MAXQDA to conduct thematic analysis with codes developed inductively and added to a deductive organizing framework. The Visual Tools, including MaxMaps and the Code Matrix Browser, were employed to build visualizations that identified emerging thematic relationships, and to develop and refine hypotheses. This paper argues that visual tools available in CAQDAS software position designers to build on their disciplinary expertise to more meaningfully contribute to research methods that seek to improve the built environment.

KEYWORDS

Qualitative data analysis; CAQDAS; visual tools; architecture; collaborative practice.

INTRODUCTION

There have long been calls for qualitative researchers to create more systematic and powerful displays of qualitative data (Miles and Huberman 1994). However, since many qualitative researchers are not trained in the visualization and pattern-synthesizing methods central to "designerly ways of knowing" (Cross 1982), there are few examples in the social science literature to help researchers understand how to employ the visual tools found in Computer Assisted Qualitative Data Analysis (CAQDAS) software to do so. Designers are well positioned to advance this literature by demonstrating how to transfer visual methods from design-focused prospective sensemaking activities to qualitative social science methods. This paper demonstrates the use of visual tools available in CAQDAS software by outlining steps in the initial analysis process for a research project investigating the relationship between collaborative professional practices and design outcomes. The pilot data were analyzed in MAXQDA to conduct thematic analysis with codes developed inductively and added to a deductive organizing framework. The Visual Tools, including MaxMaps and the Code Matrix Browser, were extensively employed to build visualizations which identified emerging thematic relationships, and to ultimately develop and refine hypotheses. These led to a sharpened focus on the participants' expressed drives towards quality, innovation, and experimentation in their work as well as the varied methods, strategies, and structures they exercised to

achieve these objectives. By employing visual techniques, previous assumptions about the original research questions were challenged and new refined research questions were developed for future phases of work.

1.BACKGROUND

1.1. Qualitative Social Science Methods in Built Environment Research

Many methods drawn from social science research can contribute to the exploration of essential architectural research questions. As outlined by the AIA in their 2019-2020 Research Agenda, these questions cut across individual, building, and societal scales of action. Qualitative social science methods may be particularly useful to explore architectural agendas that concern the many areas of human behavior, relationships among project agents, and understanding the role of design, community engagement, and culture to improve equity and quality of life ("AIA Research Agenda 2019 and 2020" 2019). Qualitative methods are particularly well suited to address research problems in which the variables are not well defined and when the literature does not yield sufficient information about the phenomenon of study (Creswell 2012). Because data are usually collected in naturalistic settings, qualitative methods possess many strengths for built environment inquiry, including their identification of contextual factors as they relate to the phenomenon of interest, and their responsivity to local contexts and stakeholders' needs. These aspects stand in contrast to quantitative studies, in which the researcher may miss out on important data because the focus is on theory or hypothesis testing rather than on theory or hypothesis generation (Johnson and Onwuegbuzie 2004).

1.2. Qualitative Data Collection and Analysis

Qualitative data collection methods take many forms, including interviewing, observations gathered in the field, reviewing texts, documents and records, and gathering audio visual materials and objects. These data collection strategies produce a wealth of data but not all of it may be significant to the research question. In order to identify and focus on the data that is most meaningful, qualitative researchers engage in cycles of analysis to search for patterns in the data and for concepts that explain why those patterns are present (Bernard and Ryan 2010). Miles and Huberman (1994) provide one way to visualize this process by describing qualitative data analysis as phases of data collection, data reduction, data display, and conclusion drawing and verification. (Figure 1)

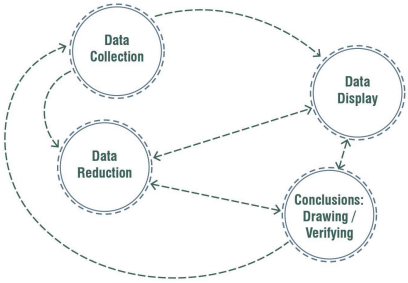


Figure 1. Components of Data Analysis.

In their systematic framework, data reduction refers to the process of "selecting, focusing, simplifying, abstracting, and transforming" raw data and occurs continuously throughout the life of any qualitatively-oriented project. It may take forms ranging from initial sampling decisions to data coding, identifying themes, and writing up project summaries. In this model, data reduction is not separate from analysis; it is a "form of analysis that sharpens, sorts, focuses, discards, and organizes data in such a way that 'final' conclusions can be drawn and verified" (Miles and Huberman

1984, 10-11). Data display, the organizing and assembling of information that permits conclusion drawing is, likewise, a central part of the analysis process. Since qualitative data often comprise large volumes of text that are hard to cognitively process, it becomes essential to find methods so that researchers can visualize the data, begin to draw conclusions, and then verify their findings.

1.3. Visual Tools in Computer Assisted Qualitative Data Analysis (CAQDAS)

Over the last forty years, Computer Assisted Qualitative Data Analysis (CAQDAS) software packages have been developed to assist with a wide range of tasks associated with taking a qualitative approach to qualitative data (Wolski 2018). These special purpose database management programs provide tools to expedite the practical aspects of qualitative research project work including content searching, linking, coding, querying, writing, annotating, mapping and networking. Silver and Lewins (2014) diagram the main overarching qualitative tasks as integrating, organizing, exploring, interpreting and interrogating data, and they outline how these tasks are supported by CAQDAS software in order to build explanations or theories, or to enlarge on a theory.

One practical aspect of this project work is creating and visualizing connections to understand and to communicate relationships, patterns, processes, and ideas as they are observed in the data (Silver and Lewins 2014). CAQDAS packages increasingly include advanced mapping or networking tools which accelerate the visualization of these connections. For projects based on deductive analytic frameworks, these tools can be used to graphically represent hypotheses or theoretical models from the project outset. For projects employing inductive, bottom-up approaches, these tools may be instrumental for generating and representing developing theories and explanations, as will be demonstrated in the Study Example.

The next section will demonstrate the use of a select group of visual analysis tools found in the CAQDAS package MAXQDA (Kuckartz 2018). In particular, the MAXMaps tools, available in the Visual Tools panel, build on Miles and Huberman's (1994) suggestion to create more systematic and powerful displays of qualitative data (Kuckartz and Rädiker 2019). While visualizations are valuable both in the analytic process and for communicating results, the Study Example focuses on data-based representations that visually represent relationships during data analysis to advance hypothesis building.

2. STUDY EXAMPLE: VOICES FROM THE FIELD

The use of QDA visual tools will be demonstrated by discussing the initial process and findings from a research project, Voices from the Field: Impact of Collaborative Practices on Design in Nordic Countries, investigating the relationship between collaborative professional practices and design outcomes. The data were analyzed in MAXQDA to conduct thematic analysis with codes developed inductively and added to a deductive organizing framework. The Visual Tools were used at regular intervals to visualize emerging thematic connections and, as the project progressed, to develop and refine hypotheses.

2.1. Research Design

The data for this project were generated as part of a constructivist interview study (Charmaz 2014). The study design aimed to capture the perspectives of participants and focuses on how these different viewpoints can contribute to an understanding of the larger phenomenon under study—the relationship between collaborative professional practices and design outcomes in the Finnish practice context. When gathering data on differing values, understandings, and experiences,

interviews are an appropriate method for gaining insight into how different participants construct meaning from their shared experiences (Kvale and Brinkmann 2008). Research questions structuring the project included: Who are the participants' most influential collaborators and how do these collaborators contribute to enhancing the quality of their work? How and why do these design professionals collaborate? What value does collaboration hold for them in achieving their design objectives? What challenges do they encounter in the collaborative process? And, in what ways does the Finnish context contribute to these phenomenon?

2.2. Data Set

Theory or concept sampling was used to identify participants for this study in order to select information-rich cases to contribute to understanding the central phenomenon under study (Patton 1990). Recruitment took place in advance of data collection through introductions to firms by an academic colleague in Finland. The four selected firms had received acclaim for their public design projects, as measured by winning significant peer reviewed public competitions and design awards. However, the selected firms are each at a different stage of development, are different sizes, and conduct work in different markets, providing a range of perspectives.
A semi-structured IRB-approved interview protocol was employed during the fieldwork (Patton 1990). Interviewees understood that the research concerned the role of collaboration in contemporary design practice and that one purpose of the visit was to understand more about their practices and the Finnish practice environment. Interviewees were sent a set of standard questions in advance, which were used as a framework for the interview combined with knowledge about their specific projects that had been researched in advance. The conversation was free-flowing; questions were not necessarily followed in a particular order though the overarching questions regarding the role of collaboration in their work and the most influential agents in these collaborations were asked of each participant.

2.3. Data Analysis

Interviews were digitally recorded, transcribed verbatim by a transcription service, and checked for accuracy during coding. The data were analyzed by importing transcripts into MAXQDA to conduct thematic analysis. Only text was coded; non-verbal interactions were excluded. The transcripts contain free-flowing text, which is delineated by turns at talk. The unit of analysis is a chunk based on an "idea unit;" chunks are coded based on where a single idea starts and ends (Kurasaki 2000).
Codes were developed inductively combined with a deductive organizing framework, which was employed to develop the start list (Bradley, Curry, and Devers 2007). The preliminary codes were drawn from existing literature, the author's previous research on this topic, and practical experience in the field. These deductive codes concern the primary agents with whom architects collaborate including other architects, consultants, clients, manufacturers, fabricators, and contractors. The initial deductive codes also included methods and strategies for realizing built work including contracts, project structures, and collaborative behaviors. Additionally, as the transcripts were analyzed, codes were created that captured themes related to the particular culture of the architecture, engineering, construction, owner (AECO) industry in Finland. These were used to highlight similarities and differences from the US context. These initial general codes were sorted according to whether they described the Finnish academic, practice, or cultural contexts. At different stages of the process, the Key Words in Context (KWIC) tool was employed to test additional codes as the meaning and context of the words in use drew attention to some important themes, among them *Quality, Competitions, and Innovate/*

Experiment (Wutich and Gravlee 2010). Key words were coded for the sentence before and after in order to provide context.

2.4. Identifying Themes through Visualizations

A detailed coding of the first interview was conducted to begin this analysis in the sample study. One of the most common methods for identifying themes in early stages of analysis is identifying repetitions within and across narratives (Bernard and Ryan 2010; Weston et al. 2001). While open coding the first narrative, repetitions were identified and a grounded approach was used to note the emergence of new themes (Markovic 2006; Strauss and Corbin 1990).

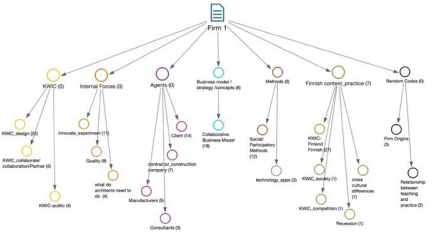


Figure 2. Single-Case Model with Code Hierarchy for Sample Study Firm 1 with modifications by the author for clarity

While researchers can build data visualizations in a freehand and additive manner, MAXMaps provides nine built-in model templates useful for initiating visual analysis. The Single-Case Model and the Single-Case Model with Code Hierarchy templates show which codes have been assigned to the document and their frequency can be expressed through symbol size, line weights, and numbers in order to quickly assess the document's content (Figure 2).

More useful for advancing inductive analysis is the Code Co-occurrence Model template, which focuses on intersections among a grouping of codes. Documents and codes are

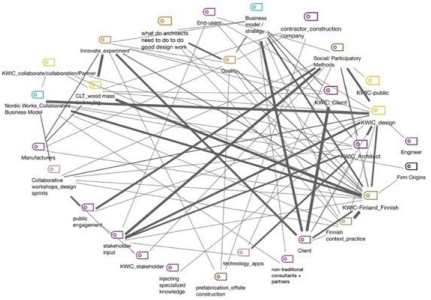


Figure 3. Co-Occurrence Model for Firm 1 as generated by the software. The Code Co-Occurrence model is useful for discovering interrelationships among codes but requires analysis and design agency to make meaning from the data

selected for inclusion in the model by activating them prior to creating the map. A minimum number of co-occurrences can be selected to focus on the most important relationships. These relationships can be amplified by setting the line width and code symbol size to register the frequency of overlaps. Within the model, the code frequencies can also be expressed numerically. In the Sample Study, the Code Co-occurrence Model was employed to render connections in the data visible. During the first coding process, the author identified a set of themes concerning the business, technological and social/ participatory methods the interviewee employed to collaborate. Another grouping of codes was

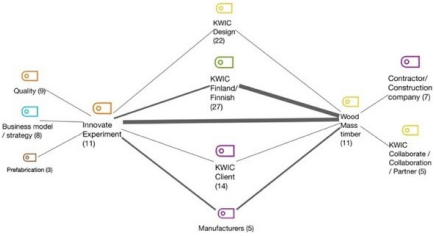


Figure 4. Focused Code Co-occurrence model exploring the codes Innovate/Experiment and Wood/ Mass Timber

identified that concerned the interviewee's understanding of the phenomena of engaging in fruitful collaborations and achieving positive design outcomes.

Building hypotheses by employing relational visual maps is an iterative process. If a large selection of codes are initially activated, the map generated by the algorithm provides a dense and often unwieldly web of code interrelationships (Figure 3). One strategy is to build simpler maps containing fewer codes in order to confirm the relationship among themes. For example, a focused Code Co-occurrence model (Figure 4) looking at the strength of the relationship between the codes "Innovate/Experiment" and "Wood/ Mass Timber" confirmed the author's hunch that when the first interviewee discussed Innovation and Experimentation, they also frequently discussed the role of Mass Timber in their work and referenced the importance of design, the Finnish context in which they operate, and their relationships with clients and manufacturers. Iteratively studying smaller confirmatory clusters is an analytic action focused on data reduction which can, as more complex maps are constructed, help to eliminate non-productive codes.

This visual analytic process simultaneously balances data reduction and data display. If too many codes are activated, the relationships can be overwhelming and not conducive to theory-building; if too few codes are activated, the webs are not sufficiently thick and important relationships may be missed. Organizing the codes into clusters and clarifying their interrelationships requires actively engaging the software and making analytic decisions when rearranging the elements in the workspace. Once the selectively edited codes are organized into areas of interest, the attendant graphic and thematic hierarchy can contribute to more complex, yet orderly, exploratory maps. In the Study Example, an iterative process building maps of increasing clarity identified salient thematic patterns among the coding clusters (Figure 5). These central tendencies were each explored further in new maps as additional transcripts were coded.

The next step involved exploring clusters of codes by exposing the underlying text. Revealing the text provided an opportunity to engage in further analytic techniques akin to a software-supported version of traditional manual cutting and sorting methods (Bernard and Ryan 2010). This step enables researchers to rule out concepts that might look similar due to code co-occurrence, but are not actually quite as related once the associated full text is visible; the ensuing code clarification can prompt revision of inclusion and exclusion criteria. Further, the process of analyzing the text associated with the linked nodes made apparent some repeating key words from the Study Example transcripts. These discoveries activated a new round of analysis employing the Key Word in Context (KWIC) technique in which, supported by the software, additional text units were coded and then added to the model. The initial codebook was further refined and a revised visual map was constructed to establish relationships among the major themes. (Figure 6) After reaching conceptual exhaustion from coding this first interview, themes from the first interview produced a series of hypotheses, which were then tested, modified, confirmed, and expanded in subsequent interviews (Markovic 2006).

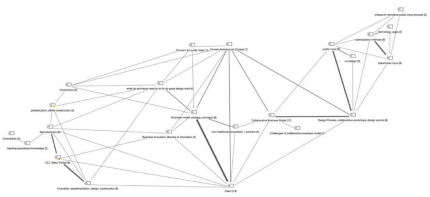


Figure 5. Revised Co-Occurrence Model for Firm to spatialize code clusters and identify areas of theoretical interest.

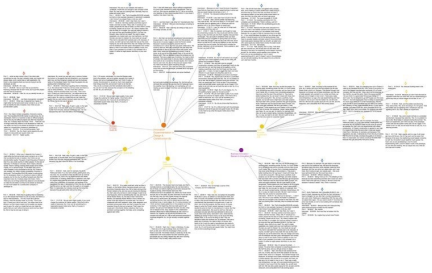


Figure 6. Co-Occurrence Model with Select Text Clusters Exposed

2.5. Visualizing Systematic Comparisons

One method for analyzing narratives that can produce a high number of themes early in the analysis process is looking for similarities and difference within and across narratives (Bernard and Ryan 2010). Searching for similarities and differences by making systematic comparisons across units of data brings a focus on the data itself and is a way to bypass the researcher's assumptions (Strauss and Corbin 1990). In this Sample Study, interviews continued to be coded in the order that the firms were interviewed. After open coding each narrative, MAXMaps and the Code Matrix Browser were employed to compare the themes among the interviews.

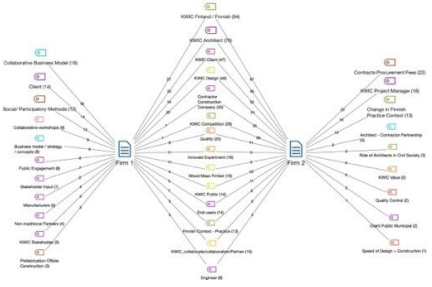


Figure 7. Two-Cases Model exploring similarities and differences in the first two transcripts.

The Two-Cases Model is particularly useful for visualizing relationships among two documents as it quickly demonstrates the strength of overlaps and renders codes spatially so that outlying codes are easy to identify due to position. In the Study Example, this exercise showed the growing importance of the codes for *Quality, Wood, Competitions, and End-Users* but it also made clear that while the first interviewee spoke extensively about their innovations in collaborative business strategies to achieve their design goals, the second interviewee focused on the importance of setting up contracts and procurement strategies that would support their design objectives. (Figure 7) The similarities and differences discovered prompted further refinement and reorganization of the Codebook. As more transcripts are coded, the Code Matrix Browser provides a graphic and numeric assessment of which codes have been assigned, how frequently, and in which documents. Though it is more difficult with the Code Matrix Browser to directly interact with the underlying data, these visual representations of code distributions help to identify patterns, as well as exceptional cases, and can thus serve as a useful validation technique.

2.6. Building Hypotheses

Once the data set is fully coded, individual codes and code relationships can be explored in a more focused fashion by building maps to investigate specific codes of interest. Exploring their code co-occurrences graphically can play an integral role in hypothesis generation. In the Study Example, a quote from an interviewee concerning the importance of wood in public architecture sparked an exploration of the associated invivo code. Mapping the code co-occurrence for key words associated with wood architecture, such as CLT, mass timber, and log, enabled a consideration of the interwovenness of technical methods with a building material that carries meaning

in the Finnish culture, building traditions, and contemporary economy. Another exploration concerned a central tendency of the narratives—that *Quality* and *Innovation* come from direct participation and involvement with the *End Users*. The relationship between *End-Users* and *Innovation* was investigated by building a visual map exploring code co-occurrences. When generating maps to advance theory building, it may be helpful to first set up binary relationships before making more complex maps. While earlier iterations considering a three-way exploration of the codes *End-Users, Innovation*, and *Quality* proved difficult to read, a map looking at the expressed relationship between *End Users* and *Innovation* provided more clarity.

3. DISCUSSION

While qualitative researchers have called for a greater role for visualization in conducting empirical research (Ravasi 2017) and have urged a more inventive and iterative stance towards their generation and use (Miles and Huberman 1994,11), there are few resources to help researchers bridge the gap between the instructions found in software manuals and the path to useful data visualizations. This paper contributes to the literature by providing an outline of strategies to iteratively use visual tools for codebook development and theory building. These strategies may be particularly helpful for qualitative studies situated on the exploratory end of the exploratory-confirmatory spectrum (Wutich and Gravlee 2010). Employing visual maps as a central feature in the ongoing "materialization of cognitive work" (Stigliani and Ravasi 2012) challenged previous assumptions about the research question and enabled development of more focused research questions for future study phases. As described in the Study Example process, the strategies suggests a refinement of Miles and Huberman's diagram of the Components of Data Analysis (Figure 1). The robust and interactive visual tools available in the CAQDAS software now support a process to bring data reduction and data display into a much tighter and more iterative relationship than suggested by the organization of components depicted in the original diagram.

Visual modes of representing, thinking and communicating may pose a challenge to qualitative researchers who generally prioritize linguistic and text-based data in their work. However, the centrality of visual materials in the knowledge-intensive work of built environment practitioners (Whyte and Ewenstein 2007) position architects and designers to be adept at using these tools to generate new forms of knowledge. The fluidity of moving between the underlying data and the emergent maps activates the pattern-synthesizing methods central to "designerly ways of knowing" and facilitates designers' orientation towards "constructive" modes of thinking (Cross 1982). Further, the visual tools promote the translation of established design practices into social science methodologies. For example, designers typically rely on practices such as seeing thoughts and ideas as they are being worked on, and physically moving materials around to detect commonalities and emergent themes (Stigliani and Ravasi 2012). As the literature on codebook development frequently addresses the need to develop shared understandings of phenomenon among members of research teams (Weston et al. 2001; MacQueen et al. 1998), visualizations may prove invaluable as they have a history of use in design practice as exploratory objects for shared project framing, knowledge development and meaning making (Whyte and Ewenstein 2007). Cross pollinating social science and design methods by using visual tools for systematic analysis adapts and expands both of these methods' sensemaking capabilities (Weick 1995; Krippendorff 2006) as well as their prospective sensemaking potential (Gioia and Mehra 1996).

CONCLUSION

This paper contributes to the discussion regarding methods architects and designers can employ to strengthen hypothesis building when working with qualitative data by demonstrating the use of visual qualitative data analysis tools. In the drive for continual advancement of research methods to improve the human built environment, this paper argues that that visual tools available in CAQDAS software position designers to build on their disciplinary expertise in order to more meaningfully contribute to impactful research.

REFERENCES

"AIA Research Agenda 2019 and 2020." 2019. Washington, DC: American Institute of Architects. http://content.aia.org/sites/default/files/2019-05/AIA_Research_Agenda_2019-2020.pdf.

Bernard, H. Russell, and Gery W. Ryan. 2010. *Analyzing Qualitative Data: Systematic Approaches*. SAGE Publications.

Bradley, Elizabeth H, Leslie A Curry, and Kelly J Devers. 2007. "Qualitative Data Analysis for *Health Services Research*: Developing Taxonomy, Themes, and Theory." *Health Services Research* 42 (4): 1758–72. https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1475-6773.2006.00684.x.

Charmaz, Kathy. 2014. *Constructing Grounded Theory.* 2nd edition. Introducing Qualitative Methods. London ; Thousand Oaks, Calif: Sage.

Creswell, John W. 2012. *Educational Research: Planning, Conducting, and Evaluating Quantitative and Qualitative Research*. Pearson.

Cross, Nigel. 1982. "Designerly Ways of Knowing." *Design Studies*, Special Issue *Design Education*, 3 (4): 221–27. https://doi.org/10.1016/0142-694X(82)90040-0.

Gioia, Dennis A., and Ajay Mehra. 1996. "Sensemaking in Organizations Karl E. Weick." *The Academy of Management Review* 21 (4): 1226.

Johnson, R. Burke, and Anthony J. Onwuegbuzie. 2004. "Mixed Methods Research: A Research Paradigm Whose Time Has Come." *Educational Researcher* 33 (7): 14–26.

Krippendorff, Klaus. 2006. *The Semantic Turn: A New Foundation for Design*. Boca Raton: CRC/Taylor & Francis.

Kuckartz, Udo. 2018. *MAXQDA Plus 2018* (version 18.2.4). Berlin: VERBI GmbH.

Kuckartz, Udo, and Stefan Rädiker. 2019. *Analyzing Qualitative Data with MAXQDA: Text, Audio, and Video.* Springer.

Kurasaki, Karen S. 2000. "Intercoder Reliability for Validating Conclusions Drawn from Open-Ended Interview Data." *Field Methods* 12 (3): 179–94. https://doi.org/10.1177/1525822X0001200301.

Kvale, Steinar, and Svend Brinkmann. 2008. *Interviews: Learning the Craft of Qualitative Research Interviewing.* 2nd ed. Thousand Oaks, CA: SAGE Publications.

Lawson, Bryan. 2006. *How Designers Think. [Electronic Resource] : The Design Process Demystified*. 4th ed. Elsevier/Architectural.

MacQueen, Kathleen M., Eleanor McLellan, Kelly Kay, and Bobby Milstein. 1998. "Codebook Development for Team-Based Qualitative Analysis." *CAM Journal* 10 (2): 31–36.

Markovic, Milica. 2006. "Analyzing Qualitative Data: Health Care Experiences of Women with Gynecological Cancer." *Field Methods* 18 (4): 413–29.

Miles, Matthew B., and A. M. Huberman. 1994. *Qualitative Data Analysis: An Expanded Sourcebook*. 2nd ed. Thousand Oaks: Sage Publications.

Patton, Michael Quinn. 1990. Qualitative Evaluation and Research Methods, 2nd Ed. *Qualitative Evaluation and Research Methods, 2nd Ed.* Thousand Oaks, CA, US: Sage Publications, Inc.

Ravasi, Davide. 2017. "Visualizing Our Way through Theory Building." *JOURNAL OF MANAGEMENT INQUIRY* 26 (2): 240–43. https://doi.org/10.1177/1056492616680575.

Silver, Christina, and Ann Lewins. 2014. *Using Software in Qualitative Research: A Step-by-Step Guide*. 1 Oliver's Yard, 55 City Road London EC1Y 1SP: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Stigliani, Ileana, and Davide Ravasi. 2012. "Organizing Thoughts and Connecting Brains: Material Practices and the Transition from Individual to Group-Level Prospective Sensemaking." *Academy of Management Journal* 55 (5): 1232–59. https://doi.org/10.5465/amj.2010.0890.

Strauss, Anselm, and Juliet M. Corbin. 1990. *Basics of Qualitative Research: Grounded Theory Procedures and Techniques*. Thousand Oaks, CA, US: Sage Publications, Inc.

Weick, Karl E. 1995. *Sensemaking in Organizations*. Foundations for Organizational Science. Thousand Oaks: Sage Publications.

Weston, Cynthia, Terry Gandell, Jacinthe Beauchamp, Lynn McAlpine, Carol Wiseman, and Catherine Beauchamp. 2001. *Analyzing Interview Data: The Development and Evolution of a Coding System*. Vol. 24. https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1010690908200.

Whyte, Jennifer K., and Boris Ewenstein. 2007. "Editorial: Visual Practices and the Built Environment." *Building Research & Information* 35 (1): 3–5. https://doi.org/10.1080/09613210600906056.

Wolski, Urszula. 2018. "The History of the Development and Propagation of QDA Software." *The Qualitative Report* 23 (13): 6–20.

Wutich, Amber, and Clarence C. Gravlee. 2010. "Water Decision-Makers in a Desert City: Text Analysis and Environmental Social Science." In *Environmental Social Sciences: Methods and Research Design,* by I. Vaccaro, E.A. Smith, and S. Aswani. Cambridge University Press.

PAPER #7.12

SOCIAL RENTAL HOUSING SITING & MAINTENANCE: CONSIDERING THE ARCHITECT'S CRITICAL ROLE

Chika C. Daniels-Akunekwe [a], Dr. Brian R. Sinclair[b]
[a]University of Calgary, Calgary, Alberta, Canada
[b]University of Calgary, Calgary, Alberta, Canada, + sinclairstudio inc. Alberta, Canada

ABSTRACT

In several countries across the globe, social rental housing (SRH) is lost for a variety of reasons. In Nigeria, SRH, a housing type typically associated with the most disadvantaged people in the society, is lost due to reasons predominantly associated with siting and maintenance (Daniels-Akunekwe & Sinclair, 2018). Although, SRH constitutes just over 5% of the total housing stock, a significant amount of these developments are *still* lost. To address these issues, in several contexts – including in Nigeria, the responsibility is accorded the architect, who is considered the chief culprit. This is because historically architects have been charged with overseeing building processes from inception to completion; their responsibility spanned beyond the breadth of the structure's aesthetics through to successful construction and even liability for its failure. Now, the profession has morphed into one of intense specialization, where the role of the architect seems to be reduced to design – the role of a "shaper"… of "form-giver" (Franck, 2017). Leaving architects to placate themselves with the opinion that designing is at the core of all things building, while being painfully aware that this is a "mere shadow of the competencies" they command, and a demotion from their roles as master builder and "generalist-practitioner" (Franck, 2017).

With the progressively narrowed/narrowing role of the architect, and the absence of a universally outlined description of the architect's obligations, it is difficult to establish in certain circumstances (where buildings are considered unsuccessful) the extent of involvement in the problem for which the architect is liable (Daniels-Akunekwe & Sinclair, 2019a). It is our suggestion that the characteristic extremely limited budget of SRH projects should confer on the architect, the additional responsibility of artist, researcher and anthropologist… to not only design an adequate, affordable, and aesthetically pleasant development but one that considers the location, and post-construction life, with equal intensity.

Therefore, riding on this reasoning, we select four SRH developments situated in non-poor (both middle and high-income) neighborhoods in Lagos city, Nigeria. These cases were selected because despite being located in 'choice' neighborhoods, the specific sites combined with a non-existent/non-effective maintenance management program have proved unfavorable and unbeneficial to its occupants, the surrounding residents, and to the neighborhood as a whole. By deploying mixed methods including literature investigation, interviews, and phenomenology, the study seeks to define to which extent siting and maintenance are related to the profession of the architect.

KEYWORDS

Social housing; siting; maintenance; design; architecture.

INTRODUCTION

> "It is hard to argue that housing is not a fundamental human need. Decent, affordable housing should be a basic right for everybody in this country. The reason is simple: without stable shelter, everything else falls apart." - Matthew Desmond

Historically, social housing (SH) is believed to have originated in Europe and over the years, as it has spread across the globe and taken on myriad forms, what it means has evolved [United Nations Economic Commission for Europe (UNECE), 2006, 2015; Organization for Economic Co-operation and Development (OECD), 2016]. This is because "each country has forms of housing that are broadly designed to satisfy the needs of households who are unable to compete in the marketplace for housing of an acceptable standard" (Oxley 2009, 2) therefore terms like public housing, common housing, limited-profit housing, government subsidized housing, and not-for-profit housing etc. are now used interchangeably (UNECE, 2015). As a result of this, the UNECE (2015) defines SH as essentially being a "key word used to enable governments and interested stakeholders to exchange knowledge about the part of the housing system that is aimed to satisfying need, that is supported by the state and distributed through administrative process distinct to their local contexts" (UNECE 2015, 14). A more specific definition is that provided by the Canada Mortgage and Housing Corporation (CHMC), which describes SH as:

> an umbrella term referring to rental housing that is designed to cater for the needs of people on very low to moderate incomes who may be experiencing 'rental stress' in the private market" (CMHC 2017, para. 3).

The allocation of SH is strictly dependent on the severity of the households' need (Whitehead & Scanlon 2007). SH is the singular public rental housing type that focuses on the most deprived group in the population (Polak 2007).

Unlike in Europe, in Nigeria, via the 2011 National Housing Policy (NHP) draft, the government redefined SH to connote "housing for no income earners, low-income earners and lower medium income earners" (Ekong & Onye 2013, 257), which was adopted. The NHP document defined the three classes to mean:

"(i) All persons whose income does not exceed the national average of 25% of the National Minimum wage [which is eighteen thousand naira (N18, 000) per month" (or USD49.25 as at February 2020)]; "(ii) all persons whose annual income exceeds the 'No Income' level, but does not exceed the National Minimum wage; and (iii) all persons whose annual income exceeds the National Minimum wage, but does not exceed four times the National Minimum wage" (Ekong & Onye 2013, p. 258).

SH in Nigeria is patterned after Western styles (Ukoha & Beamish, 1996), and was recognized as a vital housing development in the 1970s (Olayiwola et al., 2005). This recognition [where the government first made mention (specifically) of SH as a solution to the then budding housing shortage challenge] occurred during the period (1975-1980) of the Third National Development Plan (NDP); after which, the nation's first Low-cost housing (LCH) program was launched (Olayiwola et al., 2005). While, there is no confusion as to what SH means in the Nigerian context, researchers such as Ekong & Onye (2013), Ilesanmi (2010) and Ihuah & Fortune (2013) have interchangeably used the term SH with public housing in their papers (which essentially focus on SH in Nigeria). This substitution is seen to also exist in daily news publication on SH in Nigeria (Aboderin, 2017).

> "In spite of the different meanings and connotations of public housing in literature, there is consensus among authors and researchers as to the goal of social housing

> provision in most countries of the world… which is to ensure the provision of subsidized housing to households and individuals who are unable to gain access to decent housing at market prices" (Balchin et al., 2000; Liu, 2007 quoted in Ibem et al., 2011a; p. 423)...

and constitute a strategy that is pro-poor – created in order to ensure housing affordability (Yates, 2013, Aboderin, 2017). To this effect, rent is determined by tenant income and is generally set at 25 or 30% of household income (Yates, 2013). Contextually speaking (within the setting that is Nigeria), SH is an umbrella term, which covers a variety of tenures including: social rented/ rental housing, LCH, co-operatives, private-rented SH, and shared ownership housing (Ndubueze, 2009). Among these different tenures, LCH is the most dominant.

Having adequately described what SH represents in Nigeria and more broadly – in other contexts, the reason why the authors have selected this specific housing type is because in the last two-plus decades, SRH has been acknowledged as the "housing of the future" (Harloe, 1994; Maclennan & More, 1997; Delgado & De Troyer, 2017)…

> based on its ability to – when strategically situated in non-poor neighborhoods – exert minimal pressure on wages and salaries, create more livable and cohesive cities, and allow for shorter commutes and proximity to labor (Daniels-Akunekwe & Sinclair, 2018).

While considering the above statement against the situation in Nigeria, it is apparent that the latter is an antithesis to the promise that SRH proffers. Although SRH is not characteristic of the housing sector in the country, recent attempts at providing this housing type has resulted in a continued mirroring of a long-term pattern of vandalism and/or abandonment experienced with previous SRH developments (Ihuah & Fortune, 2013; Adesola, 2018; Yakubu, 2019).

As this is not an entirely novel study, previous research (which has been conducted on a larger/broader scale) has indicated existing links between the failure of the urban built environment and the role of the architect and his/her inability to lead other built environment professionals towards the creation of a holistically sustainable environment. In this more focused study (where we consider the changing the role of the architect, investigate to what extent this constantly changing role is impacting their ability to effectively perform, and to what extent the current issues impacting the success of SRH can be linked to the profession of the architect) however, the singular constant identified in the design and delivery of SRH and its continued inability to achieve its goal (that is, improve the lives of its inhabitant and create more liveable and cohesive neighbourhoods/cities) is the architect (Daniels-Akunekwe & Sinclair, 2019), who in the Nigerian context, is expected to be the leader of the built environment professionals (Allu and Elimisiemon, 2017), and, in addition to…

> traditional roles of design and specification, … also contribute through training and education; research and development; public enlightenment; and advocacy (Opoko 2015).

While this is expected from the architect, it has not necessarily often translated to what is delivered. The expectation from the architect in the Nigerian context is not atypical but rather is in alignment with studies by Allen (2009), Cheshmehzangi and Deng (2016), and Tan et al. (2017), which stipulate that sustaining all parts of the built environment *should* indeed be the responsibility of the architect.

1. UNDERSTANDING THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN THE (ROLE OF THE) ARCHITECT AND THE TWO MAIN ISSUES IDENTIFIED WITH SRH

This section provides background and historical information on the themes around which our study anchors. In the following sections, we attempt to review and understand: (I) the historical expansion and/or reduction of the role of the architect; first, generally, and secondly, as it relates exclusively to pro-poor housing, (II) the training process required for the architect in order to ascertain if they are (continually, to present day) furnished with the skill set to manage more than just design, (III) the role of the architect in the production and provision of SRH, and (IV) the architect's role as it pertains to the siting and maintenance of SRH in Nigeria.

1.1. The historically changing role of the architect: 'Jack-of-all-trades' or specialist?

> "The jack-of-all-trades seldom is good at any. Concentrate all of your efforts on one definite chief aim." – Napoleon Hill

The architect was traditionally referred to as the master builder (Kahn, 1979). In fact, the term architect was derived from ancient Greece where *Arkhi* meant head chief or master and *tekton* meant worker or builder (Berman, 2003). Architects such as Michaelangelo and Leonardo da Vinci are exemplary of the…

> omniscient master builder who was charged with the responsibility for the total success of a construction project. In this role the architect not only graphically portrayed the basic concept of the aesthetic and structural components of an edifice, he also took charge of its implementation, and was liable for its failure (Kahn 1979, 216).

Because of this history, the word "architect" carries with it preconceived notions (Faraudo, 2019); that the architect *must* bear the entire responsibility for both project design and project construction from inception to completion (Franck, 2017). As a result of the breadth of expectation from the architect, he had sufficient design and construction proficiency to undertake the entirety of his responsibilities (Burr and Jones, 2010). Between then and now, over the last couple of centuries, the role of the architect has continually evolved (Burr and Jones, 2010). The profession has morphed into one currently characterized by intense specialization so that the entire process of building design and construction is segmented to provide the different professions within the building and construction industry clearly defined roles. The master builder of the past, in many contexts, is now fundamentally considered to be the "designer" and "accorded very limited responsibility regarding the outcome of the entire endeavour" (Franck, 2017). While researchers can agree that the role of the architect has changed considerably, and is now significantly narrowed, it is commonly unclear as to their exact role.

There are several reasons why the role of the architect has narrowed. One of which, and perhaps chief among them, is the increased complexity of construction (Jones, 2006; Burr and Jones, 2010). As building projects become more technical, increase in scale, adopt new technology, incorporate myriad systems, are subjected to increased "time pressure, dangers of liability, of lawsuits regarding malpractice…" (Franck 2017, para. 4) the notion that the architect may be unable to maintain an expertise level to accommodate all the trades and aspects of the building continued to arise (Jones, 2006). Eventually, this led to the *splitting* of the master builder role into two principal professions/professionals; the designer and the builder, with the architect exempted from building activities (Jones, 2006; Thomsen,

2002). Even within the design section, further specialization resulted in the identification of additional architects or designers to attend to "landscape, interior, and acoustic…" (Woods, 1999). With specialization came intense fragmentation, which has evolved to the point where, rather than the architect single-handedly assuming the responsibility for an entire project,

> It is not uncommon today to have an architect with 15-20 consultants, a general contractor with 40-60 subcontractors, and subcontractors with hundreds of manufacturers and suppliers (Jones 2010, 3).

This fragmentation has also accommodated the creation of and inclusion of new roles within the industry such as the construction manager, who has inadvertently become the principal agent for the construction process. The arguments surrounding the creation of the construction manager profession/position were predominantly along the lines of: (I) the architect being too much of a designer (with a focus on aesthetics) to manage a project from inception to completion, and/or (II) the outright inadequacy of the architect in construction management services (Berman, 2002; Yates, 2003). This arrangement is fraught with its own problems, and while it does address some of the general concerns with burdening the architect with excessive responsibility, issues around the "confusion of definitions and conflicts of roles" continue to emerge. Once again, the architect is routinely left without a clearly defined role or position.

1.2. The contextual variance in the architect's role: is broader better?

While the role of the architect is seen to be generally narrowing, in countries such as: Australia, Austria, Netherlands, Uganda, in terms of pro-poor housing, the role of the architect appears to be broadening (Salcedo and Straub, 2014; Adengo, 2017).

In the Netherlands, according to Salcedo and Straub (2014), based on their study of 21 SH developments, results revealed that projects typically employ the services of an architect and a main contractor; along with consultants and advisors, but the former is *still* expected to take on responsibilities larger than just designer – responsibilities that are technical and advisory in nature. In Austria (Vienna), the development of SRH requires the services of the architect, who should also be versed in urban planning, and to a significant extent, ecology and social policy. The rationale behind this is that more important than good design, is the relationship with that design to its surroundings (Forster, 2018).

In Australia, the architect and his architecture are critical in the delivery of pro-poor housing (Maher, 2017). Before the 70s, the contribution of the architect (via design) towards the delivery of SRH was "most overlooked" (Maher, 2017). After the 70s, a new era began where the government and architects began working together towards providing SRH. As a central part of the built environment, the Australian government recognizes and has openly declared that the architect remains relevant through to completion. The Australian government states that the architectural profession is able to handle crucial issues that can *genuinely* deliver affordability, sustainability, and housing flexibility, "in both upfront costs and the on-going cost of occupation" (Maher 2017, para. 19).

Across Africa, it is not atypical for architects to *persuade* the community, their clients, and colleagues in the design/construction sector that their profession should exceed design, in Uganda however, stakeholders require little to no persuasion. As it relates to SRH, while the architect is expected to have an "entire technical team on board, including engineers, quantity surveyors and land surveyors" (Adengo, 2017), the architect is still expected to "wear all these hats simultaneously" (Adengo, 2017). Even the misconception that the service of the architect is unnecessary

during the construction phase is very seldom debated in the context. In fact, it is popular opinion that without the architect's presence through to project completion, the construction manager may tend to make discretionary changes and take

> shortcuts that may lower the quality of the outcome of the project; the result of which can be seen in the recent building collapses in Kampala (Adengo 2017, para. 3).

SRH building collapse has been known to happen in Uganda because the architect "plays too broad a role in the initial design process, but too small a role during construction" (Adengo 2017, para. 4). Research indicates that this broadening of responsibility in various contexts is on account of the characteristic extremely limited budget of SRH developments. The nature of this budget confers on the architect the duty to not only design an adequate, affordable, and aesthetically pleasant development but one that considers the location, and post-construction life with equal intensity. Therefore, the architect must – in addition to designer - also be artist, researcher and anthropologist. If all this expectation is piled on the architect, it is important to consider the quality of training that is provided for and required from him in order to deliver his responsibilities.

1.3. The training process for the architectural profession

Architecture education in Nigeria commenced in 1952 with the establishment of the first School of Architecture at the Nigerian College of Science and Technology in Ibadan (south-eastern Nigeria). Three years after which, the School was relocated to its northern campus, located in Zaria. Initially, the 5-year program culminated in the award of a diploma and the qualification to write the Royal Institute of British Architect (RIBA) examinations but soon after the College was upgraded to a "full-fledged university", rather than diplomas, it began to issue Bachelor of Architecture degrees (Maina, 2008). By 1969, Nigeria had adopted and implemented a 2-tier B.Sc/M. Sc 'American-styled' program, which is still in existence in many Nigerian Schools today. Globally, in order for the architect to practice, he must obtain a license, which follows the acquisition of a graduate degree from a college that has been accredited by the designated national accreditation board, as well as a mandatory internship program and architectural exam (Jones, 2006).
Acquiring an architecture license is designed to be lengthy, tough and demanding [particularly from the student perspective (Dare-Abel et al., 2015)] in order to be adequately equipped for a career-long gruelling journey "characterized by long hours of design, drafting, and modelling" (Dare-Abel et al. 2015, 169). While the entirety of the architect's education is not gained in the school of architecture, it is critical to afford the student a solid foundation for all future learning.

1.4. The architectural education: expectations versus what is obtained

Architectural education worldwide is fundamentally a multi-disciplinary program, which integrates essentials from urbanism, structure, building physics, real estate, construction, services, etc. The multi-disciplinary nature of architecture exists predominantly in the undergraduate degree in order for the individual enrolled (during the typical 5-year period) to decide on a specialization (Moonen and Veeger, 2014). To understand why architectural education is relatively encompassing, it is necessary to appreciate that architecture exceeds design, building and even construction, to
the improvement of the human habitat. Thus, the goal of architectural education, which is essentially to advance the profession of architecture, is to contribute to the attainment

of a humane and responsive environment (Magaji and Ilyasu 2016, 13).

Similarly, a notable architect in Nigeria; Arc. Ibrahim Haruna, in the annual Architects Registration Council of Nigeria (ARCON), expressed and emphasized that the nation's expectation of architects is to shape and re-shape the built environment. Despite this premise, architectural education in Nigeria is increasingly falling behind in comparison to international standards, with regards to both training and output, because it has become stale (Dare-Abel et al., 2015; Magaji and Ilyasu, 2016). Considering that architectural education in Nigeria is just over seven decades old, it has remained regressive when compared to other countries that have taught it for significantly longer periods (for centuries), and still have kept up with the globally changing rules around becoming "skilled and work-ready" (Onyegiri et al 2014, 65). In the last 50-plus years, schools of architecture in Nigeria, have left architectural programs; "studio learning culture, and its underlying rituals and processes" (ibid.) unchanged. This neither implies that the government is unaware nor that it fails to set standards. In fact, according to Dare-Abel et al. (2015), following the lead from the American context, it is the intention of the Nigerian government to continually reform the education system by incorporating both globally and locally tested solutions as is evident in the Third National Development Plan (NDP) but despite the intention, there is a mismatch in execution.

While the expectations for and results of (in terms of service delivery) the architect do not correspond, the attraction to an architectural degree remains high. Over the last 17 years (2003 to 2019), the graduates from the fully accredited (to Masters level) Nigerian universities is recorded as just under 13,000 (Nairaland, 2020; ARCON, 2020). Despite this large number, only an average of 100 students are registered annually (ARCON, 2020). With an opportunity such as that present in Nigeria, where (I) the population is over 206 million (World Population Review, 2020), (II) there is a rapidly increasing rate of building construction, and (III) the nation has only 3,500-plus registered architects (ARCON, 2020), there is a huge prospect for architects in Nigeria. Additionally, in 35 years, the number of registered Architectural firms has risen from 38 to 649, with a larger growth ascribed to the firms that are "unregistered by the professional bodies but are licensed by the Corporate Affairs Commission (CAC)" (Dare-Abel et al., 2015). According to Njoku (2011), while this huge growth in the establishment of architecture firms is representative of the relevance of the architecture profession and architectural services in the country, it is not representative of how much architectural services are actually being utilized. Also, because Nigerians are constantly seeking foreign architects, it does not mean that locally trained architects are incompetent rather the opposite is the case, "there are a lot of Nigerian architects who can do the job better than foreign architects" (Njoku, 2011), but Nigerians typically recruit expatriates over the millions of job-seeking Nigerians.

By simple extrapolation, the opportunity presents a ratio of one (registered) professional architect to service over fifty eight thousand Nigerians. With the majority of these Nigerians being poor or of the lower income class, it is important that architects are trained, not just for the specific context where they practice but also to address the needs of and design for all income classes.

Having established several elements: that (I) the education level may not have improved in Nigeria in the last several decades, (II) despite the former, the level of architectural education in Nigeria is still able to produce architects who are relatively skilled and capable, and (III) the architect is increasingly relevant and operational considering their ability to cater to the rapid construction rate in the city/country, we then conjecture as to what the issue may be with churning out successful SRH projects. As we build on the suggestion

that the architect is the major concern with developing adequate SRH (in terms of siting and maintenance), we consider what makes the architect; that which enables him perform in his role, which is the quality of education. We will briefly review the quality of architectural education with regards to the curriculum.

1.5. Curriculum for architectural education

There are several elements that make up quality architecture education; some of these are: intake/admission requirements, teaching quality, (awareness about) transition from student to professional, professional practice, keeping pace with trends and technology in architecture [such as increasing the proficiency of students in the use of Computer Aided Design (CAD)] but by far the most important is curricula (Maina, 2008; Dare-Abel et al., 2015). In 2012, Joanne Banks identified four pathway standards for all students in order "to raise performance and close achievement gaps", and they all revolve around curriculum. In fact, Magaji and Ilyasu (2016) describe curriculum as the entire educative process including the "environment, student, lecturer, course, course content, method, and physical and psychological environment" (15).

Based on reviewing studies on similar themes, the curriculum of architectural education in Nigeria has "largely remained the same" (Maina, 2008) since the 60s. This stagnation has persisted despite the massive global evolution that has occurred with the discipline and has also resulted in the insufficiency of the courses taught to furnish the students with the knowledge required for a professional career. These courses, which are required to be fundamental to providing the springboard for success, are failing to prepare students for real-life situations (Maina 2008, 3). Besides the ineffective course content within classrooms, students are also failing to acquire the requisite skills during the mandatory Industrial Training (IT) program (ibid.). While this is not a problem of the educational institutions per se but of the Architectural councils (the policy making bodies for architects in Nigeria) in the country, there remains a responsibility of tutelage from participating architecture firms to the student, in order to fulfil this portion of the curriculum. Additionally, allied courses that aim to produce a well-rounded professional such as the knowledge of building materials, electrical and mechanical services and drawings, and in some cases, Masters degree programs, are increasingly inadequate. Another point Maina (2008) makes is that the Nigerian curriculum, which was based on the British/American program, is now out of touch with providing the know-how to deal with the nation's current prevailing problem of squatter settlements, of minimum cost housing, of slum renewal and many of those problems usually associated with the developing countries (Adeyemi, 2000).

2. THE ROLE OF THE ARCHITECT IN THE PRODUCTION AND PROVISION OF SRH

> "Architecture is really about well-being. I think that people want to feel good in a space… on the other hand, its about shelter, but its also about pleasure." – Zaha Hadid

This section of the paper seeks to understand the role of the architect in the production and provision of SRH and attempts to draw a connection between their responsibilities in this regard and how it could be accountable for the siting and maintenance issues highlighted in Nigeria.

2.1. The architect's role in SRH production and provision

The historical role of the architect in the production and provision of pro-poor housing has been limited to design. Within this already limited responsibility, the design produced by the architect was/is sternly impacted by the

government (Cheng, 1980; Nimmo, 2001). The rationale behind this is the government's insistence that the design of SRH has to follow a defined conception; SRH had/has to be stripped of unnecessary extravagancies, and could not be anything above the bare minimum. What the government insisted on was characterless, high-density blocks and "if the architects employed… proposed anything else, they will have a battle on their hands" (Nimmo, 2001). There was/is no encouragement…

> to pursue quality design solutions and an outright resistance to innovation, especially if that means that the housing might be different to what surrounds it (ibid.).

Interestingly, in many contexts, SRH design proposals outside of these limitations will typically be unsupported. The brief is simple "do not design the very best you can" (ibid.). When you consider what design means to an architect, this expectation is both strange and difficult for him, and an antithesis to what the profession represents. The result of this is that what the architect delivers is not truly his but rather a 'brainchild' of the government.

Despite this being the case in Nigeria, in many countries (Netherlands, France, Spain, Slovenia, Australia, Belgium, Italy) across the globe, the architect is encouraged to produce the finest design while still prioritizing affordability. In fact, in Austria (Vienna), two things have begun to transpire: (I) the government has begun to seek star architects to design SRH, and (II) the mention of upcoming SRH projects has begun to attract an "impressive list of 'star' architects as a way to demonstrate the importance of the development" (Forster, 2018).

2.2. The architect's role in the siting and maintenance of SRH

The government's focus on cost issues has significantly distracted it from issues such as siting and maintenance, which are guaranteed to impact its performance. In cases where the architect has access to and perhaps, also consults the end users, little can be done in terms of incorporating their suggestions into the design proposal.

Typically, the siting of (government provided) SRH is beyond the responsibility of the architect. If the government assumes responsibility for developing the SRH structure, it would provide the land, thereby determining where the development is situated. This is the case in Nigeria, where the Nigerian government is responsible for allocating land for SRH (Ajayi et al., 2014). Again, because the government's focus is on cost saving, the land allocated for SRH, is characteristically located in poor, blighted fringe neighbourhoods. 70% of all SRH is located in such neighbourhoods (ibid.). Literature shows that there is no slated location for siting SRH on record; and if SRH were to be developed privately, permission to proceed would still be sought from government authorities (Isah, 2016). There are however, a handful of scenarios where the government has allocated high-demand, high potential, and profitable land to SRH – some of which we highlight later on in this paper. Although, land selection and siting may not be the architect's responsibility, the argument can be made that based on the skills acquired from an architectural education, the architect is equipped to manipulate the environment to elevate the SRH development and apply their knowledge of planning, urban design etc. as tools to marry the existing environment and the SRH development.

Still there are instances in Nigeria, when the Architect is consulted by an individual/party within the private sector, with the intention to develop some form of pro-poor housing. Adewunmi (2016) discusses two routes that

are typically taken following the decision to develop land towards the provision of SRH: one, the individual/party, based on counsel from professionals within the building and construction industry (the architect included), is advised on the 'right' location to seek out and purchase land prior to embarking on design and construction, or two, the individual/party identifies a parcel of land that they consider favourable (for myriad reasons: some being affordability, location, size), purchase it, decide to develop a variation of pro-poor/mass housing, and then proceed to hire an architect, who at this point is (and can only be) responsible for siting decisions (going forward) that are limited to building orientation, vehicle access (integration), physical barriers, landscaping, parking, and protection of utilities to mitigate threats, among other things.

Interestingly, while there are neither current nor comprehensive documents explicitly describing the mechanisms through which the allocation of sites for SRH in Nigeria take place, Ilesanmi (2010) provides an idea based on what transpired in the late 70s/80s. The government earmarked land for the construction of pro-poor housing, specifically (variations of) public housing. For any corporation or interested party to secure land for the development of LCH (etc.), an application had to be submitted through the Land Use and Allocation Committee (Ilesanmi, 2010). The application process was cumbersome, and the administrative process, demanding and a major constraint to propagating the development of all kinds of public housing schemes. The major requirement following acquisition was confirmation of the development of massive scale housing for low-income groups (ibid.).

Like land allocation and siting, the maintenance of SRH was the responsibility of the government (Isah, 2016). SRH maintenance is considered to be so burdensome [because it spans beyond the building itself (that is, its efficient performance, physical appearance, and economic returns/value), and its users to the surrounding environment] that developments (Ihuah & Fortune, 2013)…

> are abandoned either half way to completion, after completion, or not even embarked on as a result of there being no framework to address it (Fatoye & Odusami, 2009)

Despite the enactment of several housing policies that emphasize the need for both a planned and an unplanned maintenance policy, Nigeria's notoriety for having a poor maintenance culture remains unchanged (Ihuah et al., 2014). As far back as in 1991, a review completed by the Federal Government indicated that the backlog of maintenance required to bring the existing units to acceptable standards was equivalent to the cost of three million new units [Federal Republic of Nigeria (FRN), 1991]. As a result of the severity of the maintenance challenge, recent policy discussions papers have suggested the transference of the responsibility of maintenance to the inhabitants of the development as part of the government's plan for an operational subsidy (Isah, 2016). The argument the authors make here is that because maintenance is crucial yet expensive, the architect through design, and allocation/selection of building materials, can address some maintenance issues. The architect, through his craft, is required to produce sensitive, aesthetically pleasant and sustainable design proposals. One element within the sustainability bracket speaks to the 'maintainability' of that design. This implies that – to an extent – there is a responsibility conferred on the architect to ensure practicality, durability, and 'repair-ability'. Research reveals that scenarios where the SRH design has indicated finishes or materials (which proved efficient), there has been a direct impact on reducing loss on that property. It has also resulted in easier to maintain units/developments, "better retention of tenants, and a positive financial reserve to operate and maintain the property" (Jubany, 2011).

3. A REVIEW OF THE FOUR CASES IN NIGERIA

The four SRH developments selected for our study are: (I) Jakande low-cost housing estate, Lekki, Lagos *[speculated to be completed in 1988, 125 housing blocks/686 total housing units]* (II) Jakande low-cost housing estate Amuwo-Odofin, Lagos *[completed in 1992, 488 housing blocks/between 2,948-3,106 total housing units]* (III) Jakande low-cost housing estate, Surulere, Lagos *[speculated to be completed between 1972 and 1975, 226 housing blocks/1,356 total housing units*], and (IV) Shagari (Federal) low-cost housing estate, Ipaja, Lagos [completed in 1983, 125 housing blocks/1,514 total housing units]. Among the 23 SRH developments in Nigeria, we selected these four that demonstrate explicit and implicit links between our research purpose and objective, which are also large enough to highlight the issue being explored, and are situated in 'choice' neighbourhoods. The latter is crucial because there is research that shows that locating (any kind of) public housing in poor neighbourhoods is tantamount to propagating poverty and the negativities associated with the poor. On the other hand, there is research that shows that there are income benefits and character change associated with residents of public housing when the development is situated in non-poor neighbourhoods. Research also opines that such developments have a higher possibility of being afforded care and are typically better maintained than those in poor neighbourhoods.

Limited research findings and development details exist, pertaining to SRH in the Nigerian context, that have been documented for public & scholarly access. That said; the researchers during on-the-ground work in Lagos have accessed certain information typically pertaining to some statistical/ logistical aspects of SRH project – however, clarity around more nebulous dimensions, such as posturing/policies around ethics and professional responsibilities remain scant and largely inaccessible. What we discovered however, in all four neighbourhoods was fundamentally consistent. The Nigerian government was heavily involved in the entire process from design to construction such that the architect's role was to put the government's concept on paper so that the final design was essentially the governments'. This included the choice of building materials; cheap building materials (Olurode, 2009), which was again, a reflection of the governments' weighty influence in the process. At the time, with poverty rising and housing becoming expensive, the developments were "cheaply built, but were of great value" (ibid.) to the population. There are arguments however, that because the government had taken on a vast amount of projects running concurrently such as: schools, medical facilities, and a metro line for mass transit, that in order to deliver the 30,000 housing units provided, the government had to resort to the use of substandard building materials (ibid.). There are also arguments that the "excitement" surrounding such a novel endeavour at the time was overwhelming for the existing residents that there was little concern, through the period of execution, about the sustainability of the project (ibid.). Furthermore, being the pioneering developments when these SRH estates were constructed, there were no benchmarks for the country to aspire to or local precedents to inform the residents. Ever since, SRH has continued to be built in much the same way, that is, with (I) substandard materials founded on the excuse of too little funding, (II) the intention to achieve more housing units with less expenditure, and (III) the plan to institute and/or improve the maintenance program upon project completion, etc.

Idea-Relation Model

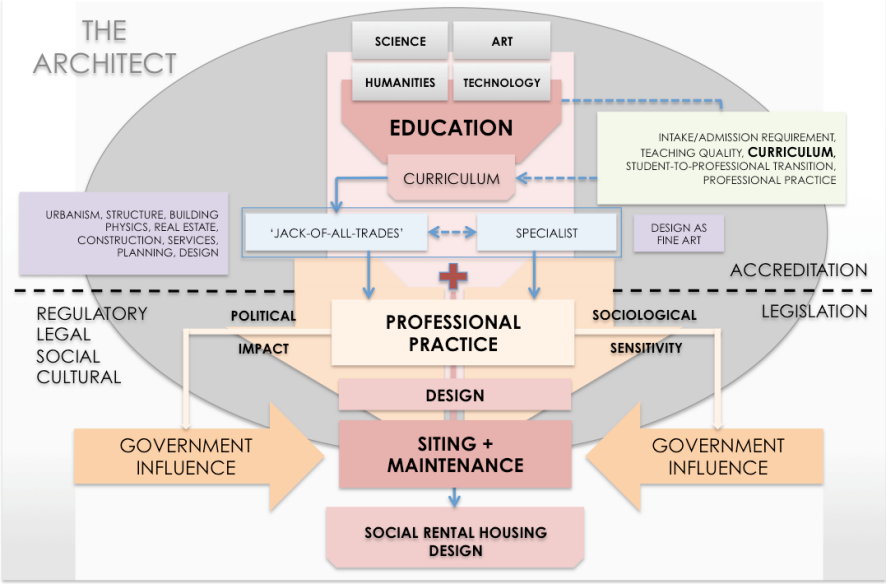


Figure 1. Ideal-Relation Model

CONCLUSION

> "… An age of greed has made it so that the architect no longer feels a duty to society." – Richard Rogers

Having already established the poor architectural education standards, demonstrated the architects limited role in the production and provision of SRH, as well as in its siting and maintenance (as a result of substantial government involvement and the typical tight budget allocated to this housing type), discussions with stakeholders [officials in the local government offices affiliated to and/or overseeing the four cases we studied, planners, developers (with experience erecting SRH developments), and residents of the non-poor neighbourhood], revealed an angle that has not been (well) explored in our context. The absence of two interlinked elements: (I) the architect being unaware how vital a role he *actually* plays in maximising siting and minimizing maintenance, and therefore, the overall outcome of SRH developments, and (II) the architect's social insensitivity.

While the architect may not have free reign in executing his duties, he is not exempt from complicity. In Iliopoulou's 2015 paper, she emphasized the architect's role as a 'double agent', which she explained speaks to their role as designer being as important as their social responsibility to the community. Despite the limitations in any context, she argues, as does

Jubany (2011) that the architect must never sacrifice his duty to represent the voice and needs of the people in an attempt to design insensitively. Social sensitivity speaks to the knowledge that his design is able to create a more civilized community by making a place more livable, affect quality of life, "influence social conditions, and cause positive social change" (Jubany, 2011). It also extends to championing ideologies that achieve the above, over alternate design that disregards focusing on the above-mentioned elements. The implication of this is that there is an expectation from the architect that rather than designing buildings that are bound to deteriorate/fail from the onset, and put financial pressure/strain (and otherwise) on the occupants (specifically the poor), their education, and ability demands that they refuse to comply and never compromise on quality. The problem, we speculate, is that the Nigerian architect has not fully come to understand their social responsibility. This obliviousness was recorded several decades ago when it occurred in the United Kingdom ensuing a dichotomy among architects, where there was a group of architects that created designs that had been inspired by, or advocated social struggles, and the other that triggered societal struggles, and prioritized/favoured practice and 'having work' (Iliopoulou, 2013). This dichotomy is currently being experienced in Nigeria, with the greater portion of architects more focused on practice. The result of this focus on 'having work' is reflected in how SRH has continued to manifest in the country, that is, poor siting/use of the location, and poor or inexistent maintenance program, which has in turn resulted in abandonment and vandalism, and more commonly now, building collapse (Hamma-adama and Kouider, 2017; Okagbue et al., 2018).

In the European context, the architect's education has evolved according to their responsibility and alongside advancements in technology (Franck, 2017). Having identified that the previous responsibility accorded to the architect was quite broad (ibid.); the role has "been de-coupled from the realization of the building, and even from its constructive completion" (Franck 2017, para. 3). The Nigerian government needs to learn from other contexts, and must clearly define the architect's role in its plans for providing SRH. If the architect is expected to design, then he should genuinely be allowed to masterfully execute his profession so that the outcome is indeed a real solution. The architect also needs to be taught, reminded and encouraged via the curriculum, during the mandatory Industrial Training and upon commencing practice, that architecture extends well beyond narrowly defined legislated practice.

REFERENCES

Adengo, Doreen. "Role of architects in providing affordable housing solutions." *Daily Monitor.* February 8, 2017. Accessed on January 29, 2020. https://www.monitor.co.ug/Business/Prosper/Role-architects-in-providing-affordable-housing-solutions/688616-3802348-format-xhtml-d541g9/index.html

Adesola, Bello. "Nigeria loses N126.2 billion on abandoned federal government properties in Lagos" *TodayNG*. August 16, 2018. Accessed January 24, 2020. https://www.today.ng/news/nigeria/nigeria-loses-n126-2-billion-abandoned-federal-government-properties-lagos-expert-142527

Adewunmi, Jonathan. "Architectural Practice in Nigeria: An overview of generations of Nigerian Architects." October 30, 2016. Accessed 10 September 2020. https://eniitanblog.wordpress.com/2016/10/30/architectural-practice-in-nigeria-an-overview-of-the-generations-of-nigerian-architects/

Ajayi, Olumuyiwa O., Faith O. Oviasogie, Dominic E. Azuh, and Moses M. Duruji. "Urban design and sustainable development: a case of Makoko area of Lagos State, Nigeria." (2014): 90-97.

Allu, Evelyn Lami A., and Monday Chris Elimisiemon. "The role of the Nigerian Architect in the sustainability of the country's built environment: A review." *International Journal of Contemporary Applied Researches* 4, no. 6 (2017): 26-35

Berman, Gary. "Are Foxes Watching the Owner's Hen House? An Examination of the Architect's and Construction Manager's Roles in Managing & Administering the Design & Construction Process." *CM eJournal* (2003): 1-27.

Burr, Kevin L., and Chad B. Jones. "The Role of the Architect: Changes of the Past, Practices of the Present, and Indications of the Future. *International Journal of the Construction Education and Research* 6, no. 2 (2010): 122-138

Cheng, Lawrence Kai-Leung. "Policy and design in urban social housing: a reconciliation." PhD diss., Massachusetts Institute of Technology, 1980.

Daniels-Akunekwe, Chika C., and Brian R. Sinclair. "Marginal Enclosures: An Exploration of the Viability of a Social Housing Siting & Maintenance Framework Based on Stakeholder Experience. The Case of Lagos Metropolitan Area, Nigeria." In *Proceedings of The 30th International Conference On Systems Research, Informatics and Cybernetics, and the 39th Annual Meeting of the International Institute For Advanced Studies (InterSymp 2018), 30 July – 3 August 2018;* Baden-Baden, Germany

Daniels-Akunekwe, Chika C., and Brian R. Sinclair. "An Architectural Traverse: the idea-reality connection. Argument for Social Housing." In *Proceedings of the Architectural Research Centers Consortium (ARCC)*, 29 May – 1 June 2019; Ryerson University, Toronto, Canada, 2019a

Daniels-Akunekwe, Chika C., and Brian R. Sinclair. "The Experience of Engagement: The Importance of Phenomenology in the achievement of Social Rental Housing designs." In *Proceedings of The 16th Symposium on Personal and Spiritual Development in the World of Cultural Diversity (InterSymp 2019), 29 July – 2 August 2019*; Baden-Baden, Germany. 2019b

Dare-Abel, O. A., O. A. Alagbe, P. A. Aderonmu, O. N. Ekhaese, and B. A. Adewale. "Pathways to Architectural Education and Practice Success in Nigeria." *Journal of Education and Practice* 6, no. 4 (2015): 169-175.

Delgado, Alina and Frank De Troyer. "Housing preferences for affordable social housing projects in Guayaquil, Ecuador." *International Journal of Housing Markets and Analysis* 10, no. 1 (2017): 112-139

Faraudo, Franco. "The Changing role of the architect: New research collective is rethinking the building design process." *Propmodo*. March 5, 2019. Accessed January 25, 2020. https://www.propmodo.com/the-changing-role-of-the-architect/

Forster, Wolfgang. "The Vienna Model of Social Housing." In *Partnerships for Affordable Rental Housing, Calgary (Canada), 15-17 November 2018; Conference Proceedings*. University of Calgary, 2018. Accessed January 30, 2020. https://ucalgary.ca/cities/files/cities/forster_the-vienna-model-of-social-housing.pdf

Franck, Oya A. "The changing roles of the architect." *European Association for Architectural Education*. Accessed January 25, 2020. http://www.eaae.be/eaae-academies/education-academy/themes/changing-roles-architect/

Hamma-Adama, Mansur, and Tahar Kouider. "Causes of building failure and collapse in Nigeria: professionals' view." *American journal of engineering research* 6, no. 12 (2017).

Harloe, Michael. "Social housing - past, present and future." *Housing Studies* 9, no. 3 (1994): 407-416

Ihuah, Paulinus W. and J. C. Fortune. "Toward a framework for the sustainable management of social (public) housing estates in Nigeria." *Journal of US-China Public Administration* 10, no. 9 (2013): 901-913

Iliopoulou, Evangelia. "The role of the architect as a double agent: professional practices and social sensitivity." Diss., University of Brighton, 2015.

Jones, Chad B. "The role of the architect: changes of the past, practices of the present, and indications of the future." (Masters diss., Brigham Young University, 2006), https://scholarsarchive.byu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1394&context=etd

Jubany, Helena. L. "The Social Responsibility of Architects." *Design Intelligence*. June 29, 2011. Accessed February 8, 2020. https://www.di.net/articles/the_social_responsibility_architects/

Kahn, Ronald H. "Introduction: The changing role of the architect." *Louis ULJ* 23 1979): 216

Kostoff, Spiro, ed. *The architect: Chapters in the history of the profession*. University of California Press, 2000.

Maclennan, Duncan and Alison More. "The future of social housing: key economic questions." *Housing Studies* 12, no. 4 (1997): 531-547

Magaji, Masaruf, and Muhammad Sa'adiya Ilyasu. "The Architectural Education Curriculum in the Nigerian Schools of Architecture." (2016).

Maher, K. "Housing affordability: why architecture matters." *ArchitectureAU*. March 23, 2017. Accessed January 29, 2020. https://architectureau.com/articles/housing-affordability-why-architecture-matters/

Maina, Joy J. "Architecture education in Nigeria: problems and way forward." PhD seminar paper, Department of Architecture, Ahmadu Bello University (May 2008), 2008. Accessed February 3, 2020. https://www.academia.edu/11460412/ARCHITECTURE_EDUCATION_IN_NIGERIA_PROBLEMS_AND_WAY_FORWARD

Moonen, S. P. G., and T. T. Veeger. "Preparing students towards the complexity of today's practice: start-up in a multidisciplinary assignment." In *International conference unspoken issues in architectural education (UIAE'14),* vol. 3, 4. 2014.

Nairaland. "How many potential architects remain unregistered in Nigeria the last 17 years." Accessed February 2, 2020. https://www.nairaland.com/3934151/see-how-many-potential-architects

Nimmo, Andrew. "The role of the architect in public housing." *Academia*. Accessed February 6, 2020. https://www.academia.edu/29250124/The_Role_of_the_Architect_in_Public_Housing

Njoku, Jude. "Why We are Against Influx of Foreign Architects–Delano." *Vanguard Media Limited,* January 4, 2011. Accessed February 4, 2020. https://www.vanguardngr.com/2011/01/why-we-are-against-influx-of-foreign-architects-delano/

OECD. "Key characteristics of Social Rented Housing". 2016, Accessed on April 20, 2017. http://www.oecd.org/els/family/PH4-3-Characteristics-of-social-rental-housing.pdf

Okagbue, Hilary I., Chukwuemeka O. Iroham, Nkolika Joy Peter, James D. Owolabi, and A. A. Opanuga. "Systematic review of building failure and collapse in Nigeria." *International Journal of Civil Engineering and Technology* 9, no. 10 (2018): 1391-1401.

Olurode, Lai. "Lateef Jakande at 80." *The Guardian UK*. July 21, 2009. Accessed February 10, 2020.

Opoko, Akunnaya P. "The role of the architect in sustainable development of Nigeria." Accessed on 24 January 2020. http://eprints.covenantuniversity.edu.ng/6297/#.XitQKy2ZNE4

Salcedo, Rahola T. B., and Ad Straub. "The role of the architect in integrated contracts for social housing renovations in the Netherlands." In *CIB International Conference on Construction in a Changing World, Sri Lanka (India), 4-7 May, 2014; Proceedings of the 2014 CIB W55/65/89/92/96/102/117 & TG72/81/83; Authors version*. CIB/The University of Salford, 2014.

UNECE. "Guidelines on social housing: Principles and Examples". 2006. Accessed April 20, 2017.https://www.unece.org/fileadmin/DAM/hlm/documents/Publications/guidelines.social.housing.pdf

UNECE. "Social Housing in the UNECE Region: Models, Trends and Challenges." 2015. Accessed April 20, 2017. https://www.unece.org/fileadmin/DAM/hlm/documents/Publications/Social_Housing_in_UNECE_region.pdf

Woods, Mary N. *From craft to profession: The practice of architecture in nineteenth-century America*. University of California Press, 1999.

Yakubu, Paul. "Affordable housing within abandoned buildings in Lagos." *TheGuardian: Opinion*. December 24, 2019. Accessed on January 24, 2020. https://guardian.ng/opinion/affordable-housing-within-abandoned-buildings-in-lagos/

Yates, J. K., and Leslie C. Battersby. "Master builder project delivery system and designer construction knowledge." *Journal of Construction Engineering and Management* 129, no. 6 (2003): 635-644.

PAPER #7.13

YOUTH DECARCERATION: USING SKETCH MODELS TO EXPLORE NON-PUNITIVE ATTITUDES

Julia Williams Robinson[a]
[a]School of Architecture, University of Minnesota, Minneapolis, Minnesota, USA

ABSTRACT

Many forces drive change in the youth incarceration system in the United States, including a newly appreciated need to treat youth offenders with trauma-informed care (Olafson et al 2016). In the case discussed here, the University of Minnesota, and Hennepin county in Minnesota, USA, interested in replacing the existing suburban youth correctional facility with community-based treatment facilities, worked together to explore the role of architecture in creating appropriate settings. The design of existing youth incarceration facilities despite intentions of rehabilitation and treatment, often conveys negative ideas such as punishment, privation and shame. The design studio asked how to design architecture that supports positive attitudes such as pride, hope, curiosity and safety? The focus of this paper is an exercise in which students were asked to explore different attitudes using sketch models.
Sketch models, rough, quickly made, ambiguous physical models, "crafted for their own ends, separated from the goal of a final design." (Morris, 2006:37), allowed students to explore how architecture conveys and/or supports feelings, attitudes and behaviors. This paper presents student explorations that combine models with annotations and drawings, demonstrating their value in exploring attitudes. Such models show spatial arrangements without a big investment of time, allowing spatial ideas to be quickly developed. Combining comparative models with annotations and drawings allowed for development of more detail and examination of design intentions, often generated unconsciously, to be made explicit. The exercise gave students an understanding of how the attitudes they were exploring could be manifest in design, thus permitting their pursuit consciously in later phases of the project. By pursuing two contrasting attitudes students came to understand how they could combine ideas to make more complex designs.

KEYWORDS

Youth; incarceration; trauma-informed care; sketch models; attitudes.

INTRODUCTION

In the United States a concern with mass incarceration, high rates of minority confinement, and in facilities for youth, has generated a national movement toward deinstitutionalization and inclusion of trauma-based treatment. There is increasing awareness internationally, that youth who get in trouble with the law often are subject to trauma in their home and community (Royal Australasian College of Physicians, 2011), and that facilities need to treat youth for this condition (Ford et al, 2006).
The research described here took place between 2018 and 2019 in the context of an architectural design studio that was jointly taught by Julia Robinson a university instructor, Daniel Treinen an architect in BWBR Architects, a firm that designs justice facilities for youth, and Angela Cousins, a government official in the local, Hennepin

County department of corrections who works with facilities for adjudicated juveniles. The purpose of the studio was to investigate new approaches to program and design of facilities that move away from older attitudes of punishment toward youth, and toward education, rehabilitation, transformation, and de-institutionalization. The studio, taught for two years with anticipation of at least one additional year, was conceived as a research-based course that engages in exploratory research as community-engaged scholarship (Robinson & Christenson, forthcoming). The first year it was taught, working with the corrections data, the class identified two neighborhoods from which most adjudicated youth in the juvenile facility originated. The subsequent year, the studio affiliated with the University Research and Outreach-engagement Center, a university neighborhood research center, and worked with community participants to understand, and design for the specific neighborhood context of North Minneapolis.

A central purpose of the studio was to understand how ideas, attitudes and behaviors represented in architecture can inform the design of youth facilities in support of healthy environments. Sketch models are described by Morris as "three-dimensional sketches , ideas made visible but not concluded in any way, They need not strain to arrive at a definitive model, but can be crafted for their own ends, separated from the goal of a final design." (Morris, 2006:37), They were chosen as a way to explore the relation between design and attitudes. These are accompanied with sketches and annotations that explore why and how the models are designed, addressing assumptions, hypotheses and design directives.

1. SKETCH MODELS AT THE UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA

The material architectural sketch model is an acknowledged form of investigation in architecture (e.g. Mills, 2005), but there is little scholarship around its use to study sensory ideas of materiality and relationship, rather than such concerns as structure and buildability. In contrast to the study model, or the digital sketch model, which represent an already-formed design idea, the content of the material sketch model emerges as it is constructed.

There is a history of the use of sketch models at the University of Minnesota School of Architecture. In the 1980s inspired by design instructor and phenomenologist, Gunter Dittmar, who introduced the Rip-N-Tear model to the school (Mulfinger, 1985), many colleagues began to use sketch models in a variety of ways (e.g. Weeks, 1985; Robinson 1990). Dittmar saw the sketch model, or Rip-N-Tear model as he named it, as a way to explore the phenomenological aspects of design. He assigned the models for their potential to suggest the ineffable, of the poetics of space. The ambiguity of the models allows designer and viewer to read many possible ideas into them, which interested other faculty to apply them in a variety of ways, even though Dittmar thought his colleagues used the models incorrectly.

Several faculty members used the models to explore narrative; for example, students might read a provocative story and design the place it evoked. Students would model and sketch the settings, using the narrative descriptions as the basis for a design. Other faculty members saw the possibility of annotating models and drawings to making implicit ideas conscious. For example, Dale Mulfinger (1985) and I (1990), have paired sketch models with annotations that encouraged students to identify elements in the model that could be used in design. In a studio with Stephen Weeks in the early 1980's

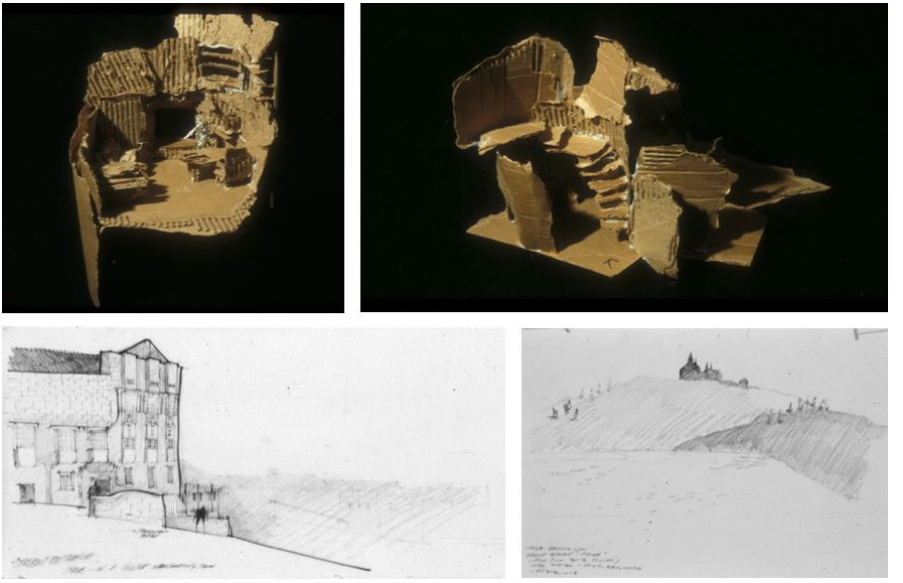


Figure 1. Sketch Models and Annotated Drawings Used to Explore Scholar Spaces at a Sherlock Holmes Library. Work by Julie Maple, 1988, Instructors, J. S Weeks and J. W. Robinson

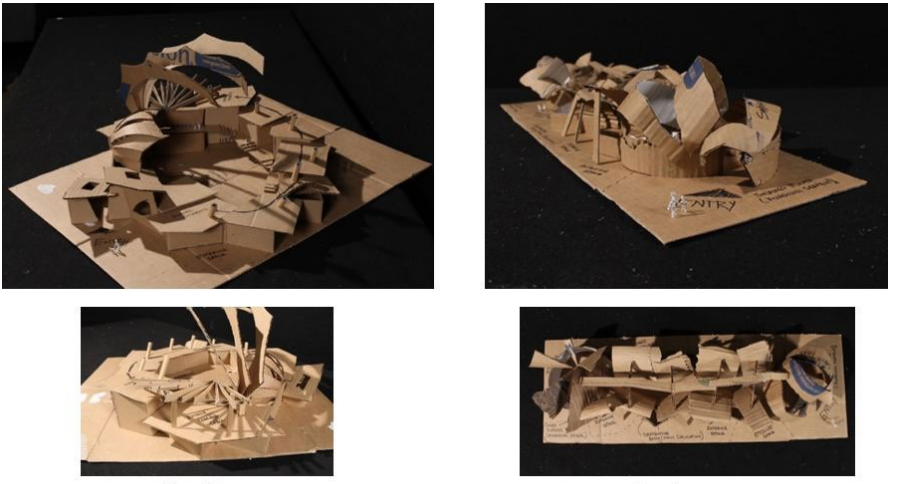


Figure 2. Sketch Models Showing Two Arrangements of a Waldorf School Developed Using Analogy (note annotations on the models). Mark Norberg for Arch 3282: Architectural Programming, Spring 2012, taught by the author

on the design of a Sherlock Homes library, he and I were interested in annotated drawings and had the students make sketch models as well as drawings that they annotated (see Illustration #1). Additionally, in studios with Dale Mulfinger and Lance LaVine we assigned sketch models along with drawings and annotations for several different exercises. Sketch models continued to be used by a variety of faculty as a teaching tool into the 1990's, and early 2000's, although recently their use is significantly reduced.

Nevertheless, I have continued to employ sketch models in my teaching as a way for students to examine the relation between ritual and place, and, often using analogy, to bring all the small explorations together to develop an overall design, using exercises from Programming as Design (Robinson & Weeks, 1984). Typically, the ritual-place exercises ask student to include scale figures in the model, to make annotations on the model, or to make sketches of their key findings and annotate the sketches. The exercises examining individual spaces are combined to make several optional spatial arrangements for the building. The annotations of the individual spaces and of the overall arrangements are used to make the ideas explored in the models explicit, so they can be consciously used in design. This is the approach taken in this research.

2. INVESTIGATING YOUTH INCARCERATION

In the fall of 2017, stimulated by Angela Davis's and Michelle Alexander's work on prisons and Jim Crow (Davis 2003; Alexander 2012), I decided to apply earlier research on de-institutionalization (Robinson, 2006) to incarceration. Being without funding or expertise on incarceration, but having made contact with other researchers working on the topic at the university, especially law professor, JaneAnn Murray, I saw an opportunity to begin research on the issues with students in design studio classes. The names of the classes show the evolution of research and understanding between the initial semester studying incarceration in general and the later studies about addressing youth: Reconceiving Incarceration (Spring 2018), Reconceiving Youth Incarceration (Fall 2018), Preventing Youth Incarceration (Fall 2019), Expanding Youth Opportunity (Fall 2020).

2.1. First Studio: Reconceiving Incarceration for Adults

I organized the first iteration of teaching by myself with advice from faculty members from the Law School and Public Affairs, as a 7-week vertical (for years one and two) graduate student design module that focused on adult incarceration. During the module, students visited a local adult correctional facility, completed assigned and discovered readings, watched videos on prisons and Jim Crow and solitary confinement, and engaged in discussions with invited speakers. The instructional approach included exercises on preconceptions, precedent analysis, ritual-place analysis, and schematic design development. The studio assignment was the design of a non-punitive prototype to be located an ideal site type of their choosing.

The sketch exercise was a central feature of the process of designing a non-punitive facility. It was seven days long, beginning in the third week of the seven week course. At this point in the research, several invited speakers had described their experiences 1) being incarcerated, 2) as parents of adjudicated youth 3) as lawyers working with the incarceration system, 4) as designers of youth facilities for incarceration or mental health, or 5) as workers in incarceration facilities. Several of these individuals also participated in reviews. The just-completed precedent analysis included innovative European sites for adult and youth offenders, as well as other institutional settings where non-incarcerated people live in (dormitories, nursing homes, summer camps, convents, monasteries, etc.). In consideration of such

Theraputic: Living Units
Units emphasize daylighting and connection to nature, containing expansive views and direct access to the outdoors. Cushy furniture, a bathtub, and personal artwork provide theraputic touches.

Individual Growth: Living Units
Units are customizable and furniture rearrangeable to individual tastes and are meant to teach residents how to take responsibility for maintaining their own living spaces.

Figure 3. Sketch Models Exploring Non-Punitive Attitudes for Incarcerated Adults. Design Module Spring 2018: Arch 5250: Reconceiving Incarceration taught by the author

precedents, the sketch exercise explored such attitudes as education, normalization, and therapy, some proposed by faculty others by students.

Students were asked to choose two contrasting attitudes to represent, and most took normative incarceration as one attitude and another attitude for contrast. The paired models and associated sketches and annotations led to design features the students employed (see Illustration 3), although the annotations were somewhat limited, and the level of insight was inconsistent across students, with some students identifying a number of specific features, and others providing more generalized conclusions. The graduate students understood the purpose of the exercise and used it effectively, including generating a final schematic design from the sketch models of the parts.

The guests at interim reviews included faculty from the law school and the institute for public affairs as well as several from the county department of corrections, including Angela Cousins from juvenile facilities, with whom I agreed to continue to research the following fall. The reviewers were especially fascinated by the explorations of alternative attitudes.

2.2. Second Studio: Reconceiving Juvenile Rehabilitation

The second iteration of the class was a 15-week design studio in which pre-professional undergraduates in their last year of study work with practicing architects. In most instances, practicing architects with teaching experience lead the students in a project that their office has completed or is working on. The studio is conceived as providing the opportunity for students to complete the design development of a project, providing experience with working drawings. In contrast, this project was research-oriented and both the practicing architect and the instructor from the county department of corrections were interested in understanding more about youth incarceration. The architect's firm designs facilities for adjudicated youth, and the department of corrections was interested in improving their youth facilities as well as developing a spectrum of care for youth.

Because we had fifteen weeks, we were able to visit more facilities, this time including the adult incarceration facility visited in iteration 1, but also the local site for youth offenders, and as an exemplary comparison, an architecturally notable addiction treatment

center for adolescents. Again, during the semester the students completed assigned readings, identified new important areas for research, watched the videos on incarceration, and heard guest speakers, but this time focusing on youth and including a psychiatrist who spoke on adolescent mental health. The instructional approach was similar, but with the extra time, included neighborhood and site analysis.

The two-week sketch models assignment took place in week four, right after the precedent analysis exercise and lasted two weeks, again exploring the themes of non-punitive design. Unfamiliar with sketch models, it took the undergraduate students a while to understand how they could reveal attitudes, and how to use drawings an annotations to document their learning. Some students grasped the idea (see Illustration), but others did somewhat impoverished models and drawings.

Once again students were encouraged to understand attitudes such as education, normalization and therapy. As before, they were asked to make paired models of a range of place types such as social spaces, eating places, circulation or corridors, sleeping areas, etc. Students used the models to explore different attitudes about spaces, but only loosely used pairing as a tool. Nevertheless, most students carried ideas identified at this stage into their final designs. We did not ask students to use their sketch model explorations to generate the overall design.

Subsequent to the sketch model study, students deepened their research, and in response to research specifically on adolescents, included consideration of trauma-based care. Additionally, students became concerned for institutionalized racism in response to our site visits, where we found that youth in the county facility housed exclusively youth of color, while the addiction treatment center housed 90% Caucasian youth. Statistics from the department of corrections showed that the youth in the county facility came almost exclusively from impoverished areas As a

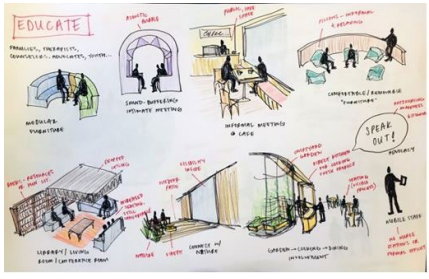


Figure 4. Model Exploring Entry & Annotated Drawings Identifying. Architectural Characteristics of Rehabilitation and Education for At-Risk Youth, Kelly Mork, Architecture 5212: Reconceiving Youth Incarceration, Fall 2018

result of these discoveries, the class decided that it was not appropriate to simply design better facilities, but that youth incarceration needed to be prevented. The county had suggested the class develop a spectrum of care for adolescents, but due to our findings, the group decided we needed to understand a spectrum of care for the families and the neighborhoods as well as youth. These discoveries led many students to consider designing places not just for youth, but also for families. At the end-of-semester review, the students suggested moving the sketch exercise to later in the semester when they had selected their program.

2.3. Studio 3: Preventing Juvenile Incarceration

Iteration three took place in fall of 2019. Because the previous studio had identified neighborhoods as being important contributors to the solution, this year -again working with architect Daniel Treinen and department of corrections juvenile representative, Angela Cousins- we decided it would be important to include community members in our research. The studio affiliated with the University of Minnesota's Robert J Jones University research and Outreach-Engagement Center on the city's Northside that was the site for a community meeting at the beginning of the semester and four additional reviews, These reviews included community participants who had been identified by a consultant recommended by the center and who received a stipend to work with us.

Like the previous year, the fall 2019 class engaged with readings and videos, visited the two incarceration facilities and the center for teen addiction, and heard from various experts. The class also toured the neighborhood and visited a neighborhood health center. Whereas previously the sketch exercise introduced the program, following the recommendation of the previous year's students, this semester we assigned the sketch exercise in week seven, after students had identified their program, as a way to explore the character of the facility. The exercise only lasted one week, which turned out to be more successful, as the

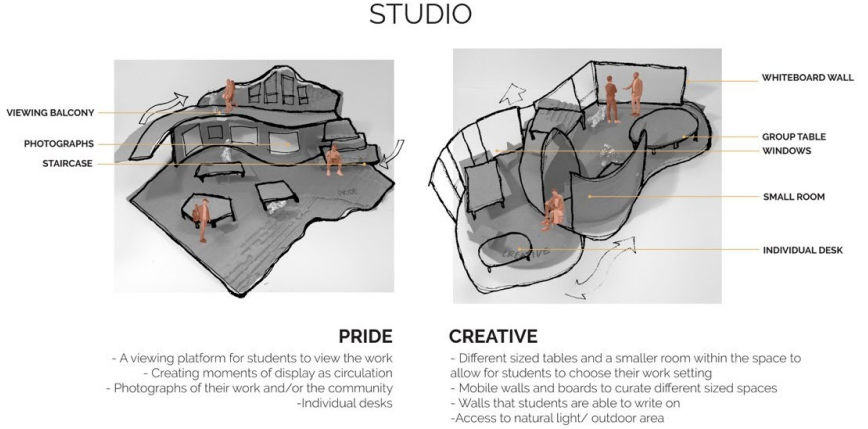


Figure 4. Paired Sketch Models Exploring Contrasting Attitudes for a Studio Space in a Residential Videography Job Education Facility, for Post- High School At-Risk Youth Maura McDaniels and Assia Rodriguez, Architecture 5212: Preventing Youth Incarceration, Fall 2019

students were motivated to explore spaces they knew were part of their design. Probably as a result of this improved understanding, the choice of attitudes transformed from being what one might call "building function-based," such as "education," "normalization"' and "therapy", to more specific terms, such as "curiosity," "transparency," "vulnerability," "security," "pride," and "creative" that captured the feelings they were trying to engender in their buildings. Again, students were asked to select contrasting terms to represent, and to feel free to represent apparent contradictions in the models.

As typical, on the first day of the assignment, students made a series of models in class and discussed everyone's models as the afternoon progressed. The big challenge the first day of the exercise was to choose contrasting terms that related to their projects. By the next class, once they had selected their contrasting ideas, they had successfully developed a series of contrasting models and fully understood the purpose of the exercise (see Illustration 4).

For the final day of the exercise they combined their paired models to create a sketch building layout. During this phase they were excited to discover that they could take the attitudes they had explored independently and combine them in various ways for different parts of their designs, this was especially interesting to those who at first thought their two ideas were oppositional. For example, the students who chose vulnerability and security realized if they could incorporate both attitudes in their spaces, it would allow more richness and choice to the people who would use them.

This time, we asked students to make a large model from their accumulated sketch models to represent their overall building design. This turned out to be very successful, and students developed a rich set of designs based on this exercise (see Illustration #5). This exercise was followed by a site exploration exercise in which students had to make 2 contrasting organizations and locate them on 3 different sites.

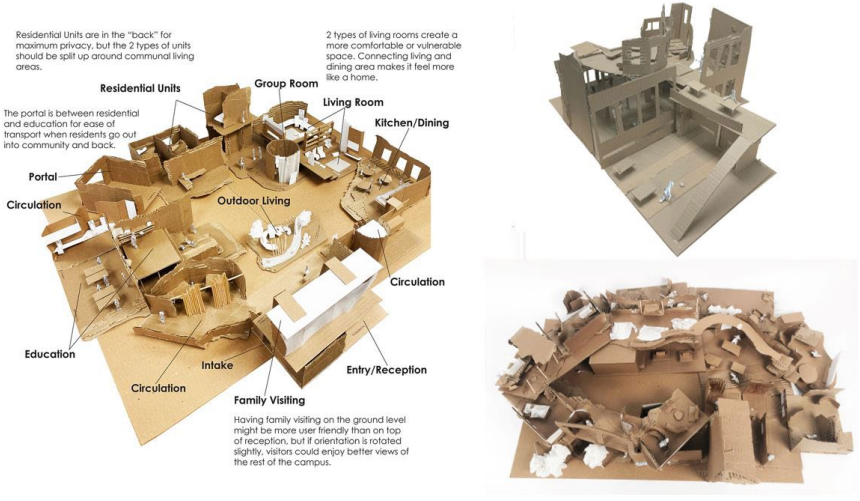


Figure 5. Combined Sketch Models Representing the Whole Building, one annotated Transition Residence by Jillian Gelle & Kristin Just, Neighborhood Youth Center by Angelo Davalos, and Videography Facility by Maura McDaniels & Assia Rodriguez, Arch 5212: Preventing Youth Incarceration, Fall 2019

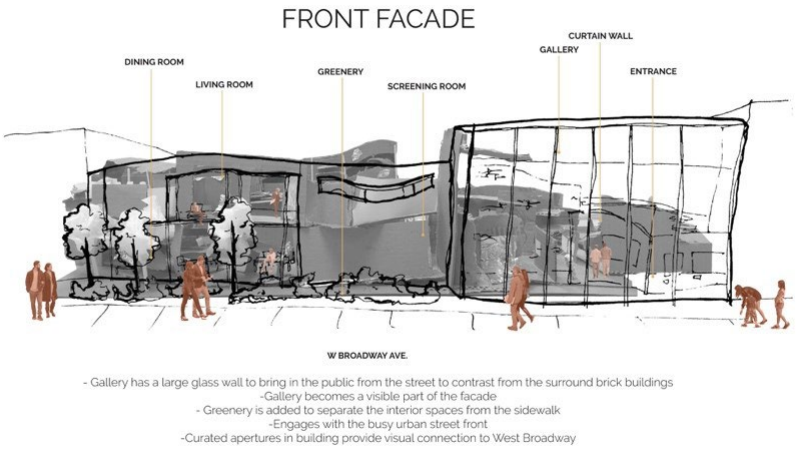


Figure 6. Annotated Model Photograph Used to Design a Façade A Residential Videography Job Education Facility, for Post- High School At-Risk Youth Maura McDaniels & Assia Rodriguez Architecture 5212, Fall 2019

This year as last, most students didn't annotate the models, and only some annotated associate drawings. But several of many of them annotated photographs of the models. And one group used their photos of the combined model to develop an interior courtyard and façade design (see Illustration 6).

The final projects for this third iteration exhibited a much better understanding of attitudes than previous classes. In the final course evaluations, one student commented "Exercises like the attitudes and rituals, with quick sketch and modeling were great! They were very helpful at visualizing the space as a design tool." Having changed the timing of the sketch exercise to later in the semester when students have chosen their program, they are in a better position to explore attitudes using sketch models.

CONCLUSION

Sketch models were chosen to explore attitudes because of their three-dimensionality, their ability to generate ideas in the process of making (as opposed to representing ideas already formed), their ambiguity that allows multiple readings, extending the imagination, and the ability to create many models quickly. By repeated use of the models over three years we discovered that the timing and pedagogical sequence of exercises significantly affected use of sketch models as a tool to explore attitudes. When we realized their best use was not as an introductory exercise, but as one to develop the architectural program, it more significantly influenced the schematic design.

At the first iteration, the graduate students seemed to be able to understand the purpose of the exercise from the beginning, and were pleased to explore the issues, although the

annotations were not as prolific as had been anticipated, and the attitudes were accepted as given, likely because of the placement in the semester. For this course, the students assimilated the ideas successfully, and the final projects reflected an understanding of how attitudes affect the design of places. For example, students were concerned to incorporate such ideas as choices in the way that residents of their facilities would inhabit their facility, sequencing activities to encourage engagement while assuring control, providing beautiful materials and comfortable furniture and locating facilities in a wooded area or incorporating natural light and plants in interior areas

The undergraduate students seemed to need more time and motivation to explore attitudes. The first year, they fully engaged in the exercise, accepting the attitudes they were given, but were not able to take the ideas as far as the previous year. Although originally, it seemed that sketch models would be a good exercise to introduce students to the challenge of designing with an understanding of how spatial configuration and arrangement affects people's attitudes and behaviors, this did not turn out to be true. At the beginning of a semester devoted to gaining an understanding of the importance of preventing incarceration, students have insufficient knowledge to know which attitudes are important, and why, and then to care about how to design using attitudes as a generative idea.

The sketch study exercises worked best when students had a greater understanding of the issues based on such information on readings, site visits, experts such as community members and had selected their program. Such knowledge enhances not only the comparative sketch model analysis exercise, but also the newly added combined model exercise so that it more effectively influenced the quality of the final design. When students understand and identify not only the qualities they are trying to embody, but also have criteria for generating and evaluating their designs, they can design with more nuance, more confidence and can achieve better outcomes.

REFERENCES

Alexander, Michelle. 2012. *The New Jim Crow; Mass Incarceration in the Age of Colorblindness,* New York: The New Press.

Davis, Angela. 2003. *Are Prisons Obsolete?* New York: Seven Stories Press.

Julian D. Ford, J. D., P.K.Kerig, N. Desai & J. Feierman. 2006. "Psychosocial Interventions for Traumatized Youth in the Juvenile Justice System: Research, Evidence Base, and Clinical/Legal Challenges," *OJJDP Journal of Juvenile Justice,* 5:1, Spring 2006, p33.

Mills, Criss B. 2005. *Designing with models: A studio guide to making and using architectural design models.* Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons.

Mulfinger, Dale. 1985. "The Use of Narrative program & Rip'N'Tear Model Techniques for Teaching the Design of Owner Occupied Housing," in Georgia Bizios (ed), *The Teaching of Housing: Proceedings of the Southwest Regional Meeting, Association of Collegiate Schools of Architecture.* New Orleans: Tulane University, p83-85.

Olafson, Erna, Jane Halladay Goldman, Carlene Gonzalez, and National Council of Juvenile and Family Court Judges, Reno, Nevada. 2016. "Trauma-Informed Collaborations Among Juvenile Justice and Other Child-Serving Systems: An Update," *OJJDP Journal of Juvenile Justice*, 5:6, Spring, 2016, 1-13.

Robinson, Julia W. 1990. "Architectural Research: Incorporating Myth & Science" *JAE. 4:* 20-32.

Robinson, Julia W. 2006. *Institution & Home: Architecture as a Cultural Medium,* Transformations Series, Delft, Netherlands: Techne Press.

Robinson, Julia W. Preventing Youth Incarceration; Studio-Based Research," *Future Praxis: Applied Research as a Bridge Between Theory and Practice,* ARCC 2019, Toronto. https://www.arcc-journal.org/index.php/repository/article/view/603/477

Robinson, Julia W. and Michael Christenson. Forthcoming. "Design Studio as Research Site: Generating Hypotheses and Test Cases," in In Delong, M., Fisher, T., Hokanson, B., Asojo, A. & Strohecker, C. (Eds.), *Collegial Design: Thinking and Making at a Community-Engaged University.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Robinson, J. W. and J.S, Weeks, 1984. *Programming as Design* (monograph). Minneapolis: School of Architecture & Landscape Architecture, University of Minnesota

The Royal Australasian College of Physicians. 2011. 'The Health and Wellbeing of Incarcerated Adolescents', 2011, Sydney. https://www.racp.edu.au/docs/default-source/advocacy-library/the-health-and-wellbeing-on-incarcerated-adolescents.pdf

Weeks, J. S., 1985. "The Use of Narratives in the Design Studio," Reflections: The Journal of the School of Architecture, University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, 3:1, Fall.

PAPER #7.14

HERITAGE AS A RESOURCE, MEMORY AS A PROJECT. RESPONSIBLE NETWORK-BASED DESIGN STRATEGIES

Emilia Corradi[a], Alessando Raffa[a]
[a]Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy

ABSTRACT

The Italian territory is dotted with a large number of villages called Borghi Minori, that, for centuries, have represented the urban framework for vast territorial areas and identities inhabiting the landscape, now in a state of abandon. As part of an inter-disciplinary research on the fragility of the so-called 'minor' diffused heritage, this contribution responds to the present and future need to imagine new forms of living and transformation strategies for these abandoned settlements, through the creation of an operational methodology and the identification of specific tools. The selected urban areas are rooted in the territories of the internal areas of Abruzzo, interpreted as laboratory-villages, in which to experiment with innovative mapping processes able to deal with the complexity of these contexts. Here present fragilities become resources for imagining possible future scenarios, to be specified by the same Communities in an open and polyphonic transformation design vision. From an application point of view, this work resulted in the construction of a dynamic, multiscalar and interdisciplinary 'atlas of trans-form-actions', aimed at identifying in the stratified layers of the landscape palimpsest, those resilient and silent modifications that made these territories habitable. An atlas, a project sharing knowledge and information, which is characterized by a marked design dimension. Here the transformative processes of the landscape are interpreted as a continuous sequence between past, present and future. Topographies of memory whose feature is a non-hierarchical network, made up of layers and rarefactions, which becomes the framework for the trans-form-action, in which design actions correspond to spatial devices, whose architectural expression will derive from present and future needs, a sharing path, listening places and people.

KEYWORDS

Minor diffused heritage; transformation; weakness; abandonment; reuse.

THE WEAK COSTELLATION OF BORGHI MINORI D'ABRUZZO. AN INTRODUCTION

The Italian territory has among its peculiarities that of being dotted with a large number of small villages, the Borghi Minori, that have been suffering for decades due to depopulation, causing different abandonment conditions over time. About 6,000 villages (Istat 2014), with a prevalent distribution in central and southern Italy along the Apennines but also in Alpine areas, were abandoned over time for various traumatic reasons, such as earthquakes, hydrogeological instability, epidemics, wars and, in the years of the post-war economic boom, the rural exodus in favor of concentrated urbanization; finally, more recently, owing to the demographic decline. The Borghi Minori, in fact, are only the "tip of the iceberg" of a widespread and complex process of abandonment that involves the internal areas and that has determined a turning point, apparently not reversible, in the contemporary Italian settlement dynamics. As shown in the 'Geography mapping of

abandonment. The dismissal of the villages in Italy' (Postiglione 2006), it is possible to identify three characterizing conditions: completely abandoned villages, those partially abandoned and those in abandonment but with a newly founded neighboring center. With respect to this categorization, which intentionally reduces the complexity of the abandonment processes to bring the phenomenon to a national scale, the present research has looked at the second condition, the most widespread one. It has considered those villages that have never suffered a complete dissolution, in which the abandonment 'process' is taking place today. Economically depressed for decades, these villages are often isolated, difficult to reach, inadequate to contemporary living standards and characterized by a certain instability due to cataclysms. Villages in which the surviving communities, custodians of a material and immaterial heritage, seek forms of adaptation to the disappearance of a socio-economic-cultural reality that obviously cannot return. We will look at a specific context, that of the internal areas of Abruzzo, in which the phenomenon described above, in particular when connected to the effects of an often violent seismic activity, generated a landscape of widespread abandonment, but where, at different times, possible strategies were tested and design solutions adopted to respond to the need to inhabit the constellation of Borghi Minori that characterize this landscape. For centuries these villages were the most frequent urban settlement model in Italy and the expression of specific and resilient ways of inhabiting the territory. Today these villages reveal their yielding fragility, and, despite the interest shown by parts of the scientific community and civil society, the experiments carried out reveal working methods and tools often inadequate to the complexity of those contexts. Here the heritage dimension is 'minor', that is, not made up of exceptional elements. The value lies in the relationship between the parts, at different scales, from the territory to the 'room'. This non-hierarchical and layered network, made up of very different and minute elements, but nonetheless important, is rather foundational in the process of building and modifying the landscape identity. These elements are fragile, since they are often unknown, not registered and also, sometimes forgotten, and for this reason often distant from protection mechanisms that could take them into the present and in the future, if included within enhancing processes through a responsible transformation. The transformation project for these villages requires new looks, methods and tools capable of managing the complexity that these realities require. In an interdisciplinary vision open to various stakeholders, the architectural discipline and its project become a shared place for confrontation, to imagine new scenarios of responsible reuse for the Borghi Minori landscape.

1. RESEARCH OBJECTIVES

This work is part of an ongoing research by the Department of Architecture and Urban Studies[1], Department of Excellence, on the issues of territorial fragility. Its objective, among others, is to highlight issues, identify work methods and tools for the strategical design of the minor diffused heritage, recognized as one of the central themes to promote the future quality of the territory and characterizing contemporary cities in Italy. In this framework, the present research looks at the constellation of abandoned Borghi Minori, imagining interdisciplinary and shared reuse strategies to address today's needs. The present research has two main objectives:

• From a methodological-operational point of view, it intends to identify a working method

[1] Students and graduates from the Bachelor and Master degree programs from the School of Architecture Urban Planning Construction Engineering, Politecnico di Milano, also collaborated in the research project: Abagnale, R., Ambrosi, A., Airoldi, F., Ballarani, G., Camboni, J., Finardi, R., Forcignanò, R., Miranda, M., Montisano, M., Santus, A., Sartorio, S., Scaioli, A., Tolazzi, S. and You, Z.

and tools for the 'open' project of transforming abandoned urban settlements, by means of a continuous exchange between theory and practice mediated by the design process. Method and tools will be tested on a selection of villages characterized by different semi-abandonment conditions and located in the internal areas of Abruzzo. A taxonomy including research and project experiences has become necessary, in order to compare methods and tools, bringing out potential and critical issues.

• From an application point of view, the research intends to build a dynamic and multidisciplinary atlas of the trans-form-actions for the smaller villages of Abruzzo, to highlight the dynamism of the stratifications with particular reference to the most recurrent forms of fragility in the internal areas. The atlas is designed to offer both a reading of the transformations of resources over time, with forms of fragility and resilience, and an operational tool, capable of updating future research, processes and projects that will involve the identified areas.

2. SEARCHING FOR AN OPERATIONAL METHODOLOGY

2.1. Mapping researches and projects on Borghi Minori. State of the art

In the context of the design disciplines, the topic of abandonment and reuse of the Borghi Minori has been the subject of multiple reflections and experiments with the most varied outcomes. In a previously mentioned research work, '*Geographies of abandonment. The dismissal of the villages in Italy'*, (Postiglione 2006),), in addition to restoring the national and international scope of the theme, a taxonomy of projects for the reuse of those villages is systematized. Among the experiences mentioned: the 'cybervillage' of Colletta di Castelbianco, designed by Giancarlo de Carlo; the idea of a 'widespread factory', with which the industrialist Brunello Cucinelli rethought Solomeo (PG); the 'diffuse hotel model' of Santo Stefano di Sextantio, which will be replicated in other villages purchased by the entrepreneur-architect Daniele Khilgren. These are widespread strategies, yet limited to the reuse of the built-space. Starting from an examination of the existing literature and from design experiences on abandoned villages, work methodologies and approaches were compared, in order to bring out potential and critical issues. In this theoretical-critical framework, an orientation towards the reuse of built heritage emerges, not fully grasping their regenerative potential. Recently, the research experience of the University of Chieti, summarized in the essay *The region of the major highlands of Abruzzo* (Angrilli and Morrica, 2017) widens the scope, not only to the built heritage but also to the open space in relation to the villages, identifying, in particular, the "proximity landscape". This space is defined as a "transition space between urban formations and the open wooden-agro-pastoral space" and indicated by the authors as "strategic for territorial recycling objectives." (Angrilli and Morrica 2017, 37). The present research takes a further step forward in this direction, through an 'ecological' perspective on the theme of the Borghi Minori, and more generally on the diffused 'minor heritage'. The villages, if we consider the territorial structure of the internal areas, in fact, are nothing more than urban densities compared to a vast network of places, areas, artefacts and materials, expression of the adaptability of the communities to the surrounding environment over time.

The obsolescence process that affected them is actually more extensive, it concerns the entire territory; its profound reasons can only be understood through a relational approach in order to frame them in dynamic processes that consider space, time and the communities that inhabit them. For these reasons, we have looked at the 'minor heritage' as a 'minor heritage landscape'; a landscape, therefore a place of sedimentation of processes, an expression of the interaction between the

Figure 1. Multi-space and multi-temporal layering reading of the abandoned village of Navelli. Source: (Corradi, E., Raffa, A., Santus, K., Sartorio, S., and Scaioli, A. 2020).

environment and the communities that have shaped the territory for their own subsistence, in a resilient way, adapting to an impervious nature, to the inaccessibility of places and to traumatic events. A fragile landscape, made up of very different identity elements, in terms of morphology, materials, scales, etc., which slowly loses its most minute elements, progressively compromising its specificity.

2.2. A historical ecology perspective on minor heritage landscape. Theoretical framework

In the broad vision that this research adopts, from the village to the landscape to which it is rooted, from a theoretical-critical point of view, an element of innovation regards the opportunities, currently unexpressed, for the design disciplines that operate on the heritage landscape, which could arise from the intersection with the theoretical contribution of Historical Ecology (Balée 1998; Baleé and Erickson, 2005; Crumley 1994, 2012) for a modification-oriented knowledge. Starting from the idea of *longue durée* (Braudel 1958) and palimpsest (Corboz 1985), the landscape is interpreted as the provisional and stratified result of the interaction between man in his social dimension, the community, and nature. Historical Ecology proposes the overcoming of the division between anthropic and natural through the emphasis placed

on the process of trans-form-action on the landscape; certainly a lengthy process, but made up of numerous 'critical moments', which are contextualized in a dynamic frame in space and time, breaking down reductive schemes. Furthermore, historical-ecological approaches are multi-disciplinary (linking archeology, history, geography, ecology, design, etc.), multi-scalar (moving from macro to micro processes) and multi-oriented (researchers, stakeholders, managers and designers) (Crumley and others, 2017). In this perspective, it was decided to look at the landscape in terms of fragility. The intent was to investigate the generative processes of present fragility in a dynamic way, as the unstable result of secular interactions between man and the environment, which produced the current geography of fragility in the internal areas of Abruzzo. These fragilities have redemption possibilities, often turning into possible resources. Within the dialectic established between fragility and resources, a greater awareness of the fragile processes that have affected the areas in question, together with the forms of adaptation put in place, constitute a source of important information for projective knowledge. Past forms of resilience, combined with current innovation, can generate processes capable of facing contemporary challenges, acting local while thinking global. Through a topographical criterion it was possible to intersect various conditions of fragility linked to four key resources: soil, water, infrastructure and built-heritage.

2.3. Methodology

The methodological construction of an experimental nature intends to structure an open project, in order to welcome complexity, substantiated by "an ethic of interconnection and solidarity between humans". (Morin 2010). This experimentation of a methodological-operational nature will be better specified and verified in the future through comparison with other contexts. Within this perspective, the architectural project, understood in a broad way, plays a strategic and structuring role, capable, at the same time, of welcoming a wealth of specific visions and projects, even at different times, affirming its positioning as a listening and confrontation platform oriented towards transformation, in an interdisciplinary way.

The listening of people, groups, associations and communities, conducted on the occasion of workshops and visits to the pilot villages, was essential both to delve into a complex reality and, above all, to understand the future scenarios that those who live and care for places imagine. A highly resilient social structure, albeit numerically small, in which an attempt has been made to engage in dialogue starting from the relationship established with the minor heritage spread locally today. Therefore, an attempt to develop a 'synthetic form' was aimed at harmonizing the listening of groups and communities, their needs and to offer a framework to their planning potential, together with the scientific interpretation of local fragilities; but also at 'dissolving' the contemporary complexity of the landscape of minor villages, through the decomposition of the different contexts through specific themes, an expression of the multiplicity of visions that characterized this research experience. The resulting mapping process required extensive reflection, not only regarding the tools to be adopted but also for sharing them, in an open critical perspective, raising problems and revealing opportunities over time, in a continuous polyphonic dialogue between listeners and narrators.

The application output, that is the dynamic atlas of the villages, is a selection of interpretative maps of fragilities, among those possible. It is an expression of the dialogue between researchers, groups and communities of the four selected villages. The atlas collects mappings at different scales and also describes the Borghi Minori networks, made up by points, lines and fields, all susceptible to transformation. With respect to these areas, an abacus of architectural

actions associated with spatial devices has been finalized and will be better specified over time, starting from the needs of the locals.

2.4. Mapping as a project. The design-oriented dynamic Atlas of Borghi Minori's landscape

The synthesis maps express the multidisciplinary approach adopted. These are qualitative but also quantitative elaborations, at different scales, of both material resources (infrastructure, nature, cultural heritage, soil, energy, etc.) and intangible (such as culture and traditional knowledge), the latter investigated through multi-criteria indicators. The in-depth resources have been dynamically linked to each other, both with regard to past transformations and the development scenarios, however uncertain, that will be introduced in internal areas by global changes (in particular climatic and pandemic), in line with the open planning perspective that this work supports.

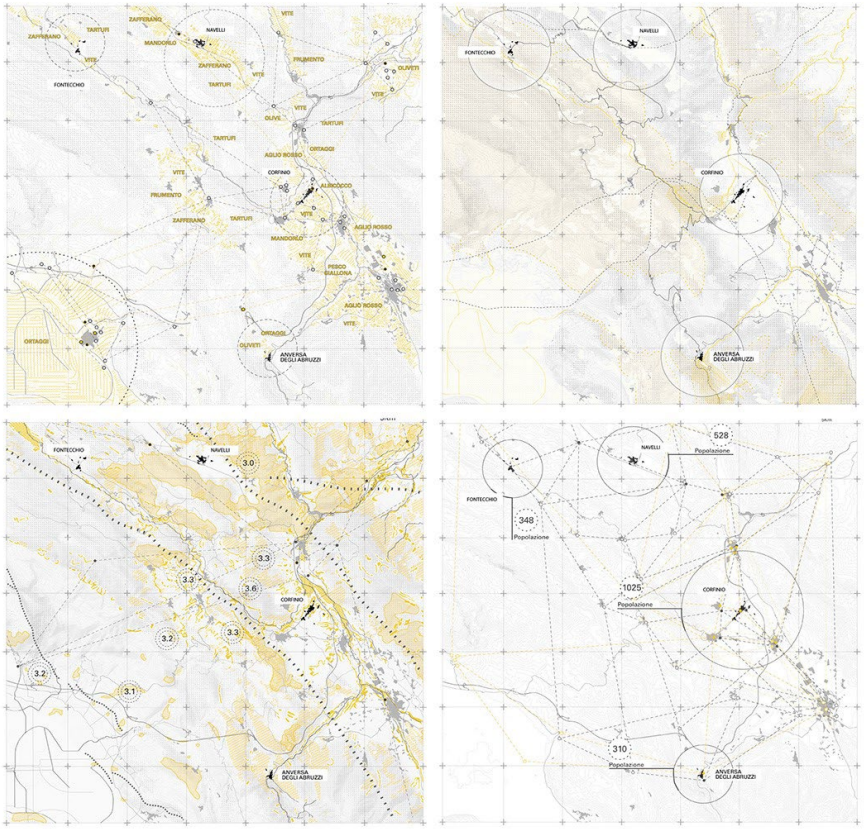


Figure 2. Maps of the Borghi Minori Network between Anversa degli Abruzzi, Corfinio, Fontecchio and Naveli. Traditional cropping infrastructure (top left corner); natural infrastructure (top right corner), tourism infrastructure (bottom right corner) and risk network (bottom left corner). Elaboration from the dynamic atlas. (PI Corradi, E., with: Raffa, A., Santus, K., Sartorio, S., and Scaioli, A. 2020).

The extension of the field of investigation, from the village to the system of relationships that deeply root the village in its context, called for appropriate tools capable of supporting a broad process / project of investigation of fragilities / resources.[2] The fragility mapping process, which took advantage of GIS technology and three-dimensional models, responds to the following needs:

- Interpreting materials and their specific fragilities in space and time, in a dynamic way, building a geography of fragility;
- Managing and communicating a large amount of data, interdisciplinary, multi-scalar and aimed at different targets (from researchers, administrations, citizens, etc.) and their implementation over time;
- Defining a non-hierarchical and operational network, a synthetic shape, which will frame specific future interventions.
- Guiding future transformations through an architectural abacus, which defines spatial devices, to be specified by future projects.

From an application point of view, the data collected were merged into an atlas of the Borghi Minori's fragile landscape. The atlas, like any form of cartographic representation, is interpretative and, in particular, is oriented to update and support future transformation processes. Furthermore, its dynamism allows continuous updating and monitoring, in order to direct the interventions according to a general and detailed vision. The aim was to conceive the construction of a dynamic multidisciplinary atlas, able to include different kinds of information, also non-topographical, over time. Furthermore, the atlas is configured as an interactive tool for researchers, administrators and professionals responsible for managing the territory, but also for civil society in order to build shared narratives.

2.5. Dynamic Network-based strategy and the architectural abacus

An operative topography of fragilities was thus outlined, a topography of memory, and therefore a project. The historical ecology approach to landscape, which allows to relate very close and distant times, spaces and visions, is based on listening to traces and their connection to present and future, welcoming the prefigurative and design-oriented dimension. The identified bio-cultural resources and the related forms of fragility were mapped together in the four selected laboratory villages - Anversa degli Abruzzi, Corfinio, Fontecchio, Navelli – revealing an operational topography in which the main feature is the network. Not a top-down network, a network originating from the intersection or coexistence of multi-temporal traces and contemporary needs of the inhabitants. A network with a high regenerative power for the Minor Villages, its peculiarities are capable of addressing in an integrated way the responsible reuse actions to the respective centers. Each of the four selected villages has its own peculiarities, which have been evaluated in order to predict possible shared futures. The interpretations outlined have been verified on the field, also through meeting occasions with the local communities and associations that brought out the daily vulnerability of an impoverished social context, but also the need for listening and dialogue; this also had an impact on the methodological construction.

From a polyphonic and open project perspective, that was considered to be pursued in light of the analysis of experiences "from above" as well as those that arose "from below", this network becomes a multi-scalar, territorial and urban framework, which defines nodes (existing elements that are involved in the strategy or new spatial devices), axis (existing connections redefined or new, elements with strong directionality) and fields

[2] The proposed approach to mapping refers to the epistemology of complexity and transdisciplinary (Morin 2001; Nicolescu 2002).

(significant areas re-signified by defining the edges) of a non-hierarchical network, made up of densifications and rarefactions, within which to identify architectural devices connected to specific design actions, through an abacus of solutions that other authors will be called to define over time (Di Franco et al., 2018).

2.6. Tools for an architectural reinvention in the Borghi Minori Network

It is clear that the set of theoretical and operational tools need to establish a defined, measurable, replicable range of actions. To define boundaries, networks, spatial and visual relationships, morphological sequences and connections to which conditions of fragility and interpretative potential are often linked, it is necessary to understand the new territorial vocation. Starting from instances and bottom-up actions - as already encountered in some internal areas- the difficulties deriving from depopulation, abandonment, and decommissioning find new revitalization scenarios through the rediscovery of the minor heritage of landscape and villages. Projects and processes in which the landscape is restored with new values and which, in turn, become maintenance strategies for the affected areas. An operating practice aimed at the recovery of artefacts and systems. The pathways, the small rural architectures linked to fields and pastures with their organization borrowed from former production cycles, increasingly find the attention of small, yet very active, communities, in which the search for life models closer to nature leads to rediscover alternative ways for production, such as the recovery of crops, techniques for sustainable land exploitation and farming. A rediscovery of artisan production cycles in which products aspire to becoming an excellence through the acquisition of values inspired by sustainability. In this experimental dimension, architecture can certainly intervene on both material and immaterial infrastructural networks, in order to guarantee a process of sustainability and sensitive insertion within contexts; neither mimetic nor vernacular, but suitable for expressing expectations, vocations and forms of living different from strong contexts, such as urban areas. An adaptation to the usage needs that fuses comfort together with technological performances, in which the digitization and access to global network resources is an important opportunity, often denied to people in these areas by market logics that act on much larger numbers of users. Building networks, even immaterial ones, can be a way of guaranteeing access to knowledge in these contexts, and if an opening process is also linked to the differentiated accessibility for users who are not only occasional, but stable because they can move and operate in contexts without constraints and physical barriers, it can be an opportunity to relaunch internal areas and smaller villages (Corradi, 2016). Architectural design can therefore become an element of coherence facilitation among different scales and heterogeneous objects and artefacts. Infrastructures, fields, houses, squares are all elements that converge to define how to use space. Different and new needs deriving from different instances and vocations need to be able to redeem these contexts also through simple operations, capable of combining on a small scale artifacts, and on a large scale, infrastructure networks, landscapes, cultivated fields, pastures, springs etc. Among the most interesting operations observed working in this direction, that emerged from the ongoing research, are those related to the architectural recovery of historical settlements such as in Fontecchio (Aq), a small town in the Abruzzo Apennines heavily damaged by the 2009 earthquake, where interventions for social housing were carried out, as well as small-scale social housing in smaller contexts, addressed for example to young families in urban areas with difficulties

in accessing the real estate market owing to their economic fragility.
This also requires innovative architectural design tools to hold together an existing heritage, which is fragile due to age, construction techniques, safety standards, technological and energy adaptation. An innovation project in which research by design can express replicable and transmissible methodologies, applying a scientific process to architecture. This also belongs to the strategies that architecture can implement to determine new topographies starting from the recognition of the value of heritage closely linked to landscape and to the context.

OPEN CONCLUSIONS

The experimentation, which is still ongoing, opens up to the identification of a possible operative methodology for the transformation project of the Borghi Minori. An approach that renews the consolidated methods of intervention towards this peculiar minor diffused heritage - essentially oriented towards the recovery of buildings - which does not lose the regenerative potential of a multi-spatial and multi-temporal relational gaze. The knowledge of the landscape's long-term processes that had produced different conditions of fragility and the needs and future possibilities envisioned by communities and groups together had been seen as an opportunity for responsible transformation. A topography of fragility which is a topography of the memory, a strong projection to the future. Furthermore, at the same time, it allows monitoring, continuously implementable, of changes accelerated by the effects of catastrophic events, as well as those also induced by global changes. An abacus of architectural devices, which correspond to specific actions, are based on this evolving multi-scalar network, which other authors will be called to specify according to present and future needs. Each transformation project finds meaning within the network and at the same time transforms it, in a process that continues the contemporary rewriting of the landscape, capable of opening unpredictable scenarios in the future. At the same time, the planning methods envisaged by the program incorporate the time variable themselves; the architectural devices show different degrees of permanence, oscillating between emergence and structurality. It was in fact decided, coherently with the type of dynamic readings of the Atlas, to imagine a project not only with several voices but also with several times, in which the architectural devices of the abacus can become pieces of an asynchronous assembly, in a continuous exchange between community and landscape, both realities in continuous transformation. The three methodological step listening, reading and designing are people-centred and interpreted dynamically. The Atlas, understood both as a form of knowledge and as a process/project, becomes an instrument for shared planning between researchers, designers, stakeholders and communities that will intervene in these places over time. In this context, the issue of abandonment is recontextualised with respect to a juxtaposition of other conditions of fragility, also social; the answers identified by the design experiments conducted in the specific contexts of the chosen Borghi Minori will manage to respond in a more founded way, both to local needs as well as to global themes. The open and polyphonic process/project is crucial for the replicability of the operational methodology: the landscape approach informs people-based heritage-centred cultural significance processes, both in the analytical and design phases. Here the architectural discipline, and its project, become a shared space for a heuristic dialogue between different disciplines, all collaborating for envisioning new scenarios of responsible reuse of the Borghi Minori's landscape.

REFERENCES

Angrilli, M. and Morrica, M. 2017. *La regione degli altopiani maggiori* d'Abruzzo. Recycle Italy. https://issuu.com/recycleitaly/docs/angrilli_morrica_altipiani_maggiori/4.

Balée, W. L. 1998. *Advances in historical ecology.* New York: Columbia University Press.

Baleé, W.L. and Erickson, C.L. 2005. *Time and complexity in historical ecology.* New York: Columbia University Press.

Braudel, F. 1958. "Histoire et Sciences sociales: la longue durée." *Annales. Economies, Sociétés, Civilisations* 4, 725-753.

Corboz, A. 1985. "Il Territorio Come Palinsesto." Casabella 49, 22–27. [Corboz A. (1983). The Land as Palimpsest. *Diogenes* 31(121), 12–34].

Corradi, E. 2016. "Infrastructure code_ Per un nuovo assetto di territori minori dell'abbandono." In *Infrastrutture minori nei territori dell'abbandono.* Le reti ferroviarie, ed. by Corradi, E. and Massacesi, R. 24-34. Roma: Aracne Editore.

Crumley, C. L. 1994. *Historical ecology: Cultural knowledge and changing landscapes.* Santa Fe: SAR Press.

Crumley, C. L. 2012. "A heterarchy of knowledges: Tools for the study of landscape histories and futures." In *Resilience and the cultural landscape: Understanding and managing change in human-shaped environments*, ed. by Plieninger, T. and Bieling, C. 303–314. Cambridge: University Press.

Crumley, C.L., Kolen, J.C.A., de Kleijn, M. and van Manen, N. 2017. Studying long-term changes in cultural landscapes: outlines of a research framework and protocol. *Landscape Research* 43, (8): 880-890. doi: 10.1080/01426397.2017.1386292.

Di Franco, A., Zanni, F., Giacomini, F., Medici, C., Raffa, A. and Zanda C. 2018. *Topografie operative.* Milano: Maggioli.

Istat. 2014. *Edifici e abitazioni. Nuovi dati del 15° Censimento generale della popolazione e delle abitazioni.* Roma: Istat.

Morin, M. 2000. *La testa ben fatta. Riforma dell'insegnamento e del pensiero.* 101. Milano: Cortina.

Morin, E. 2001a. *I sette saperi necessari all'educazione del futuro.* Milano: Cortina.

Morin, E. 2001b. *La natura della natura. Il metodo.* Milano: Feltrinelli.

Nicolescu, B. 2002. *Manifesto of Transdisciplinarity.* Albany: State University of New York Press.

Raffa, A. 2018. "Il presente del passato. Memoria e/è progetto". In *Topografie operative*, ed. by A. Di Franco, Zanni, F., Giacomini, F., Medici, C., Raffa, A. and Zanda C. 59-69. Milano: Maggioli.

Raffa, A., Medici, C. and Zanda C. 2018. "Nuove topografie operative. In *Topografie operative*, ed. by Di Franco A., Zanni F., Giacomini, F., Medici, C., Raffa, A. and Zanda C. 83-93. Milano: Maggioli.

Viganò, P. 2010. *Territorio dell'urbanistica. Il progetto come produttore di conoscenza.* Roma: Officina.

PAPER #7.15

DAYLIGHTING AND ELECTRIC LIGHTING POE STUDY OF A LEED GOLD CERTIFIED OFFICE BUILDING

Jae Yong Suk[a], Antonio Martinez-Molina[a], Hazem Rashed-Ali[a]
[a] The University of Texas at San Antonio, San Antonio, TX

ABSTRACT

Integrated daylighting harvesting and electric lighting system is a key strategy to maximize energy saving and improve occupant comfort and productivity in buildings. However, providing desired amount of light and outdoor views to occupants without causing visual discomfort has been challenging in practice. Located in IECC Zone 6A, the design of a selected LEED Gold certified office building was driven by environmental performance. The building houses a mix of open/closed office spaces, laboratories, conference rooms, and cafeteria in 90,839 sf floor area. Among a number of sustainable features, the fully glazed facades and automated daylight harvesting systems play a critical role in providing daylight in 77% of regularly occupied spaces and direct outdoor views in 91% of the spaces. The building is equipped with automated roller shading systems controlled by a sun tracker mounted on the roof. Electric lighting in open office spaces are automatically controlled by the pre-determined control algorithm. The paper presents a thorough investigation of lighting quality and quantity of the building by adopting a research method combining subjective occupant survey and field measurements. Online surveys were first conducted to reveal any visual discomfort, outdoor views, or privacy issues experienced by the occupants. Various light sensors were utilized to measure daylighting and electric lighting performance throughout the building. Various lighting parameters including illuminance, correlated color temperature, and color rendering index were recorded. Luminance distributions were also documented by high dynamic range imaging technique and the lighting scenes captured in HDR format was analyzed by Daylight Glare Probability metric to evaluate various discomfort glare sensations. The survey results and the field measured lighting parameters were thoroughly compared and analyzed so that findings from this study can help develop a framework for evaluating daylighting design performance in built projects.

KEYWORDS

Daylighting; electric lighting; post-occupancy evaluation; occupant comfort; LEED.

INTRODUCTION

Energy efficient architectural lighting systems and daylighting design strategy can save building energy consumption and also improve occupant comfort, health, and productivity in buildings. As visual comfort and visual interest become critical for occupant well-being, direct view of exterior environments and sufficient exposure to natural light are greatly encouraged by sustainable architecture design guidelines. However, it has been challenging to provide direct views to outdoor while ensuring visual comfort due to the nature of consistently changing natural light environments. A thoroughly coordinated electrical lighting and daylighting design can still fail when they are not effectively controlled. Occupants in the buildings with many sustainable design features can still

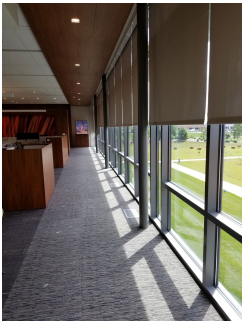
experience visual and thermal discomfort caused by sunlight penetrations, excessive or insufficient light intensity, or high contrast between workstation and surroundings (Hirning et al., 2013 and 2014; Suk and Schiler, 2012; Suk et al., 2013; Konis, 2013). Therefore, it is crucial to conduct a post-occupancy evaluation study particularly in LEED or other sustainability certified buildings in order to learn from their success and failure.

Recently, post-occupancy evaluation studies are increasingly performed by leading private architecture/engineering firms, federal government agencies, and academic researchers (Choi et al., 2019; Nicol et al., 2016; Fowler et al., 2011; Katzenstein, 2013; Hirning et al., 2013; Suk and Schiler, 2012; Suk et al., 2013; Konis, 2013). These efforts help design professionals to be able to match predicted design performance to actual occupant experiences. However, conventional lighting and daylighting POE studies still focus on either subjective responses of occupants or a few illuminance measurements. This incomplete or overly simplified study method can make design professionals to misinterpret whole building performance due to the limited amount of data. Therefore, it is critical to obtain both qualified and quantified data sets to fully understand how sustainable design features impact occupant experiences and comfort in a building.

1. BACKGROUND

The selected case study is located in Fond du Lac, Wisconsin. Located in IECC Climate Zone 6A which is classified as cold climate, the building was completed in 2017 and LEED Gold certified. The building has two floor in 83,402 sf gross floor area and also includes an open courtyard which is in 7,441 sf (Figure 1a). The project houses a mix of open offices, closed offices, laboratories, conference rooms, meeting rooms, cafeteria, etc. in four wing configurations facing each of the true orientations. Among a number of sustainable features, floor to ceiling side lighting and sophisticated daylight harvesting systems play a critical role in providing occupants 91% of direct line of sight to outdoor views while providing sufficient but comfortable light levels at workstations. The daylight harvesting system utilizes exterior louvers, a sun tracker on top of the roof, daylight sensors mounted on ceiling, and automated fabric roller shades along the glass facades (Figure 1b). With seamless communications between these elements, the project achieves 77% of regularly occupied spaces with sufficient daylight (sDA300/50%) which also helps to lower building energy consumption.

a)Exterior view of the building (view from South)



b)Open office

Figure 1. a) Exterior view of the building (source: Overland Partners) and b) automated roller shades at open office

As excessive sunlight penetrations can cause occupant visual discomfort, the interior roller shades are automatically adjusted depending on solar positions and sky conditions. While shading devices are adjusted, electrical lighting fixtures are also automatically controlled to adjust light outputs so that desired illuminance level of 300 lux is maintained at workstations. Since the building is configured with four rectangular wings facing different orientations, it is possible to predict lower sun angles in the two wings facing East and West orientations in the morning and afternoon. Because of different sun angles introduced in each of the wings, each wing is individually controlled to adjust its shading and lighting. This daylight harvesting system ensures visual comfort and direct outdoor views in open and closed offices. Open offices in the four different wings are around 12.2 m (40.0 ft) deep from windows with the ceiling heights varying from 3.3 m (10.7 ft) to 3.6m (11.7 ft) A.F.F.

2. METHODOLOGY

In order to accurately evaluate lighting and daylighting performance of the project, both online based occupant survey and quantified data collection techniques were utilized as follows. Online survey questionnaires were sent to the building occupants prior to scheduled field measurements. Two weeks later, two day site visit was performed to collect quantified lighting data including illuminance, correlated color temperature (CCT), color rendering index (CRI), and luminance distribution throughout the building during normal office hours on August 13th and 14th, 2019. During the field measurements, the building was in a normal operation so that the collected data should represent actual lighting conditions experienced by the users. For example, electrical lighting and shading devices were automatically controlled during the field measurements. Various lighting data collection tools were utilized such as illuminance meter, spectrometer, luminance meter, and DSLR camera.

2.1. Occupant Surveys

Online based occupant surveys were conducted first to understand any problematic issues related to lighting and daylighting in the building. The survey results were analyzed to see if there is any specific areas of concern to occupants. Demographic summary is as follows. A total of 123 occupants participated in the survey (45 male, 74 female, 4 not identified). Majority of the participants (88.6%) are in the age ranging 25 years to 64 years old. 72.7% of the participants have worked in the building longer than 2 years. Besides the general demographic questions, the following lighting focused questions were asked to each participant. A few selected sample questions are presented below.

• The primary source of lighting in my workplace: natural light, electric light, both

• On a clear or overcast day, the light in my workspace is: often too bright, neural, often too dark

• How satisfied / comfortable are you with the amount of light in your workspace?

• If you experienced visual discomfort, how would you rank the problem?: perceptible, disturbing, intolerable.

2.2. Measurement #1: Illuminance, Correlated Color Temperature, and Color Rendering Index

A spectrometer was used to record illuminance levels, CCT, and CRI in various spaces of the building. Horizontal illuminance levels were measured at various heights depending on primary visual tasks required in each of the spaces. For example,

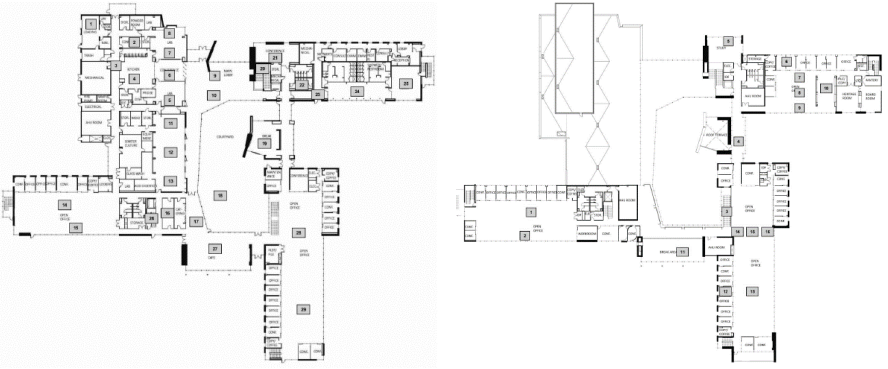
illuminance levels were measured on the finished floor levels in circulation spaces. In office spaces, illuminance levels were measured on top of a desk. The spectrometer measured and presented all three lighting parameters (illuminance, CCT, CRI) in each measurement. Figure 2 shows the locations of the measurements in each floor. The measurement covered both primarily daylit areas and non-daylit areas of the building and was repeated multiple times during the office hours from 8:00AM to 5:00PM. Outdoor illuminance levels, CCT, and CRI data was also collected to understand exterior luminous conditions while indoor lighting data was collected. A total of 29 different locations were measured throughout the first floor and a total of 16 locations were measured on the second floor (Figure 2).

2.3. Measurement #2: Luminance Documentation (HDR Photography)

HDR imaging technique was utilized to capture interior luminance distributions. Even though the survey results reported that there is little concern of visual discomfort in the building, HDR photography was still performed to validate the positive responses from the participants. A manual DSLR camera and tripod was set up at different locations. A total of 11 full-stop exposures (±5 exposures and normal exposure) were taken for each HDR photography. Each HDR photography was made solely by shutter speed adjustments without changing aperture values. The captured low dynamic range images were then combined to create a HDR image in Photosphere software. A total of 26 HDR photographs were taken at 26 locations in a perspective field of view in order to map luminance distributions. Another set of 9 HDR pictures were taken at 9 different locations in an angular fisheye view for visual discomfort analysis purpose. The 9 pictures in angular fisheye view were then processed in Photosphere software to calculate Daylight Glare Probability (DGP) scores. The camera and lens combinations were calibrated in Photosphere software with measured luminance values on a grey board prior to the study.

3. ANALYSIS

As stated above, occupant surveys were statistically analyzed first to identify potential problems of the building. And, field measurements were thoroughly made throughout the building. The field measured



a) 1st floor

b) 2nd floor

Figure 2. Lighting measurement locations

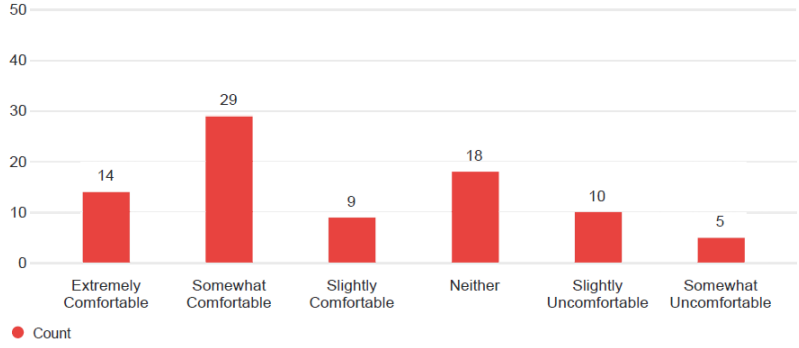
data was processed to be compared with the various lighting and daylighting design guidelines such as Illuminating Engineering Society (IES) and General Service Administration (GSA) P100.

3.1. Occupant Survey Results

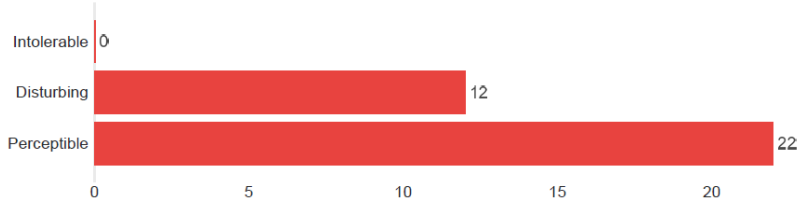
With the large side windows in most of open and private offices, 89.1% of the participants (a total of 110 responses) reported that they have natural light in their workspaces. 76.4% of the participants also reported that they have a good amount of light in clear/sunny day while 88.2% of them feels that lighting is appropriate in cloudy/overcast day. Only small percentage of the participants reported that it is either too bright or too dark at their workstations. While answering to the survey questionnaires, the participants also wrote comments regarding lighting and daylighting. Figure 3 displays the most often mentioned lighting related terminology from participants' written comments. Larger text represents higher frequencies of the terminology mentioned in written comments. The participants mentioned 'lighting', 'glare', and 'computer' the most. This clearly shows that lighting and visual comfort are considered important for computer based office tasks. Also, 'close', 'shades', and 'windows' were mentioned many times in written comments. This explains that the participants understand the influences of windows and shading devices on their lighting conditions.

Figure 4 shows visual comfort levels reported by the participants. Among 85 participants who answered the question, 82.3% of the participants reported no visual discomfort at their workstations. There are only 15 participants who reported either slightly uncomfortable or somewhat uncomfortable visual sensation. And, there is no report of extremely uncomfortable lighting condition. While 15 participants reported slight or somewhat visual discomfort, a total of 34 participants shared that they experienced either perceptible or disturbing glare. This discrepancy raises a question regarding accuracy and consistency of subjective evaluations. This clearly shows that different terminologies in similar questionnaire can cause inconsistent responses from a same survey participant. Even though the issue cannot be resolved here, this survey results explain that there are discomfort glare occasions experienced by occupants but the level of glare sensation is not severe.

Figure 3. Lighting related terminologies mentioned in comments written by the survey participants



a) Reported visual comfort levels



b) Reported visual discomfort sesation

Figure 4. Visual comfort levels reported by the survey participants.

3.2. Illuminance Data

Illuminance level ranges measured throughout the building are presented in Figure 5. This office building includes various space types which require different illuminance levels for occupants to perform specific visual tasks. Based on IES design guidelines, typical office space requires 300 lux at task areas while laboratory requires 750 lux for more accurate and detailed visual performance. Figure 5 compares the measured illuminance ranges in each space type to each space's recommended illuminance level threshold (shown in dashed black lines). The data clearly shows that the measured illuminance levels meet or exceed the recommended light level threshold for each space type. Open and closed offices have illuminance above 300 lux and laboratory has illuminance ranging from 600 lux to 1,600 lux. There is no space with insufficient light issues. Exterior illuminance level was measured at 5,200 lux at 2:10PM on August 14th, 2019.

3.3. Color Rendering Index

Figure 6 shows ranges of measured CRI values in different space types. CRI measures how well a given lighting condition renders different colors. 100 CRI value represents the highest color rendering and it is referenced to natural light which has full color spectrum of light. In Figure 6, all space types in the building have CRI value of 80 or above. The laboratory and kitchen are only two spaces with CRI

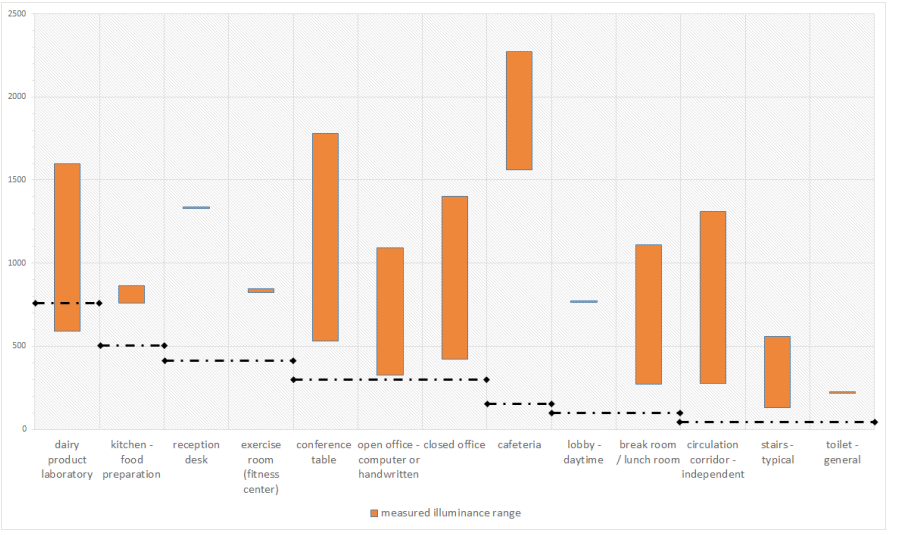


Figure 5. Measured illuminance levels in each space type and their comparisons to IES design guidelines

values slight lower than 80 CRI but their upper ranges are still at or above 80. These two spaces have slightly lower CRI values than the other spaces since they have lower light color temperature. It is typical that food processing spaces tend to have lower color temperature (cooler light) to maintain cleanliness and it causes somewhat lower CRI values. GSA P100 guideline recommends CRI values above 80. The latest version of Well Building Standard recommends either CRI values higher than 90 or CRI values higher than 80 with R9 value exceeding 50. This study did not document R9 values therefore it is difficult to determine whether or not this building meets the latest Well Building Standard requirement. However, the reception desk, open/private office, cafeteria, breakrooms, and circulation spaces have CRI value ranges above 90 which meets the requirement without confirming R9

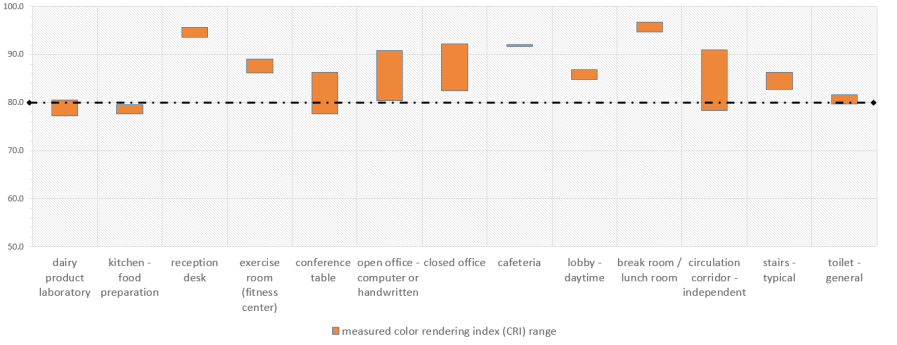


Figure 6. Measured CRI values and their comparisons to GSA P100 and Well Building Standards

value. In general, it is clear that this building has a very high quality lighting environment. As CRI and light color spectrum are important factors to affect human's circadian rhythm, it is recommended for lighting and daylighting POE studies should measure these lighting metrics.

3.4. Correlated Color Temperature

Measured CCT values widely vary depending on measurement locations. Both open and closed offices have CCT values ranging from 3,500K to 6,200K. This wide ranges of color temperature occur from the mixture of electric lighting and daylight in the office spaces. The electric lighting fixtures in the office spaces provide 3,500K which is typical in office spaces. However, natural light entering through the large windows increases CCT values and its influence varies depending on distances from the windows. It is found that workstations close to side windows has a very high color temperature around 6,000K because of large amount of natural light while workstations far away from windows has much lower CCT values around 3,500K. Same observation can be made for the corridor and circulation space. Different from these spaces, laboratory, kitchen, and toilet have lower CCT values at 3,000K because of limited exposures to natural light. Even though GSA P100 standard recommends CCT values lower than 4,000K, it is important to point out that CCT value itself does not determine quality of light. When natural light is introduced, CCT values can increase and CRI values can also increase. Recent studies show that high color temperature light in the morning can help office workers to maintain circadian rhythm when it is provided at a right time, period, and intensity.

3.5. Luminance Maps and Visual Discomfort Evaluation

Lastly, HDR photography was performed at various locations throughout the building. Luminance values were displayed in the false colored HDR image and each of the captured HDR scenes was analyzed by Daylight Glare Probability index to calculate

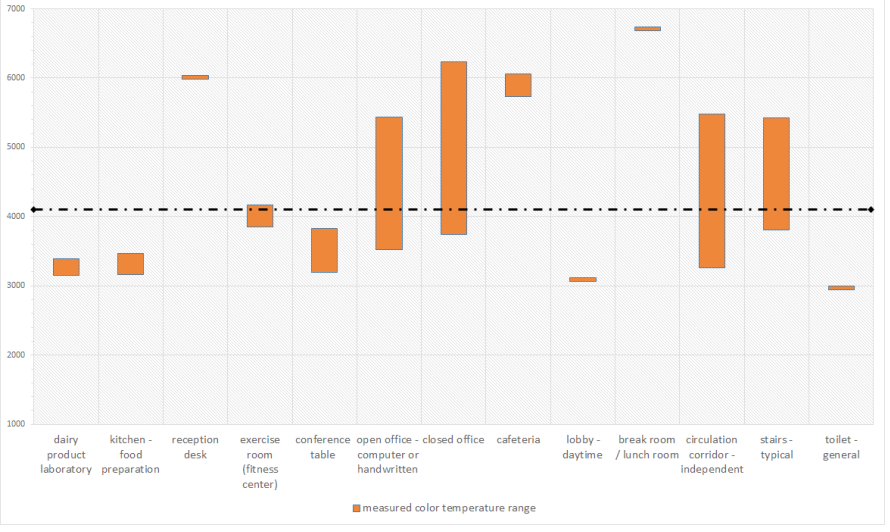


Figure 7. Measured correlated color temperature levels and their comparisons to GSA P100

visual discomfort sensation levels. Figure 8 shows four HDR scenes captured in angular fisheye lens inside open office, conference room, private office, and cafeteria. Luminance distributions in the false color images show that there are no glare sources in all of the captured scenes and the luminance values are considered to be visually comfortable based on the recently defined luminance thresholds for discomfort glare by various research groups (Suk et al., 2016; Shin et al., 2012; Wienold and Christoffersen, 2005). Relatively high luminance values were observed from the electric light sources but they are also within the acceptable range.

Daylight Glare Probability analysis evaluates imperceptible glare sensation from the four captured scenes. The open office has imperceptible glare sensation with 3% DGP score, conference room has 15% DGP score, private office has 2% DGP score, and cafeteria has 2% DGP score. Based on DGP metric, perceptible glare sensation occurs from DGP score of 35% (Wienold and Christoffersen, 2005). This results confirm that no significant visual discomfort issue can be experienced in the spaces.

CONCLUSION

Both qualitative and quantitative aspects of lighting environments were thoroughly documented inside the selected LEED Gold certified building. Online based occupant survey and physical lighting data collection methodology helped to reveal occupants' subjective evaluations with quantified lighting metrics. Majority of the participants reported visual comfort and satisfaction in the building. Measured CRI values are acceptable in most of the studied areas as they are above 80. Measured CCT values shows a wide range in different locations depending on the amount of natural light introduced into the spaces. Illuminance measurements also revealed that the desired illuminance levels were met or exceeded in every space of the building. Again, it is believed that natural light contributes to provide high illuminance levels, high CCT values, and high CRI values. This clearly shows the importance of daylighting design in buildings. Finally, DGP calculations of the captured HDR images confirm that electric lighting fixtures or natural light

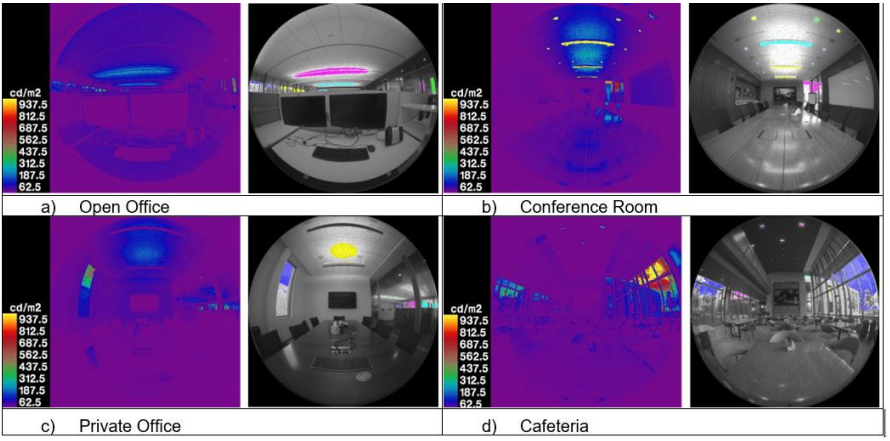


Figure 8. Captured HDR scenes and luminance distributions

through windows does not cause any serious visual discomfort to occupants. Both survey results and the field measured data agree that the project has successfully ensured visual comfort and direct outdoor views.

Compared to conventional post-occupancy study method that relies on limited illuminance measurements, this study utilized a combined methodology which analyzes both qualitative and quantitative aspects of lighting and daylighting in an office building. Use of a spectrometer helped to document important lighting parameters such as CRI and CCT. HDR imaging technique helped to document luminance distributions and allowed more in-depth analysis of visual discomfort sensation. Post-occupancy evaluation study is certainly challenging due to many unpredictable and uncontrollable factors including occupancy, sky condition, occupant behaviors, etc. and the challenge was also experienced in this study. However, it is believed that the proposed lighting POE study would allow more in-depth analysis of occupant experiences based on quantified lighting parameters.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Funding for this project was generously provided by Overland Partners, who also provided the design information for the project. The research team would also like to thank Grande Cheese Company for providing the building's operational information and allowing the team access to the building.

REFERENCES

Choi, Joon-Ho, Vivian Loftness, Danny Nou, and Brandon Tinianov. 2019. Impacts of Dynamic Glazing on Office Workers' Environmental and Psychological Responses. *ARCC conference*, Toronto, Canada

Konis, Kyle. 2013. "Evaluating daylighting effectiveness and occupant visual comfort in a side-lit open-plan office buildings in San Francisco, California." *Building and Environment* 59: 662-677

Hirning, Michael, Gillian Isoardi, Coyne S, Ian Cowling, and Veronica Garcia-Hansen. 2013. "Post occupancy evaluation relating to discomfort glare: A study of green buildings in Brisbane." *Building and Environment* 59: 349-357

Hirning, Michael, Gillian Isoardi, and Ian Cowling. 2014. "Discomfort glare in open plan green buildings." *Energy and Buildings* 70: 427-440

Suk, Jae Yong and Marc Schiler. 2012. "Investigation of Evalglare Software, Daylight Glare Probability and High Dynamic Range Imaging for Daylight Glare Analysis." *Lighting Research and Technology*

Suk, Jae Yong, Marc Schiler, and Karen Kensek. 2013. "Development of new daylight glare analysis methodology using absolute glare factor and relative glare factor." *Energy and Buildings* 64: 113-122.

Kensek, Kensek. and Jae Yong Suk. "Difference between Daylight Factor (overcast sky) and Daylight Availability (clear sky) in Computer-based Daylighting Simulations," *Journal of Creative Sustainable Architecture & Built Environment*

Nicol, Mark, Jerrod Kennard, and Mario D Goncalves. 2016. "Analysis, sensors, and performance- closing the loop with post-occupancy data analysis." *Proceeding of Façade Tectonics World Congress,* Los Angeles, CA

Katzenstein, Erick. 2013. *Occupancy Comfort Sensors*. LMN Architects, September 9, 2013. https://lmnarchitects.com/tech-studio/interaction/lmn-post-occupancy-comfort-sensors/ (accessed August 25, 2017).

J. Shin, G. Yun, and J. Kim, 2012. "View types and luminance effects on discomfort glare assessment from windows," *Energy Buil*d. 46: 139–145.

Wienold, Jan and Jens Christoffersen, 2005. *Towards a New Daylight Glare Rating*, Lux Europa, Berlin

Suk, Jae Yong, Marc Schiler, and Karen Kensek. 2016. "Absolute glare and relative glare factor based metric: predicting and quantifying levels of daylight glare in office space." *Energy and Buildings* 130: 8-19.

Fowler, KM, EM Rauch, JW Henderson, AR Kora. 2011. Re-Assessing Green Building Performance: A Post Occupancy Evaluation of 22 GSA Buildings. Pacific Northwest National Laboratory.

PAPER #7.16

NEW SYNERGIES BETWEEN RESEARCH, PRACTICE, AND EDUCATION FOR HEALTH AND WELLBEING OUTCOMES IN THE BUILT ENVIRONMENT

Altaf Engineer[a]
[a]University of Arizona, Tucson, Arizona

ABSTRACT

Traditionally, health-related design research has been carried out mostly in academic or research settings, while designing real-world built environments has been the domain of professional practice. Conventional roles of architects, however, are undergoing significant change with new research undertakings in professional practice (Hensel and Nilsson 2019). Recent years have seen the emergence of new human-centric research programs and initiatives at architecture firms on a global scale.

Practitioners, educators, and researchers now increasingly use evidence-based designs to create spaces that have healthy outcomes for people. The AIA-ACSA Design and Health Consortium, for example, has created a multi-disciplinary network to translate design and health research into practice for professionals, policy makers, and the public.

This paper examines the transformational impact of health research in architectural practice. Through a systematic review of health and built environment research carried out by design firms, the paper includes the study of different sources of information such as peer-reviewed publications, conference proceedings, white papers, webpages, and smartphone applications developed by these firms. A mapping exercise categorizes these studies by different typologies and research goals. It analyzes the research methods and findings presented in these sources and discusses real-world implications for design, professional practice, and future research.

Finally, this research highlights gaps that still exist in the field of design and health. To bridge these gaps and create new synergies between research, practice, and education a new model for research and design methodologies in health and the built environment called LEAPP is proposed and described in this paper.

KEYWORDS

Architects; health; built environment; design implications; professional practice.

INTRODUCTION

Traditionally, health-related design research has been carried out mostly in academic or research settings, while designing real-world built environments has been the domain of professional practice (Hensel and Nilson 2019). Conventional roles of architects, however, are undergoing significant change with new research undertakings in professional practice. Recent years have seen the emergence of new human-centric research programs and initiatives at architecture firms on a global scale.

Design practitioners often refer to their design processes as being human-centered. In recent years, their approach to design solutions and design-making processes in their publications, websites, whitepapers, and advertisements have been frequently described as being human-centric and evidence-based. Indeed, practitioners now increasingly use evidence-based design recommendations suggested by educators and researchers to study and create spaces that have healthy outcomes for people. The AIA-ACSA Design and Health

Consortium, for example, has created a multi-disciplinary network to translate design and health research into practice for professionals, policy makers, and the public (Design & Health Consortium).

Evidence-based design is design-making that is grounded in research and tested in practice (van Aken and Romme 2012). The validity of evidence-based design principles depends on how well they are connected to the body of scientific knowledge and the extent to which the principles have been tested in practice. The notion of 'testing' refers to the reviews of the building or spaces from user experience, critics reviews, and performance assessment. Evidence-based design is meant to develop prescriptive knowledge and solutions that serve to improve professional practice (van Aken and Romme 2012).

Human-centered designs for spaces are solutions that emerge from involving the users of that space (Crandal, Michelle 2019). A myriad of design and design-related fields now advocate this approach. These include usability engineering, user-centered design, participatory design, and experience-based design (Johnson, Slavo and Zoetewey 2008). Architectural discourse ideally, is inspired by users' needs, and showcases skills that can address those needs. Design research methodologies serve as tools and conceptual frameworks to develop real-world solutions.

Human-centric and evidence-based design processes identify specific problems and acknowledge their conditions, locations, target populations, and other variables. For this study, the sources that were collected and analyzed, share a focus on health research in architectural practice and involve methods that address specific space typologies. Every design firm studied comes with its own variation of these methods, processes, and outcomes.

In this study, we connect professional practice in the field of design and health by firms to the identification of any evidence-based and human-centered research methods that they may have used. The goal is to reveal the influence, outcomes, and limitations of design and health related research conducted by design firms. Importantly, it also highlights the gap in the documentation of actual built projects versus the documentation of research and design processes by firms. Several methodologies and mechanisms of their evidence-based and human-centered processes or practices, therefore, are invisible to educators and researchers in academia, and industry colleagues. The research knowledge that is presumably developed for problem-solving and practice, therefore, becomes limited in its influence in the field of design and health if it is not documented and published.

1. METHODOLOGY

1.1. Approach

The research methodology consists of a systematic content analysis and mapping exercise of peer-reviewed publications, conference proceedings, white papers, websites, and smartphone applications created by professional design firms. These sources of information were scanned for scientific research and evidence-based outcomes in the field of design and health. A conceptual map was then created to identify and categorize the transformational impact of health-related research in architectural practice, and identify its gaps. Solutions are proposed thereafter, to create new and effective synergies between research, practice, and education.

1.2. Examing the role of health research in architecture practice

58 architectural design firms were identified after running a web search for practices or practitioners that focused on design and health research or projects or both, as

part of their work portfolio. The selection of these firms was not restricted to any particular geographical area or region; this study, therefore, is international in scope. An initial review of design firms' websites led to the following questions: How are design practitioners aware of concerns related to health and the built environment? What is their approach to solving problems in this field? What are their sources of information for decision-making which ultimately leads to design solutions? And importantly, how are these research and design methodologies made available publicly – to peers in the industry, scholars and educators in the field, and other stakeholders? The sources of information that were checked for included but were not limited to, news releases, popular press, academic or peer reviewed or scholarly articles, conferences, white papers, or a combination of any of these venues.The inquiries led to a systematic content analysis and statistical modeling method known as topic modeling which was used to collect and analyze different elements of the data. This method was followed by the development of the conceptual mapping and frameworks to describe how design research methods are used by the firms in the field of health and the built environment, their impact, and their gaps.

1.3. Topic modeling

The topic modeling study of the 58 sources includes keyword identification, frequency analyses, and Pearson correlations. The keyword identification process consists of finding and sorting keywords or key phrases into different themes within the sources analyzed. The results were annotated using a controlled tagging process in the computer program Hypothes.is.[1] The annotations revealed the most frequently used words or keywords that related to each theme. These results were then analyzed to answer the questions which were discussed earlier. Four main, recurring themes were identified and used to group and organize keywords and text as follows:

1. Problem awareness: This theme included an awareness of issues and concerns related to health, wellness, medical or health facilities, or medical or health treatment in the built environment.
2. Design firm's culture or values: This included all the references to the firms' mission, vision, featured projects, abstracts, and design project highlights.
3. Sources of background information: This theme includes references to previous experiences, motivations, client's requirements, trends, common sense design guidelines, research, news or economic benefits.
4. Design and research results: This included the documentation of all built projects, publications or references to publications, posted data, references to conference presentations, white papers, news, applications, etc.

The text connected to each theme in Hipoyhesis was further analyzed to understand its context or how it was referred to in the source. The frequency analysis involved exporting the meta-data from Hipothesis and sorting out the information by the focus area as described by the firms, the potential research areas based on their expertise, and the use of the products that they offer. Once this was completed, a Pearson correlation was applied to the datasets to find any significant associations between data sets and measure their strength.

2. RESULTS

The search for architecture firms with any linkages to health-related work resulted in 58

[1] https://web.hypothes.is

different national (based in the United States) and international firms. The results of the content analysis and topic modeling showed findings related to the primary and secondary areas of focus of their work, and how this was highlighted in websites, publications or other means to attract viewers' attention.

2.1. Primary themes in design and health practice

21 firms were found to have building typology as primary focus, i.e. they claim to have expertise in designing healthy environments for a variety of different building types. Nine firms mention customized user and demand-based services in any building type. 19 firms emphasize the use of special technology or a special skillset to solve unique design challenges to create healthy solutions for spaces. 11 firms describe their design focus as evidence-based. 17 firms have more than one area of focus: two link the building type with user needs or user-experience, three link a special technology or skillset to meeting user needs, eight link special technologies or skillsets with evidence-based design outcomes, two link designing different healthy building types to the use of special technologies or skillsets, and two link the users, skillsets, and evidence-based designs together. Figure 1 shows the number of architecture firms sorted by how they advertised their strengths or areas of primary focus in design and health.

The definitions of evidence-based practice and human-centric approaches by design firms were found to vary, but were mostly pragmatic and related to real-world projects. In one instance, evidence-based is described as *'a way to validate the design methods and architecture practice that incorporates de learning from experimental/ empirical experimentation during their own client-architecture relationship, sometimes based in field-related documents of various sources'*. Another firm described a human-centric approach as *'a consumer/client driven process that attend the specific needs prioritizing health, wellness, harmony, and the environment*'.

2.2. Recurring themes in design and health practice

The data extracted by the controlled tagging tool showed three main tendencies by firms in the field of design and health: 1) their main area of focus of the architecture practice within the field of design and health, 2) an awareness

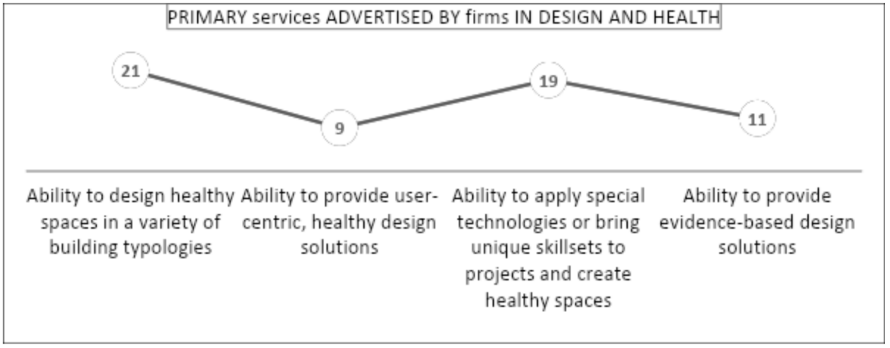


Figure 1. Number of firms sorted by their advertised primary areas of focus or strengths in the field of design and health. Source: Author.

of existing problems or concerns related to human factors and the associated areas of their existing or potential research expertise, and 3) the proposed solutions, outcomes or products of their work. An analysis of 60 different references or descriptions as to what the firms defined as the main focus of their architecture practice showed that most firms preferred writing about their general expertise and specialties, while fewer showed an awareness of issues and concerns in health and the built environment or mentioned the sources of their research or even inspiration, and very few published the outcomes of their research.

The most frequent theme was the one for proposed solutions which showed 49 keywords or text references, followed by the 33 references to the awareness of a problem to be solved. Lastly, there are 22 references to a source or multiple sources of information or evidence that led to a design solution. Quite often, however, design solutions and built projects were described without discussing problems, issues, client or user needs first. The results of these recurring theme frequencies are shown in figure 2.

The results of the Pearson correlation are shown in Table 1. They revealed an insignificant association between *problem awareness* and *proposed solutions* (-0.25) which indicates that firms in design and health are unlikely to link *proposed solutions* with *problems, issues, or concerns*. This may also indicate that they did not follow any specific research methodology while working towards design outcomes or if they did, then they did not document or describe in any way. Similarly, the correlation between *proposed solutions* and *sources of information* was weak or insignificant (0.0029). There was also found to be no association between *problem awareness* and *sources of information*. Further, only ten firms mentioned three of these themes in their descriptions, 24 use two themes, and 26 only mentioned one themes.

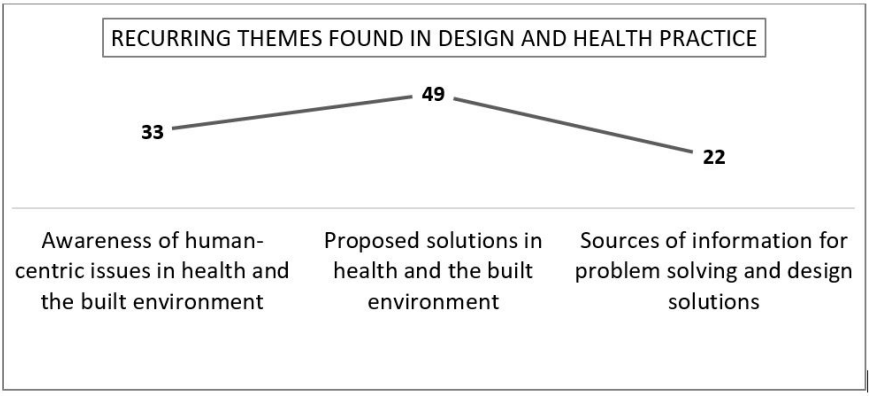


Figure 2. Frequencies of recurring themes found in design and health practice. Source: Author.

Themes		Results of Pearson correlation
Problem awareness & Proposed solutions	-0.26	insignificant
Proposed solutions & Sources of information	0.00	insignificant
Problem awareness & Sources of information	-0.01	insignificant

Table 1. Results of the Pearson correlation test between different themes in design and theme. Source: Author.

2.3. Specific reserach areas in design and health

The 58 architecture firms studied mentioned or referred to having an expertise in 73 different research areas in total. These 73 existing or potential research areas were derived by reviewing all the keywords or text from the content analysis and topic modeling exercises described earlier. The following primary fields of research expertise and knowledge areas were found in the analysis of firms of design and health: *health* with 35 references, *environment* with 13, *building technology or materials* with 17, *special talent or services offered or skillsets* with 16, particular research *methods or approach* with 50, and *economic benefits* with three references. These results are also shown in figure 3.

Since *particular research methods or approach* were found to be most frequently mentioned, another Pearson correlation was run to compare it with *health*. The relationship was found to insignificant as well, as shown in Table 2 below. Two firms claimed to have four research areas of expertise in design and health, while eight firms mentioned three research areas each. 40 firms mentioned two research areas each, and 23 claimed to have one research area of expertise. In all 58 cases, these existing or potential areas of research were found within the overall description of the architecture practice and not on another specific webpage, portfolio, or another document or part of the website.

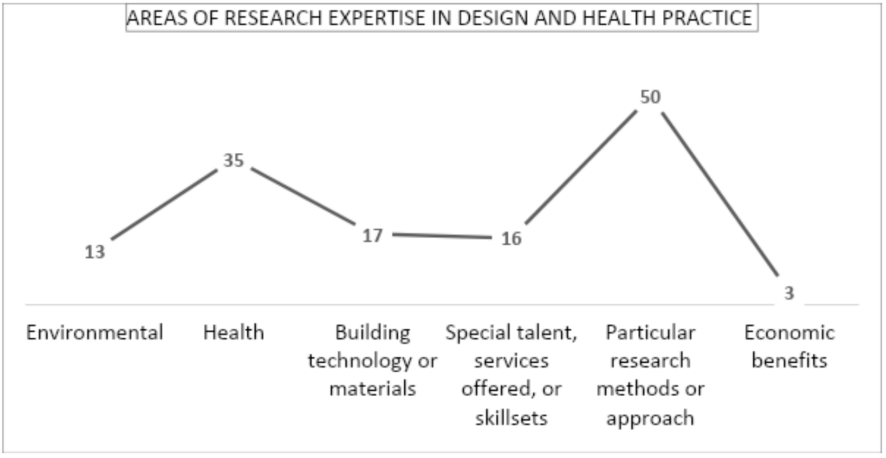


Figure 3. Frequencies of different areas of research expertise in design and health practice. Source: Author.

Themes		Results of Pearson correlation
Health & Particular research methods or approach	-0.26	insignificant

Table 2. Results of Pearson correlation between health and particular research methods or approach by firms in design and health. Source: Author.

2.4. Documenting or advertising the work

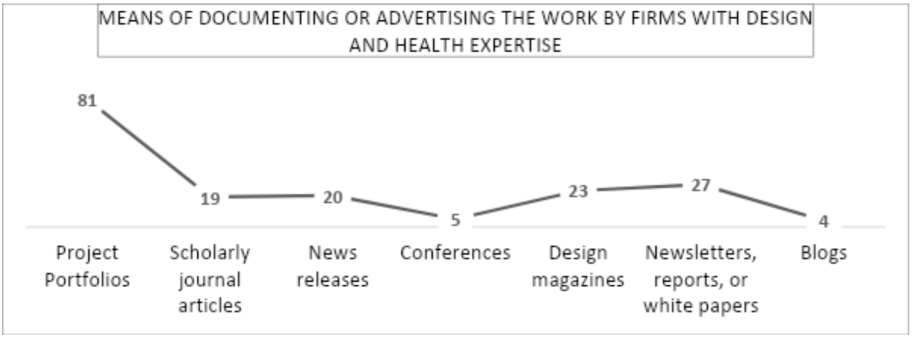


Figure 4. Means to document or advertise projects in design and health by architecture firms. Source: Author.

The results of the frequency analysis shown in figure 4 reveal that 81 firms use their *project portfolios* to showcase their expertise, followed by 27 references to the use of *newsletters*, *reports, or white papers*, 23 to *magazines*, 20 to *news releases*, and 19 to s*cholarly journal articles*. *Conferences or blogs* were found to be significantly less used in the field by firms as a way to advertise, present, or document their work.

3. DISCUSSION: SYNERGIES BETWEEN RESEARCH, PRACTICE, AND EDUCATION

The findings of this study reveal different approaches adopted by design firms that operate at a global or national level in research methodologies and design solutions for projects related to health and wellbeing in the built environment. A larger study which includes surveys and interview of principals, managers, and employees would be required to make more significant conclusions about how the work done by these firms creates linkages with peers in the industry, and has an impact on research, education, and policy in the field. The results of this preliminary study, however, indicate that design firms were focused mostly on providing solutions for different building typologies that were advertised as healthy solutions for users, clients, and stakeholders. There was often an emphasis on providing user-oriented and evidence-based design solutions, but descriptions or mentions of how these concepts were actually implemented in real-world projects were either inadequate or completely missing.

A few firms were found to document or share their approach, strategy, or research methodologies to solve particular problems and meet user needs. These approaches, however, were mostly limited to one or two types that were used across a range of building and interior design projects. Further, it appears that the reason for these processes not being mentioned or documented most of the time, is not a lack of skillsets or the use of special or state-of-the-art technologies or equipment. The teams' talents, tools, and experience in fact, appear to be very well advertised up-front, presumably, to attract clients and generate more work. This may indicate, therefore, that firms do not believe specific research methodologies to be a valuable means of attracting more clients. Evidence in the field of health and the built environment, however, reveals quite the opposite; design solutions need to be well-grounded in research findings

in the field to satisfy user-needs and create healthy environments. By not documenting or sharing research and design methodologies in the field, therefore, design firms miss important opportunities to grow the field of design and health by nurturing more research and increasing the field's knowledge base. This phenomenon may also have a long-term impact on meeting user needs as well as future research, education and practice goals. Additionally, a lack of awareness of existing and latest research could also lead organizations to reinventing the wheel instead of driving innovation in the field.

A new conceptual framework, therefore, for creating more synergies between research, practice, and education is urgently required. A five-step model known as **LEAPP** is proposed as part of this framework, consisting of the following steps:

1. A **L**iterature review on the specific topic and drawing from existing research on spaces of a similar type and function as the new ones to be designed. Creating a customized research methodology based on the knowledge gained in this process.
2. Conducting **E**valuations at the pre-design/ pre-occupancy consisting of focus group meetings, surveys, interviews, measurements, virtual reality studies, or a combination of these methods, to understand client requirements, user needs, or evaluating existing spaces to improve or redesign.
3. **A**pplying research findings from the previous step and developing a design solution in response.
4. Conducting a **P**ost-occupancy evaluation and comparing it to pre-design findings, making improvements to the space based on these findings if possible, and learning from the design outcomes.
5. **P**ublishing the design research methodologies and findings in different formats including but not limited to peer-reviewed journals, news releases, popular press, white papers, and conference presentations and proceedings. Additionally, these publications could be used to increase the firm's profile and, in its marketing, and branding strategies.

By following the steps in LEAPP, design and practitioners may be successful in increasing the dissemination of knowledge, make a bigger impact on the field of design and health, and create more synergies with research, education, and practice.

CONCLUSION

Firms committed to designing healthy environments as one of their primary focus areas or building types may have areas of special expertise that align with human-centric and evidence-based approach to design. However, they miss opportunities to disseminate knowledge by not documenting their work in scholarly journal articles, white-papers, conference presentaions, or proceedings. Clients, potential users, and other stakeholders are a valuable source of information in research and design processes. Users should be seen as informants, consultants, and participants of buildings and spaces from the very beginning of the design process.

To create a better impact, design firms must also increase the scope and role of their deliverables. Due limitations in cost, time, and required expertise, however, firms cannot be expected to conduct original research studies for every design project. There may also be some cultural or pragmatic challenges in their application. To counter these limitations, a five-step process known as LEAPP is proposed, to break down and simplify the research process, help in its broader understanding, and to market it better as part of the project. LEAPP, as discussed in detail earlier, suggests that the design of building projects may be based on existing research findings on design and health, pre-design evaluations, as well as post-occupancy evaluations after their

design and construction. Importantly, these processes and methodologies followed by the design team must be documented and shared among the larger and more diverse community to create better and impactful synergies with education and research.

Limitations of the study

This study is limited in scope and scale. To make significant conclusions, a larger study which includes an extensive survey and interviews of design practice leaders, employees at different levels, clients, and other stakeholders, is highly recommended. Five out of the 58 architecture firm websites were protected against tagging tools and their data, and were not included in the frequency analysis. Some reports and newsletters mentioned by firms on their websites were also unavailable for a qualitative review. White papers did not appear to be used to by the firms at all, and therefore, were not included in the analysis as well. A larger survey, however, may find white papers which reveal more research and design methodologies and potential synergies between research, education, and practice.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

We recognize the contribution of Hipothesis, a nonprofit organization in making its controlled tagging technologies available as open-access for the topic modeling analysis. I would also like to acknowledge the contributions of my research assistant Dr. Sandra Bernal for her assistance in collecting and analyzing the data for this study.

REFERENCES

Barelkowski, Robert. 2017. *Meta-Design and the Triple Learning Organization in Architectural Design Process. IOP Conference Series: Materials Science and Engineering 245* (082004). doi: 10.1088/1757-899X/245/8/082004

Crandal, Michelle. 2019. *Human-Centered Design and Community Engagement*. National Civic League.

Design & Health Research Consortium. (n.d.). Retrieved from https://www.aia.org/resources/78646-design--health-research-consortium

Hensel, Michael U., and Fredrik Nilsson. 2019. *The Changing Shape of Architecture: Further Cases of Integrating Research and Design in Practice*. Routledge

Johnson, Ben, Michael Slavo, and Meredith Zoetewey. 2008. U*ser-Centered Technology in Participatory Culture: Two Decades "Beyond a Narrow Conception of Usability Testing*". IEEE Xplore.

Nisbet, R., Elder, J., Miner, G. 2009. *Handbook of Statistical Analysis and Data Mining Applications*. San Diego: Elsevier.

Onwuegbuzie, A., Leech, N., and Collins, K. 2012. *Qualitative Analysis Techniques for the Review of the Literature*. The Qualitative Report. 17 (56). 1–28.

Salvo, M. J., M. W. Zoetewey, and D. K. Agena. 2007. *Acase of exhaustive documentation: Re-centeringsystem-oriented organizations around user need*. Tech. Commun.

Takenobu Tokunaga , Iwayama Makoto. 1994. *Text Categorization Based on Weighted Inverse Document Frequency.* Special Interest Groups and Information Process Society of Japan. 33--39

van Aken, Joan E., and Georges Romme. 2012. *A Design Science Approach to Evidence-Based Management*. Edited by D. Rousseau. Oxford University Press.

PAPER #7.17

RETHINKING SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT IN EUROPEAN REGIONS BY USING CIRCULAR ECONOMY BUSINESS MODELS

Begoña Serrano-Lanzarote[a], Nuria Matarredona-Desantes[a], Vera Valero-Escribano[b], Cristina Jareño-Escudero[b]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain
[b]Instituto Valenciano de la Edificación, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

In essence, Circular Economy (CE) is about moving from an unsustainable linear system of materials usage and waste production to one of the regeneration of resources. CE has lately developed into a rapidly progressing and competitive field of business and innovation. CE business models can be seen as tools in reducing waste, generating resource efficiency improvements and lessening the environmental impacts of industrial production and creating social sustainability. However, it's still often unclear what type of negative environmental and economic impacts CE business models may bring about. In the REDUCES project, the potential environmental impacts of CE business models are mapped and tools will be discovered for regions to not only promote the business models most suitable for their regional contexts, but also to assess the potential environmental impacts they may entail. The tools will be reviewed and evaluated by the partners and stakeholders during the projects, focusing on the previously recognised most important categories of CE business models. In order to make informed policy decisions about both economically and environmentally most viable business models, their impacts need to be thoroughly assessed. There is a growing need for a more comprehensive understanding of regional and local aspects of the transition towards a CE and of recognizing the most promising sectors for sustainable smart specialisation. REDUCES forms a cooperation network of regions that are on different levels of CE development and have a strong shared will on further supporting their region's businesses in transitioning to a CE. The exchange of experiences and knowledge within and between the regional authorities is key in developing the best action plans to support environmentally sustainable business models for each region and policy. REDUCES results in best practices and policy recommendations which will significantly benefit public authorities and institutions in supporting CE transition.

KEYWORDS

Circular economy; business model; Comunitat Valenciana; sustainability; regional policies.

INTRODUCTION

The idea for the project REDUCES originates in the recognised need to support the transition to a circular economy (hereinafter CE) on policy level in order to accelerate the transition to sustainable, resource-efficient regional economies, to tackle climate change and decrease environmental damage caused by linear business models. In order to achieve sustainable change, it is essential that regions not only recognise the value of circular business but also that the policy environment supports and activates businesses to implement these business models.
A case-based interregional exchange of experiences forms the basis of the REDUCES approach. The aim is to review best practice

CE business models in regional context as a driver for environmentally sustainable economic growth. Five general topics of CE business models have been recognized to focus on: product life extension, product as a service, sharing platforms, renewability, resource efficiency and recycling. In addition, the crosscutting themes of regulatory and governance issues as well as all dimensions of sustainability in CE are considered.

To form a better picture of regional status of CE integration, a status quo of CE business environment and critical environmental considerations in each partner region has been developed in the framework of the project. This is considered as the starting point for the later action plan development.

We must emphasize that although the approach of the project is CE in general terms, in the case of the Valencian Community and due to the political instrument of application (Decree 151/2009, basic design and quality requirements in housing and accommodation buildings), we approach CE from a general perspective to later focus on CE in the built environment and the housing sector. This paper presents the main results of the analysis on the state of the art of the CE in the Valencian Community.

1. MAIN CHARACTERISTICS OF COMUNITAT VALENCIANA REGION

The Valencian Community is a Spanish autonomous region with 4,946,233 inhabitants in 2018 (10.6% of the Spanish population). With an area of 23,255 km² (4.60% of the national extension), it is the 8th region in Spain by area. It is in the east and southeast of the Iberian Peninsula, on the coast of the Mediterranean Sea, and is divided into 3 provinces, Alicante, Castellón and Valencia, 34 counties and 542 municipalities.

The gross domestic product (GDP) has increased in recent years and stands at 108.6 billion euros in 2017 (9.3% of national GDP). According to Eurostat, the GDP per capita in the Purchasing Power Standards was 24,300 in 2017, a figure that has steadily increased since 2013 (20,900). This ranks the region in position 12 among the 17 Spanish autonomous communities, below the national averages (27,600) and of the EU-28 (30,000) (European Commission 2010).

The economy is strongly service-based, the service sector represents 71% of the regional gross value added (GVA) in 2018, which represents approximately 64% of the regional GDP. The activities with the greatest weight

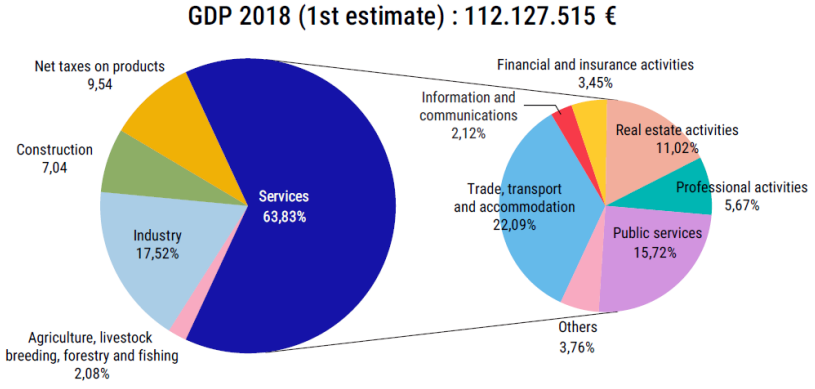


Figure 1. Gross Domestic Product of the Valencian Community. Source: (Consellería de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo. 2020)

are those related to commerce, transport, and hospitality (22.09%) and real estate activities (11.02%), which together represent more than 50% of activities related to the service sector (Consellería de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo. 2020).

The tourism sector, which began to develop widely in the 1960s and early 1970s, has progressively become one of the main wealth-generating activities in the region, not only for its direct contribution but for the expansive effect it has had on a large group of related activities. The region welcomes 28.7 million tourists each year (residents and international), with 177.3 million overnight stays, and 12,580 million spending (includes origin and destination), which represents an economic impact of 14.6% participation in GDP and 15.1% participation in employment (Turisme Comunitat Valenciana 2018).

The strategic industrial sectors in the Valencian Community are Tiles and ceramics; Leather and shoe industry; Toys and games; Wood and furniture; Textile and clothes; and Automotive industry. There are many companies in these sectors in the region, which represent a high percentage in the country in general, so that they are important for the general economy in Spain. The financial and economic crisis that started in 2008, had an impact on the global economy, and some of these sectors, such as ceramics and furniture very directly related to construction, were particularly affected (European Commission 2010).

Regarding active population during 2018 was 2.04 million people, with the Services sector standing out from the rest of sectors with 73.5% of the regional total, with industry lagging behind with 17.1%, followed by construction with 6.4% and agriculture with 3% (Consellería de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo. 2020).

Regarding the number of active companies based in the Valencian Community, the latest published data (2018) show that of the

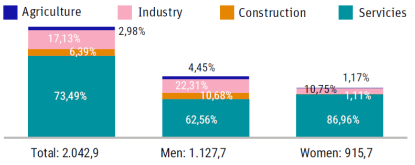


Figure 2. Employed population (thousands). (Consellería de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo. 2020)

total number of companies, 80.7% belong to the service sector, 12.2% to construction and 7.2% to industry, representing growth compared to the previous year above the average for industrial companies (4.69% more) and construction companies (4.44% more) while the service sector it grows below the average (1.23%). The average in the Valencian Community shows a growth close to 2% . Regarding the size of the companies, in number of employees, more than half (53.7%) are companies without employees, 41.7% have between 1 and 9 employees, 3.9% between 10 and 49 employees and only 0.7% (2,381 companies) have 50 or more employees. During 2017, companies with 50 or more employees, increased by 6.97%, followed by 10 to 49 employees companies, which increased by 5, 82%. Companies with between 1 and 9 employees and without employees grew by 1.88% and 1.49% respectively (Conselleria de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo 2019).

As regards the construction sector, during the 2000s, it suffered exorbitant and unsustainable growth. Thus, its weight increased to represent in 2008 more than 12% of regional GDP. The end of the real estate boom from 2008 translated into a decline in the weight of this activity, reaching a low in 2014 with 5.8% of regional GDP, a percentage similar to the national average (5.1 %) in that same year. As of that year, the weight of the construction sector has increased slowly

and steadily, but without reaching the values prior to the crisis. The economic forecasts published by different organizations for the coming years augur an increase in production, although with lower growth rates, data that are also being revised more and more downward.

2. REGIONAL CIRCULAR ECONOMY PROFILE

To get an idea of the state of the CE in the region, it is essential to start by making a brief overview of the current regulatory framework and the initiatives promoted by the different administrations, national, regional and local, with the objective to redirect the economy, production and consumption models towards circular models.

2.1. National regulatory framework

At the national level, the recently approved Spanish Strategy for Circular Economy (Ministerio para la Transición Ecológica y el Reto Demográfico 2020), its successive three-year action plans to be developed, and the Pact for a Circular Economy should be highlighted.
The Spanish Circular Economy Strategy (hereinafter EEEC), España Circular 2030, lays the foundations for promoting a new production and consumption model. The strategy aligns with the objectives of the European Union CE action plans, in addition to the European Green Pact and the 2030 Agenda for sustainable development.
For the implementation of the EEEC triennial action plans are foreseen, the first one, it is expected to be presented at the end of 2020 and will cover the period 2021-2023.
The strategy marks the following quantitative objectives to be achieved by 2030:

• reduce national consumption of materials by 30% in relation to GDP, compared to 2010
• reduce the generation of waste by 15% compared to 2010
• reduce the generation of food waste throughout the food chain: 50% reduction per capita at the household and retail consumption level and 20% in the production and supply chains from 2020
• increase reuse and prepare for reuse until reaching 10% of the municipal waste generated
• improve the efficiency in the use of water by 10%
• reduce the emission of greenhouse gases below 10 million tons of CO2 equivalent.

The EEEC identifies six priority sectors of activity: the construction, agri-food, fishing and forestry, industrial, consumer goods, tourism and textile and clothing sectors. And it mentions as key policies to advance on the CE the policies related to economy, taxes, employment, R&D&i, consumption, industry, water, agriculture and rural areas development.
On the other hand, the Pact for the Circular Economy (Ministerios de Agricultura y Pesca y de 2017), signed by more than three hundred entities, is an initiative promoted by both the Ministry of Agriculture and Fisheries, Food and Environment, and the Ministry of Economy, Industry and Competitiveness, that seeks to involve the main economic and social agents of Spain in the transition towards this new economic model.

2.2. Regional regulatory framework

The Valencian Community has not yet started the procedure to prepare a Circular Economy Strategy. However, in October 2018 the president of the Generalitat Valenciana announced the will to promote a pact for the Circular Economy (Generalitat Valenciana 2018) participated by administrations, business organizations and citizens.
Likewise, the Generalitat Valenciana has other plans and programs that contribute to the fulfillment of the objectives of the EU in

terms of CE, among which we can highlight the following ones:

• Document d'ELX (Conselleria de Hacienda y Modelo Económico. Generalitat Valenciana 2016): Base document and guiding elements for the transformation of the economic model of the Valencian Community, whose objective is to lay the foundations for the Valencian Community to advance towards an economic model based on knowledge, innovation, openness and outside connection, articulated on the principle of sustainability, both environmental, productive and social. It defined ten strategic lines that later generated the structure of the Action Plan for the Transformation of the Economic Model 2017-2027 (Conselleria de Hacienda y Modelo Económico, 2017).
• Action Plan for the Transformation of the Economic Model 2017-2027: consists of an economic diagnosis, objectives and key strategic initiatives, as well as a monitoring and evaluation system. The proposed action plan is aligned with the Sustainable Development Goals and with the principles of the Europe 2020 Strategy. Both line 2, Promoting a modernising transformation of the Valencian productive structure, and line 5, Promoting the creation of sustainable employment and the social economy, contain objectives related to the CE, such as: O2.2: Development of new activities aimed at a sustainable and circular economy, O5. 1: Boosting the generation of sustainable, quality employment, O5.2: Implementing social responsibility policies and actions in the Valencian economy, O5.3: Promoting the economy of the common good, O5.4: Increasing the number and size of social economy organisations. Line 1 (Developing the innovative capacity of the productive fabric by strengthening the Valencian innovation system), focuses on developing initiatives related to innovation as a key element for promoting economic growth, trying to take advantage of the resources available in universities, technology centres and knowledge-intensive companies. Within this framework, the Valencian Innovation Agency was created in 2017 to coordinate the Innovation Strategy of the Valencian Community. Along the same lines, the execution of the Intelligent Specialisation Strategy for the VC, RIS3-CV (Generalitat Valenciana, 2016), is specifically included as one of its objectives.
• Intelligent Specialization Strategy of the Valencian Community, RIS3-CV, constitutes the strategic agenda to contribute to the transformation of the Valencian production model from research and innovation, for the 2014-2020 programming period. Based on the specific context of the Valencian economy, the result of a SWOT analysis, a strategic framework is built, which is expressed in a vision, a mission and some values. This framework culminates in the prioritisation matrix which includes the main options for regional development based on research and innovation. The matrix integrates the transversal axis of sustainability, which is essential to promote a low-carbon economy, in line with European policies. It is subsequently specified in objectives, which will frame the expected results and indicators for their monitoring. In the specific case of the CE in the built environment, Axis 2 is especially noteworthy. Innovative Product - 2.2 Habitat: housing and its environment, This axis includes the manufacture of consumer goods linked to the habitat and its surroundings, such as ceramic and natural stone coatings and materials for the home, lighting, furniture, home textiles, architecture, home automation, urban environment, in which its Growth and competitiveness necessarily pass through the generation of innovations focused on the product. The environment of HABITAT stands out for the demand for the development of new materials and advanced, sustainable products and with new applications of added value, together with the need for collaborative processes in production and distribution systems, mainly international, for which the

use of technologies ICT and logistics, along with materials and environmental appear as relevant.

• Acord del Botànic, June, 2019, axis 1 includes the objective of promoting a Law for the Circular Economy, in line with the principles of the European Union (Accord del Botànic 2019).

Other regulations that contribute to the CE in more specific aspects are the Strategy of the Industrial Policy of the Valencian Community 2020 (EPI-2020) and Strategic Plan of the Valencian industry 2018-2023 (PEIV), the Energy Savings and Efficiency Plan, Promotion of Renewable Energies and Self-consumption in buildings, infrastructures and equipment of the public sector of the Generalitat (PAEEG), the Valencian Ecological Production Plan, the Valencian Strategy for Climate Change and Energy 2030, the Rural Development Plan 2014-2020, the Territorial Action Plan for the Green Infrastructure of the Coast of the Valencian Community (PATIVEL), and the revision and update of the Comprehensive Waste Plan of the Valencian Community (PIRCVA), covering the period 2019-2022.

2.3. Relevant actors or entities for CE in the region

Actors or entities, within the public administration, relevant to transform the Valencian economic system towards a more circular model include the Valencian Agency for Innovation (AVI) and Valencian Institute of Business Competitiveness (IVACE).

• The Valencian Agency for Innovation (from now on AVI) is the meeting place for all the agents of the Valencian Innovation System (SVI): research centres, technological institutes, financial entities, Public Administrations and businesses. Its mission is to improve the region's productive model through knowledge and innovation, to achieve intelligent, sustainable and socially cohesive economic growth.

The AVI oversees designing and coordinating the innovation strategy of the Comunitat Valenciana and promoting the strengthening and development of the Valencian Innovation System as a whole. The participation of the agents of the Valencian Innovation System (SVI) is directly articulated in its organs: Board of Directors, Valencian Innovation Council (CVI), Strategic Innovation Committee (CEI) and Specialized Strategic Innovation Committees (CEIE). The latter are the specialised working groups created in each of the priority areas of innovation identified: *Sustainable habitat, Emergencies, Health, Agri-food, Enabling technologies for the new economy, Automotive industry and sustainable mobility, and Circular economy.*

The work-teams of these committees, identify the main challenges in each area, establish the short-medium term priorities, propose innovative solutions and define the actions to be implemented in the region's business environment, suggesting tools and incentives to maximize their impact.

The challenges prioritized by *Sustainable Habitat Committee,* which are related to the built environment and building sector are:

- Optimisation of the real behaviour of buildings and dwellings to improve their performance and maintenance, their interoperability and/or their adaptability,
- Implementation of more sustainable building materials and systems
- Nearly zero energy buildings
- Improved integration of the changing demands and needs of building and housing users.

The first and last challenges mentioned above, with their solutions and actions are connected to the business models, proposed in REDUCES, of Product life-extension, while de second and third challenges, are associated

to the business models of Renewability and Resource Efficiency and Recycling.
The Circular Economy Committee prioritized the following three challenges:

- Ecodesign
- More sustainable consumer goods
- Waste recovery and use of reclaimed water.

Challenges, connected to the business models of: Product life-extension, Renewability and Resource efficiency and recycling.
Additionally, the AVI has different instruments and lines of action to transform the productive system, among other provides grants through competitive calls, oriented to different objectives, in which the challenges and solutions proposed in the above mention committees are prioritized.

• The Valencian Institute of Business Competitiveness (IVACE) is a public body belonging to the Valencian Government, attached to the Ministry of Sustainable Economy, Productive Sectors, Commerce and Labour of the Valencian Government. It is the regional development agency in charge of promoting a new economic, sustainable and inclusive model in the Valencian Community, promoting the competitiveness of companies through R&&i, internationalization and entrepreneurship, promoting energy development sustainable and promoting infrastructures, industrial services and attracting investments.
The IVACE is organized around 4 areas: Innovation, Energy, Internationalization and Business Parks. Among its functions, it is especially worth mentioning: To manage aids and incentives aimed at the creation, modernisation and internationalisation of regional companies, to promote and assist companies in their activity and internationalisation, to facilitate companies financing, to promote research, development and innovation infrastructures, scientific and technological parks and institutes and business centres, to foster energy conservation and saving measures in all business sectors, and to promote sustainable mobility and rational use of energy.

2.4. Circular Economy projects in the Construction sector and other related sectors (ceramics or furniture sector) in the Comunitat Valenciana

Additionally, in the Annex of the report "Regional Circular Economy Status Quo, Valencia, Spain 2020", a list of projects, participated by regional stakeholders, in which Circular Economy principles are included has been compiled. These are projects at different scales (international, national, regional) and from different programs (H2020, Interreg, IVACE, etc ...), in which partners of the Valencia Region have participated (technology centers, research institutions, companies, business networks etc. ..), developed during the last 10 years, within the Construction sector or other related sectors (ceramic, furniture, etc ..). The analysis performed tried to stablish the links with the main themes for CE business models that have been identified in REDUCES project.: 1) product life extension 2) renewability 3) product as a service 4) sharing platforms 5) resource efficiency and recycling
The main results of this analysis are summarized below.
Of the 28 projects analyzed, 16 (57%) of them are currently underway. There are 34 different stakeholders (technology institutes and centers, research institutions, businesses organisations, etc.) participating, most of them involved in several of the projects.

Project	Program	Dates	Business models linked to*				
			1	2	3	4	5
DRIVE 0	H2020	2019- 2023	X				
Life Future	LIFE	2015-2018		X			X
WoodRuB	LIFE	2010-13					X
Planet-Design	MED	2009-12					
SIMBYNET	IVACE	2020-21					X
PLACE	IVACE	2020-21	X	X			X
INSYLAY 3 19-20	IVACE	2019-20					X
CIRCULARIZA	IVACE	2019-20	X	X	X	X	X
NIMBLE	H2020	2016-20					X
TRIS	Interreg Europe	2016-21					X
SPS-CIRC	IVACE	2018-19	X	X	X	X	X
URBANREC	H2020	2016-19					X
PLASTICIRCLE	H2020	2017-21					X
SHAREBOX	H2020	2015-19					X
SIMVAL	AVI (2018), IVACE (2019)	2018-19					X
C-SERVEES	H2020	2018-2022	X	X	X	X	X
ECONOMÍA CIRCULAR (Año 1, 2 y 3)	IVACE	2017-2019	X				X
SurplusMall	Climate-KIC	2017-18					X
CONDEREFF	Interreg Europe	2018-2023					X
CIRCULARCARBÓN	IVACE	2020-2021					X
PUCO2	IVACE	2020-2021					X
CIRCULAR INDUSTRY CV	IVACE	2020-2021					X
CEROH! STRATEGIES	IVACE	2018-2020					X
COBAT	IVACE	2019-2020					X
CIRCLE	IVACE	2018-2019					X
ECO&TECNO CARPET	IVACE	2018-2019	X	X			X
RECURPIEL	IVACE	2018-2019					X
BIO3	IVACE	2019-2020					X

*Themes of CE Business models: 1- Product life-extension, 2- Renewability, 3-Product as a service, 4-Sharing platforms, 5-Resource efficiency & recycling.

Table 1. CE projects participated by regional stakeholders. Own development.

3. THE POLICY INSTRUMENT ADRESSED IN REDUCES PROJECT AND OTHER RELATED POLICIES

As stated before, the main objective of REDUCES project is to adapt and update regional political instruments in order to incorporate criteria that favour the creation and adoption, by the companies, of environmentally sustainable business models based on the principles of circular economy. The political instrument of application in the Valencian Community is Decree 151/2009 (Conselleria Medio Ambiente, Agua, Urbanismo y Vivienda, 2009) which approves the basic design and quality requirements in housing and accommodation buildings.

3.1. Policy instrument: DC09 Regulations on Habitability in Housing

This Order approves the design and quality conditions that must be met by new buildings intended for housing, those that contain adapted housing, accommodation buildings or those that are subjected to refurbishment in any of these cases.
The Decree regulates functional aspects of the dwellings and the buildings: such as the minimum surfaces of the spaces, the relationship between the different spaces or enclosures, the conditions that the circulation spaces (horizontal and vertical) must fulfill within the dwellings and buildings, minimum and / or mandatory equipment that a dwelling and building must have, it also regulates certain aspects of habitability such as lighting and ventilation conditions, the specific conditions that an adapted dwelling must meet (for people with functional diversity/disability) or accommodation buildings (consisting of spaces for private use, in the form of accommodation units, and common services for collective use), as well as the conditions to be met in the event of a refurbishment of the dwellings and / or buildings in any of the above cases.

This regulation is the responsibility of the Regional Ministry with housing competencies, currently the Second Vice Presidency and Ministry of Housing and Bioclimatic Architecture. This Ministry already has a series of documents, regulations and initiatives that converge with the objectives and interests foreseen in the REDUCES project, so it is essential to keep them in mind in order to join efforts and synergies.

3.2. Other related policies and regulations

We consider the White paper on housing – Comunitat Valenciana (Conselleria de Vivienda Obras Públicas y Vertebración del Territorio, 2018) and the strategic plan Habitat 2030 (Vicepresidencia segunda y Consellería de Vivienda y Arquitectura Bioclimática, 2020) especially relevant due to their direct relationship with the political instrument of application in the Valencian Community.
The White paper on housing establishes the guidelines for the future housing policy of the Generalitat Valenciana. It is a long-term structural and strategic plan that includes a wide range of recommendations to address the housing problem. It has been conceived to foster social cohesion, housing justice and the sustainable occupation of the territory. It is structured with an analysis and diagnosis section, a strategic framework and a final proposal block with lines of action. The proposed lines of action are framed in 9 strategic axes (guaranteeing access to housing, promoting rental housing, mobilizing empty housing, promoting a social model of rehabilitation, promoting an inclusive environment, establishing a CE model in housing, orienting housing to the challenges of the future, improving the quality of housing and adapting management in the field of housing), among these, two should be highlighted:
• Establish a CE model in housing
• Orient housing to the challenges of the future,

in which actions linked to CE and the promotion of innovation through research and experimentation on new housing models are defined.

However, we can find underlying CE principles in most of the proposed axes and lines of action, such as mobilizing empty homes or promoting a social model of rehabilitation, strategies aligned with the principles of maintaining and prolonging useful life of an asset, or reuse before producing a new good.

"Habitat 2030" Strategic Plan is an operational instrument to guarantee the social function of housing in the Valencian Community and provide a quality public service that is comparable to European benchmarks. This is a ten-year plan in which the right to housing is understood as inseparable from the right to the city, therefore it postulates the right to a habitat. In addition, it is a participatory plan, starting from a base document an ambitious participation process started in collaboration with all the agents involved. Of the challenges posed, the Green Transition should be especially highlighted, in which the following objectives are proposed through the Green Transition and Circularity Pact on Habitat:

• Reduce the consumption of primary energy in conditions of comfort in the social housing stock.
• Promote final energy consumption from renewable energy sources, through the implementation of self-consumption systems.
• Promote the renaturalisation of urban spaces and their connection with natural environments.
• Promote refurbishment and renovation against new construction, urban regeneration and redensification (sustainable habitat).
• Adapt CE criteria to the real estate sector through innovative practices.
• Promotion of green employment through education and training.

It is essential to review the role of the Observatory of Habitat and Urban Segregation (Vicepresidencia segunda y Consellería de Vivienda y Arquitectura Bioclimática s.f.),hereinafter OHSU, established in February 2019. Its creation, provided for in Law 2/2017, of February 3, of the Generalitat by the Social Function of the Housing in the Valencian Community, serves the purpose of knowing, among other aspects, the situation in quantitative and qualitative terms of housing in general and public housing in particular, the territorial distribution of housing and the indicators determined in the public housing and urban regeneration policies of the Generalitat, dependent on the Ministry responsible for housing. Decree 9/2019, of February 1, creating the Habitat and Urban Segregation Observatory of the Valencian Community, establishes its main functions, among others that of advising on planning regulatory action in the area of housing and the city , and articulates its structure and composition, as well as the members (among them the IVE) that make up the plenary session of the Observatory (maximum organ of decision, control, planning, follow-up and supervision of the OHSU activity).

Finally, the Green Guide on environmental measures for public procurement in the building sector (Vicepresidencia Segunda y Conselleria de Vivienda y Arquitectura Bioclimática 2020) was draft and published recently. The environmental measures included in the guide are based on the ecological public procurement criteria developed by the European Commission and the Ecological Public Procurement Plan of the General State Administration, to which additional criteria are added. Thus, a first edition of the guide includes passive design measures for energy saving, active design measures for energy saving and water saving, as well as measures related to products, waste management and environmental certifications. However, the guide is intended to be a repository of environmental measures that are continuously updated, with the conviction that promoting the consideration

of sustainability criteria in public procurement, in addition to serving to obtain more environmentally friendly buildings, has a high exemplary value, while it can be a relevant element of influence in the market, encouraging the private sector towards new forms of production and more responsible consumption.

CONCLUSION

In general, we can consider that we are in an incipient state with regard to the implementation of a CE model in the Valencia region. Public administrations are making efforts to start introducing CE principles in the different policies (plans, strategies, or regulations), however a general, ambitious and joint action is lacking, which combines efforts from the different departments and allows the establishment of the proper priorities, while facilitating the creation of synergies, and thus maximizing results. We can also see how public administrations are working hard to improve green procurement and tendering processes, incorporating environmental and innovative criteria, in order to encourage the private sector to move towards more circular production and consumption models.

Otherwise there are many initiatives aimed at implementing CE criteria in practically all strategic economic sectors in the Valencian Community. In particular, in the sector of the built environment, we have seen that there are quite a lot of initiatives dealing with resource efficiency and recycling, and much less dealing with topics like the product life-extension or the use of renewable materials and resources. There are very few initiatives that address the circular economy as a whole, and practically none that focus on aspects such as promoting maximizing the use of products and resources, through sharing platforms, or promoting the change towards consumption models based on services. and not in buying goods.

The definition of a general framework, which coordinates and directs the efforts being made in the region from different private and public sectors, will allow also the identification of new niches or potential sectors to be developed in the Valencian Community, in the process of diversifying the economy.

As far as initiatives at municipal level are concerned, the integration of aspects related to the CE is even more scarce. It is worth highlighting the Declaration of Seville, an initiative launched by the Spanish Federation of Municipalities and Provinces, in which the signatory municipalities undertake to promote and encourage the CE in their territories. There are currently more than 230 municipalities throughout Spain, 24 of which are in the Valencian Community. Within this framework, the Local Strategy for the Circular Economy has been developed. This is a set of actions proposed as practical recommendations, aimed at Local Bodies, to facilitate the adoption and implementation of the principles of the CE in their areas of action, within their capacities and competences.

Finally, as far as citizenship and social awareness is concerned, it is still far from incorporating the criteria of the CE into their consumption habits. An effort must be made to communicate with citizens and convince them of the need to change mainly their way of consuming.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This paper is based on the work developed in the frame of REDUCES project (https://www.interregeurope.eu/reduces/). REDUCES Rethinking sustainable development in European regions by using circular economy business models, is an Interreg Europe project carried out by a transnational consortium of partners. The authors wish to express their gratitude to all the partners for their fruitful and active cooperation.

REFERENCES

Acord del Botànic2os: acord per un govern valencià de progress. 2019. [online] Available at: < http://intra.pre.gva.es/convera/docpdf_castellano/monografias/Consell/Pacte-Botanic21.pdf> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Conselleria de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo. *Explotación del directorio estadistico de empresas de la Comunitat Valenciana*. 2019. [online] Available at: <http://www.pegv.gva.es/es/noticias/-/asset_publisher/CWK0IEKbs79H/content/explotacion-del-directorio-estadistico-de-empresas-de-la-comunidad-valenciana-2017-y-2018> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Conselleria de Economía Sostenible, Sectores Productivos, Comercio y Trabajo. *Portal Estadístico de la Generalitat Valenciana. Basic data. Comunitat Valenciana*. 2020. [online] Available at: <http://www.pegv.gva.es/en/dbcv> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Conselleria de Hacienda y Modelo Económico. *Bases y Elementos Orientadores para la Transformación del Modelo Económico de la Comunidad Valenciana. (Document d'Elx)* 2016. [online] Available at:<http://www.hisenda.gva.es/documents/164158153/164158322/BEOTME+cas.pdf/> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Conselleria de Hacienda y Modelo Económico. Plan de Acción para la Transformación del Modelo Económico 2027. 2018 [online] Available at: <http://www.hisenda.gva.es/documents/164158153/165793343/lan+de+Acci%C3%B3n+Modelo+Econ%C3%B3mico+%28CAS%29/f8109b12-61f5-44ff-8bdd-2a86a3c7d586> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Conselleria de Medio Ambiente, Agua, Urbanismo y Vivienda. Decreto 151/2009 de 2 de octubre, del Consell, por el que se aprueban las exigencias básicas de diseño y calidad en edificios de vivienda y alojamiento (DOGV núm. 6118 de 07.10.2009)

Conselleria de Vivienda Obras Públicas y Vertebración del Territorio. *Libro Blanco de la Vivienda - Comunitat Valenciana,* 2018. [online] Available at: <http://www.habitatge.gva.es/documents/20558636/0/LBV-CV-cas-2019_WEB%281%29.pdf/0354a741-08d1-4377-88d4-bbec50ee0b9b> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

European Commission. Regional *Innovation Monitor. Repository Information. Valencian Community*. 2010. [online] Available at: <https://ec.europa.eu/growth/tools-databases/regional-innovation-monitor/base-profile/valencian-community> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Generalitat Valenciana. *Estrategia de Especialización Inteligente de la CV (RIS3-CV)* 2016. [online] Available at: <http://ris3cv.gva.es/es> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Generalitat Valenciana. *Puig anuncia un pacto valenciano para promover la economía circular*. 2018. Available at: <http://www.inclusio.gva.es/es/inicio/area_de_prensa/not_detalle_area_prensa?id=742801>

Ministerio para la transición ecológica y el reto demográfico. *Estrategia Española de Economía Circular, España Circular 2030,* 2020 [online] Available at: <https://www.miteco.gob.es/es/calidad-y-evaluacion-ambiental/temas/economia-circular/estrategia/>[Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Ministerios de Agricultura y Pesca, Alimentación y Medio Ambiente; y de Economía, Industria y Competitividad. *Pacto por una economía circular: el compromiso de los agentes económicos y sociales 2018-2020*, 2017.

Turisme Comunitat Valenciana. *Evolución de la actividad turística. Comunitat Valenciana*. 2018 [online] Available at: <http://www.turisme.gva.es/tcv/tcv2018/1-Actividad_CV2018_c.pdf> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

Vicepresidencia Segunda y Conselleria de Vivienda y Arquitectura Bioclimática. Guía Verde. Medidas medioambientales en la contratación pública en el ámbito de la edificación de la Generalitat. 2020.

Vicepresidencia segunda y Conselleria de Vivienda y Arquitectura Bioclimática. *Observatorio del Hábitat y la Segregación Urbana* [online] Available at: <https://calab.es/observatorio-del-habitat/>

Vicepresidencia segunda y Conselleria de Vivienda y Arquitectura Bioclimática. *Plan Habitat 20.30. Plan Estratégico de Vivienda y Arquitectura de la Comunitat Valenciana,* 2020 [online] Available at: <http://www.five.es/descargas/archivos/GVA/PH_2030.pdf/> [Accessed: 30 June 2020]

PAPER #7.18

NEXUS BETWEEN SUSTAINABLE BUILDINGS AND HUMAN HEALTH: A NEUROSCIENCE APPROACH

Madlen Simon[a], Ming Hu[a], Edward Bernat[a]
[a] University of Maryland, College Park, Maryland

ABSTRACT

The paper presents a preliminary result of a research project aiming to develop, test, and validate a data-driven approach using virtual reality (VR) and neurotechnology (EEG, etc.) for assessing the effect of sustainable building design features on occupants' emotional and cognitive functions - proxies for mental health and wellbeing. The project will provide technology-enabled, repeatable measures for quantifying the "soft" benefits of sustainable building design features, thus providing an economically viable and repeatable assessment model, pre-build.

Case studies have consistently demonstrated the potential for sustainable buildings to increase "soft" benefits of improved wellbeing and productivity via self-reported assessments. However, selfassessments are unreliable measures, as they are marred by participant biases and confounding variables. Current building impact evaluation tools that measure occupants' wellbeing and cognitive functions are user response surveys such as the health and work performance questionnaire (HPQ) and various building wellness surveys. Surveys have two main weaknesses. First, as there are many variables affecting an occupant's response to the built environment, such as familiarity with the space, time of day when the survey is conducted, and the ambient condition of the environment (temperature, smell, noise, etc.), confounding, non-design factors can be hard to disentangle, to control for, and interpret. Second, the survey response is an indirect measure of the environment, reliant on the user's opinions (perceived likes and dislikes) and cannot provide objective data about particular environments and features. What is needed are consistent, reliable, and physiologically based measures of mental health effects that capture human response to discrete architectural elements – especially in the prebuild, design phase.

This experimental research project offers a methodology to fill this gap, capturing real-time physiological response to user experience of sustainable built environments. This research provides a method for quantifying occupant wellbeing, thereby offering the potential to leverage change in mainstream design practices.

KEYWORDS

Sustainable architecture; virtual reality; neuroscience; event-related potential; design decision-making.

INTRODUCTION

Given that Americans spend about 87% of their time inside buildings,[1] the quality and design of buildings are important contributors to human wellbeing. The trend in "sustainable building" (SB) models, catalyzed by the founding of the Green Building Council in 1993, offers a unique opportunity to leverage not just beneficial environmental impacts but also occupancy wellbeing effects in the design and construction of new buildings. Case studies have consistently demonstrated the

[1] Zhang, Q., & Zhu, Y. (2012). Characterizing ultrafine particles and other air pollutants at five schools in South Texas. Indoor Air, 22(1), 33-42.

potential for sustainable buildings to increase "soft" benefits of improved wellbeing and productivity via self-reported assessments. However, self-assessments are unreliable measures, as they are marred by participant biases and confounding variables. Current building impact evaluation tools that measure occupants' wellbeing and cognitive functions are user response surveys such as the Health and Work Performance questionnaire (HPQ) and various building wellness surveys. Surveys have two main weaknesses. First, multiple variables affect an occupant's response to the built environment, such as familiarity with the space, time of day when the survey is conducted, and the ambient condition of the environment (temperature, smell, noise, etc.); these confounding, non-design factors can be hard to disentangle, control for, and interpret. Second, the survey response is an indirect measure of the environment, reliant on the user's opinions (perceived likes and dislikes) and cannot provide objective data about particular environments and features. What is needed are consistent, reliable, and physiologically based measures of mental health effects that capture human responses to discrete architectural elements – especially in the pre-build, design phase. In order to fill this
gap through the procurement of reliable, objective measurements, an innovative, data driven approach is needed. Conventional buildings (CB) – those that meet basic building and energy codes but do not prioritize sustainable design elements - provide an excellent control from which to expand research on the co-benefits of SBs to improve occupant mental health and wellbeing. Moreover, buildings are usually one-off projects. Anecdotal evidence and limited case studies are inadequate to leverage changes in mainstream design practices, in which decisions are primarily influenced by building economics and regulations. For systemic change to occur, occupant wellbeing, especially cognitive benefits, must be added into the SB base rating system. The objective of this project is to leverage VR and EEG technology to develop, test, and validate a data-driven neuroscience approach to assess the effect of sustainable built environments on occupants' emotional and cognitive functioning. Cognitive performance will be tested through both individual and group-based assessments across gender differences.

1. THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK AND SIGNIFICANCE

1.1. Theory and Background

Our methodological framework is based on the marriage of an event-related potential (ERP) neuroscience approach and cognitive architecture (CA) theory (see Figure 1). The use of EEG in built environment, cognitive science research, is growing rapidly due to its portability and flexibility in allowing test subjects to move around while immersed in a real environment. EEG is used to measure ERPs that demonstrate
brain activity directly related to a specific event (stimulus), such as the presentation of an image, word, or special visual environment. Unlike behavior studies used in the cognitive psychology approach, ERPs provide a continuous measurement of processing between a stimulus and response, very appropriate for studying a built environment design. Due to the complexity and multi-faceted
attributes of design, ERP continuous measurements have the potential to objectively elucidate what events (stimuli) are affected
by particular design feature manipulations. ERP measurement is typically more affordable than fMRI, and the long tradition of ERP/EEG research provides a solid basis

[2] Seitamaa-Hakkarainen, P., Huotilainen, M., Mäkelä, M., Groth, C., & Hakkarainen, K. (2014). The promise of cognitive neuroscience in design studies. Proceedings of DRS, 834-846.

for application to design research.[2] CA was proposed by Herbert Simon, a pioneer in artificial intelligence, with the goal of creating programs that could solve problems across different domains, develop insights, adapt to new situations, and evaluate themselves.[3] It was initially employed in the fields of artificial intelligence and computational cognitive science.[4] CA refers to both a theory and method for regarding human cognition from a computational perspective. The theory is aligned with contemporary cognitive neuroscience, which generally considers the brain as having a modular organization, where individual modules interact to produce certain mental activities and emotions.[5] In 1973, Allen Newell called for the development of multiple, diverse CA styles instead of focusing on specific issues of understanding the human mind.[6] CA is considered by Langley (2017) as valuable in supporting research on cognitive science due to the complexity of humans' cognitive functions.[7] It has been used intensively in studying instructional design[8] to encourage learners to engage in conscious cognitive processing directly or indirectly relevant to the constructed curriculum.[8-9] CA has since been applied to research on 3D objects' perception,[10] spatial navigation,[10-11] and architectural design/design thinking.[12]

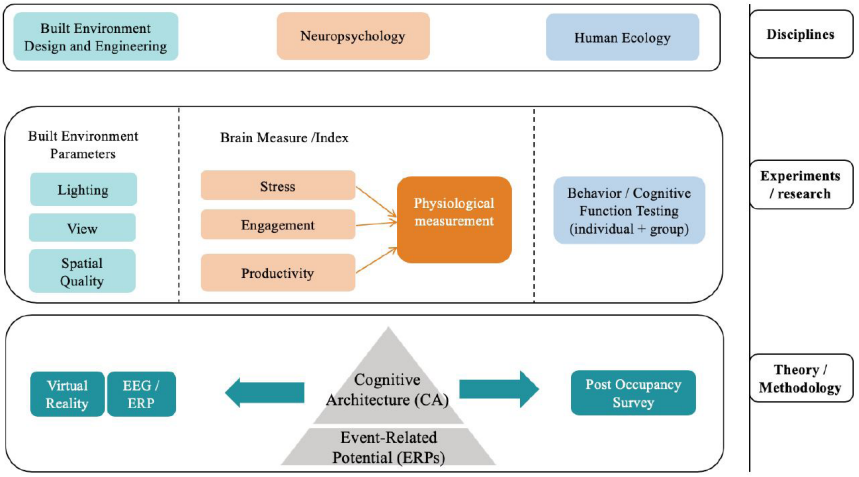


Figure 1. Research methodology based on ERP and CA combining VR and EEG.

[3] Koohsari, M. J., Owen, N., et al (2017). Built environmental factors and adults' travel behaviors: role of street layout and local destinations. Preventive medicine, 96, 124-128.
[4] Lieto, A., Lebiere, C., & Oltramari, A. (2018). The knowledge level in cognitive architectures: Current limitations and possible developments. Cognitive Systems Research, 48, 39-55.
[5] Bertolero, M. A., Yeo, B. T., & D'Esposito, M. (2015). The modular and integrative functional architecture of the human brain. Proceedings of the Natl. Acad. of Sciences, 112(49), E6798-E6807.
[6] Anderson, J. R., & Lebiere, C. (2003). The Newell test for a theory of cognition. Behavioral and brain Sciences, 26(5), 587-601.
[7] Langley, P. (2017). Progress and challenges in research on cognitive architectures. In Thirty-First AAAI Conference on Artificial Intelligence.
[8] Sweller, J., Van Merrienboer, J. J., & Paas, F. G. (1998). Cognitive architecture and instructional design. Educational psychology review, 10(3), 251-296.
[9] Koć-Januchta, M., Höffler, T., et al (2017). Visualizers versus verbalizers: Effects of cognitive style on learning with texts and pictures–An eye-tracking study. Computers in Human Behav, 68, 170-179.
[10] Downs, R. M., & Stea, D. (Eds.). (2017). Image and environment: Cognitive mapping and spatial behavior. Transaction Publishers.
[11] Sweller, J., van Merriënboer, J. J., & Paas, F. (2019). Cognitive architecture and instructional design: 20 years later. Educational Psychology Review, 1-32.
[12] Bhatt, M., Suchan, J., Schultz, C., Kondyli, V., & Goyal, S. (2016, March). Artificial intelligence for predictive and evidence based architecture design. In 30th AAAI Conference on Artificial Intelligence.

In this project, we rely on CA capabilities that can acquire and understand perception since cognition does not occur in isolation; an intelligent agent (person) exists in the context of a certain external environment that the agent (person) must sense, perceive, and interpret. If we can understand what perceptual knowledge is invoked by which sensors/stimuli in the environment, where and when to focus them, and what inferences are plausible, then a CA based model can be built to acquire and improve knowledge by learning from previous perceptual experience.[7]

1.2. Built Environment Parameters

In this study, we will use three sustainable built environment parameters as the design basis for testing our hypotheses: lighting, view and spatial quality. All three characteristics are required design elements in the most commonly accepted and utilized "Healthy Building" design guidelines and rating systems,
namely WELL and Living Building Challenge.
Lighting (LG) Indoor lighting quality and quantity have physical and psychological effects (visual and nonvisual effects) on building occupants. Physical impacts include visual strain, blurred vision and irritated eyes induced by insufficient light levels (illuminance), glare, and/or high contrast between indoor and outdoor light levels.[13] Studies have related visual discomfort and a decrease in reading accuracy[14-15] to the quality of lighting fixtures including the flickering of lights. People with special health conditions including children with autism have been given recommendations to avoid flickering lights or low-quality fixtures that emit sounds.[16] The primary characteristics of lighting shown to influence short term, psychological moods include light levels, light color, spectral distribution, and temporal patterns.[17-19] Long-term psychological and physiological effects from non-visual aspects of light emerged from circadian rhythms research.[20] Circadian rhythm controls natural sleep and awake patterns and requires external stimuli including the light-dark cycle.[21] Building artificial lighting systems and access to daylight both have large impacts on building occupants' circadian systems for two reasons. First, as the circadian system fundamentally underpins human physiology, extensive ripple effects are likely when disrupted. Second, as people spend the majority of their time indoors, it is highly likely that circadian systems are affected by indoor lighting conditions. Studies have suggested that some interior light levels are insufficient to appropriately regulate the circadian clock. Under such conditions, "biological darkness" and attendant effects predominate including fatigue and excessive sleepiness.[19] Researchers have postulated that insomnia and other sleep disorders might be treated by exposure to light at right time to reset the circadian rhythm.[22] Lighting can be both the

[7] Langley, P. (2017). Progress and challenges in research on cognitive architectures. In Thirty-First AAAI Conference on Artificial Intelligence.
[13] Cedeño-Laurent, J. G., Williams, A., MacNaughton, P., Cao, X., Eitland, E., Spengler, J., & Allen, J.(2018). Building evidence for health: green buildings, current science, and future challenges. Annual review of public health, 39, 291-308.
[14] Singh, J. (1996). Impact of indoor air pollution on health, comfort and productivity of the occupants. Aerobiologia, 12(1), 121-127
[15] Ticleanu, C., & Littlefair, P. (2015). A summary of LED lighting impacts on health. International Journal of Sustainable Lighting, 17, 5-11.
[16] Nagib, W., & Williams, A. (2017). Toward an autism-friendly home env. Housing Stud, 32(2), 140-67.
[17] Figueiro, M. G., & Rea, M. S. (2016). Office lighting and personal light exposures in two seasons: Impact on sleep and mood. Lighting Research & Technology, 48(3), 352-364
[18] Daurat, A., Aguirre, A., Foret, J., Gonnet, P., Keromes, A., & Benoit, O. (1993). Bright light affects alertness and performance rhythms during a 24-h constant routine. Phys & behavior, 53(5), 929-936.
[19] Vandewalle, G., Maquet, P., & Dijk, D. J. (2009). Light as a modulator of cognitive brain function. Trends in cognitive sciences, 13(10), 429-438.
[20] Vandewalle, G., Maquet, P., & Dijk, D. J. (2009). Light as a modulator of cognitive brain function. Trends in cognitive sciences, 13(10), 429-438.
[21] Boyce, P. R. (2010). The impact of light in buildings on human health. Indoor and Built environment, 19(1), 8-20.
[22] Czeisler, C. A., & Waterhouse, J. M. (1995). The effect of light on the human circadian pacemaker. Circadian clocks and their adjustment, 183, 254-290.
[23] Wilson, E. O. (2003). Biophilia. 1984. Massachusetts: Harvard University Press Google Scholar.
[24] Kaplan, S. (1995). The restorative benefits of nature: Toward an integrative framework. Journal of environmental psychology, 15(3), 169-182.

cause of and treatment for various health conditions.

View (VI): Views are directly related to the concept of biophilia design, coined in 1984 by Edward. O. Wilson to refer to the basic human need to affiliate with life and lifelike processes.[23] Per the attention restoration theory proposed by pioneering environmental psychologists Rachel and Stephen Kaplan,[24] nature has the ability to restore people's attention and release stress.[25] They demonstrated that people tend to prefer natural environments over built environments, and built environments with water, trees, and other vegetation more than built environments without such features.[26] Researchers continue to explore how building elements that represent, mimic, or provide access to nature environments impact restorative functions and wellbeing. Building views can be categorized in two types. The first is a direct visual connection to the outdoor natural environment.[27] An early study conducted by Roger Ulrich at Pennsylvania hospitals found the surgical patients assigned to rooms with windows looking out on a natural scene had shorter postoperative hospital stays.[28] The same restorative effects have been shown in other settings, including the home,[29] school[30] and office.[31] The second type is the visual connection to indoor natural elements, such as a green wall or water feature. In 2016, a research team studied classrooms in two elementary schools for 4 months. The results showed that children scored better on a test for selective attention in classrooms with green walls; there was no difference in the children's self-report on wellbeing.[32] Therefore, a view – either to nature or green elements within buildings - is an excellent and flexible design parameter for this research.

Spatial Quality (SP): Spatial quality and its impact on productivity and cognitive functioning belongs within the field of environmental psychology. Few studies have explored this area as spatial characteristics are difficult to define and measure. Some studies have investigated the impact of a building interior's layout (floor plan) with varied results. Early studies by Hedge (1982)[33] and Sundstrom et al. (1980)[34] found worker dissatisfaction correlated to increased spatial openness. Brennan et al (2002) conducted a longitudinal field study to examine workers' satisfaction and productivity before and after relocation from traditional (enclosed) offices to open offices. They found that workers were less satisfied in terms of increased disturbances and decreased privacy following the move; the dissatisfaction persisted after an adjustment period.[35] Other research showed layout-scale spatial measures are better predicators of how well occupants rate the capacity of a work environment to support collaboration, in comparison with workstation-scale measures.[36] A U.S national survey study in 2003 demonstrated that attractive physical school environments

[25] Ulrich, R. S., Simons, R. F., et al (1991). Stress recovery during exposure to natural and urban environments. Journal of env. psychology, 11(3), 201-230.
[26] Kaplan, R., & Kaplan, S. (1989). The experience of nature: A psych. perspective. CUP Archive.
[27] Kaplan, R. (2001). The nature of the view from home: Psychological benefits. Environment and behavior, 33(4), 507-542.
[28] Ulrich, R. S. (1984). View through a window may influence recovery from surgery. Science, 224(4647), 420-421.
[29] Kaplan, R. (2001). The nature of the view from home: Psychological benefits. Environment and behavior, 33(4), 507-542.
[30] Li, D., & Sullivan, W. C. (2016). Impact of views to school landscapes on recovery from stress and mental fatigue. Landscape and Urban Planning, 148, 149-158.
[31] Grinde, B., & Patil, G. (2009). Biophilia: does visual contact with nature impact on health and wellbeing?. International journal of environmental research and public health, 6(9), 2332-2343.
[32] van den Berg, A. E., Wesselius, J. E., et al (2017). Green walls for a restorative classroom environment: a controlled evaluation study. Env. and Behavior, 49(7), 791-813.
[33] Hedge, A. (1982). The open-plan office: A systematic investigation of employee reactions to their work environment. Environment and Behavior, 14(5), 519-542.
[34] Sundstrom, E., Town, J. P., Brown, D. W., Forman, A., & Mcgee, C. (1982). Physical enclosure, type of job, and privacy in the office. Environment and Behavior, 14(5), 543-559.
[35] Brennan, A., Chugh, J. S., & Kline, T. (2002). Traditional versus open office design: A longitudinal field study. Environment and behavior, 34(3), 279-299.
[36] Hua, Y., Loftness, V., Kraut, R., & Powell, K. M. (2010). Workplace collaborative space layout typology and occupant perception of collab. env. Env and Planning B: Plan and Des, 37(3), 429-448.
[37] Kumar, R., O'Malley, P. M., & Johnston, L. D. (2008). Association between physical env. of secondary schools and student problem behavior: A national study, 2000-3. Env. and Behavior, 40(4), 455-486.

(middle and high schools) were associated with fewer problematic and risky student behaviors, whereas the less attractive physical environments were not.[37] However, this study only differentiated attractiveness from cleanness, and did not define attractiveness. Subsequent researchers have postulated that a school's multi-dimensional spatial qualities (physical environment design) are imbued with different meanings and messages for students. An attractive, clean and orderly space comprises a high spatial quality and conveys to students the message that this is a place where
learning and growth are both valued and supported [Kumar et al 2003]. At the neighborhood scale, a Netherlands study showed that neighborhood attractiveness positively added to residents' reports on life satisfaction and wellbeing.[38] This research suggests that a neighborhood's attractiveness may be associated to social status, and therefore may contribute to social safety – a wellbeing benefit.[39] The same Dutch study showed that other spatially-mediated improvements such as traffic convenience and facility accessibility did not significantly affect life satisfaction. These findings indicate the need for a deeper understanding of the relationship between spatial quality and occupant cognitive function, performance and productivity.

2. EXPERIMENT

In 2018 and 2019, the research team conducted pilot VR environment tests using the three SB parameters (lighting, view, spatial quality) with 36 participants. Two different models of the same, three-dimensional virtual building were built by using Autodesk Revit software to construct sustainable (SB) and nonsustainable
(CB) designs. These were then rendered, using Unreal Software, into two "real time" VR buildings / designs for use in the experiment. The simulated environment consisted of a two story building composed of four different spaces: (1) public: entry lobby / open staircase, (2) semi-public: collaboration space, conference room, open kitchen, (3) semi-private: fitness center, conference room in open
office, (4) private: individual working space. When the participants were in the VR environment, a "preset walk-through" allowed them to get comfortable with the equipment and the experience. Figure 2 illustrates the floor plan with walk-through route, and the

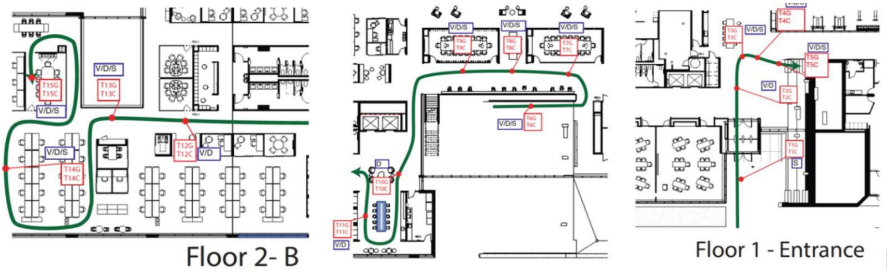


Figure 2. Walk-through routine in virtual environment.

[38] Ettema, D., & Schekkerman, M. (2016). How do spatial characteristics influence well-being and mental health? Comparing the effect of objective and subjective characteristics at different spatial scales. Travel behaviour and society, 5, 56-67.
[39] Deci, E. L., & Ryan, R. M. (2000). The" what" and" why" of goal pursuits: Human needs and the selfdetermination of behavior. Psychological inquiry, 11(4), 227-268.

Figure 3. SB and CD VR.

#	Space	SB VR			CB		
		VI	LG	SP	VI	LG	SP
1	Entry lobby	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
	Open staircase	Y	Y	High	-	-	-
	Fitness center	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
2	Collaboration space	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
	Conference room	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
	Open kitchen	Y	Y	High	-	-	-
3	Conference rm in open office	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
		Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
4	Open office space	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low
	individual working space	Y	Y	High	N	N	Low

Table 1. SB-VR and CB-VR parameters (four different subtypes of space).

location where the participants stopped and looked around in the VR environment. These stop locations were preset. They first entered through the building lobby, then walked up to the secondfloor open office area through a large open staircase. During the two-floor tour, they encountered the fitness center, open kitchen, collaboration space, and conference rooms. The differences in the 4 space types between the SB VR environment and control CB VR environment are described in Table 1 and illustrated in Figure 3.

3. PRELIMINARY RESULTS

3.1. Experiment Procedure

A three-step tasking method was developed for measuring experiences of both buildings, employing video, still images, and a guided VR tour. 45 still images, a 5-minute video, and a guided VR tour were created for SB and CB respectively; test subjects spend 25 minutes in each building. With sensor placements, task practice, and acclimation to the VR, one subject testing took about two hours.

3.2. Preliminary Data: Neurophysiological Measures and Cognitive Tasks

In this section we introduce the time-frequency (TF) signal processing methods central to the proposed work. These are introduced in the context of two of the tasks (gambling feedback and go/no-go), representing the validation of the proposed methods and tasks. Preliminary data from our application of these measures to data from the virtual environments will be presented further below.

3.3. TF measures of theta and delta: indexing salience and complex elaborative processing.

Our preliminary work has shown that TF approaches separate overlapping processes during conventional ERP components. We have developed a TF approach[40] that differentiates medial-frontal (MF) theta (3-7 Hz) and centro-parietal delta (0-3 Hz) contributions to ERP components such as the P3[41-42], feedback negativity (FN), error-related negativity (ERN)[37-43], and the No-go.[44] shows separation of theta and delta frequency during the FN[45-47] gambling task and Go/No-go N2.[48] We have assessed the sensitivity of separable theta and delta measures to mental health outcome measures, where we found that theta during the ERN [43]and delta during the FN[42] were sensitive to disinhibitory behavior problems. *This work indicates that the neurodynamics of many common ERP measures can be understood as a mixture of separate processes occurring simultaneously in theta and delta frequency ranges that are obscured in the unfiltered signal. These measures are sensitive to cognitive and affective processes relevant to mental health and task performance.*

[40] Bernat, E. M., Williams, W. J., & Gehring, W. J. (2005). Decomposing ERP time–frequency energy using PCA. Clinical neurophysiology, 116(6), 1314-1334
[41] Gilmore, C. S., Malone, S. M., Bernat, E. M., & Iacono, W. G. (2010). Relationship between the P3 event-related potential, its associated time-frequency components, and externalizing psychopathology. Psychophysiology, 47(1), 123-132.
[42] Bernat, E. M., Malone, S. M., et al. (2007). Decomposing delta, theta, and alpha time–frequency ERP activity from a visual oddball task using PCA. International journal of psychophysiology, 64(1), 62-74.
[43] Hall, J. R., Bernat, E. M., & Patrick, C. J. (2007). Externalizing psychopathology and the error-related negativity. Psychological science, 18(4), 326-333.
[44] Harper, J., Malone, S. M., & Bernat, E. M. (2014). Theta and delta band activity explain N2 and P3 ERP component activity in a go/no-go task. Clinical Neurophysiology, 125(1), 124-132.
[45] Nelson, L. D., Patrick, C. J., Collins, P., Lang, A. R., & Bernat, E. M. (2011). Alcohol impairs brain reactivity to explicit loss feedback. Psychopharmacology, 218(2), 419.
[46] Bernat, E. M., Nelson, et al (2011). Externalizing psychopathology and gain–loss feedback in a simulated gambling taskJournal of abnormal psychology, 120(2), 352.
[47] Bernat, E., Nelson, L., & Baskin-Sommers, A. (2012). Time-frequency Theta and Delta measures index separable components of feedback processing. Intl. Journal of Psychophysiology, 3(85), 341.
[48] Harper, J., Malone, S. M., Bachman, M. D., & Bernat, E. M. (2016). Stimulus sequence context differentially modulates inhibition-related theta and delta band activity. Psychophysio, 53(5), 712-722.

3.4. TF Interchannel Phase Synchrony (ICPS): indexing Functional Connectivity.

We have validated a new measure of functional connectivity for EEG neuroimaging data based on TF interchannel phase-synchrony (ICPS),[49] and have demonstrated that it is sensitive to medial-frontal to lateral PFC functional integration underlying cognitive control processes associated with the error-related negativity (ERN) [50-55] as well as the No-go N2[55] and FN [46,57]. An example of No-go N2 and FN bivariate ICPS (with FCz as a seed-reference, cf. ACC) is given in Figure 5. Here correspondence between these measures in the theta range is presented, with topographical maps displaying significance (white indicates $p < .01$). For ICPS, significant phase-synchrony with lateral-frontal, motor, and occipital areas are apparent. We recently tested the sensitivity of the ICPS measure to INT-relevant worry indexed by the Penn State Worry Questionnaire (PSWQ) during the ERN in a sample of undergraduate students (N=77). Using path analyses, we found that ERN theta amplitude was positively related to PSWQ ($r = .26$, $p < .05$), supporting the view that worry represents overactive salience processing, while, ERN theta ICPS between medial and lateral PFC regions was negatively related to PSWQ ($r = -.31$, $p < .01$), supporting the view that control processing was simultaneously diminished for worriers. Importantly, analyses confirmed that these relationships with PSWQ were independent, separable, processes. Finally, the path analysis supported the inference that worry indirectly influences post-error behavior via ICPS (accuracy and RT), rather than amplitude. Specifically, worry is associated with faster post-error RT and lower post-error accuracy through its relationship with reduced TF-ICPS. The indirect path between the TF-amplitude and post-error behavior through TF-ICPS was significant (Sobel's $t=2.43$, $p=.01$) indicating that theta amplitude predicts behavior primarily through theta ICPS. *Together, this work indicates that our ICPS measure of functional connectivity appropriately indexes integration during the proposed tasks, and is sensitive to worry, a primary component of stress.*

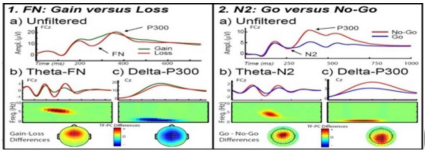


Figure 4. Theta/Delta separate processes

Figure 5. Measures of theta amplitude and ICPS

3.5. Preliminary Interpretation: CB vs. SB

We collected preliminary neurophysiological data based on CB and SB versions of the building detailed above (N=36) and applied the proposed TF amplitude and ICPS measures. For the initial data, we presented a movie from a walkthrough of the building, to record continuous EEG, and still pictures taken from the movie, to record ERP data. Results are presented from the still pictures and movie, based on the TF amplitude and ICPS approaches. TF Amplitude results for the SB and CB movies indicated significant increases in theta (presented in Figure 6), suggesting greater engagement in the SB environment, but not other bands. Still picture results are presented in Figure 7 and demonstrate robust differences between the SB and CB. The top row contains traditional time-domain measures. The waveform plot depicts overall activity in the first and second 500 ms blocks after picture presentation. The topomaps to the right depict the amplitude differences (color, where red indicates increases and blue decreases) and

the associated significance (where white indicates p < .01, and black indicates p > .10, uncorrected). Significantly greater activity in bilateral occipital regions, as well decreases in frontal regions, can be readily observed. The TF results decompose this activity, as well as index activity not observable in the time-domain. Next, the TF results indicate significant differences between SB and CB for delta (0-3 Hz), theta (3-7 Hz), and alpha (8-12 Hz) frequency bands. Delta effects in the early block (0-500 ms) primarily index the increases bilateral occipital activation observed in the time-domain, consistent with the fact that delta activity generally contains the largest amplitude and is thus more strongly reflected in time-domain measures. In the later block (500-1000 ms), delta shows significant centro-parietal decreases. Together, the early increases and later decreases are consistent with a strong early response to the SB pictures, dominated by visual simulation, which resolves more quickly than the CB in the later block. Next, theta activity in the early block shows increases in bilateral occipital activity for SB relative to CB, concomitant with occipital increases in delta, as well as centro-parietal increases. Lateral-frontal increases for SB pictures are also evident, consistent with engagement of control regions in lateral prefrontal regions. In the second block only the increases in centro-parietal areas are maintained. Finally, for alpha, a decrease in bilateral occipital areas is readily observed, consistent with greater engagement of the visual system, consistent with the increased activation observed in delta (parietal-occipital alpha indexes an inhibitory processes, such that decreases indicate increased activity in that area). We additionally assessed alpha asymmetry in the 500-1000 ms still image viewing task, where we predicted greater relative right-hemisphere activation, indicating greater approach tendency. Results provided some support for this inference, with greater relative right-hemisphere activation for overall alpha at a trend level (8-13 Hz; z = 1.74. p = .082, r = .145), as well as upper alpha sub-band (11-13 Hz; z = 2.11. p = .034, r = .176). *Preliminary results indicate ERP techniques represent a robust index of processing difference in the SB versus CB built environment, providing novel information about mechanisms underlying those differences to explore herein.*

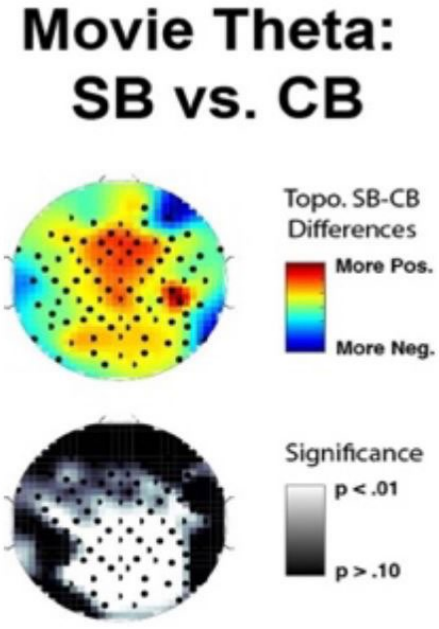


Figure 6. Movie amplitude

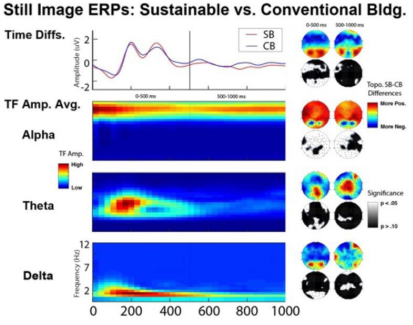


Figure 7. Still image amplitude.

Functional connectivity was indexed by ICPS at beta 2 (20-30 Hz), beta 1 (13-20 Hz), as well as alpha, theta, and delta as assessed for amplitude. Significant ($p < .05$, uncorrected) bivariate ICPS measures were computed from 8 seed regions (5 in frontal regions, and 3 in occipital regions), for both the movies and image event-related data. These results are presented in Figure 8. We assessed these seed regions, beyond just a priori connectivity between one medial-frontal seed and 2 lateral sites (as in our preliminary work above), to have a more broad assessment of engagement of frontal areas, anticipated increases in occipital processing related to engagement with the stimuli, as well as long-range connectivity between these regions. Further, because there is little work in this area, there were fewer published findings to guide our hypotheses. First, for the movies, results for delta, theta, and alpha demonstrated parallels to the still image amplitude effects. That is, both delta and theta showed increases, while alpha demonstrated decreases. This is also consistent with the increase in theta observed in the movie amplitude data. These results suggest that the amplitude effects in the still images may index functional integration occurring during watching the continuous movie of the SB relative to the CB environments. Results in higher frequency beta range were in opposite directions, with increases for SB in beta 2 and decreases for beta 1, relative to CB. This is consistent with emerging work suggesting beta 2 can index reward processing[58-61] (increased for SB in these results) and increases in beta 1 can be related to loss processing[62-65] (increased for CB in these results). Results for the still images were more complicated and difficult to interpret, although the number of significant results suggest this approach was sensitive to differential processing, both within and between frontal and occipital regions, associated with SB and CB during still image processing. While these findings must be taken tentatively, due to the small N, and associated lack of statistical power, overall effects suggest the feasibility of detecting functional connectivity associated with viewing SB relative to SB environments. *Preliminary results demonstrate sensitivity to differences in functional connectivity within and between frontal and occipital areas central to how people perceive and engage with the built environment.*

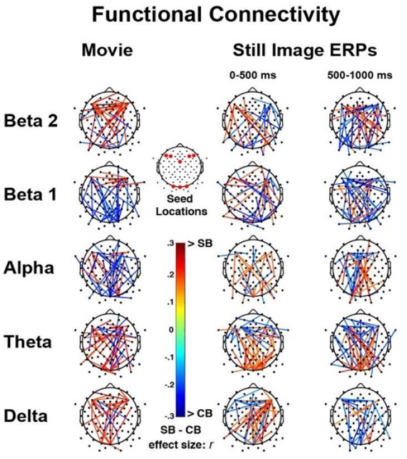


Figure 8. Functional connectivity: significant bivariate ICPS measures (p<.05, uncorrected), using 5 frontal and 3 occipital regions as seed references

CONCLUSION

The mechanisms underpinning how the built environment affects mental health and cognitive functioning are largely unexplored due to the complexity of built environment, and the difficulty in quantifying psychological responses. A neuroscientific approach has the capacity to bridge this gap. This project developed and tested a neuroimaging experimental protocol, combined with VR technology, as a quantitative, repeatable framework that can be readily adopted by researchers in a wide variety of social science and design fields. Our approach provides a unique new utility to three (separately) validated
methodologies by combining (1) EEG with an emerging design technology, (2) VR to overcome the dual problems of confounding variables and participant bias during the measurement of elicited user responses to SB features in real time. VR allows three-dimensional, systematic design manipulations that are prohibitively expensive in real environments and EEG offers validated inferences regarding cognitive and affective processing. Our approach combines (3) continuous EEG approaches with neuroimaging to understand occupants' emotional responses. The in-depth understanding of mechanisms driving occupant behavioral differences between SB and CB virtual environments will provide designers and engineers with evidence to change, modify and propose new design solutions – pre-build. In the future, the integration of neuroscientific validated evidence in the design process may lead to a novel and impactful design framework for building industry adoption.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Funding support from the AIA Upjohn Research Initiative Grant and from the University of Maryland Brain and Behavior Initiative Grant is gratefully acknowledged.

REFERENCES

Anderson, J. R., & Lebiere, C. (2003). The Newell test for a theory of cognition. *Behavioral and brain Sciences*, 26(5), 587-601.

Bernat, E. M., Malone, S. M., et al. (2007). Decomposing delta, theta, and alpha time–frequency ERP activity from a visual oddball task using PCA. I*nternational journal of psychophysiology*, 64(1), 62-74.

Bernat, E. M., Nelson, et al (2011). Externalizing psychopathology and gain–loss feedback in a simulated gambling task. *Journal of abnormal psychology*, 120(2), 352.

Bernat, E. M., Williams, W. J., & Gehring, W. J. (2005). Decomposing ERP time–frequency energy using PCA. *Clinical neurophysiology,* 116(6), 1314-1334

Bernat, E., Nelson, L., & Baskin-Sommers, A. (2012). Time-frequency Theta and Delta measures index separable components of feedback processing. Intl. *Journal of Psychophysiology,* 3(85), 341.

Bertolero, M. A., Yeo, B. T., & D'Esposito, M. (2015). The modular and integrative functional architecture of the human brain. *Proceedings of the Natl. Acad. of Sciences,* 112(49), E6798-E6807.

Bhatt, M., Suchan, J., Schultz, C., Kondyli, V., & Goyal, S. (2016, March). Artificial intelligence for predictive and evidence based architecture design. In 30th *AAAI Conference on Artificial Intelligence*.

Boyce, P. R. (2010). The impact of light in buildings on human health. *Indoor and Built environment*, 19(1), 8-20.

Brennan, A., Chugh, J. S., & Kline, T. (2002). Traditional versus open office design: A longitudinal field study. *Environment and behavior*, 34(3), 279-299.

Cedeno-Laurent, J. G., Williams, A., MacNaughton, P., Cao, X., Eitland, E., Spengler, J., & Allen, J. (2018).Building evidence for health: green buildings, current science, and future challenges. *Annual review of public health*, 39, 291-308.

Czeisler, C. A., & Waterhouse, J. M. (1995). The effect of light on the human circadian pacemaker. *Circadian clocks and their adjustment*, 183, 254-290.

Daurat, A., Aguirre, A., Foret, J., Gonnet, P., Keromes, A., & Benoit, O. (1993). Bright light affects alertness and performance rhythms during a 24-h constant routine. *Phys & behavior*, 53(5), 929-936.

Deci, E. L., & Ryan, R. M. (2000). The" what" and" why" of goal pursuits: Human needs and the selfdetermination of behavior. *Psychological inquiry,* 11(4), 227-268.

Downs, R. M., & Stea, D. (Eds.). (2017). *Image and environment: Cognitive mapping and spatial behavior.* Transaction Publishers.

Ettema, D., & Schekkerman, M. (2016). How do spatial characteristics influence well-being and mental health? Comparing the effect of objective and subjective characteristics at different spatial scales. *Travel behaviour and society*, 5, 56-67.

Figueiro, M. G., & Rea, M. S. (2016). Office lighting and personal light exposures in two seasons: Impact on sleep and mood. *Lighting Research & Technology,* 48(3), 352-364

Gilmore, C. S., Malone, S. M., Bernat, E. M., & Iacono, W. G. (2010). Relationship between the P3 event-related potential, its associated time-frequency components, and externalizing psychopathology. *Psychophysiology*, 47(1), 123-132.

Grinde, B., & Patil, G. (2009). Biophilia: does visual contact with nature impact on health and wellbeing?. *International journal of environmental research and public health,* 6(9), 2332-2343.

Hall, J. R., Bernat, E. M., & Patrick, C. J. (2007). Externalizing psychopathology and the error-related negativity. *Psychological science*, 18(4), 326-333.

Harper, J., Malone, S. M., & Bernat, E. M. (2014). Theta and delta band activity explain N2 and P3 ERP component activity in a go/no-go task. *Clinical Neurophysiology*, 125(1), 124-132.

Harper, J., Malone, S. M., Bachman, M. D., & Bernat, E. M. (2016). Stimulus sequence context differentially modulates inhibition-related theta and delta band activity. *Psychophysio*, 53(5), 712-722.

Hedge, A. (1982). The open-plan office: A systematic investigation of employee reactions to their work environment. *Environment and Behavior,* 14(5), 519-542.

Hua, Y., Loftness, V., Kraut, R., & Powell, K. M. (2010). Workplace collaborative space layout typology and occupant perception of collab. env. *Env and Planning B: Plan and Des,* 37(3), 429-448.

Kaplan, R. (2001). The nature of the view from home: Psychological benefits. *Environment and behavior,* 33(4), 507-542.

Kaplan, R., & Kaplan, S. (1989). *The experience of nature: A psych. perspective.* CUP Archive.

Kaplan, S. (1995). The restorative benefits of nature: Toward an integrative framework. *Journal of environmental psychology*, 15(3), 169-182.

Koć-Januchta, M., Hoffler, T., et al (2017). Visualizers versus verbalizers: Effects of cognitive style on learning with texts and pictures–An eye-tracking study. *Computers in Human Behav*, 68, 170-179.

Koohsari, M. J., Owen, N., et al (2017). Built environmental factors and adults' travel behaviors: role of street layout and local destinations. *Preventive medicine*, 96, 124-128.

Kumar, R., O'Malley, P. M., & Johnston, L. D. (2008). Association between physical env. of secondary schools and student problem behavior: A national study, 2000-3. *Env. and Behavior*, 40(4), 455-486.

Langley, P. (2017). Progress and challenges in research on cognitive architectures. In *Thirty-First AAAI Conference on Artificial Intelligence*.

Li, D., & Sullivan, W. C. (2016). Impact of views to school landscapes on recovery from stress and mental fatigue. *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 148, 149-158.

Lieto, A., Lebiere, C., & Oltramari, A. (2018). The knowledge level in cognitive architectures: Current limitations and possible developments. *Cognitive Systems Research*, 48, 39-55.

Nagib, W., & Williams, A. (2017). Toward an autism-friendly home env. *Housing Stud,* 32(2), 140-67.

Nelson, L. D., Patrick, C. J., Collins, P., Lang, A. R., & Bernat, E. M. (2011). Alcohol impairs brain reactivity to explicit loss feedback. *Psychopharmacology,* 218(2), 419.

Seitamaa-Hakkarainen, P., Huotilainen, M., Makela, M., Groth, C., & Hakkarainen, K. (2014). *The promise of cognitive neuroscience in design studies. Proceedings of DRS*, 834-846.

Singh, J. (1996). Impact of indoor air pollution on health, comfort and productivity of the occupants. *Aerobiologia*, 12(1), 121-127

Sundstrom, E., Town, J. P., Brown, D. W., Forman, A., & Mcgee, C. (1982). Physical enclosure, type of job, and privacy in the office. *Environment and Behavior,* 14(5), 543-559.

Sweller, J., van Merrienboer, J. J., & Paas, F. (2019). Cognitive architecture and instructional design: 20 years later. *Educational Psychology Review*, 1-32.

Sweller, J., Van Merrienboer, J. J., & Paas, F. G. (1998). Cognitive architecture and instructional design. *Educational psychology review*, 10(3), 251-296.

Ticleanu, C., & Littlefair, P. (2015). A summary of LED lighting impacts on health. I*nternational Journal of Sustainable Lighting*, 17, 5-11.

Ulrich, R. S. (1984). View through a window may influence recovery from surgery. *Science,* 224(4647), 420-421.

Ulrich, R. S., Simons, R. F., et al (1991). Stress recovery during exposure to natural and urban environments. *Journal of env. psychology*, 11(3), 201-230.

van den Berg, A. E., Wesselius, J. E., et al (2017). Green walls for a restorative classroom environment: a controlled evaluation study. *Env. and Behavior,* 49(7), 791-813.

Vandewalle, G., Maquet, P., & Dijk, D. J. (2009). Light as a modulator of cognitive brain function. *Trends in cognitive sciences,* 13(10), 429-438.

Vandewalle, G., Maquet, P., & Dijk, D. J. (2009). Light as a modulator of cognitive brain function. *Trends in cognitive sciences,* 13(10), 429-438.

Wilson, E. O. (2003). *Biophilia*. 1984. Massachusetts: Harvard University Press Google Scholar.

Zhang, Q., & Zhu, Y. (2012). Characterizing ultrafine particles and other air pollutants at five schools in South Texas. *Indoor Air,* 22(1), 33-42.

PAPER #7.19

HOW MUCH DOES ZERO ENERGY BUILDING COST?

Ming Hu[a]
[a] University of Maryland, College Park, MD

ABSTRACT

Developers, building owners, and design teams often point to initial capital costs as the
primary obstacle hindering the uptake of net-zero buildings. In-depth research and an understanding of whether net-zero buildings cost more to design and construct are still scattered and non-systemic. Accordingly, this study provides the first comprehensive investigation into actual net-zero building construction costs in the United States, based on qualitative and quantitative research. The aims of this research are to: (1) provide a comprehensive survey of the existing body of literature to aggregate the findings and identify the consensus and pattern, (2) compare the results and analyze the evidence with a focus on quantitative studies, and (3) conduct a quantitative comparative analysis of twelve built zero energy buildings (ZEB) in order to understand whether there is enough evidence of cost differences between ZEB, conventional building (CB) and green building (GB). Statistical tests were performed, with the results showing no significant differences between actual ZEB costs and modeled CB costs. Further details investigated the cost difference between actual ZEB and modeled GB. The findings of this research provide initial detailed insights into net-zero building costs in the United States, which may benefit the promotion of ZEB practices.

KEYWORDS

Zero energy building; conventional building; construction cost; modeled cost.

INTRODUCTION

The building industry contributes significantly to global CO2 emissions as well as energy consumption. Global energy consumption is assumed to increase by 33% from 2010 to 2030 (Kim et al. 2014, Abdelaziz et al. 2011). The United Nations' Sustainable Buildings and Construction Programme published a report suggesting that building and construction sectors account for 40% of global energy use and 30% of energy-related GHG emissions. During 2016, the United States' building sector consumed 40% of primary energy, based on the U.S. Energy Information Administration's statics (EIA 2018). Primary energy, deriving mainly from fossil fuels, while limited, is a major contributor to CO2 emissions, which are rising globally at a rate of more than 2% per year (Kelso 2012). Consequently, building green is one of the most effective strategies for overall energy consumption reduction and CO2 emissions reductions. However, design teams and building owners often cite the incremental initial costs of green (energy efficient) building as significant barriers to building high-performance buildings with the ultimate goal of achieving net-zero energy. So far, there has been a large amount of research focusing on the benefits of green building (GB) for users, clients, and society. (Liu et al.) estimated that GB could create incremental economic benefits by saving energy and improving the environment (Eichholtz et al. 2010) while (Eihholtz et al.) pointed out how the green label affects the market rents and values of commercial space, potentially leading to the high resale value of a building (Gabay et

al. 2014). However, only a small portfolio of studies have investigated the cost obstacles; regarding costs related particularly to net-zero building, there is very limited literature and reports to date. Meanwhile, despite the widespread perception of GB as expensive, the empirical studies and evidence needed to support this claim are inadequate, and the issue of a high green-cost premium is still debatable. It is foreseeable, though, that the cost concern could become one of the major obstacles to the promotion of zero energy building (ZEB). Therefore, a study of ZEB as a separate building type independent from GB will provide an opportunity to investigate the differences between ZEB and GB and the related cost indications.

1.RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

1.1. Cost definition

This research project focuses on the construction cost of ZEB since the perception of ZEB having expensive initial costs has been recognized as one of the critical obstacles to promoting net-zero energy building, and they are paid by the developer and investors. The construction costs of building include direct (hard) costs and indirect (soft) costs. Direct costs are related to cost materials, labor, construction equipment, energy, water, and other costs directly related to the activities of constructing a building. Indirect costs include costs related to the design, commission, permitting fee, documentation fees, and other legal fees (Mapp et al. 2011; Yudelson 2010, Khoshbakht et al. 2017). The post-construction costs comprise the building operation costs: energy, water, maintenance, repair, and management (Khoshbakht et al. 2017). Some researchers have indicated that general misunderstandings of construction costs for building green stems from individuals having no experience in the construction of green and energy-efficient buildings (Shrestha & Pushpala 2012). The perceptions about the higher costs of GB has hindered the advancement of more energy-efficient building and construction.

1.2. Cost estimation and analysis method

There are several methods and techniques used for cost estimation in the building industry, including the traditional statistical analysis of detailed itemized costs, factor analysis of construction activities (Kaming et al. 1997, Ben-Arieh & Qian 2003) time-dependent cost trend projection, index number cost estimation
(Ashworth & Perera 2015), expert systems estimation (Brook 2016),integrated analysis of multi-objectives (Pettang et al. 1997, Zhang et al. 1998, Hwang 2016). and BIM and ontology-based cost estimation (Lee et al. 2014). In the building industry, the traditional statistical analysis of detailed itemized costs is the wider used method due to its simplicity and availability of multiple itemized cost database. The other methods are presented and analyzed in research and academic settings, and their application in the field and actual projects are very limited (Valentini et al. 2017). Since the primary goal of this research is to analyze the actual net-zero building cost and understand the perceptions from the field, the first traditional cost estimation method was selected. Two commercially available itemized cost databases are selected and used. The cost analysis of sustainable building can be categorized into two groups: paired comparison and unpaired comparison. An unpaired building cost comparison is a statistical analysis method based on a comparison of actual or simulated costs of unpaired GBs and conventional buildings (Khoshbakht et al. 2017). A paired building cost comparison involves comparing the costs of two identical buildings for the cost of conventional upgrades versus green upgrades (Hwang 2016). In this research project, paired comparison is used to compare the

costs of simulated net-zero building, GB, and conventional building. Two construction cost databases were selected and compared: the 2017 National Building Cost Manual (NBCM) and RSMeans's Square Foot Costs Book (RSFCB).

1.3. Case studies selection

Three major programs in the United States have influenced the promotion of green building and net zero building practices, and they all have rating systems or tools to measure and quantify building performance. These three programs are (1) LEED, managed by the U.S Green Building Council, which is a private nonprofit organization; (2) the Energy Star Label, jointly managed by Department of energy (DOE) and Environment Protection Agency (EPA); and (3) the zero energy building certification organized by the International Living Future Institute (ILFI). All three are volunteer programs.The largest database of zero net energy (ZEB) building is the online database that was created, organized, and managed by the New Building Institute (NBI).[1] In May 2017, the ILFI and NBI announced a partnership to track and certify ZEB building to drive a broader market adoption. Therefore, in this research project, that database was selected, and education buildings were chosen as the study types. Altogether, there are thirty-nine new constructed education buildings and four renovated education buildings, which is the largest building type group in the current database. The projects have a square footage ranging from 1,528 ft^2 (141 m2) to 286,212 ft^2 (26,590 m^2) and an energy use intensity (EUI) of 50 $kwh/m^2/yr$ to of 432 kwh/m2/yr. The author then matched the addresses of the buildings included in the database with those in the LEED project database to acquire additional information, such as energy consumption reduction, water conservation, and recycled and reused materials. The match yielded twelve buildings for which the construction cost, area, energy efficiency, water efficiency, and building mechanical system characteristics could be identified. Table 1 provides a breakdown of these projects by building system and costs. The selected buildings were net-zero energy buildings that consider the following two aspects: electrical energy production and thermal energy production (heating, cooling and DHW).

There are three steps in cost estimation: (1) create an itemized unit cost database based on RSMeans's book and the National Building Cost Manual (NBCM); (2) build a three-dimensional building information model (BIM) based on verified ZEB construction information and export the building material and system information to Excel format; and (3) used the database from (1) and building information from (2) to estimate the cost of CB and GB.

- Step 1: Cost estimation data collection

In this research project, a traditional itemized cost estimation method was used. The researcher initially sought to collect actual cost data of CBs or GBs with a compatible size and use it as a control group for comparison. However, since most building owners were reluctant to share cost information, this research was redesigned to compare actual net-zero building costs with modeled costs of CBs and GBs. Two construction cost databases were selected and compared: the 2017 National Building Cost Manual (NBCM) and RSMeans's Square Foot Costs Book (RSFCB).

- Steps 2 & 3: Itemized cost calculation using BIM model Based on available data from building floor plans, sections, elevations, detail drawings, and project descriptions, first, three-dimensional virtual models were created in Autodesk Revit for each case building, based on the information provided by building owners or found online (Hu et al.

[1] The New Buildings Institute (NBI) is a non-profit organization driving better energy performance in commercial buildings.

Project	City State	Use	Building Area (ft^2)	EUI (kwh/ m^2)	Cost ($)	Year	Net-Zero Energy Feature
Science House	St. Paul, MN	Education/ Museum	1,528	0	$650,000 ($425/ft^2 ≈$4250/$m^2$)	2013	• Total ventilation energy recovery • Multi-modal natural ventilation • Efficient lighting • High heat pump efficiency • High insulation • Energy-efficient windows and doors • Science House's total energy use, including plug and equipment loads, is 60% below that required by code, allowing its 8.8-kilowatt photovoltaic (PV) system to produce more energy than the building uses on an annual basis
Leslie Shao-Ming Sun Field Station	Woodside, CA	Education	13,197	9.46	4,785,000 ($362/$ft^2$ ≈$3620/$m^2$)	2002	• Energy-efficient windows and doors • PV system (A 22-kilowatt, grid-connected photovoltaic system makes the building a net producer of electricity
Omega Center for Sustainable Living	Rhinebeck, NY	Education	6,200	-25	2,800,000 ($451/$ft^2$ ≈$4510/$m^2$)	2009	• Geothermal wells and heat pumps • PV system
Environmental Technology Center	Rohnert Park, CA	Education	2,196	-3.1	1,116,000 ($508/$ft^2$ ≈$5080/$m^2$)	2001	• A 3-kW roof-integrated photovoltaic system • Insulated structural wall panel • Hydronic radiant heat
Adam Joseph Lewis Center	Oberlin, OH	Education	13,595	-34.7	4,854,600 ($375/$ft^2$ ≈$3750/$m^2$)	2000	• Living machine • PV system • Ground-loop heat pumps • Water-to-water heat pump
Hawaii Gateway Energy Center	Kailua-Kona, HI		5,597	-6.3	3,400,000 ($607/$ft^2$ ≈$6070/$m^2$)	2005	• A 20-kilowatt photovoltaic system • Seawater pump • High insulation
Living Learning Center	Eureka, MO	Education	2,917	-3.2	1,597,227 ($547/$ft^2$ ≈$5470/$m^2$)	2009	• High efficiency variable refrigerant HVAC system • High insulation • Evergreen Solar roof & pole-mounted photovoltaic, 23.1 kWh
Putney School Field House	Putney, VT	Education	16,802	0	6,036,000 ($318/$ft^2$ ≈$3180/$m^2$)	2009	• High insulation • 36.8 kW solar PV
Locust Trace Agriscience Campus	Lexington, KY	Education	69,998	0	15,620,000 ($234/$ft^2$ ≈$2340/$m^2$)	2011	• 175kW solar PV
Richarsbille Elementary School	Bowling Green, KY	Education	72,280	3.2	14,927,000 ($207/$ft^2$ ≈$2070/$m^2$)	2010	• 208 kW thin-film PV system
Hawaii Preparatory Academy Energy Lab	Waimea, HI	Education	5,889	-16	4,306,199 ($731 /$ft^2$ ≈$7310/$m^2$))	2010	• 27 Kw PV system
Bertschi School Science Wing	Seattle, WA	Education	1,421	0	935,000 ($658/$ft^2$ ≈$6580/$m^2$))	2011	• Energy recovery system • Hydronic radiant floor • High insulation • 20Kw PV system

Table 1. Case project details

2017). All building information was input in three-dimensional virtual models in a BIM environment so that users could extract and organize the cost-related information easily. The three-dimensional models include all primary building materials and systems to reflect the actual conditions of the case buildings. Some advanced materials and building systems, which are not included in the existing Revit library, were created and manually input in the models. Then, a material schedule was created within the Revit model, transferring three-dimensional data of materials into two-dimensional, quantitative itemized numbers, including volume, weight, dimensions, layers, and assemblies (Hu 2017). Afterward, the schedules were exported to an Excel-format file and used as a cost estimation sheet for calculating the CB and GB with the same area, building construction, material assemblies, and systems as the net-zero building. As shown in table 5, the primary categories included in the calculation were direct costs and indirect costs. The direct costs included the building substructure system (foundation), floor and roof system, exterior walls and windows/doors, interior walls and finish, ceilings, restroom fixtures and plumbing system, HVAC systems,
and vertical transportation system. The indirect costs included the designers' (architect and engineer) fee and contractors' fee. Instead of a rough per area cost estimation, which is often found in cost analysis in GB, in this study, the author conducted a detailed breakdown cost estimation by utilizing the advanced building information modeling software Autodesk Revit. In conventional methods, a cost estimator digitizes the architect's paper drawings or imports two-dimensional information of the building (data) into a cost estimation package. In either of these methods, human error could occur easily, and inaccuracies could propagate from the original data entry to the final cost number. Autodesk Revit, as a building information modeling (BIM) tool, allows the author to automate the task of quantification and then extract and transfer the data to an Excel format for a final cost estimation checkup.

2. STATISTICAL ANALYSIS

Null analysis is appropriate for this research project. From the literature review and ZEB actual cost information, there is no clear indication that ZEB has a higher premium than the national average for conventional building. Therefore, before analyzing the causes of a premium cost, understanding whether there is a cost difference is more important. This was conducted to determine if ZEB costs were indeed significantly different from the CB and GB. The Wilcoxon signed-rank test is commonly used to test for a difference in a paired observation, and a sign test is often used to test the null hypothesis.

The analysis considers two null hypotheses:
• H01:There is no significant cost difference between ZEB and CB.
• H02 There is no significance cost difference between ZEB and GB.
The two alternative hypotheses are:
• Ha1:There is significant cost difference between ZEB and CB.
• Ha2 There is significance cost difference between ZEB and GB.

Descriptive results
The results from the Wilcoxon matched pairs signed-rank test for ZEB, compared to CB, are illustrated in table 2 and the tests for ZEB and GB are shown in table 3. The overall results of the two null hypotheses are provided in table 7. The equation used to obtain the statistic W is:

$$W = \sum_{i=0}^{n\prime} R_i^{(+)},$$

where n' is the actual sample size, Ri is rank, and W is the Wilcoxon test score.

For null hypothesis number 1(H01), the model costs of six CB are higher than the actual ZEB cost, and the rest six CBs costs are lower than the actual ZEB cost. The Wilcoxon test score (W), 35, is higher than the critical value used for a two-tier test of 14. Based on this result, we could not reject null hypothesis 1(H01), instead, we should reject the alternative hypothesis (Ha1). As conclusion, we consider there is no difference between the actual ZEB and modeled CB building cost, based on RSFCB and NBCM datasets. For null hypothesis number 2 (H02), there are model costs of ten GBs that are higher than the actual ZEB cost, and model costs of two GBs that are lower than the actual cost. The Wilcoxon test score (W), 11, is less than the critical value used for a two-tier test of 14. Based on this result, we could reject null hypothesis 2, and we conclude alternative hypothesis (Ha1) can be supported: there is difference between the actual ZEB cost and modeled GB cost, based on the RSFCB dataset.

Project	Modeled Cost $/m^2 ($X_{1i}$)	Actual Cost $/sft ($X_{2i}$)	Difference ($D_i = X_{1i} - X_{2i}$))	Positive	[Diff] (D_i)	Rank (R_i)	Signed Rank	α = 0.05
Science House	4445.6	425	19.56	1	19.56	3	3	
Leslie Shao-Ming Sun	3369.6	362	-25.04	-1	25.04	5	-5	
Omega	4233.6	451	-27.64	-1	27.64	6	-6	
ETC	5286.7	508	20.67	1	20.67	4	4	
Adam Joseph Lewis Center (AJLC)	3940.2	375	19.02	1	19.02	2	2	
Hawaii Gateway	6058.3	607	-1.17	-1	1.17	1	-1	
Living Learning Center (LLC)	5044.7	547	-42.53	-1	42.53	8	-8	
Putney	3560.7	318	38.07	1	38.07	7	7	
Locust Trace Campus (LTC)	3977.5	234	163.75	1	163.75	9	9	
Richarsbille ES	3741.2	207	167.12	1	167.12	10	10	
Hawaii Preparatory Energy Lab (HPAEL)	5268.6	731	-204.14	-1	204.14	11	-11	
Bertschi	3677.6	658	-290.24	-1	290.24	12	-12	
							35	Positive sum
							-43	Negative sum
							35	Test statistic (W)

Table 2. Wilcoxon matched pairs signed-rank tests for ZEB cost compared to modeled CB cost

PROJECT	Modeled Cost (green)	Actual Cost	Difference	Positive	[Diff]	Rank	Signed Rank (W)	α = 0.05
Science House	569.04	425	144.04	1	144.04	7	7	
Leslie Shao-Ming Sun	431.31	362	69.31	1	69.31	2	2	
Omega	541.90	451	90.90	1	90.90	3	3	
ETC	676.70	508	168.70	1	168.70	9	9	
Adam Joseph Lewis Center(AJLC)	504.34	375	129.34	1	129.34	5	5	
Hawaii Gateway	775.46	607	168.46	1	168.46	8	8	
Living Learning Center (LLC)	645.72	547	98.72	1	98.72	4	4	
Putney	455.76	318	137.76	1	137.76	6	6	
Locust Trace Campus (LTC)	509.12	234	275.12	1	275.12	12	12	
Richarsbille ES	478.88	207	271.88	1	271.88	11	11	
Hawaii Preparatory Energy Lab (HPAEL)	674.38	731	-56.62	-1	56.62	1	-1	
Bertschi	470.73	658	-187.27	-1	187.27	10	-10	
							67	Positive sum
							-11	Negative sum
							11	Test statistic (W)

Table 3. Wilcoxon matched pairs signed-rank tests for ZEB cost compared to modeled GB cost

Hypotheses	N of Buildings	Below Actual Cost	Above Actual Cost	Test Statistic (W)	Critical Value (z)	Result
H_{01}	12	6	6	35	14	Cannot reject
H_{02}	12	10	2	11	14	Reject

Table 4. Summary results of Wilcoxon matched pairs signed-rank tests (based on statistical significance at an alpha level of 0.05)

3. FINDINGS

3.1. ZEB is not more expensive than CB

The first important findings is there is no significant cost difference between actual ZEB cost and modeled CBs cost. Regarding cost, 33.3% of ZEBs are equal to or 2% more expensive than CB, 33.3% of ZEBs cost 10–16% less than CBs, 16.7% of ZEBs cost 45–48% less than CB, and only 16.7% of ZEBs cost 45–68% more than CBs (refer to table 5).

3.2. Reasoning for higher modeled GBs cost than actual ZEBs cost

The rejection of null hypothesis 2 suggests a cost difference between the actual ZEBs and modeled GBs, so the author further investigated the cost difference between the actual ZEBs and modeled GBs, and which factors have correlation to the cost difference. The factors investigated are: location, year of completion, area and building types. Pearson correlation coefficient (r) was used to study the correlations factors and cost difference between ZEB and GB. Pearson's r

measures the linear relationship between two level variables. Table 6 shows the r value of those correlations. There is positive relation between the year of completion, total area of the building to the cost differences, and negative relation between building types, location to the cost differences. And among the four factors, building area (0.966) has the strongest correlation to the cost differences, year of completion has the weakest correlation to cost differences.

Project Name	Difference Between ZEB and CB
Science House	-10%
Leslie Shao-Ming Sun	1%
Omega	0%
ETC	-10%
Adam Joseph Lewis Center (AJLC)	-11%
Hawaii Gateway	0%
Living Learning Center (LLC)	2%
Putney	-16%
Locust Trace Campus (LTC)	-45%
Richarsbille ES	-48%
Hawaii Preparatory Energy Lab (HPAEL)	45%
Bertschi	68%

Table 5. Cost difference percentage between net-zero building and conventional non-green building

Building factors	Pearson correlation coefficient (r) to cost differences
Building Type	-0.536833324
Location	-0.612306625
Year of Completion	0.274831032
Building Area (size)	0.966356149

Table 6. Correlation between cost difference (ZEB to GB) and building factors

3.3. Building size as the primary factor affecting the unit (square footage) cost of the building

Next, author further examined the relationship between cost differences and building size(area). Figure 2 shows that there is some negative correlation between the construction cost and building size. Overall, buildings with a lower unit cost show a larger difference between the actual cost and modeled cost whereas a building with a higher unit cost shows less difference.

CONCLUSION

This study provides the first in-depth investigation into actual ZEB costs in the United States based on detailed information. With higher initial costs being perceived as major barriers to the uptake of ZEB, the findings from this research project could be critical to further understanding whether ZEB cost more. Based on the comparison of actual and modeled costs of twelve built and verified ZEBs, it can be
concluded that, in general, there is no significance between actual ZEB costs and modeled CB costs. Although the data shows several net-zero buildings as having substantially higher costs than the modeled costs, a sizable portion of net-zero buildings have been found to be below the modeled cost. Interestingly, the study also shows a significant difference between actual ZEB costs and modeled GB costs. The magnitude of difference between those two are primarily affected by the size of the building.
This study has several limitations as well. Firstly, future research using data with different building types is needed to verify these

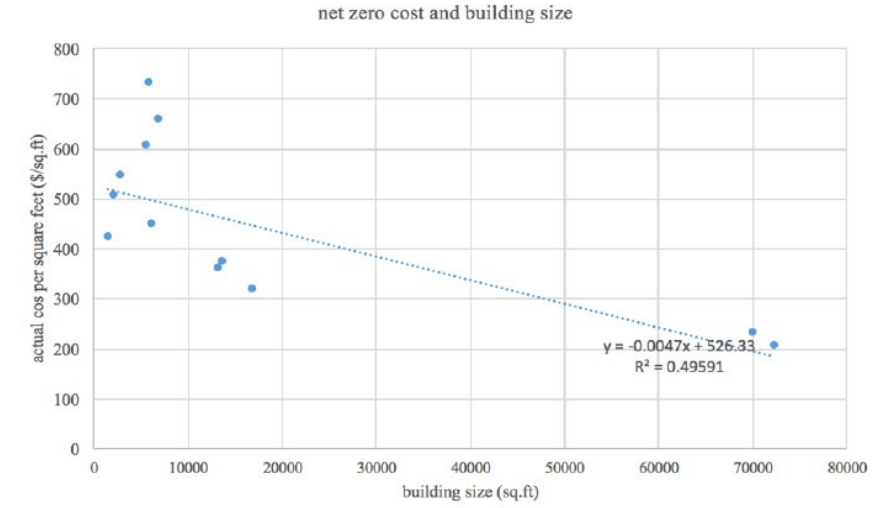


Figure 2. Correlation between cost and building size

findings and address the issue of variance within the building subgroups. Other building types should also be investigated, including commercial office and residential buildings. Secondly, out of the twelve case projects, four are more than ten years old. More recent projects and data should be used in future studies. The third limitation in this study was the small dataset of only twelve buildings; ideally, at least thirty buildings should be studied so that parametric statistical testing can be conducted, leading to a more detailed analysis. Furthermore, the collection of actual cost data from other sizable markets, such as the United Kingdom and EU member countries, could result in a considerably larger ZEB cost dataset 34 that would enable a more robust study and analysis.

REFERENCES

"2015 Construction report." College planning & management. Accessed March 05,2018. http://www.ncef.org/pubs/cpm_2015.pdf

Abdelaziz, E. A., R. Saidur, and S. Mekhilef. A review on energy saving strategies in industrial sector. *Renewable and sustainable energy reviews* 15, no. 1 (2011): 150-168.

Ashworth, Allan, and Srinath Perera. *Cost studies of buildings*. 2015. Routledge.

Ben-Arieh, David, and Li Qian. "Activity-based cost management for design and development stage." *International Journal of Production Economics* 83, no. 2 (2003): 169-183.

Brook, Martin. *Estimating and tendering for construction work*. 2016. Taylor & Francis

Bryant, Stepanie. *New school construction costs. OL Office of legislative oversity.* Last modified November 2016. https://www.montgomerycountymd.gov/OLO/Resources/Files/2017%20Reports/OLO%20Report%202017-4%20New%20School%20Construction%20Costs.pdf

Eichholtz, Piet, Nils Kok, and John M. Quigley. "Doing well by doing good? Green office buildings." *American Economic Review* 100, no. 5 (2010): 2492-2509.

Gabay, Hadas, Isaac A. Meir, Moshe Schwartz, and Elia Werzberger. "Cost-benefit analysis of green buildings: An Israeli office buildings case study." *Energy and Buildings* 76 (2014): 558-564.

Hu, Ming, Peter Cunningham, and Sarah Gilloran. "Sustainable design rating system comparison using a life-cycle methodology." *Building and Environment* 126 (2017): 410-421.

Hu, Ming. "Balance between energy conservation and environmental impact: Life-cycle energy analysis and life-cycle environmental impact analysis." *Energy and Buildings* 140 (2017): 131-139.

Hwang, Seokyon. "A Bayesian approach for forecasting errors of budget cost estimates." *Journal of Civil Engineering and Management* 22, no. 2 (2016): 178-186.

Kaming, Peter F., Paul O. Olomolaiye, Gary D. Holt, and Frank C. Harris. "Factors influencing construction time and cost overruns on high-rise projects in Indonesia." *Construction Management & Economics* 15, no. 1 (1997): 83-94.

Kelso, Jordan D. *Buildings energy data book*. Department of Energy (2012). Accessed Feb 20, 2018. https://openei.org/doe-opendata/dataset/buildings-energy-data-book

Khoshbakht, M., Z. Gou, and K. Dupre. "Cost-benefit prediction of green buildings: SWOT analysis of research methods and recent applications." *Procedia engineering* 180 (2017): 167-178.

Kim, Jin-Lee, Martin Greene, and Sunkuk Kim. "Cost comparative analysis of a new green building code for residential project development." *Journal of construction engineering and management* 140, no. 5 (2014): 05014002.U.S Energy Information Administration. How the United States uses energy. Accessed Feb 20, 2018. https://www.eia.gov/energyexplained/index.cfm?page=us_energy_use

Lee, Seul-Ki, Ka-Ram Kim, and Jung-Ho Yu. "BIM and ontology-based approach for building cost estimation." *Automation in Construction* 41 (2014): 96-105.

Mapp, Chad, MaryEllen Nobe, and Brian Dunbar. "The cost of LEED—An analysis of the construction costs of LEED and non-LEED banks." *Journal of Sustainable Real Estate* 3, no. 1 (2011): 254-273.

Pettang, Chrispin, Laurent Mbumbia, and Amos Foudjet. "Estimating building materials cost in urban housing construction projects, based on matrix calculation: the case of Cameroon." *Construction and Building Materials* 11, no. 1 (1997): 47-55.

Shrestha, Pramen P., and Nitisha Pushpala. "Green and non-green school buildings: an empirical comparison of construction cost and schedule." In *Construction Research Congress 2012: Construction Challenges in a Flat World*, pp. 1820-1829. 2012.

Valentini, Valeria, Claudio Mirarchi, and Alberto Pavan. "Comparison between traditional and digital preliminary cost-estimating approaches." *Innovative Infrastructure Solutions* 2, no. 1 (2017): 19.

Yudelson, J. *The green building revolution*. 2010. Island Press.

Zhang, Y. F., and J. Y. H. Fuh. "A neural network approach for early cost estimation of packaging products." *Computers & Industrial Engineering* 34, no. 2 (1998): 433-450.

PAPER #7.20

BETWEEN RESEARCH AND TEACHING: IDENTIFYING NEW COMPETENCIES FOR HEALTHY CITIES

Francesca Giofrè[a], Mohamed Edeisy[a]
[a] Department of Architecture and Design, Sapienza University of Rome, Rome, Italy

ABSTRACT

Healthy Cities is one of the central themes addressed in the Sustainable Development Goals. The World Health Organization's new Urban Health Initiative creates a paradigm shift in health systems approaches by focusing on the urban environment as a prerequisite for healthy lifestyles - and disease prevention. In Europe, the Zagreb declaration pointed out its attention to strengthen and champion action on health through healthy cities networks. Architects and engineers play a strategic role in building this future and activating actions in key development sectors, like housing and transport, as well as in the settings where people live and work. This requires new professional figures with the hard and soft skills that stimulate urban transformation for healthier built environments.
The paper discusses a methodological approach to identify the competencies to be acquired by future practitioners. It is developed within an ongoing Erasmus+ project[1] that represents the contextual field for testing the method in three Bosnian Universities. The article describes the methodology and its application. It starts with designing analysis' grids to evaluate how the topic is currently addressed, and it builds questionnaires to evaluate the students' awareness. Moreover, the research investigates stakeholders through organized seminars and surveys to understand the labor market and social needs. The paper suggests a strategy for setting up new courses for future architects, urban planners, and engineers, experts of the healthy urban environment. Testing the method in the Bosnian context, one of the main indications is the importance of innovative teaching methodologies integrated with the use of practical experience and laboratories. The method proposed is replicable for curriculum development in Higher Education, and it highlights how the research is a fundamental base for designing and teaching academic courses.

KEYWORDS

Healthy city; architecture; engineering; competencies; higher dducation.

INTRODUCTION

Healthy City started to be a crucial topic in the last twenty years, because of the huge number of inhabitants in the urban area. All over the world statistical data confirms the growing trend: in 2018 55% of the world population lives in urban areas, and according to the last projection it is increasing to 68% by 2050. Europe is the continent with a high density of urban population, 74% in 2018 (UN 2019), despite its low rate fertility, population decline - it will decrease from 13 percent to 9 percent between 2018 and 2050 - and significant diversity in the urbanization levels of its countries.

[1] The Healthy URBan Environment Developing Higher Education in Architecture and Construction in Bosnia and Herzegovina - HURBE - is a CBHE project, co-funded by the Erasmus plus programme of the EU Union (2018-2021). The coordinators of each Universities are: Francesca Giofrè (lead coordinator), Sapienza University of Rome, Faculty of Architecture, Department Architecture and Design; Vesna Mikić, University of Zagreb, Faculty of Architecture; Milena Tasheva-Petrova, University of Architecture, Civil Engineering and Geodesy; Maja Popovac, Dzemal Bijedic University of Mostar; Senaida Halilović-Terzić, University of Sarajevo; Samir Lemeš, University of Zenica.

This scenario is having a strong impact in the city, in terms of consumption of resources, on the system of spaces, on the demand for services, on the health, and on social relations. At the global level among the Sustainable Development Goals, the 11th goal "Make cities and human settlements inclusive, safe, resilient and sustainable" stresses the importance of the planning and managing processes of the city. These processes can produce a significant difference and have effects on the health of their residents (Lancet 2012, 3), as confirmed by several scientific studies in the last 150 years (GNRUHE 2010). The European Healthy Cities Network launched in 1986 by the World Health Organization (WHO-EHCN), and now at its VI phases, plays a strategic role in promoting policy and plan in European urban areas, positioning in its core the notion of the 'health' of the inhabitants.

Health, according to the evolution of the concept, is defined as "a state of complete physical, mental, and social well-being" (WHO 1948) "and not merely the absence of disease or infirmity" (WHO 2005); it is a positive concept and it is a human right. Moreover, according to the Meikirch Model health "is a dynamic state of well-being emergent from conducive interactions between an individual's potentials, life's demands, and social and environmental determinants. Health results throughout the life course when an individual's potentials – and social and environmental determinants – suffice to respond satisfactorily to the demands of life. Life's demands can be physiological, psychosocial, or environmental and vary across individuals and contexts but, in every case, unsatisfactory responses lead to disease" (Bircher and Hahn 2017). In fact, the state of human health would be conditioned by 50% of their behaviors and lifestyles, but also environmental factors (20%), genetic factors (20%), and health care (10%) (Amara, Bodenhorn and Cain 2003).

The environmental determinants include the whole biosphere, in other words, the environment people need for their daily life as nutrition, recreation, work, move, etc.; the environment is made by water, air, soil, housing, buildings, streets, routes, greenery, and so on. In general term healthy city is defined by the Health Promotion Glossary the "one that is continually creating and improving those physical and social environments and expanding those community resources which enable people to mutually support each other in performing all the functions of life and developing to their maximum potential."(WHO 1998).

Analyzing the documents produced by the European Healthy Cities Network and in particular the Zagreb Declaration (WHO-EHCN 2003, 2009) it is possible to define the intervention areas for urban planners, architects, engineers, but not only for these professionals. These documents identified their space of action in creating and design the healthy urban environment, aiming to offer "a physical and built environment that supports health, recreation and well-being, safety, social interaction, easy mobility, a sense of pride and cultural identity and that is accessible to the needs of all its citizens" (WHO-EHCN 2003). The related issues that integrate the concept of health, and that interest those experts are: urban planning; housing and regeneration; transport; climate change and public emergencies; safety and security; exposure to noise and pollution; urban design and creativity and livability (WHO-EHCN 2009, 5-6).

The themes are several referring to disciplines involved and to various scales of interventions (citywide, neighborhood and local environment), and they are all strictly connected and influence each other. Furthermore, the cities are "the example par excellence of complex systems: emergent, far from equilibrium, requiring enormous energies to maintain themselves, displaying patterns of inequality and saturated flow systems

that use capacity in what appear to be barely sustainable but paradoxically resilient networks" (Hancock and Duhl 1986, 1988), and the scholars are still on researching a proper methodology for assessing the impact and outcome of actions to build a healthy city. There is a principle of interdependence between the various policies that can no longer be neglected, and the 'construction' of the Health City represents a long-term urban and territorial planning process (Giofrè and Đukanović, 2017).

In this framework, Sapienza University of Rome, Faculty of Architecture, is leading the European Project in the area of Capacity Building in Higher Education, co-founded by the Erasmus+ programme, titled 'HURBE - Healthy URBan Environment Developing Higher Education in Architecture and Construction in Bosnia and Herzegovina" with the Universities of Architecture and Civil Engineering of Zagreb, Sofia, Sarajevo, Zenica, and Mostar. Among the general aims of the project, there is to improve the quality of higher education in the universities of Bosnia and Herzegovina (BiH) by focusing on curriculum development in the topic of healthy urban environment. The project is still ongoing (2019-2021); it is the field of experimentation to discuss the topic of healthy city in an interdisciplinary vision, and to propose and apply a methodology to identify new competencies and how to transfer them, through innovative means, to urban planners, architects and engineers of the future, called to participate in the planning and design process of protecting and ensuring the health and wellbeing of people living in cities.

1. A METHODOLOGICAL APPROACH TO DEFINING NECESSARY COMPETENCIES IN HEALTHY URBAN ENVIRONMENT

The methodological approach was planned to identify the competencies to be acquired by future practitioners - urban planners, architects, and engineers - that design healthy environments from neighborhood to building scale, in order to design specific academic courses within the existing curricula in BiH's Faculties.

Therefore, the methodology aimed to reach these objectives:

1. Understand how the topic of 'healthy cities' is currently dealt with in current university curriculums.
2. Evaluate the student's awareness and perception of the theme.
3. Discuss stakeholders and local experts' opinions and potential of the topic development.

Necessary tools were developed to reach these objectives, and after their application, the results were compared to identify the necessary competencies. First, designing analysis' grids to evaluate the topic in curriculums, and workshops with the Bosnian project team to collect their opinion. Second, design and carry out questionnaires that investigate the Bosnian student's awareness. Third, organize Bosnian stakeholders' meetings and surveys to discuss the theme with the labor market and social needs.

1.1. Evaluation of the faculties' courses: grid questionnaire and workshop

A grid questionnaire on how the theme 'Healthy Urban Environment' (HURBE) is addressed within the existing teaching courses was elaborated. The grid aimed to analyze the whole syllabus studies and the teaching modalities in the degree programmes of the three Bosnian faculties. The grid was prepared by Sapienza University of Rome. It was composed of descriptive tables articulated in two sections. The first section collects general information about the typology of degrees (i.e. duration of the course, total number of university educational credits - CFU; number of students enrolled; methodology of enrollment and selection; main competencies acquired; scale of classes; grading and of final

thesis discussion; articulation of CFU between teaching, individual study, laboratory activities, traineeships, etc.). The second section provided specific information about each course in terms of CFU; scientific disciplinary sector; learning outcome; typology of course (i.e. compulsory or elective); typology of attendance (i.e. mandatory or not mandatory); teaching methodology and tools used (i.e. slides, video, oral lecture, reviewing design, etc.); evaluation method (i.e. final written test, mid-term, written test, oral evaluation, project evaluation); main literature and position of the course in the curricula.

Given that architecture and civil engineering share the same broader area (i.e. organizing building, space, and environment), all three faculties already offer courses that include some aspects of environmental sciences and/or courses on technological means to preserve our environment and create healthy urban settings. At the University of Sarajevo (UNSA),[2] Faculty of Architecture, there are 35 courses that contain topics that could be - in minor or major proportion – discussing issues related to the HURBE, distributed as follows: 7 out of 68 courses in the first cycle (Bachelor), and 28 out of 97 courses in the second cycle (Master). Within the Bachelor cycle, the number of CFU of the topic HURBE related courses is 20 CFU out of 180 CFU. Strangely, the number of HURBE related courses in the Master was estimated to be 145 CFU and the total university educational credits needed to obtain the degree are 120 CFU. This is due to the variety of elective courses at the Master level, many of them were considered to discuss issues related to the healthy urban environment in a minor or major proportion. In UNSA, HURBE related topics include bioclimatic architecture and urbanism, resilient architectural design, human-oriented city, green design, renewable energy, and low-energy housing.

At the University of Zenica (UNZE),[3] Faculty of Polytechnic, Civil Engineering, there are 7 courses (4 compulsory and 3 electives) which contain topics that might be -in minor or major proportion- related to HURBE. They are in the first cycle (Bachelor) courses. Within the Bachelor cycle, the number of CFU of HURBE related courses is 16 CFU out of 240 CFU. HURBE related topics include solving civil engineering problems as the design and dimension of structures, plan and supervise building operation, air pollution, management of water supply and drain of water waste, natural and energy efficiency and energy optimization.

Unlike the previous two universities, which have one Bachelor programme and one Master programme; the University of Mostar (UNMO),[4] Faculty of Civil Engineering has one Bachelor programme and three Master programmes – general, structural and hydro-technical. Only the general master programme includes 6 out of 36 courses that contain topics that could be -in minor or major proportion- related to HURBE. This represents 29 CFU out of 120 CFU. HURBE related topics include water and environmental protection, energy-conscious retrofit of historical objects and urban ecology. soil and water pollution control, waste management, energy efficiency in construction and alternative energy sources, traditional and new building materials.

The grid showed the potential proportion of courses - through the number and CFU - that might include and discuss aspects related to the healthy urban environment. The theme is quite broad, and many arguments can be considered related to healthy urban environment. This is probably the reason that UNSA's Master programme was considered to have a high number of courses related to

[2] UNSA's education process is conducted in three cycles (3+2+3): The first three-year cycle (180 CFU) leads to the title of Bachelor of Architecture. The second two-year cycle of studies (120 CFU) leads to the title Master of Architecture. The third three-year cycle of studies (180 CFU) leads to the title PhD in the Field of Architecture and Urban Planning.

[3] UNZE's education process is conducted in two cycles: The first cycle is 4-year Bachelor of Civil Engineering (240 ECTS). The second cycle is 1-year Master of Science in Civil Engineering (60 ECTS).

[4] UNMO's education process is conducted in three cycles (3+2+3): The first three-year cycle of studies is a Bachelor programme of 180 CFU. The second two-year cycle of studies is a Master programme of (120 CFU). They also have a PhD programme of 3 years (180 CFU)

the theme. Further analysis of each course content can help verify the actual proportion of the theme within these university courses.
The grid provided a general indication of the general themes that each faculty chooses to integrate into their educational path. The analyzed faculties share common aims of creating sustainable infrastructures and structures for healthy urban environments. The approach and topics of HURBE differ in each one depending on the faculty's educational mission and their fields of research. Even though the names of some courses can be similar (e.g. energy efficiency) in the three faculties, the teaching approach and content may significantly differ due to the various subjects and methods of different disciplines.
The results of the previous analysis' were presented to the project participants in a workshop,[5] and the main consideration was that the topic of 'health' and its relation and impact on the urban environment is vast and there is a lack of focus on the theme. It might be discussed within other courses, but it is not well identified or defined as a central topic. During the workshop participants discussed the topic and its content, having in mind the aim of setting up new courses in the existent degree programmes. They tried to identify the common competencies needed for future urban planners, architects, and engineers related to the subject - area, applying the matrix of Tuning with Dublin descriptors.[6] The first results were the identification of two typologies of competencies, 'basic' and 'advanced', that should be transferred in different phases of the degree programmes.

1.2. The students' awareness of HURBE: the questionnaire

The questionnaire on "Healthy Urban Environment: the Bosnian students' awareness" was prepared through a workshop of 18 project members, three of each faculty.[7] It aimed to investigate how the Bosnian students attending the universities perceive the topic of HURBE and evaluate the experience they made during the courses they attended. During the workshop, the attendees were divided into three groups and each group prepared a set of questions. A matrix was organized to compare all the questions and extract the ones everyone seemed to agree on - repeated and/or most significant questions - and elaborate the first draft of the survey. The survey's structure and content were developed and discussed jointly by email to elaborate the final version, using simple and 'familiar' words to facilitate the student's comprehension of the questions.
The questionnaire was articulated in 25 questions with different typologies of answers: closed, multiple responses, or on rating scale. It was divided into two sections. The first part provided general information about the participants' sample (6 questions). The second section investigated the general knowledge and opinions about of HURBE (19 questions).
Initially, the survey was prepared through Google Form to allow further communication via email with the students and facilitate the data elaboration and analysis. However, the three faculties had to translate and print the questionnaire to share it with their students in class. UNZE and UNMO filled a google form after, while UNSA filled an excel file. The sample interviewed consisted of 216 students distributed as follows: UNSA, UNMO, and UNZE filled 97, 53 and 66 surveys respectively. Most of the students that filled the questionnaires attended the third and the fourth years of their studies (75% of the sample) and only 8% of students had international study experience abroad. 63% of the sample were females, which is in line

[5] On the 'credit transfer meeting' hold in 13-17 May 2019, Sarajevo (Bosnia and Herzegovina) at University of Sarajevo.
[6] Tuning Educational Structures in Europe is a Guide to Formulating Degree Programme Profiles, but the project participants adapted it and applied it to the scope of the workshop, setting up courses.
[7] On the 'kick off meeting' hold in 11-13 February 2019, Rome (Italy) at Sapienza University of Rome
[8] According with EUROSTAT in 2017 women accounted for 54 % of all tertiary students in the EU-28.

with the general European trend in the tertiary education level.[8] 40% of students do not live in the city where they attend university, which highlights the importance of integrating new modalities of teaching as online courses.
The results of the survey on general knowledge and opinions about HURBE showed the following: 92% of the students did not hear about 'Zagreb declaration' and only 44% heard about the sustainable development goals, mostly through the internet. They answered that they were the ones responsible for their health (38%), after medical professionals (25%), family (20%), and the urban environment (11%). 48% believe that the environment's effect on their health is negative. 77% of the sample is aware that their future professions are linked to health urban environmental issues, and 77% believe that the building design is important for health. The elements identified to have an impact on health are natural elements: ventilation, light, and greenery, followed by the building materials respectively. 87% think that CO2 is a pollutant. Energy production followed by transport were voted the sectors that most contribute to pollution. 23% answered that the healthy urban environment was found to belong to planning and design, engineering and architecture; 9% voted that it belongs to healthcare services, 4% for economy and politics, and 63% voted that it belongs to all these factors together.
When having to choose up to two types of experts that could contribute to a healthy urban environment, 127 answers identified architects and engineers, 48 chose medical experts, 28 chose social workers and 108 chose all of them. 90% voted 'yes' that the topic is important for their future profession. All participants voted that technical architecture and urban planning are necessary for the architects and civil engineers to achieve a healthy urban environment is, 126 voted for social anthropological skills, and 35 chose medical skills.
When they had to choose their three preferred methods of learning about the topic, 174 votes were given to practice followed by 164 votes for laboratory activities. 73% believe that their future work is linked with ethical principles, 17% don't know and 10% do not think so. Most of the students feel they are not well informed on the impact of the building process on human health; 36 % of them are not sure and 27 % answered not at all and not enough. Also, 72% of students indicated that they would like to attend a course at university on this topic.

The results of the questionnaires highlighted that the students lack the awareness and knowledge of the theme. Almost all of them never heard about 'Zagreb declaration', even if they are aware that the environment could have a negative impact on their health. The positive aspect was the demonstrated interest by most of the students and their awareness of the importance of learning new HURBE skills; they are interested to learn about the topic and participate in the course. They also underlined that they need practice and laboratory activities to acquire all the skills for their professional future.
All the analysis's results were presented and discussed through open debates[9] among the academic staff member of HURBE project in order to the content of future courses.

1.3. The stakeholders' opinions: labour market and the social needs

The stakeholders' meetings aimed to provide indications and guidelines related to the labour market needs in the specific context of BiH; the public sector's tendencies, approaches, and strategies; and the community and social groups' needs. Moreover, it aimed to discuss the structure and topics, to be developed, in HURBE courses, increasing networking and creating agreements with stakeholders.
The strategy, structure, and content of the meetings were discussed during a workshop[10]

[9] On the 'Project meeting' hold in 5-7 September 2019, Zagreb (Croatia), at University of Zagreb.
[10] See note 9

among the academic members from the six project faculties. The stakeholders were identified: architecture/construction studios, companies, etc.; national public institutions (Ministry of Environment, Ministry of Housing/ Planning/Infrastructure, Ministry of Health, etc.); local public bodies (city administration representatives, etc.); international organizations (World Health Organization, EU agencies, etc.); labor market entities and others.

The project members decided to design a questionnaire for the stakeholders, to be filled at the beginning of each meeting, with ten multiple-choice questions. The first seven questions were general and common for everyone. Then, there were three questions that were specific for the representatives of the private enterprise, the representatives of the public sector, and the civil society representatives. Each Bosnian university was asked to include at least 10 stakeholders in the meeting. They prepared their lists of stakeholders to invite them via email, phone calls, and personal contact. It was decided to organize three meetings in three days, each day in a different Bosnian university - Sarajevo, Zenica, and Mostar – facilitating the participation and logistics for the stakeholders of each university's city.[11] In each meeting, a local academic representative coordinated the meeting's activities in their home institution. The total number of participants in the three meetings is 64 persons, including academics staff members; 25 of these were the actual external stakeholders that are not part of the project institutions.[12]

Each event started with the general presentation of the project objectives, followed by the discussion of the structure and topics for HURBE course, and then the questionnaires. After that, there were open discussions that focused on the results of the questionnaires and the potential of collaborations between the stakeholders and the Bosnian universities. The meetings also concentrated on the local experts' feedback regarding the importance of integrating HURBE topic in the Architecture and Civil Engineering curricula, the future contribution it could provide for the local labor markets, and the potential role of the laboratories services that Bosnian universities are installing with equipment dedicated to the theme of healthy urban environment.

Some of the questionnaires and discussions results were common in the three meetings and others were relevant to the specific contexts of reference. All stakeholders agreed on the importance of raising awareness of the healthy urban environment at the university level. They remarked the significance of the gap between the practical skills of recently graduated students and the needs of labour market. The structure of the proposed HURBE courses has to be pragmatic and has to provide content that would enable the graduates to link their acquired knowledge with other relevant influential sectors in the job market. With the inclusion of ethical issues as well as the practical experiences (visit to construction site, use laboratories' equipment, etc.), they believe that HURBE course can cover the various topics of healthy cities. Most of the stakeholders indicated the importance of the laboratories that can provide services for external entities and support the courses. Some have demonstrated interest in using the laboratories' services based on defined agreements with regulations and fees. Others offered their support to the academic staff and the students; they would provide objective observations and assist the teaching processes through the integration of their professional knowledge.

[11] The stakeholders' meetings took place as follow: on the 19 June 2019 at University of Sarajevo, on 20 June 2019 at University of Zenica, and on 21 June 2019 at University of Mostar.

[12] At University of Sarajevo, where 18 persons attended the meeting: 2 from private companies, 2 from public institutions and public utility companies and 11 from the University of Sarajevo. At University of Zenica, the meeting was attended by 21 persons: 2 from private companies, 7 from public institutions and public utility companies, 5 from other project partners, and 7 from the University of Zenica. At University of Mostar, the meeting was attended by 23 persons from following areas: 2 from private companies, 7 from public institutions and public utility companies, 3 form NGOs and 13 from education.

In each meeting, the stakeholder's contribution was also influenced by the given urban context where the meeting took place and the university's profile. In Sarajevo, the external participants recommended that HURBE courses focus on common problems of the metropolitan regions. They have to discuss the infrastructure and urban planning, traffic problems and the importance of bioclimatic architecture and public greenery. In Mostar, the stakeholders concentrated on climate change, urban pollution, water, and waste management issues which are evident there. In Zenica, the focus was on the importance of enhancing the city's nature, the impact of the industry and the air pollution it causes. These results provided necessary external feedback in relation to the course's proposed content. Some of them confirm the students' questionnaire results, others provide additional info. They confirmed the importance of the practical experience and the role of the laboratories to link the university with the job market.

2. MERGING THE RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

The methodology discussed shows how the used tools, including all the actors in the process, is necessary for defining new learning content and teaching methodologies to build up new courses in existing degree courses. It demonstrates the importance of integrating training and practical experiences for the development of well-prepared professional figures, increasing their employability.

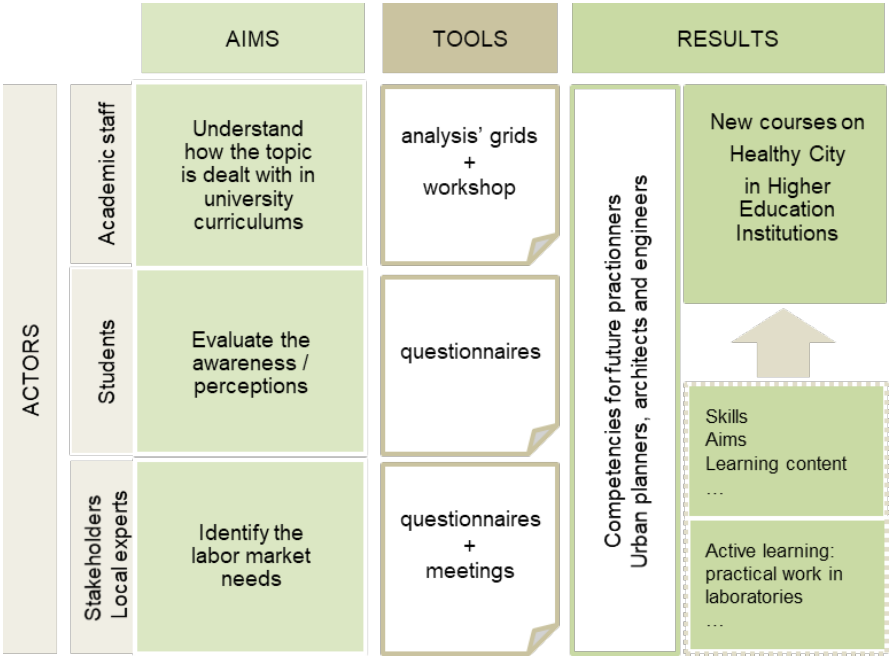


Figure 1. Methodology applied for developing course in Higher Education Institutions on Healthy Urban Environment: Actors, Aims, Tools, Results. Source: (Authors 2020)

Each tool provided an understanding of how the topic of Healthy Urban Environment is a transversal topic to all the disciplines taught in the existing degree courses and consequently diluted in different subjects, with different inflections.

The three tools' results provide a set of common indications. They all showed that there is an absence of a deep understanding of the topic including the concept of health and its effects on the built environment.

Although the students and stakeholders are aware of the importance of the theme on a professional, social and personal scale, the curriculum analysis has shown that the curriculums lack the in-depth recognition of the theme's content and knowledge. The positive aspect, however, is that students are aware of their lack of knowledge of the topic. They are interested in acquiring this knowledge and complementing it with practical training, as they believe it will play a strategic role in their future practices.

The stakeholders' meetings' outcomes stressed that each Bosnian faculty should be able to maintain the balance between the interdisciplinarity of the theme and their specific mission as architecture or civil engineering faculties. They also stated that it is important to link the university teaching curricula, and the new courses on HURBE with the needs of the labor market in the place/context where the universities are located. In fact, the cities of the Bosnian universities involved, even if the country is one of the smallest in Europe, have different urban environments and different problems.

All the stakeholders underlined the strategic role of the laboratories, as a space for active and practical learning, providing the possibility of applying academic research and other activities on the territory.

This role corresponds perfectly to the rising relevance of the universities 'Third Mission'[13] of generating knowledge outside academic environments to the benefit of the social, cultural and economic development, in dealing with the territory and the society, performing activities and projects to strengthen dialogue and interaction among university, industry, and society.

Based on the evaluation of the faculties' courses and the stakeholders' feedback, the academic members decided to divide HURBE course into two interdisciplinary modules with different aims to gain professionals soft and hard skills. The basic module, focusing on theoretical interdisciplinary knowledge and the advanced module, concentrating on practical and design activities. The basic module, HURBE I, will be common among Faculties, allowing the possibility to create an interdisciplinary space for intra-country students and academic staff mobility with the presence of practitioners as teachers too. The main learning outcome is understanding the impact of planning and designing on the urban healthy environment at the different scale; in a wide terms, the students develop the sensibility to put in the core of the actions the 'health of people' and the consciousness of the importance to including and empowering the people in the making process for a Healthy City.

The advanced module, HURBE II, will be specific for each faculty, concentrating on its urban environment context, and adopting the laboratories as a resource for practical teaching and design activities. The learning outcomes are specific in applying methods, instruments and tools to planning and design, starting from the population's health data, and in evaluating the impact on the health of people.

The methodology discussed and its results reconfirm the added value in maintaining a strict link between Education, Research and Third Mission activities. This connection enriches the learning process, and it is necessary for the success of the university courses.

[13] The University has three missions: the first mission is Teaching, the second is Education.

CONCLUSION

There is rapid evolution of the body of knowledge, teaching and teaching methodologies. Information and communication technologies have had a significant role in changing the whole system of processes to develop professional figures that are up to date and able to stimulate urban transformation. With the development of social needs and life demands, even the concept of "health" is modifying and becoming closely relevant to the profession of architects and engineers. The Faculties of Architecture and Civil Engineering are struggling to cope with these rapid changes and prepare professional figures that possess the necessary knowledge. In addition, universities need to follow the paradigm shift from the "Teacher-Centered model" to the "Learner-Centered model" (Bishop, Caston and King 2014).

This paper underlined the importance of various elements in developing a learning process. Future architects and engineers have to be able to deal with the evolution of 'hard changes' (i.e. new materials, methods of producing them, etc.) and 'soft change' (i.e. equipment and software as Building Information Modelling, etc.). It is important to update existing architecture and engineering curricula with new content, integrate practical experience like laboratories and develop links with the labor market and social needs.

By applying the indications and results of the proposed methodology, the new professional figures should develop a set of hard skills (knowledge of the topic, using laboratory equipment, etc.) and soft skills (communicating with the labor market representatives, decision making, etc.), filling a gap between education and relevant professional requirements. These future practitioners should be able to stimulate urban transformation for healthier built environments and capable of adapting to the continuously updating environmental and social changes.

Designing healthy urban environments is a challenge that requires the ability of critical thinking to position the concept of health of the inhabitants in the center, in accordance with a given context. It is an action of dreaming about the future of the city. It is a process of co-creating and co-dreaming that involves all actors (academic staff, researchers, stakeholders, inhabitants, etc.) and, in a broader meaning, the whole sectors of civil and political society. The article aspired to participate in that action, its actors and results are representative of the Bosnian context - within the framework of the European Commission's co-funded Erasmus+ project - however, the methodological approach provides guidance and can be replicable for other curriculum development projects for a healthy urban environment and/or other topics in Higher Education.

REFERENCES

Amara, R., Bodenhorn, K. and Cain, M. 2003. *Health and health care 2010: the forecast, the challenge*. San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Bircher, J., and Hahn, E. G. 2017. "Will the Meikirch Model, a New Framework for Health, Induce a Paradigm Shift in Healthcare?." *Cureus*, 9(3), e1081. doi:10.7759/cureus.1081.

Bishop, C. F., Caston, M. I. and Cheryl A. K. 2014. "Learner-centered environments: Creating effective strategies based on student attitudes and faculty reflection." *Journal of the Scholarship of Teaching and Learning*, Vol. 14, No. 3, August 2014, pp. 46 – 63.

Giofrè, F. and Djukanovic, Z. (2017). "Healthy urban environment and design: the outdoor spaces. pp. 155-168," In *Book of Proceedings Keeping up with technologies in the context of urban synergy Place and technologies*. Sarajevo: CIP.

GRNUHE. 2010. *Improving urban health equity through action on the social and environmental determinants of health: global research network on urban health equity.* London: UCL.

Hancock, T., Duhl, L. 1986. WHO. *Promoting health in the urban context*. Copenhagen: FADL Publishers.

Hancock, T. and Duhl, L. 1988. WHO. *Healthy Cities project: a guide to assessing Healthy Cities*. Copenhagen: FADL Publishers.

Rydin, Y., Bleahu, A., Davies, M., Dávila, J. D., Friel, S., De Grandis, G., Groce, N, Hallal, P.C., Hamilton, I, Howden-Chapman, P., Lai, K.M., Lim, C.J., Martins, J., Osrin, D., Ridley, I., Scott, I., Taylor, M., Wilkinson, P. and Wilson, J. 2012. *Shaping cities for health: complexity and the planning of urban environments in the 21st century.* In Lancet 379(9831), 2079–2108. London: Elsevier.

United Nations (UN), Department of Economic and Social Affairs, Population Division.2019. *World Urbanization Prospects: The 2018 Revision (ST/ESA/SER.A/420)*. New York: United Nations.

WHO-EHCN. 2009. *Phase V (2009–2013) of the WHO European Healthy Cities Network: goals and requirements*. Copenhagen: WHO Regional Office for Europe.

PAPER #7.21

NATURAL VENTILATION IN THE TRADITIONAL COUNTRYSIDE CONSTRUCTIONS IN VALENCIA. CFD & PPD ANALYSIS.

F. Mendiguchia[a], A. Quintana[a], I. Guillén-Guillamón[a]
[a] Physics Technologies Center. Polytechnic University of Valencia, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

Local Valencian architecture has evolved over the centuries adapting to the region's climate conditions. Orientation is one of its fundamental aspects to guarantee the perfect amount of sunlight and natural ventilation. Thanks to the proximity to the Mediterranean Sea and the relative position to the Garbi mountain, the stable wind conditions ensure a good ventilation in the countryside, commonly called "Horta".
The main objectives of the study are divided into two parts. The first phase is focused on the typological and historical study of the popular buildings on Valencia's "Horta", located at the "L'horta Nord" region. A second part will be focused on virtual CFD models (Computational Fluid Dynamics). Natural ventilation inside the buildings is analysed with different local winds configurations. Also, the benefits of this ventilation are studied with reference to interior comfort, using PPD analysis (Predicted Percentage of Dissatisfied). This study shows how the case study adapts itself to the microclimatic region conditions.

KEYWORDS

Natural ventilation; CFD models; popular architecture; interior comfort; PPD models.

INTRODUCTION

Sustainable architecture has been gaining relevance in recent decades. In order to move closer to the sustainable goal, it is necessary to work on a local approach that allows the adaptability of different architectural solutions, like the use of local materials or morphological conditions such as the type of roof, orientation, shape of the windows, symmetry conditions (Neila González, 2004). Therefore, it is interesting to study popular architecture to find the core elements of their design strategies. In this case study, we will focus on analysing the natural ventilation in the popular buildings of the Valencia countryside using CFD & PPD analysis. (Mora-Pérez et al., 2016)
Valencia is located on one of the few coastlines of the Mediterranean with an eastern slope. Thence, it is leeward the normal atmospheric airflow in this hemisphere. The proximity to the different mountain ranges, such as the Betica and Iberica, causes a strong pressure differential. Also, many of these mountains are perpendicular to the coast, thence the air from north to south is blocked. These peculiar geographical conditions protect and intensify by the thermal differential between land and sea that cause the natural breeze. Daily stable east-west or west-east wind routines are established, depending on the Atlantic influence. (A. J. Pérez Cuevas, 1994)
The stable winds and mild temperatures, typical of maritime region, provide ideal conditions for natural ventilation.(Alonso Monterde et al., 2016). To demonstrate this fact, we will use the Climate Consultant application, which is capable of interpreting data from climate files. The climate files of a region contain essential climate information, such as temperature, humidity, irradiation, airspeed, and direction. With this

information, the application represents us within a welfare bioclimatic chart, based on the Givoni's bioclimatic chart (Olgyay, 1998), all the hours of the year with their respective hygrothermal conditions. Also, it allows us to quantify the number of hours that are in each zone of the bioclimatic chart of well-being. Therefore, from a designer point of view, it allows us to evaluate which should be the project measures to adopt for a specific climate.

In figure 1, we can see the representation of all hours of the year (green dots) with their respective hygrothermal conditions for the climate of Valencia. The Mediterranean climate is quite mild, so we can find a comfortable situation for 1173 hours a year, which represents almost 14% of the year. Also, an adequate sun protection system for the windows could increase the comfort to 1366 hours, almost 16% of the year. However, these protection systems must be adaptable to achieve up to 2924 hours (33,4% of the year), because solar gains are needed in order to increase the internal temperature. Finally, natural ventilation can generate a total of 1434 hours of comfort (16,4% of the year). Without the contribution of natural ventilation, we would have to solve the comfort conditions using air conditioning. That would mean using this system 24,6% of the year. Thanks to natural ventilation,

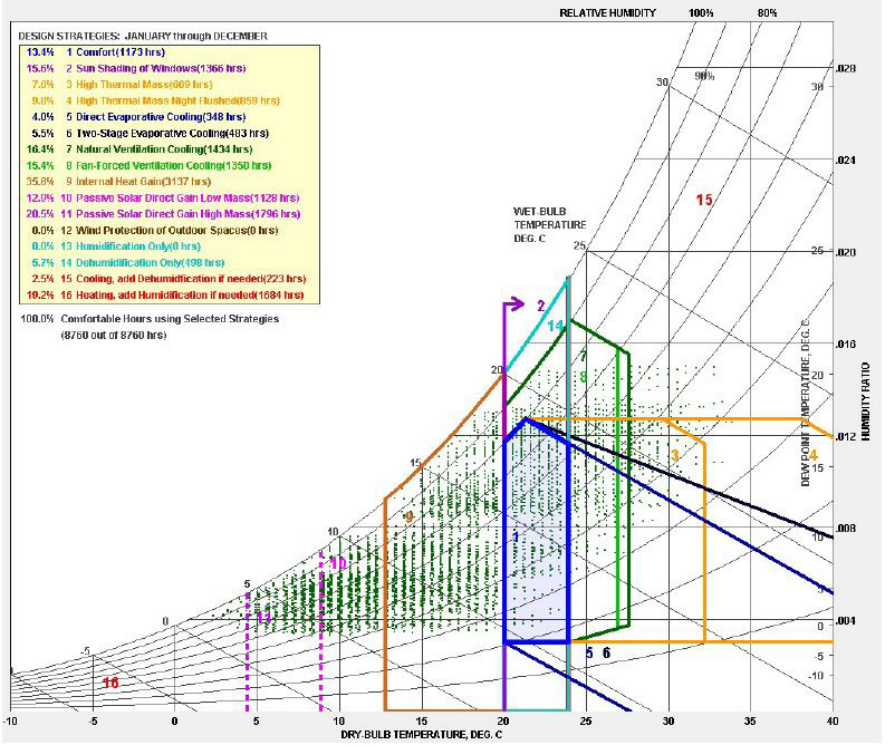


Figure 1. Bioclimatic Chart for Valencia's climate (Climate Consultant Application).

only 8,2% of the year. Therefore, we can save energy by reducing the operating hours of air conditioning. That's the reason why natural ventilation is an adequate strategy in this region.

1. CASE STUDY

There are two main kinds of traditional rural constructions in Valencia: *Alqueria* and *Barraca* (Rey Aynat, 2002). *Barraca* is a basic type of construction based on a gable roof with a steep slope that almost touches the ground. It's humble construction, characteristic of the southern area of Valencia, known for its rice fields surrounding a coastal wetland called Albufera. On the other hand, the *Alquería* is a more elaborate construction, consisting of two or three stories. Its name derives from the Arabic "al-qarïa" and refers to a group of small isolated villages. Currently, the word refers to those isolated houses built surrounding farmland.
Alqueria is a rural house normally composed of two levels. On the ground floor, we can find the bedrooms and dining room. In case they have a kitchen or bathrooms of any kind, they are located outside the construction. The purpose of the first floor was drying vegetable products, like xufa, a local kind of ground nut used for the production of orxata, straw and even tobacco. *Alqueria* has a gable roof made of tiles and its brick walls have a whitewashed finish. Structurally the constructions have two naves divided by a central portico made of solid brick. The facades are load-bearing walls. These constructions are usually symmetrical in two directions. For this reason, the facades have a symmetrical composition. Also, both the east and west facades have their windows aligned. Because of their agriculture function, the houses are oriented to the east to capture the sea breezes. Therefore, these houses are a very interesting case study to analyse natural ventilation in popular architecture.

Figure 2. Case study

The selected *Alquería* is located in the municipal district of Alboraya, more specifically in the *Partida de Saboia* in a sector of the *L'horta Nord* area between the *Carraixet* ravine and the CV-311. It is isolated, surrounded by fields destined to the orchard, with the nearest houses appearing at 115 meters, and it is considered a free environment exposed to the wind. On an architectural level, this *Alquería* is of a compact type with two naves parallel to the main façade. The house as such is arranged on the lower floor, while the upper floor houses the drying and storage area. The house has on its two sides two "porxadas" that served as corrals access to one of them is through a particularly wide door, which is necessary for a car to enter. The main façade has partial symmetry, due to the construction phases of *Alquería*.

2. METHODOLOGY

To analyse ventilation, we must be able to quantify it on the one hand and assess it on the other. To quantify it, we will carry out CFD analysis, Computer Flow Dynamics. (Hajdukiewicz et al., 2013) We can define CFD like a methodology of calculation based on different parts: discretization of a continuous flow defining its calculations domains; discretization of the equations

of the movement, from integral equations to algebraic equations; and solve these algebraic equations through reiterative calculations method. These specific CFD simulations provide valuable information about the environmental conditions of the construction, as much from outdoors as from indoors. These simulations will depend on many boundary conditions, which we must predefine before each analysis. Therefore, CFD analyses consist of simulations of fluid dynamics through or between objects, like in a virtual wind tunnel. These techniques allow us to evaluate the effect of the air on the constructions and can take into a count different conditions that the same environment. Also, we will be able to obtain Air age results. The Air age is a parameter expressed in seconds and counts the time that the air needs to renew one calculation cell. This parameter allows us to evaluate the natural ventilation and air renewal capacity of the system. On the other hand, to evaluate the natural ventilation, we will carry out PPD analysis, Predicted Percentage Dissatisfied. This index is a percentage value of the number of people who would feel uncomfortable in certain hygrothermal conditions. This percentage value is a mathematical relationship based on statistical values. We can assume as an indicative value that the PPD shouldn't exceed 20% of dissatisfied people in an indoor space. (ISO, 2005)

We will divide the CFD analysis into three parts. First, an exterior analysis, where we will be able to study the behaviour of the air in the construction environment, observe its pressures, speeds, and directions. Secondly, an internal analysis whose data we will use for the third step, the PPD analysis.(Mora-Pérez et al., 2015)

To perform CFD and PPD analysis, we must define the environmental conditions. In this study, the software we will use, DesingBuilder, consists of reading weather files, so we will only focus on air direction and speed conditions for CFD configuration. The reference station is at the Manises Airport, the level above sea level is considered 62 meters. With this climate data, we can represent the wind chart that you can see in Figure 4. We can identify six representing cases, expose into the Table 1.

	Air Speed m/s	Air Temperature ºC	Air Humidity %
East 80 degrees	12	27	80
	6	24	80
	3	20	80
West 270 degrees	12	18	45
	6	15	60
	3	15	60

Table 1. Wind conditions study

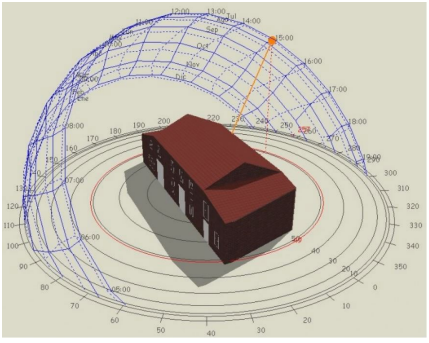


Figure 3. Climate configurations. (DesignBuilder software)

The first step is to perform external analyses. We will be able to observe the performance of the construction in terms of the surrounding airflow in the different wind configurations. From these external analyses, we extract information about the wind, such as direction, flow or temperature. With this data, we can set up CFD surfaces for internal analysis. The CFD surfaces are elements of the DesignBuilder software that allow us to configure extracting and impulsing air according to the air balance configuration. Also, we can modify these surfaces to introduce the input and output

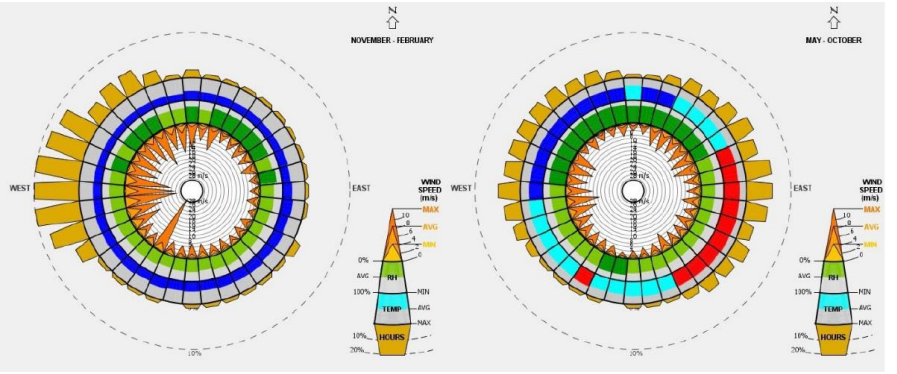


Figure 4. Wind chart. November-February. May-October. (Climate Consultant Application)

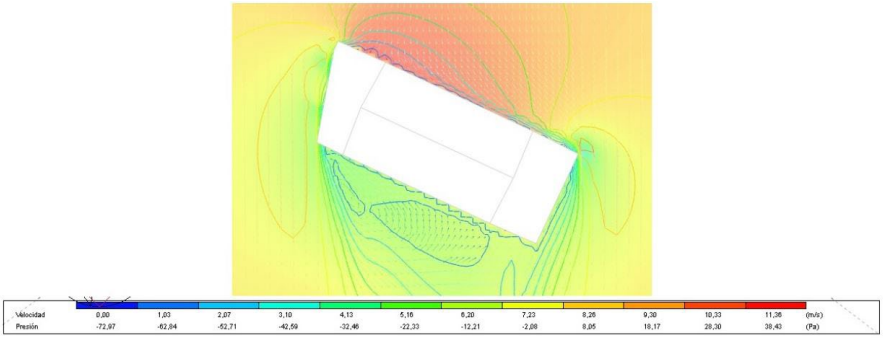


Figure 5. External CFD analysis. (DesignBuilder software)

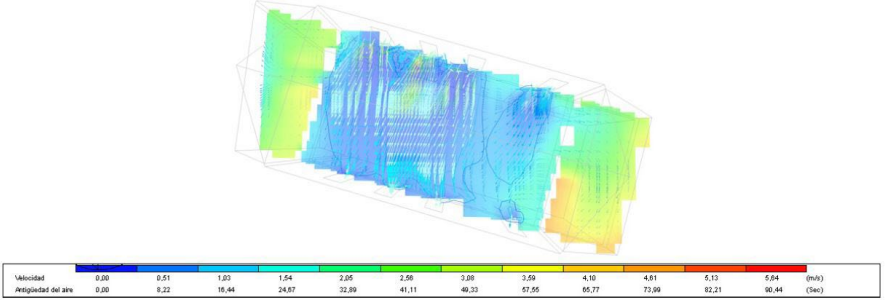


Figure 6. Internal CFD analysis. (DesignBuilder software)

conditions that we obtain in the external analyses. We can see one example in Figure 5. In the second step, we will perform the internal analysis that will report data like airspeed, direction, and age. These values allow us to quantify the effectiveness of the ventilation. For example, in Figure 6, we can see the vectors of airspeed and the age of air for the east wind whit 3 m/s airspeed. Regarding the airspeed, we observe speed peaks at the entrance or exit of 2 m/s airspeed, this is due to the Venturi effect caused by the façade openings. We must distinguish two different zones in the interior space. The first zone there is just inside of the airflow that througing the building. The second zone there is outside this airflow. Inside the airflow, we observe velocities of approximately 1.54 m/s and an air age of 8.22 s. Outside the main flow zones, the air moves at a speed of approximately 0.5 to 1 m/s, with the age of the air being between 10 and 30 seconds.

With the results of the internal simulation, we can perform the PPD analysis. In this third step, we will need to define some parameters like metabolic conditions (0.7) or clothing indices (0.5). Continuing with the example, Figure 7, we can see that in the airflow areas the percentage of dissatisfied people is around 23.7 %. However, in the zones outside this airflow, we find a percentage of dissatisfied around 5% or 11.06 %.

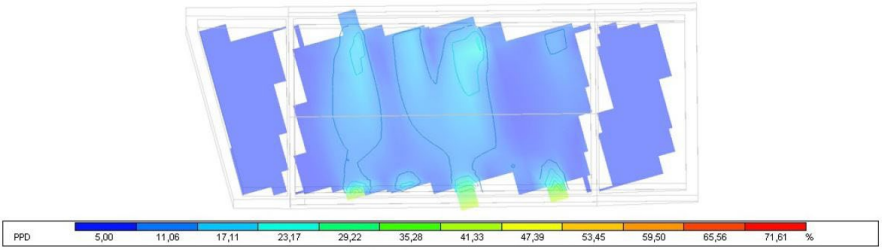


Figure 7. PPD analysis. (DesignBuilder software)

			Airflow area			No affect by airflow area		
			Speed m/s	Age of Air s	PPD %	Speed m/s	Age of Air s	PPD %
East 80 degrees	12	F1	10	0	12,3	6	0	19,5
	m/s	F2	12	0	10,04	6	0	18,7
	3	F1	4	4,24	24,6	1,37	12,71	11,08
	m/s	F2	5	4,24	23,17	2,73	8,47	8,1
	1,6	F1	1,54	8,22	41	0,51	24,67	12
	m/s	F2	2,5	8,22	48	0,51	16,44	20
West 270 degrees	12	F1	7,75	0	90	5,17	11,97	43
	m/s	F2	16,8	0	98	7,75	15,89	56
	3	F1	3,87	7,46	50	2,32	18,64	21
	m/s	F2	4,55	3,73	60	2,32	14,91	29
	1,6	F1	1,25	15,33	33	0,42	45,99	6
	m/s	F2	2,51	7,07	47	0,84	30,06	13

Table 2. Table of internal CFD results

3. DISCUSSION

Based on the results we can analyse two phenomena. Firstly, if we observe the airspeed, we note important variations between the first and second floor, around 1 m/s and 2 m/s airspeed. This fact has a direct effect on the PPD percentage. In all cases, the PPD percentage of the first plant is higher than the second plant. We can explain this effect with several factors. On the one hand, the dragging effect of the land causes a speed differential between the facades of the first floor and the second floor. On the other hand, according to the characteristics of the case study, the ground floor has unaligned windows that disturb the airflow. However, on the second floor, there are windows aligned due to the symmetry of the east-west facades. For that reason, the airflow isn't blocked by static air masses. Therefore, natural ventilation is more effective on the second floor thanks to its higher height above the ground, which allows it to capture winds at greater speed. Also, its distribution of symmetrical windows on the perpendicular facades the wind direction. Note that the purpose of this floor is drying agricultural products. Therefore, it isn't surprising that we find better natural ventilation results, since it was precisely designed for that objective.

Secondly, there are significant differences between the PPD results of the eastbound wind and the westbound wind. This is mainly due to the seasonal regime to which these winds belong. The wind from the West is more frequent during the autumn and winter season. Therefore, associated temperatures are too cold to be comfortable. Furthermore, if the west wind occurs in summer, we can associate it with the characteristics of a *terral* wind. Terral is a dry and warm wind originated by the pressure difference between mountain ranges and flatlands near the seacoast. *Terral* wind does not have the necessary characteristics to guarantee thermal comfort through natural ventilation. However, the capture of this dry west wind is essential for the drying process of agricultural products. As said in previous paragraphs, the main objective of this kind of building is to be used for agricultural purposes. And in this case, the building efficiently uses natural ventilation for this function.

Unlike the wind from the West, the East wind, is better suited for natural ventilation. This is a thermal wind; therefore, its intensity increases proportionally to the inland temperature. This phenomenon is ideal, due to the fact that the more the temperature increases the more airflow its needed to reach comfort conditions. As we can see, in *Olgyay's* (Olgyay, 1998) hygrothermal comfort chart. As a result, the PPD analyses of the east wind combinations practically guarantee comfort conditions. The *ASHRAE 55* recommends PPD values of around 10 percent. However, the results obtained in many PPD analyses far exceed this value. This is because, usually, comfort statistical data is collected from northern regions. *Victor Olgyay* states (Olgyay, 1998) that humans are capable of varying our comfort temperature to adapt to the climate in which we are.

Indeed, if we adjust the thermal comfort values in the Climate Consultant application, we can obtain results that are closer to the reality of the local population. We can increase the thermal comfort up to 2 degrees, reaching 25.9 degrees. The relative humidity could increase up to 5 points, reaching 85%. Finally, the airspeed could change, from 1.5 m/s to 2.5 m/s, with high temperatures and high humidity air conditions. With these comfort parameters, the comfort hours obtained in the hygrothermal chart increase by 4%, and 3.7 % the ones related to natural ventilation. Also, the need for cooling decreases to 0.6%, which represents only 56 hours a year. This last datum does not consider the needs of air dehumidification. Therefore, the comfort conditions would likely reach the values required by ASHRAE if there were statistical data collected from the region of study.

CONCLUSIONS

- We can confirm that the orientation of the traditional constructions in Valencia is perfectly oriented to capture the wind of the region in the most efficient way.

- The type of openings and their arrangement on the façade, that is, high and narrow windows, are very useful for compressing and therefore accelerating the air as it goes through them.

- The symmetrical façade arrangement facilitates airflow through the construction, minimizing the number of turbulences and air pockets at different speeds.

- With the climatic data presented and verified with the CFD & PPD simulations, we can state that the region of Valencia has an ideal wind regime for natural ventilation as a bioclimatic design strategy.

- The CFD & PPD analyses are a relatively simple and useful tool to be used also in new projects. It would be interesting to implement this work dynamic in the initial phases of a project.

- Natural ventilation is one of the most useful bioclimatic design tools in almost all the Mediterranean arc, almost in the territories near the coast. It would be interesting to transfer this experience of study on natural ventilation to more exhaustive analysis conditions based on Indoor Air Quality, IAQ. With this methodology, we could analyse if quality of air and its pollutions is adequate for natural ventilation.

- It is necessary to carry out a deep analysis of the tools to obtain PPD results, specifically their databases, to adjust the analysis parameters to the real comfort conditions of the population in the latitudes and regions of study.

REFERENCES

A. J. Pérez Cuevas. (1994). *Atlas climático de la Comunidad Valenciana (1961-1990) - Universidad Politécnica de Valencia*. Valencia : Conselleria d'Obres Públiques, Urbanisme i Transports, Direcció General de Urbanisme, 1994.

Alonso Monterde, M., Gómez Lozano, V., Guillén Guillamón, I., Higón Calvet, J., & López-Jiménez, P. A. (2016). "Sustainable building strategies on regional scale: Proposal for the Valencian region in Spain." *Indoor and Built Environment*, 25(7), 1054–1064. https://doi.org/10.1177/1420326X16659327

Hajdukiewicz, M., Geron, M., & Keane, M. M. (2013). "Calibrated CFD simulation to evaluate thermal comfort in a highly-glazed naturally ventilated room." *Building and Environment*, 70, 73–89. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2013.08.020

ISO. (2005). ISO 7730: "Ergonomics of the thermal environment Analytical determination and interpretation of thermal comfort using calculation of the PMV and PPD indices and local thermal comfort criteria." *Management*. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.soildyn.2004.11.005

Mora-Pérez, M., Guillén-Guillamón, I., & López-Jiménez, P. A. (2015). "Computational analysis of wind interactions for comparing different buildings sites in terms of natural ventilation." *Advances in Engineering Software*, 88, 73–82. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.advengsoft.2015.06.003

Mora-Pérez, M., Guillen-Guillamón, I., López-Patiño, G., & López-Jiménez, P. A. (2016). "Natural ventilation building design approach in mediterranean regions-a case study at the valencian coastal regional scale (Spain)." *Sustainability (Switzerland),* 8(9). https://doi.org/10.3390/su8090855

Neila González, F. J. (2004). *Arquitectura bioclimática en un entorno sostenible* [Book]. Munilla-Lería.

Olgyay, V. (1998). *Arquitectura y clima : manual de diseño bioclimático para arquitectos y urbanistas* [Book]. Gustavo Gili.

Rey Aynat, J. M. del. (2002). *Alqueries : paisatge i arquitectura en l'horta* (V. M. Rosselló Verger & Consell Valencià de Cultura (eds.)) [Book]. Consell Valencià de Cultura.

PAPER #7.22

ECOMIMETICS: THE MAXIMUM POWER PRINCIPLE FOR RETHINKING URBAN SUSTAINABILITY

Mercedes Garcia-Holguera[a]
[a]University of Manitoba, Winnipeg, MB, Canada

ABSTRACT

Despite their numerous achievements, mainstream approaches to sustainable design have failed to address global environmental challenges from a complex systems perspective. For some critics this is rooted on a reductionist understanding of design solutions that gravitates towards the first law of thermodynamics (energy efficiency); whereas buildings, neighborhoods, and cities should be comprehended as self-organizing complex systems. As Lotka pointed out, the first and second law of thermodynamics alone cannot unravel the energy dynamics of these type of organizations, and a system thinking approach is required. Mimicking ecosystems' self-organizing structures provides an alternative pathway to design cities as complex, resilient structures. Ecosystems exist at many scales, inside the stomach of a ruminant or as an entire rainforest and, through evolution, have adapted to extreme conditions that in many cases involve limitation of resources, daily and/or seasonal increase or decrease of temperatures, overpopulation, or catastrophic events. More interestingly, ecosystems adhere to the maximum power principle as re-defined by H. Odum, which states that systems that maximize their flows of energy tend to persist over time. This principle suggests that, counterintuitively to our beliefs, systems that use more resources can be more effective in the long term. Cities, like ecosystems, are self-organizing complex systems. Their complexity arises from the flows of energy, matter and information through the multiple components that maintain the whole city system in a steady state, away from thermodynamic equilibrium. Here it is proposed that for cities to prevail and be resilient in the context of a changing climate they need to maximize renewable energy flows and minimize entropy generation.

KEYWORDS

Biomimetic design; ecomimetics; ecosystem biomimetics; systems thinking; maximum power principle.

INTRODUCTION

Unrestrained anthropogenic development causes environmental changes at a global scale. Long-term impacts in human and non-human systems are expected and only mitigation and adaptation measures will help to manage these impacts (Rajendra et al. 2014). Rokstrom et al. (2009) introduced the idea of planetary boundaries and argued that operating within these boundaries could assure a stable global environment, but anthropogenic development is estimated to have already transgressed three of these boundaries: climate change, biodiversity loss and nitrogen cycle disruption.

The consequences of crossing one or more boundaries are unpredictable because the Earth is a complex self-regulating system as described in Lovelock's Gaia theory (Lovelock 1972), and the interdependency between variables implies that changes in one variable or system might provoke the transgression of one or more other boundaries. One variable that controls climate change is atmospheric CO_2 concentration. The increase in CO_2 levels is directly connected to the building industry (due to energy use) and indirectly to architectural

design choices (which affect energy use). In addition, resource scarcity is also a critical topic on a finite planet where buildings and the building industry are accountable for 30% of raw material use and 40% of energy use globally (Huovila et al. 2010). The problem of resource scarcity is more evident when the Earth is characterized as a thermodynamic system, closed to matter and open to solar energy. The first reflections on scarcity in connection to population growth were documented in Malthus' seminal paper (Malthus 1798). Later on, Jevons studied the negative and counterintuitive results of improving technology and increasing energy efficiency in the context of coal mines (Jevons and Flux 1906). According to the so-called 'Jevons' paradox', increased efficiency stimulates more resource use due to relatively lower costs associated with the more advanced technology. Similar conflicting aspects regarding energy efficiency were also observed in physical and non-physical systems, and described as the maximum power principle (Odum and Pinkerton 1955). This principle states that, in a context of abundant resources, all living and non-living systems tend to capture as much energy as possible to produce maximum power output, and only when resources are scarce do systems tend to favor efficiency. These ideas align with the observed evolution in human made systems where augmented access to energy sources, (e.g. development of agriculture, the Industrial Revolution) triggered important technological and scientific advances that increased exponentially the use of resources, but also increased the complexity of human systems. According to the maximum power principle, this unrelenting capture of high quality energy is common to all living systems. This document will discuss how the maximum power principle can help support counterintuitive ideas for complex systems centered environmental design

Architects and urban planners have traditionally reflected on the relationship between buildings, energy and the city (Geddes 1950, Mumford 1963), but these ideas had little repercussion in the built environment until the oil crisis in 1973. During this period of relative 'energy scarcity' efficiency measures took preference over maximum power strategies, and the foundations of sustainable design where established around matter and energy use concerns.

The approach to environmental design represented by sustainable architecture has been very successful in raising awareness of limited resources and climate change challenges. It also has provided global but reductionist tools to assess the environmental performance of buildings (e.g. LEED, BREEAM); however, sustainable design has failed to address the environmental challenge from a complex systems perspective. Whether the study is focused on a building, a neighborhood or a region, these are self-organizing complex systems and the first and second laws of thermodynamics alone cannot unravel their energy dynamics.

Mimicking nature appears to be an inspiring approach to environmental design capable of conceiving buildings as complex systems. Although there are many angles to the definition and characterization of biomimetic design, a central idea is that biological systems have accumulated countless successful design solutions through millions of years of evolution and adaptation (Benyus 1997). In that regard, biomimetics refers to the study, understanding, abstraction, and modeling of biological systems with the purpose of solving technological and design problems (ISO 2015). The term has also been defined as "learning from nature" in contrast to trying to copy nature, meaning that a deep understanding of biological functions and processes is necessary for successful developments. Biomimetic design argues that humans can learn from nature's vast experience and, when intended, environmental goals can guide the design process. Among the possible biological systems that can interest designers are ecological systems. Mimicking ecosystems is

also known as ecomimetic design and refers to biomimetic research that learns from and emulates ecosystem processes and functions in design exercises (Garcia-Holguera et al. 2015b). Cities and buildings, like ecosystems, are complex systems; and their complexity arises from the variety of their components, both biotic and abiotic, and from the flows of energy, matter and information that connect their elements and maintain the system in a steady state, away from thermodynamic equilibrium. Ecosystems exist at many scales, inside the stomach of a ruminant or as an entire rainforest and, through evolution, ecosystems have adapted to extreme conditions that in many cases involve limitation of resources, daily and/or seasonal increase or decrease of temperatures, overpopulation, or catastrophic events, for example. Persistent ecosystems have a complex network of interactions among their components that ensures their resiliency and maintains essential energy flows in the system even in adverse conditions. These characteristics suggest that mimicking ecosystems' complexity and energy dynamics might have great potential both for innovative urban and building design and for optimization of buildings' environmental performance.

1. ECOSYSTEMS INFORMING CITY PLANNING / CITIES MIMICKING ECOSYSTEMS

There are multiple definitions that try to grasp the nuances of the term "ecosystem". One definition commonly accepted is the one given by the Convention on Biological Diversity: "a dynamic complex of plant, animal and microorganism communities, and their non-living environment interacting as a functional unit" (United Nations 1992). Another similar definition is the one by H. Odum (1994) that describes an ecosystem as "an organized system of land, water, mineral cycles, living organisms, and their programmatic behavioural control mechanisms". The study of ecosystems is presented by some researchers as a holistic discipline (Odum 1977, Jørgensen 2002) in which ecological systems are described as hierarchical structures of nested levels that increase in complexity and self-organization through time (Kay 2004). Also it has been established that mature ecosystems with more complex structures (i.e. more elements, more food chains, etc.) are more efficient in their biomass to energy use ratio (Margalef 1963), and the same author stated that a similar correlation could be found in human systems; where urban centers could be compared to mature and more efficient ecosystems whereas rural areas would correspond to less mature ecosystems. Other authors agree in recognizing that both building and ecological systems can be characterized as open thermodynamic complex systems (Allen 2001, Fernandez-Galiano 1991, Kibert, Sendzimir, and Guy 2000), but it is the correlation between energetic flows in cities and living systems that has drawn more attention (Allen 1998, Purvis, Mao, and Robinson 2019, Marchettini, Pulselli, and Tiezzi 2006). Three characteristics of ecosystems are particularly relevant in the context of ecomimetic and environmental design of cities: Ecosystems are complex systems that function as thermodynamic open systems and follow the maximum power principle.

1.1. Cities characterized as complex systems

Cities and ecosystems behave like complex systems in that their outputs do not stem from linear interactions but are rather the result of multiple feedback loops. Feedback loops are pathways that reinforce or suppress the processes that characterize a system (Odum 2004). A system is made of components, their interconnections and a number of particular functions or purposes (Meadows and Wright 2008). Components or elements in a system are easy to identify, interconnections (such as feedback loops) might be harder to find, and are essential when trying to understand or

restructure a system. The purpose of a system can be deduced from its behavior, and a system might be formed by multiple subsystems with different purposes. Changing the elements in a system can keep the system unaltered; however, changing their interactions or the purpose can significantly modify the system. In an urban system, the interactions between the city components and their reinforcing feedback loops generate specific patterns through time. Some of these behaviors respond to purposes that have defined our cities as residential, economic and socio-cultural spaces. It is crucial to modify these purposes and interactions so that anthropocentric urban systems can evolve into biocentric ones. An urban system whose success is measured by its capacity to provide clean air will be very different from one that aims to provide fast vehicular access to its citizens.

Furthermore, systems theory has shown that urban planners and architects can learn from ecosystems' organization and structure. It appears that complex systems tend to share structural features (Anand et al. 2010) and that there are general common principles to many systems that are independent of its components or the local interactions among those components (Von Bertalanffy, 2008). It is also known that systems that seem to be completely dissimilar can generate similar dynamic behaviors (Meadows and Wright, 2008). These ideas are especially relevant when thinking of cities and ecosystems which are two types of systems with apparently few things in common. It makes sense then that mimicking ecosystems' feedback structures might guide designers towards repurposed urban systems.

1.2. Cities characterized as open thermodynamic systems

The thermodynamic field is another link between urban systems and ecological systems as both system types have to deal with variation and regulation of their energetic inflows and outflows. However, one interesting difference is that in the built environment the first law has mostly ruled the approach to thermodynamics. Kay (2004) points out that while the first law of thermodynamics is a description of energy flows in terms of their quantities, the second law has to do with their energy quality. In other words, with the first law we measure efficiency whereas with the second law we describe the effectiveness of the flows. Kay argues that, historically, technology and engineering have concentrated on the quantifiable aspects of energy exchanges, rather than focusing on the quality of those exchanges.

Fernandez-Galiano (1991) compares the "culture of energy", which is represented by a society that seeks increased production and resource consumption, with the "culture of entropy" that focuses on conserving resource, and values energy quality. The second law of thermodynamics and the concept of entropy bring out the notion of irreversibility in all processes and the inevitable decay of systems through time. Cities, however, like ecological systems, perform as dissipative structures that maintain their structure and/or morphology thanks to the constant inflow of high quality energy. This high quality energy that is able to perform work is called exergy. Exergy is always lost during the lifetime of any system, in stark contrast with the conservation of energy guaranteed by the first law of thermodynamics. When all exergy is consumed and there are no inflows of exergy, the system tends to reach thermodynamic equilibrium which in ecological systems is equivalent to death.

The concept of exergy is also very helpful in understanding self-organization processes of ecological systems. When the internal exergy in a system is greater than the exergy needed for the maintenance of the system, then the system uses that excess to create new order; these types of organizational structures are Prigogine's (1968) dissipative structures. Kay et al. (1999) restates the work of Prigogine who pointed out that open systems receiving exergy are moved away from equilibrium and

Kay adds that, despite this, Nature still tends toward equilibrium. Within this framework, Kay (1999) defined what he called the Self-Organized Hierarchical Open systems or SOHO systems and argued that ecosystems have to be understood as SOHO systems in order to develop an ecosystem approach. Analogously we could say that cities also have to be understood as self-organized open systems in order to develop a design approach that mimics ecosystems: ecomimetics.

In addition, there is another interesting concept in terms of energy accounting for ecological systems and buildings. The concept of "emergy" or embedded energy was first coined by Odum (Odum 1994, 2004, Odum 1996) and refers to the amount of energy of just one type that is necessary to make one unit of another type of energy. The idea is based on the notion of energy hierarchy in ecological systems; that is, in ecological processes "at each step much of the energy is used in the transformation, and only a small amount is transformed to a higher quality, one that is more concentrated and in a form capable of special actions when fed back" (Odum, 1994). The ratio of emergy vs. energy is called the "transformity" ratio, and Odum states that emergy analysis can be used to place cities and buildings in their energy hierarchy level. Comparing ecological systems with human systems in terms of emergy/exergy ratio shows that natural systems have a lower ratio than man-made systems; which in other words means that, when referring to solar radiation, ecological systems are more effective in capturing exergy; that is, natural systems have evolved to maximize the useful work that they can perform with incoming energy flows. Emergy has been used to analyze the energy hierarchy of ecological systems and it has been proposed as a means to assess the energy hierarchy of buildings and cities (Odum, 1994). Emergy analysis has also been implemented to maximize renewable resource use in buildings (Srinivasan, et al. 2012), to conduct life cycle assessment (LCA) in buildings (Srinivasan, et al., 2014), to optimize urban design (Lee and Braham 2017), and to evaluate eco-efficiency of building manufacturing (Li, et al., 2011). The use of thermodynamic approaches in ecological systems and urban studies is not new. In the past, researchers have stated similar interpretations of the second law of thermodynamics in the context of resource use of buildings (Fernandez-Galiano 1991, Mumford 1934), and urban systems (Wilson 2010, Kapur† 1982, Balocco et al. 2004, Nielsen and Jørgensen 2015, Purvis, Mao, and Robinson 2017, Fistola 2011, Pelorosso, Gobattoni, and Leone 2017, Wilson 2009). This extensive work supports the idea that thermodynamics is an appropriate means to convey relevant concepts from ecology to architecture and urban design in the context of ecosystem biomimetics.

1.3. Cities and the Maximum Power Principle

Advancing further in the similarities between ecosystems and urban systems, the Maximum Power Principle (MPP) may appear as a disruptive concept when associated to the practice of environmental design. Lotka was the first to discuss the idea of a maximum-energy-flow governing principle in an effort to explain the thermodynamics of living systems in the light of Darwin's natural selection theory (Lotka 1922b, a). This principle expresses that living systems compete for available energy and aim to maximize the capture of useful energy (i.e. exergy); the type of energy that allows these systems to sustain their structures first, and increase their complexity subsequently (i.e. evolve). Odum, reformulated this principle incorporating the idea of energy hierarchy or emergy (Odum 1996); and stated that systems that prevail tend to use all available emergy sources in whatever form they exist (Odum 2004). When translated to man-made systems, such as urban areas, Odum's MPP suggests that, in times of resources scarcity, successful systems would be complex, high-quality, and diverse structures in opposition to more temporary and delicate constructions (Odum 2004). Sciubba confronted Lotka's and Odum's ideas with Prigogine's theories

on far-from equilibrium dissipative systems to reformulate the MPP: prevailing systems tap maximum exergy with minimum entropy generation, in stable boundary conditions for the time period considered (Sciubba 2011). Sciubba's reformulation of the MPP could be reinterpreted as follows in the context of urban systems: in extended time periods, during which the environment surrounding a number of urban areas remains stable, the urban systems that prevail are those capable of capturing maximum useful energy sources with minimum waste production.

These ideas are in conflict with some accepted viewpoints on sustainable design that rely on the first and second law of thermodynamics. According to the maximum power law, as stated by Lotka and Odum, an urban system would tend to maximize its power output, independent of the efficiency of the system's individual parts. The output of an urban system might consist of products (e.g. items produced in a factory), services (e.g. health services in a hospital), information (e.g. designs in an engineering firm), or energy (e.g. electricity from a gas power plant). When these outputs become inputs to another system, the overall complexity of the larger man-made system is increased. However, when part of the output is labelled as waste it means that the system is not capable of further transformation or use of the energy that is still embedded in that output (e.g. food leftovers sent to a landfill instead of a biodigestor). Describing cities as thermodynamic complex systems implies that inflows and outflows of energy, matter and information are accounted for across components, and that outcomes capable of performing useful work can be redirected towards another system or be fed back to internal sub-systems rather than be discarded as waste. In some aspects, these aspirations align with the ones proposed by Cradle to Cradle or circular economy design approaches. The maximum power principle moves beyond these theories and suggests that urban systems that capture more resources can be beneficial by providing more high-quality energy outcomes, but only if they are capable of minimizing the entropy that is generated by the system. This parallel between ecological and human-made systems in the management of energy resources offers a framework for understanding and pursuing environmental design that diverges from the one traditionally adopted in sustainable architecture.

2. IMPLICATIONS OF THE MAXIMUM POWER PRINCIPLE FOR URBAN ECOMIMETIC DESIGN

An ecomimetic design approach that stems from the features described above (i.e. complexity, thermodynamics, maximum power principle), has more opportunities for finding meaningful correlations between ecology and design. Such design approach has also more possibilities of engaging in environmental urban design that is regenerative and resilient.

The idea of understanding urban systems as complex thermodynamic open systems has been discussed in the literature to some extent; however, the discussion of the Maximum Power Principle as a relevant topic for architectural and urban design has not been explored until recently (Braham 2016, Yi et al. 2017b) and deserves more exhaustive investigation. There are two pathways that would need detailed research. One refers to qualitative implications of the MPP for urban and architectural design, and the second has to do with the quantitative tools that would be required to advance research in this topic. A brief introduction to these two pathways is presented with the purpose of beginning a conversation among the design community.

2.1. Qualitative implications

At least, two qualitative properties are key for characterization of urban or architectural systems under the MPP. The first one requires to design buildings and cities prepared to capture all available exergy sources, whereas the second property entails minimum entropy

generation by these systems. This is in direct contradiction to the postulations of sustainable design that aim for maximum efficiency through resource use reduction. At the core of the 'maximum efficiency' paradigm is the non-renewable condition of most energy sources used in human-made systems and the generation of by-products that pollute the overall ecosphere. If open systems, like the Earth system, rely only on non-renewable sources they will head towards thermodynamic equilibrium or extinction; however, if renewable sources are included in the equation, systems can prevail if the consumption rate is adjusted to availability of resources (Sciubba and Zullo 2011). Projections for global renewable energy use suggest a steady increase overall, potentially reaching 80% of energy use by 2100 (Demirbas 2009); although recent studies are less optimistic based on actual performance reported from developed countries (al Irsyad, Halog, and Nepal 2019). Nonetheless, even the most promising scenarios would not be enough to explain why any system should aim for maximum power use in a context of climate change and resources scarcity. However, if the emphasis is put not just on the amount of energy flowing through the system, but instead on the quality and hierarchy of the energy flows, then the discussion can be examined from a complex system perspective. This means that cities using maximum exergy power would be expected to develop a wider network of subsystems (e.g. transportation systems, food production systems, public spaces, educational institutions, etc.) with increased functions capability and increased interconnectivity. These specialized sub-systems would generate higher quality outputs or energy outflows, that in the long term would make the overall system more efficient (Odum and Pinkerton 1955). This means that efficiency would be achieved by increased complexity of the urban system, rather than through energy use reduction. Another important aspect is the cyclical behavior of systems as described by Holling (1992). According to Holling, a system grows and evolves to become an efficient structure, after which some sort of decay will follow before the system can reorganize itself into a more complex, evolved system, or else move into degeneration or devolution. Urban systems also go through cyclical changes that fit within Holling's theory of ecosystems' dynamics. For example, the city of Detroit illustrates the case of an urban system experimenting decline and facing a reorganizational stage that will define if the city evolves into a new prosperous structure or if instead it goes deeper into decay and degeneration (Apel 2015).

As mentioned above, maximum power use is to be complemented with minimum entropy generation. Minimum entropy generation entails that the outputs of the system are in balance, or almost in balance, with the surrounding environment. This means that successive transformations of energy flows follow a hierarchical pathway through multiple subsystems until the final outflow's energy gradient is minimal in relationship to the external environment. Pollutants, floods, or thermal radiation are examples of entropy outputs of a city or thermodynamic waste. These outputs are an opportunity to increase the complexity of the urban system by processing the useful energy still present in these flows. Again, increased complexity of the system is crucial to allow such a refined conversion of energy flows to happen. Researchers have studied and recommended strategies that promote higher urban complexity and minimum entropy generation (Pelorosso, Gobattoni, and Leone 2017). Pelorosso et.al., prepared a list that proposed rain gardens, infiltration basins, green roofs, phytoremediation plants, wetlands, or parks, as low-entropy-nature-based solutions. However, the challenge is not so much in identifying, designing or implementing these strategies, but rather in planning the interconnectedness and feedback loops of these and similar strategies to the overall system. Traditional approaches to urban design, budgetary and

time constraints might explain the inclination to design cities in fragments and pieces, whereas a complex system approach would require that even small modifications should be considered opportunities to enhance the overall system.

2.2. Quantitative implications

In order to design cities that mimic ecosystems' complexity and energy dynamics, reassessment of existing tools and incorporation of transdisciplinary tools is necessary. Emergy analysis is one method to comprehensively assess global energy use in urban and building systems (Pulselli et al. 2007, Srinivasan et al. 2012, Srinivasan et al. 2014, Li et al. 2011, Lee and Braham 2017, Yi et al. 2017a). The majority of the emergy analysis exercises use solar energy as the baseline to evaluate system's energy hierarchy, since the Sun's irradiated energy is the renewable source that is at the bottom of most ecological and human-made systems. Emergy analysis supports a more transparent representation of energy pathways in urban systems and improves energy accountability. Critics to the method argue that calculation of solar embedded energy and transformity ratios tends to be oversimplified, although this is common to most holistic approaches, such as Life Cycle Assessment methods (Wang and Zhang 2011)

System modeling tools are another useful means to design complex urban systems that mimic ecological systems. These tools are especially relevant for their capability to represent the dynamic behavior of the system under study, as well as the positive and negative feedback loops that explain its performance. System modeling tools have been used in several fields including environmental modeling (Ford 2010), but also in the representation and characterization of buildings and cities (Dyner, Smith, and Peña 1995, Thompson and Bank 2010, Shen et al. 2005, Oladokun, Motawa, and Banfill 2013, Garcia-Holguera et al. 2015a) Integrating these tools at the beginning of urban and architectural design exercises would advance qualitative and quantitative research that aspires to mimic ecological systems.

CONCLUSION

Biomimetic design suggests that lessons can be transferred from biological systems to optimize technological systems. Cities can emulate ecosystems and be designed as complex open thermodynamic systems that adhere to the Maximum Power Principle as defined by Lotka and redefined by Odum and Sciubba. An urban system planned according to these principles is one that captures maximum amounts of renewable sources to increase its structure and complexity. Such a city relies on a strong network of interconnected sub-systems that are capable of minimizing waste outputs from the overall urban system by reusing and recycling most of its flows. The more renewable resources the urban system captures, the more its structure becomes resilient and diversified, prepared to face unexpected changes and regenerate when external conditions become stable. In the light of the Maximum Power Principle energy use reduction strategies would weaken the urban system and reduce its complexity; whereas the MPP suggests that, similarly to the phases observed in ecosystems' cycles, a mature urban system would ultimately develop efficiency based strategies and support entropy reduction approaches. Therefore, it is proposed here that maximization of energy flows (i.e. renewable) for increased complexity of urban systems will promote robust and resilient cities for climate change adaptation and mitigation.

Next steps will include the development of urban models using the above proposed tools to test the dynamic behavior of an urban system designed for MPP.

REFERENCES

al Irsyad, M. I., Halog A., Nepal R.. 2019. "Renewable energy projections for climate change mitigation: An analysis of uncertainty and errors." *Renewable Energy*

Allen, P. M. 1998. "Cities as Self-Organising Complex Systems." Heidelberg.

Allen, T. 2001. "Applying the principles of ecological emergence to building design and construction." In *Construction Ecology: Nature as a Basis for Green Buildings*, edited by C.J. Kibert, J. Sendzimir and G.B. Guy. Taylor & Francis.

Anand, M., A. Gonzalez, F. Guichard, J. Kolasa, and L. Parrott. 2010. "Ecological systems as complex systems: Challenges for an emerging science." *Diversity* 2

Apel, D. (2015). *Beautiful terrible ruins: Detroit and the anxiety of decline*. Rutgers University Press.

Balocco, C., S. Papeschi, G. Grazzini, and R. Basosi. 2004. "Using exergy to analyze the sustainability of an urban area." *Ecological Economics* 48.

Benyus, J. M. 1997. *Biomimicry : innovation inspired by nature*. New York: Morrow.

Braham, W. W. 2016. *Architecture and systems ecology : thermodynamic principles of environmental building design, in three parts*. London: Routledge.

Demirbas, A. 2009. "Global Renewable Energy Projections." *Energy Sources, Part B: Economics, Planning, and Policy* 4.

Dyner, I., R. A. Smith, and G. E. Peña. 1995. "System dynamics modelling for residential energy efficiency analysis and management." *The Journal of the Operational Research Society* 46.

Fernandez-Galiano, L. 1991. *El fuego y la memoria: sobre architectura y energía*. 1 ed, Alianza Forma. Madrid: Alianza Editorial.

Fistola, R. 2011. "The unsustainable city. Urban entropy and social capital: the needing of a new urban planning." *Procedia Engineering*

Ford, A.. 2010. *Modeling the environment*. Washington, DC: Island Press.

Garcia-Holguera, M., O. G. Clark, A. Sprecher, and S. Gaskin. 2015a. "Approaching biomimetics: Optimization of resource use in buildings using a system dynamics modeling tool." Symposium on Simulation for Architecture and Urban Design (SimAUD), Washington, DC.

Garcia-Holguera, M., O. G. Clark, A. Sprecher, and S. Gaskin. 2015b. "Ecosystem biomimetics for resource use optimization in buildings." *Building Research & Information*:1-16.

Geddes, P. 1950. *Cities in evolution*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Holling, C. S. 1992. "Cross-Scale Morphology, Geometry, and Dynamics of Ecosystems." *Ecological Monographs* 62

Huovila, P., S. Pouffary, N. Svenningsen, P. Graham, and et.al. 2010. Common Carbon Metric: Protocol for Measuring Energy Use and Reporting Greenhouse Gas Emissions from Building Operations. Draft for pilot testing.: United Nations Environment Program (UNEP).

International Organization for Standardization (ISO). 2015. Biomimetics: Terminology, concepts and methodology. In *ISO 18458*: International Organization for Standardization.

Jevons, W. S., and A. W. Flux. 1906. T*he coal question; an inquiry concerning the progress of the nation, and the probable exhaustion of our coal-mines*. London; New York: Macmillan Co.

Jørgensen, S. E. 2002. *Integration of ecosystem theories : a pattern*. Dordrecht; Boston: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Kapur†, J. N. 1982. "Entropy maximization models in regional and urban planning." *International Journal of Mathematical Education in Science and Technology* 13

Kay, J. J. 2004. "On complexity theory, exergy, and industrial ecology." In *Construction Ecology: Nature as a Basis for Green Buildings,* edited by C.J. Kibert, J. Sendzimir and G.B. Guy. Taylor & Francis.

Kay, J. J., H. A. Regier, M. Boyle, and G. Francis. 1999. "An ecosystem approach for sustainability: addressing the challenge of complexity." *Futures* 31

Kibert, C. J., Sendzimir J., and Guy B.. 2000. "Construction ecology and metabolism: natural system analogues for a sustainable built environment." *Construction Management and Economics* 18

Lee, J. M., and W. W. Braham. 2017. "Building emergy analysis of Manhattan: Density parameters for high-density and high-rise developments." *Ecological Modelling* 363.

Li, Dezhi, Jin Zhu, Eddie C. M. Hui, Barbara Y. P. Leung, and Qiming Li. 2011. "An emergy analysis-based methodology for eco-efficiency evaluation of building manufacturing." *Ecological Indicators*

Lotka, A. J. 1922a. "Contribution to the Energetics of Evolution." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*

Lotka, A. J. 1922b. "Natural Selection as a Physical Principle." *procnatiacadscie Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*

Lovelock, J. E. 1972. "Gaia as seen through the atmosphere." *Atmospheric Environment* (1967)

Malthus, T. R. 1798. *An essay on the principle of population, as it affects the future improvement of society.* London: J. Johnson.

Marchettini, N., F. Pulselli, and E. Tiezzi. 2006. "Entropy And The City." *WIT Transactions on Ecology and the Environment* 93.

Margalef, R. 1963. "On certain unifying principles in ecology." *The American Naturalist* 97

Meadows, D. H., and D. Wright. 2008. T*hinking in systems : a primer.* White River Junction, VT.: Chelsea Green Pub.

Mumford, L. 1934. "Technical Syncretism and Towards and Organic Ideology." In *Rethinking technology a reader in architectural theory,* edited by William W. Braham, Jonathan A. Hale and John Stanislav Sadar. London; New York: Routledge.

Mumford, L. 1963. *Technics and civilization.* New York: Harcourt, Brace & World.

Nielsen, S. N., and Sven E. J.. 2015. "Sustainability analysis of a society based on exergy studies – a case study of the island of Samsø (Denmark)." *Journal of Cleaner Production*

Odum, E. P. 1977. "The emergence of ecology as a new integrative discipline." *Science* 195

Odum, H. T., and R. C. Pinkerton. 1955. "Time's speed regulator: The optimum efficiency for maximum power output in physical and biological systems." *American Scientist* 43

Odum, H.T. 1994. *Ecological and general systems: an introduction to systems ecology:* University Press of Colorado.

Odum, H.T. 2004. "Material circulation, energy hierarchy, and building construction." In *Construction Ecology: Nature as a Basis for Green Buildings,* edited by C.J. Kibert, J. Sendzimir and G.B. Guy. Taylor & Francis.

Odum, H. T. 1996. *Environmental accounting: EMERGY and environmental decision making.* New York: Wiley.

Oladokun, M. G., I. A. Motawa, and P. F. Banfill. 2013. "A system dynamics-based model of the socio-technical systems of household energy and carbonemissions." 31st International Conference of the System Dynamics Society, Cambridge, Massachusetts USA.

Pelorosso, R., F. Gobattoni, and A. Leone. 2017. "The low-entropy city: A thermodynamic approach to reconnect urban systems with nature." *Landscape and Urban Planning*

Prigogine, I. 1968. *Introduction to thermodynamics of irreversible processes.* New York: Interscience Publishers.

Pulselli, R. M., E. Simoncini, F. M. Pulselli, and S. Bastianoni. 2007. "Emergy analysis of building manufacturing, maintenance and use: Em-building indices to evaluate housing sustainability." *Energy and Buildings* 39

Purvis, B., Y. Mao, and D. Robinson. 2019. "Entropy and its Application to Urban Systems." *Entropy*

Purvis, Ben, Yong Mao, and Darren Robinson. 2017. Thermodynamic Entropy as an Indicator for Urban Sustainability? : Elsevier Ltd.

Rajendra, K. P.,et. al. 2014. Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report. Contribution of Working Groups I, II and III to the Fifth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. edited by R.K. Pachauri and L.A. Meyer. Geneva, Switzerland: Interngovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC).

Rockström, J., W., et.al. 2009. "Planetary boundaries:exploring the safe operating space for humanity." *Ecology and Society*

Sciubba, E. 2011. "What did Lotka really say? A critical reassessment of the "maximum power principle"." *Ecological Modelling*

Sciubba, E., and Zullo, F. 2011. "Exergy-Based Population Dynamics. A thermodynamic view of the sustainability concept." *Journal of Industrial Ecology*

Shen, L. Y., Y. Z. Wu, E. H. Chan, and J. L. Hao. 2005. "Application of system dynamics for assessment of sustainable performance of construction projects." *Journal of Zhejiang University Science*

Srinivasan, R. S., W. W. Braham, D. E. Campbell, and C. D. Curcija. 2012. "Re(De)fining Net Zero Energy: Renewable Emergy Balance in environmental building design." *Building and Environment*

Srinivasan, R. S., Ingwersen W., Trucco C., Ries R., and Campbell D.. 2014. "Comparison of energy-based indicators used in life cycle assessment tools for buildings." *Building and Environment*

Thompson, B. P., and L. C. Bank. 2010. "Use of system dynamics as a decision-making tool in building design and operation." *Building and Environment*

United Nations. 1992. Convention on Biological Diversity. In *Ch_XXVII_8*, edited by United Nations. Rio de Janeiro 5 June 1992.

von Bertalanffy, L. 2008. "An Outline of General System Theory." *Emergence: Complexity & Organization*

Wang, J., and J. Zhang. 2011. "Progress and its enlightenments in application research on emergy theory." 19th International Conference on Geoinformatics.

Wilson, A. 2009. *The "thermodynamics" of the city evolution and complexity science in urban modelling.*

Wilson, A. 2010. "Entropy in Urban and Regional Modelling: Retrospect and Prospect. *Geographical Analysis*

Yi, H., W. W. Braham, D. R. Tilley, and R. S. Srinivasan. 2017a. "Measuring ecological characteristics of environmental building performance: Suggestion of an information-network model and indices to quantify complexity, power, and sustainability of energetic organization." *Ecological Indicators*

Yi, H., W. W. Braham, D. R. Tilley, and R. S. Srinivasan. 2017b. "A metabolic network approach to building performance: Information building modeling and simulation of biological indicators." *Journal of Cleaner Production*

PAPER #7.23

RSM ADJUSTMENT IN ABSORPTION COEFFICIENT DETERMINATION OF MATERIALS IN ROOM ACOUSTICS

Blanca Pérez-Aguilar[a], Ignacio Guillén-Guillamón[a], Alberto Quintana-Gallardo[a], José L. Gasent-Blesa[b], Ana Llopis-Reyna[a]

[a] Physics Technologies center, Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

[b] Image Processing Laboratory, Universitat de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

Theaters and auditoriums are one of the most important equipment in a city.

The main parameter which determines the adaptation of theaters and halls to their intended activity is the reverberation time. It depends on the shape and size of the enclosure, the materials used in the construction of the enclosure and the way they are built. The absorption coefficient of the materials of a room will be needed either to design it or to analyze its behavior.

The absorption coefficient of the materials in a theater or hall can be determined using the response surface methodology. Its application can be very adequate in such cases in which the functioning of more than one surface is unknown.

This approach can be very inefficient when the unknown material has an extreme behavior (i.e.: very reflective or very absorbent). The reason is the limited range of the increment when coefficients are very small, as the generated response surface area may not contain the target (that would be the reverberation time).

Extreme cases can be better handled with a new approach to assess the real behavior of these surfaces, and therefore of the room, in an effective manner. The adjustment performed will be illustrated through a case study in this paper.

KEYWORDS

Response surface methodology; room acoustics; reverberation time; simulation; modelling.

INTRODUCTION

The adaptation of a theater or music hall to their intended activity is mainly determined by the value of the reverberation time (RT. Reverberation time is the time Sound Pressure Level takes to decay 60dB from the initial value. (Beranek,1996). To recommend an RT value for a specific space, it is used the $RT_{mid,}$ (the mean of RT for the octave bands of 500Hz and 1000Hz). The recommended values of the RT_{mid} of a room depend on the activity that will be held inside. Some RTmid recommendations are shown in Table 1.

Room type	RT_{mid}, occupied seats [s]
Conference room	0,7-1,0
Theater	1,0-1,2
Opera	1,2-1,5
Concert Hall (chamber music)	1,3-1,7
Concert Hall (symphonic music)	1,8-2,0
Church (organ and chorus)	2,0-3,0

Table 1. RT_{mid} recommended values for different type of rooms. Source: (Carrión 1998)

The acoustical analysis of a room can be made by using simulation software. In this study, we have analyzed an Autocad 3D model of the theater of the *Banda Primitiva of Llíria* (Fig. 1) using Odeon acoustic software and Surface Response Methodology (Llinares,2012). This theater is located in the

town of Llíria (Valencia, Spain). It houses the *Banda Primitiva* headquarters and has 1000 seats. The *Banda Primitiva of Llíria* is a musical society with more than 200 years of history; its theater was built in 1951 by J. Rieta architect, and it was refurbished in 1991. First, an on site RT30 measurement has been conducted. Then, a model of the theater has been drawn using 3D CAD and exported to Odeon software. Based on the construction details, blueprints and visual information, we have assigned an absorption coefficient to each surface. The value of the absorption coefficient of a surface varies from 0 (very reflective) to 1 (very absorbent), and it is influenced by the way the material is set in place. Then RSM has been used to adjust the coefficients of the model, in order to make it behave as the real space.

The purposes of the present work are as follows:

• First, to show the possible problems that can appear in the application of the RSM in the analysis of a room, when the surfaces with unknown behavior have extreme absorption coefficient values (near 0 or 1).

• Second, to propose a variation in the RSM application, in order to solve the problem above.

1. METHODS

1.1. Measurement points

This study can be divided into two parts, an on site measurement of the acoustical parameters of the impulse response of the theater and a ray tracing acoustic simulation using a 3D model.

To conduct the on site measurement we have set 20 reception receivers points in the audience plane (non symmetrical in relation to the room axis) (Table 2). The sound source was set in the middle of the apron. There was no audience during tests. Measurements were registered with DIRAC software (DIRAC, 2009); after a file treatment room acoustic parameters were obtained. The mean RT 30 is shown in Table 3.

Centre of coordinates (0) was set in the lower point of the apron, where it meets the audience plane floor (as shown in Fig. 2).

The 3D Autocad model was set inside of a completely absorbent box and then imported to Odeon software (Odeon, 2009). Parameters such as the data of the source, the location of the receiver, the absorption coefficients of the surfaces of the enclosure and the scatter has been typed in.

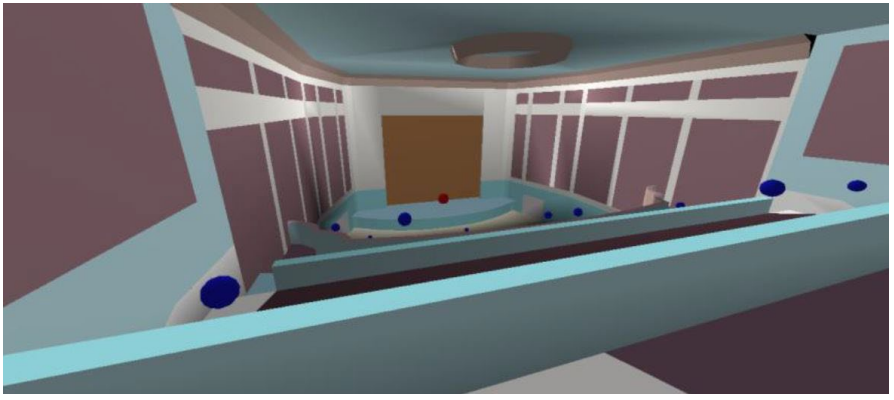


Figure 1. 3D model of the Theater of the Banda Primitiva of Llíria from receiver number 17 position.

Receiver number	X	Y	Z	Receiver number	X	Y	Z
Source	0,57	0,20	2,64				
1	-4,74	-0,03	1,74	11	15,23	-5,4	6,58
2	-10,50	-0,03	2,28	12	-19,30	-5,35	8,47
3	-17,24	0,03	2,92	13	-15,62	0,21	7,02
4	-20,84	-7,00	3,27	14	-17,39	6,51	8,15
5	-13,66	-7,22	2,58	15	-20,21	0,49	9,11
6	-7,65	-6,32	2,01	16	-20,34	8,71	8,79
7	-3,74	7,00	1,64	17	-23,12	7,37	10,42
8	-16,82	7,34	2,88	18	-25,61	4,19	11,11
9	-12,87	8,36	6,33	19	-22,23	0,05	10,42
10	-14,03	0,17	6,33	20	-24,86	-7,56	10,76

Table 2. Coordinates of the source and microphones.

Frequency	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
On site measurement	1,451	1,206	1,112	1,184	1,148	1,016

Table 3. Mean RT 30 measured on site

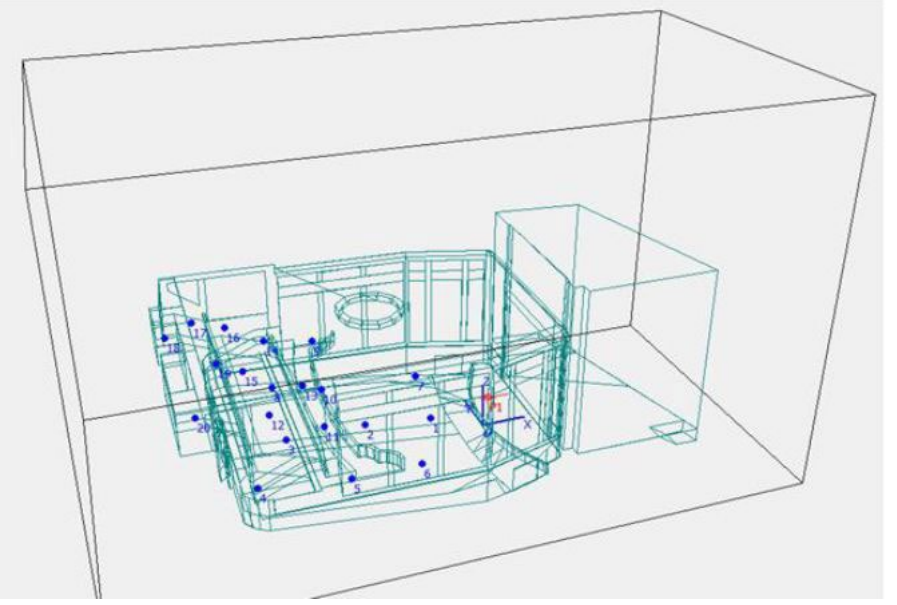


Figure 2. Sound source and microphones situation.

1.2. RSM in acoustical room analysis

The definition of the variables which define the acoustic behavior of a room can be made by an iterative adjustment process or by the Response Surface Method (RSM) (Llinares, 2012). The first one proves to be useful when studying small rooms or when the researcher is experienced. The second one is a very systematic method, which helps the detection of influential and non-influential variables in the reverberation time of the room. It also allows to obtain data of non-superficial elements. (Pérez et al., 2018). The RSM explores the relationships between several explanatory variables, and one or more response variables. The goal is to use a sequence of designed experiments to obtain an optimal response using a second-degree polynomial. The response, in rooms conditioning, is the reverberation time of the enclosure. To apply this method the absorption coefficient of every surface of the space must be known except for two, the independent variables, whose values determine the response.
RSM can be applied to obtain a study region per surface. Then they are combined to get 9 absorption spectrum combinations.

Study region definition in the RSM application:

$$X_{1i} = N_{1i} \pm R_{1i}$$

Being:
$B_{1i,}$ values taken from the bibliography,
$R_{1i,}$ increments which vary from 0 to 0,5

Analogously X_{2i}

The new absorption spectrum couples are introduced in Odeon to calculate the reverberation time of each combination. The combinations are acceptable when they fit between the maximum and minimum values of the on site measured reverberation time.
Obtained reverberation times are grouped by frequencies, creating 9 combinations of three points by frequency. The response surfaces which fit with those combinations are drawn. We obtain new couples of points from each surface which satisfy the target. We make a Table of the pairs by frequency, and we create new absorption spectrum coefficients combinations of the unknown surfaces. We calculate the reverberation time of each combination, and then we compare the results with the on site measurement.

Zone	Materials	Surface No.
Decorations and curve zones	Plaster frame	1
Stage ceiling, 1st & 2nd floor parapet	Plaster over brick	2
Stage pavement, 1st floor amphitheater	Floorboards over concrete	3
Ground floor pavement	Floorboards w/c	4
Ground floor carpet	Carpet over floorboards	5
1st floor amphitheater pavement	Linoleum	6
2nd floor amphitheater pavement	Enameled concrete	7
1st and 2nd floor stairs pavement	Marble	8
Vertical walls (w/cavity)	Plasterboard w/cavity	9
Vertical walls	Plaster over brick	10
1st floor parapet, ground floor baseboard	Thin wood panel w/cavity	11
Doors	Solid wood	12
Stage opening	Drapes heavy velour	13
1st & 2nd Amphitheatre seats	Medium upholstered chairs	14
Main floor seats	Chairs heavily upholstered	15
Ceiling	13mm plaster on 25mm studs (with mineral wool)	16
Upholstered wall frames	Fabric w/fibers & polyurethane foam	17

Table 4. Materials used in the simulation and number assignment.

1.3. Model settings

Materials used in the simulation are shown in Table 4; a number was assigned to each surface to work with them. Table 5 details the absorption coefficient of the materials described above. They have been taken from bibliography (Arau, 1999; Beranek,2004; Llinares et al., 2012) and from laboratory tests.

Next, the model was proceeded to validation. Parameters of calculation: number of rays: 8221, and impulse response length: 2000ms.

2. RESULTS

2.1. First adjustment

We have taken as unknown surfaces 16 (X_1) and 17 (X_2) (ceiling and upholstered wall frames) (Tables 6 and 7), because they are the surfaces that have a more unpredictable behavior, due to its composition and the way they are built.

Combining the two study regions we obtain absorption coefficient spectrum pairs (Table 8). We will run them in the model to get 9 reverberation time spectrums (Table 9). Note that combination number 5 (tr5) corresponds with the starting values of the model.

With these combinations and increments, combinations are outside acceptable limits (10%), as it can be seen in Figure 3.

2.2. RSM adjustment for extreme absorption coefficient values application

The absorption coefficient of the selected surfaces, has values close to 0 or 1. Due to the way RSM works, the increments we apply are not able to be very high, so we obtain pairs of points which are not very far from the initial considered value. Therefore, the reverberation time of the nine combinations does not get to the target at some frequencies. In this case

Surface No.	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
1	0,130	0,130	0,250	0,280	0,300	0,300
2	0,160	0,160	0,100	0,060	0,040	0,040
3	0,400	0,400	0,300	0,200	0,170	0,150
4	0,050	0,050	0,030	0,060	0,090	0,100
5	0,110	0,110	0,140	0,370	0,430	0,270
6	0,020	0,020	0,020	0,030	0,040	0,040
7	0,010	0,010	0,010	0,010	0,020	0,020
8	0,010	0,010	0,010	0,010	0,010	0,020
9	0,290	0,290	0,100	0,050	0,040	0,070
10	0,013	0,013	0,015	0,020	0,028	0,040
11	0,420	0,420	0,210	0,060	0,050	0,050
12	0,010	0,010	0,050	0,050	0,040	0,040
13	0,140	0,140	0,350	0,550	0,720	0,700
14	0,560	0,560	0,640	0,700	0,720	0,680
15	0,720	0,720	0,790	0,830	0,840	0,830
16	0,260	0,260	0,200	0,100	0,070	0,040
17	0,050	0,050	0,190	0,350	0,840	0,980

Table 5. Absorption coefficient of the surfaces used in the simulation

X_1	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
B_{1i}-R_{1i}	0,21	0,15	0,05	0,02	0,02	0,02
B_{1i}	0,26	0,20	0,10	0,07	0,04	0,07
B_{1i}+R_{1i}	0,31	0,25	0,15	0,12	0,06	0,12
INCREMENT R_1	0,05	0,05	0,05	0,05	0,02	0,05

Table 6. Study region of the unknown surface 16.

X_2	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
B_{2i}-R_{2i}	0,01	0,15	0,30	0,79	0,98	0,84
B_{2i}	0,05	0,19	0,35	0,84	0,98	0,89
B_{2i}+R_{2i}	0,09	0,23	0,40	0,89	0,98	0,94
INCREMENT R_2	0,04	0,04	0,05	0,05	0,00	0,05

Table 7. Study region of the unknown surface 17.

combination	points	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz	
1	B_{1i}-R_{1i}	0,210	0,150	0,050	0,020	0,020	0,020	X_{11}
	B_{2i}-R_{2i}	0,010	0,150	0,300	0,790	0,980	0,840	X_{21}
2	B_{1i}-R_{1i}	0,210	0,150	0,050	0,020	0,020	0,020	X_{11}
	B_{2i}	0,050	0,190	0,350	0,840	0,980	0,890	X_{22}
3	B_{1i}-R_{1i}	0,210	0,150	0,050	0,020	0,020	0,020	X_{11}
	B_{2i}+R_{2i}	0,230	0,400	0,890	0,980	0,940	0,890	X_{23}
4	B_{1i}	0,200	0,100	0,070	0,040	0,070	0,070	X_{12}
	B_{2i}-R_{2i}	0,010	0,150	0,300	0,790	0,980	0,840	X_{21}
5	B_{1i}	0,200	0,100	0,070	0,040	0,070	0,070	X_{12}
	B_{2i}	0,050	0,190	0,350	0,840	0,980	0,890	X_{22}
6	B_{1i}	0,200	0,100	0,070	0,040	0,070	0,070	X_{12}
	B_{2i}+R_{2i}	0,230	0,400	0,890	0,980	0,940	0,890	X_{23}
7	B_{1i}+R_{1i}	0,310	0,250	0,150	0,120	0,060	0,120	X_{13}
	B2i-R2i	0,010	0,150	0,300	0,790	0,980	0,840	X_{21}
8	B_{1i}+R_{1i}	0,310	0,250	0,150	0,120	0,060	0,120	X_{13}
	B_{2i}	0,050	0,190	0,350	0,840	0,980	0,890	X_{22}
9	B_{1i}+R_{1i}	0,310	0,250	0,150	0,120	0,060	0,120	X_{13}
	B_{2i}+R_{2i}	0,230	0,400	0,890	0,980	0,940	0,890	X_{23}

Table 8. Obtained absorption spectrum pairs.

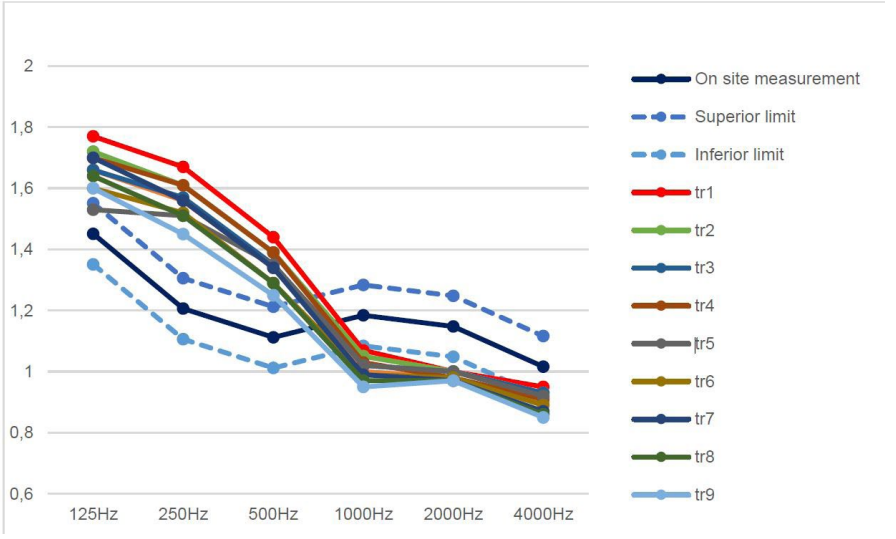


Figure 3. Reverberation time. Adjusted values, compared to on site measurement, initial model, and superior and inferior limits.

tr 30 average	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
tr1	1,77	1,67	1,44	1,07	1,00	0,95
tr2	1,72	1,61	1,39	1,05	1,00	0,93
tr3	1,66	1,57	1,35	1,02	1,00	0,93
tr4	1,70	1,61	1,39	1,03	0,98	0,91
tr5	1,53	1,51	1,35	1,02	1,00	0,92
tr6	1,60	1,52	1,29	0,99	0,98	0,89
tr7	1,70	1,56	1,34	0,99	0,97	0,87
tr8	1,64	1,51	1,29	0,97	0,97	0,86
tr9	1,60	1,45	1,25	0,95	0,97	0,85

Table 9. Obtained reverberation mean time RT30 per combination.

we observed that it was necessary to find a way to obtain the pair of points of absorption combinations of the unknown materials in a more effective way. We decided to start in medium values for the upholstered wall frames (due to its composition, it has the more undefined behavior). We applied RSM again. As these values are 0,5, we could give wide increments (above and below) and study their effect in the nine TR30 combinations obtained.

This way we could visualize which was the influence that a higher or lower absorption coefficient of the unknown materials had in the reverberation times (TR30) obtained for each of them, and how they get close to the on site measurement. If the target it is not contained in the reverberation time combinations, that means the surfaces we have used to combine are not suitable for adjusting the room. Thus, we should choose other surfaces.

After the analysis of the previous adjustment (Fig.4) we have modified increments of the upholstered wall frames at 125 Hz and 500 Hz (Table 10). We have reduced absorption at 125 Hz to make surfaces more reflective, and we have increased it at 500 Hz to make it more absorbent.

With this combination and increments, the values of tr2, tr5 and tr8 for this model are inside the superior and inferior limits at every frequency (Fig. 5). These reverberation times correspond to combinations X11, X12, X13 of surface 16(ceiling) and X22 (upholstered wall frames) of surface 17. We have chosen tr5, as the one that fits better. This combination is shown in Table 11.

CONCLUSION

Some conclusions can be drawn on the basis of the present study. The use of RSM to fit the absorption spectrums of the surfaces of a room can be very useful. It let us work with two unknown behavior surfaces simultaneously. Moreover, it helps us to detect if the surfaces we are considering as unknown, certainly are. In other words, if those surfaces have an influence in accommodating the reverberation time of the room or not. The graphic results provide visual information on which of the combinations, if any, is closer to the real behavior of the room. If not, we can study a different pair of surfaces. Nevertheless,

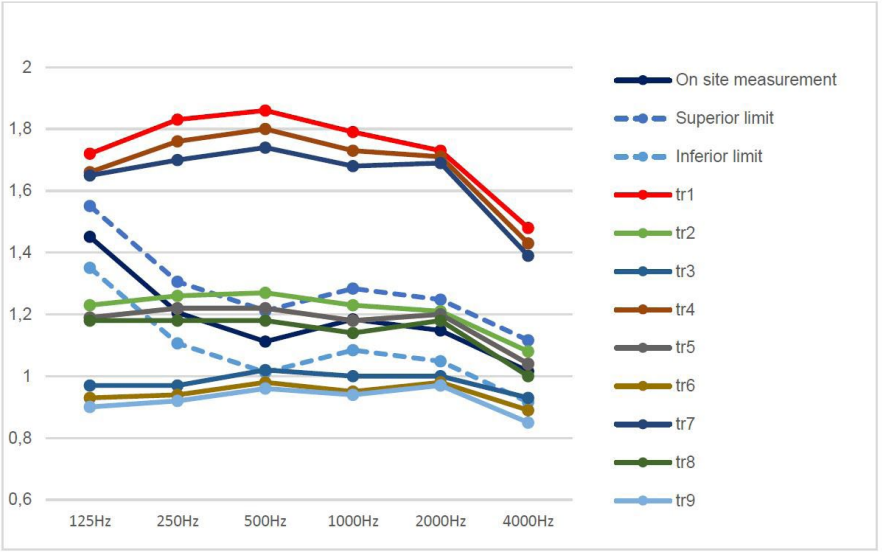


Figure 4. Reverberation time. Adjusted values, compared to on site measurement, initial model (equivalent to tr5), and superior and inferior limits.

Frequency	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
Absorption	0,2	0,5	0,6	0,5	0,5	0,5

Table 10. Absorption coefficient spectrum of the material 17 (Upholstered wall frames).

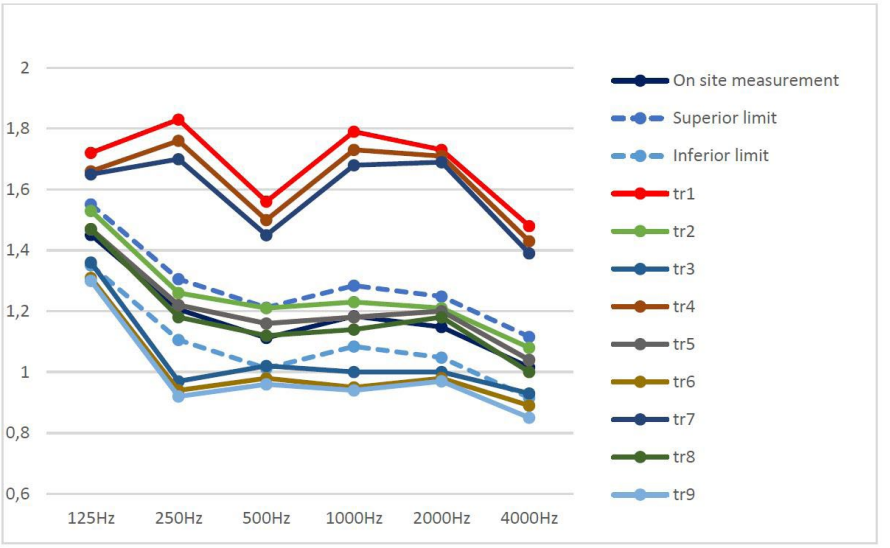


Figure 5. Reverberation time. Adjusted values, compared to on site measurement, initial model (tr5), and superior and inferior limits.

	125Hz	250Hz	500Hz	1000Hz	2000Hz	4000Hz
Surface 16	0,26	0,20	0,10	0,07	0,04	0,07
Surface 17	0,20	0,50	0,60	0,50	0,50	0,50

Table 11. Absorption coefficient spectrum of the materials 16(ceiling) and 17 (upholstered wall frames) that get tr5.

Figure 6. Absorption coefficient spectrum of the upholstered wall frames (before -green- and after -pink- RSM application).

sometimes when the absorption coefficient values of the surfaces are close to 0 or 1, its application could be limited by the own characteristics of the method.

With the adjustment of the method herein proposed, we can adjust accurately the absorption coefficient of very reflective or absorbent surfaces in a more effective manner. It allows to work systematically with the data. It also has a visual representation, which makes interpretations and decisions more precise. The implementation of this adjustment makes it easier to calculate or design a room.

This is a work in progress, so further analysis will provide more conclusions. We have measured acoustical parameters of several theatres, old ones as well as new ones. We will implement this methodology in some of them to check the functionality of the method in practical cases which have different features. Also, archeological acoustic studies could be held in order to find out how those theaters sounded in the past.

REFERENCES

Beranek, L. 2004. *Concert halls and opera houses: music, acoustics, and architecture*. New York. Springer. 20, 639--640

Carrión Isbert, A. 1998. *Diseño acústico de espacios arquitectónicos*. Barcelona. Ed.UPC, 63.

Dirac 5.0. 2009. *Manual de usuario*. Brüel & Kjaer.

Llinares, J., Llopis, A., et al. 2002. *Física 2 para la Arquitectura*. Valencia. Edited by Universitat Politècnica de València.285-294.

Llinares, J. 2012. *Contribución a la simulación virtual de parámetros de calidad acústica en espacios arquitectónicos. Aplicación del método de superficies de respuesta*, Dirigida por Manuel J. Ramírez Blanco y José M. Bravo Plana-Sala. Universitat Politècnica de València. PhD diss. 39-40.

Odeon room acoustics software. 2009. *User Manual*, Denmark.

Pérez, B., Guillén, I., Gómez, V. y Llopis, A. 2018. "Experimental determination approximation of the stage opening absorption spectrum in theatres by using the response surface methodology. Case study" in *Reactive proactive architecture*, Valencia. Edited by Universitat Politècnica de València. 230-235

PAPER #7.24

PARALLELISMS BETWEEN ARCHITECTURE AND PAINTING; THE REUNITING OF SUBJECTIVITY AND OBJECTIVITY

José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

The architecture of the last third of the 20th century was forged in close relation with the main socio-economic and cultural changes. Through it we can represent its conceptualization. Following Simón Marchan's 1972 book, "From Object Art to Concept Art", we have carried out a research project where we have compared how the main keys of the different movements were transferred to architectural experimentation. We have at the same time represented how the objective and subjective trends were developing, representing a map of their evolution. This paper is the result of that research. At a certain moment, both sequences interfere: it is 'as if' objectivity and subjectivity and other antinomies have a common framework in representative arts and architecture. Identifying this point of confluence, the *symptoms* and, if possible, the keys on which we are working, would allow us to recognize a scenario of opportunity, where there is "a certain possibility to overcome the historic dualities." The critical analysis of this opportunity will permit us to delve into the keys of the split in contemporary thought, the social fracture and the return to the dialectic of confronted worlds that we revive. While we analysis the symptoms, we will also try to present some bases for the reunion.

KEYWORDS

Subjectivity; objectivity; opportunity; possible; impossible.

INTRODUCTION

Architectural inquiry is sometimes exhausted by its very heterogeneity. There are times when the production does not accompany the deliberations, and the nature of objects does not correspond to social, political or economic debates. In other cases the inquiries and proposals are drawn up only graphically or on other plastic supports, with little production, but nevertheless are crucial for their understanding and evolution. There are quite a few authors in different disciplines that have opted for the transversality of sources and knowledge to specify certain shifts or substantive changes in their own. Some cases resort to texts based on transliterations, or analogue, aporetic, metaphorical, metonymic or fixed synecdoche, which make it possible to approach problems in a different way. In others, intervening characters are used that, when they unfold, illustrate a self-referential allocation; Benjamin (like Mercier, Janin, Baudelaire or Larra) focuses on "capturing the picture of history in the most insignificant appearances of reality, in its waste, so to speak", appealing to the passers-by, the ragman (with his hook and basket), the costumbrist, the collector of erotic postcards like Eduard Fuchs, the bookseller, the small tradesmen, the *chiffonnier*, the voyeur, the dregs, "because the dreg of society or poet, both are concerned with trash, both pursue their trade alone in hours when citizens abandon themselves to sleep, even the gesture in both is the same", because "their kind of talent is the same: search, poke around, own what belongs to others". And in other cases, the precise study moves to other activities

of parallel route; how Benjamin articulates his aesthetic proposal, around the dialectical gaze; Aby Warburg's *Atlas Mnemosine* which, managing images organized according to small details, allows the reconstruction of culture from the parts to the whole; the proposal of *factography* or *operating* author illustrated in Tretyakov, which encourages action and the work involved in the project; the *dialectic in a state of detention*, or the *principle of Interruption* and *estrangement* deduced from Bertolt Brecht's "Epic Theater" that Benjamin will recompose from a social perspective as a *re-functionalization* of art and that he will understand as chosen from the *montage* praxis that allows going into the scene of the *gaze of the outsider*[1]. In addition, the graphic-poetic proposal of Mallarmé (2016) (for whom "saying is not only expression, but the development of thought") continued -among others- by Octavio Paz and that from the graphic design of the text a priori induces reading to the subject's unconscious, predisposing meaning (Benjamin 1992, 141). Or the transformation of Soviet art in its second stage, shown in the figure of Lizzitsky, against the aestheticism of politics, starting from the politicization of art as Paul Valery pointed out; but it also shows participation in the work and the breakdown of the aesthetic residence framework.

1. THE PRODUCTIVE LIMITATIONS.

As Lord Chandos (Hugo von Hofmannsthal) confessed in a letter to Francis Bacon in 1902, the impossibility of language to communicate, in the emergence of postmodernity perhaps the same thing happened to us; the impossibility of seeing in the production of the architecture itself and all its unfolding, having to go to other references of images, while these *open the revealing event of the transit of history*, in a clearer and more explicit way than in that. And this is precisely at the moment of entering the most textual period of this history that took place in the 70s, when Bernard Tschumi used it in "Joyce's Garden" his urban project in London in 1977, based on the novel "Finnegan's Wake" by James Joyce; or Peter Eisenman in his Even Odd House , working in forms of "L" that challenge the concept of subject centrality and security; or in Cannaregio in Venice in 1978, where the text as overlapping layers justifies the work, or the Long Beach University Museum of Arts, where he uses a fragment of the George Orwell film, "1984", imagining three simultaneous time periods: 1849, inspired in the race for gold, 1949 on the occasion of the creation of the Campus, and 2049, when the campus would be archaeologically rediscovered from its ruins by a successor culture, explaining vestiges of different times, because there is no history except for the unrecognizable scattered objects. Also John Hejduk experiences it with the masks, and his references to Benjamin (Hejduk 1986). These complexities become architectural objects or devices, sometimes surreal, others fictitious, others very particular or intimate. They are mental constructs, recurrent as important themes (Hejduk 1986; 1985); others call *densifiers.* Solà-Morales (1990, 85) already puts forth this problem: "the linear conception of history as unlimited progress of humanity was destroyed by structuralist thought". Such transformation and affirmations could infer that everything went the same way in any discipline. Given the difficulty of seeing their transformations in the same production and to verify the accuracy of this statement, we approach another discipline: the text by Simón Marchán (1986), because it details a total of 24 consecutive pictorial movements in a scarce time span of three decades 50s, 60s and 70s; descriptive rigor hardly visible in the architectural field that will allow us to unravel the problem.

[1] Estrangement is equivalent to showing a subject his face in a mirror, but where such an image can now be detached from him and transported.

2. OBJECTIVE

To carry out the research in parallel with both disciplines, conceptually review the period of transition from structuralism to post-structuralism, representing on various cartographies the parallelism between painting and architecture at this time. Detail will be given where determining circumstances occur, outlining novel records, so that we can pinpoint their precise circumstances and check whether certain claims by critics and historians about this time of change are consistent.

3. PROCESS

To address the specific period where this dissent arises, we elaborated a concept evolution map. We take the pictorial field for being the widest, most susceptible and experimental, where this modulation is visualized most effectively in its transits. In it we observe that the two main lines of work that take shape before and after the Second World War, the objective and the subjective, present a point of union that could have meant a reuniting or dialectical balance between opposites but that was finally divided with a more emphatic distancing. In what follows we address the two numbered lines by temporary sequence, although in art history these impeded delimitations in evolution are mistaken for their amplitude and interconnections with others, except for the origin of their statement.

4. METHODOLOGY OF WORK

Creating work records that relate concepts of painting and architecture and the comparative analysis of conceptual cartographies of painting and architecture, and of these with: a) cartography of philosophical currents of the second half of the 20th century; b) objectivity-subjectivity mapping. The process is the following:

Each of the 25 participants in the two courses have identified each pictorial movement[2]. In each file the specific variables

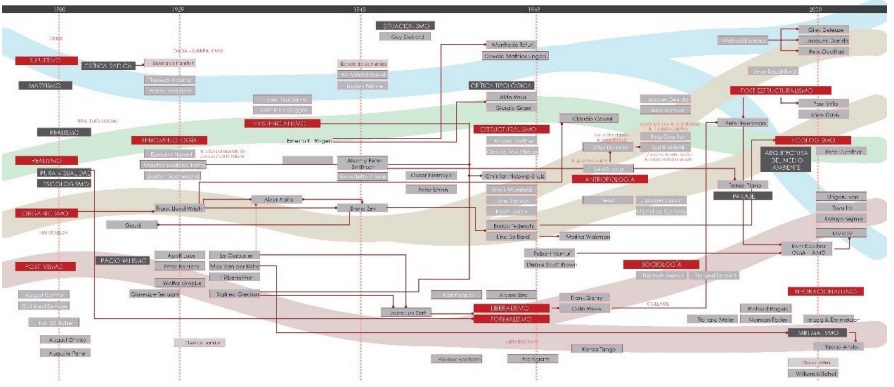


Figure 1. Mapping of evolution of philosophical currents in relation to architecture. Source: Master Degree in Barcelona from Josep Maria Montaner, updated and reviewed by the author.

[2] (1) new figuration, (2) pop art, (3) neo-surrealism or fantastic imagining, (4) psychedelic art, (5) surrealism and hyperrealism, (6) social realism, (7) neo-Dada to shocker pop, (8) narrative imagining and critical social reporting, (9) overcoming informalism, (10) concrete art, (11) new abstraction, (12) minimal art, (13) optical art, (14) kinetic, lighting and real movement art, (15) computer art, (16) collage and object art, (17) art of ludic spaces, (18) happening, (19) Fluxus, (20) arte povera, (21) land art, (22) mythology, (23) art of behavior, (24) conceptual art.

are highlighted and establish a relationship with the architecture in a way that the architectural project selected responds to the same variables highlighted in visual arts. As they are all different, we have a sample of 600 files from the 1,200 carried out. We find a period between 1965 and 1980 where certain movements cross since their revisionist objectives concur. Some with more participatory approaches, others more ludic-ironic, but they coincide in showing a change and transformation with respect to the established socio-institutional parameters. We take as guide the subjectivity-objectivity relation that guides the rest of the antinomies.

We confirm the unfolding conceptual philosophical underlying each example, provided there is relevant data to clarify it. Starting from the cartography of the Master Degree of Josep Maria Montaner (fig. 1), revised with different updates, we differentiate its proximity or belonging to four basic conceptual bodies in the relation between architecture and philosophy: subjectivity, realism, organicism, and positivism, existing in the 20th century. These evolve as follows:

- *Subjectivity* articulates critical materialism, it contaminates with situationism, a certain typological criticism, environmentalism and post-structuralism. Since the 70s it has been divided into two lines: criticism of the critique or *kulturkritik* (cultural criticism) and the more subtle line, neo-structuralist and environmental, creating atmospheres that cut off all other movements. Currently, certain central European neo-constructivism attests to this.
- *Realism* connects with phenomenology, existentialism, structuralism and ends connecting with a certain ecology or environmental architecture. It remains unified and constant, with periods closer to subjectivity and others to objectivity, depending on their representatives. Its journey is cut short by the fluctuations of the others.

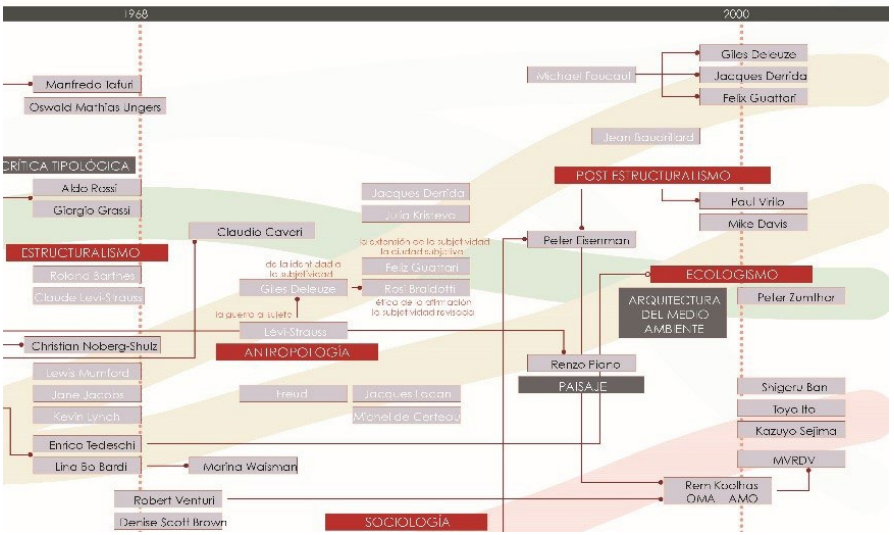


Figure 2. Detail of the study period together with the 24 pictorial movements described by Simón Marchán. Source: author.

- *Organicism* has a parallel evolution to the previous one, but it shows a split in the 1960s: an anthropomorphic and anthropological line that becomes critical and coincides in the critical premises of subjectivity, and another more ecological, feminist and continuist.
- *Positivism* connects with rationalism, technique, science, liberalism and formalism. But around the 1960s it divides, a continuist line on the primacy of science stands out with minimalism, and another somewhat more critical current, which approaches conceptual positions of subjectivism that separate. All this is visible in fig. 2.

We discover in the same period that the area of study 1965-75; various overlaps and crossovers of the continuous lines occur, making various concentrated dualism in this period clear: structuralism-post-structuralism; identity and autonomy; subjectivity-objectivity; formalism-interpretation; realistic evidence-abstraction; presence of the other-absence; instrumental reason-dialogical reason.

Later in the group work we select the most relevant concepts of each movement, creating a synthetic matrix. From this and in view of the 25 examples of each movement we identify the objective and subjective priority character of the samples, both plastic and architectural. In the lower graph we identify in grey the process of the most objective movements and in orange the most subjective. They barely coincide with each other in their development, except in a brief period, since their distinction is relevant to start with.

On the one hand, the objectivist, formal and figurative line integrate it: (1) new figuration, (4) psychedelic art, (8) narrative imagining and critical social reporting, (9) overcoming informalism, until reaching (15) computer art. It is at this moment that the limits between objectivity and subjectivity are no longer precisely defined and their margins are interrelated: with (16) collage and object art, (17) art of ludic spaces, (18) *happening* and (19) Fluxus, where progressively in these four subjective designations in origin the objectivity is implemented to the detriment of the assortment of previous subjectivity. It continues (20) *povera arte*, (21) land art, and (23) art of behavior, where despite its statements in its praxis, a dominant objectivity is sought.

On the other hand we highlight the most subjective line; (2) Pop art or the art of popular image, (3) neo-surrealism or fantastic imagining, (5) surrealism and hyperrealism, (6) social realism, (7) the transition from neo-dadaism to pop shocker, (10) neo concrete art and European structuralism, (11) the new abstraction, (12) minimal art or primary structures, (13) optical art as visual provocation, (14) kinetic-light art and real movement, up to (15) art and the computer, where the objectivist contamination begins. They are followed by (16) collage and object art, (17) ludic spaces, (18) the happening and (19) Fluxus, where the subjective tendency in favor of the objective gradually declines. It continues, (22) the art of mythologies

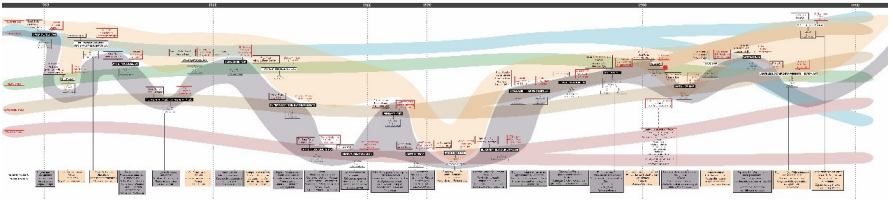


Figure 3. The mapping of objectivity and subjectivity, in the period of study. Source: author.

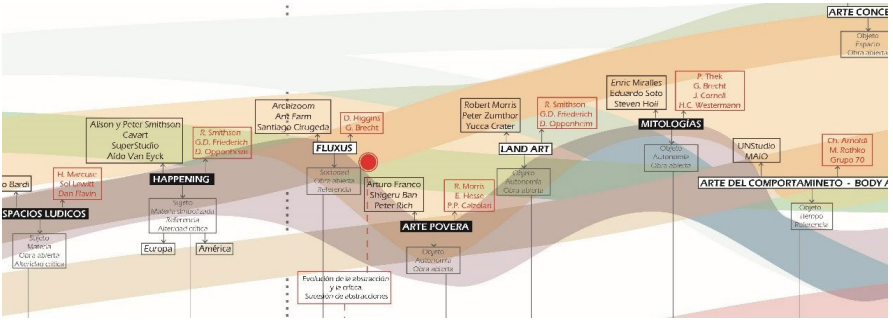


Figure 4. Detail of the overlaps between objectivity and subjectivity in the study period, overlapped with the mapping of philosophical trends and outstanding creative and cultural events Source: author.

and new reductionism, until reaching (24) conceptual art.

We find in the same period a concentration of social and political upheavals where objectivity and subjectivity merge, like the other antinomies, because they are not the priority objectives of representation or architectural formalization. Around the movements (16) to (22) there is an overlap, which is later separated in conceptual art (24). In these movements, art is used as a critical conceptual display tool with the intention of covering new registers and experimental territories, avoiding previous debates. Architecture assumes artistic assumptions, even promotes them by championing trends. In this way the dragged dualisms and antinomies are displaced to their irrelevant place. Performance, activism, participation, socio-political-economic discourse, including debates on gender and feminism, are given preference. The need for desire, experience, experimentalism, the sensitive to the sense.

This sociopolitical-cultural scenario in the interlacing period was dominated by the rise in sociopolitical activism: the debates on multiculturalism, the feminism of "the women's building", and the problems of AIDS, or sex workers, etc. In this context, identity activist proposals that are key in these political analyses dominate, based on the awareness of the identity of origin and the identity of the public, examining the ways of personal representation from fractional perspectives: personal relationships/roles; narration/autobiography; body/beauty; daily life/costume; community identity/forms of power. On the other hand, multiculturalism provokes a participative dynamic with art, where minority groups and associations achieve an excessive prevalence (Gran Fury, WAC, Guerrillas Girls, etc.). They are verified in: great organizational activity, collective and impersonal practices, with mass media techniques: as a stimulus through interpretation, or as provocation, controversy and public debate. With the borrowing of public space and topological occupation by community movements or community-based art (Lippard 1984, 34). In an effort to encourage collaboration with the community, sometimes seizing their space-time, with protesting techniques, mural pickets, graffiti, etc. with theoretical supports such as Freire (1972), Dewey (1994) and Connor (1996)[3] who encouraged day-to-day experimentation with their environment, criticizing marginalization, taking a gamble on neighborhood centers, challenging violence and extreme poverty promoting the re-socialization of marginal sectors, interventionist intentions and appropriating themes such as environmental, ecology, social justice, neighborhoods or

[3] From the conceptualist critique of art institutions.

democracy. In them, society participates as co-authors ("Culture in Action" 1992, Chicago).

Mapping the overlap: we try to look into what content is relevant in the specific overlap period that we have identified. We check the following conceptual sequence (fig. 5):

a) The interventions of the Smithson, Cavart, Superstudio and some of Aldo van Eyck parallel to the visuals of Smithson, Friederich or Opponheim, who promote the *happening* coincide in focusing attention on the subject, the symbolized matter and a certain critical alterity, but this comes from his political assignment, as a parallel decision of the author. This prescribes a matrix with the following terms; the work elements constitute actions; the artistic product is isolated; it is necessary to make it visible in the political context; the approach is social, material, responding to the premise of art and life and generating symbolic criticism.

b) And this scenario converges in other interventions by Archizoom, Ant Fram or those integrated in Radical Architecture (Celant 1972), with plastic works such as that of Higgins or Brecht. It is these actions that connect with radical position of **Fluxus**, centered on the primacy of society, the loss of individualism, the complete development of the Open Work, and the reference to the previous as well as distant. Its objectives were the creation of *improvised events,* as well as the elimination of the traditional concept of fine arts, replaced by showing the ways of social life. Also the search for participation in the work, so that the viewer clarifies it, or acts as an author redefining it, thus showing a certain anti-art character, and putting the emphasis on the artist's training, not on its cataloguing by critics of the institutional *status quo*.

c) It is followed by **povera arte**, with interventions by Arturo Franco, Shigeru Ban and Peter Rich, and visuals by Morris, Hesse and Calzolari. Its aim is the search for a residual object exemplified as criticism, without reaching the formalist "objectualism", from the autonomy of the work and displaying the content of the open work, while the user enters and penetrates the work clarifying it, but also in its abstraction, taking over as an interpreting artist. Its ultimate aim is the loss of culture of the image, poor or low-income art, ecology, the introduction of social connotations, the reaction against the technological world, and working with the surplus of society, recycling while consumerism is challenged. All art from this period is political.

d) In line with this, **Land Art** is developed, which occupies a similar place, but in territorial terms. This increase of scale assumes the implications of sustainability, environment, criticism of productivism and naturalistic return. With interventions by Robert Morris, Peter Zumpthor and Yucca Carter, and plays by Smithson, Friederich and Opponheim, with similar objectives as the previous

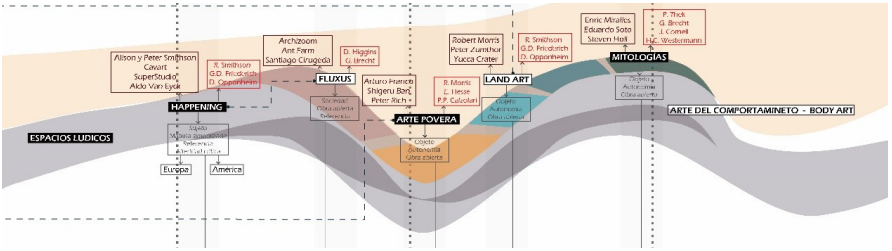


Figure 5. Concept map and its evolution in the period of overlap between objectivity and subjectivity. Source: author.

one. However, the context is natural, fitted around the physical-mental axis, through an illusory image, sometimes temporary, with a metaphorical proximity, about the statement of time as a basic condition of the work and as an exhibition of a slight durability, as a metaphor for the destruction of the planet. A critical underlying layer that link to the previous one.

e) They follow in the **mythological** direction, hand in hand with interventions such as that of Miralles, Soto de Moura, or Holl, and plastic works such as Thenk, Brecht, Cornell, and Westermann. Their objective is the search for a symbolic object, from autonomy and open work, similar to the previous two and whose purposes are: the search for experiences in relation to knowledge, apply personal ideas, the creation of a particular creative world, through instrumental individualism, of a plastic-pictorial nature, with a multiplicity of chromatic *experiences*, for the sake of a psychic constitution.

5. IDENTIFICATION OF OVERLAP

From the perspective of thought (fig. 4) the overlapping figure is a rhomboid that is located between the two branches of organicism at its intersection between realism on the left and one of the branches of subjectivity on the other Kristeva, the lower vertex the most anthropological up-to-date with Strauss and Gilles the Munford, Jacobs, or Lynch and the right vertex of ecology-feminism, with Derrida, Jean Baudrillard, and Guattari. The figure supporting psychoanalysis is with Freud, Lacan and Certeau. Thus we see a horizontal transition from structuralism to post-structuralism and vertically the transition from ethnography and anthropology to environmentalism and feminism. In the middle, three factors link these proposals: (1) The different approach to hermeneutics from the open work, (2) the different reading of alterity, (3) the different reading of ethics and social-ethics (Navone and Orlandoni 1974; Tafuri 1972; Koenig 1971, 19).

From the aesthetic conceptual perspective the following meeting points are appreciated: a common evolution of abstraction and criticism as a linked discourse, through a succession of abstractions and overlaps that make a cryptic discourse about time that enriches it in a manifest way. Linked in three textual resources:

1. Shift from semantic primacy to syntax: it is the beginning of the questioning of the process of revelation, work and unfolding of content; due to the difficulty of understanding meta-languages compared to the subtlety of the poetic approach to constructive syntax; by introducing new work processes from the action, or prioritizing the activism that can be carried out with the work, taking hermeneutic, interpretive and transcendent action as ideal. The introduction of the temporary twist that better channels the syntax of the hypertext.

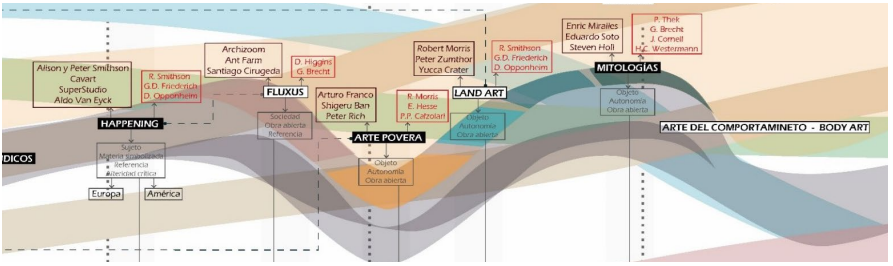


Figure 6. Detail of the previous figure on the map of philosophical trends of the period. Source: author.

2. Semantics aims at a morphology that is directed towards meaning and results in *repertoire*. The incidence of other people's discourses trivializes the ethical-social achievements.
3. The syntax does not claim morphology, it is polysemic like poetics, it uses other logics of meaning from the alternative, by introducing alterity, and it is based on the *systems of connections*; references, experiences, interactions, energies, flows, establishing prevalence to *relational systems* that foster inter-subjectivity, synergies, links, agreements, the basis of a new non-capitalist modality of the collective. Here culture continues to have an articulating, critical and art-related role, without prejudice to its contemporary reading of showing ways of life.
From the architectural perspective we find works such as: on the left vertex Lina Bo Bardi, Marina Waisman and Claudio Caveri. The centre is held by Eisenman with his entire repertoire, Libetskind, Coop Himemblau. Diller and Scofidio. The top vertex is Yunga Ishigami, Souto de Moura, or SANAA in their most inventive contributions. On the right is Peter Zumpthor, Lacaton and Vassal and more to the right Shigeru Ban, Toyo Ito and other works by SANAA. Below MVRDV, Rem Koolhaas, Nouvel and Piano.

6. ANALYSIS AND KEYS TO THE FIGURE BETWEEN 1965-75

This period links six transformations that articulate in their incomprehension or deformation, a paradoxical occurrence: (6.1) culture, as an abstract of the representative arts becomes the demonstration of the way of life of society. Culture and society were united and with *mass media*, only society is shown, without entering into its criticism, showing the superficiality, which is enough to become real. This leads to alienation, simulation, phantasmagoria, vulgarization, and loss of judgment. (6.2) The personal is political (Hanisch 1970), proceeding to the sexual is political, the private is political, creative particularities are public and political. With this, the micro-stories become political. This leads to personalisms, identity, their weak history, fallacies, and the substitution of reality for personal stories, not useful for society as a whole. (6.3) Activist art becomes activism as art. This stifles the ability of art to establish signs, because it refers them to group demands and with it to inorganic multiplicity. On the other hand, activism generates aesthetical signs that make cruel speeches full of ignorance. Thus the aestheticization of the masses is art and every collective act establishes culture. This converges in micro-stories, paradoxically based heterogeneity, subjectivism, politicized participation, absence, dispersion, hypertext, parataxis, and desire. (6.4) Postcolonial theory brings with it ethnography, fetishism, cosmopolitanism, methodological nationalism, a cosmopolitan reconstruction of history, and a new nation-state theory. And with it, comes evanescence, destructuring, ghettos, multiculturalism, urban tribes, multiple identities, the glocal, the anti-form and the process. (6.5) The break with state institutions, power and productive systems, through a misunderstood materialism. This gives rise to radical architecture and Fluxus. It causes a transition from the search for meaning to experience, and when experience is sensed, reality is replaced. This brings with it the disintegration, fragmentation, rupture of the order, overlapping of layers, the fungible, the transitory, the surprising, the performance, the event, the imaginary and the aesthetic anarchy. (6.6) The separation between culture and society, which leaves a gap and is occupied by politics. This leads to a superficial approach to real problems, thanks to opinion-makers, moving this political predominance to ideology. In this way everything becomes a cause for struggle, with a loss of overall vision. This brings the primacy of inconsequential stories, relativism, empty transversality,

[4] In the debate at the Goethe Institute of Paris (April 1981), between J. Derrida and H. G. Gadamer (1977), on the scope, the limits and the perspectives on interpretation.

death, loss of reference, loss of meaning and disproportion between causes and effects.

All this converges in the hermeneutical differences of both synthesized lines (Santiago 1999), in that debate between Gadamer and Derrida[4],, with the following signs: 1) inter-subjectivity in the face of textuality, 2) dismantling versus disassembly, 3) the conjugation of the "we" as a result of social agreement, aimed at consensus, versus conjugating the "we" as teleology. This dual understanding of interpretation goes hand in hand with differences in **alterity**[5]. Alterity, or introspective thinking of the other, stands against the search for the unity of being or to affirm the totality that denies becoming, the difference and the appearance. Both general hermeneutics and deconstruction start from a common basis: they either deny the immutable and stable character of thought that excludes the other or rather are inclined to think about it; but it in two directions as we pointed out:

1. The *dialogical* based on "inter-subjective" relationships to understand and reach consensus, which leads to integrating the other, as I understand it. The alterity, being the relationship with the other, is and happens in language: therefore, it is not consumed in language, but preserved. This is its **ethical** dimension. The interaction with the other in questions and answers, establishes a negative experience that allows understanding to happen. Understanding is experience in language, where the question transforms the meaning of the world that we have. It is self-understanding, a rational reconstruction under the sign of the conditions of acceptability that finds in the confrontation with alterity the impulse that prevents it from being precise and that maintains it in transformation. The conversation was related to language and tradition, which pave the way to unraveling it. A conversation as the development of understanding is the relationship with the other, where face to face with alterity introduces us into it, renewing our assumptions. This is how the idea of the world is unraveled, since there is only a world in language, in which both are bound together from the beginning. Permanent tension between the intangible other in unity and understanding.

2. For Derrida the occlusive manifestation of logocentrism and the revelation of the metaphysics of its presence is the same. For *deconstruction*, by making an effort to integrate the other into my significant registers, I fold it into my personal comprehensive structure; and this, because I nullify the "difference" irreducible between subjects, questioning it, since it starts from the impossibility of integration; that is, it is an other that does not enclose me. For this reason, alterity is singular and heterogeneous, it is difference and a non-presence that is not welcomed in the language that seems rather to be contrary to it; its emergence is an event that creates the concept, but it is not included in that way, it always remains heterogeneous. Thus, the event is the impulse that calls for the recognition of the other, it is justice. For justice is the impossible event, (the force of which is *differance*) in which alterity transgresses and creates the concept without including itself in it, it is the impulse of the other that strives for its recognition, but whose introduction into language will be nothing but the attempt to welcome it and limit it by excluding it.

Thus their differences are irreconcilable; the dialogical position of understanding or consensus, and the deconstructive, where the tension between the intangible other in unity remains; or also, *the difference between the language of the event and the event of language*. Which implies two readings of hermeneutics and open work: (1) the prefigured (in its functional order) that leads to consensual

[5] Its root alter (other) and suffix -dad (quality) = condition of being another, discovery of the conception of the world (formed by "us" and "them"), specially the interests of the other, to introduce the perspective of the others in their own. "From the perspective of the other, the self that in each case is mine or yours, is also another" (Ruiz 2007). Pedro Laín Entralgo (1966, 396), points out that the pronoun "we" is a key term that integrates the themes of ethics (justice, love, friendship and communication), social philosophy (history, civilization, tradition, community), epistemology (conditions of possibility of the encounter or discovery of the other), anthropology (theory of the self), etc. Levinas (1995, 67), points out in 1971 regarding the otherness: "the estrangement of the other –his irreducibility to the self, to my thoughts and to my possessions– is carried out as a questioning of my spontaneity, as ethics".

solutions within a tradition of typological schemes, providing systemic resources waiting for an unsuspected but homologable solution to come ; and (II) -the not prefigured, which obviates the a priori consensuses rejecting the types of history, which subverts the established order to accommodate other forms of inhabiting, erasing the pre-constituted relational sense and allowing the unsuspected, the contamination. Three types of alterity are given:

1. Instrumental alterity (Frankfurt school), restrictive position of the interpretation limited to the world of the author's life and his knowledge. It empowers the pragmatic social agreement, and is based on "it knows that it knows" and "does not know that it knows", where causes and effects are proportional.
2. Ethical alterity (Umberto Eco), open position limited to the author's significant context and with ethical reference. It empowers the renewed social agreement and is based on the "does not know that it knows" where causes and effects remain proportional.
3. Ethical and socio-political alterity (Derrida), position that admits contamination of an unlimited nature, where forbidden or grafted meanings may concur. It empowers a new social agreement limited to what is possible, and is based on 'does not know that it knows', where on the one hand the effects are superior to the causes, the emerging of the event (also fantasy); and on the other hand, the causes are superior to the effects, where the event is forced, achieving the anti-event. In the first ones, the real is enriched with fantasies and in the second, reality is equated with fantasies, creating a virtuality of meaning, or an emotional experience taken as reality.

CONCLUSION

The reunification between subjectivity and objectivity occurs in architecture within the field of ethical alterity, in its two variables, especially in its socio-political, not necessarily ideological dimension. Their chance reunion implies to ethically face the paradoxes previously stated to break them up, modulating the unification between culture and society with the integration of the Other. This articulation is integrated with the *experiential and temporary architecture,* in a social poetic key, where syntax prevails over semantics, which in its pointless eagerness derives in activist political discourses. These would be the keys to return to disappearance of dualities and opposites, while we weave not only an art that is inclusive, sustainable and protective but also an equal society.

REFERENCES

Benjamin, W. 1992. *Cuadros de un pensamiento.* Buenos Aires: Imago Mundi.

Celant, G. 1972. «L'Africa e victima». In *Casabella,* no 364. Milan: Arnoldo Mondadori.

Connor, S. 1996. *Cultura postmoderna. Introducción a las teorías de la contemporaneidad.* Madrid: Akal.

Dewey, J. 1994. *El arte como experiencia.* México: Fondo Cultura Económica.

Freire, P. 1972. *Referencias a la pedagogía del oprimido.* Madrid: Siglo XXI.

Gadamer, H. G. 1977. *Verdad y método.* Salamanca: Ediciones Sígueme.

Gadamer, H. G. 1998. «Texto e interpretación». In *Cuaderno Gris*, época III, no. 3. Madrid: UAM

Hanisch, C. 1970. «Lo personal es político». In *Notas del segundo año: liberación de la mujer.* New York: Radical Feminism.

Hejduk, J. 1985. *Mask of Medusa*. New York: Rizzoli.

Hejduk, J. 1986. *Victims*. London: Architectural Association.

Koenig, G. K. 1971. «Deserti naturali e artificiali». In *Casabella,* no. 358. Milan: Arnoldo Mondadori.

Laín Entralgo, P. 1966. Teoría y realidad del otro. Madrid: Alianza.

Levinas, E. 1995. *Totalidad e infinito*. Salamanca: Ediciones Sígueme.

Lipapard, L. R. 1984. *Get the message? A decade of art for social change.* New York: E.P. Dutton.

Mallarmé, S. 2016. *Un coup de désjamais n'abolira le hasard.* Paris: Ypsilon Editeur.

Marchan Fiz, S. 1986. *Del arte objetual al arte del concepto.* Madrid: Akal.

Navone, P. and Orlandoni, B. 1974. *Architettura Radicale.* Milan: Quaderni di Casabella.

Ruiz de la Presa, J. 2007. *Alteridad, un recorrido filosófico.* Jalisco: ITESO.

Santiago Guervós, L. E. «Hermenéutica y deconstrucción: divergencias y coincidencias ¿un problema de lenguaje?». In *Contrastes. Revista Internacional de Filosofía:* Universidad de Málaga.

Solà-Morales, I. 1990. *Diferencias: Topografía de la arquitectura contemporánea.* Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Tafuri, M. 1972. «Design and technological utopia». In *Italy New Domestic Landscape.* New York: The Museum of Modern Art.

PAPER #7.25

VIRTUAL ARCHITECTS: ANALYSIS OF DYSTOPIAN ENVIRONMENTS IN VIDEO GAMES

Luis Miguel Ramada Peiró[a], José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

In the last forty years, video games have undergone an important development and are set to become one of the most important cultural phenomenons in the 21st century. This work will analyse the role of the so-called *"virtual architects",* in the creation of video games and in the design of the virtual worlds through the study of six video games. Three of these games are representative of the main contributions in the immersion of the player as the regulatory principle between the real and virtual world; a study of the video game as an artefact outside itself will be carried out from an aesthetic perspective. The remaining three, as examples of the creation of dystopian virtual worlds full of symbolism and able to adhere to the collective imaginary; the video game as a virtual world of the player or for itself will be studied.

KEYWORDS

Virtual architects; video games; immersion; dystopia; aesthetic.

INTRODUCTION

On the 3rd of November 2018, the world Championship of League of Legends registered a peak of more than 205 million viewers. It became the most watched eSport event in history, almost doubling the sporting event *par excellence* in America: *Super bowl* (110 million viewers). That same year, the video game industry exceeded 140 billion dollars. In the free market it reached almost 30 billion dollars, three times more that the cinema and six times more than the music industry. [1]

These data are used as indicators of a reality that we have the opportunity to witness: the video game, a contemporary cultural artifact, a generator of experiences and pleasure, a developer of meanings and ideologies and narrator of theories and stories, on the way to becoming the most important cultural phenomenon of the 21st century. Perhaps for this reason, on the occasion of the publication of Alfie Bown's *Playstation Dreamworld*, Zizek states:

> The universe of video games and the action they involve us in render perfectly the illusions and antagonisms of our ideological predicament: the popularity of post-apocalyptic games tells it all. But perhaps even more important is the type of subjectivity a gamer has to adopt when immersed in a game: a mixture of extreme engagement and loss of reality, a universe of immortality where actions are indefinitely repeatable. So is not that we can understand the impact of these games only thought the analysis of our social reality, it´s also the other way around: to understand how our societies work you have to know video games.

Although in its relative infancy, this cultural phenomenon with just over 40 years of experience, has not yet explored its full potential. It is the most complex and elaborate manufactured world among those existing in relation to the creation of virtual environments. As a result, it has already been

[1] According to eSports Charts; consulted on 19 October 2019.

an incipient object of study from different perspectives.

Along this line, the aim of this article is to approach the study of the video game as an artistic artifact, taking the role of the virtual architect as its central point. In order to do this, two paths will be taken: first, the regulatory principles of the game will be considered as a virtual world outside itself, its physis; a task that will be developed from the aesthetic perspective, that is, through the dialectical relationship between subject, object and aesthetic experience; and later, the praxiological principles of the game will be studied, as a virtual world of the player, or for itself; its *praxis*. Or, to put it another way, and paying attention to the architectural key: firstly, the video game will be studied as an artifact through different titles already considered classic and were pioneers in the use of virtual space. We will see the decisive role of virtual architects in the immersion of the subject as a condition of possibility of aesthetic experience. Secondly, the mechanisms of power in the biopolitical sense that the video game incorporates as a virtual world will be identified, through the analysis of the cities created by virtual architects as possible horizons that shape the mechanized imagination, also from titles that are typified by the incorporation of virtual urban environments or dystopian cities. In both cases, single player video games will be taken as the object of study, since the interpersonal ones exceed the capacity of analysis given the extension of this format.

Before delving into the two approaches, it is necessary to explain what we mean by *virtual architects*. In general terms, the game design consists in processing design content (characters, scenery and surroundings), the storyline (background, plot…) and the rules (the do's and don'ts and what the programmed response is to such effects) of the videogame. Due to the complexity of current productions, this is clearly not a one-man task, not just one game designer; it is a process in which dozens of multidisciplinary teams come together. The area in design teams that interests us for the case are those who design the levels; embodied in the figure of *level designer*. This is the area of available space for the player in order to reach his objective. Starting at a level, the player interacts with the game in question, being faced with a series of objectives and challenges, which determines the degree of immersion in the experience. Virtual architects are those professional team members who are responsible for designing virtual sceneries for video games, paying special attention to the design of urban surroundings. It goes without saying that strictly speaking not all virtual architects are architects, although there are many and well known examples on the subject.[2] This however, is not of interest to us: the issue here is that the tools of some and others and consequently, their mechanics are usually the same (computer-aided design, 3D modelling or rendering and therefore operations of addition, subtraction and repetition…). Therefore, the video game industry has become a possible future for many young architects to consider. This could be the reason why virtual architecture is an object of analysis from the discipline and assess which architectural mechanisms are available when creating video games. Furthermore, the difference that separates those who design in the real world and those who design in the virtual; some are affected by all kinds of conditions and for others; the only obstacle is their imagination. This turns video games into a very fertile ground for materialising other possible worlds, dystopias and utopias steeped in symbolism and able to become part of the collective imaginary.

[2] María Elisa Navarro in the development of Assassins Creed 2 or José Sánchez in the development of Block´Hood

1. AN ACCESS TO THE VIDEO GAME FROM AESTHETICS: REGULATORY PRINCIPALS

1.1. The immersion: regulatory mechanism of the player's experience between the real and virtual world

The analysis of the video game is carried out from an aesthetic perspective since it will allow us to understand the particular relationship between the subject of the aesthetic experience and the work of art or artifact (subject and object), to later examine the role of the virtual architect in this relationship. In this way, we will be supported by the genealogical-transcendental research done by the philosopher Joaquin Siabra Fraile of noticeable *Hegelian* influence. If the question that arises next is, whether the video game can be effectively considered as an art form but providing an answer is not the task to be addressed by this work (although *MoMA*'s decision in 2012 to add a selection of 14 video games to its permanent collection could be mentioned). The question is quite the opposite: it is whether or not the video game can allow the player to have an aesthetic experience.

To that end, it is of interest to clarify the terms in which the question is formulated, as has been pointed out, when we talk about object or work, we speak of the video game and when we speak of subject, we do not refer to anything other than the player. Although, when we refer to the possibility of an *aesthetic experience*, we refer to the simultaniety of two conditions: the first is that there is a *psychogogical* component, and the second is that there is a certain distance between the subject and the object that allows understanding, the amazement or merely the appreciation of the work by the subject.

In this case, the *psychogogical* component is the storyline, that is, the ability of a video game to tell a story, to relate a series of events that occurred with a certain timeframe, and in a specific setting.

Regarding the relationship or distance that takes places between player and video game, we observe something particular: the player is not a mere spectator of the work, as might be the case in a theatrical performance. In fact, he participates in the evolution of events, his decisions mark the storyline, therefore, and he is not strictly outside the work. But he is neither an actor nor a dancer, there is no *libretto,* that is, the decisions he makes, he makes freely, he does not try to represent a scene that is written anywhere or follow a choreography. In this way, the work is no longer set and closed to be represented, but the player's actions have consequences in the plot and are being developed: it is, in effect, an open work. What articulates this mechanic is the model: a series of rules that allow or restrict player actions and determine the responses from the video game that are given to such decisions. Is the player, therefore, strictly within the work? Is there any distance between them?

So far we have seen two basic components that define the video game: the storyline, and the model. But it could certainly be argued that they are not exclusive to it. We could talk then about role-playing games, or about the choose *your own adventure* books. In both, there is a system of rules with consequences (model) and also some events over a period of time in which the character is involved (storyline) being able to alter his course by making decisions. However, it is clear that in neither case a degree of aesthetic experience like that achieved in video games is reached. While in role-playing games, the director of the game can introduce an interesting story and through a roll of the dice the subject's decisions have an impact on the world of the story. It is precisely the figure of the director and the figure of the dice that make it clear to the player over and over again that everything is a simulation. On the other hand, the number of different possibilities in the story that a book allows is limited by its format. Synthetically: in the first case, we see the storytelling of

the model, in the second, the modelling of a storyline. The video game increases the complexity of the second case due to the technology it incorporates, that is, the model as a computer program. But the way in which it resolves the conflict of the first, is the one that leads us to the role of the virtual architect, and the one that, somehow, answers the questions that were asked before. What is the relationship between subject and object that takes place in the video game?

The particular relationship that exists between the two is what is referred to as *immersion:* this being the relationship between subject and object by which the subject is presented within the work, but without integrating with it. He is not, in short, an actor, neither spectator, but both at the same time. In other words, the subject is within, but is capable of recognizing itself, since he also recognizes the work. In the immersion the subject lives the experience that his actions appear to him as belonging to an autonomous artistic *physis* (or virtual nature with its own laws). Through an interface, he is introduced, not into the virtualization of a world, but *in* a virtual world. It involves the reconciliation of the traditional figures of the aesthetic subject like an actor (participation in the work) and spectator (identification with the work). And for all this to be experienced with intensity, the design of the virtual world as the setting for the narration becomes a fundamental piece.

Summarizing, therefore, virtual architects are ke for an aesthetic experience on behalf the subject, the player, in the work, the video game, and that, therefore, it can become as such. It is this way because through their design, they allow the subject to be immersed in the work. The creation of a good scenario allows for true simulation: the player takes the place of the character of the video game and can enter the storyline that occurs in the play. In this way, the storyline of the video game is no longer a mere representation of events like in the theatre, on the one hand, since the subject makes decisions that are answered by the work and determine the course of events. A prefigured story is no longer represented, but an event is developed. On the other hand, and this is the decisive moment, the player is able to effectively feel within the story thanks to a series of simulation regulatory mechanisms, which in a decisive way, have as their author the virtual architect.

At this point we can say synthetically: a video game is the computer realization of a game. For this reason, it is capable of making, not representing, a closed and consistent virtual world in which the actions freely chosen by the player have a coherent response. And the task of building spaces that occurs in it ceases to be, as it had been in traditional arts, that of representing a space, to become that of creating a *space of representation* where the open work is developed.

1.2. Regulatory mechanisms of the immersion: relation between real and imaginary

As it has already been mentioned, when a model is applied to a storyline, or its inverse, a storyline on a model and, above all, when carried out successfully, the so-called immersion occurs by decontextualizing the player's actions in a virtual world. Since its first productions, advances in technology and the expertise of designers have been increasing the complexity of video games and their immersive capabilities. In this section, we will present three key moments of that evolution, by way of three video games that have become classics for *gamers* and their corresponding contributions. In all of them, the enhancements of the game scenario by virtual architects are highlighted.

1. *Metal Gear Solid* (1999).[3] The scenery becomes the *environment*

What interests us in this first case of a video game, which, in its approach could be

[3] Metal Gear Solid, 1999, Konami

considered as a shooter, is that it included subplots that could be classified as infiltration or stealth (Fig. 1). Later these game mechanics have become a genre in them. The protagonist is a secret agent who carries out a series of missions that are nested together to form a plot. And in order to complete them, he must infiltrate and avoid being discovered by the enemy. This circumstance gives way to a more intense connection between the player and the game scenario, in such a way that the experience becomes much more immersive. You must be permanently alert to everything around you; elements that allow you to hide, a place with good views to observe the terrain and the position of the enemies, but also a metallic surface or a puddle that, when stepped on makes a noise, raising the alarm and warning the enemies of your presence. In short, the stage becomes an *environment*.

Figure 1. Screenshot from the game: Metal Gear Solid. Source: (Playstation 1999).

2. *Silent Hill 2* (2001).[4] The scenery gathers presence

The video game Survival horror in which the protagonist receives a letter from his wife asking him to meet her in the city of Silent Hill. He is met with a sinister panorama, and he has to deal with monstrous beings, while he looks for clues, solves puzzles and understands the fatal destiny of the city and also of his late wife. At that moment, the technical difficulty of virtual architects to introduce into the game engine large spaces with great detail was solved in two ways. In interior scenes (Fig. 2), such as a hospital for the mentally ill, the spaces appear compartmentalized, the succession of each one of the spaces acquires the quality of success, and the poor lighting does not allow to glimpse anything at a long distance, since it generates disturbing shadows. In the outer spaces, everything seems wrapped in thick fog. The game's maddening setting is at the service of the psychological horror story it is telling. All this makes the places where the character is located express themselves: not only as a physical environment but also as an emotional one.

Figure 2. Screenshot from the game: Silent Hill 2. Source: (Playstation 2001)

3. Ico (2001).[5] The scene as an additional character

In this three-dimensional platform game, a young man named Ico is taken inside a castle, where he meets another young woman named Yorda and together will try to escape the castle by facing the evil queen and the shadows. For the design of the game, the developers used the technique of *subtracting design*, a kind of minimalism that consists of reducing all the elements to a minimum in order to provide them with greater complexity and importance. In this line, the only setting in which the game takes place, that is, the

[4] Silent Hill 2, Team Silent, 2001, Konami
[5] Ico, Sony, 2001 Computer Entertainment

castle (Fig.3), while imaginary is a realistic environment with a very careful architectural design and recreation. The camera follows the characters on their journey through the castle, changing their focus to highlight certain important parts to be able to advance, or Yorda herself, who does not communicate verbally with Ico, points out certain points that allow us to discover the solution to get out of a room and access another. A simple plot, and reducing the characters to a bare minimum elevates the role of the castle.

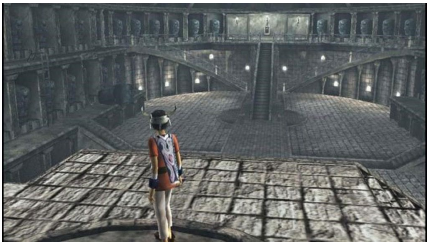


Figure 3. Screenshot from the game: Ico. Source: (Playstation 2001).

2. THE VIRTUAL WORLD AS A BIOPOLITICAL MECHANISM

So far, we have discussed the relationship between the player and the video game, in order to focus on the regulatory mechanisms that allowed immersion and aesthetic experience between them. We have taken the video game artifact to study and in this regard we have seen how it was determined by its designers. In this second part, we will analyze how the video game as a virtual world can determine the player.

It has also been explained that, the video game, in so far as a game, has certain characteristics that define it: a beginning and an end, in other words, an objective; some rules governed by the model and the actions of the characters determined by the player. So, the objective as well as the rules and limits of the decisions are determined by the video game itself. The conditions are presented to the player as given and in such a way that he has to abide by them. This is easy to understand in terms of the specified objective and once reached, ends the game just like the rules, which are programmed in the model. And the actions?

With this in mind, it is worth giving an example for which we will use the three video games previously discussed. The same object, in this case, a box, can vary its meaning depending on the virtual world in which it is presented to the player. Thus, a box in *Metal Gear Solid* may be ammunition or something that if fired will cause an explosion, in *Silent Hill 2* the hiding place of a clue that allows the plot to advance and in Ico, an object that placed in a certain position allows and that from it allows the character to reach a balcony and flee from the shadows. That is, the meaning of the same object is determined in different ways depending on the world in which the player is. Thus, if the player relates to objects as essential parts of the coherent unity of meaning that is the video game, it seems logical that the actions are also determined to some degree from the video game itself. Or, in other words, an external planning intervenes in the player's experience with the video game.

From a biopolitical perspective, if we can understand the player as an object of power within the scope of the virtual world, this would be relatively limited in range. However, we will soon realize the potential that this fact has given the moment we are in. We live in an era of the virtual, we are surrounded by interfaces, mobiles, Tablet, PC ... These interfaces are present in many of facets of our lives: they influence the way we communicate, spend our free time and help us in the workplace. The innocent *Pokémon Go,* brings us face to face with the issue of augmented reality, in which it is not strictly reality that is increased, but its meanings, *big data* and the *Smart city* are a good indication if it. Within this network of meanings, the same body can be understood as one more sign, unfolding in different ways

depending on the social network in which it is shown.

But this virtual alignment to which the subject is exposed: the distance between its real and imaginary conditions, occurs at this period, within the field of the symbolic. Remembering Chaplin's *film Modern Times,* where the subject was overwhelmed by the assembly system in the factory, today, this pressure is subtler. As in the model, the rules do not directly govern the actions of the subject; it is about promoting the conditions for the subject to take certain actions for himself. In other words, in the virtual age, the actions of the subject as an object of power are not directly determined, but properly laid out for the field of the symbolic; the conditions are given to carry out certain actions. This battle, as Abel Gance, and, of course, Walter Benjamin well advanced, takes place in the world of images and redlines the question:

> The language of images is not yet ready, because we are not yet made for them. For now, there is not enough respect, enough regard for what they express.
>
> In the dream in which, in images, the following takes place before each stage, the latter appears linked to elements of prehistory, that is, of a classless society. Society whose experiences, which have their place in the collective unconscious, produce, by intermingling with the new, a utopia, which has left its mark on thousands of configurations of life, from permanent constructions to fleeting fashion.

In effect, this path leads us to examine images in video games due to their symbolic power. The player, where possible, processes the images that are transferred to him and the *ideology* they imply. Thus, video games that propose alternative realities, that invent virtual worlds set in dystopian cities question the player, through images, about their role in an alternative socio-political system. The cognitive processes provoked and the ideological doubts that arise are especially complex given their particular form of interaction. Meanwhile, thanks to immersion, the player is both and "*I*" and an "*Other*"; not with respect to the invented polis, but with respect to his own.

In this sense, there is no doubt about the relevance that virtual architects acquire, as urban planners, and builders of the images that configure alternative realities. The task that follows, analysing three examples of dystopian cities from three video games is quite complex. As the cultural theorist Frederic Jameson explains well, drawing a *cognitive mapping* as an attempt to understand causes and effects in artistic and cultural phenomena, is almost impossible given the complexity and infinity of relationships that exist between all agents. We will therefore focus on showing the images of these imaginary and virtual cities and explaining their implications and the mechanisms used through the aesthetics they present:

1.Persona 5 (2016).[6] The city as a prison

Role-playing game with turn-based combat mechanics that develops its plot in a recreated city of Tokyo (Fig. 4). The city is presented through a chromatic selection with a contact base in which black and white predominate, and red as the protagonist in contrast to the other two colours. It presents an interesting example for the analysis since it focuses on a real city, but through a particular optic it becomes a *dystopian environment*, assimilating it to a kind of prison. The player remains "trapped" in it between different commitments to which he is forced to deal with as a way of socializing the character. On the other hand, the reality of the city is intermingled with another level that is called the *Metaverse* an unfolding of reality, in the form of palaces that symbolize the hidden desires of the characters. In some

[6] Persona 5, 2015, Atlus

way, representing the city as oppressive can be a subversive path, although the flight to a virtual world, within the virtual world of the video game itself in which to fulfil fantasies, can be taken as a way of complying with the status quo. A clear example of alienation: while the reality of the subject is oppressive, the illusion of the realization of his fantasies allows him to escape, while preventing him from facing reality or analysing the causes of the oppression he is going through.

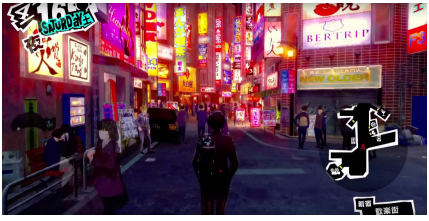


Figure 4. Screenshot from the trailer of the game: Persona 5. Source: (Playstation 2016)

2. *Bloodborne* (2015).[7] The celebration of the *sublime*

Action role-playing video game set in the fictional city of *Yharnam*. The city is full of spectacular buildings that make up a Gothic urban orgy (Fig. 5). This city does not try to imitate or represent, with greater or lesser accuracy, a style or a way of life from some historical period, but rather aims to fascinate the player. It is not an isolated premise; there are many other titles along the same line; from the de-contextualization of Gothic buildings that seem to be taken from old engravings. Here the strategy is to operate on the player through the sublime, to provoke his outburst through majesty, making rational assimilation impossible and reducing his abilities through an avalanche of *self-referential images*. The scene wants to dominate the player; it is, therefore, absolute ideology without content.

Figure 5. Screenshot from the game: Bloodborne. Source: (Playstation 2015)

3. Arkham City (2011).[8] The collapse of a civilization

Action and adventure video game set in the city of the same name. *Arkhan City* is a sort of evolution of the virtual Gotham *City*, for which it offers a panorama of *cyberpunk* aesthetics, in which the remains of a functional old city can be perceived, which have tuned into a kind of sinister theme park (Fig. 6). As in the previous case, it is a very common and widespread aesthetic in many other video games. The panorama consists of a dystopia that shows a corrupted city after a collapse of the capitalist, consumerist and technological civilization. It can be understood as critical speech, cautioning that cyberspace could create a type of totalitarian society connected in unison under one central authority.

Figure 6. Screenshot from the game Arkham city. Source: (Playstation 2011)

[7] Bloodborne, 2015, SCE Japan Studio Sony Interactive Enterteinment
[8] Arkham City, 2011, Warner Bros, Interactive Entertainment

CONCLUSION

Virtual architects have played an essential role in the development of the video game, increasingly promoting the total immersion of the player in the virtual world of the video game. On the other hand, their impact on the creation of new *dystopian worlds* is filled with potential since they are capable of influencing the collective imaginary. However, as has already been pointed out, video game as a cultural phenomenon is in its relative infancy, and is still beginning its development. After everything mentioned above, it is worth venturing a future in which video games, together with virtual architects, pay attention to the critical and liberating ways to inhabit spaces: this would be the possibility of resisting an alienation a trend in alienation of a System that wants to close itself off in the pure immanence of what is and in a certain way for no other reason than just that.

REFERENCES

Adorno, T. 2003. *Dialéctica negativa*. Madrid: AKAL

Bailes, J. 2019. *Ideology and the virtual city.* Hampshire: Zero books

Benjamin, W. 1999. *The arcades project*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press

Benjamin, W. 2009. *Obras, II*. Madrid: Abada

Bown, A. 2015. *Enjoying It: Candy Crush and Capitalism.* Winchester: Zero books

Bown, A. 2018. *The Playstation Dreamworld*. Cambridge: Polity Press

Foucault, M. 2007. *El nacimiento de la biopolítica*. Buenos Aires: Fondo de cultura económica

García, A. Ferragut, D. 2019. *Ensayos y errores*. Madrid: Anaitgames

Hegel, G. 2003. *Fenomenología del espíritu*. México: F.C.E

Juul, J. 2005. *Half-Real: Video Games Between Real Rules and Fictional Words. Massachusetts:* The MIT Press

Marx, K. 2004. *Miseria de la filosofía.* Madrid: Edaf

Marx, K. 1984. *Manuscritos de filosofía y economía*. Madrid: Alianza

Siabra, F. 2012. *Bosquejo de una metafísica del videojuego.* Madrid: Editorial Círculo Rojo

Wittgenstein, L. 1997. *Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus.* Madrid: Altaya

Zizek, S. 1989. *The Sublime Object of Ideology.* London: Verso

Zizek, S. 2006. *The Pervert´s Guide to Cinema*. UK: Mischief Films

8

BLOCK 8: PARTICIPATION PROCESSES, DIVERSITY AND INCLUSIVENESS

PAPER #8.01

DESIGNING A BETTER WORLD TOGETHER: GLOBAL INTER-UNIVERSITY PARTNERSHIP ADDRESSING UN 2030 SDG

Madlen Simon[a], Shaimaa Hameed Hussein[b], Gregory Weaver[a]
[a] University of Maryland, College Park, Maryland, USA
[b]Al-Nahrain University, Baghdad, Iraq

ABSTRACT

The United Nations' 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development proclaims, "Children and young women and men are critical agents of change and will find in the new Goals a platform to channel their infinite capacities for activism into the creation of a better world." (United Nations 2015) This paper investigates the potential of a trans-national design studio to empower architecture students to tackle
the UN's Sustainable Development Goals (SDGs). One pedagogical example, Bridging the Gap studio, connects Iraqi and US architecture students through a global inter-university partnership. In this collaborative virtual studio, student teams propose urban redevelopment strategies for parallel sites in one another's capital cities. Alternating between activities of informing, questioning, proposing, critiquing, and iterating based upon growing cultural knowledge, students discover empathy as the foundation of design. In the context of sustainable development, learning in a shared virtual space offers the key benefit of carbon-neutrality, contrasting with the prevailing model of the traveling studio whose
air travel adds to the global carbon footprint. The authors, Iraqi and US architecture studio faculty, together with a PhD student in international education, use the UN agenda as a critical lens for formulating and assessing studio learning outcomes, focusing on the following goals: SDG4. quality education, SDG8. decent work and economic growth, SDG11. sustainable cities and communities,
SDG16. Peace, justice and strong institutions, SDG17.partnerships for the goals. We propose this virtual global learning environment and a set of learning outcomes as a model that can leverage students' shared discipline of architecture to address society's big challenges in a global context, incorporating multiple cultural perspectives, and stressing how everyone and everything are deeply interconnected.

KEYWORDS

International education; design studio; UN 2030 sustainable Ddvelopment goals; virtual classroom; cultural competence.

INTRODUCTION

The United Nations' 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development proclaims, "Children and young women and men are critical agents of change and will find in the new Goals a platform to channel their infinite capacities for activism into the creation of a better world" (United Nations 2015). The United Nations 2030 Sustainable Development Goals (SDGs) were adopted by all of the UN member states in 2015. The seventeen goals were intended to serve as "a universal call to action to end poverty, protect the planet and improve the lives and prospects of everyone, everywhere" (UN Sustainable Goals website). Architecture students, practicing design thinking to envision the future, can play a changemaker role in implementing this agenda. This paper investigates the potential of a trans-national

virtual design studio to empower architecture students to tackle the SDGs. This model for educational collaboration is well-aligned with the agenda's "pledge to foster inter-cultural understanding, tolerance, mutual respect and an ethic of global citizenship and shared responsibility." The agenda states that, "The spread of information and communications technology and global interconnectedness has great potential to accelerate human progress, to bridge the digital divide and to develop knowledge societies…" The virtual studio became viable in this era of digital connection, with the potential to advance the internationalization of architectural education and promote a sustainable future for the planet.

The paper situates the virtual international studio model within the history of architectural design studio education abroad. It introduces as a case study example Bridging the Gap studio, a virtual classroom connecting Iraqi and US architecture students through a global inter-university partnership. Then the authors, Iraqi and US architecture studio faculty, together with a PhD student in international education,

use the UN agenda as a critical lens for formulating and assessing learning outcomes, focusing on the five goals most relevant to the studio: SDG4. quality education, SDG8. decent work and economic growth, SDG11. sustainable cities and communities, SDG16. Peace, justice and strong institutions,

SDG17. partnerships for the goals.

1. CASE STUDY: VIRTUAL STUDIO CONNECTING STUDENTS ACROSS CULTURE AND GEOGRAPHY

1.1. Internationalization of American architectural studio education

Before the growth of architectural schools in the United States, well-to-do young men and one woman, Julia Morgan, traveled to Paris to study at the Ecole des Beaux-Arts, where they joined ateliers, or studios, and learned alongside their French peers. They absorbed French language, etiquette, and culture along with professional knowledge and expertise. These American students of the Ecole influenced the development of the architecture profession and architectural education in the United States. With the growth of American schools of architecture, it was no longer a necessity to travel abroad in order to gain an post-secondary school architectural education. However, a few American winners of the Paris Prize continued to study at the Ecole des Beaux-Arts each year until 1963 (Schwarzman 1964).

As the discipline of architecture moved into major universities in the latter half of the nineteenth century, the studio was adopted as the locus of design education. American university students were now able to learn to design side by side in the studio setting without the need to travel abroad for this aspect of their

education. The romance of international travel, mainly to Europe, however, was a feature of the culture of architecture dating back to the late sixteenth century when young aristocrats began to venture abroad on the Grand Tour (Sorabella, 2003). The Rotch Traveling Scholarship, founded in 1883, recognized high-achieving architecture students with the opportunity for extended travel abroad. In the second half of the twentieth century, architecture schools began to develop institutionalized study abroad opportunities for students (Costanza 2012). These educational opportunities came to include studio experiences abroad, ranging from brief visits to sites in other countries to semester-long studios in international locations. In recognition of the significance of this development, the Rotch Trustees established the Rotch Traveling Studio Grant in 2002, expanding their funding to focus specifically on studio education that took

Americans abroad. The internationalization of the studio experience runs along a spectrum from minimum engagement to maximum immersion. At the less-engaged end is a group of American students visiting a site abroad with their American faculty. At the highly engaged end is American students studying collaboratively with local students and taught by local faculty in an international setting. With the advent of digital communications technologies, it is possible to realize the benefits of high engagement without physical immersion in an overseas context.

1.2. Blended learning model for international education

The blended learning approach to international education is an emerging pedagogy that engages students with overseas peers without the need for physical travel. This pedagogical model utilizes a variety of digital communications technologies to connect students in coursework both synchronously and asynchronously. Educational modes are considered blended because some learning takes place online and some face-to-face in a traditional classroom setting. When applying blended learning to international education, culture and cultural differences are an important factor to be planned for (Mathur & Oliver 2015). Some benefits of learning globally are job creation, leadership team support in global contexts, and helping students successfully navigate towards their career paths (Hilliard 2015). Blended learning is expanding globally (Vaughn 2007). There is a need for universities to put resources into these programs to prepare students for a global workforce (Morrill, 2007). The blended learning model affords access that students would not otherwise have (Dziuban, Graham, Moskal, Norberg, Sicilia 2018).
Cross-global collaborations and competencies can lead to virtual mobility, increasing educational exchange, and sharing common practices with outside groups (Barajas, 2003). Virtual mobility creates a Community of Inquiry, where physical connection or mobility would otherwise be impossible due to conflict (Garrison, Anderson, Archer, 2000). The blending of asynchronous and synchronous learning environments in the virtual classroom enables students to build diplomacy towards peace in post-conflict environments (Kinder, Fardon, & Yasmeen, 1999).

1.3. Global virtual studio - applying blended learning strategy for internationalization of design education

The global virtual studio is an application of the blended learning strategy. This emerging model for international architectural design education leverages digital communication technology to enable collaborative learning among students in remote locations. There are several potential benefits to this approach. Since learning takes place at students' home institutions, there is no need for air travel, so this model reduces the carbon footprint of international architectural education. Additionally, the no-travel model promotes equity by eliminating cost and accessibility barriers that might otherwise prevent low-income students, students with disabilities, students with family responsibilities, and others who might be unable to travel, from realizing the benefits of international experience in their architectural education.
The concept of blended learning began to be applied to the design studio with the enhancement of design and communications technologies at the very end of the 20th century. The first example the authors have found of a blended learning design studio was a case study of an urban design course that brought together students and faculty in Chicago and Urbana-Champaign (Al-Kodmany et al 1999) - not an international collaboration, but nonetheless a collaboration between somewhat geographically separated groups. The first international design studio collaboration we discovered was a joint

landscape architecture studio linking the University of Washington in the US with Chiba University in Japan (Hou 2003). The earliest application we found of the virtual studio to the architectural curriculum was a 2006 collaboration among design studios at several Turkish universities, an in-country, rather than international collaboration (Tokman 2007). In 2018, a journal article discusses the application of current networking technologies to the architectural design studio and reports on an application of this theory to a virtual architectural design studio in Athens, Greece, another in-country example (Ioannou 2018). The first virtual international architectural design studios that we are aware of are the authors' Bridging the Gap studio, initiated in 2016, connecting an American University, the University of Maryland, with an Iraqi University, Al-Nahrain University in Baghdad (Simon 2017) and a studio linking the University of Los Andes, Columbia with the University of Nottingham, UK, published online in 2016 (Rodriguez, Hudson, Niblock 2018).

1.4. Bridging the gap studio - a case study virtual studio

Bridging the Gap (BTG) studio brings 25 students and two professors from an American university and an Iraqi university together in a collaborative studio designed to develop cross-cultural understanding and the capacity to practice globally. Each studio group serves as information sources, eyes on-the-ground, cultural informants, fact-checkers, and design critics for their counterparts overseas. We share information, hold meetings, and offer critiques through multiple electronic means including WebEx video conferences, Google Drive, Messenger, and a private Facebook group that grows every year to include alumni of the ongoing studio collaboration plus practitioner mentors. The studio collaboration began in 2016, incubated by a multinational architecture firm that has continued to provide advisors and critics to the studio and host our workshops and reviews. They offered internships to two students from each country, further building cross-cultural relationships. The architect mentors serve as role models for global practice, reinforcing for students the real-world application of their studio education. Students tackle parallel sites in the capital cities of each other's countries. Both sites are linear districts focused on commercial streets that are major thoroughfares.

Figure 1. Al-Nahrain University architecture students and faculty

Located in the historically most diverse district of Baghdad, Karrada Dakhil is a lively marketplace night and day with people strolling, shopping, eating, drinking tea, and smoking hookahs. This district experienced the worst sectarian violence in Baghdad with devastating loss of life; it is still rebuilding from the destruction of the bombed mall and mourning the dead. K Street spans different wards of Washington, DC. It is known as a prime location where business and politics comes alive from 9am to 5pm on weekdays but shuts down on evenings and weekends. Both Karrada and K Street would benefit from new visions.

Each team researched their local site and exchanged information with the team abroad. Students next proposed tactical urbanism projects for each other's sites, quick studies to begin to get to know the places and their

Figure 2. University of Maryland students and professional mentors.

problems, raise questions, and elicit rapid responses. Students next launched into a set of research projects on topics including climate, geography, demographics, history, sustainable traditions, urban planning, and architectural history. Based on the new cross- cultural knowledge of people and place, student teams worked on proposals for urban redevelopment. Finally, individual students selected sites within their study districts for architectural design of an urban institution. Students were encouraged to propose urban strategies that would unfold over time, freeing their thinking from the constraints of present-day feasibility to imagine how incremental change could lead to improved futures. The primary constraint was the focus on sustainable design broadly conceived to include social and economic as well as environmental resilience.

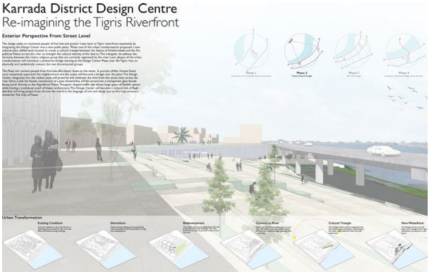


Figure 3. UMD student proposal for Baghdad urban redevelopment. Source (Gijoon Paris Sim 2019)

Figure 4. Al-Nahrain University student proposal for Washington, DC urban redevelopment. Source (Heba Amer Dawood, Aisha Alaa Salih, and Kabas Abdul Hameed Salman)

This international collaboration has been made possible by support by the University of Maryland's Global Classrooms Initiative (GCI) and Gensler, a multi-national design firm. GCI supports the studio with both funding and a faculty learning community dedicated to the internationalization of university education through virtual collaboration. Gensler contributes employee time and expertise and their facilities to support this project that prepares students for the global action that characterizes their practice. The Iraqi- American architects and designers who initiated the studio concept at Gensler have provided access that the US and Iraqi students and faculty would not otherwise have, creating collaboration between countries whose people typically learn about one another through the media rather than in person. Since the Iraq war began in 2003 there have been no international students studying at Iraqi universities (WES 2017), isolating Iraqi students from international contact. The recent political situation has resulted in barriers to Iraqi student and faculty mobility to the United States since President Trump

signed Executive Order 13769 including Iraq in the Travel Ban (Federal Register 2017, NAFSA 2018). Without a virtual learning environment, educational collaboration between Iraq and the United States would be impossible.

2. UN 2030 SDGS AS FRAMEWORK FOR CASE STUDY ANALYSIS

In 2015 the United Nations Member States called for action for people, planet, and prosperity with the 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development (UN, 2016). This global partnership seeks to reduce inequalities, increase economic grow th, health, and education through 17 Sustainable Development Goals (SDGS) (UN, 2016). The Bridging the Gap Studio (BTG) utilises five of the 17 SDGs in assessing studio learning outcomes. Through our virtual partnership we focus on SDG4 Quality Education, SDG8 Decent Work and Economic Growth, SDG11 Sustainable Cities and Communities, SDG16 Peace, Justice and Strong Institutions, SDG17
Partnership for the Goals. In the following section we will expand on our approach to each of the five relevant SDGs and the learning outcomes from each.

3. DISCUSSION OF LEARNING OUTCOMES

3.1. SDG4: Quality education

> *Goal 4. Ensure inclusive and equitable quality education and promote lifelong learning opportunities for all. 4.7 By 2030, ensure that all learners acquire the knowledge and skills needed to promote sustainable development, including, among others, through education for sustainable development and sustainable lifestyles, human rights, gender equality, promotion of a culture of peace and non-violence, global citizenship and appreciation of cultural diversity and of culture's contribution to sustainable development, 4.7.1 Extent to which (i) global citizenship education and (ii) education for sustainable development, including gender equality and human rights, are mainstreamed at all levels in: (a) national education policies, (b) curricula, (c) teacher education and (d) student assessment, 4.C By 2030, substantially increase the supply of qualified teachers, including through international cooperation for teacher training in developing countries…* (United Nations Sustainable Development Agenda website)

Iraq seeks to achieve the UN 2030 SDGs, especially as their announcement came during the Iraq war against ISIS terrorism, so it was imperative to overcome this gap. In the fourth goal, Iraq seeks to obtain a good education for its youth, so international cooperation was an appropriate method for that, the cooperation of Iraqi universities, including the University of Al-Nahrain with international institutions and universities, provided an important impact. Through BTG, Al-Nahrain University's collaboration with the University of Maryland played a role in the students' acquaintance with technical and scientific methods for solving urban problems including achieving sustainable development. The shared virtual classroom provides students the opportunity to see the capital cities of Iraq and the US through each other's eyes, thereby broadening their education with an international perspective. The first iteration of the studio collaboration evidenced a deficit in the Iraqi students' ability to communicate graphically at a level expected in the global professional community. The faculty collaborated on a grant
proposal that funded a workshop at UMD to elevate the ability of Iraqi faculty from two universities to design curricula and deliver instruction in graphic communication that meets an international standard. By the fourth year of the collaboration, the quality

of the student work had risen to a level that was recognized by the Studio Prize, an international award given by Architect Magazine to six studio courses each year. The effects of the enhanced instruction should grow exponentially as each cohort of graduates produces new faculty to spread their expertise to universities around Iraq.

3.2. Decent work and economic growth

> *United Nations 2030 Sustainable Development Goal 8. Promote sustained, inclusive and sustainable economic growth, full and productive employment and decent work for all.* (United Nations Sustainable Development Agenda website).

Young Iraqis are protesting in the streets, demanding job opportunities. BTG studio is preparing students to take up the important work of rebuilding Iraqi cities after years of destruction and disinvestment. Through BTG graduates of the master's degree in the Department of Architecture at the University of Al-Nahrain obtained distinguished experiences in working in a global style and the capabilities Qualify them to obtain suitable job opportunities in important institutions in Iraq, including architecture firms and educational institutions. An internship offered by multi-national design firm Gensler enables the top Iraqi and American students to enhance their preparation for professional work by participating in global practice in a US office.

3.3. Sustainable cities and communities

> *United Nations 2030 Sustainable Development Goal 11. Make cities and human settlements inclusive, safe,resilient and sustainable. 11.2 By 2030, provide access to safe, affordable, accessible and sustainable transport systems for all, improving road safety, notably by expanding public transport, with special attention to the needs of those in vulnerable situations, women, children, persons with disabilities and older persons, 11.2.1 Proportion of population that has convenient access to public transport, by sex, age and persons with disabilities, 11.3 By 2030, enhance inclusive and sustainable urbanization and capacity for participatory, integrated and sustainable human settlement planning and management in all countries, 11.4 Strengthen efforts to protect and safeguard the world's cultural and natural heritage, 11.4.1 Total expenditure (public and private) per capita spent on the preservation, protection and conservation of all cultural and natural heritage, by type of heritage (cultural, natural, mixed and World Heritage Centre designation) …, 11.7 By 2030, provide universal access to safe, inclusive and accessible, green and public spaces, in particular for women and children, older persons and persons with disabilities, 11.7.1 Average share of the built-up area of cities that is open space for public use for all, by sex, age and persons with disabilities, 11.A Support positive economic, social and environmental links between urban, peri-urban and rural areas by strengthening national and regional development planning, 11.A.1 Proportion of population living in cities that implement urban and regional development plans integrating population projections and resource needs, by size of city, 11.C Support least developed countries, including through financial and technical assistance, in building sustainable and resilient buildings utilizing local materials.* (United Nations Sustainable Development Agenda website)

The studio projects focus on urban redevelopment strategies, preparing students for professional work addressing the subgoals listed above. In the face of global warming, Americans learn valuable lessons about urban development from Iraqis, whose architecture and rhythms of life have developed in response
to the extreme summer heat. BTG helps enhance the capabilities of Iraqi students

to work toward sustainability, Iraqi students tried with their American colleagues to reflect the knowledge gained through the studio to develop their cities, especially the city of Baghdad, which suffers from neglect and violation of its (urban and cultural) heritage. The students provided through their design solutions for safe and beautiful places to all social and gender groups. American students bring a perspective of diversity, equity, and inclusion to the design of public space. Access for people with disabilities is ingrained in US education, law, and practice. American students bring an ability to envision a peaceful future for Baghdad and to create plans for the buildings and public spaces that will support civic life that can return after the fear of sectarian violence is banished.

During the years that followed the war of 2003 in Iraq, the capital city, Baghdad, has witnessed a rise in crime rate and terrorist attacks (Damluji, 2010). According to the Global terrorism index, Iraq has become one of the top three countries in the world in terms of the number of deaths related to terrorist attacks (Global Terrorism Index, 2018). As a response, a plan for countering terrorism was initiated by the state to mitigate the impact of terrorist hazards in Baghdad (Damluji, 2010). This plan encompassed several strategies and interventions. For instance, concrete barriers and barbed wires were placed around sites of critical importance such as administrative, religious, and educational buildings. To restrain access, streets leading off to these buildings were gated off and controlled by military checkpoints. Consequently, several residential locations were transformed into gated communities (Damluji, 2010; Kilcullen, 2007) and post-war Baghdad has become a city of walls (Chandrasekaran 2007, Basi, Hussein, Abrahem 2019). The events in Iraq encouraged students to provide design solutions that seek to build a healthy and safe society, prevent violence and combat terrorism. Iraqi students bring a fresh vision to the development of Washington, DC, unencumbered by the local devotion to historic styles. By 2030, ensure access for all to adequate, safe and affordable housing and basic services and upgrade slums.

3.4. Peace, justice and strong institutions

> *United Nations 2030 Sustainable Development Goal 16. Promote peaceful and inclusive societies for sustainable development, provide access to justice for all and build effective, accountable and inclusive institutions at all levels.* (United Nations Sustainable Development Agenda website)

BTG studio promotes global peace by building relationships bridging geography and culture through international collaboration. By designing sustainable development plans for each other's cities, Iraqi and American students become invested in the futures of one another's countries. Working together to achieve shared goals, students build relationships that can transform otherness into shared humanity.

3.5. Partnerships for the goals

> *United Nations 2030 Sustainable Development Goal 17. Strengthen the means of implementation and revitalize the Global Partnership for Sustainable Development. Subgoals: 17.3 Mobilize additional financial resources for developing countries from multiple sources. 17.6 Enhance North-South, South-South and triangular regional and international cooperation on and access to science, technology and innovation and enhance knowledge sharing on mutually agreed terms, including through improved coordination among existing mechanisms, in particular at the United Nations level, and through a global technology facilitation mechanism. 17.7 Promote the development, transfer, dissemination and diffusion of environmentally sound technologies to developing countries on*

favourable terms, including on concessional and preferential terms, as mutually agreed. 17.9 Enhance international support for implementing effective and targeted capacitybuilding in developing countries to support national plans to implement all the sustainable development goals, including through North-South, South-South and triangular cooperation. 17.16 Enhance the global partnership for sustainable development, complemented by multi-stakeholder partnerships that mobilize and share knowledge, expertise, technology and financial resources, to support the achievement of the sustainable development goals in all countries, in particular developing countries. 17.17 Encourage and promote effective public, public-private and civil society partnerships, building on the experience and resourcing strategies of partnerships. (United Nations Sustainable Development Agenda website)

The collaborative studio functions as a global partnership focused on sustainable urban development, building architecture students' capacity for collaboration with counterparts in other countries and cultures.It takes young people from cultures recently in conflict and gives them common cause, the need to redevelop the cities and communities of their countries for a sustainable future. Sharing a professional culture and mobilizing for shared goals forms the foundation for partnership. The studio and its related projects leverage funding from multiple US sources, including academia (the University of Maryland's Global Classrooms Initiative), government (IREX and the US Embassy in Baghdad), and industry (Gensler) to enhance opportunities for both Iraqi and US students and faculty. The North-South collaboration of US and Iraq enhances access to innovations in architectural education for the Iraqi partner university. Bridging the Gap studio created a platform for additional projects focused specifically on developing the capacity of faculty at two Iraqi universities to deliver sustainable urban design education and to communicate professional concepts to a world audience. The faculty bring these lessons back to Iraq, educating the architecture students who will graduate to become faculty in universities around the country. Bridging the Gap studio has been building a global partnership over the past five years, with graduates of the program staying connected and contributing their expertise to current students, both inperson and through the growing private BTG Facebook group. When new students enroll in the studio
course, they discover that they are joining this global partnership.

CONCLUSION

Analysis of the case study virtual studio demonstrates that a blended learning approach to design studio education has the potential to expand architectural education's contribution to a sustainable global future. The virtual studio is in itself a sustainable institution, a carbon-neutral alternative to traveling to meet colleagues around the world. The case study studio elevates Iraqi architectural education, preparing Iraqi and US students for contributing to a more sustainable future through employment in the architecture profession. This benefit would extend to other collaborations between countries with disparities in development of educational systems. Intercultural collaboration prepares students for participation in global professional practice. The studio connecting students across culture and geography prepares students to design inclusive, safe, resilient, and sustainable cities through the exchange of information and approaches. A blended learning studio promotes peaceful and inclusive societies and global partnerships for sustainable development by creating a virtual workspace in which our shared profession is a vehicle for cross-cultural collaboration in a post-conflict

situation. When we introduce shared interests and goals for designing a sustainable future, we move away from notions of "us and them" towards the understanding that we are all citizens of the same planet.

The virtual studio grants the students access that they would not otherwise have to colleagues across the world. It leverages shared professional knowledge, expertise, and values to build empathy between students in nations emerging from conflict. The resulting working relationship offers the opportunity to work together towards creative solutions to complex sustainability issues. By building empathy for one another and the problems of their contexts, students come to care about global sustainability issues that may not touch them on their home ground. While the case study studio does not offer solutions to specific

real-world issues, it prepares students for leadership by teaching them how to work together in a global partnership. We propose this virtual global learning environment and a set of learning outcomes as a model that can leverage students' shared discipline of architecture to address society's big challenges in a global context, incorporating multiple cultural perspectives, and stressing how everyone and everything are deeply interconnected.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The authors gratefully acknowledge funding and other support from IREX, the University of Maryland Global Classrooms Initiative, and the Washington, D.C. office of Gensler.

REFERENCES

Al-Kodmany, K., George, R.V., Marks, A., Skach, J. 1999. "A Case Study of Teaching an Urban Design Course on Two Campuses Simultaneously." *ALN Magazine* Volume 3, Issue 1.

Barajas 2003

Basi, D., Hussein, S.H., Abrahem, S.A. 2019. "Effect of Counterterrorism on Public Space Performance: A Syntactical Analysis of Al-Kadhimiya City" *ICEAT 2019.*

Chandrasekaran 2007

Costanza 2012

Damluji 2010

Dziuban, C., Graham, C.R., Moskal, P.D., Norberg, A., Sicilia, N. 2018. "Blended learning: the new normal and emerging technologies." *International Journal of Educational Technology in Higher Education.*

Federal Register

Garrison, D.R., Anderson, T., Archer, W. 2000 "Critical Inquiry in a Text-Based Environment: Computer Conferencing in Higher Education." *The Internet and Higher Education,* e, 87-105.

Global Terrorism Index

Hou, J. 2003. "Global Classrooms Studio: An Experiment in Virtual and Real, Online Collaboration." Conference: Trends in Online Landscape Architecture, New Communication Techniques for Landscape Architecture and Architecture, Germany.

Ioannu, O. 2018. "Opening up design studio education using blended and networked formats." *International Journal of Educational Technology in Higher Education* 15, article number: 47.

Kilcullen 2007

Kinder, J., Fardon, M., Yasmeen, S. 1999. "Offline or Online? A simulation exercise in a first year international politics unit." *ASCILTE99 Responding to Diversity,* ed. Winn, J., Brisbane: Queensland University of Technology.

Mather, R., Oliver, L. 2015. "Developing an International Distance Education Program: A Blended Learning Approach" *Online Journal of Distance Learning Administration,* Volume X, Number IV, Winter 2007, University of West Georgia, Distance Education Center.

NAFSA. "Executive Order Entry Ban, "Legislation Updates, 2018, NAFSA website, https://www.nafsa.org/Professional_Resources/Browse_by_Interest/International_Students_and_Scholars/Executive_Order_Entry_Ban_Litigation_Updates/.

Rodriguez, C., Hudson, R., Niblock , C. 2018. "Collaborative learning in architectural education: Benefits of combining conventional studio, virtual design studio and live projects." *British Journal of Educational Technology*, 49(3), 337-353. https://doi.org/10.1111/bjet.12535

Rotch Traveling Studio website, accessed October 12, 2019, http://rotch.org/studio/2008/2008-studio-submission.pdf.

Schwarzman 1964

Simon, M. 2017. "Future Studio: preparing students for practice in the global context," in *Architectural Research Addressing Societal Challenges*, ed. Manuel Couceiro da Costa et. al. (Boca Raton, FL: Taylor & Francis Group. 875-880.

Sorabella, J. 2003. "The Grand Tour," Heilbrunn Timeline, Metropolitan Museum, accessed October 12, 2019, https://www.metmuseum.org/toah/hd/grtr/hd_grtr.htm.

Tokman, L, Y. 2007. "Disciplinary/Interdiciplinary Virtual Design Studio." *Conference ICL2007,* Septermber 26-28, 2007, Villach: Austria.

United Nations United Nations. (2016). *Sustainable Development Goals*. https://sustainabledevelopment.un.org/sdgs https://www.un.org/sustainabledevelopment/development-agenda/ accessed March 1, 2020.
Vaughn 2007
WES 2017

PAPER #8.02

THE INVENTED OTHER: OF THE "STRANGER-GUEST," NOISE, AND THE CITY

Isben Önen[a]
[a]TU Wien, Department for Architecture Theory and Philosophy of Technics, Vienna, Austria

ABSTRACT

Derrida (2007) sets invention as the introduction of disorder. It is an interruption of the pleasant flow of being and time, or "the breaking of an implicit contract." Like an intellectually distant yet temporally recent utopian thought, invention deforms the existent. This deformation, on the one hand, extends from the existing and, on the other, is the haunting reflection of the non-existent: unseen, but long awaited. Invention is the noise of its time. What, where or who is this noise?

I want to approach the concept of the "stranger-guest" within an extended understanding of the ancient Greek concept *phílos* or friend. Aristotle's attempt to nest himself in his friend was nothing other than an effort to reinvent the self within the other. With Derrida, invention begins "by being susceptible to repetition, exploitation, reinscription." Thus, the "stranger-guest" is always the invented. This inventedness reflects an ambiguous state of being invited yet not being taken into account as a friend. As the unseen-known becomes visible, the archaic Aristotelian friendship is interrupted and noise will echo throughout the ruins of temples. Since the "stranger-guest" arrives with precipitations of centuries-old reflections, transformed attributions to the concept of friend, the host or the *polítis* would never have the time to be prepared. Hence, this encounter generates static. Digging into Lambert's (2017) reading of Benveniste's multifaceted dictionary (1969/2016), I aim to scrutinize the confrontation of the stranger-guest and the host on a spatial basis. What does the space of the *xénos* look like? Or, in other words, how does Russolo's *Intonarumori* in reality resonate?

KEYWORDS

The other; friend; stranger-guest; noise; city; values.

1. BEGINNINGS: AWARENESS

> This. Here this is. Ecco homo. I make history of it: I speak of it. It makes so much noise that it erases everything it says. - Serres

Buchanan (2005) refers to Marc Augé waking up on a mid-summer day in 1984, as described in his *La Traversee du Luxembourg*. Augé's first thoughts within the early hours of the morning lead to the idea that "the everyday, even at its most banal level, is in fact utterly remarkable." With these thoughts, Augé also experiences a moment of uncertainty, which Buchanan links to de Certeau's "shattering (éclatement) and Deleuze and Guattari's "cracking (craquement)." Augé realizes that:

> …anthropology will struggle to locate itself since its object has just disappeared: Since today it no longer seems possible either to delink oneself from the network of relations we call globalisation or find a place out of the way enough not to have been penetrated by it…, it is a mode of inquiry whose object has to all intents and purposes vanished…

He assesses that "[w]e live in a world without others." (Buchanan, 2005) In today's system there is a new type of social space "whose precise purpose is to facilitate a frictionless passage," namely a space failing to become "place": a non-place. However, I argue that

the other does in fact exist, but does so as an invention. And the question is rather, how should one see the present situation where the other-as-invention forces the non-place into a stage of constant confrontation? I suggest that turning to the concepts of *phílos*, or friend, and *xénos*, or stranger-guest (Lambert, 2017), would be valuable. No matter which model of friendship (according to Aristotle's *Nicomachean Ethics*) is dealt with, the concept of friendship foresees an insertion of the self into the other, or with other words, the projection of one's values on to the other. Hence, friendship requires claiming space within each other, dwelling within each other respectively, with no significance of temporality. Who acts first to carve the niche is of no importance, yet how this mutuality unfolds is. The combinatorics in Aristotelian friendships leads to a predictability, but also an ambiguity concerning the human condition: it is impossible to claim anything e.g. virtues in means of purity. Benveniste for his part sheds light on *phílos* and its related concepts; he conveys that the concept "friend" sets sail for distant territories of Indo-European languages accompanied by an apparatus of social and cultural hegemony. For example, departing *phílos*, we arrive at *civis* or the fellow-citizen, and heiwafrauja, hospitality, from Sanskrit and Germanic. The latter, *heiwafrauja*, then becomes traceable in *oikodespotes*, head of the family. In relation to this hierarchical connotation, Benveniste also points out Homer's reference to *phílos* as both friendship and possession. His multi-layered dictionary allows us to look at the concept's afterlife, following its roots in antiquity among a constellation of actors and institutions such as the individual, the family, the city-state, and note how its attributed properties are stretched and forced to change according to temporal and spatial contexts and structures of power.

2. MOBILITY: INTERCHANGING ACTORS

This traceable thread of concepts generates a cloud of plenty and the broadband discussion inevitably penetrates in many areas. I will try to discuss the "brought thing," specifically object and sound, within its relationship to the mobility and memory. Starting with sound, Yavuz (2018) points out to two tendencies in the evaluation of the displaced. First, Yavuz labels the "production of the migrant groups as the misinterpretation of the traditional." In this case awareness of the authentic is obsolete. As the two sub-concepts of stranger-guest (i.e. "stranger" and "guest") augment one another, there is a dichotomy in this point of view. The host, on the one hand is interested in the *strangerness, guestness,* and the *distanceness* of the "other," corresponding to the guest's ephemerality, invisibility, and temporality. This interest is not solely driven by fascination for the ambiguous unknown but at the same time by fear of it. The unknown on the other hand, arrives with authenticity that does not resemble the host. From the moment of its arrival onwards, the guest that only exists as such by a "strangeness" attached to it manifests its power through this authenticity. However, in reality this imported or attached authenticity may only be a mutated one. The personal belongings of the stranger-guest resemble unattended items waiting to be removed by the socio-political mechanisms of the host. Likewise, following its arrival, the stranger-guest is the most powerful and perseverant generator of noise in the harmonious sonorous milieu. It faces two possibilities: being silenced by host-made noise or suppressed and reformed so that it could be interwoven as a part of the milieu. The second tendency set forth by Yavuz is that "the status of being a migrant that belongs to a certain moment, and the physical and mental crossing between two centers [that] are passed to the next generation like a heritage," leading to a vicious circle, which soon itself becomes a tool of suppression:

the migrant status is presented as a method of sustaining the otherness of the stranger-guest. Yavuz also introduces the concept of *niche* and its overarching connotations in ecology, sociology, and economy. This would be important to understand the reflexive starting point of self-legitimization. The space in which the stranger-guest dwells and the place of projection of the self, carving a niche in to the place of the host. If we briefly recall Attali to the complex relationship of the roots and different paths of jazz, for example, with musicians carrying the music with them as they moved on. In this case, jazz music confronted the host and transformed into hybrid forms. The mobility within space or place is confined not only to imagination but also to memory and therefore, cannot operate as in the case of music. This is one of the reasons why the adventure of the stranger-guest is laden with an *in situ* re-erection of memory.

If we continue with the case of the object as "brought thing," Subasi (2011) offers creative input to the discourse by introducing the term invisibility. Her product-based rendering of migration is similar to what Yavuz mentioned in her dissertation: what does the "stranger-guest" bring with? What role can objects of use play in means of mobilizing memory? Invisibility enters the scene as a consequence and undeniable outcome of cosmopolitanism. Whether it comes from the cosmopolitan or suburban, the metropolitan must confront intrusion. In both cases a double-fold confrontation arises: the brought sound or objects belong to the "other," whereas they are only variations of a common essence, nested under the overarching concept of *phílos*. The "other" will always be a pseudo-invented since through all encounters (orientalist but also *occidentalist* intrusions) the host is already accustomed to the other. However, the most powerful impact is experienced when the "other" transforms itself into the "invented" stranger-guest. It is this *inventedness,* recalling Deleuze (2009), that interrupts a pleasant flow of being and time, preparing the grounds for "the breaking of an implicit contract," and like an intellectually distant yet temporally recent utopian thought, deforming the existent. Serres (2017) draws attention to the fact that "the supreme poverty of the system of harmony becomes known to us not only by the nature of things but also by collective establishments." This deformation, on the one hand, is the extension of the existent and, on the other, is a haunting reflection of the non-existent: unseen, but long awaited. An invention is the noise of its time. The impact of an invention lies within the dislocation and relocation of the other: the reduction of distance, which is augmented through the reality that the space of the host has to be shared and the host and stranger-guest claim the same rights. In order to understand how architecture confronts the multi-layered and not fully predictable evolution and alteration within time we only have to look in Akcan's complex analysis of the transformation of Kreuzberg, Berlin. (Akcan, 2018)

Theoretically the host and stranger-guest are on the same level, or equal. As they both exit the front door every day, it is clear that no matter if they have equal powers when claiming space, the claim for place is only reserved for the host. The host's claim, closely linked to an ill-constructed notion of temporality, and significantly with the concept of lateness cannot be taken for granted. It is true that the stranger-guest has no other option than to be late, but time within the concept of friendship is anachronistic and the claimed values are transcendental. The will of existence starts from home or the created niche, a space that is "place" per se. This legitimization is accompanied with a wide range of dislocated objects: furniture, relevant or irrelevant decorations, culinary artifacts, gifts (regardless of usage), musical instruments, and many more.

We arrive at the link between consumption and production, in which consumption mobilizes production to legitimize existence. de Certeau

(2002) names "practices of consumption" as the "ghosts of society." The stranger-guest's quest is to abandon its invisibility and become visible again. "Heterogeneity," set by Subasi as an important input within the world of objects and behavioral issues produces invisibility. For this discussion's premises, the importance of invisibility lies within its relation to different modes of existing: legitimization through which she discusses the invisibility of codification leads to a visual state of non-classifiable, hybrid and simultaneous existences. The basics here would not be other than stimulation through simulating the known. The known or, in a way, "claimed" in an *a priori* sense would become the first tool for the projection of place onto space; the primary surface for this projection would be none other than the shelter, in other words a space with a non-detachable "placeness": home. As this primary space-place is saturated with projections of the habitual, the stranger-guest having claimed its "bastion" steps into the world of the other into the heterotopic world of the invented host.

The city or, as de Certeau names it, the "operational concept," depends on a tripartite structure, which finally is declared as decaying due to shifts of modes of production and a mis-setting of priorities:

> The production of its own space: rational organization must thus repress all the physical, mental and political pollutions that would compromise it
>
> The substitution of a nowhen, or of a synchronic system, for the indeterminable and stubborn resistances offered by traditions, univocal scientific strategies, made possible by the flattening out of all the data in a plane projection, must replace the tactics of users who take advantage of "opportunities" and who, through these trap-events, these lapses in visibility, reproduce the opacities of history everywhere.
>
> Finally, the creation of a universal and anonymous subject which is the city itself: it gradually becomes possible to attribute to it, as to its political model, Hobbes' State, all the functions and predicates that were previously scattered and assigned to many different real subjects—groups, associations, or individuals.

As this concept decays, 'microbe-like, singular and plural practices," manage to outlive the process. These are likened to "noise," as Attali and Serres would have named them, which the metropole "was supposed to administer and suppress," favoring a silence or harmonious music over noise and cacophony. In fact, it is no surprise as the system as a whole is parasitical in which decay only forms one aspect of operational strategies.

3. NOISE

> "Organization, life, and intelligent thought live between order and noise, between disorder and perfect harmony…Noise destroys and horrifies…, [and] it nourishes a new order by injecting a new chance." - Serres

Serres (2007) asks of the country and the city rats enjoying their "royal feast" of leftovers if it was only a noise or also a message, "a bit of information producing panic: an interruption, a corruption, a rupture of information," which frightened them. It is static in a flawless dialogue or, with de Certaud's terminology, a friction in a frictionless system. Noise is an open proposal that is not asked for and, once received, neither the existent nor the other can remain unaltered. In this sense, the French word for noise "bruit," also the title of Attali's book, means "vascular murmur," as the consequence of an obstruction of blood flow at an abnormally high rate. At the same time, in French it corresponds to rumor. Russolo in his *Art of Noise* (1913) claims that the world prior to the nineteenth century was all but silent and muted, and only because of the industrial revolution ne can speak of the reign of noise or *rumori*. Purity resolves into an "amalgam,

[and] assonance into dissonance." The once uncompromising rigidity now reconciles with randomness and porosity. Thus, Russolo sets forth that the world at the beginning of twentieth century is heading towards "noise-sound." Music in the post-industrial age enters the realm of factory, labor, every day, and the world created by them. Just as the concept of friend cannot be separated from that of the stranger-guest, music cannot be detached from noise. Music triggers power and subversion and noise gives birth to both order and disorder. Music, or "any organization of sounds," thus becomes a tool for the "creation or consolidation of a community..." and it could be seen as an "attribute of power in all its forms," linking "power center[s]" to its subjects. (Attali, 1985)

4. RECONCILIATION: VALUES TO DWELL IN

Referring to Serres's assumption that the city and noise create each other respectively, the contemporary urban context cannot be disassociated from the power of the individual. Both feed from the same rear-domain. Every functioning system—ecological, economic, or political—dwells on power struggle and has only one aim: to survive and develop adaptive strategies for sustaining hegemony. The individual starts its claim to existence from the smallest possible denominator. This is the creation of "home," or, in other words, of niches of survival with minimum available sources. This already complicated process gains further complication, ambiguity, and unpredictability as an existing system confronts an "other" from across the border. This "other's" existence was known, its content was discovered, but it had always been kept at the distance of sight. This is the information age's watchtower, the panopticon of recorded vision or, in other words, the server-as-panopticon. In this time of surveillance, the stranger-guest creates the minimum space or niche for survival. This niche is subjective, and this subjectivity has to be sustained. Having entered the city, the stranger-guest now gains an ambiguous dual status comprising properties of the host and stranger but still lacking the power to claim a place in an existing space. Thus, it is destined to be late and it is this lateness that allows the stranger-guest to outlive the decaying conceptual structure. Through this attribution the stranger-guest –with its self-generated noise–is threaded into the symbiotic micro-structure.

Architecture, being located at the crossroads of this plenty has powers that could and should not be underestimated. Architecture has a humanist or posthumanist—whichever the majority is satisfied with—, "civic role" of "satisfying the unspoken wishes of strangers." (Farrell and McNamara, 2020) Pushing the boundaries further in the realm of the ideal rather than in the tangible could lead to the humility of tangible form, being content with a concept of unpolished and imperfect beauty yet not compromising elegance. A sustainable built environment that dwells on values (e.g. democracy, equality), instead on extravagant artifacts; and with an awareness of the different layers of citizenship (Farrell and McNamara), and proposes "overlapping" experiences without need for hierarchies like "stranger-guest," "host," and "lateness," declares a solid validity. An architectonic, theoretical, and ground-up approach has more chances to succeed by forcing itself towards openness and vulnerability and thus becoming a subject of togetherness.

REFERENCES

Akcan, Esra. *Open Architecture: Migration, Citizenship, and the Urban Renewal of Berlin-Kreuzberg by IBA-1984/87*. Basel: Bikhäuser, 2018.

Aristoteles. Nichomachean Ethics. Translated by J.A.K Thomson. Penguin Books, 2004.

Attali, Jacques. *Noise: The Political Economy of Music*. Translated by Brian Massumi. University of Minnesota Press, 1985.

Benveniste, Emile. *Dictionary of Indo-European Concepts and Society*. Translated by Elizabeth Palmer. Chicago: Hau Books, 2016.

Buchanan, Ian. "Space in the Age of Non-Place." In *Deleuze and Space*, 16–35. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2005.

Certeau, Michel de. *The Practice of Everyday Life*. Translated by Steven Rendall. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1988.

Derrida, Jacques. *Psyche: Invention of the Other*. Edited by Peggy Kamuf and Elizabeth Rottenburg. Vol. I. Stanford University Press, 2007.

Lambert, Gregg. *Phílosophy after Friendship*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2017.

Russolo, Luigi. *The Art of Noise*. Translated by Robert Filliou. Ubu Classics, 2004.

Serres, Michel. *The Parasite*. Translated by Lawrence R. Schehr. University of Minnesota Press, 2007.

Subasi, Özge. "A Design Anthropological Approach to "Turkish" Product Experiences in Vienna" PhD diss., University of Applied Arts, Vienna, 2011.

Yavuz, Elif Damla. "The New Concepts of the Little, Divided, and Atomized World in the Sociology of Music." Istanbul Universitesi Sosyoloji Dergisi 38, no. 1 (2018): 13–30. https://doi.org/10.26650/SJ.38.1.0008.

"Yvonne Farrell and Shelley McNamara of Grafton Architects Win 2020 Pritzker Prize." Accessed March 2, 2020. https://www.architecturalrecord.com/articles/14501-yvonne-farrell-and-shelley-mcnamara-of-grafton-architects-win-2020-pritzker-prize?v=preview.

PAPER #8.03

DECONSTRUCTION IN ARCHITECTURE; A HISTORY OF COMPLETE MISUNDERSTANDING

José Manuel Barrera Puigdollers[a]
[a] Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain

ABSTRACT

In 2016, David Bestué, the sculptor interested in architecture wrote an article called "The deconstruction in architecture. History of a misunderstanding", regarding the publication by Ginette Michaud and Joana Masó in *Editions of the Difference*, "Les arts de l'espace. Écrits et interventions sur l'architecture". It contains some notes that support the apparent "misunderstandings". However, in different previous writings I have defended the repeated amassing of errors in the reading and interpretation of the theories of Jacques Derrida, which I consider have led not to errors but to complete alienation in his theories on his architectural interpretation. Mistaken in its commitment, interference in its architectural transliteration, lack of rigor on behalf of the institutions, false use of personalism, commercialization, object of worship, simulation in its understanding, etc. Last October 9th, we remember the fifteen years of his death, an appropriate time for an assessment. In a distant architectural context, less polarized and not so significant in these allusions, it seems appropriate to make a critical review, put things in their place and give an honest account to the depth of his work. As he quoted in his farewell to Levinas, the *droiture*, "honesty" or "righteousness," requires us to specify what is "stronger than death."

KEYWORDS

Des-construction; transliteration; constructivism; alienation; simulation.

INTRODUCTION

Few are the direct contacts that the philosopher Jacques Derrida has maintained with the members of architecture, but not with the discipline, from which he always expressed an interest in learning -as he himself indicates- for his resistance (Derrida 1993); *"the resistance to philosophical authority can be produced within a core experience of specializing, of space"*. For the author the resistance to logocentrism has a better chance of appearing in this type of art. In an agitated social and political environment, with an air of emancipation and a certain gentrification of the emerging classes, after 1968 hippie, beat, rebellious and pacifist Marxist-based counterculture arose, with an interest between scholar and transgressor to meet the protagonists of the "criticism of criticism" (Cusset 2005). Initially championed in America by the Yale Quartet - Paul de Man, Harold Bloom, Geoffrey Hartman and J. Hillis Miller. In the period of conceptual coincidence between Eisenman and Derrida –between 1973 and 1984–, the American magazine "Oppositions" became the framework for architectural revision. In it, many intellectual positions were embodied, but especially the silhouettes of the two more powerful lines that emerged at the time and due to their impact on contemporary architecture were outlined; deconstruction and postmodernism. The first one supports the space-time binomial revising it towards temporality and the second one does not support it, but transgresses it until it is nullified. It is surprising that still today there are some that maintain that they are one in the same. And it is in the scope of "Oppositions" where the relationship between Derrida and

the architects is forged, like the refusal of his contributions, forging the negation of the post-metaphysical current.

1. THE APPEARANCE DERRIDA IN THE ARCHITECTURAL CONTEXT

Derrida appears in the panorama of American thought and architecture in the Conference given at the John Hopkins in 1966, called "Structure, sign and play in the discourse of the Human Sciences", where he states -among others- the term *deconstruction*. A term with an extraordinary influence and relevance in architecture from the 80s, due to its ability to contaminate this discipline, for various reasons that were later misrepresented. The body of that germinal Derrida lecture —contrary to the fascination that deconstruction proposes— dealt with the structuralist impossibility of ruling over the ultimate context of meaning; that lateral look —ultimately to the social context— to assure the acceptance of oneself and recognition of the environment. It was also about the inappropriateness of binding certain signifiers with their traditional meanings, as Foucault has already stated in his *heterotopias* or his "archeology of knowledge"; or the impossibility of *centering knowledge* and knowledge derived from the sign (as it was traditionally understood), composed of a meaning and a signifier as a closed and sealed binomial. Also addressed is the open terrain of the referential *game,* —consciously or unconsciously—, derived from the changing context and the psychological state of the subject in constant transformation, which allow differentiated and successive comprehensive, receptive, self-questioning states that open up to other additions.

And for this, Derrida enunciated the terms *dissemination, grafting, aporia, footprint, marks* all of them from the *difference*, a product of the inherent *hiatus* of thinking, or of remembering and the evanescence of the envelope with which present "the here and the now", the memory of concepts; in whose interstices there is room for other things, other memories, other connections, that not only allow contamination by the Other, but even place the other in a position of reference, transforming what we consider to be true or real. These two questions, which in their reiteration allow Derrida to affirm that nothing founded is fixed, there is no origin, no translation, no introduction, no presentation, no strict, closed and unidirectional communication. In short, universals and foundations do not fit, and therefore metaphysics cannot occur naturally in the subject due to its own impossibility, unless it is an imposition (own or foreign) of code, rule or strict external framework, introduced as act of domination or authority. Even against oneself. In short, what Derrida expresses in his lecture goes beyond the term deconstruction; he announced the rules of post-metaphysics and with it the *radical open work* beyond what was formulated by Umberto Eco in 1961, as an open work in progress (Eco 2017), compared to the closed work typical of idealism included in modernity. Another matter is that it be understood in all its terms, or that the architects eager to borrow a way out at the end of modernity, only approached its obvious part. This is what D. Bestué highlights in the text by Ginette Michaud and Joana Masó (2015): "haste and symbolization destroyed the author's memory".

2. THE WOUNDS OF EISENMAN TO DERRIDA

Peter Eisenman emerges in 1968-69 when he submits two model projects in a joint exhibition at the Arthur Drexler in 1967, with two articles (Eisenman 1975) In his articles he testifies what the design process has been throughout history, which he synthesizes as an equation of the "closed project" made up of (Form + Function + Meaning), from which

all the preceding history has been derived. After listening to the Derrida Conference, he will challenge this in his projects and advance in his philosophical studies (from an aspect of positivism). In short, a parallelism to what is said in that conference on the structure of the sign, composed of significance and signifier, which —according to him— are not inevitably linked, nor do they lead to the same according to context, interlocutor, culture, experience or psyche. However, if we question this equation, we enter the void. We question it either because form and function do not go hand in hand as an indissoluble symbolic unit, or because form is free of function and its meaning (coincidence with the prevalence of the signifier against the signified and its autonomy), or because there is no functional restriction that is limited to established forms, or because the meaning does not only depend on these factors, nor is it deduced unidirectional from them. It is then that we find the *abyss* of open work.

Abysmal architecture, as Scholem quotes in relation to Benjamin regarding the language which is inaugurated (Mendoza 2013, 155-176; Benjamin, 1916), is an architecture without limits, without restrictions, without impairment, without prejudice, modesty or complex, except that inescapably it must serve society, it must be livable and used according to the end for which it is intended; undeniable concepts of service, experience and utility which are neither closed, nor constant in time, nor fixed, so that the inherent adaptability of works already determines by itself the sign of its evolution, but also the sign of its statement. And for this reason, this description establishes the basis of the maximum autonomy that architecture can achieve without abandoning its irreducible principles of social service. Therefore, radical open work is a necessary condition of autonomy, although as we shall see it is not a satisfactory condition.

We have seen from the start how Eisenman tried to put Derrida's revisionist theory into practice (especially in its opening), and it was assumed from the beginning as an *attitude of design* that will essentially play and important role in the architect's professional career. In the 1980s, after Eisenman's studies of philosophy, a personal contact was made between the two in 1985 when Derrida was proposing a text on the *Khora* (place) subsequently published in 1993. In this text he addresses the extensive and complex meaning —while "space"— that Plato gives to this term in his work the *Timaeus,* the philosopher offering his reading to the architect, to debate on the very scope of his discipline, —the space—, a debate which carried on for three years. This reflection 'between the two' focused on the revision of the *"metaphysics of presence"*, a matter of concern and interest for Eisenman, or Libeskind, who was then circulating in relation to other concepts; to the "false determinant consciousness", of W. Benjamin, or the installation of images in memory that once presented are repeated; or by pre-constituted languages, a process in which by imitating, reproducing or simulating, the reasons of origin that are founded in it are blurred and therefore automatically transform into simulations of themselves. Eisenman will give shape to such reflections with the publication —on his own— of "Chora L Works", stating that they were made together with Derrida (published late in 1997), although they had not spoken since 1990. Eisenman had offended Derrida; for appropriation and because he did not understand the issue of *presence* as he himself pointed out, understood through Deleuze (2002). Ignasi de Solà-Morales (1995) tells it in an intelligent way and assigns the term *untimely* to architecture, a term taken from Nietzsche. This declaration can be seen in the presentation of Solà-Morales´ text which was reedited in 2004, where he not even once cites Derrida, he justifies his own architecture, as if it were a personal invention.

This link between the two was created with the invitation of Bernard Tschumi (French Swiss architect) to jointly participate in

the Parc de la Villette of Paris competition —of which Tschumi was the director for having won it in 1982—, whose transversal experience motivates both authors as Derrida shows (1988), and thus their relationship and dialogue continues until 1989. Tschumi was 'knowledgeable' of Derrida's theoretical work from his first approach in this project de la Villete, that of the 1986 Tokyo Opera, and others. He was the promoter and curator of the MoMA architecture exhibition, together with Mark Wigley and Philip Johnson, in 1988 on *deconstructivist architecture* (not to be confused with deconstruction) whose impact on the discipline was as relevant as it was false; because they symbolized something untrue. Tschumi had no scruples, knowing the theoretical depth of the Derridian deconstruction, in accepting the imposture of the term "de-constructivist". Manfredo Tafuri criticized these approaches because he did not trust this post-structuralism since he saw it as a bourgeois product without a truly transformative political intention. By then Eisenman had already become the theoretical reference for deconstruction within the field of architecture. In that time of agreement, both convincingly approach deconstruction as "attitude", alluding to previous examples such as Le Corbusier's position regarding tradition and history, Derrida expressing that:

> Those values of habitability and utility are not those who ultimately dominate the work or design. It is also about freeing architecture from certain aesthetic values. In the end, it is not harmony or beauty that control this work. This does not mean that the product must be ugly, but that, ultimately, its goal is not aesthetic.

Herein lies a criticism that his architects "friends" failed to understand: the liberation from the aesthetic yoke (as external imposition of pre-established norms) does not include two inherent aspects; avoiding the public dimension and service to the society of architecture, which many of these architectures show.

So what is the purpose of architecture? Derrida replies that:

> In a certain way, there is no such purpose. There is a game. It is about placing architecture in its specific place, that is, in a space that is not subordinated to values, for example, utilitarian, aesthetic or even metaphysical or religious.[…]. Tschumi and Eisenman try to free architecture from all those goals that are not, in fact, architectural, which does not mean, therefore (and this is the difficult part), that they try to restore a kind of purity of architecture. At the same time, they place the architectural "strictly speaking" with respect to other arts, to other languages: in Tschumi, with what a cinematographic narration can mean; and in Eisenman, there is a constant exchange with the literary text. We continually find a kind of reciprocal provocation between his "so-called architectural" projects and other spaces of invention, let's just say, of creation.

As we can see, Derrida clearly indicates to them the need to dismantle the anthropomorphic values that have adhered to architectural praxis, but in no case do they lead them to its replacement or alteration, which is ultimately what they provide. (This section takes on more chronological interest, when we read Marc Wigley's text on the Russian avant-garde, in the Catalog of the exhibition months before, justifying the reference to constructivism, with a "name" so similar).

Eisenman had developed his personal career from that assertion, of the "open project", according to his perspective. From an approach based on structuralism, such as the axonometric proposals for variations of the elements of their houses, I, II, III... 11th of Palo Alto, 1978- where he not only tests the semantic capacity of alterations and variations introduced, but also -and with it- an open graphic narrative compared to the closed conventional one (Eisenman 1971).

Such a *game-like* attitude seeks not only to influence the receiver, but also to require him to position himself, to participate, as already stated in the epic theater of Tretyakov, Bertolt Brecht, and included in the aesthetic statements by W. Benjamin, as Eisenman himself collected in "A Adolf Loos & Bertolt Brecht" from 1974. To this game strategy that opens up to the significant participation of the receiver, he referred to as *bleaching,* described as distancing, absence of the author subject, unfamiliarity, and inquiry into the alienation of the architectural form to escape the secular gag. Such a process, refers in its succession to fragmentation, the dissolution of the pre-established form of origin, (the cube), the significant dissemination, and the blotting out or blurring of the traditional form where the trinomial form + function + meaning resides. This could contain certain reminiscences of the deconstructive emergence, even if it is to follow an equivalent process of voiding the traditional unity between significance and signifier in sign formation.

His later strategies of inquiry are determined around scaling (mixing scales) and *overlapping* (process of overlapping planes) in proposals such as those of Cannariego in Venice 1978, Verona in 1985, Long Beach 1986, or La Villette in 1987; conceptualized strategies already researched by Tschumi and, who gives theoretical thought in various articles and texts (Barja 2014; Eisenman 1993; 1992; 1988; 1987; 1986; 1985; 1984; 1984; 1983). But outlining some differences with respect to Tschumi leaning towards Derrida; differentiating the result that came from the montage (Benjaminian concept taken from Brecht), with respect to *scaling*, in the first generates superimposition as well as the second superposition. A nuance that marks the difference between the unit and the unitary, the one and the multiple, the same as the traditional –but more complex or flexible–, compared to the pluri-significant and interpretable. And that is summarized in the difference between closed and open project.

A field of research in which he immersed himself in search for a post-metaphysical architecture, from the acceptance of the open work but also from the *negativity of emptiness and lack of it.* This aspect —of the open work— , that here can no longer go unnoticed.

Although Derrida does not mention the open work in any text (but of the *opening of the text*) as such (but Umberto Eco does (2017) in twelve specific references of his own on Derrida), this reference will simplify the reflection of this text, bringing it closer to the design exercise of architects. One of the derivatives of this relationship that we follow and between the two poles of contemporary architecture, the link that connects Identity and Autonomy but that allows their distance, is precisely the distinction and separation between open and closed work. We understand from Benjamin the idea of closed - when everything that must be said is said and everything that must be understood is in sight, therefore, the understanding of the entire work is feasible and it is about knowing how to see, knowing how to recognize, knowing how to identify on behalf of the receiver. That is, to follow and detect everything said there. In the open work these questions are not fixed; they are posed in such a way that, in the normal interaction between the work and the receiving subject, it must contribute part of its experience, culture, memory, that is, it is not complete and is capable of being completed with the other, an action that produces corruption, the spread or the graft that Derrida spoke of, to be understood. Because its spatio-temporal capacity to integrate into sociopolitical-economic, cultural and bond-generating contexts and settings, beyond its generation limit (authorship that Derrida calls signature), is key in the open work. What in literary terms would distinguish Italo Calvino from Umberto Eco; and in architectural terms what distinguishes Libeskind from Eisenman, both from pseudo-deconstruction.

But how does this break-up between Derrida and Eisenman take place, after such a

close relationship and what are the wounds that cause it? Luis Fernández-Galiano (2004a;2004b) talks about their relationship. Derrida replies: "But, furthermore, I cannot hide that, as far as architecture is concerned today, I feel less competent and inspired than ever." In other words, Derrida's disappointment with Eisenman —who is not able to catch sight of Fernández-Galiano— was not to make him understand the scope of the radical opening of the work compared to the closed or half-open one, and Eisenman's relief when moving away from the deconstruction was the calm assumption of identity in the face of autonomy, which he could not achieve. What is also surprising is that Fernández-Galiano in his posthumous article on the philosopher, beyond explaining that 'he knew him personally', points to third-order questions as justification, when relevant was much more evident. Already in April 1990, the philosopher granted an interview to Brunette and Wills, on the subject of "The Arts of Space", where he responds in parallel to the *Assamblages letters* (Derrida 1990; Eisenman 1990), that caused the divide between philosopher and architects to those who posed as followers, not listening to anything. What Derrida basically highlights and that separates him from Eisenman, –his wound– is the fact that the open nature of the project (as text) is *a necessary but not an adequate condition*. It is necessary since it allows the participation of the receiver, the introduction of other signifiers by the receivers who, in such action, become authors and thus change the work, beginning the circularity of the signifier that allows its comfort over time, with time and giving time. But it is not enough if the themes are restricted, therefore thematized or there is a minimum mediation bias of the first author subject; that is, if the signature persists, the "bad identity" acts. And it is at this point that Derrida is frustrated by not making the architect Eisenman see such scope, wrapped in a communicative environment - in which Fernández- Galiano is a participant - that guides architecture towards the star system. Because the work —Derrida will say— "is welcomed, they simply ARRIVE, it does not contain a signature and it does not choose; it's just sheet music. "Eisenman's mistake was to understand that the opening of the work should be oriented towards *nothingness,* towards *emptiness* (which implies for him a *negativity*), subtracting in such cases what the author himself is, his own Jewish condition, and his own teleology. And so Derrida writes to him in a letter in 1990:

> He formulates a discourse on negativity too easily; he talks about the architecture of absence, of the architecture of nothing (like Libeskind). His works are too inclined to speak of emptiness, negativity, and absence, in a sometimes teleological, even Jewish-theological tone. No architecture can be called Jewish… but his is based on a type of Jewish discourse.

And so he synthesizes such a *necessary and sufficient*, pointed out in other texts (Barrera 2019): "If there is a work, it means that the analysis of all circumstances only served to make room in an absolutely indeterminate place (the OTHER to arrive), to something that is at the same time useless, supplementary and irreducible, finally, to those conditions". Because the exaggeration of the autonomy in a creation empty of meaning end up as a narcissistic identity, as he indicates:

> If there is that kind of practice (personal, narcissistic, self-indulgent) then you don't stand a chance. Its future lies precisely in that the practice is transformed, disfigured… subjected to a normalized or identifiable formula… would have been born dead… it has opportunities since it moves and manages to transform itself, so that it is not instantly recognized… and that it appears as something forbibben…

This is the first wound that Eisenman inflicts on Derrida; he is not able to understand the project as a music score, that allows what has resulted from the forbidden, that is just a call, an "arrival"' that welcomes the receiver. In Eisenman's work, Eisenman himself always emerges cryptically hidden. The second wound comes from the temporary dimension present in the previous process and in the *differance;* because the 'arrival' is a postponement. Differance-*différance,* understood as defer and deferral, which requires spacing where time meets. It indicates, "the effect of the signature cannot be reduced to the effect of authorship... the signature exists as long as a given work is not limited to its semantic content". Later clarifying:

> A signature will appear every time an event occurs, every time there is a production of work, whose occurrence is not limited to what can be analyzed semantically. This is its *significance*; it has its place, its non-present existence, that of the work as a print, as permanence (*restance*). That means that one can repeat it, review it, identify it, walk around it... even if it doesn't mean anything, it is there as an addition to all that. And that excess obviously provokes an *endless* speech; and in this consists the critical discourse... the signature is the occurrence of the work itself.

Therefore, contamination or grafting, if possible, arises in the deferral, in time. This is the basis of temporary *turn*, the wait. At the insistence of Eisenman and Libeskind importing other texts to the work (that become the hypertext of borrowed) and Tschumi's search for transgressions with cinema, for wanting to cryptically connect all the contents and underlying the work, thinking that the cause is well hidden, Derrida clarifies that this is not the way, showing you the reception process:

> The confirmatory act that consists of people arriving and deciding that there is something interesting there..., It all starts with the *contresignataire*, the receiver. The origin of the work resides, ultimately, in the recipient... the temporality of the signature is always this perfect future that instinctively politicizes the work, which delivers it to the other, society, the institution, the possibility, ... It is necessary to say "politics" and "institution", and not simply "someone else", ... this takes us from private to public. A work can only be public.

This being the case, the poignant polyphony of multiple dismembered objects under the sign of what is called deconstruction seems misaligned with what Derrida presents. What would be the tone in which the work should be presented?

> The tone, writing in many tones, does not allow me to reduce myself to a single person or moment. The question of tone is not a pragmatic analysis, of determining the meaning, the thesis, the theme, or the theorem of a text... it is knowing who it is for and to produce what effect... suddenly the person changes, the voice changes and everything acquires spatiality, ... because spatial works that should even produce this effect still give the impression of some sort of order.

For this reason, the deferral time is given a condition where it is possible to omit the established order. In this way, he emphasizes that the seed of his proposal is temporary in nature, since once the work has been left to the world, someone, perhaps, will understand it and assign some signifiers that integrate one other, the other, with the Other. And this is not irreconcilable with the beauty that is intended in the work; for those who advocate voluptuous rupture, incomprehensible formal anarchy, because beauty is a *vibration* related to *time*:

> In no case (inside and outside art) can it be separated from the experience of the body; and therefore from the experience of desire...

> a libidinal nature... inseparable from the relationships with the desire of the Other, ... through the voice, through something that has to do with tonal differences... through of the voice as something that intensifies desire to the maximum, precisely because it separates it from the body. There is an effect of *discontinuation*, of *interruption*, (making love in silence or with the voice only); the voice *separates*, ... then it is about what is in the voice that causes desire; it is a *differential vibration* that at the *same time interrupts*. That is what beauty is, the great beyond, a transcendence, which is inaccessible... and therefore I cannot consume it. That defines a work of art, not being able to consume it; beauty is something that arouses my desire by saying precisely, "you will not consume me.

As E. Miralles points out, you cannot consume what lasts over time, because it is restored sequentially in it. For this reason, Zabalbeascoa (2013) calls Architecture of time -that of Miralles- and deepen in time as subject of the project. In this way, autonomy, radically open work, *différance*, the temporary nature that another, my other self, the Other can germinate the work, are the misunderstandings that led Derrida to distance himself from architects, not architecture. None of this architecture is deconstructive, but only a simulation of deconstruction. The theory of arrival, gift and forgiveness is of inexhaustible patience.

3. THE WOUNDS OF MARK WIGLEY AND PHILIP JOHNSON

Curators of the modern architecture exhibition in 1988, under the title 'de-constructivist', a similar but different word from 'deconstruction'. In this paradoxical similarity, transference occurred: such concepts were understood as those early architects and critics said when approaching these ideas (Libeskind, Gehry, Hadid and critics like Stuart Wrede with the same curators). Primarily like destruction, like rupture, explosion, fragmentation, like disassembly, with reference to other things (constructivism). But that was never the basis for Derrida's ideas that appealed to *dismantle* and *evoke*. That exhibition was a way of representing an avant-garde opportunity, absorbing the wake of a philosophical theory that became a motivation to copy. This representation was signaled by the heterogeneous but repetitive selection in disruptive and hatched codes by Philip Johnson and Marc Wigley at the 1988 MoMA exhibition. A collective error in representation without understanding the scope of these nuances. It is possible to overcome modernity without breaking its deliberative course, although it is necessarily incorporating other cultural parameters. Derrida's sustainable and ecological feminist or gender reading, with absolute adaptability in certain proposals, show that the framework of values can be "re-established", without necessarily maintaining the status quo. But this does not justify the impersonation of its name that leads to the denotation of his theory due to the false transferred balance.

But what did its curators want at that architectural meeting? Philip Johnson (Nieto and Sobejano 1987) unabashed stated the following: (1) "architecture is a decorative art". A demonstration that automatically excludes you from the debate that we are following. (2) He refers to architecture as a frame, dressed in glass, in reference to the Toronto-Dominion Center building, as de-constructivist, although its appearance is Miesian (purely metaphysical). This already indicates that the curator was involved in other different things – transforming a booming post-metaphysical current into a metaphysical impersonation; (3) when asked about the difference between the deconstructive philosophical framework and its de-constructivist name, he points to his reference in Russian constructivism, "it is constructivism in its origin"; (4) when asked about what he found interesting he answers with several notes: Aaron Betsky's book,

Violated Perfection and Giovanini's reference in Coop Himmelblau's work to Malevich, about the decomposition of forms, its paradoxical sensuality and imperfection contrary to classical perfection. Such references are a ploy to distract. The apparent similarity or similarity of lines, designs, angulations, "diagonal, structures, ... designing with that freedom is very exciting", it does not belong to the philosophical register we are talking about. The invention of "de-constructivist architecture", symbolized, with historical foundations, inserted in the institutions, presented with godparents, was the construction of a conspiracy against deconstruction. It sought to make metaphysical the current stream of architectural reflection of underlying layer post-metaphysical more widespread. It was a *firewall*.

If we read the contributions about the exhibition "Deconstructivist Architecture" (Johnson and Wigley 1988) within the architecture program Gerald D. Hines architecture program -Interests in MoMA in NY-, we do not find any parallels with the deconstruction. The preamble to Johnson's text speaks of the coming together of "similar approaches." To confirm this, he refers to the photographs in Nevada of a spring shed, by Michael Heizer; for being "disturbing, dislocated, mysterious... the contrast (with the bearing of machinist architecture from 1932), is between perfection and violated perfection". Years later Derrida would not let the opportunity pass him by to contribute from the deconstruction of Heizer's work, "double negative" in "the double session" and "GLAS" that reveals these insignificant approaches. Like his reference to violence as a fold, different from the one confirmed by them (Derrida 1971a, 48; 1997b; 1994; 1997a); "the fold holds the secret, it is a closed book, and folded onto itself, virginity that keeps the secret of its violation".

Wigley's text does clarify; "It is not that they derive from the contemporary philosophical modality called *deconstruction* (forget the "s" that Derrida adds when deriving the term from Heidegger)... they emerge from architecture and exhibit certain deconstructive qualities"; (really none, except the intention to break its anthropomorphic foundations) "because they deal with dismantling" he will say, borrowing the meaning from Derrida, but referring to different things, changing the meaning; "it identifies the symptoms of a repressed impurity, showing its duality between soft conviction and violent torture, so that the form questioned. This is common but in reality it is a simulation. Therefore, the title is a trick: like the one that Derrida himself highlights months after the exposition in the interview we saw. But Wigley returns to pre-revolutionary constructivism such as the Tatlin's Tower Monument to the Third International of 1919 that inaugurates *the radical line*: "with pure forms, conflicting sets were composed", "stability formalizes instability"; "there is no axis, but a nest of axes"; "it was social, but it was based on function"; "the drawings became reliefs, and from them to three-dimensionality"; "the pure forms are trapped in a twisted frame, then penetrated from within and finally dissolved". A textual link that, turned the base into pure ornament by excluding those tensions between its antinomies, transforming its dynamism into stability, losing the strange part of its designs, its sculptural vision, ending up as a stylistic twist. What Wigley does is formalize a working scheme, some design bases, and some patterns, which in Derrida (1997a) dismantles. The exhibition explores the relationship between the instability of the first Russian avant-garde and the stability of the late-modern period. This is a temporary leap that invites parataxis, the accumulation and not the circulation of time, an object of deconstruction. That was the staging of an *assault,* which Mark Wigley tries to take back when he meets Derrida in 1991 at the University of Columbia, motivated by Derrida: "is there a different between architecture and hospitality? A speech repeated at the Round

Table in Madrid in 1997, where he focuses his answer on the talent and in forgiveness.

Why that attack? The text "Delirio y estuco" ("Delirium and stucco") (Fernández 1996) analyzes the socioeconomic structure in relation to the monopolies of power that fosters the emergence of the two postmodern positions; classicism (*stucco*) and abysmal (*delirium*). Solà-Morales in the same publication states that it was the division between the theory of imitation and the theory of invention, after the debate between innovation and necessity, which later concurred with *experience* (Derrida 1993), in the desire. It reproduced the scenario of the "anti-war" bourgeois imposture of 68, as "anti economic power" in the 70s, a scenario of *control and surveillance* is woven in the 80s at the hand of the epigones of those doctrines. In order to distract the restless people, they propose to transform the radical emerging positions into pragmatism, where the new sorcerer recovers the lost center with the appearance of mass culture. Those upheavals generated difficulties and social demands, while the economic structures had lost growth and relevance. It was necessary to regain control by intensifying violence. From the propaganda empty of content, the operation, a "bloodless fascination for the non-existent as something real" was proposed, with the epigones taking on the role of "fifth column of architecture". Once the material, military and economic power is brought together, a priestly aura is installed, taking a quote from Lippman; "when times get out of control, some attack the barricades and others take refuge in convents".

The origin of delirium founded contextualism, metaphor, analogies and typological invention, generating the "epigonism of epigones", explaining the beyond modernity as "*an illusion-allusion*", through disorder, obliqueness, the evasion and elision common to architects faithful to the representative tradition, even if it is a different self-referential representation. But such an origin led to the generation of works of empty or absent of meaning. A question that did not fit into the dynamics of "the late monopolies that demanded an eloquent code for their envelope, that is, to make it possible for these decorations to have the effect of a *moral rectification* in the face of decadence", which these works showed of the previous system. This supported a genuine *formal riot*, leading to "a re-mastering operation of the *managers*, an updated specularity." Where Philip Johnson played the role of sorcerer, a demiurge of symbolic apologetics. Thus an *ideology of consolation* is presented through architectural images, against those that undermined the structure of the mercantile-industrial bourgeoisie. The figurative recovery led to the iconic, speculative recovery, which alternated the production of images by the most redundant methods and means, in the direction of an altering reality. A "happy context" is therefore created, by having the signifiers tied together, where the effectiveness of *surveillance* led to the dialectic of "surplus value", building "the space where to ritualize the exchange ceremonies". Because "everything is made to be sold, without wasting a second", the circulation in magazines fully entering here. Where the subliminal mechanisms that distilled these spaces were aimed at drawing attention accepting therefore the premise of desire. Generating desire represents "a perspective of new life, facing the insufferable of that reified present (eternal present) and the demand for a more acceptable society", which Eisenman or Koolhaas refer to the new human form of the world; the apocalyptic-sublime. The scene turned towards *animus projects* with which to mitigate the stark interests of affluent society. Because the rise of conceptual art was taken advantage of, the generator of new concepts where the work is exhausted in ideation, so that the need mutates from desire to irrepressible desire, or alienating ecstasy. An area of full autonomy in research that excludes theoretical interference of another nature that

challenges the hegemonic powers. Later on, *architecture of meaning* will emerge from here, that which presents virtuality in substitution of the imagined reality, another step forward of the now digital economic power.

CONCLUSION

Why refer to architecture as *de-constructivism,* in a historical moment where the concept *deconstruction* is declared, in whose shadow some authors said they were working on? Its appropriation: its representation taking advantage of the inertia of such a term: "The word deconstruction, like any other, has no more value than that which gives it its register in a chain of possible situations...
"The context", a question that does not concur in this impersonation. Why do architectures and architects obsessed with deconstruction mix with unrelated people who work in the simple search for their personal reference? For masking appropriation under a pile of comparable signs under the bias of equality, similarity, likeness, resemblance, reasonable, etc. Derrida speaks of an attitude that leads to evocation. Why is a constructivist discourse built around a set of architectures, when its reflective underlying layer is metaphysical, about something that wants to be seen knowing that it is post-metaphysical? To impersonate it and build a firewall that blurs its expansion. And this is exactly what happened.

REFERENCES

Barja, J. 2014. *Nudos del tiempo*. Madrid: Abada Editores.

Benjamin, W. 1916. «Sobre el lenguaje en cuanto tal y sobre el lenguaje del hombre». In *Obras,* vol. II. Madrid: Abada Editores.

Culler, J. 1984. *Sobre la deconstrucción. Teoría y crítica después del estructuralismo.* Translated by Luis Cremades. Salamanca: Cátedra.

Cusset, F. 2005. *French Theory, Foucault, Derrida, Deleuze & cia y las mutaciones de la vida intelectual en Estados Unidos.* Barcelona: Editorial Melusina.

Derrida, J. 1971a. *De la Gramatología*. México: Siglo XXI.

Derrida, J. 1971b. «Firma, acontecimiento, context». In *Congreso Internacional de Sociedades de Filosofía de lengua francesa.* Santiago: Universidad ARCIS.

Derrida, J. 1986. *Parages*. París: Galilee.

Derrida, J. 1988. *El filósofo y los arquitectos.* Barcelona: Diagonal.

Derrida, J. 1989. *La escritura y la diferencia.* Barcelona: Anthropos.

Derrida, J. 1990. «A letter to Peter Eisenman». In *Assemblage*, no. 12: 6-13.

Derrida, J. 1993. «Las artes del espacio». In *Deconstruction and visual arts*. Interview by Peter Brunette and David Wills, April 28, 1990. Cambridge: University Press.

Derrida, J. 1994. *Mal de archivo: una impresión freudiana*. Translated by Paco Vidarte. Madrid: Trotta.

Derrida, J. 1997a. «Carta a un amigo japonés». In *El tiempo de una tesis: Deconstrucción e implicaciones conceptuales.* Barcelona: Proyecto A Ediciones, 23-27.

Derrida, J. 1997b. «La farmacia de Platón». In *La Diseminación*. Madrid: Editorial Fundamentos.

Derrida, J. 2008. *Márgenes de la filosofía.* Madrid: Cátedra.

Derrida, J. 2013. *Decir el acontecimiento, ¿es posible?* Madrid: Arena Libros.

Derrida, J. and Eisenman, P. 1997. *Chora L Works: Jacques Derrida and Peter Eisenman*. New York: Monacelli Press.

Deleuze, G. 2002. *Diferencia y repetición*. Buenos Aires: Amorrortu Editores.

Eco, U. 1986. *La estructura ausente*. Madrid: Editorial Lumen.

Eco, U. 2000. *Tratado de semiótica general.* Barcelona: Editorial Lumen.

Eco, U. 2017. *Los límites de la interpretación.* Barcelona: Ediciones DeBolsillo.

Eisenman, P. 1971. «Notes on Conceptual Architecture». In *Casabella*, no. 359-360: 48-58.

Eisenman, P. 1974. «To Adolf Loos & Bertolt Brecht». In *Progressive Architecture*, no. 55: 92-99.

Eisenman, P. 1975. *Five Architects: Eisenman, Graves, Gwathmey, Hejduk, Meier*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Eisenman, P. 1983. «Representation of the limit. Writing a not architecture». In *Chamberworks: Architectural Meditations on Themes from Heraclitus*. Nueva York, Architectural Association.

Eisenman, P. 1984. «The end of classical: the end of the beginning, the end of the end». In *Perspecta,* vol. 24: 154-173.

Eisenman, P. 1985. «It signifies nothing… It's all dissimulation». Unpublished manuscript.

Eisenman, P. 1986. «The Beginning, the End and the Beginning Again». In *Space Design* 258, no. 3.

Eisenman, P. 1987. «Text as Zero or the Destruction of Narrative». In *Planned Assaults*. Cambridge: The MIT Press.

Eisenman, P. 1990. «Post/El Cards: A reply to Jacques Derrida». In *Assemblage*, no. 12: 14-17.

Eisenman, P. 1993. «Talking about writing with Derrida». In *ANY: Architecture New York*, pp. 18-21. Nueva York: Anyone Corporation.

Fernández Alba, A. 1996 «Delirio y Estuco». In *Más allá del postmoderno*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Galiano-Fernández Ruiz, L. 2004a. «Deconstrucción 'in memóriam'». *Arquitectura Viva*, nª. 98: 83-85.

Galiano-Fernández Ruiz, L. 2004b. «Deconstrucción 'in memóriam'». In *El País*, December 4, 2004, https://elpais.com/diario/2004/12/04/babelia/1102118780_850215.html.

Johnson, P. and Wigley, M. 1988. *Arquitectura deconstructivista*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Juriet, U. 2005. *Generación y Memoria; el monument del holocausto en Berlín como Proyecto conmemorativo propiamente generacional*. Hamburgo: Wildt Edit.

Masó, J. and Michaud. G. 2015. «Jacques Derrida et l'architecture: 'Espacer davantage'». In *Les arts de l'espace*. Écrits et interventions sur l'architecture. Paris: Éditions de la différence.

Mendoza Solís, E. 2013. «El lenguaje abismal, la mística del lenguaje de Walter Benjamin». In *Acta Poética*, vol 34, no. 1. México: Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México.

Nieto, F. and Sobejano, E. 1987. «Philip Johnson». In *Revista Arquitectura*, nª. 269: 108-115.

Solà-Morales Rubió, I. 1995. *Diferencias: topografía de la arquitectura contemporánea*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Valdivieso, M. 2008. «Memorándum del horro cotidiano; el monument espacio para el recuerdo de Stih & Schnock en Berlín». In *X Coloquio Internacional de Geocrítica*. Barcelona: Scripta Nova.

Zabalbeascoa, A. 2013. *Arquitectura del tiempo. Time architecture: Miralles Tagliabue*. Barcelona: Gustavo Gili.

Zizeq, S. 2010. *El sublime objeto de la ideología*. Madrid: Siglo XXI

PAPER #8.04

PUBLIC PARTICIPATION AND CITIZEN PARTICIPATION IN CURRENT VALENCIAN URBANISM

Asenet Sosa Espinosa[a], María Emilia Casar Furió[a]
[a]Universitat Politècnica de València, València, Spain

ABSTRACT

To talk about participation in urban planning is to discuss not only its concept, but also its relationship with the models of Democracy, the meanings of Governance and the governance of the territory. From the analysis of the Law of Territorial Planning, and Urbanism and Landscape (LOTUP, 2014) of the Valencian Community, Spain, and its modifications of 2019, two types of participation, public participation and citizen participation are derived. These are different processes and levels of participation in urban planning and planning, since they have different ends, dimensions and participating agents. In addition, the hierarchical position that the Law establishes between them is significant, subordinating the second one to the results of the first one. This separation and hierarchy invites us to reflect on the concepts of Democracy and Governance that are applied in the development of municipal urban planning instruments. Citizen participation remains one of the workhorses.

KEYWORDS

Public participation; citizen participation; democracy; governance; urban planning law; Valencian Community.

PREVIOUS POINTS

Public participation and citizen participation are terms that seem to be used without making a difference between them in the context of urban planning. Can we talk indistinctly of both? Can they be differentiated from political or democratic theory and especially in the dispositions and processes that the laws in urban planning gather?

In its generic sense, participating means *being part of…*, which leads us towards socio-political and legal conceptions of the forms of government, Constitutional and Representative State, where the dimension and sense of participation evolves within the opposite discourse between liberal democracy and participatory democracy, models that respond to different institutional designs .

Following the teachings of Almagro (2016, 179-182), which synthesizes much of socio-political thought from the middle of the s. XX, the force ideas that underpin the reasoning basic of both types of democracy, regarding the participation of citizens, are the following:

• *Representative liberal democracy.* Citizen participation is limited to electoral participation, to the election of its representatives, or is its preferred instrument. This is the only effective political management medium leadership at the complexity and size of societies today, and respect for property, security and natural rights:

a) The otherwise -direct participatory democracy- will overflow the political system because of the continuous social demands that would lead to bankruptcy (the scale).

b) Citizens are unable to understand the technical complexity of decision-making, solution of political problems and take responsibility for the management of public affairs (Almagro 2016, 181).

The citizen is a managed, their role is passive. The relationship between Government, Administration and citizenship is vertical.

• *Participatory democracy.* Understands participation as a right and value that legitimizes democracy, so freedom in democracy is conceived as a space without domination. Popular sovereignty is not transferable. It implies the expansion and strengthening of the channels of "direct and semi- direct participation", as well as civil association, public hearings and forums. Participation must be influential in decision-making processes and their results respected, so citizens are considered active subjects:

a) They have knowledge of the reality that affects them and the ability to decide.

b) Its effectiveness in solving problems may be equal to or greater than that of specialist technicians. Sociologically it leads to increasing public awareness, social cooperation and democratic involvement with institutions and their procedures, as well as reducing the power of the ruling elites on the democratic path. It has three approaches: deliberative, direct and radical. (Almagro 2016, 181-182).

The citizen is an active part. The relationship between Government, Administration and citizenship is horizontal.

Participation, through this last democratic model, takes a new meaning directed towards collective construction of life and the future. In this sense, Villasante (2009, 14)[1] synthesizes the idea in a praxis aimed at "reflecting collectively, building participatively, based on our own reflexivity, to be more operational and transformative".

Both models seem to be combined in the *New Public Management*, based on the *new governance*, a concept developed and analyzed by multiple authors from public and private framework. Public governance can be defined as a process of self-government and self-coordination, with the participation of a varied network of performers: government, public and private companies, civil society organizations and citizens, in which the direction of society is decided, objectives of coexistence are defined —their sense and direction— as well as the way to coordinate and organize to achieve it (Aguilar 2006, 90 and 2010, 30).

This new direction, therefore, forces states to change laws, transform its institutions and make settings in its bureaucratic apparatus. It surpasses governance - the ability to lead linked to a political performer and the yields of its policy - and it gets installed in a process of constant negotiation among all those who make up the network (Vallés and Martí 2015, 426). Cooperation is in its foundations, also "freedom and unlimited flow of information, innovation and agreements based on commitments and mutual understanding (…) means an equitable distribution and redistribution of power and resources" (González, Gascó and Llopis 2012, 32).

It involves incorporating the citizen as the subject of the process of management and decision making on the collective, recovering, in words of Pindado (2008, 25), both the "political character of citizenship" and the "citizen character of politics."

Therefore, we can talk about a new way to manage social conflict and work consensus.

The citizen participation contained in public participation remains in that network of performers.

	Dimension		Relationes	Citizen role
Liberal Democracy	Limited	Electoral	Vertical	Passive
Participatory Democracy	Multiple Multidimensional	Direct Deliberative	Horizontal	Active

Table 1. Democracies and Citizen Participation Dimension. Source: made from Almagro (2016)

[1] Foreword by Tomás Rodríguez Villasante, en Montañes Serrano, M. 2009. Metodología y técnica participativa. Teoría y práctica de una estrategia de investigación participativa. Barcelona: UOC

1. URBAN PLANNING. GOVERNANCE AND PARTICIPATION

Fundamentals and processes of governance, commented in previous lines, are related to the participatory democracy, which is a new redistribution of power in making decisions that affect the physical and social space, the territory and the city. It introduces a way to abandon the bureaucratic hierarchy, the "technocratic elitism" (Villasante 2017, 169).

To incorporate this new public management of our cities, the new administrative legislation in urban planning fit participation, cooperation and collaboration of civil society as a different bureaucratic model, by overlapping or curling it sometimes in their administrative traditions.

The Aarhus Convention of 1998 and the European Landscape Convention of 2000 about Environment are the starting point of the European framework in relation to Public Participation. The United Nations Economic Commission for Europe assumed in Aarhus (Denmark, 1998), the Convention about access to information, public participation in decision-making and access to justice in environmental matters. In general terms, it's upheld that "participation must be guaranteed in the authorization procedure for certain specific activities

For its side, European Landscape Convention (Florence, 2000), urges the "development of landscape policies at different political-administrative levels, to establish procedures for public participation, to identify and qualify our landscapes (Zoido, 2012, 13).

Subsequently, in transposition of Directives 2003/4 / CE and 2003/35 / CE)[2], European regulations on environmental information and participation, culminates in Spain in Law 27/2006, of July 18, which regulates the rights access to information, public participation and access to justice in environmental matters. Participation in which Spanish Constitution of 1978 advocates must guarantee democratic functioning of society and introduce greater transparency in the management of public affairs.

Thus, article 16 of the 2006 Law promotes "real, complete and effective participation in preparation, modification and review of plans, programs and dispositions, of general nature, related to the environment, by the Administration"; Furthermore, it is fundamentally established that "public has the right to express observations and opinions when all possibilities are open, before decisions are made on the plan, program or disposition" (regulations expressly include citizen participation)

In the Spanish urban area, citizen participation is subsequently included in the Land Law of 2008[3], which in its art. 3.2 c) establishes "The right to information for citizens and entities representing the interests affected by urban planning processes, as well as citizen participation in urban planning and management"; likewise, in its art. 4 by providing for the rights of the citizen and, after pointing to public information (letter e), which indicates the effective participation "in procedures of preparation and approval of any instruments of management of the territory or urban planning and execution and of their environmental evaluation by formulating allegations, observations, proposals, claims and complaints, and obtaining a reasoned response from the Administration, in accordance with the legislation regulating legal regime of said Administration and the procedure in question ". Nowadays, all of this is regulated in Royal Legislative Decree 7/2015, of October 30, which approves the revised text of Land and Urban Rehabilitation Law, art. 5.e), within basic statute of the citizen, and in relation to the citizen's rights.

In summary, transparency, openness and citizen participation are the three

[2] Directives on public access to environmental information and by which Directive 90/313 / EEC, of the Council, and Directive 2003/35 / EC, of the European Parliament and of the Council, of May 26, 2003 is repealed, which establishes measures for participation of public in certain plans and programs related to the environment and which modifies, with regard to public participation and access to justice, Directives 85/337 / CEE and 96/61 / CE, by reference in Fernando Manero, M., "La participación ciudadana en la ordenación del territorio: posibilidades y limitaciones", Geographical Notebooks, 47, 2010-2, pp. 47-71, at p. 57.

[3] By Real Decreto Legislativo 2/2008, de 20 de junio. Texto Refundido de la Ley del Suelo.

axles on which governments and public administrations must design public policies and specify their forms of implementation and evaluation.

The countries of European environment (France, Germany, United Kingdom as well as Spain), coincide in pointing to the binomial citizen participation and administrative efficiency attending to new forms of relationship and involvement that rebound on management; legislative reforms are therefore necessary involving new instruments where participation is more extensive, more relevant in decision-making, and, in addition, it must be aimed at both organized and non-organized citizens (Ganuza, 2004).

To observe the status of citizen participation in urban planning in Spain, we will analyze the Valencian case through the relevant Legislation in urban planning. We refer to *Law 5/2014, of July 25, on Territorial Planning, Urban Planning and Landscape* and its modifications of 2019 (LAW 1/2019, of February 5, of the Generalitat, of modification of Law 5/2014, of July 25, of land management, urban planning and landscape of the Valencian Community).

In this analysis we will try to answer questions like: in the relevant legislation on Valencian urban planning, does a liberal conception of democracy predominate?; What's the position and role of the participants?; Is there a hierarchical separation between the participation of government public entities and the participation of citizens? Does this legislation include consultation of the population and establish a system of binding decision-making?

We will start from a brief reference of the national legal framework, to focus later on the specific reference law.

1.1. Legal framework: transparency and citizen participation

In the Spanish state, through the Constitution, the obligatory nature of the public powers is collected to "promote the conditions so that the freedom and equality of the individual and of the groups in which it is integrated are real and effective; remove obstacles that prevent or hinder its fullness and facilitate participation of all citizens in political, economic, cultural and social life" (art. 9.2).

The right to information and freedom of expression is included in the same constitutional text (art. 20); and, art. 20.1.a, the right "to freely express and disseminate thoughts, ideas and opinions through word, writing or any other means of reproduction". On the other hand, according to article 23.1 of Constitution:

> Citizens have the right to participate in public affairs, directly or through representatives, freely elected in periodic elections by universal suffrage.

More specifically, all people have the right to access public information, in accordance with art. 105.b), regardless of format or support, which is in the hands of any of the subjects included in the scope of Title I of the Act state 19/2013 of 9 December transparency, access to public information and good governance, and that have been prepared or acquired in the exercise of their functions (art. 12 and 13), as well as art. 13.d) of Law 39/2015, of October 1, of the Common Administrative Procedure of Public Administrations.

Likewise, Law 7/1985, of April 2, regulating Bases of Local Regime, comes to consecrate public-citizen participation in a framework of information transparency. With enhanced role of the municipality as "basic entity of the territorial organization of the State", the councils are equated with "immediate channels of citizen participation in public affairs, to institutionalize and manage independently their own interests of the relevant authorities" as well,

> Will provide the most extensive information about their activity and the participation of all citizens in local life. Article 69.1.

Recapitulating, to participation is a democratic principle enshrined in the Spanish Constitution as a fundamental right (art. 23.1) that must be regulated by law (art. 105), establishing forms of participation. As a fundamental right it affects all areas of political action, which includes urban planning, land planning and landscape. The Spanish territorial division, collected in it, recognizes autonomy of the autonomous communities to manage their interests (art. 137), recognizing among its powers the management of the territory, urbanism and housing (art. 148.3rd).
The Autonomous Communities have been legislating in this area for several decades. Currently, the Valencian Community manages and regulates this area through *Law 5/2014, of July 25, on Land Management, Urban Planning and Landscape* (LOTUP) and its 2019 modifications (LAW 1/2019, of 5 of February, of the Generalitat, of modification of Law 5/2014, of July 25, on land use planning, urban planning and landscape of the Valencian Community).

1.2. Legal regime of citizen participation in Valencian regulations

We will start from the consideration of transparency, openness (open access) and citizen participation, such as the three axes on which governments and public administrations are designing public policies and specifying their forms of implementation and evaluation, as thus follows from the preamble of Law 2/2015, of April 2, the Generalitat, of Transparency, Good Governance and Citizen Participation of Comunitat Valenciana. Chapter I, establishes the general principles that should govern actions related to citizen participation, both individually and collectively. The participation instruments are determined in Chapter II and will be indispensable tools for citizen use that will make collaboration between administration and citizens more effective. Participation processes in elaboration of norms, the right to propose normative initiatives and the regime of the Citizen Participation Council are regulated. Under such a postulate, a new model is advocated, which regulates, on the one hand, the obligation to inform and publicize public action, and, on the other hand, the right of access to public information. More specifically, Title V regulates aspects related to citizen participation; consequently, "the active participation of citizens in public affairs" (art. 43., on development and promotion of citizen participation is encouraged —strengthening the associative fabric; citizen involvement; furtherance of communication, meeting and work spaces, etc.—; and, article 44, measures for citizen participation; with reference to the regulatory route).
Translated into the Valencian urban environment, the legal regime of public participation is set up by Law 5/2014, of July 25, on Land Management, Urban Planning and Landscape, of the Valencian Community, which has been modified by Law 1 / 2019, from February 5. This Law advocates transparency that is guaranteed by public participation, from the beginning and in all phases of formulation, approval and monitoring, in the terms required by strategic territorial evaluation.

> All agents with ability to operate in the territory will know from the beginning the environmental and territorial criteria, and the functional requirements that must be taken into account in the development of urban, territorial and sectoral plans (Section I of the Grounds Exhibition of the Law 2014).

In turn, the modifications made by Law 1/2019 insist on the need to guarantee proper citizen participation:

- In the new section 5th in art. 6, in relation to landscape instruments, on the need to submit them to the process of public participation and consultation with the affected administrations.
- In definition of public interested in the processing of the strategic environmental

and territorial evaluation of plans and programs (art. 48. f).

- On regulation of public participation in the processing of planning instruments (art. 49.1b).
- In the new art. 49. bis, in relation to actions prior to the drafting of the planning instrument.
- Equally, public participation plan which refers to the new paragraph 4.c) of the art. 51, which allows "telematic participation from a forum or space enabled where the document is open to citizens and in which contributions are allowed".
- In article 53.1 which includes obligation of the promoter body to submit the strategic environmental and territorial study, as well as the rest of sector documents, to citizen participation: "with people, associations, platforms or groups", which "is have made or provided suggestions in the phases prior to the drafting of plan or program or information in the scope document", etc.

2. ANALYSIS OF THE TREATMENT DISPENSED TO PUBLIC / CITIZEN PARTICIPATION, IN THE VALENCIAN URBAN REGULATION

From all of the above, several fundamental questions can be dealt with from the normative point of view: if the law differentiates public participation and citizen participation, moreover, if it is a separate process clarified in the law in a taxative and/or decisive way.
Attending to the procedure of preparation and processing of the planning, in accordance with the provisions of art. 48 of the Land Planning, Urban Planning and Landscape Law 2014 (LOTUP), the persons and institutions participating in the strategic environmental and territorial evaluation of plans and programs are established, mainly targeting legal persons, public institutions competent in the matter, such as the "promoter body, substantive body, territorial environmental body, as well as the Administrations affected". At this point (phase 0 of beginning) we can affirm that it is attended to the public participation , but far from the citizen participation understood as really involved in the starting point of the elaboration and processing of the planning, with really contributions of what is It will start and what is being done. Citizens would enter to participate, effectively, at a later stage (Phase 1) when there is already a Draft Plan (BP) and a Strategic Initial Document (DIE). The "technocratic elitism" and the hierarchy of specialization, marks the beginning and territorial strategy, so that the results of citizen participation are limited and conditioned since their incorporation into the process. The citizen is an administrator, his role is semi-passive. The relationship between Government, Administration and citizenship remains vertical.
With the modification of the LOTUP in 2019 (of the new article 49bis), in attempt to promote public participation, make citizen participation proactive and more effective, it is noted that before draft plan is prepared, a website of the promoter body will be enabled in order to have a first rapprochement with the public, for 20 days, in relation to a document that briefly indicates problems that are intended to be solved, the objectives of the Plan and the possible alternative solutions (art. 49bis 1.), so that it can serve as a starting point.

> (…) Prior public consultation will have internal administrative effects, preparatory to the drafting of the plan, and will give rise to the obligation to prepare a joint response report to the contributions received. The result of the consultation must be included in the file, indicating the number of participants, number of opinions issued and the response report (Article 49bis, 2., Starting document, preparatory work, before the start phase 0).

For the first time the Valencian legislator makes a public consultation before drawing up the Draft Plan (BP), but without elaboration

of an earlier participated diagnosis, ie, again from a diagnosis and proposals processing tea art, without horizontal and collaborative relational model, supported by the basic principle of Governance. On how active advertising is carried out, the volume and diversity of participants will depend, since it is known that the participation of factual powers stands out through the web. Even so, it constitutes an advance in proactive listening and towards a collaborative model. It implies a strengthening of the direct and semi- direct participation channels and is supposed to influence the decision-making processes and their respected results. The path towards the incorporation of Governance in the new management of public goes with small steps, even with verticality between the technical and institutional proposal and the citizen.

In the same way and with the same order of importance is included in the new art. 48 e) —modification LOTUP 2019— as persons and institutions participating in the "interested public", who for purposes of this law may be a natural or legal person in accordance with the law of the common administrative procedure, Law 39/2015; giving non-profit legal entities entry to the platforms or groups represented, with consolidated grouping, or with specific creation as such for that plan or program in question, with compliance with the requirements that the regulations themselves stipulate in this same article that provides it.

The article 51 comes to collect public participation again through citizen participation in its drafting in 2019, since in the following, Phase 1, "the draft plan or program and the initial document strategy", will take part for pronunciation and contribution:

> (…) To how many people, associations, platforms or groups that have made suggestions or provided suggestions in the previous phase (indicated in article 49bis.1) to the drafting of the plan or program, for a minimum period of 30 business days (article 51.1).

The elaboration of the document of scope of the strategic environmental and territorial study will gather the answers received to the consultations made (...)", in the ordinary procedure (art. 51.2 a); and, also, where appropriate, resolution of strategic environmental and territorial report, in the simplified procedure (art. 51.2 b).

On the other hand, the scope document will contain the public participation plan in which:

	LOTUP 2014	LOTUP 2019	
Previous actions	----	Brief Previous Technical Document	Public Consultation, open. Web

	LOTUP 2014 y LOTUP 2019	
Phase 0. Start	Participants: — Promoter organ — Substantive organ	Result: DIE and BP
Technical control.	Participants: — Environmental Organ	Result: — DIE + BP inadmissibility or — Admisión DIE + BP = goes to Phase 1
Phase 1.	Participants: — Public administrations affected — Citizenship	Result: Scope Document Strategic Environmental and Territorial Evaluation (DA EATE)

Table 2. Public and citizen participation in the beginning of urban planning, LOTUP 2014 and 2019. Source: made from LOTUP 2014 and modification 2019

> (…) The public interested in the plan or program is identified and the modalities or breadth of information and consultation (article 51.4.c) LOTUP 2019

As well as possible ways of participation and the possibilities that these must incorporate:

> (…) Telematic participation from an authorized forum or space where the document is open to citizens and in which contributions are allowed" (article 51.4.c) LOTUP 2019.

CONCLUSION

Relevant regulations regarding transparency and citizen participation, both in Spanish state level and within the framework of the Valencian Community, establish the need for proactive participation of citizens in elaboration of plans and programs. In urban and land planning matters, the Law 5/2014, of 25 July, Ordination of the Territory, Urbanism and Landscape of Valencia, has some openness to this type of participation, still marked by self technocratic elitism of Liberal Democracy, the citizen is an administrator who participates from an already elaborated strategy, decided from the governmental apparatus, his role is semi - passive from the administrative procedure established by said law. The relationship between Government, Administration and citizenship remains vertical in the development and approval of urban plans in the Valencian Community.

The partial modification, which this Law undergoes, with new text in force since 2019, provides a new beginning in participatory process in development of urban plans, opening a process of prior consultations based on a synthetic of what is technically thought of what happens and how it is fixed. Even marked by a certain attitude prone to preferences that depart from a democracy of initiative from citizens, from the people, this modification of the Law can constitute a step forward in strengthening the channels of direct and semi- direct participation, prior to the decision making that affects the community, walking shyly towards a collaborative model of relationship between technical and institutional proposal and citizen. Now we just have to wait for the practical experience of its application.

From the analysis of the 2014 LOTUP and its modification of 2019, two types of participation emerge, from public entities and citizens. These constitute different processes and levels of participation in urban planning and land planning, with differentiated purposes, spaces and times, with nonexistent or little collaborative relationship between them in the conception of the present and the joint construction of the future of the city. Thus, the hierarchical position established by the Law between them is made significant, subjecting the second —the citizen— to the results of the first —highly specialized public entities—. A concept of Liberal Democracy thus begins, against the currents of current Participatory Democracy, very sensitive to the application of the principles of Governance for a new management of the public.

REFERENCES

Aguilar Villanueva, Luis. F. *Gobernanza y gestión pública.* México: Fondo de Cultura Económica, 2006.

Aguilar Villanueva, Luis F. *Gobernanza: El nuevo proceso de gobernar.* Ciudad de México: Fúr Die Freiheit, 2010.

Almagro Castro, David. "La participación política en la teoría democrática: de la modernidad al siglo XXI" *Revista de Estudios Políticos,* nº 174, (2016): 173-193. doi: http://dx.doi.org/10.18042/cepc/rep.174.06

Constitución Española. *Boletín Oficial del Estado*, nº. 311 (December 29, 1978): 29313-29424

Ganuza, Ernesto."La participación ciudadana en el ámbito local europeo. *Revista de Estudios Ruropeos*, nº 38, (2004): 77-91.

González Ramírez, Mª Reyes; Gascó Gascó, Jose Luis and Llopis Taverner, Juan. "Participación y satisfacción del ciudadano en la Gestión Pública: un estudio en el ámbito de la administración local". *Auditoría Pública,* nº 58 (2012): 31-42.

Ley 5/2014, de 25 de julio, de Ordenación del Territorio, Urbanismo y Paisaje, de la Comunitat Valenciana. *Boletín Oficial del Estado,* nº 231 (September 23, 2014): 74030-74200.

Ley 1/2019, de 5 de febrero, de modificación de la Ley 5/2014, de 25 de julio, de Ordenación del Territorio, Urbanismo y Paisaje de la Comunitat Valenciana. *Boletín Oficial del Estado*, nº. 51 (February 28, 2019): 18987-19106.

Pindado Sánchez, Fernando. *La participación ciudadana es la vida de las ciudades.* Barcelona: Ediciones del Serbal, 2008.

Vallés, Jose María and Martí i Puig, Salvador. *Ciencia política. Un manual.* Barcelona: Ariel, 2015

Villasante, Tomás R. *Democracias transformadoras. Experiencias emergentes y alternativas desde los comunes.* Barcelona: El Viejo Topo, 2017.

Zoido Naranjo, F., "Paisaje urbano. Aportaciones para la definición de un marco teórico, conceptual y metodológico". In Delgado Viñas, Carmen; Juaristi Linacero, Joseba; Tomé Fernández, Sergio (edt) *Ciudades y paisajes urbanos en el siglo XXI.* Santander: Llibrería Estudio, 2012, pp. 13-92.

PAPER #8.05

SOCIAL PARTICIPATION THROUGH EXPERIENCES IN PUBLIC SPACES IN THE CITY OF GUADALAJARA, MEXICO

Isamar Anicia Herrera Piñuelas[a], Adolfo Vigil de Insausti[b], Alfred Esteller Agustí[c]
[a]Escuela Superior de Arquitectura, Guadalajara, Mexico
[b]Universitat Politècnica de València, Valencia, Spain
[c]Instituto Tecnológico y de Estudios Superiores de Occidente, Guadalajara, Mexico

ABSTRACT

The public space in Mexico is mostly disused spaces and generating conditions of insecurity and unhealthiest. The generation of methodologies through social participation begins to be key to the reactivation of spaces, also encouraging an experimentation of the place from a community constructivist perspective.
With the exposure and analysis of seven public interventions the objective is to compile a range of possible actuations in public space linked to their results in order to improve social, environmental and economical processes in a city. The methodologies used in the analyzed interventions are based on tactical urbanism whose core is strengthened through citizen participation and feedback, being a collective urban design commitment for emerging cities, in recovery or with critical urban problems.

KEYWORDS

Social participation; public space; collaboration; intervention; community.

INTRODUCTION

Seven interventions in different geographical areas of the city and with different goals for the use of public space allow us to identify differences in social behaviour, find strengths in the methodologies, impact and perception of the activities carried out. Although understanding public space is a complex science since behavioural patterns tend to have many variables in themselves, it is possible to determine interventions that have been able to generate a long-term impact based on methodological contrasts.
The objective of documenting the seven interventions considers establishing a chronology of interventions in the city of Guadalajara, Jalisco, since it is becoming one of the cities in Mexico with most improvement from an urban and citizen perspective. On one hand with investigators who contribute to the analysis of the transformation of the historic center as well as understanding of the historic urban landscape, on the other hand, groups that contribute towards mobility prioritizing collective and pedestrian rights, as well as government instruments such as the Secretariat for Substantive Equality between men and women. women and the Secretary of Planning and Citizen Participation; specifically through a new determined program called "Culture of Peace", all these efforts make up what in the state of Jalisco on the public and private level is gestating in the search to improve the conditions of the state, since the last 5 years it rises and falls in the scales of states with greater violence. Although, it is well analyzed since violence not only occurs in public spaces, it does contribute to a significant percentage of its incidence.

1. DESCRIPTION OF THE CASE STUDIES

The research is mainly located at the down town of Guadalajara, Jalisco in Mexico in

order to facilitate the tools of knowledge of the behaviour of citizens through social participation through experiences, these, catalogued as "activations", that is, experiences that they come to transform the patterns of use of public space. During the period 2015 - 2019, a series of exercises were developed in the public space that are described below, In the first part, a summary is placed to facilitate the location of the names of the interventions with respect to the numbering and topic that each one. After that, each intervention has the information about location and date, context and expected result, this to contextualize the reader regarding the place and specific goal of each intervention.

Summary

1.1. Te regalamos una mascota (We give you a pet)

LOCATION AND DATE: The activation takes place in Guadalajara, Jalisco, in the Mezquitán Country neighbourhood during the first quarter of 2014. The activity is focused on specifically reactivating a small park located on Jaime Nunó street between Guanajuato and Del Istmo, this park selected for having the peculiarity of being located just in front of a kindergarten, Hiawatha
CONTEXT: A colony with approximately 10 small vegetated parks, although not specifically in a situation of degradation if in a state of abandonment by neighbours when not using them regularly.
EXPECTED RESULT: That children and parents can be much more frequent and active users of the park that is right in front of the school they attend. The public space may become a detonator in the beginning associated with the acquired vegetation by potential users of the park, but becoming in the long term an acquired habit for the use of the public space.

1.2. ¿A dónde va chofer? (Where are you going, driver?)

LOCATION AND DATE: During Spring and Summer 2014, the initiative arises for the Guadalajara Metropolitan Area, comprising 8 municipalities: Guadalajara, San Pedro Tlaquepaque, Tonalá, Zapopan, Tlajomulco de Zúñiga, El Salto, Juanacatlán and Ixtlahuacán de los Membrillos, however, due to the activities carried out during the first stage, which are detailed below, the municipality in which the activities were manifested and, therefore, impact, were in the municipalities of Guadalajara and Tlajomulco.
CONTEXT: The Collective Transportation System in Jalisco as in many other states is characterized by being a system held by private concessions, the Mobility Secretariat and the General Directorate of Public Transportation does not operate as a regulatory body, causing dealerships not to be forced to comply with a regulated organization, bringing this an endless number of problems associated with routes, paths and stops, these three aspects sharing the same problem: The lack of information.
EXPECTED RESULT: A collective network for signalling bus stops, which is fed between those who have the information and those who do not, but which, in turn, as the collective knowledge increases, those who did not know the information before can be part of the signalling devices

1.3. Hazte paso (Make your way)

LOCATION AND DATE: On the occasion of the car-free day, a specific campaign takes place

on September 22nd, 2015 in the downtown area of Guadalajara.

CONTEXT: The little or non-existent respect for pedestrians is a problem that concerns many Mexico cities as well as many other countries in the world, however, in Mexico, pedestrian victims of run-over are around the figure of 20 thousand annually (INEGI 2020). Although, fortunately, this quantity is decreasing with the last count of 12,884 abuses, it is still an alarming figure for Mexicans, also because it is a gender problem, with women being the most affected, which also represents a public health problem, already declared by the World Health Organization (WHO 2017).
EXPECTED RESULT: Directly respecting the areas for pedestrians marked in the street, and in the short and medium term promoting greater tolerance for the parties involved in mainly motorized mobility in the city.

1.4. Extra-público (Extra public)

LOCATION AND DATE: Held from September 25 to October 5, 2014 (Extra Public 2014) as a workshop to be held in the building called Kukuruchos, located in the municipality of Zapopan, Av. Adolfo López Mateos Sur 2040, Colonia Chapalita Sur. And later to carrying out an intervention in an ejido land located in San Lucas Evangelista, in the municipality of Tlajomulco de Zúñiga, Jalisco.
CONTEXT: A public space not used and abandoned by the administration, with the potential to be a functional area due to its location right on the side of a soccer field.
EXPECTED RESULT: Create awareness of the importance of active public space, using the minimum resources with maximum impact. (Peña 2014)

1.5. Un día para la ciudad (One day for the city)

LOCATION AND DATE: This activation has already been carried out on 3 occasions by the Urban Orthopaedics Office, the first edition was held on February 7th, 2015.
CONTEXT: This place we call Andador is the area located next to the Pilgrim Park, behind the Alameda shopping center, this space was located in the first Workshop: "Proposals for the city", as a key to start rescuing the Tepatitlan River. (Gomez 2016)
EXPECTED RESULT: Understanding how a poorly perceived place can become a cultural tour for pedestrians. (Gomez 2016)

1.6. Espacios humanos (Human spaces)

LOCATION AND DATE: During the year of 2017, a series of recoveries of public space were carried out in the north-eastern periphery of Guadalajara.
CONTEXT: Public spaces in abandonment generating problems of insecurity, meeting point of gangs and unhealthiness.
EXPECTED RESULT: Reactivation and appropriation of public space, generating a citizen commitment for the care and maintenance of place implementations, with a tendency in the medium and long term to improve the quality of life of neighbours and influence the reduction of violence and public insecurity.

1.7. La esquina (The corner)

LOCATION AND DATE: April 29 and 30, 2016, property located in the Santa Teresita neighbourhood, Guadalajara Jalisco on the corner of Juan Cumplido y Reforma.
CONTEXT: A space, which, although belonging to private use, is ceded by its owner in order to carry out activities that benefit the community, providing safe friendly and dignified public space for the neighbours.
EXPECTED RESULT: Creating a space that in design is better planned to respond to demanded and useful activities for neighbours.

2. METHODOLOGY

The methodology encompasses as a critical analysis of the interventions carried out, is based on the plasticity of the systematization of data particularized for each experience of the public space, in which, citizen participation becomes the axis of observation, diagnosis and synthesis of the implementation in each of them. The methodologies adopted by each intervention are described below as a narration of actions:

2.1. Te regalamos una mascota (We give you a pet)

The activity is carried out by the architecture firm Aion Plan; led by Isamar Herrera and Alfred Esteller based on finding the interaction mainly of children and adjacently, parents who visit the school mentioned above from Monday to Friday. Parents and children are invited through small leaflets with information, which are delivered prior to access to the institute to be part of an activity in the park in which they will be given a pet, this, using a pun on the phrase so that be more attractive and increase the curiosity of the receivers. The exercise has 3 phases:

1st Phase. In a space enabled for a small workshop, the activity starts with the infants showing them a series of photographs of public spaces, one of them with vegetation, thus begins the sensitization process through the opinion of children. Later they are explained that adopting a pet is a responsability, which really refers to adopting a small plant for their care in this activity.

2nd. Phase. It is done in a collaborative way, facilitators, parents and children work to do the sowing of the seeds inside small glasses or boxes of reused sources, showing a brief explanation of the components that are involved in the germination process.

3rd. Phase. There is a direct interaction, again between facilitator, parents and child in which a commitment is made, in order that after their seed has hatched and a couple of leaves have sprouted, they must come back to that park to plant that plant and every day after school, go on to check its status and need of water when it's necessary.

2.2. ¿A dónde va chofer? (Where are you going, driver?)

The architecture office, directed by Alfred Esteller and Isamar Herrera, are the ones leading this activity, which is purely shaped by an informative process of using the tool. The citizen initiative "Where are you going, driver?" is a collective information tool that operates through a Facebook group page (https://www.facebook.com/adondevachofer) with the same name, in which some images are preloaded with the truck routes of the Guadalajara and Tlajomulco area, and a description and videos explaining the activity. The intention of these images is that they are downloaded and trimmed as indicated, in the same image, so that they can be used as stencils, which can be used by any citizen to mark the floor of the area where, by individual or collective knowledge, there is a space in which boarding and stops are made by drivers, despite the absence of a formal or built bus stop.

2.3. Hazte paso (Make your way)

This is a signalling crosswalks intervention, in this case, partly undertaken by Alfred Esteller, Isamar Herrera and his team of collaborators; Brando Soto, Vania Ayala and Juan Carlos Barajas. Carried out during the night-early morning, due to Chapultepec area is a high traffic area during most of the day, in the beamed crossing of Avenida La Paz and Chapultepec, on its west side. The activity considered the participation of more than 100 people, who were assigned to different crossings of the city, with the freedom to propose design and painting methodology.

Prior to the day of the activity, in the eve of worldwide pedestrian's day, the entire "Make your way" movement carried out an awareness campaign through social networks.

2.4. Extra-público (Extra public)

Intervention in an ejido land located in San Lucas Evangelista, in the municipality of Tlajomulco de Zúñiga, Jalisco. Conceived as a self-management initiative, the proposal seeks to reactivate the area by providing it with a public space that fosters social dynamics. The intervention is designed by the Madrid office Zuloarq, Bittertank, from New York and the JAPI Guadalajara office, in this context, Aion Plan; Isamar Herrera and Alfred Esteller, join as collaborators for monitoring project impact through an analysis methodology.
The operation is divided into two phases. The first is a series of meetings where the objects that will intervene in the site will be analysed and resolved. The second will focus on the manufacture of objects in the land of San Lucas (Peña 2014), with the participation of the neighbours.

2.5. Un día para la ciudad (One day for the city)

This is a whole day with different activities with some things in common: they are cultural, open to the public and seek to improve the city. In order to a better understanding they can be divided into 3 blocks:
Cultural exchange = Bazaar of crafts, design, food and art
Teaching of the city = Workshops of Mural, Crops and Body Expression
Public Art = An urban installation and outdoor concert. (Gomez 2016)
In this intervention, collaboration was carried out with Urban Orthopaedics, to perform the energy analysis of an urban intervention carried out in Tepatitlán, Jalisco. In order to be able to obtain energy and cost data that were invested to carry out this intervention and thus be able to know the impact at the environmental and economic level.

2.6. Espacios humanos (Human spaces)

This project is created for the recovery, creation and activation of public spaces through citizen participation and the inclusion of the different actors involved in the development of society (government, private initiative, civil society, etc.) with the advice of a technical and social team to guarantee the quality of the space, optimization of both human and economic resources, as well as the generation of communication platforms and processes of social transformation, for the empowerment and appropriation of communities with respect to these spaces, led by Francisco Javier Vázquez Romero, Bladimir Rodríguez López and Lucy Sarahi Estrada Ledesma as part of Collective 1.618, they generated a program called Human Spaces, in which they developed 22 projects to improve public space, under a methodology designed by themselves taking conceptual consideration of the Desing Thinking methodology. Its design, implementation and monitoring process is described by the creators, as follows:
1. Research of the study area, 2. Selection and study of the application area, 3. Community exploration, 4. Contact with community leaders, 5. Informative neighbourhood meetings, 6. Technical research; (this being based on an exhaustive mapping method through observation in which architects, urban planners, designers, sociologists and psychologists participate) to find patterns of use in time and function, 7 Participatory Diagnostic Workshop, 8. Participatory Design Workshop, 9. Development / validation of the architectural project with the community, 10. Preliminary construction, 11. Participatory construction, 12. Activation workshops, 13. Inauguration, 14. Follow-up. The collaboration by the authors of this article was associated in the selection of the materials to be used as

part of a series of recommendations in the line of sustainability and construction of low environmental impact.

2.7. La esquina (The corner)

In that property, activities related to art and sports were already being carried out, but it was sought to establish a type of furniture that, although in its itinerant quality could lead to more activities, as well as integrating a small ramp for skateboards. Alfred Esteller and Isamar Herrera are involved as workshops for the realization of the participatory design of the space, involving the surrounding community.
The design method of the space is conformed with a participatory process through workshops considers a first introductory stage as a neighbourhood board, subsequent design workshop between the team of architects, sociologists and designers to subsequently submit it to a second neighbourhood board for implementation through resources and collective labour.

3. DISCUSSION

The exposure of results allows a comparative contrast to be made, although the methodological application yields diverse results it is possible to make a critical analysis of the observed patterns. In that sense and looking for the opposite of generalization, the results are explained according to the specific goals sought in each intervention, recalling the main axis of all that lies in citizen participation.

3.1. Te regalamos una mascota (We give you a pet)

Once the school's departure time has arrived, of 50 leaflets delivered for 3 days, only 8 families approach the meeting point (see Fig. 1) to learn a little more about the information provided, and of those 8 only one In the next 30 days he will be following the activity.

Figure 1. Workshop at the park with kids. Source: (Esteller 2014)

3.2. ¿A dónde va, chofer? (Where are you going, driver?)

Through the follow-up in the intervention after approximately 6 months, comments are received from two concessionaires who take action to signal official stops with their route information, one of them physically signs, routes 51 being, 101, 604 and 629, the other does not get to know about its actual implementation.

Figure 2. Stencil signalling. Source: (Esteller 2014)

3.3. Hazte paso (Make your way)

The pedestrian crossings were visible for the next two years or so until the paint was completely erased, during this time, Chapultepec promenade being one of the busiest pedestrian roads; mostly during the weekends, it was easy to hear comments in which reference was made not only to the need to keep the area well signposted for the benefit of pedestrians but also positive comments regarding the design implemented. Unfortunately, this initiative did not continue, although it was the 3rd edition.

Figure 3. Painting crosswalk. Source: (Esteller 2015)

3.4. Extra-público (Extra public)

The analysis in this case was focused on the environmental impact specifically tabulated by the use of means of transport used before and during the intervention, found that the use of the car that although if shared was not carried out at its maximum capacity, which magnifies the amount of Energy and waste generated. In this case, citizen participation had a sectorized impact on those who were in the previous process and who were participants during and after the intervention. Of the 3 elements built during the intervention, 1 of them failed to remain in good condition the next day, this also impacting from the energy perspective of the use of materials.

3.5. Un día para la ciudad (One day for the city)

The activity developed satisfactory results regarding the previous mobility and during the workshop from a more comprehensive perspective that led to the use of collective transport and shared car, also, the use of materials was positively impacted by performing everything digitally during the previous workshops and, during the activities on the site, the implementation of waste management by the main team and the citizens, as well as the low use of disposables when having food by the neighbours, was also notable.

3.6. Espacios humanos (Human spaces)

The exercise under the methodology was applied in all the intervened parks, the use of low impact materials was important from the perspective of low environmental impact, but also economically more affordable and with a greater citizen involvement,

Group	Element	People	Kind	Cuantity	Kwh		Days	
Transport	To kukuruchos	15	Car	5	6	30.00	7	210
	To the lot	12	Car	5	15	75.00	4	300
	About carry materials	3	Car	3	18	54.00	1	54
								564
							Total	270
							Easily saved	97

Table 1. Transportation analysis. Source: (Esteller 2015)

Group	Element	People	Kind	Quantity	Kwh		Days	
Transport	To the lot	7	Car	2	6	12.00	3	36
		15	Bus	1	200/60	3.33	3	9.99
							Total	45.99

Table 2. Transportation analysis. Source: (Esteller 2015)

therefore, neighbours that perhaps by time or effort could not be active hands during the interventions, they were in charge of obtaining low-cost materials that were very feasible for their possibilities. Of the intervened parks in which the Aion Plan team was present, none of them generated rejection or apathy on the part of the communities, on the contrary, the team and citizens themselves sought that in their neighbourhood meetings could clarify issues that could be cause doubts to any neighbour.

Figure 4. Children sowing at park. Source: (Herrera 2015)

3.7. La esquina (The corner)

The intervention was not carried out, as there was no collective involvement by the community, it is believed that the private nature of the lot could generate some uncertainty or distrust in order to be more actively involved.

CONCLUSION

Taking into account that the medullar methodology rests on the axis of social participation as a basis for improving conditions, the difference focuses on improving the use of public space in different areas; In that sense, the seven interventions can be classified in order to understand their impact in 3 types: 1: Improvement of public space conditions as a recreation space: 3.4, 3.5 and 3.7, 2: Restructuring of public space as a recreation space , generation of safety and improvement in environmental quality: 3.1 and 3.6. and 3: Improvement of the citizen experience in mobility: 3.2 and 3.3.

The interventions that gave the monitoring and long-term results and considered that had the greatest impact were 3.2, 3.4, 3.5 and 3.6. Being those that, although belonging to different category of use or goal of public space, developed particular methodologies that achieved to integrate greater amount of citizen participation. Being in the first of them, almost massive, and with the potential to generate a greater lobby of pressure for its implementation and monitoring, concluding that it is the community networks that manage to generate a collective force with the greatest impact.

On the other hand, the ones with the lowest impact, 3.1 and 3.7, since they were in a more sectorized organization, in addition to having a much more specific or limited goal, it is likely that they should have used other types of citizen methodologies for smaller groups and where the follow-up was much more accompanied or hand in hand with these citizen groups.

The intervention 3.3 although as an intervention has not continued, other types of campaigns and team groups that come to advocate for the same reason have emerged from the individuals involved in this project, what is considered as a seed in pedestrian participation in Guadalajara. At the same time, other similar interventions in the state and in the country have appeared, showing the data and the concern is firm, although it remains a public health problem and Mexico one of the countries in the top 10 of death due to run-over, are figures that have been decreasing, as a punctual intervention lasted what the quality of materials and goals of the same allowed but not as a long-term intervention.

With this, we can conclude that the methodologies applied are not marked to the greatest success by the issue that is addressed but by the steps that determine each of them according to the audience to which they are addressed.

REFERENCES

Peña, A., 2014. *Workshop "Extra Público": Fab-lab de Arquitectura Colectiva*. México: Red Arquitectura, blog Universidad Jesuita de Guadalajara, ITESO. September 19,2014.https://blogs.iteso.mx/arquitectura/2014/09/19/workshop-extra-publico-fab-lab-de-arquitectura-colectiva/

Extra Público, 2014. *Extra público*. México: Tomala.mx.http://tomala.mx/wp-content/uploads/2014/09/Cartel-Extra-Pu%CC%81blico.pdf

Gómez, E., 2016. *UN DÍA PARA LA CIUDAD-un programa en el que todos participan. México:* Ortopedia Urbana. April 21, 2016. https://ortopediaurbana.wordpress.com/2016/04/21/el-volumen-que/

Instituto Nacional de Estadística y Geografía, 2020. *Accidentes de tránsito terrestre en zonas urbanas y suburbanas*. México: INEGI. January 31, 2020. https://www.inegi.org.mx/sistemas/olap/proyectos/bd/continuas/transporte/accidentes.asp#

Organización Mundial de la Salud, 2017. *10 datos sobre la seguridad vial en el mundo*. México: OMS. July 2017. https://www.who.int/features/factfiles/roadsafety/es/

PAPER #8.06

THE CITIZEN-ARCHITECT: EVALUATING AN INTERACTIVE GAME FOR COLLABORATIVE URBAN SOLUTIONS AND GREEN INFRASTRUCTURE SUCCESS

Courtney Crosson[a], Sandra Bernal[a]
[a] University of Arizona, Tucson, Arizona

ABSTRACT

This paper uses recent citizen-scientist literature to frame a new 'citizen-architect' model where urban actors claim agency in the design and long-term performance of decentralized infrastructure nodes. Municipalities are increasingly identifying renewable, decentralized sources of energy and water (e.g. rainwater harvesting, photovoltaics) as opportunities to add resilience to their cities. Green Infrastructure (GI) is a growing trend where stormwater is managed by expanding pervious areas of natural vegetation throughout a city. However, current implementations largely rely on untrained citizens adjacent to a GI site to provide the necessary upkeep to ensure design performance. Numerous studies have pointed to long-term maintenance as a problematic unknown for the success of decentralized infrastructure. This paper provides a replicable case study for academia to join with local government to fill this current gap. In the case study, twelve Bachelors of Architecture and Master of Architecture students led by one professor collaborated with Pima County Regional Flood Control to develop an interactive, didactic card game. Through this innovative game, high school and university students are engaged in understanding the design and performance of GI projects recently installed by the City in their communities. The game has students build their own decentralized infrastructure networks with the competitive goal of mitigating the most flooding by accruing the greatest number of high performing sites. This study evaluated the motivation and agency of twenty-five high school and university students to actively implement learning outcomes in their communities through pre and post surveys. The paper concludes that by educating young, citizen-architects about new paradigms of infrastructure, they can advocate for the implementation and performance of decentralized solutions within their community. Young non-architects can be trained as citizen-architects to promote and sustain new designs for decentralized infrastructures in our cities.

KEYWORDS

Citizen-Architect; green infrastructure; decentralized infrastructure; community engagement; community maintenance.

INTRODUCTION

Municipalities are increasingly identifying renewable, decentralized sources of energy and water (e.g. rainwater harvesting, photovoltaics) as opportunities to add resilience to their cities. Green Infrastructure (GI) is a growing urban trend where stormwater is managed by expanding pervious areas of natural vegetation throughout a city. The Environmental Protection Agency defines GI as "an approach to water management that protects, restores, or mimics the natural water cycle and one which is effective, economical, and enhances community safety and quality of life (EPA 2020)." However, current implementations largely rely on untrained citizens adjacent to a GI site to provide the necessary upkeep to ensure design performance. Numerous studies

have pointed to long-term maintenance as a problematic unknown for the success of decentralized infrastructure (Chini et al. 2017). This paper provides a replicable case study for architecture academia to join with local government to fill this current gap within GI by engaging young, citizen-architects throughout the community.

Through an upper-level architecture studio course, twelve Bachelors of Architecture and Masters of Architecture students led by one professor collaborated with Pima County Regional Flood Control District to develop an interactive, didactic card game called Monsoon. Through this innovative game, high school and university students without an architecture background in Tucson, Arizona are trained on the performance of GI projects recently installed by neighborhoods and the City in their communities. The game has students build their own decentralized infrastructure networks with the competitive goal of mitigating the most flooding by accruing the greatest number of high performing sites.

The paper begins with a review of the recent literature on citizen-scientist engagement and GI techniques. Links are made between these literatures and the development of the Monsoon game. Next, methods are outlined. Twenty-five high school and university students were engaged to play Monsoon in two separate sessions. The impact of the experience was evaluated through pre-activity and post-activity surveys. Results from the surveys are discussed in terms of change in student understanding, perceived effectiveness of GI, and agency to actively implement learning outcomes in their communities. The paper concludes that the game was successful in increasing student understanding of GI and perceived agency over flooding through GI in their communities. By presenting innovative communication methods (a game) to educate young, citizen-architects about new paradigms of infrastructure, they can advocate for implementation and performance of GI solutions within their community.

1. LITERATURE REVIEW

1.1. The Growth of Green Infrastructure and the Need for Sustained Maintenance

In the last several decades, the use of Green Infrastructure has increased in cities across the United States as a way to address flooding, reduce combined sewer overflows, and promote secondary benefits like heat island mitigation. This paper employs the EPA definition of GI and refers to stormwater mitigation through the use of vegetation, bioswales, basins of various sizes, permeable pavement, cisterns, and channeling devises (such as culverts or curb cuts) (EPA 2020). The goal of using GI in Tucson is to reduce areas of localized flooding and nonpoint source pollution throughout the city. GI has been shown to be more cost effective than grey stormwater infrastructure (Jaffe 2011) and have multiple benefits beyond flood reduction (Tzoulas et al. 2007). Past literature has shown, however, that citizens adjacent to GI sites do not readily understand these multiple benefits (Barnhill and Smardon 2012). To expand citizen understanding, various outreach programs (e.g. Chicago, Portland, Cleveland) have sought to improve GI education upon implementation and encourage the integration of GI into private property.

Despite recent growing adoption of GI across United States cities, several persistent barriers to GI integration have been identified in the literature: lack of knowledge of what GI is and its benefits, deficient data demonstrating benefits and performance, insufficient technical knowledge and experience, and lack of design standards and best management practices, and the need for maintenance and evaluation components of a GI installation (CWAA 2011; Chini et al. 2017). The Monsoon

game sought to fill in the public perception gaps identified Keeley et al. (2013, p 1103) of "making the connection between unmanaged stormwater and environmental degradation; appreciating the role of the individual citizen or neighborhood-level actions in ameliorating this problem; and becoming familiar with and accepting GI within the community." This paper focuses on the barriers of educating community members on GI, its benefits, and best management practices for maintenance.

2.2. The Need for Citizen-Architects within a Sustainable and Resilient City

The use of citizen science (also called participatory or community-based monitoring) has gain popularity in the last several decades. Literature defines a citizen-scientist as a member of the public who collects and analyzes data relating to the natural world, typically as part of a collaborative project with professional scientists (Roy et al. 2012). Extending from this definition, this paper defines a new citizen-architect as urban actors who claim agency in the design and long-term performance of built solutions in their community, typically as part of a collaborative project with professional architects. When applied to GI, there citizen-architects advocate for and maintain decentralized infrastructure modes in their communities.

Despite the growth of citizen science, literature has consistently raised concerns with the accuracy of data collected (Law et al. 2017). Other studies raise concerns about the lack of evaluation of participant learning outcomes. One recent study found that through pre and post survey analysis that the learning outcomes for citizen-scientists were not being achieved despite the collection of data (Druschke and Seltzer, 2012). These critiques of citizen science hit at the foundational objectives to conduct research while changing the public perception of the value of science. Extending these lessons to the formulation of a citizen architecture, this study sought to evaluate learning outcomes and the change in the participant's agency to impact the environment around them. Citizen architecture can expand the public's knowledge of the built environment around them and increase the perceived value of design.

2. METHOD

2.1. Study Area

The Sonoran Desert City of Tucson, Arizona is the area of study for this paper. Tucson faces two pressing and seemingly opposed challenges: (1) a projected shortage in local potable water supplies in the coming decades and (2) a seasonal excess of damaging floods from heavy monsoon rains. Tucson currently imports over a third of its water from the Colorado River 336 miles away, yet concurrently has the highest yearly extreme storm count across Western US Metropolitan Statistical Areas (MSAs) (Bakkensen and Johnson 2017). These urban water extremes affect citizens directly and disproportionately. Tucson averages $9.5 million in property losses each year from flooding in the city center where stormwater infrastructure was historically not installed, mainly in lower income areas (Bakkensen and Johnson 2017). Tucson has a unique stormwater management history. The majority of the urban center of Tucson does not currently have storm water piping. Streets were designed to carry the heavy rain flows that occur during the winter and monsoon seasons to washes throughout the city. Over time, the city grew and greatly shifted its majority pervious land cover to impervious. This currently results in annual flooding in parts of the city leading to chronic property damage and loss in transportation accessibility. To address these issues, the County and City are working to collaboratively develop and optimize a network of sites that will address current flooding issues and retrofit Tucson with a new, softer, GI.

2.2. The Creation of the Monsoon Game

Twelve Bachelors of Architecture and Master of Architecture students led by one professor worked together during a Fall 2018 upper-level architecture studio to develop an interactive, didactive card game called Monsoon. The twelve students used the sites and prototypical GI interventions they were designing throughout Tucson for their studio course as the starting point for the cards game. The overall flood mitigation numbers computed by the County through base hydrological modeling were used to generate a scoring system that communicated the relative impact of each type of site and each system of prototypical pieces. During the semester, the studio shared three version of the game with the director of the K-12 education organization, Project Wet, and the community outreach director of Pima County Regional Flood Control District to gain critical feedback. The game evolved from a highly quantitative, competitive game to one that was collaborative with mission cards and simplified numbers to signify the relative impact of mitigating flooding at each site.

2.3. The Rules of the Monsoon Game

The Monsoon game (Figure 1)contains: Prototype Cards (68 total, each featuring a component of a flood mitigation system), Mission Cards (36 total, each describing a location in Tucson and a mission statement specific to the site), tokens (40 total, used for marking each site location based on the success of the mission), a map (the base of game, used as reference for mission card locations), and a timer (1 total, sand hourglass used for timing each round). In the game, players collaboratively construct water harvesting systems to mitigate flooding and address other urban challenges (e.g. heat island impact or habitatforurbanwildlife)forrealsitesinTucson. Eachsitetheplayerswinismarkedonamap. Together the winning sites form a network of decentralized infrastructure for an aggregate impact on the city. The rules of the game are as follows:

STARTING THE GAME

1. Thoroughly shuffle the two decks.
2. Deal prototype cards to each player as directed: 2 players/10 cards, 3 players/7 cards, 4 players/5 cards, 5 players/4 cards, 6 players/3 cards

PLAYING THE GAME

3. Start the 30 second timer by flipping it over and begin reading the mission card.
4. Players must work together to find three prototype cards that satisfy the needs of the mission card.
5. Prototype cards must match the mission card in order to be counted.

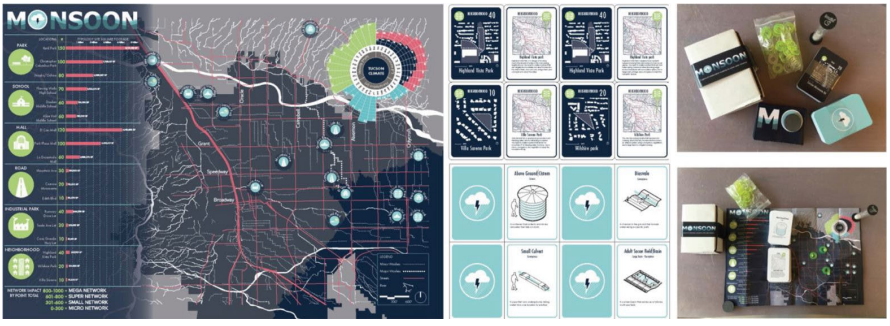


Figure 1. Pieces of the Monsoon Game. Source: (Author 2019 and ARC451b fall studio students 2018)

6. When the timer runs out or the mission card is satisfied, the round is over.
7. If the mission was accomplished in the allotted time, place a green token on the designated site on the map. If the mission was not accomplished, place a white token on the designated site on the map.
8. Replenish used prototype cards to make sure all players maintain 4 cards.
9. All played prototype cards are to be discarded into a used pile to be re-shuffled when the prototype deck is exhausted.
10. Repeat this process until all sites have been played. In the event that another mission card is pulled for an already played site, discard that mission to the bottom of the deck.
WINNING THE GAME
11. Once all mission sites have been played, count the total number of green tokens on the map.
12. Based on the number of green tokens, the title breakdown is as follows: 0-299 Micro Network, 300- 499 Small Network, 500-799 Super Network, 800-1000 Mega Network.

2.4. Engaging Citizen-Architects: High School and University Students

Two groups of students were engaged to play Monsoon: (1) seven freshmen high school students from a local school and (2) eighteen upper-level (non-architecture) university students from University of Arizona. The number in each class was determined by enrollment and student attendance on the day of the scheduled activity and survey. The high school students were engaged through their art class that was learning about urban development and sustainability. The Monsoon game was used by the teacher to teach students about water harvesting concepts and the potential impact they, as citizens, can have on the local landscape and water conservation goals. The university students had limited exposure to architecture, engineering, or design coursework. The Monsoon game was played in the middle of the semester in a general studies course, after students had learned general concepts about urban sustainability. The students had not yet learned about water management, conservation, or GI. For both student groups, the Monsoon game was their first introduction through coursework to GI concepts.

2.5. Evaluating the Impact of Monsoon: Pre-Activity and Post-Activity Surveys

To evaluate the impact of playing Monsoon, all students were given a pre-activity and post-activity survey. The surveys were administered through an online survey interface run through the Qualtrics software. This software anonymized the responses from the participants and created a uniform survey experience. Students took the survey in the classroom either with their smartphone or laptop computer. The pre- activity survey had nine questions and established the student's awareness and locations of a flooding problem in Tucson, understanding of the term GI and the many components of GI (e.g. basin, curb cut, bioswale, culvert, etc.), co-benefits of GI, perceived effectiveness of GI, and total agency as a citizen to make an impact in reducing flooding. The post-activity survey had eleven questions. These eleven questions repeated the nine questions from the pre-activity survey and introduced two new question asking the student to rate the overall impact that Monsoon had on their perceived ability to reduce flooding.

3. RESULTS

Results from the pre and post survey were analyzed to determine the impact that playing the Monsoon game had on the high school and university students (the potential citizen-architects). Survey comparison sought to assess the students' change in understanding, change in perception of the effectiveness of

GI, and change in perceived personal agency to impact their built environment as citizen-architects.

3.1. Understanding

Overall, students showed a marked increase in their awareness that Tucson had flooding issues, understanding of the term GI, and knowledge of the component pieces of a GI design after playing Monsoon (Figure 2 and Table 1). Most significant was the change in student understanding of the term GI and the components of a GI design. Although many students claimed to "know a little bit" about GI before playing Monsoon, after playing the game the 72% reported to be "somewhat knowledgeable" to "very knowledgeable" (as compared to 44% in the pre-activity survey). The number of responses to the prompt "please select the terms on which you have knowledge" significantly increased from the pre- activity survey, from 148 to 226 responses.

The concepts that were significantly better or newly understood by the participates were: Round about basin that went from 3 to 8, edible vegetation from 14 to 20, site inlet berm from 1 to 7, street berm from 4 to 10, micro basin from 5 to 15 and large basin from 5 to 17. However, all the concepts increased for at least one participant.

3.2. Perceived Effectiveness of Green Infrastructure

Students showed a marked change in their perception of the ability of GI to help address flooding problems in Tucson after playing Monsoon. Student selection of "can make a big difference" and "can solve all flooding in the city" shifted from 52% to 84% in the post-activity survey (Figure 3). These results show that the game may even contribute to an exaggerated understanding of the capacity of GI to influence flooding issues as GI is not capable of completely addressing very large

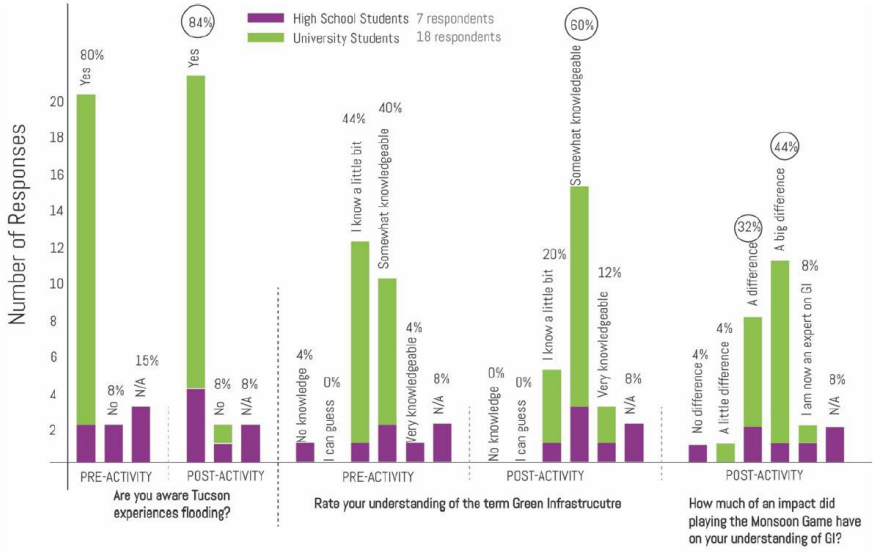


Figure 2. Responses on Understanding. Source: (Author 2020)

	"Please select all the terms below on which you have knowledge"					
Options	High School students			University students		
	PRE	POST	% Change	PRE	POST	% Change
Large basin	1	1	**0%**	4	16	**300%**
Micro-basin	2	2	**0%**	3	13	**333%**
Curb cut	3	3	**0%**	7	13	**86%**
Above ground basin	1	2	**50%**	7	9	**29%**
Bioswale	-	-	**0%**	2	4	**100%**
Culvert	1	1	**0%**	4	6	**50%**
Channel	1	1	**0%**	12	14	**17%**
Community garden	2	2	**0%**	18	19	**6%**
Corner basin	1	-	**0%**	2	5	**150%**
Permeable concrete	1	2	**50%**	11	15	**36%**
Street berm	2	1	**-50%**	3	8	**167%**
Site inlet grate	-	-	**0%**	1	7	**600%**
Native vegetation	2	3	**50%**	13	17	**31%**
Underground cistern	2	2	**0%**	7	12	**71%**
Edible vegetation	2	3	**50%**	11	18	**64%**
Check dam	-	-	**0%**	2	3	**50%**
Round about basins	1	2	**50%**	1	7	**600%**
Urban agriculture	1	2	**50%**	13	17	**31%**

Table 1. Responses on Knowledge of Green Infrastructure Components. Source: (Author 2020)

volumes of flooding. The number of responses on the question "which community urban issue can GI impact in addition to flooding?" increased from 111 in the pre-activity survey to 128 in the post-activity (Figure 3). Although this participation is a marked increase, students indicated a general awareness of the ability of GI to have multiple benefits for a community before playing the game.

3.3. Perceived Agency

Finally, students showed a marked change in their own perceived agency after playing Monsoon. Selection of "can make a difference" and "can make a big difference" shifted from 32% in the pre-activity survey to 48% in the post-activity survey (Figure 4). On the question (only on the post-activity survey) that directly asked students to rate the impact Monsoon had on their change in perceived agency, 88% reported that it some type of "difference" (Figure 4).

4. DISCUSSION

4.1. Understanding Green Infrastructure: Educating the Citizen-Architect

The Monsoon game was effective at changing the level of understanding by students of GI, its components, and its effectiveness at addressing flooding and providing other co-benefits. There was a surprising level of prior comprehension of GI in the pre-activity survey. Similar to Baptiste et al. (2015), most citizens

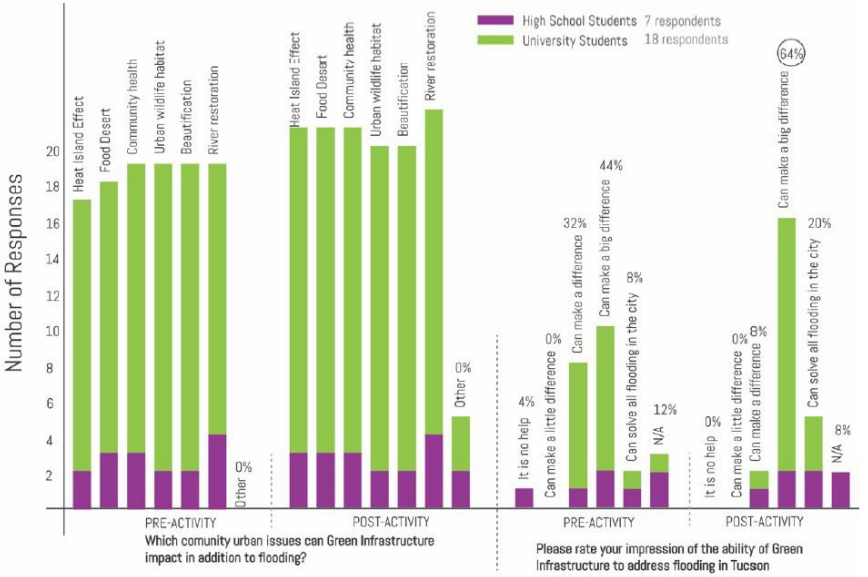


Figure 3. Responses on Perceived Effectiveness of Green Infrastructure. Source: (Author 2020)

had previously heard of the term. Thus, the challenge of the Monsoon game (and other future citizen-architect engagements) is to fill in the public perception gaps identified in the GI literature. Keeley et al. (2013, p 1103) underline a gap identified by their research on GI outreach of "making the connection between unmanaged stormwater and environmental degradation; appreciating the role of the individual citizen or neighborhood-level actions in ameliorating this problem; and becoming familiar with and accepting GI within the community." Among the university students, the substantial change in understanding of the components and functioning of a GI system was a promising result where students went beyond basic understanding to acquire a greater mastery of GI system components to be in a better place to plan, design, and maintain such systems. Finally, the game also supported student comprehension of the effectiveness of GI installations. This marked change in perceived effectiveness (from 52% in pre-activity to 84% in post-activity survey) is critical to bridging the gap between knowledge of GI and motivation to advocate for and maintain installations within a community.

4.2. Instilling Agency: The Responsibility of Professional and Academic Architecture to Train Citizen-Architects

Overall, 88% of the students responded that the Monsoon Game made some difference in their sense of agency to reduce flooding in their community. Professional and academic architects are called upon to broaden architecture and include community members in sustaining the long term performance of realized designs. GI installations are challenged by lack of design standards and best management practices for maintenance (CWAA 2011). Citizen-architects can help

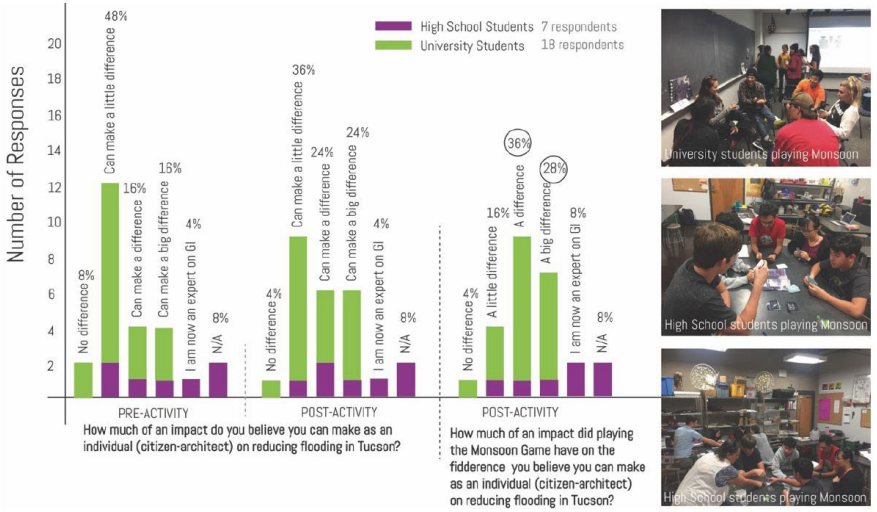


Figure 4. Perceived Agency. Source: (Author 2020)

the municipality maintain GI installations in their community to sustained designed performance and create more tailored and specific standards through this experience. Further, citizen-architects can help address the challenge of dispersed infrastructure. As they are the ones regularly seeing the installations, they can provide the municipality with important feedback and monitoring.

The Monsoon Game can be improved in several ways. As a tool the game depends of a strategic plan for educating throughout communities where GI has been recently installed. The students included in this study were helpful for understanding the effectiveness of the game, but dissemination of the game through a holistic community education strategy needs to be tested. Further, the success of this educational strategy can also be assessed through longitudinal observations of the GI installations in the communities with trained citizen-architects. Continuous education and training every several years is needed to ensure that new community members are provided information and formerly trained members retain knowledge and agency.

CONCLUSION

The purpose of this study was to engage high school and university students without an architecture background in the conceptualization and maintenance of decentralized GI systems. A game called Monsoon was designed and used for the engagement of these young citizens. The strategy followed a citizen-science paradigm where non-scientists are engaged in science-based goals. Similarly, the game sought to connect non-architects with urban design and sustainability objectives.

Results show that the game was successful at increasing student understanding of the purpose of GI, the system components, the target performance, and expanding perceived agency over flooding issues in

their communities. The paper concludes that the Monsoon game can educate young, citizen-architects about new paradigms of infrastructure to advocate for the implementation and performance of decentralized solutions within their community. Young citizen-architects can be trained and empowered by professional and academic architects to promote and sustain new designs for decentralized infrastructures in their comunities.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

ARCH 451b/510f studio course students: Amal Anoohi, Orianna Cascarano, Jeremy Goodman, Nan Liang, Rachel Low, Chung Lin, Peraya Mongkolwong, Madison Neperud, Irina Olson, Soha Sabet, Jason Sciarrotta, and Thomas Yazzie.

REFERENCES

Bakkensen, Laura and Riana Johnson. "The Economic Impacts of Extreme Weather: Tucson and Southern Arizona's Current Risks and Future Opportunities." *Making Action Possible,* 2017.

Baptiste, April Karen, Catherine Foley, and Richard Smardon. "Understanding urban neighborhood differences in willingness to implement green infrastructure measures: a case study of Syracuse, NY." *Landscape and Urban Planning* 136 (2015): 1-12.

Barnhill, Kathleen, and Richard Smardon. "Gaining ground: green infrastructure attitudes and perceptions from stakeholders in Syracuse, New York." *Environmental practice* 14, no. 1 (2012): 6-16.

Chini, Christopher M., James F. Canning, Kelsey L. Schreiber, Joshua M. Peschel, and Ashlynn S. Stillwell. "The green experiment: Cities, green stormwater infrastructure, and sustainability." *Sustainability* 9, no. 1 (2017): 105.

Clean Water America Alliance. "Barriers and gateways to green infrastructure." Clean Water America Alliance: Washington, DC, 137 (2011).

Druschke, Caroline Gottschalk, and Carrie E. Seltzer. "Failures of engagement: Lessons learned from a citizen science pilot study." *Applied Environmental Education&Communication* 11, 3-4 (2012): 178-188.

Environmental Protection Agency. "What is Green Infrastructure?" EPA: Washington DC (2020).

Jaffe, Martin. "Environmental reviews & case studies: reflections on Green Infrastructure economics." *Environmental Practice* 12, no. 4 (2010): 357-365.

Keeley, Melissa, Althea Koburger, David P. Dolowitz, Dale Medearis, Darla Nickel, and William Shuster. "Perspectives on the use of green infrastructure for stormwater management in Cleveland and Milwaukee." *Environmental management* 51, no. 6 (2013): 1093-1108.

Law, Edith, Krzysztof Z. Gajos, Andrea Wiggins, Mary L. Gray, and Alex Williams. "Crowdsourcing as a tool for research: Implications of uncertainty." In Proceedings of the 2017 *ACM Conference on Computer Supported Cooperative Work and Social Computing*, pp. 1544-1561. 2017.

Roy, Helen E., Michael JO Pocock, Chris D. Preston, David B. Roy, J. Savage, J. C. Tweddle, and L. D. Robinson. "Understanding citizen science and environmental monitoring: final report on behalf of UK Environmental Observation Framework." (2012).

Tzoulas, Konstantinos, Kalevi Korpela, Stephen Venn, Vesa Yli-Pelkonen, Aleksandra Kaźmierczak, Jari Niemela, and Philip James. "Promoting ecosystem and human health in urban areas using Green Infrastructure: A literature review." *Landscape and urban planning* 81, no. 3 (2007): 167-178.

PAPER #8.07

SPACES OF DIFFERENCE AND ASSOCIATION: ISLAMIST POLITICS AND URBAN ENCOUNTERS AMONG HETERODOX MINORITIES IN TURKEY

Bülent Batuman[a]
[a] Bilkent University, Ankara, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Alevis –a large religious minority of 10-15 million in Turkey– have historically suffered marginalization due to the state's strict endorsement of Sunni Islam. The Alevi demands have become vocal since the 1990s in what has been called Alevi renaissance: the Alevis insist on their difference from Sunni Islam and demand the recognition of their rituals and practices, yet the Turkish state persists that Alevism is a branch of Islam. Within this perspective, the mosque is the sole space of worship in Islam, and Alevi shrines (*cemevi*) cannot officially be accepted as temples.

The last two decades under the Islamist Justice and Development Party (AKP) led to two significant phenomena which made Alevism a challenge to the Turkish establishment. The first is the expanding role played by Sunni Islam in the definition of the national identity. Alevis increasingly feel that they are denied recognition and forced to abide by Sunni practices. The second phenomenon is the gradual urbanization of Alevism due to rural-to-urban migration. These two dynamics brought about an unforeseen outcome: the urban environment became the site of encounter for various strands of Alevis facing the growing dominance of Islamism.

This paper discusses the predicaments of this encounter through the case of Adana in southern Turkey. Being a major industrial city and the center of an agricultural hinterland, it has received migrant (Turkish and Kurdish) Alevis from Eastern Anatolia; it has also been home to nomadic Alevi tribes of the Taurus Mountains and the local Arab Alawites. All these groups call themselves Alevi and the venues built by their NGOs facilitate interaction among them. I will analyze this new phenomenon through a number of recently built buildings and the architectural dialogue they display through spatial and iconographic analyses of the buildings and the interviews conducted with architects and NGO representatives.

KEYWORDS

Alevism; islamism; heterodox Islam; *cemevi.*

INTRODUCTION

The relationship between Islamism and the built environment has been under scholarly scrutiny for the past few years due to the increasing political influence of Islam (AlSayyad and Massoumi 2010, Desplat and Schulz 2012, Deeb and Harb 2013, Batuman 2018). While politicization of Islam (and religions in general) is considered in relation to secularism (as a normative condition of non-religiosity), it is also curious to consider the political responses of minority faith groups. In this respect, this paper focuses on the politicization of heterodox Islamic groups who are threatened by the rise of Islamism in Turkey. The case in point here is the Alevis –a large religious minority of 10-15 million. The last two decades under the Islamist Justice and Development Party (AKP) led to two significant phenomena which made Alevism a challenge to the Turkish establishment. The

first is the increasing role played by Sunni Islam in the definition of Turkish nationalism and the national identity. Alevis increasingly feel that they are denied recognition and forced to abide by Sunni practices. The second phenomenon is the gradual urbanization of Alevism due to rural-to-urban migration. This process has brought about an unforeseen outcome: the urban environment became the site of encounter for various strands of Alevism cutting across ethnic divisions in Turkey. Particularly the increasing influence of Islamism is forcing the Alevis to reconsider their identities with respect to the changing definition of what constitutes the "national."

I will discuss the predicaments of this encounter through the case of Adana in southern Turkey. Being a major industrial city and the center of an agricultural hinterland, Adana has received migrant (Turkish) Alevis from Eastern Anatolia, Kurdish Alevis from the same region and shelters nomadic Alevi tribes of the Taurus Mountains (called Tahtacı) and the local Arab Alawites (Nusayri). All these groups call themselves Alevi and the increasing number of venues built by their NGOs challenge the dichotomy of Islamism versus secularism. I will analyze this new phenomenon through a number of recently built buildings and the architectural dialogue among them, after discussing Islamist attempts at controlling the production of Alevi spaces. My analysis is based on fieldwork conducted in late 2019 which included site visits to the buildings under discussion as well as interviews with their architects and the representatives of Alevi NGOs.[1]

1. ALEVISM: A BRİEF HISTORY

Alevism is the second largest faith after Sunni Islam in Turkey. It combines elements from Shiism and Sufism as well as local rituals and traditions in Eastern Anatolia (Dressler 2013). The Alevi ritual is called "*cem*" and their shrines are called *cemevi* (house of *cem*). Alevis had historically suffered from the centralization of the Ottoman Empire beginning from the sixteenth century. Their suppression took the form of systematic Islamization and Turkification in the 19th century (Lord 2017, 55-6). This trend was also followed in republican nation-building despite relief from persecution. Sunni Islam would be a major component of the national identity and the Directorate of Religious Affairs (DRA), which was established in 1923 to control religious activities in the country, would not accept Alevism as a separate belief system. The DRA persists that Alevism is a branch of Islam and denies official status to the *cemevi*. Moreover, due to the oppression Alevis faced for centuries, *cemevi* does not display a specific architectural typology; in the villages the houses of the clerics -called *dede*- had been used for *cem* gatherings.

As a result of the continuous exclusion, Alevism maintained its rural character up until the second half of the 20th century. Similar to other parts of the developing world, Turkish metropolises experienced massive rural to urban migration after the 1950s. Major cities were quickly surrounded with squatter settlements built illegally on public land. The squatter neighborhoods were seen as a threat to the urban order especially with the rise of social movements across the country (Batuman 2006). In this context, Alevi neighborhoods in the squatter areas were marked by left wing politics ranging from left-of-center Republican People's Party to clandestine socialist organizations in the 1970s.

The 1980s witnessed a shift in urbanization policies in Turkey: building amnesties allowed the replacement of single-story squatter homes into 4-5 story apartment buildings

[1] The interviews are numbered to maintain anonymity of the interviewees from the NGOs. Interview 1: representative from Hacı Bektaş Veli Anadolu Kültür Vakfı (26.10.2019), Interview 2: user of Şakirpaşa Cemevi (26.10.2019), Interview 3: representatives from Alevi Kültür Dernekleri (25.10.2019), Interview 4: Nusayri representative from the Alevi Platform (25.10.2019); Interview 5: architect Serhat Nisanoğlu (26.10.2019).

(Işık and Pınarcıoğlu 2001, 161-65). This process also transformed the old squatters into an urban petty bourgeoisie demanding recognition. The majority of this new class would provide the initial base of Islamism in the 1990s (Batuman 2018, 64-66). In a similar way, Alevis also began to raise demands for recognition of their rituals and practices, insisting on their difference from Sunni Islam. This process in which new Alevi organizations were founded and new debates on Alevi identity flourished has been labelled as "Alevi renaissance" (White and Jongerden 2003, Part IV).

The architecture of *cemevi* has also become a topic of investigation in the 1990s, parallel to attempts at promoting modern designs addressing contemporary needs (Andersen 2015). This was an urgent need on the one hand due to the increasing prominence of identity politics (not unlike the contemporaneous expansion of intellectual debates among Islamists). But it was also due to the urbanization of Alevism, which, for centuries maintained a rural character. Within this context, *cemevi* assumed the function of representing Alevi identity beyond faith, encompassing educational and cultural activities attended by even non-practicing Alevis (Akın 1996; Aslan 2015).

2. ISLAMIST GOVERNMENT AND ALEVISM: AN ARCHITECTURAL ATTEMPT AT ASSIMILATION

The early years of the AKP in power was a fierce struggle against the secularist establishment led by the military. In its quest for power, the AKP allied with different political actors ranging from liberals to nationalists depending on the immediate needs of the conjuncture. Thus, the AKP was attentive to Alevi demands in the early years of its rule and a series of workshops were organized toward an "Alevi opening" in 2009-2010 (Alemdar and Çorbacıoğlu 2012). The workshops did not achieve any result and they were dropped from the agenda after the elections in 2011, which marked the clear victory of the Islamist government over the secularist establishment. A new initiative emerged in 2013, spearheaded by the Gülen movement, the largest among Turkish Islamist groups with international network and influences. The Gülen movement saw itself an equal partner of the AKP since it provided well-educated cadres which were vital to take over the bureaucracy (Turam, 2007; Hendrick, 2013). The cooperation between the two parties later turned into a deadly clash and led to a failed military coup in 2016, in which Gülenist officers played an important role. The new initiative towards Alevis involved mosque-*cemevi* complexes, with the claim to serve the association of beliefs. The first of these was begun construction in Tuzluçayır, a low-income Alevi quarter in Ankara, in September 2013. However, the project was perceived as an attempt to force the Alevis to attend the mosque and was met with opposition from some Alevi organizations, although some others endorsed it (Mutluer 2014: 155-6).

The mosque-*cemevi* complex proposed for Tuzluçayır comprises three main components: mosque, *cemevi* and *aşevi* (soup kitchen) organized around a courtyard.[2] While the former two spaces are for religious performance, the *aşevi* is a traditional part of Alevi culture. Yet, within the current conditions of Turkish urbanization, the emphasis put on *aşevi* as a connector between mosque and *cemevi,* rather than an extension of the latter, dislocates it and places within the context of charity activities of the Islamist municipalities. The architecture of the complex embodies references to the Mevlana Shrine in Konya, the center of the Sufi order, where its patron saint Celaleddin Rumi lived in the thirteenth century. Embodying his tomb as well, the shrine enjoyed imperial patronage in the sixteenth century due to the order's pro-

[2] The analysis of the building I am presenting here has previously been published in Author (2018, 49-50).

establishment stance. The choice of Mevlana for inspiration is not a coincidence since he is today recognized as an advocate of humanism and tolerance.

The Mevlana shrine, especially its sixteenth century extension comprises a prismatic mass with two main halls (a prayer hall and a *semahane* for the order's trademark whirling ceremony), covered by identical domes with octagonal drums. There is a minaret attached to the western wall, which was later confined within the building with later extensions. The mosque-*cemevi* complex interestingly seems to emulate this juxtaposition within a shared courtyard, if not the same building. Nevertheless, it is hard to say that the two spaces of worship are treated equally in this scheme. The architectural form of dome is allocated only to the mosque and it is taller than the polygonal hipped roof of the *cemevi*. While the *cemevi* is accessed only through the courtyard, there is a direct entrance to the mosque from the street. Thus, the Sunni worshippers do not need to use the common courtyard. The courtyard is a characteristic feature of the traditional Turkish mosques and when they exist, they contain the main gate to the prayer hall. That is, the courtyard always has visual access to the interior through the gate as well as windows. Yet, here, the mosque space, although it has a lesser door to the courtyard, is cut off from this unifying open space with the walls of the staircase to the minaret. The minaret, unconventionally, yet resembling the current condition of the one in Mevlana shrine, is within the mosque massing, towering over the courtyard.

Figure 1. The abandoned condition of the mosque-cemevi complex

While protests continued in Tuzluçayır, the government pushed the construction, which was only possible with constant police presence (Yürekli 2016, 284). Although the government was eager to finish the building despite protests from the locals, the clash that escalated between the AKP and the Gülen movement suddenly rendered the project obsolete. Construction was stopped and the building was sealed (Figure 1). The municipality decided to demolish the complex finally responding to the locals' legal applications calling for the cancellation of the project. Nevertheless, the violent attempt to implement the mosque-cemevi complexes led to convergence among various Alevi groups and organizations.

3. ENCOUNTER OF ALEVISMS

3.1. The urban context of Adana

Here, I shall move on to the context of my inquiry, which is the city of Adana. Adana was an important settlement in the historical region of Cilica. The city is the center of the fertile Çukurova plain and currently has a population of 1.7 million. The expansion of large farms and the emergence of cotton-based industry triggered social conflict in the late 19th century, which resulted in massacres of the Armenians in 1909. While the Armenian population diminished especially after 1915, the local population comprised Turks and Arabs; the latter was identified as Nusayri-Alawites. The belief system of the Nusayri is closer to Shiism and shares very little with both Sunni Islam and the heterodoxy of Alevism (Winter 2016). Approximately 300,000 Nuysaris are settled in the southern Turkish provinces of Adana, Mersin and Hatay.

In Adana, much of the community is located in the southern fringes of the city, where their major religious spaces are single-roomed, mudbrick shrines (*ziyaret*) that are built and named to mark the burial places of important religious figures.

Adana also experienced massive rural-to-urban migration in the postwar period. The influx of migrants from Eastern Anatolian villages included Turkish and Kurdish Alevis. Moreover, the massacres in smaller Anatolian towns against Alevis also resulted in middle-class Alevi migration into Adana. Finally, with the escalation of armed conflict between the Kurdish insurgents and the Turkish military in the 1990s triggered a new wave of -this time forced- migration, in which Adana was one of the major destinations.

Within this context, the 1990s was a scene for significant urban transformations leading to interactions among these minority groups. The arrival of impoverished Kurdish immigrants triggered ethnic tensions between the Kurdish and Arab minorities as the former arrived in the southern districts where the latter were historically settled. Meanwhile, middle-class Nusayri began to move to the modern districts of the city in the north (Keser 2008, 123-40). Alevi identity, which had historically been concealed in the public sphere, served as a mediator for the Kurdish Alevi in the face of anti-Kurdish hostility.

As I have mentioned earlier, all ethnic and religious groups were affected by identity politics and demanded some level of recognition in the 1990s. The most striking aspect of this was the architecture of the shrines, which were denied official status whether it be the *cemevi* of the Alevi or the *ziyaret* of the Nusayri. Below, I will discuss the architectures of these shrines and the growing interaction among them through four projects in Adana: two *cemevi* designed in different periods, one recent Nusayri *ziyaret*, and a cultural center under construction to be collectively used by all Alevi groups in the city.

3.2. From shrines to spaces of encounter

Since they are denied official status as religious shrines, the *cemevi* are officially built as cultural centers since the 1990s. The design of the *cemevi* embodies a prevailing tension: on the one hand it is supposed to represent the Alevi identity in the absence of a historical typology. On the other hand, it is required to embody modern architectural solutions to various rituals in addition to *cem* gatherings (such as soup kitchens and funeral facilities) while also acting as a communal space of gathering to attract the non-practicing Alevis. Within this context, the denial of religious status to the *cemevi* turns these buildings into venues with ambiguous -and at times ambitious- architectural programs including libraries, study rooms, exhibition spaces and conference halls as well as butcheries added to kitchens and morgues integrated to funerary spaces. The expanding programs force the *cemevi* to turn into urban community centers rather than religious shrines to the dismay of older generations. The lack of historical precedence opens room for experimentation with architectural idioms, which is effectively pursued with the growing number of architectural competitions.

However, this was not the case in the 1990s. One of the earliest attempts to build a *cemevi* in Adana began with the purchase of a peripheral lot by the Haci Bektas Veli Anadolu Kultur Vakfı in the mid-1990s. The project was designed by an architect based in Ankara towards the end of the decade. The ambitious program of the 6000 m2 building included a *cem* hall on the top floor, a conference hall, a multi-purpose hall equipped for wedding ceremonies, a dining hall with a kitchen, a library, classrooms, exhibition spaces and a morgue. The backyard has a canopy for funerals. While the extent of the program resulted in delays in construction which was finished only in 2014, there is also a stark contrast between the ambitious architectural program and the building's overall image

(Figure 2). From the outside, the building resembles a public building, a school perhaps, with its cubic mass and the hidden skylight of the *cem* hall.

Figure 2. Yüzüncü Yıl Cemevi in Adana

The design dated back to the 1990s illustrates the ambitions regarding the expansion of functions, but it also symptomatically refrains from displaying its identity. It contains liturgic references such as the numbers 3 and 12, which are "visible yet hidden." Nevertheless, the two decades between the conception of the building and its opening witnessed significant transformations that also led to changes in its use. Currently, the large courtyard in front of the building is used for mass gatherings of 15-20 thousand such as *Ashura*, where the cooking as well as distributing the ashure dish takes place. The courtyard also has a raised platform used as a concert stage. The officials in charge of the *cemevi* take pride in the building's use by various groups ranging from Tahtacı Alevis spending winters in the city and summers in their mountain villages to the Sunni Muslims attending the events with curiosity (Interview 1). They emphasize that the *cemevi* is used by various ethnic and religious groups not only for cultural activities such as the popular chess tournaments but even for funerals. Yet, they would not allow for the use of Arabic -which they perceive as an instrument of Sunni oppression- unless the dead is of Arabic origin. The same goes for Kurdish: the language is reduced to mother tongue, where Turkish, Kurdish and Arabic are treated equally.

The second example is a *cemevi* located in a mixed neighborhood with Nusayri landowners and (mostly Kurdish) Alevi migrants. It was designed and built by the municipality in 2018. The three-floor building has 1280 square meters of floor area, and has a dining hall on the first floor, classrooms on the second floor and the *cem* hall on top. Although the conical skylight is also not visible from the outside, the *cem* hall is indicated within the façade organization (Figure 3). The building represents a negotiation between the Alevi and the Nusayri, since it was an undertaking of the Nusayri mayor, who convinced Nusayri landowners for the construction of the *cemevi* here. He was also successful in raising funds among middle-class (mostly Turkish) Alevis to build the *cemevi* in this predominantly Kurdish neighborhood. The members of the community report on their growing integration with the Nusayri neighbors through the example of inter-group marriages which they previously disapproved (Interview 2).

The 1990s also witnessed the emergence of Nusayri NGOs and the transformation of their shrines (Keser 2008, 182-97). The old ones were mudbrick huts with single spaces, sometimes including a grave. The major

Figure 3. Şakirpaşa Cemevi in Adana

ones were frequently visited by pilgrims from the region (Procházka- Eisl and Procházka 2010; Prager 2013). The religious rituals of the Nusayri were generally organized in the courtyards of the houses but larger *ziyarets* were also used. The rituals involve cooking of a special dish (*hrisi*) made with sacrificial meat and its distribution to the community. Another important ritual is condolences, which would take place at the funeral home. In the 1990s, additions were made to *ziyarets*, which sometimes overshadowed the shrines. They embodied architectural programs incorporating practices of communal worship that previously took place in the private spaces of the home. Similar to the transformation of the *cemevi* into urban communal spaces, the Nusayri shrines also expanded in functions with spaces for prayer (which is performed in seated position, unlike *cem*, where it is required to touch the ground), rooms for condolence, dining halls and kitchens with butcheries (Figure 4).

Figure 4. The transformation of Sheikh Ahmed Garib ziyaret in Adana from late 1990s to 2019

These buildings displayed no architectural significance and did not contain cultural facilities such as libraries, conference rooms, etc. like the new *cemevi*. One reason for this was that the Nusayri neighborhoods have always been exclusive and such facilities already exist within the neighborhood. Another reason was that the shrines were destinations of a region-wide pilgrimage network which did not require a recognizable architectural image.

Figure 5. Nebi Nuh ziyaret in Adana

Nevertheless, the new *ziyaret* built at the site of Nebi Nuh (Noah) shrine in 2018, which was the first one designed by a professional architect, is in stark contrast with earlier examples and displays a clear attempt to prioritize its architectural image (Figure 5). The functions in the building are expressed with the differentiation of volumes. While the butchery, the kitchen and the condolence hall are on the ground floor, the main prayer hall on the upper floor is expanded outwards and tilted in both axes. The bold choice to emphasize the prayer hall is further pursued with references to mosque architecture. In addition to the minaret-like unfunctional tower, the prayer hall is sky-lit with a sliced dome. In this way, the religious symbolism of the dome is appropriated yet detached from its Sunni connotations through its

deconstruction. Moreover, the architect has presented her project in a professional journal as *"cemevi"*, which is never used for the Nusayri shrines (Baykam 2019). This is a clear attempt to derive legitimization from the public recognition of the *cemevi.*

The last example represents the materialization of the alliance among Alevi groups in Adana. An Alevi Platform was established in the city in 2014 bringing together twenty organizations including major Alevi associations and the Nusayri NGOs. The Platform has been successful in raising a unified voice in political issues. They also managed to improve collaboration in the organization of religious rituals. For the past few years the Ashura has been organized by the Platform instead of the individual organizations (Interview 4). As a result of the growing alliance the platform applied to the municipality demanding a center that they will use collectively, which would function both as a public venue as well as a site for religious rituals. The main functions which have been common in all the examples I have discussed are also present in this proposal. The building, which was designed in 2018 and is still under construction, is organized around a courtyard (Figure 6). The basement houses both the kitchen and the funerary preparation spaces including a morgue. The ground floor contains a dining hall, a condolence room and workshops. The first floor contains spaces for each of the organizations and a conference hall. The cem hall rises as a solid box covered with timber motifs derived from the octagonal Seljuk star. Finally, the front façade of the courtyard is composed of a portico imitating the entrance of the Haci Bektas Veli tomb, a major Alevi pilgrimage site. The architect, who incidentally is of Nusayri origin, has reported on the discussions he had with the representatives of the organizations (Interview 5). According to him, there is a clear tension between the older generation's desire to identify the building as cemevi, primarily a religious building, and those who wish to see it as a public space of gathering. He emphasized that the architectural elements he added are compromises resulting from the negotiations between various parties including different Alevi groups, the architect and the municipality.

Figure 6. Hanedan Cultural Center in Adana

All four of these recently built buildings are ambiguous as institutions. They are officially cultural centers, which makes it possible to negotiate their architectural programs as well as their images. This ambiguity also opens room for negotiating their public perception swinging between religious shrines and inclusive community centers. The interaction among the Alevi groups is best expressed in the gradual unification of the architectural programs of the *cemevi* and the *ziyaret.* Interestingly, even the rituals began to affect each other. The traditional Ashura of the Alevi is increasingly attended by the Nusayri and its emblematic ashure dish is occasionally adopted by the latter, who have increasingly preferred labeling themselves Arab Alevis. In return, the main Nusayri event *Ghadir Hum* (celebrated as Eid al-Ghadir by the Shiites across the Middle East but not by the Alevis in Turkey) is being recognized by the Alevis, who attend the Nusayri celebrations.

CONCLUSION

The interaction among Alevi groups in Adana is initially a response to the current urban political condition in Turkey. All these groups believe that they are "undesirables" under the Islamist AKP and feel the need to collaborate. The insecurity of the minority groups has further escalated with the Syrian civil war, which triggered anxiety among the Alevi and especially the Nusayri who are associated with the Syrian regime by the Islamists. News reports on the use of refugee camps by Jihadist militants are particularly terrifying for them.

The contemporary Turkish metropolis is marked by the increased potential of political dissent latent in the public space despite the authoritarian measures implemented in the wake of the unsuccessful coup. Under these conditions, the specificity of Adana sheltering various minority groups created conditions for an unexpected alliance cutting through ethnicities. The more the government defines Turkish nationalism with reference to Sunni Islam, the more the minority groups turn to Alevism as a unifying identity which is currently displacing centuries-old architectural traditions. The ambiguous status of their shrines, whether it is the *cemevi* or the *ziyaret,* in this context, turns into spaces of association among the hitherto withdrawn minorities of heterodox Islamic beliefs.

REFERENCES

Akın, G. 1996. "Cemevi Mimarisi Üzerine Notlar." Unpublished report produced for the Cem Cultural House Architectural Competition.

Alemdar, Z. and Çorbacıoğlu, R. 2012. "Alevis and the Turkish State." *Turkish Policy Quarterly* 10(4): 117-24.

AlSayyad, N. and Massoumi, M. eds. 2010. *The Fundamentalist City?: Religiosity and the Remaking of Urban Space*. Oxon and New York: Routledge.

Andersen, A. 2015. *Cem Evleri: An Examination of the Historical Roots and Contemporary Meanings of Alevi Architecture and Iconography*. Unpublished dissertation. Ohio State University.

Aslan, Ş. 2015. "Alevi Toplumunun İnanç, Bir Arada Olma ve Kimlik Mekanı Olarak Cemevi." Unpublished report produced for the Gülsuyu Cemevi Architectural Competition.

Author 2006

Author 2018

Baykam, G. 2019. "Cem Evi ve Taziyehane." *Serbest Mimar* 34: 5.

Deeb, L. and Harb, M. 2013. *Leisurely Islam: Negotiating Geography and Morality in Shi'ite South Beirut*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Desplat, P. and Schulz, D. eds. 2012. *Prayer in the City: The Making of Muslim Sacred Places and Urban Life*. Bielefeld: Transcript-Verlag.

Dressler, M. 2013. *Writing Religion: The Making of Turkish Alevi Islam*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hendrick, J. D. 2013. *Gülen: The ambiguous politics of market Islam in Turkey and the world.* New York and London: New York University Press.

Işık, O. and Pınarcıoğlu, M. 2001. *Nöbetleşe yoksulluk*. Istanbul: İletişim.

Keser, İ. 2008. *Kent, Cemaat, Etnisite*. Ankara: Ütopya.

Lord, C. 2017. "Between Islam and the nation; nation-building, the ulama and Alevi identity in Turkey." *Nations and Nationalism* 23(1): 48-67.

Mutluer, N. 2014. "A Case for Pluralism: the Alevi's Latest Struggle Against Discrimination." *Turkish Policy Quarterly* 13(1): 149–158.

Prager, L. 2013. "Alawi Ziyāra Tradition and Its Interreligious Dimensions: Sacred Places and Their Contested Meanings among Christians, Alawi and Sunni Muslims in Contemporary Hatay (Turkey)." *Muslim World* 103: 41– 61.

Procházka- Eisl, G. and Procházka, S. 2010. T*he Plain of Saints and Prophets: The Nusayri-Alawi Community of Cilicia (Southern Turkey) and Its Sacred Places*. Wiesbaden: Harrossowitz.

Turam, B. 2007. *Between Islam and the State: The Politics of Engagement*. Stanford: Stanford U. Press.

White, P. J. and Jongerden, J. eds. 2003. *Turkey's Alevi Enigma: A Comprehensive Overview.* Leiden and Boston: Brill.

Winter, S. 2016. *A History of the 'Alawis: From Medieval Aleppo to the Turkish Republic.* Princeton and Oxford: Princeton University Press.

Yürekli, Y. 2016. *'Küçük Moskova' Tuzluçayır.* Istanbul: İletişim.

PAPER #8.08

HORIZONTAL EXCHANGES AS A DESIGN METHOD. AFRICA URBANISATION AS A CASE STUDY

Rossella Gugliotta[a]
[a]Politecnico di Torino, Turin, Italy

ABSTRACT

Within a globalised world, it is easy to find community problems, especially outside our boundaries, in countries that are growing up quickly. Therefore, there is the tendency, not only for architects, to direct their efforts for the benefit of society; from it, the participatory approach became a tool in the design process. There are different ways to understand participation in the design process, and each of them can lead to different results: in terms of effects on the building and its grade of acceptance. All of it is directed by the mutual exchange of competences and information between the actors inside the process. In all of these dynamics, the architect is playing a role. Moreover, what happens when the community is one of the main actors inside the urbanisation of a country should be the point to address this research. Through the observation of the urbanisation of sub-Saharan countries and the study of European based studio projects inside the continent, is possible to explain how the participatory approach is not just a manner of design but a process ruled by different interactions. The question is not how to involve the community inside the process but who is driving it out, which role the architect is playing. The core issue is localising in which stage of the process the community is taken into consideration. Meanwhile, the bottom-up method is going to be overlaid by a horizontal exchange became essential to question the reason why this kind of method can be useful inside the process of design. Is it the community approach led just by willingness or it is the result of a complex process of interaction? The main issue remains how much this kind of participation may contribute to a useful involvement for the community inside the project. It can be an opportunity for the community to recognise its identity inside the building, or instead can slip into a mere way to publicise an elusive ethic approach.

KEYWORDS

Design process; sub-saharan Africa; exchange; architect role; design method.

INTRODUCTION

Inside the process of urbanisation of Sub-Saharan Africa that is spreading out in the last ten years, the strong involvement of the community is still one of the main bulwarks inside the process of building and construction of the new face of the continent. Considering it as a unique vehicle for a good design inside the region is still a mistake that this research is trying to avoid. Moreover, foreign architectural studios, many of which are European based one, lead most of the projects developed to increase the services inside the continent (Lepik, 2013). For this reason, the comparison of cases study of built educational facilities in Sub-Saharan Africa made by European based studio gives a general overview of the facts and the typical dynamics that are easily employed inside the process of urbanisation of small urban and rural centres. The number of projects carried out from local architect is inconsistent compared with the European. Each of them,

in different ways, address how the architect is actually playing a different role inside the urbanisation of the country and how straight, or sometimes indirect, communication with client and community leads to a different level of involvement and approach to participation processes.
Architect, client and community are the three main actors taken into consideration during the analysis. Each of them shapes the process of design in a different way; moreover, the mutual interactions characterise the results of each project. All the main actors are placed at the same level to understand the transformation inside the continent. The multiple configurations of the relationship that spreads out give to the reader different point of view of the project that, on the surface, have the same purpose: community interest in the first place.
Starting from an overview of the continent and the brand new directions of the participatory process inside marginalised realities the research lead to unlocking a debate about the urbanisation of the continent from a different point of view; not only economy but also from the operative way of doing architecture.

1. COMMUNITY APPROACH

Inside the books of theory of architecture or design, usually, there is no direct relationship between the architect and the community as a user of the project or deterministic actor of design choices. On the contrary, the community is associated with the terms of society. This word was one of the main issue addressed by the prevailing attitude spreading out in the fifty. The collective vision and the political conception of architecture have given rise to a reaction of internal opposition to the entire system of values that are still rediscovered today by social practice (Biraghi, 2019). In "The architecture of reality", Antonio Monestiroli (1999) even defines the function of the architect as the detector of collective reason. Still, Giancarlo de Carlo was one of the promoters, in Italy, of the participation of the community inside the process of design. Not only as an informed person, moreover, as an active actor inside the design; someone that is taking place inside the process and is shaping it (De Carlo, 2013).
In recent years, the theory shifted from a purely participatory approach to overcoming it. Within a globalised world, it is easy to encounter societal problems, especially outside one's borders, in developing countries. Hence the tendency, not only for architects and designers, to direct their efforts for the benefit of society (Tromp, Hekkert, 2019). A significant number of organisations devote their work on communitarian projects implementing and using the community to archive the goals (Abuom, 2005). Numerous critical issues related to a transcultural approach to architecture undoubtedly accompany this vision (Hernandez, 2012). Especially when the debate is moved to an extra-continental environment, the role of the architect inside the process of transition of different culture became essential. The task of the architect became very complicated, especially in the post-colonial context, as Sub-Saharan Africa can be. There is an essential need for mediation inside the design process. Mediation between two cultures (one of the architects and the one of the community) with the purpose, at the same time, to archive adequate spaces and satisfy the need of the society (Hernandez, 2012). In this environment, the participation of the community to the design process can allow the architect to archive goals that he could not reach by himself. Upstream of all, according to reflective practice, the designer is finding himself again, trying to solve a problem that a previous project has done (Tromp, Hekkert, 2019). According to the definition of Tromp and Hekker, social design based its roots on an effect driven design in which the social effect that the designer would like to obtain depends on the analysis of the behaviour of

the community. The context and its analysis are the ones that are shaping the behaviour thought the final artefact. Between these two levels (social effect of the artefact and behaviour around it) is placed the mediation as a definition of common objectives to arrive, through an approach that takes into account the architect and the community, to a final product that meets the vicissitudes required and in which the community can be recognised (Tromp, Hekkert, 2019). Again the world mediation inside the process of design is coming out to underline how deep can be the relation between the process to obtain a specific artefact and the tangible results. Once again, facing a paradigm of being inside the system but against it (Biraghi, 2019), the architect places himself in a central position of mediation and interaction between the parties. The architect remains the subject that deals with the design, understood as a purely technical and disciplinary fact (Armando, Durbiano, 2017). However, the community is taken as an essential element with which to activate relations and cognitive and interpretative dialogues that lead to a conscious design that reflects shared social values. The architect thus aims at a general involvement able to produce changes starting from small projects of activism within the community system that transforms itself from a static actor concerning which to assume a set of values, to a dynamic subject that generates effects on the design system (Lepik, 2010).

2. RESEARCH APPROACH AFRICA

The African continent was, for a long time, a sort of heterotrophy for occidental designers. Especially in the context of architecture after 2000 began to emerge the tendency of "not-for-profit aid-architecture" (Albrecht, 2014). The prevalence of foreign architects building in Africa is connected with a particular situation of architectural education. The range of architectural school is way lower than the European average, and the number of architects cannot supply the needs of the country (Lepik, 2013). Often European studios to validate the project inside a marginalised reality use this kind of sharing processes between the designer and the community. It is often publicised as a method of integration of the artefact inside the cultural environment, using local materials and employing the villagers as shapers of the project. However, this is not still enough to design and build a good architecture that will supply the need of the community. Numerous are the projects made that are not working. Above all, because of the lack of sense of belonging of the artefact to the community. Static buildings that are not keeping the essence of practical use (Di Campo, 2018). Going deeper into the field is possible to understand how many different points of view can be generated by this kind of approach. Sometimes it is just promotion of intention, but in other cases, internal dynamics can lead to a co-shaped result.

Sub-Saharian Africa, as a case study, leads to understanding the dynamic of cooperation project and the participation of the users inside the project. The research is structured in two different part: the identification of a body of knowledge about African projects and the comparison of five cases study. The first part is based on interactions of different parameters that, through the attention on the role of the architect inside the design project, are going to understand how different relations are giving new interpretations of a participatory approach. Moreover, the primary assumption is asking how the relationship between architect and client are shaping the relation that design has with the local community. Projects in the sub-Saharan country give us the condition to study a phenomenon where the community is still one of the major actors inside the processes of the continent. To have a comparable analysis sample is necessary to fix some

specific characteristic that each architecture should observe. The localisation of the intervention and the year of construction is limited to have a general historical frame that can be comparable inside the sub-Saharan continent. Each case study is focused on instruction building realised from 2000 to 2019 (form when the not-for-profit project by Europe begins till nowadays). For instance, other parameters are taken into consideration to amplify the richness of the sample. That information became essential to define the general assessment inside the panorama of the interventions "not for profit" that are spreading out inside the continent. That will not give a detailed analysis but a general frame to define a common tendency and the most common process of design laded by European based architects.

Moreover, it should be clear how the community could be an influencer inside the urbanisation of the continent. In fact, with a variety of approach, the European architect is searching to emphasise a communitarian sense, local tradition and construction typology. The common element is that most of them would like to involve the community inside the process of design and construction of the building. This approach aims to create conventional narratives that will help the community to recognise deserves inside the building. The architecture in this way will be the vehicle of new practices and social engagement, nonetheless a matter of importance for the interpretation of the tradition. The building in itself is a representation of the community that can shape and reframe social asset and dynamics all around (Africa Architecture Culture Identity, 2015). Case of White Elephants is spreading inside the continent. This kind of project is often characterised of a lack of reality inside the socio-economical condition of the environment (Africa Architecture Culture Identity, 2015). The community became an essential subject helping the architect to take some choice and face with the real problem that should be taken into consideration during the design process.

Among the tasks that European architects aim to develop through projects in Africa is to initiate a new aspiration towards the use of effective techniques. The level of engagement of the community assumes particular importance within the production process, not only concerning the development of an identity feeling that allows the recognition of the community within the building but also to open a sort of reflection and re-evaluation of local experiences (Marschall, 1998). All these practices that are defined as participatory are nothing more, for African culture than common practices of discussion within rural villages (Albrecht, 2014). For years, the self-regulating practices of African rural communities without any administrative system have been studied with fascination (Carbone, 2005). Everyone in the community also has a specific role when it comes to design and which the architect must take into account if he wants to establish a constructive dialogue within the community.

3. AFRICAN PROJECTS

The second part of the research is more focused on the direct observation of chosen case studies. Through a compositive analysis and the interview with the architect, it was possible to frame a critic scenario of the Sub-Saharan continent and the European designer in it.

Many projects inside the continent are experimenting process of participation of the local community. The most crucial difference is the level of participation of the citizen in it. The level of involvement and how architects are dealing with the community is different. To have a general framework, are taken into consideration five case studies: Gando Primary school by Françis Kéré, the communitarian school of N'tyani by Caravatti, Gaugorouboru Primary school by LEVS, the

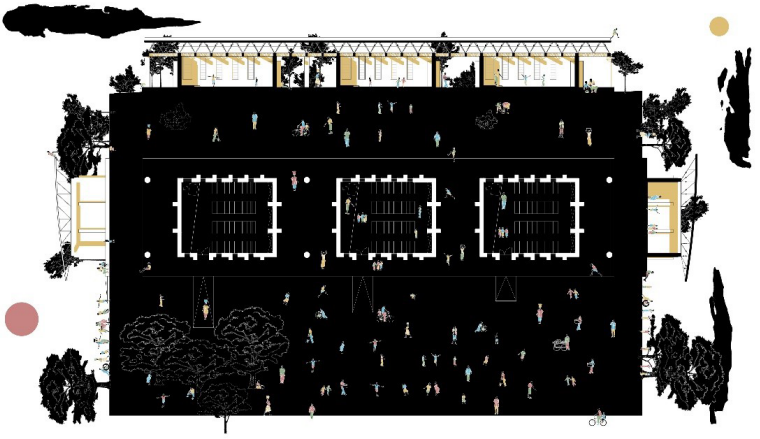


Figure 1. Gando Primary School by Françis Kéré. Source: (Gugliotta R. 2019)

library of Muyinga by BC and 5 Kindergartens by ColectivoMEL. The choice of these cases is led by the willingness of having a brother panorama to understand how different studio, by size and experience in the continent, can have different outcomes on the project. All the studios are European based but apart from the control case (Kéré architect), have not cultural relation with the continent, and some of them were even neophytes in Africa.

As the first case, Françis Kéré reflects the voice outside the chorus against which other designers can be compared. In addition to being widely familiar within the continent, his experience as a citizen of Burkina Faso and designer in the same area, allows him to have a broader general vision and to possess much more in-depth specific skills. With his project of the Gando primary school (Fig. 1), he tried to go deeper inside the process of participation of the community inside the process of design. He knew precisely the need of the community because he was part of it during its life. The same, he was also conscious about the difficulty of getting the community involved in a project coming from outside. The vehiculation of new construction systems, coming from the tradition of the place, were spread out from a long interaction and communication process with the locals. Projet LOCOMAT instructed the men, an agency of the Ministry of Transport promoting the use of local materials and traditional techniques, for making bricks, the children helped transport the stones, and the women supplied water. Each of the members of the community was included to develop belonging and ownership of the building gradually.

Caravatti, a studio in Monza, with projects in Mali since before the early 2000s, presents two types of projects: those carried out for an association of missionaries to which they have been linked for a long time, and those carried out through their own NGO. The Africabougou organisation, which deals with development projects in Malian territory and raising funds for interventions, is recognised in the figure of Emilio and Matteo Caravatti. The association is assimilated directly to designers rather than the studio. Inside the project of the communitarian school of N'tyani, the local community was involved in the design through meetings (an essential method to exchange information) to agree

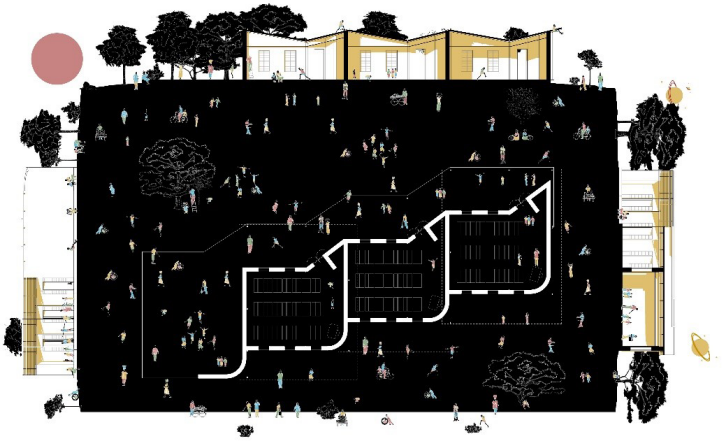


Figure 2. Communitarian School by Caravatti. Source: (Gugliotta R. 2019)

in which times, materials and technologies used. The school was built in raw bricks made by the local population. The interaction that the architect developed inside the community of N'tyani, not only with the primary school (Fig. 2), allows facing a horizontal exchange in which the design is just a small step inside all process of life of the building. They start to develop their project in a territorial grid to have a system of intervention and not just a white mosquito. The building and the community are free to develop by themselves after the intervention.

LEVS, a studio based in Amsterdam and initiated projects in Mali by the figure of Joop van Stigt, as Caravatti holds an NGO, Partners Pays-Dogon, which deals with projects in Mali with a rather significant position concerning the territorial management of interventions. The association plays both the role (client and financial promoter) for which the question remains about the involvement and relevance of the designer in the process that seems, at first glance, to remain marginal, just confined in the design of the object. Besides, where is the community here? Long-lasting relation of architect and community, in this case, is leading the studio to be part also of the community knowing needs and traditions. The same history for Caravatti; instead, they have a different approach when it comes to talking about design and involvement of the community inside the process of development of a new project inside the villages. The Gangouroubouro Primary School (Fig. 3) is mainly composed of a single block with three classrooms and local services. The architect used a "typical Malian" model to build the classroom joint with particular attention on the details of the buildings. In it, the design process leads to an overtaking of the constant dialogue with the community assuming their knowledge built with years inside the continent as detailed enough.

BC architects, a studio directed by two young Belgian designers, have only recently approached the sub-Saharan panorama, boasting numerous workshops and projects in Morocco. Unlike the other two studios, it does not rely on any particular association but is called to design on behalf of ODEDIM NGO, but sees within the process the alternation of many other associations including SATIMO (Belgian NGO) which is

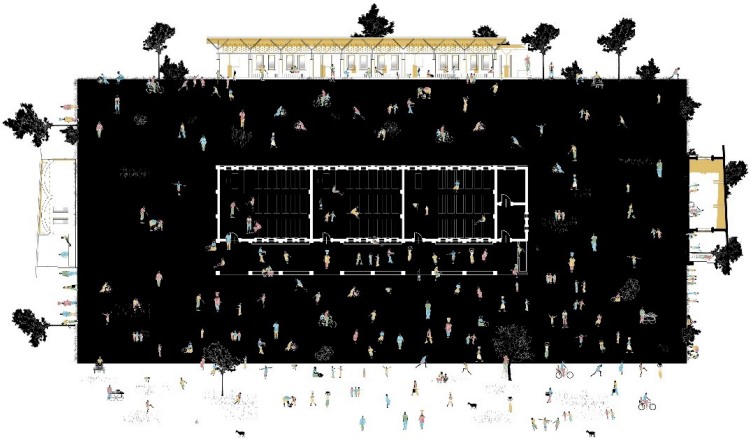


Figure 3. Gangouroubouro Primary School by LEVS. Source: (Gugliotta R. 2019)

responsible for raising funds. Their approach to the project is therefore different, according to an architect-client exchange much more similar to traditional dynamics. The process of engaging the community and the client together became essential to understand how to approach in a first time a different reality. Moreover, workshop and involvement of students inside the processes led to a continuous exchange of knowledge to build the Library of Muyinga (Fig. 4).

The last case study, a project of the Portuguese studio Colectivo MEL in the African continent is examined. They, like BC architects, are not supported by its NGO but they were contacted by a Portuguese organisation operating for

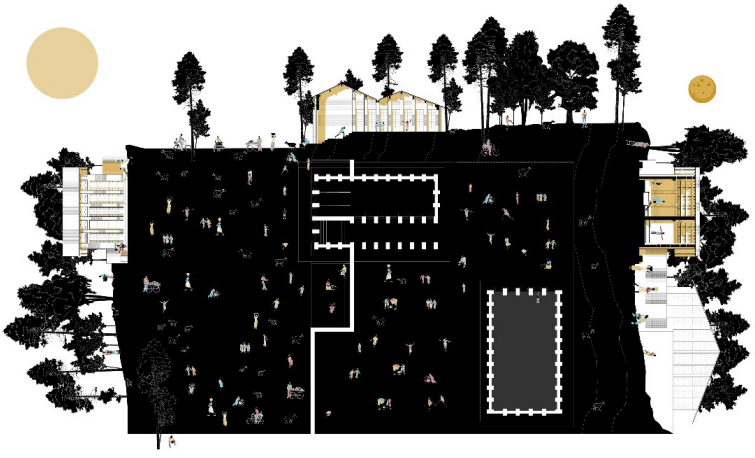


Figure 4. Library of Muyinga by BC architects. Source: (Gugliotta R. 2019)

Figure 5. Kindergartens by Colectivo MEL. Source: (Gugliotta R. 2019)

years in the territory of Guinea-Bissau. In this case, funds raised by the association come from the European Union and the relevance of the client inside the design process is substantial. They became the first interface and the filter between the community and the architect that had no direct relation. For this reason, the project of 5 Kindergartens (Fig. 5), at the end of the construction, does not take all the designed items. The main construction was made by concrete as suggested by the NGO, and at the same time, the community changed the roof cover in straw after the construction with a metal sheet. The traditional in this case was not fitting with the willing of the local.

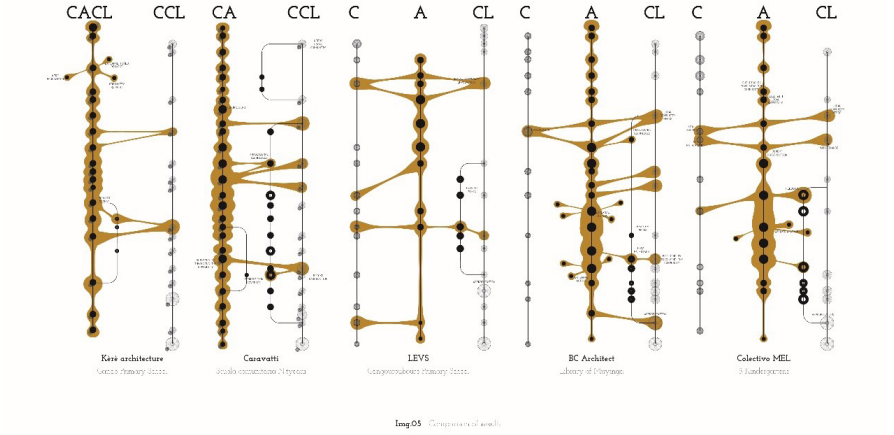


Figure 6. Process comparison. Source: (Gugliotta R. 2019)

Inside the diagram processes (Fig. 6) each relation are showed to understand the approach of the architect inside the design. Each architect has different synergies with the community and the client. Some times they have more than one role: architect, client and member of the community itself. Each studio kept with its strategy a different level of engagement. Sometimes the architect is more present inside the process to deal with the community (Caravatti, Kéré and BC studio) and some others have the client, most of the time NGO, as the most relevant factor inside the process (LEVS and Colectivo MEL). As much as they can share a common characteristic, each studio is approaching differently to the design inside extra-continental reality and the involvement of the community with it.

4. HORIZONTAL EXCHANGE

Each of the studios involved in the inquiry has different approach inside the dynamics with the local community. Sometimes this change of method is leaded from a different involvement of the client inside the process of decision. The customer is often one of the main actors inside the design process of the building. In some case is the one that knows more about the community, it is the one with money, and that is commissioning the intervention.

A particular differentiation occurs in the first instance between architects with a long tradition on the continent and newcomers who approach projects for the first time. The narrative of the reality with which they had to deal is also different. The dynamics of emerging studies are much simpler and easily assimilated to the European context. BC and Colectivo MEL that were analysed in the previous paragraph have a relatively similar relation with the client. Both are depending on it to talk with the community. The difference is henced in dealing with this relation and the stage of involvement of the community. Besides both were approaching for the first time a challenge in the sub-Saharan country, BC architects decide to involve the community from the beginning and keep this relation in different stages of the process: from design to construction. However, Colectivo MEL led heavily from the power of the client, used the community just to keep some knowledge. It was not directly involved inside the consistent part of the process.

The client is a subject with high power but not always definable. Certainly, the obviousness of considering the local community as a client does not provide any change of position concerning the European situation. Instead, the dynamics scattered out by Françis Kéré and Caravatti gives a different point of view on the process of participation inside the continent. The main issue became to develop a sense of identity of the community inside the entire process. Not only explaining them the reason but make them understand the entire mechanism behind the design of the building without losing their volunteer as an architect. The designer, inside the processes, remains the bearer of a value shared by both (client and local community), becoming mediator among the subjects. Through this, any top-down or bottom-up process is eliminated in order to establish dialogue and linear exchange between subjects. The architect becomes an interpreter and translator. Within mediation brings values and contributions to projects that take into account the needs of a client, even if latent, but which at the same time are respectful of the local community. It is not so much a question of community participation in the projects as the involvement of the community itself to enable it to become an active part. The main problem of welfare projects in sub-Saharan Africa derives from the excessive power of the client and the use of the term "local community involvement" as a valid element of the project.

On the contrary, a shared and functional approach by the architect can contribute

to a different degree of awareness than urbanisation projects. The architect as a mediator is therefore not alienated from his own ability to transmit values within the project, on the contrary, he uses his preferred perspective point to observe and identify the strategy of action that allows him to carry out the work through the involvement of community and client. A mediation that turns into a communicative practice between the subjects were meetings, and discussions aim to transport the architect's knowledge of the project within the process.

CONCLUSION

The participatory approach in these cases is not a method directly employed by the architect in a canonical way. Therefore, it is a process of continuous dialogue that allows the community to be part of the project maintaining the designer as a reference point. The community is taken into consideration as an actor that shape the general scheme, and that will have a future impact on it. Reaching horizontal participation inside the process and balancing the weight of each actor results more important than promoting participation and a bottom-up method. In this way, the community is not forced inside the design and construction processes but accompanied in developing a sense of identity toward architecture. In it, practice does not allow to talk about a simple method that can be systematised but moreover of a practice that can be shared and absorbed in the design process in foreign countries. This permits opening a debate on practice and role of architects outside their cultural frame of knowledge and experience.

REFERENCES

Abuom, A., 2005. *The missionary position: NGOs and development in Africa*, TAABCO Research and Consultants.

Africa architecture culture identity, 2015. Exhibition catalogue (AFRICA. Architecture, Culture, Identity Louisiana, 25 Giugno - 25 Ottobre 2015) a cura di Kjeld Kjeldsen, Mathias Ussing Seeberg, Louisiana: Louisiana Museum of Modern Art.

Albrecht, B., 2014. *Africa Big Change* Big Change, exhibition catalogue (Triennale di Milano, 2014), Bologna: Compositori.

Armando, A., Durbiano, G., 2017. *Teoria del progetto architettonico. Dai disegni agli effetti,* Roma: Carocci Editore.

Biraghi, M., 2019. *L'architetto come intellettuale,* Torino: Einaudi.

Carbone, G., 2015. *L'africa. Gli stati, la politica, i conflitti,* Bologna: il Mulino.

Daidone, I., 2015. *Il ruolo dell'architettura nei confronti della società. L'attualità di Giancarlo de Carlo,* Esempi di architettura, Palermo.

De Carlo, G., 2013. *L' architettura della partecipazione,* Macerata: Quodlibet.

Di Campo, P., 2018. *The road to hell is paved with good intentions, and broken toilets,* https://pulitzercenter.org/reporting/road-hell-paved-good-intentions-and-broken-toilets, (12/09/2019).

Hekkert, P., Tromp, N., 2019. *Design for society: products and services for a better world,* Great Britain: Bloomsbury, 2019.

Hernandez, F.M., 2012. *Dynamic identities and the construction of transcultural architectures,* PhD dissertation, Università di Nottingham.

Lepik, A., 2010. *Small Scale, Big Change: New Architectures of Social Engagement,* New York: Museum of Modern Art.

Lepik, A., 2013. *Afritecture,* Munich: Architekturmuseum der TU München.

Magnaghi, A., 2000. *Il progetto locale,* Torino: Bollati Boringhieri.

Marschall, S., 1998. *Architecture as empowerment: the participatory approach in contemporary architecture in South Africa,* Transformation, Vol.35, pp.103-123.

Monestiroli, A., 1999. *L' architettura della realtà,* Torino: Allemandi.

PAPER #8.09

UNDERSTANDING BUILT (INE)QUALITY IN PERIPHERIES THROUGH BOURDIEU'S DISTINCTION: THE CASE OF PORTO'S URBAN AREA (PORTUGAL)

David Pereira-Martínez[ab],Virgílio Borges Pereira[ab], Plácido Lizancos[b], Isabel Raposo[c]
[a] University of Porto (UPorto), Center for Studies in Architecture and Urbanism (CEAU), Portugal
[b] University of A Coruña (UDC), Group of Territorial Studies (GET), Spain
[c] University of Lisbon (ULisboa), Research Centre for Architecture, Urb. and Design (CIAUD), Portugal

ABSTRACT

Sociological distinction explains how certain subjects (individuals and groups) gain an advantage using their *social, economic, cultural,* and *symbolic* capitals according to Bourdieu. In the same way, elements in urban areas use their *qualities* to distinguish themselves in an analogous competition within both the physical and social space.
The clearest of these qualities is *centrality,* which describes the benefits of location and precisely creates the classic distinction between core and outskirts (nowadays measured in time as well).
Urban elements (buildings, for instance) also possess *material quality* – related to their technical properties such as size, habitability, or performance – which gives them advantages in material competition. In the same way, they have *cultural-symbolic quality* – referring to the interpretation of their elements such as social appreciation, value, or coherence – which makes them stand out in representative aspects. These two qualities of distinction are used as axes to develop a two-dimensional space to study the elements' positions.
This scheme is applied to housing developments in Porto's urban area (Portugal) in order to analyse their *qualities* (and inequalities). Each ensemble of residential buildings is characterised separately by its *centrality* (in distance and time) and by its material and *cultural-symbolic quality*. The cases of low *centrality, material,* and *cultural-symbolic* quality do not necessarily coincide and then the different types of peripheries do not necessarily overlap.
As explained and exemplified, urban elements have a certain *centrality, material,* and *cultural-symbolic quality*, which are properties related to respective *social, economic,* and *cultural/ symbolic* capitals of their users. This scheme enables discussion of the constructions' and residents' problems at the same time. Thus, research can theoretically circumscribe three types of inequalities: segregation, (energy) poverty, and marginalisation.

KEYWORDS

Bourdieu's distinction; peripheries; *inequalities*; architectural quality; Porto (Portugal).

INTRODUCTION

Inequality is defined by the Cambridge Dictionary as an unfair situation in society created by a difference in social status, wealth, or opportunity. In contrast, *quality* is in singular a high standard, whilst *qualities* (in plural) are the characteristics or features of someone or something. These concepts have a different etymological evolution, but a related origin (from 'in-aequalis' and 'qualis'). Thus, their relationship enables research to understand *inequality* as a process when some *qualities* are missing, or when a certain lack of *quality* exists, in the case of the built environment, *architectural quality*.

This approach is also relevant to understand peripheries in a broad sense, not only as a location separated from the centre, but a territory with a lack of certain qualities, for instance, centrality in the case of geographical peripheries. Similarly, the economic peripheries could be defined by their lack of economic assets and the social peripheries by their integration problems. For these reasons, the characteristics and features of the elements emerge as a critical factor to understand inequalities, especially in territories defined by their differences, like peripheries.

To study these complex and unequal situations, this research takes advantage of a methodological framework based on the differences: Bourdieu's sociological distinction. Firstly, this paper explains Bourdieu's theory and its relevance to architecture. Secondly, a theoretical adaptation is developed to analyse the qualities of social distinction in architecture. Thirdly, this framework is applied to housing developments in Porto's urban area, discussing the empirical results. Finally, this paper analyses the general implications of this approach and explains its main conclusions and lines of research.

1.BOURDIEU'S SOCIOLOGICAL DISTINCTION AND ADAPTATION TO ARCHITECTURE

Sociological distinction explains how certain subjects (individuals and groups) gain an advantage using their *economic, cultural, symbolic,* and *social capitals,* which constitute the interdependent axes of distinction (Bourdieu 1979). The capitals employed in the social struggle are materialised in several objects of distinction: possessions – among them buildings -, activities, education, etc. This objects act on one or several of the abovementioned axes, creating differences in society.

According to Bourdieu, social differences are not only structured by a one-dimensional linear scale, but rather occur in a social space mainly structured by two composed axes (Fig. 1). Firstly, there is the *total volume of capital,* the amount of economic and cultural capital that an agent possesses. Secondly, there is the *composition of capital,* which takes into account the differences between them, mainly in terms of economic and cultural capital. In addition, social and symbolic capitals also act in the same social scheme. Social capital is not just the number of people that a person knows, but rather the sum of these people's capitals, which constitutes the network to which a person has access and can eventually mobilise. Similarly, the symbolic capital requires some other capitals and a certain position to exert its influence, namely in terms of social recognition. The positions in the social space thus defined are also affected by the length of their permanence in the same place and by the trajectory of the subjects (and their ascendants) in the social space.

Thus, Bourdieu's theory overtakes the simplistic approach based on economy, to build a complete system to understand positions in society with their *effets de lieu* (effects of place). Not only do the upper classes (++) have money (*economic capital*): to maintain their hegemonic situation they also have a high cultural level (*cultural capita*l), relationships with other influential people (*social capital*), and the iconic character of their status (*symbolic capital)*. Moreover, they usually get more advantages, acquiring exclusive pieces and patronising professionals of high cultural capitals. In the same way, medium and lower classes are characterised by their total volume of capital, but with important differences according to their capital composition, and also, their habits, tastes, and ideologies (*habitus*). This variation of *habitus* can be illustrated by industrial bourgeoisie (+-) vs. intellectuals (-+) and urban workers vs. peasants, which

was highlighted in several empirical studies in France (Bourdieu 1979).

Lately, this same approach has been used in other countries with relevant results. In Portugal, the populations of Porto's neighbourhoods were characterised by their capitals and built environment, finding a strong correlation between their habits and their economic, cultural, social, and symbolic capitals (Borges Pereira 2018 and 2016). In Spain, Bourdieu's distinction has served to explain how social capital and other characteristics are shared between rural and urban territories (Lamela 2014).

As mentioned, Bourdieu's distinction is a complex and holistic framework to understand reality that is applicable to many approaches: from the sociology of people themselves, to the space they occupy and the elements they use, issues with an intense relationship with architecture and urban studies. Thus, buildings are one of the most significant elements of social distinction. Residences, for instance, are probably the biggest investment that many subjects make in their life (Lizancos 2000). This is why they carefully decide if a building's elements give the appropriate (social) representation of them (Villanova, Leite, and Raposo 1995). As constructions have and use different features for distinction, they also become subjects of these social processes and play the same role, struggling in social space as a representation of their users. This is very interesting because then, research can describe buildings by their characteristics, emphasising high *qualities* and also claiming against their *inequalities*. In the same way as people do, the constructions in urban areas use their qualities to distinguish themselves in an analogous competition within both the physical and the social space.

This study about built elements changes the terminology to *'quality'* and *'qualities'* because these terms are more appropriate and widely used in the architectural field. This also coincides, as mentioned, with what is known as *quality* in design and, more precisely, *architectural quality*. Bourdieu's distinction uses the term *capital* because it refers to power relationships in society, which would not be exactly the case of buildings (even if sometimes this metaphorical use can be found). In other words, the buildings' *qualities* constitute important *capitals* for their users; there is an evident and strong connexion between them, but *'capital'* remains in the sphere of people and *'quality'* in the field of architecture.

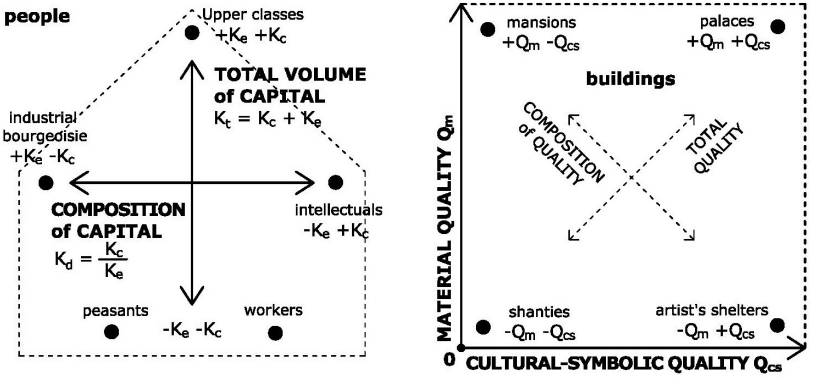


Figure 1, 2. Bourdieu's social space to study people, proposed social space to study buildings. Source: Authors

Quality is an essential discussion in architecture. For instance, it was the topic of the Davos Declaration of 2018 *Towards a high-quality Baukultur for Europe,* adopted by the European ministers of culture (Forte 2019). This topic is especially crucial in peripheries which have a significant lack of architectural values. As Bourdieu's distinction focuses on the differences and relationships, it is particularly suitable to characterise peripheries. Firstly, because they are characterised by their difference from average and central areas and, secondly, due to their particular lack of homogeneity. In these spaces, distinction's theoretical framework can better appreciate and process the variations between elements (for instance, in comparison with a typological approach).

1.1. Proposed social space for buildings

Taking into account the abovementioned Bourdieusian framework and its multiple implications, an analogous analysis matrix has been developed to study buildings in an equivalent social space (Fig. 2). This proposed scheme uses two simple axes, instead of composed ones, for a simpler and more straightforward explanation. Thus, the new scheme is practically a copy of the original one rotated 45º.

The two main axes are the *material quality* - related to users' *economic capital* - and *cultural-symbolic quality* - related to users' *cultural* and *symbolical capital*. These two axes are fully explained in the next section, but they can be respectively presented as related to physical nature (in a materialistic approach, mainly quantitative and geometric) and social interpretation (in a cultural and symbolic approach, mainly qualitative).

This two-dimensional quality space is easy to understand if extreme cases are explained. In housing, they would be: palaces (++), mansions (+-), artists' shelters (-+), and shanties (--) (Fig. 2). The proposed scheme does not make a difference in the lower positions in the composition of quality – which made sense for people -, because no consequences were detected in built results. Precarious constructions are so limited that the composition of quality does not seem to introduce variations.

It is also essential to know that many elements are contributing to both axes at the same time, but in different manners (i.e. a stone wall is a materialistic asset by its durability and thermic performance and, at the same time and for other reasons, it is a cultural-symbolic asset because of its semiology and social appreciation). This two-dimensional scheme about the quality of the built element itself can be completed by a third axis: *centrality*. This geographical quality of the place - related to the *social capital* of users - completes the proposed scheme of quality.

2. QUALITIES OF SOCIAL DISTINCTION IN ARCHITECTURE

This relationship between architecture and social distinction has been previously highlighted in scientific literature. Several studies have shown how returned migrants (once belonging to the lower classes) take into account processes related to Bourdieu's distinction in Northern Portugal (Villanova, Leite, and Raposo 1995) and in Galicia, Spain (Lizancos 2000). The elements, symbols, and composition of these migrants' houses are, apart from obvious cultural and necessity issues, consequence of the *effets de lieu* (effects of place) in social space. The results are affected by the promoters' current social position, as well as their previous one, their path in the social space, and the time spent in each position (Borges Pereira 2018). Other studies use Bourdieu's distinction to explain social influence in architectural design, like the preference for neoclassical design among the upper classes in Brazil (Pulici 2016).

In all these cases, there is a far-reaching discussion about style, taste, and what is

and how to measure *architectural quality*, a controversial issue since nowadays. The fact that the buildings' *quality* is normally measured on an academic one-dimensional scale hides a more complex reality, which this research tries to unveil. To achieve this, some preliminary considerations have to be made. Firstly, the proposed scheme serves to explained erudite academic architecture – the one with *significant material* and *cultural-symbolic quality*. This is a non-especial part of the social space, then comparable to other categories of buildings and, evidently, the one in a privileged position. Secondly, this research is focused on the understanding of general and average *qualities*; in this way, it formulates a basic but sufficient composition of variables for its objectives.

This approach aims to preliminarily explain the main inequalities between constructions. It can still be developed with more variables to better characterise other cases: specimens nearer in the social space, other buildings with other functions apart from housing, or public spaces (which are secondarily taken into account now). Logically, these general and average qualities do not study issues of composition or creativity which are essential in art and the history of art. Similarly, neither do they pay attention to security and structural integrity, which are relevant issues in the analysis of precarious constructions. This formulation has to be understood then in its general purposes, in a compatible coexistence with other approaches and possible specific evolutions. By taking these considerations into account, the different *qualities* can be now characterised to understand how the lack of them creates *inequalities*.

2.1. Centrality

The clearest of these qualities is centrality, which describes the benefits of location and, precisely, creates the classic distinction between core and outskirts. Apart from the geographic approach based on a distance between each point to the centre, centrality should be nowadays measured in time as well, according to the different means of transport available for each itinerary: walking, bicycle, car, public transportation, etc. This property is defined concerning a specified centre: the nearer, the better; but other similar features like general accessibility could be more adequate in the case of polycentric systems.

A deeper analysis of this location's quality should also be complemented with the difficulties and barriers (disabled access, slopes, stairs, lack of frequency, insecurity, etc). It also has to take into account the symbolical effects of the (social) barriers to understand the perceived *centrality*.

2.2. Material quality

Urban elements, residential buildings for instance, also possess *material quality* which is related to their technical properties, which give them advantages in the social competition in materialistic terms. These characteristics are based on the physical nature of the elements and are mainly quantitative and/or dependant on their geometry. This makes them quite objective and stable. The basic approach to housing *quality* in this study is carried out using size, *habitability* and *energetic performance* as variables.

Size refers to the total area of dwellings which includes the usable and constructed area, both with advantages for users. Dwellings with a certain amount of rooms should be compared to equivalent dwellings, but more rooms and auxiliary spaces also normally represent an advantage, as well as higher ceilings. As size analyses part of the *habitability,* the latter variable refers mainly to the shape and functionality of the spaces, their relationship with air, sun, and views at the façade, the dimensions of the exterior adjacent spaces, and their accessibility. Basic assessment of *energetic performance* provides an idea of

its potential to reduce expenses, energy, and carbon emissions.
Some of these three variables which form material quality are mutually contradictory (e.g. size and habitability tend to decrease energetic performance). Thus, a high material quality requires a balance between them and smart strategies. Moreover, for a deeper analysis, components like energy consumption, annual expenses, and carbon emissions should be studied separately and other properties like construction costs, sustainability, thermal comfort, utility, and durability should be taken into account.

2.3. Cultural-symbolic quality

In the same way, buildings have *cultural-symbolic quality* which makes them stand out in representative aspects. These characteristics are based on the social interpretation of their elements and are mainly qualitative and dependant on value judgements. This makes them relative to the society and sometimes partially subjective. *Cultural* and *symbolic* fields are conceptually different (and related to different capitals of their users), though they are difficult to separate from each other. In architecture, they usually act at the same time, which is why this study maintains the double designation of the axis.
The basic approach of this study is carried out using *social appreciation*, *value,* and *coherence* as basic variables to measure *cultural-symbolic quality*. Social appreciation is analysed taking into account elements widely valued by society, which can be qualitatively revealed in opinions, news, and narratives about buildings. *Value* is a theoretical selling price on the market, calculated following the rules of real estate valuation: an average or proportional approximation of a similar property's price in the same area. *Coherence* analyses the symbols, signs, and composition which generate meanings and define (or not) a coherent style.
In a deeper study, social appreciation should be divided into different groups or classes to take into account the respective tastes. In addition, the composition and aesthetics (coherence) should be analysed in comparison to previous and current fashion and trends in design.

2.4. An analogous social space of buildings using Bourdieu's theories

As explained previously, this research proposed a two-dimensional social space (Fig. 2) to study buildings using the explained *material* and *cultural-symbolic qualities* as its main axes, which encapsulate several variables of measurement themselves. The site's *centrality* could be added to form a three-dimensional space to study built *qualities* – which has problems of visualisation -, or analysed at the side for a clearer representation.
In this scheme, each building or group of buildings is represented by a point according to their properties of distinction. The points are placed in more or less privileged areas of the social space. This allows researchers to define and characterise *geographical, economic,* and *social peripheries* according to their lack of a specific property: respectively, *centrality, material,* or *cultural-symbolic quality.*
Moreover, as each case is a point according to these three *qualities*, any improvement (a new infrastructure or service that increases accessibility, a refurbishment of the physical conditions, or an aesthetical renovation) or deterioration produces a displacement of the point, which can be studied as a *vector* of change with a certain *direction* and *intensity.*
This study of the positions through the social space was extensively developed by Bourdieu, as well as the effect of time on each position, which affects the recognition and acceptance of a certain position (Bourdieu 1979). In an analogous application, this effect of time means, for instance, that old landmarks usually have a greater symbolism than new built icons, even in the case of an equivalent

exceptional design, taking advantage then of a greater *cultural-symbolic quality.* In contrast, the same effect of time could be seen in some historically precarious areas which, after a process of requalification with elements theoretically appreciated by society, are still connoted and considered to be of low *cultural-symbolical quality*. The limited space of this paper makes it impossible to deepen these discussions, but some of them are noted at the end as lines of research.

3. APPLICATION IN THE CASE OF PORTO'S URBAN AREA

In order to illustrate and validate this theoretical development to study territories' built (ine)qualities, this scheme is applied to housing developments in Porto's urban area (Portugal). It is important to highlight that this is a preliminary and basic application of Bourdieu's distinction. This study is effective and useful enough to be an introduction to the use of this theoretical framework in built quality assessment, and it is open to further developments. The means are adapted to the main purpose of the research: studying if urban elements' *qualities* and *inequalities* correspond to an old but still canonical one-dimensional centre-periphery distribution; or, on the contrary, the introduction of the other axes improves the understanding of their patterns and nature.

For this exemplification, a small number of case studies (10 housing developments) have been chosen in a sector of the Porto's urban area. The city of Porto is a well-known example because it has been widely studied in its built and social conditions, especially about gentrification (Alves 2016) and social-class structure using Bourdieu's theories (Borges Pereira 2018). This medium-sized city occupies a central position in its urban area, which is highly affected for it, following a natural urban process of growth by rings (naturally modified by geography and pre-existences) like many other cities in Europe.

The case studies belong to different municipalities (Porto, Maia, and Valongo) and they illustrate different urban contexts - the central compact city, the peripheral neighbourhoods, the secondary centres, and the spaces between them. They do not try to be exhaustive of all situations or a representation or summary of the urban area. They only have an illustrative character to apply the methodology, as well as to study if some of them are examples which do not follow a canonical centre-periphery distribution of quality.

Some of the case studies are well-known and deeply studied examples, such as the Bouça neighbourhood by Álvaro Siza (Vale 2018), the Cardosas Square (Alves 2016) and the social neighbourhoods of Amial and Paranhos (Borges Pereira 2016 and 2018). Though all these approaches and information have been taken into account, the aim of this research is the preliminary characterisation according to some basic variables. Thus, information about the housing developments has been homogenised on the rest of cases using open sources: e.g. cartography, press, and advertisements.

As mentioned, the research is focused on general and average qualities. Due to this, quite separate cases in the social space have been chosen to illustrate the methodology. Extreme examples (like luxury houses on the seafront and *ilhas,* precarious working-class settlements inside blocks) are avoided in order to not eclipse the less intense but more interesting inequalities between the examples.

Every ensemble of residential buildings is characterised separately by its c*entrality, material,* and *cultural-symbolic quality,* each of these properties measured in turn by several secondary variables, as previously mentioned. Each case is ranked among the others according to both secondary variables

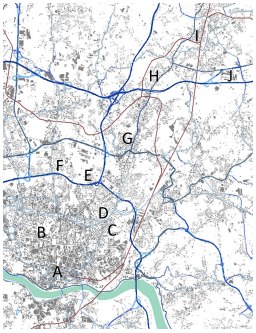
and main *qualities,* a simple and effective technique, which is sufficient and valid for this introduction. This binary comparison between specimens means a loss of accuracy (which is not needed) but avoids the difficult task of defining exact units and scales in the case of qualitative variables, making the research feasible. Criteria for each property and variable are explained hereafter, as well as the process and the empirical result. Naturally, other criteria could produce different results in the detail, but the general view is maintained if a secondary variable is deleted or changed in a further development, because the variables are quite interdependent (e.g. *centrality* measured in *time* depends on speed and *distance*).

3.1. Centrality

This property only depends on the site's location in comparison to a central point. Porto has a clear centre in terms of symbolism, tourism, and functionality: the area between the guildhall, the cathedral, and the points of maximum accessibility (Trindade e São Bento stations). One of the cases is in the middle of this area. For the others, the distance has been calculated using the tool *Directions of GoogleMaps*, with the option 'walking' and taking the first option. This distance is almost representative to the time by walking and on a bicycle. For the time in a private vehicle and on public transportation, these two options have been chosen in *Directions* on an afternoon on a weekday. Every case is ranked using the three variables (Tab. 1) and centrality (Fig. 4), using decimals to solve parities. Note that, evidently, the cases' positions by walking, on car, or on public transportation have variations.

3.2. Material quality

The technical qualities depend on buildings' spaces and characteristics (Fig. 3). A representative type of dwelling is used to measure size, habitability and energetic performance. The size has been calculated using its footprint area. The relative position in habitability is obtained by a comparison of spaces according to their shape, functionality, air, sun, and views. Finally, buildings are ordered by an indirect analysis of energetic performance: orientation, exposure, form factor, glazing ratio, window quality, and typical insulation. Every case is ranked using the variables (Tab. 2) and the material quality (Fig. 4).



Case Studies
A. Cardosas Square
B. A Bouça SAAL
C. Magalhães
D. Velasques Square
E. Paranhos
F. Amial
G. Casas Oliveiras
H. Corim
I. Ermesinde
J. Macieiras

Centrality C			(1) Car, (2) Bus/Metro/Train			
Nº	Distance	km	Time[1]	min	Time[2]	min
1º	A	0	A	0'	A	0'
2º	B	1,5	B	8'	B	15'
3º	C	2,4	C	15'	C	20'
4º	D	3	D	15'	I	22'
5º	E	3,7	E	16'	D	23'
6º	F	3,9	G	18'	E	27'
7º	G	5,5	F	19'	F	30'
8º	H	7,6	J	25'	G	34'
9º	I	9,8	H	27'	J	45'
10º	J	10,3	I	30'	H	48'

Table 1. Housing developments in the NW sector of Porto's urban area. Ranked by centrality. Source: Authors

3.3. Cultural-symbolic quality

This property was studied on the available information from visits, the external view (Fig. 3), the news, articles, and advertisements. In a representative type, the research studied social appreciation, value, and significance. The social appreciation has been analysed using public valorisation of the elements (news, articles). Value is a price on the market, according to real estate valuation (adverts). Coherence analyses the symbols, signs, and composition which generate meanings and defined a style. Cases are ranked using the three variables (Tab. 2) and this property (Fig. 4), solving parities by analogy.

3.4. Discussion of the results

The results presented together in the social space (Fig. 4) show the complexity of reality. Cases E/J/F are in the lower positions, cases D/A are in the upper ones, and the rest are on average around the diagonal, except case B, with non-material priorities. Thus, clusters can be found. The majority of cases do not occupy

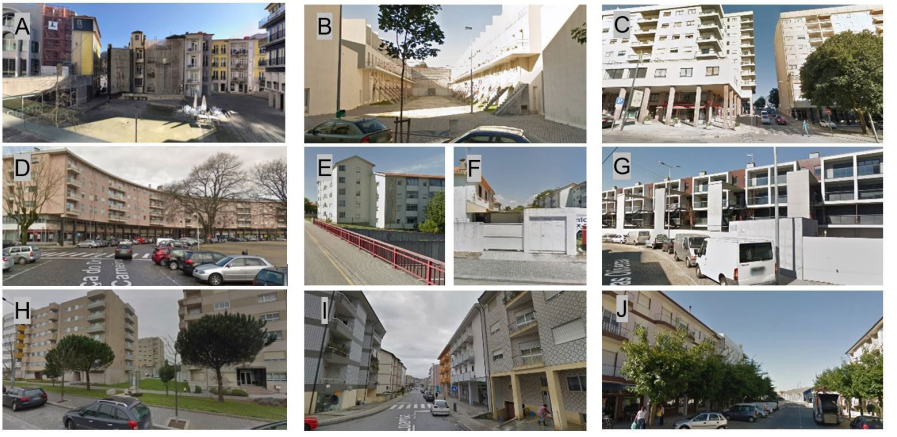


Figure 3. Views of case studies in Porto's urban area. Source: GoogleMaps

Material quality Qm			
Nº	Size	Habitability	E. Performance
1º	D	D	G
2º	A	G	Hw
3º	C	A	D
4º	G	C	A
5º	B	B	C
6º	H	H	I
7º	I	F	J
8º	J	E	B
9º	F	J	F
10º	E	I	E

Cultural-symbolic quality Qcs			
Nº	S. Appreciation	Value	Coherence
1º	A	A	A
2º	G	G	B
3º	D	D	G
4º	C	B	C
5º	B	C	D
6º	H	H	H
7º	I	F	F
8º	J	E	E
9º	F	I	I
10º	E	J	J

Table 2. Case studies ordered by size, habitability, performance, appreciation, value, significance. Source: Authors

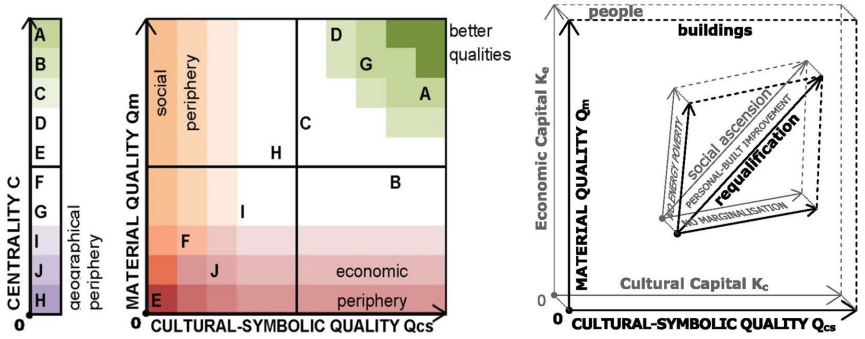


Figure 4, 5. Case studies placed in the quality space, superposition with sociological space. Source: Authors

the same place on the three axes: specimens with high qualities also have regular results in some variables. Specimens with low qualities do not coincide either, neither the different peripheries.

DISCUSSION OF QUALITIES' IMPLICATIONS IN SOCIAL SPACE AND CONCLUSIONS

As explained and exemplified, urban elements have a certain centrality, material, and cultural-symbolic quality, which are related to the capital of their users. Centrality contributes to social capital because it facilitates their users' relationships, especially with powerful people. Material quality of buildings is an economic asset for their users. Cultural-symbolic quality is evidently related to the homonymous capitals as explained before. Thus, constructions' and users' problems can be studied together and buildings' *requalification* (improvement of its qualities) can be linked to people's social ascension (Fig. 5).

This research can then evidently circumscribe three types of theoretical inequalities, such as *segregation,* (energy) *poverty,* and *marginalisation.* Thus, respective solutions appeared: accessibility improvement (infrastructures or services), material requalification (energetic rehabilitation), and cultural-symbolic requalification (symbolic renovation and interpretation). These three dimensions should not be neglected to get a real and holistic improvement. Architects should be aware of their social responsibility and limitations: buildings are major objects of distinction for their users, for good and for bad; but they are not the only one: other social measures must be implemented to reduce inequalities.

In conclusion, this theoretical and empirical research shows the applicability and relevance of Bourdieu's distinction in architecture and urbanism to study inequalities, especially in peripheries. Firstly, it validates this methodology based on buildings' qualities, unveiling social processes in architecture. Secondly it offers a clear representation of the results. Thirdly, it enables the discussion of buildings' and users' inequalities at the same time. And fourthly, it defines their problems - segregation, (energy) poverty, and marginalisation – and solutions - accessibility, material, and cultural-symbolic requalification. Finally, further developments should be made in several lines of research: quantification of the qualities per axis, the use of more variables, a deep analysis of the contradictions and effects of time, a deeper discussion of distinction's implications in architecture, and more case studies in different contexts.

REFERENCES

Alves, S. 2016. "Requalificação e gentrificação no centro histórico do Porto." *Scripta Nova,* v. XXI, n. 557.

Borges Pereira, V. 2016. "Classes sociais e simbolização na cidade do Porto: Elementos teóricos e resultados de pesquisa empírica." *Tempo Social, revista de sociología da USP*, v. 28, n. 2:183-206.

Borges Pereira, V. 2018. *Urban Distinctions: Class, Culture and Sociability in the City of Porto. IJURR*, v. 42:126-137

Bourdieu, P. 1979. *La distinction, critique sociale du jugement.* Paris: Les éditions de minuit.

Lamela, C. 2014. *Capital social y territorio. In Dinámicas territoriales en España, Problemas y tendencias en la estructura y ordenación del territorio*, edited by Lamela, C., Cardesín, J.M. and García-Docampo, M., p115-140. Madrid: Editorial Biblioteca Nueva.

Forte, F. 2019. "Architectural quality and evaluation." *Valori e valutazione,* n.23: 37-45.

Lizancos, P. 2000. *As migracións na conformación da casa*. PhD diss., University of A Coruña.

Pulici, C. 2014. "Visões do gosto arquitetônico passadista: problematizando o "estilo neoclássico" de São Paulo em perspectiva internacional." *Anais do Museu Paulista*, v. 22, n.1: 219-248.

Vale, C. 2018. "The social rise of a housing intervention: Álvaro Siza Project for Bouça neighbourhood." In *42nd IAHS World Congress Proceedings*, 10-13rd April 2018, Naples, Italy.

Villanova, R. De, Leite, C. and Raposo, I. 1995. *Casas de sonhos*. Lisboa: Salamandra.

PAPER #8.10

UNIVERSITY-COMMUNITY PARTNERSHIP TO ADDRESS FLOOD RESILIENCE AND COMMUNITY VITALITY

Lisa D. Iulo[a]
[a]Pennslyvania State University, University Park, PA

ABSTRACT

Inland communities are experiencing recurring flooding from rivers, smaller tributaries and stormwater stresses that are negatively impacting economic and community vitality issues. In the past decade, considerable efforts and funding have been devoted to integrated and innovative solutions to flooding in coastal communities. Although funding may be available to inland communities, application of these funds is limited. Efforts are needed to leverage funding opportunities to accomplish community vitality and flood resilience in inland, river communities. To achieve this, meaningful community engagement must inform a comprehensive portfolio of projects and potential design solutions.

The needs of inland communities in flood prone areas are addressed through a pilot study in Pennsylvania. A transdisciplinary team of researchers from architecture, Earth sciences, law, and philosophy has convened at the Pennsylvania State University, USA, and partnered with a local community in Pennsylvania to explore solutions for community resilience appropriate for regional impacts. This paper synthesizes our preliminary understanding of community-based needs and values, challenges, and knowledge necessary to inform meaningful solutions to economic revitalization and flood resilience. The actions presented - informed by community advisors locally, regionally, and statewide - are varied. Initial findings indicate that interconnected thinking about education, planning, and investment that is informed by research and communication may open doors for values-based, design-oriented project implementation that helps meet community needs while informing regional dynamics.

KEYWORDS

Flooding; resilience; pilot-study; actions; values.

INTRODUCTION

Engagement – with clients, owners, operators, representative building users, or larger community groups – is fundamental to architectural practice and education. Emerging concepts for *whole building, integrated or integrative design process* (WBDG, 7group and Reed, B. 2009) and *regenerative development* (Mang et al 2016) emphasize the need for diverse representation of design team members and stakeholders as central to addressing growing complexity in resilient and sustainable design. Indeed, the question of what to design needs to be driven by "dialog between researchers and user groups" through a process that is "collective," "iterative" and informed by place (Staub and Iulo 2011). Related to these concepts, *transdisciplinary research* has been presented as an approach to solve complex, system-based challenges (Max-Neef 2005; Brandt et al 2013; Irwin et al 2018).

> Transdisciplinary Research is defined as research efforts conducted by investigators from different disciplines working jointly to create new conceptional, theoretical, methodological, and translational innovations that integrate and move beyond discipline-

> specific approaches to address a common problem (Harvard, no date).

Transdisciplinary research is driven by specific, compelling problems and involves participation and integration of information across disciplines as well as non-academic 'ways of knowing' (Schneider and Buser 2018). Ideally, there is a mutually beneficial reciprocity for researchers and stakeholders. Most importantly, in the context of environmental change, transdisciplinary research serves a public purpose – solutions that positively impact the triple-bottom-line of sustainability and that are based on inputs of those impacted by the problems *and* the proposed solutions. Transdisciplinary research seeks solutions based on shared goals, individual contribution, interdependence, and common awareness of conditions. Strong partnerships are essential! This paper presents a University-Community partnership to address community vitality and evolving flood risks. A cross-disciplinary team of researchers from design professions (architecture and landscape architecture), Earth and climate sciences (geography, climatology, hydrology), law and policy, and philosophy have convened at the Pennsylvania State University with the support of the Provost's office and aligned with the University's Strategic Plan and commitment to *Stewarding our Planet's Resources.* This group, the Penn State Initiative for Resilient Communities (PSIRC) partnered with a local community – Selinsgrove, Pennsylvania - to explore solutions for community resilience for that community in the interest of regional (watershed-level) impacts.

1. CASE STUDY DESCRIPTION AND BACKGROUND

Flooding is the most frequent and damaging natural disaster for the State of Pennsylvania, USA (ReadyPA.gov). Flood impacts are exacerbated by more frequent and extreme precipitation events due to climate change and increases in development resulting in larger areas of land impervious to stormwater. Finding appropriate solutions to such impacts is difficult, requiring communities to navigate complex tradeoffs. Decision-makers, including designers, often lack timely access to relevant information and ways of facilitating community dialogue about trade-offs or community priorities. Direct engagement with affected communities can help to ensure that scientific resources address the issues most relevant to what the community values, that community members and decision makers have the knowledge they need to make the decisions that matter to them, and that the design solutions proposed are informed by both science and by the needs of the community. The initiative described herein brings together experts and engagement in a flood-impacted community along the Susquehanna River in Pennsylvania to address flood risk in the interest of community development. The pilot project includes two components: 1) working with a selected Pennsylvania community, the Borough of Selinsgrove, to develop a plan for community climate resilience; and, 2) broadly engaging with stakeholders and decision-makers about flood resilience in riverine communities. Since longevity of engagement and trust are essential to community engagement and collaboration, Selinsgrove was selected for this pilot, in part, because of a history of working with this community and at their request for continued assistance.

1.1. Selinsgrove, PA, USA

The Susquehanna River, its tributaries, and the encompassing watershed(s) are a key component of the regional economy and major contributors to pollution problems in the Chesapeake Bay Watershed. Selinsgrove struggles with similar issues to many other communities regionally. It is representative of many historically and culturally significant small urban centers and agrarian communities

in the Susquehanna River Valley. All are subject to flooding from the river, resulting in economic, environmental, and social stresses. In addition to the primary and more predictable flooding from the Susquehanna, there are several creeks and tributaries that are prone to recurring flooding and erosion that affects the larger watershed. Recently, properties not previously subject to flooding – including a new Borough building and public library – have experienced water inundation due to heavy precipitation and limitations of stormwater infrastructure. At the same time, the Susquehanna River is central to community identity and adds to the quality of life for the residents, as well as presenting a recreational destination for visitors to Selinsgrove and other river communities, contributing to community vitality.

In 2006 students and faculty at Penn State's landscape architecture program, through the Hamer Center for Community Design, designed a master plan for Selinsgrove that considered strengthening major corridors within the community and proposed streetscape and storefront improvements for the central business district area of the main commercial street (Market Street). In particular proposals for a vacated pharmacy building at the center of town were proposed, subsequently resulting in the development of a public plaza, the 'Commons,' now used for community gathering and events. In 2018, the Hamer Center was invited back by Borough leaders to discuss updates to the master plan. Discussions included streetscape improvements for Pine Street, the street intersecting Market Street and connecting the campus of Susquehanna University - a private college - to the commercial district and forging a stronger connection with the Susquehanna River. Borough representatives identified dying retail and the need for economic development as negatively impacting Downtown Selinsgrove. Priorities identified included the need to 1) build capacity for residential development; 2) build the image of a vital downtown; and 3) connect the downtown to Susquehanna University - located within walking distance of the downtown and a primary economic driver in the community. In addition to establishing connections between the downtown and campus, a regional planning approach was desired to address:

- Community quality of life;
- Historic and cultural resources;
- Economic revitalization;
- Human health and wellbeing; and
- sustainability.

The Susquehanna River is seen as central to opportunities for improved quality of life through recreation and as a resource to attract tourism. These opportunities cannot be fully realized without first addressing current flooding and risks associated with future flooding due to climate change. Understanding risks and developing potential solutions are informed by multiple decision-makers. However, deep uncertainty may exist "where decision makers disagree about the appropriate problem framing and how to characterize strategy tradeoffs" (Mayer et al 2017: p107).

2. METHODOLOGY AND LITERATURE REVIEW

Communities in the Susquehanna River Valley and throughout the Chesapeake Bay Watershed face increasingly complex resilience challenges. They have to make hard decisions to sustain their populations and historic downtowns built along rivers, to provide opportunities for economic development, and to ensure resilience to flooding in the face of deeply uncertain climate variability and change. Such decisions require communities to navigate complex trade-offs between competing values and objectives. Yet, decision-makers often lack timely access to relevant information (about flood hazards, for example) and a way to facilitate dialogue about trade-offs and value choices intrinsic to such decisions. Moreover, there is frequently a disconnect

between research and on-the-ground designed solutions that address needs and values and can be implemented by the community and sustained over time. Addressing these challenges requires bridging the gap between science and application through coordinated and interactive planning, community-oriented research, values-informed decision analysis, and design. It also requires an approach that fosters respectful communication and collaboration between diverse sets of experts and affected community stakeholders.

2.1. PSIRC team and approach

Launched in January 2019, Penn State Initiative for Resilient Communities (PSIRC) provides an environment of shared discovery where people can come together to address local resilience challenges of small, riverine communities vulnerable to flood risk. Working with local stakeholders and decision makers, PSIRC provides a way to leverage the resources of the Pennsylvania State University to help make an impact for local communities. By bringing together faculty, students, postdocs, and staff from multiple colleges, diverse disciplines, and established centers and institutes with decision makers and community members, this initiative works towards addressing riverine flooding and other related challenges to build more resilient communities in Pennsylvania and beyond.

PSIRC facilitates a research-driven, transdisciplinary, participatory approach to community resilience, bridging the gap between science and decision support through a solutions-oriented perspective. Borrowing integrative and regenerative design associated with the sustainable building sector and incorporating methods from decision support sciences, we apply a goal-oriented, action-based approach to inform more responsible, community-informed applicable solutions through productive partnerships of diverse professionals and community decision makers.

2.2. Description and rationale for developing mental models for decision support

> Decision support science is the systematic study of target systems intended to inform decision-makers, typically with respect to complex and uncertain situations, through a range of experiments, observations, and organization of empirical and theoretical research (Vezer et al 2018: p2).

Relatedly, "influence diagrams are a graphical tool for mapping the interaction of the various elements of a decision setting" (Hall 2010). Mental models and other forms of influence diagrams can be used as tools in risk- and decision-analyses to:

- Engage experts and others in the decsion-modeling process;
- Model how important decision factors interact;
- Identify key uncertainties that need to be "explicitly modeled" (Ibid).

They can also be used to determine how the public understands the problem and form beliefs about trade-offs. Climate risk management (CRM) strategies, such as those required to address flooding, "include variations of proactive and reactive plans" (Mayer et al 2017: p107) informed by multiple disciplines and areas of expertise.

> A mental model is an internal representation of external reality that is thought to influence reasoning, cognition and decision making. An individual's mental model includes their experiences, assumptions, beliefs and biases about the world (Mayer et al 2017: p108).

A mental model is a representation of how a person thinks about a particular phenomenon. "Mental models are the mechanisms whereby humans are able to generate descriptions of systems purpose and form, explanation of a system functions and observed system states, and predictions of future system states" (Rouse and Morris 1986: 351). Mental models

in the context of climate risk management are used to provide a basis for understanding what individuals and communities understand about the nature of the risks they face, and are used to interpret observations, organize beliefs, and make decisions in different contexts. According to Bessette et al (2017):

Mental models have long been used to analyze how the public uses scientific information and knowledge to form beliefs about risks like climate change. These beliefs are identified through a process of comparing two archetypal mental models: a layperson model and an expert model. Both models are constructed through experiences and social interactions.

Mental models can help to identify gaps or differences in the understanding of decision support scientists and community members. While mental model approaches are often used to identify knowledge that community members need in order to better understand the risks they face, they have also been used to help identify what community members value in order to ensure that scientists provide communities with the knowledge they need to make the decisions that most matter to them. Bessette et al report on the "role of values and worldviews in determining climate risk perceptions and decisions" (2017: p1994). They discuss an "augmented mental model research approach" - the *Values-informed Mental Model* (ViMM) [p1995], to take into consideration both experts' and laypersons' values. ViMM is designed to help ensure that scientific resources address the full range of issues that matter to the community.

2.3. Learning from coastal projects and application of methods to inland flooding

New Orleans, post-Katrina, is presented as a case study to test the ViMM method. The researchers conclude that:

> Just as mental model approaches are designed to identify gaps in understanding. ViMM is intended to help identify gaps in the values used by both the public and experts to understand risk factors and strategies. (Bessette et al 2017: p2002-2003).

Related efforts, engaging experts and the public, are needed to leverage funding and accomplish community vitality and flood resilience in inland communities. Although limitations in the New Orlean's study are identified, the study states that ViMM could "go a long way in informing decision-support processes" (Bessette et al 2017: p2003).

Some aspects of mental models may be generalized, for example, factors related to flooding (Aerts et al 2018; Calgary, no date). However, to be meaningful, decisions about design and implementation of strategies must be informed by specifics of place and appreciation of what the relevant communities value. Towards this end, PSIRC has been collaborating with partners in Selinsgrove to develop a ViMM to inform resilience measures most aligned with the realities of inland riverine flooding in small, agrarian communities. As a first step towards the development of a VIMM, a workshop was convened in Selinsgrove Borough with experts representing community decision-makers, regional and state agencies, and local universities. The purpose of the workshop was to gather information from community advisors on priorities and values associated with community resilience to riverine flooding and to identify factors contributing to community vitality. Following an introductory session, participants were split into one of four randomly assigned groups and circulated between stations to address the following questions:

1. What problems or CHALLENGES face small rivering communities like Selinsgrove or the surrounding region and watershed?
2. What ACTIONS should be taken, now and in the future, to achieve community resilience?

3. How can KNOWLEDGE and information be translated into action - specifically, what information do decision-makers have and what information do they need?
4. What do you VALUE and want to see for river communities in Pennsylvania and the region?

3. OUTCOMES AND DISCUSSION

Findings from this workshop are summarized below.

3.1. Challenges

Although some challenges related to flooding are well documented, there are other challenges to be considered with smaller, often disinvested, cities and communities. Local concerns about economic and community revitalization must take into consideration environmental concerns associated with the river, water quality and stormwater management. Although Susquehanna University is a major economic driver in Selinsgrove Borough, it also provides challenges; The University's population mainly lives and works on campus and is perceived as having little presence downtown. Currently, walkability and attracting/retaining businesses are challenges in the downtown area. Dwindling local tax base are a challenge in Selinsgrove Borough, especially since 50% of properties are tax exempt.

Environmental and infrastructure challenges are often addressed together or interchangeably since Impacts on water quality from stormwater and flooding are a leading challenge in Selinsgrove and other river communities. For example, transportation decisions impact walkability and affect local businesses; Development increases impermeability and strains stormwater infrastructure, while simultaneously constraining space for water quality and quantity control. Therefore, water quality (drinking water), urban stormwater management, and river health are local and regional challenges that need to be considered in relation to one another. Lack of coordination is a related challenge. To address environmental and infrastructure issues, coordinating across municipal boundaries is an issue (infrastructure often crosses municipal boundaries and upstream decisions can impact downstream communities and waterways). Lack of predictability and communication are flood-related challenges that result in deficits in preparedness, regional planning, and oversight of floodplains. In addition, a "sunny day" mentality, leading people to forget flooding happened, can pose a challenge to enacting proactive intervention, cause political inertia, and exacerbate local resistance to change.

Many challenges associated with flooding are considered uncertainties and largely mirror regional and national concerns. These challenges are associated with lack of understanding and/or changing definitions of policy and regulatory environments.[1] Much confusion is associated with FEMA (Federal Emergency Management Administration). In particular, challenges are associated with misunderstanding of FEMA mapping, associated terms and practices, and the implications for development.[2] Moreover, many of the properties in the historic Borough were constructed prior to the initial Flood Insurance Rate Map in 1974 (pre-FIRM) and owners are now confronted with associated flood insurance requirements. Exposure to flooding and/or high and increasing flood insurance premium costs have personal and societal impacts, including potential for deferring flood management/mitigation that results in

[1] A forthcoming paper by Keller et al (2020) relates uncertainty to climate risks and presents a review of "challenges and avenues to overcome them."
[2] FEMA identifies and maps flood hazards and assesses flood risks to guide mitigation actions. Flood hazard mapping is the basis for National Flood Insurance Program (NFIP) regulations and flood insurance requirements. Reference: https://www.fema.gov/national-flood-insurance-program-flood-hazard-mapping
[3] Base Flood Elevation (BFE) is the computed elevation to which floodwater is anticipated to rise, as indicated on Flood Insurance Rater Maps (FIRMS) and flood profiles (FEMA.gov).

damages and/or abandonment of properties, further eroding the tax base and leading to community blight. Property owners willing to mitigate are challenged with questions about what mitigation strategies would lead to reduction in premium amounts, whether to use federally available funds to execute a mitigation project, and what standard they should design to (e.g. how high should a home be elevated above BFE[3] to ensure that they are safe from high water?). Even where FEMA maps are regularly updated, how these maps will change in the future is uncertain. These challenges are related to the most predictable impacts of flooding associated with primary rivers (the Susquehanna and its major tributary Penns Creek). Smaller tributaries (streams, creeks) present a lack of predictability with regard to flooding frequency and inundation levels under current conditions, let alone with exposure to increased rainfall and stormwater runoff. Finally, increases in development and stress on existing sewer and stormwater infrastructure is resulting in unpredictable flooding to properties located outside of documented hazard areas.

Funding is a consistent challenge related to community vitality and flood resilience. Limited or unknown financial resources and unclear benefits discourage people from complying with requirements and pursuing mitigation that could protect their property. Limited communication and coordination is a challenge to larger-scale planning and the ability to capitalize on available funding, contributing to a perception of less available funding from State and Federal sources. There are also challenges associated with aligning available funds with community needs: sources may not match local challenges, it is difficult to combine multiple funding sources in sensible ways, and local municipalities may not have the expertise, experience, or bandwidth to identify and take advantage of funding opportunities.

3.2. Actions

Planning, investment (funding), and education/ engagement are interrelated themes when considering actions to be taken now and in the future. There is a need for planning action across scales (physical and temporal) and jurisdictions. Such planning often must address complex trade-offs. For example, actions are desired that can increase development potential. However, these interests may be in conflict with actions to mitigate flooding. Maintaining floodways as open space- a preferred flood risk reduction measure- has implications for public and private properties, presenting immediate risk to buildings constructed in the flood zone and potentially creating obstructions and increased flooding for others. Moreover, allowing development to occur in designated open space could compromise a municipality's Community Rating System (CRS)[4], resulting in increased insurance rates for everyone with a NFIP (FEMA National Flood Insurance Program) policy. For action to occur at local and regional scale, engagement with and across several political entities is needed. Some actions, such as river and open space conservation, need to be addressed based on watershed rather than political boundaries. Moreover, action should be informed by how nature functions, investing more in green infrastructure (i.e. bioswales, raingardens) and less in grey infrastructure (i.e. storm sewers, pipes, culverts). To avoid conflicts in actions and to capitalize on available funding, coordinated planning that addresses local and regional needs and takes flood risk and uncertainties into consideration are important. Action related to education and engagement are important to understand potential results of planning decisions and to inform the public and decision makers. Research and communication of knowledge between groups (i.e. scientists, planners, community decision-makers and members)

[4] The National Flood Insurance Program's (NFIP) Community Rating System (CRS) is a voluntary incentive program that recognizes and encourages community floodplain management activities that exceed min. NFIP requirements. (U.S. Climate Resilience Toolkit)

is needed to bridge actions and must work across scales.

3.3. Knowledge

In order to communicate science to officials and the public, understanding change – what is changing and how – is essential. It is equally important that the science addresses the range of problems relevant to the community so that decision-makers can balance likely trade-offs. Science-related knowledge includes enhancing understanding of the temporal dynamics of floodplains, enhancing accuracy of watershed data, and contributing to knowledge of future flood projections to communicate uncertainties that can lead to better outcomes and actions. Education for the public and municipalities on the NFIP; mitigation strategies, options and costs; and watershed regulations are all identified as contributing to knowledge. Knowledge of mitigation strategies and best management practices (BMP), – when, where, what -contributes to knowledge for optimizing solutions. Accounting for knowledge must be carefully considered in the context of place and time; BMP for one location may not be ideal for another and today's BMP may not work under future conditions. Knowledge of BMPs that contribute to multiple objectives, such as flood control and water quality, is important. However, these objectives may be in conflict with community desires.[5] There is a need for knowledge related to adaptive strategies that account for future changes and current decision-making (for example, decisions related to structural elevation of houses). Knowledge contributing to understanding and identifying, leveraging and optimizing costs associated with BMPs and implications for property owners is necessary. These costs may include first-costs for design and implementation, but also long-term costs of maintenance. In Selinsgrove, knowledge is needed to inform about flood potential and impacts of local streams and tributaries and implications of upstream agriculture and land use, pre- and post-development conditions on waterway performance and maintenance.

3.4. Values

Values in Selinsgrove focus on two areas: 1) quality of life and 2) economic resilience. Quality of life are expressed in terms of health and well-being of the residents and the health of the local environment. This includes aquatic health, water quality, and preservation of recreational opportunities, particularly river recreation. Aesthetic factors such as protection of historical places and maintaining the charm of the community are also included under the category of well-being. Aesthetic value is equally connected to river towns' historic charm and to the environmental beauty of the area. The Susquehanna River, embedded in the history of Selinsgrove, is seen as key to quality of life for both recreation and natural beauty.

Economic resilience is expressed in the context of both individual and community needs, with a key focus being flood resilience. The emphasis on individual economic resilience concerns protection of property from flooding and creation of job opportunities. Community-wide economic resilience focuses primarily on the economic vitality of the downtown area as a key element of community economic vitality. Strengthening the relationship between the downtown and Susquehanna University is identified as a key component of economic resilience. In general, a thriving downtown, a strong tax base, and protection of property values are identified as economic issues of importance and value.

These two general areas of value are often seen as interdependent. The economic resilience of the downtown area is viewed as directly linked to community well-being. The values related to the health and beauty of the river and

[5] Strategies such as planting trees have potential for multi-objective benefit however conflicts may arise between installations that improve water quality (i.e. riparian buffers) or those that allow for recreational opportunities.

surrounding environment are, in turn, seen as linked to economic resilience since they attract residents as well as visitors. Flood resilience is identified as a key factor in both domains.

CONCLUSION

The workshop provided an initial forum to focus on flooding and community vitality to better understand the challenges, potential actions, knowledge gaps, and values at play. The thoughts shared by participants highlight the continued need for coordination and communication to address flooding in Selinsgrove and other flood-prone riverine communities. Going forward, focused research and enhanced communication of knowledge between groups (i.e. scientists, planners, community decision-makers and members) is needed. Moving from knowledge to action has the potential to reveal trade-offs, must account for uncertainty, and needs to bridge regulatory and political constraints. How to handle likely trade-offs between values can be a source of conflict but also an opportunity for dialogue, identification of additional knowledge, data and needs, and sound decision-making. Feedback on challenges, values, knowledge and actions will be used to inform and improve decision making processes. The PSIRC team is currently working on a mental model from the perspective of academic researchers that considers relationships between flood and community resilience. During the next phase of this work, community representatives will be interviewed to establish a mental model from the perspective of local experts.

> Comparing the two models helps to identify crucial gaps in understanding – by both groups, and focuses communication and outreach on the most relevant and meaningful information individuals need to make informed decisions. (Bessette et al 2017: p1993-1994).

In the interest of accounting for uncertainty related to climate change and climate risk, values will be embedded into the established Values Informed Mental Model (VIMM) and used as a tool for broader stakeholder engagement. An anticipated outcome of this initiative is to establish decision-support processes to inform a responsive and coordinated portfolio of information as a basis for the community to attract funding and undertake resilience planning and implementation projects.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Thank you to Casey Helgeson, Lacey Goldberg, Lara Fowler, Klaus Keller, Robert Nicholson, Nastaran Tebyanian, and Nancy Tuana for their input and collaboration. Special recognition to H.W. "Skip" Wieder for convening the workshop in Selinsgrove, PA and soliciting PSIRC's ongoing participation. This work is supported through the Penn State Initiative for Resilient Communities (PSIRC) by a Strategic Plan seed grant from the Penn State Office of the Provost and is being undertaken in partnership with the Center for Climate Risk Management (CLIMA), the Rock Ethics Institute, Penn State Law, and the Hamer Center for Community Design.

REFERENCES

7 group and Reed, B. 2009. *The Integrative Design Guide to Green Building*. John Wiley & Sons, Inc.

Aerts, J.C.J.H., Botzen, W. J., Clarke, K.C., Cutter, S. L., Hall, J. W., Merz, B., Michel-Kerjan, E., Mysiak, J., Surminski, S., and Kunreuther, H. 2018. "Integrating human behaviour dynamics into flood disaster risk assessment." *Nature Climate Change,* Perspective. Vol 8, March 2018: Springer Nature: 193-199. doi: 10.1038/s41558-018-0085-1

Bessette D. L., Mayer, L. A., Cwik, B., Vezer, M. Keller, K., Lempert, R. J., and Tuana, N. 2017. *Risk Analysis*, 2017 Oct; 37(10). Wiley: 1993-2004.

Branst, P., Earnst, A., Gralla, F., Luederitz, C., Lang, D. J., Newig, J., Reinert, F., Abson, D. J., and von Wehrdren, H. 2013. "A review of transdisciplinary research in sustainability science." *Ecological Economics* 92 (2013). Elsevier: 1-15.

Calgary. The City of Calgary Flood Resilience Plan, Alberta Government. Accessed 05 February 2020.

Hall, W. T. 2010. *Constructing a Decision Model.* Sustainability Science 13(1): Springer: p111.

Harvard T.H. Chan School of Public Health. *Transdisciplinary Research in Energentics and Cancer Center.* Accessed 15 February 2020: https://www.hsph.harvard.edu/trec/about-us/definitions/

Irwin, E. G., Culligan, P. J., Fischer-Kowalski, M., Lavendar Law, K., Murtugudde, R. and Pfirman, S. 2018. *Nature Sustainability* Vol 1, July 2018: 324-2-326.

Keller, K., Helgeson, C., & Srikrishnan, V. (2020). Climate Risk Management. *Annual Review of Earth and Planetary Sciences, 49,* accepted. Retrieved from on 28 September 2020: https://personal.ems.psu.edu/~kzk10/Keller_et_al_Climate Risk Management_Preprint_2020docx.pdf

Mang, P., Haggard, B., Regenesis. 2016. *Regenerative Development: A Framework for Evolving Sustainability.* John Wiley & Sons, Inc.

Max-Neef, M. A. 2005. Foundations of transdisciplinarity. Ecological Economics 53 (2005). Elsevier: 5-16.

Mayer, L. A., Loa, K., Cwik, B., Tuana, N., Keller, K., Gonnerman, C., Parker, A.M. and Lempert. R. J. 2017. "Understanding scientists' computational modeling decisions about climate risk management strategies using values-informed mental models." *Global Environmental Change* 42 (2017). Elsevier: 107-116.

ReadyPA.gov. Be Informed, "Know the Threats: Flooding. Accessed 28 September 2020: https://www.ready.pa.gov/BeInformed/Know-The-Threats/Pages/Flooding.aspx#:~:text=Flooding%20is%20the%20most%20common,down%2Dstream%20from%20a%20dam.

Rouse, W. B., & Morris, N. M. (1986). On looking into the black box: Prospects and limits in the search for mental models. *Psychological Bulletin*, 100(3): 349–363.

Schneider, F. and Buser, T. 2018. *Promising degrees of stakeholder interaction in research for sustainable development.* Sustainable Land Development and Restoration: Springer. 129-142.

Staub, A. and Iulo, L.D. 2011. "User-participation and the Design Charrette: A Systematic Approach to Furthering Design Process. ARCC conference repository. 2011: Reflecting upon Current Themes in Architectural Research. Lawrence Tech. Accessed 03 February 2020: https://www.arcc-repository.org/index.php/repository/article/view/341

Vezer, M., Bakker, A., Keller, K. and Tuana, N. 2018. "Epistemic and ethical trade-offs in decision analytical modelling, A case study of flood risk management in New Orleans." *Climatic Change* 147. Springer: 1-10. https://doi.org/10.1007/s10584-017-2123-9.

WBDG (Whole Building Design Guide). Design Disciplines. Accessed 3 February 2020: https://www.wbdg.org/design-disciplines

PAPER #8.11

BUILDING INDEPENDENCE

Scott Gerald Shall[a]
[a]Lawrence Technological University, Southfield, Michigan

ABSTRACT

During the summer of 2019, a team of eleven students, faculty and professionals with backgrounds in architecture, design and engineering traveled to Port Elizabeth, South Africa, where they partnered with local community members to design and construct an event- and maker-space from scavenged materials. This project was completed by eleven people in ten days, three days scavenging materials and designing and seven days constructing, and with a budget of only $1500 - facts which give the work resonance. To our partners, who live and work within post-apartheid communities of great need, the humble frugality of the project is not a nicety, but an essential attribute. For it is only through such limits that the work is able to shift from a tantalizing one-off that increases the community's dependence on outside support to a physical and inspirational foundation through which they might realize new works for years to come. If successful, this propagation will continue indefinitely, allowing the community to ostensibly rebuild itself using modest means, and without external support.
The presentation proposed by this abstract will describe the process used to create the foundational maker-space, highlight the lessons learned through its execution and offer insight into how this process, and the resulting work, might be refined in the future.

KEYWORDS

Extra-legal communities; socially-responsive design; bricollage; viral propagation.

1. DEFINING EXTRA-LEGAL COMMUNITIES

First, a point of clarification: the architectural approach described by this writing is specifically designed to respond to communities that are often identified through their purported informality (re. informal settlements). However, to classify these settlements as such is misleading, as the communities so identified often have well-defined approaches to land ownership, construction and occupation. They are simply poorly understood, as they exist outside the formalized networks most professionals are trained to serve and, thus, understand. To form a more accurate definition, one might look to the core attributes of these settlements, as offered by organizations like UN-Habitat or the WHO (UN-Habitat, 2015, also WHO, 2000).[1] First, settlements of this type will be located on borrowed land, generally acquired outside the legal framework designed to support land transfer. And second, these settlements will be constructed outside the limits of the formal construction processes, built using unapproved plans and scavenged materials. Although both characteristics vary somewhat between settlements, they both remain inherently linked to the situation of those who occupy this settlement type – settlers who are coming to the settlement under some degree of duress, with scarce resources with which to reestablish their lives within a new location – and are thus universal within this settlement type. To operate well in these extra-legal settlements, requires that architects, engineers and other professionals align their approach with these realities, in four ways (Shall, 2018).

[1]The definition for informal settlement offered by the UN-Habitat Programme, which is arguably the definition most widely applicable, includes only two primary characteristics: informal settlements are illegally located and they are illegally constructed. It naturally follows that, now and in the future, most settlements will be extra-legal. (UN-Habitat, 2015, 3)

1.1. Tenant One: Borrowed Land

The first tenant is linked to the fact that the occupants of extra-legal settlements do not have the means, nor need, to create their built environment using formal networks. The first supposition - the lack of means - requires little elaboration, as it is the chief motivating factor behind the occupants establishing their lives within this setting. The second supposition – that the occupants do not have the need to submit to the formally established processes - is linked to the fact that these developments are rarely fully defined, mapped or understood by the governing authorities (Thieme & Eszter, 2015).[2] They fly under the radar. This is, ironically, due to the fact that these settlements are generally quite large and grow very quickly - characteristics which prevent the governing authorities to define, map or even exert influence over these settlements (Thieme and Kovacs, 2015).[3] They are thus largely ignored, at least until a new development opportunity, safety concern, international scrutiny or other important event demands some measure of attention. The fact that these settlements will hide in the open, with rare, albeit intense, punctuations of unanticipated scrutiny and intervention, has a significant impact upon the architecture. In this settlement type, elements that only have value when stability of placement is ensured, such as foundations, massive construction types, or robust attachments to engineered infrastructures, are of less value than those that are transportable or inexpensive. This promotes the creation of architecture that is light, inexpensive, and without any undue investment in concerns that are permanently tethered to place.

1.2. Tenant Two: Scavenged Materials

The second tenant share a root with the first. That is, in shifting from an architecture anchored to place toward lightweight, inexpensive structures that address immediate need, the residents minimize the need for professionals to help design verifiable or complex structures and opens up the possibility of an architecture that is constructed almost entirely of scavenged materials using only simple tools and easily-learned techniques. This allows the occupants of extra-legal settlements to eschew materials such as of concrete and glass for much more accessible materials like tarps, corrugated metal, recycled plastic, straw, wood scrap and the occasional concrete block (Davis, 2006). Correspondingly, instead of building using well-studied and highly calculated joinery, as required by concrete, glass or steel construction, the extra-legal settlement favors joints that use more common techniques, such as wrapping, tying, or stacking. The resulting joints rarely require expert training to execute or specific pieces of hardware. Rather, the built work prioritizes connections that can be realized using whatever is at hand. This aligns the processes of construction, and the resulting tectonic, with the approaches favored by the bricolleur, not the architect or engineer – a point that will be made clear later in the writing.

1.3. Tenant Three: Social Capital

The third tenant naturally follows the first two: after all, if one is realizing a settlement using common tools and easily understood methods of construction instead of those requiring more expensive and less accessible tools and methods, then one is ostensibly trading techniques of construction requiring cranes, excavators, and other large-scale

[2]The implication has been that informal economic activities and by extension informal provision of goods and services were not only described as irregular, casual and potential precarious, but also outside the remit of state regulation and surveillance. Therefore, as urban slums are characterized by informality in all spheres of life, they become to an extent invisible to the state, especially in terms of public provisions." (Thieme & Kovacs, 2015, 18)

[3]In the shadows of rapid urbanization and economic liberalization across the world, the formation and demographic growth of informal settlements or 'slums' far outpaces the availability and capacity of urban planning." (Thieme & Kovacs, 2015, 1)

supports for those able to be realized through the infusion of more people. After all, one of the chief assets of simple tools and easily-understood methods of construction is their transferability. This asset, when married with the immense size and rapid growth of this settlement type, causes the residents of extra-legal settlements, and thus the settlements themselves, to align their value systems with physical capital first, then social capital, instead of economic or symbolic (Thieme and Kovacs, 2015).[4] Rather than purchase commodities, residents will often trade or barter; instead of accruing status (although this does occur once residents establish themselves), residents accrue associations and allies. This shift impacts the priorities of the built environment, emphasizing the ability to help generate social capital, instead of cultural.

1.4. Tenant Four: Viral Propagation

The fourth tenant is distinct in that it is not based upon the needs of a single occupant for a particular architectural approach, as was the case with the other three, but upon an architectural asset derived from the nature of the first three realignments. Specifically, the need to create lightweight, inexpensive architecture on land illegally acquired using borrowed materials, common tools and easily-understood methods creates a design approach that is perfectly situated to promote the rapid propagation of the settlement itself. This asset has, over time, become a core defining characteristic of the settlement itself, allowing the extra-legal settlement to grow at a rate that far outpaces the speed at which their legal counterparts are generated (UN-Habitat, 2013).[5] The rapidity of their expansion has also rendered obsolete the methods of design and construction favored by the architect, engineer and other supporters of more formalized networks. The scale of this growth, although problematic when propagating poorly conceived or unsafe architecture, this becomes a potential asset if well-formed architecture could be aligned so as to benefit from this rapid propagation network.

2. SHIFTING ARCHITECTURE TO SUPPORT EXTRA-LEGAL SETTLEMENTS

2.1. Movement One: Becoming Socially-Responsive Outsiders

The extra-legal settlement, thus understood, creates an obvious set of challenges for those professionals who wish to engage the residents of this unique community. The first challenge is associated with the fact that the extra-legal settlement is a natural by-product of the legal settlement – an unavoidable remainder created by the abuses of powerful actors who benefit most from the formalized system. The fact that these powerful actors have, historically, enlisted the talents of architects, engineers and other professionals to extend their influence and solidify their favored position, creates a difficulty whenever these professionals attempt to offer their talents to those living within extra-legal settlements (Crawford, 1991).[6] Much of the reason for this can be traced to the educational and professional structures used by these professionals, which have, over time, been calibrated to support one system at the expense of the other. The professionals, so

[4] "...what ties the rural and urban slum experience in relation to the nexus are the prevalence of social networks and social capital as the dominant albeit informal platform for self-organizing and provisioning that determine how things get done." (Thieme & Kovacs, 2015, 11)

[5] Informal settlements represent the largest and fastest growing urban condition on the planet. In fact, according to a 2012 UN-Habitat report, "since 1990, 213 million slum dwellers have been added to the global population." (UN-Habitat, 2012)

[6] "By distancing themselves from contractors and builders with economic control of the field, they (architects) also effectively repudiated the interests of moderate-income clients. Instead, the profession linked its professional identity to large-scale monumental commissions requiring wealthy patrons. This left architects dependent on the restricted group of clients who could afford to support their ambitions: the hoped for, but only occasionally awarded, patronage of the state (far less active than in Europe), but more often, the backing of large business and corporate interests." (Crawford, 1991, 30)

indoctrinated, become an extension of this unjust order (Shall, 2018).

It is important to acknowledge that this association persist whether or not it is acknowledged by the professional (Freire, 2010).[7] In fact, non-acknowledgement can create a naivety that is easily exploited by those who have historically benefited from the work of these professionals, as evidenced by the ways in which new work offered by these professional can fail to meet the needs of those residing within extra-legal settlements. The first failure type is linked to the importation of highly-engineered solutions from external contexts, without regard for localized conditions (UN-Habitat, 2015).[8] This prevents the offered solution, despite the fact that it is arguably well- designed for its stated purpose, from ever finding root in the community. This lack of anchoring can cause the community to reject the project. This rejection might assume the form of anything from indifference to the outright consumption of its offered assets in order to support better understood constructions (Thieme and Kovacs, 2015).[9] The second failure type is slightly more insidious, as it involves the purposeful shifting of resources dedicated to help extra-legal settlements to wealthier communities. Author Mike Davis terms this activity "poaching" and attributes it to the extra-legal settlement's lack of political influence, noting that "a consensus of urban scholars agrees that public- and state-assisted housing in the Third World has primarily benefitted the urban middle class and elites" (Davis, 2006).[10]

To address this inherent bias, requires that the design professional acknowledge this professional bias and then seek to create approaches that reverse the flows of knowledge and expertise. Instead of imposing highly-engineered solutions, optimized using imported values and quantifiable data sets, the designer must work with the residents of extra-legal settlements to understand the values and resources that are already present and then collaboratively evolve these assets in order to supporting a more sustainable, but perhaps less optimized, means of distributing assets like water, shelter, energy, education,

Figure 1. The Community Makerspace in Port Elizabeth, South Africa was constructed almost entirely of reclaimed materials, at a cost of $1500 in under 7 days by a team of 11 (Shall 2019).

[7]"It happens, however, that as they cease to be exploiters or indifferent spectators or simply the heirs of exploitation and move to the side of the exploited, they almost always bring with them the marks of their origin: their prejudices and their deformations, which include a lack of confidence in the people's ability to think, to want, and to know ...They talk about the people, but they do not trust them; and trusting the people is the indispensable precondition for revolutionary change. A real humanist can be identified more by his trust in the people, which engages him in their struggle, than by a thousand actions in their favor without that trust." (Freire, 2010, 61, emphasis mine)

[8]"Many upgrading approaches continue to inappropriately import solutions from other places without adapting operations to the local context. They are therefore unable to neither take full advantage of local knowledge nor develop city-wide /'at-scale' responses." (UN-Habitat, 2015, 3, emphasis mine)

[9]"Particularly when it comes to basic service provision, a form of 'malevolent urbanism' has generated across urban areas in the global South, where unequal access to and use of the city is prevalent. At the same time, a mosaic of actors, sectors, and initiatives seek to address the 'challenges of slums', usually purporting to work with local communities, but often misunderstanding how everyday practices and expectations might differ from externally defined development goals and impact measures." (Thieme & Kovacs, 2015, 1, emphasis mine)

[10]"Both 'poaching' and fiscal bias, of course, are expressions of the poor majority's lack of political clout throughout most of the Third World; urban democracy is still the exception rather than the rule, especially in Africa. ... A consensus of urban scholars agrees that public- and state-assisted housing in the Third World has primarily benefitted the urban middle class and elites, who expect to pay low taxes while receiving high levels of municipal services. (Davis, 2006, 68-9, emphasis mine)

medicine and information (Thieme and Kovacs, 2015).[11] Provided that this evolution – from localized conditions and understanding to sustainable address – are generated collaboratively, then the offered design will likely become an extension of local assets, leading to its adoption by the host community. Although requiring a constant, and sometimes uncomfortable, examination of professional and methodological bias, this tactics is quite effective, allowing the professional to put aside the mantle of either insider – which will never be an accurate description of their role or status – or outsider – which will only perpetuate the problems described above – in favor of becoming a responsible outsider (Freire, 2010).

To illustrate how this movement, as well as subsequent movements offered by this writing, might manifest within an architectural work, one might consider a small project recently completed in Port Elizabeth, South Africa. In this work, a small team of students, faculty and professionals partnered with local, South African community members to design and construct an event- and maker-space from scavenged materials. To realize the now-completed work in only ten days, the team had to focus our efforts on only those matters pertinent to our expertise and perspective. This required the team to first build a body of trusted, local experts who could supply much of the insight required to execute this project and then listen carefully to their perspectives and beliefs. Fortunately, internet-based communication tools allowed for this process to occur well before the team even departed. This allowed them to test, remotely, the judgments and perspectives of their partners against other points of view. Through this process, the team grew to trust their assembled body of local experts, and the experts, the visiting team. The team was also able to understand more clearly the situations in which their partners' knowledge was well-formed, requiring no elaboration from them, and where they might offer useful support. This created a dialogue through which all parties were able to understand which project parameters the visiting team should consider as controls and which were variable, open for development. Areas in which the local partners had deep experience – the choice of a particular site, the specific program requirements for the development, the initial inventory of materials and the core partnerships that would energize the project – were thus taken as accurate and assumed to be givens. Areas in in which these partners needed external experts to responsibly leverage their standing as outsiders to benefit the work

– which materials in the inventory had greatest value to the realization of the work, how the inventory might be evolved to better support the work, additional materials and supports that might help us to realize the work

– were viewed as variables, becoming the focus of the visiting team's design energies.

2.2. Movement Two: Learning How to Practice as Bricolleur-Designers

The second shift required of the professional is based upon the aforementioned priority given to scavenged materials in the construction of extra-legal settlements. Here, instead of designing based upon an assumed set of ever-available materials, those operating in these settlements base their craftwork upon the idiosyncratic nature of whatever is at hand – a mandate that aligns the architect's approach more with the bricolleur than the engineer. The bricolleur, as distinct from the engineer who requires an inventory of pre-determined materials of well-known and highly specifiable attributes, operates with an ever-changing inventory of assets. Identified as a 'devious craftsman' by Claude Levi-Strauss, the bricolleur is able to perform a large number of tasks within a closed set of assets, much of

[11] Theime and Kovacs also urge those attempting to positively impact the conditions found within slums to reverse the "flows of knowledge and expertise so as to theorize the nexus from the slum, where inhabitants experience everyday relationships to water, food, energy and waste as integrated." (Thieme & Kovacs, 2015, 15, emphasis mine)

which will have been created from the remains of already completed acts of construction or destruction, instead of the demands of the current work (Strauss, 1968).[12] This aligns well with the manner in which extra-legal settlements are built and re-built – activities that are always completed using a stash of pre-gathered materials, the vast majority of which have limited pre-determined utility aside from broad notions of being inexpensive, lightweight, water-tight or durable. In this place, the chief task of the designer is to maximize the utility and expression of this finite set of resources. Massing and form, often foundational concerns within acts of architecture and engineering (due to need to maximize real estate valuations, capacities, and other quantitative attributes) must become subordinate, adjustable to the means at hand. Aside from limits that are determined in a broad sense based upon the available site (which is also a scavenged resource), the form of the work subordinates itself to the closed set of materials and whatever structural componentry one might find therein – components which forms a rare, and thus valuable, subset of objects within the stash. Similarly, program activities, another foundational attribute to the classically trained architect, must respond to the finite set of scavenged materials, shifting their placement and nature in accordance to the confines of this fixed resource. Even the tectonic of the work assumes a reactionary role, forged not from an assumed set of highly predictable and specifiable means but from highly idiosyncratic kit of of parts accumulated without knowledge of the project at hand (Strauss, 1968).[13]

This is not to state that ideas of form, massing, program and tectonic bear no influence upon the stash. Only that these values must find their expression within this finite assembly. Instead of dictating what is in the stash, ideas of form, massing, program and tectonic work to form a hierarchy of value within the previously heterarchical stash of materials. This valuation becomes a core task of the architect operating in the extra-legal settlement: to identify those components within the stash that bear rare attributes of immediate and fundamental value to the architecture, such as the ability to support weight, span distances without deflection, or provide an unbroken envelop, and

Figure 2. Purlin joint and mechanism for the sliding walls from reclaimed stock (Shall 2019).

[12]"The 'bricoleur' is adept at performing a large number of diverse tasks; but, unlike the engineer, he does not subordinate each of them to the availability of raw materials and tools conceived and procured for the purpose of the project. His universe of instruments is closed and the rules of his game are always to make do with 'whatever is at hand', that is to say with a set of tools and materials which is always finite and is also heterogeneous because what it contains bears no relation to the current project, or indeed any particular project, but is the contingent result of all the occasions there have been to renew or enrich the stock or to maintain it with the remains of previous constructions or destructions. The set of the 'bricoleur's' means cannot therefore be defined in terms of a project (which would presuppose besides, that, as in the case of the engineer, there were, at least in theory, as many sets of tools and materials or 'instrument sets', as there are different kinds of projects). It is to be defined only by its potential use or, putting this another way and in the language of the 'bricoleur' himself, because elements are collected or retained on the principle that 'they may always come in handy'. (Levi-Strauss, 1968, 17-8)

[13]"It might be said that the engineer questions the universe, while the 'bricoleur' addresses himself to the collection of oddments left over from human endeavors, that is, only a subset of culture." (Levi-Strauss, 1968, 19)

then to develop a design approach, manifest in form, massing, tectonic, and program, based upon these now valued assets. This architect then continues this process until all such foundational needs are met, at which point materials of lesser value - both in terms of the stash and wider community - are deployed to the greatest extent possible, so that more universally valued materials and components might remain in the stash for future projects (Strauss, 1968).[14] This shifts the influence of the design from larger-scale concerns to smaller, more subtle concerns that are able to elevate the utility and expression of the stash. Details, although required to be formed from common, readily-available tools so as to allow for propagation, thus become the focus of the design exercise. This tact, aside from supporting the obvious financial need for modesty, encourages an environmentally-sound approach to designing wherein the most complex and sizable materials are reclaimed and only the more minor components are modified, new or purchased.

One final component of the stash bears mention due to its unique influence upon the design. Often, when accumulating the stash, the bricolleur, or the bricolleur's partners in the case of many works within extra-legal settlements, will not only highly value components offering immediate and obvious value (structure and durability), but also to materials of unique, utilitarian character. Components offering industrially-produced simple machines – pulleys, levers, bearings, and other simple machines - are a clear example, as they allow future work to potentially align with fundamentals of physics without needing to creating complex items. Thus it is often the case that the stash of materials will include quite a few of these simple, industrially-produced machines. Although these idiosyncratic elements will often require a great deal of evolution in order to be of value to the project, they remain of unquestioned value, and thus bear a significant imprint upon the design approach.

To execute the work in South Africa within the given confines of the project - $1500, 11 people, 10 days – required that the team regard the materials already gathered to support the project as a finite set and function as bricolleur-designers. As such, the team's first act in the city was to learn everything they were able to about these materials. Every scrap was photographed, dimensioned and modeled in both Revit and Rhino. The team then tested this inventory of parts and brought this information to bear upon the knowns of the project itself: the dimensions and orientation of the site, the required turning radius for trucks delivering containers for future developments, and the absolute minimum acceptable parameters for the programmed spaces. The fact that the work had to be realized using only the given stash of materials – a stash that only contained so many items of any value to structural cladding concerns - greatly limited the set of potential formal approaches to the project, resulting in the relatively quick resolution of the overall massing of the work and allowing the visiting team to focus greater energies upon detailing the work in a manner that would maximize the value and effectiveness of the assembled parts. It was here that the group turned to precedents provided by architects operating in more formal settings. For example, the joinery of Thorncrown Chapel provided the team an approach to design that permitted them to use shorter purlins for the roof and the pivoting details of Tom Kundig, a method to allow a small footprint to support larger crowds and constructions. It is important to note that this last set of details, which required massive elements of the architecture to slide or pivot, were only possible because the local partners in the work had gathered axles from drivetrains and other unique elements, "just in case."

[14]"The elements which the 'bricoleur' collects and uses are 'pre-constrained' like the constitutive units of myth, the possible combinations of which are restricted … the decision as to what to put in each place also depends on the possibility of putting a different element there instead, so that each choice which is made will involve a complete reorganization of the structure." (Strauss, 1968, 19)

Figure 3. Constructing the mechanism for the rotating walls using scavenged bearings (Shall 2019).

2.3. Movement Three: Emphasizing the Generation of Social Capital

As earlier indicated, the architecture of extra-legal settlements, crafted in a context of scarce resources, with scavenged materials, common tools and simple techniques, naturally privileges social capital over economic capital or symbolic capital. Thus, to thrive here, the built environment must not rely upon economic capital for sustenance or growth. After all, these are settlements whose entire identity is founded upon a lack of economic resources and whose disadvantaged position is reinforced at key moments through clearing and other legitimate acts of physical force. This state of affairs somewhat distances the concerns of those residing within the extra-legal settlement from the cultural norms of the inverse cityscape, a value structure that directly led to their position of subservience, which, in turn, causes those residing therein to view these values with skepticism or outright disdain (Stevens, 1998).[15] Not surprisingly, this perspective can also cause residents to view engineers and architects, professionals who support the aforementioned cityscape through the creation of cultural capital, with a similar degree of negativity.

Instead, the residents of extra-legal settlements prioritize social capital, because it aligns more directly with the chief assets held by the residents and their built environment: namely, scale and replicability (Thieme and Kovacs, 2015).[16] That is, although the residents of extra-legal settlements have limited economic means, very little access to legitimate physical means, and only passing interest in symbolic structures, they have numbers – quickly growing numbers – and a unifying cause defined by their need to survive within a context stacked against them (UN-Habitat, 2012).[17] It is, thus, through social capital that the residents of extra-legal settlements might leverage their quickly growing numbers to overcome their lack of other resources to help ensure the survival of the settlements themselves, which are often too large for cities to easily eradicate, and improve living conditions.

The architecture can support this shift in several ways. First, the design can be articulated in a manner that leverages the fact that the built work is based upon simple construction techniques and common tools in order to expand the body of contributors. As earlier stated, the built environment of the extra-legal settlement is not the product of unique or exclusive means – a situation that would inherently limit the contributors to a very small set of professionals and force

[15] "For Bourdieu, power is the capacity to impose a specific definition of reality that is disadvantageous to others. The most obvious sort of power is physical force, but only a few groups use physical force. It is inefficient, and most societies grant the monopoly on the use of legitimate physical violence to the state. A second type of power is economic. The importance of this is obvious. Marxian theory holds that economic power is the only sort of power, and that all groups can be placed in some sort of social hierarchy, their places contingent on the amount of economic capital they control. One of of Bourdieu's major contributions to modern sociological theory has been to extend Max Weber's sociologizing and decisively demonstrate that this is not so, that there is a third, more potent and pervasive form of power – the symbolic. Symbolic power involves the wielding of symbols and concepts, ideas and beliefs, to achieve ends. "At the highest level, that of society as a whole, we call the field in which symbolic power operates 'culture'. It is Bourdieu's contention that the logic of the cultural field is such that is operates to create, legitimate and reproduce the class structure, a system of inequality." (Stevens, 1998, 59)

[16] "...what ties the rural and urban slum experience in relation to the nexus are the prevalence of social networks and social capital as the dominant albeit informal platform for self-organizing and provisioning that determine how things get done." (Thieme & Kovacs, 2015, 11)

[17] "Physical upgrading of slums with street networks and improved access to municipal basic services through augmentation of physical infrastructure has proven to make formidable positive social and economic changes in many cities. Socially, upgraded slums improve the physical living conditions, improve the general well-being of communities, strengthen local social and cultural capital networks, the livelihood generation opportunities, quality of life, and access to services and opportunities in towns and cities." (UN-Habitat, 2012, emphasis mine)

the community into a position of passively accepting (or rejecting) the offered solution. Instead, it is the potential product of the many hands, which not only allows the work to be executed more quickly and with less individual effort, but increases the community's vestment in the work and thereby generates greater connection between the individual members of the settlement. Collaborative construction generates social capital. And, provided that the means and materials remain accessible, the generation of social capital can continue for as long as the community seeks to expand or develop, potentially allowing the architecture's "liberating intention" to align with "the real practice of people in the exercise of their freedom" (Foucault, 2002).

Although the first year's work in South Africa relied more heavily upon the energies of the external team than will be the case in future years, as the project generates more social capital, there exist several examples of how the schools, clinics and other projects that come from this initial effort might be able to borrow from this work to generate greater participation, and social vestment. The first example was accidentally uncovered and is the result of the team not questioning the internal body of experts appropriately. Specifically, to dig the trenches for the foundation, the local body of contributors had used their extensive connections to the community to arrange for a backhoe. Unfortunately, the backhoe did not arrive the first day we had intended to excavate, as promised. Nor the second. Finally, on the third day, the team elected to dig the foundations by hand. The backhoe arrived the next day. Although the foundation remains a likely rare moment mandating some degree of external support (i.e. the concrete truck), this situation served to underscore an important point: namely, how important it is to replace rare, complex or expensive tools with simple tools and people whenever possible, in order to create a self-sufficient process and maximize the opportunities for the engagement of many. The second instance of the offered work supporting the generation of social capital is the fact that the most complex joinery and rarest components are reserved for operable walls – elements specifically designed to permit the inclusion of greater crowds in the work. Although this may, if replicated, become an instance of the architecture demanding unique tools or more skilled construction personnel (instances the design worked hard to minimize), this cost was deemed as a smart investment, as it will encourage greater participation, thus becoming an instance of the demands of social capital usurping the limits of the physical.

2.4. Movement Four: Building Toward Viral Propagation

The final movement is a culmination of the first three and is perhaps, the most essential attribute required of the architecture to ensure long-term sustainability. Within this community – a settlement that is propagating more quickly than formal structures can even map, let alone impact - the offered architecture must encourage its own propagation using the networks of exchange that already exist. Specifically, the residents surrounding the work must want to continually understand, borrow, and evolve the design approaches unearthed through the process of generating it. To accomplish this, the architect of extra-legal settlements must marry the three attributes earlier described – dialogical processes, accessible means and participatory construction – with two more attributes.

First, the architecture must be designed in a manner that allows for its simple dissemination to a wide audience using existing information exchange networks. This requires that architect break down the essential insights uncovered through design and construction process into memes: easily exchanged units of information able to flow through existing networks of information exchange within the community, through which residents learn key survival techniques, including how to

hijack electricity, find clean water or avoid the unwanted attention of the authorities. Properly articulation, this not only allows for easy transmissions, but permits the work to disseminate key points without using top-down project dissemination, which are both too slow to keep pace with the rapid growth of these settlements and assume a paternalistic hierarchy of knowledge transference. Through the meme, the architect's work moves from the creation of objects to the creation of objects of knowledge – material constructs that collect the wisdom of many and propagate virally (Shall, 2013).

Second, the architecture must allow for this now-expanded body of contributors to independently offer their ideas and simultaneously explore alternatives – a process that occurs quite often in the world of business. To illustrate, at the birth of a new technology (the automobile, the television, the Internet) there is often a rapid expansion in the number of businesses that grow around the promise of these technologies. Far more businesses than can succeed fight for supremacy, each attempting to offer the best product to the consumer. Over time, the consumer, through their acquisition of the offered product, judges some ideas to be better than others. As businesses respond to these trends, a Darwinian shift in investment emerges, until a much smaller set of products have each found a niche within the market (Surowiecki, 2005). Within the extra-legal settlement, this evolution would occur through the adoption of techniques and tectonics. Approaches that work well – joints that are simply executed, inexpensive materials that are easily acquired, or efficient construction approaches – would be quickly adopted, while ideas less efficacious would be ignored. Over time, this process would hone the design approach to such a degree that the new work, which would be generated entirely by the community, would far out-perform the offered architectural approach that instigated the entire process, created an effective architectural response hardwired to the conditions of the community (Shall, 2019).

Returning to the work in South Africa, although the illustrations for this fourth point will become clearer over time, there are already several indications that the propagation of the original work is already taking place. First, the interest created by the first installation has already resulted in the local partners receiving offers of new sites for development, new materials for construction and new sources of financial support. Second, the details from this first installation have already begun to appear in other plans and installations. This despite the fact that the installations in years two and three of the project will feature simpler means and more common materials. For example, the glue-lam beams created by the visiting team from reclaimed wood, despite being an effective use of scavenged materials, will likely be replaced in future projects in favor of simpler techniques that are more easily understood and evolved. Third, and perhaps most importantly, the number of potential collaborators in Port Elizabeth, and South Africa, has greatly increased due to the efforts of local partners and the successes realized by the first work. This will allow subsequent visiting teams to be matched with an equal number of experts from the community itself. More importantly, as the work continues to advance, the number of local collaborators will as well, until local residents are the primary support for the advancement of the work and the presence of a visiting team is no longer required. Instead of increased dependency, the architecture generates a healthy, self-sustaining structure of support – the type of structure that is required if the work of architects intend to increase access to food, water, medicine or education within extra-legal communities.

REFERENCES

Crawford, M. 1991. "Can Architects Be Socially Responsible?" In Ghirardo, D (Ed.), *Out of Site: A Social Criticism of Architecture* (pp. 27-45). Seattle, WA: Bay Press.

Davis, M. 2006. *Planet of Slums*. New York, NY: Verso.

Foucault, M. 2002. "Space, Knowledge, Power, Interview with Paul Rabinow." In Leach, N (ed.), *Rethinking Architecture* (pp. 367-379). New York, NY: Routledge.

Freire, P. 2010. *Pedagogy of the Oppressed.* New York, NY: Continuum International Publishing Group.

Levi-Strauss, C. 1968. *The Savage Mind*. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press.

Surowiecki, J. 2005. *The Wisdom of Crowds*. New York, NY: Anchor Books.

Shall, S. 2013. "Bricollage Research and $5 Architectures: Understanding Informality through the Construction (and Destruction) of (Small) Objects of Architectural Knowledge." In Kajewski, S, et al (Eds.), *Proceedings of the 19th CIB World Building Congress, Brisbane 2013: Construction and Society,* Brisbane: Queensland University of Technology. ISBN: 978-0-9875542-1-5

Shall, S. 2018. "Guerrilla Architecture and Humanitarian Design." In Arefi, M. and Kickert, C., eds. *Bottom-Up Urbanism*, New York: Palgrave-MacMillan.

Shall, S. 2019. "New Communal Practices for Shadow Cities." In *American Society for Engineering Education (ASEE) Repository.* https://www.asee.org/public/conferences/140/papers/24762/view.

Stevens, G. 1998. *The Favored Circle: The Social Foundations of Architectural Distinction.* Cambridge: MIT Press.

Surowiecki, J. 2005. *The Wisdom of Crowds. New York,* NY: Anchor Books.

Thieme, T., & Eszter K. 2015. "Services and Slums: Rethinking Infrastructure and Provisioning Across Nexus. In Economic and Social Research Council." Retrieved from http://www.thenexusnetwork.org/wpcontent/uploads/2014/08/ThiemeandKovacs_ServicesandSlumsNexusThinkpiece2015.pdf

UN-HABITAT. 2012. "Housing and Slum Upgrading." Retrieved from https://unhabitat.org/urbanthemes/housing-slum-upgrading.

UN-Habitat. 2015. "Streets as Public Spaces and Drivers of Urban Prosperity." Habitat III: Issue Papers, 22 – *Informal Settlements.* Retrieved from https://unhabitat.org/wp-content/uploads/2015/04/Habitat-IIIIssue-Paper-22_Informal-Settlements-2.0.pdf

PAPER #8.12

THE ISSUE WITH INCLUSIVITY: THE PROMOTION OF EQUALITY AND DIVERSITY WITHIN ARCHITECTURAL EDUCATION

Isabel Deakin[a]
[a]Mackintosh School of Architecture, Glasgow School of Art, Glasgow, Scotland, UK

ABSTRACT

How can architectural education become more inclusive to facilitate the development of equality and diversity within the architecture profession and the built environment?
The Equalities Act came into force within the UK in 2010 and is designed to legally protect people from discrimination in the workplace and in wider society. There are 9 protected characteristics identified within the act which are: age, disability, gender reassignment, race, religion/ belief, sex, sexual orientation, marriage and civil partnership, pregnancy and maternity. This paper investigates inequalities in relation to these characteristics and how they manifest themselves within architectural education, the practice of architecture and the built environment.
I argue that the current lack of equality and diversity within the profession and within the practice of architecture is directly linked to the lack of inclusivity within architectural education and that if inclusivity is promoted within the education process it will improve equality and diversity in architecture as a whole.
This paper describes an Action Research Project which was undertaken as a result of identifying that within architectural education what we teach, how we teach and who we teach needs to be more inclusive. It discusses the what: curriculum, the how: teaching methods and the who: the students and hypothesizes that these three areas currently do not support the diversity of the future generation of architects or wider society.
Through a mixed methods approach, this study explored the attitudes and experiences of architecture students at both undergraduate and post graduate level from one School of Architecture. Participants took part in a questionnaire, interactive on line discussion board, participatory workshop and focus group where they explored issues around inclusivity, equality and diversity.
The findings demonstrate there is a desire to engage in issues of inclusivity, diversity and equality within the wider architectural curriculum and suggests a variety of strategies to support a more inclusive approach to architectural education.

KEYWORDS

Architecture; inclusive design; equality; diversity

INTRODUCTION

Within the Royal Institute of British Architects, RIBA, Strategic Plan 2016-2020, which outlines the focus and priorities for the RIBA, it states

> Our Purpose: To serve member and society in order to deliver better buildings and places, stronger communities and a sustainable environment.
> Our Values: Being inclusive, ethical, environmentally aware and collaborative underpin these strategic objectives and all we do. (RIBA, Advancing Architecture, Strategic Plan 2016-2020 2016)

It further states within its strategy 1.2 that to achieve this it will:

> Attract and retain the best and most diverse talent:
> Engage school-age students to inspire an interest in architecture
> Work with schools of architecture and practices to engage the next generation of architects in the future of the profession
> Support our members and Chartered Practices in overcoming the barriers to an inclusive profession. (RIBA, Advancing Architecture, Strategic Plan 2016-2020 2016)

And yet in 2019 the RIBA Graduate Attributes for Part 1 and Part 2 do not mention inclusivity or inclusive design and within the curricula published on line for all the Schools of Architecture in Scotland, there is no mention of inclusivity or inclusive design. Furthermore, it is recognized that there is a lack of diversity within the teaching staff within Schools of Architecture across the UK as highlighted in academic data from 2014-2015 where 70% of faculty staff were male and yet 45.4% of students were female. (Morrow 2016)
As Weisman reflects in her article 'Diversity by Design: Feminist Reflections on the Future of Architectural Education and Practice'

> How can an architectural education that continues to define professional expertise in relation to the history of white, heterosexual, Euro-American male consciousness prepare students to function as effective professionals in pluralistic communities? How will students be sensitized to "difference" when they are encouraged to suppress their own gender, race, and class identities in the process of becoming "professional"? (Brown 2016, 1)

The following areas for improvement have been identified:

- Increased opportunities for students to engage with issues of diversity and equality within the curriculum
- More challenges to design inclusively within the studio environment especially with regards to the diversity of the end users
- Development of teaching methods to support diverse learning methods which take into account the varying needs of the student cohort

If we agree that equality and diversity should be part of architectural education, the question remains how can schools of architecture become more inclusive and will this facilitate the promotion of equality and diversity within architecture as a whole?

1. CONTEXT

The problems of diversity and equality within the architecture profession are well documented by amongst others Despina Stratigakos in 'Where Are the Women Architect's' (Stratisgakos 2016) and Dr Harriet Harris et al, in 'The Gendered Profession – the Question of Representation in Space Making' (Morrow 2016). Equally The annual 'Women in Architecture' survey in the UK shows that issues of equality within the profession are getting worse with the gender pay gap widening at top level practices, 1 in 7 women architects experiencing sexual harassment and 9 out of 10 women stating that children hinder their careers. (ArchitectsJournal 2018)
If you then consider this discrimination along with other protected characteristics identified within the Equalities Act of 2010, it is concerning how exclusive architecture as a profession still is and the question remains why this is not being tackled within the education process. There is however far less documentation on the inequalities within the architectural education process and more specifically the curriculum and the ways of teaching architecture.
Morrow highlights this in her essay 'Architectural assumption and environmental discrimination: The case for more inclusive design in schools of Architecture' (Nicol 2000, 43-48) which draws on the DraWare

research project at the School of Architecture, University College Dublin, and suggests ways of making the curricula more inclusive.
It seems imperative that architectural education should be teaching inclusive design as a way to foster inclusion within the built environment as a whole. However, as Larkin highlights

> Despite this global shift in attitudes and policy in recent years, it is yet to transfer to a major shift in the education program of architects and designers. (Larkin 2016, 19)

This is further highlighted by the lack of inclusivity discussed within the RIBA Part 1 and Part 2 Graduate attributes (RIBA, Validations Criteria - Royal Institute of British Architects 2014) and within the curricula of many Schools of Architecture.
It can be argued that until the emphasis shifts within Schools from the desire to create intellectual and aesthetically pleasing architecture but to also include architecture that is fit for purpose and inclusive for all then we will not be able to tackle the inequalities that currently exist within the profession. Morrow agrees by stating

> Preoccupation with the new, the exotic, and the need to perform what Frampton (1991) calls 'acrobatic feats', are prevalent in the design studio and exist at the cost of everyday issues. (Nicol 2000, 47)

A simple approach to develop a more inclusive architecture within education would be to include within design briefs the need for their outputs to be inclusively designed. This often implicit but never explicit requirement would further strengthen the need for consideration and empathy for the diversity of the end users.
I identify Inclusive Design as the design of places and spaces that support the dignified access to and use for all as identified within the Equalities Act of 2010.

This definition builds on the description of inclusive design set out by CABE (the Commission for Architecture and the Built Environment) which states

> Inclusive design is about making places everyone can use. Inclusive Design aims to remove the barriers that create undue effort and separation. It enables everyone to participate equally, confidently and independently in everyday activities. (CABE 2006)

The question remains, if we encourage students to design with equality and diversity in mind, through the requirement to design inclusively within studio briefs, will this improve levels of inclusivity within the built environment in the future? Surely it's worth trying.
If we then also consider the traditional architectural modes of teaching centred on the master and student relationship to be in need of review to allow for a more inclusive learning environment, what could a new teaching model look like?
The 6 principles for a feminist pedagogy in the teaching of research methods set out by Webb et al (2004), are:

- Reformulating the professor – student relationship (from hierarchy to equality and sharing)
- Ensuring empowerment (for a participatory democracy)
- Building community (through collaborative learning)
- Privileging the individual voice (not only the lecturer's)
- Respecting diversity of personal experience (rooted for example in gender, race, ethnicity, class, sexual preference)
- Challenging traditional views (eg. The sociology of knowledge) (Cohen 2007)

These 6 principles provide a basis for an inclusive style of teaching that responds

to the increasing diversity of our student cohort. I experimented with these principles within the framework of the Action Research Project and analysed and reflected on the success of this different approach. Also by choosing an Action Research Project, it has allowed further feminist research approaches to be undertaken, namely giving power to the participants, through the use of an engagement tool and by conducting long 'interviews' through the workshops and focus groups to allow all voices to be heard. (Cohen 2007)

2. DESCRIPTION AND OUTLINE OF RESEARCH

The structure of the Action Research Project was developed to provide a broad range of data that focused on equality and diversity within architecture but also tested different teaching modes and as such a variety of methods were used. These are outlined in time order as:

- Briefing session
- On line anonymous questionnaire
- On line interactive discussion board – padlet page (anonymous uploads)
- Workshop 1 – 4 first year students
- Workshop 2 – 3 fourth year students and 4 fifth year students
- Focus group/ De Briefing session

3. PARTICIPANTS

Architecture students at both Undergraduate and Postgraduate level were invited to take part. Of the twelve participants who consented to take part and completed the on line questionnaire, 5 identified as male and 7 identified as female. 8 out of 12 self-identified as a protected character as defined by the Equalities Act of 2010 and 4 of these identified in more than one category. The almost equal number of male and females taking part in the study shows that it is not a gendered subject of interest but the high proportion of participants that identified as being part of a protected group I believe shows that first-hand experience plays a part in the interest of inclusivity, equality and diversity.

4. DATA COLLECTION

On-line Questionnaire

The on-line questionnaire which was completed by all 12 participants was designed to give a better understanding of the current knowledge, interest and experience of the students with regards to designing with equality and diversity in mind, inclusive design and inclusive teaching.

Questionnaire: Analysis and Findings

> "I think the most important skill as an inclusive designer, is the ability of reaching out, listening and understanding the needs of different user groups. Sure there are design legislations to aid in particular mobility impaired users but the field of inclusive design expands to other user groups as well. No one and no design device can be taken for granted. At no point in my time in education here I have been taught about the subject." (Questionnaire 2019)

Through analysis of the questionnaire it became clear that all had a sound understanding of what the definition of inclusive design was although it became apparent that the participants from the post graduate level had not worked on any projects that focused on inclusive design. This was different for the first year students who had been exposed to designing for people with disabilities in their very first project. As such the majority of students had developed their knowledge through either the staff run 'Missing in Architecture' lecture series titled 'Peripheral Visions' which invited guests

to talk about subjects on the periphery of architecture or through personal projects and peer discussions. In turn this resulted in the majority of participants (7 out of 12) feeling unconfident about being inclusive designers.

When considering the skills needed to be an inclusive designer there was a recognition that empathy, compassion and understanding were required although it was questioned whether this could be taught or whether this was inherent.

It was felt by the majority of the participants that inclusive design skills were either not taught at all, or could be taught better within the school (7 out of 12). The participants who felt these skills were taught well within studio were all in first year. I believe that this directly relates to the briefs set within first year where there was an emphasis on compassion, client and difference. It is understandable that through the explicit nature of the studio briefs these skills were seen to be developing and were able to be taught. This in turn support the assumption that through teaching inclusive design at University, it will promote inclusive design within the profession in the future.

With regards to the inclusivity of teaching the results were mixed, with some students feeling there was diversity of teaching staff and methods whilst others felt there was a lack of diversity. This I believe can be attributed to their personal experience and the stage of their educational journey.

When asked which areas of the built environment discriminate there were a wide variety of responses which centred around education, the built environment, construction industry and practice.

It became clear that the undergraduate and post graduate participants had very different experiences and feelings about the way they were being taught about inclusive design and how inclusive their educational experience had been to date.

Padlet Page: On line interactive discussion board

On completion of the questionnaire, participants were invited to populate the interactive discussion board with information relating to the research topic of inclusive design and equality and diversity within architecture and architectural education. The padlet page was set up to provide a safe place to raise potentially sensitive topics but also as an on-line resource. The intention was to identify an understanding of the current interest and knowledge of the research group and to create an interactive research tool which tested different ways of teaching and peer learning. It was also a useful test to identify whether this on line resource could be used within the curriculum.

Padlet Page: Analysis and Findings

The padlet page was a success and has continued to be used by the participants after the workshops were complete. There developed a sense of community for the members of the page and led to further discussions out with the study.

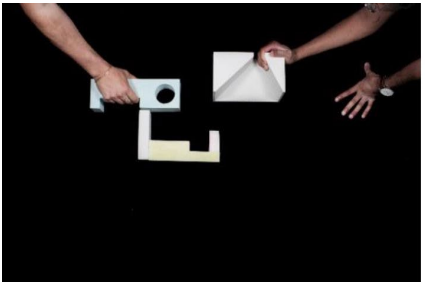
The information uploaded on the padlet page and the finding from the on-line survey were collated and through using thematic analysis a series of themes were identified for discussion within the workshops.

The themes identified for discussion were as follows:

- Gender
- Race/ Ethnicity
- Disability and the ageing population
- Mental Health
- Elitism

Within the participatory workshops a model was used as an engagement tool where participants were

asked to collaboratively explore the five themes identified through a physical artefact. The intention was that the model would act as a tangible teaching tool to create a collaborative response and as a participatory tool acting as a discussion starter. This design artefact was designed to draw out tacit knowledge on the themes identified and the participants' relationship with the built environment.



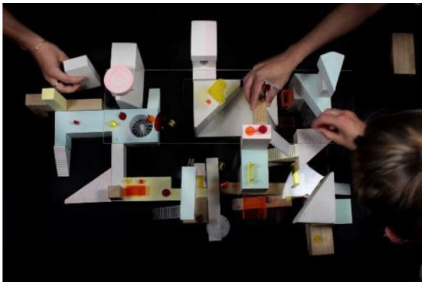


Figure 1, 2. Responses on Perceived Effectiveness of Green Infrastructure. Source: (Author 2020)Figure 1 + 2: Engagement Tool: The Institute of the Everyday. Source: (Missing in Architecture)

The engagement tool was a model called 'The Institute of the Everyday' and was designed as a collaborative piece where I worked with students to create an interactive model which investigated the inequalities that exist within society and how they manifest themselves within the built environment. This was done as part of a collective for which I am a co-founder called 'Missing in Architecture' and the model has been part of a series of exhibitions throughout Scotland.

5. WORKSHOP 1

The first workshop consisted of 4 first year students. From the outset the participants were keen to use the engagement tool and were happy to work together to develop collaborative responses to the themes identified. The discussions that developed around each model were mainly focused on the built environment and the profession with less emphasis on architectural education. This can be seen to be as a result of their limited exposure to the architectural curriculum to date.

Through the use of colour and the different shapes and materials of the blocks, the participants were quickly able to construct a narrative which identified the issues of gender that exist within the architectural profession. With regards to the identification of gendered spaces the discussion extended to the public realm and feelings of security.

On the second theme of disability and the ageing population, again the participants worked well to develop a collaborative response to the theme. As the discussion developed themes around mental health were also discussed. The physical representation focused on the lack of dignity and the thresholds within the built environment that supported able bodied individuals. The participants were comfortable to talk about the three topics and drew on personal experience and tacit knowledge to develop their response.

When asked to consider race and ethnicity within architecture and the built environment,

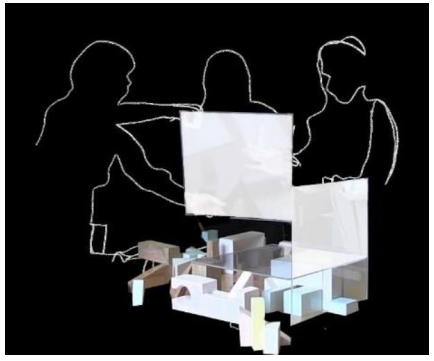


Figure 3. Workshop 1: responding to issues of gender. Source: (Isabel Deakin)

there was a hesitancy to engage with the topic although half the group identified as BAME. There was a general feeling that the built environment was not discriminatory and although the profession was predominately white, it was not a subject that the participants felt they had knowledge of to be able to discuss it in detail.

6. WORKSHOP 2

The second workshop consisted of 7 participants, three fourth year students and four fifth year students. Unlike the first workshop there was a hesitancy to engage with the model and the participants were less willing to work together on a single piece and found it easier to discuss the themes in a wider sense without the need to construct a narrative or use the engagement tool to explain their views.

The discussion showed a depth of knowledge on the subject of inclusivity, equality and diversity within architecture as a whole but focused mainly on architectural education. There was a sense of frustration at the lack of support within current educational systems to allow the participants to further their knowledge and be supported in their interests around these themes.

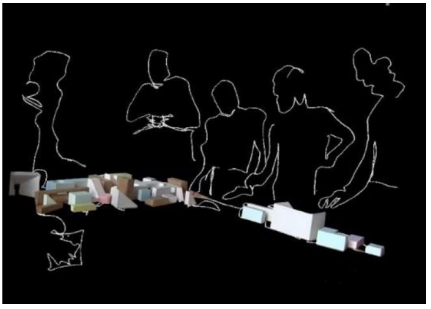


Figure 4. Workshop 1: responding to issues of gender. Source: (Isabel Deakin)

The discussions that developed around the theme of gender were similar to the first workshop and the model that was constructed had used a similar narrative to establish the form although this was not done collaboratively. The discussion focused more on equality within the profession and work/life balance with issues of exploitation within practice being highlighted.

When discussing disability and the ageing population the group recognized the awareness that disability extended beyond the physical. There was a hesitancy to establish how architecture could positively support other non-physical disabilities and a general agreement that this was an area which was not discussed within their architectural education.

The theme of race and ethnicity was an area that these participants felt strongly about. They related this to the lack of diversity and transparency of their education to date. There was a desire that the architectural education as a whole should be de-colonialised and that this should be done throughout the curriculum encompassing history and theory and studio practice. There was also a feeling that without a more diverse body of staff with different specialist areas the participants' interests and specialisms could not be supported.

The engagement tool was successful as a teaching tool and a discussion starter. By allowing the participants to build something it facilitated the discussion and in some cases the building blocks were used as safety blankets, and were hugged when discussing sensitive topics. The different interactions due to the size of the group showed that this type of teaching method is best used with smaller groups who can work closely together but is a valuable tool to allow a variety of voices to be heard.

7. REFLECTIONS

On completion of the workshops, both discussions were transcribed. Thematic analysis was then undertaken with areas of interest identified for further discussion at the focus group.

The focus group consisted of 7 participants with a mixture of participants from each of the workshops. Through the use of post-it notes we discussed ways to develop the curriculum to support a more inclusive architectural education. This was designed as a way to create a positive conclusion to the volunteers' participation within this Action Research Project. It was also designed as an informal discussion where prompts from the workshop were used to facilitate conversation and post-it notes were issued to allow for comments to be made even if the participants were not comfortable discussing them.

The participants were all very vocal and happy to discuss and question one another and there was no hierarchy within the group although they were from opposing ends of the education system. This correlates with the feminist principles which formed the basis of the structure for the project. The participants suggestions for the curriculum and conclusions from the workshop were analysed and the recommendations draw on these discussions.

The design of the Action Research Project itself was also testing a diverse range of teaching methods that supported a feminist approach to pedagogy. The success of this can be seen from the engagement of the participants. Many of these teaching approaches have now been tested further within the wider teaching practice within the school.

My recommendations centre on development within the studio environment and are as follows:

- Diversification of the reading lists, precedents used by staff and approaches to architecture and design especially when developing studio briefs
- Amend curriculums to support inclusive design and to include client's needs in the aims of the course
- Diversify the teaching styles to support a diverse cohort
- Development of peer support groups and mentoring schemes to support exchange of knowledge from a diverse cohort
- Develop inclusive design principles that should be embedded in each studio brief to support designing inclusively within the studio

Although this Action Research Project was based in one school these suggestions extend to the wider architectural curriculum across many Schools of Architecture.

CONCLUSION

The conclusions and recommendations were developed through collaboration with the participants of the project and through creating a supportive environment and through using diverse teaching methods it allowed for a sense of empowerment amongst the participants and individual voices to be heard whilst always respecting the diversity of personal experience. (Cohen 2007)

Steps are being made through the current diversification of the studio briefs within the undergraduate and postgraduate course at the Glasgow School of Art and the development of the wider curriculum across the Mackintosh School of Architecture. This can be tackled at a micro level within individual studio briefs, reading lists and inclusive teaching practices of individual tutors as suggested in my recommendations but also should be developed at an institutional level and a policy making level.

The next generation of architects should be challenged to design holistically with the highest regards given to the inclusive nature of the built environment and the diversity of the end users. They should be given the tools and the opportunity to do this and for this to be taught through more inclusive teaching methods which allow the students individual specialisms to be nurtured and supported.

REFERENCES

ArchitectsJournal. 2018. *www.architectsjournal.co.uk*. February 8. Accessed April 4, 2019. https://www.architectsjournal.co.uk/women-in-architecture/survey.

Brown, Lori. A. 2016. *Feminist Practices: interdisciplinary approaches to womein in architecture*. Oxon, New York: Routledge.

CABE. 2006. "www.designcouncil.org.uk." *www.cabe.org.uk*. Accessed April 4, 2019. https://www.designcouncil.org.uk/sites/default/files/asset/document/the-principles-of-inclusive-design.pdf.

Cohen, Louis, Manion, Lawrence, Morrison, Keith. 2007. *Research Methods in Education: 6th edition*. Oxon and New York: Routledge.

Larkin, Helen, Dell, Kelsey, Hitch, Danielle. 2016. "Students' Attitudes to Universal Design in Architectural Education." *Journal of Social Inclusion* 7(2) 19-34.

Morrow, Ruth, Harriss, Harriet, Brown, James Benedict, Soane, James. 2016. *A Gendered Profession*. London: RIBA Publishing.

NCStateUniversity. 2008. *The Center for Universal Design: environments and products for all people*. Accessed April 4, 2019.https://projects.ncsu.edu/design/cud/about_us/about_us.htm.

Nicol, David, Pilling, Simon. 2000. *Changing Architectural Education: Towards a New Professionalism*. London: Spon.

Questionnaire. 2019. "Inclusive Design." *Anonymous On Line Questionnaire*. January.

RIBA. 2016. *Advancing Architecture, Strategic Plan 2016-2020*. Strategic Plan, London: RIBA .

—. 2014. "Validations Criteria - Royal Institute of British Architects." *www.architecture.com*. May 2. Accessed April 4, 2019. https://www.architecture.com/-/media/gathercontent/validation-procedures-and-criteria/additional-documentsvalidationprocedures2011secondrevision2may2014pdf.pdf.

Stratisgakos, Despina. 2016. *Where are the Women Architects?* Woodstock: Princeton University Press.

UN. 2018. "www.issuu.com." *An Architecture Guide to the UN 17 Sustainable Development Goals*. Accessed April 5, 2019.https://issuu.com/kadk/docs/un17_guidebook_single

PAPER #8.13

DESIGN GUIDELINES FOR COMMUNITY SPACES IN HOUSING

Alex Mitxelena[a], Ramon Barrena[a], Beatriz Moral[a], Enkarni Gomez[a]
[a]University of the Basque Country, Donostia – San Sebastian, Spain

ABSTRACT

What should architecture be like to meet people's needs and create and strengthen communities? This is the question we are trying to answer in this paper.
To do this, we need, first, to be able to name what the needs of the human being are, and Manfred Max Neef helped us to do so. According to this renowned economist, peoples' fundamental needs are the following: subsistence, protection, affection, understanding, participation, leisure, creation, identity, and freedom.
None of these needs can be satisfied in isolation, showing that human beings are intrinsically interdependent, that is why we are fated to live in community. This idea is central for feminist economy, that is why we also integrate this vision in our work, particularly, the contribution of Amaya Pérez Orozco, who collects, in turn, the idea of a good life or good living (sumak kawsay, a Quichua term that has become a central concept of a political debate around the commons and our relationship with nature).
Likewise, we have also been inspired by collaborative housing (co-housing) that, on many occasions, have been designed to meet the needs of the community, experimenting extensively with shared spaces.
With all this, we have developed a proposal that identifies the aspects to be considered in the design of housing to meet human needs and place the community in the center.

KEYWORDS

Housing; architecture; design; guidelines; care; community space; multifunction; mix of uses.

INTRODUCTION

Housing and community on a human scale

Our main objective is to promote an architecture that meets human needs and facilitates people to enjoy a good life, with a special emphasis on the importance of the community in this matter.
We take Amaya Pérez Orozco's definition of good living or good life:

> It must be a notion that responds to the basic conditions of existence of vulnerability, interdependence, and eco-dependence; Have a multidimensional understanding of well-being and understands that this is an incarnate experience, but always lived collectively (Perez Orozco 2014, 229). (own translation)

Architecture must face the challenge of what should be like to build for a good life, providing solutions and addressing the issue from an architectural point of view.
We take the community as a starting point to address the issue of human needs because the community is where these needs are to be met. Therefore, we are so interested in shared spaces: they are essential if we are to question the classic division of productive/reproductive work and the current isolation of the homes.
We are particularly interested in common and intermediate spaces since they are places that are shared and from which we could expect much more. In our environment, these spaces are generally small, untapped, and devalued. However, they can play a particularly important role both in responding to individual needs (collectively managed) and

in providing meeting places where personal bonds between neighbors are to be created. We are not so interested in attention or conciliation or in the division of labor as productive and reproductive. We prefer to ponder over the vulnerability of life, its precariousness, the human interdependence, and the conditions needed for a good life. All human beings are vulnerable and interdependent, and we must be taken care of throughout our lives, sometimes more than others. As Pérez Orozco says:

> (...) directly associated with feminism, we think that life must be thought of from its vulnerability and interdependence, dismantling the false, harmful, and masculinized chimera of self-reliance as an existential objective and its hidden mirror of immolated and feminized dependency. For us this objective is fundamental: taking out responsibilities from households, putting them in the common and the visible, dissociating the task of sustaining the life away from femininity, ending the sexual division of work and, ultimately, building how this is going to be done in terms of collective and democratic responsibility (Perez Orozco 2014, 226).

The fundamental needs

There is no doubt that it will not be easy to land when jumping from a notion as wide as good living. That is why we use the work of Manfred Max Neef to make specific proposals. Max Neef was a Chilean economist, political scientist, and environmentalist of international reputation. One of his main contributions is in his book Desarrollo a Escala Humana (1986), where he proposes a matrix in which he identifies the nine fundamental human needs. The main postulate of the proposal offered in this book is the following:

> The life quality of people will depend on the possibilities that people must adequately satisfy their fundamental human needs (Max Neef 1986, 16).

Max Neef identifies the following needs: subsistence, protection, affection, understanding, participation, leisure, creation, identity, and freedom. Nine may seem few when we tend to think that human needs are endless. This is, according to the author, because we assume incorrect assumptions:

> It has been believed, traditionally, that human needs tend to be infinite; that they are constantly changing; that vary from one culture to another, and that they are different in each historical period. We believe that such assumptions are incorrect since they are the product of a conceptual error. The typical mistake that is made in the literature and analysis about human needs is that the fundamental difference between what is really needed and what is satisfying of those needs is not explained. It is essential to make a distinction between both concepts (...) for both epistemological and methodological reasons (Max Neef 1986, 41).

To clearly understand what fundamental human needs are, Max Neef differentiates between needs and satisfiers. This can be easily understood with two simple examples: if subsistence is a necessity, food is a satisfier; If affection is a necessity, friendship is a satisfier. Max Neef formulates these two postulates like this:

> First: The fundamental human needs are finite, few and classifiable. Second: The fundamental human needs (such as those contained in the proposed system) are the same in all cultures and in all historical periods. What changes, through time and cultures, is the way or means used to meet the needs (Max Neef 1986, 42).

Now, the author adds:

> (...) there is no biunivocal correspondence between needs and satisfiers. A satisfier can contribute simultaneously to the satisfaction of different needs or, conversely, a need may require different satisfiers to be met. These relationships are not even fixed. They can vary according to time, place, and circumstances (Max Neef 1986, 42).

The author assumes universal character of these needs because, although we lack empirical evidence to prove it (as he acknowledges), "nothing prevents us from talking about its social-universal character, as needs whose realization is desirable to anyone, and whose inhibition, also for anyone, must be undesirable "(Max Neef 1986, 53).
Max Neef does not talk about good living; however, we think that his approach is close to this concept because he has an integrative approach to the fundamental needs, and he is concerned about what he calls the quality of life. We have opted for this author when developing our methodology because he offers a tool, a matrix, that can be very useful for an architectural intervention for it takes human needs from a broad point of view (beyond material needs and including subjective ones).
Our work has been, precisely, to apply this matrix to the built space to make specific proposals for the construction or modification of spaces to create the basic conditions of good living.

The satisfiers

Satisfiers vary depending on the context, that is, human beings have found different solutions for the same need. However, the approach or perspective with which that solution is given may not be positive. Thus, Max Neef describes a series of negative satisfiers that prevent in the long run from satisfying the need for which they were created because they generate a false sense of satisfaction, or because they make difficult or do not favour the satisfaction of other needs. An example of a negative satisfier would be armaments to meet the need for protection. In architecture, gated communities are an example of this, houses that are isolated from their environment and that prevent the free movement of its inhabitants. Or zoning in urban planning, separating or segregating uses (normally associated with production), to the detriment of security or conciliation.
The positive satisfiers are what Max Neef calls synergetic, and they are "those who, by meeting a particular need, stimulate and contribute to the simultaneous satisfaction of other needs" (Max Neef 1993, 64-65). An example would be food (preparation, consumption, distribution, commensality, etc.), which satisfies more needs than feeding, for example, being a way of establishing bonds with other people, identity, or affection. An example from the architecture would be the squares, synergetic places par excellence, since they carry out many activities and respond to various needs: it is a place for meeting, play, market, community activities, festivals, etc.

Synergetic spaces

This perspective of synergistic satisfiers helps us think about spaces that fulfil more than one function. This is especially relevant if we think of intermediate spaces - those places that, for example, connect spaces that have an assigned function. Between the street and the house there are spaces that are only thought of as passages (and because they have no major interest, the tendency is to reduce them as much as possible). Let us think about making these spaces visible and giving them, identity and we will see that they may serve many more functions, for example, to foster interaction between the neighbourhood and the community.

This will also make us think of a more permeable relationship between the private and public spheres. The houses and the people living in them shall not be isolated from their community; we should have to be looking for reducing unwanted isolation that is so frequent in our cities.
It is also about promoting non-hierarchical or multifunctional spaces, places in which life happens, with its complexity, uncertainty, and disorder.
We can imagine neighbourhoods that integrate the communal with mixed programs where the houses are supplemented with working spaces (thus responding to the needs of subsistence and creation), health services (to respond to those of subsistence and protection), educational and participatory cultural services (for understanding, leisure, participation, and identity). Environments that integrate several generations (responding to the needs of protection, affection, understanding, participation, and identity), different beliefs (identity, freedom), that allow and invite people to participate, to express themselves (creation, freedom). Environments in which the community is organized to collectivize care (affection, participation, identity).
In the collaborative housing movement, the ideas of integration of productive and reproductive activities, and the collectivization of care are well established, so that intermediate spaces, meeting places and multifunctional spaces become particularly important. It would be interesting to be able to spread these practices of collaborative housing to other environments with no need to build from scratch but to introduce them into existing spaces.
It is also important to make visible, recover and strengthen the practices that are still carried out spontaneously in certain environments that generate suitable spaces for meeting, exchanging, creating bonds, and favouring the creation of a sense of community.

We are aware that the built space is only one of the necessary ingredients to have a healthy community, but also that it can be a serious obstacle. Community life mainly needs people. Therefore, we want to think of the architecture for the creation of community as an architecture that creates environments that invite people to occupy them, as a kind of gardening for butterflies whose objective is to create environments that attract and invite them to stay.

1. THE DESIGN OF THE SPACES FOR A COMMUNITY

The design of spaces for communities consists of three parts:
1. Community
2. Activities in community spaces
3. Characteristics of community spaces

In Community we address the issue of what the characteristics of a community should be so that it responds to the fundamental needs.
In Activities in community spaces, considering the kind of activities that shall be possible to carry out in them, we find four types of activities: community creators, expansive, functional, and expressive.
And in Characteristics of community spaces we identify the aspects and elements that are necessary for these spaces so that they fulfil their function in the best possible way. We identify structural, technical, quality, accessory, and subjective characteristics.
Next, we will develop this proposal in detail.

1.1. Community

The built space, the architecture, is not enough to solve the lives of people and groups in a satisfactory way, but it is a necessary condition. Similarly, an ideal space is of little use if the community does not have certain characteristics if it does not foster certain values. There will be little use for well-

designed meeting spaces if the inhabitants have no desire to interact with each other.
We describe here some of the characteristics that these communities should have, always keeping in mind that our goal is to get communities prepared to respond to fundamental needs.
1. The community should facilitate or guarantee good treatment among people in the community so that they feel cared for, safe, heard, respected, and accompanied.
2. The community must keep in mind that not all people are equal, that they are not at the same vital moment and are not in comparable circumstances.
3. For the community no to enclose itself and isolate or become too dogmatic it would be suitable to have an appropriate size, feed the feeling of identity, maintain a good relationship with the environment and be open to change.
4. The community should have agreed rules of coexistence, systems of participation in decision-making, management, and maintenance. It must also have a good internal communication system and an adequate transmission of its values.
5. The community should be open to the neighbourhood, to the town, to the city, that is, to be permeable to its surroundings.
These aspects and those we develop later should be considered only as an initial proposal to think and debate how we want our communities to be.

1.2. Activities and community spaces

Spaces should not be designed for exclusive use (dining room, sleeping room, etc.), thus confining the number of possible uses to the number of available spaces. So, as there are many significant activities specific to fundamental needs, the spaces of a community must be prepared to welcome, facilitate, and promote these activities. Some of them will need exclusive spaces (or at least quite exclusive), but many others can be done in a multitude of different spaces, if these are suitable.
It is also important to consider the environment in which the community is to propose activities to the neighbouring people and not allocate space to activities that can be carried out nearby.
We define four types of activities and we have thought of them in spatial parameters:
1. Community creators: meeting, sharing, communicating, or talking, exchanging, and sharing.
2. Expansive: for enjoyment and personal development, such as reading, throwing parties, physical exercise, games, exploration, meditation, relaxation, etc.
3. Functional: activities that are part of the daily routine of our lives such as cooking, doing laundry, watering, hanging clothing, cultivating, making small repairs, etc.
4. Expressive: for example, exhibiting, painting, drawing, weaving, embroidering, writing, dancing, playing music, giving shows and in general any type of artistic or personal expression that can be carried out within the community.

1.3. Characteristics of community spaces

The community spaces are based on the idea of the synergetic satisfiers described by Max Neef. Sharing spaces must be conceived as an opportunity and enrichment, not something that has to be done precariously and in places of bad quality. Thus, the activities that are developed and the people who participate should be able to enjoy and share without creating annoying situations and discomforts. To have spaces of good quality, they must have certain characteristics. In this section, we identify and list some of them.
The structural characteristics establish the general parameters in which the others must be developed. We have identified the following:
- Multipurpose / transformable / adaptable
- Permeable
- Multidirectional

- Not hierarchical
- Sufficient
- Appreciated/qualified

Finally, we describe other technical and quality characteristics.

1.3.1. Multipurpose / transformable / adaptable

Multipurpose spaces allow creating spaces for people doing different activities to meet and melt. It also allows us to share experiences and knowledge and to increase the use of the spaces because there are more possibilities of use in time and in the type of activities.

These spaces might have different uses at different times, but they can also be spaces that host different activities simultaneously, without causing trouble. In fact, this simultaneity should be an opportunity to enrich activities by expanding and completing them, and, above all, to create opportunities for the relationship between people: carrying out collective activities reinforces relationships and the sense of community.

The furniture must also allow different use and be placed in various and unforeseen provisions.

1.3.2. Permeable

By permeability we understand the opposite of bunkerization, both of households and communities. Without compromising a clear delimitation of both the home and the community, it is essential to nurturing a certain porosity of both the community and its environment and the homes and their communities.

Thus, the uses and activities carried out in a community must contain the potential to open up to the environment, or host other people's activities; in the same way, it would be necessary to favour the passage of outsiders, at least in certain spaces.

Regarding the activities that are normally done at home (preparing food, caring, cleaning, sewing, painting, etc.), there must exist the possibility of carrying them outside, thus breaking the isolation to which they are usually confined. This allows us to share them, to support each other, or simply carry them out accompanied while weaving community. On the other hand, the community would also need access to the houses: if they were more penetrable it would be easier to know if someone needs help, support. Here we will have to face the delicate task of delimiting where privacy ends and where isolation begins, or where support ends and the invasion begins, something that, most likely, depends on people and circumstances.

Some use or activities require a certain degree of isolation so that this permeability is not always convenient. However, it may be the case that this need for isolation or privacy is necessary only at specific times.

Permeability requires, among other things, that there is a visual relationship between the spaces, as well as easy accessibility (free of obstacles such as walls, gates, impenetrable doors, etc.) that use porous delimiting elements.

1.3.3. Multidirectional

People can tour buildings or spaces following an objective or according to the use or the activity. Allowing different directions can create unexpected encounters between people who go to different places or who do different activities.

1.3.4. Not hierarchical

With non-hierarchical space we mean avoiding the existence of spaces that determine the place that people must occupy, putting some above others. A meeting room can take different forms, and these may or may not be hierarchical. There is no doubt that the way in which space is designed, in which its furniture and distribution are arranged, condition the way in which people relate to each other:

a rectangular table instead of a round one; chairs in a circle instead of rows; flat ground instead of stands, etc.

1.3.5. Enough

It is important that the spaces are sufficiently large so that the functions are not restricted and that there is room for change or adaptation, for improvisation. Having enough space (considering that enough is a totally subjective term) is not having to compete for it, not having to discard a significant activity due to lack of space, or leaving a certain group of people without space (as often happens with teenagers, but that can be applied to any other group).
To have enough space is to have spaces in which activities can be carried out in a functional way and with enough comfort. Having enough space is also important to feel comfortable in any space. It provides quality to life.
We need to have enough space to be able to carry out simultaneous activities so that they are compatible, something particularly important, for example, for caring activities, which are often carried out simultaneously with other activities.

1.3.6. Appreciated/qualified

It is important to give the value they deserve to certain spaces and certain activities, in particular to those that allow people to meet, establish relationships, foster mutual support and develop as individuals; these places and activities that encourage that the works for maintenance and reproduction of life leave the confinement of the home. It is well known that in many countries the laundries are not inside the house but in a common room. This is fine, but it is not so fine to place it in a dark and sinister basement. The laundry room, if it is a nicely designed, in an open, bright, and cosy space, can help to dignify the activity and to promote interaction between its users.

1.3.7. Other characteristics

We have classified the rest of the characteristics like this:
- Technical
- Quality
- Accessories
- Subjective

The technical characteristics are those that affect the habitability conditions, the physical aspects that must guarantee the well-being and comfort of people. We highlight the following:
- Thermal comfort
- Acoustic comfort
- Ventilation
- Accessibility

Quality characteristics refer to the impact on the mood of the people and the way in which they condition the relationship between them. In these we highlight the following by way of example, since the list may be longer:
- cosy space
- sheltered space
- spaces that generate a sense of security
- space that guarantees privacy
- convivial and friendly space
- outdoor spaces
- evocative spaces
- etc.

That is, the spaces we build or modify must be designed to have this good impact on those who inhabit them, avoiding creating inhospitable, cold, impersonal, suffocating, or insecure places.
When we talk about accessories, we mean these elements that populate or dress the spaces. These accessories must have the same purpose as the structural and techniques characteristics: they must favour the coexistence of different people and activities, improvisation, adaptability; they have to help generate pleasant, stimulating environments; to provoke encounters, exchange, dialogue,

communication, creativity, and imagination. Here we can only mention a few examples since the list could be endless, and each community will require different accessories to meet their needs and fulfil their wishes:

- moving elements
- places to sit
- means of expression
- internal and external communication tools
- plants
- games
- adaptable separation elements (curtains, screens, etc.)
- etc.

Finally, when we talk about subjective characteristics we refer to those aspects of the spaces that allow the development of subjectivity, identity, free expression, adherence to the community; spaces that allow spontaneity, diversity; spaces that we feel belong to us, that represent us, with which we feel identified and in which we find something of ourselves.

FINAL CONSIDERATIONS

We would like to finish by pointing out that another design of residential buildings is possible and exists. A design that is capable of surpassing the idea of bunker homes, where common spaces cease to be anonymous steps to go from one functional place to another; which considers common spaces as an opportunity rather than as a problem; that uses these spaces to weave community and generate life; and that gives these spaces visibility, uniqueness, and value, and also spares no resources to provide them. We believe that a building articulated around good common spaces (common resources, after all) improves people's quality of life, not only because it allows them to access resources that would otherwise be unattainable individually, but also because it represents the opportunity to weave those nets that are so essential to us in order to achieve a good life. If interdependence is our characteristic feature, let us make it a virtue and not a flaw.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

School of Architecture of the University of the Basque Country and the Basque Government (Department of Environment, Territorial Planning and Housing).

REFERENCES

Acosta, A. and Martínez, E. 2009. "El buen vivir. Una vía para el desarrollo." *Revista Polis*, 25. Santiago (Chile): Editorial Universidad Bolivariana. ISSN-e 0718-6568

Max Neef, M. 1986. *Desarrollo a escala humana: Conceptos, aplicaciones y reflexiones*. Barcelona: Icaria Editorial. ISBN 978-84-7426-217-9

Pérez Orozco, A. 2014. *Subversión feminista de la economía. Aportes para un debate sobre el conflicto capital-vida*. Madrid: Traficantes de Sueños.

PAPER #8.14

DISENTANGLING RELATIONAL SPACE: ADDING INSIGHTS OF THE EVERYDAY LIFE OF CHILDREN TO THE PROCESS OF URBAN RENEWAL

Johannus van Hoof[a], Erik Van Daele[a], Bruno Notteboom[a]
[a] KU Leuven, Ghent, Belgium

ABSTRACT

This research focuses on facilitating contemporary urbanity from a user central position, based on the creation of space. This research is approached from a perspective formed within the disciplines dealing with the production of space and based on the relational paradigm (Harvey 2004; Massey 2005; Löw 2016). It aims at developing new approaches to the construction of- and additions to the current urban archives on which spatial policy- and design frameworks are based. By bridging social and spatial knowledge in an empirical research of the case Muide-Meulestede in the city of Ghent (Belgium), it tries to transcend universalism by accurate location-bound knowledge, and deliver new entries to the spatial professional to tackle design challenges in contemporary Flemish urban conditions.
The paper describes the process of creating insights into the relational space of children in function of the development of an "age-friendly Recreational Structure" for the Muide-Meulestede district. It gives an overview of used methods to expose the local relational space of children living in the district, the knowledge contribution that a relational approach can offer to existing "urban archives" and how this knowledge can be used within a process of urban renewal.

KEYWORDS

Relational space; citizen centered design strategies; localism; socio-spatial limits; multiplicity.

INTRODUCTION

We live in a world in continuous transformation. We experience it from within a global sphere in which we have to actively relate ourselves to themes as the global economy, politics and climate uncertainties. This fluid world is characterized firstly by the unprecedented possibilities that globalization offers us, but also by the search for universal standardization (Stables 2019) to reduce the complexity that arises from this. As a response to globalization, there is a growing awareness of the value of the here and now, of the city, the neighborhood and the street in which we live (Madanipour 2003). More and more attention is paid to our daily life and its environment (De Certeau 1988) as our personal center of our global existence. In a world, where the network society (van Dijk 2012) organizes itself at the speed of lightning, reformulates, expands and merges into something else, and creates the right conditions for a wide diversity of social movements (Nicholls 2008). This is the field where the contemporary spatial designer, developer and policymaker have to position themselves, spatial professionals who are responsible for the development of the stage where all these dynamics take place.
This research is focusing on an actual process of urban development within the District Muide-Meulestede part of the city of Ghent, located in the Flemish region as part of Belgium. It focuses on a development process initiated by a collaboration between the residents of the neighbourhood and the urban services of the city, in response to the large-scale developments taking place around the neighbourhood. It starts from the desire

of the residents to have more control over their daily living environment, but also to take responsibility for it. In addition, it gives shape to the ambition of the city to develop a city, based on a participatory trajectory, to the needs of- and tailored to its residents.

This form of localism (Davoudi and Madanipour 2013) can be interpreted as a countermovement to globalism, as it offers the citizen the opportunity to give substance to its individual position within the global themes on a human scale. But it can also be interpreted as a countermovement to standardization, the reduction of the real complexity of the city in policies and design frameworks, where the need for knowledge of the local (Kuukkanen, 2012) has faded into the background.

With this in mind, the available urban archives as spatial theorezations, used and made by the spatial professional, seems to be not sufficient within the contemporary model of urban renewal. Space can no longer be treated as the container of materiality as a contrasting background for social activities (Harvey 1973). The socio-spatial qualities of space form the conditions of daily life. Space not only functions as the context of the social life it includes, it can be described as social-based spatiality. Space forms the stage (Foucault 1980, Soja 1989, Heynen 2013) for the processes that take place on it, where these processes describe their stage at the same time. This concept of space reflects the relationships between the individual, object and group (Gurvitch 1971, Massey 2005, Löw, 2017), space as a stage facilitates interaction and this interaction defines space.

This research looks for a new approach to create space based on the actual complexity that space as a stage includes. As a reaction to the reconstruction of New Orleans after Hurricane Katrina, Peter Marcuse described an approach, he called 'critical planning' to explore and to give answer to the actual complexity, which arose from this crisis situation. This research is building on the three steps of 'critical planning' he developed: expose, propose and politicize (Marcuse 2009). To expose this complexity, the research starts not from the perspective of the absolute space, the physical appearance of space, but from the relational space. The concept of relational space is approached from different disciplines (Harvey1973; Soja 1996; Massey 2005; Madanipour 2010; Heynen 2012; Tornaghi and Knierbein 2015; Löw 2016), this research starts from the position and the concept of space, that is used by the spatial disciplines (Khan, Moulaert and Schreurs 2013) and defines space as an active parameter. Insights in the relational space, are not the goal, the goal is to develop a new approach to the process of making space. This process of making space has a location and it includes a defined number of processes, it relates different collectives, individuals and objects. In this way the research has the aim to go beyond the high level of abstraction that the current process requires. From an anthropological and geographical focus on middle-range theorization (Merton 1968), within a perimeter actual processes can be identified, and mutual relationships can be mapped to expose the local relational space (Ong 2011). This research therefore does not lead to a universal set of variables to analyze a certain perimeter, a universal theory or method (Law, 2004), but to an approach to grasp the contemporary urbanity in order to create space and adjusted to the spatial professional.

This paper describes a case which explores the possibilities of a relational approach within a process of urban renewal in a Flemish urban context. This case is dealing with an actual project of city renewal, in collaboration with the city of Ghent. We focus on a part of this process: the development of an age friendly recreational structure directed to the neighbourhood Muide-Meulestede. It is a project with the ambition to deal with the actual complexity of the neighbourhood, developing space tailored to a broad diversity

of social groups, instead of just designing space for all. The case serves as a living lab to the research, where it uses this process as a case study at the same time. The paper starts with a description of the concept "age friendly recreational structure", how the framework of the research contributes to this development, and its meaning to the research. Next, it focusses on the methodology that was used to expose the daily patterns of children in the public space. It gives an overview the representation and projection of the material. The paper ends with the significance of this approach for a development process and how it contributes to the "propose" and "politicize" phases.

1. MULTIPLICITY AS A CONDITION FOR THE DEVELOPMENT OF AN "AGE-FRIENDLY RECREATIONAL STRUCTURE"

The concept, space as a stage, is the basis for the development of the "Age-friendly recreational structure" for the Muide-Meulestede district, which is currently being developed within a multi-disciplinary partnership between various city services and to which the research actively contributes.

The concept "age-friendly recreational structure" refers to the "play space web" (Dekeyser 2007; Gill 2019), a policy document used by various Flemish municipalities and developed by the Flemish NGO Kind & Samenleving. This policy document functions as a planning instrument, at the scale of a neighbourhood, which determines the playability and child-friendliness of space within current and future developments. A "play space web" focuses both on guidelines for the provision of child-friendly space, it creates guidelines to how this space can be designed, but it also maps the neighbourhood for child-related mobility issues. This instrument forms a framework for the design of playgrounds and contributes to the larger framework of urban development.

The idea of the "age-friendly recreational structure" was coined in a urban policy document that was devised by the city service of the city of Ghent "urban renewal". It is based on the hypothesis that an integrated approach to a recreational structure provides added value for the diversity of users of the public space, but also that this approach can lead to an instrument that can have an impact on a diversity of scales in the process of spatial development. The application of the concept is experimental, it creates its shape within the living lab of this research in the collaboration with the city services.

The word age-friendly in "age-friendly recreational structure" represents the ambition to make the public domain accessible and attractive for various target groups that are located in all age groups from young to old. The word recreational indicates a focus on activities that fall outside the daily obligations. The word structure in "age-friendly recreational structure" stands for the ambition to develop "1" structure instead of various structures aimed at individual target groups or different use. Together, these words in the title of this project represent a new approach to urban development, which seems evident, but in practice it is not.

The development of one structure for various target groups starts from the fact that these target groups are going to share space and relate with each other within this space. The space in which this takes place is read differently by each target group and each target group sets its own requirements and wishes for this space. The development of one structure for various target groups, assumes that the reality in which these various views of different users are coming together in the public domain and thus dealing with the multiplicity (Massey 2005) of space.

Within the classical approach, this multiplicity is disentangled based on the representation of the various target groups by the different city services involved in such a process. From the perspective of the individual city

services urban policy is made applicable to a local context. This leads to a form of urban development that is based on a standardization of reality and ignores the local interests of the users of the space. It is an approach based on statistics, it focuses on a statistical availability based on proximity in which the relative aspect (Löw 2017) is not recognized. This form of urban development comes from a perspective in which all the nuances of daily life have been extracted and reduced to policy rules that serve as conditions for the urban environment. This approach uses the single perspective of the target group that represents an urban service. This statistical approach offers few reasons and conditions for entering into relationships with other services and the target groups they represent.

The development of an "age-friendly recreational structure" requires a new approach which exceeds the limitations of the individual city services. Such an approach starts from a different notion of how we learn and debate the city. In order to meet the spatial demand, and in this case to learn the motivation for recreational use, of a diversity of users and to coordinate these, they must not only be mapped, but we must also learn the conditions to these spatial demands. Just like the motivation, these conditions are specific to a target group, are social based. The conditions provide insight into the behaviour of choice, of target groups to make use of the recreational facilities that the neighbourhood offers them. The knowledge of both the motivations and the conditions for behaviour in the public domain, gives an image of the actual use of facilities in an existing and of a future situation, in which not the spatial presence but the spatial use is central. The knowledge of the conditions can be used for strategic interventions in the space or interventions in the relationships between different target groups.

These conditions cannot be derived from analyses of absolute space or relative space, but they result from the processes or routines that describe these two forms of space. The research focuses on this concept of space, in which processes are normative. It starts from the relational approach to space that David Harvey described as follows: 'The relational view of space holds there is no such thing as space outside of the processes that define it. Processes do not occur in space but define their own spatial frame.' (Harvey 2004). A process, like a routine as walking the dog through the park, manifests itself in space and time. The relational space interconnects with the absolute space, you are walking with the dog through the absolute space which is all around you. The extent to which the absolute space becomes significant to a process, is determined by the ordering forms of proximity (Löw 2017), the relative space. You are walking in the park, the space outside the park becomes irrelevant for this routine. A process not only relates to space but also to other processes, during your walk, maybe you or your dog will interrelate with others in the park, while you are sharing space and time. Relational space is not only pre-structured by the absolute space but also by adopted conventions, power relations (Foucault, 1977), formed by other processes. You know that you and your dog have stay on the paths and are not allowed to cross the flower beds. Different processes active in the same absolute space creates forms of multiplicity (Massey 2005). Your dog could be interested in the ball, some children are playing with, But to avoid a conflict you are taking another route. Understanding the city by its relational space starts with accepting the multiplicity of space. This approach asks for knowledge of spatial qualities, spatial relations and power relations experienced by individual users of a certain place. It asks for knowledge of the absolute, relative and relational space and its interconnections.

Understanding space from a relational approach starts from understanding the various individual processes present in

space: the daily patterns of everyday life from the different perspectives of individual users of a certain place. To develop an "Age-Friendly Recreational Structure", the task of the spatial professional is not only to switch between the various layers and scales of the absolute space, but also to be able to switch between the various perspectives on this space from the multiplicity exposed by the relational space. In case of the development of the age-friendly recreational structure, knowledge of these perspectives is present at the individual (social) urban services. But the objectives of these urban services and thus the methodologies used to develop insights of these perspectives do not provide knowledge of the spatial aspects of these perspectives.

The concept of relational space generates a new perspective and offers opportunities to reflect on the existing city. As such, the relational approach embodies the 'expose' step within the 'critical planning' , which Marcuse described. Knowledge of relational space creates opportunities to not only understand the multiplicity of space, but to actually work with it in the 'propose' and 'politicize' steps of the process of urban renewal.

2. EXPOSURE OF THE RELATIONAL SPACE: THE DAILY RECREATIONAL SPACE OF CHILDREN IN MUIDE-MEULESTEDE.

To clarify the forms of knowledge that can be exposed by insights into relational space within a given perimeter, this paper describes a study of the recreational use of space by children between the ages of 6 and 12, within the limits of the Muide-Meulestede district. The importance of the position of children in the urban planning process is actively embodied by UNICEF in its goal to develop child-friendly-cities (UNICEF 2020). The freedom of movement of children in an urban environment is more and more compromised by the increasing perception of traffic- and social dangers, which limits their spatial options. Children become more dependent on the accompaniment of their parents in their daily routines, with a result that their voice is less and less heard in the planning process (Freeman and Tranter 2011). This observation gives reason to include the spatial use of children as a minimum condition to the process, the same applies to the spatial use by the elderly within the development of an age-friendly structure.

The research of the recreational use of space by children took place in 2017 and was done with support the two primary schools present in the neighbourhood and had a total of 54 participants spread over 3 age categories: 6-8, 8-10, and 10-12 years. The applied methodology was based on the mental mapping (Lynch 1960) of the recreational space that the children use in their daily life. The mental maps served as the conversation starter for a short interview, focusing at the experiences of the space, the limits of the used space and what these limits determine. The drawings and the interviews were used a to create a perspective tailored to the children to analyze the absolute space, to define limitations of the relative space (Löw 2017) and to understand their behavior in spatial use through insights of the relational space (Giddens 1984). The findings from the study were reflected and further refined in workshops based on a photo voice (Wang 2016) methodology and walking interviews (Evans 2011) in which both children and local agents were involved.

The children were asked to draw their daily environment, with their own house in the street in a central position. They received a canvas that shows an empty street, a plastic drawing template that contains a number of archetypes of dwellings and spatial facilities, which can be used to draw, local situations of the Muide-Meulestede district and pens in various colours. A drawing focusses only on the elements the children give an importance do draw. Different colours are used to describe elements they like, hate or

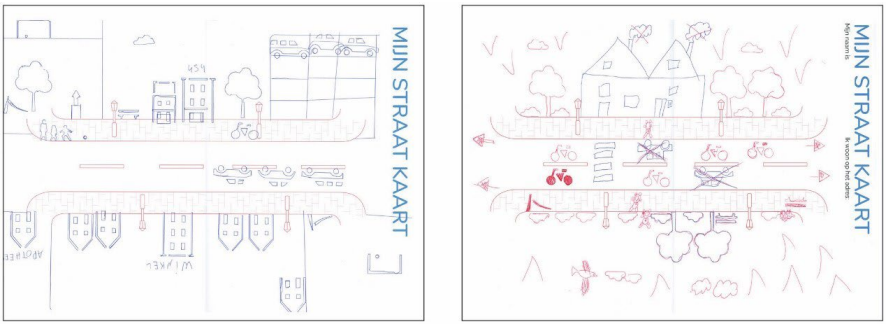


Figure 1. Examples drawings children. Source: (Author 2017)

would like to improve. To start this exercise a drawing was shown as an example, where the considerations within this drawing were also indicated. This drawing served as an example, but this explanation also functioned as a moment to ask a number of structured questions to the participants in an informal way. This exercise took 20 minutes, after 20 minutes the children were asked to describe their drawing. These short conversations gave the possibility to question uncertainties or to delve deeper into specific elements coming from the drawing or the conversation.

This method was developed based on a number of objectives: an attractive format in which children want to participate based on their own decision; a format that can be completed within the attention span of children from 6 years old; a format to which children who cannot yet write can contribute; a structured approach with sufficient liberties that gives space to the unpredictable ideas of children; a format that focuses on the current situation and does not raise expectations about future developments; and a format that bridges social and spatial knowledge in a single exercise. The used method was directed to children form the age 6-12 years and living in the district Muide-Meulestede. As a method to grasp relational space, it is focusing on the spatial stage the children are using in their daily recreational process. The method provides clear results to the spatial use, and the social and spatial conditions that form the conditions of this use. The method exhibits deficiency in the aspect of time that is inextricably linked to a process and therefore the relational space. Time is individual and the children each have their own sense of time, which is difficult to grasp in such an exercise. But time is also an essential component to relate different processes or routines, of the children or other user groups. The research therefore proceeded from assumptions to imposed benchmarks over time due to external influences, such as school times, dinner time and bed time.

3. ENTANGLING RELATIONAL SPACES: INSIGHTS IN THE SHARED SOCIAL AND SPATIAL LIMITATIONS OF SPATIAL USE.

The results of this study firstly provide an accurate image of the recreational use of space by individual children. It provides insight into when, where and why they use the collective space in the neighbourhood. The use of space responds primarily to the will and the need to play and by this to expand their limits and to challenge themselves physically and socially. But in addition, it also gives an impression of the overall spatial qualities of the neighbourhood: in many

cases, children indicate that they do not have access to private outdoor space in their home environment. The collective outdoor space serves as an extension of the private space. The outdoor space is therefore part of their process that they go through every day. In addition to playability of space, many children attach importance to places to withdraw, alone or with friends; they look for qualities that are not available in their private space.

The research also shows the differences between target groups in their spatial demands. First there are clear differences between the use of space by boys and girls. To give an example, in the study, boys indicate that they use public space for spontaneous meetings, where girls more often plan their use of public space to meet with friends. Cultural differences are also noticeable. For example, certain children with a Turkish background are mentioning they are allowed to stay outside much later in the summer then the children with a Belgian background, but they also have a much wider reach in the neighbourhood. Age, as a reflection of the degree of social and spatial knowledge a child acquires while playing, also counts as a factor that determines the use of space. However, we can state that this factor is in case of children living in Muide-Meulestede less important than you might expect (Dekeyser 2007).

The specific individual spatial demand that is exposed reflects the spatial qualities of the neighbourhood. This demand corresponds

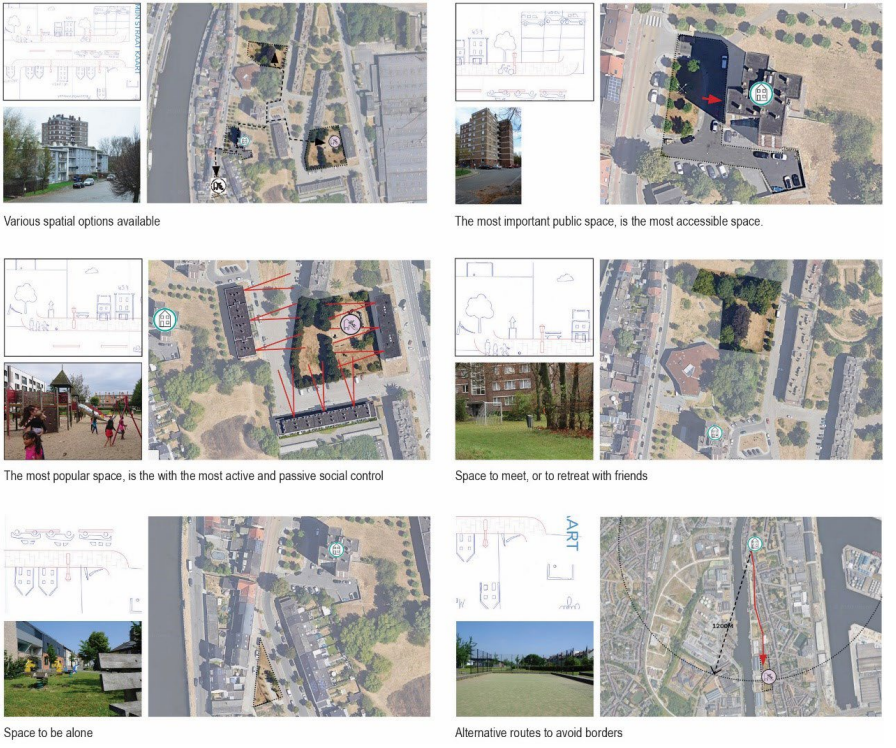


Figure 2. Example spatial analysis output workshop children . Source: (Author 2018)

to the statistics of the neighbourhood (Stadsmonitor 2017), it corresponds to the very high population density and development rate. But unlike these statistics, the results not only have a signaling application, they provide a detailed image of how these individual users act according to the opportunities they have in time and space.

By not only analyzing the individual disentangled relational space, but also how different relational spaces relate to each other, new knowledge layers of the neighbourhood can be developed, which relate social and spatial aspects to each other and have their origins on various scales. The children's drawings described the space that was considered to be their relational space, but by doing so they also described which space does not belong to their relational space. With this they indirectly drew the limits of their relational space.

Where the demand of space was briefly discussed above, the entangled data gives an impression of how the children give substance to these spatial demands within the possibilities the neighbourhood has to offer. By combining and relating all spatial limits of the individual drawings, an image of boundaries in the neighbourhood was created, which can be explained by the spatial context, but also by the power relationships that it results (Giddens 1984). It gives an accurate image of spatial boundaries in the neighbourhood that are supplemented and reinforced by mental boundaries. These mental boundaries describe the actual accessibility of a place for the children living in the neighbourhood.

These mental limits are in many cases determined by interpretations of safety. The theme of safety arises in relation to the mobility issue which is arising when bridging the distance between the front door and a suitable place to recreate in the collective space. Forms of spatial safety also arise in the research, relationships between the living space and the public road, unclear spaces with little social control, unsafe situations at a more detailed level, are determining factors that can influence the play of children. Another factor is social safety, multiple use of space can have both a positive and a negative impact on the presence of a specific group in space. The research shows that lively places with overlapping use in space and time are the most attractive by a diversity of user groups. These places are provided with various forms of social control due to the diverse use; it makes the places predictable and gives the feeling of trust and safety. Spaces that have multiple uses, but where this use does not overlap in time, in the way that the relationships between this use are unclear, are more likely to be labelled as unsafe.

This sense of security is essential for the children's use of space. This sense of security should not only be present with themselves, but also with their parents, their friends and their friends' parents. Safety thus determines the mental boundaries within the neighbourhood and thus the accessibility of the facilities available for the children. In addition, it largely determines the attractiveness of a space for daily use as an extension for the private space.

The children in the study indicate that the attractiveness of a playground is not determined by the facilities available, but by the aforementioned factors: accessibility and safety. These factors determine their use of space, only when they can choose between different spaces that meet these conditions in the same way, they have the opportunity to choose the most attractive facilities. This means, for example, that the children are playing soccer on an open field with trees as goals, which is only a hundred meters from a soccer field facilitated by the city. For many children, attractive places in the neighbourhood are places that are challenging on a spatial or social level. These spaces do not necessarily correspond to the spaces designed for them, when these

spaces do not meet the basic requirements to use this space.
These limits describe the conditions of how children deal with physical and mental borders, with spatial and social risks and gives an image of their personal goals and interests. These conditions find their form in elements in absolute space, relative space and the power relations that shape their relational space and can often be described in terms of accessibility, safety and attractiveness. These themes itself are already in the picture in the process of urban renewal, but the relational approach adds a detailed layer of socio-spatial conditions to these individual themes. It creates an understanding of the perspective of how children use the public space and creates an image of the spatial demands of a social group without an own voice in city planning.

CONCLUSION

Insights into the conditions of the use of space, both spatially and socially, open up opportunities to influence the process of facilitating the staging for our daily life. The relational approach is based on a multiple use of space and exposes the conditions of this use and in this way it creates insights on challenges and opportunities arising from spatial and social issues. With this, a relational approach contributes to the urban archives that originates in accurate local knowledge of the end-user's actual use of space. It delivers user-central data and therefore goes beyond forms of standardization. These conditions are recognizable by the residents, but that does not mean that they experience them consciously. Insights into the conditions offer opportunities to adjust the stage of daily life to the conditions, but it also provides the framework to reflect. Shared exposed insights of this knowledge by policymakers, designers and local residents make the process accessible and democratic. This knowledge forms new guidelines that encourage new urban alternatives to be proposed within both top-down and bottom-up approaches. These guidelines therefore not only function as a design framework, but also as a framework for reflection and can be applied in these two capacities within a participatory strategy.
However, the main benefit of this approach lies in understanding and getting a grip on the multiplicity of space. The case described in this paper shows the disentangling of the relational space of one relatively homogeneous focus group and what we can learn from the individual perspectives within this focus group. As such, this provides a knowledge contribution to the current process, but it also describes relationships to other focus groups. In order to develop an age-friendly recreational structure, other groups must also be addressed. The research is based on the hypothesis that a relational approach can create an understanding of existing processes of other focus groups as it did in the described case, but above all, that it can make the multiplicity of space more transparent and provide an innovative foundation, for the "propose and politicize" steps. Further research within the case study, directed to focus groups like the elderly, or youth, will be needed to provide an answer to this hypothesis.
As part of the expose-step within the 'critical planning' approach of Peter Marcuse, the relational approach exposes the motivation and conditions of the actual use of space. This step of the research is not necessarily participatory, but it makes the process accessible in the phase where proposals are developed. These proposals are captured in policy documents after, on the one hand, an assessment by urban policy, but on the other hand, the assessment of a proposal against the exposed conditions within a participatory trajectory. In this way it completes the circle of a form of spatial development, which stands for a dynamic, accessible and therefore democratic process.

REFERENCES

Certeau, Michel de. 1984. *The Practice of Everyday Life*. Berkeley: University of California press.

Davoudi, Simin, and Ali Madanipour. 2013. 'Localism and Neo-Liberal Governmentality'. *Town Planning Review* 84 (5): 551–62.

Dijk, Jan van. 2006. The Network Society: Social Aspects of New Media. 2nd ed. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Evans, James, and Phil Jones. 2011. 'The Walking Interview: Methodology, Mobility and Place'. *Applied Geography* 31 (2): 849–58.

Foucault, Michel. 1977. *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison*; Transl.by Alan Sheridan. New York (N.Y.): Pantheon Books.

Freeman, Claire, and Paul Tranter. 2011. *Children and Their Urban Environment: Changing Worlds*. 1st Edition. London ; Washington, DC: Routledge.

Gill, Tim. 2019. 'Widening the Bandwidth of Child-Friendly Urban Planning in Cities'. *Cities & Health* 3 (1–2): 59–67.

Gurvitch, Georges. 1971. *The Social Frameworks of Knowledge*, Transl. by Margaret A. Thompson, e.a.; Oxford: Blackwell.

Harvey, David. 1973. *Social Justice and the City.* London: Arnold.

Harvey, David. 2006. 'Space as a Keyword'. In *David Harvey,* edited by Noel Castree and Derek Gregory, 70–93. Oxford, UK: Blackwell Publishing Ltd.

Heynen, Hilde. 2013. 'Space as Receptor, Instrument or Stage. Notes on the Interaction between Spatial and Social Constellations'. *International Planning Studies* 18 (3): 342–357.

Giddens, Anthony. 1984. *The Constitution of Society: Outline of the Theory of Structuration*. Repr. Cambridge: Polity press.

Khan, Ahmed Z., Frank Moulaert, and Jan Schreurs. 2013. 'Epistemology of Space: Exploring Relational Perspectives in Planning, Urbanism, and Architecture'. *International Planning Studies* 18 (3–4): 287–303.

Kuukkanen, Jouni-Matti. 2012. 'Senses of Localism'. *History of Science* 50 (4): 477–500.

Law, John. 2004. *After Method: Mess in Social Science Research. International Library of Sociology*. London: Routledge.

Löw, Martina. 2016. *The Sociology of Space: Materiality, Social Structures, and Action*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan US..

Löw, Martina, and Gunter Weidenhaus. 2017. 'Borders That Relate: Conceptualizing Boundaries in Relational Space'. *Current Sociology* 65 (4): 553–570.

Lynch, Kevin. 2000. *The Image of the City.* 27th print. Cambridge (Mass.): MIT press.

Madanipour, Ali. 2003. *Public and Private Spaces of the City*. London: Routledge.

Madanipour, Ali. 2010. *Whose Public Space?: International Case Studies in Urban Design and Development.* Abingdon: Routledge.

Marcuse, Peter. 2009. 'From Critical Urban Theory to the Right to the City'. *City* 13 (2–3): 185–97.

Massey, Doreen Barbara. 2005. *'For Space*'. London : Sage,. 2005.

Merton, Robert K. 1968. *Social Theory and Social Structure.* Enl. ed. New York (N.Y.): Free Press.

Nicholls, Walter J. 2008. 'The Urban Question Revisited: The Importance of Cities for Social Movements'. *International Journal of Urban and Regional Research* 32 (4): 841–859.

Ong, Aihwa. 2011. 'Introduction: Worlding Cities, or the Art of Being Global'. In Worlding Cities, edited by Ananya Roy and Aihwa Ong, 1–26. Oxford, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.

Soja, Edward W. 1996. *Thirdspace: Journeys to Los Angeles and Other Real-and-Imagined Places*. Cambridge, Mass: Blackwell.
Stables, Andrew. 2019. New Localism: Living in the Here and Now. Vol. 10. *Numanities - Arts and Humanities in Progress*. Cham: Springer International Publishing.
Tornaghi, Chiara, and Sabine Knierbein. 2015. *Public Space and Relational Perspectives: New Challenges for Architecture and Planning*. London: Routledge.
UNICEF. 2020. 'Child Friendly Cities Initiative UNICEF'. Child Friendly Cities Initiative. 2020. https://childfriendlycities.org/.
Vanderstede, Wouter, and Peter Dekeyser. 2007. *Kind & ruimte: kindgerichte planning van publieke ruimte*. Brugge: Die Keure.
Wang, Caroline, and Mary Ann Burris. 2016. 'Photovoice: Concept, Methodology, and Use for Participatory Needs Assessment'. *Health Education & Behavior* 24 (3): 369–387.

PAPER #8.15

THE NEW FORMS OF RESIDENTIALITY FOR THE SENIOR "INCLUSIVE" HOUSING

Martina Nobili[a]
[a]Department of PDTA – Sapienza Università di Roma, Roma, Italy

ABSTRACT

In recent years, the issue of inclusion has taken on a central role in the European political debate so as to introduce welfare instruments and strategies dedicated to different sections of the population. Among these, the most vulnerable in situations of fragility not necessarily, and not only, of an economic nature deserve more attention. We are referring to the elderly, whose definition should be reviewed both considering their chronological age - in 2050 1/5 of the world population will be over 60 (WHO, 2015) - and above all considering the aspects linked to the needs of each "kind" of old people. The needs are dictated by the economic, social and physical conditions of each Senior: all elements that must be considered in order to operate within the different urban regeneration processes both involving individual buildings and entire areas of the city. We can talk about Senior Housing, but this doesn't mean creating entire buildings or neighborhoods of elderly people only, but working to design new forms of residency where the elderly can be included as leading actors, not as extras. In line with the principles of active aging, already proposed by the WHO at the end of the 1990s, autonomy must be stimulated and fed as much as possible until high and intensive levels of assistance are requested. To do this we need to work on developing new housing models where integration and intergenerationality can be the founding pillars. In this contribution some projects realized in Europe will be described, considered as case studies for the purpose of research, with the aim of highlighting the strengths and strategies that led to their elaboration.

KEYWORDS

Active aging; aging in place; non exclusive society; senior housing; social housing.

INTRODUCTION

Talking about Social housing means dealing with a multitude of welfare strategies and interventions in the residential area: the adjective "social" makes the issue complex and inquisitive in many aspects. Generally placing this adjective before the word "housing" allows to characterize this activity with respect to the users it is intended for both as regards its architectural-urban planning and for the methods of access to housing it creates. Social housing could be defined not as a category of housing but as a path for housing aimed at the inclusion of social categories for the satisfaction of their primary needs. Under the light of demographic trends, social categories would seem to expand to include new emerging "classes". The population in Europe is the highest average age in the world and more people live over the age of 65 and up to a very old age, significantly increasing the number of older people. Worldwide, the number of people over 60 has doubled compared to 1980 but the forecast is that, by 2050, it will quadruple the number of over 80 compared to now and that people over 65 will outnumber children who are under the age of 5[1]. Of course, a cause-effect relationship cannot be established between longevity and degree of self-sufficiency: despite aging, it invests the world population horizontally, there are peculiarities due to intra-individual and inter-individual differences (Fernandez-

[1] "Are You Ready? What You Need to Know about Aging .", World Health Organization, 2012.

Ballesteros , 2008) also taking into account the relationships of individuals with external factors related to the socio-cultural context . In Italy the speech of Niccolò Marchionni, Full Professor of the University of Florence and Director of the Cardiovascular Department of the Careggi Hospital, has had a significant impact during the 63rd National Congress of the Italian Society of Gerontology and Geriatrics (SIGG): "A 65 year old today has the physical and cognitive form of a 40-45 year old from 30 years ago. And a 75 year old that of an individual who was 55 years old in 1980 ". This, in addition to being a confirmation of the general aging of the population, also sheds light on another aspect linked to longevity: the well-being.

Well-being is an indicator of an individual's quality of life and a series of internal and external parameters contribute to its definition: physical, social and economic characteristics by the internal aspects and characteristics of the urban architectural environment by the external ones. Borrowing a term used in biology, we could speak about habitat by including within it all the relationships that are established between internal and external elements, determining internal qualities, external qualities and social qualities (Tacchi, 1995). Well-being must be sought and changed with the passage of time: the registry age, in fact, marks the boundary between one class of needs and another. The class of needs reflects on the choices that concern the sphere of living: an over 65 person will have more time to spend at home and less need for a large house; at the same time, however, it seeks the best possible accommodation conditions. In addition to having a very low coefficient of use – an over 65 is living alone or with a partner - a large house in terms of surface area also has higher maintenance costs and more housework to do. So here is a choice: move in search of a new accommodation or improve the conditions of the current accommodation? The choice is not easy and does not always and only depend on a condition of "will".

1. A SPECIAL POINT OF VIEW: THE ACTIVE AGING

The theme of residential construction connected to the needs of senior users has been the subject of numerous insights in literature; given the complexity of the topic, it is unthinkable to carry out an all-encompassing synthesis of the many facets that we have tried to analyze, but we can try to systematize the knowledge acquired to enrich an approach, in certain cases immature, that can be spent on new strategies . Thus, a sort of latent debate is fueled between the design disciplines, as regards the physical and technical aspects concerning the possibilities of using spaces, and the human sciences in a broad sense (Tacchi, 1995). If on the one hand talking about residence means investigating an area with which we all deal daily, on the other hand talking about residence for specific types of users - senior - activates a series of considerations involving apparently collateral disciplines such as gerontology and medicine, in addition to sociology and anthropology. A decisive role was certainly played by the greater trust in prevention campaigns, the search for greater well-being, a more conscious diet and the progress of socio-cultural conditions. The social factor is decisive and must also be considered in the light of another factor, the state of health: it depends on the level of autonomy - or ability to perform daily actions without the help of another person. If it is natural that the level of autonomy can follow a decreasing course over the years and is sometimes inevitable, it is desirable to maintain the state of self-sufficiency – partial or total – in spite of non-self-sufficiency. Here comes a concept that establishes the first focus of the theme: the active aging. Already in the late 90's the World Health Organization had introduced a positive

concept of healthy and active aging defining it as "a process that allows individuals to realize their potential for physical, social and mental well-being through the whole course. existence and taking an active part in society, while providing them with protection, security and adequate care when they need assistance"[2]. Active aging depends on various factors: material conditions and also social elements that individually influence the behavior and feelings of individuals. The interactions of these factors influence how a person ages; many aspects of the urban environment and facilities reflect these factors are included in the structure of an inclusive city. This concept introduces the second focus: the environment, that is, everything that surrounds the individual over 65 from the micro scale - accommodation - to the macro scale - territory. It is appropriate to reflect on accommodation: generally the building heritage is "created" and made functional especially for young people - new and potential buyers - while the elderly, not finding the answer to their needs, have only solutions, if there are limitations to everyday life, of moving towards sons or to social welfare structures which, in the case of elderly accelerate the aging process (Morena, 2013). This has resulted in a reinterpretation of aging in place by long-term care and the elderly housing industry: the latest result of this reinterpretation is the emergence of different residential forms that offer facilities and assistance to people more elderly so that they can live in an environment of their "supported" knowledge (Frank, 2002). In this sense, barrier free interventions and user friendly interfaces at the basis of AAL - Ambient Assisted Living technologies play a fundamental role: they present themselves as a technological infrastructure integrated into the built environment with the main purpose of helping without invading. "A rethinking of the relationships between the elderly and their home is underway, made of targeted interventions that respect the consolidated habits of the user but which, at the same time, can be supportive in daily life" (Nobili, 2019). An ad hoc technology that brings together the various devices and sensors installed in a domestic environment - IOT - can become a potential sustainable solution. "The added value of the new systems lies in the ability to store and process data on domestic activities by collecting information on abnormal changes in the routine for identifying sensitive changes in behaviors that can be interpreted as a signal of prevention (Falasca, 2019). The attention given to the senior user for accommodation, in light of the considerations on active aging, are ineffective if the intervention is not included in a wider system that affects the city itself, the neighborhood or the block. Not so much the inclusion of the senior category in the territory, but its non-exclusion becomes the real mission of the social residence for the elderly. The same urban regeneration should start from this: the urban voids, the degraded places in which it intervenes are places where a community has suffered lacerations that must be mended. Urban regeneration policies involve local communities allowing the collective forces to converge in the realization of shared projects to answer to real needs of the social groups: it allows the improvement of the living conditions "of the inhabitants "living in uncomfortable situations, guaranteeing everyone an equitable condition of social cohesion"(Garsia, 2005). The feeling of belonging to a community is fundamental for social senior housing interventions not only within the individual building, but above all in the relationships that are established between the individual building and the buildings around, between the single building and the commercial activities present and between the single building and the mobility network. At the base, the desire to create a relationship network between the inhabitants should be maintained and nourished: the non-exclusion

[2] The translation was reported by the document "Active Aging . A policy framework", World Health Organization, 2002.

of senior users who choose the aging in place option is therefore punishable if its presence is foreseen within larger projects that have as their mission the "grounding in the community and the home as a place of stability and continuity" (Morena, 2013).

2. TAKING ACTIONS FOR THE SENIOR: STRATEGIES AND POLICIES

To reinforce the considerations just proposed on the issue of active aging and on the aging in place strategy, there are a series of measures in Europe aimed at protecting the senior category through residential and home-based experiments. The aging is connected not only at the age of the individual and to their needs, but also includes the relationships of individuals with external factors. If the main mission of active aging is to maintain an adequate level of independence of the individual for as long as possible, then the field of application of senior housing, understood as the main intervention strategy for the application of this principle, it will concern individuals who are still self-sufficient or partially self-sufficient. If this distinction operates on a biological level, it is necessary to make some considerations also on two other limits to deal with: social fragility and economic fragility. Social fragility derives mainly from a consumerist cultural concept that leads to seeing the elderly as a product that, being unable to offer 100% of its resources, is unknowingly isolated from society. As regards economic fragility pension systems and welfare policies play a fundamental role. All these aspects are in consideration within the strategies in Europe aimed at the realization of senior housing interventions which, for the important social impact, we will call as "social senior housing" interventions. The overview of the strategies will concern some European countries and will serve to return an updated picture of the dynamics in progress but also to deepen their strengths. Even if each strategy must be seen in the reality to which it refers, their set can be considerate as a horizon to strive and overcome to improve and implement the needs-performance approach for senior users. The strategies identified for the senior users self-sufficient, can be summarized in the following residential models: multigenerational homes, residences with facilities, social housing. Multigenerational residences provide for the cohabitation, in the same building complex or district, of people belonging to different age classes: the most widespread generational combinations are those that involve the cohabitation of elderly and students. These types of residences build a network between young and old made up of relationships and assistance with the aim of promoting common activities and promoting mutual support and learning. The model is widespread in several European countries including Belgium, France and Germany. For Belgium and France, the promotion of the model by associations deserves attention instead for Germany the phenomenon must be seen within a more complex system such as that of the funding program, born in 2006 and taken up in 2017, of the German Federal Ministry for the family, the elderly, women and youth with the goals of intergenerational work, voluntary involvement and social assistance at local level. The broad scope of the program provides for financing through an integrated system of European, national and municipal funds for the construction of the Mehgenerationenhauser, homes dedicated to users of different age groups. In France it is also spread the residential model of the RSS - Résidence Service Senior - senior housing for self-sufficient people with facilities in support of daily life. This type of residence, though it will develop a standardized housing model - multifunctional building consisting of residential units and community spaces - can be implemented with superstructures customized services, which can be distinguished in three types:

basic facilities, supplementary facilities and à la carte facilities. An innovative residential format, which diversification is based on the quantity and type of facilities offered and the size and type of housing, which have aroused the interest of many operators managers of real estate: Domytis and Cogedim, as for example. Despite the specificity declared for the senior target, we are faced with residences that do not differ, both from a functional and formal point of view, from ordinary homes; a trait that distinguishes them from all those residential forms designed for the elderly with heavy medical-health incursions. In Europe, alongside the RSS, there are also the so-called viviendas dotacionales in Barcelona. The "viviendas dotacionales" for the elderly are hybrid residential complexes (Cocco, Pibiri, 2011) which have facilities for the neighborhood on the ground floor and on the upper levels accommodation living and common areas. The recipients are self-sufficient over 65 users and the access is via social rent plus a supplementary fee for maintenance. These types of achievements are part of larger programs which involve various partners such as: the Consorci Metropolità de l'habitatge and the Agencia de l' habitatge de Catalunya. A decisive role is played above all by the consortia which, through the involvement of specific areas of the metropolitan area of Barcelona, are responsible for enhancing facilities and housing policies, helping to improve and accelerate interventions in terms of housing availability. The product resulting is like the French residence with facilities but with a public management, which lodgings are within the programs vivienda protected from, and are often part of redevelopment projects and urban regeneration. In respect of social housing, there is the case of Italy with the so-called Integrated System of Funds. The integrated fund system (SIF) is one of the lines of the National House Plan[3] which provides for a series of measures aimed at increasing real estate assets to be carried out with the involvement of public and private capital to be allocated to disadvantaged social categories. At national level, the SIF is managed by CDP Investimenti Sgr and is constituted by the Investment Fund for Living (FIA), a fund of funds. The FIA was established by CDPI sgr on October 16 , 2009 with the aim of realizing affordable housing, intended for the so-called "gray belt", i.e. families not able to satisfy their housing needs on the market, but with incomes higher than those. which entitle you to public housing assignments. Being a fund of funds, the FIA also involves local funds which have local stakeholders as co-investors, primarily local banking foundations, but also Regions, Provinces, Municipalities, Cooperatives and private partners. The tendency to invest in the "social" sector has the consequence, together with ethical and social aims of these funds, that the groups are enlarged to include to news as resident students, temporary workers and not last, the elderly. They present themselves as a "house with facilities" in which the medical aspect is reduced or even absent, going only to be configured where the user requests it. The strategies mentioned so far, although different in shape, have the same contents and, above all, have a common goal: to offer a valid alternative to the self-sufficient elderly person that is not a nursing home or a hospital but can contribute to the maintenance of a certain degree of autonomy and independence, in line with the principles of active aging.

3. DISCUSSION AROUND HOUSING

Beyond the *formae habitandi* - single location and multigenerational cohabitation - strategies in place in Europe has as same result a product widely shared and replicated: the residence with facilities. Although with different definitions depending on which country - RSS, Social Housing for the elderly

[3] The national housing plan, also known as "Piano Casa", was created with the aim of "guaranteeing the minimum essential levels of housing needs for the full development of the human person throughout the country".

- the content is the same: all housing forms are constituted by a set of apartments designed and built for the elderly users with a series of facilities - basic or accessories - that can be provided either by the network of inhabitants itself or by external personnel or by a combination of the two figures. The integration of the residence with the facilities must be seen on a double scale: an internal staircase that allows to understand the integration of the facilities with the accommodation itself (INDOOR FACILITIES) and an external staircase that contemplates the system of relations between the residence considered in its complexity - accommodation and facilities - and the territory in which it is located (OUTDOOR FACILITIES). The buildings, in fact, are generally located in central and non-isolated areas connected by urban infrastructures - bus and underground lines - and in areas served by commercial activities and other facilities useful to the person such as post offices and banks.The only differences can be seen in how they are realized and how they are accessed or rented by users; in fact, if for Italy and Spain the issue of the elderly is seen above all from a social point of view, giving priority to situations of past frailty by offering new housing and social inclusion opportunities, in France the RSS seems to have exceeded the limit imposed by the social residences to offer themselves as a semi-hotel service open to all by delegating their offer of facilities to the choice of the individual user. The theme of integration in the territory can be seen as a common trait d'union for the building types present in the countries covered by the following in-depth

PARIS PLAISANCE

- **LOCATION:** Ile de France, France
- **POSITION:** 64 rue des Plantes, Paris
- **USERS:** Over 60 self-sufficient

- **INDOOR FACILITIES:**

RESIDENTIAL FACILITIES:
- Different typology apartments (from studio typology to three room apt.)
- Common rooms, spaces for relationships

BASIC FACILITIES:
- Ordinary maintenance
- Reception
- 24 Hours Assistance

SUPPLEMENTARY FACILITIES:
- Home assistance
- Restaurant
- Personal care (Gym, Hairdresser, Laundry)

OPTIONAL FACILITIES:
- services at the user's request based on specific needs
- Home delivery(Shopping and drug delivery, meal delivery, medical examinations, collection and delivery of linen)

- **OUTDOOR FACILITIES (minimum distance):**

BASIC FACILITIES:
- Food shop - 80 m
- Supermarket - 350 m

HEALTH FACILITIES:
- Pharmacy - 450 m
- Veterinary - 300 m
- "Saint Joseph" Hospital - 1000 m

MANAGEMENT FACILITIES:
- Post office - 350 m
- Bank - 400 m

SOCIAL FACILITIES:
- "Lionel-Assouad" Garden – 200 m
- "Saint Pierre de Montrouge" Church – 650 m

PERSONAL FACILITIES:
- Hairdresser - 280 m
- Beauty Salon - 300 m

MOBILITY FACILITIES:
- Bus stop - 30 m

Figure 1. Case study in France, specific features to understand the integration in the neighborhood

analysis with reference to: the RSS in France, the interventions in northern Italy for housing for the elderly and programs of redevelopment that contemplate the dotacionales viviendas in Barcelona. The characteristics of the RSS[4] , among those considered as object of study, can be summarized as follows and they can be found in the specific table above (Fig. 1):

• They are large residential complexes made up of no less than 100 apartments, of varying sizes, with typologies ranging from one-room apartments to three-room apartments;

• On average 10% of the total consistency of the useful surface is destined to areas for common activities;

• The monthly fee depends on the location, while the facilities remain unchanged: rental tax, concierge service, internet connection, telephony, free access to areas for common activities;

• The offer of facilities can be expanded with the activation of optional packages created specifically for specific needs.

In Italy, with the variety of building types and housing models, the real social and economic challenge of this sector seems to address the infrastructures of the facilities useful both to the recipients of the accommodation and to the settlement fabric in which they are inserted. What is often underlined[5] and emphasized in the social housing interventions aimed "also" at the elderly is the desire to create a network of relationships between the inhabitants - end users of housing facilities - to strengthen their belonging to a community. Although contextualized to the context to which they

POLO FRASSONI

- **LOCATION:** Lecco, Italy
- **POSITION:** Via Gorizia 2
- **USERS:** Over 65 self-sufficient or partial

- **INDOOR FACILITIES:**

RESIDENTIAL FACILITIES:
- Sheltered housing (A.P.A.) (from studio typology to three room apt.)
- Common rooms, spaces for relationships

BASIC FACILITIES:
- Ordinary maintenance
- Accomodation cleaning
- 24 Hours Assistance
- Social health Operator
- Night assistance

SUPPLEMENTARY FACILITIES:
- Medical health care
- Social assistance

OPTIONAL FACILITIES:
- Daily meals
- Single meal
- Laundry

- **OUTDOOR FACILITIES (minimum distance):**

BASIC FACILITIES:
- Fruit shop - 800 m
- Supermarket - 850 m
- Bakery - 950 m
- Households items - 650 m

HEALTH FACILITIES:
- Pharmacy - 750 m

MANAGEMENT FACILITIES:
- Post office - 700 m
- Bank - 650 m

SOCIAL FACILITIES:
- "Cenacolo francescano" Theater – 850 m
- "San Francesco" Church – 800 m

PERSONAL FACILITIES:
- Hairdresser - 800 m

MOBILITY FACILITIES:
- Bus stop - 30 m

Figure 2. Case study in Italy, specific features to understand the integration in the neighborhood

[4] The study was conducted on a series of residences proposed by Domytis for the elderly; 10 of them are distributed in 3 regions of France - Ile de France, Nouvelle - Aquitaine, Provence - Alpes- Côte d Azur and Bretagne.

[5] The Social Housing Foundation operates throughout Italy, having activated a network of collaborations ranging from Cassa Depositi e Prestiti. Among the projects that have been studied: Borgo Sostenibile (Milan), Co-housing for the elderly (Milan and the Polo Fondazione Frassoni (Lecco).

refer, some common features can be fount in the table above (Fig. 2) and they can also be stated:

• The residential complexes have modest dimensions in terms of buildings with an average of 18 accommodations;

• Each building has spaces for internal and external common activities and integrated day centers also open to the inhabitants of the neighborhood;

• Accessibility to housing occurs through inclusion in specific rankings that refer to the municipal body, in particular to welfare and social policies, and which provide for the provision of a controlled rent that also includes the portion of facilities, internal to the 'building, available to users;

• the Social Manager has the role of Property Facility Manager, who takes care of the general management of the complex even its maintenance. The roommates also have the possibility of being able to take advantage of home facilities such as nursing care, home shopping and accompaniment for leaving, according to their needs and in ways that will be defined within the same form of housing.

The Municipality of Barcelona, in order to respond to the demand for public residential construction, allows to create, in areas destined for facilities, minimum housing at a calm rent for elderly over 65[6]. Among the characteristics of these complexes and the insight above on the specific table (Fig. 3):

Figure 3. Case study in Spain, specific features to understand the integration in the neighborhood

[6] The viviendas dotacionales are houses with useful facilities both for the inhabitants of housing and for the inhabitants of the neighborhoods. Among the projects being studied in Barcelona: the EMBT study in the Ribera, by Joan Callis and Pia Wortham in the northern suburbs of Barcelona and Sergi Serrat in the east of the La Clota park in Barcelona .

• Residential buildings have a significant impact from the point of view of population density with an average of 65 dwellings;
• The complexes have community spaces useful for the daily life of users where it is possible to take advantage of facilities such as: laundries, meeting rooms, multipurpose rooms and libraries;
• The buildings have a strong "integrative" character since their own access takes place from public spaces - a market, a square - to underline the strong inclusive character of the intervention;
• The facilities to users of the " viviendas dotacionales " are managed directly by the municipal social facilities, which deal with the cleaning of the accommodation and their ordinary and extraordinary maintenance.

While there are common points in terms of building typology - the integration of housing with facilities is a transversal and replicable model in different realities - the substantial difference between the building products is generated in the target audience of the recipients to whom these residences are intended. This consideration poses a simple but not obvious question for three similar cultural realities to which it refers: can the over 65s be considered a "personal" or "social" category?

CONCLUSION

It is impossible to give a sure answer to this question: first of all because positioning oneself on one or the other answer would mean refuting all the premises that have been made on the elderly category, second because it would only serve to fragment a current problem which can be to give an answer only through the systematization of knowledge and experiences so far. If it is true that European societies will have to live with the aging process of the population, even if there be a stationary aging, everything would end from the quantitative point of view but not from the quality. This is demonstrated by the rise in the investment trend and the strengthening of its link with the real needs associated with the natural course of life: "[...] an important aspect that the process of implementing new residential forms will have to therefore taking into consideration will be to prevent the consequences of aging in order to lengthen self-sufficiency as much as possible"(Bologna, Sichi , 2018). The achievements in the Senior Housing sector due to the greater attention to a growing social category are increasingly in line with the principles of active aging and seem to aim, for self-sufficient or partially such users, to offer more and more housing solutions customized to the specific needs of the user. The fact of having identified a model common to different experiences in the European panorama constituted by the union of housing with common facilities and supplementary facilities suggests a precise will of the policies in place: to offer, as a basic, a functional model to the needs of individuals that points to the prolonging independence by fighting isolation and loneliness and providing the possibility of integrating this solution with additional case by case facilities. All attention revolves around the senior user and his needs to be met through the performance of the habitat in which it will be inserted: the policies in support of these actions are therefore presented as tools to achieve this goal making the question on the their social or personal characterization. If the characterization is secondary, their presence within the same process is certainly of primary importance: in fact we have seen, especially in the Italian and Spanish cases, that the inclusion of Senior Housing projects in specific programs for housing leads to specialized paths from which, with the involvement of all operators, quality and functional products can be obtained. The implementation of these programs should converge on the transversal inclusion of public authorities and economic operators, as well as other specialized figures: "Greater

possible synergies between the private and private-social sector to improve the housing conditions of the elderly through territorial planning, housing construction and financial support for the less well off "(Tacchi, 1995). An entire system tailored to the target of the recipients that it is desirable to include in a welfare program that take actions in urban regeneration, to obtain results centered on the need to give concrete answers to real needs. The urban context, place of such actions, should not be underestimated: the same realities in which they will be inserted can themselves be instruments of social, urban and economic reconnection. If the objective to aim for is clear then the strategies that can be pursued become multiple and aimed at creating flexible housing forms that affect both the design choices and the forms of management of housing mobility (Morena, 2013). Connected to a dynamic society that tends to aging, these, over time, may continue to make substantial changes in all relevant sectors: housing policies, the regulatory body, the operators involved, the selection of criteria for selecting interventions, the extension of the framework of design-architectural choices and, last but not least, the inclusion of new forms of residential accommodation among the rental opportunities based more and more on social inclusion and the generational mixing.

REFERENCES

Bologna, R., Sichi, A., 2018. *Strumenti normativi e modelli residenziali innovativi per anziani autosufficienti.* In Baratta, A., L., F., Conti, C., Tatano, V., Abitare inclusive. Treviso: Anteferma

Cocco, F., Pibiri, R., 2011. *Residenze sociali con servizi per anziani. Il modello della "vivienda dotacional" del Comune di Barcellona.* Milano: Paper for the Espanet Conference "Innovare il welfare. Percorsi di trasformazione in Italia e in Europa"

Cocco, F., Pibiri, R., 2016. *La "vivienda dotacional": residenze sociali con servizi a Barcellona. Abitare e Anziani informa, n.7*

Falasca, C., 2019. *La valorizzazione del patrimonio immobiliare degli anziani. Abitare e Anziani informa,* n.1

Fernandèz – Ballesteros, R., 2008. *Active Aging: The Contribution of Psychology.* Cambridge, USA: Hogrefe

Frank, J., B., 2002. *The paradox of aging in Place in Assisted Living.* London: Bergin & Carvey

Garsia, L., 2016. *Abitare la rigenerazione urbana. La misura della città e della casa nel XXI secolo.* Roma: Gangemi Editore

Morena, M., 2013. *Strutture socio-assistenziali per anziani e disabili. Esperienze e modelli innovativi.* Rimini: Maggioli.

Nobili, M., 2019. *Real estate tra innovazione e accessibilità: senior housing come strategia d'intervento sostenibile.* In Baratta, A., L., F., Conti, C., Tatano, V., Abitare inclusivo. Treviso: Anteferma

Ricci, S., 1998. L'assistenza agli anziani nei sistemi italiano e francese. *Aggiornamenti sociali,* n. 1

Tacchi, E., M., 1995. *L'anziano e la sua casa.* Milano: Franco Angeli

The American Institute of Architects, 1985. *Design of aging: an architect's guide.* Washington, USA: The AIA Press

PAPER #8.16

RE-VIEWING REFUGEE SPACES: THE CASE OF MARDIN, TURKEY

Neslihan Dostoglu[a], Merve Güleryüz Çohadar[a]
[a]İstanbul Kültür University, İstanbul, Turkey

ABSTRACT

At present, over 70 million people are displaced by war and conflict worldwide. Unfortunately, this number has increased sharply because of the war in Syria. Since March 2011, which is the date when the civil war in Syria started, more than 13 million people have fled from their homes in Syria, with 6.6 million becoming refugees in other countries.
While many countries in the world receive an increasing number of refugees, the spatial practice related with hosting refugees on the move and in various forms of habitation has found diverse, new and improvised forms. These forms reflect a vast landscape of negotiating spatial practice along formal regulations, informal initiatives, enforced policies and spatial exploitations.
Turkey is the country, which hosts the biggest Syrian refugee population in the world. According to official records, there are approximately 4 million Syrian refugees living in Turkey in 2019. 26 camps have been constructed in various cities in Turkey in this process; however, only 1.8 % of the Syrian refugees have resided in these camps, the real problem being related with the "urban refugees" who live outside these camps. In fact, as of 2020 only 7 camps have remained in 5 cities in south-eastern and southern regions of Turkey. (goc.gov.tr)
In this atmosphere full of dilemmas, the diverse reinterpretations of values of belonging and attachment have to be negotiated, and architecture, planning and other related fields need to challenge both the ongoing praxis and take part in shaping the premises within the socio-spatial context for a growing refugee-originated population. The aim of this paper is to re-view the refugee spaces in Turkey, taking the case of Mardin in southeast Turkey as an example, and to re-think the functions related to shelter, site and settlements in crisis responses.

KEYWORDS

Refugee; asylum seeker; physical environment; Turkey; mardin.

INTRODUCTION

> "We're just living on the edge of life. We're always nervous, we're always afraid..."
> Mariam Akash, mother-of-nine, whose husband was killed by a sniper in Syria

Refugee problems, related to having to flee from the country of origin because of the fear of persecution, conflict or generalized violence for reasons of race, religion, nationality or membership of a particular social group, have been a concern for the whole world for a long time. Displacement is even a wider problem, because this comprises also the process of having to flee to different parts of the same country. At present, over 70 million people are displaced by war and conflict worldwide, 58% of which are internally displaced (migrationdataportal.org). Unfortunately, this number has increased sharply because of the war in Syria. Since March 2011, which is the date when the civil war in Syria started, more than 13 million people have fled from their homes in Syria, with 6.6 million becoming refugees in other countries.
Turkey is the country that hosts the biggest Syrian refugee population in the world. According to official records, there are 3.585.198 Syrian refugees living in Turkey in 2020 (goc.gov.tr) Since 2011, the year

when massive migration from Syria started, 26 camps have been constructed in various cities in Turkey, where basic services such as education and health have been met. However, only approximately 1,8% of the Syrian refugees have lived in these camps, and the real problem has been with those "urban refugees" who live outside these camps (Erdoğan, 2019). Since the refugees have preferred to live in urban areas, only 7 camps have been left in 5 cities in Turkey at present (goc.gov.tr).

As the refugee crisis is affecting the whole world, the actions taken by the refugees, authorities, the public and private stakeholders need to be understood within a broader field of spatial discourse. In fact, architecture, planning, and other related fields need to challenge both the ongoing praxis and take part in shaping the premises for the future accommodation of a growing refugee-originated population. Because of the new contextual challenges, the architectural profession has to re-think the functions related to shelter, site and settlements in crisis responses. In many studies on migration and integration of refugees in their new destination, it is mentioned that the most important challenges faced by the immigrants (refugees) are related with the sense of belonging and identity. The refugees' problems are rarely considered in the context of spatial issues. Therefore, the intention of this paper is to reach a general framework that highlights the shelter/spatial/housing problems faced by refugees in urban areas (outside of the camps) based on a case study carried out in Mardin,Turkey in 2019.

This paper aims to investigate the conditions of urban refugees who live outside the camps and the spatial problems that the refugees face in their daily lives. The paper starts with a general background about the migration process of Syrians, and its influences on the whole world, especially in Turkey. Then six refugee houses in Mardin, Turkey are evaluated as case studies. Finally, findings of the field study and interviews are summarized and a general framework is provided for evaluating the spatial problems of refugees in Turkey.

1. HISTORY OF THE REFUGEE CRISIS IN SYRIA

The 1951 Refugee Convention spells out that a refugee is someone who "owing to a well-founded fear of being persecuted for reasons of race, religion, nationality, membership of a particular social group or political opinion, is outside the country of his nationality, and is unable to, or owing to such fear, is unwilling to avail himself of the protection of that country." (UN General Assembly, 1951)

Syria's civil war is the worst humanitarian crisis of our time. Half the country's pre-war population, i.e. 13 million people, have been forced to flee their homes, and approximately 400,000 Syrians have lost their lives in nine years of armed conflict, which began with anti-government protests before escalating into a full-scale civil war. (france24.com)

Anti-government demonstrations began in Syria in March of 2011, as part of the Arab Spring. Pro-democracy protests erupted in March 2011 in the southern city of Deraa after the arrest and torture of some teenagers who painted revolutionary slogans on a school wall. After security forces opened fire on demonstrators, killing several, more took to the streets. The unrest triggered nationwide protests demanding President Assad's resignation. The government's use of force to crush the dissent merely hardened the protesters' resolve. By July 2011, hundreds of thousands were on the streets across the country. Thus, in a few months, army defectors had loosely organized the Free Syrian Army and many civilian Syrians had taken up arms to join the opposition. Divisions between secular and Islamist fighters, and between ethnic groups, continue to complicate the politics of the conflict.

Families have struggled to survive inside Syria or make a new home in neighboring

countries. Others have risked their lives on the way to Europe, hoping to find acceptance and opportunity. And harsh weather conditions make the life of a refugee even more difficult. At times, the effects of the conflict can seem overwhelming, leading into the destruction of even World Heritage Sites, such as Palmyra (Figure 1) (Figure 2).

Figure 1. Palmyra Temple of Bel in Syria Source: (https://www.reuters.com/news/picture/palmyra-before-and-after-isis-idUSRTSCQPG)

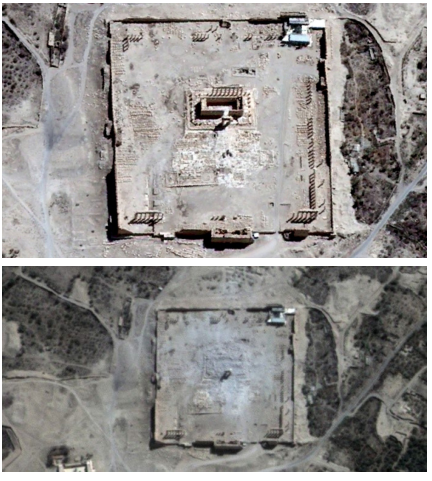


Figure 2. Before and After, Destruction of Palmyra Temple of Bel in Syria. Source: (https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-34111092)

1.1.The situation of Syrians caught in the war

More than four million Syrians have registered or are awaiting registration with the United Nations High Commission of Refugees, that leads the regional emergency response. There has been an immense growth in the number of refugees since the beginning of the conflict. In 2012, there were 100,000 refugees. By April 2013, there were 800,000, which doubled to 1.6 million in less than four months. There are now 6.6 million Syrians scattered throughout the region, making them the world's largest refugee population under the United Nations' mandate. This situation is considered as the worst exodus since the Rwandan genocide in 1994.

According to the United Nations, more than half of all Syrian refugees are under the age of 18. Most have been out of school for months. The youngest refugees face an uncertain future. Some schools in various countries have been able to divide the school day into two shifts and make room for more Syrian students. But there is simply not enough space for all the children, and many families cannot afford the transportation to get their children to school. The youngest are confused by their experiences, lacking the sense of safety and home they need. The older children are forced to grow up too fast, finding work and taking care of their family in desperate circumstances (unhrc.org).

Many Syrian refugees have fled across the border into Turkey, overwhelming urban host communities and creating new cultural tensions. However, there are also Syrian refugees living in Jordan and Lebanon, which are the region's two smallest countries, with weak infrastructure and limited resources. There are also many Syrian refugees in Iraq, in addition to 6.7 million internally displaced Iraqis.

Hundreds of thousands of refugees have also attempted the dangerous trip across the Mediterranean Sea from Turkey to Greece, hoping to find a better future in Europe. Not

all of them make it across alive. Those who do make it to Greece still face many challenges — resources are strained by the influx and services are minimal.

1.2. Means of escape from Syria

Thousands of Syrians have fled from their country since 2011 (Figure 3). People often decide to finally escape after seeing their neighborhoods bombed or family members killed. Most of them have fled to neighboring Turkey, Lebanon, Jordan, and Iraq while thousands also end up in more distant countries of the Caucus, the Persian Gulf, North Africa and Europe. The risks on the journey to the border can be as high as staying in Syria, i.e. families walking for miles through the night to avoid being shot at by snipers or being caught by soldiers who will kidnap young men to fight for the government.

Figure 3. A photo from the days when thousands of Syrians have fled from Syria. Source: (https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2018/03/eastern-ghouta-exodus-largest-syria-year-war-180316053942233.html)

2. THE SITUATION OF SYRIAN ASYLUM SEEKERS IN TURKEY

The Syrian refugee crisis arose as the Turkish government was in the midst of overhauling its immigration system to meet international—and, particularly, European Union—standards. The implementation of these reforms has limited Turkish authorities' capacity to manage the Syrian inflows, and as a result, management of the crisis was left largely in the hands of national organizations working on the ground, in camps, without larger policy guidance. Meanwhile, formal immigration channels, including recognition of refugee status, remain restricted to Europeans, while non-Europeans receive temporary protection status and are expected at some point to resettle in a third country.

The difficulty of sheltering the world's largest refugee population is reflected in Turkey, whose open door policy to refugees for a long period of time, shields European nations from a migration crisis far worse than the one they are struggling with now. As some European governments turn to police and barricades to stem the flow of migrants, Turkey has continued accommodating almost 4 million people from its war-torn southern neighbors.

Turkey is the country which hosts the biggest refugee population in the world. As authorities from the Migration and Politics Research Center in Hacettepe University remark, the Turkish society approaches the Syrians in a much more positive way than any other country in the world and the social acceptance level of the Syrians is much higher. Of course, people in Istanbul, where approximately 550.000 Syrians live, complain about the Syrian beggars, however there are many more Syrians in Istanbul, and people are not aware of them. When the war first broke out in Syria in 2011, Turkey believed tens of thousands would cross its 900-km (560-mile) frontier. Since then, fighting has engulfed the country and Islamic State militants have exploited the chaos to impose brutal, medieval-style rule across large parts of both Syria and Iraq. According to the Turkish authorities, approximately 40 billion dollars have been spent on humanitarian responses, which includes some of the best equipped refugee camps, including schooling, healthcare and social services.

Turkey has implemented an "open door policy" since the beginning of the Syrian crisis, and has not rejected the Syrians who want to come

to Turkey. However, they are not accepted as refugees, but rather as asylum seekers under the heading temporary protection, which does not cover the natural rights of refugees. This situation has caused the Syrians in Turkey to be without any status.

In fact, while Turkey provides for the basic rights of Syrians, they do not have the right to work legally in Turkey in general, even if they are educated. Although the government has decided to allow employment for Syrians, upto 10% of the total number of employees in a work place, thousands of Syrian refugees work illegally in the Turkish garment industry where child labor, low wages and poor conditions are common. Syrians also have problems related with education, although the Ministry of Education in Turkey tries to resolve this issue.

The Syrians are not sure how long they will be allowed to stay in Turkey according to the temporary protection status. Proposals such as sending the refugees to a secure region to be established in northern Syria does not convince the Syrians because of cases such as Srebrenitsa in Bosnia-Herzogevina, where 8000 people were killed in 1995, even though it was declared to be a secure region by the United Nations Security Council.

The government of Turkey has spent more than 40 billion dollars for the refugees in the last nine years. On the other hand, the support that has arrived from international community is much less. The European Union has offered money to the Turkish government in return for keeping the refugees in Turkey, but this cannot be considered as ethical because this load is not only financial, but also has political and social risks. The European Union has to develop a joint migration and refugee policy with Turkey, which plays a key role in this process. Actually, the present situation cannot last long. If European Union closes its doors to the refugees, or tries to prevent them from leaving Turkey, the number of refugees will increase in Turkey.

Turkey is considered by many refugees as a transit country. However, this is a difficult situation for a country because this means that it functions as a bridge, and yet only 10% of the refugees go to other countries, while 90% stay. Since the possibility of passing through gives people the hope of going to other countries, more refugees arrive, increasing the number of refugees.

In 2017, AFAD conducted a field study about the demographic views, life conditions and future expectations of Syrians in Turkey. In the report of the field study, there are comments about when and under what conditions Syrian refugees will return to Syria. According to the results, approximately 22 percent of refugees in the camps and about 16 percent of refugees outside the camps never consider returning back to Syria (AFAD, 2017).

In Turkey, Syrian refugees are settled densely in certain cities. It can be seen in Figure 4, that there are ten cities which refugees have generally chosen to settle. Most of these cities are at the Syrian border of Turkey (goc.gov.tr).

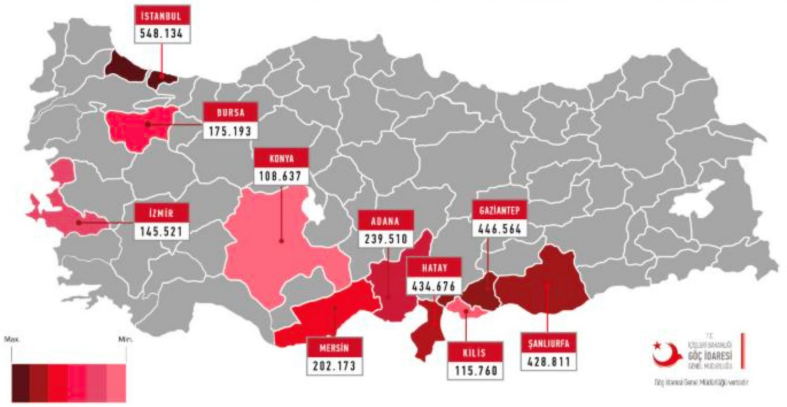


Figure 4. Distribution of Syrian refugees by provinces in mid July 2020, Turkey Immigration Department. Source: (https://www.goc.gov.tr/gecici-koruma5638)

2.1. Life in camps

Some of the refugees continue living in camps. Jordan's Za'atari, the first official refugee camp that opened in July 2012, gets the most news coverage because it is the destination for newly arrived refugees. It is also the most concentrated settlement of refugees: 76,143 Syrians live in Za'atari, making it one of the country's largest cities (UNHCR Za'atari Camp Fact Sheet, 2020). The formerly barren desert is crowded with acres of white tents, makeshift shops along the "main street", sports fields and schools for children.

A new camp, Azraq, was opened in Jordan in April 2014, carefully designed to provide a sense of community and security, with steel caravans instead of tents, a camp supermarket, and organized "streets" and "villages." It hosts 36,785 Syrian refugees at present (UNHCR Azraq Camp Fact Sheet, 2020).

Iraq has set up a few camps to house the influx of refugees who arrived in 2013, but the majority of families live in urban areas. In Lebanon, the government has no official camps for refugees, so families have established makeshift camps or find shelter in the derelict, abandoned buildings.

In Turkey, there is an acceptance that, although inconvenient, Turkey must help its neighbor. 26 camps where basic services such as education and health were met, were constructed in various cities in Turkey, especially in border cities, receiving positive comments from the United Nations Development Program (Figure 5). At present, however, there are only 7 camps in 5 cities (Hatay (3), Kilis (1), Adana (1), Osmaniye (1)) in Turkey, since most refugees prefer to live outside the camps (goc.gov.tr).

Although the refugees who live in the camps are considered as needy, the living conditions of the refugee camps coordinated by AFAD were praised according to a report published in The New York Times on Feb. 13, 2014. The Öncüpınar Camp in Kilis province, a camp where 2,053 shipping containers have been converted into housing units, was particularly commended in the report. It was described as "clean," unlike many other refugee camps in the world, and the residents of the camp thanked the Turkish authorities (Hutzler,

2014). On the other hand, some researchers argue that better living conditions could be provided for refugees living elsewhere in the country with some of the funds spent on such camps. The legal status of the refugees is one of the most problematic issues in Turkey. Turkey has become a party to the Geneva Agreement of 1951 with geographical limitations, as a result of which Turkey can give the refugee status only to those coming from Europe, which means that the migrants from Syria are considered as asylum seekers, and not as refugees.

Figure 5. Temporary Shelter Center in Gaziantep/ Syrian Refugee Camp in Gaziantep. Source: (http://www.referansgazetesi.com.tr/haber/gaziantepten-23-bin-suriyeli-yolcu-haberi-32439.html)

2.2. Life outside the camps

Some Syrians know people in neighboring countries, who can open their houses to them. But many host families are already struggling on meager incomes and do not have the room or finances to help as the crisis drags on. Thus, refugees find shelter wherever they can. Families live in rooms with no heat or running water, in abandoned chicken coops and storage sheds. Most refugees must find a way to pay rent, even for derelict structures. Without any legal way to work in Turkey, Jordan or Lebanon, they struggle to find odd jobs and accept low wages that often don't cover their most basic needs. And language is a barrier in some countries, such as Turkey.

The lack of clean water and sanitation in crowded, makeshift settlements is an urgent concern. Diseases like covid-19, cholera and polio can easily spread, becoming more life-threatening without enough medical services. In some areas with the largest refugee populations, water shortages have reached emergency levels; the supply is as low as 30 litres per person per day — one-tenth of what the average American uses.

In Turkey, the majority of refugees have tried to survive and find work in urban communities, despite the language barrier. In fact, according to research findings, only 1.8% of the Syrian refugees live in the camps in Turkey (Erdoğan, 2019). The biggest difficulty of refugees living outside the camps is accommodation because these people cannot find the necessary money to pay their rent. The second major difficulty is finding employment. The legal status of the refugees is another problematic issue.

Based on the authors' research, it has been hypothesized that if the destination has a common language, common religion and similar cultural identity like refugees, immigrants (refugees) do not face problems such as belonging and sense of identity. In order to verify this argument, the city of Mardin in Turkey was chosen as the field study because the city is located on the Syrian border, with a similar cultural background as Syria. Furthermore, the majority of the inhabitants living in Mardin adopt the same religion and speak the same language as a second language (Arabic, Kurdish). However, it has been found out that, despite this socio-cultural resemblance, Syrian refugees in Mardin still face many problems, especially in relation to housing (shelter) issues.

3. THE CASE STUDIES IN MARDİN OLD CITY CENTER

Mardin is located on the border of Turkey and Syria, in southeast Turkey. Mardin city center

area (landscape) is a candidate for UNESCO World Heritage List since the city's landscape and houses have a unique character (Figure 6). Since people from different ethnic origins have lived together in Mardin in tolerance with each other throughout history, Mardin is referred to as 'the city of tolerance' in many publications.

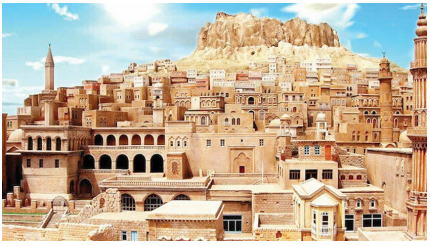


Figure 6. Mardin Landscape General View. Source: (https://www.farmasi.web.tr/farmasi-mardin/)

After the recent Syrian Civil War erupted in 2011, due to the geographic proximity and cultural similarity, a huge number of Syrian refugees have chosen to live in Mardin. According to official documents, the number of Syrian refugees living and working in Mardin in 2018, was 92.971 (goc.gov.tr). The Syrian refugees have settled mainly in two districts in Mardin, i.e. Artuklu and Kızıltepe. Since the authors have decided to concentrate on the shelter problems of refugees with low socio-economic conditions, Artuklu was chosen for the pilot study, because the district consists of the old city center where the house rents are relatively cheaper than other districts of Mardin. The city center of Mardin has been the heart of economic activity and social relations since the establishment of the city. In addition to its economic importance and owing to its place in the collective memory of the city, this district has conserved its aesthetic and social values. Besides, because it has a pedestrian area that is not suitable for vehicular traffic, this district is one of the city's most attractive public places for both inhabitants and tourists. In spite of this fact, inhabitants of Mardin generally do not prefer to live in this district. In accordance with these preferences, apartment blocks started to rise on the outskirts of the historical city center in the 1990s. At present, the majority of inhabitants have chosen the new settlement called Yenişehir (which means New City) to live. These developments have caused a demographical change in Mardin. Muslim Arab or Armenian and Syrian Christian families have vacated the area, while other ethnic groups (Kurds and Arabs) who come from villages have settled in the city center (Küçük, 2013). After 2011, the Syrian refugees have caused another demographic change. All of these developments have also led to social/cultural transformations in the city of Mardin. Refugees have been spatially clustered in some neighborhoods of Mardin old city district. For this paper, six houses of refugee families, that are located in these different neighborhoods, were chosen to be examined as case studies, as a pilot study. We expect to continue our research including other houses of refugee families in the future, to get a better understanding of the situation.

3.1. Spatial dimensions of the case studies

As mentioned above, the city center of Mardin was chosen as an area for conducting a pilot study that sought knowledge about the housing problems of Syrian refugees with low socio-economic status. The study focuses on Syrian refugees with poor economic condition since it is obvious that this group would have more problems related with shelter and living in their new surroundings than the refugees with high socio-economic situation. In this pilot study, structured face to face interviews were carried out in the houses of these families in the historical area (inner city) of Mardin, detailed photographs were taken to document each house, and sketches were made in relation to the plans of the refugees' new houses in Mardin and the old houses that they used to live in Syria. The sketches of the

old houses of refugees were drawn without scale in interviews, according to the refugees' explanations. Thirty questions related with the socio-economic, and physical issues were asked to two people in each house (total 12 people). The questions in interviews were about the city of Mardin, their new houses in Mardin, their old cities, and the houses where they used to live in. Below, the sketches and photos of the six refugee households are sorted, the findings of interviews and observations are summarized (Figures 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12).

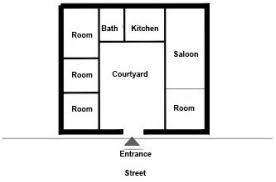
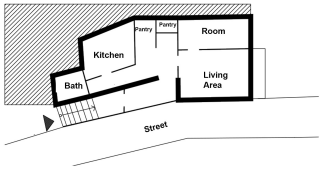
Old House in Syria Before War	House in Mardin/Household No 1
 Location: Al Hasakah	
The photos of House 1 in Mardin	
	
Refugee Household No 1	

Figure 7. Refugee Household No 1 (drawings and photos by Merve Güleryüz Çohadar)

Old House in Syria Before War	House in Mardin/Household No 2
The old house in Syria could not be described by respondents. They only explained that their house in Syria was huge and warm, had 2 bedrooms, one saloon and a courtyard. It was located in Damascus (Women Refugee, 36 and Man Refugee, 45). Location: Damascus	
The photos of House 2 in Mardin	
	
Refugee Household No 2	

Figure 8. Refugee Household No 2 (drawings and photos by Merve Güleryüz Çohadar)

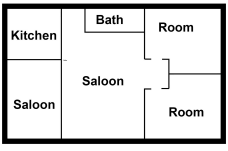
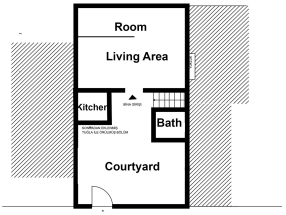
Old House in Syria Before War	House in Mardin/Household No 3
 Location: Al Hasakah	
The photos of House 3 in Mardin	
	
Refugee Household No 3	

Figure 9. Refugee Household No 3 (drawings and photos by Merve Güleryüz Çohadar)

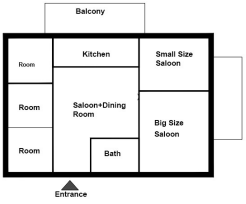
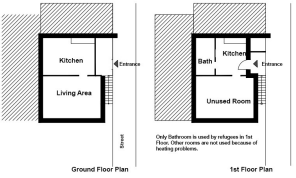
Old House in Syria Before War	House in Mardin/Household No 4
 Location: Al Hasakah	
The photos of House 4 in Mardin	
	
Refugee Household No 4	

Figure 10. Refugee Household No 4 (drawings and photos by Merve Güleryüz Çohadar)

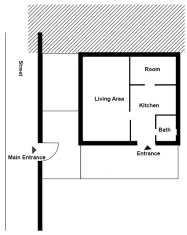
Old House in Syria Before War	House in Mardin/Household No 5
 Location: Al Hasakah	
The photos of House 5 in Mardin	
	
Refugee Household No 5	

Figure 11. Refugee Household No 5 (drawings and photos by Merve Güleryüz Çohadar)

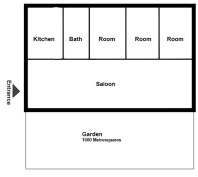
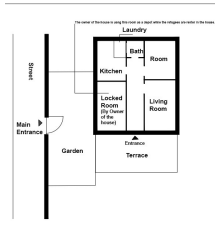
Old House in Syria Before War	House in Mardin/Household No 6
 Location: Al Hasakah	
The photos of House 46 in Mardin	
	
Refugee Household No 6	

Figure 12. Refugee Household No 6 (drawings and photos by Merve Güleryüz Çohadar)

3.2. Evaluation of the case studies

As it has been stated in the introduction, a questionnaire was conducted and observations were made to reflect the current situation, and to evaluate the problems of refugees in Mardin, Turkey. According to observations and interviews, it can be concluded that the physical living conditions of the six visited houses have a lot of problems that prevent the refugees from maintaining their lives in a healthy way.

As a result of this questionnaire, it can be pointed out that the biggest difficulty of refugees living outside camps is accommodation, because these people cannot find the necessary money to pay their rent. The second major difficulty is finding employment. The legal status of the refugees is another problematic issue.

In interviews, a question was asked to understand why the refugees did not choose to live in refugee camps. All respondents answered this question by indicating that they do not want to restrict their freedom. However, they mentioned that living in urban areas has its own difficulties, such as finding affordable housing.

In observations of the field study, especially the inadequacy of the bedroom areas was noticeable. There were no special spaces defined as bedrooms, as 5-6 people slept next to each other in the same room. In fact, in household no 3 there were no additional rooms except the living area. It was seen in the visits of household no 3, that a type of curtain was used to divide the space (living area) and create a special area for bedroom (Figure 9). Household no 2 and 4 had an additional room, but the refugees could not use these rooms since they were not suitable physically, and had heat insulation problems and broken windows (Figure 8) (Figure 10). As seen in the plan sketches, the main rooms of houses were defined as 'living area's, since, these rooms were used as daily living room, main visitors' room, dining room during the day, and as a bedroom during the night. In interviews, all refugees complained about insufficient space of their houses.

Unhealthy conditions were observed in the inadequate plumbing pipes and sanitary systems in the kitchens and bathrooms (Figures 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12). As can be clearly seen in the pictures above, there are heat insulation problems in the houses. The respondents said that they do not have the financial means to replace the broken glass with a new one, thus they try to eliminate the transmission of heat to a small extent by pasting cardboard to the broken glass areas. Another physical problem faced by the refugees in their houses is the lack of water insulation and the moisture problem arising from this.

All of the houses that were investigated were discovered to have rent prices lower than other houses in Mardin. In fact, Syrian refugees mentioned the low rent prices as the reason for choosing to live in this area. All respondents mentioned their main problem as 'lack of money'. They emphasized that they will be happier if they have enough money to paint the walls, develop insulation, and repair their houses.

By comparing the old and new houses of the refugees (Figures 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12), it was observed that the old houses in Syria have sufficient spaces for all family members. Old houses of the refugees have at least two bedrooms. In fact, some houses even have two living rooms (saloons) (Figures 9, 10). In interviews, the Syrian families explained that there were no unhealthy conditions in their old houses in Syria. Another question in the questionnaire focused on whether they felt like foreigners in Mardin. All respondents answered this question that they do not feel themselves as a foreigner, since the majority in the city speaks the same language and embraces the same religion with them, in addition to the fact that they have many relatives living in Mardin from the times before the war. Previous studies have pointed out

that social networks play a very important role in the immigration process of people (Boyd, 1989; Ritchey, 1976; Elrick, 2005; Elrick and Ciobanu, 2009; Epstein, 2008; Fawcett, 1989; MacDonald and MacDonald, 1964; McKenzie and Rapoport, 2007). In these studies, strong evidence is provided regarding the effects of friends and relatives, networks, on migration flows. It can be said that the Syrian refugees' social networks in Mardin have a facilitator role in their integration process with the city. Although they do not feel as foreigners, they have emphasized the fact that they preferred to communicate with only their relatives and Syrian friends rather than local people.

CONCLUSION: EXPECTATIONS FROM PROFESSIONS RELATED WITH THE BUILT ENVIRONMENT

According to the results of the case studies, there is a strong need for rethinking the refugees' life conditions in the context of physical issues. In general, refugee families that have economically low income, often cluster around poor neighborhoods, and have to live together in small houses under unhealthy conditions. It is obvious that better regulations on rental rates and public housing systems are needed. Currently there are no public housing opportunities besides refugee camps in Turkey. Syrians coming to Turkey, who intend to remain outside the camps, can live in a city where they are registered. Therefore, refugees who choose to live outside of the camps need to provide their housing expenses themselves.

In this context, the expectation from the government is the development of comprehensive policies for integrating the refugees with the society. In fact, it has been nine years since the war started, and there are still hundreds of thousands of children who do not get proper education, and many refugees have to work illegally to sustain their living. Since the government in Turkey expects the refugees to go back after the war is over, no strategic plans are made for the refugees; however, the fact is that most of them will not go back. Because refugees have left their homes and their countries, they have a deep sense of placelessness, making place attachment and sense of belonging the key elements in integrating and connecting them with the city.

In the world, the sheltering problems of refugees are generally tried to be solved by building temporary shelters in isolated camp areas which are located outside the cities. Unfortunately, this approach leads to many problems. Isolated refugees face economic and social problems, while authorities face many problems related with the economic sustainability of the camps. Also, there are some organizations that have a mission to improve the lives of people displaced by force, by providing affordable temporary shelters; however, most of these efforts are not sustainable. To solve refugee problems, people need to find more permanent solutions. Architects, city planners and people from related disciplines should develop designs to contribute to the integration of the refugees with the host country. For instance, there are many unused, idle buildings in cities, which may be transformed into shelters for refugees; in this way both unused buildings can be revitalized and a sustainable solution to refugee housing problems can be provided. Furthermore, refugee housing problems should be seen as a social housing problem of low-income families. Traditional social housing projects mostly are built and sold or rented by governments and local councils. However, there are some alternative approaches to build social housing projects such as incremental housing. Incremental housing can be defined as a gradual step-by-step process whereby building components and parts are improved by owner-builders as money, time, or materials become available. This type of alternative approaches should be considered while planning houses and

settlements for refugees. Future research on these areas should be done in order to create more specific solutions and guidelines for this issue. Our study is a pilot study, and our aim is to make a more comprehensive study by increasing the sample number in the future.

In conclusion, it can be emphasized that the activities of refugees, authorities and the public and private stakeholders need to be understood within a broader field of spatial discourse. The diverse reinterpretations of values of belonging and attachment have to be constantly negotiated, and the architectural, planning and other related fields need to challenge both the ongoing praxis and take part in shaping the premises within the socio-spatial context for a growing refugee-originated population. In this context, institutions related with the architectural profession and architectural education have a responsibility to re-think the functions related to shelter, site and settlements in crisis responses.

REFERENCES

Afet ve Acil Durum Yönetimi Başkanlığı (AFAD) (2017). Türkiye'deki Suriyelilerin Demografik Görünümü, Yaşam Koşulları ve Gelecek Beklentilerine Yönelik Saha Araştırması. Ankara. Retrieved from https://www.afad.gov.tr/kurumlar/afad.gov.tr/25337/xfiles/17a-Turkiye_deki_Suriyelilerin_Demografik_Gorunumu_Yasam_Kosullari_ve_Gelecek_Beklentilerine_Yonelik_Saha_Arastirmasi_2017.pdf

Boyd, M. (1989). "Family and Personal Networks in International Migration: Recent Developments and New Agendas". *International Migration Review*, 23(3), 638-670

Dostoğlu, N. (2017). "'Acil Durumda Mimarlık: Sığınmacı / Mülteci Krizini Yeniden Düşünmek' Uluslararası Sempozyumu'nun Ardından", *Yapı,* No: 424, 102-103.

Dostoğlu, N., Enginöz, E. B., Kut, S., Karakoç, E. (eds.). (2016). *Architecture in Emergency: Re-Thinking the Refugee Crisis,* İstanbul: IKU.

Elrick, T. (2005). "Migration Decision Making and Social Networks". EU Marie Curie Excellence Grant Project KNOWMIG. Retrieved from https://pdfs.semanticscholar.org/78c4/d5ce75c92699b28fd8eba7a41686efc0103d.pdf

Elrick, T., Ciobanu O. (2009). "Migration Networks and Policy Impacts: Insights from Romanian-Spanish Migrations". Global Networks, 9(1), 100–116.

Epstein, G.S. (2008). "Herd and Network Effects In Migration Decision-Making". *Journal of Ethnic and Migration Studies,* 34(4), 567–583.

Erdoğan, M. (2019). *Türkiye'deki Suriyeli Mülteciler.* Berlin, Konrad Adenauer Stiftung, Retrieved from https://www.kas.de/ documents/283907/7339115/Türkiye%27deki+suriyeliler.pdf/acaf9d37-7035-f37c-4982-c4b18f-9b9c8eversion=1.0&t=1571303334464.

Fawcett, J. T. (1989). "Networks, Linkages and Migration Systems". *International Migration Review,* 23, 671-680.

Hutzler, T. (2014, February, 13). "The New York Times, "How to Build a Perfect Refugee Camp", Retrieved from http://www.nytimes.com/2014/02/16/magazine/how-to-build-a-perfect-refugee-camp.html?_r=0

Küçük, M. (2013). 'Aidiyetin Mekânı: Mardin'de Kimlik ve Mekânın Değişimi', *İdealkent* Sayı 9, p. 114-137, ISSN: 1307-9905

MacDonald, J.S., Macdonald, L.D. (1964). "Chain Migration, Ethnic Neighborhood Formation, and Social Networks". *Millbank Memorial Fund Quarterly,* 42(1), 82-97.

McKenzie, D., Rapoport, H. (2007). "Network Effects and Dynamics of Migration and Inequality: Theory and Evidence from Mexico". *Journal of Development Economics*, 84(1), 1-24.

Ritchey, P.N. (1976). "Explanations of Migration". *Annual Review of Sociology,* 2, 363-404.

UN General Assembly Convention Relating to the Status of Refugees, 28 July 1951, United Nations, Treaty Series, vol. 189, p. 137. Retrieved from https://www.unhcr.org/3b66c2aa10.

UNHCR Azraq Camp Fact Sheet, (2020). Retrieved from https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/76488.pdf. Accessed Date: July 2020.

UNHCR Za'atari Camp Fact Sheet, (2020). Retrieved from https://reliefweb.int/report/jordan/zaatari-refugee-camp-factsheet-january-2020. Accessed Date: July 2020.

www.goc.gov.tr
www. migrationdataportal.org
www. france24.com
www.unhrc.org
www.afad.gov.tr
https://www.reuters.com/news/picture/palmyra-before-and-after-isis-idUSRTSCQPG. Accessed Date: July 2020.
https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-34111092. Accessed Date: June 2020.
https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2018/03/eastern-ghouta-exodus-largest-syria-year-war-180316053942233.html. Accessed Date: June 2020.
https://www.goc.gov.tr/gecici-koruma5638. Accessed Date: June 2020.
http://www.referansgazetesi.com.tr/haber/gaziantepten-23-bin-suriyeli-yolcu-haberi-32439.html. Accessed Date: June 2020.
https://www.farmasi.web.tr/farmasi-mardin/ Accessed Date: June 2020.

9

CONCLUSION

A RESTLESS, NON-CONFORMIST AND ADAPTIVE DISCIPLINE

Ivan Cabrera i Fausto
Conference Chair
Higher Technical School of Architecure of the Polytecnnic University of Valencia, Spain

Architecture is probably the most pragmatic and adaptive of arts. Undoubtedly this is due to its scientific side. And it is also presumably the most restless and non-conformist science, being that unmistakably connected to its artistic aspect. Simultaneously, the discipline of all those who have devoted their lives to the design and construction of human habitat has frequently become the materialization of human aspirations, values and priorities. A society maybe can lie in many different manners, but its architecture always reveals the truth. Therefore, most likely the pragmatic and adaptive, but also restless and non-conformist research in architecture which we are having nowadays is the best evidence of a society which voluntarily or involuntarily, consciously or unconsciously prioritizes these features and is more demanding than ever.

The long tradition of research in architecture existing in many institutions all over the world has rather recently been complemented by the encouraging of research, also in architecture, in almost any university. However, funding is not proportional to this promotion at all yet, also in architecture once again. While still solving some apparently minor but actually relevant matters such as clearly differentiating research by design and pure research, research in architecture is enjoying the daybreak of what promises to be a fruitful era. The conferences on research in architecture jointly organized by the European Association for Architectural Education and by the Architectural Research Centers Consortium constitute a middle aged venture awaited with enthusiasm every two years by the fellowship of the European and the North American associations. The 2020 edition to be hosted by the Higher Technical School of Architecture of the Polytechnic University of Valencia was announced on May 31, 2019 in Toronto (fig. 1) during the ARCC 2019 International Conference and on August 30, 2019 in Zagreb during the EAAE Annual Event and General Assembly.

Figure 1. Presentation of the EAAE-ARCC International Conference and 2nd VIBRArch in Toronto

The event was received with interest and satisfaction by both the American and European researchers. Some of them were quite familiarized with the Valencia International Biennial of Research in Architecture, best known for its acronym VIBRArch, whose second edition would be merged with the EAAE-ARCC joint venture on this special occasion.

The call for abstracts for both full papers and posters was issued on September 16, 2019 and its deadline was set on November 11, 2019. Having been extended one week two hundred and ninety-five proposals for full papers and posters were received. A Scientific Committee composed by two hundred and fifty people from the five continents and with a remarkable 60,40% percentage of women, reviewed thoroughly of the proposals. Authors were accordingly informed by the end of the year. Accepted abstracts should turn into full papers or posters and be submitted by February 17, 2020. But during this period the coronavirus disease had already started beating the world up and its ferocity would be soon felt from east to west. However uncertainty did not affect at all authors and the percentage of full papers and posters submitted was even higher than in other similar events without such a powerful sanitary interference. Wisely intuited by the leaders of both organizations, travelling would turn into something difficult, dangerous or blamable within days or weeks. Therefore and on March 24, 2020, with Italy, Spain and other European countries already applying home lockdown, the conference was postponed to late fall 2020. The whole calendar of the event was remade adapting it to the new dates and once again the resilience of architecture researchers proved itself. Everybody stuck to the event. Nobody surrendered. After an extremely tough spring, on June 10, 2020, the new dates and a blended modality including the possibility to attend online or face-to-face was announced (fig. 2).

Figure 2. Board announcing the new dates of the EAAE-ARCC International Conference

Full papers and posters had been reviewed by the Scientific Committee during that period. Authors were notified. When lucky, those who had been directly accepted toasted, and those who were required amendments submitted them by September 14, 2020. At the very end, one hundred and fifty-five papers and one poster made their way through and were accepted for presentation during the up to seven parallel sessions. These are the works which have been included in these proceedings distributed in the frequently mentioned eight thematic areas.

The first of these thematic areas was titled "devising, representing and narrating the city". Up to twenty-six papers were finally accepted and presented during the conference. Authors tackled aspects as diverse as the broader perspective and view of the city, its representation and reading, both theoretically and by means of interesting examples in Asia, Europe or America, its geometry, the way in which their relevant assets are inserted and presented, and finally even challenging software and techniques to help analysts and planners.

The second thematic area focused on "living in urban landscapes". Likewise twenty-five papers and one poster had been accepted and, therefore, were given the chance to be presented during the event. Authors dealt with a vast range of topics, but certain areas received a special attention and many papers concurred. It is the case of the simultaneous work with different scales of the city, the relevance of green areas and connection with nature, or the meaning and understanding of representative public spaces and infrastructures.

Being the third thematic area, "the new faces the old" hosted up to twenty-two full papers focusing on the frequent and unavoidable coexistence of new elements in preexisting contexts, frequently with historical value. The contents of this block reveal an undoubted nowadays interest on the adequate knowledge, attitude and cautions for an architect when being commissioned a brand new project in this kind of contexts. Likewise it is also easy to detect a tendency to defuse the confrontation of new architecture with old architecture by accepting that this fact has been constant in the history of cities and a great bunch of good practices can be studied.

"Restoration, conservation and renovation" was the fourth thematic area. Seventeen full papers were accepted and finally presented during the conference. The set of works reveals up to four areas of interest concentration nowadays. The first is a classical one focusing on theories and the adequate previous analysis and data collection. The second one encompasses frequent successful case studies which provide future practitioners a fair set of options about how to tackle future commissions. The third area places value in works which were not considered heritage until recently such as infrastructures, certain historical neighborhoods or rather recent architecture. Finally, researchers specialized in this matter begin to welcome peers which embrace the discipline not from a theoretical, historical or design aspect, but from a purely structural, conditioning or material point of view, establishing occasional bridges to the topics of the fifth thematic area.

This fifth block focused on "a future based on technology". Seventeen full papers succeeded through the different reviews in order to be included in the proceedings and presented in the different parallel sessions. It cannot be denied that sustainability and the measuring and performance of any single parameter connected to it are taking a leading role day after day. Simultaneously, matters such as ventilation, climate comfort and lighting are becoming a relevant welfare parameter nowadays and many researchers are specializing on them. Finally building materials, techniques and structures still keep a meaningful group of academics doing their research on them. However their approach switches increasingly from new constructions to the renewal and preservation of existing ones.

The sixth thematic area was devoted to "smart cities vs. tech cities". The seven full papers finally accepted and presented focused mainly in data collection and analysis in order to make it useful for a variety of aspects involving mobility, energy efficiency or indoor comfort.

The seventh thematic area entailed up to twenty-five full papers focusing on "new professional practices and research practices" which put a special emphasis on the variety of work and research fields which architects have recovered or discovered recently and mostly after the 2007 financial crisis. To start with many papers placed a special value on pure research as a necessary and appropriate job opportunity for architects. Areas of knowledge discussed in other thematic areas were included here as well, such as comfort, sustainability or circular economy. But specific fields such as psychology, sociology, virtual environments and synergies between research and teaching were also presented.

Finally, the eighth and last thematic area focused on "participation processes, diversity and inclusiveness". Up to sixteen full papers were accepted to be in these proceedings and to be presented during the conference. Despite some examples of these trends can be found throughout history, the works presented in this block are devoted to what may be is one of the most genuine phenomena of our time. Peculiarities of public participation were discussed in different contexts and a special focus was placed on the design of urban spaces and buildings for underprivileged groups which historically have received limited attention.

The richness of matters attended is perhaps the first and most obvious conclusion. Architecture has become a huge discipline encompassing many specialist areas and fields of practice which resist being detached from the central core as it happens in other disciplines such as medicine. This diversity is understood in our case as richness and not as a problem. The developing of the conference evinced what is one of the most productive features of architects. We are curious people and we are interested in whatever has something to do in where people live and how people live whatever it is. But this colorful and varied panorama also revealed some patterns which are becoming more and more habitual and could be understood as the key issues of our times regarding research in architecture:

- Transversality is taking the scene. Most of the papers could have been included in more than one thematic area since their topic and approach frequently responded to a transverse and open-minded attitude. The full papers themselves or the fruitful debates developed after the presentations during the parallel sessions placed value on the concurrence of different approaches from different fields of expertise, cultural backgrounds or disciplines. Definitively we do trust in interdisciplinary studies and activities (fig. 3) to safe better results in whatever architecture has to confront or undertake.

Figure 3. Participatory workshop organized by the French studio Quatorze in Paris

- Western countries are almost already and sufficiently built if we consider their current needs. The migration of people to urban areas cannot be denied and obviously involves certain requirements to be attended

by a huge variety of stakeholders were architects must have a decisive role. But frequently maintenance, renewal and fair distribution of assets and resources provide better solutions than brand new expansive plans.

• Futuristic visions get little attention. New designs when innovative are almost always the result of a search for a better comfort, a more sustainable or respectful approach, a holistic understanding of the situation or any other attitude which is the polar opposite to the wish to get the attention exclusively by means of pure novelty.

• Respect is an increasingly often concept and is taking the lead over other factors such as profitability or personal recognition which are understood as unacceptable in many contexts. Respect for our heritage, understanding it not just as the assets with specific, individual and acknowledges artistic value, but as all what we have inherited from previous generations. Respect for everybody, especially for those collectives who have been traditionally disadvantaged or even non-cared, and for those who are still to come. And consequently, respect for the planet, ever more understood as a fragile entity which needs to be understood and protected.

• Care as an active attitude following respect. A meaningful percentage of researchers in architecture are devoting their time to see how they can care any individual of the society depending on their circumstances, or how they can care and heal the environment by means of actions such as circular economy or cooperation.

The work which was got the Best Paper Award during the farewell ceremony is a magnificent evidence of set of values which this conference has revealed as the undeniable sign of the times when it comes to research in architecture and therefore when it comes to what is relevant to nowadays society. Authored by Madlen Simon, University of Maryland (fig. 4); Shaimaa Hameed Hussein, Al-Nahrain University (fig. 5); and Gregory Weaver (fig. 6), University of Maryland; was titled "Designing Better Cities Together: Global inter-university partnership model for architectural education addressing the United Nations 2030 Sustainable Development Goals".



Figures 4, 5 and 6. Madlen Simon, Shaimaa Hammeed Hussein and Gregory Weaver

Having foretold the fact that most of the audience would attend the conference by means of the online option, as many segments as possible were scheduled in the European afternoon and evening since American attendees would face obvious and meaningful inconveniences in attending sections arranged during the European morning. Therefore six out of seven scheduled parallel sessions of paper presentations were arranged accordingly and only the last one when just European authors had been included was arranged on the European Saturday morning. For some attendees it happened to be their first online conference and despite the fact that it took a while for many of them to get used to the particularities of Teams® (fig. 7), which was the communication platform chosen for all online segments, debates were extremely fruitful and day after day everybody switched off his or her laptop with the feeling of having learnt important facts, having met interesting people and possible future collaborators, and above all the feeling of being participating in something important, something relevant, something absolutely committed to improve people's lives.

Figure 7. Participants at the online parallel session held at room A on Saturday, November 14, 2020, at 10:00

The success achieved in the nine previous editions of the joint conference – Montreal in 2002, Dublin in 2004, Philadelphia in 2006 and 2018, Copenhagen in 2008, Washington DC in 2010, Milan in 2012, Honolulu in 2014, and Lisbon in 2016 – was achieved once again in Valencia in 2020, being the most convincing argument for all the audience to focus on the next edition to be held in Miami in 2022. Until then we have two years of work in meaningful adverse conditions because of the global health crisis caused by the coronavirus disease. But architects are not only curious as previously mentioned and committed as easily deducible when being observed. Architects are basically optimistic people. Optimism is intrinsic to architectural teaching, practice or research. Nobody decides to become an architect if he or she does not have the wish of improving the world and the conviction of being capable of it through effort and dedication. The variety of tools available nowadays, the boundless amount of knowledge achieved by humankind along with the powerful set of mechanisms to access it, and mostly our renewed priorities, personal values of ways of doing (fig. 8) guarantee a worthy and fertile service of research to architecture and, consequently, of architecture to the society and the planet.

Figure 8. Participatory workshop organized by the Spanish studio El Fabricante de Espheras in Villena, Spain